The HarperCollins

Bible Commentary

General Editor

James L. Mays

Associate Editors

Joseph Blenkinsopp
Beverly R. Gaventa
Jon D. Levenson
Wayne A. Meeks
Carol A. Newsom
David L. Petersen
Gene M. Tucker

with the Society of Biblical Literature

HarperSanFrancisco
A Division of HarperCollins*Publishers*

Publication Staff

Editor:
John Loudon

Project Editor:
Judith Kleppe

Production Editor:
Terri Leonard

Copyeditor:
Ann Moru

Proofreaders:
Karen Stough, Erica Olsen

Photo research:
Judith Kleppe, Lindsay Kefauver

Jacket, cover, and text design:
Jim Warner, cover, and Ralph Fowler, interior

Typesetting, page make-up:
Joe Eagle

Text printing and binding:
RR Donnelley & Sons Company

Credits are listed on p. 1203 and are considered a continuation of this copyright page.

THE HARPERCOLLINS BIBLE COMMENTARY. Copyright © 1988, 2000 by The Society of Biblical Literature. All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. No part of this book may be used or reproduced in any manner whatsoever without written permission except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical articles and reviews. For information address HarperCollins Publishers, 10 East 53rd Street, New York, NY 10022.

For information about any HarperCollins title, product, or resource, please visit our World Wide Web site at http://www.harpercollins.com/college.

HarperCollins® and ® are registered trademarks of HarperCollins Publishers Inc.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

The HarperCollins Bible commentary / general editor, James L. Mays; associate editors, Beverly R. Gaventa . . . [et al.] with the Society of Biblical Literature.— Rev. ed.
p. cm.
Rev. ed. of: Harper's Bible commentary. 1988.
Includes bibliographical references.
ISBN 0-06-065548-8 (cloth)
1. Bible—Commentaries. I. Title: Bible commentary. II. Title: HarperCollins Bible commentary.
III. Mays, James Luther. IV. Gaventa, Beverly Roberts. V. Society of Biblical Literature.
BS491.2 .H37 2000 00-020818
220.7—dc21

00 01 02 03 04 RRD(C) 10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

General Editor

James Luther Mays, Ph.D.
Cyrus H. McCormick Professor Emeritus of
Hebrew and Old Testament
Union Theological Seminary in Virginia
Richmond, Virginia
Psalms (revised)

Associate Editors

Joseph Blenkinsopp, D.Phil.
John A. O'Brien Professor of Biblical Studies
University of Notre Dame
Notre Dame, Indiana
Introduction to the Prophetic Books

Beverly Roberts Gaventa, Ph.D.
Helen H. P. Manson Professor of New Testament
Literature and Exegesis
Princeton Theological Seminary
Princeton, New Jersey
1 and 2 Thessalonians (revised)

Jon D. Levenson, Ph.D.
Albert A. List Professor of Jewish Studies
Department of Near Eastern Languages and
Civilization
Harvard University
Cambridge, Massachusetts

Wayne A. Meeks, Ph.D.
Woolsey Professor of Biblical Studies
Yale University
New Haven, Connecticut

Carol Ann Newsom, Ph.D.
Professor of Old Testament
Candler School of Theology
Emory University
Atlanta, Georgia
Psalms (revised)

David L. Petersen, Ph.D.
Clifford E. Baldridge Professor of Biblical Studies
Iliff School of Theology
Denver, Colorado
Zechariah

Gene M. Tucker, Ph.D.
Professor of Old Testament, Emeritus
Candler School of Theology
Emory University
Atlanta, Georgia
Hosea

Paul J. Achtemeier, Th.D.
Herbert Worth and Anne H. Jackson Professor of Biblical Interpretation, Emeritus
Union Theological Seminary in Virginia
Richmond, Virginia
1 Peter

Luis Alonso-Schökel, Dr. S. S. (dec.)
Professor of Old Testament Theology
Pontificio Istituto Biblico
Rome, Italy
Judith

Harold W. Attridge, Ph.D.
Lillian Claus Professor of New Testament
Yale Divinity School
New Haven, Connecticut
Hebrews

David E. Aune, Ph.D.
Professor of New Testament and Early Christianity
Loyola University
Chicago, Illinois
The Bible and the Literature of Antiquity: The Greco-Roman Period; Revelation

William Baird, Ph.D.
Professor Emeritus of New Testament
Brite Divinity School
Texas Christian University
Fort Worth, Texas
Galatians

James Barr, Ph.D.
Distinguished Professor of Hebrew Bible, Emeritus
Vanderbilt University Divinity School
Nashville, Tennessee
Claremont, California
The Bible and Its Communities

John Barton, D. Phil.
Oriel and Laing Professor of the Intepretation of Holy Scripture
Oriel College
Oxford University
Oxford, England
Reading and Interpreting the Bible

Jouette M. Bassler, Ph.D.
Professor of New Testament
Perkins School of Theology
Southern Methodist University
Dallas, Texas
1, 2 Timothy; Titus

Richard J. Bauckham, Ph.D.
Professor of New Testament Studies
St. Mary's College
University of St. Andrews
St. Andrews, Scotland
2 Peter; Jude

Theodore A. Bergren, Ph.D.
Associate Professor of New Testament, Christian Origins
University of Richmond
Richmond, Virginia
2 Esdras (with Michael E. Stone)

Adele Berlin, Ph.D.
Professor of Hebrew
University of Maryland
College Park, Maryland
Ruth

William P. Brown, Ph.D.
Associate Professor of Old Testament
Union Theological Seminary and Presbyterian School of Christian Education
Richmond, Virginia
Introduction to Psalms and Wisdom

David J. A. Clines, D. Phil.
Professor of Biblical Studies
University of Sheffield
Sheffield, England
Introduction to the Biblical Story: Genesis–Esther; Esther

Robert L. Cohn, Ph.D.
Philip and Muriel Berman Professor of Jewish Studies
Lafayette College
Easton, Pennsylvania
1 Samuel

Adela Yarbro Collins, Ph.D.
Professor of New Testament
Divinity School
University of Chicago
Chicago, Illinois
Introduction to Books in the Form of Narrative

John J. Collins, Ph.D.
Professor of Hebrew Bible and Postbiblical Judaism
Divinity School
University of Chicago
Chicago, Illinois
Introduction to the Apocrypha; 3 Maccabees

Charles B. Cousar, Ph.D.
Samuel A. Cartledge Professor of New Testament
Columbia Theological Seminary
Decatur, Georgia
Introduction to Books in the Form of Letters

Fred B. Craddock, Ph.D.
Bandy Distinguished Professor of Preaching and New Testament, Emeritus
Candler School of Theology
Emory University
Atlanta, Georgia
The Bible: The Book of Books; Luke

Sidnie White Crawford, Ph.D.
Associate Professor of Hebrew Bible and Chair of Classics
University of Nebraska
Lincoln, Nebraska
Jonah

James L. Crenshaw, Ph.D.
Robert L. Flowers Professor of Old Testament
Duke University
Durham, North Carolina
Sirach

R. Alan Culpepper, Ph.D.
Dean and Professor of New Testament
McAfee School of Theology
Mercer University
Atlanta, Georgia
1, 2, 3 John

Nils Alstrup Dahl, Dr. Theol.
Buckingham Professor Emeritus of New Testament Criticism and Interpretation
Yale University
New Haven, Connecticut
Ephesians (with Donald H. Juel)

John R. Donahue, S.J., Ph.D.
Professor of New Testament
Jesuit School of Theology at Berkeley
Graduate Theological Union
Berkeley, California
Mark

J. Cheryl Exum, Ph.D.
Professor of Biblical Studies
University of Sheffield
Sheffield, England
Judges

Elisabeth Schüssler Fiorenza, Dr. Theol.
Krister Stendahl Professor of Scripture and Interpretation
Harvard University Divinity School
Cambridge, Massachusetts
1 Corinthians

Michael H. Floyd, Ph.D.
Professor of Old Testament
Episcopal Theological Seminary of the Southwest
Austin, Texas
Obadiah

Carole R. Fontaine, Ph.D.
Professor of Hebrew Scriptures
Andover Newton Theological School
Newton, Massachusetts
Proverbs

Michael V. Fox, Ph.D.
Weinstein-Bascom Professor in Jewish Studies
University of Wisconsin
Madison, Wisconsin
Song of Songs

Victor Paul Furnish, Ph.D.
University Distinguished Professor of New Testament
Perkins School of Theology
Southern Methodist University
Dallas, Texas
2 Corinthians

Edwin M. Good, Ph.D.
Professor of Religious Studies
Stanford University
Stanford, California
Job

Frank H. Gorman, Jr., Ph.D.
R. W. Phillips Chair of Religious Studies
Bethany College
Bethany, West Virginia
Leviticus

Norman K. Gottwald, Ph.D.
Adjunct Professor of Old Testament
Pacific School of Religion
Berkeley, California
Lamentations

David M. Gunn, Ph.D.
A. A. Bradford Professor of Religion
Texas Christian University
Fort Worth, Texas
2 Samuel

Paul D. Hanson, Ph.D.
Florence Corliss Lamont Professor of Divinity
Harvard University Divinity School
Cambridge, Massachusetts
Malachi

Daniel J. Harrington, S.J., Ph.D.
Professor of New Testament
Weston Jesuit School of Theology
Cambridge, Masachusetts
Baruch; Letter of Jeremiah; Prayer of Manasseh; Psalm 151

Ronald F. Hock, Ph.D.
Professor of Religion
University of Southern California
Los Angeles, California
Philippians

Carl R. Holladay, Ph.D.
Professor of New Testament
Candler School of Theology
Emory University
Atlanta, Georgia
Acts

E. Elizabeth Johnson, Ph.D.
Professor of New Testament Language, Literature, and Exegesis
Columbia Theological Seminary
Decatur, Georgia
Colossians

Luke Timothy Johnson, Ph.D.
Robert W. Woodruff Professor of New Testament and Christian Origins
Candler School of Theology
Emory University
Atlanta, Georgia
James

Donald H. Juel, Ph.D.
Professor of New Testament Theology
Princeton Theological Seminary
Princeton, New Jersey
Ephesians (with Nils Alstrup Dahl)

Ralph W. Klein, Th.D.
Dean and Christ Seminary-Seminex Professor of Old Testament
Lutheran School of Theology at Chicago
Chicago, Illinois
Ezra; Nehemiah; 1 Esdras

John S. Kselman, Ph.D.
Professor of Old Testament
Weston Jesuit School of Theology
Cambridge, Massachusetts
Genesis

Amy-Jill Levine, Ph.D.
Professor of New Testament
Vanderbilt University
Nashville, Tennessee
The Additions to Esther

Peter Machinist, Ph.D.
Hancock Professor of Hebrew and Other Oriental Languages
Department of Near Eastern Languages and Civilization
Harvard University
Cambridge, Massachusetts
Nahum

W. Eugene March, Ph.D.
A. B. Rhodes Professor of Old Testament and Dean
Louisville Presbyterian Theological Seminary
Louisville, Kentucky
Micah

S. Dean McBride, Jr., Ph.D.
Cyrus H. McCormick Professor of Hebrew and Old Testament Interpretation
Union Theological Seminary in Virginia
Richmond, Virginia
Biblical Literature in Its Historical Context: The Old Testament

P. Kyle McCarter, Jr., Ph.D.
W. F. Albright Professor of Biblical and Ancient Near Eastern Studies
Department of Near Eastern Studies
Johns Hopkins University
Baltimore, Maryland
Exodus

Paul W. Meyer, Th.D.
Helen H. P. Manson Professor of New Testament Literature and Exegesis, Emeritus
Princeton Theological Seminary
Princeton, New Jersey
Romans

Margaret M. Mitchell, Ph.D.
Associate Professor of New Testament
Divinity School
University of Chicago
Chicago, Illinois
Biblical Literature in Its Historical Context: The Apocrypha and the New Testament

Richard D. Nelson, Ph.D.
Kraft Professor of Biblical Studies
Lutheran Theological Seminary
Gettysburg, Pennsylvania
Deuteronomy; 1 and 2 Kings

George W. E. Nickelsburg, Th.D.
Professor of New Testament and Early Judaism
The University of Iowa
Iowa City, Iowa
Tobit

Julia Myers O'Brien, Ph.D.
Professor of Old Testament
Lancaster Theological Seminary
Lancaster, Pennsylvania
Amos

Kathleen M. O'Connor, Ph.D.
Professor of Old Testament Language, Literature, and Exegesis
Columbia Theological Seminary
Decatur, Georgia
Joel

Margaret S. Odell, Ph.D.
Assistant Professor of Old Testament
St. Olaf College
Northfield, Minnesota
Zephaniah

Dennis T. Olson, Ph.D.
Associate Professor of Old Testament
Princeton Theological Seminary
Princeton, New Jersey
Numbers

Thomas W. Overholt, Ph.D.
Professor of Religious Studies
University of Wisconsin
Stevens Point, Wisconsin
Jeremiah

Pheme Perkins, Ph.D.
Professor of Theology (New Testament)
Boston College
Chestnut Hill, Massachusetts
1 and 2 Thessalonians

Norman R. Petersen, Ph.D.
Professor of Biblical Studies
Williams College
Williamstown, Massachusetts
Philemon

Mark Allan Powell, Ph.D.
Robert and Phyllis Leatherman Professor of New Testament
Trinity Lutheran Seminary
Columbus, Ohio
Matthew

Walter E. Rast, Ph.D.
Senior Research Professor, Department of Theology
Valparaiso University
Valparaiso, Indiana
Joshua

James M. Reese, S.T.D. (dec.)
Associate Professor, Department of Theology
St. John's University
Jamaica, New York
Wisdom of Solomon

Kent Harold Richards, Ph.D.
Professor of Old Testament
Iliff School of Theology
Denver, Colorado
and Executive Director
Society of Biblical Literature
Atlanta, Georgia
Haggai

J. J. M. Roberts, Ph.D.
W. H. Green Professor of Old Testament Literature
Princeton Theological Seminary
Princeton, New Jersey
The Bible and the Literature of Antiquity: The Ancient Near East

Lawrence H. Schiffman, Ph.D.
Ethel and Irwin A. Edelman Professor of Hebrew and Judaic Studies
New York University
New York, New York
1 Maccabees; 2 Maccabees

C. Leong Seow, Ph.D.
Associate Professor of Old Testament
Princeton Theological Seminary
Princeton, New Jersey
Ecclesiastes

Gerald T. Sheppard, Ph.D.
Professor of Old Testament
Emmanuel College of Victoria University
in the University of Toronto
Toronto, Ontario, Canada
Isaiah

D. Moody Smith, Ph.D.
George Washington Ivey Professor of New Testament
Divinity School
Duke University
Durham, North Carolina
John

Marti J. Steussy, Ph.D.
Associate Professor of Biblical Interpretation
Christian Theological Seminary
Indianapolis, Indiana
The Additions to Daniel

Michael E. Stone, Ph.D.
Professor
Hebrew University
Jerusalem, Israel
2 Esdras (with Theodore A. Bergren)

Stanley K. Stowers, Ph.D.
Professor of Religious Studies and Early Christianity
Brown University
Providence, Rhode Island
4 Maccabees

Carroll Stuhlmueller, C.P., S.S.D.
Professor of Old Testament Studies
Catholic Theological Union at Chicago
Chicago, Illinois
Psalms

Marvin A. Sweeney, Ph.D.
Professor of Hebrew Bible
Claremont School of Theology
and Professor of Religion
Claremont Graduate University
Claremont, California
Habakkuk

Mark A. Throntveit, Ph.D.
Professor of Old Testament
Luther Northwestern Theological Seminary
St. Paul, Minnesota
1 Chronicles; *2 Chronicles*

W. Sibley Towner, Ph.D.
Archibald McFadyen Professor of Biblical Interpretation
Union Theological Seminary and Presbyterian School of Christian Education
Richmond, Virginia
Daniel

Robert R. Wilson, Ph.D.
Hoober Professor of Religious Studies and Professor of Old Testament
Yale University
New Haven, Connecticut
Ezekiel

General

Gk.	Greek
Heb.	Hebrew
Lat.	Latin
Dt.	Deuteronomic
Dtr.	Deuteronomistic historian
EB	Early Bronze Age
LB	Late Bronze Age
MB	Middle Bronze Age
DSS	Dead Sea Scrolls
LXX	Septuagint
MT	Masoretic Text
NT	New Testament
OG	Old Greek
OT	Old Testament
TH	Theodotion
Vg.	Vulgate
chap(s).	chapter(s)
col(s).	column(s)
fol(s).	folio(s)
ms(s).	manuscript(s)
n(n).	note(s)
pl(s).	plates
p(p).	page(s)
vol(s).	volume(s)
vs(s).	version(s)
v(v).	verse(s)
ASV	American Standard Version
JB	Jerusalem Bible
JBS	New Jewish Translation/Jewish Bible Society
JPS	Jewish Publication Society
KJV	King James Version
NAB	New American Bible
NASB	New American Standard Bible
NEB	New English Bible
NIV	New International Version
NJB	New Jerusalem Bible
NJPS	New Jewish Publication Society
NKJV	New King James Version
NRSV	New Revised Standard Version
REB	Revised English Bible
RSV	Revised Standard Version
TEV	Today's English Version
→	Further information can be found in *HarperCollins Bible Dictionary* under the article(s) listed.

BOOKS OF THE BIBLE (WITH APOCRYPHA)

Old Testament

Gen.	Genesis
Exod.	Exodus
Lev.	Leviticus
Num.	Numbers
Deut.	Deuteronomy
Josh.	Joshua
Judg.	Judges
Ruth	Ruth
1 Sam.	1 Samuel
2 Sam.	2 Samuel
1 Kings	1 Kings
2 Kings	2 Kings
1 Chron.	1 Chronicles
2 Chron.	2 Chronicles
Ezra	Ezra
Neh.	Nehemiah
Esther	Esther
Job	Job
Ps. (Pss.)	Psalms
Prov.	Proverbs
Eccles.	Ecclesiastes
Song of Sg.	Song of Songs
Isa.	Isaiah
Jer.	Jeremiah
Lam.	Lamentations
Ezek.	Ezekiel
Dan.	Daniel
Hos.	Hosea
Joel	Joel
Amos	Amos
Obad.	Obadiah
Jon.	Jonah
Mic.	Micah
Nah.	Nahum
Hab.	Habakkuk
Zeph.	Zephaniah
Hag.	Haggai
Zech.	Zechariah
Mal.	Malachi

Apocrypha

1 Esd.	1 Esdras
2 Esd.	2 Esdras
Tob.	Tobit
Jth.	Judith
Add. to Esther	Additions to Esther
Wisd. of Sol.	Wisdom of Solomon
Sir. (Ecclus.)	Sirach (Ecclesiasticus)
Bar.	Baruch
Let. Jer.	Letter of Jeremiah
Add. to Dan.	Additions to Daniel
Song of Three Youths	Song of the Three Youths
Sus.	Susanna
Bel and Dragon	Bel and the Dragon
Pr. of Man.	Prayer of Manasseh
1 Macc.	1 Maccabees
2 Macc.	2 Maccabees
3 Macc.	3 Maccabees
4 Macc.	4 Maccabees
Ps. 151	Psalm 151

New Testament

Matt.	Matthew
Mark	Mark
Luke	Luke
John	John
Acts	Acts of the Apostles
Rom.	Romans
1 Cor.	1 Corinthians
2 Cor.	2 Corinthians
Gal.	Galatians
Eph.	Ephesians
Phil.	Philippians
Col.	Colossians
1 Thess.	1 Thessalonians
2 Thess.	2 Thessalonians
1 Tim.	1 Timothy
2 Tim.	2 Timothy
Titus	Titus
Philem.	Philemon
Heb.	Hebrews
James	James
1 Pet.	1 Peter
2 Pet.	2 Peter
1 John	1 John
2 John	2 John
3 John	3 John
Jude	Jude
Rev.	Revelation

Pseudepigrapha and Early Patristic Books

Adam and Eve	*Books of Adam and Eve*
2–3 Apoc. Bar.	Syriac, Greek *Apocalypse of Baruch*
Apoc. Mos.	*Apocalypse of Moses*
As. Mos.	*Assumption of Moses*
1–2–3 Enoch	Ethiopic, Slavonic, Hebrew *Enoch*
Jos. Asen.	*Joseph and Aseneth*
Jub.	*Jubilees*
Let. Arist.	*Letter of Aristeas*
Mart. Isa.	*Martyrdom of Isaiah*
Odes Sol.	*Odes of Solomon*
Pss. Sol.	*Psalms of Solomon*
Sib. Or.	*Sibylline Oracles*
T. 12 Patr.	*Testaments of the Twelve Patriarchs*
T. Levi	*Testament of Levi*
T. Benj.	*Testament of Benjamin*, etc.
Acts Pil.	*Acts of Pilate*
Apoc. Pet.	*Apocalypse of Peter*
Gos. Eb.	*Gospel of the Ebionites*
Gos. Eg.	*Gospel of the Egyptians*
Gos. Heb.	*Gospel of the Hebrews*
Gos. Naass.	*Gospel of the Naassenes*
Gos. Pet.	*Gospel of Peter*
Gos. Thom.	*Gospel of Thomas*
Prot. Jas.	*Protoevangelium of James*
1–2 Clem.	*1–2 Clement*
Did.	*Didache*
Diogn.	*Diognetus*
Herm. Man.	*Hermas, Mandates*
Herm. Sim.	*Hermas, Similitudes*
Herm. Vis.	*Hermas, Visions*
Ign. *Eph.*	Ignatius, *Letter to the Ephesians*
Ign. *Magn.*	Ignatius, *Letter to the Magnesians*
Ign. *Phld.*	Ignatius, *Letter to the Philadelphians*
Ign. *Pol.*	Ignatius, *Letter to Polycarp*
Ign. *Rom.*	Ignatius, *Letter to the Romans*
Ign. *Smyrn.*	Ignatius, *Letter to the Smyrnaeans*
Ign. *Trall.*	Ignatius, *Letter to the Trallians*
Mart. Pol.	*Martyrdom of Polycarp*
Pol. *Phil.*	Polycarp, *Letter to the Philippians*
Bib. Ant.	Ps.-Philo, *Biblical Antiquities*

Dead Sea Scrolls and Related Texts

CD	Cairo Genizah text of the *Damascus Document*
Hev	Nahal Hever texts
Mas	Masada texts
Mird	Khirbet Mird texts
Mur	Wadi Murabba'at texts
Q	Qumran
QL	Qumran literature
1Q, 2Q, 3Q, etc.	Numbered caves of Qumran, yielding written material; followed by abbreviation of biblical book or other writing
1QapGen ar	*Genesis Apocryphon*
1QH[a]	*Hodayot*[a] or *Thanksgiving Hymns*[a]
1QpHab	*Pesher Habakkuk*
1QIsa[a,b]	Isaiah[a], Isaiah[b]
1QM	*Milhamah* or *War Scroll*
1QS	*Serekh ha-Yahad* or *Rule of the Community* (formerly *Manual of Discipline*)
1QSa	*Rule of the Congregation* (Appendix A to 1QS)
1QSb	*Rule of the Blessings* (Appendix B to 1QS)
3Q15	*Copper Scroll*
4QCommGen A	*Commentary on Genesis A* (formerly *Patriarchal Blessings* or *Pesher Genesis*)
4QDibHam[a]	*Dibre Hamme'orot*[a] or *Words of the Heavenly Luminaries*[a]
4QFlor (MidrEschat[a])	*Florilegium*, also *Midrash on Eschatology*[a]
4QJudg	Judges
4QMessAp	*Messianic Apocalypse*
4QPrNab ar	*Prayer of Nabonidus*
4QPseudoDan	Pseudo-Daniel
4QShir[a]	*Shirot*[a] or *Songs of the Sage*[a]
4QShirShab[a]	*Songs of the Sabbath Sacrifice*[a]
4QTest	*Testimonia*
11QApPs[a]	*Apocryphal Psalms*[a]
11QtgJob	*Targum of Job*
11QMelch	*Melchizedek*
11QPs[a]	*Psalms Scroll*[a]
11QT[a]	*Temple Scroll*[a]

Targumic Material

Tg. Onq.	*Targum Onqelos*
Tg. Neb.	*Targum of the Prophets*
Tg. Ket.	*Targum of the Writings*
Frg. Tg.	*Fragmentary Targum*
Sam. Tg.	*Samaritan Targum*
Tg. Isa.	*Targum of Isaiah*
Tg. Neof.	*Targum Neofiti 1*
Tg. Ps.-J.	*Targum Pseudo-Jonathan*
Tg. Yer. I	*Targum Yerusalmi I*
Tg. Yer. II	*Targum Yerusalmi II*
Yem. Tg.	*Yemenite Targum*
Tg. Esth. I, II	*First or Second Targum of Esther*

Mishnaic and Related Literature

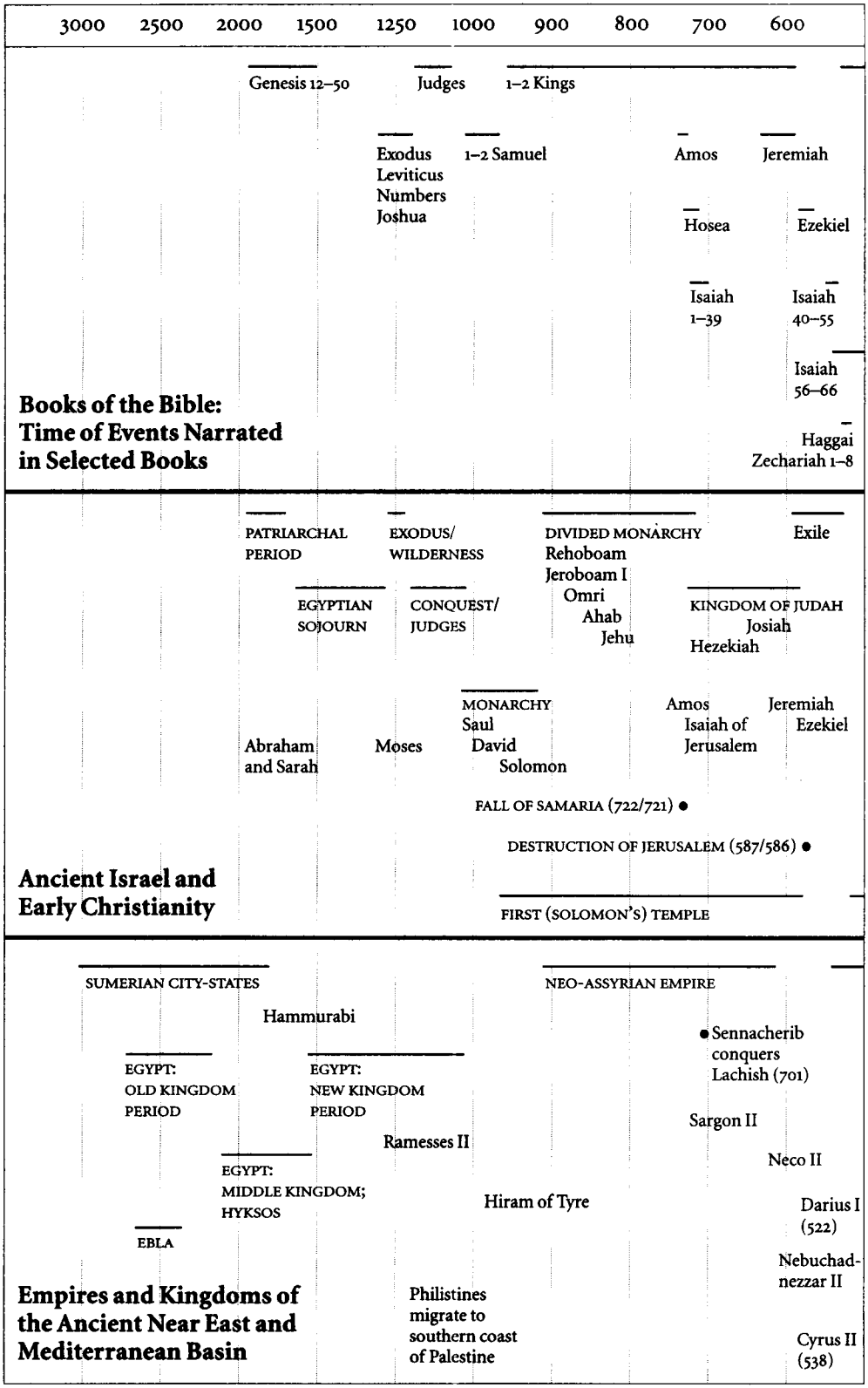
m.	Mishnah
t.	Tosefta
b.	Babylonian Talmud
y.	Jerusalem (Palestinian) Talmud
Abod. Zar.	*Aboda Zarah*
Abot	*Abot*
Arak.	*Arakhin*
B. Bat.	*Baba Batra*
Bek.	*Bekhorot*
Ber.	*Berakhot*
Besah	*Besah (= Yom Tob)*
Bik.	*Bikkurim*
B. Mes.	*Baba Mesia*
B. Qam.	*Baba Qamma*
Dem.	*Demai*
Eduy.	*Eduyyot*
Erub.	*Erubin*
Git.	*Gittin*
Hag.	*Hagigah*
Hal.	*Hallah*
Hor.	*Horayot*
Hul.	*Hullin*
Kel.	*Kelim*
Ker.	*Keritot*
Ket.	*Ketubbot*
Kil.	*Kilayim*
Maas.	*Maaserot*
Maas. Sh.	*Maaser Sheni*
Mak.	*Makkot*
Makh.	*Makhshirin*
Meg.	*Megillah*
Meil.	*Meilah*
Men.	*Menahot*
Mid.	*Middot*
Miq.	*Miqwaot*
Moed	*Moed*
Moed Q.	*Moed Qatan*
Nashim	*Nashim*
Naz.	*Nazir*
Ned.	*Nedarim*
Neg.	*Negaim*
Nez.	*Neziqin*
Nid.	*Niddah*
Ohal.	*Ohalot*
Orlah	*Orlah*
Parah	*Parah*
Peah	*Peah*
Pes.	*Pesahim*
Qid.	*Qiddushin*
Qin.	*Qinnim*
Qod.	*Qodashim*
Rosh HaSh.	*Rosh HaShanah*
Sanh.	*Sanhedrin*
Shab.	*Shabbat*
Shebi.	*Shebiit*
Shebu.	*Shebuot*
Sheq.	*Sheqalim*
Sot.	*Sotah*
Suk.	*Sukkah*
Taan.	*Taanit*
Tam.	*Tamid*
Tem.	*Temurah*
Ter.	*Terumot*
Toh.	*Toharot*
T. Yom	*Tebul Yom*
Uqsin	*Uqsin*
Yad.	*Yadayim*
Yeb.	*Yebamot*
Yoma	*Yoma*
Zab.	*Zabim*
Zeb.	*Zebahim*
Zer.	*Zeraim*

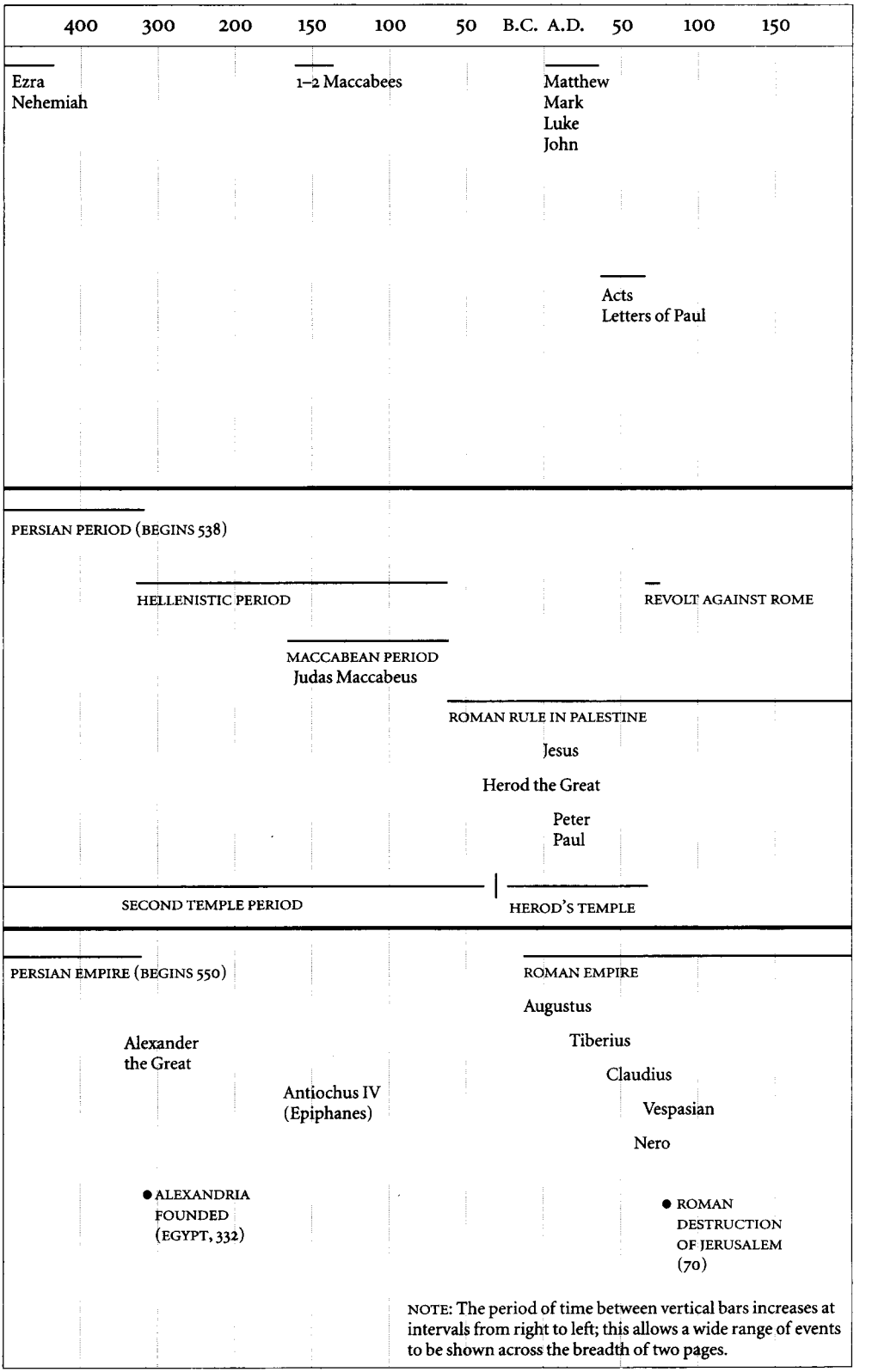
Other Rabbinic Works

Abot R. Nat.	*Abot de-Rabbi Natan*
Ag. Ber.	*Aggadat Bereshit*
Der. Er. Rab.	*Derekh Eres Rabbah*
Der. Er. Zut.	*Derekh Eres Zuta*
Mek.	*Mekhilta de-Rabbi Yishmael*
Midr.	*Midrash*
Pesiq. R.	*Pesiqta Rabbati*
Pesiq. Rab Kah.	*Pesiqta de-Rab Kahana*
Pirqe R. El.	*Pirqe de-Rabbi Eliezer*
Rab.	*Rabbah*
Sem.	*Semahot*
Sifra	*Sifra*
Sifre	*Sifre*
Sof.	*Soferim*
S. Olam Rab.	*Seder Olam Rabbah*
Yal.	*Yalqut*

Nag Hammadi Tractates

Acts Pet. 12 Apost.	*Acts of Peter and the Twelve Apostles*
Allogenes	*Allogenes*
Ap. Jas.	*Apocryphon of James*
Ap. John	*Apocryphon of John*
Apoc. Adam	*Apocalypse of Adam*
1 Apoc. Jas.	*First Apocalypse of James*
2 Apoc. Jas.	*Second Apocalypse of James*
Apoc. Paul	*Apocalypse of Paul*
Apoc. Pet.	*Apocalypse of Peter*
Asclepius	*Asclepius 21–29*
Auth. Teach.	*Authoritative Teaching*
Dial. Sav.	*Dialogue of the Savior*
Disc. 8–9	*Discourse on the Eighth and Ninth*
Ep. Pet. Phil.	*Letter of Peter to Philip*
Eugnostos	*Eugnostos the Blessed*
Exeg. Soul	*Exegesis on the Soul*
Gos. Eg.	*Gospel of the Egyptians*
Gos. Phil	*Gospel of Philip*
Gos. Thom.	*Gospel of Thomas*
Gos. Truth	*Gospel of Truth*
Great Pow.	*Concept of our Great Power*
Hyp. Arch.	*Hypostasis of the Archons*
Hypsiph.	*Hypsiphrone*
Interp. Know.	*Interpretation of Knowledge*
Marsanes	*Marsanes*
Melch.	*Melchizedek*
Norea	*Thought of Norea*
On Bap. A	*On Baptism A*
On Bap. B	*On Baptism B*
On Bap. C	*On Baptism C*
On Euch. A	*On the Eucharist A*
On Euch. B	*On the Eucharist B*
Orig. World	*On the Origin of the World*
Paraph. Shem	*Paraphrase of Shem*
Pr. Paul	*Prayer of the Apostle Paul*
Pr. Thanks.	*Prayer of Thanksgiving*
Sent. Sextus	*Sentences of Sextus*
Soph. Jes. Chr.	*Sophia of Jesus Christ*
Steles Seth	*Three Steles of Seth*
Teach. Silv.	*Teachings of Silvanus*
Testim. Truth	*Testimony of Truth*
Thom. Cont.	*Book of Thomas the Contender*
Thund.	*Thunder, Perfect Mind*
Treat. Res.	*Treatise on Resurrection*
Treat. Seth	*Second Treatise of the Great Seth*
Tri. Trac.	*Tripartite Tractate*
Trim. Prot.	*Trimorphic Protennoia*
Val. Exp.	*A Valentinian Exposition*
Zost.	*Zostrianos*


3000
2500
2000
1500
1250
1000
900
800
700
600
Genesis 12–50
Judges
1–2 Kings
Exodus
Leviticus
Numbers
Joshua
1–2 Samuel
Amos
Jeremiah
Hosea
Ezekiel
Isaiah 1–39
Isaiah 40–55
Isaiah 56–66
Haggai
Zechariah 1–8
Books of the Bible: Time of Events Narrated in Selected Books
PATRIARCHAL PERIOD
EXODUS/ WILDERNESS
DIVIDED MONARCHY
Exile
Rehoboam
Jeroboam I
Omri
Ahab
Jehu
EGYPTIAN SOJOURN
CONQUEST/ JUDGES
KINGDOM OF JUDAH
Josiah
Hezekiah
MONARCHY
Saul
David
Solomon
Amos
Isaiah of Jerusalem
Jeremiah
Ezekiel
Abraham and Sarah
Moses
FALL OF SAMARIA (722/721)
DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM (587/586)
Ancient Israel and Early Christianity
FIRST (SOLOMON'S) TEMPLE
SUMERIAN CITY-STATES
NEO-ASSYRIAN EMPIRE
Hammurabi
Sennacherib conquers Lachish (701)
EGYPT: OLD KINGDOM PERIOD
EGYPT: NEW KINGDOM PERIOD
Sargon II
Ramesses II
Neco II
EGYPT: MIDDLE KINGDOM; HYKSOS
Hiram of Tyre
Darius I (522)
EBLA
Nebuchad-nezzar II
Philistines migrate to southern coast of Palestine
Cyrus II (538)
Empires and Kingdoms of the Ancient Near East and Mediterranean Basin



NOTE: The period of time between vertical bars increases at intervals from right to left; this allows a wide range of events to be shown across the breadth of two pages.

Contents

Editorial Board v

Contributors vi

Abbreviations xi

Timelines xvi

Preface *by James L. Mays* xxiii

INTRODUCTION

The Bible: The Book of Books 2

The Bible and Its Communities 20

Biblical Literature in Its Historical Context:
The Old Testament 28

Biblical Literature in Its Historical Context:
The Apocrypha and the New Testament 39

The Bible and the Literature of Antiquity:
The Ancient Near East 50

The Bible and the Literature of Antiquity:
The Greco-Roman Period 58

Reading and Interpreting the Bible 65

PART ONE: THE BIBLICAL STORY, GENESIS–ESTHER

Introduction, 74

Genesis, 83
Exodus, 119
Leviticus, 145
Numbers, 167
Deuteronomy, 189
Joshua, 214
Judges, 223
Ruth, 240
1 Samuel, 245
2 Samuel, 262
1, 2 Kings, 279
1 Chronicles, 312
2 Chronicles, 325
Ezra, 338
Nehemiah, 345
Esther, 353

PART TWO: PSALMS AND WISDOM

Introduction, 360
Job, 369
Psalms, 394
Proverbs, 447
Ecclesiastes, 466
Song of Songs, 472

PART THREE: THE PROPHETIC BOOKS

Introduction, 480
Isaiah, 489
Jeremiah, 538
Lamentations, 577
Ezekiel, 583
Daniel, 623
Hosea, 635
Joel, 643
Amos, 648
Obadiah, 653
Jonah, 656
Micah, 660
Nahum, 665
Habakkuk, 668
Zephaniah, 671
Haggai, 675
Zechariah, 677
Malachi, 683

PART FOUR: THE APOCRYPHA

Introduction, 688
1 Esdras, 698
2 Esdras, 705
Tobit, 719
Judith, 732
The Additions to Esther, 742
Wisdom of Solomon, 749
Sirach, 764
Baruch, 781
Letter of Jeremiah, 787
The Additions to Daniel, 789
Song of the Three Youths, 789
Susanna, 791
Bel and the Dragon, 794
Prayer of Manasseh, 797
1 Maccabees, 800
2 Maccabees, 820
3 Maccabees, 837
4 Maccabees, 844
Psalm 151, 856

PART FIVE: BOOKS IN THE FORM OF NARRATIVE
(THE GOSPELS AND ACTS)

Introduction, 858
Matthew, 868
Mark, 901
Luke, 925
John, 956
Acts, 987

PART SIX: BOOKS IN THE FORM OF LETTERS
(THE PAULINE LETTERS AND THE GENERAL LETTERS TO THE CHURCHES)

Introduction, 1026

Romans, 1038
1 Corinthians, 1074
2 Corinthians, 1093
Galatians, 1105
Ephesians, 1113
Philippians, 1121
Colossians, 1126
1, 2 Thessalonians, 1131
1, 2 Timothy and Titus, 1137
Philemon, 1146
Hebrews, 1149
James, 1162
1 Peter, 1168
2 Peter, 1175
1, 2, 3 John, 1178
Jude, 1184
Revelation, 1187

The arrow symbol (→) used in this book indicates that additional information can be found in *The HarperCollins Bible Dictionary* in the article(s) named following the arrow; for example (→ Corinth) or (→ Samuel; Saul).

Preface

JAMES L. MAYS

The Bible demands commentary because of its importance and character. It contains the sacred Scriptures of Judaism and Christianity and the primal literature of our culture; its significance for religion and culture calls for perennial work to interpret its texts in every generation. The books collected in the Bible were written in three different languages, in a succession of cultures, across centuries of time. To understand them, we need to call upon all the resources that the new knowledge available in our time can provide about their languages, cultures, and thought.

In this Commentary the members of the Society of Biblical Literature together with HarperCollins Publishers have undertaken to respond to that demand. The Commentary is designed to make the best current scholarship available to general audiences for reading and studying the books of the Bible. The contributors are all specialists in their subjects, but they use a style and vocabulary that will make their scholarship accessible to all who seek help in understanding the Bible. The general public, students, and teachers will all find in this Commentary a kind of interpretive writing that, on the one hand, does justice to the demands of the Bible for serious scholarship and, on the other, speaks to all who seek to use the Bible with discernment.

Like the *HarperCollins Bible Dictionary,* this Commentary is the result of a cooperative effort between the Society of Biblical Literature and HarperCollins Publishers. The Society of Biblical Literature has assumed responsibility for the conception and content of the Commentary. As the major association of biblical scholars in North America, the Society has been able to enlist a panel of contributors from North America and abroad particularly qualified to write on the subjects assigned them. HarperCollins has brought to the project its outstanding experience and competence in designing and publishing resources for biblical study. The result is a volume of the highest usefulness and quality.

The *HarperCollins Bible Commentary* and the *HarperCollins Bible Dictionary* are companion volumes. They have been planned and written to complement each other. The Dictionary deals with the Bible in terms of subjects, the Commentary in terms of books. Of course each volume stands on its own, is complete in itself, and can be used independently, but one enriches and extends the resources available in the other. Used together, Commentary and Dictionary compose a little library for biblical study that is unique in comprehensiveness and usefulness for such a compact set.

The contributors were selected because of their recognized competence in the interpretation of the particular subjects and literature on which they have written. The contributors are diverse as a group, coming from the two major religious traditions that have the Bible as their heritage. Their contributions to the Commentary put their learning to work to interpret the biblical books as documents of the times in which the books were written. The editors have not sought to impose artificial uniformity on the contributors. The positions and approaches presented in this volume represent the mainstream of scholarship typical of the Society of Biblical Literature; eccentric and improbable positions are avoided. The individual commentaries and articles, however, do express the learning and judgment of their

authors as scholars. As a result, the volume includes a rich diversity of biblical scholarship. Those who use this Commentary encounter the variety that characterizes the continuing work of scholarship on the Bible rather than the single approach of one school of interpretation.

The Plan of the Commentary

The focus of the Commentary is on the books of the Bible. The commentary on a particular book offers an interpretation based primarily on the book's structure and language. Behind many of the biblical books is a long history of development. Scholarly interpretation works in light of the history of a book's composition, but here the concern is not primarily with the history of the formation of the book. The goal, rather, is to help readers understand and appreciate the books as documents of the religious communities in which they arose.

The Commentary introduces and interprets all of the Hebrew Scriptures, the books of the Apocrypha, and those in the New Testament. It thus covers the biblical canons of Judaism, Catholicism, Eastern Orthodoxy, and Protestantism. To the traditional list of books that make up the Apocrypha have been added 3 Maccabees, 4 Maccabees, and Psalm 151 because of their importance as literature and the regard in which they are held by the Eastern Orthodox churches.

The Commentary introduces the books of the Bible in three ways. A set of general articles at the beginning of the volume deals with matters that concern the entire Bible (e.g., "Reading and Interpreting the Bible"). A second series of articles introduces the parts of the Bible in which the books show a similarity and have a relationship to each other (e.g., "Introduction to the Biblical Story: Genesis–Esther"). Then there are the commentaries on the individual books. This plan provides readers with three approaches for study: to the Bible as a whole, to the major divisions of its literature, and to the particular books. By reversing the order and combining the approaches, one book of the Bible can be put in successively broader contexts. For instance, the book of Amos can be studied in detail in the commentary "Amos." Then it can be read in its relation to other prophetic books in "Introduction to the Prophetic Books." And finally, it can be read in the context of prophecy's historical course in Israel and the ancient Near East in "Biblical Literature in Its Historical Context: The Old Testament."

General Articles

The general articles in the Introduction are comprehensive and integrative. Their number has been kept to a minimum to avoid separating related matters into the subjects of many short treatments. Instead, subjects are held together so that readers can learn about them in their connectedness. For instance, rather than having one article on the history of Israel and others treating the historical setting of the Hebrew Scriptures, this Commentary provides one article that shows how the Hebrew Scriptures emerged in the course of Israel's unfolding history, thus holding the history of the people and the origin of its sacred literature together. Each of the general articles explores a relationship of the biblical literature that is crucial for its understanding and appreciation.

The first, "The Book of Books," introduces the Bible itself with a description of its character and importance; it illumines the principal reasons the Bible has been and continues to be the object of devoted and intense study. "The Bible and Its Communities" addresses the question of how the Bible came to be a book of books by recounting the ways a succession of

communities have assembled and preserved collections of documents as their sacred literature. The two articles on "Biblical Literature in Its Historical Context" take up the question of how, when, and where the biblical books were composed by relating their emergence to the history of Israel, early Judaism, and Christianity. The pair of articles on "The Bible and the Literature of Antiquity" show how comparing and contrasting biblical books with the other literature of the ancient Near Eastern and Greco-Roman periods sheds light on their form and content. "Reading and Interpreting the Bible" describes the ways in which knowledge of the past and consciousness of the present combine in various approaches to understanding the Bible.

Part Introductory Articles

The articles of the second type, which stand at the beginning of the parts into which the Commentary divides the Bible, offer further introductory help. There are special articles introducing the narrative books of the Hebrew Scriptures, the Psalms and the books of wisdom literature, the books of the prophets, the apocryphal books, the Gospels and Acts, and the books written in the form of letters. These special articles are also comprehensive and integrative in purpose. They discuss in one place the common characteristics and roles of books that have a similarity and relationship. This arrangement helps readers see a book as part of a larger group of literature in which it belongs. It relieves the necessity of a repeated treatment of the same matters in the introductions to particular books. The location of these articles at the beginning of the parts of the Commentary identifies the introductory discussion that is relevant to the following books.

Commentaries on Individual Books

The commentaries on the individual books of the Bible provide an introduction, section-by-section comment on the book, and a bibliography. The introductions furnish the information and orientation needed for reading each book. Because biblical books are so different, the task of particular introductions differs, but generally the introduction describes the literary character and form of the book, locates it in the historical, social, and religious settings in which it was composed, and assesses its role and significance for the community in which it appeared.

The parts, sections, and units into which the text is divided for comment display the structure of the book's contents. These divisions assist in reading and studying the book in light of its own order and arrangement. The headings of the divisions make a running outline of that book of the Bible. Comment on these divisions does not proceed verse by verse, nor is it composed of a series of unrelated explanations of details in the text. Rather, it takes the form of integrated exposition that interprets the unit under discussion as a whole and so gives users a coherent commentary to accompany the reading of that book of the Bible. The aim has been to provide an understandable explanatory guide that may be read alongside the text.

Using the Commentary

This Commentary is compatible with the major contemporary English translations of the Bible rather than being bound to one. This volume may be used profitably with any of them.

The commentators on the individual books often cite one or another of the current English versions where a particular translation helps clarify meaning, but the commentaries are based on the Hebrew, Aramaic, and Greek texts of the Bible. All translations appearing in the volume in quotation marks are those of the commentator unless otherwise identified. Where the original language of the text is cited, a general phonetic system of transliteration is used so that readers may read and pronounce the words, and a translation or explanation always stands immediately beside the transliteration.

A system of reference is used in the articles and commentaries to assist in using the *HarperCollins Bible Dictionary* as a companion. Where the Dictionary contains additional and more detailed information about people and places, topics and terms, methods and judgments, readers are alerted by the use of the arrow symbol (→), e.g., (→ Corinth) or (→ Samuel; Saul).

Historical dates are identified by the use of the designations B.C. and A.D. because these abbreviations are the most widely used and recognized. They are employed here as historical conventions and are not intended to be confessional statements. Dates for persons and events may be found to vary within the Commentary and in comparison to the Dictionary. Such variations, usually small, express the differing best judgments of scholars about matters subject only to estimates of probability.

The *HarperCollins Bible Commentary* is a revision of the *Harper's Bible Commentary,* which appeared in 1988. The publication of a revision of the *Harper's Bible Dictionary* in 1996, the passing of a decade of research and publication, and the positive reception of the Commentary for study in academic and religious settings all supported the preparation of a revision of the Commentary. In the process of revision every retained article and commentary has been reviewed and updated by the original authors or the editors. A number of articles and commentaries are new to this edition. Some changes have been made in the order and arrangement. The references to the Dictionary have been correlated with the new edition and greatly expanded. The size of the volume has been somewhat reduced to make its use in study and class more practical.

The associate editors of the original edition were Joseph Blenkinsopp, Jon Levenson, Wayne A. Meeks, Carol A. Newsom, and David L. Petersen; James L. Mays served as general editor. The work of John Shopp and Kandace Hawkinson on the original edition provided the firm foundation on which this revision is built. For this revision Beverly Gaventa and Gene M. Tucker have joined Carol A. Newsom and David L. Petersen as associate editors. Sally Hicks has cheerfully overcome the complexities of preparing the electronic form of the material. Gregory L. Glover has given prompt and competent administrative support in the office of the Society of Biblical Literature. HarperCollins project editor Judith Kleppe has guided and supported the editors with patience and skill.

The work of writing and publication having been done, it remains for readers to take up the work and enjoy the reward of answering the Bible's demand for understanding. The scholars of the Society of Biblical Literature offer this Commentary in confidence that it will be found useful in that venture.

INTRODUCTION

The Bible

The Book of Books

FRED B. CRADDOCK

The Book of Books

To refer to the Bible as the "Book of Books" pays tribute to its place in Western culture, honors it with a title of elevation similar to "King of Kings" or "Lord of Lords," that is, the Book above all books. Such an interpretation of the expression would not be inappropriate. Far beyond the community in which the Bible is normative and received as revelation, it is held in highest esteem, evoking reverence apart from belief in its messages. In the Western world, the Bible's influence in the history of languages has long been recognized. Without question, the characters, stories, poetry, wise sayings, profound human dramas, and lofty meditations on God within the Bible have been the primary source for more literary and artistic productions than any other book or collection of books. Hundreds of sentences and phrases from the Bible have passed into popular discourse, repeated by persons who have no idea of their source: "She saw the handwriting on the wall"; "I wash my hands of the whole matter"; "Let there be light"; "Lo, the prodigal has returned"; "He was a lamb led to slaughter"; and so on. The Bible is likewise the Book of Books in the realms of moral and ethical discourse. The Ten Commandments and the Sermon on the Mount are without parallel as influences in the shaping of thinking on matters of right and wrong. And all this is without mentioning the obvious, that serious theologies are developed in continuous engagement with the Bible. It is indeed the Book of Books.

However, in a commentary such as this, the phrase "Book of Books" is not so much an expression of honor as a description of content—the Bible is a book made up of many books. In fact, the English word "Bible" is derived from the Greek and Latin word *biblia,* which is plural, and properly so. The Bible is an anthology, or better yet, a library, a fact that would be quite evident were the books individually bound and placed on a shelf. Written over a period of approximately twelve hundred years, these writings reflect a wide range of geographical, political, economic, social, and religious circumstances and present a variety of responses to those circumstances. The communities of faith portrayed in these books gave expression to their faith in richly diverse ways: histories, genealogies, allegories, legends, legal documents, courtroom records, poetry, parables, wise sayings, oracles, divine pronouncements, correspondence, apocalyptic visions, and many more. This diversity in literary forms as well as

PREVIOUS PAGE:
Christ Teaching; *detail of a seventeenth-century etching by Rembrandt van Rijn (1606–1669). Städtliche Kunstsämmlung, Düsseldorf, Germany.*

theological perspectives should alert readers not to move too easily and uncritically from book to book. Concordances are helpful for locating words and phrases, but they can also seduce one into running references and losing sight of the concrete historical embeddedness of each text. However, that these many books have been bound together in one volume testifies to clear evidences that these books do belong together, that there is unity in this Book of Books. The themes of unity and diversity will be developed later in this article, but it should be noted here that neither unity nor diversity should be imposed on the Bible; it will speak for itself on both matters.

The Book

To this point, the word "book" has been used as though it were a proper way of referring to these writings, as though it were descriptive of their nature from the time of their origin. Such is not the case. A book's pages are bound at one edge and readers move through the document by turning pages. This form not only facilitates reading, but also rereading, reviewing, referencing, and cross-referencing. The same cannot be said of the ancestor of the book, the scroll. The codex, or earliest form of the book, became increasingly common by the end of the first century, but scrolls continued to be used for some time (→ Codex; Scroll). The point here is that the form in which one receives a text contributes to the way one experiences that text. Isaiah as a collection of scrolls (a single scroll could not contain longer writings) and Isaiah as a book provide quite different experiences for readers. In addition, referring to all the writings in the Bible as "books" contributes to an unintentional homogenizing, obscuring their literary particularities. Readers who continue to use the traditional phrases such as the "book of Ruth" or the "book of Philemon" or the "book of Revelation" will want to guard against anticipating a common experience in these three "books" of the Bible. A love story, a personal letter, and an apocalyptic vision refuse to be read the same way.

The Bible

All the preceding comments were spawned by the desire to understand what we mean and what others mean when speaking of the "Bible." Of course, among members of the same faith community, meaning is self-evident when references are made to "the "Bible," but not all faith communities have the same Bible. Enlarge the conversation and one begins to speak of the "Bible of such and such community." Judaism, Islam, and Christianity are all communities of the book; that is, sacred Scripture is at the center of religious life. With Islam, the book came first and from it was created a community, but Judaism and Christianity developed in complex reciprocity with their books, and neither community nor book can be understood apart from the other. Whether the community stands under the book (traditional Protestant view) or the book stands under the community (traditional Roman Catholic view) is a debate between partial truths. In practice, the community and the book are in continual conversation. Of course, not all parts of the community directly engage the book; many look to their leaders and scholars for this service, yet reserve for themselves the right to do so at any time. And not all parts of the book equally engage the community; Genesis, Deuteronomy, Isaiah, Psalms, Matthew, Acts, Romans, and Philippians speak more frequently than do Leviticus, 2 Chronicles, Nahum, Obadiah, 2 Thessalonians, 2 Peter, 3 John,

and Jude. But over the course of history, at one time or another, each book has spoken meaningfully to all or part of the community.

For both Judaism and Christianity the final product we now call the Bible did not suddenly appear and the two communities begin to govern belief and behavior thereby. In the course of their development the two faith communities wrote, preserved, collected, adapted, and interpreted the documents that in turn confronted, instructed, encouraged, comforted, and corrected the communities. Even prophets who rang down judgment and doom were themselves members of the community. It is quite remarkable that a community would preserve and honor as authoritative documents that indict the very group in which they were written.

A community's understanding and appreciation of its Bible is enhanced by the realization that many writings produced during its development were not finally granted status as Scripture. Some of these texts were apparently quickly judged as lacking merit, while others lingered helpfully in faith communities here and there. Neither the criteria nor the processes for such decisions are fully retrievable, but certainly factors religious, historical, theological, geographical, and political played a part. Chronology was, of course, a consideration, but the final product offers no evidence that either the Jewish or Christian community fell into the genetic fallacy; that is, that earlier is more authoritative than later. That Deuteronomy was a recasting of the Mosaic law for a later audience and circumstances in no way diminished its place in the Bible. That Matthew was later than Mark did not mean it was less scriptural. Not until relatively recent times have scholars placed a premium on the earliest forms of writings, searching for Ur-Mark or Proto-Luke.

It is important also to bear in mind that Bible making was not always a self-conscious activity. Communities of faith were trying to understand what it meant to be the people of God in given times and places and how to respond to circumstances sometimes friendly, sometimes hostile. Memories had to be preserved lest identity and direction be lost. Both writing and ritual were central to that activity. It is unlikely that writers, copiers, and collectors thought of themselves as Bible makers. Neither the nature nor the significance of their tasks demanded such self-consciousness. Of course, the Christian community was formed in a world in which there were already authoritative writings within a community that interpreted them. Precedent and model were available to Christian writers, but the Scriptures of Judaism were held in such high esteem as revelations of God's will that any notion of consciously and intentionally adding to that corpus would have been rejected in advance. In other words, there is no evidence that Paul sat with pen in hand and said, "I think I will add a book to the Bible." It remained for another generation to grant such status to his letters.

Canons

It is not the purpose of this article to attempt to trace the process of canonization in the Jewish and Christian communities (→ Canon). When communities and their writings grow together and the process is not self-conscious, it is impossible to retrieve that development with certainty. The declaration of an official list of writings regarded in Judaism as sacred Scripture, authoritative for the faith community, is usually associated with the Council of Jamnia near the end of the first century A.D. The extent to which that gathering made decisions about that list or simply announced what was already the case by reason of common acceptance and use is a matter of some debate and much ambiguity. Most likely, dangers to

the identity and faith of Judaism posed by heresies, including Christianity, hastened the process of deciding upon an official list. Thus Judaism had a "canon," that is, the collection of writings regarded as conveying the revelation of God and hence the rule or norm ("canon" comes from a Latin word meaning "rod" or "measure") for the life and faith of the community. The books were all written in Hebrew and Aramaic (the Aramaic occurs in sections of Ezra and Daniel, a verse in Jeremiah, and a few words in Genesis) and were twenty-four in number (1 and 2 Samuel are one book, as are 1 and 2 Kings, Ezra and Nehemiah, and the twelve Minor Prophets). The books are arranged in three divisions: Law, Prophets, and Writings. Taken together, they are "Tanakh," an acronym for the three units in Hebrew (Torah, Nebi'im, Ketubim). The accompanying table shows the contents of the Hebrew Bible:

THE HEBREW BIBLE

The Law	*The Prophets*	*The Writings*
Genesis	Former Prophets	Psalms
Exodus	Joshua	Job
Leviticus	Judges	Proverbs
Numbers	Samuel	Ruth
Deuteronomy	Kings	Song of Songs
		Ecclesiastes
	Latter Prophets	Lamentations
	Isaiah	Esther
	Jeremiah	Daniel
	Ezekiel	Ezra-Nehemiah
	The Twelve:	Chronicles
	Hosea	
	Joel	
	Amos	
	Obadiah	
	Jonah	
	Micah	
	Nahum	
	Habakkuk	
	Zephaniah	
	Haggai	
	Zechariah	
	Malachi	

As obscure to us as the development of the Hebrew Bible is, the story of the formation of the Christian Bible is even more difficult to follow. The process involved both decisions as to which among the many Christian writings merited Scripture status and debates over the adoption of the Jewish Scriptures into the Christian Bible. Of course, the Bible of the earliest church was the Scriptures of Judaism, Scriptures that, as we shall observe below, were available to the church not only in Hebrew, but also in Greek, and did not always and everywhere contain the same books. As for writings originating in Christian communities, there were many: gospels (Luke 1:1), collections of sayings attributed to Jesus (e.g., the *Gospel of*

Thomas), apocalypses, and letters. (Hennecke and Schneemelcher's *New Testament Apocrypha* [1963, 1965] lists a number of such writings that did not achieve canonical status, along with brief introductions and contents.)

By the end of the first century or the beginning of the second, the letters of Paul had been collected and referred to as "scriptures" (2 Pet. 3:16). Near the middle of the second century, Marcion, a wealthy member of the Christian community in Rome anxious to erase from Christianity any influence from the "inferior" God of Judaism, created a Christian Bible consisting of an edited Gospel of Luke and ten letters attributed to Paul, letters that he also edited. By the beginning of the third century, the contours of the present New Testament (NT) were fairly clear. However, some writings finally accepted into the canon were not universally embraced among the churches (the Gospel of John, Revelation, 2 Peter, Hebrews, Jude), and some that were finally rejected continued to linger helpfully in some manuscripts *(Didache, 1 Clement, Letter of Barnabas, Shepherd of Hermas)*. Some writings were apparently easily dismissed as varying too far from "what the apostles taught." Consistency with apostolic teaching and the received tradition about Jesus along with general acceptance by the churches seem to have been major factors in deciding among the circulating writings. It is important to remember, however, that no person or group early in the process of forming a Christian Bible drew up a list of criteria and measured each document by it. The NT grew gradually and unevenly among the churches in different geographical areas. The first list of the books of the NT as we now have it occurs in the Festal Letter of Athanasius, bishop of Alexandria, at Easter in A.D. 367. He was also the first to refer to the list as a "canon."

Perhaps a note is in order here about appropriate ways to refer to the two parts of the Bible. Some Christians now find "Old Testament" (OT) pejorative, even though its users did not intend any devaluation of Judaism. "Old Testament" and "New Testament" definitely reflect a Christian perspective (Heb. 8:6–9:15), and Judaism certainly does not call its Bible the "Old Testament." Hence one finds in the literature expressions such as Hebrew and Christian Writings or First and Second Testaments. The spirit of inclusiveness and respect for the views of others often moves the heart well before it finds the best words to express it.

As stated above, the Jewish Scriptures were from the beginning the Scriptures of the church. Although there were minority voices, such as that of Marcion, arguing for the exclusion of all writings of Judaism from the Christian Bible, there was never a chance that such voices would prevail. Excise from canonical Christian texts all citations, paraphrases, allusions, and echoes from the Scriptures of Judaism and precious little would remain, not to mention the fact that the Christian remainder would be a thing dislodged, like Melchizedek, having neither mother nor father.

The questions that arose, and still arise, did not so much deal with whether or not to embrace the Jewish Bible as they did with the extent and content of the Jewish Bible being embraced. Between the third century B.C. and the second century A.D., the Hebrew Scriptures were being translated into Greek, the dominant language of the Mediterranean world. This work of translation was by Jews who sought to make their Scriptures available not only to non-Jews, but also to Jews in the Dispersion who spoke Greek. No doubt some Greek-speaking synagogues had only portions of the Bible in translation, the Torah, of course, being the preferred portion. As with all work of translation, revisions and refinements took place. In addition to translations of the Hebrew texts in a culture where Greek was the primary language, books originating in Greek were read and found useful in Hellenistic synagogues. After all, there is no evidence that there was as yet a "fixed canon" of authoritative writings. The edges of canonicity were quite soft. It was this Jewish Bible, translated and "enlarged," that the Christian missionaries met and employed in teaching and preaching.

The Greek translation that was the Bible of the early Christians is commonly called the Septuagint (LXX), based on the legend preserved in the *Letter of Aristeas* that seventy translators worked seventy days to produce the version (→ Septuagint). This is the Bible Christian writers cited and this is the Bible the readers of the Christian Bible meet when they encounter the expression "as it is written" or "the Scripture says." Citations of Scripture may in a few cases vary slightly from the Septuagint, indicating that either different recensions of that translation or other Greek translations were available to the church, or perhaps the writer himself made slight changes in the passage quoted (e.g., the author of Hebrews). Even so, such minor differences do not void the statement that the Septuagint was the Bible of the writers and the readers of the books comprising the New, or Second, Testament.

It is difficult to overestimate the importance of this fact for understanding both the content and the size of the Christian Bible. The content is affected because the Christian community received the Hebrew Scriptures in translation and every translation is unavoidably an interpretation. In some instances the Greek rendering of Hebrew texts has profoundly influenced Christian thinking, not only about its own message, but about Judaism as well. For example, the first phase of the Christological argument in the Letter to the Hebrews (chaps. 1–2) centers on Christ's superiority over the angels. Key to that argument is Ps. 8:5, "you have made him a little lower than God [Heb. *'elohim*]," translated in the LXX, "you have made him a little lower than the angels" (actually Ps. 8:6 in the LXX). Or again, Matthew presents the virgin birth of Jesus as the fulfillment of Isa. 7:14, but Isa. 7:14 not in Hebrew (*almah*, "young woman"), but in the Bible Matthew knew, the LXX, which reads "virgin" (Gk. *parthenos*). But perhaps more fundamental to Christianity's understanding of itself in relation to Judaism is the translation of Hebrew *torah* as "law" (Gk. *nomos*) in the LXX (e.g., Ps. 1:2). The Torah, the first five books of the Hebrew Bible, is comprised of creation accounts, patriarchal narratives, a recounting of the Exodus and desert wanderings, stories of God's providence, and legislation (→ Torah). To gather up that grand body of material under the term "law" is vastly reductionistic, portraying Israel's religion as legalism and rendering meaningless such expressions as "delight in the law *[torah]*" and "meditating on God's law *[torah]* day and night." Because *torah* came to Paul as "law" in his Greek Bible, the major "law vs. gospel" debates of Romans and Galatians were set up, and from them have developed theologies framed on antitheses spurious and unnecessary. One can only wonder what the relationship of Christianity and Judaism would have been were it not for this unfortunate translation.

And as stated above, the existence of the LXX created among Christians disputes over the size of the Christian Bible. Because the LXX includes books originating in the Greek language as well as Greek translations of the books of the Hebrew Bible, it is considerably larger than the Hebrew Bible. In addition, in the LXX the books are differently arranged and in some cases differently divided. The accompanying table shows the content of the Septuagint:

THE SEPTUAGINT
(THE GREEK VERSION OF THE HEBREW SCRIPTURES)

Law and History	*Poetic and Prophetic Books*	
Genesis	Psalms	Nahum
Exodus	Odes	Habakkuk
Leviticus	Proverbs	Zephaniah
Numbers	Ecclesiastes	Haggai
Deuteronomy	Song of Songs	Zechariah

THE SEPTUAGINT
(THE GREEK VERSION OF THE HEBREW SCRIPTURES) *(cont'd.)*

Joshua
Judges
Ruth
1–4 Kingdoms
(1–2 Samuel; 1–2 Kings)
1–2 Paralipomena
(1–2 Chronicles)
1 Esdras
2 Esdras (Ezra-Nehemiah)
Esther
Judith
Tobit
1–4 Maccabees

Job
Wisdom (of Solomon)
Sirach (Ecclesiasticus)
Psalms of Solomon
Hosea
Amos
Micah
Joel
Obadiah
Jonah

Malachi
Isaiah
Jeremiah
Baruch
Lamentations
Letter of Jeremiah
Ezekiel
Susanna
Daniel
Bel and the Dragon

A cursory look at the content of the LXX will quickly silence rumors in some Protestant circles that the Roman Catholic church added books to the Bible to give authority to doctrines and practices developed in the medieval period. Actually, the Roman Catholic church embraced more of the Greek Bible of the earliest church than did Protestants. After long disputes, the Roman church decided on a canon that, as the following table shows, included all the books in the Hebrew Bible plus certain writings from the Greek Bible (marked with an asterisk):

THE OLD TESTAMENT OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH
(BASED ON THE SEPTUAGINT)

Law and History
Genesis
Exodus
Leviticus
Numbers
Deuteronomy
Joshua
Judges
Ruth
1–4 Kingdoms
(1–2 Samuel; 1–2 Kings)
1–2 Paralipomena
(1–2 Chronicles)
Ezra
Nehemiah
*Tobit
*Judith
Esther with the *Additions
*1–2 Maccabees

Poetic and Prophetic Books
Psalms
Proverbs
Song of Songs
*Wisdom of Solomon
Ecclesiastes
Job
*Sirach (Ecclesiasticus)
Hosea
Amos
Micah
Joel
Obadiah
Jonah

Nahum
Habakkuk
Zephaniah
Haggai
Zechariah
Malachi
Isaiah
Jeremiah
Lamentations
*Baruch
*Letter of Jeremiah
Ezekiel
Daniel with the *Additions

The books from the LXX not in the Hebrew Bible are sometimes referred to as "deuterocanonical" (i.e., belonging to a second canon), a way of calling attention to the long-disputed status of these books. Protestants refer to these books as "apocryphal" (i.e., hidden or concealed), and Protestant Bibles either omit them altogether or place them at the end of the OT or at the end of the entire Bible. Protestantism chose to include in its OT only those books in the Hebrew Bible. However, as the following table shows, both the division of the writings and their arrangement depart from the Hebrew ordering and bear some influence from the Greek:

THE OLD TESTAMENT OF THE PROTESTANT CHURCH (BASED ON THE HEBREW SCRIPTURES)

The Law	*The Prophets*	*The Writings*
Genesis	Former Prophets	Psalms
Exodus	Joshua	Job
Leviticus	Judges	Proverbs
Numbers	Samuel	Ruth
Deuteronomy	Kings	Song of Songs
		Ecclesiastes
	Latter Prophets	Lamentations
	Isaiah	Esther
	Jeremiah	Daniel
	Ezekiel	Ezra-Nehemiah
	The Twelve:	Chronicles
	Hosea	
	Joel	
	Amos	
	Obadiah	
	Jonah	
	Micah	
	Nahum	
	Habakkuk	
	Zephaniah	
	Haggai	
	Zechariah	
	Malachi	

It should be further noted that the canon of the Greek Orthodox church includes all the books of the Roman Catholic Bible plus (again from the LXX) 1 Esdras, the Prayer of Manasseh, Psalm 151, and 3 Maccabees. The fact that for much of the church's existence the canon has had soft edges may be disconcerting to some. However, it is important to remember that Greek Orthodox, Roman Catholic, and Protestant Bibles all have in common the twenty-four books (thirty-nine as Christians divide them) of the Hebrew Scriptures and the twenty-seven books of the New, or Second, Testament. The narrative continuity, major themes, principal characters, and governing events are common to all, a fact not to be sacrificed in border disputes at the edges of the canons of the three communities.

Were it possible to retrieve in historical detail the process of canonization and to lay bare

before modern readers all the political, social, and geographical factors that motivated selection and decision making, factors never fully concealed by "religious and spiritual reasons," the fruit of such research would not alter the fact that the canon is closed. The community of faith embracing the canon has said yes to certain books and no to others. Individual preferences among believers has not altered that fact. To acknowledge at a particular time or place that a certain canonical book is not helpful or that a certain noncanonical book is does not open the canon again. Each community in each generation does not create its own Bible. The church exists in time and over time with traditions and memories received and passed along. The closing of the canon ensures that that process will not cease and that no one will chop down the family tree, no matter how strange the birds nesting in its branches.

The Community as Interpreter

The closing of the canon does not mean, however, that new and fresh thinking is terminated. On the contrary, the community of faith is all the more obligated to reflect seriously on what it means to have at the center of its life a canon of Scripture. This serious reflection is the responsibility of the whole community, but of course not all are so disposed or qualified. Therefore, wherever the church or Judaism goes, it establishes schools—critical communities to serve the larger community of faith by preserving, translating, and interpreting its canon of Scripture. Not all biblical scholars favor the idea of a canon, believing that the selection and elevation to canonical status of a few among many extant writings limits and predisposes their research. This position is understandable but unnecessary. Of course, adequate research seeks to place the canon in its historical, cultural, and literary contexts; whoever knows only the Book does not know the Book. Even so, the canon is a phenomenon of history of known beginning, ending, and specific content, and to ignore or minimize that fact is to be less than a true historian.

Having said that, the community of faith needs to be thoughtful, careful, and honest in its conversations about and with its Bible as its Bible. For example, that a particular writing is canonical both consciously and unconsciously affects how one approaches that writing and the expectations one has. Is such deference to be embraced or to be overcome in the pursuit of truth? If Malachi or Jude were rather recently discovered in a cave rather than lying in its familiar places within sacred Scripture, would it speak to us the same message? Does being canonical obligate a book to speak relevantly and authoritatively to us, or, stated another way, does its status obligate us to hear in it a relevant and authoritative word? Certainly, canonizing a book means at least that it is judged to have value beyond its message to the original readers. A prophetic word of Isaiah to Jerusalem speaks to, but also beyond, Jerusalem; a letter of Paul to Philippi surely addresses the church beyond Philippi. But sometimes when private words become public words, they lose their intended sense in the new context. Audiences beyond original audiences will listen only if convinced that the words have a surplus of meaning, interpretive potential not limited to those who first heard. The continuing community of faith, convinced of this assumption about canonical writings, is not only permitted, but also obligated, to interpret its Scripture.

This risky, audacious, but necessary task of interpretation calls for principles of interpretation, guidelines for readers of the text. Otherwise, the canon can be held captive to private feelings, saying everything and nothing, finally sinking in a bog of reverent sentimentality. To arrive at such guidelines the community can well look to the Bible itself. After all, interpretation is not simply something done to the Bible—the Bible interprets itself. The Scrip-

tures are oriented toward the future, and one way by which the story moves forward is by interpreting and reinterpreting the basic themes and stories. One thinks immediately of the promise-fulfillment pattern in the use of the Jewish Scriptures by Christian writers, especially Matthew, Luke, and the author of Hebrews. But within each Testament continual interpretation is taking place. Chronicles retells the stories found in Kings, but the retelling is done in a way that gives strong positive attention to Judah, Jerusalem, and the Temple. Jonah is an interpretation of the creation story as the theological ground for presenting God's care and love as universal. Likewise, the wisdom writers draw on the creation accounts rather than on the stories of Israel's history for their observations and instructions. The Exodus provides not only the evidence for God's power to deliver from subsequent calamities, but also the imagery. Isaiah portrays the return from exile as a new Exodus, which in turn gives the Gospel writers a way to portray the desert ministry of John the Baptist. Deuteronomy's second telling of the Exodus is in reality an interpretation of Israel's history, covenant, and law for a nation that, centuries later under King Josiah, needed very much to remember its tradition as that tradition addressed a new situation. In the NT, Matthew and Luke interpret Mark for new and different circumstances. Acts, Ephesians, and the Pastorals interpret Paul for post-Pauline churches. Even multiple accounts of the same event related by the same writer, for example, Luke's reports of Paul's conversion/call (Acts 9; 22; 26), involve interpretation and reinterpretation for different audiences.

Those who think they would be more comfortable if the Bible repeated everything in exactly the same words would, were that to be the case, quickly discover how lifeless, artificial, and unhelpful that would be. The Bible has immense respect for a change of audience. In order to say the same thing to a different audience, one has to say something different. The Bible understands this, but many claims about the Bible that set high premium on precision of repetition do not. Later in this article, comments will be made on the functions of memory in the community of faith as revealed in the ways the Bible remembers itself. Perhaps it is sufficient at this point to warn ourselves concerning claims about the Bible that the Bible itself will not support. Reading the Scriptures continually informs and corrects one's view of the Scriptures.

The community that gathers around and listens to the Bible differs in its interpretive task from the community reflected within the pages of the Bible in one major respect: the community within the Bible developed alongside and together with the writings it produced, while the community that now gathers around the Bible responds to those writings without adding to, subtracting from, or adapting any of them. The precanonical community of faith was in conversation with its texts, each partner in the conversation being able to influence the other. Now, however, the canon is fixed. How can conversation continue if it is essential to conversation that each partner be able to adapt to the other? Readers can adapt to the canon, but can the canon adapt to the readers? Not, of course, in its size or shape, and so all adaptability must be within the canon, within the nature of the texts themselves.

The community of faith insists that such adaptability is present within the canon. This adaptability is of two types: one, the texts possess the density and complexity to address different situations and are not locked into speaking to the original audience alone. This is not to say that a text is polyvalent to the point of losing all historical concreteness and intentionality, yielding itself to the mood and need of every reader. By no means, but great texts are classic because they have the capacity to address the human condition, generation after generation, beyond barriers of language or geography. As Melville's *Moby Dick*, Dickens's *Christmas Carol*, and Joyce's *Ulysses* continue to speak afresh year after year, so the community of faith continues to hear a new and relevant word in Genesis, Ruth, Isaiah, Luke, and

Romans. After all, ancient and modern lives are more alike than they are different. One has to regard with great respect those who consciously and unconsciously prepared and passed along such a canon.

Diversity in the Bible

The second type of adaptability lies in the great diversity of texts within the canon, permitting appropriateness to a range of circumstances. This diversity is of two kinds, literary and theological. As for the literary diversity, it is not enough simply to remark that within the Bible one encounters historical narrative, legend, myth, poetry, prayer, liturgy, wise sayings, parables, allegories, court records, debate, catechism, genealogies, letters, apocalypses, pronouncements, and much more. Neither is it enough to recast these nouns as verbs so that we will be reminded that in the Bible we hear the community of faith singing, praying, crying, arguing, recalling, reciting, worshiping, preaching, teaching, reading, listening, and much more.

It is important also to be aware that the experiences of the people of God that found expression in these many literary forms may in turn be generated in readers of that literature. This is to say, those who give themselves to the texts in the way that one enters into the reading of any great text, then the biblical texts do as well as say. Some texts of knowledge fulfill their purpose by passing along information; other texts of power create experiences of their content within readers. In fact, some texts, by their very form, telegraph to readers the kind of experience to be provided. For example, "Once upon a time" says to readers, "Prepare for a fairy tale," just as "There were two Irishmen, Pat and Mike" prepares them for a joke or as "Inasmuch as the party of the first part" sets up anticipation of a legal brief. So likewise do many biblical texts create in readers particular expectations: "In the spring of the year, the time when kings go out to battle"; "Have mercy on me, O God, according to your steadfast love"; "The vision of Isaiah son of Amoz which he saw concerning Judah and Jerusalem"; "There was a man who had two sons"; "Paul and Timothy, servants of Christ Jesus, to all the saints in Christ Jesus."

Perhaps the most common literary form in the Bible and the one most influential in shaping readers' experience is conversation. Much of the biblical text is framed as direct conversation—not reports on or summaries of conversations, but as the speech of the characters to each other. The Bible is filled with quotation marks: God said, Adam said, Moses said, Elizabeth said, Jesus said, Mary said, Peter said, Paul said, Satan said, the angel said, the Holy Spirit said. As all public speakers, novelists, and playwrights know, direct conversation provides a particular experience for listeners or readers, and this is the experience of feeling oneself actually present to the words and actions of the characters. The ancient writer did not report to readers what happened when Abraham and Isaac were on Mount Moriah; readers are up there listening to the conversation between father and son. Readers hear God and Jonah arguing over the events at Nineveh. Jesus is not alone in the wilderness of temptation; readers are there, listening to the devil's words to Jesus and Jesus' responses. In Gethsemane, the disciples are asleep, but not readers; readers hear the actual words of Jesus' prayers of agony and submission. No other literary trait of Scripture contributes quite so much to the liveliness of Bible reading as does its pervasive use of direct speech.

In addition to literary diversity, the Bible contains theological diversity. This characteristic should not be unexpected, given the twelve centuries of its composition, the range of circumstances under which faith was being formed and modified, and the fact that commu-

nities, not individuals, are involved. However, when all the writings are bound in one volume and translated into one language, diversity may be obscured. On the other hand, perceived diversity may be a problem for readers who see complete homogeneity as necessary to the idea of sacred Scripture, or Word of God. Of course, theological diversity in the Bible can be overstated, but on issues of major importance and great complexity to find unanimity of thought would seem contrived and artificial. The Jewish Scriptures, therefore, reflect rather than silence Israel's debates with itself on certain abiding matters. For example, was the idea of kingship within the divine will for Israel or was it born of a desire to be as other nations, a desire that corrupted what it meant to be the people of God? Did Israel's self-understanding as the particular and peculiar people of God contradict any notions of universalism, or could the two perspectives be reconciled? Or again, is there any direct correlation between one's moral and spiritual state and one's fortune? In other words, does the doing of God's will bring health, wealth, and happiness, and, conversely, is suffering and poverty the lot of those who stray from God? As one clergyman pleasantly announced, "Show me a poor man and I will show you a sinner." Then how do readers explain the complaint of the poor saint who observed the prosperity of the wicked? How do readers account for the suffering of Jesus or his pronouncement of blessedness on the poor and violated? Readers of Scripture do not turn to the once-for-all answer, but enter into a debate worthy of the Bible and of the people of God in every age.

Theological diversity did not come to an end with the event of Jesus Christ; old debates continued and new ones were joined. In fact, the canonizing of four Gospels about the one Jesus both reflects and perpetuates different Christological perspectives. The church did not, however, regard such discussions as so inappropriate or unmanageable that it would embrace the *Diatessaron*, Tatian's effort to harmonize the four into one. Furthermore, the Christian community had already favorably received the letters of Paul, whose Christology was not at all the narrative form of the Gospels, but one framed on a descent-ascent pattern with a focus on the death and resurrection of Jesus. And the return of Christ, was that expectation satisfied in the coming of the Holy Spirit or is it yet to occur? Or again, when the end time comes, will all hostile forces, visible and invisible, on earth and in heaven, be reconciled in a final victory of God's grace, or will there be a final separation of good and evil marked by reward and punishment?

These few among many diverse viewpoints found in the NT witness to a lively theological community from the outset of the church. Of course, there is here the raw material for bitter dispute and division, with believers tossing Bible verses across the room at each other, but one has to admire the health and vitality of a church that could canonize diversity with no apparent fear that it was carrying death in its bosom. There were, to be sure, voices too divergent, and those writings were not included. But to have settled upon a book in which everyone said the same thing on every subject would have been comically, but pathetically, artificial and without life. The anxious and fearful can fly to summaries and creedal statements about the Bible; the Bible itself is for robust readers.

Some of what is commonly called diversity in the Bible can be better understood by reflecting on the range of functions of a community's memory. Memory enables a community or a society to maintain continuity and identity. This memory is not reverie or nostalgia, but the very stuff of the community's purpose, providing the ground for hope. Conquering foreign powers have always understood this and therefore considered conquest complete only when the memory of the defeated society had been erased. By removing the conquered people from familiar places, memory would soon fade. To this end, traditional festivals, dress, foods, music, and rituals might be forbidden, destroying memory of all that gave life

meaning and purpose. As Nazi Germany overran neighboring countries, visits to cemeteries by the local citizens were outlawed. Hitler understood the power of memory to keep people alive even when all else seemed destroyed. And so does the Bible understand—both Israel and the church were warned against forgetting; both were commanded to remember.

But what does it mean for a community to remember? Through rituals, festivals, clothing, foods, recitals, special places, tunes, texts, stories, and countless informal ways, a community keeps its past present and is nourished and instructed by it. To appreciate the powerful role of memory in a society, it is necessary to enlarge one's understanding of memory beyond the ordinary one we have inherited from Augustine. For Augustine, memory functioned in the two-step process of deposit and retrieval. Memory served satisfactorily if it was able to retrieve from the mind's storehouse what had previously been deposited there. In this definition, a premium was placed on accuracy. There is no need to criticize this view or to minimize its value. However, there is a need to understand a multitude of other functions of memory in a community.

Memory combines, constitutes, relates, reconfigures, and creates. Accuracy and precision are not the only values; the community's life and faith are at stake. It has to see how its present is similar to its past; it has to portray its past so as to encourage and instruct its present. Israel's story is told and retold and retold, each time to a different generation in different circumstances. Adaptations, combinations, and new nuances are not to be accounted for as the flaws of careless or faded memory; rather, they were the intentional fruits of a vigorous memory doing its job. There were limits to be sure; the story could cease to be the story. But if Bible readers' primary concern is to check the accuracy of the correspondence between two accounts of one event, then the Bible will prove disappointing time and again. Nor need one seek to explain differences in telling simply by positing different sources or narrators. The writer of Acts of Apostles related three times within that one book the call/conversion experience of Paul near Damascus, Syria (Acts 9; 22; 26). The event is not simply remembered by the Augustinian definition, but remembered as the Bible remembers, sensitive to audience, circumstance, and need. For a community of faith to tell its central story in the same way to every audience in service to some definition of memory as accuracy of retrieval would be to deprive both the story and its hearers of life-giving vitality and fittingness.

Unity of the Bible

How communities remember remains but one of many explanations for the diversity of material in the Bible. In fact, given the wide range of originating settings and motives for its content, diversity in Scripture, both literary and theological, is a natural and expected characteristic. Far more remarkable and unexpected is the unity of the Bible. This unity is not extrinsic, imposed upon it by its being bound in one volume, translated into one language, and repeatedly referenced with such easy remarks as "the Bible says." Rather, there is, in a number of ways, a surprising unity intrinsic to the content itself. Some of these ways deserve a closer look.

First and foremost, the unity of the Bible is found in God as the central subject of both Testaments. From the opening affirmation, "In the beginning when God created the heavens and the earth" (Gen. 1:1), to the final vision, "See, the home of God is among mortals. He will dwell with them as their God; they will be his peoples, and God himself will be with them" (Rev. 21:3), God is the stated or implied subject. God speaks first, acts first, leads, directs, inspires, instructs, corrects, forgives, judges, and brings to conclusion. God alone is worthy of

human praise and loyalty. Creation bears the imprint of God's eternal power and divine nature (Rom. 1:20), and all that is honorable and praiseworthy in human beings can be attributed to God's having created them "a little lower than God" (Ps. 8:5). Even those without benefit of Moses or Christ declare that "In him we live and move and have our being" (Acts 17:28). It is God who calls out a people, sends the Messiah, and pours out the Holy Spirit. As Paul's familiar doxology sings it, "For from him and through him and to him are all things. To him be the glory forever" (Rom. 11:36).

Note that God is the primary subject of the NT as well as the OT. That such a statement even needs to be made testifies to the neglect of the subject of "God" in NT scholarship. Christology, pneumatology, ecclesiology, and eschatology so govern the agenda of Christian scholars that they forget to talk about God. Of course, all with one voice can protest that God is assumed in NT study, but the NT itself does not support relegating God to the role of an assumption. To be sure, some writings in the NT address audiences who already believe in the God revealed in the Law, the Prophets, and the Writings, but a careful reading of even those texts makes it clear that both writers and readers are concerned with what Jesus the Christ makes known in word and deed about the nature and purpose of God. Even in the "high" Christology of the Gospel of John, the purpose is not to say, "It is not enough to believe in God; you must also believe in Jesus." Rather, the writer's purpose is to present Jesus as a revelation of God. "No one has ever seen God. It is God the only Son, who is close to the Father's heart, who has made him known" (John 1:18). Or again, "Philip said to him, 'Lord, show us the Father, and we will be satisfied.' Jesus said to him, 'Have I been with you all this time, Philip, and you still do not know me? Whoever has seen me has seen the Father'" (John 14:8–9). And today, of course, even in church and synagogue, the teacher or preacher cannot assume belief in God. The Bible must again be permitted to speak for itself on this its primary subject.

Second, the unity of the Bible is maintained and expressed in its narrative, or story line. Very little of biblical material is framed on cyclical time, a worldview that regards individual and community life as but an arc of the great cycle of occurrence and recurrence. One catches hints of this view of time in Ecclesiastes, where the writer declares everything to be vanity. What occurs now has occurred before; the rain falls into the river, the river flows into the sea, the sun draws the water up from the sea, the rain falls into the river, and so on. But apart from these brief depressing recitals, biblical time is linear, presenting a story with beginning, middle, and ending. Even the pieces of apocalyptic eschatology, that is, visions of the eternal breaking into time, do not effectively disrupt the dominant eschatology of the Bible, the movement of events toward fulfillment of God's purpose both within and beyond history.

Because the Bible is often read and studied piecemeal, its narrative is seen only in fragments, or not at all, but the story is there. Following creation, the world distances itself from God in pride and rebellion, with a slender thread of trust and obedience carried forward by a few legendary figures. With the appearance of Abram and Sarai the story takes on a historical focus. The Abraham-Isaac-Jacob-Joseph cycles take readers from pilgrimages in a land later to belong to their descendants into Egypt, on a long sojourn beginning favorably but ending in slavery. Finally comes deliverance from Egypt, wilderness wandering, and arrival in the land long promised. The taking of the land is piecemeal and partial. Life in the land is tribal and without unity; leadership is provided by judges, charismatic leaders who emerge in crises. Israel forms itself into a nation under kings, but the time of unity and glory is brief. Corrupt kings seem to prevail in spite of the prophets' call for justice, the nation breaks in half, the North and then the South fall to foreign powers, and the artisans, skilled workers,

and professionals are taken into exile. Eventually some exiles return and attempt to rebuild a nation with a political and religious center. However, except for brief periods of independence, the Jewish people suffer under a succession of foreign powers. Any political or religious freedom is by the permission and under the monitoring of the conquerors. Into that world comes a desert prophet named John announcing the coming of "the stronger one" and the arrival of God's reign. John's message is continued by Jesus of Nazareth, a teacher, preacher, and healer. Some accept Jesus as the promised Messiah and follow him, but many are skeptical for reasons political and religious. Because of the threatening stir surrounding Jesus, it seemed expedient to the authorities that "one man should die for the people." Following the crucifixion of Jesus, his followers announce his resurrection and his imminent return as Lord and Judge of all people. This word is proclaimed to Jews first, then to Gentiles, the believers forming themselves into churches to continue the work and message of Jesus until his return. That return, they believed, would mark the end time, the fulfillment of God's purpose for creation.

The unfolding of the story is not simply one of promise and fulfillment, but of promise, fulfillment, further fulfillment, and even further fulfillment, but never exhausting the promise. And there are discontinuities. For example, according to Matthew, John the Baptist described the Messiah as the stronger one, coming with wind, fire, and judgment (Matt. 3:7–12). However, says Matthew, Jesus came as the Servant described by Isaiah: "He will not wrangle or cry aloud, nor will anyone hear his voice in the streets. He will not break a bruised reed or quench a smoldering wick" (Isa. 42:1–2; Matt. 12:19–20). Understandably, then, John sent word to Jesus asking, "Are you the one who is to come, or are we to wait for another?" (Matt. 11:3). But such discontinuities enrich the Bible's story line rather than disrupt it.

Third, within the narrative of the Bible there are underscored major themes that further testify to the unity of Scripture. The four principal themes are creation, providence, redemption, and final resolution. These themes are not episodes, nor are they sequences marking the narrative chronologically. Rather, they are terms describing the activity of God toward the world. Sometimes two, or three, or all four themes appear in a single story or event. The point here is that these four terms serve as magnets, drawing together events and their interpretations from different writings from diverse times and places, enabling readers of the Bible to move through its pages without feeling that the subject has changed, God has changed, or there are several gods at work doing different and contradictory things.

A fourth witness to the unity of the Bible is key events that not only mark the unfolding story, but function as paradigms of the continuing life of the people of God and therefore have a life in the narrative beyond their historical location. First among these, of course, is creation. Earlier it was noted how Genesis 1–2 provided the theological ground for universal themes in the prophets, in many of the Psalms, in the wise reflection on life by the sages of Israel, and in descriptions of the cosmic redemption in Christ, touching all creation and in fact effecting a new creation. Paul and John of the Apocalypse especially found this paradigm helpful in imaging God's final work in Christ. Paradigmatic also was the pilgrimage of Abraham and Sarah, living as strangers and exiles in the land. They provided a model for Israel to understand itself as a pilgrim people, and for the church as presented in Hebrews and 1 Peter to accept its socially marginal status as that of strangers and aliens in the world. And, of course, no event in the history of Israel defined and repeatedly redefined the people of God as did the Exodus. As event and as paradigm, the Exodus unites the Bible. The Exodus from Egypt was told by historians, preserved in creedal formulas, recalled in annual rituals, remembered by the prophets, and sung by the psalmist. It provided a way to describe subsequent new beginnings and occasions of liberation. Returning from the Exile was a kind of

Exodus; John the Baptist called the people into the desert to experience a new Exodus; the child Jesus was taken for safety into Egypt, and, upon Herod's death, the prophet's word was again fulfilled, "Out of Egypt I have called my son" (Matt. 2:15). The Fourth Gospel draws on the Exodus tradition to describe Jesus' death as that of the Passover lamb: the blood was drained from his body, but no bones were broken (John 19:31–37). And the heart of the Exodus, the issues of bondage and freedom, were central in Paul's theology, especially as presented in Galatians and Romans.

Although not nearly on the scale of the Exodus, other events in the life of Israel appear and reappear through both Testaments and continue in postcanonical literature, providing apt images of the experiences of the community of faith. Among these are covenant making, surviving the wilderness of temptation, entering the promised land, and living under a king who was both son and servant of God. Even the much disputed institution of the Temple provided the author of Hebrews a way of understanding and explaining the person and work of Jesus Christ and gave to Luke a place to begin and end his Gospel and a place to launch the universal spread of the gospel (Acts). All this is to say that key events in the biblical narrative serve to sustain the story in unmistakable unity.

Fifth, the unity of the Bible is in a measure sustained in the presentation of major characters within the story. Certain principal figures appear in biblical writings not solely as individuals located in their own times and places, but as personifications of some significant aspects of the life of the people of God. To gather up the life of a people in the portrait of a person is to contribute to the overall unity of the Bible. Adam, for example, is not simply a character in Genesis 1–5; Adam is humanity, created in God's image and yet proud, rebellious, and sinful. Whether stated or implied, Adam is on every page of the Bible. Likewise, Abraham is not only the progenitor of Israel; he is Israel. No doubt the writers were thinking of Israel's weals and woes, faith and doubt when describing his life. This is not to say his portrait is larger than life, but rather his is a portrait of life as Israel experienced it, and, according to Paul, as all believers experience it, both Jew and Gentile. Similarly, the name Moses evokes more than a biography, interesting as it is. He is a synonym for Torah, God's revelation to the people. It was with this appreciation of the grand influence of Moses that Luke wrote, "For in every city, for generations past, Moses has had those who proclaim him, for he has been read aloud every sabbath in the synagogues" (Acts 15:21).

And who stands astride the Bible more impressively than David? David is Israel in its most glorious memory; he is Israel in its most cherished hope. To speak David's name is to say, "Those were the days" and "Those days will return" when a son of David sits on his throne. Pretenders to the throne evoked his name, and self-appointed messiahs came in his name; hence it was inevitable that followers of Jesus joined his name to David's. Not only was Nazareth linked to Bethlehem, but expressions such as "son of David," "king," and "glorious throne" had to be reinterpreted in light of the event of Jesus Christ. As for the person of Jesus, he was not long confined to the NT as though he belonged only to the last chapter of the biblical narrative. The Jewish Scriptures were read anew through the lens of faith in Jesus as Messiah, and with this perspective he was found in the ancient writings from Genesis 1 onward. As the risen Christ said to his followers before his departure, "These are my words that I spoke to you while I was still with you—that everything written about me in the law of Moses, the prophets, and the psalms must be fulfilled" (Luke 24:44). Other significant figures, both men and women, appear and reappear in the biblical narrative, adding to the unity of the Bible, but these few deserve special attention because they epitomize the whole and their own stories serve as ways to tell the entire story of what it means to be the people of God.

Finally (without implying the subject has been exhausted), one other trait of the Bible that helps to create as well as witness to its unity is purely literary. Many biblical writers present their material in such a way that, even though the content is new, readers are made to feel at home, as though the account had been read or heard before in prior biblical stories and descriptions. Just as listeners to Abraham Lincoln at Gettysburg may have been favorably disposed toward him because his address sounded like the King James Bible, so readers of latter portions of the Bible might be inclined to accept the message because it seemed somehow familiar. Some of this familiarity was created by the use of allusions and echoes; at other times it was the result of framing new material in an old and familiar form. For example, readers of Paul's farewell address to the elders of Ephesus have the sense of having been there before. Is it the memory of Stephen's farewell that is activated, or is it Jesus' farewell discourses to his disciples? Perhaps it is Joshua's farewell to Israel, or maybe even Moses' moving farewell? The one reading is rereading because the Bible is layered, and this quality of being layered gives unity to the Book.

Some writers are especially proficient at making readers experience familiarity even in a strange place. Perhaps none surpasses Luke in this skill. Luke's account of the boy Jesus in the Temple at age twelve is clearly patterned after the story of the boy Samuel living in the sanctuary at Shiloh, the similarities peaking in Luke's almost quotation of 1 Sam. 2:26: "And Jesus increased in wisdom and in stature, and in divine and human favor" (Luke 2:52). Luke is not trying to prove anything, nor is he engaged in the promise-fulfillment pattern. He is simply telling a story that recalls a story, joining new and old and making readers feel at home. The same is true of Luke's story of Jesus raising from the dead the only son of a widow whom Jesus met at the gate of Nain (Luke 7:11–17). The Nain event not only recalls Elijah's raising of the only son of a widow whom Elijah met at the gate to Zarephath, but even quotes a phrase from the earlier story: "he gave him to his mother" (Luke 7:15; 1 Kings 17:23). Or again, who could fail to recall Jonah's attempt at Joppa to disobey God's call to preach to Gentiles when reading Luke's narrative about Simon bar Jonah's resistance to the invitation to preach to Gentiles when Simon was at Joppa (Acts 9:43–10:48)? This literary device, abounding in Luke and appearing also in other NT writers, joins the two Testaments and gives to readers the experiences of a Bible that is indeed one Book.

Inspiration and Translation

Although inspiration and translation lie outside the province of this article, they are of interest to many readers. The inspiration of Scripture is a subject that developed largely outside Scripture; that is, doctrines of inspiration arose primarily in debates and claims about the Bible rather than from claims the Bible makes about itself. To be sure, there are in both Testaments references to the direct influence of the Spirit of God on the words of certain persons, but they are spoken, not written, words. Balaam was hired by the king of Moab to curse Israel, but the Spirit of God came upon Balaam and he blessed Israel instead (Num. 24:1–10). Isaiah prefaced the description of his ministry of proclamation with "the spirit of the Lord God is upon me" (Isa. 61:1). Luke refers to the inspired speech of a number of persons, among them Elizabeth (Luke 1:41–45) and Zechariah (Luke 1:67–79). In an unusual expression, Luke says the Holy Spirit spoke to the church at Antioch (Acts 13:1–3). Paul speaks of inspired speech (Rom. 8:15–16) and identifies the confession "Jesus is Lord" as prompted by the Holy Spirit (1 Cor. 12:3). As for written words being inspired, the testimony of the Letter to the Hebrews is more to the point. A quotation of Scripture, Ps. 95:7b–11, is introduced with

the words "As the Holy Spirit says" (Heb. 3:7). Of course, from 2 Tim. 3:16 comes the key statement most often cited on the subject: "All scripture is inspired by God." This reference to the Jewish Scriptures (there was as yet no NT) speaks of inspiration as making the Scriptures useful or helpful, a perspective quite different from the linking of inspiration to accuracy and infallibility, concerns of a church involved centuries later in quite different debates (→ Inspiration).

Translation is a subject only partially intrinsic to the Bible. The Bible of the early church, the Septuagint, was itself a translation into Greek of the Jewish Scriptures. As discussed above, there were other writings in the Septuagint that originated in Greek, but the point here is that translation from an original language (Hebrew) was from the outset a feature of part of the Christian Bible. Of more significance, however, is the story of translation subsequent to the Bible itself. Except for its biblical scholars, the church reads its Bible in the vernacular. For most readers of this article, "the Bible" means "the English Bible." Both unfortunately and fortunately, there is not one translation, but many. Many translations contribute to division and debate among believers, but new manuscript evidence and the continual evolution of the meanings of words make new translations necessary. Some of the translations have a genealogy, with each new translation preserving the values of its forebears while updating in the interest of clarity, beauty, and accuracy. For example, the New Revised Standard Version descends directly from the Bishop's Bible of 1568 and indirectly from Tyndale's partial translation of 1526–1530. Other translations are not versions of prior Bibles, but rather new translations. Among these are the New Jerusalem Bible and the Revised English Bible. Regrettably, church politics enters the translation process, and certain versions announce the political and ideological identities of their users. With so many translations available, the choice of one becomes difficult. In addition to the practical matters of clarity, beauty of expression, and honesty in rendering the text, average Bible readers should consider the range of credentials and theological perspectives among the members of the translation team. Certainly a translation offered by a large team working over a period of years can be read with greater confidence than one that is the work of an individual, however conscientious and qualified that person may be (→ Apocrypha, Old Testament; Apocryphal New Testament; Bible; English Bible, The; New Testament; Old Testament; Texts, Versions, Manuscripts, Editions; *see also* "The Bible and Its Communities").

Bibliography

Achtemeier, P. *The Inspiration of Scripture.* Philadelphia: Westminster, 1999.

Metzger, B. M., and M. D. Coogan, eds. *Oxford Companion to the Bible.* New York: Oxford University Press, 1993.

Orlinsky, H., and R. Bratcher. *A History of Bible Translation and the North American Contribution.* Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1992.

The Bible and Its Communities

JAMES BARR

We tend to think of the Bible as a known and defined quantity with an unchanging and undifferentiated quality of authority and normativeness. Historically, however, this is not so. The Bible has not always existed, and it was in the communities of ancient Israel and of the early church that it came into existence. The terms that designate it are terms of these communities, and its role as norm and authority has varied in relation to the structures and patterns of religion in these communities.

The books of the OT as we have them today came into being over a very long period, at least a thousand years. Moreover, most books did not come into existence suddenly and completely as they do today when one author writes a book and "publishes" it. Rather, they came into existence gradually—older sources were incorporated, materials were edited, and further additions were made, whether in the oral tradition that formed the basis for the text or after the writing down of a text (→ Biblical Criticism). Thus during what we call the "biblical period" there was as yet no complete "Bible" in existence. Of what we now have, part was not yet in existence and part was in the process of development; and in all probability there were authoritative traditions, oral or written, that were later eliminated, altered, or simply lost, so that we no longer have them.

The NT came into existence during a much shorter time span, hardly over a hundred years, and a larger proportion of the books may be identified as the written product of one author at one point in time. Even then, however, books often refer to earlier traditions, the different Gospels are clearly literarily interdependent, some books and traditions have disappeared, and some works are clearly much later in origin than others. Thus the NT came into its complete form more quickly, but in essence the same relations apply. Any individual Christian community of, say, A.D. 70, or even of A.D. 100, can have had within its purview only a limited part of the written NT as we have it today. Here, once again, the people of the Bible did not possess our Bible.

Terms Designating the Bible

Correspondingly, there was in ancient times no one univocal term with exactly the same range of meaning as our word "Bible." The English word "Bible" is emphatically singular: there is only one Bible. But it is derived from the Greek *ta biblia*, "the books," for it was and is a collection of books. There was no such thing as a Bible in the physical form to which we are now accustomed, a single volume with all the books bound together. Not until the invention (in the Christian era) of the codex did such a form become possible (→ Codex), and it was the invention of printing that made a bound volume popular and familiar.

In ancient times the *biblia* were a collection of individual scrolls. This meant that there might be no fixed order to the books except where the contents (as in the Pentateuch or the historical books) made a certain sequence natural. It also made it less easy to define and separate authoritative scrolls from other religious writings, since both kinds might be kept in the same cupboard or storeroom. Jesus in the Nazareth synagogue was given the scroll of Isaiah to read, not a complete Hebrew Bible (Luke 4:17); the Ethiopian of Acts 8:28 was doubtless reading the same. The Qumran people (→ Scrolls, The Dead Sea) had a sort of religious library, which contained scrolls that are part of our Bible and others that were their own books, unknown to us until recent discovery. A scroll was not necessarily identical with one "book" of our modern Bible; several short books, such as the twelve "Minor" Prophets, might be written on one scroll. It is not surprising therefore that the term "Bible" is not strictly a biblical term; the books do not use any such designation of themselves. Within neither the OT nor the NT do the books make frequent explicit mention of other books of our Bible. There is of course much common matter between one book and another, and there may be good reason to detect that one book is interpreting something said in another, but actual explicit mention of other books is rare and in each Testament seems to be characteristic of only the later portions. Thus Daniel learned "in the books" (Dan. 9:2) the number of years mentioned by Jeremiah. 2 Pet. 3:16 refers to Paul's Letters and the difficulty of understanding them. But this kind of express cross-reference is infrequent. In spite of the close relationship between the Gospels, none of them refers to any other by name; Luke (1:1–4) refers to "many" other attempts at such narratives, but leaves it vague whether any of our Gospels or their sources are intended.

In fact, surprisingly, where there *is* mention of

other books, it is more commonly of books that are *not* within our Bible than of books that are. Thus Kings often refers its readers for further information to "the book of the chronicles of the kings of Judah" (1 Kings 14:29) and the like, which books no longer exist. Paul asks the Colossians to take into account the Laodicean letter, which also is lost (Col. 4:16).

Our term "Scripture" comes close to "Bible" when it is commonly understood as a collectivity, i.e., when "Scripture" means the same thing as "the Bible." There is no such expression in the OT, but it is frequent in the Greek of the NT (*graphe;* and often plural). This word, however, was not then always identical in scope with our "Bible." In itself it meant "something written" and could apply to any piece of writing such as an inscription or a letter (numerous cases in the OT in Gk.); thus *graphe* was not then specialized in the sense of canonical sacred writings as "Scripture" now is in English. For religious purposes, of course, the sacred authoritative written texts were immensely the most important "written things," and these were often cited with the formula "as it is written." The term was not then a definition: it did not specify exactly which texts were included, nor did the use of it prove that the boundaries of what was "Scripture" were exactly defined. Moreover, the word might be used for "*a* scripture," i.e., an individual sentence or phrase, rather than the total body of holy writings, so that 2 Tim. 3:16 might read "all scripture [the totality] is inspired," but it might also read "every [passage of] scripture is inspired." Conversely, it would be possible for a religious writing to be called *graphe* without according to it the status of being part of the Bible in our sense. Within the Christian Bible the dominant use of "scripture" and of "it is written" is in reference to the OT.

In Jewish usage the main corresponding term in Hebrew is *miqra'*—that which is ritually recited; the expression focuses attention on the liturgical recitation of the text rather than on its written form. Another expression is *kitbe ha-qodesh*, "the holy writings." The expression "Tenach," or "Tanakh," now commonly used, does not go back to ancient times. It is an acronym formed from the first letters, T-N-K, of the names of the three sections of the Hebrew Bible: Torah (Law), Nebi'im (Prophets), and Ketubim (Writings). The Jewish Bible, needless to say, does not include the Christian NT. The term "Old Testament" is traditional in Christianity, but is now sometimes felt to be tendentious in its implied judgment of Judaism, so that other expressions such as "Hebrew Scriptures" have come to be used.

Prescriptural Religion

We have seen that in actual biblical times, or the earlier portion of them, religion was not yet governed by a defined Scripture. Faced with a religious problem, people did not turn to a written text, for their religion was not yet organized in that way. Quite possibly some traditions such as some legal ordinances had early been committed to written form, but many other religious traditions were transmitted orally. Neither the prophets nor the earlier kings appealed to any existing "Scripture"; prophetic words were mostly spoken, not written, in the first instance. People were related to God through holy persons and institutions, or they spoke with God verbally and directly; holy books were not considered an authoritative norm (→ Oral Materials, Sources, and Traditions).

It was probably the Deuteronomic movement, around the eighth and seventh centuries B.C., that first made something like a "Scripture" central to Israel's religious life. Although various particular "books" (in fact, documents) are mentioned in other sources, Deuteronomy is the first major source for a solid and frequent mention of a basic authoritative "book of the law" in which the main divine commands are concentrated and set down. Especially at the end of the book there is a distinct emphasis on "all the words of this *torah* which are written in this book" (Deut. 28:58; cf. 30:10; 31:24, 26). Similarly, it was in 622 B.C. that Josiah heard of the discovery of a "book of the law" in the Temple, a discovery that greatly alarmed the king and caused him to take drastic steps in the reformation of religion (2 Kings 22–23). In 605 B.C. Jeremiah took a scroll and wrote on it all his past prophecies (Jer. 36); the king cut it up and burned it, but the prophet then rewrote the scroll and added more material for good measure. Deuteronomy states the future role of the law, which is to be preserved in written form and read by the kings so that they may learn obedience to God (Deut. 17:19), and it is also to be read publicly before "all Israel" on solemn occasions (Deut. 31:11). Such solemn public reading is particularly attested in the time of Ezra (Neh. 8); after the Exile (598–538 B.C.) the written Torah becomes paramount in the religious life of the nation, or at least of central currents within it. Thus in its later development Judaism became much more a scriptural religion, undergoing a substantial change from its earlier pattern.

Christianity went through a similar process. It began without having or seeking to produce Scriptures of its own. Jesus wrote nothing and did not tell his disciples to write anything or even to memorize his words for future commitment to writing. Early Christian faith was spread by oral speech and tradition; there was not even a written account of Jesus' life. Neither Jesus himself nor the earliest Christians after him showed any sign of an intention that their faith should become a scripturally controlled religion, as Judaism was by that time. It may have been felt that writing was not appropriate for the profoundest truth: the letter "kills" (2 Cor. 3:6). The living voice of persons who had been with Jesus was thought to be better than any book: this was felt by Papias, bishop of Hierapolis, as

late as about A.D. 130. The first written texts were letters, which by their nature had to be written; it is only in 2 Peter, one of the later NT writings, that Christian documents (Pauline Letters) are mentioned in the same category as "Scriptures" (2 Pet. 3:16). In *1 Clement* (late first century) there are copious citations from both the OT and NT, but the terms "scripture" and "it is written" are used only for the former. The "holy writings" that Timothy had known from childhood were perhaps also the OT (2 Tim. 3:15).

The Old Testament in Early Christianity

The NT did indeed acknowledge previous Jewish Scripture as the Word of God and authoritative, and in this sense its religion is "scriptural" from the beginning. This makes more complex, but does not essentially alter, what has been said above. The meaning of the NT depends at a host of places upon the assumption that a verbally articulated Word of God was already known and acknowledged. This does not mean, however, that nothing could be said without citing previous written authority. On the contrary, the main starting point lay in the new Christian substance, in Jesus himself and in the events surrounding him, his acts and his teaching. To these events and teachings confirmation or exemplification from past Scripture was often given. But it was by no means *necessary* that this be done. Jesus' own characteristic teaching was through parables, newly created fictional stories based on experience and imagination, just the opposite of an approach through a scriptural text (→ Parables). Jesus differed from the scribes because he spoke and acted on his own authority and not on the basis of a preexisting authority. Thus the undoubted authority of the OT as Word of God did not alter the fact that for the NT it was no longer the final criterion or the unique starting point; it was not an absolute, but its authority was relative to the supreme position of Jesus. Even where Scripture is taken as "inspired by God" (2 Tim. 3:16), it is said only to be "useful" or "profitable" for moral training and not the final arbiter of faith. Thus within early Christianity, in spite of the recognition of older Scripture as Word of God and fully authoritative, the total structure of authority was different and Scripture fitted within a new pattern of relations.

Community and Literary Production

Many biblical books must be regarded as a community product; they emerged from a process of tradition within the community. The community guarded this tradition, respected it, but also remolded it; it might allow it to be amalgamated with other traditions, to be modernized to fit newer conditions, or to be amplified with additional comments or rewritten in a newer form. But the community did not regard the works as simply the expression of its own sense of itself; it cherished them as works of leadership and authority that guided the community in a certain direction. This position of authority can be seen in such features as the extreme importance of events narrated (creation, Exodus, resurrection), the presence of what was understood to be direct divine speech, the distinction of persons associated with books (Moses, Solomon, the early disciples), the normative force of their legal portions, their use as liturgical material, their role as historical memoirs, their ethical edificatory function, and their general educational use. Many books directed themselves in a critical (warning or reforming) manner to the community. In some books much importance attaches to a final editor or creative writer who brought various traditions together into a total work with its own viewpoint (Genesis, Matthew). There is thus an interaction between community and literary production in which traditions are molded to guide the community in a certain way, although they may conflict with other traditions (cf. Jeremiah and Ezekiel; Paul and James; Matthew and Luke) and the community may receive these traditions with respect, but with varying degrees of submission, acceptance, evasion, revision, and modification (e.g., the degree of implementation of Deuteronomy; the reaction in 2 Peter to the delay of the end of the world).

Continuation and Finalization

The transmission of sacred texts underwent two contrary impulses. One of these led toward the continuation of the process of composition: a good work could be continued, amplified, modernized. Explanatory glosses might be added. In major cases, a thorough rewriting might be undertaken. On the other side was a force that favored finalization. A work had reached a stage at which no further change was desirable; it should henceforth be preserved as it was.

In the late stages of the development of Scripture, both these impulses can be seen at work. Books could be largely rewritten; their very excellence might encourage this. There is evidence that Jeremiah came out in two editions. On a larger scale, Chronicles was mainly a rewrite of Samuel/Kings, and *Jubilees* of Genesis. New works like Judith and Tobit carried forward the style of tales like Esther, and the testament literature (best seen in the *Testaments of the Twelve Patriarchs*) expanded and recombined various biblical genres. Later Gospels (Matthew and Luke) carried forward the lines of earlier ones. The disciples of prophets amplified and altered the balance of the sayings of their masters; fragments of an apostolic letter might be similarly amplified and recombined. The impulse to continuation promoted the survival and the continued productivity of the biblical genres.

Finalization worked the other way. The text should be left alone. Existing words should be left as they are; new productions along the same lines should be discouraged. The very words of the text had come from God or from some source of unimpeachable antiquity and should on no account be modified. What was obscure should be elucidated by interpretation rather than improved by rewriting.

These forces were decisive in the formation of what was later to be known as the canon, understood as a collection of authoritative writings, and in the fixation of the text. Continuation meant that new books would be produced; finalization meant that they would not be encouraged and if produced would not be accepted. The same principles could apply to the actual text (→ Canon; Texts, Versions, Manuscripts, Editions). Change a few words, add a word here and there, and it becomes a different book—so it could be argued—and all the more so where it was felt that religious and ethical decisions depended on the precise wording of the text. Deut. 4:2, which specifies that nothing is to be added to God's command or taken away from it, doubtless in the first instance meant that no substantial matter should be added to the ethical norms or subtracted from them; but the same principle could easily be extended to mean that the book that contained this command was the final version of it and, beyond that, that the actual wording of its text must be preserved.

These contrasting tendencies were expressed also on the level of interpretation. To rewrite a book entirely, adding new matter or altering its focus, can be called a kind of interpretation, but it is more like a restatement of the substance along literary lines similar to the original. The fixation of book and text encourages a different mode of interpretation: the exact form and wording of a text become data against which interpretation is set. Interpretation may then begin to look less at the general literary structure and more at each individual segment, which may thus be decontextualized; any portion of text, however tiny, may become decisive for the proof of law or doctrine. This tendency is supported by the idea that God is author not only of the books taken as wholes, but of every small detail within them; since there is no redundancy, every detail is authoritative.

The Primacy of the Torah

Care should be used in talking about a Jewish "canon," since the concept is a Christian one and there seems to be no Jewish term for it. The central step was the elevation of the Torah, by now a virtually complete block of five books understood to be the Torah of Moses, to a position of religious primacy, a move traditionally associated with Ezra and belonging to the early postexilic community (sixth to fourth centuries B.C.). Other materials, later to form part of Hebrew Scripture, certainly already existed: much of the historical books from Joshua to Kings, the earlier portions of the prophets, most of the Psalms, and doubtless much of Proverbs. This other body of material had long been recognized, but did not yet have the same unity and finality that the Torah had: materials were still being added to the prophetic books until much later. Eventually the historical books and the books named after prophets came to be classified together and known as the "Prophets" (the division into "Former" and "Latter" Prophets is medieval). This classification, which eventually became neat and exact, may at first have been imprecise and fluid. The case of the Torah is clear, because it clearly formed a single block and had supreme religious authority. But some literature that later was classified as within the "Writings" could earlier have belonged to the same grouping as our "Prophets." This would fit the situation in early Christianity, where there is no clear sign of knowledge of the tripartite canon of Judaism and where the common term for older Scriptures is "the Law and the Prophets" (once, Luke 24:44, "the law of Moses and the prophets and Psalms"). Not all groups of Jews need have followed or accepted the same priorities, but the primacy of the Torah marked the dominant trend. It is possible that some laid just as heavy an emphasis on the prophetic books.

The Samaritans, like the Jews, had a Hebrew Bible, but it included only the Torah; their traditions showed influences from the historical books, but only the Torah had status as Scripture (→ Samaritans). This may be because the elevation of the Torah to primacy was extended by them to the point where no other Scripture existed at all. The Sadducees are said not to have accepted as binding any doctrines that could not be proved from the Torah alone. The Qumran community revered the biblical books (though no portions of Esther as yet have been found), but alongside them they had many other works, including the sacred rule of their own society; it is hard to think that such a document did not have authoritative status among them. Perhaps their writing of commentaries on biblical books is a sign that these were in a special category. Commentaries on the prophetic books such as Habakkuk and Nahum are prominent: in these books they found predictions about their own sect and its experience (→ Scrolls, The Dead Sea).

Palestinian Canon Groupings

The tripartite listing that finally emerged as "standard" for the Hebrew Bible contained the Torah as first part and the historical books from Joshua through Kings along with the four main prophetic "books" (Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and the twelve "Minor" Prophets) as the second part (the "Prophets"), while the third part,

the "Writings," contained Psalms, Job, Proverbs, the five smaller Scrolls, or Megilloth (Ruth, Song of Songs, Ecclesiastes, Lamentations, Esther), Daniel, Ezra, Nehemiah, and Chronicles. There are variations in order within the third group, but the division between the three major groups has always been the same.

The completion and fixation of this canon is often ascribed to the Synod of Jamnia, a series of rabbinic discussions held late in the first century A.D., in which it was sometimes discussed whether certain books like Ecclesiastes had full scriptural status. It is now considered doubtful whether these discussions dealt with the fixing of a canon at all, and some think that the canon now standard was achieved back in Maccabean times (second or first century B.C.). But even if the standard canon existed as a list, that does not mean that everyone knew of it or took it as binding. The first-century historian Josephus lists twenty-two books: five by Moses, then thirteen from the time span between Moses and Artaxerxes written by the prophets, and four containing hymns and ethical precepts. The number twenty-two is significant because it is the number of letters in the Hebrew alphabet. Josephus's list may well correspond with the total contents of the standard canon (if we take Ruth with Judges, Lamentations with Jeremiah, etc.), but clearly cuts across the tripartite division of it. 2 Esd. 14:37–48 tells how ninety-four books were written, twenty-four for the general public to read and the other seventy only for the special class of the wise; these seventy would represent the apocalyptic books. We have no real knowledge of controversies between these various views, the means by which they were settled, or the mechanisms through which decisions about a canon could be reached or enforced. This fits with the absence of a term for "canon" that would have been used in such discussions. It is probable that the fading away of certain communities and the destructive effects of war eliminated alternatives and left one strongly represented opinion in control.

The Septuagint

Greek-speaking Jews, especially in Egypt, had a translation, made from the third century B.C. onward, called Septuagint (LXX; the name derives from the tale that seventy translators were engaged in the work). The books in Greek eventually included not only all that are now in the Hebrew Bible, but a number of other books and longer texts of some (e.g., the Additions to Daniel). Some of these were translated from Hebrew or Aramaic and others were original writings in Greek, but in biblical style. It is disputed whether all these materials counted as the Bible of Alexandrian Judaism; perhaps, as elsewhere, the question is a meaningless one. The Alexandrian interpreter Philo commented on the Pentateuch in detail, but quoted other books little.

The mere act of translation into another language meant that the exact verbal form of the original could not be preserved; but the legend of the (almost miraculously assisted) translation seemed to argue that the translation was as divinely inspired as the original had been and therefore fully authoritative. This was significant for Christianity, in which the exact verbal form of the LXX was at times used as proof of doctrine even when it differed from the Hebrew. The LXX often differed in sense from the Hebrew (Masoretic) text, because it was made from a different text or an earlier edition, because it misread the Hebrew, or because of its translation technique. Both before and after the origin of Christianity steps were taken to revise the Greek and bring it closer to the Hebrew as it was now accepted; finally Jewish preference passed to these newer versions and back to the use of the Hebrew itself. The LXX was thus transmitted to us through Christian channels as the OT of the Greek church, and its books were those that were canonical in that church. Thus most, though not necessarily all, of Hebrew Scripture was already in Greek translation when Christianity began, and so were some books later considered apocryphal. The NT commonly cites the wording of the LXX, but sometimes follows other versions.

The Hebrew Text

During the first three or four centuries A.D. the Hebrew Bible was transmitted in a very narrow tradition of text. It was later provided with points, or vowel signs, and accents by Jewish scholars known as Masoretes (from the Hebrew word for "tradition") and is therefore known as the Masoretic Text (MT). Within it variants of substance are very few. But much evidence suggests that in earlier times considerable variation in the Hebrew text existed. Numerous LXX renderings, at least in some books, came from a different Hebrew original and are often supported by Qumran fragments or by the Samaritan Hebrew. One major Isaiah scroll from Qumran shows wide divergence in writing and spelling style from the Masoretic, while another approximates it more closely. And differences are not only in scribal minutiae. For instance, the chronological data of Genesis and Exodus differ substantially in the LXX, the Samaritan Pentateuch, and the MT, which suggests that these figures were being adjusted to different chronological systems up to a quite late date. Much of the variety within the Jewish transmission was probably obliterated in the wars with Rome. The ancestor of the MT was most likely not chosen through deliberate textual evaluation, but through the choice of this or that manuscript as authoritative. Only gradually did the principle come to prevail that texts must be copied with the fullest precision in every detail, and absolute precision was never in fact attained. But the existence of a highly uniform text, variant-free in sub-

stance, favored the development of a very precise verbally related interpretation, in which every detail had potential religious import.

Targums

For many Jews Aramaic, rather than Hebrew, was the major vernacular, and translations of biblical books into Aramaic, known as Targums, were important. Just when the main existing Targums originated is uncertain, but rules for the reading of them are already present in the Mishnah (a collection of legal material from the first two centuries A.D.). In general, the Targums are less important than the LXX as evidence for the biblical text, more important as evidence for religious interpretation and supplementation with additional matter. In the end they functioned mainly not independently, but as a supplementary text to the Hebrew.

The Latin Bible and the Apocrypha

Though chronologically later, this topic can be conveniently mentioned here. The older Latin Bible of the Western church was in its OT translated from the Greek and not directly from the Hebrew. Jerome's new version (around A.D. 400) went back to the Hebrew, and his thinking insisted on the "Hebrew truth" as basis for Christian use of the Bible. But this in turn involved the observation that a number of books already in the church's Bible were not in the Hebrew Bible. Jerome argued that only the books of the latter should be accepted; the rest should count as "apocrypha." Thus the Apocrypha, as the term is generally used, are those books and portions of books that were in the older Christian OT, but not in the Hebrew Bible, at least as the latter now, by the "standard" canon, was. Jerome's opinions on this matter were received with doubt, the books in question remained authoritative, and it was during the Reformation that his views bore fruit and Protestant Bibles mostly followed the Hebrew in the extent of their OT canon.

Interpretative Patterns

The modes in which Scripture was interpreted and the other authorities existing alongside of Scripture influenced the conception that was held of Scripture itself. In Judaism varying traditions prevailed. In Egypt Philo accepted Greek philosophy as the basic interpretative pattern: the texts were allegorically understood; textual details pointed to eternal verities. A sectarian community like Qumran took as key the principle that everything in Scripture concerned that same community; close verse-by-verse commentaries were written. The main current in Judaism emphasized the tradition handed down by the rabbis; this led to a two-source structure, with written Torah and oral law complementing each other. The oral law, originally passed on in unwritten tradition, was later gathered in written form in the Mishnah and further elaborated in the Talmud. Running interpretation of Scripture took the form of midrash, in which words, verses, and details were interrelated with similar features from elsewhere and embellished with story material; some of this overlapped with the Targums. In worship the entire Torah is read in sequence, selections only from the Prophets; the five Megilloth and some Psalms are also important. The oral law, when it quotes Scripture, quotes overwhelmingly the Torah; midrash is directed especially to the Torah and the Megilloth. Thus the tripartite canon has partial, but only partial, correspondence with degrees of importance in ritual use. The question of supremacy between the Torah and the oral law is not a real one: the Torah is true, the rabbinic tradition is also true, and the question of canonical gradation between them does not arise.

New Testament Use of Ancient Scripture

We have seen that Christianity from the beginning accepted Jewish Scriptures as the Word of God and authoritative; it is inexact, however, to say that it thus accepted the "Old Testament," first, because that expression was not yet so used (the Gk. word *diatheke* means either a will or the covenant linking God and people; a possible exception appears only in 2 Cor. 3:14 and, if so, is an innovation there) and, second, because we cannot be sure that the books recognized were identical with any one "Old Testament" of today. Some books, like Ecclesiastes, Esther, and Song of Songs, are scarcely cited or used; some others, like Wisdom, are clearly influential (e.g., on ideas about Adam, creation, and sin); yet others, like *Enoch*, are actually quoted as authoritative prophetic works (Jude 14–15). To stress the precise boundaries of the canon is thus to force upon the NT an emphasis that it simply did not have. Nowhere does it show any interest in discussing or disputing the limits of anyone's canon, even where this could have been relevant (e.g., disputes with the Samaritans or the Sadducees).

The approach to past Scripture is not at all systematic; passages are used where they serve a purpose, and many others are left unmentioned. There are few sequential commentaries or verse-by-verse expositions. Some have thought that books of scriptural "testimonies" existed and guided the choice of passages to be cited. Certainly Scripture is used very selectively, with a great preference for certain traditions, such as those of Abraham and David, and for the prophetic books, especially Isaiah and Daniel; a very large proportion of all express citations come from Isaiah and the Psalms taken together (→ Old Testament Quota-

tions in the New Testament). The emphasis is "Christological," in that passages were seen as converging on the fulfillment of promise through Jesus and the church. As at Qumran, the present situation of the community was a key to the sense of Scripture: it was written "for us" (cf. 1 Pet. 1:12; 1 Cor. 9:10). The emphasis lies more on the realization of messianic prophecy than on the law. The importance of apocalyptic makes it all the more natural that *Enoch* was accepted as divinely given prophecy.

Although the Mosaic law remained sacred, a change of emphasis took place. Jesus emphasized the "weightier matters of the law" as against minutiae of observance (Matt. 23:23). Reinterpretation of the law within the new Christian context encouraged allegorical understandings (e.g., Gal. 4:24; 1 Cor. 9:9–10), which were linked with typology (Adam and Christ, Elijah and John the Baptist) and became much more widespread as OT passages were more systematically explored. On the other side, Jesus emphasizes Scripture itself as against the tradition of interpretation, which contradicted it. Scripture was thus reaffirmed, but the balance of its parts and the mode of interpretation were shifted to a different plane.

Another factor was the conception that the Holy Spirit had once again been shed forth. It was a common Jewish concept that the Spirit had departed from Israel after exilic times, when prophecy ceased. Now in the church the Spirit had again been shed forth. This could favor the discernment of "spiritual" meanings, it could act against bondage to a written text, and it could lead to productivity in "prophetic" utterances, some of which eventually appeared as books (Revelation).

New Testament Books and Canons

Various factors favored the crystallization of the Christian traditions in a final written form. The practice of reading in church the letters of an apostle; the analogy of the OT read as Scripture; the special importance for Christian faith of the original witnesses of events and the danger that tradition might become distorted and facts forgotten; the rapid expansion into the gentile world, which made oral tradition, rooted in Jewish Palestine, more difficult to maintain—all these may have contributed. The sayings of Jesus himself were particularly cherished. Once the Gospels came into existence, they quickly became central in church life and were liturgically emphasized. Their existence and their centrality in turn probably meant that most oral tradition about Jesus died away fairly soon.

Each Gospel may at first have been attached to a particular community, but the grouping of the four is explicit and is regarded as necessary in the writing of the early church leader Irenaeus (ca. A.D. 180). There are signs that, of the four, John suffered most questioning; it is little quoted in early sources and may have been regarded as favoring Gnosticism; when it was later seen that it could be used against that movement, it achieved acceptance (→ Gnosticism). Mark, though doubtless the earliest, tended to drop into the background in comparison with the "fuller" three. The idea of combining the four into one narrative was tried out in Tatian's *Diatessaron* (also later second century), which was widely popular, especially in Syria, but the four-Gospel canon remained official in the main churches.

The Pauline Letters seem to have been collected and some letters amplified or rewritten by Pauline disciples. They circulated in a collection of ten, later perhaps supplemented by the three "pastoral" Letters to Timothy and Titus. Hebrews was disputed until a late time, and of the catholic, or general, letters, 1 Peter and 1 John had widest acceptance, James was more marginal, and the others were never widely used and were long omitted in certain areas. Revelation, if early popular, was also long opposed, its authorship disputed, and its standing damaged by reaction against millenarian movements in early Christianity. Conversely, various early Christian writings that in the end were not canonical were in the early years treated by some as on the same level with books now canonical, e.g., *1 Clement* or the *Shepherd of Hermas*, and some famous Bible manuscripts contain one or the other of these.

Thus the core of the NT canon was agreed upon quite early, but complete agreement in all aspects was only slowly reached, and indeed was never completely reached in all sections of the church. The arguments by which canonicity was determined are somewhat better known than in the case of the OT. Basically it came down to the authority of the opinion of respected senior persons in the churches. Authorship was naturally a consideration, but the question of who was the actual author was itself a matter of opinion; several rejected books bore the name of Peter. Theological content was also a consideration, but again the question of whether a book accorded with the church's faith was a matter for the estimation of authoritative persons.

Two conflicts with heresy probably stimulated the creation of a fixed canon. Marcion separated Christianity sharply from its Hebraic past and formed a strictly limited canon of Pauline Letters plus the Gospel of Luke, all modified to remove Jewish elements. The Gnostics, conversely, produced numerous gospels, apocalypses, and other works expounding their doctrines, often under the names of apostles like Peter or Thomas. Books of this sort are sometimes classified together as "New Testament Apocrypha," but they are unlike the standard OT Apocrypha in that they never formed part of the canon of the great churches (→ Apocryphal New Testament).

With the completion and fixation of NT Scripture, Christianity had come closer to joining Judaism in the

category of scriptural religions. The "Old" and "New" Testaments had a definite shape. Yet it would be wrong to suppose that these written documents were paramount over all other instances of authority, for alongside them there stood the authority of the rule of faith and that of the bishops. The rule of faith crystallized in the creeds and, though the existing creeds may be later than the formation of the NT, in principle creed precedes Scripture, for it expresses the central affirmations of faith out of which Scripture arose and that therefore rightly interpret it. Thus early Christianity was never really a fully scriptural religion. It had a Scripture, the Word of God, but that stood in a complex relationship with other authorities. The idea that Scripture was entirely paramount over all other authorities comes more from the Reformation than from the NT.

Bibliography

Barr, J. L. *Holy Scripture: Canon, Authority, Criticism.* Philadelphia: Westminster, 1983.

Barton, J. *Making the Christian Bible.* London: Darton, Longman and Todd, 1997.

Childs, B. S. "The Exegetical Significance of Canon," *Vetus Testamentum Supplementa* 29 (1977): 66–88.

Von Campenhausen, H. *The Formation of the Christian Bible.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1972.

Biblical Literature in Its Historical Context:

The Old Testament

S. DEAN McBRIDE, JR.

Introduction

The Hebrew Bible insists that ancient Israel was forged on the anvil of history for a singular purpose: to be an enduring witness among the world's nations to the beneficent sovereignty and providence of the God who had fashioned it. This sublime consciousness of corporate vocation is expressed most fully in the books of the Pentateuch and Prophets, which together provide a more or less continuous account of Israel's antecedents, its formation as the covenant people of God, and its national history from the time a homeland was acquired at the end of the Bronze Age (thirteenth century B.C.) through the restoration of a Judean state in the earlier Persian period (sixth century B.C.). The third division of the Jewish canon, the Writings, enriches this account not only by supplementing the historical narrative, but by preserving vivid literary testimony to ways in which psalmists and sages expressed Israel's sense that divine providence embraced every aspect of its own life and of all creaturely existence.

Study of the intricate relationships between the literature of this canonical legacy and the history to which it bears witness has in large measure shaped the agenda of modern biblical scholarship. During the nineteenth century, scholars sought to construct histories of ancient Israel and its literature largely through critical study of the biblical sources themselves. This work has continued throughout the twentieth century, using new methods of literary analysis as well as a wider range of historical evidence brought to light by archaeological discoveries in the Near East and the decipherment of ancient texts (→ Biblical Criticism).

Formation of the People "Israel"

Civilization was already old in the Near East when Israel appeared on the scene of history. Over the course of the fourth and third millennia B.C., literate cultures had flourished, and in some cases died or grown moribund, in Mesopotamia (→ Accad; Babylon; Mitanni; Sumer), Anatolia (→ Hittites), Syria (→ Ebla; Mari; Ras-Shamra), and of course Egypt. Israel was at least an indirect heir to intellectual achievements of most of these predecessors, and in the traditions of Genesis it traced back its own lineage among them. Yet when biblical sources describe the events that indelibly fixed Israel's peculiar character, they focus on a religious drama, recalling how a warrior deity, Yahweh, created a people distinct from all others, nurtured it in wilderness isolation, and granted it through conquest arable land in which to dwell. Israel thus knew itself to be both continuous with and radically separate from other peoples; this contributes to the difficulty of reconstructing the formative stages of its political development.

Palestine During the Transition from the Late Bronze to the Early Iron Age (ca. 1250–1100 B.C.)

Israel's proximate origins, as distinct from the antecedent histories of the groups that comprised it, must be sought in the turmoil of Late Bronze Age politics, which effectively destroyed both the Hittite and Egyptian empires in greater Syro-Palestine. Upheavals of the thirteenth century B.C. were followed in the first half of the twelfth by gradual consolidation of regional powers. The coast of Palestine south of the Carmel ridge to the border of Egypt was occupied by Philistines and other "Sea Peoples." Coastal territory from the plain of Acco northward was held by Phoenician city-states, most notably Tyre, Sidon, and Byblos. Aramean tribes exerted increasing control of inland Syria, while the newly formed kingdoms of Ammon, Moab, and Edom gained ascendancy in Transjordan. In the wilderness region farther to the southeast, less settled groups such as Amalekites and Midianites held sway.

According to biblical sources, all of these regional powers figured prominently as peers and competitors in the history of Israel's own political formation. The earliest extrabiblical evidence to establish an Israelite presence among them is a remarkable reference in the victory stele of Pharaoh Merneptah, now dated to 1207 B.C. The text records Merneptah's claim to have reasserted hegemony over the southern district of

Egypt's former province of Canaan—by defeating several city-states and wholly obliterating the population of "Israel." The very mention of Israel by Merneptah suggests that it was able to muster a significant force against him, but secure evidence is still wanting to determine how much earlier an entity by this name may have been present in Canaan, where it came from, and the extent of its occupation. However, because neither the fourteenth-century B.C. Amarna letters nor campaign reports of Merneptah's immediate pharaonic predecessors refer to such a population, it is likely that "Israel" only emerged in Canaan toward the end of the thirteenth century.

Merneptah's campaign may well have dealt severe blows to Canaanite city-states and "Israel" alike in central Palestine, so that the twelfth century became a period of recovery and extended struggle for dominance among them. But Israelite clans and tribes can be associated with the numerous new agricultural settlements that appear in the central Palestinian highlands during the initial phase of the Iron Age.

Traditions of the Israelite League

The oldest literary compositions preserved in the Hebrew Bible are poetic works, dating probably to the latter half of the twelfth century B.C., that celebrate triumphs of Yahweh, Israel's God, over historical adversaries. The lyric poem in Exod. 15:1–18 (cf. v. 21) may be likened to a national anthem, serving both to preserve and to shape popular memory of formative experiences. Although the anthem is imbued with an intense patriotic consciousness, the corporate unity it evokes is Yahweh's "people" rather than "Israel." Throughout, hymnic praise of Yahweh—as ancestral deity and, especially, preeminent divine warrior—is juxtaposed with terse narrative elements: God's victory over Pharaoh and Egypt's chariot forces at the Sea of Reeds (→ Red Sea); God's guidance of those delivered from the Egyptian foe to a haven in the wilderness; the trepidation felt by political leaders of Philistia, Transjordan, and Canaan when word reaches them of Yahweh's deeds; and, finally, implantation of the newly created people of God in the Palestinian highlands, thereby establishing a sacral kingdom over which Yahweh is to rule forever.

The victory ode in Judges 5, ascribed to the prophetess Deborah and the commander Barak, provides a sharper portrait of early Israel's social composition. An objective political entity "Israel" is expressly in view here; it is exalted alongside "Yahweh, Israel's God," whose timely intervention has enabled a volunteer militia to prevail in battle near Megiddo against a coalition of Canaanite kings.

These archaic poems, together with similar sources dating to the following century (e.g., the hymnically framed tribal blessings in Deut. 33), sketch a reasonably coherent picture of an emergent community joined by religious traditions as well as common political interests. Available evidence warrants several conclusions regarding the character and significance of this early Israelite league or confederation.

The alliance of tribes had military capability and purpose. When occasion demanded, "Israel" could muster a militia. Whether defensive or offensive, the league wars were considered to be Yahweh's wars, because God not only sanctioned them, but participated as warrior in them.

The tribes understood themselves to form an extended family, joined together in covenant with Yahweh, to whom they owed ultimate political allegiance (Deut. 33:3–5; cf. 6:4–5; Josh. 24:1–27). The concept of Yahweh's kingship over Israel and the related ideology of sacral warfare had ritual expression, no doubt in irregular tribal conclaves to prepare for battle, but more importantly in periodic pilgrimage festivals held at various regional shrines (esp. Gilgal, Bethel, Shechem, and Shiloh). Such occasions for celebrating Yahweh's providential deeds and gifts to Israel were the settings in which a national epic began to emerge.

Except for extraordinary circumstances (cf. Judg. 19–21), judicial authority, like military leadership, was exercised at the levels of clan and tribe rather than league. In sacral affairs, however, professionalism took hold early on in the form of clerical "families," or guilds, serving at major regional sanctuaries who traced their lineages to notable priestly ancestors, Moses and Aaron in particular (cf. Judg. 18:30; 20:26–28; 1 Sam. 1–3). These guilds became increasingly important channels for transmission of Yahwistic ethos and league traditions (→ Levites; Priests). For example, legislation preserved in the Book of the Covenant (Exod. 21–23) may represent the tradition of covenantal law transmitted by the Shiloh circle of Mosaic priests (cf. Deut. 33:6–11).

Statehood and Empire (ca. 1000–922 B.C.)

After more than a century of securing a homeland, early Israel sought to stabilize a polity and to interact with and become more like other successful nations around it. This did not inevitably mean the demise of the Yahwistic league and its ideals. The confederation had shaped a communal identity—"Israel," the people of Yahweh—and this endured; but the alliance had yet to build a political structure able to promote internal justice and pursue advantageous relations with its neighbors. Efforts to do so brought rapid social change and expanded cultural horizons, along with strong opposition from traditionalists.

Monarchical Governance and the Kingdom of Yahweh

By the middle of the eleventh century B.C. parts of greater Israel had begun to experiment with monarchy

in several guises. Some of the figures with the title "judge" (Heb. *shofet*) were patricians who acted like petty kings (Judg. 10:3–5; 12:8–15). After leading Israel to victory against Midianite raiders, Gideon turned down an offer to become its "king" (Heb. *melek*), a status that one of his sons, Abimelech, sought and gained over the city of Shechem (Judg. 8:22–23; 9:1–6). But it was Saul, a Benjaminite, who created the first royal house and the territorial state of Israel. His accomplishments should not be underestimated. Yet in all respects, Saul's achievement was overshadowed by that of David, an erstwhile Saulide commander who in the span of several decades transformed Israel into an imperial power.

After his breach with Saul, David established a petty kingdom of his own in the southeastern corner of the Judean highlands. Despite nominal vassalage to the Philistines, he enlarged his own dominion and, about the time of Saul's death (ca. 1000 B.C.), became independent monarch of Judah, with Hebron as his capital. A period of intermittent warfare between David's forces and the reduced kingdom of Israel ended with the assassination of Ishbosheth, Saul's son and successor. Elders of the old tribal league assembled in Hebron, where they enacted a covenant establishing David as Israel's king. In a series of bold moves, David consolidated and vastly expanded his rule: he used his personal troops to conquer the Jebusite city of Jerusalem, making it his new capital; he established friendly relations with Phoenician Tyre; he led Israel's militia to victory against the Philistine coalition; and in subsequent years he waged successful wars against the Transjordanian kingdoms of Ammon, Edom, and Moab as well as the Aramean city-states of Syria to the north and the Amalekites to the south. Thus the regional powers that in the twelfth century B.C. had replaced pharaonic rule over Syro-Palestine were, by the mid-tenth, once again linked through military conquest and treaty. In effect, David restored an imperium to the whole of Egypt's former province of Canaan.

The effect of all this on Israelite religion must have been profound. David's conquests were also Yahweh's, so Yahweh too ruled an empire; its religious center was the pavilion erected by David on Jerusalem's acropolis to enshrine the Ark, an object emblematic of divine presence during the period of the league (2 Sam. 6; cf. Ps. 132). In another important move, David reorganized the old priestly guilds of Israel and Judah into a unified "levitical" clergy, which officiated at the central sanctuary in Jerusalem, but was also deployed widely in greater Israel to oversee civil and sacral affairs alike (cf. 1 Chron. 6; 23–26).

Later years of David's reign were troubled by civil strife and bitter struggles among his sons to gain succession to the imperial throne. Solomon emerged victorious and dealt severely with those who had opposed him. He reorganized the administration of united Israel, rebuilt cities to defend it, exploited the economic resources of both kingdom and empire, and vigorously promoted international trade. He expended some of the new wealth to construct a monumental Temple for Yahweh, of Canaanite-Phoenician design, thus replacing the Davidic tent-shrine with a far more conspicuous and permanent symbol of divine presence. He also built in the eastern environs of Jerusalem lesser shrines for the deities of states subject to and allied with him, no doubt symbolizing thereby that just as he was ruler of nations, so Yahweh was sovereign among national gods. For traditionalists, especially in the north, the question was whether either Yahwism or "Israel" could survive Solomon's splendidly cosmopolitan achievements.

Israelite Literature of the Early Monarchical Period

Israel's culture had been literate from the outset, but under monarchy the written word grew in importance and with it the scribal profession (→ Writing). The literary accumulation that was to culminate in the Hebrew Bible seems also to have begun in the golden age of empire.

David himself had renown in Israel as a balladeer and poet. Apart from the numerous psalms ascribed to him, Scripture preserves several works of poetry that may well exhibit his personal imprint (2 Sam. 1:19–27; 3:33–34; 23:1–7). The internationalism studiously cultivated by Solomon's regime provides a likely setting for the beginnings of Israelite literary wisdom, whose basic genres and motifs are well attested in sapiential works of other Near Eastern monarchical societies. Whether any of the collections of proverbial lore bearing Solomon's name in the book of Proverbs actually derive from him or his immediate courtly circle is debatable (cf. Prov. 25:1; 1 Kings 4:29–34). The other two biblical books associated with him—Song of Songs and Ecclesiastes—belong to a considerably later period.

Much of the evidence used by scholars to reconstruct the early history of worship at the Temple in Jerusalem is derived from the book of Psalms. Although the Psalter itself is a postexilic anthology and precise dating of individual psalms is notoriously difficult, typologically early hymns and prayers that celebrate Yahweh's enthronement and sovereignty over the nations and glorify Zion and its king (e.g., Pss. 2; 18; 29; 68; 72; 93) may be taken to represent the oldest traditions of the Temple cultus in Jerusalem.

Criticism has also discerned literary deposits from the early monarchical period embedded within the sixth-century B.C. historiographical works of the Pentateuch and Former Prophets (Joshua through 2 Kings). Because this old material has been supplemented and in some parts extensively reworked by authors responsible for the later forms of the literature, much is uncertain regarding its original extent and

character. Most critics have taken the view that the deposits represent a number of originally self-contained compositions, possibly written or compiled from oral traditions by scribes attached to the courts of David and Solomon. Typically posited are the following discrete sources or documents: the Yahwist narrative (J) underlying or incorporated into the pentateuchal books of Genesis, Exodus, and Numbers; an "Ark narrative" (attested principally in 1 Sam. 4–6) that recounts the story of the Ark's capture and return during the early period of the wars between the Israelite league and the Philistines; the account of David's rise to power (comprising most of 1 Sam. 16–2 Sam. 5); and the brilliantly crafted narrative that traces the threads of court intrigue, blood vengeance, and conspiracy that have their denouement in Solomon's accession to the throne of David (2 Sam. 9–20; 1 Kings 1–2). Yet none of these narratives seems complete in itself, and there are features of style, theme, and theology common to all of them. Thus it is possible that they represent not independent works, but only the most conspicuous parts of a comprehensive national epic—crafted from earlier Israelite sources and popular Near Eastern traditions during the Solomonic era—that traced, as it were, a history of human civilization from primeval times and the rise of nations through the origins and exaltation of Israel, culminating with accounts of the transcendent achievements of David and Solomon.

From Divided Monarchy to Exile (922–586 B.C.)

Rebellion abroad and growing unrest in the north of Israel itself tarnished Solomon's splendor even before his long reign had ended. During the next four centuries there were few occasions for realistic hope that the golden age of empire could be recovered. And yet the legacy of David and Solomon, like that of the Israelite league before them, was never lost. Israel had begun its historical pilgrimage learning itself to be the people of Yahweh; it had explored a new form of this identity in the dazzling era of United Kingdom and empire. The ideals and limitations of both of these Israels endured not merely as treasured memories, but as models to be reexamined and reinterpreted in the light of subsequent events.

The Royal Houses of Israel and Judah

Although Judah became a more or less integral part of Israel under David, it kept its own identity, so that Solomon in effect wore a double crown. Soon after his death (ca. 925), representatives of the Israelite tribes convened again, this time at Shechem in the heartland of the original league, to nullify their oath of allegiance to the house of David. Instead of Rehoboam, Solomon's defiant heir, they elected to royal office one of their own, Jeroboam, an Ephraimite. The rupture between the kingdoms proved to be permanent, and the torn fabric of a united Israel, Yahweh's people, was almost irreparable.

Jeroboam reestablished under royal auspices the Israelite sanctuaries of Bethel and Dan, where the old Yahwistic iconography of the bull replaced the cherubim of Solomon's Temple. Provincialization of the national religion may have served Jeroboam's immediate purposes, but it seems also to have contributed to the continuing instability of the northern state. Under Omri, Ahab, and their two dynastic successors, Israel did become a major power in Syro-Palestine, and Samaria became a cosmopolitan center rivaling Solomon's Jerusalem. But the biblical record describes this as an era of growing apostasy from Yahwism and its traditional values.

National resurgence of Assyria in the mid-ninth century B.C. under Shalmaneser III (858–824) and the waxing and waning of its imperial power throughout the following two centuries dramatically affected the political fortunes of Israel and other Syro-Palestinian states. Under the rule of Tiglath-pileser III (745–727) Assyria's empire expanded to include virtually all Syro-Palestine as well as Mesopotamia and eastern Anatolia. Israel's rapid decline during this period was punctuated by a series of coups and futile efforts, in alliance with other states, first to resist and then to rebel against Assyrian sovereignty. When the last Israelite ruler, Hoshea, began to reign in 732, his reduced kingdom consisted only of Samaria and its immediate environs. Yet he took Tiglath-pileser's death as occasion for another rebellion. The brutal response came a few years later, in 722–720, when the forces of Shalmaneser V (727–722) and his successor, Sargon II (722–705), besieged and destroyed Samaria, deported its surviving population, and moved in settlers from other parts of the Assyrian Empire.

Later History of the Judean Monarchy

During Ahaz's reign, Judah too became an Assyrian vassal (ca. 730 B.C.), but refrained from joining in the rebellions that brought Israel's downfall. However, the next Davidic dynast, Hezekiah, was a zealous nationalist who systematically prepared for revolt. In addition to conspiring with other states, Hezekiah welcomed refugee settlers from the Northern tribes into Judah; he encouraged them to identify with his realm by instigating major religious and political reforms aimed at restoring preeminence to Jerusalem's Temple as the center of an all-Israelite Yahwism. Consistent with this, he seems to have reorganized the Yahwistic clergy on the model of David's levitical priesthood (cf. 2 Chron. 29–31). Jerusalem's own defenses were extended and strengthened (→ Siloam Inscription). When Sargon died and Sennacherib (705–681 B.C.)

acceded to the Assyrian throne, revolts flared up throughout the empire; Hezekiah began his with an assault on Philistine coastal cities whose rulers remained loyal to Assyria. Sennacherib retaliated in 701, securing the Phoenician coast and easily defeating Hezekiah's Philistine allies; Assyrian troops laid siege to Judean fortresses. Hezekiah capitulated, but Jerusalem itself was spared when Sennacherib's forces withdrew. Assyria remained strong through the reigns of Esarhaddon (680–669 B.C.) and Ashurbanipal (668–627 B.C.), but the empire declined rapidly thereafter. The capital city of Ashur was taken by the Medes in 614, and they, together with the Babylonians, conquered Nineveh and other Assyrian strongholds two years later.

In the first half of the seventh century B.C. Hezekiah's successors, Manasseh and Amon, reintroduced non-Yahwistic cults and practices into Judah. Amon was assassinated (640), and Judean forces secured the throne for his son, Josiah, who was only eight at the time. In the years following Ashurbanipal's death, when Assyria lost hold of its empire, Josiah seems to have made a bold bid to restore Davidic rule over territories of the former United Kingdom of Israel and Judah. Like Hezekiah a century before him, he purged Jerusalem and Judah of alien cults, and restricted sacrificial worship of Yahweh to Zion's Temple. But he also desecrated the altar of Bethel to the north of greater Judah and destroyed shrines throughout the Assyrian province of Samaria. The most celebrated events occurred in the eighteenth year of his reign (622 B.C.), when a document called "the book of the law [Heb. *torah*]" (2 Kings 22:8) or "the book of the covenant [Heb. *berit*]" (2 Kings 23:2) was recovered from the Temple archives. Convinced of the document's constitutional import, Josiah read it aloud before a plenary assembly of Judah's citizens, and he and they together entered into covenant with Yahweh to observe faithfully all of its stipulations. But if Josiah aspired to restore the Davidic kingdoms, it was not to be. In 609 B.C. he was slain in battle, attempting to halt at the pass of Megiddo a contingent of Egyptian troops, commanded by Pharaoh Neco II, which was marching north in a futile attempt to save the remnants of Assyria's army from final destruction at Haran.

Josiah's son, Jehoahaz (Shallum), reigned for only three months. He was deposed by Pharaoh Neco, who enthroned Jehoahaz's older brother, Jehoiakim (Eliakim), as an Egyptian vassal. But Egypt's renewed claims on Syro-Palestine collapsed after Neco's forces were defeated by Babylon, under Nebuchadnezzar, at Carchemish in 605 B.C. Jehoiakim became vassal to Babylon, only to rebel several years later. It was his newly enthroned son, Jehoiachin (Jeconiah/Coniah), who suffered the consequences. In 598, Nebuchadnezzar's army took Jerusalem and looted its coffers; Jehoiachin, along with many of Jerusalem's elite, was deported to Babylon, where he spent the rest of his life in exile. His uncle, Zedekiah (Mattaniah), was appointed to remain in Jerusalem as surrogate vassal-ruler. In league with Egypt, he too rebelled. Nebuchadnezzar's army returned and after a prolonged siege conquered the city in 587–586, reducing it, including the despoiled Solomonic Temple, to rubble. Leading priests, other officials, and Zedekiah's own sons were executed; Zedekiah was blinded, then led into exile together with other survivors. Although decimated, Judah was not depopulated. North of the ruined capital, the Babylonians established a provincial garrison, Mizpah, which served as a residence for Gedaliah, a member of a prominent family of Judean scribes, who was appointed to remain as governor. His overtures to Judah's remnant population, to lay down arms and begin rebuilding a stable society under Babylonian auspices, had some success, until he was assassinated by a band of die-hard rebels. Fearing Babylonian retaliation, some remaining Judeans fled to Egypt, taking the prophet Jeremiah with them.

Prophecy and Kingship

Most of the phenomena typical of Israelite prophetism are now closely paralleled in literary sources from other ancient Near Eastern cultures. Under various titles, prophets functioned as spiritually sensitive channels through whom gods could convey visions and oracles to human audiences. Not surprisingly, kings figure most prominently among those to whom such communications are addressed in extant sources (e.g., letters from Mari, an ancient city of the upper Euphrates River area). In biblical traditions, the correlation between prophetism and monarchy is particularly close. The prophet Nathan is depicted as a key figure in David's court, not only mediating oracular response to the king's questions (2 Sam. 7:1–17), but voicing divine disapproval of his actions (2 Sam. 12:1–14) and participating in the selection of his successor (1 Kings 1:22–40). Ahijah, a prophet from Shiloh, announces to Jeroboam that God has selected him to establish a new era of dynastic rule over the Northern tribes of Israel (1 Kings 11:29–39).

Israelite prophecy thus acquired a special institutional significance: prophets were seen as having central responsibility in defining the intersection between divine and human politics. They were more than inspired advisers to kings, because they were empowered to speak and act on behalf of Yahweh, Israel's preeminent sovereign.

This institutional understanding of prophecy seems to have developed especially in the Northern Kingdom during the ninth century B.C. The review of Omride rule and its demise gives unusual prominence to prophetic figures (1 Kings 16–2 Kings 10). Moreover, there are thematic links between this material and Elohistic (E) narrative segments embedded in the Penta-

teuch. The old national epic drafted by Solomon's scribes (represented in the Pentateuch by the J narrative) may have been reworked and expanded in the court of Jehu to justify the consolidation of his reign as a return to pristine covenantal Yahwism.

A century later, a new flowering of Israelite prophetism occurred. Spoken words of some prophets were committed to writing, the better to preserve their testimony to God's involvement in affairs of the world. Around these early collections of prophetic traditions grew the canonical books of the Latter Prophets (Isaiah to Malachi). Literary witnesses to eighth-century B.C. prophecy exhibit many similarities of genre and message, but also significant differences in perspective, theological theme, and emotional tone. In the preserved visions and speeches of Amos, a Judean who addressed the elite of the Northern Kingdom during the heyday of Jeroboam II's reign (ca. 750 B.C.), it is outrage at Israel's perversion of social justice, abuse of prosperity, and religious hypocrisy that predominates. Hosea, a Northerner, seems to have prophesied during the era of frantic royal politics that preceded the nation's total collapse. His message, like Amos's, knows the certainty of divine judgment, but the depth of God's compassion means that there is always prospect of restoration beyond punishment. Materials in the anthological books of Isaiah and Micah that can be assigned to the late eighth century B.C. portray Yahweh, the divine warrior of old, as majestically enthroned above the fray of human history and yet acting diligently as judge to guide its course toward fulfillment of a master plan that includes vindication of Zion and the Davidic dynasty.

The Covenantal Legacy of Israel

Israelites who found refuge in Judah after the destruction of Samaria brought a rich legacy with them: their version of the national epic; traditions of prophecy, hymnody, and wisdom; and, above all, their memory that long before divine election of Zion a pact had been made in the wilderness between Yahweh and Hebrew refugees from Egyptian oppression (→ Covenant). If the ethos of the Israelite league had faded in monarchical Judah, Hezekiah's policies were midwife to its rebirth. His reforms enabled Jerusalem to nurture visions of Mount Horeb as well as Zion, to celebrate Moses, model liberator and lawgiver, as well as David, archetypal builder of Yahweh's empire among the nations.

The most enduring achievement of Hezekiah's reign is probably the "Torah of Moses" preserved in the book of Deuteronomy (chaps. 4–28); its earliest form may have been drafted by levitical officials of Hezekiah's reorganized clergy, which included priests of Mosaic lineage (cf. Deut. 10:8–9; 18:1–8; 33:4–5, 8–11). An edition of the national epic may have been written in Hezekiah's court, not only updating the old Solomonic version, but enlarging it with traditions brought from the North. That Hezekiah's scribes endeavored to preserve a literary heritage of wisdom is indicated by Prov. 25:1; perhaps the archaic poetical drama of Job (whose familiar themes are as pertinent to the crises of the later eighth century B.C. as to those of the early sixth) is the work of this same circle.

The revitalization of Israelite nationalism and religion initiated under Hezekiah seems to have suffered a serious setback during the reigns of his successors, until the era of the Josian reforms at the end of the seventh century B.C. At this time, apparently, the Deuteronomic Torah was brought out of the Temple archives and made the law of the land. Josiah's scribes were probably responsible for the penultimate form of the outer framework of Deuteronomy (chaps. 1–3, 29–34), which served as an introduction to their edition of the following books of Joshua, Judges, Samuel, and Kings. This "Deuteronomic" (or "early Deuteronomistic") version of the national epic thus traced the history of the covenant people, "all Israel," from the time of its formation under Moses' leadership in the wilderness through its ostensible reconstitution under Josiah, when the Mosaic law once again became the polity of the nation (cf. 2 Kings 23:24–25). Obviously, there was still a final chapter of monarchical history to be tragically lived and then written in exile.

Literary reflections of the Josian period and its aftermath can also be discerned elsewhere in Scripture. The oldest stratum of the Priestly pentateuchal laws—specifically the Holiness Code represented mainly in Leviticus 17–26—appears to be the work of Josiah's Aaronidic clergy, drafted in part as a corrective to the levitical program promulgated in the Deuteronomic Torah. The Yahwistic nationalism generated by Josiah's religious reforms and political policies is attested in the books of Zephaniah and Nahum, the latter celebrating Nineveh's fall in 612 B.C. The somber dialogue of Habakkuk reflects a slightly later period, after Josiah's death and about the time of the battle of Carchemish (605 B.C.). However, the fullest witnesses to the final decades of the kingdom of Judah and the beginning of the Exile are found in the books of Jeremiah and Ezekiel.

Jeremiah belonged to a family of levitical priests that traced its lineage back through the old Shiloh clergy to Moses; his prophecy consistently reflects this ancestral heritage as it was most forcefully expressed in the traditions of Deuteronomic covenantal Yahwism. In Jeremiah's view, the demise of the Judean state, like that of monarchical Israel before it, was the inevitable result of God's people having wantonly violated the covenant obligations upon which their corporate existence depended. Ezekiel, on the other hand, was a priest of Zadokite lineage who was taken into exile with the deportation of 597 B.C. Although influence of Deuteronomic covenantal themes and language can be discerned in the work ascribed to him, his theological

perspective, with its reciprocal emphases on divine glory and ritual purity, indicates closest affiliation with the Priestly circle responsible for the Holiness Code.

The greatest achievement of Judean prophecy was to envision a future beyond judgment, sustaining the faithful, whether they lived in distant exile or in sight of the Temple's ruins; but for the while, the appropriate liturgical response to disaster was mourning and prayerful petition (Lamentations; Pss. 44; 74; 79; 137; 1 Kings 8:22–53).

The Age of Restoration (538–432 B.C.)

Throughout the six centuries of Israelite and Judean history preceding the Exile, the entire eastern Mediterranean world had been a seething cauldron of political violence. A degree of international calm, especially in Syro-Palestine, was effected by the more tolerant policies of early Achaemenid rulers (→ Persia). The scattered remnants of "Israel" not only benefited from these policies in the short term, but brought them to eloquent intellectual expression, at once preserving their own spiritual heritage while making a lasting contribution to human civilization.

Reconstruction and Reform

After his spectacular victories in Asia Minor, Cyrus "the Great" of Persia defeated the forces of Babylon in 539 B.C. and established hegemony over its exhausted empire. He cultivated an image of himself as divinely chosen liberator of captive peoples and restorer of the sanctuaries of their gods. In accord with this program (outlined in the text of the "Cyrus Cylinder") he issued an edict in 538, claiming that "Yahweh, God of Heaven" had granted him sovereignty over all the world's kingdoms and had charged him to rebuild the Jerusalem Temple. Judeans were urged to return to their homeland and carry out the mandate (Ezra 1:2–4; cf. 6:3–5; 2 Chron. 36:22–23). Sheshbazzar (Shenazzar), a member of the Judean royal family, was appointed to serve as Jerusalem's governor. He and those who returned with him may have laid the foundations for a new Temple (Ezra 1:7–11; 5:13–16; cf. 1 Chron. 3:18). Early in the reign of Darius (522–486 B.C.) another group of Judeans reached Jerusalem and, despite some initial interference from officials of the Syrian satrapy, secured a renewal of Cyrus's mandate; construction of the Temple was resumed in 520 and completed in 515 (Ezra 5–6).

The biblical account of this era and the rest of the Persian period is laconic, focusing narrowly on the restoration of the Temple cultus and emphasizing that every stage of the work had the active support of the Persian crown. Major attention is given to the efforts of Ezra and Nehemiah.

The date of Ezra's journey from Babylon to Jerusalem, leading back another party of exiles, is disputed, but an earlier setting in the reign of Xerxes I (486–464 B.C.) or Artaxerxes I (464–423 B.C.) is preferable, if only because the authority granted to Ezra in matters pertaining to both Persian and traditional Mosaic law (Ezra 7:11–26) is most easily understood to be a direct outgrowth of policies initiated by Darius. Ezra, the "scribe," seems to have been a prominent legal scholar within the continuing Judean community of Babylonia, who served as adviser to the Persian crown on matters affecting especially the Jerusalem Temple. Thus he was sent to Jerusalem as a royal ambassador, empowered to finish the work of reconstituting the Temple cult in accord with ancient Yahwistic tradition and to establish judicial procedures relevant to the Temple's status as an imperial institution (Ezra 7:21–26; cf. 6:8–10).

Jerusalem's consolidation as a Persian provincial center is credited to Nehemiah. While serving as "cupbearer" to Artaxerxes I in Susa (Neh. 1:11) he solicited and received from the king a term appointment as "governor" (Neh. 5:14) in order to rebuild Jerusalem's fortifications. Once the city wall had been repaired (ca. 445 B.C.), Nehemiah used the rest of his initial term as governor and a second some years later to implement important economic, political, and religious reforms; these measures were consistent with Persian imperial interests, but they also enforced provisions of the polity that Ezra had previously established (cf. Neh. 11–13).

Israelite Theology in the Setting of Exile

The Deuteronomistic History in its completed form is an early exilic attempt (ca. 560 B.C.) to take stock of what had happened to all Israel and why. The final segment of the work (2 Kings 23:26–25:30) narrates the rapid decline and fall of monarchical Judah, ending with notice of King Jehoiachin's release from Babylonian prison. Conspicuous is the segment's introductory claim that Manasseh's gross acts of apostasy had sealed Judah's fate (2 Kings 23:26–27; cf. 21:10–15). Other exilic supplements to the work spread blame for national disaster more widely, declaring the whole people culpable for breach of covenant (e.g., Deut. 28:64–68; 29:20–28; Josh. 23:11–16). But if painful awareness of retributive justice is the dominant theme of such passages, a deeper perception of divine providence is adumbrated in the theological discourse of Deut. 4:1–40. Here dispersal of Israel from the land is just recompense but emphatically not the end of the covenant relationship, for Yahweh is not only "divine retributor" but the "compassionate deity" who never abrogates promises made in the past (Deut. 4:24, 31).

Moreover, the degradation of exile among the nations becomes occasion for Israel to discover new profundity in its own unique historical experience: Yahweh, the God who created Israel in unparalleled fashion, who gave it the wisdom of Torah through Moses, and who remains forever with it in victory and defeat, is the sole sovereign of the cosmos (Deut. 4:5–8, 32–40).

This insight came to even more eloquent expression in the growth of the Isaian tradition critics designate "Second Isaiah" (Isa. 40–55), a work composed at the time of Cyrus's edict of 538 B.C. The poet envisioned a courtroom drama of cosmic scope, involving a plenary assembly of the world's nations, in which Yahweh is at once presiding judge and defendant. Although the case focuses on Israel's experiences, and above all the ruin of Zion (cf. Isa. 34:8; 40:2; 49:14–26; 51:17–23; 52:1–10), the crucial issue is whether sovereignty is exercised by Yahweh or the putative gods of nations that have prevailed over the covenant people. The trial unveils wondrous things about which Israel is called to give witness (40:27–31; 43:8–13; cf. 2:1–5): Yahweh alone is God, creator and lord of history, whose justice is manifest in Zion's humiliation and imminent restoration; Cyrus is God's anointed, and through his conquests the rule of Yahweh is being extended to the nations; and, most astonishing of all, the destiny of the covenant people—God's chosen "servant," personified also as Zion, trampled down and despised by the nations—is to become a prophetic light to the nations, instructing them in the ways of true justice revealed through Torah (42:1–9, 18–25; 51:4–8).

The grand vision of Second Isaiah foresaw a glorious future for those who immigrated with Sheshbazzar to Jerusalem, but it offered little guidance on what to do once they got there. The first generations of the return had to deal with formidable obstacles, not the least of which were created by divergent views among them regarding who was to comprise the new Israel, how it was to be governed, and what it should strive to become. Largely in consideration of such issues, the later works included in the Hebrew Bible were written and the scriptural canon itself began to take shape.

Prophetic Vision and Mosaic Constitution

Biblical sources agree that the crux of the restoration was the reestablishment of Jerusalem as the cultic center of Yahwism. At the same time, prophetic texts dating to the early Persian period show that some within the restoration community had considerably broader goals in view. The final chapters of the Isaian anthology (Isa. 56–66), often designated "Third Isaiah," understand the promised exaltation of Zion to include a full ingathering of the Israelite Diaspora (Isa. 60:4; 65:1–12; 66:18–21) and even incorporation of gentile converts into the community of the new Israel (Isa. 56:3–8). Obadiah, Joel, Ezekiel 38–39, and Zechariah 9–14 exhibit a more militant stance toward the nations, envisioning Yahweh's imminent kingdom to involve a revival of Israelite nationalism. These differences of perspective bear upon the final stages in the literary formation of biblical Torah, "law."

In addition to contents of the Pentateuch, there is another corpus in the Hebrew Bible identified as Torah, specifically the "Torah of the Temple" (Ezek. 43:12) preserved within the elaborate vision report of Ezekiel 40–48. The entire report, dated to the year 573 B.C. but certainly supplemented during the initial phase of the Persian period, lays out under the authority of Ezekiel a restoration program that is both grandly idealistic and decidedly more concrete than the vision of Second Isaiah. It includes a revelational blueprint—with specific measurements and description of materials and decor—for rebuilding the Temple complex. Various factors suggest that this text was the charter under which the Jerusalem Temple was reconstructed as an imperial shrine in the first years of the reign of Darius I. At least the initial phase of the work was completed under the direction of Zerubbabel and Jeshua, leader of the Zadokite clergy, and with the support of Haggai and Zechariah.

However, the Torah ascribed to Ezekiel did not long remain the official polity of the Judean community. The prophecy of Malachi, probably dating to the early fifth century B.C., provides insight into why and with what it was replaced. Zadokite exclusivism is attacked as a perversion of God's "covenant" with all the families of Levi (Mal. 2:1–9), while the community as a whole is indicted for abandoning its covenantal commitments as set forth in the Torah of Moses (Mal. 3:1–12; cf. 4:4). The issue was definitively resolved some years later, when Ezra reached Jerusalem with a royal commission to establish and implement "the law [Aramaic *data*] of the God of heaven" (Ezra 7:11–26). Although critics continue to debate the matter, in all likelihood the Pentateuch in its completed form preserves the literary traditions of divine "law," or Torah, that Ezra brought with him to Jerusalem. His reforms and those of Nehemiah somewhat later presuppose juridical interpretations of a constitutional document that included the laws of Deuteronomy, but also ritual ordinances preserved in the "Priestly" (P) edition of Genesis through Numbers. The latter is a remarkable work of theological history writing, apparently crafted by Judean clergy in Babylonia, which restructured and extensively supplemented the initial segments of the Israelite national epic of late monarchical times. The particular interest of P in covenants that establish and reveal to humankind divine structures of holiness (Gen. 9:1–17; 17:1–21) culminates in a lengthy account of Israel's sojourn at Sinai (Exod. 19–Num. 10). Here P preserves older traditions of covenantal law (esp. the Decalogue, the Book of the Covenant, and the Holiness Code), but emphasis is placed on the design of a

portable sanctuary, the "tabernacle" (Heb. *mishkan*), along with its attendant institutions and rites. When, under the close supervision of Moses and Aaron, Israel carries out the divine instructions, it is transformed from a tribal assembly into an articulated cultic community, a human temple as it were, both serving and sustained by the sovereign God who tabernacles in its midst (cf. Exod. 35–40).

The Pentateuch is thus a sacral archive designed to include both the Deuteronomic corpus of Mosaic law and the Priestly history of Israel's formation as the unique people of God. What provides coherence to this archive is less a matter of its broad narrative integrity than of the claim that it preserves authoritative record of Moses' work. In short, neither the visionary program of Ezekiel 40–48 nor any other prophetic testimony could replace or supersede what God had revealed to Israel through Moses (cf. Num. 12:1–9; Deut. 34:10–12).

Israel Among the Nations

Ezra and Nehemiah successfully reformed the Judean community around Temple worship and Mosaic Torah. If alternative visions of Israel's destiny were left unresolved, they had been relativized.

The Judean Commonwealth During the Later Persian and Early Hellenistic Periods (432–164 B.C.)

Governors who followed Nehemiah seem to have kept the province of Judah relatively prosperous and secure, even though Achaemenid rule grew increasingly weaker through the first half of the fourth century B.C. When the forces of Alexander III shattered the Persian Empire altogether in 334–332 B.C., Jerusalem neither gave resistance to the conquerors nor, apparently, experienced any immediate change in circumstances.

After Alexander's death in 323 B.C., control of the Near Eastern territories he had conquered passed to two of his generals. Seleucus ruled Babylonia and most of Syria, while Ptolemy claimed Egypt, building Alexandria as his capital. Jerusalem's position as cultic and judicial center of Judea seems largely to have been unaffected by Ptolemaic policies.

A second and politically tumultuous phase of the Hellenistic period began for Judea when the Seleucids gained control over the whole of Syro-Palestine at the beginning of the second century B.C. Although Antiochus III (223–187 B.C.) was magnanimous in victory, recognizing Jerusalem's autonomy in religious affairs, the kingdom inherited by his successor, Seleucus IV (187–175 B.C.), was in financial disarray and threatened externally on every major front. International events had once again conspired to put Palestine at the center of a world locked in conflict.

After Antiochus IV Epiphanes (175–163 B.C.) ascended to the Seleucid throne, Judea experienced a series of convulsions that provoked anew questions of "Israel's" true identity and its destiny among the nations. Antiochus took an interventionist stance toward Judean affairs, perhaps above all because he coveted the Temple's pecuniary resources, but also, in the interest of unifying his realm, to support those among the Judean aristocracy who wanted isolated, conservative Jerusalem to catch up with the Hellenistic cultural revolution that had already engulfed other urban centers of Syro-Palestine. Antiochus resorted to force when Judean society, already polarized into Hellenist and traditionalist parties, was torn apart by strife over the high-priestly office. Seleucid troops brutally enforced a decree banning traditional practices of Yahwism. The Temple became a shrine of the realm, where divine Antiochus was venerated alongside the imperial deity, Zeus Olympios, whose altar was raised in the forecourt.

When the zealots of Hellenistic nationalism controlling Jerusalem tried to uproot Yahwism from the Judean countryside and to enforce observance of the imperial cult, they soon met vigorous resistance. Insurgent groups of varying political and religious persuasions coalesced under the leadership of the Hasmonean priestly family of Mattathias and his five sons, the third of whom—Judah, called the "hammer" (Maccabeus)—proved to be a brilliant guerrilla strategist. The Hasmonean army reclaimed most of Jerusalem itself in 164 B.C. The Temple precincts were purged of pagan accoutrements, repairs were made, and a loyal priesthood was restored to office; the sacrificial altar in the forecourt was rebuilt according to provisions of the Mosaic Torah and consecrated to Yahweh alone (1 Macc. 4:36–58). Although this era of violent political strife had not yet completed its course, the flames rekindled on the altar and in the lamps of the Temple became a new memorial to the ancient concept of Israel as the liberated people of God. (This period overlaps with the period in which books of the Apocrypha took shape, and its story is continued and told in more detail in another article; *see* Biblical Literature in Its Historical Context: The Apocrypha and the New Testament.)

Torah and Prophets

Although modern scholars have generally viewed the Exile as the major turning point in ancient Israel's religious and political history, the canonical sources—or, if one prefers, those who designed the canon of the Hebrew Bible—identify the era of Ezra and Nehemiah as decisive, because it was then that a normative social order, supported by an expansive synthesis of Yahwis-

tic traditions, was achieved. The crux of this synthesis is, of course, the pentateuchal Torah of Moses, understood to be the sufficient though not exclusive revelation of God's sovereign design of the cosmos, with the sanctuary people, Israel, forming its human center in the midst of the nations.

Mosaic Torah undergirded the role of Temple worship and clergy in mediating divine blessing to all humanity (Num. 6:22–27; cf. Gen. 1:28; 12:1–3; 22:15–19), but its import for Israel's religious thought was by no means limited to sacerdotal concerns. At the broadest social level, affecting Diaspora Judaism as well as the Temple community, provisions of the Torah encouraged a piety fully embracing both love of God and love of neighbor. To live in accord with the mandate of Torah involved study, prayer, and communal worship, but also diligent observance of covenantal demands to pursue public well-being, justice, and human rights.

In large extent, the synthesis that formed around commitment to the preeminent revelation of Torah was able to absorb Yahwistic prophetism and its varied literary traditions. This occurred conceptually in a twofold development based on the pentateuchal claim that Moses had been Israel's "prophet" par excellence (Deut. 34:10–12): his promulgation of Torah became the measure of truth by which all subsequent prophetic revelations were to be assessed and interpreted (cf. Deut. 18:15–22; 30:11–14); and prophecy itself was broadened to include gifts of the spirit, especially "inspired" leadership, in the model and legitimate succession of Moses (cf. Num. 11:16–29; Deut. 34:9; Sir. 44:1–3; 46:1). The Deuteronomistic History of Israel from conquest to exile came to be included in the canonical division "Prophets" because it witnessed to activities of Moses' prophetic successors (e.g., 1 Sam. 3:19–20; 1 Kings 11:29–39; 2 Kings 17:13) and, above all, to the perduring authority of Mosaic Torah itself in the life of Israel (e.g., Josh. 1:2–8; 1 Kings 2:1–4; 2 Kings 23:24–25; cf. Deut. 31:28–32:47; Ezra 9:10–15). Similarly, works included in the literary corpus of Isaiah through Malachi supplement and extend the record of authentic Israelite prophecy through the restoration period; but they were also read and interpreted as testimony that Torah disclosed the trustworthy plan of God's continuing rule over Israel and, in the fullness of time, all the world's nations (e.g., Isa. 2:3; 51:7; Jer. 31:33; Mal. 4:1–6; cf. Jonah).

The Writings

As the name itself indicates, the canonical division "Writings" (Heb. *ketubim*) is a miscellany of Israelite literature. Individual works in this collection differ widely in literary genre, content, and provenance. Although most of them were composed before or during the restoration era, some—notably Esther and Ecclesiastes—probably belong to the end of the fourth century B.C. or the beginning of the third; the book of Daniel in its completed form is even later, dating to the time of Antiochus's assault on traditional Yahwism (ca. 165 B.C.). Yet the diversity of the Writings exemplifies the scope of the late restoration synthesis.

A comprehensive historiographical presentation of the synthesis is found in the work of the Chronicler, which at least in its composite edition dates to the end of the fifth century B.C. and comprises the books of 1 and 2 Chronicles together with their narrative sequel in Ezra and Nehemiah (cf. also 1 Esdras). Drawing extensively on the Deuteronomistic narrative, the central part of the work selectively reviews monarchical history, stressing that through the inspired efforts of David and the continued patronage of his loyal dynastic successors the people "Israel" was institutionally formed around the Jerusalem Temple (cf. esp. 1 Chron. 16–17; 22–29; 2 Chron. 2–7; 30–35); yet Israel's sacral constitution, fidelity to which was the sine qua non of its existence, remained the Torah mediated through Moses and reaffirmed by subsequent prophetic messengers (e.g., 1 Chron. 22:12–13; 2 Chron. 8:12–13; 36:15–16). The account of the restoration itself in the books of Ezra and Nehemiah completes the work, confirming the centrality of both Temple and pentateuchal Torah in Israel's corporate life while committing Israel's future among the nations to the intricacies of divine providence.

The hymnic compositions preserved in the canonical book of Psalms, most of which derive from preexilic times, provide ample witness to the continuity of liturgical tradition between the communities that worshiped at the First and Second Temples (cf. Ps. 126). However, some of the postexilic additions to the corpus (esp. Pss. 1; 19; 37; 111–12; 119) are particularly noteworthy because they attest the full development of a piety centered on Torah.

Integration of Israel's sapiential lore with other Yahwistic traditions was a natural development begun during monarchical times if not before. But a more inclusive agenda for the pursuit of wisdom emerged in the Persian period and accounts in large measure for the continuing intellectual creativity of postexilic Judaism, especially in its confrontation with Hellenistic culture. The most compelling factor in setting this agenda was the conviction that Mosaic Torah, complemented by subsequent prophetic revelations, not only laid out the peculiar covenantal norms of Israelite life, but disclosed the perennial scheme of divine rule over all space and time. If Yahweh alone was sovereign "God of Heaven," as restoration theology insisted, then all genuine knowledge—whether imparted through Scripture or gleaned from observation of historical process, the phenomenal universe, and the manifold data of human experience—*should* ultimately coalesce into a unitary theological design (cf. Sir. 1:1–20; 24; 39; 43). Given the epistemological breadth of this agenda,

it is possible to understand inclusion in the Writings not only of Proverbs and Job, but also of such ostensibly "humanistic" works as Song of Songs and the didactic novellas of Ruth and Esther. However, the books of Ecclesiastes and Daniel offer the strongest canonical witnesses to the scope of sapiential thought in postexilic Judaism.

Ecclesiastes (Qohelet) contains the purported memoirs of an anonymous "sage." The memoirs stress the futility of every effort to secure on human terms a meaningful existence. Particularly in light of the narrator's epilogue (Eccles. 12:9–14), the book can more readily be interpreted as a response to the pretensions of Hellenistic rationalism than as a critique of traditional Yahwism. Reverence for God through observance of Torah's stipulations remains the supreme human wisdom (cf. esp. Eccles. 3:12–14; 8:12–13; 12:13–14).

Throughout the narratives and vision reports that comprise the book of Daniel, the chief protagonist is a sage whose life and learning model the inspiration attributed to Israel's former prophets and kings (cf. 2 Sam. 23:1–7; 1 Kings 3:5–14; Sir. 24:33–34). The core of the narratives (Dan. 1–6) validate trust in Yahweh's universal sovereignty and providence: through fidelity to the demands of Torah and exercise of God-given wisdom, the faithful may not only withstand the pressures of an alien cultural environment, but triumph over them (e.g., Dan. 1:17–20; 2:20–23, 47–49; 6:25–28; cf. Deut. 4:2–8). In their received form, the narratives anticipate the vision reports (Dan. 7–12; cf. 2:36–45), which reflect the era of Antiochene persecutions. The message to the faithful remains essentially the same in the visions, even though it is more urgent here and appears in the elaborate guise of mythological symbolism and apocalyptic scenario.

When one recalls Pharaoh Merneptah's claim to have obliterated "Israel" and the celebration of Yahweh's kingship in Exodus 15, there is a remarkable symmetry between the beginning of ancient Israel's history and the latest witness to divine providence preserved in the literature of the Hebrew Bible.

Bibliography

Ben-Sasson, H. H., ed. *A History of the Jewish People.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1976.

Blenkinsopp, J. *A History of Prophecy in Israel.* 2d ed. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1996.

Cross, F. M. *Canaanite Myth and Hebrew Epic: Essays in the History of the Religion of Israel.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1973.

Hanson, P. D. *The People Called: The Growth of Community in the Bible.* San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1986.

Mays, J. L., D. L. Petersen, and K. H. Richards, eds. *Old Testament Interpretation: Past, Present, and Future.* Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1995.

Mazar, A. *Archaeology of the Land of the Bible, 10,000–586 B.C.E.* Anchor Bible Reference Library. New York: Doubleday, 1990.

Miller, J. M., and J. H. Hayes. *A History of Ancient Israel and Judah.* Philadelphia: Westminster, 1986.

Biblical Literature in Its Historical Context:

The Apocrypha and the New Testament

MARGARET M. MITCHELL

Introduction: The Task of Historical Interpretation

All religious literature, as produced by historically situated human persons, bears the stamp, in its linguistic expression, cultural associations, and intellectual universe, of the times and multiple contexts within which it was composed. This article seeks to provide a map of the varied literature of the Apocrypha and the NT in its discrete historical contexts. The goal is to provide a framework for understanding these documents, products of their specific times and places, as vehicles seeking to convey contemporary interpretations of cosmic and historical events and human experiences regarded by the authors as of tantamount significance for their communities of faith.

The Texts and the Period

The eighteen books or portions of books of the Apocrypha and the twenty-seven of NT were written in the interval between 200 B.C. and A.D. 138—in regional political terms, from the reign of the Syrian king Antiochus III to the death of the Roman emperor Hadrian. Grouping the Apocrypha with the NT for this essay (due to the arrangement of Christian Bibles) is defensible in some ways, but not in others. It makes some sense to treat the two together, given the fact that the time period for the composition of this literature, even when the Apocrypha and NT are taken together, shrinks in comparison with that of the OT. More important, the Apocrypha represents the period of religious ferment that was in many ways determinative for the NT. But one must bear in mind that this coupling is, from a historical point of view, completely artificial. It reflects the later history of the Apocrypha as a collection of texts that became a special provenance of Christian literary and religious culture, because those books (and additions to existing works) were preserved in the Septuagint (LXX), then later in the Vulgate (Vg.), though not in the Hebrew Bible. There were many other Jewish and Christian writings contemporary with these that were not included in a canon. Therefore, this survey should not be understood as encompassing a history of all Jewish and Christian literature in this time period, but as an attempt to situate historically a later demarcated collection of literature.

Questions of Historical Method

The traditional approach to the task is to provide a time line and introduction to the general sweep of world history in this interval and then plot the biblical books on that time line, together with providing some assessment of the importance of the historical location of composition for the interpretation of each work. Although this procedure has merits, it is not without difficulties. The first is the question of determining which events are deemed "key" in the construction of the salient time line of history relevant to the sources in question. The second task—the plotting of biblical literature on the time line of world history—is no exact science, either, since most of these documents are not internally dated. So one must use what clues are available in the texts themselves (which are often open to more than one interpretation) to establish historical provenance.

That job is further complicated for this particular body of literature by the fact that most of the apocryphal and NT texts deliberately occupy multiple historical contexts, for they are set in and recreate historical periods in the past while simultaneously addressing and reflecting the historical present of their own authors and communities. For instance, Judith is set, somewhat confusedly, in the postexilic period, but was written during or after the Maccabean conflict; the Gospels narrate events that took place in the first three decades of the first century A.D., but were written to interpret Jesus to communities living after A.D. 70, at least forty years later. This means that these pieces of literature do not have a single historical context, but several, and those who wish to understand them must be informed about and attuned to their various historical settings.

A final difficulty with the traditional model of time line and plotting of biblical literature is its exclusive concentration on geopolitical events, as though wars

and empires were *the* governing factor in human and communal experiences. Recent research has insisted on the equal importance of social history for contextualizing biblical (and other) literature: the elements of everyday life and lived cultural realities that were the air breathed by these authors and their audiences. Attention to such history is especially important in understanding the literatures of small minority religious groups for whom local events (especially those occurring within their own tiny social orbits, which would not register even a microscopic dot on the radar screen of world history) were sometimes their primary concern. But these two focuses of historical analysis (the macro and the micro) should not be opposed to one another, for it is in their integration that we can best comprehend this literature.

Overview: The Essential Pieces of Historical Context

The chronological narrative, or thread of history, upon which the Apocrypha and NT writings are suspended contains many beads of varying size, but for our purposes we can identify seven major ones, an understanding of which is the bare-bones essential for comprehending these literary texts. Except for the seventh event, these historical occurrences preoccupy both sets of literature, with the last marking what will eventually become a point of divergence of the two groups of communities. The six key geopolitical events that constitute the most important context of the Apocrypha and NT are

1. The fall of the Northern Kingdom (Israel) in 721 B.C.
2. The destruction of the Jerusalem Temple and exile of a large number of the Judean populace to Babylon in 586 B.C.
3. Alexander the Great's conquest of the entire East (including Palestine) and deliberate campaign to unite his empire by a universalized Hellenistic culture (336–323 B.C.)
4. The Maccabean revolt beginning in 167 B.C.
5. The conquest of Judea by the Roman general Pompey in 63 B.C.
6. The destruction of Jerusalem and desecration of its Temple by the Roman general Titus in A.D. 70

Although this catalogue leaves out many important events, these six demarcate the successive domination of the land of the Jews by the great empires of each epoch: the Assyrians, Babylonians, Persians, Greeks, Egyptians, Syrians, and (after a brief period of quasi-independence) Romans. This historical pattern of continual conquest and reconquest is rooted in the fixed realities of geography, for the tiny segment of territory that constitutes Palestine, hemmed in as it is by the sea in the west and the desert in the east, forms the vital land bridge between two continents. The accuracy of this selection of relevant key events is further confirmed by written testimony of biblical sources situated at the beginning and end of our time frame that this was how the authors of our texts and their communities *experienced* this history themselves (Dan. 2:31–36; 7:1–28; 2 Esd. 11–12; Rev. 13; 17–18).

The seventh event, the central preoccupation of the authors of the NT, was not perceived at the time to be a happening with any geopolitical significance:

7. The crucifixion of the Galilean Jesus of Nazareth under order of the Roman procurator Pontius Pilate around Passover in or close to the year A.D. 30

It is only with retrospective vision, through the eyes of an infinitesimal minority of the population living at that time, that that event came to be seen as a significant moment for human and religious history, whereas the previous six events, the military conquests, were undoubtedly regarded as so at the time (though surely esteemed differently in the eyes of the conquered than the victorious). All of the writings of the Apocrypha and NT are dated in relation to these seven events, and a majority of them take it in hand to interpret them, even if such is not their primary task and purpose. Further, these events were not isolated incidents, but each created the conditions that were to define each subsequent historical era.

From Monarchy to Exile and Return (ca. 1000–333 B.C.)

The larger tableau on which all Christian and postbiblical Jewish literature was written is the earlier history of the Torah and the Prophets, which tells of God's creation, covenantal election, and installation of the people Israel in the land of Palestine with a conditional promise for perpetuity, and of the harsh regional realities that decimated that idyllic dream—the destructions and deportations of the Northern Kingdom in 721 B.C. and the Southern Kingdom in 586 B.C. (*see* Biblical Literature in Its Historical Context: The Old Testament). After the return of many Jews from Babylonian exile under the edict of the Persian king Cyrus in 538 B.C., Jewish political and religious history for the next six hundred years took multiple forms, but was uniformly anchored in a keen nostalgic sensibility of the loss of politico-religious autonomy in the land and the pristine integrity of earlier forms of religious expression. Therefore, although well predating 200 B.C., the outlines of events precipitated by 721 and 586 are crucially important for this later literature. Among the Apocrypha, the Wisdom of Solomon is set in the monarchical period; Tobit in Nineveh after the demise

of the Northern Kingdom; the Prayer of Manasseh ca. 687 B.C.; and a host of writings in the sixth-century Babylonian siege of Judea and subsequent exile (the Letter of Jeremiah, Baruch, parts of 1 Esdras, Judith, and three additions to the canonical book of Daniel: Bel and the Dragon, Susanna, the Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Youths) and the Persian period of Judean rebuilding (1 Esdras, Additions to Esther). At least in part this recreation of past situations of persecution was due to a felt match with present circumstances of oppression and to new forms of exile that looked to the old for models of resistance and hope.

An inestimably important legacy for the Apocrypha and NT of the twin catastrophic military exiles in these earlier centuries and countless smaller successive movements of expatriation was the establishment of substantial and successful Jewish settlements outside of Palestine—in Egypt, Syria, Asia Minor, Greece, and Rome. The reality of a now permanent Diaspora (Jews living outside the boundaries of the land of Israel) is the essential fact of life that underlies most of the Apocrypha (many of whose documents were composed, and especially translated and preserved, elsewhere) and that made possible the swift historical movement of the Christian mission through the Mediterranean world.

The Hellenistic Period (333–63 B.C.)

Hellenization. The history of the eastern Mediterranean was profoundly changed for all time by the campaigns of the Macedonian upstart Alexander the Great (356–323 B.C.), whose conquests in the East brought Greek language, literature, cultural conventions, and religious practices, in increasingly popularized and localized forms, to the entire region (one material legacy of which is that all NT documents were written in Greek; → Alexander). Jews in the land of Israel and in the Diaspora were directly influenced by the successful hellenization campaign Alexander had set in motion. By the second century B.C., perhaps the most important cultural event for later Christianity had taken place in the Egyptian Diaspora: the translation of the Hebrew Scriptures of Israel into Greek (the LXX, but other Greek translations were made as well), which was to become the Bible of the early church. Biblical translation was soon accompanied by a full-scale Jewish literature in Greek, including poetry, historiography, philosophy, and exegetical writings. In the process not only the stories, but also the ideas, of Jewish history and theology were being translated into Greek linguistic and philosophical forms.

The Diadochoi. Some aspects of hellenization were already at work among Jews in Palestine and in Egypt when the successors to Alexander (the so-called Diadochoi), the Ptolemies in Egypt and the Seleucids in Syria, fought over the coveted territory that lay between them (→ Ptolemy). In the conflicts within the priestly leadership in Jerusalem there existed a divide between those who advocated Hellenism (including its characteristic institutions of the gymnasium and the baths) and those who counseled strict separation from it. The Seleucid king Antiochus III took the land of Palestine by force in 198 B.C., but retained a tolerant outlook toward Jewish religious practices.

The book of Tobit, composed sometime around 200 B.C., combines folkloric fairy tale motifs with simple wisdom about the everyday experience of Jews in the Diaspora seeking to live out the ethical program of the Torah. The original Hebrew version of Sirach, also written in this period (ca. 180 B.C.; the Greek translation by Ben Sira's grandson was made ca. 130 B.C.), is an attempt to correlate the ethical demands of the Torah with ancient Near Eastern wisdom traditions, to show its sagacity and prudence, while also asking God to make his presence known among foreign nations (Sir. 36:1–22). But the largely stable context of Ben Sira, a Jerusalem Jew living under relatively benign domination, was not to continue. The Maccabean crisis that followed left an enormous mark on the Apocrypha, and in its aftermath emerged the crucial factors of the political and religious landscape of the Jews for the following centuries.

The Maccabean Revolt. The conflict was brought to a head by the Syrian king Antiochus IV Epiphanes (175–164 B.C.; → Seleucids, The). For a host of political, religious, and economic reasons, Antiochus decided to force the issue of hellenization among his Jewish subjects, who were divided over it. He instituted legislation against Torah observance on pain of death, installed a "desolating abomination" (either a pagan altar or sacred stone) in the Temple in Jerusalem, and initiated animal sacrifices to foreign gods, adding deliberate insult by including swine among the sacrificial beasts (1 Macc. 1:41–59; 2 Macc. 6:1–9). The ensuing bitter conflict, in which Jews were forced to apostasize or be martyred for fidelity to the traditions of Israel, was a catalyst for many of the writings of the Apocrypha; religious sensibilities about martyrdom, deliverance, and the afterlife honed in that conflict were to become essential ingredients of NT thought, along with the apocalyptic framework in which they were often packaged. The OT book of Daniel combines earlier tales set during the Babylonian exile (chaps. 1–6) with apocalyptic visions (chaps. 7–12) composed during these persecutions, but before the death of Antiochus IV in 164 B.C. The importance of the book of Daniel in subsequent years is indicated by the continued additions made to the work, three portions of which are included among the Apocrypha.

The resolution to the conflict was the surprising

defeat of the hellenizing Syrian forces through guerrilla warfare by Jews under the leadership of the sons of Mattathias, culminating in the purification and rededication of the Temple in Jerusalem for the exclusive worship of the God of Israel in 164 B.C. by his son Judas "Maccabeus" ("the hammer"; → Maccabees). These events led to the establishment of the family that would govern the Jews, as high priests and kings, for the next hundred years—the Maccabees, or Hasmoneans—and to an extensive literature of celebration and reflection on these events. The extraordinary triumph of the underdog Maccabees was eulogized in the tale of the courageously militant "Judith" ("the Jewess"), who personifies all of Judah fighting off the Syrians (under the guise of Assyrians). 1 Maccabees, originally composed in Hebrew but preserved in Greek among the Apocrypha, is the work of a Hasmonean court historian who writes to legitimate this dynasty in the heroic exploits of their ancestors during the war (for the succession of the Hasmonean dynasty, → Maccabees). This was necessary because the Maccabees were not Zadokites, and therefore not lineally legitimate priests. Another apocryphal writing of the late second or early first century, 2 Maccabees, also recounts this history, but in a Greek composition stressing the exploits of the Jewish martyrs Eleazar, the seven sons, and their mother, who resisted Antiochus's edicts to the point of noble death under vicious torture. Most important for the history of theology, especially Christian, is its teaching of the righteous suffering for sins and the promise of bodily resurrection for those who have died for fidelity to the faith (2 Macc. 7). The later 4 Maccabees (a work whose exact date of composition, sometime in the Roman period, is uncertain) may be regarded as the acme of hellenizing interpretation of these same events, as it uses a panoply of Greek rhetorical conventions to demonstrate the martyrs' exemplification of Stoic philosophical virtues in mastering emotion with reason (4 Macc. 1:1–3:5) and to articulate their sure hope for ultimate restitution in the promise of the immortality of the soul (e.g., 4 Macc. 9:22; 17:12), a non-Hebraic concept associated especially with Platonic anthropology.

The crisis under Antiochus IV and its resolution also established the issues and tactics of Jewish realpolitik for the next two hundred and fifty years, as internal Jewish factions vied for power by playing the overlords against one another, with hellenization and accommodation to foreign power always the sensitive fault line. The Maccabees were among the "Hasidim," pious Jews who favored strict adherence to Torah, the forerunners of the later Pharisees and Essenes. Jewish sectarianism, the roots of which extend to this period, was to be a significant factor in subsequent history, including the time of the NT (see below). Ruling elites in conflict over these basic issues and over succession to the posts of high priest and (in some instances) king, even in the ostensibly "independent" period from 142 to 63 B.C., continually had to seek the backing of outside powers for their local authority.

The Roman Period (63 B.C.–A.D. 138)

Infighting between two Hasmonean brothers, Hyrcanus and Aristobulus, led to appeals for support to the Roman general Pompey. That support came in the form of conquest, as Pompey took Jerusalem in 63 B.C., even entering the sacred precincts of the Temple and bringing back its treasures to Rome for a triumphal procession. For the rest of the time period and centuries thereafter, the world-historical scene was subsumed under the power of Rome, initially the republic (a senatorial government with roots extending to 510 B.C.) and then, beginning with the reign of Octavian-Augustus, the empire (all authority was ultimately in the hands of the *princeps*, who had power of purse, armies, decree, and religion). Rome was now the political and military force uniting most of what had been Alexander's far-flung empire; in fact, the new conquerors exploited as a means of unification the fact that the Greek language and culture remained firmly in place in most areas. The Romans also continued Alexander's practice of founding cities or cultivating existing ones to be bastions of hellenization in the midst of alien territory, a policy with key implications for Judean history. Roman policy favored tolerance of subjects' religion, though the Jews were somewhat of a special case. Although treatment varied by emperor, in general the Roman authorities exempted Jews in the cities of their empire from the demands of imperial worship, though sacrifices had to be made for the emperor's health twice a day in the Temple in Jerusalem.

All NT figures (John the Baptist, Jesus, Paul, Peter) and all the authors of NT documents and their audiences lived under the reign of Roman emperors (→ Rome). This is especially emphasized throughout Luke-Acts, which begins by emphasizing that Jesus was born during the reign of Augustus Caesar (Luke 2:1) and ends with Paul appealing to Caesar for a judicial hearing (Acts 25:11–28:19). Roman emperors exercised their ruling powers long-distance from Italy in various ways, most conspicuously in enforced taxation in coinage bearing the emperor's image (Mark 12:14 and parallels). The setting of Judea within the political, religious, and cultural context of the Roman Empire is the dominant historical factor influencing the later apocryphal writings, the events of the life of Jesus, and the emergence of the early church.

Augustus (27 B.C.–A.D. 14)

Herod, King of Judea (37–4 B.C.). A Roman emperor such as Augustus, the architect of the Roman Imperium, could only control a distant, occupied land such as Palestine (an imperial province directly under his control) through garrisons of troops, imperial appointees, and local "friends" (John 19:12) who could

represent his interests, collect his taxes, and pacify his subjects as only those who were one with the people in language, culture, and religion could. The quintessential "friend of Caesar" was Herod the Great, whose long reign as king of Judea was testimony both to his politically deft responses to the vicissitudes of Roman history and to his unflinching ruthlessness in cutting down potential rivals (including his own wife and sons). Herod is known in the NT as the king reigning when Jesus was born, memorialized over seventy years later by Matthew as a vicious and paranoid child killer (Matt. 2).

Herod's mark on Jewish history was especially pronounced because of his massive building projects, which included the building of cities (such as Caesarea Maritima and Sebaste, both named in honor of Augustus), the renovation of fortifications (like Masada, near the Dead Sea, to protect his nation from the east), and, above all, the extensive renovation of the Temple in Jerusalem, a massive construction project he planned and commenced, but that was not finally completed until long after his death (→ Herod). Herod's Temple in many ways was an emblem of his career and its inherent tensions, uniting three aims. First, for this Idumean (and therefore a foreigner whose Jewishness was considered secondhand) it demonstrated to his subjects, the local Jews, his fidelity to the God of Israel and the Torah. Second, it brought the single sanctuary of Judaism up to, and beyond, the standard of Hellenistic urban temples known by the Jews in the Diaspora, who supported it with yearly contributions. And third, it enfranchised his Roman patrons in the very heart of his nation, on the Temple Mount itself, where he situated the Antonia fortress (named after his earliest patron, Mark Antony), housing the Roman garrison. Indeed, a golden eagle (the Roman emblem) was fixed over the Temple gate. It was within this controversial mixed symbol, Herod's Temple, that Jesus of Nazareth undertook an action that was to provoke his arrest and death.

Tetrarchs and Roman Prefects (4 B.C.–A.D. 66). Herod's long reign was apparently a time of relative peace and economic prosperity, as the extent of his building projects shows. But he was never a popular king with the Judeans, and a number of rebellions broke out after his death that expressed the long pent-up frustrations people felt under his client-kingship to the Romans. These were squelched by the Roman legate of Syria, Varus (in one campaign by crucifying two thousand agitators). The Romans divided Herod's kingdom among his three sons: Archelaus (mentioned in Matt. 2:22) was appointed ethnarch ("ruler of the people") of the largest portion of territory, including Judea, Samaria, and Idumea; Antipas tetrarch ("ruler of a fourth") of Galilee and Perea; and Philip tetrarch of the Transjordanian regions to the north and east of the Sea of Galilee. This division of the land, made in 4 B.C., was in effect throughout the life of Jesus, a Galilean Jew who was a subject of Herod Antipas (Luke 23:6–7), a stranger in Samaria (John 4:9), and a festival pilgrim in Jerusalem (John 4:54–5:1) who would have been easily distinguishable from the Judeans (Matt. 26:73).

When Archelaus's subjects complained to the emperor of his brutal and incompetent rule, Augustus exiled him in A.D. 6 and placed his territory under the control of a Roman *praefectus*, or prefect (often called a "governor" in NT writings), an imperial appointee ruling under the supervision of the legate of Syria, who had the all-important control over the legions. This was the state of affairs throughout Jesus' life and the first decade of the church (i.e., until A.D. 41). The prefect did not reside in Jerusalem, but at Caesarea on the coast, venturing into the holy city for festivals and other public duties. Most important, the prefect had the power to appoint the high priest, who was allowed to carry out the Temple cult and other matters of religious and political rule unhindered, as long as he kept a lid on the unrest and hostility among the populace. This he carried out in cooperation with sanhedrins, local councils of leaders, and in particular that in Jerusalem, comprised of seventy men including members of Jewish aristocratic and priestly families, scribes or legal experts, and elders, with responsibility for judicial and legislative matters (the Gospels depict Jesus as being tried before the Sanhedrin for blasphemy and before the prefect, Pilate, for sedition).

Coponius was the first Roman prefect, when Quirinius, the legate of Syria, held a census to inaugurate the tax rolls (A.D. 6). This census (the one Luke has in mind in 2:2), which brought the face of Roman provincial rule into every home, provoked a revolt led by a Galilean named Judas (mentioned in Acts 5:37), which, though swiftly put down, established a pattern of Roman action and Jewish popular reaction that was to dominate the period of Roman rule in Palestine.

Tiberius (A.D. 14–37). As Luke 3:1 indicates, the Roman emperor who ruled during the adult life, ministry, and death of Jesus of Nazareth was Tiberius Caesar. As a Galilean Jew, a subject of this emperor, Jesus carried out his mission in a territory of extremes: gentle rural agrarian villages and fishing settlements in the midst of which were sophisticated Hellenistic cities, such as Tiberias (built by Antipas in honor of the emperor) and Sepphoris, only five miles from Nazareth. According to the Gospels Jesus' preaching and healing were carried out mostly in the villages, where he mingled with poorer folk, but also apparently attracted some wealthier benefactors (Mark 15:40–41; Luke 8:1–3). Perhaps the most oppressive fact of life for the majority of Galileans was the double tax bite they incurred: from the Romans, on the one hand, and from the priests, in accord with the regulations of the Torah for the Temple cult, on the other. The Gospel saying about "giving unto Caesar" has in mind a coin bearing

Tiberius's image (Mark 12:13–17 and parallels; for the Temple tax, see Matt. 17:24–27).

Locally, Herod Antipas (whom Jesus had referred to as "that fox" [Luke 13:32]) remained tetrarch of Galilee and Perea for the whole extent of Tiberius's reign. Antipas's jilting of his first wife to marry his niece, Herodias, led him to execute John the Baptist for his public protest (Mark 6:14–29) and, eventually, to the loss of his kingdom (A.D. 39) at the hands of the Nabatean relatives of his first wife. According to Luke's Gospel, because Jesus was a Galilean, Pilate sent him to Antipas for trial under his jurisdiction (23:6–12).

Pontius Pilate (A.D. 26–36). Like Augustus, Tiberius exercised his power in Judea through prefects. The uneasy situation between governor and governed in Judea had remained relatively stable during the first four prefects (A.D. 6–26), but conflict ensued immediately upon the arrival of Tiberius's next appointee, Pontius Pilate, who at night marched soldiers with military standards bearing images of the emperor into the holy city, to the outrage of the Jews, for whom this was a brazen act of idolatry. In his ten-year administration Pilate often performed actions that deliberately provoked his subjects to rebel and then to suffer carnage at the hands of his soldiers in consequence (see Luke 13:1).

Such was the climate during the Passover on which Jesus of Nazareth journeyed to Jerusalem (around A.D. 30): a tense situation with Roman soldiers and prefect, as well as their collaborators among the Jewish leadership, fearing any spark to a mob action that might kindle an all-out war (Mark 14:2; Matt. 26:5; cf. John 11:48; evident also in the Gospels by the figure of Barabbas, "the insurrectionist"). Whatever Jesus' actual intentions in the incident in the Temple (Mark 11:15–17 and parallels), in such a context it could easily have been interpreted as an act of political incitement. Crucifixion was a Roman form of punishment used especially for slaves and insurgents as a deterrent to others who might challenge imperial rule. When Jesus was crucified by Roman order, the title on the cross, "The King of the Jews" (Mark 15:26; Matt. 27:37; Luke 23:38; John 19:19), if historical, suggests that Pilate deemed him an enemy of the Roman Empire (Luke 23:5; John 19:12). For the time being he was one of many to suffer that fate without much notice.

Gaius (A.D. 37–41). Roman emperor from 37 to 41, Gaius (a.k.a. Caligula, "Little Boots") is especially remembered as aggressively provoking the Jewish people. He ordered a statue of himself placed in the Temple in Jerusalem, an act of self-divinization to revenge the desecration of an altar for the imperial cult by some Jews at Jamnia. The wise legate of Syria, Petronius, held off its installation long enough that Gaius was assassinated before the full damage could be done, but the horror of that impending event was memorialized in several works of the Apocrypha. The meditation on the Maccabean martyrs found in 4 Maccabees (see above) may have been written as an exhortation to steadfastness in the face of the threat Gaius posed. 3 Maccabees (a work that, despite the title, is unrelated to the Maccabees) depicts persecutions of Jews in Egypt in the late third century B.C., but may have been put into its present form during this period of imperial hostility, to comfort and exhort Jews in Alexandria. The Wisdom of Solomon, also likely composed in Alexandria, the site of considerable civic strife between Jews and non-Jews in these same years, represents another attempt to comprehend Jewish theology in Hellenistic terms, especially as the faith of Israel encountered idolatry in the Diaspora. The book contemplates the fate of the righteous person who suffers, which it answers with the hope of immortality as a reward for faithfulness and for the pursuit of God's wisdom (Wisd. of Sol. 3:1–9). These same theological themes were central to Christian Christological reflection, in which Jesus was understood as "the righteous one" (Rom. 3:26; Luke 23:47; Acts 3:14; 7:52; 1 John 2:1; 1 Pet. 3:18). Theological and exegetical work to comprehend what a crucified messiah might mean was beginning at this very time in the early Christian community in Jerusalem (under the leadership of Peter, James, John, and James, the brother of the Lord) and as it spread first to such places as Damascus and Antioch.

Jewish Sectarianism. Jewish unrest under the yoke of Roman rule did not turn into open warfare until A.D. 66 for many reasons, chief of which was the distracting and paralyzing effect of inter-Jewish contentions and sectarianism. The ministry of Jesus and the rise of the early church, which began at his death, were both rooted in the Judaisms of their day.

The Pharisees were legal scholars who developed a code of oral law that interpreted the written Torah for contemporary life (→ Pharisees). They were generally associated with cities and with synagogues. Pharisees were the propagators of some of the theological innovations of the Maccabean era—apocalyptic expectation, belief in resurrection, and final judgment—and in that respect were very close theologically to Jesus. But proximity can often incite conflict rather than defuse it: the Gospels depict the Pharisees as constantly spying on Jesus and challenging the legality of his actions (disputes over Torah, in pursuit not simply of punishment, but discernment of the divine will, are characteristic of rabbinic literature, which is rooted in Pharisaic traditions). This characterization simultaneously reflects the situation decades after Jesus' life of the Gospel writers, who knew of the Pharisees and their synagogues as vigorous opponents of the Christian movement (see esp. Mark 13:9; Matt. 23:1–33; John 9:22; 12:42; 16:2). The most famous of these was the apostle Paul, who as a Pharisee persecuted Christians, probably for their lack of stringent Torah observance (Gal. 1:13–14; Phil. 3:5; Acts 9:1–2; 26:5). But after he

turned to Christianity (likely just a few years before the reign of Gaius, ca. A.D. 33), Paul was to formulate his Christian theology in terms of Pharisaic apocalyptic teachings.

The Sadducees were priests and members of aristocratic priestly families who had chief responsibility for the Temple cult and often served as liaisons with the Roman authorities through the ruling office of high priest (→ Sadducees). They did not accept the new theological innovations, but concentrated on the written Torah as most important and valid. As the titular heads of Jewish government, they were sometimes criticized by their fellow Jews for their tax burden on the population (in accordance with regulations for the priests in the Torah) and for friendly relations with the enemy.

The Essenes were a group with priestly roots who denied the authenticity and purity of those currently occupying that office and repudiated the Jerusalem Temple cult because it was based upon a lunar, rather than a solar, calendar (→ Essenes). A large number of them settled near the Dead Sea (most scholars identify them with the group that wrote and hid the Dead Sea Scrolls), where they founded a community with strict rules for initiation and daily devotional practices of prayer, fasting, and washings. They held fervent apocalyptic hopes, preparing themselves for a spectrum of messianic figures who would intervene in history on behalf of the chosen pious ones.

Though there are sometimes attempts to claim the "Zealots," who concentrated on militaristic opposition to Roman rule, as a fourth Jewish sect already in the early decades of the first century, more likely there was a spectrum of relatively unorganized forms of opposition rather than a comprehensive movement (ranging from bandits to visionary messianic figures like Theudas or the Egyptian, named in Acts 5:39; 21:38). The Zealot party per se was not formed until A.D. 67–68, during the war against Rome. After the conclusion to the war (by A.D. 74), the only one of these Jewish sects to survive was the Pharisees, the ancestors and architects of rabbinic Judaism.

Claudius (A.D. 41–54). Early in his reign Gaius's unbidden older successor named his childhood friend Agrippa king of Judea (A.D. 41–44), awarding him the full extent of his grandfather Herod the Great's former realm. According to Acts 12, Agrippa had James the brother of John (son of Zebedee), one of the first followers of Jesus, beheaded, and he imprisoned the apostle Peter. This was plausibly an instance of the early church's encounter with Jewish sectarian infighting, for the text suggests Agrippa opposed the Christian leaders to appease "the Jews," likely the Pharisees (see also 1 Thess. 2:14–16). Both Acts 12 and the first-century historian Josephus attribute Agrippa's own premature death to God's punishment for his adoption of some of the trappings of Hellenistic divine rulership (Acts 12:2–23; *Antiquities of the Jews* 19.343–51). After Agrippa's death his entire kingdom was once again put under the authority of a prefect (Claudius appointed four in succession: Fadus [A.D. 44–46], Tiberius Alexander [46–48], Cumanus [48–52], and Felix [52–60]), up until the Roman-Jewish war of 66–74.

Early Christian Missionary Activity and the Letters of Paul. The reign of Claudius saw the gradual extension of Christianity into the Mediterranean world as a missionary religion. The founding, at the hands of the apostle Paul, of Christian religious communities (calling themselves "assemblies," Gk. *ekklesiai*), an extensive net of co-workers in Asia Minor and then Europe, and also rival Christian missionaries with roots in the Jerusalem church, was in many ways facilitated by Roman rule, although it also met with sporadic persecution. Roman roads and oversight of safe sea travel allowed Christian missionaries to cover a wide band of territory. Major cities in the Roman Empire already had substantial Jewish populations, and the Christian mission proved to be especially attractive to gentile "God-fearers" in the synagogues, who could join this community of worship of the God of Israel in acceptance of Paul's gospel without having to undergo circumcision or observe dietary laws (which would set them apart from their families and compatriots). What had begun as a rural movement in the life of Jesus now became substantially an urban phenomenon, and the Roman policy of promoting major urban centers in the East enabled Christian preachers to reach large populations rather quickly, so much so that the apostle Paul, by around A.D. 57, could say that in his mission he had completely traced the circular arc from Jerusalem to Illyricum and was setting his sights now farther west, on Rome and then Spain (Rom. 15:19–24).

In this period were written the main documents among the Apocrypha and the NT that are not set in some historical period antedating their author: the undisputedly genuine Letters of Paul to churches and individuals in Asia Minor, Macedonia, Greece, and Rome (Romans, 1 and 2 Corinthians, Galatians, Philippians, 1 Thessalonians, Philemon; for the other Pauline Letters, see below). These were composed and sent probably in the 50s, during Claudius's reign and the early years (the so-called *quinquennium*) of Nero's. Each of these authentic documents reflects its own specific historical context formed by the relationship between Paul and those to whom he writes (see the introductions to each of the Pauline Letters). As a group these Letters attest to the diversity and competition among Christian missionaries in the 50s, especially over the relationship of gentile Christian converts to Judaism and of Jewish converts to the Jesus movement. They also provide remarkable glimpses into how the new movement carved out its own theological and ethical vision by incorporating a range of existing sources and models from Jewish traditions and Greco-

Roman culture to explain its unique claims and experiences and cast them in language that would be comprehensible to new audiences. Distinct to Christianity and Judaism among the range of Greco-Roman religious options was their exclusivity; only the worship of one God was permitted, whereas "pagan" religiosity in general did not expect singular adherence to one god or cult. The tiny bands of Christian converts early on established liturgical and ritual forms to sustain their common life while they awaited a savior whom they called Son of God, Jesus, from heaven (1 Thess. 1:10).

Although Paul's genuine Letters are likely the only NT writings composed in the apostolic age, they also give evidence that a considerable amount of oral transmission was then taking place, passing on teachings and stories (including the passion narrative, miracles, controversies) about Jesus. Paul himself occasionally quotes words of Jesus (such as the teaching on divorce in 1 Cor. 7:10 or the words spoken at his final meal in 1 Cor. 11:23–27), and makes allusions to his sayings as presumably well known among his Christian audiences (such as the love command in Rom. 13:8). Oral traditions such as these would be the building blocks with which the later Gospel writers would work.

Claudian persecution of Christians or Jews is attested, but unevenly, in Christian and Roman sources. Apparently in A.D. 49 or 50 Claudius expelled Jews, or perhaps Jewish Christians (indistinguishable to the Romans), from the capitol city (Acts 18:2) for instigating trouble in the name of someone named "Chrestus" (perhaps a phonetic rendering of the word "Christos," Christ). It is possible that Paul wrote the Letter to the Romans after Claudius's death and the return of these Jewish Christians, such as Aquila (Rom. 16:3), to Rome, which may have precipitated conflict in the house-churches there between Christians of gentile and Jewish background, those who stayed and those who left. Paul explicitly urges the Roman Christians to keep peace with the emperor and all civil authorities and to pay him the taxes due, a Pauline version of Jesus' "give unto Caesar" (Rom. 13:1–7) based both on a principle of like to like and a still vigorous expectation of the imminent end of the world (Rom. 13:11–12).

Nero (A.D. 54–68). After intense scheming Nero assumed the throne of his stepfather. Remembered in Roman sources as especially venal and vain, Nero appears to have been the first emperor to have targeted the Christians specifically, whom he used as a scapegoat for a horrible fire in A.D. 64 that destroyed a large area of the city of Rome. Nero singled out the Christians (why is unclear, but perhaps because their unpopularity made them a safe choice) and subjected them to forms of public death by torture, even igniting many as they hung crucified as an emblem of their alleged crime. Such forms of state persecution of Christians were not the rule at this time, however, or in the next decades; more common were sporadic local outbreaks, which did, however, leave their mark on Christian self-consciousness (Mark 13:9–13). Nero is not named in the NT, but he is referred to in several places. In Acts 25:10 (and 26:32; 28:19), when Paul "calls upon Caesar," he is referring to Nero. That narrative recounts that Paul was imprisoned and eventually sent to Rome, as he requested, by joint action of Nero's Judean prefects Felix (ca. A.D. 52–59) and Festus (ca. A.D. 59–62). In the book of Revelation (likely written at the end of the reign of Domitian) Nero appears to be the slain wicked king ("the eighth") whose reappearance is dreaded by Christians, who remember his violence against them (Rev. 13:3; 17:11).

Galba, Otho, Vitellius (A.D. 68–69). After Nero died by ignominious suicide, because he had left no heir, confusion and civil war reigned in this "year of the four emperors," when the imperial appointees of the Senate vied with those acclaimed by the legions. When the dust cleared it was the general Vespasian, at that time conducting the Roman war against Judea, who held the day. Mark 13:7–8 likely preserves early Christian memories of the anxieties and turmoil generated by these events (as well as recorded earthquakes in Italy in A.D. 68).

Vespasian (A.D. 69–79). For the history of the literature under discussion, the Roman war on Judea in A.D. 66–74, which culminated in the destruction of the Temple, was an earthshaking, decisive event. The constant undercurrent of tension between Jewish subjects and Roman overlords came to a head during the office of the incompetent prefects Albinus (A.D. 62–64) and Florus (A.D. 64–66). When the latter appropriated funds from the Temple treasury, all-out rebellion from a wide spectrum of Jewish factions and groups ensued, inaugurated by the priests' refusal to offer the twice-daily sacrifices for the health of the emperor in the Temple. The rebels captured Jerusalem, and Vespasian chose to leave the Jewish factions in the city to their own infighting and instead recapture the rest of Judea, village by village, city by city.

In the end, after Vespasian was called to Rome as emperor, the presiding general, his son Titus, laid siege to Jerusalem, starving its population; after attacking the city wall with battering rams and ramparts, he breached the embankment on the northern side, went into the city, and burned the Temple, having first entered the Holy of Holies. Accurate details of this military engagement are preserved in the Gospels of Matthew and Luke (Matt. 22:7; 23:38; Luke 19:43–44; 21:20; 23:27–31), along with indications that the Christian community in Judea largely refrained from following any of the charismatic insurrectionists (Matt. 24:23–26), and some, at least, fled from the city before its destruction (Luke 21:21). The history of the Christian movement, already moving extensively into the

Diaspora, was henceforth to be outside of the land of Israel. In the aftermath of the war Judean Jews were subjects of Rome once again, forbidden to rebuild their Temple, with the added sting of a mandatory yearly payment of the equivalent of the Temple tax to support the Roman cult of Jupiter.

Titus (A.D. 79–81) and Domitian (A.D. 81–96). The choice of Vespasian as emperor was due not only to his broad political support and military prowess, but also to the fact that he had two healthy sons who could succeed him. With Vespasian begins the Flavian dynasty, which ruled successively until A.D. 98. Although Titus's short reign was uneventful, later Christian sources remembered Domitian's as a time of increased persecution of Christians under escalation of the imperial cult that required worship of the sitting emperor as a god. However, the historical evidence for systemic, widespread persecution of Christians under Domitian is not strong. More likely there were isolated and well-remembered acts of hostility against some Christians, as there were throughout the first two centuries, but no official imperial program of identifying and punishing Christians. But the ready potential for persecution if put to the test, to worship "the beast [the emperor] and his image," was a living fear for Christians in Asia Minor at this time (e.g., Rev. 13:15).

Jewish Response to the Destruction of Jerusalem. After the fall of the holy city and its Temple began a highly significant period in Jewish history in which the roots of the rabbinic Judaism, which would continue as a vibrant religion to the present day, were established. The locus of this endeavor was Jamnia, where the Pharisaic teacher Yohanan ben Zakkai went even before the end of the war to start a new school. Under his initial leadership began a newly crafted, though traditional, form of Jewish life and piety centered on the synagogue as a house of study, biblical interpretation, prayer, and worship and on strict adherence to Torah even in the absence of the Temple.

As one might expect, considerable theological reflection took place on the meaning of the fall of Jerusalem and the fate of Judea under the Romans. One such work is 4 Ezra, which comprises chaps. 3–14 in the apocryphal book of 2 Esdras. This writing directly addresses the question of theodicy through its creation of a new Job-like protagonist who recounts his journey in theological thinking from skepticism about God's justice in light of the defeat of the Jews at the hands of the impious Romans (described in stunning detail in 10:21–23) to faith in God's ultimate, though inscrutable, providence. In visions Ezra is given a preview of the coming vindicating immolation of the Roman Empire by the Messiah. The apparition of an eagle with twelve wings and three heads, a self-conscious update of Daniel's vision of the four beasts (Dan. 7), demonstrates that 4 Ezra was composed in the time of the Flavians, because the three heads, one bigger than the others, symbolize Vespasian and his sons, depicted as the most oppressive kings ever (2 Esd. 11:1–4, 28–35; 12:22–28).

New Testament Writings Under the Flavians. Outside of the genuine Letters of Paul, most of the NT writings were written under Flavian emperors. The dating of this literature is difficult. The sure beginning of the date span is A.D. 70, but beyond that individual NT documents can mostly only be dated relative to one another. The end of the date span for most documents is when they begin to be quoted or cited by other authors, such as the so-called apostolic fathers (especially *1 Clement* and the letters of Ignatius of Antioch) or Marcion. But since many of the writings in the apostolic fathers are themselves of uncertain date, many texts can only be approximately and provisionally dated. Dating of documents ascribed to apostles of course also depends upon the historian's assessment of their authorship (in what follows, the pseudonymous nature of many writings is assumed; see the introduction to each writing for the arguments).

Early Christian literary production in this period was affected not only by the world-historical stage, but also by six historical trends within the small communities:

1. Knowledge of the destruction of the Temple in Jerusalem, and the more definitive parting of the ways between Christians and Jews in its aftermath;
2. The death of the apostolic eyewitnesses and movement into forms of authority and identity based on written traditions;
3. The lessening of intense apocalyptic expectation;
4. The development of ecclesial institutional leadership structures including bishops, deacons, and elders;
5. The influence of the collected letters of Paul as a literary model for subsequent Christian literature;
6. Increasing accommodation and adaptation to the ethical and social norms of the wider Greco-Roman culture, so as to blend in.

These developments are reflected to differing degrees in the four Gospels. Mark was clearly the first, written either just before or soon after the destruction of the Temple and the ravaging of Jerusalem in order to preserve earlier traditions about Jesus and to address flagging morale in the face of the recent disturbing events (perhaps in Rome). Mark also initiated the practice of composing a "life" of Jesus in narrative form. Matthew and Luke are each revisions of Mark, probably at least a decade after (ca. A.D. 80–90), which adapt Mark's miracle-working mystery man Jesus into the Mosaic teacher of the new Israel and the universal savior of all humanity, respectively. Both works propound historical genealogies for their Christian

communities—claiming that they are not dangerously innovative cults, but natural extensions of old, venerable, and nonthreatening communities. This is especially so in the case of Luke-Acts, which seeks to assure Romans that the assemblies of Jesus are not insurrectionist movements, but harmonious, God-loving communities and thus the rightful inheritors of the same kind of religious toleration Jews had always received under the empire. Creative refashioning of earlier written sources to address new circumstances also took place in regard to the Pauline Letters, for at this time 2 Thessalonians and Ephesians (and perhaps Colossians) were written, purportedly by the apostle Paul, but actually by one who knew his earlier letters and sought to extend his legacy to embrace new ecclesial and social contexts (see Eph. 2:20 on the *past* foundation of the apostles).

The Gospel of John reflects a situation in post-70 Judaism when Christians could be expelled from synagogues (John 9:22; 12:42; 16:2), where they apparently had continued for decades as members. In the massive task Jews faced in these years of creatively fashioning a new Jewish identity in the absence of Temple, priesthood, and kingdom, sharp lines of self-definition were required. Christians of this time were doing the same thing with respect both to outsiders, including Jews (Matthew) and "pagans" (1 Peter), and to insiders (James, Johannine Letters). The three Letters of John, written after John's Gospel, are prime examples of the use of religious invective in the social construction of small sectarian groups. 2 and 3 John (real letters addressing a crisis in the missionary field) and 1 John (a nonepistolary treatise) also demonstrate the narrow corridor of historical reference with which early Christian authors could be concerned. For the Johannine community the key events requiring interpretation are not wars or accessions of emperors, but insults, injuries, and internecine fighting among Christians (which, however paradoxically, they perceive in the cosmic context of Christ's victory over the world).

The cosmic context is given its most imagistic expression in the book of Revelation, which was also likely written under the Flavians. But the book also has a very earthly goal: the excoriation of Rome under the typological name "Babylon" (e.g., 14:8; 16:19) and consolation for the faithful who resist her in visions of their eventual vindication when Rome will be condemned, humiliated, and destroyed (Rev. 18). 1 Peter and the Letter to the Hebrews are also usually dated in the Flavian period, on the assumption that *1 Clement*, which cites them, was written in the last years of Domitian's reign. Both were likely composed at Rome (1 Pet. 5:13; Heb. 13:24). The Letter of James, though quite difficult to date, may also have been composed in this period, as it is apparently known by the *Shepherd of Hermas*. All three of these writings were influenced by Paul, either as model or as opponent, and thus are additional instances of Christian self-definition in relation to apostolic roots, on the one hand, and to the traditions of Israel and paganism, on the other. 1 Peter is addressed to Christians in five provinces in Asia Minor (1:1) to encourage them as they endure suffering "in the name of Christ" (4:14), apparently a reference not to official persecution, but painful calumniation, alienation, and incredulity about Christian beliefs from unbelieving neighbors (2:12; 3:13–17; 4:14–17). Although he refers to Rome as Babylon (5:13), the author calls for submission to imperial authorities so as not to offend or incite persecution (2:13–17). The Letter to the Hebrews relates Christ to the cultic practices and concepts of ancient Israel in order to show his superiority in effecting the once and perfect sacrifice for salvation. The Letter of James seems to reflect a Jewish-Christian community (in the Diaspora, 1:1) in which Torah and the teachings of Jesus are held together (similar to the Sermon on the Mount, Matt. 5–7) in opposition to those who propagate a form of Pauline theology of salvation by faith (2:14–26).

Nerva (A.D. 96–98), Trajan (A.D. 98–117), and Hadrian (A.D. 117–138). Because of a lack of a successor, the Flavian house ended with Domitian. After the short reign of Nerva, a respected senator, two Spaniard emperors were chosen by adoption. Their reigns were long and, from the point of view of Roman historians, prosperous. From Trajan's reign we learn of judicial hearings against persons for being Christians in the northern Asia Minor province of Pontus-Bithynia. Around 110 his special imperial appointee Pliny the Younger wrote to Trajan seeking directions on how to examine Christians and asking what guidelines existed for dealing with them (*Epistulae* 10.96, 97). Trajan replies that there are no universal rules, but if Christians are brought to him, he should proceed as he has done (while disallowing anonymous accusations). Both Pliny's request and Trajan's reply show that although punishment of Christians for their religion—even to the point of execution—took place in some circumstances, there was no strict imperial policy of identifying and punishing Christians. Although the texts leave it somewhat oblique why it was a capital crime to be a Christian, presumably it had to do with sedition, due to the refusal to participate in the imperial cult.

During this time Jewish insurrection in the Diaspora was fomenting. Local uprisings in Cyrene, Egypt, and Cyprus led by messianic claimants were suppressed by Trajan, but when Hadrian prepared to build a temple for Jupiter Capitolinus on the site of the Temple in Jerusalem and outlawed castration (and thereby circumcision), outright revolt occurred again, this time under the leadership of Simeon Bar Kosibah. He was also a messianic figure, proclaimed by some Bar Kochba, "Son of the Star," answering the promise of Num. 24:17. As in A.D. 66–74, the Romans were ulti-

mately victorious, but this time the punishment was even more severe: Jews were not allowed to practice circumcision, observe the Sabbath and festivals, or teach Torah. And they were banned from Jerusalem, which was renamed Aelia Capitolina, complete with a temple to Jupiter. The subsequent history of Judaism, as also of Christianity, would now be concentrated in Galilee and in the Diaspora.

The Latest Writings of the New Testament. Among the last of the writings later included in the canon of the NT are the pastoral Letters (1 and 2 Timothy, Titus), Jude, and 2 Peter. These Letters are especially preoccupied with in-group concerns, chiefly divisions among Christians on matters of belief, practice, and leadership, which may have been exacerbated by the pressures of external hostility. These later texts depend upon earlier epistolary traditions, Pauline and Petrine (2 Pet. 3:1; 3:15–16), and seek to refashion for their own day the literary "deposits" of faith from the great founders of the movement. The deaths of the apostles Peter and Paul are now viewed as well past, enough so that they can be creatively imagined in fictional deathbed "testaments" (2 Timothy, 2 Peter) of those worthies to contemporary churches now embroiled in disputes. The preoccupation of these writings with internal church affairs is accompanied by a minor-key melody of conservative cooperation with the larger social order of the Imperium: Christians should pray for the emperor and live unobtrusively (1 Tim. 2:2) and be prepared to suffer harm for the gospel as the apostles had (2 Tim. 1:8, 12; 2:3).

Conclusion

This was a period in Jewish history characterized by various strategies of encounter and conflict with and accommodation to dominating historical and cultural powers from Macedonia, Greece, Syria, Egypt, and, finally, Rome. Perhaps the central concern of all of this literature—Jewish and Christian—is with the self-definition of small religious communities in the face of conflicts over practice and belief both from within the group and with an external culture or power viewed as hostile. To face the burning questions of each particular context, authors often sought refuge and guidance in key events in the past in order to bolster forms of religious communities in the present living with an eye to the better future they regarded as divinely promised.

Bibliography

Collins, J. J. *The Apocalyptic Imagination: An Introduction to Jewish Apocalyptic Literature.* 2d ed. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1998.

Ferguson, E. *Backgrounds of Early Christianity.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1987.

Koester, H. *Introduction to the New Testament.* Vol. 1, *History, Culture, and Religion of the Hellenistic Age.* Vol. 2, *History and Literature of Early Christianity.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1982.

Meeks, W. A. *The First Urban Christians: The Social World of the Apostle Paul.* New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1983.

Nickelsburg, G. W. E. *Jewish Literature Between the Bible and the Mishnah: A Historical and Literary Introduction.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1981.

Stambaugh, J. E., and D. L. Balch. *The New Testament in Its Social Environment.* Library of Early Christianity, 2. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1986.

The Bible and the Literature of Antiquity:

The Ancient Near East

J. J. M. ROBERTS

Introduction

Scholars have always been aware that the biblical literature resembled in some respects other ancient literature, and even precritical commentators made comparisons between the biblical and extrabiblical texts. Until Napoleon's campaign in Egypt, however, the earliest extensive sources available for comparison were the classical sources in Greek and Latin. Champollion's decipherment of Egyptian hieroglyphics in 1823, the decipherment of Akkadian in the 1850s, and the subsequent discovery and decipherment of Sumerian, Hittite, Ugaritic, and an increasing number of early West Semitic inscriptions have radically changed this situation. This recovery of the ancient Near Eastern literature contemporary with and even a millennium older than the earliest OT writings has provided an important new framework within which to study OT literature (→ Egypt; Hittites; Ras-Shamra; Sumer).

One can still get some idea of the scope and significance of this body of ancient literature in English translation from J. B. Pritchard's *Ancient Near Eastern Texts*, but a number of more recent works provide fuller and more up-to-date translations of this extensive corpus. Particular mention should be made of the two-volume collection of Akkadian literature by B. J. Foster and the multivolume *SBL Writings of the Ancient World* series, which provides excellent and very inexpensive translations of a wide range of Near Eastern texts from many different languages and genres. The value of ancient Near Eastern literature for the interpretation of the OT is profound, and that value is immediately apparent when one studies OT law, psalmody, or wisdom literature.

Law and Covenant

In addition to numerous legal formulations scattered throughout the Pentateuch, the OT contains three major bodies of law: the so-called Book of the Covenant (Exod. 21:1–23:33), the Holiness Code (Lev. 17–26), and the Deuteronomic Law Code (Deut. 12–26; → Law). Prior to V. Scheil's publication of the stele of Hammurabi's law code in 1902, the study of these biblical collections was carried out in a cultural vacuum. As late as 1861 an important German commentator in his treatment of the goring-ox law (Exod. 21:28–36) could claim that of all ancient peoples only Israel had a law that held owners responsible if their animals killed or injured another person. The reason for this difference, he claimed, was that no other people had recognized that humans were made in the image of God.

Such a claim would be impossible for a responsible contemporary critic, because the cultural vacuum has been filled. The modern student of OT law has several major collections of cuneiform law with which to compare the biblical material. There are the Sumerian laws of Ur Nammu and Lipit Ishtar, the Old Babylonian laws of Eshnunna and Hammurabi, the Middle Assyrian laws from Asshur, the Hittite law code, and a small collection of Late Babylonian laws. Apart from the Late Babylonian collection, all these date the composition of the biblical collections of law. Not only are these collections of cuneiform law older than the legal collections in the OT, but comparative study shows that they constitute particular embodiments of a common law tradition that, for all its local and temporal variations, was basically shared throughout the region of Mesopotamia, Syria, and Palestine. The formal similarity among these written collections suggests that the act of making such written collections had itself become, probably under strong Mesopotamian influence, part of this widespread legal tradition.

To return to the goring-ox law, far from the value placed on human life in this law being unique to the biblical material, a comparison with Eshnunna laws 53–55 and Hammurabi laws 250–52 shows that the biblical law is just a slightly different formulation of a much older law embodying the same legal principle. The minor differences in formulation do not suggest any superior evaluation of human life. Moreover, a comparative study of these laws demonstrates that the respect for human life reflected in the biblical law is not dependent on the theological doctrine of creation in the image of God. Respect for human life was part of

the legal tradition in the Near East and in Israel well before the formulation of the doctrine of the image of God in Genesis 1. Its author has simply undergirded received ethical and legal mores with theological reflection.

Such theological elaboration of the received ethical and legal mores is paradigmatic for the whole development of biblical law. Very little in biblical law is unique to Israel. Even the Ten Commandments, delivered to the Israelites at Mount Sinai/Horeb by the voice of Yahweh, contain little that would not have been acknowledged everywhere else in the Near East. Apart from the limitation of worship to the one God, the prohibition of images, and perhaps the observance of the Sabbath, these commands embody in a very pithy formulation the ethical standards common in the region. As we know from Mesopotamian sources, other religious communities had their own sacred days of abstention from work, so the only significant elements of uniqueness in the Ten Commandments are closely tied to the monotheistic thrust of Israelite religion. Even the biblical laws concerning the Sabbatical and Jubilee Years (Exod. 23:11; Lev. 25; Deut. 15:1–4), long considered utopian and unenforceable, may have had their roots in much earlier Mesopotamian legal tradition. Throughout the Old Babylonian period, the Babylonian government issued periodic *mesharum*-edicts (Akkadian) at fairly regular intervals, canceling debts and otherwise easing the economic plight of the impoverished elements of Babylonian society. The Israelite Sabbatical Year, which seems to have the same purpose and recurs at about the same interval, appears to be an Israelite adaptation of this *mesharum*-edict tradition. The Jubilee Year probably represents a later easing of the Sabbatical Year requirements by lengthening the period between such attempts at economic redress. In the light of this older legal tradition, the role of Moses as lawgiver must be reevaluated. His work must be seen as in some sense analogous to that of Hammurabi. Neither was primarily engaged in the formulation of brand-new laws. Both were responsible for a new collection, revision, and necessary updating of laws already current in the legal tradition of the people or the region.

On the other hand, Moses appears to have placed Israelite law in a new religious context. Although the gods, and particularly Shamash, the god of justice, appear as the ultimate source and guarantors of Mesopotamian law, the revision and promulgation of particular collections is primarily the work of the king. Divine revelation of the individual commandments is not stressed, and the concept of the commandments as the stipulations of a covenant between the gods and the people is simply unknown in Mesopotamia. In Israel, on the contrary, not only the major collections of law, but almost all laws are considered stipulations in the covenant that Yahweh graciously entered into with Israel under the mediatorship of Moses. As a part of God's covenant they were given to Moses by direct revelation from God. The tensions, contradictions, and redundancies in the biblical legal material give ample evidence of later revisions and additions, just as one finds such revisions in earlier Mesopotamian law. But although a new Mesopotamian ruler could issue a new collection of law in his own name, there was tremendous pressure in Israel to attribute all law, no matter how late, to Moses. Divine sanction for the law was more secure if the laws were seen as a part of the covenant stipulations God revealed to Moses on the sacred mountain.

Covenant, then, is an important ingredient in Israel's concept of law. The Bible speaks of God's covenant with Noah, with Abraham, with David and his house, and with particular priestly families, and of the covenant with Israel given at Sinai, or Horeb, but the search for ancient Near Eastern analogues has not produced any clear examples of a covenant between a god and the god's people or even a very convincing example of a covenant between a god and a chosen king. On the contrary, the evidence suggests that Israel adapted political language dealing with contractual relations between human parties to describe the religio-political relationship between God and his people or between God and his chosen representatives. The study of ancient Near Eastern political treaties of various types, however, has been very fruitful for a clearer understanding of Israelite covenant theology. Despite the ongoing debate and many unresolved questions, few would deny that the careful study of the many political treaties from the ancient Near East has aided in the understanding of Israelite covenant theology, especially as it is formulated in Deuteronomy. The study of royal grants given by Babylonian and Assyrian kings to chosen officials to reward meritorious service to the crown has also proven fruitful in providing a possible political model for the Davidic type covenant (→ Covenant).

Because Israelite law was set within the context of covenant and obedience to it was seen as the appropriate religious response to Yahweh's gracious deeds on behalf of Israel, the content of that law came to include specifically religious and ritual obligations, and in the course of time some of the legal collections were elaborated in a hortatory style. The ancient Near Eastern law codes have nothing that corresponds to the ritual demands found in the Book of the Covenant (Exod. 23:14–19), much less to the detailed laws for the various kinds of sacrifice legislated in the book of Leviticus. For parallels to this type of ritual instruction, one must turn from the ancient law codes to the Hittite instruction texts or to the Akkadian, Egyptian, Hittite, and Ugaritic ritual texts. There one will find much helpful material for understanding this genre of biblical law.

Psalmody

The biblical psalms have very important parallels in the hymns and prayers preserved in the surrounding Near Eastern cultures. Egypt and Mesopotamia provide the greatest number of these texts and the most important ones as well. Given the striking number of parallels between Israelite religious poetry and Ugaritic poetry, one would expect that Canaanite hymns and prayers would be even closer to the biblical texts. Israel's hymnic tradition probably developed largely under the influence of Canaanite poetic canons. It has been seriously argued that Psalm 29, for instance, is just a superficially edited Canaanite hymn originally addressed to Baal. Unfortunately, the many texts uncovered at Ugarit included only one Ugaritic text that could legitimately be considered a hymn, and there were no examples of prayers. Canaan proper has yielded even less, not much more than a few phrases gleaned from the Amarna letters. Some of the West Semitic inscriptions have properly been compared to the individual prayers of thanksgiving, but the corpus of the relevant inscriptions is quite small and therefore less helpful than could be wished. There are a significant number of Hittite prayers that should be considered and apparently some Hurrian prayers, though the present stage of our knowledge of Hurrian provides no adequate base for the use of these texts in comparative study.

Mesopotamian

There is still much work to be done in the study of Mesopotamian hymns and prayers, but the large corpus of Mesopotamian texts contains clear counterparts to Israelite hymns and individual laments. Both the resemblances and the differences should be noted.

Apart from stylistic differences in the poetic canons that govern Sumerian, Akkadian, and Hebrew poetry, the major discontinuities between Mesopotamian and Israelite psalmody can be attributed to the fundamental distinction between monotheistic and polytheistic religion. Mesopotamian texts make far greater use of divine epithets in the praise of their deities, and the invocation of the deity in Mesopotamian individual laments is normally extended with a long introductory section of praise built up of such epithets. This is in sharp contrast to the Israelite laments, which typically begin the lament proper with a very simple and short invocation of Yahweh. The difference probably arises from the need of the polytheist to clearly specify which god is being invoked, but this difference does not justify denigrating the introductory praise in the Mesopotamian texts as mere calculated flattery. The motif in Mesopotamian prayers of calling upon one god to intercede with another god is obviously rooted in polytheism, and the pervasiveness of the set formulas that occur in many Mesopotamian prayers expressing fear over bad omens or blaming one's suffering on the work of sorcerers owes a great deal to the multiplicity of independent powers in a polytheistic universe.

Despite these obvious differences, Mesopotamian hymns and prayers share much in common with their Israelite counterparts. Many of the same motifs and metaphors are found in the prayers of both cultures. The psychological approaches to the deity are hardly distinguishable. Mesopotamian hymns tend to focus on what C. Westermann has called "descriptive praise," the praise of the deity for what the deity customarily does or is, rather than focusing on what Westermann calls "narrative praise," praising the deity by narrating a particular action of the deity. There are exceptions, however, such as the hymn to Marduk celebrating his victory over Elam at the time of Nebuchadnezzar I.

Some differences are actually more apparent than real. Akkadian *shu-illa* prayers are typically accompanied by ritual directions following a ruled line at the end of the prayer. These normally indicate that the prayer was to be recited several times as accompaniment to a sacrificial offering. Biblical psalms lack such ritual directions, but it is clear from references in the Psalms and the historical books that the biblical laments and thanksgiving songs were also accompanied by sacrifice. In fact, the same Hebrew term, *todah*, designates both the thanksgiving song and the thanksgiving sacrifice. It is important to remember that, both when studying the Psalms and when studying the rules for sacrifice in Leviticus. The relative separation of word and ritual act in the biblical sources is a literary phenomenon that does not reflect what actually went on in worship. In addition to the brief ritual directions that accompany Mesopotamian prayers, Mesopotamia also provides us with more extended rituals for particular cultic celebrations, and these enable us to get a glimpse of how hymns and prayers of different genres could actually form a part of the same cultic celebration—a key point in S. Mowinckel's cult-centered approach to the Psalms.

Finally, one should note the occurrence in Mesopotamian prayers of the formula identifying the speaker in the form "I so-and-so, the son of so-and-so." These prayers were obviously intended for repeated use by different individuals; the supplicant needed only to insert his or her own name at the appropriate place. Such a formula is not found in the biblical psalms, but their stereotypical nature points to the same intention for their repeated use by different individuals in roughly analogous situations. In neither case, however, does such public use imply any lack of sincerity in the spirituality expressed in the text of the Mesopotamian or Israelite prayer. The works of professional composers of psalms were presumably preserved in both cultures precisely because they articulated for the laity their inchoate religious sensibilities. One must take the words of these prayers seriously.

Egyptian

Egyptian hymns and prayers also provide important parallels for the study of the biblical material. Psalm 104 is widely regarded as modeled on Amenophis IV's famous hymn to the sun god, and Egyptian enthronement hymns are helpful in the comparative study of the Israelite enthronement ritual and in the exegesis of such texts as Psalms 2 and 110 and Isa. 9:1–6. Given the large number of Egyptian hymns and prayers belonging to carefully differentiated genres now available for study, the next few years should see significant progress in the comparative study of these texts.

Hittite

There are also a number of Hittite prayers that may be profitably studied for comparative purposes, including especially the plague prayers of the Hittite king Mursilis. Mursilis's religious interpretation of the plague as a judgment on his Hittite people because of their breach of a treaty with Egypt under an earlier Hittite king provides an interesting commentary on David's religious interpretation of the drought in his days as a judgment on Israel because of Saul's breach of the ancient treaty with the Gibeonites (2 Sam. 21:1–14). Moreover, Mursilis's pathetic appeal to the gods at least to tell him, through one or another of the various means of revelation, why they are angry, provides a striking parallel to the biblical statement that when Saul inquired of Yahweh, "Yahweh did not answer him, either by dreams, or by Urim, or by prophets" (1 Sam. 28:6).

Sumerian

Finally, one should mention the Sumerian laments over the destruction of important cult centers. These laments, such as the famous lament over the destruction of Ur, provide interesting parallels to the biblical book of Lamentations and to the Israelite public laments found scattered in the Psalms and elsewhere in the Bible. Motifs from pre-Israelite traditions of public lament very similar to those found in the Sumerian laments are adapted by such prophets as Jeremiah, who gave profound pathos to his description of Yahweh's anguish over the sin of his people.

Wisdom Literature

Wisdom literature tends to be international in character, so it is not surprising to find striking Egyptian and Mesopotamian parallels to the biblical books of Proverbs, Job, and, to a lesser extent, Ecclesiastes (→ Wisdom). Mesopotamia provides several collections of moral admonitions similar to parts of Proverbs and Ecclesiastes, and there is a large collection of Sumerian and bilingual proverbs, though proverbs do not seem to have been an important genre of Akkadian Babylonian literature. The numerous Egyptian works giving the "instructions" of a famous vizier, king, or wise man of the past are even more impressive as parallels to Proverbs. One of them, "The Instruction of Amen-em-Opet," appears to have been the literary model for structuring Prov. 22:17–24:22, though the passage in Proverbs can hardly be considered a direct paraphrase of the Egyptian text, much less a straight translation. Recent comparative study has shown the influence of Mesopotamian texts as well as a number of other Egyptian texts on Prov. 22:17–24:22. Its author was apparently well versed in a variety of international wisdom traditions and simply used Amen-em-Opet to provide a model structure in which to incorporate insights drawn from various sources. One should also mention the Aramaic proverbs preserved in the story of the Assyrian sage Ahiqar.

The Mesopotamian texts dealing with the problem of the righteous sufferer give one a glimpse of the intellectual tradition behind the book of Job. It is a long tradition that includes an early Sumerian composition and an Old Babylonian Akkadian text. Its most elaborate literary expressions, however, are found in the long poem "I Will Praise the Lord of Wisdom" *(Ludlul bel nemeqi)* and "The Babylonian Theodicy," a text constructed in the form of a cycle of dialogues between the righteous sufferer and a friend. Other texts resembling *Ludlul,* though considerably shorter, have been found among the Akkadian documents from Ugarit. *Ludlul* and the texts similar to it have many points of contact with individual prayers of lament. In fact, *Ludlul* could be analyzed as the literary expansion of an individual thanksgiving song that incorporates major elements of the lament in its description of the evil from which the deity has delivered the worshiper. Such an analysis is very suggestive in explaining the development of the wisdom psalm from the individual thanksgiving song. In contrast to *Ludlul,* "The Babylonian Theodicy" owes more to the tradition of scribal-school debates with their convention of insulting or ironic address to one's opponent in the debate. The book of Job seems to have been influenced by both strands in the tradition. It has incorporated the psalmic lament motifs found in the *Ludlul* strand, but it has structured them in an expanded symposium inspired by the "Theodicy" strand.

Other Genres in Genesis–Numbers

Outside of law, psalmody, and wisdom literature, one would be hard pressed to find Near Eastern parallels to the larger Israelite compositions. There is really nothing comparable in the preserved writings of the surrounding cultures to Genesis–Numbers or the Deuteronomistic History (Deuteronomy–2 Kings). For that matter, even individual books within these

compilations have no real ancient Near Eastern counterparts. Nor do the books of the writing prophets or the book of Chronicles. What one can speak of are parallels to smaller genres used in the composition of these larger works.

Mythological Texts

The primeval history in the early chapters of Genesis contains a number of shorter stories with clear parallels in the surrounding cultures. The two creation stories (Gen. 1:1–2:4; 2:4–3:24) share certain features with some of the large number of creation stories known from Mesopotamia and Egypt. Given the structural similarities, the differences in detail between these accounts and the biblical stories are helpful in understanding the issue addressed in the Genesis accounts. The comparison of Gen. 1:1–2:4a with the Babylonian creation poem the *Enuma elish*, for instance, suggests a conscious polemic on the part of the biblical writer against the polytheistic theology reflected in this Babylonian myth. This account has been stripped of almost all the traces of the cosmogonic battle found in the Babylonian story, despite the fact that a similar form of this cosmogonic myth of the origin of world order was well known in Israel (Ps. 74:12–17; Isa. 27:1–2; 51:9–10; Job 9:13; 26:12–13). The closest parallels to the Israelite cosmogonic myth come from the Baal epic at Ugarit—though the preserved Ugaritic texts do not explicitly tie Baal's defeat of the sea dragon to creation—but there are also Egyptian and Hittite texts of a similar character (→ Baal).

The Fall story in Genesis 2–3 has no clear analogues, and the story of the first murder (Gen. 4) is only loosely paralleled by a Mesopotamian account of a debate between the shepherd and the farmer as to which of the two professions was superior. This debate between professions is a genre known in both Mesopotamia and Egypt, but the typical texts end on a far friendlier note than the Cain and Abel story. It is not until one reaches the Flood story that the external parallels are again compelling. The Genesis Flood story (chaps. 6–9) appears to be derived from Mesopotamian tradition, where the Flood story is known in a Sumerian version, in the Akkadian version found in the Atrahasis epic, and in the well-known version of the Gilgamesh epic. The Atrahasis epic is particularly important because it shows that Genesis's linking of the creation of humankind and the Flood story in a history that leads to the present structures of society was not a unique achievement of Israelite theology. This move finds a remarkable, if partial, parallel in the Babylonian epic. The Atrahasis epic fills out the history between the creation of humankind and the Flood differently than the Genesis account does, and the Atrahasis epic does not continue with an account of the origin of the various languages. But its linking of creation and the Flood account, with strong etiological elements similar to those found in the biblical Fall story, provides a theological interpretation of humankind's place in this world analogous to one level of the biblical text. The motif of the confusion of the languages does seem to be mentioned in a Sumerian myth, and the somewhat mysterious figure of Nimrod, mentioned without elaboration in Genesis, may have its background in very popular Akkadian heroic legends about Sargon the Great or Naram-sin. Moreover, the Akkadian genealogies of the Hammurabi dynasty and of the ancestors of the Assyrian kings have proven very helpful in the study of the background and function of the biblical genealogies in Genesis.

Patriarchal Stories

One finds parallels to motifs in the patriarchal stories in Genesis 12–50, but the parallels do not extend much beyond that level. The concern for a male heir integral to the patriarchal narratives is also reflected in the Keret and Daniel epics from Ugarit. The Egyptian story of Sinuhe has certain points of similarity to the story of Jacob's flight from Canaan to escape Esau's anger. Both Sinuhe and Jacob flee to another country, where they stay for an extended period, marry into the family of the wealthy patron who receives them, and prosper in their new surroundings before returning to the land from which they had fled. The story of Moses' flight to Midian in the book of Exodus also follows this line with some variation. The Moses story does not emphasize the refugee's financial success in his new country, but it is closer to the Sinuhe narrative in the political motivation for the flight. In this connection one should also mention Idrimi's autobiographical account of his flight from and eventual return to his ancestral Aleppo.

The revelatory importance of dreams in these stories and elsewhere in the OT has many parallels in the ancient Near Eastern literature, and such texts as the Assyrian Dream Book show a very similar pattern of interpretation to that reflected in the Bible. There is also the Egyptian tale of the two brothers that provides an often cited but rather remote parallel to the incident with Potiphar's wife in the Joseph story. On the whole, however, the narrative art reflected in the patriarchal stories has no real counterpart in the preserved literature of the surrounding cultures.

Moses' Birth

There are more points of contact with elements in the other pentateuchal books. The parallel between the Akkadian birth story of Sargon the Great and the Exodus account of Moses' birth is particularly striking. In both stories a baby boy who cannot be kept by the real parents is placed in a reed basket and left in the water

at the edge of a river. Eventually the child is discovered by someone else who adopts the child and raises it as his or her own.

Construction of a Sanctuary

The Near Eastern parallels to the legal and ritual material have already been noted, but Near Eastern texts also provide parallels to the Exodus account of the building of the tabernacle, to the accounts in Kings and Chronicles of the building of Solomon's Temple, and to Ezekiel's description of the future Temple. These include the Sumerian text of Gudea, in which King Gudea of Lagash relates how he was given the command in a dream to (re)build the temple of the city god Ningirsu. Gudea asks for further instruction, which the god provides, and after very careful preparation the temple is constructed, Ningirsu and his fellow deities are brought into the temple, and the gods bless the king. The text and the statues of Gudea showing him holding the blueprint given him by the gods reveal the very ancient background to the biblical references that speak of God's blueprint for the tabernacle (Exod. 25:9, 40) or for the Temple (1 Chron. 28:11–19).

The concern for building or rebuilding the temple precisely according to the pattern originally given by the deity is reflected in "The Curse of Agade," an early Sumerian text that attributes the fall of the Akkad dynasty to Naram-sin's offense against Enlil's temple in Nippur. Naram-sin did major repair work on Enlil's temple, but according to this text he did it without sufficient regard for Enlil's wishes, since the temple was a microcosm of the world. Naram-sin's abuse of various parts of the temple resulted in dislocations in their macrocosmic counterparts in the external world; for example, when grain was cut in the gate where grain is not to be cut, grain was cut off from the land. The same concern is still reflected in the late Neo-Babylonian building inscriptions that stress how the king rebuilt the temple precisely upon the original foundation trenches. If one missed the original line by so much as a finger's breadth, the results could be disastrous, resulting in the early collapse of the restored building. This understanding of the importance of following the divine pattern in temple construction is part of the background to the famous passage about God's foundation stone in Zion (Isa. 28:16–17). With regard to the detailed descriptions of the tabernacle and Temple and their contents, one should note that the building inscriptions of the Assyrian and Babylonian kings sometimes contain rather detailed descriptions of the architectural features of the temples they built.

The biblical story about the Mesopotamian prophet Balaam, whom the Moabite king Balak hired to curse Israel (Num. 22–24), has been placed in a new light by the Aramaic wall inscriptions from Deir 'Alla that also mention this prophet. These texts are in a poor state of preservation and their precise date (ca. seventh century B.C.) is still disputed, but they indicate that a non-Israelite tradition about the seer Balaam was known in the Transjordan area among a presumably non-Israelite population group well before the period of the Exile.

Other Genres in the Deuteronomistic History

The Mesopotamians, Hittites, and Egyptians all composed annals and chronicles, but none of these texts that have been preserved compare in scope or in complexity with the account of Israel's history that scholars have designated the Deuteronomistic History (Deuteronomy, Joshua, Judges, 1 and 2 Samuel, and 1 and 2 Kings). That difference remains even though some of these Near Eastern historiographical texts resemble the Deuteronomistic History in important features. The Assyrian Synchronistic History, for example, narrates the history of Assyro-Babylonian relations from ca. 1500 to 783 B.C., discussing each Assyrian king treated—only those who had relations with Babylon are included—along with his Babylonian contemporary or contemporaries. This synchronistic treatment is similar, though not identical, to the Deuteronomistic historian's synchronistic handling of the Israelite and Judean kings from ca. 922 to 722 B.C. Moreover, the Deuteronomistic historian's penchant for judging a king's reign and explaining his successes or failures on the very narrow ground of his religious performance is paralleled by a similar pattern in the Babylonian Weidner Chronicle. This text judges individual kings and explains their fate on the basis of their treatment of Marduk's temple Esagila in Babylon.

Despite such similarities, the biblical text appears far more complex. The Deuteronomistic historian's preservation and incorporation of major preformed blocks of earlier narratives with quite different agendas have given the biblical text an ambiguity that suggests a far more profound appreciation of the complexities of historical phenomena. One need only consider the account of the rise of kingship in 1 Samuel, with its disconcerting juxtaposition of pro- and antimonarchical sources, or the account of Solomon's reign in 1 Kings 1–11, with its peculiar mixture of lavish praise and harsh condemnation, in some cases with regard to the same actions, to illustrate the point. Just as in the case of Genesis–Numbers, the Near Eastern parallels tend to be parallels to some of these earlier narratives preserved in the Deuteronomistic History or to much smaller units or motifs.

The story of the Philistine capture and return of the Ark of the covenant has been compared to Babylonian accounts of the return of the cult statue of Mar-

duk to Babylon after a period of foreign exile. The account of David's rise to power in 1 Samuel and the account of Solomon's succession to David's throne in 2 Samuel 9–20 and 1 Kings 1–2 have been explained as originally apologetic writings commissioned by these kings to justify their irregular accession to the throne on the analogy of such Near Eastern texts as the Hittite "Apology of Hattusilis III." One could also compare the Telepinus edict and Esarhaddon's account of his accession to the throne of Assyria after the assassination of his father, Sennacherib. Still at the level of genre, some scholars see the Egyptian *Königsnovelle,* a narrative recounting a pharaoh's accession to the throne, as a major influence on the narrative about Solomon's dream at Gibeon, but this is denied by other scholars.

At the level of the much smaller units of narrative, and especially at the level of the individual motif, the amount of comparative material is overwhelming. To take only one example, the narratives about military campaigns, which abound in the Bible and in Near Eastern literature, share many of the same ideas and motifs. It is clear from the Moabite stele of King Mesha and from numerous Mesopotamian texts, for instance, that the practices generally associated with "holy war" in the OT were not unique to Israel (→ Moabite Stone, The). The understanding of the outcome of battle as reflecting a judicial decision of the gods was also widespread, and stories about a city being taken by a stratagem are common.

Finally, the Deuteronomistic historian and many other biblical writers often cite written correspondence of various sorts. The large collections of official and private letters from Mesopotamia, Egypt, Ugarit, and Palestine—including the Hebrew inscriptions from Arad and Lachish—have given a clear picture of the conventions governing actual letter writing, thus enabling scholars to better evaluate such literary citations.

Prophecy

The phenomenon of prophecy was widespread in the ancient Near East. Prophets or prophetlike figures are attested among the Canaanites, the Arameans, the Hittites, in Mesopotamia, and in Egypt, but nowhere else did they leave a literary deposit comparable in any way to the books of the classical Israelite prophets (→ Prophet). The Egyptian "Admonitions of Ipu-wer" and "The Prophecy of Neferti" are probably the two longest non-Israelite documents claimed by scholars as prophetic works, but their identification as prophetic is disputed. The latter is often regarded as political propaganda disguised as prophecy but actually composed after the events prophesied, and the former could be treated as political advice from a royal counselor. Caution is also in order in comparing the "Prophecy of Marduk" from Mesopotamia to the biblical material. In this text the god Marduk explains away the ancient removals of his statue first by the Hittites and then by the Assyrians as a self-motivated business trip and a vacation, but then treats the more recent Elamite capture of his statue as his judgment on sinful Babylon, with which Marduk has become angry. On the one hand, the text has points of contact with Israelite prophetic theology, especially in its theological interpretation of past history and in its insistence that the deity is in full control of events. Marduk's promise of the restoration of Babylon even appears to be predictive, if scholars are correct in dating the text prior to Nebuchadnezzar I's conquest of Elam. On the other hand, the text does not mention any human intermediary through whom this revelation was given, and its treatment of history suggests a closer parallel to apocalyptic works, such as Daniel, in which the major part of "prophecy" is actually prophecy after the event. The Assyrian prophecy texts translated by Pfeiffer and Biggs in Pritchard's *Ancient Near Eastern Texts* may also be regarded as apocalyptic texts, if they are not simply omen apodoses.

In contrast, the collection of oracles concerning Esarhaddon attributed to various prophetic figures, but apparently all speaking in the name of the goddess Ishtar of Arbela, do appear to be genuine prophetic oracles, and the manner of their collection is suggestive for the study of the preservation and collection of the prophetic material in Israel. The Assyrian collection reflects no clear organizing principle, though it appears to be a collection made for some official purpose, and the concern to identify the speaker of the individual oracles may signal a legal responsibility that the prophet bore for his words. This would correspond to the earlier practice at Mari of taking legal symbols from the prophet, thus holding the prophet responsible for the reliability of his or her prophetic message. The Assyrian collection is rather short, however, and, unlike the majority of the prophetic books in the Bible, it does not even purport to be the collection of the oracles of a single prophet.

If the literary parallels to the prophetic books of the Bible are less than impressive, the same cannot be said for prophetic phenomena in general or for the content of particular oracles. Many of the motifs found in Israelite oracles are also attested in the oracles from the surrounding cultures. There is, for instance, the common admonition "Fear not!" followed by a promise of divine assistance. It is found in the response of the Aramaic prophets to King Zakir of Hamath and Lu'ath, and it is very common in the Assyrian oracles.

The Mari correspondence from the first half of the second millennium B.C. includes approximately fifty-six prophetic texts. These are particularly significant, both in the range of their parallels to the later biblical material and in their occurrence in an area and among

a population group that might suggest some cultural link between the Mari phenomenon and the later Israelite development. In contrast to the traditional Mesopotamian preference for the technical, institutionalized practice of divination as the means of obtaining communications from the divine world, Mari prophecy depends on inspiration and the initiative of a deity. The Mari prophets see themselves as the messengers or mouthpieces of the god, speaking for the deity in the first person. Moreover, the reception of the prophetic message takes place in what may be defined broadly as an ecstatic state—a state characterized by somewhat abnormal behavior, if one may judge by the use of the same root to refer to the behavior both of the prophet and of the insane. In all these respects, prophecy at Mari resembles prophecy as it is known in the biblical texts.

Even at Mari, however, technical divination remains the favorite means of obtaining communications from the divine world. The authenticity of prophetic messages was tested by having the divination priests take the omens in the normal way and then comparing their results with the prophetic message. This preference for technical divination of various sorts as the primary means of revelation may account for the relative sparsity of literary collections of prophetic oracles. Mesopotamia's cultural equivalent to the biblical prophet as the central mediator between the divine and human worlds was the divination priest, and the cultural equivalent to the biblical prophetic book is perhaps the Mesopotamian omen collection, of which there are many very extensive examples. Such collections, if they ever existed in Israel, were not preserved in the canonical Israelite literature. The omen collections and the collections of incantations represent the two genres of literature that are very important in Mesopotamia, but are conspicuous by their absence from the Bible.

Nonetheless, a type of technical divination by lots was practiced by legitimate cultic personnel in Israel, and the more extensive Mesopotamian material can be helpful in understanding both the technique and the importance of the Israelite practice (→ Urim and Thummim). The diviners at Mari had to take a loyalty oath, which required full disclosure to the king of their oracular inquiries while keeping the whole process secret from potential enemies. The oath also prohibited the diviners from consulting the deity on behalf of any potential rebel. Read against such a background, Saul's slaughter of the priests of Nob seems less irrational, since Ahimelech, their chief, admitted consulting the oracle for David, whom Saul suspected of treason (1 Sam. 22:9–19). This loyalty oath also underscores how central divine oracles were to state security, whether obtained by technical divination or prophetic inspiration. A positive oracle could embolden a fearful army (1 Sam. 23:1–5), an unclear or negative oracle could demoralize troops (1 Sam. 14:36–37; Jer. 38:4), and a destabilizing oracle could instigate political rebellion (2 Kings 8:7–15; 9:1–13).

Other Writings

Of the biblical writings not yet discussed, the one with the closest Near Eastern parallels is the Song of Songs. Both secular Egyptian love poetry and more religious love poetry from Mesopotamia have been compared to it. The memoirs of Nehemiah have been compared to votive inscriptions of Mesopotamian kings and officials who wanted their deeds on behalf of the god to be remembered and rewarded. Books like Ruth and Esther, on the other hand, present literary genres with no clear counterparts in the early ancient Near Eastern literature. Finally, the anti-Babylonian stories in the book of Daniel may reflect a late development of the Persian-sponsored anti-Nabonidus propaganda of the Marduk priests of Babylon. The particular development of these stories in Daniel, however, reflects a changed literary world. A literature of the powerless or stateless has taken the place of the older literature rooted in the national state. There is an analogy for this in the Aramaic story of Ahiqar, but this major shift in the kind of Israelite literature produced in the late postexilic period (second century B.C.) marks the end of the biblical period.

Bibliography

Foster, B. R. *Before the Muses: An Anthology of Akkadian Literature.* 2 vols. Bethesda, MD: CDL Press, 1993.

Hoftijzer, J., and G. Van der Kooij. *Aramaic Texts from Deir 'Alla.* Leiden: Brill, 1976.

Mowinckel, S. *The Psalms in Israel's Worship.* Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1967.

Pritchard, J. B. *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament.* 3d ed. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1969.

Roberts, J. J. M. "The Ancient Near Eastern Environment." In *The Hebrew Bible and Its Modern Interpreters.* Edited by D. A. Knight and G. M. Tucker. Chico, CA: Scholars Press, 1985. Pp. 75–121.

Roth, Martha T. *Law Collections from Mesopotamia and Asia Minor.* Writings from the Ancient World, Society of Biblical Literature, Vol. 6. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1995.

Westermann, C. *Praise and Lament in the Psalms.* Atlanta, GA: John Knox, 1981.

The Bible and the Literature of Antiquity:

The Greco-Roman Period

DAVID E. AUNE

Hellenistic Literary Culture

Early Judaism and early Christianity existed in a world in which the prevailing culture was Hellenistic. This culture, a legacy of Alexander the Great, was modeled on the thought, customs, and lifestyle of ancient Greece. The Roman Empire, which provided political and economic unity and stability to the entire ancient Mediterranean world after 41 B.C., included scores of native cultures, many of which were vitally concerned with the preservation of their own identities and traditions. Judaism, in both its Palestinian and diaspora forms, constituted one such ethnic entity. Hellenistic Jewish literature, written primarily in Greek using Hellenistic literary forms and traditions, is the best-preserved nativistic literature from the Greco-Roman period. That is not due to the survival of Judaism, for Christians rather than Jews preserved (and modified) the bulk of early Jewish literature written between 200 B.C. and A.D. 100. The history of this literature exhibits the increasing domination of Hellenistic literary culture.

Hellenism and Judaism were traditional societies that anchored the cultural and religious values of the present in the paradigmatic past as preserved by "approved" collections of literature. For Hellenism, that literature included the works of Homer (appropriately called the "Bible of the Greeks") and the more than eighty other "classical" authors that constituted the so-called Alexandrian canon (including five epic poets, ten orators, nine lyric poets, five tragic poets, etc.). Approved authors were copied and recopied, studied in the schools, and used as literary and rhetorical models. Other authors were neglected and have largely perished. By the first century A.D. there was a widespread nostalgia for the past among both Greeks and Romans. Hellenistic authors became enamored with the literary style of the Attic prose writers of the classical period (450–330 B.C.) and tried to emulate their archaic style.

Early Jewish Literature

Early Judaism produced a large and varied body of literature from ca. 250 B.C. to the codification of the Mishnah, ca. A.D. 200. Much of early Jewish literature (excluding several important groupings of literature, including Philo, Josephus, the Dead Sea Scrolls, the Targums, and rabbinic literature) has come to be associated with two collections, the Apocrypha and the Pseudepigrapha. "Apocrypha" (from a Greek word meaning "hidden") is a term referring to a collection of thirteen to fifteen books (or additions to books) of Jewish origin but preserved (with the exception of 4 Ezra [2 Esdras] as part of the Septuagint (LXX), i.e., the Christian OT in Greek, and not in the Hebrew OT (→ Canon). Though some of these documents were originally written in Hebrew or Aramaic (e.g., 1 Maccabees, Sirach, Tobit, Judith), they have survived only in translation. Since Greek versions of these writings were regularly included in copies of the LXX, they were widely regarded by some diaspora Jews and later by Christians as sacred. Twelve of these books were included by Jerome in the Latin Vulgate and are part of the Roman Catholic OT. The literary genres represented by the Apocrypha include historiography (1 Esdras; 1 and 2 Maccabees), imaginative fiction or novels (Tobit, Judith, the Additions to Esther, and the Additions to Daniel), letters or homilies (Letter of Jeremiah), apocalypses (4 Ezra), and prayers (Prayer of Manasseh, Prayer of Azariah in Song of the Three Youths; → Apocrypha, Old Testament).

The word "Pseudepigrapha" means "forgeries" and is a generic term for those very diverse early Jewish compositions (fifty-two separate works are collected in Charlesworth's *Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*) that unknown authors tried to pass off as works of famous ancient Israelites (→ Pseudepigrapha). The Pseudepigrapha includes many apocalypses (e.g., the *Apocalypses of Abraham, Adam, 1 Enoch, 2 Enoch, 2 Baruch, 3 Baruch*) and testaments (e.g., *Testaments of the Twelve Patriarchs, Testament of Moses,* and the so-called *Prayer of Joseph*). Several other genres are also represented, including prayers *(Prayer of Jacob),* hymns *(Psalms of Solomon, Odes of Solomon),* novels *(Joseph and Aseneth),* wisdom and instructional literature (e.g., *Pseudo-Phocylides*), expansions of OT texts (*Jubilees,* Pseudo-Philo's *Biblical Antiquities*), and revelatory literature *(Sibylline Oracles).*

Early Christianity and Hellenism

Early Christianity emerged from a Judaism already profoundly influenced by Hellenism. Thus the history of early Christian literature reflects a movement from Hellenistic Jewish cultural traditions toward an increasingly Hellenistic orientation. From a historical perspective, then, early Judaism and early Christianity were Hellenistic religions. By the middle of the first century there were increasing tensions between pagan converts to Christianity and Jewish Christians. These tensions increased until Christianity gradually became separated from Judaism and came to be regarded as a religion in its own right.

At first glance, there appear to be five major literary genres in the NT: biography (the four Gospels), history (Acts), letters (the Pauline and general Letters), sermons (1 John and perhaps Hebrews), and apocalypses (the Revelation to John). Although biographies and letters are more characteristic of Greco-Roman literary culture, history has possible models in both Greco-Roman and Israelite historiography, sermons have roots in both the Jewish synagogue and the moral exhortation of popular Hellenistic philosophy, and the apocalyptic genre appears more exclusively linked with early Jewish literary traditions. Each of these literary forms must be examined more closely to determine precisely where it fits in the complex interrelationship that existed in the Hellenistic and Roman period between the Greco-Roman and the Israelite-Jewish literary cultures.

Historical Literature

In the ancient world, similar forms of historical writing arose only in Judaism and in the Greek world. These developments occurred independently of each other and at about the same time (sixth and fifth centuries B.C.), and they emerged in a similar historical and political climate (conflict with the mighty Persian Empire, 539–332 B.C.).

Greco-Roman Historiography

The English word "history" is derived from the Greek term *historia,* meaning "investigation, inquiry," and was eventually used in the limited sense of the investigation of the past. Greco-Roman historians often consciously reflected about the problems, tasks, methods, and purpose of historiography and included discussions of such problems in prefaces and digressions. Historians in the Israelite-Jewish tradition, by contrast, rarely made theoretical observations. Greco-Roman historians also emphasized the accuracy of their narratives by claiming to have "seen" and/or "heard" the evidence recorded in their narratives and therefore tended to limit themselves to reporting contemporary or nearly contemporary events. Historians were not specifically trained for their task. They simply applied general rhetorical training (the tertiary stage of Greco-Roman education permitting specialization in either rhetoric or philosophy) to the demands of writing history. The goals and forms of rhetoric were therefore extremely influential in historiography. This typically included the tendency to "improve" sources by thoroughly rewriting them, the insertion of fabricated speeches as oratorical models, the use of dramatic episodes to involve readers emotionally, and the concern to change the attitude and behavior of readers by presenting individuals as paragons of virtue or vice.

There were several minor types of Greco-Roman historical writing (e.g., genealogy, ethnography, local history, chronography). The three important major forms were the historical (war) monograph, general, or universal, history, and antiquarian history. The *war monograph* narrated a contemporary war of great importance based on the assumption that political and military crises constituted the most important types of change in human history. The war monographs of Herodotus and especially Thucydides (fifth century B.C.) were models for this genre throughout antiquity. *General,* or *universal, history,* begun in the fourth century B.C. by Ephorus, treated either Greek or Roman history from the earliest "reliable" date down to the time of the author. Polybius (ca. 200–118 B.C.) is the earliest universal historian extant. *Antiquarian history* (the ancient counterpart of social history) combined various forms of systematic research into the past (ethnology, geography, genealogy, local history) with a chronological arrangement of individual states with particular emphasis on internal (political) and external (military) affairs. The *Roman Antiquities* of Dionysius of Halicarnassus (late first century B.C.) exemplifies this genre.

The three major forms of Greco-Roman history were all-inclusive literary forms that tended to embrace a variety of shorter forms, a feature particularly true of general and antiquarian history. Some of the major literary forms used in historical compositions include historical prefaces, dramatic episodes, speeches in both indirect and direct discourse (often constituting from 20 to 30 percent of the narrative), and digressions. The ideal purpose for which historians wrote was to be truthful, useful, and entertaining. Of these three, it was easier to be useful and entertaining than truthful, since historical truth necessitated careful investigation. Many Hellenistic historians (Polybius was a striking exception) were armchair scholars who relied on rhetorical talents more than firsthand research.

Early Jewish Historiography

Narrative, whether historical or fictional, is one of the more characteristic styles of OT literature. The Penta-

teuch (Genesis through Deuteronomy) is linked to the Former Prophets (Joshua through 2 Kings) to form a continuous narrative of Israelite history from creation to the aftermath of the fall of Jerusalem in 586 B.C. The increasingly sacrosanct status of this literature from the third century B.C. on meant that it more and more served as a literary paradigm and a source of themes for religious fiction and nonfiction alike. Greek historians distinguished between the mythological period (for which sources were unreliable) and the historical period, but Israelite historians made no such distinction.

Several historical compositions are included in the Apocrypha, each of them very different from the others: 1 Maccabees, 2 Maccabees, and 1 Esdras. The only "historical" works included in the Pseudepigrapha are those that involve the interpretive and paraphrastic rewriting or expansions of the text of the OT historical books (e.g., *Jubilees*, Pseudo-Philo's *Biblical Antiquities*).

Under Ptolemy I of Egypt (d. ca. 282 B.C.), Hecataeus of Abdera was commissioned to write *Aigyptiaka* ("On the Egyptians"), a flattering and propagandistic historical work that widely influenced Hellenistic historiography. The Hellenistic Jewish historians Artapanus, Eupolemus, and Pseudo-Eupolemus (all mid-second century B.C. and all surviving only in fragments quoted by later authors) used Hecataeus's history as a model for their own tolerant but propagandistic reinterpretations of biblical history. Their purpose was to demonstrate the antiquity and superiority of Jewish culture and civilization within a universalistic framework. Although these authors all had basically historical intentions, they, like many contemporary Hellenistic historians, manipulated "historical" data in the service of nationalistic interests.

1 Maccabees (ca. 100 B.C.) is an anonymous work originally composed in Hebrew or Aramaic. Written in a deliberately archaic style, this work was probably intended to be a continuation of the work of the Chronicler (1 and 2 Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah). The book focuses on the causes and progress of the Maccabean revolt from ca. 175 B.C. with the accession of the Syrian king Antiochus IV and the eventual revolt of Mattathias and his sons until the death of the last surviving son, Simon, in 134 B.C. The work reflects a marriage between biblical and Hellenistic historiography. 2 Maccabees presents itself as an anonymous abridgment of a five-volume work of Jason of Cyrene. The volume narrates Palestinian Jewish history from 180 to 161 B.C., overlapping 1 Maccabees. In its present form, the book is a typical example of tragic historiography, though in content it is thoroughly Jewish. 1 Esdras closely parallels and appears dependent upon a portion of 2 Chronicles (35:1–36:23), all of Ezra, and a section of Nehemiah (7:38–8:12). Josephus (ca. A.D. 37–100) was a Jewish historian who wrote two extensive historical works in Greek closely following the conventions of Hellenistic historiography (→ Josephus). The shorter of the two works is *Wars of the Jews*, a Thucydidean war monograph focusing on the first Jewish revolt, in A.D. 66–73. The longer work (in twenty books), *Antiquities of the Jews*, used the *Roman Antiquities* of Dionysius of Halicarnassus as a model. Josephus follows the conventions typical of the tragic historiography of his day, frequently appealing to the emotions of readers.

Luke-Acts as Hellenistic History

Originally, Luke-Acts was composed as a two-volume work with each "book" (cf. Acts 1:1) roughly equal in size (the ancient Gk. and Lat. terms for "book," *logos* and *volumen*, referred to the contents of one papyrus roll). In spite of the fact that Luke was separated from Acts to form part of the fourfold Gospel, Luke-Acts is a single literary work. Although it is legitimate to compare the other Gospels with Greco-Roman *biography*, the subordination of Luke's first book to a larger literary structure means that the distinction between history and biography has become blurred. Until quite recently, scholars were generally united in regarding the author of Luke-Acts as a historian. Occasionally, connections between Acts and the Greek novel (i.e., narrative fiction) have been explored. More recently, the theological concerns of the author have been emphasized. Yet these three views are not really mutually incompatible. First, most Greco-Roman historians of the late Hellenistic period were really "tragic historians." Influenced by rhetoric, they wrote to entertain and only secondarily to present historical truth. Second, virtually all ancient historians wrote either for the purpose of moral edification or to give expression to one or another ideology (sometimes in a blatantly propagandistic way).

Luke was capable of writing elegant Greek, as the two periodic sentences in Luke 1:1–4 and Acts 15:24–26 indicate. He used many literary forms within the framework of Luke-Acts, including historical prefaces (Luke 1:1–4; Acts 1:1–5), a genealogy in typically Hellenistic ascending order (Luke 3:23–38), symposia (Luke 7:36–50; 11:37–54; 14:1–24), travel narratives, "we" passages, speeches (Acts contains thirty-two speeches constituting 25 percent of the narrative), quoted documents, dramatic episodes (e.g., Luke 4:16–30; 24:13–25; Acts 25:13–26:32), digressions (e.g., Luke 3:23–38; Acts 17:21; 18:24–25), and summaries (e.g., Acts 2:46–47). Paralleling the contemporary preference for archaism, he wrote extensive passages in septuagintal Greek (e.g., Luke 1:5–2:52). Luke made innovative use of ancient historiographical traditions by treating early Christianity as an ethnic group. Like Israelite and early Jewish historians, he focused on Palestine and particularly Jerusalem, yet, like the general, or universal, histories of Greco-Roman historio-

graphical tradition, he selectively treated the history of early Christianity throughout the various lands of the ancient Mediterranean world.

Apocalyptic Literature

The term "apocalypse," from a Greek word meaning "revelation," is widely used as the name for a literary genre that consists primarily of a report of supernatural visionary experiences. The apocalypse is just one of many types of ancient revelatory literature. Judaism had canonical prophetic books (the end product of collections of edited oracles), testaments, revelatory dialogues, revelatory discourses, and revelatory revisions of Scripture as well as apocalypses. In the broader Greco-Roman world there were oracles, oracle collections, oracular dialogues, reports of dreams or visions, and procedures for magical revelation. Most surviving apocalypses originated in early Judaism from ca. 200 B.C. to A.D. 100, but related forms of revelatory literature were also produced in Persia, Egypt, and in the Hellenistic world. Iranian and Hellenistic apocalypses tend to be included in larger, more encompassing literary forms, in contrast to Jewish and Greco-Egyptian apocalypses, which form independent literary compositions. Some apocalypses may reflect actual visionary experiences, while others present fabricated vision reports using literary conventions characteristic of apocalyptic literature. Some works (like the Jewish 4 Ezra [another name for 2 Esdras 3–14] and the Christian Revelation to John and *Shepherd of Hermas*) seem to be combinations of visionary experience and literary artifice.

Early Jewish Apocalypses

Daniel is the only apocalypse in the OT, though sections of such prophetic books as Isaiah, Ezekiel, and Zechariah reflect the transition from prophecy to apocalyptic. Jewish apocalypses consist primarily of "autobiographical" vision reports mediated by an otherworldly revealer. Though usually related in the first person, all Jewish apocalypses are pseudonymous, i.e., written in the name of famous ancient Israelites and set centuries earlier than the actual date of composition. The substance of apocalyptic visions is highly symbolic, requiring question-and-answer dialogues between the visionary and an angelic interpreter. The visions, which reveal the events surrounding the end of the world and the secrets of the universe, are often seen during a guided tour through the heavens in which the ultimate goal is often the vision of God himself (e.g., *1 Enoch* 1–13; *2 Enoch*). In other apocalypses the visions are experienced in an earthly setting (e.g., Dan. 7–12; 4 Ezra; *2 Baruch*).

Jewish and other Near Eastern apocalypses usually function as protest literature, i.e., religious responses to political and economic oppression. Kingship in the ancient Near East was typically regarded as a divine institution upon which temporal prosperity depended. When native kings were overthrown, first by the Greeks and then by the Romans, the oppression and hardships that followed foreign domination were attributed to the interruption of the divine order. These wrongs were made right in eschatological fantasies in which a divinely appointed ruler or messiah was expected to appear, vanquish the foreign oppressors, and introduce an era of peace and prosperity (→ Apocalyptic Literature; Eschatology).

Early Christian Apocalypses

In early Christianity, as in ancient Judaism, there was a tendency to create narrative accounts of eschatological events (e.g., Mark 13 and parallels; 2 Thess. 2:1–12; *Did.* 16). The Revelation to John, the only NT apocalypse, is the longest such narrative presented in the form of a single vision report extending from 4:9 to 22:11. The author has imposed a unifying literary structure on a variety of Jewish, Christian, and Greco-Roman sources and traditions. Unlike Jewish apocalypses, Revelation is not pseudonymous. For that reason the author does not conceal the true circumstances of composition, but rather makes a special effort to relate his conception of the eschaton (end time) to the concrete situation of the seven churches to which he writes (Rev. 2–3). The three earliest Christian apocalypses reveal an increasing tendency to adopt the conventions of Hellenistic revelatory literature. The Jewish orientation of the Revelation to John is readily apparent. The *Shepherd of Hermas* (first half of the second century A.D.) combines Jewish with Hellenistic revelatory traditions, while the *Apocalypse of Peter* (ca. A.D. 135) is primarily dependent on Hellenistic revelatory conventions.

The Gospels and Biography

Since the earlier part of the twentieth century, the prevailing view among NT scholars has been that the Gospels represent a unique literary form created by early Christians to give expression to their faith with no real connections with ancient biographical literature. According to this view the oral kerygma (Gk., "proclamation") about Jesus (reflected in some sermons in Acts, e.g., 10:34–43) was expanded by the addition of various kinds of discourse and narrative material to form the Gospel of Mark. More recently it has become apparent that the Gospels are much closer in *form* and *function* to Greco-Roman biographical literature than earlier scholars had been willing to recognize. Each of the four Gospels constitutes a Christian adaptation of the genre of Greco-Roman biography with distinctively Christian features.

Characteristics of Ancient Biography

The literary culture of ancient Israel never developed biography as an independent literary form, though OT narratives often focus on the lives and achievements of important political and religious figures. The biographical literary forms that occur in early Judaism were largely borrowed and developed under Hellenistic influence (e.g., Philo's lives of Abraham, Joseph, and Moses). Even the twenty-two thumbnail sketches of various Israelite prophets presented in the anonymous first-century A.D. composition *The Lives of the Prophets* were probably composed in Greek (most likely in Palestine) in a form analogous to the lives of the Greek poets (both are largely based on inferences from their works). Ancient character depiction, both east and west, had several common features: first, the focus is on a person's *public* rather than private life; second, people are depicted in conformity to *types* (i.e., as models of community values) rather than as *individuals;* and third, human personality was regarded as *static* and not subject to development. These three factors drive a wedge between ancient and modern biography.

Greek biography had its roots in the fifth century B.C. and continued to evolve through to the end of antiquity. The function of biography was the stereotypical presentation of a person whose life exhibited Hellenistic social and cultural values and hence was worthy of imitation. Ancient critics carefully distinguished between history and biography, but in the Greco-Roman period, when the role of individuals in history was emphasized, the conventional distinction between history and biography became increasingly blurred. The nineteenth-century German classical scholar Friedrich Leo proposed a twofold typology of ancient biography that, though oversimplified, has proven influential: first, *peripatetic biography* (e.g., Plutarch's *Lives*) was a chronological presentation suitable for depicting the careers of generals and politicians. The words and deeds of the subjects form the basis for praising them and presenting them as examples for imitation. Second, *Alexandrian biography* (e.g., Suetonius's *Lives of the Caesars*) favored a systematic or topical presentation of a person's career, a form particularly appropriate for writers and artists. This approach emphasized particular Hellenistic virtues (e.g., courage, justice) as exemplified by deeds.

Greco-Roman biographical literature was an inclusive genre that framed other, shorter, literary forms. One of the major features of ancient biography was the use of various types of anecdotes under the conviction that a person's words and deeds revealed his or her character. The very general term "anecdote" (which in Gk. literally means "not published," i.e., transmitted orally) includes such specific forms as *chreiai,* "anecdotes," *gnomai,* "maxims," and *apomnemoneumata,* "reminiscences." Many collections of anecdotes circulated under the names of various famous people, and they were used (sometimes simply by attributing them to the requisite individual) as raw material for writing biographies.

Biographical Features of the Gospels

The Gospel of Mark, the first written Gospel (ca. A.D. 70), has more generic similarities to Greco-Roman biography than to any literary form within Judaism. Recent research into the language of Mark suggests that it was written in a popular *literary* style, neither the language of everyday speech as reflected in the papyri nor the elevated Greek of the wealthy and educated. Matthew and Luke show clear signs of a tendency to make Mark more literary by improving his style and by adding material to the beginning and end of his narrative, stories of Jesus' origin and of his resurrection appearances and (in the case of Luke) his ascension. In *form,* Mark and the other Gospels are Greco-Roman biographies, while in *content* they preserve distinctively Judeo-Christian conceptions. The distinctive literary features of the Gospels, then, are the result of the combination of Hellenistic biographical conventions with the unique Christian perspective on the significance of Jesus.

The synoptic Gospels (Matthew, Mark, and Luke), like other Hellenistic biographies, incorporate a variety of constituent literary forms into their narratives. These include miracle stories, anecdotes (or *chreiai* and *apomnemoneumata*), sayings or aphorisms *(gnomai),* parables, and stories about Jesus. The content of the Gospels focuses on the ultimate religious claims made for Jesus on behalf of Christians, similar to the claims made for philosophers by Hellenistic biographers. The Jesus presented in the Gospels has a paradigmatic function, since he both personifies and legitimates distinctively Christian beliefs and values, a function similar to that of the subjects of Greco-Roman biographies.

Epistolary and Homiletic Literature

The letter was one of the more flexible of ancient literary forms. Almost any kind of written text could be framed by formal epistolary features and regarded as a letter.

Early Jewish Letters

The letter never became an independent literary genre in Israelite or Jewish culture. The only independent "letter" in the Apocrypha is the Letter of Jeremiah, which exhibits sermonic rather than epistolary form. Similarly, the pseudonymous *Letter of Aristeas* is not actually a letter, but an apologetic narrative about the origin of the Greek translation of the Hebrew Scrip-

tures. The letter is frequently used, however, as a constituent literary form and is frequently embedded in both historical and fictional narrative literature. Compared with the many studies devoted to Greek and Latin letters of antiquity (primarily documentary papyrus letters), Aramaic and Hebrew letters have been relatively neglected until recently, a fact primarily attributable to the fact that few examples survive. The total number of Aramaic letters extant is about 120, primarily from the fifth and fourth centuries B.C.; 6 are embedded in the Aramaic portions of the OT; 8 of the 15 extant letters associated with Bar Kochba, the Jewish revolutionary leader, are in Aramaic, ca. A.D. 132–135. Nearly 50 Hebrew letters are extant, mostly from 630 to 586 B.C.; 11 are embedded in OT documents; 5 of the 15 Bar Kochba letters are in Hebrew.

Greco-Roman Letters

The Greco-Roman letters that survive from antiquity fall roughly into three classes: *documentary* letters, actual common letters recovered, usually from ancient garbage dumps in Greco-Roman Egypt; *literary* letters, letters written by educated people of antiquity and preserved in repeatedly recopied collections and regarded as models of epistolary composition and artistic literary expression; and *official* letters, letters drafted in royal or imperial chanceries dealing with diplomatic, administrative, and other governmental concerns that have survived through being inscribed on stone or by being quoted in historical works.

Early Christian Letters and Homilies

Twenty-one of the twenty-seven documents in the NT are letters; twelve of the fifteen writings by other early Christian leaders not in the NT but collectively designated the "apostolic fathers" are also letters. The letter was the most popular literary form in early Christianity. Opening and closing epistolary formulas were used to frame a variety of literary forms. The Revelation to John, though framed as a letter (cf. 1:4–5; 22:21), is really an apocalypse. The first extant martyr act, the *Martyrdom of Polycarp,* is similarly framed as a circular letter. Two NT documents commonly regarded as letters appear to be written homilies or sermons. 1 John has no formal epistolary features, and Hebrews has only an epistolary postscript. Most ancient letters, like modern ones, were written substitutes for oral communication necessitated by the physical separation of the writer from the reader(s).

The formal features of early Christian letters, while primarily reflecting Hellenistic epistolography, also exhibit some Semitic influences. Paul's characteristic salutation, for example, "grace and peace," is a wordplay on the typical Greek epistolary salutation *chairein,* "greetings," and the Aramaic/Hebrew epistolary salutation *shalom,* "peace." Further, Judaism had developed religious circular letters, or encyclicals, which served both administrative and liturgical purposes (e.g., Esther 9:20–32; 2 Macc. 1:1–10; 1:11–2:18). After the process of reconstruction had begun after the debacle of A.D. 70, rabbinic authorities such as Gamaliel II directed encyclicals to various groups of diaspora Jews (e.g., *b. Sanh.* 18d; cf. *2 Bar.* 77:19–26; 78:1–86:3); these have formal parallels with James, 1 and 2 Peter, and Jude, which are pseudonymous Christian encyclicals.

Early Christian letters tend to be more complex than most documentary, literary, or official Greco-Roman letters. They, like biography and the major types of historical writing, constitute an inclusive literary genre used to frame a variety of shorter literary forms, some of which must have been transmitted orally before they were preserved by being inserted into a letter. These include liturgical forms (grace benedictions, blessings, doxologies, hymns, confessions, eucharistic and baptismal sequences), kerygmatic formulas, and instructional forms (virtue and vice lists, codes of household ethics).

Some NT Letters are pseudepigraphical, i.e., written under the name of such famous Christian leaders as Paul, James, Peter, and Jude to gain a wider acceptance. Pseudonymity was an ancient literary phenomenon common in Greco-Roman literary culture. Although Israelite literary convention included *anonymity,* it was not until the Hellenistic period that pseudonymity came into vogue, primarily in connection with the writing of apocalypses in the names of ancient Israelite worthies. The widespread use of pseudepigraphy in antiquity generally, and in early Christianity in particular, suggests that many authors regarded pseudonymity as a justifiable expedient if the purpose for which they wrote was sufficiently important. There is widespread agreement among scholars that among the Pauline Letters, Ephesians and the pastoral Letters (1 and 2 Timothy and Titus) are certainly pseudonymous, while Colossians and 2 Thessalonians may be. Similarly, four of the seven general Letters are widely thought to be pseudonymous: James, 1 and 2 Peter, and Jude. Pseudonymity, which characterizes as many as ten of the twenty-seven documents in the NT, was a transitional way of dealing with the crisis in authority occasioned by the passing of the apostolic generation. The relationship of the composition and structure of NT Letters to Greco-Roman rhetorical conventions is a subject that has only recently become the focus of scholarly research. Hellenistic rhetoricians described three types of rhetoric: *judicial* (the attempt to convince a court about past events), *deliberative* (the attempt to persuade an assembly about what to do in the future), and *epideictic* (entertaining oratory that celebrates common values). Ancient letter writers with some education automatically applied their rhetorical training in the composition of letters. Several handbooks on epistolary theory have survived

that reflect the influence of rhetoric and provide model letters (e.g., Ps.-Demetrius *On Style* 4.223–35, and Ps.-Libanius *Epistolary Styles*).

Most early Christian letters have a basically deliberative character, though often they combine several epistolary functions. NT Letters with a primarily deliberative function include Philemon and 3 John, both of which are basically letters of recommendation. 1 Thessalonians is primarily instructional, but includes a focus on consolation (4:13–18). Galatians has been regarded by some as an apologetic letter (i.e., an aspect of juridical rhetoric), by others as a letter of advice (i.e., following the rules of deliberative rhetoric), and by still others as a combination of the two types. Romans is also problematic, for some scholars have proposed that it is an epideictic letter, while others have suggested that it is either apologetic or hortatory or even a combination of all three types. It is to be hoped that further research will clarify these questions.

Bibliography

Alexander, L. *The Preface to Luke's Gospel: Literary Convention and Social Context in Luke 1.1–4 and Acts 1.1.* Society of New Testament Studies Monograph Series, 78. Cambridge: Cambridge University, 1993.

Aune, D. E. *The New Testament in Its Literary Environment.* Philadelphia: Westminster, 1987.

Burridge, R. A. *What Are the Gospels? A Comparison with Graeco-Roman Biography.* Society of New Testament Studies Monograph Series, 70. Cambridge: Cambridge University, 1992.

Charlesworth, J. H., ed. *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha.* 2 vols. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1983, 1985.

Collins, J. J. *Between Athens and Jerusalem: Jewish Identity in the Hellenistic Diaspora.* New York: Crossroad, 1983.

Hengel, M. *Judaism and Hellenism: Studies in Their Encounter in Palestine During the Early Hellenistic Period.* 2 vols. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1974.

Stone, M. E., ed. *Jewish Writings of the Second Temple Period.* Vol. 2, section 2, of *Compendia Rerum Iudaicarum ad Novum Testamentum.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1984.

Strecker, G. *History of New Testament Literature.* Harrisburg, PA: Trinity Press International, 1997.

Reading and Interpreting the Bible

JOHN BARTON

So Philip ran to him, and heard him reading Isaiah the prophet, and asked, "Do you understand what you are reading?" And he said, "How can I, unless someone guides me?" (Acts 8:30–31)

In this conversation between Philip and the Ethiopian official we have the only justification for commentaries on the books of the Bible: these books are not always easy to understand without help. For most Jewish and Christian readers the books of the Bible seem more in need of commentaries than other books for two reasons. First, they are of unique importance from a religious point of view. To understand them correctly is not just a question of satisfying intellectual curiosity; it has a religious significance. Second, they are very old books, much older than any other books most modern people ever read. This means that there is much in them that is bound to be obscure without a certain amount of background information. Good translations can be a great help in bridging the gap between modern readers and these ancient texts, but translation cannot bear the whole weight of the explanation needed if the Bible is to be properly understood.

But the Bible's uniqueness can easily obscure the fact that understanding any piece of writing, religious or secular, modern or ancient, is a far from simple matter. Reading and interpreting *any* book is a complicated and subtle process. It is just that when we read straightforward texts written by our own contemporaries we do not notice the complications, because we have grown used to them—just as we do not think about the grammar of our own native language. Reading and interpreting the Bible is only a special case of a general problem, the problem of how one human being understands words written by another. The study of this problem is sometimes called hermeneutics (→ Hermeneutics). Three processes are involved in reading and interpreting any book: understanding, exposition, and application.

Understanding

To understand the Bible we must first, as with any book, understand the words it is composed of; that is, we must either know the biblical languages (→ Aramaic; Greek, New Testament; Hebrew) or have access to good translations (→ English Bible, The; Texts, Versions, Manuscripts, Editions). On one level a commentary can be useful in explaining obscure words or technical terms (e.g., "ephod," "teraphim," "elder," "covenant") or unraveling complex and ambiguous or obscure sentences (e.g., Rom. 3:9).

But it is also necessary to understand what kind of book we are reading, and this is a literary, not just a linguistic, matter. To understand the Psalms, for example, we have to realize that they are poems and hymns, and that we should not read them as though they were statements of doctrine. To understand the writings of Paul it is essential to know that they are letters, written to a particular set of readers whose problems and questions the writer was dealing with. One of the difficulties for modern readers is that sometimes we do not know exactly what kind of works biblical books are. Thus, it is hard to know how far the narrative books such as Samuel, Chronicles, and Acts are to be understood as similar to what we call history or to what we call legend, folktale, or even fiction. An important part of the task of biblical criticism is therefore to classify the books of the Bible into different types or genres and thus to help modern readers understand the intentions of the writers (→ Biblical Criticism).

Even in reading modern books this need to classify is familiar to us. We do not read a "whodunit" with the same expectations as we do a romantic novel; we do not read laws as if they were poems, or political speeches as if they were encyclopedia articles. But as soon as we try to classify the books in the Bible we notice a feature common in ancient literature but much rarer today: many biblical books are *composite.* They are not the work of a single author, but seem to be put together from fragmentary earlier works. Sometimes this means that they are in effect anthologies (Psalms, Proverbs), sometimes that they have gone through a number of editions before reaching their present form. Understanding books such as Genesis or the Gospel of Matthew demands the ability to trace their growth through a number of stages (→ Gospel, Gospels; Sources of the Pentateuch). At some of these stages editors may have incorporated small units of material that originated not in writing at all, but in oral tradition (→ Oral Materials, Sources, and Traditions). These small units are classified and studied by form criticism. The earlier stages through which these units in their turn may have developed before they

were fixed in writing can sometimes be reconstructed. To understand a biblical book fully is thus a three-dimensional undertaking involving earlier stages in the text's growth as well as its present, finished form.

To say that we have understood a book implies that we have a grasp of the book's *meaning*. In most of our everyday reading, we assume that the meaning of a piece of writing is what its author intended. This is unproblematic with material like personal letters, newspaper reports, and most nonfiction, where known authors have written to communicate their thoughts and enable us to reproduce them in our own minds. But matters are not quite so simple with the Bible.

First, and most obviously, composite writings do not have an "author" in the same sense that most modern books do. We need to speak, instead, of the intentions of the many individuals or groups who were responsible for the various stages in the book's growth: the worshipers in the Temple who composed and used the psalms, early preachers proclaiming the gospel by telling and retelling stories and sayings of Jesus, and so on. Where the final form of a composite biblical book is concerned, we have to speak of the intentions of the "editor," or "redactor," rather than of the "author." Nevertheless, this editor's intentions can sometimes be discerned from the way material has been arranged. In the past thirty years biblical scholars have expended much effort in trying to understand the minds of redactors and have used the term "redaction criticism" to describe this task.

A second, more complex, question arises with the kinds of writing we call "literature." Novels and poems often seem to have a life of their own: a fresh "reading" of a great tragedy, like a fresh interpretation of a great symphony, can sometimes go beyond anything the author consciously intended and yet can strike us as true to what he or she wrote. One of the things that makes the Bible special even for many people who are not religious believers is that it is a great literary classic, with the power, like that of the greatest works of literature, to stimulate fresh interpretations. Some biblical scholars would say that the "meaning" a new interpretation finds in it is just as legitimate as the meaning intended by those who first wrote or compiled it (→ Reader-Response Criticism). They would argue that the text of the Bible as it now stands has a certain priority over hypothetical earlier stages, so that what readers should be trying to understand is not the intention of the writer or compiler, but a meaning that inheres in the words of the text itself (sometimes called a "text-immanent" meaning). This tendency can be seen in the works of some modern literary critics who have studied the Bible. Others who feel that the task of readers is to understand the final form of the biblical text have religious rather than literary reasons for this belief. The Bible as it stands, they argue, not the fragments from which it was composed, is the Bible that Jews and Christians have received. Its "author" is the believing community that (under God) accepted this particular version as canonical.

Exposition

The test of understanding is exposition. Having grasped what a text means, one's next step is to state its meaning in one's own words. Of course our restatement of the meaning can never be a substitute for the original words of the Bible. If it could, we could replace the Bible with our own handbooks of biblical thought. But unless we can find words of our own that will express at least partially what we have understood, our understanding is mute. Exposition involves two elements: contextualization and systematization.

Contextualization

In expounding a text we have to begin by explaining the context within which it makes sense. This does not mean merely the place within a longer work where a given passage belongs, but the whole cultural and historical setting of the text. Just as we ourselves cannot understand a piece of writing without knowing something of the culture from which it derives, so it is impossible to explain the book to others without sketching for them the background against which it is to be read. Any good commentary will include information about the place and time at which a book (or the parts of which it is composed) was written and will explain customs and ways of thought in it that are unfamiliar to modern readers. Thus, in expounding many OT stories one will need to explain family and tribal customs, geographical settings, and aspects of language and idiom. In NT exposition it is often necessary to describe the society of the Mediterranean world in the first century of our era and to explain Jewish customs of the time.

One reason biblical exposition has to be done anew in each generation is that what is familiar and what unfamiliar changes with cultural change in our own society. We need to explain many of the cultural assumptions of NT times—for example, about the world of spirits—precisely because they are no longer ours. Other features of NT thought, however, that seemed so alien as to need explanation, or indeed apology, a century ago are now once again part of the common currency of modern thought. An example is the common first-century belief that the end of the present world order was at hand. This struck many nineteenth-century readers of the Bible as an extremely alien and remote idea, but the concerns of a nuclear age have put it back on our own intellectual map.

For some biblical scholars the contextualization of biblical books is always an exercise in "cultural rela-

tivism." It means pointing out to modern readers that the world of the Bible is not their world, thus distancing readers from the text. It is undoubtedly good for modern believers to realize that the Bible comes from a culture that is radically different from our own and so not to make too ready an equation of its concerns with ours. Biblical criticism helps to guard against naïveté in assuming that the Bible has answers to all our questions and that everything in it can be simply read as if it were written for our situation.

On the other hand, there is continuity as well as discontinuity between human cultures, and much of the skill of biblical exposition lies in discerning where the Bible's concerns and ours are and where they are not the same. One of the major programs of biblical interpretation this century has been that of Rudolf Bultmann (1884–1976), whose key idea, "demythologization," depends crucially on this distinction. Bultmann stressed that many of the Bible's modes of expression presupposed a system of thought that he called "mythological" (heaven as a physical place, the world as full of angels and demons, sickness as divine punishment for sin). But the whole purpose of pointing this out in biblical exposition was to clear the ground for readers to grasp the central truths of biblical faith, which transcend cultural relativity—the direct address of God to the individual and the call for response in faith. Thus for Bultmann contextualization was not a way of relegating the Bible to the status of an antique, but precisely of liberating it from being treated as such.

Systematization

In trying to understand any piece of writing there is always a strong drive toward finding coherence and unity in it. As we have seen, there are times when this drive is frustrated in reading the Bible, and then readers are forced to the conclusion that the text is really fragmentary or composite. But even in these cases redaction criticism looks for some unity of purpose that editors may have imposed on the text, despite its fragmentary character. And although the Bible is clearly not a literary unity in the way that a single work by a single author is a unity, it does derive from a religious tradition with common roots and a recognizable common flavor. One major task of biblical exposition is to lay bare the underlying system of beliefs, presuppositions, and experiences that unite the biblical books and enable us to speak of a "biblical faith."

One of the chief manifestations of this systematizing drive in twentieth-century biblical study has been the production of books on biblical theology (→ Theology, New Testament; Theology, Old Testament). The aim of biblical theology has been to articulate the common themes running through the whole Bible and to expound individual books and sections in accordance with them. Though most scholars who have written such works would agree that the Bible does not form a single, completely unified work, their attempts to locate particular guiding threads can be a great help to readers finding their way through this varied literature. Such themes as "covenant," "saving history," and "promise and fulfillment" provide focal points that help one to make sense of the whole.

Again, such aids to exposition have to be reforged for each new generation of readers, not because the Bible itself changes, but because the questions readers put to the text change. In principle there are many different ways in which one could do justice to the underlying thematic unity of the Bible, and it is legitimate to allow our own most pressing concerns to shape the investigation. However, the aim in such exposition is always to let the Bible itself act as a control on what is said about it, so that appeal to the text, not to the interpreter's needs or concerns, remains the final appeal. Contextualization and systematization act as checks on each other, to ensure that the interpreter expounds the Bible in a way that does equal justice to the givenness of the text and to the interests and concerns of readers. (Recent challenges to this way of seeing the interpreter's task are discussed below.)

Application

It is obvious that understanding and exposition are needed in reading any book, but application may seem uniquely a feature of reading the Bible or, at least, religious literature. It is, after all, possible to read a book with merely "academic" interest, that is, without any concern for applying its message in one's own life.

In fact, however, there are kinds of writing other than religious literature for which application is a concern. Laws, for example, exist principally to be applied, and there is a long tradition of legal hermeneutics concerned with such questions as how the meaning of an ambiguous law is to be settled and whether or not one should attend to the original intentions of those who framed it. Much traditional Jewish exposition of Scripture has been a kind of legal hermeneutic, having the practical application of the biblical text to ethical life as its major concern (→ Halakah; Law).

But quite apart from this narrow sense of the word "application," all reading of texts is in a broader sense just as concerned with application as with understanding and exposition. We read books because we expect to "get something out of them"; we expect to benefit in some way from what we read. The kind of benefit we look for naturally depends on the kind of book we are reading. Just as it is a mistake in understanding to look for factual information in a lyric poem or spiritual enlightenment in a computer manual, so it may also be called a mistake in application—

it is an attempt to use the text for an inappropriate purpose. But application of some kind is nearly always in our minds when we read.

In the case of the Bible, exposition tends to pass over almost unnoticed into application. When we expound the text in a way that takes account of our own concerns as well as those of its authors, we are trying to find ways of making it as fruitful in our own context as it was in its original context. Bultmann's demythologization program, already mentioned, is a clear case of exposition serving application. Most scholars who have written on the theology of the Bible have had it as an additional aim to make the Bible come alive in the modern religious context by showing that its underlying system of thought and faith can be applied today. What was true then, they have believed, can still be true now.

An alternative possibility, if one is seeking to "apply" the Bible, lies in exploring the potential religious importance of some of those earlier stages in the development of the biblical text that source, form, and redaction criticism have illuminated. Biblical criticism has enabled scholars to rediscover the process by which the religious faith of ancient Israel and of the early church was transmitted, to reconstruct the history within which it took shape and the individuals and groups who formed it. It is quite possible to regard any of these as theologically significant in its own right. Thus someone might want to say that the prophet Isaiah himself had something to say that is of great application today, even though, strictly speaking, what he taught is not identical with the message that appears in his name in the Bible, since the book called Isaiah is something of a compendium of prophecies from many different periods, many of them not by Isaiah himself. Or again, we may think that the character of God was revealed in the fact that Israel, God's chosen nation, was in reality small and politically insignificant, even though the Bible's own presentation suggests that it was an important power. Or again, it may be said that Christians today can learn how best to preach the gospel by following the example of those early preachers who (according to form critics) freely retold and readapted the story of Jesus to the needs of their audience—rather than by imitating the fixity of form the Gospels eventually achieved. Strictly speaking, these are not applications of the Bible, but of hypotheses arrived at through research into the origins of the Bible. The theological ideas they represent are not so much biblical ideas as ideas prompted by the study of the Bible.

Because the Bible is the foundation document for both Judaism and Christianity, people will have quite varied ways of finding spiritual value in it, and if some of these are not strictly ways of applying the Bible itself, but ways of applying insights reached by studying the Bible, that only demonstrates how enormously fruitful a book the Bible is. Like other great classics of literature and religion, it can stimulate an endless diversity of new thoughts and ideas.

Critical and Precritical Interpretation

The account of reading and interpreting the Bible given so far describes the way in which most serious students of the Bible have seen their task since the European Enlightenment of the eighteenth century. Understanding, exposition, and application have been presented as three successive phases in interpreting the Bible, indeed, any piece of writing. The order cannot be reversed. We cannot apply a text until we have expounded it, that is, stated its meaning, and we cannot state its meaning until we have understood it. Consequently it is incorrect to try to apply a biblical text until we have discovered its meaning by paying attention to its original context. It is equally incorrect to think that we can discover its context without first grasping the type of text it is.

This methodical way of proceeding is usually called a "critical" approach and is distinguished from the "precritical" style of interpretation—really a large number of different styles—that can be found in early Jewish biblical exposition, in the Christian fathers, in medieval biblical commentaries, and in the work of the Reformers. For a "critical" reading, the most important thing about the text is its literary character: what kind of work it is, how it came to be written, what the intentions of its author(s) were, what purpose it was meant to serve. Only when these things have been established can any further progress be made. Thus, until we know whether a book in the Bible was written to convey factual information or not, we cannot form any opinion on the truth of statements contained in it. If a book is a piece of fiction, then statements it appears to make about the past are not meant seriously as fact and should not be treated as such. It is because most scholars now think, for example, that the book of Jonah is a piece of conscious fiction that they regard questions about the possibility of Jonah's having survived being swallowed by the great fish as pointless—there never was such a fish, and no one ever meant to affirm that there was.

This is not the way people saw the Bible before the rise of critical scholarship. Traditionally, the most important fact about the Bible, which determined the whole way it was read and interpreted, was its status as divine revelation. Since the Bible is inspired by God, it was held to follow that it would always be possible to apply it in every fresh situation, and complex methods were devised to ensure that it would be interpreted correctly. Instead of the order understanding–exposition–application, precritical interpretation tended to favor the order application–exposition–understanding. The text was read not for itself and for its natural

meaning, but only in the process of applying it. It was then expounded in accordance with the application it was believed to have, and this exposition provided the basis on which readers understood it.

When the Bible is approached in this way, one effect is that it becomes extremely difficult for any reader to notice when its plain sense contradicts what the religious community believes to be true. Indeed, in both Judaism and Christianity many of the methods of interpretation developed in the course of time were expressly designed to avoid any possible clash between what the Bible might be understood to mean and the beliefs and practices current among its readers. Judaism has long had a primary concern with "legal" applications of the Bible: the Bible has been important primarily as a source of instruction in living as an observant Jew. Much energy was expended in the rabbinical schools of medieval Europe in reconciling conflicting regulations in the Pentateuch, or Torah, and in interpreting the rest of the Hebrew Bible (the Prophets and Writings) so that it too could be read in relation to the Law and so that it did not appear to differ from the Torah itself in the rules it laid down (→ Torah). Precritical Christian interpretations were less interested in ethical questions—though where these arose there was a similar desire to reconcile one text with another—and showed a greater concern for the predictive, prophetic aspect of OT texts and the doctrinal implications of the NT. The methods used to ensure that the Bible spoke with a single voice on doctrinal matters were very similar, however, to the Jewish methods.

A particular characteristic of medieval Christian exegesis was its allegorical style. Many biblical texts—especially those whose surface meaning is obscure, trivial, or seemingly indecent—were interpreted as having a figurative meaning, so that they convey, through a kind of code, deeper truths about God, the spiritual life, or the church. The context of passages was often entirely disregarded in this way of reading the Bible, and a religious significance was assigned to individual verses, sentences, or even words.

Allegorical interpretation and the attribution of hidden meanings to obscure passages are no longer practiced in the biblical exposition of mainstream Christian churches, though they survive in small sects, in some extreme fundamentalist groups, and in the liturgical use of the Bible. The last case, however, is not so much a case of scriptural *interpretation* as one of the use of scriptural texts for their literary and evocative power, regardless of their original meaning. Churches that continue to use Scripture in this way generally do not retain the allegorical approach when using the Bible in theological discussion. The resulting discord between the use of Scripture in liturgy and its use in doctrine is a source of difficulty in those Christian traditions for which public worship is the primary context in which believers encounter the Bible.

"Postcritical" Interpretation

By no means everyone believes that the triumph of the critical approach to the Bible has been a blessing. Though few would probably wish or feel able to return to precritical methods, recent biblical study has shown a widespread desire to move beyond what is felt to be the excessively "historical" orientation of critical approaches. We have already noted that some scholars consider a concern for the earlier stages in the growth of biblical books to be misplaced, stressing the primacy of the "final form" of a book as the object of study.

Canonical Criticism

Among those who favor this line of approach, some are motivated partly by dissatisfaction with many traditional works on biblical theology. Typically, a "New Testament theology" is a description not of the theological contents of the NT (read as if it were a single, continuous work), but of the development of religious thought in the early church during the period for which the NT simply happens to be our best or only witness (roughly the first century of our era). "Canonical critics" feel that, though this is an entirely legitimate subject for study, it is not, strictly speaking, the theology *of the New Testament,* which is a religious classic in its own right, irrespective of its potential usefulness to the historian of Christian origins. It would be perfectly possible to treat the NT as a literary work and to analyze the theological ideas that it conveys if read, as it were, two-dimensionally—with a deliberate lack of interest in its historical and cultural context. Some tentative studies along these lines are now being written. In some ways the results resemble the sorts of theological systems that used to be derived from the Bible before critical questions began to be asked. It is too early to say whether this "canonical" approach will come to command general assent.

Structuralism

In the 1960s and 1970s structuralist critics in France and North America became interested in the Bible, and many studies were written that subjected the biblical text to the procedures of structural analysis. Structuralist interpretations pay great attention to the articulation of the text and the way in which its parts cohere to form a whole—generally with a deliberate disregard for questions about the text's historical origins. Thus features that critical readers see as evidence that the biblical books are composite (such as apparently pointless repetition of trivial detail or dislocations in thought or syntax) are treated by structuralists as part of the data that the interpreter ought to integrate into a coherent reading of the text, rather than as a problem, and they are often seen as charged with a

great deal of meaning. Structuralist interpretations make no claims about the original meaning of the text, but simply propose a creative and interesting reading that readers are asked to consider on its own merits.

Folktale and other essentially oral genres of literature have proved particularly congenial material for structural analysis, and since some of the Bible (especially the narrative portions of the OT and the Gospels) has some similarity to folktale and may well reflect a lengthy oral transmission, interesting results have been achieved.

Reader-Response Criticism

Recently some critics have begun to argue that the meaning of a piece of writing lies neither in the author's intentions nor within the words of the text itself, but in the interplay between the text and the reader (→ Reader-Response Criticism). Reading, in other words, should be seen as a creative activity, on the analogy of musical performance. Whereas traditional criticism, as we have seen, requires the interpreter to allow the text to exercise control over the interpretation, in reader-response criticism the creative role of the reader is regarded as entirely legitimate.

Everyone acknowledges that readers bring particular questions, assumptions, and interests to the books they read; as argued above, it is because each generation asks different questions that the exposition of texts is never a completed process, but an activity that has to be carried out anew in every age. But traditional criticism has set itself the goal of achieving as much objectivity as possible. Critics have tried to become conscious of their own interests and prejudices to prevent these from distorting their critical judgment and have insisted on applying texts only *after* they have been expounded with as much objectivity as possible. In reader-response criticism prejudgment, or "preunderstanding" (German *Vorverständnis*), is regarded as a necessary tool in interpretation, and objectivity in the traditional sense is seen as not only impossible, but also undesirable. The reader is an active partner in dialogue with the text, and an assumption of neutrality is only self-deception. Reader-response criticism has contributed to the interpretation of biblical texts that seem inherently to call for a response of commitment on the reader's part, such as some of the parables. It is not yet clear whether it will prove able to deal as effectively with other genres within the Bible.

"Committed" Interpretation

The idea that reading is a dialogue between text and reader can be seen in a slightly different way by taking these thoughts about "preunderstanding" somewhat further. One particularly powerful presupposition of most traditional study of the Bible, whether critical or precritical, has been that the reader's job is to understand the text intellectually. Bible study has usually been a branch of academic study, and modern biblical scholarship in particular is clearly understood by most of those engaged in it as a branch of the study of literature, which in its turn is part of the humanities or liberal arts studied in universities. The Bible thus belongs, in this way of seeing it, to the university curriculum. Some Christians, especially those engaged in difficult pastoral work in contexts far removed from the centers of intellectual life, feel that this is such a false context for the study of the Bible as to call in question any interpretations that might be arrived at through it. They point out that university-based biblical scholars are far more remote from the sort of people who wrote the Bible than are many of the poor and dispossessed in today's world, and they claim that the Bible can be properly understood only by those who have a prior commitment to the Bible's own values—especially what liberation theology calls its "preferential option" for the poor. They suggest that a commitment to various political and social concerns, such as the liberation of the poor or the cause of feminism, can function as fruitful "preunderstandings" to help unlock truths in the Bible that have been suppressed by scholars claiming to work "objectively" (but actually betraying a commitment to the political status quo). The stories of the Exodus and the books of the prophets have been especially important for critics of this persuasion, since they show that the God of the Bible sides with the oppressed against their oppressors. There is a strong sense that the Bible needs to be taken out of the hands of academic scholars and given back to ordinary believers, to live and work by.

Personal Bible Reading

Even a brief survey of the issues that biblical interpretation raises may make the Bible seem remote from the experience of ordinary persons whose main motive for reading the Bible is personal religious faith. It is important to realize that nearly all the methods and hypotheses about the Bible developed by specialists have arisen from experiences of reading the Bible that began from the very same religious motives as those of ordinary Jewish or Christian Bible readers. With most precritical interpretation, however complicated, this is apparent in the concern to make the Bible's message conform with religious orthodoxy. Critical study does not begin with an opposition in principle to this approach, but simply with a concern to read the text for itself and to let the Bible be the arbiter of its own meaning. This concern was in its origins related to the Protestant insistence that the Bible must not be interpreted by the church in defiance of its natural sense, but must be heard in its own right. Thus critical study

of the Bible is not in itself a secularizing approach, but has religious roots, even though it can be practiced without religious commitment.

Ordinary readers are free to accept or reject the particular interpretations that biblical scholars offer in commentaries by testing them out against the words of the text itself, which are there for all to read. With the exception of scholars who support the "committed" styles of interpretation just discussed, biblical specialists regard unprejudiced readers as the best judge of the interpretations they put forward. Commentaries are never a substitute for the text itself; they are meant to send readers back to the text with clearer eyes to explore its riches for themselves.

Bibliography

Barr, J. *Holy Scripture: Canon, Authority, Criticism.* Philadelphia: Westminster, 1983.

Barton, J. *Reading the Old Testament: Method in Biblical Study.* 2d ed. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1996.

Morgan, R. *Biblical Interpretation.* Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1988.

Stuhlmacher, P. *Historical Criticism and Theological Interpretation of Scripture.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1977.

PART ONE

The Biblical Story

Genesis–Esther

Introduction to the Biblical Story

Genesis–Esther

DAVID J. A. CLINES

Following the order of the books in most Christian Bibles (*see* Introduction, "The Bible and Its Communities"), this volume provides introductions to three different groupings of OT books: the Biblical Story (Genesis to Esther), Psalms and Wisdom (Job to Song of Songs), and the Prophetic Books (Isaiah to Malachi).

The Story in Its Present Form

The books Genesis to Esther are the narrative books of the OT. Together they contain two distinct story sequences, which are alike in many ways but which also show surprising and important differences. The first narrative sequence, which may be called the Primary History, runs from Genesis to 2 Kings, and the second, the Secondary History, from 1 Chronicles to Esther. Each sequence begins with the creation and recounts some of the history of the Hebrew people, but they conclude at very different points in the history. The Primary History concludes with the end of the Judean kingdom at the fall of Jerusalem in 587 B.C., and the Secondary History finishes in the fifth century B.C. with the installation of a Jewish prime minister, Mordecai, in the Persian government, resulting in favorable treatment of the Jews throughout the Persian Empire.

The different points of conclusion are not the only sign that the two histories have fundamentally different outlooks on the past. Whereas the Primary History consistently stresses elements of decline, disaster, and failure in the national history, the Secondary History emphasizes positive aspects. The two histories thus represent alternative ways of recounting the past, and in being juxtaposed within the Hebrew Scriptures—without any explanation of why both histories exist—they invite readers of the biblical text to make their own assessment of their significance. In this way readers are compelled to reexamine their own notions of what constitutes success and failure, blessing and curse, promise and fulfillment—which is to say, to reflect theologically in a creative way.

PREVIOUS PAGE:
Moses Receives the Tablets of the Law; *detail of a mid-twentieth-century painting by Marc Chagall (1887–1985). Nice, France.*

The Primary History (Genesis–2 Kings)

The Primary History contains the following twelve books: Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy, Joshua, Judges, Ruth, 1 Samuel, 2 Samuel, 1 Kings, and 2 Kings.

Within the Primary History there are some obvious major divisions corresponding to significant phases in the national life. The death of Moses, who is the key human figure in the narrative from Exodus to Deuteronomy, is clearly a crucial event, occurring as it does on the eve of the Israelite entry into the promised land. The opening of the book of Joshua, "After the death of Moses," signals that transition and provides a model for other major transitions in the history. Thus Judges begins, "After the death of Joshua," 2 Samuel, "After the death of Saul," 2 Kings, "After the death of Ahab" (though in this case the transition seems much less significant); 1 Kings begins just before the death of David. The Primary History is thus arranged around the lifetimes of important individuals: the patriarchs (Genesis), Moses (Exodus to Deuteronomy), Joshua (Joshua), the judges (Judges), Samuel and Saul (1 Samuel), David (2 Samuel), Solomon, Elijah, Ahab (1 Kings), and the other kings (2 Kings).

The narrative of the Primary History may be described as one of fair beginnings and foul endings. The first of those beginnings is the promise in Genesis 12 to Abraham that his descendants—the Israelite people—will be vastly numerous, that they will inhabit a land of their own, that they will be the object of divine blessing, and that they will be a blessing to other nations. But by the end of 2 Kings these promises are shown not to have been ultimately attained, even though there have been signals of their potential success along the way. By the end of the narrative sequence, ten of the twelve tribes of Israel have long ago been lost to view in Assyrian captivity and the remainder have just now been submerged in Babylonian exile, Judah has been "taken into exile out of its land" (2 Kings 25:21), it has "come to the point" that Yahweh has "cast them [Jerusalem and Judah] out of his presence" (24:20), and the nations have experienced from Israel no blessing but either military domination (when Israel ruled an empire) or else insubordination (when Israel formed part of the Assyrian or Babylonian empire).

Fair beginnings are also announced by the various styles of leadership Israel experiences in the Primary History. Every type of leader—warrior, judge, king, and prophet—though represented as Yahweh's gift to the nation, proves disastrous or at least ineffectual. Moses, the warrior-leader of the people, can guide them to the promised land but not into it because of a personal failing; he can bring them divine law, but he cannot prevent the curses of Deuteronomy 28 falling upon them if they fail to be obedient. Joshua, the warrior whom no one is supposed to be able to withstand in his fight for territory for his people (Josh. 1:5) and whose function is to gain the land of Canaan as a possession for the Hebrews (1:6, 15), is at the end of his days still stiffening the resolve of his countrymen against "the nations that remain" (23:4) and urging them to remain loyal to the worship of Yahweh rather than "the gods of the Amorites *in whose land* you dwell" (24:15). The land is still the Amorites'!

The history of the judges, who are "raised up" by God (Judg. 2:16), is likewise a story of decline, from the first and unexceptionable judge, Othniel, upon whom the spirit of Yahweh comes and who thereupon can overcome an oppressive "king of Mesopotamia" (3:10), to Samson. Samson, whom also the spirit of Yahweh "stirs" (13:25), but who—unlike other judges—cannot bring "rest" to his nation, cannot control the Philistine threat any more than he can control his own appetites, and he must suffer the indignity of having his era denoted "the days of the Philistines" (15:20). And if it is Samuel rather than Samson who is to be regarded as the last of the judges, even he fails conspicuously to fulfill his boyhood promise

as purveyor of the word of Yahweh (1 Sam. 3), appointing his unscrupulous sons as his successors to the judgeship (8:1–3) and resisting the evident intention of Yahweh to institute a monarchy (e.g., 8:22).

The monarchy as an institution holds out great promise, but it too very soon proves its potential for disaster. The first king, Saul, chosen by divinely directed lot (1 Sam. 10:20–24), is very soon "rejected . . . from being king over Israel" (15:26), Yahweh having "repented" that he made Saul king (15:11). The most esteemed of Israel's kings, David, is condemned out of his own mouth, sinning against Yahweh in the matter of Bathsheba and Uriah (2 Sam. 12:13) and in the numbering of the people (24:10). Though he is promised that his line will rule over Israel "for ever" (7:13, 16), he is also threatened with a prophecy that his dynasty will "never" be free from feuds and attacks (12:10). His son Solomon, who begins his reign by "loving" Yahweh (1 Kings 3:3) and building him a temple (1 Kings 6–7), in the end proves to be "not wholly true to the LORD his God" (11:4) and is told that Yahweh will "surely tear the kingdom from [him]" (11:11). In consequence, Solomon's son Rehoboam loses the allegiance of all the tribes except Judah (12:19–20), and Jeroboam, his Northern rival, institutes unlicensed sanctuaries, which become "a sin to the house of Jeroboam, so as to cut it off and to destroy it from the face of the earth" (13:34). In the Northern Kingdom, the kings regularly follow the example of Jeroboam and lead their people into sin; Omri, for example, "walked in all the way of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, and in the sins which he made Israel to sin, provoking the LORD, the God of Israel, to anger" (16:26). In the Southern Kingdom, two kings are wholeheartedly approved of by Yahweh: Hezekiah (2 Kings 18:6), who nevertheless is the first to hear of the forthcoming exile to Babylon (20:16–19), and Josiah (22:2; 23:25), who nevertheless is killed in battle (23:29–30) despite a prophecy that he will be "gathered to [his] grave in peace" (22:20). Several others receive qualified praise, but of six of the last seven kings of Judah it is uniformly reported that they "did what was evil in the sight of the LORD" (e.g., 21:2).

The other institution of leadership in Israel is that of the prophets. They appear at various times in the course of the narrative from Moses (Deut. 34:10), who functions both as Yahweh's mouthpiece and as an intercessor for the people, through anonymous prophets in the period of the judges (Judg. 6:8–10; cf. 2:1–3; 10:11–14), bands of prophets in the time of Samuel (1 Sam. 10:5), and schools of "the sons of the prophets" in the time of Elisha, to the famous individual prophets Samuel, Nathan, Elijah, and Elisha. As a channel of communication between the divine and the human, the prophets hold greater promise than any of the other leaders, but nonetheless they are remarkably ineffectual: quite apart from the more trivial tasks of divination (like finding lost animals, 1 Sam. 9), the prophets' success in influencing national history is minimal. Disobedience to Yahweh's word as delivered by a prophet is very early on recognized as a fatal crime for a king: Saul is "rejected" from being king because he has rejected the "word" of Yahweh through Samuel (1 Sam. 15:23). Elsewhere, on the whole, the prophetic word does no more than announce a doom-laden future that is not open to adjustment (e.g., Ahijah's prophecy in 1 Kings 14:7–11) but that merely wakens echoes of the original prophecy as it comes to pass (cf. 15:29; also 2 Kings 9:25–26, 36; 10:10, 17). In the large stretch of the narrative given over to the activity of the prophets Elijah and Elisha (1 Kings 17–2 Kings 10) there is indeed an outstandingly successful confrontation between the prophet of Yahweh and those prophets of Baal who are supported by the royal court (1 Kings 18); nevertheless, it is not the prophet Elijah, but the king Jehu, who most decisively defends the worship of Yahweh when he "wipe[s] out Baal from Israel" (10:28), which is to say, from the nation as a whole. Prophets are indeed found designating future kings by

anointing (1 Sam. 10:1; 2 Kings 9:1–10), but prophets do not make kings; popular acclamation (1 Sam. 10:24–11:15) or a coup d'état (2 Kings 9:11–37) is needed to achieve real political ends (→ Prophet).

The direction of the Primary History, toward national decline and the negation of national hopes entertained at the beginning of the story, is, now that we come to recognize it, already foreshadowed by the opening chapters of Genesis. In Genesis 1–11, the primeval history, fair beginnings for the human race—before ever the scope of the narrative is narrowed down to the Abrahamic family—are very soon tarnished by human perversity. The primal couple is expelled from the Garden in no time at all (3:23), the first brother becomes the first murderer (4:8), the multiplication of humankind is accompanied by a corresponding increase in human wickedness (6:1, 5), and at Babel the first cooperative endeavor in human history leads immediately to a permanent "scattering" of the race across the face of the earth (11:9). Against that background it is perhaps not surprising that the focus on the Abrahamic family from Genesis 12 onward should reveal not some undoing of the primeval tragedy, but a long, drawn-out replay of it. There is not a lot of difference between Genesis 6:5–7 and 2 Kings 17:18–23: when God sees that humankind's thoughts are "only evil continually," he is sorry that he created them and determines to "blot" them out from the face of the ground by a great flood. Things are not very different when the Israelite people over many generations do "wicked things, provoking the LORD to anger" (2 Kings 17:11), and he "removes" or "casts" them "out of his sight" (17:18, 20, 23). The greatest difference between the primeval history and the rest of the Primary History is that in Genesis 1–11 every episode of human sin followed by divine punishment contains an additional element of mitigation of the punishment; Adam and Eve, for example, though expelled from the Garden, do not actually die when they eat of the fruit, and Cain, though driven out from the tillable earth to be a fugitive, carries a divine mark of protection against any who might seek to slay him. In the remainder of the history as a whole, however, there is no mitigation, either realized or envisaged, of the fate of the Israelite people.

Or is there? Some have thought that the concluding paragraph of 2 Kings (25:27–30), recounting the release from prison in Babylon of the ex-king Jehoiachin of Judah, injects a note of hope on the very last page of the history, hinting perhaps that Jehoiachin's good fortune may one day be that of the people as a whole. It is true that Jehoiachin is given a royal pension and dines at the Babylonian king's table, at "a seat above the seats of the kings who were with him in Babylon" (25:28). But it is also true that Jehoiachin has spent thirty-seven years in prison in Babylon (twice the time he had lived in Judah; cf. 24:8), that he is still effectively a prisoner in the Babylonian court, that his pension is humiliatingly paid to him on a daily basis, and that at the time of writing Jehoiachin is already dead (25:30: "a regular allowance was given him by the king . . . as long as he lived"). None of this augurs well for the Jewish people, nor can this admittedly undisastrous conclusion reverse the downhill direction in which the whole of the Primary History has been moving.

The Secondary History (1 Chronicles–Esther)

The Secondary History begins with the creation, as does the Primary History, but it carries the story of the Israelite people much further, beyond the Exile to the Persian period of the fifth century B.C. This Secondary History consists of 1 Chronicles, 2 Chronicles, Ezra, Nehemiah, and Esther.

By comparison with the Primary History, the Secondary History is remarkable for its

omission of any narrative for the period from the creation down to the death of Saul (1 Chron. 10)—genealogies fill the narrative gap—and for its exclusion of the history of the Northern Kingdom. Clearly the first crucial event in this history is not the Exodus or conquest of Canaan, but the reign of David and the establishment of his dynasty. In this history, David does not first rule over Judah and then extend his power over the Northern tribes (cf. 2 Sam. 5:5); he is made king by "all Israel" from the beginning (1 Chron. 11:1).

The importance of David in the Secondary History is that he is represented as the institutor of the Israelite system of worship, especially of the Temple, which is his idea and which he instructs his son Solomon to build (1 Chron. 17; 22). The Levites also, who actually perform the worship of the Temple, are appointed by David (1 Chron. 23–26). Nothing is said of David's misdemeanors, and even the narrative of his exploits as a warrior seems to be included only by way of introduction to the story of his bringing to Jerusalem the Ark as the focus of the worship of Yahweh (1 Chron. 13).

The section of the history devoted to Solomon likewise has as its theme Solomon as the builder of the Temple (2 Chron. 1–9). Here too any negative aspects of the king's personality are passed over (cf. 1 Kings 2:1–3:1). Indeed, later kings of Judah are not depicted as uniformly righteous, but special emphasis is given to those who effect religious reforms or repair the Temple: Asa (2 Chron. 15), Jehoshaphat (19:4–11), Joash (24:4–14), Hezekiah (29:3–31:23), and Josiah (34:1–35:19). The history of the monarchy thus seems to be primarily a history of the establishment and maintenance of the worship of God; the function of kings is primarily to promote correct and lavish worship, and the function of the people is to provide the necessary funds and personnel for the Temple services (→ Temple, The).

In the postexilic section of the Secondary History in Ezra and Nehemiah the same interest is very evident. The return from exile in Babylonia is authorized by the Persian king Cyrus specifically to rebuild the Jerusalem Temple (Ezra 1:2), and the first action of the returned exiles is to rebuild the Temple altar "in its place" (3:3) and to reinstitute sacrifices there, even before the Temple itself has been rebuilt. The first major climax of these books is the completion of the Temple building "by command of the God of Israel and by decree of Cyrus and Darius and Artaxerxes king of Persia" (6:14) and the celebration of the traditional festivals (6:19–22). Other important moments in the narrative are the elimination of foreigners from the worshiping community (Ezra 10), the securing of the city and its people by the enclosure of a wall (Neh. 3–4; 12:27–43), instruction in the law of Yahweh (chap. 8), and cultic reforms (chap. 13). Nehemiah's closing words are in the closest harmony with the history's primary interest: "I established the duties of the priests and Levites, each in his work; and I provided for the wood offering, at appointed times, and for the first fruits" (13:30–31). And Nehemiah is not even a professional religious man, but a Jewish official in the Persian civil service.

The final book of the Secondary History, Esther, is set in Persia and so cannot directly concern itself with the worship of the Jerusalem Temple. But its theme, the preservation of the Jewish people from the threat of genocide, makes it a fitting conclusion to the Secondary History: in its present context, it affirms that the continuance of the worship of God by the people of God is guaranteed. The gravest threat to national existence has been faced and overcome, and the Jewish people, though "scattered" and "dispersed" (Esther 3:8) throughout the provinces of the Persian Empire, have their interests safeguarded by the presence at the Persian court of Mordecai the Jew. He is not only "next in rank to King Ahasuerus," but also "great among the Jews" because he habitually "sought the welfare of his people and spoke peace to all his people" (10:3).

So the entire Secondary History concludes on an upbeat note. It harmonizes well with the outlook of the narrative as a whole, that the purpose for which history has existed is the worship of God. And the people of Israel, aided by the right-living kings of Judah, have, in fact, throughout the only history worth writing about, been carrying out that worship faithfully and joyfully. This quite different perspective on national history from that of the Primary History is particularly well illustrated by the way the two histories handle the question of the meaning of the Exile. For 2 Kings, the Exile is a punishment for national iniquity, an unredeemed disaster, and the end point of the whole narrative. But for 2 Chronicles, the Exile is punishment for pollution of the Temple (36:14), it is destined to come to an end at a time predicted by the prophet Jeremiah (36:21; cf. Jer. 25:11; 29:10), and it is no kind of end, for the book concludes not with the Exile, but with an announcement of the plans of Cyrus to rebuild the Temple (36:22–23).

Conclusion

The OT presents us, then, with two alternative tellings of the history of the Israelite people. Their difference in outlook does not necessarily make either of them unreliable; it only reinforces the fact that the telling of any story or any history must be selective and must reflect the intentions of some person or group.

The fact that the two histories are found within the same sacred Scriptures has an additional implication, however. Any communities or individuals with a commitment to those Scriptures do not have the freedom to pick or choose between the tellings of the story. They must come to terms with the coexistence of the conflicting narratives.

A very similar conflict of outlook exists between Psalms 105 and 106. These are both "historical" psalms in that they recount selected incidents from national history. But Psalm 105 is positive where Psalm 106 is negative. For Psalm 105, what happened to Israel in Egypt is that there God made his people fruitful and stronger than their enemies (105:24); for Psalm 106, it was a time when Israel ignored God's power and rebelled against him (106:7). Here too readers, especially if they are members of a religious group that uses these psalms, are not free simply to ignore the contrast.

The Biblical Story As It Has Been Understood

The understanding of the biblical story as essentially two competing historical narratives is *not* the way in which the books have usually been understood by the communities that have preserved them. This is because it has not been customary to look at ancient sacred books as literary works that generate meaning through their overall shape, structure, and dominant tendencies, that is, through their identity *as wholes.* These books, like the other biblical books, have tended rather to be valued piecemeal for their diverse *contents.*

Thus, the Primary History has been understood in both Jewish and Christian communities as containing *law* and *history.* It does, of course. Exodus to Deuteronomy contains the legal foundation of the Israelite people, which remains essential for the moral and legal beliefs and practices of Jews today. Christians have generally tried to discriminate between the moral laws of these books, which they consider as having some kind of divine authorization, and the more strictly ritual laws, which they have regarded as applicable only to the Jewish people. These interpretations, which may or may not be valid, ignore the fact that the laws of

the Primary History are *narrated,* i.e., set in a narrative context. It would be more appropriate to understand them—even the Ten Commandments—not as laws claiming universal truth, but as texts that will yield meanings only as they are understood within the narrative framework that surrounds them.

The Primary History also contains a valuable collection of historical materials. In fact, for most of the period it covers, it is the only source we have for knowing anything at all about what actually happened. But it is plain from the structure of the history that its concern is not primarily historiographical in the sense of recording the events of the past. The narrative has an argument or a thesis it wishes to establish. And since that thesis concerns the religious meaning of the total historical period it describes, our primary understanding of the narrative should be a theological one.

The Secondary History has been even less highly esteemed for its significance as a whole. Ever since the Septuagint Greek translation in the second century B.C. of 1 and 2 Chronicles under the heading *Paraleipomena,* "the omitted things," Chronicles has been regarded as no more than a supplement to Samuel and Kings rather than as the presentation of a distinctive view of the past and indeed of the purpose of creation. The books of Ezra and Nehemiah, for their part, have been treated more as a continuation of the history of Genesis to 2 Kings carried forward into postexilic times than as further evidence for the argument of Chronicles.

A further effect of regarding the narratives as essentially history is the following. Both Jewish and Christian readers have always known that the history of Israel did not really come to an end with the Exile or with the postexilic age. So the particular point at which the two biblical histories conclude has seemed arbitrary to them and therefore meaningless. By contrast, to recognize the existence of the two sequences of narratives as literary works in their own right leads to an enlargement of meaningfulness.

As long as the narratives have been thought to contribute to a program other than their own—such as laying down the laws by which to live or providing information about the events of the past—their truly challenging and unsettling nature has lain unremarked. This is not surprising, for the communities that have preserved them have always been in the business of conservation, of themselves as much as of their sacred books. Once we acknowledge that the Bible contains in these two historical sequences two divergent ways of remembering the past, we become obliged to make decisions for ourselves, not so much about the relative historical worth of each of the histories, but about whether it is possible to give allegiance to Scriptures that contain so much tension within themselves. There is no obviously or objectively correct decision; readers have to become personally involved. The history of the Bible's reception, even by groups that have esteemed it highly, is, in some important respects, a chronicle of misapprehensions of the Bible.

The Origins of the Biblical Story

What have been spoken of here as the two biblical histories did not originate as unified literary works and, indeed, never existed as such in biblical times. The histories as we have them now have an inner logic and coherence that do not depend on their authors. In fact, we may suppose that several different authors composed different parts of the histories at different times, in some cases deliberately intending their works to be read as sequels to narratives already written (e.g., Ruth as an appendix to Judges), at other times writing quite independently of the context in which their work is now to be found (e.g., Esther).

The Primary History

The twelve books of the Primary History are, with one small exception, the first books of the Hebrew Bible. Only Ruth, which belongs chronologically with Judges, is located elsewhere in the Hebrew canon, namely, in its third division, the Writings—for reasons no longer known. The Hebrew Bible, however, does not really regard Genesis to 2 Kings as a unified work because it breaks it apart with one of the major divisions of the canon: thus Genesis to Deuteronomy forms the Pentateuch (the Torah), and Joshua to 2 Kings the Former Prophets.

In modern critical scholarship it is customary to think of Genesis to 2 Kings not as a "primary History," but as two large independent works composed at different times with differing purposes. These two works are regarded as either the Pentateuch and a Deuteronomistic History (Joshua to 2 Kings) or a Tetrateuch (Genesis to Numbers) and a Deuteronomistic History opening with the book of Deuteronomy.

The Pentateuch has for a century of scholarship been supposed to have been finally edited from various sources or documents in the fifth century B.C. In some versions of this Documentary Hypothesis, it grew by a process of accretion; the earliest narrative source, "J," of the tenth century B.C., was combined with a ninth-century narrative, "E," in the eighth century. In the seventh century, the laws of the book of Deuteronomy, "D," were attached to this narrative. Last, an exilic (sixth-century) Priestly work, "P," containing both narrative and laws, was used as a framework for the older material; JEDP thus became, in the fifth century, the Pentateuch (→ Sources of the Pentateuch).

Though still defended by many scholars, this reconstruction has been challenged recently at every point. The dates and sequence of each of the sources have been questioned, J sometimes being thought postexilic, P pre-exilic. The existence of an E source has been doubted by many. Others have found the arguments for analyzing the sources behind the literature defective, and increasingly it is being felt that the growth of this diverse literary work is likely to have been very much more complex than the Documentary Hypothesis envisaged. No one doubts, however, that the materials from which the Pentateuch (or Tetrateuch) was written come from widely different periods. The material of Genesis and Exodus in particular must have existed for some centuries in oral form, and principles of selection and arrangement that we can no longer identify have shaped a good deal of the material. Surprisingly, few scholars have studied the question of what thesis the Pentateuch in its final form is attempting to sustain. But it may be suggested that its theme is the threefold promise to the Abrahamic family of land, posterity, and divine blessing. Since this promise was only partially fulfilled by the end of the Pentateuch, a more complete fulfillment lay in the future.

The Deuteronomistic History obviously comes in its final form from the sixth century, since the last narrated item refers to 561 B.C. The major critical issue is whether an earlier, pre-exilic, edition of the book may be detected. If the first edition of this history was written during the lifetime of Josiah and under the influence of the religious reformation attributed to him, then the whole thrust of the work may perhaps have been very much more positive. The history could then be seen as a record of the graciousness of Yahweh toward the Davidic dynasty, in accordance with the prophetic promises of 2 Samuel 7 (cf. 1 Kings 11:12; 15:4; 2 Kings 8:19; 19:34). Most agree, though, that even if such were the theme of the first edition, the exilic edition, which not only recounts the untimely death of this much-praised king, but also concludes with the exile of the people, effected an enormous alteration in its theme from a possibly positive to an almost certainly negative outlook. Some, indeed, have found a note of hope in its last paragraph reporting the release of Jehoiachin from prison (2 Kings

25:27–30), but that hardly prevents the impact of the total work from being predominantly negative.

The Secondary History

The Secondary History has been subjected to a curious deformation by the canon of the Hebrew Bible. Not only is it removed as far as possible from the Primary History, to the very end of the Hebrew Bible, but it is split in two and the order of its parts reversed. Ezra and Nehemiah, which of course relate the history of the centuries after Chronicles, are confusingly placed before Chronicles. The book of Esther, which belongs chronologically with Ezra (to be precise, it forms an addendum to Ezra 4:6), is—like Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah—one of the Writings, but preceding Ezra and separated from it by Daniel (which rightly does precede Ezra).

It was long agreed by critical scholars that Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah did actually once form a unified work, attributed to a Levite or priest of the late fifth century B.C. called by scholars today the "Chronicler." Although some now think that Ezra and Nehemiah are not the work of the Chronicler, there can be no doubt that all these books come from the same literary and religious circle. At some time in their early history, these books must have been regarded as part of the same work, because the first two and a half verses of Ezra have been copied to the end of 2 Chronicles (36:22–23), with the result that the forward-looking conclusion of 2 Chronicles has been much strengthened.

Chronicles evidently uses Samuel and Kings as its principal source; it is a matter of debate to what extent, if at all, the Chronicler had access to other old sources or whether he composed freely all the material not paralleled in Samuel and Kings. For Ezra and Nehemiah, the editor used a variety of historical documents including Persian administrative texts in Aramaic (e.g., Ezra 5:7–6:12; 7:12–26), records from Jerusalem archives such as the list of inhabitants of Judah in Ezra 2 and the people's pledge of loyalty to the law in Nehemiah 10, and above all the "memoirs" of Ezra (Ezra 7–10; Neh. 8–9) and Nehemiah (Neh. 1:1–7:73; 11:1–2; 12:31–43; 13:4–31).

The Chronicler's work has sometimes been thought to be politically motivated as a defense of the legitimacy of his Judean community against their northern neighbors, the Samaritans. Others have thought it an implicit expression of hope for the restoration of the Davidic monarchy. It seems more probable, however, that its audience is primarily the author's own community and its purpose was to assure them of the value of their life, even under foreign rule: they as a community are sustaining the worship of God, which is the primary function of Israel, indeed, the chief purpose of the world's creation (→ Chronicler).

Bibliography

Clines, D. J. A. *The Theme of the Pentateuch.* Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series, 10. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1978.

Fretheim, T. E. *The Pentateuch.* Interpreting Biblical Texts. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1996.

Nelson, R. D. *The Historical Books.* Interpreting Biblical Texts. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1999.

Noth, M. *The Deuteronomistic History.* Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series, 15. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1981.

———. *The Chronicler's History.* Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series, 50. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1987.

Polzin, R. *Moses and the Deuteronomist: A Literary Study of the Deuteronomic History.* Vol. 1, *Deuteronomy, Joshua, Judges.* New York: Seabury, 1980.

Whybray, R. N. *The Making of the Pentateuch: A Methodological Study.* Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series, 53. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1987.

Genesis

JOHN S. KSELMAN

INTRODUCTION

Genesis and the Pentateuch

The book of Genesis comprises a narrative extending from creation to the death of Joseph. It can be divided into four large sections: Genesis 1–11, the beginnings; 12–25, the Abraham cycle; 25–36, the Jacob cycle; and 37–50, the Joseph story. Genesis is part of a larger literary complex of narrative and law commonly designated the "Torah" or the "Pentateuch." The three sources (J, the Yahwist; E, the Elohist; and P, the Priestly writer) that appear in Genesis continue through Exodus, Leviticus, and Numbers, with their characteristic language, concerns, and themes.

Cast as Moses' testament to Israel before his death and Israel's subsequent entrance into the promised land, Deuteronomy reveals a literary source different from J, E, and P; and the presence of the language and themes of this "D source" in Joshua, Judges, 1 and 2 Samuel, and 1 and 2 Kings has led to the conviction that these works form a great historical corpus (called the "Deuteronomistic History"), prefaced by an address of Moses to Israel in Deuteronomy and ending with the destruction of the kingdom of Judah (→ Deuteronomy; Deuteronomistic Historian; Sources of the Pentateuch). The formation of a five-book Pentateuch from the Tetrateuch (Genesis–Numbers) was effected by the attachment of Deuteronomy to the preceding four books, an attachment governed in part by what might be termed "biographical" interests: Deuteronomy is Moses' farewell, his last words of instruction and warning to Israel; it ends with the death of this heroic figure, whose birth and rise to leadership are recorded in Exodus.

Methods in the Study of Genesis

Modern study of the book of Genesis, which had its beginnings in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, has moved in several directions. For some scholars, the history and society behind the text have been major concerns. The aim has been the reconstruction of Israel's history in its ancient Near Eastern context, especially through archaeology and the attempt to correlate its findings with the biblical literary record. The name of William F. Albright and those of his students are associated with this approach (→ Archaeology, History, and the Bible).

Other scholars have focused on the history and development of the book. The methods employed include *source criticism,* the recognition and isolation of the component narrative strands (for Genesis: J, E, and P) through the perspective of the Documentary Hypothesis given classic statement by Julius Wellhausen in his *Prolegomena to the History of Israel* (1883); and *form criticism,* the study of the origin and development, both oral and written, of the smaller constituent parts of these larger complexes and sources and the institutional setting of these identified units (→ Oral Materials, Sources, and Traditions). This method was employed with great success by Hermann Gunkel in his commentary on Genesis (1901).

The attention of a number of scholars has shifted recently from the diachronic study of the parts of a composite like Genesis to the synchronic study of the finished product at the end of its development. The final form of the text can be approached as literature and studied with the appropriate tools of literary criticism or as Scripture, the sacred collection of writings normative for two communities of faith, Judaism and Christianity. This method has been termed *canonical criticism* and is associated with the names of Brevard S. Childs and James Sanders (→ Biblical Criticism). These moves toward synthesis do not make irrelevant the gains of the traditional methods of source and form criticism, but they do bring into focus a reality sometimes not given sufficient attention by the more analytical methods, the final form of the text and the totality in which the constituent parts find their meaning and speak today.

Other contemporary approaches include feminist interpretation, which in Genesis includes the examination of the role and status of women in the creation accounts of chaps. 1–3 and in the ancestor stories of chaps. 12–50. Sociology and anthropology have recently had considerable impact on OT studies; in Genesis, methods drawn from the social sciences have illuminated such issues as genealogies and kinship structures (→ Sociology of the Old Testament).

Major Themes of Genesis

Some prominent themes throughout Genesis concern promise, blessing in place of curse, election, and familial strife.

The theme of God's promise (12:1–3, 7) and its partial or incomplete fulfillment touches the promise both of descendants and of land. The promise of descendants is organized around a series of questions: How will Abram (Abraham) be the father of numerous descendants when he has not even one son? Which of his sons (Ishmael or Isaac) will be the bearer of the promise? Will the chosen son survive to carry on the line (chaps. 22, 27)? The partial fulfillment of the promise of descendants is recorded in the genealogy in 46:8–27. The promise of land is also delayed in fulfillment. The ancestors to whom Canaan is promised spend more time outside the promised land than in it: Abraham and Sarah in Egypt (chap. 12) and Gerar (20); Isaac and Rebekah in Gerar (26); Jacob in Haran (29–31); Joseph in Egypt (39–50); and Jacob, Joseph's brothers, and their families also in Egypt (46–50).

Both of the promises are faced with obstacles that seem to make them humanly impossible to accomplish, obstacles that are overcome by divine intervention. To the promise of descendants, the obstacle is the barrenness of the matriarchs Sarah (Gen. 16), Rebekah (25:21), and Rachel (30:1). At the outset, Sarah's old age (17:17; 18:12) is an additional obstacle. To the promise of land, the obstacles are its occupation by the indigenous population (12:6; 13:7) and the famines that provoke the ancestors' departure (12:10; 26:1; 41:54).

The second important theme is the blessing that is also promised by God to the ancestors, their descendants, and ultimately all humanity. The narrative begins with the blessing of humanity in 1:28 with progeny ("Increase and multiply!") and land ("Fill the earth and subdue it!"). The blessing is continued in the Garden of Eden in Genesis 2, but blessing soon gives way to curse (chap. 3) and expulsion from the Garden, where the human needs for food and companionship were met. Outside the Garden, food production will require grueling labor; and companionship is replaced by strife and violence within the family. Humanity under the curse progresses to the fratricide of Cain and the universal violence and corruption that bring about the divine judgment of the Flood (chaps. 6–9). The blessing of humanity is renewed after the Flood, but the hubris of the tower builders of Babel threatens to start the whole cycle of sin and destruction over again. The dispersal of those who challenge the sovereignty of God, however, leads to a new history of blessing inaugurated by God in the stories of the ancestors (→ Curse and Blessing; Salvation).

In Genesis, the theme of election appears pointedly in the mystery of God passing over the firstborn to choose the younger son. This theme is first announced in the story of Cain and Abel, where God looks with favor on the gift of the younger son. As the narrative continues, the divine choice falls not on Ishmael, but on Isaac (Gen. 17, 21); not on Esau, but on Jacob (chaps. 25, 27); not on Reuben, but on Joseph (chap. 37); not on Zerah, but on Perez (38:27–30; cf. Ruth 4:18–22); not on Manasseh, but on Ephraim (48:8–19); and not on Reuben, Simeon, or Levi, but on Judah (49:8–12). If these stories were written in the Davidic-Solomonic era, this theme would have relevance for the accession to power of David and of Solomon, neither of whom was the oldest son (1 Sam. 16; 1 Kings 1).

The theme of rivalry, discord, and strife in the family has not until recently received the attention it deserves. Throughout Genesis, every familial relationship is riven by strife. There is discord between husband and wife (3:12; 16:5; 27:1–13; 30:1–2), between wives (16:4–6; 29:21–30:24), between parent and child (27:11–12; 37:10), between brothers (chaps. 4, 27, 37), and between other relatives (chaps. 13, 30). Like the theme of the choice of the younger son, this theme may be an indirect comment on the royal court of David. It may also reflect the strife and the hope for reconciliation between the two kingdoms.

Myth in Genesis 1–11

The relationship and dependence of the early chapters of Genesis on ancient Near Eastern myth raise the question of whether these chapters can themselves be designated as myths. The problem is compounded by the controversial issue of the definition of myth. Although myth is notoriously difficult to define, at least the following characteristics are involved in its description. First, the language of myth is narrative and dramatic, and myths may have been related to ritual and cult; on occasion they served as the libretto, the interpretive text for the ritual. Second, the actors and participants in myth are supernatural agents (gods, angels, demons). Third, the action of myth is characterized by remoteness in time and space (in the beginning, at the end time, in the divine world). Fourth, myths are related to communities, for which they order human experience by providing a vision of the underlying structure of reality; myth informs the community about its origins, identity, and destiny. Fifth, the goal of myth is "salvation," broadly understood as whatever contributes to human well-being.

If these characteristics are an adequate description of myth, there need be little difficulty in describing the material in Genesis 1–11 as myth, especially when so much of it is the Israelite version of ancient Near Eastern myth. Given the lack of consensus even on the proper definition of myth, however, perhaps it would be better to think of the stories of Genesis 1–11 as "parables," theological narratives whose intention is to present the Israelite view of the meaning of such fundamental realities as God transcendent and immanent, the creation, blessed humankind, the frustration

of God's design by human sin, and the restoration and renewal of humanity by divine grace.

Women in Genesis 12–50

Stories in which women play an important part occur with some frequency in the family stories that make up the bulk of Genesis 12–50. The first of these stories (12:10–20, with its parallels in chaps. 20 and 26) is a good illustration of the OT view of the woman as subject to her husband. Only divine intervention protects the ancestress and with her the promise of offspring, a promise endangered by the patriarch. The situation is reversed in chap. 16, where it is Sarai who manages the situation by proposing a plan for offspring, while Abram is the passive figure. This is the first of a number of stories in Genesis (and elsewhere in the OT) that deal with resourceful women.

We meet another impressive woman, Hagar, the Egyptian maid of Sarah, in chaps. 16 and 21, stories of family discord. Perceived as a threat to Sarah's status as primary wife, Hagar is abused by her mistress and flees. Hagar is the first person in the Bible to be confronted by "the messenger of Yahweh" (16:7) and the only woman to whom the deity promises numerous progeny (16:10). She is driven out in chap. 21 when her son, Ishmael, is perceived as a threat to Sarah's son, Isaac; again she is addressed by "the messenger of Elohim" (21:17). The strife between wives will recur in chap. 30 and as part of the larger theme of strife within the family. Sarah and Hagar are both victims of a patriarchal system that gives a woman honor and status only if she can give her husband male offspring.

In the stories that feature Rebekah (chaps. 24–27), the ancestress will replicate the journey of Abraham to Canaan; she too will leave her kin and her father's house (24:39–40), to become the mother of Jacob. Significantly, her call comes not from God (12:1), but from Abraham. Genesis 26 and 27 neatly balance each other; in chap. 26 Isaac is the deceiver in a deception involving his wife, while in chap. 27 Isaac is deceived by a plan devised by his resourceful wife.

Like Genesis 16 and 21, chaps. 29–33 are stories of strife in the family, the discord between Jacob's wives, the unloved and fertile Leah and the beloved and barren Rachel. As in the Sarah-Hagar stories, both Rachel and Leah give their maids to Jacob for substitute childbearing (note the parallelism of 16:2 and 30:3). Rachel and Leah are important in these stories not as individuals, but as maternal links in the patriarchal chain, intent on providing sons for their husband and survival for the clan.

In the story of the rape of Dinah (chap. 34), the narrative focuses on the negotiations between Abraham and the rapist's father, Hamor, and the vengeance of Dinah's brothers on Shechem and Hamor. Dinah's voice is never heard amid all these male activities. In chap. 38, Tamar the childless widow acts with initiative and resourcefulness to ensure children for herself and, once more, continuation for the family. Hers is a story about the precarious situation of a woman with neither husband nor sons and about the double standard that allows a man more than one sexual partner without negative judgment. The final story in which a woman figures as a principal character is chap. 39, the attempted seduction of Joseph by Potiphar's wife. These final three stories about women in Genesis act as a counterpoint to the stories of the patriarchs' mothers and wives; they are stories of sexuality (rape, assumed prostitution, seduction) not in the service of procreation in obedience to the divine command to "increase and multiply" in 1:28 (→ Women).

COMMENTARY

1:1–11:32
The Beginnings

The narrative of Genesis 1–11 begins with the creation of the good world and of humanity as its blessed resident and regent. The divine intention is frustrated by human evil, however, in a story of progressive deterioration and alienation: from the primal act of disobedience (chap. 3) to another act of hubris (chap. 11) in which the boundaries that separate the divine and human worlds are challenged. Since Genesis 1 shows creation to be a process of separation and distinction, the ignoring or blurring of these distinctions reverses the very process of creation and brings about the return to chaos in the Flood.

The growth and spread of sin from disobedience (chap. 3) to murder (4) to total corruption (6) to universal destruction (7–8) show humanity under the curse as the consequence of sin. But there is a parallel history of divine blessing and grace as well, a history that begins with the creation of a blessed humanity, wherein God continues to show his care for his sinful creatures and in which is renewed the blessing of all humanity (in chap. 9) and of a particular family (in chap. 12), which will become a source of blessing for all.

1:1–2:24
The Two Creation Accounts

1:1–2, In the Beginning. As most modern translations recognize, the P creation account (1:1–2:4a) begins with a temporal clause ("When, in the beginning, God created"); such a translation puts 1:1 in agreement with the opening of the J account

(2:4b) and with other ancient Near Eastern creation myths. The Hebrew verb *bara'*, "create," is used exclusively of divine activity; "heavens and earth" are a merism (an expression of totality by the use of two polar expressions) meaning "everything" (→ Creation).

The description of the precreation state in v. 2 probably is meant to suggest a storm-tossed sea: darkness, a great wind, the watery abyss. God's superiority over the sea here and in vv. 9–10 may be a reminiscence of the ancient Near Eastern mythic portrait of creation as the victory of order over hostile, chaotic forces like the divinized sea (→ Polytheism; Sea).

1:3–31, The Six Days of Creation. The six days of P's creation week are described in solemn, repetitive language and are arranged in two sets of three, in which the first and fourth days correspond, as do the second and the fifth, and the third and the sixth. The first three days describe the divine work of separation (light from darkness, water above from water below, sea from land) that prepares a habitable world; the last three days describe its inhabitants. The first day describes the creation of light, and the fourth day the sources of light (sun, moon, stars); in the second day the creation of the dome of the sky ("firmament" in the older translations) provides an air space and waters for the creatures of the fifth day, fish and birds; in the third day, dry land and plants are provided for the land animals and human beings of the sixth day (→ Firmament).

The climax of the six days of creation is the creation of humankind on the sixth day, which differs from the other days in God's prior consultation of the heavenly court, Israel's demythologized version of the ancient Near Eastern pantheon (v. 26: "Let us make humanity"; cf. Isa. 6:8) and in the designation of humanity as the image of God (→ Image of God). The context suggests that humanity is the image of God in the dominion it exercises over the rest of creation; ancient Near Eastern parallels suggest that "image of God" is a royal designation, emphasizing the godlike nature of the ruling monarch. In the imageless religious tradition of Israel, the only acceptable image of God is the human being.

The divine command to humanity in v. 28 to reproduce prepares for the Genesis genealogies, the continuation of God's initial act of creation, and reaches its climax in the fruitfulness of Israel in Egypt (Exod. 1:7, 12).

2:1–4a, The Divine Sabbath. The first week of creation closes with God's resting on the seventh day and his blessing that day, which will be the Israelite Sabbath (Exod. 20:8–11). The language here is remarkably similar to that found at the end of the account of the construction of the desert tabernacle in Exod. 39:32, 42–43; 40:33 (→ Tabernacle). The creation stories of the ancient Near East often conclude with the construction of a dwelling for the supreme deity. In the Israelite use of this motif, human beings participate in the divine work of creation by extending and completing it. Although most scholars consider Gen. 2:4a to be the end of the P creation account, echoing 1:1, some understand it, rather, as the heading of the second creation account.

2:4b–24, The Second Creation Account. The second creation account also begins with a temporal clause, this time one that describes the precreation state as a waterless, lifeless desert. There may be echoes here of the Canaanite myth of Baal's struggle with a demonic adversary Mot (Death), as there are similar reminiscences of the combat myth of the creator god Baal versus the Sea in 1:1–2 (→ Baal). The Israelite adaptation and reuse of the Canaanite myths of Baal versus the Sea in Genesis 1 and of Baal versus Death in his desert domain in Genesis 2 recall Yahweh's victory over the sea (Exod. 14–15) and the desert (Exod. 16–17) in the creation of Israel.

The water from the earth transforms the desert into a garden filled with the bounty of the earth; in the center of the Garden stand the tree of life, a common ancient Near Eastern motif, and the tree of knowledge (→ Tree of Life, The).

Yahweh's first act of creation in J is the creation of a man from the clay produced by the mixture of the water and dry earth of 2:6, enlivened by the divine breath (→ Adam; Adamah; Flesh and Spirit). The man's responsibility in Eden, whose abundance comes from Yahweh and not from any of the fertility gods of polytheism, is to cultivate the Garden and to obey the divine prohibition of eating from the tree of knowledge (→ Eden). The naming of the animals by the human being (vv. 19–20) is the narrator's way of indicating human dominion over the created world (as in 1:28–30); it recalls the divine name giving in Genesis 1.

The J creation account reaches its climax in the creation of woman as a helping counterpart to the man; the creation of woman from man does not imply subordination, any more than the creation of the man from the earth implies subordination. The subordination of woman to man is effected by the frustration of the divine intention of equality, wrought by human sin.

2:25–3:24
Crime and Punishment

2:25–3:7, The Sin. The reference to the nakedness of the man and woman is the beginning of the sin account, as the Hebrew pun of *'arummim*, "naked," in 2:25 and 3:7 and *'arum*, "crafty," in 3:1 suggests. Nakedness in the OT suggests weakness, neediness, and

the like (Deut. 28:48; Job 1:21; Isa. 58:7). The unawareness of their nakedness on the part of the man and the woman suggests their unawareness of their dependence on God, who provides in the Garden for all their needs. "Good and evil" is another instance of merism; the "knowledge of good and evil" is thus the unlimited knowledge appropriate to divinity, as the serpent suggests in v. 5 ("You shall be like gods"). In v. 6 the woman "saw how good the tree was for food"; the language recalls God's delight in his creation (in the repeated "God saw how good it was" of Gen. 1), which culminated in blessing; here the woman's seeing will lead instead to curse (→ Fall, The; Serpent).

Ironically, what the man and woman discover is not that they are gods, but that they are naked—weak, vulnerable, and helpless, having rejected their dependence upon God.

3:8–24, The Divine Judgment. The narrator continues the ironical tone of the narrative in the description of the human efforts to remedy the situation by attempting to cover their nakedness and hide from Yahweh. Unconscious irony marks the man's answer to the divine interrogation ("I heard your voice in the garden"), since the Hebrew idiom "to hear the voice of" means to obey—precisely what the man did not do.

In vv. 14–19, the divine judgment having been imposed on the participants, the order of their appearance in Genesis 2–3 (man, woman, serpent) is inverted; this literary reversal may imply the reversal of Yahweh's original intentions because of human sin. The divine judgment speech begins with a curse on the serpent (based on an etiology, or account of origin, of the serpent's manner of locomotion) and a prediction of the enmity between the human and nonhuman worlds. The curse of the woman involves the pain of childbearing, as the concomitant of the replacement of immortality (by eating of the tree of life) by progeny, and subordination to the man. Significantly, this cultural given of female subordination to the male is understood in the narrative as the result of human sin rather than the divine intention. The curse on the man involves disharmony with the earth from which he was made and to which he will return in death, after a life of hard labor for food. The naming of the woman by the man in v. 20 (Eve; Heb. *hawwah*, "life") underlines the new situation of dominion by the man over the woman.

The J creation account ends on a note of grace, thus establishing a precedent that will operate in the other J sin stories to come. In place of their inadequate garments, Yahweh provides more durable clothing before expelling the man and woman from the Garden; banished from the Garden and kept from the tree of life, they are yet not separated from God's care.

Brokenness, disharmony, the sundering of relationships between God and humanity, between man and woman, and between the human and the nonhuman world (hostile serpent and cursed earth) are the result of sin and will continue to appear in Genesis 4–11.

4:1–5:32
Sin and Curse, and the Blessing of Progeny

4:1–16, Cain and Abel. The sundering of the familial bond between husband and wife is now paralleled and intensified by another act of violence in the family, fratricide. Although the conflict between Cain and Abel may indicate the enmity and rivalry between two ways of life, the pastoralist and the sedentary peasant farmer, their brotherhood may reflect the interaction and symbiosis of farmer and shepherd in the ancient Near East. Cain's act of violence is an attack on the integrity of the family, an offense against the divinely intended order of creation expressed in the command to reproduce. But Cain's sin is more than a rejection of the divinely established order; in arrogating to himself the divine sovereignty over life in ending a life, Cain has repeated the sin of his parents by making himself "like God."

There are several other important links between the Cain and Abel story and Genesis 3. The similarity of Yahweh's address to Cain in v. 7 and to the woman in 3:16 underscores the relationship between the two primal sins. Further, like his father, Cain the farmer will be cursed with unproductive land, which he has polluted with his brother's blood (vv. 11–12), and will be banished as a wanderer east of Eden (3:24; 4:16). Characteristically, the story ends not with judgment alone but with mitigating grace; the fugitive's life is protected by the mark that Yahweh places on Cain.

Several themes that will recur throughout Genesis make their first appearance here: the strife between brothers (Jacob and Esau, Joseph and the other sons of Jacob) and the rejection of primogeniture for the mysterious divine choice of the younger son.

4:17–25, The Descendants of Cain and the Birth of Seth. The ambiguity of human progress is highlighted by J's paralleling of advances in civilization and technology with the increase of violence. To Cain is attributed the building of the first city, an advance that will culminate in Genesis 11 in the building of a city that will challenge the supremacy of Yahweh. Among Cain's descendants are Jabal, the ancestor of pastoral nomads (→ Nomads), Jubal, the ancestor of musicians, and Tubal-cain, the originator of metallurgy. Over against these descendants of Cain is set Lamech, who boasts of his vengeful reign of terror. This dark story of violence ends with a genealogy that moves from murderer to murderer; the framing of a genealogy by two acts that bring death stands in contradiction to the genealogical record of the continued life of a family. In sharp

contrast to the surrounding darkness is the light that dawns in the announcement of the birth of Seth, who fathers Enosh and a family of those who call upon Yahweh's name (v. 26), a family that will include Abram, who will call upon that same God (12:8).

5:1–32, The Descendants of Adam and Seth. Genesis 5 begins by recalling the P account of the creation of humanity in the divine image (1:26–27) and of the divine command to reproduce (1:28). Obedience to this divine command is demonstrated in the following genealogy of *'adam*. In 1:26 and in 5:1b–2, the Hebrew word *'adam* has the generic and inclusive meaning "human being." In 4:25 ("*'adam* had relations with his wife"), 5:1a ("This is the record of the descendants of *'adam*"), and 5:3 ("*'adam* was 130 years of age"), the generic noun has been transformed into a proper name. This transformation of "humanity" into "Adam" depends on the intervening narratives in Genesis 2–4 that use *ha'adam* ("the man"), from 2:8 to 4:1 (→ Adam).

In 5:3, Adam's begetting a son "in his image and likeness" understands human reproduction as the continuation of the creative act of God. There is a sharp contrast between the genealogy of Adam through Seth to Noah, in which the divine image and blessing are transmitted, and the curse-laden line of Cain in Genesis 4. The recurring pattern of the standard genealogical notice is "*A* had lived *X* years when he fathered *B* [the firstborn male]; after *B*'s birth *A* lived for *Y* more years and had other children. The whole lifetime of *A* was *(X + Y)* years; then he died." This pattern is altered twice. In v. 24, readers are told that Enoch, who "walked with God" (an expression of continuing service and constant performance of duty; Gen. 6:9; 24:40; 1 Kings 3:6; 2 Kings 20:3), "was no more"; and although this expression can mean death (Gen. 42:13, 32; Jer. 31:15), readers learn that "God took" Enoch (as he did Elijah in 2 Kings 2:9–10; cf. Pss. 49:15; 73:24). In 5:29, Noah's genealogical notice is expanded by his naming (paralleling the naming of Seth at the beginning of the genealogy in v. 3) and by an etiology for the name. Noah's genealogical notice is further distinctive in that it begins in 5:32 and is concluded in 9:28–29, so that it serves as a frame to the Flood story and the post-Deluge renewal of creation (→ Genealogy; Noah).

6:1–9:17
The Flood

6:1–4, Prologue to the Flood. As an introduction to the Flood story, J has used 6:1–4, a fragment of old mythic material with reminiscences of the ancient Near Eastern motif of "rebellion of the gods," in which a younger generation of gods challenges the authority of their divine elders and progenitors. Whatever the origin and history of this fragment, it has been included because it fits so well the narrative of the growth of sin and evil begun in Genesis 3–4. Gen. 6:1–4 is a story of the blurring of the distinction between the human and divine worlds, already heard in the challenges to the divine sovereignty in Genesis 3–4 and to be heard again in the story of the ill-fated tower in Genesis 11. The improper mating of heavenly beings and earthly women is an attack on the boundaries that are meant to separate the heavenly and earthly realms. It thus threatens the integrity of creation as God intended it (cf. Lev. 11:44–47; 20:24–26).

6:5–13, The Causes of the Flood. Following the mythic prologue, the narrative moves to the reasons for the Flood. The two sources (J and P) agree that the Flood was provoked by human evil. In J (vv. 5–8) there is an effective contrast between the evil inclination of the human heart and the pained heart of God. P specifies the evil as violence (vv. 11–12), graphically illustrated in the murderous behavior of Cain and Lamech in Genesis 4. The disordered violence that characterizes interhuman relationships parallels the disordered heavenly-earthly relationships portrayed in 6:1–4.

Set between these two pictures of unceasing human wickedness and of violence and universal corruption is Noah, who "found favor in the eyes of Yahweh" (J) and who walked with God as a righteous and blameless man (P). The similar language in 1 Kings 9:4 ("If you walk before me . . . with a blameless heart") and in Ps. 101:2, 6 points up the royal features of Noah. The description of Job as "righteous and blameless" (Job 12:4) recalls the linking in Ezek. 14:14, 20 of Noah, Daniel, and Job as men saved by their own righteousness.

There are several interesting links between 6:1–13 and the creation stories in Genesis 1–3. In 6:2, the "sons of God" see how beautiful ("how good") are the human women, a seeing that leads to a limited life span and eventual death (cf. Ps. 82:6–7). In 3:6 the woman "saw how good was the fruit of the tree of knowledge," a seeing that led to mortality. Similarly, when in 6:5 Yahweh sees how great was the evil of humanity, what he perceives is the reversal of Genesis 1, where "God saw how good" were the works of his creation, with its climax in the creation of humanity. Finally, 6:12 ("God saw the earth, and behold, it was corrupt") is a dark reminder of the conclusion of the six days of creation in 1:31 ("God saw all that he had made, and behold, it was very good"). The purpose of such echoes is to emphasize the meaning of the Flood as the reversal of the process of creation.

6:14–7:24, The Flood. The Flood story has traditionally been a parade example of the Documentary Hypothesis, by which the J and P versions of the Flood story can be identified and separated. The presence of

more than one source can be seen in the doublets and in the irregularities and inconsistencies in the narrative. Such inconsistencies include, for instance, the distinction of the divine names "Yahweh" in J and "Elohim" in P (→ Names of God in the Old Testament); the pair of each species brought into the ark in P (6:19–20) against the seven pairs of clean and the single pair of unclean creatures in J (7:2–3); and the forty days and nights of rainfall in J (7:4, 12) over against the Flood's cresting after 150 days in P (7:24).

Further, there are duplicate accounts of the divine command to Noah to enter the ark in 6:18–20 (P) and 7:1–3 (J), of the entrance into the ark by Noah and his family in 7:7 (J) and 7:13 (P), and the promise never again to destroy the earth in 8:21 (J) and 9:11 (P). More examples can be found in any standard commentary. Suggestions vary on how such originally disparate material was brought together; a recent proposal conceives of a Flood story from Priestly circles into which traditional epic material from J has been incorporated. Whatever the solution, the final product is not an unimaginative collection of material drawn from distinct sources, but an artful, unified composition arranged chiastically around the central affirmation in 8:1 that "God remembered Noah." A presentation of the chiastic structure of chaps. 7–8 will make this clear: *(A)* command to enter the ark, 7:1–3; *(B)* two mentions of seven days' wait for the Flood, 7:4–10; *(C)* entry into the ark, 7:11–15; *(D)* Yahweh shuts Noah in, 7:16; *(E)* the Flood waters rise, covering the mountains, 7:17–24; *(F)* God remembers Noah, 8:1a; *E′* the Flood waters begin to recede and the tops of the mountains appear, 8:1b–6a; *D′* Noah opens a window in the ark, 8:6b; *C′* the raven and dove leave the ark, 8:7–9; *B′* two periods of seven days each waiting for the waters to recede and the earth to dry, 8:10–14; *A′* command to leave ark, 8:15–17. The first half of the chiasmus narrates the descent and return of the world to precreation chaos (cf. 7:17–24 to the first creation account in Gen. 1), while the second half moves toward the new creation, explicitly affirmed in 9:1–7.

Also noteworthy is the dependence of the biblical Flood story on such Babylonian sources as the Gilgamesh epic and the Atrahasis myth. This ancient Near Eastern material was reshaped and altered in accord with Israelite theological perspectives: e.g., Noah, the survivor of the Flood, is not immortal; the cause of the Flood is ethical (human sin) and not overpopulation, as in some ancient Near Eastern parallels—indeed the Flood is followed by the divine command to Noah to repopulate the earth.

Over against the forty-day downpour of rain in J (7:4, 12), P describes the Flood in more cosmic and mythological terms, with the reduction of the world to precreation chaos effected by the opening of windows in the firmament, the barrier holding back the waters above, and the upsurge of the subterranean waters (1:6–8). Only a small bubble of order remains, in which is the vessel carrying the possibility of new life. In 7:21–23, the annihilation of all life is the divine punishment brought on by human evil and sin. Although the primary focus of the Flood narrative is on the Flood as divine punishment, as the destruction of a thoroughly evil world, there is present as well a subtheme of the Flood as the divine means of purification, the cleansing of pollution from the earth (→ Flood, The).

8:1–22, The End of the Flood. The dramatic turning point of the narrative comes in 8:1, when "God remembered Noah." In v. 4, the ark comes to rest (a wordplay on the meaning of the name of Noah in Heb., "rest"). The gradual ebbing of the water and the drying of the earth (vv. 3–14) introduce the theme of the renewal of creation by recalling the gathering of the waters and the appearance of dry land in 1:9–12.

This passage also foreshadows another kind of creation, God's creation of his people Israel, who pass through the sea on dry land in Exod. 14:16, 22, 29. Another shared motif linking the creation in Genesis 1, the Flood, and the passage of Israel through the sea is the mention of the wind in each of the narratives (1:2; 8:1; Exod. 14:21). The parallelism of the conclusion of the Flood story with creation continues when Noah, at God's command, "brings forth" all the living creatures from the ark (v. 17), just as the earth "brings forth" plants and animals at God's command (1:12, 24). The Flood story comes to an end as it began, with mention of the continuing evil designs of the human heart (6:5; 8:21) and the construction of an altar by Noah for the initiation of the postdiluvian system of divine service (cf. 12:8; 13:18; 22:9; 35:7).

9:1–17, Creation Restored. P continues the dominant theme of the renewal of creation with the repetition to Noah and his family of the command to primordial humanity to reproduce (1:28; 9:1) and the divine blessing. The genealogy in Genesis 10 will demonstrate the obedience of Noah's family to this divine command. Unlike Adam, Noah is obedient and righteous; like Adam, Noah will be the progenitor of a reconstituted humanity. The prohibition of murder in vv. 5–6 is followed by the repeated divine injunction to increase and multiply; this repeats the pattern of murder followed by reproduction in Genesis 4–5. The narrative concludes with the establishment by God of a covenant with Noah and his descendants. The covenant with Noah initiated by God is unilateral, like the covenants with the patriarchs that follow; God binds himself by a promise without imposing any obligation on Noah. This covenant is similar to the P covenant with Abraham in Genesis 17. The idiom for "establishing a covenant" is employed in both accounts (9:9, 11, 17; 17:7, 19, 21). Other elements shared by Genesis 9 and 17 include the "eternal covenant" (9:16; 17:13, 19) and a sign of the covenant (the rainbow in 9:12, 13, 17;

circumcision in 17:11). A final connection may be the expressions "remember the covenant" in 9:15–16 and "keep the covenant" in 17:9–10, given the equivalence of the verbs in the two versions of the command to sanctify the Sabbath (Exod. 20:8: "Remember the sabbath day"; Deut. 5:12: "Keep the sabbath day").

9:18–10:32
Noah and His Sons

9:18–29, Noah's Drunkenness and the Cursing of Canaan. Like Cain, Noah is a farmer, a man of the soil (4:2). As the first to practice viticulture and winemaking, Noah fits the pattern of those descendants of Cain who invented musical instruments and metallurgy (4:21–22). Noah's winemaking fulfills the prediction of his father, Lamech, that Noah would provide relief from the cursed ground and human toil (5:29; cf. 3:17; 4:11–12).

This etiology is followed by the story of the sin of Ham and the cursing of his son Canaan. The story is obscure and seems to involve some breach of sexual propriety; "uncovering the nakedness of one's father" is prohibited in Lev. 18:7–8 (where, however, it refers to sexual relations with one's mother). The story is similar to 19:30–38, in which Lot's drunkenness is associated with sexual union with his daughters.

Whether sexual misconduct or simply lack of filial piety, Ham's act results in the cursing of his son Canaan, who is to be slave to his blessed brothers, Shem and Japheth. The blessing of Shem is another step in the narrowing focus that culminates in Abraham, descendant of Shem (→ Canaan, Canaanites; Shem).

10:1–32, The Table of Nations. The prehistory of Genesis 10 is complex and obscure. It is a composite of J and P genealogical material with later interpolations. Its tripartite scheme of Noah's sons recalls the three sons of Adam (4:1–2, 25), of Lamech (4:19–22), and of Terah (11:26).

As an ethnological statement, Genesis 10 has grouped and related peoples in perplexing ways that have been the subject of considerable examination. One recent study has suggested that the distinguishing features of the three lines of descent are sociocultural, based on distinct ways of life, group characteristics, and professions: Shem's descendants comprise the nonsedentary, migratory segment of the population, the nomadic tribes; the descendants of Ham, the sedentary, agrarian population of village and town; and the descendants of Japheth, the maritime nations, the seafaring inhabitants of islands and coastal areas.

Whatever its original intent, in its present context Genesis 10 continues the genealogy of Noah (5:32; 9:28–29). Untypically, it moves from Japheth, the youngest of Noah's sons (vv. 1–5), through Ham (vv. 6–20), to Shem (vv. 21–31), the oldest son. The movement from the youngest son with his descendants to the oldest focuses attention on the genealogical line of descent in which the narrator is interested. The spreading abroad (vv. 5, 32) and the dispersal (v. 18) of the peoples with their distinct languages receive a positive evaluation in Genesis 10 as a movement and distinction intended by God. A negative evaluation of the same phenomena is presented in the following episode, in 11:1–9.

11:1–32
The End of the Beginnings

11:1–9, The Tower of Babel. This concluding narrative of the prehistory parallels Genesis 3 as a story of human rebellion against the limits and distinctions of the divine and human worlds. The individual rebellion of the first man and woman has become universal and characteristic of humankind. The cycle of creation (chaps. 1–2), sin and its progress (3–4), and divine punishment (6–8) begins again, with a statement of the unchanged evil of the human heart (8:21) followed by the renewal of creation (chap. 9) and a story of the worldwide extent of sin (11).

The hubris of humanity, the attempt to overcome the boundaries ordained by God, consists in the construction of a city with a temple tower reaching to the heavens, challenging the supremacy of Yahweh. Thus the city builders will make a name for themselves. Since Hebrew *shem*, "name," includes the nuance both of fame or renown and of progeny, the city builders are engaged in an attempt to overcome the human fate of mortality as well (3:4–5).

In an ironical comment by the narrator, the deity has to descend from his heavenly dwelling even to catch a glimpse of this product of human arrogance. The divine monologue in vv. 6–7 is similar to that in 3:22; this time the divine response is the confusion of language and the dispersal of the builders. Although the universal extent of sin seems to call for a judgment as inclusive in its extent, Yahweh is faithful to his promise (8:21–22); the tower of Babel episode is followed not by a cataclysmic devastation, but by the call of Abram, whose migration from Mesopotamia to Canaan is part of the great dispersal that follows Babel.

Gen. 11:1–9 shows some ambivalence about the works and achievements of civilization, a motif already evident in 4:17, where Cain is identified as the first city builder. The "achievement" of the city builders of Genesis 11 is alienation, inability to communicate, and dispersal. Given the context of J, perhaps we can see here an ambivalence toward Solomon's construction of the Temple, an ambivalence evident in the prophetic critique of Temple and Temple service. Such a reading of Genesis 11 would balance the critique of the royal theology of the divine king that

some have seen at the beginning of the J material in chaps. 2–3.

11:10–32, From Shem to Abraham. The prehistory concludes with a ten-generation genealogy (like that in 5:1–32, which it continues) that traces the line of descent from Shem to Abram and his two brothers, Nahor and Haran. Nahor's twelve sons are listed in 22:20–24. Haran's son Lot will figure in several episodes in the Abraham cycle. The fact that several of the personal names in the Shem genealogy, including Nahor and Haran, are also place names of cities in Mesopotamia has been understood to support the Mesopotamian origins of the patriarchs (→ Haran; Nahor).

12:1–25:18
The Abraham Cycle

The Abraham stories are linked to Genesis 1–11 by the genealogy in chap. 11, which traces the line of descent from Shem to Abraham. The genealogies in Genesis 5, 10, and 11 have progressively narrowed the focus from Adam to Noah to Shem and finally to Abraham.

Genesis 2–11 vividly portrayed humanity under the curse (3:14, 17; 4:11; 5:29). Genesis 12 begins the narrative of humanity blessed, in the family of Abraham. If the blessing of Abraham is a centripetal force, promising the patriarch a son and descendants who will be the source of blessing for all humanity, there is also a centrifugal force at work: strife and deception in the family of Abraham. Deception on the part of Abraham endangers the matriarch and therefore the divine promise; family conflict breaks out between Abraham's wives, Sarah and Hagar, and their respective sons. Stories of strife and deception continue in the Jacob-Esau and the Jacob-Laban stories, finally escalating to the disintegration of a family in the Joseph narrative. Yet through all this divine grace is at work, tending toward the reconciliation with which Genesis ends.

12:1–20
The Call of Abraham and His Response

12:1–3, The Call of the Patriarch. The call of Abram begins a new history of blessing, which is passed on in each instance to the chosen successor (18:18; 22:15–18; 26:2–4; 28:14). The call of Abram is linked to the last narrative of the prehistory by catchwords: the settlers in the valley of Shinar propose to build a city, to make a name for themselves, and to avoid being dispersed. The human effort to secure community and renown is judged by God as human hubris. But the pattern of God's judgment mitigated by his grace in the J narratives of Genesis 2–11 continues, reaching a climax in the call of Abram, who is promised a great nation and a great name as the source of blessing for all humanity. What human beings failed to achieve by their own efforts comes to the family of Abram and through that family to all humanity as divine gift. Not only do the promised blessings conferred on Abram recall the Tower of Babel narrative. Yahweh's promised gifts of land, progeny, and earthly prosperity in 12:1–3 are a reversal of the curses in Eden (3:16–19) of a hostile earth, pain in human generativity, and endless human toil (→ Patriarch).

The opening of the Abraham cycle (vv. 1–3) is programmatic for the whole J narrative: association with the ancestors will bring blessing to humanity (30:27; 39:5; 50:20); separation from the blessed family results in curse (13:1–13; 19; 21). The Deuteronomist understands the promises to Abraham to be fulfilled in the success of David, to whom Yahweh gives a great name, a land, and an heir (2 Sam. 7:9–12).

12:4–9, The Patriarch's Response. Abram is directed by Yahweh to leave the security of his past ("your land, your kin, and the house of your father") to become a great nation. Obvious obstacles standing in the way of the promise are the barrenness of Sarai (11:30), complicated by the advanced age of the husband and wife (12:4), and the fact that the promised land is already occupied and inhabited (12:6; 13:7). Abram responds to the divine command by migrating to Canaan, which is identified as the land of promise (12:7) in a theophany (a visible manifestation of God) and a reaffirmation of the promise of land. Closing the section is Abram's construction of an altar on a site made holy by a theophany and his invocation of the name of Yahweh (13:4, 18; 22:9).

12:10–20, The Promise Endangered. In this episode, Abram's conduct threatens the promises of land and descendants. Directed by Yahweh to the land of Canaan, Abram nevertheless leaves Canaan because of famine and travels to Egypt. Having put into question his relationship to the promised land, Abram adds the additional complication of a deception that threatens to undo the promise of a child born of Sarai. Fearing that Sarai's beauty will lead to her husband's murder by those who would possess her, Abram directs Sarai to claim that she is his sister rather than his wife. This is the first of three versions of the endangering of the ancestress (20; 26:1–11). It can also profitably be compared to the story of David's adultery with Bathsheba in 2 Samuel 11–12 and the story of Ahab's seizure of Naboth's vineyard in 1 Kings 21. All these narratives deal with royal desire (for Sarai, for Bathsheba, for a vineyard) and its fulfillment through violence (Abram in Gen. 12:12 is afraid that he will be murdered; Uriah and Naboth are actually murdered).

The story contains several ironic notes. Abram,

who is to be the source of blessing, becomes instead the occasion of danger and curse to Sarai and to the pharaoh; also ironic is the list of the wealth Abram acquires in Egypt, since it does not include his wife, described by J as an essential element of a man's life (2:23–24).

Two final observations on 12:1–20 are in order. First, in this narrative Abram experiences in advance what his descendants will later undergo: descent into Egypt because of famine, involvement with the pharaoh, enrichment in Egypt, plagues, and release. Both stories involve a deception as well, the identification of Sarai as Abram's sister, and the request to celebrate a feast in the desert (Exod. 5:1–3). This same motif of the anticipation of the Exodus occurs in the Hagar stories in Genesis 16 and 21. Second, a noteworthy subtheme in the narrative is the contrast of Abram's plan with Yahweh's plan, a motif found prominently in the Joseph story (45:5–8; 50:20) and in wisdom literature (Prov. 16:9; 19:21).

13:1–14:24
Abraham the Shepherd and Sheik

13:1–18, Abram and Lot. Genesis 13 is the first of several narratives involving Abraham's nephew Lot. His birth was reported in 11:27, and his association with Abram was noted in 11:31 and 12:4–5. Genesis 13 describes the prosperity of Lot resulting from this association with the blessed family of Abram (13:1, 5). The family, however, is divided by conflict, and the strife leads to separation (v. 11). For Lot, separation from Abram means separation from the blessing. Abram ends the strife by inviting Lot to take what land he wishes. Lot chooses the well-watered Jordan plain, but his choice is not without a dark side. The narrator describes Lot's chosen territory as "like Yahweh's garden" (the site of the primal sin and the divine curse), as "like Egypt" (the place of oppression, as 15:13 indicates), and as including the doomed cities Sodom and Gomorrah (vv. 10–13).

The story builds a striking contrast between Abram and Lot. To Abram Yahweh gives the land "forever" (v. 15), while Lot (v. 11) takes for himself land that is soon to be destroyed (chap. 19). Abram responds to the divine gift by building an altar at Hebron (v. 18), while Lot settles near Sodom (v. 12). Abram, the tent dweller, invokes Yahweh by name, while Lot, the city dweller, associates with the inhabitants of Sodom, who are "evil and very sinful against Yahweh" (v. 13). The separation of Lot from Abram involves separation from the source of blessing to a place under the curse. The stories about Lot will continue in chaps. 14 and 19.

14:1–24, Abram's Rescue of Lot and His Tithe to Melchizedek. Genesis 14 is composed of annalistic material (battle reports) and a hero story celebrating the military exploits of Abram. Its closest parallel is 1 Samuel 30, David's campaign against the Amalekites. The description of Abram as a "Hebrew" (14:13) is unparalleled, as is his presentation as a sheik who can call up a large contingent of 318 servants and retainers.

The story begins with an account of a rebellion by vassals of Chedorlaomer, king of Elam; among the rebellious vassals are the kings of Sodom and Gomorrah. The victory of Chedorlaomer and his allies over a pentapolis including Sodom involves Abram, because his kinsman Lot has been taken with all his possessions as spoils of the victor. (The reference to Lot was the occasion for the placing of this story in its present context, after Gen. 13.)

On his return after his rescue of Lot, Abram is met by Melchizedek, king of Salem (Jerusalem; Ps. 76:2) and priest of God Most High (Heb. *'el 'elyon;* for the identification of this god with Yahweh, cf. Pss. 47:2; 57:2; 78:35, 56). In his ceremonious greeting of a hero returning from his victory (cf. 1 Sam. 18:6), Melchizedek (who appears only here, in Ps. 110:4, and in the NT in Heb. 5–7) blesses Abram, who responds to the blessing with a tithe. The point of the story may be the legitimation of the sacral status of Jerusalem as far back as the ancestor Abram (cf. a similar concern in 2 Chron. 3:1). The effect of Lot's separation from Abram in Genesis 13 is seen in Lot's loss of his freedom and his wealth (gained through his association with Abram) as spoils to the victorious kings (14:11–12). Lot recovers his freedom and his goods when, in vv. 13–16, he is reconnected with Abram (→ El; Hebrews).

15:1–17:27
The Covenant with Abraham and the Birth of Ishmael

15:1–21, The Covenant with Abram. The major concern of the divine speech in Genesis 15 is the promise to Abram of progeny and land. The chapter falls naturally into two parts (vv. 1–6 and 7–21), each with the same basic structure: an initial self-identification by the deity (vv. 1, 7); Abram's response, a complaint (v. 3) or a question (v. 8); Yahweh's reiteration of the promise of an heir and numerous descendants (vv. 4–5) or of land (vv. 7, 18–21). In the first part, the expression "The word of Yahweh came to Abram," which occurs twice (vv. 1, 4), is a stereotypical prophetic formula (Jer. 1:2; Hos. 1:1; Mic. 1:1). This formula and the communication to Abram in a vision (15:1) or a dream (v. 12) have suggested to some that we meet in Genesis 15 the first appearance of E material in the Pentateuch.

The second divine speech can be further subdivided into three sections: vv. 7–12, 13–16, and 17–21. The middle section, in which Yahweh speaks of the coming Egyptian oppression and the Exodus, interrupts the preparation for the ritual act in vv. 9–12 and its execution in v. 17. The passage of the symbols of the deity be-

tween the parts of the sacrifice is an enacted ritual of self-cursing in which the one passing through the pieces of the slaughtered animals calls upon himself the same fate for not adhering to the pledge.

This ritual, described as a covenant (v. 18), is of the "royal grant" type, in which a king rewards a servant or vassal for past loyalty and faithful service and in which the obligations of the covenant do not fall upon the inferior party, but are self-imposed by the king. Since such royal grants often involved grants of land, boundaries had to be precisely and exactly drawn, as in v. 18. The boundaries of v. 18 are the ideal limits of the Davidic-Solomonic state in the tenth century B.C. (→ Covenant).

The similarity of the patriarchal covenant to the royal covenant (2 Sam. 7:11–16; Ps. 89:19–37) has often been noted. It has been suggested that the old tradition of a covenant with Abraham was reshaped by contact with the royal theology and ideology of the ancient Near East, in its Israelite version. Such a covenant with Abraham, with royal features highlighted and perhaps retrojected (read back into the distant past), would supply a welcome and needed precedent for the innovation of royal ideology in Israel.

16:1–16, The Birth of Ishmael. The divine promise of progeny to Abram in Genesis 15 is followed in chap. 16 by the birth of his son Ishmael, as the result of Sarai's initiative and impatience. Verse 1 introduces the two principals in the story, the barren Sarai and her slave Hagar, who is given to Abram as a secondary wife and whose child will be considered legally the offspring of Sarai (vv. 2–3). Such substitute childbearing, reflected also in 30:1–13, was apparently an accepted social institution in the ancient Near East. Verses 4–5 introduce the motif of familial discord between the childless Sarai and the pregnant Hagar (cf. 1 Sam. 1:4–6) and between Sarai and Abram. This theme of familial strife occurs throughout Genesis, between spouses (3:12; 30:1–2), between brothers (4:1–16, 27; 37), and between kin (chaps. 29–31). Sarai's abuse of Hagar (16:6) provokes the slave's flight, until she is commanded to return by a theophany in which the angel of Yahweh directs her to submit to her mistress's abuse (v. 9), with the assurance that "Yahweh has heard your [complaint of] abuse" (v. 11).

This discord between Sarai and Hagar takes up the language of the promise to Abram that "those who curse you [Heb. *qillel*] I will curse" (12:3). Because in 16:4–5 Sarai was treated with disdain by the pregnant Hagar (lit., Sarai was "cursed" *[qillel]* in Hagar's eyes), Hagar and her family will be separated, like Lot (chap. 13), from Abram and the blessing (16:6–8; 21:14–21).

The angelic annunciation of the birth of a son to Hagar in vv. 7–13 follows a standard biblical pattern that usually includes the following: first, the appearance of an angel of the Lord (Gen. 16:7; 18:2; Judg. 13:3; Matt. 1:20; Luke 1:11, 26) or of Yahweh himself (Gen. 16:13; 17:1); second, fear or prostration of the visionary (Gen. 17:3; Judg. 13:22; Luke 1:12, 29); third, the angelic promise to the visionary of the birth of a son (Gen. 16:11; 17:19; 18:10; Judg. 13:3–5; Matt. 1:20–21; Luke 1:13, 31); fourth, the name of the child, sometimes with an etymology (Gen. 16:11; 17:17–19; Matt. 1:21; Luke 1:31); fifth, the future achievements of the child (Gen. 16:12; 17:16, 19; Judg. 13:5; Matt. 1:21; Luke 1:15–17, 32–33, 35); and sixth, objection or question of the visionary (Gen. 17:17; 18:12; Judg. 13:8, 17; Luke 1:18, 34). Often the objection or question is concerned with the obstacles (barrenness, advanced age, virginity) seemingly in the way of the accomplishment of the divine purpose.

Another noteworthy element in the annunciation of the birth of Ishmael is the striking similarity of 16:11 to Deut. 26:6–7 ("Since the Egyptians mistreated and *abused* us, we cried out to Yahweh, the God of our ancestors; *Yahweh heard* our voice, and he saw *our abuse*"). The "abuse" that is mentioned twice in the Deuteronomy passage and three times in Genesis 16 (vv. 6, 9, 11) occurs as well in Gen. 15:13, in the prediction of Israel's oppression by Egypt. In an ironic twist, it is Hagar the Egyptian who, in Genesis 16, endures slavery and abuse by Sarai. This link with the Exodus story is further underlined by Hagar's flight to the wilderness (Gen. 16:6–7; Exod. 14:3, 5) and her encounter there with an angel of the Lord (Gen. 16:7; Exod. 2:15–3:2; 14:19). In both cases (Sarai's mistreatment of the Egyptian slave Hagar and the oppression of the descendants of Sarai by Hagar's compatriots), a cry for help is answered by a compassionate God (Exod. 3:7–8).

17:1–27, The Covenant with Abraham. Genesis 17 is the P version of God's covenant with the patriarch, involving promises of a son and of the eternal possession of the land of Canaan. Like its parallel in chap. 15, it begins with a theophany; the deity's self-identification here is El Shaddai (traditionally rendered "God the Almighty"); its probable original meaning is "God, the One of the mountain," an epithet that recalls the standard association of gods with their mountain abodes, like Baal's Mount Zaphon and Yahweh's Sinai and Zion (→ Mount, Mountain). This pre-Mosaic designation of God in P (Exod. 6:2–3) is followed by a divine command ("Walk before me and be perfect"; cf. Gen. 24:40; 48:15) that is similar to the command given to Solomon (1 Kings 3:6; 9:4) and to the appeal of Hezekiah (2 Kings 20:3). Such royal language is appropriate for the patriarch who will be the father of kings (Gen. 17:6, 16).

The name changes of the ancestors to Abraham and Sarah (17:5, 15) imply both the authority of the giver of the new name (cf. 3:20) and the new destiny or mission indicated by the new name (cf. 32:29; Mark 3:16).

The designation of the covenant with Abraham as "eternal" recalls P's "eternal covenant" with Noah in 9:1–17 and asserts the covenant's unconditional character and permanent validity. Similarly, the ritual institution of circumcision as a sign of the covenant recalls the divine institution of the Sabbath at the creation (2:3) and the Noachian prohibition against eating meat with the blood still in it (9:4). Note, too, that circumcision as the eternal *sign* of the covenant recalls the role of the rainbow in the story of Noah (9:12–16) and of the Sabbath in the revelation to Moses (Exod. 31:12–17).

Although Ishmael will be the progenitor of a great people (16:10; 17:20), God declares that the child of the promise will be born of the aged matriarch Sarah. Abraham's laughter (Heb. *yitzchaq* in v. 17), provoked by this divine declaration, provides an etymology for the name Isaac (v. 21).

18:1–19:38
The Fate of Sodom and Gomorrah

18:1–15, Abraham's Hospitality. Abraham is repeatedly characterized (vv. 2, 6, 9, 10) as a nomadic tent dweller, in tacit contrast to the urbanite Lot of Genesis 19. When three unexpected travelers arrive at his tent at midday, Abraham's hospitable invitation and solicitude are described in some detail (cf. 1 Sam. 28:24–25). He runs to greet his unexpected guests, then hurries off to instruct Sarah to prepare bread for a meal, runs again to choose an animal for the feast, and serves them (v. 8, lit., "stands before them") himself (→ Hospitality).

The accompaniment of a major deity by two attendants, a common feature in Canaanite polytheism, is reflected here in Yahweh and his two companions; cf. a demythologized form of this in Pss. 23:6 (Yahweh's "goodness and kindness"); 43:3; and 97:2.

The point of this first scene in the chapter is the announcement by Yahweh of the birth of a son to Abraham and Sarah, despite her barrenness and their advanced age. Sarah's incredulous laughter at this announcement (Heb. *titzchaq*) parallels Abraham's laughter in 17:17; however, Sarah's laughter, unlike that of Abraham, is judged negatively by Yahweh as revealing a lack of trust in the divine word.

18:16–33, Abraham's Intercession and Yahweh's Justice. With the typical politeness of a good host, Abraham intends to accompany his guests for part of their journey as they continue on toward Sodom. In an interior monologue (vv. 17–19), Yahweh considers revealing his intentions to Abraham (cf. Amos 3:7). In the present Hebrew text, Abraham's dialogue with Yahweh begins with the statement that he is in attendance upon (v. 22, lit., "standing before," as in v. 8) Yahweh. This is one of the rare scribal adjustments of the text, which originally pictured Yahweh as "standing before" Abraham; it is not the anthropomorphism of the text that provoked the change, but the description (inappropriate to the scribes) of Yahweh standing in attendance before the patriarch. The description of Abraham in attendance upon Yahweh in 18:8 may have suggested the change of the text here.

While the two attendants make their way to the doomed city, Abraham intercedes for Sodom, raising the possibility of the influence of a righteous few on an evil majority. The same issue is raised in Jer. 5:1, where the presence of only one righteous person could save Jerusalem, and in Ezek. 14:12–20, where the righteous will save only themselves. Also indicating the likely late origin of this passage are the echoes of Job in Abraham's intercession: mere dust and ashes (Gen. 18:27; Job 30:19; 42:6), Abraham presumes to question the deity (Gen. 18:24–25; Job 9:12) about divine justice (Gen. 18:25; Job 9:22). The connections of Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and Job with Abraham's intercession have suggested to some commentators that Gen. 18:22–33 is a late addition to the text provoked by the religious crisis of the Exile of the sixth century B.C. and the questions about God's justice it raised. The prophetic denunciations of Jerusalem as Sodom (Isa. 3:9; Jer. 23:14; Ezek. 16:46–56) may give some credence to this view (→ Exile).

In his intercession for Sodom, Abraham assumes the function of a prophet (1 Sam. 7:5; 12:19, 23; Jer. 7:16; 11:14; 37:3; 42:2, 4, 20). And Abraham will be explicitly identified as a prophet in 20:7, where he is also involved in intercession. Closely related to 18:22–33 is Amos 7:1–6. Not only does this prophetic intercession take the form of a dialogue between Yahweh and the prophet, but one of the punishments averted by Amos is a rain of fire (cf. Gen. 19:24).

19:1–29, The Rescue of Lot from Sodom. Genesis 19 takes up the story of Lot, who last appeared in chaps. 13–14. The account of Lot's hospitality to the two angels who traveled on to Sodom (19:1–3) is an abbreviated parallel to 18:1–8, but with several revealing differences. Abraham the tent dweller provides refreshment characteristic of a pastoral nomad: cream and curds (18:8; cf. Isa. 7:21–22) and a choice steer. Lot is a city dweller who lives in a house in Sodom and meets the two strangers who arrive in the evening at the city gate. Abraham runs to greet the travelers and serves them himself; Lot stands and bows in greeting. In place of bread made from about a bushel of the finest flour (18:6), Lot offers unleavened bread to his guests. Such differences may serve to contrast Lot's entertainment of the guests with the greater generosity of Abraham.

The meal is soon interrupted by the inhabitants of Sodom, who surround Lot's house and demand that he bring out his guests for sexual abuse. Lot's responsi-

bility as host leads him to offer his two daughters to the mob, until he is rescued from their violence by the angelic visitors. There is an effective contrast between the hospitality of Lot, who "pressed" the visitors to stay with him, and the inhospitality of the townspeople who "pressed" against Lot in their attempt to break into his house.

There is a close parallel to 19:1–11 in Judg. 19:10–30. In both stories, there is a strong contrast between hospitality and the brutality of a violent sexual attack. In Judges 19, the men of Gibeah demand that the guest be brought out for sexual abuse. Instead, the host offers his daughter, or the concubine of his guest, who is put out and abused throughout the night and is found dead at the door the next morning. Homosexual acts, which threaten proper family relationships and boundaries (Lev. 18:22; 20:13; 1 Cor. 6:9–10; Rom. 1:26–27), run counter to the divine command to procreate (Gen. 1:28; 9:1, 7), a command that is part of the order of creation (→ Homosexuality).

The danger to Lot's guests is averted when they afflict the inhabitants of Sodom with temporary blindness (cf. 2 Kings 6:18). After the angels order Lot to leave Sodom, he informs his sons-in-law, who treat his warning like a joke; their laughter (19:14) reminds readers of Sarah's laughter at the promise of one of the angelic visitors that she would bear a child (18:12–15; this catchword also looks forward to 21:6). A second time the angels order departure and Lot again hesitates, irresolute, until the angels take Lot, his wife, and his daughters by the hand and lead them like children out of the city.

Outside the doomed city, when the angels direct Lot to flee with his family to the hill country, he asks to go to Zoar instead (19:20–23). In v. 30, he will change his mind and go to the hill country, one more indication of his confusion. When Lot's wife mirrors his irresolution and violates the prohibition of looking back (v. 17), she is turned into a pillar of salt (v. 26). One is reminded of the laughter of Abraham and Sarah in Genesis 17–18. Abraham's laughter at the promise of a child in 17:17 is passed over without comment; Sarah's similarly provoked laughter (18:12) is judged to be an indication of a lack of faith. The summarizing conclusion of the story notes that "God remembered Abraham" and thus saved Lot, in a reminiscence of the high point of the Flood story in 8:1 ("God remembered Noah").

19:30–38, Lot's Daughters. Lot's passivity is underscored by the concluding episode in chap. 19. Since their husbands perished in the destruction of Sodom, the daughters of Lot fulfill their desire for offspring by incest with their father, another offense against the proper use of sexuality. Lot, who volunteered his daughters for sexual abuse by the men of Sodom, is plied with wine and becomes a passive object in incestuous relations with his daughters, who give birth to Moab and Ammon. There are two more indications of Lot's passivity in the story. First, the Hebrew verb used in the episode for sexual relations, *shakab* ("lie [with]"), generally has a masculine subject and a feminine object (as in 26:10; 30:15, 16; 34:2, 7; 35:22; 39:7, 12, 14). In the story of Lot and his daughters, the sexual stereotype of a patriarchal culture is reversed when the five uses of *shakab* have Lot's daughters as subject and their inebriated father as object. Second, it is noteworthy that the sons are named not by Lot, but by his daughters (cf. 21:3).

Mention was made above of the connection of 6:1–4, the initial scene of the Flood story, to 19:4–11 and of the P conclusion of the destruction of Sodom in 19:29 to the climax of the Flood story in 8:1. The episode in 19:30–38 is similarly related to the closing scene of the Flood story in 9:18–24, which also involves the violation of some sexual taboo by one of Noah's sons when Noah was overcome with wine. Given these links, it is not surprising that the two NT references to Lot connect him with Noah (Luke 17:26–29; 2 Pet. 2:5–7).

20:1–22:24
Danger to Abraham's Family

Each of the three stories in this cycle displays the same structure: God instructs Abraham to initiate a course of action that will involve mortal danger to another family member (20:13; 21:12; 22:2); the patriarch obeys (20:1–2; 21:14; 22:3); the threatening situation is about to be realized (20:2, 18; 21:16; 22:9–10); and God intervenes to prevent the expected outcome (20:6–7, 17; 21:19–20; 22:11–13). Source criticism generally relates these three stories to the Elohist tradition.

20:1–18, Abraham and Sarah in Gerar. The first of these narratives is the E version of the wife-sister deception story that first appeared in 12:10–20. In E, Abraham and Sarah journey to the Negeb and settle in Gerar. The sexual relations between the pharaoh and Sarah implied in chap. 12 are prevented here by a divine warning to Abimelech in a dream. Characteristics of the E source besides the divine name Elohim (Heb.) include the motif of the fear of God (20:8, 11), Abraham's prophetic intercession for the monarch (vv. 7, 17), and the justification of the patriarch's claim that Sarah is his sister (v. 12). The story ends with the enriching of Abraham (20:14; cf. 12:16) and the restoration of health and fertility to Abimelech's house as a prelude to the pregnancy of Sarah (21:1–2). (For wealth and progeny as a sign of divine favor, see also 24:35–36.)

As the J version of the story in Genesis 12 included Abraham's proleptic experience of the Torah story of Egyptian oppression and liberation, so the E version

focuses its attention on Abraham as a prophetic figure (cf. "the law and the prophets" in Mal. 4:4–5; Matt. 22:40; Luke 24:27).

The story reveals an openness to non-Israelites. It is Abimelech, the righteous Gentile, who displays proper fear of God and receives a divine communication, while Abraham underestimates the extent of God's influence and power.

21:1–34, The Birth of Isaac and the Expulsion of Hagar. In the present form of the tradition, Isaac serves chiefly as a link between the larger Abraham and Jacob cycles; the Isaac material is limited to the account of his birth (chap. 21), his sacrifice (22), his marriage (24), his trip to Gerar (26), and his blessing of Jacob (27).

The story of the birth of Isaac (21:1–8) repeats the motif of Sarah's laughter (v. 6) from 18:12; here it is an expression of joy at the birth of her son, not an indication of a lack of faith. Gen. 21:9 reintroduces Hagar the Egyptian and her son Ishmael (chap. 16) and the recurring theme of family discord. In 21:3, Abraham names his son by Sarah Isaac (Heb. *yitzchaq*). What Ishmael is doing in the Hebrew text of v. 9 is described as *metzacheq*, a verbal form derived from the same root as the name Isaac. Modern translations favor the interpretation "playing" for the verb, with the addition of "with her son Isaac" (which is not in the Hebrew) from the Septuagint (LXX). Perhaps the most economical and reasonable solution is to understand the LXX addition as interpretive and to translate the Hebrew in v. 9 thus: "Sarah saw Hagar the Egyptian's son, whom she had borne to Abraham, 'Isaacing' [i.e., taking the place of Sarah's son, Isaac]." An angry Sarah orders Abraham to expel Hagar and the pretender to Isaac's rights. Sarah's demand is confirmed by a divine oracle (vv. 12–13), and so Abraham proceeds. His feelings are hinted at delicately in his solicitude for Hagar and Ishmael (v. 14). The imminent death of the child Ishmael in the wilderness to which Hagar has gone is averted by the angel of God (as will be the imminent death of Isaac in the next chapter). The angel repeats the divine declaration (21:13) that Ishmael will be the progenitor of a great nation (16:10). There is a subtle contrast between 21:12, where God instructs Abraham to "hear the voice" of ("obey") Sarah in her lack of compassion, and v. 17, where God twice "heard the voice of the youth" because of his compassion. This play reminds readers of the etymology of the name Ishmael ("May God hear") in 16:11.

As in Genesis 20, we meet the theme of the righteous Gentile in Hagar, who, like Abimelech the God-fearer, is given a message from God and whose child was saved by divine intervention.

Like Genesis 16, this chapter contains echoes of the Exodus story. When Sarah demands that Abraham "drive out" (v. 10) Hagar and her son, he "sends them away" (v. 14) to wander in the wilderness. Similarly, Moses asks Pharaoh to "send my people away" (Exod. 5:1), and so the people are "driven out" of Egypt (Exod. 6:1; 11:1).

The chapter concludes with a pact between Abimelech and Abraham (21:22–34) to settle a dispute over water rights (cf. 13:6–7; 26:15–22).

22:1–24, Abraham's Sacrifice of Isaac. In 12:1–3, Abraham was called by God to relinquish his past for the promise that he would be the father of a great nation. In the divine command to sacrifice Isaac in chap. 22, Abraham is directed to give up the future and the promise as well. Since the style of this magnificently told story is spare and compressed, any apparent prolixity is meant to catch readers' attention. For instance, v. 2 emphasizes the enormity of what Abraham is asked by the piling up of synonyms: "Take your son, your only one, the one you love, Isaac." In wordless obedience Abraham journeys with his son and two attendants to Moriah. In v. 5, when he tells the attendants that "I and the boy . . . will return," he unconsciously prepares for the unexpected conclusion of this dark story. In vv. 7–8, the poignancy of the story is highlighted by the dialogue between Abraham and Isaac, in which "father" and "son" are each used twice. The movement slows in vv. 9–10, as each act in preparation for the sacrifice is carefully described. The tension is finally resolved by a divine intervention in vv. 11–12, and Abraham's loyal obedience is rewarded with a repetition of the promise (vv. 17–18).

Appended to the story of the binding of Isaac is 22:20–24, a list of the twelve sons of Abraham's brother Nahor. One of these sons is Bethuel, the father of Rebekah, who will become Isaac's wife in chap. 24.

Examined form-critically, this narrative of Abraham's fidelity shows evidence of earlier stages and concerns. Verses 1–14 probably explain the origin of the form of worship of a particular sanctuary; they legitimate the substitution of an animal for child sacrifice. For the practice of child sacrifice, cf. 2 Kings 3:27; Jer. 7:31; Ezek. 16:20; for its prohibition, Exod. 13:15; Deut. 12:29–31; 18:9–12.

Genesis 21 and 22 are linked both by theme and by key word repetition. In chap. 21, Ishmael's expulsion, demanded by Sarah and approved by God, is carried out by Abraham, although it means the death of the child who was legally Sarah's. In chap. 22, Isaac, born to Sarah after long infertility, now is taken from her by Abraham's obedience to God's command for his apparent death. Both Ishmael and Isaac are exposed to death by the patriarch's obedience to God. A key word link can be seen in 21:14, where Abraham places (Heb. *sam*) bread and water on Hagar's back, and in 22:6, where Abraham places (*yasem*) the wood for the holocaust upon Isaac.

23:1–25:18
From the Death of Sarah to Abraham's Death

23:1–20, Abraham's Purchase of Land in Canaan. The purchase of a family burial plot occasioned by the death of Sarah is the subject of this P story. The transaction between Abraham and Ephron the Hittite seems to involve both Oriental politeness and ancient Near Eastern property law. Ephron's insistence that he sell to Abraham both the cave of Machpelah and the field where it is located may reflect the attachment of certain feudal duties to the field, which Ephron would be glad to pass on to Abraham. In the present context, the story foreshadows the eventual possession of the land of Canaan by Abraham's descendants, as does Jacob's purchase of land in 33:19. Abraham's death and burial here is recorded in 25:8–10. The burial of Isaac, Rebekah, Jacob, and Leah there is noted in 49:29–31 (→ Hittites; Machpelah).

24:1–67, The Wooing of Rebekah. The story of the mission of Abraham's steward to seek a wife for Isaac among Abraham's kindred in Mesopotamia is told twice, first in Abraham's instructions to his servant, followed by the narration in vv. 1–27 of the servant's arrival, and then in the servant's retelling of the story to Rebekah and her family in vv. 34–49. The meeting at a well in vv. 11–27 that leads to a marriage is a stock scene that appears also in Genesis 29, Exodus 2, and John 4.

The account of the wooing of Rebekah is fashioned by J upon the model of the call of Abraham. In 24:1, 35–36 we learn that, in accord with his promise in 12:2, Yahweh has blessed Abraham with long years, great wealth, and a son. The verb "bless" is a key word in this chapter, occurring in vv. 1, 27, 31, 35, 48, and 60. God's command "Go!" to the patriarch in 12:1 is complemented by Rebekah's "I will go" in 24:58 (and her family's "she will go" in v. 55). In 12:1, Yahweh commands Abraham to leave "your land and your kinsfolk and the house of your father." In chap. 24, the same expression occurs in whole or in part in vv. 4, 7, 38, and 40. Yahweh's promise to Abraham in 12:2 ("I will make your name great") is repeated in his servant's words in v. 35 ("Yahweh has blessed my master exceedingly and he has become great").

The echoes of Genesis 12 in this chapter make the point that Rebekah is an essential link in the transmission of the divine promise and is thus called by Yahweh, as Abraham was, to her matriarchal role. The climax of the account is Rebekah's one-word answer in v. 58, *'elek* (Heb., "I will go"). The parallelism of 12:1, where Abram goes *from* his land, family, and father's house, with 24:4, 38, where he sends his steward *back to* his land, kin, and father's house, forms a frame around the Abraham cycle of narratives.

The final element worthy of note is the comparison of Hagar in chap. 21, who, in departing from Abraham, moves away from the source of blessing, and Rebekah in chap. 24, who, in agreeing to the marriage with Isaac, moves toward the blessing and becomes a member of the blessed family.

25:1–18, The Death of Abraham. Gen. 25:1–18 recounts Abraham's marriage to Keturah after Sarah's death and a genealogy of their progeny. This is followed by a report of the patriarch's death and burial in the cave of Machpelah. The special status of Isaac is underlined in several ways in this material. Before his death, "Abraham gave everything that belonged to him to Isaac" while he gave "gifts" to the children of Keturah (vv. 5–6). As in the case of Hagar (21:14), Abraham sends these children away from Isaac (and thus from the blessing that he is to carry). After Abraham's death he is buried by his sons Isaac and Ishmael, a report followed by the statement that "God blessed [Abraham's] son Isaac" (25:11). The section concludes with a genealogy of the twelve sons of Ishmael and their father's death report. Thus, this chapter is structured with Isaac, his father's heir and blessed by God, in the middle with other children of Abraham ranged on either side (the sons of Keturah before and the sons of Ishmael after). The literary shape reflects the theological point that Isaac and his descendants bear a special status and a special destiny.

25:19–36:43
The Jacob Cycle

The chief themes of the Jacob material are announced in the account of the birth and youth of Jacob and Esau (25:19–34). As in the narratives about Abraham and his family, competition and family strife are the hallmarks of these stories: discord between the brothers Jacob and Esau that begins even before their birth and parental discord revealed in the love of Isaac for the elder Esau and of Rebekah for Jacob (25:28). After Jacob's departure from his murderously angry brother and his arrival in Mesopotamia, strife soon arises between Jacob and his kinsman Laban and between the wives of Jacob, the unloved Leah and the barren Rachel.

Another important theme of both the Abraham cycle and the Jacob material is deception: the deception of Isaac by Rebekah and Jacob, of Jacob by Laban, and finally of Laban by Jacob and Rachel. The theme of deception will continue powerfully and dramatically in the Joseph narrative as well. Its appearance throughout Genesis, from the deception of the woman in chap. 3 to the final deception of Joseph by his brothers in 50:15–17, shows it to be a major theme in the book.

The Jacob material can be approached in several

ways. A traditional method has been source criticism, whereby the discrete elements of the composite narrative are distinguished and studied separately. J, E, and P are all present in the Jacob cycle of stories. For J, Jacob is a picaresque figure, a calculating deceiver and yet by divine choice the bearer of the blessing for his family and for those who come in connection with him. The character of Jacob undergoes a decisive and fundamental change in his contest with the deity at Jabbok (32:23–32). In E, Jacob gains his brother's birthright not by deception, but by Esau's exchange of it for food; Esau thus proves himself unworthy of the birthright that passes to Jacob. In the Elohist's view, Jacob's decisive encounter with God takes place at Bethel (chap. 28, of which vv. 11b–12, 17–18, 20–21a, and 22 are commonly assigned to E). In P, the encounter of Jacob at Bethel is recounted in 35:9–13.

Although source criticism has afforded major advances in the study of a book like Genesis, there are problems associated with it. First of all, such neat and clear division of the material into its sources is not always possible. More recent study has understood the material not as the editorial compilation of sources, but as a corpus of material whose growth and development are more appropriately studied by tradition history. Further, it is debatable whether the fragmentary E material and the minimal P contribution offer any clear picture of Jacob independent of the Yahwist's presentation. Finally, such source criticism does not always pay enough attention to the unity into which the disparate material has been welded. For instance, is it really possible to assign the birthright incident in chap. 25 to E and the gaining of the parental blessing by deception in chap. 27 to J? Significantly, Esau in 27:36 combines both events with a wordplay on "birthright" (Heb. *bekorah*) and "blessing" *(berakah)*. The study of Genesis as literature by contemporary literary critics and as Scripture by canonical critics has brought back into focus the importance of the finished product now in our hands. Although such perspectives do not cancel out the established gains of such historical-critical methods as source criticism, they do provide a salutary reminder that the final form of the text is the primary object of study and interpretation.

25:19–28:22
Jacob and Esau

25:19–34, The Birth and the Birthright. The story of the birth of Esau and Jacob begins with the motif of the matriarch's sterility (v. 21; cf. 11:30; 30:1), a motif that highlights Yahweh's accomplishment of his intent of numerous progeny from Abraham over apparently insuperable odds. The struggle of the twins even in Rebekah's womb provokes her to consult Yahweh, who announces the ultimate superiority of the younger brother (cf. 4:1–5; 37:5–11). The description in 25:25 of the firstborn Esau as "red" (Heb. *'admoni*) and "hairy" *(se'ar)* involves folk etymologies that indicate Esau's relationship to Edom (v. 30) and to Seir, a relationship spelled out in the genealogy of Esau in chap. 36 (→ Edom; Edomites). This punning is continued in Esau's description in v. 30 of the requested food as "red" *('adom)*.

The conflict motif, first evident in the womb of Rebekah, continues through the delivery of the twins, as the second child to be born is already attempting to gain an advantage over his brother by grasping his heel (v. 26). Conflict is also shown in the respective professions of the brothers (v. 27: Esau the hunter living in the wild, Jacob the tent-dwelling farmer) and in the opposing preferences of their parents (v. 28: Isaac's love for the firstborn Esau, Rebekah's love for Jacob).

The beginning of the fulfillment of the oracle proclaiming the divine choice of Jacob is recorded in the story of Esau's sale of his birthright to Jacob (vv. 27–34). The characters of the two brothers are well portrayed here—the impulsive Esau, thoughtless about the future in the face of present need, who sells his birthright to "stuff himself" (v. 30: the verb Esau uses means to stuff an animal with food), and the shrewd, calculating Jacob, leaving nothing to chance ("First sell . . . first swear" in vv. 31, 33). The concluding line in the birthright episode emphasizes Esau's carelessness in the assertion that "Esau despised [i.e., treated as worthless, contemptible] his birthright" (v. 34). In two other instances of the use of this verb, "despising Yahweh" (1 Sam. 2:30; 2 Sam. 12:9) brings upon the person guilty of this sin the divine curse. If that nuance is present here, there is a sharp contrast between Esau cursed and Jacob blessed.

26:1–11, Isaac, Rebekah, and Abimelech. This is the third version of the wife-sister story that has already appeared in chaps. 12 and 20. The inclusion of this version here refocuses attention on Isaac and Rebekah, the dominant actors in the following story of Isaac's blessing. The mention of a famine in 26:1 recalls the narrative in chap. 12; Abimelech, king of the Philistines in Gerar, recalls the E version in chap. 20. As in both previous tellings, a deception is involved in Isaac's statement that his wife Rebekah is his sister. The J account in 26:1–11, however, departs from the two previous versions in that the patriarch's wife is not taken into the harem of the foreign king, who accidentally discovers the deception by his own powers of observation (v. 8). When the three versions of this story are compared, one can see that 12:10–20 is a proleptic summary of the Torah story in which Abram departs from Canaan because of famine and goes to Egypt, where his family is oppressed by the pharaoh and liberated by a series of plagues. The second story in chap. 20 designates Abraham a prophet in his intercession for Abimelech; also characteristic of prophetic material is the divine communication to Abimelech (20:3).

Finally, 26:1–11 has a wisdom cast in that the means by which Abimelech uncovers the deception is not divine revelation (as in chaps. 12 and 20), but the use of his human powers of observation (→ Wisdom). The three accounts recall the division of the Jewish Scriptures into Torah, Prophets, and Writings (wherein is found the wisdom literature with its emphasis on human understanding and insight).

The theophany in 26:2–5 relates the transmission of the promise to Abraham of blessing, land, and numerous descendants (12:1–3; 15; 17; 22:17–18) to his son Isaac. The divine blessing of Isaac is mentioned as well in 26:12, 24, 29. The theophany introduces an important theme in Genesis: the divine presence abides with this patriarch (vv. 3, 24, 28) as it did with Abraham (21:22) and will with Jacob (28:15), Joseph (39:2, 21, 23), and Moses (Exod. 3:12). That elusive presence attains permanence in Israel when, under Moses' guidance at Sinai, Israel fulfills the divine command to "make me a sanctuary that I may dwell among them" (Exod. 25:8).

26:12–35, A Dispute over Water Rights. This story begins by noting Isaac's success and increasing wealth because of the divine blessing. The enriching of the patriarch in a foreign land was present in 12:16 and 20:14–16; one is reminded of the tradition of the "despoiling of the Egyptians" in Exod. 3:21; 11:2; 12:35–36; and Ps. 105:37. The related motif of the success of an Israelite in a foreign court is a major factor in the Joseph story and in two late OT works, Esther and Daniel.

This version of a dispute over water rights and its settlement by a pact between Isaac and Abimelech is a doublet of the account in 21:22–34, and it has connections with 13:5–7 as well; the departure of Isaac from Abimelech means the departure of the source of divine blessing for the Gentiles, which is association with a blessed descendant of Abraham (as in the Abram-Lot story in chap. 13). The covenant is concluded by a meal, as in 31:43–54 and Exod. 24:9–11 (→ Meals). Between the dispute and the pact is a second theophany to Isaac (26:24). It begins with "Fear not!" a stereotypical introduction to an appearance of the deity (cf. 15:1; 46:3), and repeats the assurance of divine presence, blessing, and numerous descendants. Like Abram in 12:8, Isaac responds by building an altar and calling upon the name of Yahweh.

27:1–46, The Deception of Isaac. In this account of Isaac's deception, the patriarch, characteristically passive (as he was in the accounts of his sacrifice in chap. 22 and of his marriage in chap. 24), is managed by his determined wife. When Rebekah overhears that Isaac intends to give his blessing to Esau (as Sarah overheard the heavenly visitor's promise of a child in 18:10), she quickly works out a plan to ensure that her beloved Jacob gains his father's blessing. The element of calculation in Jacob's character surfaces in his objection that, should the deception be discovered, he would receive not a blessing but a curse from his father (27:11–12). Rebekah's response ("On me be the curse, my son!") clears the way for Jacob to play a passive role like his father's in the deception.

Jacob's disguise involves his wearing his brother Esau's clothing; as will be seen, deception involving clothing is an important motif in the narrative about Jacob's beloved son Joseph (37:31–33). Twice Isaac asks whether it is truly his son Esau when Jacob presents himself dressed as his brother and with the food prepared for Isaac by Rebekah (27:18, 24), and twice Jacob answers affirmatively. When Isaac has conferred the blessing on Jacob, Esau appears; and Isaac's dialogue with his elder son (vv. 31–32) is an almost exact repetition of Isaac's dialogue with Jacob in vv. 18–19. There is one striking difference, however, between the two conversations of Jacob and of Esau with their father. In speaking to Jacob, Isaac calls him "my son" seven times (vv. 18, 20, 21 [twice], 24, 26, 27; also "his son" in v. 20), while only once (v. 37) does Isaac use "my son" to Esau, who speaks twice of himself as "your son" in vv. 31–32.

Isaac's blessing of Jacob involves fertility (vv. 27–28) and dominion (v. 29). The blessing of rain produces the abundance of grain and wine, two of the principal foodstuffs of the ancient Near East. The third of these basic foodstuffs, "oil of the earth," precedes the reference to grain and wine. The sequence of the fall rains followed by the grain harvest of the spring and the grape harvest of late summer (and the olive harvest of the fall) depicts a full agricultural year (cf. Deut. 11:14; 33:28; Joel 2:23–24; Ps. 104:13–15).

Isaac's blessing of Jacob includes dominion as well as fertility. In its emphasis on the superiority of the blessed son (27:29, 40), the blessing echoes the oracle Rebekah received from Yahweh before the birth of the twins (25:23). The reference to the prenatal oracle declaring Jacob's preeminence over Esau reminds readers that it is Yahweh who is in control of the action in chap. 27.

This story of an energetic and resourceful woman who acts on behalf of her son and thus serves the hidden purposes of God reminds careful readers of the similar story of the mother of Moses in Exod. 2:1–10. Also worthy of note is the story of the wise woman of Tekoa who uses deception to ensure the continued life of a son (2 Sam. 14:1–20).

The encounter of Esau with Isaac (27:30–40) contains several interesting features. First, the cry of Esau in v. 34 (at his discovery that Jacob has gained the blessing by deception) is a cry of lament ("he cried out a great and bitter cry") leading directly to petition ("bless me!"). The same verb for "cry out" is used in such laments as Pss. 77:1; 88:1; and 107:6, 28; its parallelism with "weep" in Isa. 33:7 and Jer. 48:5 prepares for Esau's weeping in Gen. 27:38. Isaac's reply to Esau repeats the two elements of the blessing (fertility and dominion), but in reverse order (v. 37: "I have made him your master . . . I have enriched him with grain and

wine"). Chiasmus is also present in the reversal of v. 28 in v. 39 ("from the oil of the earth . . . from the dew of the heavens"). These reversals in form underline the reversal of expectations experienced by Esau. In being denied the blessing, Esau will reexperience the curses imposed upon the primal pair: dominion by a family member and separation from the productive earth (3:16–19). As at the beginning of the story, Rebekah is once again the active party; when she learns of Esau's intention to kill his brother (cf. 4:8) after his father's death, she sends Jacob to her relatives in Haran (27:43). The chapter thus ends on the note of family strife leading to separation.

28:1–9, Jacob's Departure. In these verses Jacob's departure is described by P, as indicated by such characteristics as the divine name El Shaddai (17:1; 35:11) and the divine command to increase and multiply (1:28; 9:1, 7). In this account, Jacob gains his father's blessing on his father's initiative and without deception (v. 6). He goes to his mother's family not to escape Esau's murderous wrath, but to seek a wife from Rebekah's family and to prevent a marriage like Esau's with an inhabitant of Canaan (a "Hittite") (26:34; 27:46). To traditional source criticism, these differences with chap. 27 have led to the conclusion that P must have known of a different story of the blessing of Jacob by Isaac. To be noted, however, is the different point of the P blessing in 28:3–4—not rainfall sufficient for agriculture and fertility and dominion over his brother, but numerous descendants and land (cf. 17:5–8; 35:11–12). This difference made possible the meaningful integration of this P material into the larger account.

A focus on the fundamental human realities of birth, death, and marriage underlies three important appearances of P material in the patriarchal narratives (chaps. 17 and 23 and the passage under discussion). In chap. 17, God announces that Abraham and Sarah will be the parents of a child and through that birth the progenitors of a great people. Chap. 23 recounts the death of Sarah and her burial in a grave purchased from an inhabitant of Canaan. And 28:1–9 recounts Jacob's journey to Mesopotamia to avoid intermarriage with the indigenous Canaanite population.

28:10–22, Jacob's Dream at Bethel. Jacob's night at Bethel on his flight to Haran serves as a point of transition from his home and family to an uncertain future in Haran. On his return to Canaan, there will be another night encounter with the deity before his reentry into the land (32:22–32). After his return and reconciliation with Esau, he will again go to Bethel (35:1–15); in both accounts Jacob experiences a theophany (28:13, 35:9; cf. 48:3).

Although source criticism has attempted to divide the account of Jacob's dream into its constituent J and E material (J: 28:10–11a, 13–16, 19a; E: 28:11b–12, 17–18, 20–21a, 22), tradition-historical analysis may point in a better direction by seeing the basic narrative in vv. 10–12 and 16–19, with expansions of this core in vv. 13–15 and 20–22. In the dream at a site sacred since the time of Abraham (12:8), Jacob sees "messengers of God," members of the heavenly assembly in service of the deity, ascending and descending a staircase between heaven and earth (for earthly tasks performed by such divine messengers, cf. Gen. 19; 1 Kings 22:22).

Not only does Jacob see the divine messengers; he sees Yahweh as well, who reiterates the promises of possession of the land of Canaan, numerous descendants, and divine presence (28:13–15). The conclusion of the promise is the blessing that will come upon the nations of the earth through contact with Jacob and his descendants; the accomplishment of this divine promise will be seen in the story of the prosperity of Laban through association with Jacob (30:27–30). Upon awaking, Jacob expresses his awe by word (28:17: "This is none other than the house of God; this is the gate of heaven!") and action (his consecration and renaming of the sacred site as Bethel [Heb., "house of God"; → Bethel]).

The original function of this story was probably to explain the founding of the sanctuary at Bethel. Bethel was an important site of worship after the secession of the Northern tribes from the tribal union achieved by David and preserved by Solomon and the establishment by the Northern tribes of a kingdom that bore the name of the patriarch Israel. In designating Bethel as the site for one of the Northern temples, the new kingdom reached back beyond the "innovation" of Solomon's Temple in Jerusalem to a site sacred to the ancestors (12:8; 1 Kings 12:26–33; Amos 7:1–13). Genesis 14, with its account of Abraham at Jerusalem (vv. 18–20), may be a Southern answer by Judah to the claim of ancestral antiquity for the Northern temple at Bethel.

29:1–31:54
Jacob in Haran and the Return to Canaan

The story of Jacob's years in Mesopotamia with his uncle Laban is one of the narrative gems of the OT. Form-critically, the narrative has been described as a novella, like that other masterpiece of Hebrew literary art, the Joseph story.

The family unity that welcomed Jacob to his mother's relatives is soon broken by Laban's duplicity in the arrangements made for Jacob's service to Laban and his marriages to Leah and Rachel. Laban's continuing sharp practice in the determination of Jacob's wages in livestock is overcome by Jacob's superior cleverness (30:35–43); a story that began with a reference to Laban's prosperity (30:27) ends with a reference to Jacob's wealth (30:43). Jacob's departure from Laban concludes with the making of a mutual nonaggression pact (31:44–54).

There are a number of obscurities in chaps. 30–31

(e.g., 30:27, 37–43; 31:29), some of which are probably due to the presence of technical lore about shepherding. That such lore was common to the pastoralists of the ancient Near East is demonstrated by the number of opaque and unusual expressions in the narrative that can be illuminated by parallel Akkadian material, as several scholars have shown.

It has been claimed that the material is arranged in a chiastic pattern, whose center is the birth of Jacob's children: *(A)* Jacob's arrival in Haran, 29:1–4; *(B)* contract with Laban, 29:15–20; *(C)* Laban's deception of Jacob, 29:21–30; *(D)* the birth of Jacob's children, 29:31–30:24; *C′* Jacob's trickery of Laban, 30:25–43; *B′* dispute with Laban, 31:17–42; *A′* departure from Laban, 30:43–54. This reversal in form mirrors the reversal of situation for Laban and Jacob. The story is framed by Laban's kiss of welcome to Jacob (29:13) and Laban's parting kiss to his daughters and grandchildren in 31:55 (pointedly omitting a parting kiss for Jacob).

29:1–14, Jacob's Arrival in Haran. Arriving in his uncle's territory, Jacob makes inquiries about Laban of shepherds gathered at a well, waiting for the arrival of others to remove the stone from the mouth of the well. In v. 6 Jacob inquires about the well-being of his uncle (lit., "Is there peace [Heb. *shalom*] to him?") and the shepherds answer affirmatively ("There is peace"). This *shalom* is soon to be lost in the contest in which Laban and Jacob are pitted against each other. When Jacob sees Rachel, he performs a heroic, superhuman feat of strength by moving the stone from the well alone and watering Laban's flocks. One is reminded of the earlier meeting of Abraham's steward and Jacob's mother, Rebekah, at a well (24:11–27). When Laban learns from his daughter of Jacob's presence, he goes quickly to meet him with an embrace and a kiss (29:13; 33:4; 45:14–15). The family bonds that are the basis of Laban's welcome of Jacob are expressed idiomatically in Laban's words (29:14), "You are my bone and my flesh" (cf. 2:23; Judg. 9:2; 2 Sam. 5:1 [= 1 Chron. 11:1]; 2 Sam. 19:13).

29:15–30, Laban's Deception and Jacob's Marriages. After a month's stay, the question of Jacob's working for Laban is brought up. The discussion about wages for such service begins in amicable fashion. Because of his love for Laban's younger daughter, Rachel, Jacob proposes to work for Laban for seven years to earn the right to marry her; at the end of the years of service, he claims his right, and Laban celebrates the wedding with a feast (significantly, *mishteh,* the Heb. word for feast, means "drinking party"). At nightfall Laban brings his older daughter, Leah, to Jacob, who, after long feasting, unknowingly consummates his marriage with her.

There is a strong sense of irony in Jacob's indignant accusation of duplicity on the part of Laban. When he asks rhetorically, "What is this that you have done to me?" his words recall the same question addressed to his forebears Abraham (20:9) and Isaac (26:10) when their deceptions involving their wives are uncovered. After agreeing to another seven-year period of work for Laban, Jacob finishes the bridal week (cf. Judg. 14:8–18) with Leah and then immediately marries his beloved Rachel.

Although the principal ironic reversal in the story is how Jacob the deceiver, in gaining his brother Esau's blessing, becomes Jacob the deceived, there are other ironic echoes of the Jacob-Esau story in the account of Jacob's marriages and the ensuing rivalry of his wives. The reference to Leah's "weak" eyes (v. 17) recalls Isaac's failing eyesight, which made Jacob's deception possible. Just as the differing parental preferences of Isaac and Rebekah were the source of family discord and separation, so Jacob's preference for Rachel over Leah brings about continuing family strife. As Jacob, the younger son, was helped by his mother, Leah, the older daughter, was helped by her father, Laban. And in 30:16, Rachel will sell her marriage right to her older sister, as Esau sold his birthright to his younger brother. All these notes of irony are summed up in Laban's words to Jacob, "It is not done in our area to give in marriage the younger woman before the firstborn" (v. 26), words that must have recalled to Jacob his deceptive acquisition of the blessing of the firstborn.

29:31–30:24, Jacob's Children. The strife between the wives of Jacob is introduced in 29:30 with the observation that "Jacob loved Rachel more than Leah." It is continued in v. 31, where the fact that Leah is unloved (more vividly in Heb., "hated") leads to divine compassion and Leah's fertility, as she bears Jacob four sons (Reuben, Levi, Simeon, and Judah). In naming her firstborn, Reuben, Leah says, "Yahweh has looked on my misery" (v. 32), words that recall Hagar's naming of Ishmael (16:11: "Yahweh has listened to your [cry of] misery") and anticipate Jacob's statement that "God saw my misery" (31:42).

Gen. 30:1–2 introduces another recurrent theme, the matriarch's barrenness. There is an effective contrast between 29:31, where "Yahweh *saw* that Leah was hated and so opened her womb," and 30:1, where "Rachel *saw* that she had not borne sons to Jacob." Like Sarai in chap. 16, Rachel gives her maid Bilhah to Jacob; the children born of this union (Dan and Naphtali) are considered Rachel's. Rachel's words in 30:3 recall those of Sarai in 16:2 ("Perhaps I shall be given sons through her"). Leah also engages in this substitute childbearing by giving Jacob her maid Zilpah, who bears Gad and Asher (30:9–13).

In 30:14–16, Leah gives the fertility-inducing mandrakes (cf. Song of Sg. 7:13), found by her son Reuben, to Rachel for marriage rights with Jacob, after which Leah bears Issachar and Zebulun and a daughter,

Dinah (30:17–21). Just as God had seen Leah's misery and opened her womb (29:31) and heard her (in 29:33), so (in 30:22) "God remembered Rachel and listened to her and opened her womb," and she bears Joseph (vv. 23–24).

There are echoes of Genesis 3 in 29:15–30:24. First, in his answer to the divine charge that they have sinned by attempting to be "like God" (3:5), the man blames his wife (3:12: "She gave me some of the fruit, and I ate"). In 30:1–2 Rachel blames her husband for her childlessness ("Give me sons or I'll die!"), to which Jacob retorts angrily, "Am I in the place of God?" Second, the sequence of Jacob's years of hard labor for Laban and the birth of his children to his wives brings to mind the punishment imposed on the first humans in 3:16–19, woman's pain in childbearing and man's hard labor in food production.

30:25–43, Jacob's Trickery of Laban. As Jacob begins to plan his return to Canaan, he engages in a lengthy proceeding with Laban, since he is a dependent in Laban's household. Laban admits that his wealth is the result of divine blessing because of his association with Jacob (30:27, 30). Laban's wish is that Jacob remain in his service as a generously paid employee, but Jacob responds that he wants to work for his family. The meaning of the negotiations between Jacob and Laban is not completely clear, but apparently Jacob's inferior position as a dependent in Laban's employ does not allow him to return to his own land without Laban's agreement. At least Laban seems to have the right to retain Jacob's family and property should Jacob depart without his permission (31:43). In the end, Jacob accedes to Laban's wishes and proposes a way to be remunerated by taking for himself only the dark sheep and spotted and speckled goats. Laban's duplicity is seen in 30:35–36; after agreeing to Jacob's wages, he proceeds to take for himself all the unusually marked animals and to remove them several days' journey from Jacob. Since Jacob knows how to influence the breeding habits of the sheep and goats in his care so that they produce a large number of unusually colored offspring, he is able to outwit Laban. The means by which Jacob influences the fertility of the flocks are switches he takes from poplar trees; one is reminded of the fertility-inducing plants in 30:14. The story ends with a description of Jacob's great wealth (v. 43; cf. 12:16; 20:14; 26:12–13).

31:1–54, Jacob's Flight. The growing hostility of Laban and his sons toward Jacob, because of his increasing wealth, continues the theme of family strife that began in the account of Jacob's marriages (29:21–27). The charge of Laban's sons that Jacob "has taken all that belonged to our father" (31:1) echoes Esau's complaint in 27:36. The divine command to leave is communicated to Jacob in parallel accounts (by Yahweh in 31:3; by "the messenger of Elohim" in a dream in vv. 10–13).

When Jacob informs Rachel and Leah of his decision to depart, they overcome their mutual animosity to support this plan (a detail that may forecast the movement toward family reconciliation that Jacob will initiate in Gen. 33). Leaving with his family and goods in haste and stealth, Jacob is pursued by Laban, who is warned in a dream to do no harm to Jacob (31:24, 29). Laban is particularly angered by the theft of idols of his family deities that Rachel has taken without Jacob's knowledge (v. 19), perhaps as partial compensation for her father's dissipation of her bride price (→ Teraphim). In Laban's search for these idols, there is an effective echo of the Jacob-Esau story. When Jacob gives Laban permission to search his party, Laban "feels through" what was in Rachel's tent. The Hebrew verb "feel through" *(mashash)* in vv. 34 and 37 is the same verb employed in 27:22 to describe Isaac's "feeling" of Jacob. As in chap. 27, a younger child (Rachel) deceives her father to gain what belonged to the father. Rachel's hiding of the idols in the camel cushion on which she sits and her excuse to her father for not rising from it (menstruation) may involve some broad humor at the powerlessness of Laban's sought-for gods. The episode ends with Jacob's upbraiding Laban and reminding him of his long and faithful service. Twice in this section (31:42, 53) Jacob's deity is identified as "the fear of Isaac" (i.e., "the Awesome One of Isaac").

The chapter ends with the making of a covenant, a mutual nonaggression pact between Jacob and Laban (vv. 44–54). The different objects that serve as witnesses to this covenant (a stele in v. 45, a cairn of stones in v. 46), the different names given to the objects (Jegar-sahadutha and Galeed in v. 47, Mizpah in v. 49), and the two references to the covenant meal (vv. 46, 54) probably indicate the use of different versions of the treaty in the composition of this episode.

31:55–36:43
The End of the Jacob-Esau Cycle

31:55–32:23, Jacob's Embassy to Esau. In sharp contrast to Laban's greeting of Jacob (29:13), Laban kisses his daughters and grandchildren good-bye, but pointedly no kiss is given to Jacob (31:55). There follows a theophany (vv. 1–2), somewhat like the Bethel vision (28:12–17), in which Jacob encounters "messengers of God" (28:12; 31:11) and names the site Mahanaim (Heb., "two camps") after exclaiming, "This is God's encampment!" (cf. "This is the house of God . . . the gate of heaven" in 28:17). The sequence in 28:1–22 of vision, naming, and erection of a monument is recalled in the vision and naming in 32:1–2, preceded by the setting up of a stele in 31:45, 51–53.

Jacob sends word of his return ahead to Esau, hop-

ing to placate his brother. When he learns that Esau is coming with a large force, Jacob prays for divine aid (vv. 9–12). The essential features of this petitionary prayer are the address to the deity (v. 9), the petition (v. 11), and the motivation, reasons brought forward to persuade God to grant the petition (v. 12). The petition itself has parallels in Pss. 31:15 and 144:11. And the divine *chesed* (Heb., "steadfast love") and *'emet* ("fidelity") of which Jacob declares himself unworthy are associated with Abraham in 24:27. With characteristic practicality, Jacob follows the prayer with the division of his goods into two parts, in the hope of saving at least one if he is attacked by Esau. His dispatch of gifts to Esau (32:13–21) serves both to appease him and to act as a buffer between them.

Noteworthy in this section is the repeated reference to "face": in v. 16 ("Pass before my face"), in v. 17 ("To whom belong these before your face?"), four times in v. 20 ("I may appease his face with the gift going before his face; afterwards I will see his face and perhaps he will lift up my face" [i.e., be gracious to me; cf. the same idiom in 19:21]), and in v. 21 ("The gift passed before his face"). These seven uses of "face" are clearly meant to bind this story with Jacob's following encounter with the deity, in which he sees God face to face (32:30; cf. 33:10).

32:24–32, Jacob and His Mysterious Adversary. This story has provoked extended commentary (the earliest being Hos. 12:3–4 and Wisd. of Sol. 10:10–12). It is rich with motifs from myth and folklore, e.g., the trial of heroes, the loss by nocturnal demons of supernatural power at sunrise (vampires), and the power gained by the knowledge of the adversary's mysterious and hidden name (cf. Rumpelstiltskin).

The chief difficulty with the story is the identification of Jacob's adversary with God. The standard pattern for the kind of tale found in 32:24–32, as analyzed by structuralism, is a hero (Jacob) on a quest (return to Canaan and reconciliation with Esau); the originator of the quest is God (31:3, 13), and the adversary with whom Jacob struggles is the opponent, whose task is to prevent Jacob from bringing the mission to a successful conclusion. At an earlier level of the story, the opponent may have been some Canaanite god attempting to keep Jacob from entering the land. But the point that makes the story so enigmatic in its final crystallization is the identification of both originator and opponent as God. This break with the conventional folktale pattern is the effect of Israelite monotheism, which does away with the possible dualism that might be implied by a powerful supernatural adversary to Yahweh.

Two etiologies, or accounts of origins, conclude the story. The first of these, involving the naming of the site, connects the story with 28:10–19 and 32:1–2 and suggests that at one point in its history the account may have been a story about the founding of a shrine at this place (→ Penuel). Any such etiology has, however, become almost invisible, as the story has been used to serve other functions. The second etiology here concerns a dietary taboo unwitnessed elsewhere in the OT.

In its present context, 32:24–32 is chiefly concerned with the blessing that Jacob receives (v. 26) and the change of his name to Israel (cf. 17:5, 15; 35:10), signaling a change of personality and destiny. The etymology offered for "Israel" in 34:28 involves contention; although it is not a philologically defensible etymology, it does fit in well with the theme of strife that runs through much of Genesis.

33:1–20, Jacob's Meeting with Esau. The confrontation of Jacob and his family with Esau and his four hundred retainers begins in tension as Jacob divides his family into three groups. In the ordering of these divisions (the slave women and their children first, Leah and her children second, and finally Rachel and Joseph), Jacob continues to demonstrate his affection for Rachel, which was one of the causes of discord in the family. The tension is resolved when Esau generously takes the initiative and runs to meet Jacob, who is humbly bowing, with embraces and kisses (v. 4; cf. 45:14–15). Esau's movement toward reconciliation is underlined by his address to Jacob in 33:9 as "my brother." Jacob responds by asking Esau, "Take, please, my blessing," thus restoring to his brother the blessing he had gained and reversing Esau's words in 27:36 ("Now he has taken my blessing").

Jacob's words to Esau in 33:10 ("Seeing your face is like seeing the face of God") link this scene to that preceding mysterious confrontation with the "face of God" in 32:30.

Up to this point in the chapter, both brothers have made gestures that signal the beginning of reconciliation. Gen. 33:12–17, however, shows that reconciliation is only partial and incomplete. Despite Esau's efforts, the cautious Jacob finds excuses for parting with his brother, eventually settling not with Esau in Seir but in Succoth, in the environs of Shechem (→ Shechem). Shechem was visited by Abram after his arrival in Canaan (12:6); like his ancestor (chap. 23), Jacob purchases a piece of land from the local residents.

34:1–31, The Rape of Dinah. The story of the rape of Dinah is connected with its context by its concern with a child of Jacob, his only daughter; the twelve sons of Jacob, listed in 35:23–25, will be the chief concern in the Joseph story in chaps. 37–50. The introduction of Hamor and Shechem in 34:18–19 connects Genesis 34 to its setting by catchwords. The brief and laconic account of the rape is amplified by an exposition of the feelings of Shechem (v. 3: "He was deeply attracted to Jacob's daughter Dinah, and was in love with her, and

spoke to her heart"). While the elders Jacob and Hamor try to negotiate a peaceful solution to the difficulty, Jacob's sons answer violence with violence, avenging the wrong done their sister by deceptively agreeing to intermarriage only after the circumcision of the Shechemite males (v. 15). The deception is completed when two of Dinah's full brothers, Simeon and Levi (29:33–34; 30:21), gain their revenge by the slaughter of the incapacitated males. This violent behavior of Simeon and Levi is an ominous prelude to the brothers' act of violence against Joseph (37:20–27) and is recalled in Jacob's farewell discourse (49:5–7) to his sons.

The story of the rape of Dinah has a number of connections with the similar story of Amnon's rape of Tamar (2 Sam. 13). These connections include the formulaic language in which the rape is described (Gen. 34:2: "He saw her . . . he took her . . . he lay with her and violated her"; 2 Sam. 13:6, 8: "in my sight"; 13:14: "he violated her and lay with her"). Also formulaically expressed is the reaction of Dinah's brothers (Gen. 34:7: "[Shechem] performed an act of folly in Israel; such a thing was not done") and Tamar's protest to her implacable half brother (2 Sam. 13:12: "Such a thing is not done in Israel; do not perform this act of folly"). Murderous revenge by full brothers concludes both stories (Gen. 34:25; 2 Sam. 13:28–29).

35:1–29, Jacob's Return to Bethel. This chapter contains quite diverse material drawn from J and P. If the core of Jacob's Bethel experience in 28:10–22 is E, then 35:1–7 may be the J version of the Bethel sanctuary founding, including the rite of purification from foreign gods (cf. Josh. 24:14, 23; Judg. 10:16) and Jacob's instructions about a pilgrimage to Bethel (35:1) in language reminiscent of Ps. 122:1 and Isa. 2:3, 5.

Gen. 35:8 is the first of three death reports in the chapter: the deaths of Rebekah's nurse, Deborah, of Rachel in childbirth (vv. 16–20), and of Isaac in peaceful old age (vv. 28–29). The theophany and oracle in vv. 9–12 come from P, as indicated by the divine name El Shaddai (17:1), the command to increase and multiply (1:28; 9:1), and the promise of royal descendants (17:6). Gen. 35:10 is the P account of the name change of Jacob to Israel; in the larger context of Genesis, it is a confirmation of the name change announced in 32:28. Before the death report of Isaac (35:27–30) comes the curious story of Reuben's violation of his father's concubine Bilhah (v. 22). Such an act by an eldest son is not only a sexual offense; it is a challenge to the authority of the head of the family. Such a flouting of legitimate authority occurred twice in the early history of the Israelite monarchy, in uncertain situations where there was some doubt about who was the legitimate ruler (2 Sam. 3:7) or where rebellion was in progress (2 Sam. 16:21). In Jacob's farewell testament, this act of Reuben provides the reason for his loss of the authority normally held by the firstborn (49:3–4). Finally, not only does Reuben's act recall the violation of Dinah (34:2, 5); it is another instance of strife in the family, especially of the discord between father and son(s) that is a dominant theme in the Jacob-Esau cycle, appearing most recently at the end of the story of the rape of Dinah (34:30–31), and that will appear again in the Joseph story.

36:1–43, The Genealogy of Esau. This chapter is a loose collection of material relevant to Esau, chiefly lists and genealogies of his descendants, placed here to complement the list of Jacob's sons in 35:23–26. Another possible connection between chaps. 35 and 36 is the descent of kings from both Jacob (35:11) and Esau (36:31–39).

The separation of Jacob and Esau in vv. 6–8 recalls the parting of Abram and Lot in chap. 13 and the unwillingness of Jacob to move too closely to Esau in 33:12–17. This division also prepares for the strife and separation of brothers in the Joseph novella.

37:1–50:26
The Joseph Narrative

The Joseph story is one of the masterpieces of Hebrew narrative art, indeed one of the acknowledged masterpieces of world literature. It is a product of what Gerhard von Rad has called the Solomonic enlightenment, like another superb OT narrative, the court history of David (2 Sam. 9–20; 1 Kings 1–2). Besides being products of the court of Solomon (tenth century B.C.), the narratives share significant theological perspectives. For instance, both have been described as influenced to some extent by wisdom thought and literature. In a famous study, von Rad describes the Joseph narrative as a didactic wisdom story, and R. N. Whybray and others have made similar claims for the court history. Both narratives share a view of the deity acting providentially rather than by direct intervention or theophany. Both show remarkable human characters surviving and prospering by their own wits, controlling their destinies by their natural gifts and superior ability.

Several questions are involved in discussing the relationship of the Joseph narrative to the rest of Genesis and to the Pentateuch. First, it is clear that the Joseph story is a bridge between Genesis and Exodus; the Joseph story begins with Jacob in Canaan (37:1) and ends with Israel in Egypt (47:27). The settlement of Jacob and his family in Egypt at the invitation of a pharaoh well disposed toward them sets the stage for the appearance in Exodus of a pharaoh "who knew not Joseph" and his oppression of Israel (Exod. 1:8–10). Second, the relationship of the Joseph narrative to what precedes it in Genesis, and particularly to the

Jacob cycle, will be discussed below, but at least several obvious links may be mentioned here: both stories begin with a deception of a father by his offspring through an article of clothing; this deception leads to a separation of the brothers for twenty years; and the climax of both stories is the reconciliation of the estranged brothers and the abatement of family strife.

The presence of several apparent doublets in the Joseph narrative (e.g., the two versions of Joseph's fate in 37:25–28) was interpreted by source-critical scholarship as evidence of the composite nature of Genesis 37–50. More recent scholarship has been more impressed by the unity of the Joseph story. From such a perspective, the Joseph narrative is described as a short story or a novella; those scholars who have argued for a wisdom cast to the Joseph narrative describe it more specifically as a "historicized wisdom tale" or a "didactic wisdom story." The coherence of the Joseph narrative seems to point not to a joining or interweaving of originally disparate variants, but rather to composition by a literary artist of exceptional skill. From this perspective, the use of different patriarchal names, Jacob and Israel, does not indicate several sources but rather different emphases in a single literary work, for whom the patriarch is both an individual and, as progenitor of the nation, a kind of "corporate personality." Nor is there a real contradiction in two brothers working in different ways to prevent the murder of Joseph. Reuben's words in 37:30 seem to indicate that he knew nothing of Judah's plan (worked out in Reuben's absence?) and the brothers' agreement to it. The Ishmaelite/Midianite accounts of Joseph's passage to Egypt are more of a problem; but in the absence of clear evidence for sources elsewhere in the Joseph narrative, it can be resolved by understanding the Midianite account as a gloss, an expansion of a single source rather than a doublet from another source.

Although Genesis 37–50 has been labeled for convenience as the Joseph narrative, a more precise description and delimitation of the extent of the Joseph novella would be Genesis 37 and 39–45. Chaps. 37 and 42–45 are a family story concerned with Joseph's rise to a position of prominence and superiority over his brothers. Chaps. 39–41 are a story within a story, a political tale of Joseph's career, with chaps. 40–41 stressing his divine gift of administrative and other wisdom.

Genesis 38 is a digression from the Joseph narrative; its position, as will be seen, is the result of the similarity of themes and motifs between it and the Joseph story. Chaps. 46–50 belong more properly to the Jacob cycle of stories. In Genesis 46 we find a theophany to Jacob, followed by an itinerary and a genealogy (the same sequence as in chap. 35); in chap. 47, Jacob's presentation to the pharaoh; in 48, his blessing of Joseph's sons Ephraim and Manasseh; in 49, his farewell to his sons and his death; and in 50, his funeral and burial.

The Egyptian locale of chaps. 39–50 of the Joseph story has led to attempts to relate the story of Joseph to what is known of Egyptian history. For a time, the intermittent presence of Asiatic slaves in Egypt and particularly the dominance of Egypt in the mid-second millennium B.C. by Asiatic Semites seemed to provide appropriate and reasonable historical background to the Joseph narrative (→ Hyksos). Support for this hypothesis was drawn from instances of Egyptian "local color" (e.g., Egyptian names in 37:36; 39:1; 41:45; Egyptian customs in 50:2–3, 26). More recent scholarship has tended to question this view; it finds a more likely background in the Solomonic era for the knowledge of Egypt displayed in the Joseph narrative. Solomon's marriage to a daughter of the pharaoh (1 Kings 9:16; 11:1) points to an era of amicable political and commercial relations between Egypt and Israel and would explain the positive and benign attitude of the Joseph narrative toward Egypt, its ruler, and its people.

We can conclude this introduction to the Joseph narrative by listing the themes that appear in it and that will be discussed in greater detail in the commentary: divine providence, i.e., the divine governance of the world and the divine conduct of human affairs by a hidden providence rather than by revelation or extraordinary divine intervention ("Yahweh was with Joseph"); the success of the unpromising ("rags to riches") and the related theme of Yahweh's mysterious choice of the younger son; strife and discord in the family; Joseph's wisdom and the associated theme of the tolerance and openness of wisdom to the non-Israelite world; the blessing of the Gentiles through contact with the descendants of Abraham (39:5, 21; 41:44–57); Yahweh's hidden plan prevailing over human plans ("Man proposes, but God disposes"; cf. Prov. 16:9). The view taken here is that the Joseph narrative is not part of the Yahwist's work, but an independent and distinct literary work. The shared themes may point to some connection between J and the Joseph story: for instance, are both writers members of a group of like-minded religious thinkers, a "Yahwist school"? The common view that the composition of both J and the Joseph narrative was associated with the court of Solomon may be explanation enough for the coincidence of themes that they reveal.

Several recurrent motifs in the Joseph narrative deserve mention as well. Dreams and famine each appear several times in the preceding ancestral narratives (dreams in 20:3; 28:12; 31:10–11, 24; famine in 12:10; 26:1). Further, the motif of clothing, which appears in 27:15–16, plays a major role in the Joseph narrative as a symbol of the changing situations of Joseph and the other participants in the story.

To a greater extent than in earlier material, dialogue plays an important role in the Joseph story as a revealer of character and of the never static relationships between protagonists. Therefore the speeches and dialogue of the characters should be carefully

heard, with particular attention to the changes that mark even repeated speeches (42:9–20, 30–34).

37:1–36
Joseph's Descent from Canaan to Egypt

37:1–4, Joseph with His Father and Brothers. The twelve sons of Jacob, whose birth notices were recorded in 29:31–30:24 and 35:16–18, were brought together in the list of 35:23–26. They include Leah's six sons, the four of the slaves Bilhah and Zilpah, and the two sons of Jacob's beloved Rachel, Joseph and Benjamin. Gen. 37:1–2 introduces by way of exposition the principal characters of the Joseph story, in the following order of appearance: first, Jacob (vv. 1–2: "Jacob dwelt . . . these are the generations of Jacob"); then, Joseph (v. 2: "Joseph was seventeen years old"); and, finally, the other sons of Jacob (v. 2: "He was a shepherd with his brothers"). The rise of a shepherd to be a "shepherd of his people," their ruler and provisioner, is a motif that will reappear in the call of Moses (Exod. 3:1–10) and in the divine choice of David (1 Sam. 16:11–12; Ps. 78:71–72). In Gen. 37:3, we encounter the same order of precedence as in vv. 1–2 ("Israel . . . Joseph . . . all his sons").

The introduction twice of Joseph before his older brothers forecasts the impending crisis that will soon engulf this family. Already subordinate to Joseph in their father's affection, Joseph's brothers are grammatically subordinate as well by their placement in prepositional phrases (v. 3: "with his brothers . . . with the sons of his father's wives . . . more than all his other sons"). Jacob's preferential treatment of Joseph and the discord and ill will that this favoritism engenders in the family are thus visible in incipient form in the first verses of the story.

The narrative goes on to note that Joseph brought his father bad reports about the four sons of Bilhah and Zilpah; in this detail Joseph is portrayed as an agent of familial discord, recalling the strife between the wives of Jacob (partly fought out through their slaves), strife now mirrored in the growing estrangement of the sons.

Only in v. 4 do the brothers appear as the subject of a sentence, when they see their father's greater love for Joseph, symbolized by the special garment that Jacob presents to Joseph. Jacob's love for his son Joseph is mentioned twice in vv. 3–4: "Israel *loved* Joseph more than all his sons . . . their father *loved* him more than all his brothers." Although such doubling has sometimes been taken as evidence of two sources, we are dealing, rather, with a skillful escalation and intensification effected by this repetition; whether designated as sons of the patriarch or as brothers of Joseph, they still take second place in the affection of their father. Realizing this, "they hated him," and their hatred led to an inability to communicate ("They couldn't even greet him [by saying *'Shalom!'* to him]").

Several concluding observations can be made about these opening verses of the Joseph story. First, the bitter hatred of the brothers of Joseph is played out against a background of relational and familial language: "son(s)" occurs five times, "father" four times, and "brothers" three times. The notable abundance of these terms highlights the poignancy of the estrangement and disintegration of this family. Second, the psychological acuteness of the author is evident in the way these opening verses deal with the question of responsibility for the crisis in the family. All are implicated in this family drama: Jacob, because of his publicly displayed preference for Joseph; Joseph, because of the discord he stirs up by his bad reports about his brothers to his father; and the brothers, because of their hatred. All are implicated in this tragedy; no one is declared innocent. Finally, visible perception is a noteworthy feature of chap. 37 first alluded to in v. 4 ("The brothers *saw* that their father loved him more than all his sons"). Three times more in this chapter will the brothers' "seeing" be mentioned: in v. 18 they see Joseph at a distance; in v. 20 they conclude their plotting with the bitter words "Let's see then what becomes of his dreams!"; and in v. 25 the brothers see a caravan of Ishmaelites that they make part of their plot. This emphasis on visual perception stands in counterpoint to and powerfully reinforces the severing of fraternal bonds signaled by the inability of the brothers to speak to Joseph because of their intense hatred, further provoked by Joseph's talk about his dreams (vv. 5, 8). The accent on seeing is taken up in Joseph's mission to his brothers (v. 13): Jacob's command to Joseph in v. 14 ("See to the welfare of your brothers") will be fulfilled when Joseph becomes the provider for his family in Egypt (45:5–8; 50:20–21). The last instance of visual perception in chap. 37 is Jacob's recognition of his son's bloody tunic (v. 33). In the brothers' next encounter with Joseph (chap. 42), "seeing" will give way to speaking and hearing.

37:5–11, Joseph's Dreams. The dreams of Joseph and the growing hatred of his brothers are coordinated in v. 5. His are the first of a series of dreams by the major characters in the Joseph narrative. Joseph is quick to relate to his brothers the dream of the sheaves in which Joseph's sheaf is surrounded by those of his brothers, which pay homage to him by bowing. It is noteworthy that the sheaves are of grain; this symbolism of sheaves of grain for Joseph and his brothers neatly points forward both to Joseph's management of Egypt's grain supplies (chap. 41) and to the grain-buying expeditions of his brothers (chaps. 42–43). In these expeditions the brothers will assume the posture of obeisance predicted in the dream (42:6; 43:26, 28). Now, however, the fulfillment of the dream is uncertain, for Joseph and his dream (in which he is surrounded by his brothers) are now "surrounded" by the hatred of his brothers: the hatred of Joseph's brothers mentioned in

vv. 5, 8 forms a frame around Joseph's recounting of the dream in vv. 6, 7. The author closes the story of the first dream with the observation that the brothers hate Joseph as much for his talk about the dreams as for the dreams themselves.

Joseph relates more briefly the second dream of the sun, moon, and eleven stars bowing before him. Significantly, no retort from his angry brothers is recorded; this absence of response is an ominous sign of the complete breakdown in communication between Joseph and his brothers. Joseph does earn a rebuke from his father because of his second dream, which included prostration by parents as well as by siblings. By this rebuke, Jacob allies himself with his other sons ("I and your mother and your brothers") for the first time. This alliance is underlined in v. 11, which concludes the scene with two sentences: in the first, the subject is "his brothers" (with Joseph unnamed in a prepositional phrase, "against him"—a grammatical reversal of the situation in vv. 1–3); in the second, we are told that "his father pondered the matter." Where Joseph had stood between his father and his brothers twice in vv. 1–3 (as implied in the order of their appearance in those verses), now in v. 11 "his brothers" and "his father" are placed in direct contact; the word order of the Hebrew is "Envious of him were *his brothers, and his father* pondered the matter."

37:12–20, Joseph Between His Father and Brothers. In this scene, the brothers have departed to tend Jacob's flocks, and the patriarch decides to send Joseph to them. Israel's instructions to Joseph in v. 14 ("See to the welfare [*shalom*, lit., 'peace'] of your brothers") recall the inability of Jacob's other sons to greet their brother with *"Shalom!"* (v. 4).

Verses 14–17 recount the curious scene of Joseph's wandering about during his journey to his brothers. The function of this scene is twofold: to build tension by delaying the eventual encounter of Joseph and his brothers and, more important, to show Joseph suspended between two worlds. Behind him is his reproachful father, before him his envious and hate-filled brothers. Joseph, his father's favorite and the "master of dreams" (v. 19), is here shown to be lost and dangerously vulnerable. In v. 18 the brothers spot Joseph at a distance (because of his distinctive garment?), and their simmering anger finally boils over into violence. In plotting murder, the brothers speak with unconscious accuracy when they say, "Let's see what will become of his dreams," a comment that will be ironically realized when they meet him again in Egypt.

37:21–36, Joseph Apart from His Father and Brothers. We now come to the final act of separation and estrangement that has been building throughout the chapter. In this final scene, Joseph is a powerless and passive victim; this is shown particularly by the fact that Joseph is the object of thirteen of the verbs from vv. 23–35, most of which describe acts of violence. The active parties are Joseph's oldest brother, Reuben, who tries to save Joseph by dissuading his brothers from their thoughts of murder, and Judah, who proposes an alternative to killing out of enlightened self-interest (selling him as a slave). Reuben and Judah will again appear as spokesmen for their brothers (42:37; 44:16–34).

In 37:23, their first act is to strip Joseph of his garment, that hated symbol and constant reminder of Jacob's special affection for Joseph. After throwing him into a cistern, they callously sit down to their meal. There will be another meal later in the story, at which the roles of powerful and powerless will be reversed (43:31–34).

Several motifs are employed in 37:23–25 that will recur elsewhere in the Joseph narrative. Already mentioned is the motif of the meal. More significant is the garment motif (v. 23), which appears at crucial points in the story (39:12–19; 41:14, 42; 45:22). Also prominent is the motif of Joseph's descent into the cistern (37:24); into Egypt (v. 25; 39:1); and into prison (39:20). The reference to the Egyptian prison in 40:15 and 41:14 with the same word used of the cistern in 37:22, 24, 28, 29 ("pit") connects these three events as moments in the one downward movement of Joseph. Reuben's discovery that his plan to rescue Joseph has failed leads him to tear his garments (v. 29), a traditional gesture of grief that will be repeated by the other innocent party, Jacob (v. 34). Along with Jacob's donning of sackcloth, the gestures of Reuben and Jacob are an effective reprise of the garment motif.

The two variant explanations of Joseph's departure for Egypt (sold to Ishmaelites; kidnapped by Midianites) are evidence not of multiple sources, but of expansion. And taken together, these variant explanations of Joseph's journey to Egypt preview subtly the whole Joseph story. In the first account, Joseph is sold by his brothers to Ishmaelite caravaneers who will bring Joseph down to Egypt along with their other goods (vv. 25–27). In the second account, passing Midianites bring Joseph up from the pit (v. 28). Thus at the moment of greatest danger and least hope for Joseph, the narrative alludes to the movement of Joseph both down to Egypt (39:1) and up from the pit (41:14; → Ishmaelites; Midian, Midianites).

To avoid an outright lie, the brothers stain Joseph's garment with the blood of a slaughtered goat and have the bloody garment brought to their father with the words, "We found this; see [lit., 'recognize'] whether it is the garment of your son [significantly, not 'our brother'] or not" (v. 32). When Jacob recognizes the garment, he assumes, as the brothers had intended, that Joseph has been killed by wild beasts. Jacob, who deceived his father, Isaac, with his brother's garments (27:15), is himself deceived by his sons with Joseph's bloodied garment. This example of punishment

fitting the crime (→ Retribution) is further underlined by the slaughtered goat used in both acts of deception (27:9, 16; 37:31). The verb "recognize" that occurs twice in vv. 32–33 has a Janus-like function: it both looks back to 27:23, where Isaac "did not recognize" his disguised son Jacob, and it looks ahead to the tense and dramatic moment of the brothers' first meeting with Joseph, who recognizes them (42:7–8).

Jacob's lament for Joseph (37:35) is another instance of a character unconsciously speaking more truly than he knows (as in v. 20). At the end of the story, Jacob will *go down* (the descent motif) to his son, not to Sheol, the world of the dead, but to Egypt (46:3–4). Reuben's exclamation of dismay (37:30: "The boy is no more!") and Jacob's expression of grief (v. 35: "He refused to be consoled . . . thus did his father weep") remind one of the similar language in Rachel's mourning in Jer. 31:15 ("Rachel, weeping for her sons, refuses to be consoled . . . because they are no more"). The expression will be used again of Joseph by the brothers, in Egypt (42:13) and in their rehearsal to their father of the events of the trip (42:32). Jacob also uses it twice, in his responding lament (42:36: "Joseph is no more, and Simeon is no more!").

In his refusal to be consoled by "all his sons and daughters" Jacob rejects intimacy with his living children, preferring communion with his son Joseph, presumed dead. The chapter thus ends as it began, with Joseph, even absent, still a barrier preventing communication between family members. A family hostile and divided has become a family shattered by envy and hatred, treachery and deception, all culminating in cruelty and violence.

38:1–30
Judah and Tamar

Gen. 37:36 brings the story of the breakdown of Jacob's family to an end, with Joseph in Egypt, sold (by Midianites) as a slave to a high official in Pharaoh's court. The story is continued in 39:1, in which Joseph is brought down to Egypt and is purchased (from Ishmaelites) by Potiphar. This narrative is interrupted by the self-contained story of Judah and Tamar. Although its interposition between 37:36 and 39:1 of the Joseph narrative has long been a puzzle, the suggestion that it has been placed here because of the themes and motifs it shares with the Joseph narrative merits consideration.

38:1–11, Judah's Sons and Tamar's Marriages. The interpolated story begins with Judah's marriage and the birth of his three sons (vv. 1–5). Judah arranges a marriage for his oldest son, Er, with Tamar. Er's early death, the result of some unspecified offense against Yahweh, leads Judah to invoke the levirate custom in which the second son marries his dead brother's widow to provide offspring that will legally be recognized as his brother's, not his own (Deut. 25:5–10; Ruth 4:10; → Marriage). Onan's resistance to this customary law is expressed in his practice of coitus interruptus with Tamar, and for this offense his life is taken as well.

Judah has now only one son left. Fearful of endangering his third son's life and thus denying himself descendants, Judah temporizes, asking his daughter-in-law to return to her father's house (cf. Lev. 22:13) until his youngest son has reached adulthood. Tamar is thus confronted with the possibility of living as a childless widow, an extremely precarious situation for a woman in the ancient Near East (→ Widow).

38:12–30, Tamar's Plan and Its Discovery. The second part of the story begins with two acts of perception: Tamar *sees* that although Judah's third son, Shelah, has grown to adulthood, no marriage has been arranged (v. 14). Tamar takes the initiative by disguising herself as a prostitute and positioning herself where she will encounter her father-in-law. When Judah *sees* her (v. 15), he proposes intercourse, promising payment of a kid; at her request he leaves his seal and staff as a pledge of payment (→ Seal).

After the intercourse but before Judah can send the agreed payment, Tamar, whose identity is still unknown to Judah, departs with his pledge. When she is discovered to be pregnant three months later, her father-in-law calls for her death (cf. Deut. 22:22–24). But when Tamar triumphantly presents Judah's identifiable seal and staff, he admits his offense in not providing for her a husband who would give her a child. The story ends with the birth to Tamar of the twins Zerah (the firstborn) and Perez. As Num. 26:19–22 and 1 Chron. 2:3–4 indicate, Judah's three surviving sons (Shelah, Zerah, and Perez) become the progenitors of the most important clans of the tribe of Judah.

The descent of David from Tamar's younger son, Perez, is recorded in the genealogy in Ruth 4:18–22. In the NT, Perez makes an appearance in both genealogies of Jesus (Matt. 1:3; Luke 3:33). More surprising is the appearance of Tamar in the Matthean genealogy, along with three other OT women: Rahab, Ruth, and "Uriah's wife" (Matt. 1:3–6). Tamar is one of the many women in the OT who show initiative within a patriarchal world.

The connections of the Judah-Tamar story with its context are multiple. First, there are several noteworthy contacts with the Jacob cycle: the birth of twins who struggle during delivery for the status of being the firstborn (25:19–26); the choice of the younger twin to play an important part in the divine plan; a deception by disguise that involves a kid (27:9–16); Isaac's nonrecognition of Jacob, using the same verb in 27:23 that occurs in 37:32–33 and 38:25–26.

With the Joseph narrative, the Judah-Tamar story shares such elements as the failure to recognize a family member (38:15; 42:8); a deception involving a kid and a means of identification (37:31; 38:17–18); and the

parallelism between the words of Jacob's sons ("recognize this garment") in 37:32 and Tamar's ("recognize to whom these belong") in 38:25. And Judah's recognition of his seal and staff (v. 26) recalls Jacob's recognition of Joseph's garment (37:33). In view of such links, one can conclude that although chap. 38 does interrupt the Joseph narrative, its multiple contextual connections explain its placement.

39:1–41:57
Joseph in Egypt

This story-within-a-story deals with Joseph's career in Egypt from his descent as a slave in the power of others to his rise to a position of authority and power second only to Pharaoh's. The narrative that begins with Joseph being brought down to Egypt (39:1) will end with the whole world going down to Egypt (41:57), a movement that will include Joseph's brothers as well (42:2–3).

39:1–23, Joseph and Potiphar's Wife. The narrative skill that was evident in chap. 37 continues in the superbly told story of Joseph in Potiphar's house. The beginning of the story in v. 1 recalls 37:28, 36. The descent motif is mentioned twice in 39:1 ("Joseph was brought down to Egypt ... the Ishmaelites who brought him down there"). Verses 2–3 introduce two of the major themes of the Joseph narrative: divine providence ("Yahweh was with Joseph," vv. 2, 3, 21, 23) and the success of the unpromising (vv. 2–3, 23). The divine presence and Joseph's success in vv. 2–3 and 21–23 form an envelope around the chapter. But in both instances these assertions stand in contrast to Joseph's actual situation: he is a slave in Potiphar's house and a prisoner in Pharaoh's jail. Another important theme of both J and the Joseph story is the blessing that comes upon Gentiles through association with a descendant of Abraham (cf. 30:27–30), a theme that will be heard again in chap. 41, when Joseph's administration of Egypt's grain supplies brings prosperity and abundance.

Attention should be paid to a motif that will be employed throughout chap. 39. It occurs first in v. 1, where we learn that "Potiphar ... bought [Joseph] from the *hand* of the Ishmaelites." From this neutral beginning, the motif of the hand is developed both positively (as a benefit to Joseph) and negatively (as a danger to him). In its positive development, when Joseph's master saw that whatever Joseph did prospered "in his *hand*" (v. 3), he put all his possessions "in his/Joseph's *hand*" (vv. 4, 6). The motif takes a negative turn in the story of the attempted seduction of Joseph, the handsome young slave, by Potiphar's wife (vv. 7–20). Her invitation is peremptory and blunt: "Lie with me!" (vv. 7, 12). In his refusal, Joseph speaks of the trust of his master, who put everything "in my hand" (v. 8), and steadfastly refuses to commit this sin. In the present form of the text, which includes chap. 38, there is an effective contrast between Judah's questionable liaison with Tamar and Joseph's refusal of such with Potiphar's wife. There is also a contrast between the woman whose boldness preserves family continuity (Tamar) and the woman whose boldness betrays her marriage (Potiphar's wife).

When Joseph continues to rebuff her advances, Potiphar's wife abruptly replaces words with action, taking hold of Joseph by grabbing his cloak, which he leaves behind as he flees. Having failed to seduce him, she vindictively charges Joseph with attempted rape. Evidence of the crime will be the garment of Joseph, which she has "in her *hand*" (vv. 12, 13). In her accusation, made first to the servants (vv. 14–15), the spurned seductress is careful to place the blame for the trouble on her husband ("*He* brought to us a Hebrew slave"). The reference to Joseph as a Hebrew may be a clever attempt to stir up xenophobic animosity on the part of the other servants toward the foreigner to whom the master had entrusted the management of his house. In repeating the charge to her husband (vv. 17–18), she places the blame squarely on Joseph ("*The Hebrew slave* whom you brought here broke in"). In both versions of the charge, there is a subtle but telling change. As she tells her story to servants and husband, she does not speak of Joseph's garment as "in her hand" but as "beside her" (vv. 15, 16, 18). In this way she directs suspicion away from herself by suggesting that Joseph disrobed, in preparation for rape. The story ends as it began. After being imprisoned by the deceived and angry Potiphar, Joseph is still blessed with the divine presence. He finds favor in the eyes of the chief jailer (v. 21), who puts all the prisoners and all the activity of the prison "in the hand of Joseph" (v. 22).

In the introductory remarks to the Joseph narrative, we considered the suggestion that wisdom thought had considerable impact on the narrative about and the characterization of Joseph. Such influence is not unlikely, given the setting in which wisdom flourished and in which the Joseph novella may have been composed—Solomon's court, in the tenth century. Indeed the parallels between Joseph and Solomon, the patron of wisdom, are several: both were sons of a best-loved wife who was not the father's first; both had older brothers; for both, dreams were important; and both married wives given them by Pharaoh. Although wisdom influence is strongest in Genesis 40–41, Joseph's refusal to cuckold Potiphar by dalliance with his wife is in keeping with the warnings against adultery in such wisdom literature as Proverbs 5–7.

Attentive readers of Genesis 39 may have heard in it echoes of chap. 37. Both involve preferential treatment of a youth by a superior that leads to trouble; in both, an act of deception is accomplished by means of a garment. As in chap. 37, the language of visual perception is frequent. In 39:3, Joseph's master sees that Yahweh is

with him, and in v. 4 Joseph finds favor in his master's eyes. Verse 6 describes Joseph as good-looking; and in v. 7, Potiphar's wife raises her eyes to Joseph. In v. 13 she sees that Joseph has left behind his garment in her hand, and in v. 14 her first word to the other servants is "See!" Finally, Joseph's management of affairs in the prison means that the jailer does not have to attend to ("see") whatever is in his charge.

Genesis 39 points not only back to chap. 37, but forward to chap. 42. Like Genesis 39, chap. 42 involves a deception (42:7), vilification, and a false charge by someone in a position of power (42:9–17) that lead to imprisonment (42:16, 29). This last connection is reinforced by the verbal link of "prisoners" (lit., "the ones who are bound") in 39:20, 22, and the verbal forms of the same root in 42:16 ("You will be imprisoned") and 42:24 ("He bound Simeon before their eyes").

40:1–23, Joseph the Interpreter of Dreams. In chaps. 40–41, our attention is directed to Joseph's divinely given knowledge of the future, as he decodes the dreams of his fellow captives. In chaps. 42–43, when the sons of Jacob are before their unrecognized brother Joseph, the focus is shifted to Joseph's experiential knowledge of the past. The two dreams of Pharaoh's officials remind readers of the dreams of Joseph in chap. 37, which brought about his move to Egypt; they also prepare for the two dreams of Pharaoh in Genesis 41. In chaps. 40–41 it is not Joseph the dreamer but Joseph the interpreter of dreams who is the narrator's concern.

Gen. 40:1–4 introduces the characters involved in the story: the royal cupbearer and chief baker, imprisoned for some unspecified offense; Pharaoh; and Joseph. In 40:7 Joseph asks his fellow prisoners, "Why are your faces gloomy?" (the same question occurs in Neh. 2:2, a passage that also deals with a royal cupbearer). When he learns of their dreams and of their inability to understand, he announces that "interpretation belongs to God" (40:8), an assertion that he will repeat to Pharaoh in 41:16.

Because of their obscurity, the dreams of the two officials differ from those of Joseph with their more transparent symbolism. After the recounting of the dreams, Joseph tells the royal officials what they mean: in both cases they predict that "Pharaoh will lift up your head" (vv. 13, 19). In the case of the cupbearer, the expression means that Pharaoh will pardon him. The more normal expression for such an act of mercy is to "lift up the face" (of one prostrate before the king), which occurs, for instance, in 19:21 and 32:20. The variant and unusual expression "lift up the head" is used to produce the parallelism of the interpretation. In the case of the baker too, Pharaoh will lift up his head in an act not of pardon, but of decapitation.

In v. 14, Joseph appeals to the soon to be released cupbearer that he remember Joseph and try to gain his release; but at the end of chap. 40, Joseph is still imprisoned, forgotten by the court official whose release he had predicted. At this low point in the story, Joseph's ability to interpret dreams reminds readers that Yahweh is still with Joseph. And hope begins to dawn in the realization that dreams can become reality and that the Egyptian monarch may act mercifully toward Joseph as he did toward his cupbearer.

The motifs that occur in the Joseph story (descent, being forgotten, and the hope for ultimate restoration) appear in several of the lament and thanksgiving psalms. Psalm 30 is particularly interesting for the number of thematic and verbal associations it has with the Joseph story. Compare Ps. 30:8 ("to you, Yahweh, I cry out; you, O LORD, I beg for mercy") and Gen. 42:21 ("when he [Joseph] begged for mercy"); Ps. 30:9 ("What profit is there in my blood, in my going down into the pit?") and Gen. 37:26 ("What profit is there in killing our brother and concealing his blood?"). Ps. 30:3 ("O Yahweh, you brought my soul up from the nether world; you preserved my life from among those going down into the pit") could stand as a summary of the descent-ascent movement of the whole Joseph story. Such parallels remind readers that Joseph's descent into Egypt is like a descent into Sheol; and similarly, Israel's departure from Egypt in Exodus is its emergence from the world of the dead.

41:1–57, Joseph and Pharaoh's Dreams. Chap. 40 ends with Joseph still in prison. Despite his success in interpreting the cupbearer's dream and his appeal ("remember me . . . and mention me to Pharaoh"), the chapter ends with the note that the cupbearer "did not remember Joseph but forgot him" (v. 23). Joseph's situation will begin to change when Pharaoh's dreams cause the released courtier to remember him. Genesis 37–40 traced the descent of Joseph into cistern, Egypt, and finally prison. That these are three stages of a single downward movement is implied not only by the use of the same word (Heb. *bor*, "pit") for cistern (37:20, 22, 28, 29) and dungeon (40:15; 41:14), but also by the use of the same verb to describe the brothers "throwing" Joseph into the cistern (37:20, 22, 24) and Potiphar "throwing" Joseph into prison (39:20). Chap. 41 begins the account of his ascent to a position of power and preeminence in Egypt. The event that brings about this reversal is Pharaoh's two troubling dreams, in which seven healthy cows are devoured by seven others, scrawny and ugly in appearance, and in which seven healthy ears of grain are swallowed up by seven others, thin and blasted by the east wind (vv. 1–7).

Pharaoh's dreams recall Joseph's in chap. 37 in several ways. First of all, Pharaoh has two dreams that, like Joseph's, make the same point. Further, the underlying meaning of the dreams of Joseph and of Pharaoh is the same: the weaker and inferior (Joseph, the gaunt cattle, and thin ears of grain) will dominate the stronger (Joseph's brothers, healthy cattle, and the

good ears of grain). When Pharaoh's magicians and sages are unable to interpret the dreams, the royal cupbearer remembers Joseph and his skill in dream interpretation and speaks of him to Pharaoh (41:8–13). The failure of the king's counselors to interpret the dreams may involve an implicit critique of the gods of Egypt; neither they nor their devotees can interpret dreams that predict the future (cf. Isa. 41:22–23). This critique will become explicit in Exodus 7–8: in 7:11 Pharaoh summons his "sages and sorcerers . . . magicians of Egypt," and, though in 7:12, 22, and 8:7 they can replicate the signs that Moses and Aaron perform, they are defeated in 8:18.

The summoning of Joseph to Pharaoh in 41:14 is the first step of the change in his status and fortunes, symbolized by the change of his prison clothing (cf. 2 Kings 25:29). As in 40:8, Joseph attributes his success in dream interpretation to God (41:16). The double recounting of the dreams in third-person narrative in vv. 1–7 and again in first person in vv. 17–24 is typical of Hebrew narrative art (42:9–20, 30–34). Joseph not only interprets the dreams as predictions of seven years of abundance followed by seven years of famine (41: 28–32); he also suggests a policy to deal with the future (vv. 33–36). Impressed by his sagacity, Pharaoh appoints him prime minister (vv. 39–40), and Joseph's wisdom is shown in his effective management of Egypt's food supplies (vv. 46–50).

Just as Joseph was stripped of his distinctive garment at the beginning of his descent (37:23), so his elevation is symbolized by an investiture with a fine linen garment (41:42). This is the fourth reference to the unifying theme of Joseph's garments, two of which are connected to his descent (37:23–33; 39:13–18) and two with his elevation (41:14, 42).

Joseph, like Solomon, marries a wife given him by Pharaoh (41:45). The birth and naming of his two sons are reported in vv. 51–53. These names summarize the whole Joseph story: the name Manasseh (understood by a folk etymology to be connected to Heb. *nashah,* "forget") points back to the beginning of the Joseph story ("God has made me forget my trouble and the house of my father"); and the name Ephraim (linked to Heb. *parah,* "be fruitful") points forward to the end of the Joseph story ("God has made me fruitful in the land of my oppression"). In Exod. 1:7, 11–12, it is the Israelites' prolific fruitfulness that brings upon them oppression by the pharaoh, "who knew not Joseph."

Genesis 40–41 shares several noteworthy features with Daniel. In 40:12, 18, Joseph begins his explanation of the two dreams of his fellow prisoners with the words "This is its interpretation," a statement echoed in Dan. 2:36; 4:2. The God-given ability to interpret dreams that Joseph demonstrates (40:8; 41:16) is characteristic as well of Daniel, who is also portrayed as an Israelite serving in a foreign court (Dan. 1:3–6; 2:23, 28, 47; 4:8–9, 18; 5:13–14). The inability of the monarch's magicians to explain the dream (41:8) appears as well in Dan. 2:7–13; 4:6–7; 5:8. The reference in 41:8 to Pharaoh's agitation and troubled mind uses a rare Hebrew verb (only five occurrences in the OT) that appears twice, in a similar context, the disturbance of Nebuchadnezzar because of a dream in Daniel (2:1, 3). Finally, in both the Joseph story and Daniel, the dream interpreter is honored by the king, who recognizes the God of the interpreter (Gen. 41:38–39; Dan. 2:46–49). That the book of Daniel drew on the Joseph story for the portrayal of its hero is significant, given the identification of Daniel as a wisdom figure in Ezek. 28:3. Apparently even in antiquity the wisdom character of the Joseph novella was recognized by the authors of Daniel; modern scholarship has only rediscovered it (→ Dreams; Magic and Divination).

42:1–45:28
From Enmity to Reconciliation

The angry question of Joseph's brothers in 37:8 ("Will you be king over us and rule us?") begins to be answered in chap. 41 with the elevation of Joseph to the position of vizier. First introduced in the narrative as a shepherd (37:2), Joseph has been raised to a position second only to that of Pharaoh. The dreams that become reality in chaps. 40–41 prepare readers for the realization of Joseph's dreams in regard to his brothers. Their arrival in Egypt is forecast in 41:57 ("All the world came to Egypt, to Joseph, to purchase grain, so severe was the famine in the whole world").

42:1–38, Joseph's First Meeting with His Brothers. Genesis 42 is the dramatic high point of the Joseph story in its portrayal of the initial meeting of Joseph and his brothers after their long separation. In this account, the brothers remain unaware that the Egyptian official is Joseph, the brother they presume to be dead, just as they are unaware of the deeper meaning of some of the statements they make. As mentioned above, 41:57 sets the scene by noting that famine has brought "the whole world" to Egypt, and among those who journey there to procure food is the family of Jacob. For the first time since 37:1–4 we meet in 42:1–5 all the principals, described in both filial and fraternal terms. In 42:1–3, the sequence of "his sons . . . Joseph's brothers" brings together (but in reverse order) the principals in 37:1–3 ("Joseph . . . his brothers"; "Joseph . . . his sons"). Gen. 42:4–5, on the other hand, begins with "Benjamin the brother of Joseph," so that even the word order focuses attention on the special relationship between the favored youngest son and Jacob, his father. Finally, we are reminded of the first of Joseph's dreams, in which his brothers' sheaves surround his; in 42:1–5 the order of appearance of the characters is "Benjamin the brother of Joseph" (v. 4) in the center of a frame formed by "his [Jacob's] sons" and "the brothers of Joseph" in vv. 1–3 and by "his brothers" and "the sons of Israel" in vv. 4–5. This

"surrounding" of the full brother of Joseph may allude to the fulfillment of the first dream, a fulfillment made explicit in v. 6, when "the brothers of Jacob came and prostrated before him" (as predicted in 37:7).

In noting that Jacob did not send his youngest son, Benjamin, on the dangerous journey to Egypt, 42:4 portrays Jacob as repeating with Benjamin the same mistake that led to the division of his family. In vv. 6–17, when Joseph recognizes his brothers as they prostrate before him (as they will again in 43:26, 28; 44:14; 50:18), the narrator tells readers in an aside that "Joseph remembered the dreams" (v. 9). Joseph's concealment of his identity and the nonrecognition of him by his brothers vividly suggest the gulf separating them, a distance reinforced by Joseph's harsh questions and accusations. The brothers who hated Joseph "because of his dreams and his words" (37:8) now have reason to fear the realized dreams and the threatening words of their angry, unrecognized brother. In the discussion of chap. 39, it was pointed out that Joseph's experience of being falsely accused and imprisoned is now to be his brothers'; with roles reversed, they too will come to know what it means to be helpless and threatened with death by someone hostile and more powerful.

The brothers' response to this unexpected turn of events is appropriately couched in the language of court style and diplomacy ("my lord" in 42:10; "your servants" in vv. 10, 11, 13). On a deeper level, in their use of the diplomatic master-servant language, Joseph's brothers are brought unconsciously to an admission of the truth of Joseph's dreams of superiority. One part of the response of the brothers to the charge of spying seems at first to be irrelevant (v. 13: "We are twelve brothers, sons of the same man"). Though their answer may suggest their bewilderment and confusion at the unexpected charge, it has as well an ironic function, in that their words to Joseph ("we . . . all of us") unwittingly include him among the sons of Jacob; this reference to "twelve brothers" raises the possibility of a restoration of fraternal bonds.

The brothers' first reference to Joseph is the neutral "and one is no more" (v. 13), echoing Reuben's cry of dismay in 37:30 and pointing ahead to Jacob's words in 42:36. At their mention of the youngest son still at home, Joseph demands that he be brought to Egypt by one of the brothers while the rest remain incarcerated. In vv. 18–26, Joseph reverses his original threat by imprisoning Simeon and releasing the others to return home with food and to return with Benjamin. Simeon is chosen as a hostage because he is Leah's second son (29:33), who will be imprisoned until the arrival of Rachel's second son (35:18). The brothers do not realize that Joseph can understand them since Joseph had been using an interpreter; along with the harsh questions and accusations, this detail effectively reminds readers of the earlier breakdown in communication between Joseph and his brothers (37:4).

In the incarceration of Simeon, Joseph reconstructs the circumstances of the crime of the brothers against him. The question posed by this first test is: will the brothers abandon Simeon as they did Joseph? Joseph's request that the brothers bring Benjamin to him is the second test; how will the brothers react to the suggestion that Rachel's remaining son follow his older brother into Egypt? As Joseph listens, the brothers relate their fate to their old crime (v. 21: "We are being punished on account of our brother"). And as if by the law of talion ("an eye for an eye"), the remembered anguish of Joseph as he pleaded for mercy brings anguish upon them (→ Retribution). After weeping (as he will in 43:30 when he sees Benjamin and in 45:2 at the reconciliation), Joseph addresses his final words in this chapter to his brothers (42:34: "I will give back your brother to you"). This statement is intentionally ambiguous; the brothers with their limited awareness understand it to be about Simeon, but the brother restored is also Joseph himself.

The return of the brothers to their father, without Simeon but with the money they had brought to pay for grain, recalls Joseph's imprisonment in the cistern and the money paid for him by the Ishmaelites (37:28). The double discovery by the brothers of the money that Joseph has secretly placed in the grain sacks is one of the standard pieces of evidence for sources in the Joseph story. And it is not the only doublet in chap. 42. Others include Jacob's two addresses to his sons in vv. 1–2 ("he said" occurs twice, followed in the first instance by Jacob's question to his sons and in the second by his relating of information: "I have heard"). In vv. 3–5 the arrival of the brothers in Egypt is recounted twice ("They went down . . . they came"). Twice Joseph is said to recognize his brothers (vv. 7–8), and twice he accuses them of spying (vv. 9, 14). Most strikingly, in the instance under discussion, one brother discovers the money in his grain sack on the return journey (vv. 27–28), and all the brothers make the same discovery after they return home (v. 35). All but this last instance can be explained without recourse to sources as repetitions for emphasis; and, if this is so, then the remaining instance of the double discovery of the money is probably to be explained as an expansion (similar to the Midianite expansion in 37:28, 36).

The two adjacent scenes of the brothers before Joseph (vv. 6–20) and before Jacob (vv. 29–38) are similarly structured: the brothers appear before a relative (Joseph; Jacob) with an expected brother (Benjamin; Simeon) missing. Jacob responds to the news of this second missing son with a lament similar to that over Joseph in 37:33–35. Jacob's words echo the beginning of the chapter, forming an inclusion around it: the descent of the brothers to Egypt (42:2–3) will bring about the descent of Jacob to the netherworld (v. 38); and as Jacob refused to send Benjamin to Egypt (v. 4), so now he vehemently repeats that refusal (v. 38), giving the remarkably insensitive reason that, since Joseph is

gone, Benjamin alone is left, as if the sons of Leah simply didn't matter! Reuben's words in v. 37 ("Put him [Benjamin] in my hands, and I will bring him back") recall 37:22, where Reuben intended to save Joseph "from their hands and bring him to his father."

Like Genesis 37, chap. 42 uses with frequency the language of seeing. In v. 1, Jacob sees his sons, who look at one another; in v. 7, Joseph sees his brothers and charges them, in vv. 9 and 12, with coming as spies to see the land. In v. 21, the brothers remember how they saw the anguish of Joseph; in v. 24, Simeon is bound "before their eyes." And in vv. 27 and 35, they see the money in their sacks.

43:1–34, The Second Trip to Egypt. The pattern of pairs in the Joseph story (the dreams of Joseph, of his fellow prisoners, and of Pharaoh; Joseph's being thrown into cistern and dungeon [both Heb. *bor*]) is complemented by a pair of journeys by the brothers to Egypt. In Genesis 43–44, Judah replaces Reuben as spokesman to Jacob and to Pharaoh for his brothers—not a surprising change after the foolish speech of Reuben in 42:37 in which he says that Jacob can kill Reuben's two sons if Benjamin does not return safely! In 43:3, Judah reminds his father of the necessity of bringing Benjamin if they are to return to Egypt for more food. In answering Jacob's question about why they told the Egyptian about Benjamin (v. 6), Judah's version of the interrogation is somewhat different from the dialogue in chap. 42 in which they volunteered the information about a brother still at home. Judah's claim (43:7) that the Egyptian official asked them about Benjamin is another instance of the deception of Jacob by his sons (37:31–32).

The instructions of Jacob in vv. 11–12 remind readers of the description of the Ishmaelite caravan to whom Joseph was sold (37:25–28). Joseph's brothers are themselves to repeat that caravan journey, bringing with them the same gifts (gum, balm, resin) and Benjamin, the other son of Rachel. In chap. 37, a brother (Joseph) leaves home to join his brothers and ends up in a caravan to Egypt; in chap. 43, the brothers leave home in a caravan to rescue a brother (Simeon) in Egypt and find Joseph as well when he reveals himself to them (45:3–4).

Upon their arrival in Egypt, the brothers are brought to Joseph's house, fearful that they will be taken as slaves (as Joseph was) because of the money they discovered in their sacks. Joseph's steward stills their apprehension and releases Simeon to them. In their meeting with Joseph, they repeat the prostration (vv. 26, 28). Joseph "inquired after their peace" (v. 27), just as Jacob had instructed Joseph to do in 37:14. As Joseph wept at the first meeting with his brothers (42:24), he does so again upon seeing Benjamin (43:30). At the meal that follows, the apprehensive brothers are surprised at Joseph's knowledge of their ages in his seating arrangements for the feast. The meal effectively recalls the meal at which the brothers callously discussed Joseph's fate (37:25); the meal served separately to Joseph (43:32) is not only an Egyptian custom, but a reminder that reconciliation has not yet been effected. The reference to the brothers seated "before Joseph's face" (v. 33) and his sending of portions of food to them "from his face" (v. 34) forms an inclusion with the references to Joseph's face in vv. 3 and 5 ("You shall not see my face unless your brother is with you").

44:1–34, The Final Test and Judah's Speech. Two scenes make up chap. 44. The first (vv. 1–13) comprises the brothers' departure with Joseph's goblet, their pursuit and accusation by Joseph's steward, and their discovery of the goblet. The second scene includes their return to Joseph's house and Judah's speech.

As in Genesis 42, Joseph instructs his majordomo to hide the brothers' money in their sacks, adding to Benjamin's sack Joseph's divining cup. This silver vessel, used in foretelling the future, recalls Joseph's predictive dreams about the future, dreams that provoked his brothers into selling him for silver. Also recalled is the theft and concealment by Rachel of Laban's household gods without Jacob's knowledge (31:19–35); now it is her son Benjamin who is similarly accused of stealing and concealing a sacred object. The brothers respond to this new and unsettling development with protestations of their innocence (44:6–8) and an oath that condemns to death anyone guilty of this theft (v. 9). Their aggrieved response to the steward is similar to Jacob's oath to Laban that if anyone in his party has Laban's gods "that one shall not live" (31:32; cf. 35:17–19). At the discovery of the cup in Benjamin's sack, the brothers express their anguish by tearing their garments (as the innocent Reuben and Jacob did in 37:29, 34). Benjamin, singled out for special honor in 43:34, is now singled out for death. Judah's words to Joseph in v. 16 ("God has discovered the guilt of your servant") is not only a confession of their crime against Joseph, but also a reminiscence of similar statements by the brothers in 42:28 and by the steward in 43:23. The truth of these three statements, which confess the mysterious involvement of God in the affairs of the brothers, is confirmed by Joseph in 45:5–8.

Joseph insists that only the guilty Benjamin will be punished by enslavement (44:17), while the others are free to "return in peace to your father" (an ironic reminder of the dispatch of Joseph by his father to "see to the peace of your brothers" in 37:14).

This decision provokes the great speech of Judah (44:18–34), a person changed from the one who suggests making a profit from the sale of an envied brother to one who can without rancor or resentment rehearse the sad history of his unhappy and divided family. Several features of this remarkable speech deserve special attention. First, it is filled with master-servant language: four times Judah refers to himself as "your servant" (vv. 18 [twice], 32, 33), three times to his

brothers as "your servants" (vv. 21, 23, 31), and once to all of them as "his servants" (v. 19). With such language Judah unconsciously testifies to the truth and actualization of Joseph's two dreams. The second dream (37:9–10), in which the parents of Joseph join his brothers in paying him homage, is specifically referred to when Judah speaks of Jacob as "your servant my father" (44:27, 30). Second, Judah replaces jealousy with compassion as he speaks of his father's preferential love first for Joseph, whom he believes to be dead (v. 20), and then for Benjamin. Judah's claim in v. 22 ("If he leaves his father, he will die") may involve an intentional ambiguity, since the subject of "will die" could refer to either Jacob or Benjamin because of their separation. Judah even recalls in vv. 27–29 Jacob's painful use of paternal and filial language only of Rachel's sons (42:36, 38). The change of Judah's character is most dramatically illustrated in 44:32: the brother who initiated the sale into slavery of the first favorite now will himself endure slavery to secure the freedom of the second favorite. Judah's transformation is complete; hatred, violence, and deception are replaced by a noble gesture of self-sacrifice for one more loved by Jacob than himself. Judah's offer prepares for the reconciliation, which he unknowingly forecasts when in v. 31 he speaks to Joseph of Jacob as "your servant *our* father," a designation that suggests the possibility of the restoration of paternal and filial bonds.

As in Genesis 43, the second scene in chap. 44 employs the frequently appearing motif of "face": in v. 14 the brothers fall before Joseph's face; in vv. 23 and 26 Judah mentions the impossibility of seeing Joseph's face without Benjamin; and in v. 29 Judah recalls Jacob's warning of his death "if you take this one from before my face." The motif of "seeing" in vv. 23 and 26 (Joseph's face) is taken up negatively by Jacob in v. 28 ("I have not seen him [Joseph] since then") and by Judah in vv. 30–31 ("when he sees that the boy [Benjamin] is no more"). The expression "he is no more" in v. 30 was previously met in 37:30 and 42:13, 32, 36.

45:1–28, Recognition and Reconciliation. The transformation of Judah is matched by a transformation of Joseph, who answers the impassioned plea of Judah with a long speech of his own. For the third time in the story Joseph weeps, as he did without the brothers' knowledge in 42:24 and 43:30. His first instance of unconcealed weeping in 45:2 prepares for the revelation of his concealed identity. In v. 3, the unexpected revelation ("I am Joseph; is my father still alive?") terrifies the brothers, given Joseph's previous harsh treatment of them. And their fears are not allayed when Joseph has them draw nearer, repeats "I am Joseph," and reminds them of their crime by adding "your brother whom you sold into Egypt" (v. 4).

Joseph continues his address to his brothers with words that form the theological center and focal point of the Joseph story (45:5–8): "It was for saving life that God sent me ahead of you" (v. 5). This assertion of the providential guidance and governance of Joseph and his family by God is repeated (as was Joseph's self-revelation) and expanded in v. 7: "God sent me ahead of you to ensure for you a remnant in the land and to preserve you alive as a great band of survivors." The association of "remnant" and "survivors" occurs as well in 32:8, where Jacob divides his property so that, if Esau attacks, "the camp remaining may survive." In 45:8 Joseph insists for the third time that "it was not you who sent me here, but God"; and, in describing himself as "*ruler* of all the land of Egypt," Joseph uses a word from his brothers' angry question in 37:8 ("Will you really *rule* over us?"). The brothers will use the word again in their report to their father ("Joseph is alive, and he is *ruler* over all the land of Egypt!"). Joseph concludes by sending his brothers to invite Jacob and all his family to settle in Egypt and share its bounty (45:9–11). The weeping of Joseph and Benjamin in v. 14 and Joseph's weeping over his brothers in v. 15 form an inclusion with v. 2 and echo their father, Jacob's, earlier reconciliation with his brother, Esau (33:4). Joseph signals the reconciliation and the restoration of fraternal bonds by embracing and kissing his brothers; and the brothers, for their part, end the estrangement that made communication with Joseph impossible (37:4) by speaking with him (45:15).

Twice in the preceding material from chap. 45 the narrator uses effectively a technique of reversal of meaning of the same words uttered by different characters at different points in the story. Jacob's lamenting response in 42:38 to the news about the imprisoned Simeon ("Only one remains [Heb. *nish'ar*]") is recalled when Joseph speaks of the survival of a "remnant" *(she'erit)* in 45:7. By using these two related words, both derived from the same root, the narrator shows God's providence active in transforming lament into joy. Similarly Joseph's invitation to Jacob ("Come down to me," v. 9; cf. v. 13) recalls Jacob's lament in 37:35 ("I will go down to my son"). Since Jacob's descent will be not to his dead son in the netherworld but to Joseph alive in Egypt, his lament has now been transformed into Joseph's joyful invitation to share in the bounty of Egypt.

In 45:16–20, Pharaoh confirms Joseph's invitation and supplies his brothers with wagons in which they can bring their father and families back to Egypt. Before their departure, Joseph gives to each of his ten older brothers a gift of new clothing and to Benjamin, his full brother, three hundred silver shekels and five sets of new festal garments. In this last appearance of the garment motif, a symbol of favoritism and discord (37:3, 23) becomes a symbol of renewed relationship with the brothers and of Benjamin's special place (43:34). Joseph sends them off with gifts for his father

and a warning against any further discord (45:23–24). When the brothers return to Canaan and report to their father all that has happened and the invitation of Joseph and Pharaoh to settle in Egypt, Jacob, who had grieved that he would be with Joseph only in the netherworld, rejoices that he will see him alive (45:28).

46:1–47:27
Israel in Egypt

The climax of the Joseph story was reached in chap. 45, followed by its denouement and conclusion. The story that began with Jacob in the land of Canaan (37:1) ends with the patriarch settled in Egypt (47:27).

46:1–7, Jacob's Itinerary and Vision. The focus of chap. 46 moves from Joseph to Jacob. The itinerary of the patriarch's move from Canaan to Egypt that begins in v. 1 and continues in v. 5 brackets the theophany (in a dream?) experienced by Jacob. After arriving at Beersheba and sacrificing to "the God of his father Isaac," Jacob receives a divine oracle that begins with a self-identification formula ("I am God, the God of your father") and an admonition ("Fear not!"). It continues with God's confirmation of the invitation of Joseph and Pharaoh to Egypt and concludes with the promises of numerous progeny (v. 3) and divine presence (v. 4; cf. 28:12–15). There is a sharp contrast between God's guidance of the patriarch Jacob by oracle and appearance and that of Joseph by hidden divine providence (39:2, 3, 21; 40:8; 41:16; 45:5–8; 50:20).

Gen. 46:1–4 is closer in style and content to the ancestral narratives in chaps. 12–36 than it is to its immediate context in the Joseph story. The itinerary formula is similar to 13:1, 3; 20:1; and 28:10, and the double divine call of Jacob and his one-word answer in 46:2 are exactly parallel to 22:11. The reference in the oracle to the God of the fathers (cf. 26:24; 28:13) and the patriarchal promise of a "great nation" (cf. 12:2) also bring us back to the world of divine visitations to the ancestors (12:7; 15:1; 18:9–15; 26:2–5) at sacred sites (28:10–15; 32:23–32).

46:8–30, The Descendants of Jacob and the Reunion with Joseph. The name list of Jacob's descendants begins with a stereotyped formula ("These are the names of the sons of Israel who came to Egypt") that is repeated exactly in Exod. 1:1. This repetition links the Joseph narrative with its theme of Israel blessed, prolific, and prosperous in Egypt (47:27; Exod. 1:6–7) to the story of Israel redeemed in the book of Exodus. Gen. 46:8 also forms an inclusion with the end of the Joseph story in 47:27. The list begins with the children of the sons of Leah (vv. 8–15) and continues with the children of Leah's maid Zilpah (vv. 16–18). A striking departure from the formulaic character of the list is the heading of the list of the offspring of Joseph and Benjamin (vv. 19–22): "The sons of Jacob's wife Rachel" (set against the normal pattern established in v. 9 of listing the sons of the eponymous ancestors of the twelve tribes). After listing the sons of Dan and Naphtali, Bilhah's children (vv. 23–25), the list concludes with a notice that the family of Jacob who entered Egypt numbered sixty-six (v. 26), a number brought to seventy with the addition of Jacob himself, Joseph, and Joseph's two sons, Manasseh and Ephraim (v. 27).

Joseph's reunion with his father, Jacob (vv. 28–30), closes this section with Jacob's family fully reconciled. The reunion is described in the same way as Joseph's reconciliation with his brothers in 45:14–15; it ends (46:30) with Jacob repeating his words in 45:28.

46:31–47:12, Audiences with Pharaoh. After Joseph's reunion with his father, he goes to notify Pharaoh of the arrival of his family and to obtain the monarch's permission to settle in Goshen. In preparing his brothers for their audience with Pharaoh, Joseph instructs them to mention their desire to continue in their profession of pastoralism; perhaps the purpose of these instructions is to make clear that Joseph's family has no ambition to advance to positions of prominence in Egypt because of his power. The "abhorrence" of Egyptians for shepherds mentioned in 46:34 may refer to the Egyptian view of non-Egyptian Asiatic nomads (43:32).

Pharaoh's generous offer in 47:6 ("The land of Egypt is before you") recalls Abram's generosity in 13:9 ("Is not the whole land before you?") to Lot, who chooses territory that is "like the land of Egypt" (13:10) and Abimelech's similar offer to Abraham (20:15).

After the meeting of Pharaoh with five of Joseph's brothers (47:1–6), Joseph brings his father to Pharaoh (vv. 7–10). At both the beginning and end of this section readers are informed that "Jacob blessed Pharaoh." The point made of Jacob's age (vv. 8–9) probably reflects the belief that an old man near the end of his life is in the most advantageous position to give a blessing (cf. chaps. 27, 48). Jacob's blessing of Pharaoh is another instance of the realization of the promise that Abraham's descendants would be a source of blessing for the Gentiles (30:27–30)—a theme announced by J (12:3; 22:18; 26:4; 28:14) and employed by the composer of the Joseph narrative (39:5). The concluding verses, 47:11–12, relate Joseph's keeping of the promise to care for his family that he made in 45:1–11.

47:13–26, Joseph's Administration. This section, only loosely related to its context, is the conclusion of the description of Joseph the wise and successful administrator of 41:46–57. These two passages bracket the story of Joseph and his family in 42:1–47:12. The story provides some Egyptian "local color" by attribut-

ing to Joseph's administrative skill the royal ownership of all Egyptian land and the Egyptian tax system. The phrase "to this day" in v. 26 indicates that this passage served to explain the origins of a practice current in the author's time.

Although some commentators have suggested that 47:13–26 originally followed immediately after 41:57, one factor that might explain its present position is its function as an example of Joseph's claim that "God sent me ahead of you to save lives" (45:5). Joseph's saving of the lives of the Egyptian populace is mentioned twice, in 47:19, 25; and Joseph's saving of the lives of Gentiles follows immediately a passage (47:7–12) that recalls the blessing that comes to Gentiles by association with the blessed descendants of Abraham.

47:27, The End of the Joseph Story. The Joseph story began with Jacob and his family in Canaan; it ends with Israel in Egypt (46:8–27). The increasing frequency of "Israel" as the patriarch's name indicates not multiple sources but the development of the patriarch from Jacob as an individual character to Israel the eponymous progenitor of the twelve tribes. The movement of the story from Canaan to Egypt is enclosed by the two similarly constructed sentences that begin and end the Joseph story: "Jacob dwelt in the land of his father's sojournings, in the land of Canaan" (37:1); "Israel dwelt in the land of Egypt, in the land of Goshen" (47:27). But 47:27 is Janus-like. If its first half points back to the beginning of the Joseph story, its second half ("There they acquired property, were fruitful and multiplied greatly") points forward to the book of Exodus, where "the descendants of Israel" will be described as "fruitful and prolific" (Exod. 1:7).

47:28–50:26
Supplementary Material to the Joseph Story

If 47:27 marks the effective literary end of the Joseph story, the additional material is concerned chiefly with Jacob and recounts his blessing of Joseph's sons, his farewell testament, and his death and burial in Canaan (47:28–50:14). Only in the final verses of the book of Genesis (50:15–26) does the focus return to Jacob's sons, moving from fear on the part of Joseph's brothers of revenge by Joseph after their father's death to Joseph's reassurance and his own death.

47:28–31, Jacob's Preparations for Death. This section begins with a summary reference to the span of Jacob's life (similar to the genealogical notices in Gen. 5), 130 years in Canaan (47:9) and 17 more in Egypt. As the time of his death approaches, he asks Joseph to swear that he will bury his father in Canaan. The oath and the accompanying gesture is the same as in 24:2, also part of the patriarch Abraham's preparations for death. The concluding words of this section, in which his father does obeisance to Joseph ("Israel bowed") may indicate the fulfillment of Joseph's second dream (37:9–10), in which the obeisance of his parents is described with the same verb as in 47:31 (and cf. 42:6; 43:26).

48:1–22, Jacob's Blessing of Joseph's Sons. Jacob's second act of preparation for death is the blessing of Manasseh and Ephraim (cf. chap. 27). Jacob begins by recalling the divine promise at Luz (Bethel; 28:14, 19; 35:7) of numerous descendants and of the land of Canaan as a permanent possession. The divine name that Jacob uses in 48:3 is El Shaddai, a name that occurs in 17:1; 35:11; Exod. 6:3 (as a divine self-designation); Gen. 28:3 (Isaac's blessing of Jacob); and 43:14 (Jacob's blessing of his sons (→ El Shaddai).

Jacob's blessing of Joseph's sons in 48:5–6 involves an adoption that elevates them to a status equal to that of Jacob's first sons, Reuben and Simeon (cf. 1 Chron. 5:1); this adoption is another instance of Jacob's special predilection for Rachel (48:7) and those born of her. Joseph brings his two sons before the dying patriarch, who rejoices that God has allowed him to see not only Joseph's face again, but his grandsons as well (v. 11). The motif of Jacob seeing someone's face has appeared before (32:30; 33:10), as has the theme of God's providential direction of the affairs of Jacob and his family. When Israel places his right hand on the head of the younger Ephraim and his left on the firstborn Manasseh, Joseph assumes a mistake because of Jacob's poor vision (48:13–17); but Jacob insists (vv. 19–20) that it is no accident, but rather God's intention that "his younger brother [Ephraim] shall be greater than he [Manasseh]." The reference to Jacob's failing eyesight and the divine election of the younger son are clearly meant to recall the beginning of the Jacob story (cf. 25:19–23; chap. 27). As Jacob blessed Joseph's sons with the promise of many descendants (vv. 16, 19), so in vv. 21–22 he reiterates to Joseph the divine promise of occupation of "the land of your fathers."

49:1–27, Jacob's Testament. Jacob's last words to his sons are cast in the form of a farewell discourse, a fairly common biblical genre in which a dying elder gives instructions, exhortations, predictions, or blessings to his children or followers. The closest parallel to 49:2–27 is Deut. 33:6–25, Moses' blessings on the tribes of Israel before his death; the poem in Deuteronomy 33 forms the conclusion of the book of Deuteronomy, the whole of which is the Mosaic final discourse (→ Testament).

Although the poetry of 49:2–27 contains many obscurities and unsolved puzzles, at least a few general observations are in order. First, the sayings to the tribal ancestors often involve wordplays that are impossible to render in translation. For instance, "Dan shall judge" in v. 16 is in Hebrew *dan yadin;* in v. 19, the Hebrew translated "As for Gad, raiders will raid him" is *gad gedud yegudennu.* The poem begins with the six

sons of Leah (vv. 2–15), who are followed by the sons of the two maidservants in an order different from that of 30:5–13. In 49:16–21 the order is Dan (Bilhah's first son), Gad and Asher (Zilpah's sons), and Naphtali (Bilhah's second son). Rachel's sons, Joseph and Benjamin, end the list.

In the discourse, Reuben, the firstborn, is passed over as leader of his brothers because of his intercourse with Bilhah (35:22), and the words addressed to Simeon and Levi recall their revenge for the rape of Dinah (chap. 34). The long section devoted to Judah (49:8–12) notes his preeminence among his brothers (a point made in the Joseph story by his replacement of Reuben as spokesman for the brothers); for the metaphor of the lion, cf. Num. 23:24; 24:9. Gen. 49:10–12, one of the most obscure passages in the poem, is a promise to Judah of dominion and royal sovereignty among the tribes because of Judah's military prowess.

The Joseph saying (vv. 22–26) is amplified with a blessing that promises fertility (cf. the similar blessing of Joseph in Deut. 33:13–16). The promised fertility includes agricultural bounty because of abundant rains, along with human and animal fertility ("the blessings of breasts and womb"). It may be no coincidence that agricultural plenty and human fertility are connected in Genesis 41, which recounts both Joseph's management of Egypt's grain production and the birth of his two sons. The number of divine names in 49:24–25 (Bull of Jacob, Shepherd, Rock of Israel, God of your father, El Shaddai) is striking.

Like the sayings about Judah, Issachar, Dan, and Naphtali (and perhaps Joseph, although the text is unclear), the Benjamin saying is based on an animal metaphor. Finally, the poem has incorporated a gloss in v. 18 (cf. Ps. 119:166).

49:28–33, Jacob's Death and Burial. Gen. 49:28 is a prose conclusion to the poem, in which the sayings are interpreted as blessings ("He blessed each of them; with a blessing appropriate to each he blessed them"). In vv. 29–32 are Jacob's instructions regarding his burial in the family burial plot in Canaan (cf. chap. 23), where are already buried the ancestors Abraham and Sarah, Isaac and Rebekah, and Leah (for Rachel's burial in Bethlehem, cf. 35:19–20). This section closes with the narration of Jacob's death in 49:33. The idiom used twice in this death report ("he was gathered to his kinsfolk") has appeared before, of Abraham (25:8) and Isaac (35:29). Though the idiom may simply refer to interment in the family grave, it has also been suggested that the expression refers to the practice of secondary burial, the gathering and reburial of the bones of the deceased after decomposition of the body (→ Burial).

50:1–14, Jacob's Funeral. Joseph weeps as he mourns his father's death in language reminiscent of Esau's reconciliation with Jacob in 33:4 and of Joseph with his brothers in 45:14–15. The embalming of Jacob (and of Joseph in 50:26) in preparation for the funeral procession to Canaan is another instance of Egyptian "local color" in material connected with Joseph. The reference to "the Canaanites who were dwelling in the land" in 50:11 recalls the same observation in 12:6 and 13:7. We are reminded that though the promise of numerous descendants is on the way toward fulfillment, the promise of the land is still unrealized (except for the burial ground purchased by Abraham in chap. 23, where Jacob is to be buried; and cf. 33:19). Gen. 12:6 and 50:11 form an inclusion around the ancestral narratives from the call of Abram to the death of Jacob.

50:15–26, Joseph's Final Reconciliation with His Brothers. After Jacob's death, former patterns of behavior reassert themselves. Fearful that Joseph might now take revenge after their father's death (as Esau intended in 27:41), the brothers engage in a final act of deception when they bring to Joseph the fictitious dying request of Jacob that Joseph forgive his brothers. Once more, Joseph weeps, and his brothers prostrate themselves before him with the words "Let us be slaves to you!" (as in 44:16, 33). In his reassurance to his brothers Joseph sums up again the meaning of the whole narrative: "You planned evil for me, but God meant it for good . . . to preserve the life of many people" (50:20; cf. 45:5–8).

Joseph's adoption of the children of Manasseh's son Machir, expressed idiomatically (v. 23: "born on Joseph's knees," as in 30:3), recalls Jacob's adoption of his grandchildren (48:5, 13–20). Both adoptions reflect tribal history in which Ephraim, Manasseh, and Machir are counted among the tribes of Israel (Judg. 5:14). For another instance of longevity expressed by recording several generations of descendants born in one's lifetime, cf. Job 42:16. In his dying words (50:24–25) Joseph repeats the promise of the land, the realization of which will be described in the narrative that extends from Exodus to Joshua.

God's intention to preserve life (45:5; 50:20) not only is meant to refer to the preservation of Jacob's family alone during the famine, but has a wider scope. Because of Joseph's wise administration, all Egypt and indeed the whole world (41:57) is blessed with abundant food. Seen in the context of the book of Genesis, the Joseph story, played out not in the land of promise but in the wider world, is linked to chaps. 2–4, a story of alienation and division of husband and wife that led to the expulsion from Eden and the tree of life, unremitting hard work to produce food, and murderous violence between brothers. In the Joseph story, which concludes Genesis, these ancient curses are reversed and canceled as Joseph lives with his reconciled family in a land of abundant food. The words of the wise serpent in 3:4–5 ("You shall not die! You shall be like gods, knowing good and evil") are transformed by the wise

Joseph in his final theological summation in 50:19–20: "Am I in the place of God? Though you planned evil against me, God meant it for good, to keep alive a numerous people."

Bibliography

Brueggemann, W. *Genesis.* Interpretation: The Bible Commentary for Preaching and Teaching. Atlanta, GA: Knox, 1982.

Coats, G. W. *Genesis, with an Introduction to Narrative Literature.* Forms of the Old Testament Literature, 1. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1983.

Gunkel, H. *Genesis.* Macon, GA: Mercer University, 1997 (orig. publ. 1901).

Kselman, J. S., "The Book of Genesis: A Decade of Scholarly Research." *Interpretation* 45 (1991): 380–92.

Sarna, N. M. *Understanding Genesis.* New York: Schocken, 1970.

Vawter, B. *On Genesis: A New Reading.* Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1977.

von Rad, G. *Genesis.* Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1972.

Westermann, C. *Genesis: A Commentary.* Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1984–86.

Exodus

P. KYLE McCARTER, JR.

INTRODUCTION

The book of Exodus presents two momentous events in the story of Israel. The first, described in chaps. 1–12, is Yahweh's deliverance of Israel from slavery in Egypt. The second, found in chaps. 19–40, is the institution at Mount Sinai of the system by which Israel was to worship Yahweh. The link between these events is Yahweh's miraculous guidance of the people on a march through the desert (12:37–19:2).

Corresponding to these two principal events are the two contrasting geographical settings of the book. The first is pharaonic Egypt, where the various episodes of the story occur in royal building projects, along the banks of the Nile, or within the palace itself. The second setting is Sinai, with the desert encampment of the Israelites at the foot of the sacred mountain. The change of locale from Egypt to Sinai is achieved by the trek through the wilderness.

The account of the captivity in Egypt is a continuation of the story of the family of Jacob begun in Genesis. The immediate background is the family's departure from Canaan during a famine and settlement in Egypt on land granted to them by the king (Gen. 46–47). The canonical division between Genesis and Exodus corresponds to a major transition in the story. Jacob and his sons have died, and their descendants, the Israelites, have been enslaved by the Egyptians. The Exodus narrative tells how Yahweh keeps faith with his promises to the patriarchs and rescues their descendants from slavery.

The account of the institution of the system of worship is the first part of the long Sinai section (or "pericope") of the Bible, which begins in Exod. 19:2, where the people encamp at Sinai, and extends to Num. 10:10, after which they set out on the march again. This pericope is the principal biblical repository of the regulations governing the forms of the service of Yahweh. The materials in Exodus describe the inauguration of the system of worship, centering upon the erection of the tabernacle, or wilderness sanctuary. The materials in Leviticus prescribe the rules for the ongoing operation of this system, together with the requirements for ritual purity. The materials in Numbers include the regulations for the camp in the wilderness.

The account of the wilderness trek continues with the departure from Sinai in Num 10:11 and the journey to the border of the promised land. Thus it provides a narrative connection between the exodus from Egypt and conquest of Canaan. The principal themes of the wilderness story are Yahweh's miraculous sustenance of the people under inhospitable conditions and the people's anxious ingratitude.

Literary History

The literary character of the book of Exodus corresponds to its twofold division of topic and setting. The story of the captivity and escape from Egypt is told almost entirely in prose narrative. The account of the institution of the divinely ordained system of worship at Sinai also includes a few passages of true narrative, but it is predominantly a mixture of nonnarrative materials, including laws, ritual regulations, and prescriptions for proper worship, presented in several long passages of divine discourse.

The narrative portions of the book are composed of the Pentateuch source documents conventionally called J, E, D, and P (→ Sources of the Pentateuch).

The Yahwistic Account (J)

The basic thread to which the rest has been attached is the J account. The original form of this old story remains generally visible despite its reworking by subsequent editors. It presents the departure from Egypt as a continuation of the theme of the double promise made by Yahweh to the patriarchs. Israel is to become a great nation living in a productive land. The first part of the promise, the growth into a great nation, seems already near fulfillment at the beginning of Exodus. The Israelites have become a strong and numerous people, a sign of the power of the blessing that accompanied the promise (Gen. 12:2–3). But the captivity in Egypt is a hindrance to the realization of the second part of the promise, the occupation of the promised land, and the king of Egypt, in his determination to reduce the numbers of the Israelites, poses a direct threat to the first part. Thus in the J narrative it is to safeguard his promise to the patriarchs that Yahweh commissions Moses to lead the people to freedom. Knowing that this can be achieved only by force (Exod. 3:19–20), Yahweh strikes Egypt with repeated plagues until

Pharaoh agrees to let the people go. Thus for J the goal of the Exodus is clearly the promised land (3:8, 17). Sinai is only an important stop along the way. J's version of the proclamation of the covenant between Yahweh and Israel, which is preserved in chap. 34, links the covenant very closely to the conquest of the land (cf. 34:11). The covenant stipulations are largely concerned with agricultural festivals, so that the mandated mode of worship is also linked to the land (34:18–26).

The Elohistic Account (E)

The J account seems to be supplemented at many points by materials drawn from E, but it is often very difficult to distinguish E from J in Exodus. The criterion of divine names, according to which J is characterized by the use of "Yahweh" ("the LORD") and E by the use of "God," ceases to be reliable after the E account of the disclosure of the name "Yahweh" in chap. 3. The E narrative begins to refer to the deity as "Yahweh" as well as "God," so that the use of "Yahweh" is no longer a reliable indicator of J. E can still be recognized, however, by its formal, otherworldly tone. Yahweh does not act through natural agents in E as he does in J, so that, for example, the agency of the east wind in J's account of the plague of locusts is lacking in E's account of the same plague (cf. 10:12–20). Also in E Yahweh is a more remote deity. In contrast to J's account of the apparition at Sinai, in which Yahweh descends upon the mountain (19:18) and addresses the people, in E's account he speaks from the sky (19:19; cf. 20:21). If Israel is to be joined to Yahweh in a covenant relationship, it will have to be "a people dwelling alone, not reckoned among the nations" (Num. 23:9). For E, then, the goal of the Exodus is Sinai itself (Exod. 3:12) and the meaning of the covenant is that Israel becomes "a realm of priests and a holy nation" (19:6).

Priestly Materials (P)

The basic JE narrative was substantially reworked to reflect the belief of the Jerusalem priesthood that the Temple cult, with its various rituals and regulations, originated in the time of Moses and derived its authority from the Sinai revelation. In particular, the old JE account of the Passover (12:21–23, 27b, 29–39) was enlarged and revised to reflect the fully developed Passover celebration of later times (12:1–20, 29, 40–50). Other distinctive contributions from P include the enhancement of the role of Aaron, from whom the Jerusalem priesthood traced its descent, the furnishing of genealogical information, and the annotation of individual episodes to conform to P's chronological system and wilderness itinerary. In all, a significant amount of material was introduced from the P source, and the Sinai pericope was greatly expanded to accommodate cultic and legal documents preserved in Priestly tradition.

The Priestly History

In its present form, therefore, the book of Exodus is a part of the Priestly history that extends from Genesis to Numbers. According to this history, the world was created by God as a perfect and sacred system in which men and women have an important and well-defined role. They proved unable to live properly in the divinely created world, however, so that God entered into a series of covenants with them, with special provisions for their safety and welfare. The first covenant was made with Noah and his descendants (Gen. 9). Human misbehavior continued, however, and God chose to enter into a special relationship with one human family; this was the covenant with Abraham (Gen. 17). The events narrated in Exodus provide the context for the next and most important stage of the covenantal history. This stage is marked by two special divine acts of disclosure. The first, described in 6:2–4, is the revelation of the name "Yahweh," which, as in the E account, was unknown to the patriarchs. For P, the events surrounding the Exodus derive their meaning from this revelation. The purpose of the rescue from Egypt was to demonstrate to the Israelites the awesome power associated with the name Yahweh ("and you will know that it is I, Yahweh your god, who brought you out," 6:7). The purpose of the "signs and wonders" was to demonstrate the same thing to the Egyptians (7:5). The second act of disclosure is the promulgation of the Sinaitic legislation, the rules by which human beings can live properly and safely in the divinely ordered world. This revelation accompanies the covenant Yahweh makes with Israel, the third covenant in the Priestly scheme.

Deuteronomistic Influence

The Exodus narrative has been expanded or rearranged at several points to represent ideas scholars call "Deuteronomistic," because they are based on the teachings of the book of Deuteronomy (→ Deuteronomist; Deuteronomistic Framework; Deuteronomistic Historian). This aspect of the text of Exodus is part of a larger phenomenon. Much of Exodus, Leviticus, and Numbers is paralleled in Deuteronomy, and there was a tendency during the last phase of the composition of these books to expand or revise the text to reflect Deuteronomic materials and ideas.

The Exodus Tradition

Underlying the present book of Exodus are early traditions, probably first transmitted in oral form, about the Exodus, the wilderness sojourn, and the revelation at Sinai. These are part of a larger complex of traditions that also includes the patriarchal sojourn in Canaan and the conquest. This complex was the basic

myth, or sacred story, through which the ancient Israelite community expressed its identity.

The meaning of the story has to do with the possession of the promised land. It involves three stages of preparation: a period of temporary residence in the land (the patriarchal sojourn), a period of exclusion from the land (the residence and captivity in Egypt), and a period of sanctification and return to the land (the wilderness wanderings). This preparation is followed by a triumphal reentry into the land and its conquest and settlement. The events described in Exodus belong to the end of the period of exclusion and the beginning of the period of sanctification. They should be understood in terms of the larger theme of the possession of the land. The hard labor at the end of the exclusion period is the opposite of the life that lies ahead in Canaan. The service of Pharaoh, who exploits the people's labor for himself, is the opposite of the service of Yahweh, who ensures that the people's labor in the land will produce crops that sustain them. The importance of the deliverance from Egypt is that it puts an end to the period of exclusion and looks ahead to the occupation of the land. The importance of the covenant made at Sinai is that it joins the people to the divine proprietor of the land and provides the rules by which they can prosper within the seasonal cycle of the land. As noted above, the Exodus and covenant retain approximately this significance in the earliest written version of the story (J). The wilderness sojourn, of which the revelation at Sinai is a part, corresponds to the period of sanctification in the larger story. It is the time of final preparation, when the people Israel learn to live in complete dependence upon Yahweh and receive the divine instructions by which they can live in the land.

Significance for the Ancient Community

As noted above, the events described in the book of Exodus were part of the basic story through which the ancient community expressed its identity. The God who rescued them from slavery in Egypt and brought them to himself in the wilderness was the God they now served (cf. Hos. 13:4–5). The "signs and wonders" in Egypt and the miracles in the wilderness, especially the deliverance at the sea, were paradigmatic illustrations of both the power of the God of Israel and the favor in which he held his people. These events were recited in worship both to praise Yahweh for his goodness in the past and to appeal for his help in present troubles. Examples of such liturgical materials have survived. Note, for example, the large role played by the plagues and the desert miracles in the so-called historical psalms (Pss. 78:12–16, 44–51; 105:23–43; 106:7–33; 135:8–9; 136:10–16). According to Deuteronomic law the story of the Exodus was to be recited during the celebration of the Passover (cf. Exod. 12:26–26), the Feast of Unleavened Bread (13:8), and the consecration of firstborn (13:14–15), thus preserving an understanding of the historical meaning of those ceremonies.

The Pre-exilic Community

For those who lived in pre-exilic Judah and knew the story as it was told in the J narrative, the Exodus was clear evidence of Yahweh's faithfulness to his double promise of land and progeny. The story of the escape provided assurance not only of security, but also of prosperity. The goal of the Exodus was the promised land, where the people now lived as heirs to the blessing that had permitted them to thrive even under the hardships imposed by Pharaoh. At the same time, the covenant bond established at Sinai formalized and clarified the people's relationship to their God, who guaranteed them possession of the land and who required them to make contributions from their flocks and fields and to assemble for worship at the major festivals of the agricultural year.

The Postexilic Community

For the community living in the time of the Second Temple (after 515 B.C.), the Exodus story was a part of the Priestly history. The plagues and the parting of the sea demonstrated the universal sovereignty of the God of Israel. The institution of the Passover service in Egypt and the tabernacle cult at Sinai demonstrated the continuity of the religion practiced by the postexilic community with the Mosaic period, from which the various institutions of worship derived their authority. For P, the revelation at Sinai was the fountainhead of the rules and practices that governed the life of the community. Laws, customs, and institutions that were accorded authoritative status, therefore, were traced to this event.

Historical Context

The general background of the story of Israel's enslavement by Pharaoh is the historical phenomenon of Asiatic laborers in Egypt. People with Semitic names are known to have been working in Egypt at least as early as the eighteenth century B.C. The use of Asiatic labor was especially common during the New Kingdom (ca. 1552–1069 B.C.), and there are many references in the records of that time to the participation of foreign laborers, including Syrians and Canaanites, in building projects. The memory of a period of this kind of hard labor in Egypt was an early component of Israelite tradition, probably based on the historical experience of some group of the ancestors of the later community. In the long process of the development of the tradition, however, the details needed for modern

historians to date and explain this experience were lost. "The land of Rameses," in which the family of Jacob settled (Gen. 47:11), was in northeastern Egypt, where a royal residence was maintained from about 1300 B.C. onward. The region took its name from Ramesses II (ca. 1279–1212 B.C.), who sponsored building projects at several sites in the region, including Per-Atum and Per-Ramessu, the "Pithom and Rameses" of Exod. 1:11 (→ Pithom; Raamses, Rameses). For these reasons most modern historians have assigned the events of Exodus 1–15 to the New Kingdom, often specifically to the reign of Ramesses II (→ Ramesses). Thus Seti I (ca. 1294–1279 B.C.) would be the new king of 1:8 and Ramesses himself the pharaoh of the Exodus. There is reason for great caution on this point, however. Despite the antiquity of the sites, the names Pithom and Rameses were not widely used as designations of cities before the seventh century, and the term "store cities" does not occur elsewhere in early biblical materials. Thus the second half of 1:11, the only specific link to extrabiblical evidence offered in the story, may be a later interpolation based on uncertain authority and, in any case, provides no basis for dating the Exodus to the Ramesside period. Thus many modern historians prefer to say nothing about the date of the events related in Exodus, except that, as basic components of the story that defined Israel, they must have taken place before the final formation of the Israelite community in twelfth-century Canaan.

COMMENTARY

1:1–7:7
Israel in Egypt

The first section of Exodus describes the enslavement of the Israelites in Egypt and Yahweh's preparations for their escape. Thus it sets the stage for the story of the plagues and the flight into the wilderness that follow. Yahweh's decision to act, however, is based not only on compassion, but also on his past relationship with Israel's ancestors (2:23–25; 3:7–10), so that it is clear from the beginning that what he has in mind is not only a rescue but the reestablishment of his relationship with Israel on a new basis. When the people escape, they will "serve God" at his mountain sanctuary (3:12 [E]). Yahweh will renew his covenant with them (cf. 6:7 [P]) and lead them into the promised land (3:8, 17 [J]; 6:8 [P]). Thus the preparations made here are not only for the Exodus itself, but also for the revelations to be made at Sinai and the wilderness journey to Canaan. The most important part of these preparations is the commissioning of an individual who will serve as an intermediary between the people and their God throughout this long process. Thus by virtue of his commission here in chaps. 3–4 and 6, Moses will serve as the agent of Yahweh's punishment of the Egyptians and the leader of the march from the border of Egypt to the border of Canaan. This means that he is the dominant human figure not only of Exodus, but of Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy as well.

1:1–22
The Oppression in Egypt

The opening of Exodus provides a transition from the stories about the patriarchs to the stories about the captivity in Egypt. At the end of Genesis, the sons of Jacob and their families were living as honored guests in the best land of Egypt (Gen. 45:17–20), which Pharaoh had granted them in gratitude for Joseph's service at the Egyptian court. Now, however, Joseph and his brothers have died. The land is filled with their descendants, but the Israelites of this new generation are no longer welcome in Egypt. The new pharaoh recognizes no obligation to them. Their number and strength alarm him, and he begins to devise ways to control them. He presses them into the service of the state, and when this hard labor fails to check their vigor, he contrives the death of their male children.

This opening section emphasizes the increase in the number of Israelites. This is, in the first place, a part of an ancient and widespread literary pattern that is most easily seen in the Mesopotamian story of Atrahasis. That story, like this one, begins with hard labor. At first the laborers are the younger gods, but they are replaced early in the story by a human labor force. The people work hard for centuries excavating canals. At the same time they multiply, until the land is crowded and noisy, and the gods become alarmed. In particular, the great god Enlil is disturbed by the clamor and cannot sleep. He orders that supplies be withheld from the people and that the land be afflicted with a drought. The people are decimated, but Atrahasis, the human hero of the story, eventually manages to end the drought with the help of Enki, a favorably inclined god. The people again multiply, and the land again becomes crowded. Enlil afflicts the people a second time, but Atrahasis and Enki fend off this disaster too. Finally Enlil instigates a great flood. All human life is in danger of being destroyed. Acting on Enki's instructions, however, Atrahasis constructs a large boat and saves his family, thus preserving human life. This story is often compared (and rightly so) with the biblical story of Noah and the Flood. Its literary pattern, however, is closer to the story of the affliction of the Israelites in Egypt. The people are working very hard, but they are nonetheless multiplying and filling the land. Pharaoh is alarmed, and, like Enlil, attempts to reduce their number by a series of afflictions, first imposing hard labor on them, then directing the midwives to kill their sons, and finally ordering their sons to be cast into the Nile. One of these sons, Moses, is

saved by being placed in the Nile in an "ark" (the term is the same as that used for Noah's boat). The arks of Atrahasis and Noah preserve human life, and the ark of Moses preserves the life of the man who will eventually liberate his people from bondage.

Though the increase in the number of the people is part of an ancient literary pattern, it is also a thematic component of both the P and J narrative sources. The language used in 1:7 to describe the increase connects this story with a series of other passages in which a motif of divine blessing is expressed in terms of human fertility. The development of this motif began with the blessing of creation in Gen. 1:28, according to which the newly created men and women were to "be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth." This blessing was articulated again after the Flood (Gen. 9:7) and then narrowed and conferred especially upon the family of Abraham (12:3). The subsequent stories about the patriarchs show that the divine blessing continued to be effective for Abraham's descendants, and the references to the large number of Israelites in this passage represent a continuation of the motif, which will receive its climactic expression in the oracles of Balaam in Numbers 23 and 24. In its clearest form, this motif is a thematic component of the latest, or Priestly, version of the larger story, to which Gen. 1:28 and 9:7 as well as Exod. 1:1–7 and 13–14 are usually assigned. Thus the language of the blessing of creation is echoed precisely in v. 7, where we are told that the Israelites in Egypt "were fruitful . . . multiplied . . . [and] the land was filled with them." Note, moreover, that the theme of the blessing of Israel was already present in the older J narrative. The language used to describe Israel's increase in v. 12, for example, recalls Gen. 30:30, which characterizes the prosperity of Laban's household during Jacob's residence there. Both of these passages derive from the J narrative, in which the blessing of Israel was a major theme.

1:1–7, The New Generation of Israelites. The opening passage describes the transition of Israel's ancestors from a single family to a multitude of families. Thus the twelve sons of Jacob are listed in vv. 2–4 both to review the names of the individual members of the family that came to Egypt and to identify the ancestors of the tribes.

1:8–14, Hard Labor. As the story begins, Pharaoh declares his fear of the people of Israel. They are, he says, dangerously numerous. His solution is to put them to work building the store cities of Pithom and Rameses. Many commentators have questioned the suitability of this solution. Would it have been an effective way to reduce the population? Would the king have willingly diminished his own labor force? Some critics doubt that the themes of population increase and hard labor, though joined in the earliest written sources, were originally related. Note further that the story of Israel's hard labor finds its natural intensification not in the episode of the Hebrew midwives that follows immediately in vv. 15–22, but in the story of the deprivation of straw for brick making in 5:6–18. Thus this episode stands rather isolated in its present context.

1:15–22, The Hebrew Midwives. Pharaoh commands two midwives to kill all male children born to the Israelites, but the midwives will not cooperate and, in desperation, Pharaoh orders his soldiers to cast the male children of the Israelites into the Nile. The midwives refuse because they "fear God," that is, because they are women of moral scruples. The use of this general expression, rather than "fear Yahweh" (→ Fear of the Lord), raises the possibility that the women are not Israelites, but their names, Shiphrah and Puah, are Semitic, not Egyptian.

According to the present form of the story, the atrocities described here are to be understood as intensification of the hard labor just described. As noted above, however, the midwives episode is not a natural continuation of the hard labor episode. Instead, it represents an introduction to the story of Moses, the central figure of the story, who appears first as an infant endangered by Pharaoh's decree.

2:1–4:31
The Story of Moses

Only three human figures have prominent roles in the story of Israel's escape from slavery in Egypt. Of these, Aaron is little more than an extension of Moses himself, and Pharaoh is his antagonist. Moses is overwhelmingly the dominant figure. The keen interest the tradition took in him has influenced the growth of the narrative, which now contains considerable material about his early career. As just noted, the expected continuation of the story of Israel's hard labor in 1:8–14 is the story of the deprivation of straw for brick making in chap. 5. But the natural flow of the narrative is diverted at this point to make room for an account of Moses' childhood and sojourn in Midian. Though the story of Moses' infancy seems to have been known only to E, the tradition of the flight to Midian and sojourn there is represented in both of the early narrative sources (J and E), so that it must have entered the tradition at an early date.

2:1–10, Moses' Birth and Childhood. Moses is introduced as an infant hidden by his mother in the reeds of the Nile to protect him from Pharaoh's decree. Pharaoh's own daughter finds him, takes pity on him, and adopts him. With the help of his sister, who was secretly watching over him, the Egyptian princess arranges for the infant to be suckled by a Hebrew wet nurse, who is none other than the baby's mother. Thus the child Moses is rescued from death, nursed by his own mother, and raised in the Egyptian palace. The in-

fant who escapes mortal peril to grow up and become the leader of his people is a common motif in world folklore. In one group of such stories, the child's fate is foretold by an oracle, so that the king he is destined to replace exposes him at birth. Accordingly, some scholars have speculated that in an earlier version of our story Moses' role as liberator of the Israelites was foretold and Pharaoh's true purpose in drowning the sons of the Israelites was to eliminate the promised child. But no trace of such an oracle is preserved in our sources. Note, moreover, that the infant Moses is not exposed or cast into the water; he is placed among the reeds for protection. A closer parallel, therefore, is the so-called Legend of Sargon, a text describing the birth and rise to power of the third-millennium B.C. Mesopotamian ruler Sargon the Great. In this document, Sargon says that shortly after his birth his mother, a high priestess, put him in a basket of rushes caulked with bitumen and set him adrift in the river, where he was found and raised by an irrigation worker.

The Legend of Sargon was composed long after the reign of Sargon the Great. Similarly, the story of Moses' birth, which seems to have been lacking in the J source, is legendary rather than historical in character (→ Moses). No individual but Moses himself is identified by name, not even his parents (cf. 6:20). Moses' own name *(moshe)* is explained in v. 10 as if it were derived from Hebrew *masha,* "draw out"; but in fact it was a common element in Egyptian names, often used by itself with the meaning "child" (cf. King "Thutmose"). Thus Moses was one of several Egyptian names in the early levitical genealogy, including Hophni, Phinehas, and Merari. This does not mean that Moses or any of the others was an Egyptian, but it does suggest that a portion of the tribe of Levi may have lived in Egypt at some time.

2:11–25, Moses' Flight from Egypt. Moses' Egyptian upbringing does not extinguish his identification with his people, and when he sees an Egyptian beating a Hebrew, he slays the assailant. Now sought by Pharaoh as a criminal, he flees eastward into the desert and comes to the land of Midian, east of the Gulf of Aqabah, or Elath, in northwestern Arabia.

The region south and east of Israel, which included Paran, Teman, and southern Edom, or Seir, was regarded as sacred by the Israelites throughout the early biblical period. Horeb, the mountain of God, was here (3:1), and from here the God of Israel was said to march on behalf of his people (cf. Deut. 33:2; Judg. 5:4; Hab. 3:3, 7). Many scholars believe that the origins of Yahwism are to be sought in the vicinity of Midian, and it may be noteworthy in this regard that Moses' father-in-law is a "priest of Midian" (Exod. 2:16; cf. 3:1; 18:1) who in chap. 18 invokes, praises, and sacrifices to Yahweh. Elsewhere in the Bible, the Midianites, though said in Gen. 25:2 to be descended from Abraham, are depicted as foreigners, sometimes regarded with hostility by the Israelites (e.g., Num. 31). In the Gideon story (Judg. 6–8) they are presented as camel-riding nomads, but the "Midianite" culture known from the archaeological record was largely sedentary. Having rescued seven sisters from a group of hostile shepherds, Moses is befriended by their father, who takes him into his home and gives him Zipporah, one of his daughters, as a wife. She bears Moses a son, Gershom, whose name provides an occasion for wordplay involving the Hebrew term *ger,* "sojourner."

In this passage Moses' father-in-law is called Reuel. In 4:18, however, his name is Jethro (cf. chap. 18). The situation is further complicated by Judg. 4:11, where Moses' father-in-law is called Hobab and is said to have been a Kenite rather than a Midianite. Finally, Num. 10:29 speaks of "Hobab the son of Reuel, the father-in-law of Moses." Apparently there were at least two variants in this part of the tradition about Moses. According to the first, which was probably older, Moses' father-in-law was the Midianite Jethro. According to the second, which may have developed later in Judah, his father-in-law was Hobab the Kenite. Unless the name Reuel represents yet a third traditional variant, it must have arisen as an error based, perhaps, on the name of the father of Hobab or Jethro. This account is followed by an editorial passage (2:23–25) in which we are informed of two important events that have taken place offstage. The king of Egypt has died, so that it is now possible for Moses to return to Egypt (cf. 4:19). Yahweh, in the meantime, has taken note of the suffering of his people. The reference to the covenant with the patriarchs in v. 24 has the effect of incorporating the present events into the larger covenantal scheme of the Priestly history.

3:1–6, The Burning Bush. Moses leads his father-in-law's sheep to Mount Horeb, where he is astonished to see a bush that is burning but not consumed. He does not realize that what he has encountered is a messenger or angel of Yahweh in the form of a flame until, approaching the bush, he hears a divine voice speaking in the fire. Knowing that it is fatal for a human being to see a god (cf. 33:20), he covers his face and listens. Horeb is another name for Sinai, the mountain at which the Israelites will assemble after their departure from Egypt (cf. v. 12). The name Sinai is probably hinted at by the designation of the burning bush in Hebrew as *sene,* as if Sinai meant "the mountain of the *sene*-bush" (cf. the designation of Yahweh as "the one who dwells in the *sene*-bush" in Deut. 33:16). The names Horeb and Sinai may derive from originally distinct traditions about the mountain of Yahweh, but in the present form of the story they are identical. The exact location of Mount Horeb is unknown; indeed, it had probably been forgotten by the time of the composition of most of the biblical literature. The present episode argues strongly for locating it in northwestern Arabia. The alternatives are discussed below in con-

nection with the wilderness itinerary (see the commentary on 15:22–18:27).

3:7–4:17, The Commissioning of Moses. This passage contains the Bible's most detailed account of the reception of a divine commission. It seems also to have been the paradigmatic account, having influenced the stories of the commissioning of Gideon (Judg. 6:11–24), Samuel (1 Sam. 3:2–14), and others. It is, moreover, a composite account, produced by the combination of two versions of the events. Thus Moses' charge is reported twice, in a short version that derives from E (3:9–10) and in a much longer version taken from J (3:7–8, 16–22). The P version of Moses' commissioning is preserved in 6:5–13. In both of the present versions the message Moses receives includes an announcement and a commission. Yahweh has taken notice of the affliction of the Israelites in Egypt, and he is sending Moses to bring them out of the land. In the J version, he is told to lead them into a new land, which, according to v. 8, will be "good" and, in contrast to the confinement the Israelites have experienced in Egypt, "broad," i.e., open and free. It is described as "a land flowing with milk and honey," a stereotyped phrase referring to the raising of livestock and beekeeping, staple economies of the central Israelite hills. At the conclusion of the J version, Moses is told to instruct the people to despoil the Egyptians when they leave (cf. 11:2–3; 12:35–36).

In each version the commission is followed by two questions raised by Moses in objection to Yahweh's plan. His first question in the E version (3:11–12) regards his own ability to accomplish the task. God assures him that "I will be with you," but the "sign" offered—that Moses will lead the people to this very mountain, where they will "worship God"—is puzzling. We expect some kind of reassurance before the fact (cf. Judg. 6:15–21). Moses' second objection in the E version (3:13–15) is that the Israelites will demand to know the name of the God who has commissioned him. According to Elohistic tradition, then, the Israelites did not yet know Yahweh's name. It is now revealed in a mysterious way. God identifies himself as "I am who I am" (v. 14). The Hebrew word *'ehye,* "I am," is thus associated with the name Yahweh, and Moses is to tell the people that "I am" sent him. "I am who I am" belongs to a category of expressions designated *idem per idem,* used in biblical Hebrew and related languages to refer to gods. In one way or another, they stress divine freedom, majesty, and mystery. Compare "I show favor to whom I show favor, and I show compassion to whom I show compassion" in 33:19, and "I say what I say" in Ezek. 12:25.

Moses' first objection in the J version (4:1–9) is that, despite Yahweh's statement to the contrary (3:18), the people will not believe him. Yahweh responds by giving him three magical transformations to perform to authenticate himself (cf. Deut. 13:1–2): he will be able to turn his rod into a snake and back into a rod again, to make the skin of his hand diseased and healthy again, and to turn the water of the Nile into blood. All three of these tricks suggest the deadly character of the power Moses will wield, and the last adumbrates the first plague (7:14–24). Moses' second objection in the J version (4:10–16) is that he is inarticulate and "slow of speech and slow of tongue." Yahweh's solution is to assign Moses' brother Aaron to be his spokesman. In depicting the leadership of Moses and Aaron in this way, the J narrative prefigures the rule of the Davidic king and Aaronidic high priest in its own day. Note that at this point Aaron is called "the Levite" (v. 14), a title that could equally well be applied to Moses (cf. 2:1) but that here looks ahead to Aaron's role as ancestor of the levitical priests who presided in Jerusalem. Just as it was their responsibility to transmit the Mosaic law (cf. Lev. 10:11), so it was the responsibility of their ancestor to transmit the words of Moses himself. At the end of the passage (v. 17) Moses is reminded to take along his rod, "with which you will perform the signs." The rod, then, is to be used not just for the serpent miracle (vv. 2–5), but to execute all the signs. This interpretation of the rod is characteristic of the E source, from which this notice derives.

4:18–31, Moses' Return to Egypt. This passage, combining a variety of narrative fragments under the general heading of Moses' return from Midian, presents a number of interpretive difficulties. Without revealing his divine commission, Moses obtains permission from Jethro to return to Egypt. We are told that he prepares his wife and *sons* for the journey (v. 20), but we know only of Gershom (2:22), and 18:4 suggests that Eliezer was born after the Israelites left Egypt. Yahweh's orders in vv. 19 and 21–23 seem superfluous after the elaborate instructions Moses has already been given. Note, however, that vv. 22–23 introduce a new element, anticipating the final plague and giving it a clear rationale, which is lacking in chap. 11. Israel is Yahweh's firstborn (cf. Hos. 11:1; Jer. 31:9), and if Pharaoh refuses to release him, Pharaoh's firstborn will die.

The most difficult part of this passage is the enigmatic incident recorded in vv. 24–26. No motive is given for the attack. Presumably the attacker is some minor divinity, like the "man" who wrestled with Jacob at the ford of the Jabbok (Gen. 32:24–30). Thus the episode shows that the blood of circumcision, like paschal blood (12:13), was thought of as having the power to fend off demonic assaults. If this is the case, however, it is surprising that the attacker is called "Yahweh" (the Septuagint understandably modifies this to "an angel of Yahweh"). Nor are we told who is attacked or to whose "feet" (probably meaning genitals) Zipporah touches her son's prepuce, but the majority of commentators assume that Moses is intended in both cases. As it stands, the story has become a vehicle for explaining the expression "bridegroom of blood" or

"son-in-law of blood," which was current in the time of the writer, but is obscure to us. In any case, Moses arrives safely at Mount Horeb, where Yahweh has instructed Aaron to meet him. As they make their way back to Egypt Moses reports to his brother all that has happened, and, when they arrive, they inform the people of Yahweh's plans.

5:1–6:1
The First Audience with Pharaoh

The confrontation between Moses and the Egyptian king in this passage establishes the pattern for the contest with Pharaoh in 7:8–15:21. Moses and Aaron ask permission for the people to go into the wilderness and celebrate a feast to their God. Modern scholars cite this as evidence that the Passover or some antecedent festival was celebrated by the Israelites before the official institution of the Passover described in chap. 12. Moses and Aaron make their request first as a demand in Yahweh's name, but Pharaoh retorts that he does not acknowledge Yahweh's authority. They then attempt to reason with the king, arguing that Yahweh might become angry at their failure to celebrate the feast and punish them. The language used at this point is that of the theophany at the burning bush (5:3; cf. 3:18), and, as predicted at that time (3:19), Pharaoh refuses, making it necessary for Yahweh to strike Egypt with plagues (6:1; cf. 3:20).

Pharaoh concludes from the request that the Israelites are idle and in need of harder work. He commands that the straw needed for brick making be withheld from them. Clay without straw produces very brittle bricks, so that the Israelites are obliged to forage for stubble, and the result is much more work. When the Israelite foremen complain to Pharaoh, they learn the cause of the new policy. They go out to Moses and Aaron and chide them for their loss of favor with Pharaoh. When Moses in turn complains to Yahweh, however, he is assured that everything is proceeding according to plan. As we have seen, the episode of the bricks without straw continues the theme of hard labor introduced in 1:8–14. In discussing that passage, we noted an incompatibility between it and the stories leading up to Moses' birth. In light of that incompatibility the absence of Moses from 5:6–18 is striking. It is also noteworthy that, unlike other elements of the larger passage, the intensification of the labor of the Israelites is not anticipated in the theophany of the bush. Such considerations have led at least one modern commentator to the conclusion that there was an early tradition about the Exodus in which Moses played no part. A more moderate conclusion holds that both episodes (1:8–14; 5:6–18) derive ultimately from an account of Israel's enslavement in Egypt that was related apart from or prior to Moses' appearance in the story. The first episode remains in such a position; the second has been incorporated into the larger narrative in the present position to link Pharaoh's intensification of the labor to the first request of Moses and Aaron.

6:2–7:7
The Mission of Moses and Aaron

The language of this passage connects it securely with the Priestly editorial remarks in 2:23–25. Yahweh has "heard the groaning" of the people and "remembered [his] covenant" (6:5; cf. 2:24), and he instructs Moses to announce his intention to deliver them from "their bondage" (v. 6; cf. 2:23). This, then, is the Priestly version of materials that have already been presented in their older (JE) form. The divine self-disclosure in 6:2–4 corresponds to the E account of the revelation of the divine name in 3:13–15. The commissioning of Moses and Aaron has its JE counterpart in chaps. 3 and 4. Within the context of the story as it is currently constituted, therefore, this passage must be understood as reiteration or confirmation of things already accomplished. Viewed as an independent unit, however, it is a new account of the same events. Its purpose is to incorporate the revelation to Moses and the work of Moses and Aaron into the larger Priestly history. The events now taking place in Egypt are interpreted as developments in the larger covenantal history that began with Noah and Abraham.

6:2–4, The Divine Self-assertion. Yahweh speaks to Moses and identifies himself with the God who entered into a covenant with the patriarchs. He was known to them, he says, as El Shaddai (often rendered "God Almighty"). This epithet calls our attention to a series of thematic passages in the Priestly history having to do with Yahweh's beneficence toward Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob and the covenant he made with them. In the most important of these, he appears to Abraham (Gen. 17:1) and Jacob (Gen. 35:11–12; cf. 48:3–4) and introduces himself with the words "I am God Almighty." Now he begins his speech with the words "I am Yahweh." We know from the study of other ancient Near Eastern religious texts that the purpose of this kind of divine self-asseveration is not simply identification; it also asserts the authority and power of the god who speaks. The primary purpose of the divine speech in this passage, then, is a reassertion of Yahweh's ancient authority, linking present deeds to past promises and stressing the identity of the God who will perform the wondrous deeds that are about to begin.

In the process of this reassertion, however, certain interesting details are mentioned. The patriarchs, we are told, did not know the God of the fathers by his name, Yahweh. They knew him instead as El Shaddai. Though contradicted by the Yahwistic tradition (e.g., Gen. 13:4), this position is consistently maintained in Priestly materials. Knowledge of the divine name was reserved for those who would enter into the Sinaitic

covenant and follow the rules of the sacred life. The disclosure of the name at this point, then, shows that the time has come for this holy relationship to be solemnized.

The meaning of "El Shaddai" is obscure. The prevailing scholarly opinion is that it is an archaic divine epithet, which may originally have meant "El (God), the One of the Mountain." In an eighth-century B.C. text from Deir Alla, Jordan, the Shaddayim (plural of "Shaddai") are the gods who meet in council to make decisions regarding the governance of the world. Thus "Shaddayim" may mean "mountain gods," i.e., those who meet on the mountain of the divine assembly (cf. the Olympians). If this is correct, the singular designation Shaddai or El Shaddai may have originally referred to a member of this group or, perhaps, to the presiding god of the assembly (cf. Zeus Olympios). The biblical evidence shows that this particular term was regarded as an ancient designation of Yahweh, known to those to whom his name had not been revealed, and this explains its thematic use in the Priestly history. The patriarchs were not beneficiaries of the final revelation, which begins only at this point.

6:5–13, The Commissioning of Moses. The P account of Moses' commissioning corresponds fairly closely to the composite JE account in 3:7–4:17. It includes the same two parts, an announcement and a commission. In keeping with the covenantal theology of the Priestly history, the announcement that Yahweh has taken notice of the affliction of the Israelites in Egypt is expanded to indicate that he has remembered his covenant with the patriarchs (v. 5). The commission has two parts: Yahweh sends Moses to the Israelites (vv. 6–8) and to Pharaoh (v. 10). Note again the emphasis placed on the identity of the God who is about to rescue Israel from bondage. The formula "I am the LORD," used first in v. 2 and discussed above, is repeated three times in the announcement of deliverance that Moses is to repeat to the people (vv. 6–8). The people are to be told that after their rescue they will know "that I am the LORD." In the Priestly history (as in the book of Ezekiel) a primary reason for Yahweh's redemptive acts is that his name will be known and his power recognized. Thus it is important that he should accomplish the rescue not secretively or quietly but "with an outstretched arm and with mighty acts of judgment" (v. 6). The objection Moses raises in v. 12 corresponds to his two objections in the Yahwistic version in chap. 4. He is a poor speaker, literally, a "man of uncircumcised lips" (cf. 4:10; → Circumcision). His own people have refused to listen to him (cf. 4:1). How then can Pharaoh be expected to listen? Yahweh's response will be to commission Aaron to serve as Moses' spokesman (cf. 4:14–16), but this next commissioning is delayed until chap. 7. The narrative is interrupted now for the insertion of a levitical genealogy to which the editorial summary in v. 13 provides a transition.

6:14–27, The Aaronid Genealogy. The purpose of this genealogy is to legitimate the authority of the Aaronid line of Levites through whom the Jerusalem priesthood traced its ancestry. Thus it is finally a genealogy of Aaron and Moses (note the order). Though it begins like a standard tribal roster, it changes after Levi and his two older brothers have been listed and Levi's position among the sons of Jacob has been established. Only Levi's family is traced beyond the second generation. The primary interest is in the line from which Aaron and Moses descended: Levi, Kohath, and Amram. Life spans are given only for these three, a detail that has the effect of linking Aaron and Moses with the early fathers in the Priestly scheme of history. The keenest genealogical interest centers on Aaron himself, so that the names of his wife and those of his father and one of his sons, Eleazar, are given. This reflects a special interest in Eleazar's son Phinehas, the only grandson of Aaron who is named. Phinehas is granted a "covenant of perpetual priesthood" in Num. 25:10–13, and the later high priests of Jerusalem traced their ancestry through him (cf. 1 Chron. 6:1–15). Note, finally, that in addition to Aaron and Moses there is a secondary interest here in Korah, the Levite who leads a rebellion against the authority of Moses and Aaron in Numbers 16. The details in 6:21, 24 show the genealogical subordination of Korah (the eldest son of Kohath's second son) to Aaron (the eldest son of Kohath's firstborn).

6:28–7:7, The Commissioning of Aaron. This passage is a continuation of the account of Moses' commissioning in 6:5–13. The two opening verses (6:28–29) provide an editorial recapitulation of the earlier passage, thus returning the narrative to the point at which it was interrupted for the insertion of the Aaronid genealogy. Moses is then told that Aaron will be his spokesman. The image is that of a god and his prophet: Moses' words will have the equivalent of divine authority for Pharaoh, and Aaron will serve as the messenger who transmits them. The theology of the earlier passage is also resumed here. The rescue from Egypt will not be achieved in secret, but by "signs and wonders" (7:3) and "great acts of judgment" (v. 4). "I shall lay my hand upon Egypt," says Yahweh (v. 4), an allusion to the plagues. All this will be done so that "the Egyptians shall know that I am the LORD" (v. 5). Again, the rescue must be performed in a spectacular and public fashion, because its purpose is not only to gain freedom for the people of Israel, but also to demonstrate the power of the God of Israel. This point of view also explains the otherwise troubling phenomenon of the hardening of Pharaoh's heart, already alluded to once before (4:21). Even as he is demanding that Pharaoh release his Hebrew slaves, Yahweh is also causing him to be obstinate and refuse. Later on, we shall come to instances in which Pharaoh agrees to the departure of the Israelites, only to change his mind

when Yahweh intervenes and hardens his heart (9:12; 10:20, 27). If the only objective in Yahweh's dealings with Pharaoh were to obtain the release of the Israelites, this hardening of the heart would seem capricious or self-defeating. Its necessity only becomes clear when we take account of the second objective, namely, the public demonstration of Yahweh's power.

7:8–13:16
The Plague Narrative

Yahweh, through the agency of Moses and Aaron, strikes Egypt with a series of afflictions of increasing severity, until Pharaoh finally agrees to release the Israelites. The report of the final plague, the slaying of the firstborn, is accompanied by an elaborate account of the Passover celebration. One widely accepted theory holds that the plague narrative originated as a "cult legend," that is, a story composed to explain a ceremony, in this case the celebration of the Passover, and to give the ceremony a historical basis. According to this theory, the original story said that the Israelites escaped from Egypt secretly at night, only to be overtaken by the Egyptian army at the Red Sea. An alternative view holds that a casual or coincidental reference to the Passover blood rite in the original account attracted the ritual materials into the story. In fact, most of the ritual elaborations in chaps. 12–13 derive from the latest of the pentateuchal sources (D and P). In the earliest of the pentateuchal sources (J), the people perform the Passover blood rite for protection against Yahweh's "destroyer" (12:21–23) and carry unleavened bread with them as they go (12:34, 39), but there are no further ritual details.

7:8–10:29
The First Nine Plagues

Plague is a weapon the God of Israel wields against the unjust and the enemies of his people. When the divine warrior marches, plague and pestilence go at his heels (Hab. 3:5). When the Philistines rout the Israelites and take home the holy Ark as plunder, a plague of mice and tumors breaks out in their cities (1 Sam. 4–6). When David angers Yahweh by taking a census of Israel, a plague decimates the country (2 Sam. 24). And in this account, whenever Pharaoh refuses to release the Israelites, a scourge of some kind strikes his land. The plagues that afflict Egypt include diseases, infestations, and disasters of all kinds. Most of them correspond in some near or remote way to natural phenomena that were known in ancient Egypt. Noting this fact, many commentators have concluded that the memory of some historical natural disaster or series of such disasters was the basis for the story. Some have even attempted to reconstruct the event by combining the details of the biblical account with information derived from studies of the natural history of the Nile basin. The difficulty with such studies is that they do not take into account the complexity of the biblical plague tradition or its history. Although it is very likely that a knowledge of natural phenomena in Egypt lies behind many of the individual plague episodes, it is very unlikely that a single, historical chain of events gave rise to the complex of tradition as a whole.

The tradition of the plagues against Egypt is mentioned elsewhere in the Bible, notably in Pss. 78:44–51 and 105:28–36. Both of these psalms were probably composed in pre-exilic times (i.e., before the sixth century B.C.), thus earlier than the present form of the Exodus story. In both, the number of plagues is seven, not ten as in our account. Moreover, the psalms differ in the order of the plagues, both from each other and from our account, as the accompanying table shows.

THE PLAGUES AGAINST EGYPT: THEIR NUMBER AND ORDER IN EXODUS AND TWO PSALMS

Exodus	Psalm 78	Psalm 105
1. blood	1. blood	1. darkness
2. frogs	2. flies	2. blood
3. gnats	3. frogs	3. frogs
4. flies	4. caterpillars/locusts	4. flies/gnats
5. cattle	5. hail/frost	5. hail
6. boils	6. cattle	6. locusts
7. hail	7. firstborn	7. firstborn
8. locusts		
9. darkness		
10. firstborn		

The Exodus plague narrative is composite, a combination of a Priestly (P) account with an older Yahwistic (J) account. The latter can be reconstructed with some confidence. It almost certainly had not ten, but seven, plagues. The third (gnats), sixth (boils), and ninth (darkness) plagues were not included. The following list illustrates the form of this original Yahwistic plague narrative:

1. blood (7:14–15a, 16–18, 21a, 23–24)
2. frogs (7:25–8:15)
3. flies (8:20–32)
4. cattle (9:1–7)
5. hail (9:13–18, 23b–24, 25b–34)
6. locusts (10:1a, 3–11, 13b, 14b–20, 24–26, 28–29)
7. firstborn (11:4–8)

There is also Elohistic (E) material here, but its extent is difficult to determine. Many scholars doubt that there was an independent E account of the plagues and regard the scant E material they find in these chapters as a series of glosses on J. Others believe there was a complete E account but that much of it has been lost.

Too little survives, in any case, to permit us to reconstruct its original form. Moses' rod, which is considered indicative of E (see the commentary above on 4:17), figures prominently in most of the materials assigned to E in the plague narrative. These include the following: the references to Moses' rod in vv. 15, 17, and 20 of the account of the first plague (7:14–24); accounts of the plagues of hail (9:22–23a, 25a, 35a) and locusts (10:12–13a, 14a) inserted into the J accounts of the same plagues; and the full account of the plague of darkness (10:21–23), which lacks any reference to Moses' rod and is sometimes assigned to P.

As for the Priestly materials, there is general agreement among scholars about those portions of the narrative that describe the first six plagues (7:14–9:12). P accounts of the first two plagues, blood (7:19–20a, 21b–22) and frogs (8:5–7, 15b), have been incorporated into the J(E) account. The reports of the plagues of gnats (8:16–19) and boils (9:8–12) derive exclusively from P. Aaron figures prominently in all of these episodes. In the reports of the later plagues (9:13–11:10), however, he recedes into the background, and it becomes much more difficult to detect P material. Only the addition of the Priestly formula of affirmation ("as Yahweh had spoken through Moses") in 9:35b and the final summary in 11:9–10 can be identified with certainty.

The underlying Yahwistic narrative was carefully organized, and its structure, though partly obscured by the editorial combination with the Priestly account, is still visible in the story. In the seven-stage J version the plagues escalated from three that were nuisances (blood, frogs, and flies) to three that destroyed property (cattle, hail, and locusts) to one that took human life (firstborn). Thus we can still observe a general intensification of the plagues from lesser annoyances to more serious afflictions. In the J version the scene of the confrontation between Moses and Pharaoh alternated strictly between an early morning outdoor setting (J's first, third, and fifth plagues) and a setting within the palace (J's second, fourth, and sixth plagues). In the present form of the story the outdoor setting introduces the first, fourth, and seventh plagues; the palace is the setting for the second, fifth, and eighth. The third, sixth, and ninth plagues, which derive from other versions, mention no audience with Pharaoh. In the J version, Yahweh acted directly to execute the plagues, without first instructing Aaron to wield his rod or Moses to raise his hand. In the P version, however, some such agent seems always to have been used. In the present, composite, narrative, the first three plagues are initiated by Aaron's rod and the last four by Moses' hand or rod; the fourth and fifth are executed directly by Yahweh himself.

7:8–13, Aaron's Rod. At the beginning of the episode of Aaron's rod (vv. 8–9) instructions for its use are given to Moses and Aaron. This is the P equivalent of 4:1–5, a J passage in which such a rod was given to Moses alone. When the divine instructions are carried out and the miracle is performed (v. 10), it is Aaron who wields the rod. The term for the creature into which the rod turns is not the same here as in 4:3. It may mean "snake," like the earlier word, but "crocodile" is also possible. The Egyptian magicians turn their rods into crocodiles too, but Aaron's crocodile devours theirs. This contest sets the pattern for the first three plagues, which will be initiated by Aaron's rod. The point is simply that, though the power of the Egyptian magicians is great, it is far surpassed by that of the servants of Yahweh.

7:14–24, The Plague of Blood. A well-known Egyptian text contains a complaint that the Nile has turned to blood and those who drink from it thirst for water. The natural phenomenon to which both this Egyptian text and the biblical story of the plague of blood point is probably the presence of red particles in the water of the Nile at the time of the annual inundation, which carried silt from the tropical red earth of the basin of the Blue Nile in Ethiopia and the Sudan. The presence of red microorganisms may sometimes have intensified the effect. According to our text, however, the water is turned to blood, not to the color of blood. It is thus undrinkable, and the Egyptians are obliged to dig wells (v. 24). Note also the additional details in the P portions of this composite account (vv. 19–20a, 21b–22). It is not only the Nile that is affected, but all natural bodies of water and even water stored in artificial containers. This effect is achieved through the agency of Aaron's rod, but the Egyptian magicians are able to duplicate it, and Pharaoh is unmoved.

7:25–8:15, The Plague of Frogs. This is also a composite account. In the J version the frogs were brought up directly by Yahweh himself. The P materials in 8:5–7 introduce Aaron's rod as the agent. Again, the Egyptian magicians are equal to the task and produce their own frogs.

8:16–19, The Plague of Gnats. Other translations proposed for "gnats" are "lice" and "mosquitoes." This plague has no equivalent in the lists in Psalms 78 and 105. Nor did it appear in the original Yahwistic narrative. This account derives strictly from Priestly tradition. Moreover, since there is no P account of the plague of flies that follows, it is safe to conclude that the plague of gnats arose as a variant of the plague of flies. Like the two previous plagues, this one is initiated by Aaron's rod. In this case, however, the Egyptian magicians are unable to duplicate the feat. Still, Pharaoh remains adamant.

8:20–32, The Plague of Flies. Intended in the account is some kind of biting flies, such as gadflies or stable flies. Yahweh brings them up himself in this

strictly Yahwistic account. There is no Priestly material here, and nothing is said of Aaron's rod or the Egyptian magicians. A new motif is introduced, however. This plague discriminates between the Egyptians and the Israelites. There are no flies in Goshen, where the Israelites dwell. There is also a change in Pharaoh's attitude at this point. He seeks a compromise with Moses, granting the Israelites permission to sacrifice to their God within the land. This, however, is not in keeping with Moses' charge, and he declines, offering the excuse that Israelite offerings might be religious abominations to the Egyptians. Pharaoh then agrees to let the Israelites journey a short distance into the wilderness, but when the flies are gone, he hardens his heart again.

9:1–7, The Plague on the Cattle. In this strictly Yahwistic account, Aaron and the Egyptian magicians are not mentioned, and the livestock disease, which may be anthrax, is inflicted directly by Yahweh. Again a distinction is made between the Egyptians and the Israelites, whose cattle are not affected. Pharaoh is again unmoved.

9:8–12, The Plague of Boils. The sixth plague, like the third (gnats), has no equivalent in the lists in Psalms 78 and 105, and it was not included in the original Yahwistic plague narrative. This account derives entirely from Priestly tradition. It probably arose as a variant of the cattle plague, the boils "on man and beast" (9:9) referring to the carbuncles that appear on the skin at the onset of anthrax, a disease that afflicts humans as well as animals. Unlike the other plagues, which are initiated either directly by Yahweh or by agency of the hand or rod of one of his servants, this one begins in a unique way: Moses hurls ashes into the air. Aaron has returned, however, and so have the Egyptian magicians, though only as victims of the boils. Note that here for the first time Yahweh hardens Pharaoh's heart (see the commentary above on 7:8–10:29).

9:13–35, The Plague of Hail. The destruction of the Egyptian crops by a hailstorm is described in a long, composite narrative. An Elohistic account (22–23a, 25a, 35) has been combined with the older Yahwistic version. There is no discernible Priestly narrative here, but note the standard Priestly formula of affirmation at the end of v. 35 (cf. 7:22; 8:15, 19; 9:12). The information given in vv. 19–21 and 31–32 is generally regarded as deriving from late, interpretive expansions, not one of the pentateuchal sources. The storm begins when Moses waves his rod toward the sky, though in the original J account Yahweh hurled down the hailstones himself (v. 23b). Again, the destruction does not extend to Goshen. As in the fourth plague (flies), Pharaoh agrees to release the Israelites, this time even admitting the justice of Yahweh's cause, but when the storm is over he reneges.

10:1–20, The Plague of Locusts. This extended account combines a short E version (12–13a, 14a) with the much longer J narrative. There is also a late expansion in vv. 1b–2, but no P material can be detected. In the J version the locusts were brought by the east wind, which was summoned by Yahweh himself (v. 13b; cf. 19). In the combined form of the story, however, the locusts come when Moses waves his rod over the land. As was the case after the preceding plague, Pharaoh admits his guilt and begs Moses to entreat Yahweh. When the locusts are gone, however, Yahweh hardens Pharaoh's heart (cf. 9:12).

10:21–29, The Plague of Thick Darkness. The ninth plague is a palpable darkness (cf. v. 21), associated by some commentators with a hot, dust-laden wind that blows into Egypt from the Sahara. Pharaoh is again inclined to negotiate. He offers to let the Israelites depart without their livestock, but Moses explains that all the animals must go, since it will be impossible to tell which will be needed for sacrifice before arriving in the wilderness. Yahweh again hardens Pharaoh's heart, and the king sends Moses away, threatening him with death if he returns. Negotiations have broken down. Note that the darkness is summoned by a wave of Moses' hand, like the seventh and eighth plagues in their E versions (9:22; 10:12). Like the third and sixth plagues, which are known only from a P account, it lacks any opening audience with Pharaoh. Thus it is sometimes assigned to E, sometimes to P. The account of the negotiations with Pharaoh in vv. 24–29 probably followed v. 20 directly in the original J narrative, but there was no plague of thick darkness in that narrative, and although darkness does appear in the list in Psalm 105 (as the first plague!), it is absent from Psalm 78. It is possible, therefore, that it arose as a variant of the plague of locusts, which "covered the eye of the land, so that the land became dark" (10:15).

11:1–13:16
The Final Plague

This section describes the final plague and consequent departure of the Israelites from Egypt. Despite the drama and excitement inherent in this story, the narrative is very slow moving. The reason for the slow pace is the presence in the account of substantial ritual material. The events related here were of such religious importance to the ancient community that they were celebrated regularly in the cult, and the form the celebration took has in turn influenced the description of the events. The departure from Egypt was memorialized by the rites of the Passover, and a full account of these rites as stipulated in Priestly tradition has been incorporated into the story. Accounts of the Feast of Unleavened Bread and the consecration of the firstborn are also included here. Though they seem to be diverse in origin, these observances are implicitly asso-

ciated with the Passover by their inclusion here, and they are described in language that explicitly identifies them with the tenth plague and the events of the departure from Egypt.

11:1–10, The Announcement of the Tenth Plague. Chap. 11 looks back at the plague story and ahead toward the account of the Passover. In the original Yahwistic narrative the slaying of the firstborn was the climactic seventh plague. As a result of the compilation of this composite narrative, the death of the Egyptian firstborn, now the tenth plague, has become a part of (and indeed the introduction to) the story of the institution of the Passover. The opening section of this passage (vv. 1–3), however, is concerned with neither the firstborn plague nor the Passover. It looks ahead to the account of the spoliation of the Egyptians in 12:35–36. It is the E equivalent of the J passage in 3:21–22, and its editorial insertion at this point has created a serious narrative difficulty. When he begins to prophesy in v. 4, Moses seems to be speaking to Yahweh! But this makes no sense, and the end of the speech shows that he is addressing Pharaoh. Verses 4–8, then, were originally attached directly to the end of chap. 10. They represent a continuation of Moses' angry speech in 10:29. The announcement of the death of the Egyptian firstborn is presented in a matter-of-fact way. No rationale of the kind we noted in 4:22–23 is offered. The purpose seems to be to afflict Egypt so dreadfully that, despite Pharaoh's obstinacy, his people will come humbly to Moses and ask him to leave (v. 8). The theme of discrimination that we have seen before is here too: the Israelite firstborn are to be spared (v. 7). We know from the law in chap. 13, however, that when the Israelites are living in the promised land, Yahweh will also claim their firstborn. As explained in the discussion of 13:1–16, the point of the rule requiring the consecration of the firstborn is that, as guarantor of the increase of family, flock, and field, Yahweh is entitled to the first fruits of each. The firstborn offering, in other words, is made in recognition of Yahweh's sovereignty over all life in the promised land. Thus the plague tradition, in stating that Yahweh finally took the firstborn of the Egyptians, implies that he has sovereignty over life in Egypt too and by implication life everywhere.

12:1–28, The Institution of the Passover. Chap. 12 opens with a long speech of Yahweh instituting the Passover celebration (vv. 1–20), followed by a speech of Moses to the elders of Israel describing the blood rite of Passover (vv. 21–27a). Much of Moses' speech (vv. 21–23) derives from J's account of the institution of Passover and thus represents a Yahwistic parallel to the Priestly account in vv. 1–20. According to the present form of the text, however, Moses' speech is to be read as an abbreviated report to the people of the instructions given by Yahweh.

The instructions for the Passover ritual begin with the inauguration of a new calendar (vv. 1–2; → Passover, The). "This month," which we know from 13:4 to be Abib (March–April), is now to be the beginning of the year, an arrangement that reflects the perspective of the Priestly author of this part of the passage. During the time of the Israelite monarchy, the end of the year (and thus the beginning too) came at the time of harvest in the fall (cf. 23:16; 34:22). Beginning in the sixth century B.C., however, the Babylonian calendar was adopted, so that the month in the Jewish calendar corresponding to Abib has the Babylonian name of Nisan and is regarded as the first month of the year (→ New Year Festival).

The J account of the blood rite in vv. 21–23 makes no reference to the Passover meal described in the preceding P account. The blood rite is apotropaic, i.e., designed to avert evil, in this case a demon called "the destroyer" (v. 23), who has been sent by Yahweh to slay the firstborn of Egypt. Studies of similar festivals known to have been celebrated in pre-Islamic Arabia suggest that the purpose of such a rite was to ensure the safety of the flock by the sacrifice of one of the newborns at the time of lambing in the spring. In all probability, then, the Passover blood rite was already being celebrated annually by the Israelites prior to its association with the particular event of the slaying of the firstborn in Egypt. This, indeed, may be the sacrifice repeatedly referred to by Moses in his petitions to Pharaoh (e.g., 3:18). In our earliest source (J), however, the rite has already become associated with the tenth plague. The blood of the victim is understood as a sign to Yahweh (v. 23), and "the destroyer" is the agent of his wrath against the Egyptians. Verses 24–27a, in which the connection between the Passover sacrifice and the tenth plague is made even more explicit, are discussed below in connection with 13:1–16.

The details of the Passover meal described in the P material in vv. 1–20 show that it is a feast for beginning a new year and leaving the old one behind and, similarly, for setting out on the journey into the wilderness and leaving the life in Egypt behind. Symbolically, then, the clothes worn are the clothes of travelers (v. 11). The common factor in the stipulated foods is that none makes use of any product of the culture—or the year—being left behind. The lamb must be roasted, i.e., cooked directly in or over the fire without the use of any cooking pot or even water—thus it cannot be boiled (v. 9). The bread must be baked without leaven, a product of the previous year's harvest. We cannot identify the other food, "bitter herbs," with certainty, but it was probably some kind of uncultivated vegetable. Note too that because these foods have not been transformed by human culture (as by boiling or fermenting with leaven), they are suitable for sacrificial use. The paschal lamb is to be an unblemished male (v. 5), roasted whole (v. 9) like the burnt offering of Leviticus 1, and the bread is to be free of leaven,

which, along with honey (another agent of fermentation), is excluded from all cereal offerings (Lev. 2:11). Thus the meal has the effect of purifying the Israelites for the life to come under Yahweh's guidance in the wilderness (or in the new year).

A well-known theory contends that the Passover meal, like the Passover blood rite, originated as part of an annual ritual that was secondarily combined with the tradition of the tenth plague. In particular, the meal is said to have originated as a nomadic ritual. Thus it requires no temple or sanctuary of any kind. The paschal lamb is taken from the flock and eaten along with unleavened bread (the usual bread of nomads). The participants wear nomadic dress (12:11). In the biblical Passover tradition, according to this theory, this annual festival has been reinterpreted as a commemoration of the departure from Egypt and the escape from the plague on the firstborn. The Passover feast is now understood as a memorial meal. The bread is eaten unleavened because the people are in a hurry (cf. vv. 34, 39). The pastoral clothes are the clothes of travelers about to set out. The name of the ritual in Hebrew, *pesach,* whatever it originally meant, is now understood in reference to the sparing of the Israelite firstborn (v. 27): it is called "Passover" because Yahweh "passed over" (Heb. *pasach*) the houses of the Israelites (the meaning of the verb has also been explained in other ways, including "have compassion on," "leave out," and "protect").

In vv. 15–20 the Feast of Unleavened Bread is ordained (cf. 13:3–10). This arrangement has the effect of combining this feast with the unleavened bread rite in the Passover celebration (cf. Ezek. 45:21–24). Lev. 23:5–6, however, shows that the two were originally separate: Passover was a one-day feast celebrated on the fourteenth of the month, and Unleavened Bread was a seven-day feast that began on the fifteenth. Unleavened Bread was originally a festival celebrating the spring harvest, but, like Passover, it was partly reinterpreted as a commemoration of the departure from Egypt in both Priestly and Deuteronomic tradition (cf. Deut. 16:1–8).

12:29–36, The Death of the Firstborn. This part of the narrative describes the events elaborately prepared for in the preceding passages. The threat in 11:4–8 is now carried out. Despite his own warning in 10:28, Pharaoh summons Moses and Aaron and addresses them in terms of complete capitulation. He no longer seeks a compromise or attempts to negotiate, so that, in contrast to his most recent offer (10:24), he willingly releases the livestock. The Egyptian people are even more urgent, actually driving the Israelites away and willingly granting the gifts anticipated in 3:21–22 and 11:2. The verb used here in v. 36b, as well as 3:22, is a verb of plunder (cf. 2 Chron. 20:25), indicating that these valuables are to be understood as spoils of war. The Israelites leave Egypt not as escaped slaves, but as conquerors.

12:37–42, The Departure from Egypt. The first stage of Israel's journey is from Rameses to Succoth, probably another name for Pithom (1:11). The "mixed crowd" that joins the march are non-Israelites (the same term is used in Neh. 13:3); the early exegetical tradition associated them with "the rabble who were among" the Israelites in Num. 11:4. Even without this group, however, the total number who participated is said to have been six hundred thousand men in addition to women, children, and livestock (cf. Num. 11:21). The total, which derives from Num. 1:46, is impossibly large for ancient demographics, and, even if we adopt the common expedient of understanding six hundred "thousands" as six hundred (military) contingents, it remains implausible. The other number given in this passage is also problematic. In a Priestly epilogue to the Egyptian period in Israel's history (vv. 40–42), we are told that the Israelites had been in Egypt for 430 years, a period forecast as 400 years in Gen. 15:13. In Gen. 15:16, however, it was stated that the Israelites would return in the fourth generation (cf. the four generations from Jacob to Aaron in Exod. 6:14–27 above). Numbers of this kind cannot be used as historical resources. They originated in the ancient interpretive tradition, having been calculated from information not available to us and on the basis of criteria that would not be acceptable to most modern historians.

12:43–51, The Ordinance of the Passover. The purpose of this short Priestly passage is to stipulate who may participate in the celebration of Passover. In particular, the issue of non-Israelite participation is addressed, and it may be that the reference to the presence of "a mixed crowd" among the Israelites in v. 38 prompted an editor to place this passage at this point. Foreigners are excluded from the ritual meal, as are hired resident servants (the term is obscure). On the other hand, "sojourners," that is, legally resident foreigners, may participate if the males are circumcised, and this rule applies also to slaves. Since circumcision is also required of the Israelite males themselves, there is one law for both the native-born (the term anticipates the Israelites' residency in Canaan) and the resident foreigner.

13:1–16, The Consecration of the Firstborn. Early Israelite tradition held that Yahweh, as proprietor of the land and guarantor of life and fertility, was entitled to the first fruits of the harvest and the firstborn of both animals and humans (cf. 22:29–30). Every firstborn male, therefore, was subject to sacrifice to Yahweh. The rules stated here in vv. 12–13 require that such a sacrifice be carried out for all clean livestock. But for

the firstborn of the ass, which is unclean, and for human firstborn, the substitution of a lamb is to be made.

Apart, perhaps, from vv. 1–2 this passage does not seem to have been a part of the Priestly history. It is a Deuteronomistic addition intended to connect both the Feast of Unleavened Bread (vv. 3–10) and the rule of the firstborn (vv. 11–16) to events during the departure from Egypt. Exod. 12:24–27a above, another Deuteronomistic expansion, does the same for the Passover. As noted in the discussion of 12:15–20, the Feast of Unleavened Bread was originally an independent festival, but here, as in chap. 12, it is related to the Exodus (cf. Deut. 16:1–4). Similarly, the consecration of the firstborn was an ancient practice deriving from pre-Israelite times and originally having nothing to do with the Exodus. Here, however, it is related to Yahweh's slaughter of the Egyptian firstborn. Note the clear structural parallels between these two units (vv. 3–10, 11–16). Both look ahead to the time when the Israelites are living in Canaan (vv. 5, 11; cf. 12:25); both prescribe answers to questions sons will ask their fathers (vv. 8, 14–15; cf. 12:26–27a); and both require that the words be worn as signs on the hand and frontlets between the eyes (vv. 9, 16). The original meaning of the last requirement, which gave rise to the wearing of tefillin (phylacteries) in postbiblical Judaism, is uncertain (→ Phylacteries).

13:17–18:27
The Sojourn in the Wilderness

The period spent in the wilderness was remembered as a distinct and important time in Israelite tradition. It was a time of transition between Egypt and Canaan, slavery and freedom. It was also a time of isolation, helplessness, and total dependence on divine sustenance. The biblical account of the period is found in two widely separated sections, the first describing the events that took place on the way from Egypt to Sinai (Exod. 13:17–18:27) and the second tracing the journey from Sinai to the plains of Moab on the border of the promised land (Num. 10:11–36:13). The separation was caused by the insertion of the legal materials now included in the Sinai pericope (Exod. 19:1–Num. 10:10). One of the results of the separation was the creation of duplicate accounts of certain episodes, such as the manna and quails (Exod. 16; Num. 11) and the water from the rock (Exod. 17; Num. 20). Both parts of the account are characterized by two dominant motifs, one positive and one negative. The positive motif is that of the miraculous provisions by which Yahweh ensures Israel's welfare. These include the water from the rock, the manna, and the quails, but the first and greatest is the miracle at the sea. The negative motif is that of the "murmuring" of the people. Oblivious to the miraculous things being done for them in the desert and heedless of the promises of the prosperity that lies ahead in the land, the people become anxious, complaining against Moses and longing to return to Egypt. Thus the wilderness period was remembered as a time of divine solicitude and miraculous protection, but also of human ingratitude, discontent, and even rebellion.

13:17–15:21
The Crossing of the Red Sea

The familiar story of the crossing of the Red Sea is the result of a long and complex literary history, much of which can be reconstructed from a close examination of Exodus 14 and 15. Scholars agree that the old poem in 15:1–19 is the earliest account of the event at the sea. The prose account in 14:5–31 is composite, having been compiled from at least two different versions of the event, those of J and P, with occasional additions from E. A comparison of the descriptions of the events in these three sources reveals the development of the story in Israelite tradition.

According to the Song of the Sea, Yahweh hurled Pharaoh and his army into the waters and they sank (15:4–5). Yahweh's agent was evidently a raging ocean, whipped up by a violent windstorm, which the poet identifies as the divine breath ("the blast of your nostrils," v. 8). Pharaoh's army pursued the Israelites relentlessly (v. 9), but the divine wind continued to blow, and the Egyptians sank "like lead" (v. 10). Since they were hurled into the waters, we must assume that the Egyptians were traveling in boats or, less likely, along a cliff overlooking the sea. We are not told where the Israelites were or what they were doing while these events took place.

In the earlier of the two prose accounts in chap. 14 (J), the event is described as follows: Pharaoh pursued the Israelites and overtook them encamped by the sea (14:9a). The pillar of cloud moved between the two armies and kept them apart for the night (vv. 19b–20). Yahweh drove back the sea all night long with a strong east wind (cf. 10:13), so that the floor of the sea became dry (v. 21a). In the morning the pillar of cloud panicked the Egyptians (v. 24), locking up the wheels of their chariots (v. 25a, sometimes assigned to E), and they fled in terror (v. 25b). The sea returned to its normal flow just as the Egyptians were rushing toward it (v. 27a). Yahweh "tossed" the Egyptians in the sea (v. 27b)—meaning, perhaps, that he scattered and drowned them—and the awestruck Israelites watched the bodies of their enemies wash up on the shore (v. 30). The differences between this account and that in chap. 15 are subtle but clear. The wind is Yahweh's weapon in both. In the old poem the wind causes the sea to rage and casts the Egyptians into the waters. In

the J account the wind causes the waters to back up, and the Egyptians, fleeing across the dried ocean floor, are drowned when the wind stops and the waters return. This version may have arisen in part from an interpretation of parts of the Song of the Sea, where we are told first that the wind caused the waters to stand up "in a heap" (v. 8) and then that the wind caused the waters to cover the Egyptians (v. 10). Though their original meaning was that the Egyptians were cast into a violent, wind-tossed sea, these verses were understood to mean that the wind blew the waters away from the seabed and then back again, trapping the Egyptians. Another factor that may have favored this change was the influence of a ritual in which the escape at the sea was memorialized and linked with the crossing of the Jordan into the promised land. This possibility is suggested by the ritual character of the account in Joshua 3, where we are told that the waters of the Jordan were stopped and stood up in "a single heap" (Josh. 3:16; cf. Exod. 15:8) while the people crossed over on dry land.

The later account in chap. 14 (P) tells the story very differently. Pharaoh pursued the Israelites with his entire army and overtook them at Pi-hahiroth (vv. 8, 9b). Yahweh told Moses to stretch out his hand over the sea (vv. 15–18), and when he did so, the waters divided. The Israelites crossed through the sea on dry land with walls of water on both sides (vv. 21–22, 29). When the Egyptians followed (v. 23), Moses was told to stretch out his hand again (vv. 26–27a), and the waters returned, covering the chariots, the horsemen, and the entire Egyptian army (v. 28). The most striking change that took place in the story between the composition of the J and P accounts was the addition of the motif of the parting of the sea. In the earlier version, the waters were not parted, but driven back by the wind. It has been suggested that this change was influenced by the mythological tradition of the slaying and splitting of the sea dragon, to which we have allusions in several biblical passages (Ps. 74:13–14; cf. Isa. 27:1; Job 9:8; 26:12; Ps. 89:9–10). We know that by the sixth century B.C., the date to which P is usually assigned, the traditions of the slaying of the dragon and the escape at the sea had become associated, as Isa. 51:9–11 shows.

13:17–14:4, The Journey to the Sea. The Israelites set out from Succoth (12:37) and journey to Etham, "on the edge of the wilderness" (13:20; cf. Num. 33:6), the Wilderness of Etham being another name for the Wilderness of Shur (15:22). They are then told to turn back and encamp "in front of Pi-hahiroth, between Migdol and the sea, in front of Baal-zephon" (14:2; cf. Num. 33:7). Though these places must all lie somewhere in the eastern delta of the Nile, their exact location is uncertain (→ Baal-zephon; Migdol; Pi-hahiroth). What is clear is that the Exodus will not follow the Way of the Sea ("the Way of the Philistines," 13:17), the direct route from Goshen to Canaan through the northern part of the Sinai peninsula (→ Trade and Transportation). Two reasons for this, deriving from two literary sources, are given. First, the Israelites would too quickly encounter armed resistance that way (13:17 [E]), a judgment affirmed by modern historians, who point to Egyptian military control of the Via Maris. Second, if the Israelites enter the wilderness, Pharaoh will assume they are trapped there and be lured into pursuing them, thus offering Yahweh an opportunity to "gain glory from Pharaoh and all his forces" (14:1–4 [P]). So the journey begins in a southerly direction, toward the desert and the Gulf of Suez (cf. 13:18). According to the J portion of this episode (13:21–22) the march is led by Yahweh himself manifested as a pillar of cloud by day and a pillar of fire by night, a mode of theophany that anticipates the storm cloud imagery of chap. 19. The Israelites make camp "at the sea" (14:2), evidently the Red Sea (cf. 13:18; 15:4). Hebrew *yam suph* seems to mean "Sea of Reeds," however, and it has become a commonplace of modern scholarship to point out that the ancient interpretive tradition associating this body of water with the Red Sea is incorrect. Recent research has argued that *yam suph* probably means "Sea of the End." It was used to designate any remote ocean or sea, but especially the Red Sea, including the gulfs of Suez and Aqabah, or Elath (1 Kings 9:26; Jer. 49:21). Thus the sea involved in the episode that follows is probably the Red Sea after all.

14:5–31, The Escape at the Sea. Though the crossing of the Red Sea is often thought of in connection with the departure from Egypt, it is more correctly associated with the sojourn in the wilderness. The account of the wilderness period began in 13:17–18, where we were told that Israel entered the wilderness. The pillar of cloud and fire, the mode of theophany that characterizes the wilderness stories, appeared first in 13:21–22. The murmuring motif begins here in 14:10–14, and the salvation at the sea is the first and greatest of the miraculous provisions.

As explained above, the narrative in chap. 14 was produced by combining parallel accounts from J and P. A few details, such as the designation of the pillar of cloud as an "angel of God" in v. 19a, also derive from E. In the J narrative, Pharaoh changes his mind again, regrets the loss of his labor force (v. 5), and pursues the Israelites. Thus the events at the sea, which we have already described above, represent God's definitive solution to the threat of the vacillating Egyptian king. In the P account, however, these events are carefully orchestrated by Yahweh from the beginning (cf. v. 4). Pharaoh pursues the Israelites because Yahweh hardens his heart (v. 8), and the Egyptian soldiers follow them into the sea because he hardens their hearts (v. 17). Note, finally, the new motif introduced in vv. 10–14. When the Israelites see the Egyptian army following them, they become fearful, regret their deci-

sion to leave Egypt, and complain to Moses. This is the beginning of the "murmuring" theme, which will develop further in the account of the sojourn in the wilderness below.

15:1–19, The Song of the Sea. Many scholars think that the Song of the Sea is one of the oldest surviving specimens of Hebrew poetry. The language and poetic style are consistently archaic. Many also regard the poem as an eyewitness account that was accorded a position of special honor when the escape at the sea came to be memorialized in the liturgy of early Israel. Often called a victory song or hymn of thanksgiving, it has features characteristic of many literary types, but, taken as a whole, it cannot be identified with any one of the fixed genres of biblical or extrabiblical poetry. Though it may not have been included in any of the continuous narrative sources, it antedates all of them and was cited by incipit (opening lines) in at least one of them (v. 21, probably J). It has a two-part thematic structure. The first part (vv. 1b–12) is an account of the Red Sea event with parenthetical perorations on the propriety of praising Yahweh (v. 2) and his incomparability (v. 11). As explained above, this account describes the event at the sea as a terrific windstorm during which the Egyptians were hurled into the waters. The second part (vv. 13–18) describes the conduct of the Israelites to Yahweh's "mountain of heritage" (v. 17), that is, to Canaan. Yahweh guides the people first to his "holy encampment" (v. 13), causing grave concern to the peoples living in or near the promised land (the Philistines, Canaanites, Edomites, and Moabites). This encampment might be Sinai, Kadesh, or Shittim (→ Kadesh; Shittim).

15:20–21, The Song of Miriam. Before the insertion of the entire Song of the Sea into the narrative, it was cited by its incipit in one of the prose sources (probably J), where it is ascribed to Miriam, the sister of Aaron and Moses. The attribution to Moses himself in v. 1a was probably added as an introduction to the full Song of the Sea when it was included in the text.

15:22–18:27
The Journey to Sinai

The names of the "stages" along the way from Rameses to the Wilderness of Sinai are systematically reported in the biblical narrative, and the list is recorded in even greater detail in Numbers 33. Such thoroughness is extraordinary in a story from which a detail as important as the name of the pharaoh was omitted. It is difficult to account for the precision with which the names of these places were preserved, unless we assume that the route continued to be known and followed in later times, perhaps by Israelite and Judean pilgrims to Sinai. Unfortunately, few of the stages can be identified today, and the location of Mount Horeb, or Sinai, has itself been forgotten, so that the itinerary of Israel's journey there can be traced only tentatively (→ Exodus). If the well-known tradition that identifies Mount Sinai with Jebel Musa in the southern part of the Sinai Peninsula is correct, then the route described here must proceed south along the eastern shore of the Gulf of Suez. The location of "Horeb, the mountain of God" near Midian in chap. 3, however, favors a route through central Sinai. The most direct road to Midian, north and east of the Gulf of Aqabah, is the Darb el-Hajj, or "Pilgrim's Road," which is still followed to Mecca, and it would not be surprising to find continuity between ancient and modern pilgrim roads.

15:22–27, The Waters of Marah. Yahweh sweetens the waters of "Bitterness" (Heb. *mara*), showing himself to be Israel's "healer" and promising to afflict Israel with none of the plagues of Egypt. He turned the waters of the Nile to blood, but he makes the waters of Marah sweet. He destroyed the grain crops of Egypt with hail, but he will rain bread on the Israelites (16:4). He sent a wind filled with locusts into Egypt, but his wind will bring quail in Num. 11:31. The awkwardness of 15:25–26 is a result of the insertion of Deuteronomic clichés about obedience. The reference to testing or proving in v. 25b reflects the Deuteronomic conception of the wilderness period as a time of teaching and testing (Deut. 8:3, 16).

16:1–36, Manna. Their thirst quenched, the people next complain of hunger, and Yahweh obliges them with a miraculous rain of bread from the sky (v. 4). The people marvel at the frostlike wafers, asking each other "What (Heb. *man*) is this?" Thus they name the bread *man*, "manna." This tradition stems from a natural phenomenon of the desert. The tamarisk bush, which grows in parts of the Sinai peninsula, is infested with scale insects that suck its sap, some of which is excreted in the form of globules that crystallize in the sun and fall to the ground. This sticky substance is rich in carbohydrates and sugars and can support the life of a starving wanderer (→ Manna). It is still called *mann* by the modern inhabitants of the Sinai, who regard it as a gift from God.

The sequence of events in vv. 1–12 is confusing because of the combination of narrative sources. In the P version (vv. 1–3, 6–13a, 22–26, parts of which may, alternatively, derive from E) the story is designed as another instance of Israel's "murmuring" (v. 2) and Yahweh's indulgence. The murmuring motif seems to have been lacking in the J version (vv. 4–5, 13b–15, 27–30), however, and the initiative for the gift of the manna comes from Yahweh. (Note, however, that, according to a Deuteronomic addition to v. 4b, Yahweh's purpose from the beginning is to test the people and teach them obedience [cf. 15:26] with regard to the special Sabbath provisions.) The P version also mentions a gift of quail (vv. 8, 12–13a), but in J the quail will come

much later, when the people tire of the manna and crave meat (Num. 11).

17:1–7, The Water from the Rock. The site at which the miracle of the water from the rock takes place has two names, Massah and Meribah, understood in the story to mean "Testing" and "Contention." Meribah appears alone in Num. 20:13 (cf. Deut. 32:51; Pss. 81:7; 106:32), and it is possible that Massah was added secondarily. An association between the two is already present, however, in early poetry (Deut. 33:8), and it has been suggested they were the names of two different springs at the same oasis (Kadesh, according to Num. 20). A duplicate or parallel account appearing in Num. 20:1–13 explains why Moses and Aaron did not enter the promised land (cf. v. 12).

17:8–16, The Battle with the Amalekites. The Amalekites, nomads inhabiting the desert south of Judah, most often appear in the Bible as brigands (→ Amalekites). Their attack on the Israelites in this passage is thwarted by Joshua when Moses stands atop a nearby hill and, with the help of Aaron and Hur (→ Hur), raises his hands aloft. Divine images served as battle standards for other ancient Near Eastern peoples, and it may be that Moses is acting in lieu of such a standard, representing Yahweh "with outstretched arm" (6:6)—hence the altar name "the LORD is my banner" in v. 15. Verse 14 is probably a Deuteronomic addition, conforming this passage to the reference to these events in Deut. 25:17–19 (cf. 1 Sam. 15:2), which implies that the attack had a less favorable outcome for Israel.

18:1–27, Jethro's Visit. Moses is reunited with his wife and sons and confers with his father-in-law. Jethro advises Moses to share the burden of his counseling responsibilities. Note that the office of Moses under discussion is that of mediating between the people and Yahweh. Thus it is a prophetic office. Numbers 11 treats the same theme in the distribution of Moses' "spirit" to seventy elders. It is surprising, then, to find a Midianite giving advice on religious matters to Moses, even if it is fatherly advice. It is true that Jethro praises Yahweh as the greatest of the gods (v. 11) and offers a sacrifice to him. Still, Jethro is a foreigner and not, we assume, a Yahwist, so that his praise of Yahweh must be like that of Balaam. As noted earlier in our discussion of 2:11–25, however, the religious affinity between Israel and Midian was very ancient, so that the advice recorded here may have a strong base in the tradition.

19:1–24:11
The Sinaitic Covenant

Exod. 19:1–24:11 constitutes the covenant pericope in Exodus. Chap. 19 is an introductory narrative describing the preparation of the people to receive Yahweh's proclamation of the covenant. Chap. 24 is a concluding narrative describing the ceremony of covenant ratification. The covenant proper, including the Decalogue and the laws of the so-called Covenant Code, is found in chaps. 20–23. The form of the covenant is especially significant. Yahweh speaks in the first person, identifying himself as the God who rescued Israel from slavery, enjoining upon the people a large body of law and promising them a life of prosperity in the land in return for their strict loyalty to him. Scholars have detected in this covenant formulary an ancient Near Eastern literary pattern used in diplomatic documents known as suzerainty treaties. The purpose of such a document was to establish a relationship between a suzerain (i.e., a king or lord) and a vassal. Speaking in the first person, the suzerain would identify himself, review his beneficent treatment of the vassal in the past, and call upon the vassal to obey a series of stipulations, promising to reward obedience and punish disloyalty. It seems clear that this pattern has influenced the formulation of the Sinaitic covenant. Yahweh is presented as a suzerain who is owed allegiance because of what he has done and will do for his vassal Israel.

19:1–23:33
The Encampment at Sinai

Scholars do not agree about the literary history of 19:1–20:21. As in the preceding sections, the narrative in chap. 19 includes materials from J, E, and P. The dominance of the covenant-making theme seems to reflect the influence of the E version. The form of the Decalogue included here (20:1–17) is probably that of E. The motif of the people's fear and Moses' intermediary role (20:18–19) is in keeping with E's view of the role of the prophet, as is the statement that Yahweh spoke "from the sky" (20:22). On the other hand, the people's request in 20:19 seems to imply that God has not yet spoken. This suggests the possibility that the Decalogue is secondary or that it has been transposed with vv. 18–21. The present arrangement, according to which Yahweh proclaims the Decalogue directly to the people but mediates the other law through Moses, reflects the pattern stressed in Deut. 4:13–14. Some Deuteronomic influence may be suspected here, therefore, and the suspicion is strengthened by the presence of the Deuteronomic testing motif in 20:20 (cf. 15:25; 16:4). This does not mean that the Decalogue was originally absent from the story before it was inserted by a Deuteronomistic editor, though some scholars believe this to be the case. It seems more likely that an editor transposed the E version of the Decalogue with vv. 18–21 to reflect the Deuteronomic arrangement.

19:1–25, The Sinai Theophany. Yahweh appears to the people as a prelude to the proclamation of his cov-

enant with them. The theophany experienced by Moses alone in chap. 3 is now shared by the entire community. In place of the fire in the bush, however, is a much greater fire enshrouded in dark clouds, so that the entire mountain seems to be burning. The imagery is that of a thunderstorm (vv. 16, 19 [E]), though some commentators detect volcanic language in v. 18 (J). Carefully drawn boundaries protect the sacredness of the precinct where the deity manifests himself (vv. 12–13; cf. 21–25), and the people are in a state of cultic purity, having washed their clothes and abstained from sexual activity (v. 15). The theophany itself is described somewhat differently in J (vv. 9–15, 18) and E (vv. 16–17, 19). In J, Yahweh descends onto the mountain in a smoking envelope of fire, out of which he addresses Moses. In E, however, his voice is in the thunder; that is, he speaks from the sky (cf. 20:22). The covenant is mentioned only in v. 5 in a passage that has the structure of the covenant formulary described above. This "covenant in miniature" (vv. 3–8a) is quasi-poetical in character and, though it has some affinities with Deuteronomic thought, it probably derives from an independent source incorporated into the E narrative. In it Israel is called a "realm of priests," that is, a nation uniquely close to Yahweh and, therefore, holy (vv. 5–6).

20:1–17, The Decalogue. The rules of conduct grouped together here are called the Ten Commandments (lit., "ten utterances") on the basis of 34:28 (cf. Deut. 4:13; 10:4). The ten have been reckoned in different ways (→ Ten Commandments, The). The traditional Jewish division views the divine self-proclamation in Exod. 20:2 as the first "utterance" and the prohibitions of other gods and graven images (vv. 2–3) as the second. Most other traditions understand v. 2 as a preamble. Thus the prohibition of other gods is the first commandment and the prohibition of images the second in the most common Christian enumeration. The third commandment prohibits false swearing (v. 7). The fourth requires observance of the Sabbath (vv. 8–11), and the fifth calls for respect for parents (v. 12). The final five prohibit murder (v. 13), adultery (v. 14), theft (v. 15), false witness (v. 16), and coveting things belonging to another member of the community (v. 17). Most of these laws are prohibitions. All are apodictic, i.e., absolute and applicable in any situation. The first four pertain to the Israelites' relationship with Yahweh, the final six to their relationships with each other. Together they constitute the basic requirements of the covenant being established between Yahweh and Israel. The violation of any one of them would represent a breach of the covenant relationship, thus threatening the integrity of the community that is based on the covenant.

The narrative source drawn on here is probably E, but many scholars believe the Decalogue existed as an independent document before its incorporation into the E account. Deuteronomy 5 contains an almost identical version, which has been slightly reworked to reflect Deuteronomic ideas, just as the present account has been expanded to reflect the Priestly understanding of the Sabbath (v. 11). The form shared by Elohistic, Deuteronomic, and Priestly tradition seems to have been known to Hosea (Hos. 4:2; 12:9; 13:4). It is sometimes called the "Ethical Decalogue" to distinguish it from the "Ritual Decalogue" preserved in Yahwistic tradition (34:11–26). According to the present arrangement of the narrative, the latter was given at the time of the renewal of the covenant, but it probably corresponds closely to J's version of the original covenant stipulations, which have not otherwise survived.

20:18–21, Moses the Mediator. The people are afraid of listening directly to the voice of God, and they ask Moses to mediate the commandments to them. As our text now stands, then, the Decalogue is the only part of the Sinaitic legislation communicated directly by Yahweh. The rest will be mediated through Moses. The literary-historical problem of this passage is noted in the introduction to this section (19:1–24:11).

20:22–23:33, The Covenant Code. According to 24:3, the covenant was concluded on the basis of both "the words" and "the ordinances." The former refers to the Ten Commandments, and the latter to the Covenant Code, or, as it is often called on the basis of the reference in 24:7, the "Book of the Covenant." Formal considerations show that this collection is a combination of two bodies of law. The first begins in 20:22–26 and continues in 22:18–23:19. It consists of instructions for both cultic and social behavior expressed largely in the apodictic form we noted in the Decalogue. Such rules are intended to define and sanction the sacred community. The second body of law was inserted into the middle of the first, so that it is now found in 21:2–22:17. It consists of rules or ordinances (21:1) of civil law expressed in casuistic, or case law, form ("if . . . then . . ."). Its purpose is to regulate the life of the community living in the promised land.

20:22–26, The Altar Law. Verses 22–23 are usually taken together to mean that images are prohibited because Yahweh is a heavenly, incorporeal god (cf. Deut. 4:15–40, which is a long interpretive reflection on these two verses). The altar law proper (20:24–26) permits sacrifice at any sacred place (cf. Deut. 12:13) and thus antedates the reforms of the late Judean monarchs who destroyed the local altars ("high places") and restricted sacrifice to the Solomonic Temple (→ Josiah). An altar must be constructed of earth or unhewn stones without steps. As we noted in connection with the Passover ritual (12:1–28), natural materials not modified by implements of human culture are regarded as most suitable for sacred uses.

21:1–22:17, The Book of Ordinances. The beginning of this inserted document is clearly marked by

21:1. Case law of this kind is the predominant form in the great law codes of the ancient Near East (→ Law). The codes were not normative tabulations of currently practiced laws. They were royal proclamations expressing the king's responsibility for justice in his land and his commitment to the improvement of social conditions. The ordinances in Exodus 21–22 constitute a code that should be understood in the same way. It represents a series of improvements in the governance of the community proclaimed by Israel's new divine sovereign. Thus many of the laws listed are specifically designed to make the enforcement of justice more equitable by limiting penalties or protecting the rights of powerless members of the community. For example, the purpose of the so-called *lex talionis,* or law of retaliation (vv. 23–25), is not to require vengeance, but to restrict it. The laws are grouped roughly as follows: (1) laws pertaining to slavery, requiring a seventh-year manumission of Hebrew slaves and restricting the sale of daughters (21:2–11); (2) laws of capital crimes (21:12–17), exempting unintentional homicide but including murder (21:12–14), kidnapping (21:16), and crimes against parents (21:15, 17); (3) laws pertaining to personal injuries, including injuries to slaves, inflicted by other human beings (21:18–27) and by livestock (21:28–32); (4) laws pertaining to damages to property (21:33–22:16), including livestock (21:33–36, 22:3) and real estate (22:5–6); (5) laws involving contracts (22:7–15); and (6) laws regarding the payment of the bride-price (22:16–17; → Marriage).

22:18–23:19, Rules of Conduct. The next material concludes the document begun in 20:22–26. It is a diverse list of rules of conduct for the covenant community, expressed predominantly in the apodictic, second-person form. It has much in common with the Ritual Decalogue in 34:11–26. In contrast to the preceding book of ordinances, the arrangement of these rules seems to be random. There are some general groupings by subject matter, such as the rules pertaining to the administration of justice in 23:1–3, 6–9 and the rules for the liturgical calendar in 23:10–19, but even these are intertwined with unrelated rules (23:4–5, 13, 19b). Nevertheless, certain general themes seem to be present throughout. A conspicuous humanitarian concern is expressed in rules pertaining to the treatment of sojourners (resident aliens; → Stranger), widows and orphans, debtors, and the poor, and the rules of the fallow year (→ Sabbatical Year) and the Sabbath and other holidays are given a humanitarian interpretation (23:11–12). Most of the subjects touched on are religious. There are also a few general religious rules, including prohibitions of sacrificing or swearing to other gods (22:20; 23:13) and cursing God (22:28), and a few purity laws, including prohibitions against bestiality (22:19), carrion eating (22:31), and boiling a kid in its mother's milk (23:19b), thus employing a nourishing agent of life to cause death. The dedication of a portion of the harvest, the firstborn of the herds and flocks, and the firstborn son are insisted upon (22:29–30; cf. 13:11–13). The concluding liturgical calendar stipulates three principal festivals (23:14–17): Unleavened Bread in the spring (cf. 12:15–20; 13:3–10), Harvest or First Fruits at the time of the wheat harvest (later Weeks), and Ingathering (later Succoth or Booths) in the fall (→ Feasts, Festivals, and Fasts).

23:20–33, Epilogue. Yahweh will send his messenger or angel to lead Israel safely to the promised land. He enjoins the people to serve no other gods in the land, and promises them in return prosperity together with victory over their enemies. Though this section now stands as an epilogue to the Book of the Covenant, its connection with the preceding material is tenuous. It is very different in style and subject matter, and it makes no reference to the ordinances just proclaimed. Though it seems to be based on an old narrative source, probably E (vv. 20–22, 25b–31a), it has been strongly colored by Deuteronomic ideas (cf. Deut. 7). It may have been an independent Deuteronomistic sermon on the conquest of Canaan, which was inserted at this point because of the prominence of the promised land and its produce in the cultic calendar at the end of the Book of the Covenant (23:10–19).

24:1–11
The Covenant Ceremony

Covenant ratification is accomplished by two ceremonies, described in parallel accounts from two sources. In one of these accounts (vv. 1a, 9–11), which may derive from J or an independent early source, the central event is a covenantal meal. Moses is summoned to the mountain, along with Aaron and his two oldest sons, Nadab and Abihu (6:23; cf. Lev. 10:1–3), and seventy elders. They eat and drink, gazing upon the God of Israel. The vision is described in language similar to that of Ezekiel 1. It is unparalleled in its directness (cf. 33:18–23). This, then, is a unique moment, signaling a unique bond between Yahweh and Israel. Israel's leader, its priests, and representatives of its people are permitted to see its God. Ordinarily it would be fatal for a human being to look at a divine being (cf. 3:6), but the narrator explains that on this occasion Yahweh "did not lay his hand on the chief men of the people of Israel" (v. 11). In the other account (vv. 3–8), which derives from E, the central event is a rite involving "the blood of the covenant." Moses reads the law, the people assent to it, and the blood rite is performed. Many scholars think this pattern was influenced by a regularly celebrated ceremony of covenant renewal.

24:12–31:18
The Authorization for Divine Worship

Now that the covenantal relationship has been established, it is necessary that an apparatus be set up by which the Israelites can interrelate with their God. This will require the manufacture of certain special objects (the Ark, the altar, etc.) that will make human-divine contact possible and the designation of a special group of people (the Aaronidic priests) who will be able to manipulate the objects. Above all, a shrine or sanctuary must be erected (the tabernacle), where Yahweh will be present among his people. It is stressed that all these things are to be constructed exactly according to "the pattern of the tabernacle and of all its furnishings" that Moses sees on the mountain (25:9, 40; cf. 26:30). This may indicate that Moses has a vision of the celestial sanctuary of which the earthly tabernacle is to be a replica (cf. Ezek. 40:1–2). Yahweh himself authorizes the preparation of each item and gives its specifications in Exod. 25–31. The carrying out of his instructions—the actual inauguration of the system of divine service—is described in chaps. 35–40 and Leviticus 8–9. Thus a pattern of command and execution determines the shape of the rest of the book, as the accompanying table shows. (On the sevenfold structure of 24:12–31:18, see commentary below on 31:12–18.)

THE TABERNACLE AND ITS FURNISHINGS

	Command	Execution
contribution	25:1–9	35:4–29
Ark	25:10–22	37:1–9
table	25:23–30	37:10–16
lampstand	25:31–40	37:17–24
tabernacle	26:1–37	36:8–38
sacrificial altar	27:1–8	38:1–7
tabernacle court	27:9–19	38:9–20
lamp	27:20–21	Num. 8:1–4
priestly garments	28:1–43	39:1–31
ordination ritual	29:1–46	Lev. 8:1–9:24
incense altar	30:1–10	37:25–28
bronze laver	30:17–21	38:8
anointing oil	30:22–33	37:29
incense	30:34–38	37:29
craftsmen	31:1–11	35:30–36:7
Sabbath	31:12–17	35:1–3

24:12–18, Introduction. Yahweh summons Moses to the mountain to receive the tablets of the covenant (24:12), and, as Moses ascends, the theophanic cloud enshrouds the mountain with Yahweh's "glory," that is, the refulgent envelope that surrounds the divine person, in its midst. Thus the objects and institutions about to be established will provide a suitable repository for the safekeeping of the covenant documents (25:16, 21) and a shrine in which Yahweh's glory can "tent" within the Israelite camp (25:8) and accompany them on their journey. The basis of this introduction is a continuation of E's Sinai narrative (vv. 12–15a, 18b), into which has been inserted a Priestly notice about the descent of the glory (vv. 15b–18a).

25:1–27:21, The Instructions for the Tabernacle. The tabernacle is the sacred dwelling where Yahweh's glory manifests itself among the people in the wilderness. In the older narrative sources it is presented as the tent of meeting, a simple tent-shrine, where the glory was intermittently present and oracles were received (33:7–11; cf. Num. 11:16–30; 12:4–10). The prototype of this Israelite tent-shrine seems to have been a religious object of a type used by nomads over a very long period of time in the Near East. The *qubba* of pre-Islamic Arabian tribes was a small, dome-shaped tent constructed of reddened leather stretched over a frame of desert acacia. It was a portable sanctuary, often transported on camelback, that accompanied the community both on its seasonal journeys and on marches into battle. The tribal idols were kept within it. Other portable tent-shrines, antecedents of the *qubba,* are known from the ancient Near East. There are clear parallels between the *qubba* and the Israelite tabernacle, which, as it is described in Exodus 26, has a covering of reddened leather (26:14) and a frame of desert acacia (26:15). In the present shape of the biblical tradition, which is dominated by P's perspective, however, the character and significance of the tabernacle are somewhat more complex. The tabernacle is the site of Yahweh's abiding (not transitory) presence among the people. Thus the glory will take possession of the tabernacle in 40:34 and subsequently lead the community on its journeys, effectively subsuming the role played by the pillar of cloud and fire in the older sources. In the present section, moreover, and generally in materials deriving from Priestly circles, the term "tabernacle" refers to the entire elaborate shrine described in chaps. 25–27. The tabernacle proper is only a part of this larger structure (cf. 26:1) and is itself covered by a tent (26:7). In addition to the design of the earlier tent-shrine, the architecture of Solomon's Temple seems to have influenced the description of the tabernacle. The division into a "holy place" and a "Holy of Holies" (26:33), the outer and inner sanctums, is characteristic of Phoenician temple architecture, as are the sacred enclosure or court (27:9) in which the sacrificial altar stood (cf. 40:6–8) and the general use of curtain-draped frames and pillars to effect divisions (→ Temple, The).

25:1–9, The Contribution. The raw materials for the tabernacle come from gifts freely given by the

people. The "contribution," or "offering" (RSV), referred to here is a rite that serves to set apart personal property for sacred use (→ Heave Offering).

25:10–22, The Ark. The Ark is a wooden box or chest in which "the testimony," i.e., the two tablets of the law, are deposited (v. 16). This "Ark of the testimony" will be stationed within the Holy of Holies of the tabernacle (26:34). It is covered with a golden "mercy seat" (NRSV; → Ark), above which Yahweh speaks with the people, flanked by a golden pair of protective genii called cherubim (→ Cherub) and fitted with golden rings and acacia poles for conveyance like a royal palanquin. The details show that two conceptualizations have been combined in the Priestly understanding of the Ark. On the one hand, it is a covenant repository, and it will be routinely called "the Ark of the covenant" in Deuteronomistic literature. On the other hand, it is a cherub throne, the locus of Yahweh's invisible presence in the midst of Israel and an essential component of both the tabernacle and the battle camp.

25:23–30, The Table. The table held the "Bread of the Presence" (cf. Lev. 24:5–9; → Showbread). It was stationed in the holy place of the tabernacle, separated from the Holy of Holies by a curtain.

25:31–40, The Lampstand. The menorah also stood in the holy place. The botanical terms used to describe it suggest that its branched form originated in a concept of a sacred tree (→ Lampstand).

26:1–37, The Tabernacle Proper. The tabernacle proper is the structure that contains the holy place and the Holy of Holies. It consists of a wooden frame about 30 feet long, 30 feet high, and 15 feet wide, constructed of acacia planks (vv. 15–30) and draped with decorated curtains (vv. 1–6). This structure is covered with a goats' hair tent (vv. 7–14), which is covered in turn with tanned or reddened rams' skin and the skin of another animal, perhaps the dugong. The Holy of Holies is separated from the holy place by a veil or curtain suspended on four acacia posts (vv. 31–35), and the holy place is separated from the court by a screen supported by five acacia posts (vv. 36–37). The Ark is placed behind the veil in the Holy of Holies (v. 33), and the table and the lampstand are placed in the holy place, between the screen and the veil (v. 35). The incense altar, which was also located in the holy place, is described in 30:1–10.

27:1–8, The Altar. The sacrificial altar is a 7½-foot square, about 4½ feet high. The "horns" are protrusions from the corners, also known from archaeological discoveries. The excavated examples, however, are stone, whereas this one is wooden. It is difficult to understand how an acacia altar, even when laminated with bronze (v. 2), could withstand the sacrificial fires.

27:9–19, The Court. The altar of sacrifice stood outside the tabernacle proper in the court of the tabernacle, a rectangular enclosure measuring about 150 by 75 feet. It also contained the laver, which is described in 30:17–21.

27:20–21, The Lamp. Verses 20–21 seem to authorize the making of another cultic object. Lev. 24:2–4 shows, however, that the lamp mentioned here is the same as the lampstand of 25:31–40. Also note Num. 8:1–4, which is the passage corresponding to this one in the command and execution pattern. Thus the point of the present directive is not the authorization of a new lamp, but the provision for the regular (not "perpetual") kindling of the lampstand.

28:1–43, The Instructions for the Priestly Vestments. Because Aaron and his sons are to be set apart as priests, they must wear garments designed "for dignity and splendor" (vv. 2, 40), appropriate to their office. All are provided with tunics, turbans, and sashes (vv. 39–43), as well as loincloths that permit them to enter the sacred precincts (cf. 20:26). The more specific instructions pertain almost entirely to the clothing of Aaron, i.e., the high priest. His principal garment, the ephod, is a belted loincloth with two shoulder straps (vv. 6–14). In contrast to the simple linen breechcloth called by the same name elsewhere in the Bible (1 Sam. 2:18; 2 Sam. 6:14), Aaron's ephod has ornate decorations, including a pair of lapis stones attached to the shoulder straps and engraved with the names of the twelve sons of Israel. Also attached to the straps is a pouched breastpiece (28:15–30), covered with precious stones and containing the divining instruments called Urim and Thummim and thus designated "the breastpiece of decision" or "judgment" (→ Urim and Thummim). The ephod is worn over a blue robe hemmed with bells (vv. 31–35). The noise of the bells identifies the high priest as he crosses the boundaries between the zones of sacredness in the tabernacle, so that he will not be mistaken for an unconsecrated person and die (v. 35). A gold headpiece attached to the turban (vv. 36–38) is engraved "Holy to Yahweh," thus permitting the high priest to sanctify offerings brought by the people.

29:1–46, Instructions for the Consecration of the Priests. The consecration sets Aaron and his sons apart from the rest of the community as a sanctified group eligible to serve in the sacred precincts of the sanctuary and to provide a liaison between Yahweh and the people. In the preparatory first part of the ritual (vv. 1–9a), the initiates are bathed and dressed in the garments described in the preceding chapter. The sacrifice of ordination (vv. 9b–37) has three parts. The first animal is a young bull, which is offered as a "sin offering" (v. 14, RSV), or, better, a purgation offering (*see* Leviticus, Commentary, 4:1–5:13). The sacrifice is not performed for the initiates, but on their behalf for the sanctuary, which it purges of ritual pollution. Some of the blood is smeared on the horns of the altar,

drawing off the impurity and thus preparing the altar to receive the next sacrifice (cf. 30:10). The second animal is a ram, which is immolated as a whole burnt offering (v. 18). Its purpose is expiatory. It atones for the sins of the initiates, thus making them eligible for the sanctification of the third sacrifice. The third animal is another ram, "the ram of ordination." Just as the blood of the bull was smeared on the horns of the altar, the blood of the second ram is daubed on the right earlobe, the right thumb, and the right big toe of the initiates. The blood again draws off the impurities, and the new priests are sanctified. Blood is also spattered on the priestly vestments, so that they, along with the men who wear them, become holy (v. 21). In vv. 22–28, provision is made for the future setting apart of the breast and the right thigh of sacrificial animals as reserved portions for the priests. When brought to the sanctuary, these will be presented to Yahweh (the "wave offering"; → Worship), then given to the priests. The account concludes with the prescription of the regular sacrifices to be performed at the altar (vv. 38–42). This is evidently a charter for the daily Temple service of later times.

30:1–38, Further Instructions. Additional directives pertain to things that are needed by the priests for the safe and proper operation of ritual service to God. Thus, as we shall see, the incense safeguards the high priest against the danger of the holiness of the divine presence; the census payment forfends plague; the laver permits the removal of personal impurities; and the anointing oil sanctifies both the priests and the holy objects.

30:1–10, The Altar of Incense. Burning incense has both olfactory and visual properties (→ Incense). The function of the incense altar of the tabernacle is probably to be explained in terms of the latter. It is stationed directly in front of the veil at the entrance to the Holy of Holies (v. 6). It is lighted in the morning and evening when the high priest enters the holy place to tend the lampstand. The smoke covers the mercy seat, thus creating a boundary between the priest and the divine presence and protecting the priest's life (Lev. 16:13).

30:11–16, The Census Payment. Though later interpreted as a tax to support the operation of the Temple (→ Tribute, Tax, Toll), the stated purpose of the half-shekel payment is to prevent plague. Thus it is a ransom (RSV: "atonement money") paid as a precaution in case of ritual impurity. The reason this was required when a census was taken may have been that the chief purpose of a census was to determine manpower and enroll men for military duty, an activity to which much stricter purity rules applied. Note that the plague of 2 Samuel 24 broke out after David conducted a census that determined the number of "men who drew the sword" (v. 9).

30:17–21, The Bronze Laver. To perform certain ritual tasks in a state of uncleanness would be fatal (v. 20), so that it is necessary for the priests to wash before approaching the sacrificial altar or entering the tabernacle proper. Thus a bronze washbasin, or laver, is stationed between the two.

30:22–33, The Anointing Oil. Everything being set apart as holy, from the tabernacle to the priests, is to be anointed (→ Anoint). Moreover, the anointing oil itself is holy. It is to be compounded according to a precise recipe, a variety of spices and resins suspended in an olive oil base, which is not to be altered and not to be applied to any profane person or object.

30:34–38, The Incense. The rules for the incense to be burned on the altar are similar to those for the anointing oil. The special blend is holy and must not be put to ordinary use.

31:1–11, The Appointment of Craftsmen. The artisans who are to manufacture the stipulated items have been divinely chosen and inspired (vv. 2–3). The chief craftsman is Bezalel son of Uri, the grandson of Hur (cf. 17:10; 24:14). He is a member of the tribe of Judah and, according to 1 Chron. 2:18–20, a Calebite (→ Caleb). His first assistant is an otherwise unknown Danite by the name of Oholiab son of Ahisamach.

31:12–18, The Institution of the Sabbath. The day of solemn rest foreshadowed in the account of the manna in the wilderness (16:22–26) and stipulated by the fourth commandment (20:8–11) is formally instituted in vv. 12–18. The opening words of the speech addressed to the Israelites can be understood to imply a connection to the preceding account of the appointment of the craftsman, as if, "(You shall do all this work.) Nonetheless, you must keep my Sabbaths!" But the meaning is probably ceremonial and emphatic: "Above all, you must keep my Sabbaths!" There is, however, another kind of connection with the preceding passage and, indeed, with the entire account of the authorization of the system of divine service (24:12–31:18). Editorially, the long passage that extends from 25:1 to 30:10 is presented as a single speech. It is introduced with the simple formula "the LORD said to Moses" (25:1). The same formula or another almost identical to it, occurs six other times in the larger passage (30:11, 17, 22, 34; 31:1, 12). The effect is to divide Yahweh's instructions into seven utterances, of which the institution of the Sabbath is the climactic seventh. Note, finally, the designation in vv. 13, 17 of the Sabbath as a "sign" between Yahweh and Israel. In Priestly theology each of the historical covenants was ratified by a visible token or sign. The rainbow was the sign of the universal covenant made with Noah (Gen. 9:12–13), and circumcision was the sign of the patriarchal covenant made with Abraham (Gen. 17:11). The Sabbath is now proclaimed as the sign of the Sinaitic covenant.

The cosmic significance of this sign—and thus of the covenant as a whole—is disclosed by a link to the Priestly account of creation (v. 17).

32:1–34:35
The Breaking and Renewal of the Covenant

Chaps. 32–34 stand between the two parts of the account of the wilderness sanctuary. The instructions for the erection of the tabernacle were given in the preceding seven chapters (25–31), and their implementation will be described in the succeeding six chapters (35–40). In between is a story of covenant breaking and renewal drawn primarily from the early narrative sources (JE). The story line broken off at the end of the covenant pericope in chaps. 19–24 is now resumed, and the covenantal relationship established in those chapters is completely and abruptly dissolved, then restored. The pattern is that of the "murmuring" motif, which was introduced as soon as the Israelites entered the wilderness (14:10–18). Oblivious to the divine provisions made for their welfare, the people become anxious and abandon their trust in Yahweh and Moses. As in the previous instances, the rift that is created is eventually healed through the mediation of Moses. At first, however, he is absent, and the mischief done is serious. The editorial links between this section and the tabernacle account are established by reference to the two tablets of the covenant. Yahweh summoned Moses to receive them in 24:12, and he gave them to him at the conclusion of his long speech about the tabernacle (31:18). In the course of this section Moses descends with the tablets (32:15–16) and breaks them in anger (32:19). He then cuts new tablets (34:1), and when the covenant has been renewed, Yahweh writes the words on them again (34:28). This brings the story back to the point when things went wrong: Moses again descends the mountain with the two tablets (34:29).

32:1–35
The Incident of the Golden Calf

The people's demand is for "gods . . . who shall go before us"; that is, they want palpable assurance of the divine presence among them on their march. This, however, is precisely what the tabernacle will provide. Thus the irony in the situation is that the thing the people are demanding is exactly what is being prepared for them on the mountain. Seen in this light, the manufacture of the golden calf is a travesty of the construction of the tabernacle just authorized. The image is fabricated from materials contributed by the people (vv. 2–4), just as the tabernacle is supposed to be (25:1–9). An altar is placed in front of it (v. 5), just as an altar is supposed to be placed in front of the tabernacle (cf. 40:29). The conflict, then, is one of modes and symbols of worship. The action taken by the people is not intended as a rejection of Yahweh. On the contrary, Aaron proclaims "a feast to Yahweh" as soon as the altar is in place (v. 5). The locus of Yahweh's presence, however, is not a tent-shrine, but a calf, or rather a young bull. The biblical writers depict the worship of Yahweh with bull iconography as the standard error of the form of worship of the Northern Kingdom during the monarchical period. Jeroboam, the first Northern king, introduced golden bulls into the sanctuaries of Dan and Bethel (1 Kings 12:26–28), and "the young bull of Samaria" (Hos. 8:5–6) seems to have been the chief icon in the sanctuary of the subsequent Northern capital. Thus, like a very large number of ancient Near Eastern gods, Yahweh was worshiped in the form of a strong and virile young bull. Scholars disagree whether the bull was understood as an image of Yahweh himself or as a pedestal upon which he was believed to be invisibly present. In either case, however, the bull iconography was repudiated by one stream of Israelite tradition in favor of the iconography of the tabernacle and the Ark. It is this stream of tradition that is represented in the story of the golden calf, as in the Bible generally. Note that the people's utterance, "These are your gods, O Israel, who brought you up out of the land of Egypt!" (Exod. 32:4, 8), seems inappropriate, since there is only one bull (cf. the correction in Neh. 9:18). The narrator is alluding to the two bulls at Dan and Bethel, which Jeroboam dedicated using identical words (1 Kings 12:28).

The unfavorable depiction of Aaron in this chapter contrasts sharply with his portrayal elsewhere in Exodus. The instructions in chap. 29 stipulated that only he and his sons would be ordained, a reflection of the actual situation in the highest rank of the Jerusalem priesthood, from which all Levites were eventually excluded except one family of Aaronids (→ Priests). Here in vv. 26–29, however, the Levites are said to have ordained themselves by their staunch behavior. We are not told which Levites these are, but they are certainly not Aaron's group. In earlier chapters Moses' inability to perform his duties without Aaron's help was emphasized, again a reflection of the views of the later Jerusalem priesthood. Here, however, Aaron's weaknesses are accentuated by comparison with Moses, who is exonerated from blame by his absence. These things suggest that the story originated in circles hostile to the Aaronids at a time when there was a serious rift in the tribe of Levi.

Mesopotamian parallels to the smashing of legal tablets show that Moses' action is not just an expression of anger, but a formal repudiation of the covenant. Moses' destruction of the bull, however, is not so easy to understand. It may be that burning it, grinding it up, dissolving its dust in water, and requiring the people to drink it is a way of obliterating it. The final stage is appropriate, because it came out of the mouths of the people in the first place (v. 1). Some scholars draw a connection to the plague in v. 35, interpreting

the drinking as an ordeal that identifies the guilty by making them sick (cf. Num. 5:16–28).

33:1–23
Yahweh's Presence Among the People

When the Israelites depart from Mount Horeb, will Yahweh go with them? Even though he led the march from Egypt personally in the pillar of cloud and fire (13:21), the incident of the golden calf has created doubts. A holy presence in the midst of such "a stiff-necked people" would endanger their lives (v. 5). As usual, the problem is solved by Moses' intercession. The scrap of early narrative in vv. 7–11 highlights the intimacy of his relationship with Yahweh. In these verses the tent of meeting does not have the elaborated form of P's tabernacle. It is a simple shrine located outside the camp and attended by Joshua, who is identified as though for the first time (v. 11), even though he has appeared before without introduction (17:9; 24:13; 32:17). Verses 7–11, then, seem to be out of place here. Nevertheless, they are included to stress that "the LORD used to speak to Moses face to face, as one speaks to a friend" (v. 11). It is on the basis of this special relationship that Moses makes his appeal for Yahweh to accompany the march, and Yahweh agrees (vv. 12–16). In a curious sequel, Moses makes another request. He asks to see Yahweh's "glory," but he seems to want to look directly upon the divine person. Yahweh's reply is, "You cannot see my face" (v. 20), and an arrangement is made whereby Moses is permitted a glimpse of Yahweh's back.

34:1–35
The Renewal of the Covenant

The issues raised by the golden calf incident have now been resolved, if not forgotten, and the broken covenant relationship can be formally restored. When this has been achieved, it will be possible to implement the instructions for the tabernacle.

34:1–28, The Proclamation of the Covenant. Having instructed Moses to prepare two new tablets, Yahweh again descends upon Sinai (v. 5; cf. 19:20) and proclaims his covenant with Israel. The relationship is renewed with reference to the future conquest of Canaan rather than the past escape from Egypt. Moreover, the covenant stipulations are not the same as those in chaps. 20–23. This is surprising, because it is the clear implication of v. 1 that the new tablets are to have the same thing on them that the broken tablets had, and v. 28 states flatly that Moses writes "the ten utterances" on the tablets. In the text of the chapter, however, there is a different list of apodictic laws (vv. 17–24) in place of the Decalogue. These difficulties have led scholars to the conclusion that chap. 34 preserves a part of the account of the making of the first covenant in the original J narrative, a parallel to the E and P account in chap. 20, even though it now stands as an account of the making of a second covenant, or rather a renewal of the first. The commandments in vv. 17–24 are sometimes called the Ritual Decalogue to distinguish them from the Ethical Decalogue that occupies the same position in the account of the broken covenant (20:3–17). But there is no Decalogue in vv. 17–24, a passage that stands much closer in tone and content to the apodictic rules of conduct in portions of the Book of the Covenant (20:22–26, 22:18–23:19).

34:29–35, The Shining of Moses' Face. In consequence of Moses' face-to-face dialogues with Yahweh, "the skin of his face shone" with light. The Hebrew verb also permits the erroneous translation "was horned," giving rise to the curious notion, eternalized in Michelangelo's statue, that Moses had horns. In fact, however, Moses has been touched with the refulgent "glory" that, according to a belief widespread in antiquity, envelops the person of a deity. Compare the shining of Jesus' face in Matthew's account of the transfiguration (Matt. 17:2). The veil Moses uses in subsequent dealings with the Israelites is designated by a noun that occurs nowhere else in the Bible. Some scholars have supposed this tradition to have arisen from the use of a ritual mask, but it is precisely when he is involved in ritual activities that Moses' "mask" is set aside (v. 34).

35:1–40:38
The Inauguration of the Cult

The various tasks authorized in 24:12–31:18 are now carried out, and the divine service in the tabernacle is inaugurated. The account of the implementation follows that of the instructions very closely. The only significant difference is the order of events. It was necessary, for reasons explained below, to implement the Sabbath law, collect the contribution, and appoint the craftsmen at the beginning of the work. This accounts for the only major variation in order, although there are certain minor variations having to do with the sequence in which various articles are made. Note, however, that there are several differences in arrangement between the received Hebrew text and the Greek text of chaps. 36–39. The most substantial of these differences are noted below. It is difficult to determine which arrangement is original.

35:1–3, The Rule of the Sabbath. The Sabbath law, which was given after the rest of the instructions (31:12–17), is put into effect before the actual construction begins, so that it can restrict the work.

35:4–29, The Contribution. The contribution is also shifted to the beginning. Though authorized at the end

of the instructions, it must be collected before the work can begin.

35:30–36:7, The Appointment of Craftsmen. The appointment of Bezalel and the other craftsmen, though authorized at the end of the instructions, must be made in advance of the actual work.

36:8–38:20, The Construction of the Tabernacle. The order in which the tabernacle and its furnishings are made is not exactly the same as the order in which they were authorized. The tabernacle proper was authorized in chap. 26, after the articles to be stationed in it (25:10–40). It is built in 36:8–38, however, before the Ark, table, and lampstand (37:1–24). On the other hand, the sacrificial altar is built before the tabernacle court (38:1–20), just as in the instructions (27:1–19). (In the Gk. text of chaps. 36–38, the entire sanctuary, including both the tabernacle proper and the court, is constructed before any of the furnishings are made.) The incense altar, the anointing oil, the incense, and the bronze laver were authorized together in a collection of additional instructions (30:1–38). In the Hebrew text of chaps. 37–38, however, their manufacture is described in the natural positions—the incense altar, anointing oil, and incense in 37:25–29, in connection with the other furnishings of the tabernacle proper (37:1–24), and the laver in 38:8, in connection with the court (38:9–20). To the account of the making of the laver is appended the curious anecdote that the bronze with which it is made is taken "from the mirrors of the women who served at the entrance of the tent of meeting." The only other biblical reference to these women (1 Sam. 2:22) sheds no light on their identity or function.

38:21–31, The Record of Contributions. This tally of the gold, silver, and bronze contributed for the tabernacle contains at least two striking anachronisms. First, the supervisory role of Aaron's son Ithamar (v. 21) assumes that the disqualification of Nadab and Abihu described in Leviticus 10 has already taken place (Num. 3:4; cf. Num. 4:33). Second, the census reported in Numbers 1 seems to be one of the bases on which the contributions have been made.

39:1–31, The Preparation of the Priestly Garments. According to the arrangement of the received Hebrew text, the priestly vestments are the last things made. In the Greek text, however, they are the first.

39:32–43, Completion of the Work. The completed work is inspected by Moses, who finds it to be perfect and blesses the people. This passage stands as an epilogue to the account of the manufacture of the tabernacle in chaps. 35–39. It gives final reinforcement to the command and execution scheme, repeating three times that "the Israelites had done everything just as the LORD had commanded Moses" (vv. 32, 42, 43).

40:1–38, The Erection of the Tabernacle. The account of the actual erection of the tabernacle follows the command and execution pattern of chaps. 25–31 and 35–39. The instructions are given in vv. 1–15 and carried out in vv. 16–33. The final passage (vv. 34–38) records the divine response. The theophanic cloud covers the tabernacle, and Yahweh, clothed in his blazing "glory," enters the tabernacle proper. Thus the two theophanic traditions of Exodus, that of the pillar of cloud and fire and that of the tabernacle, are fused at the end. The tabernacle now assumes the bellwether role played by the pillar on the march to Sinai.

Bibliography

Childs, B. S. *The Book of Exodus: A Critical, Theological Commentary.* Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1974.

Clements, R. E. *Exodus.* Cambridge Bible Commentary on the New English Bible. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1972.

Greenberg, M. *Understanding Exodus.* Melton Research Center Series. New York: Behrman House, 1969.

Plaut, W. G. *The Torah: A Modern Commentary.* New York: Union of American Hebrew Congregations, 1981.

Sarna, N. M. *Exploring Exodus.* New York: Schocken, 1986.

Leviticus

FRANK H. GORMAN, JR.

INTRODUCTION

Leviticus and the Pentateuch

Leviticus is the third book of the Torah, or the Pentateuch (→ Torah). The name is derived from the Latin Vulgate, which follows the Greek translations and reflects the view that the book is primarily concerned with matters of interest to the priesthood (→ Levites; Priests). The early rabbinical traditions also viewed the book in this way, referring to it as the "Manual of the Priests." The Hebrew text simply refers to the book by its opening word, "and He called" (Heb. *wayyiqra'*). Although some of the instructions are directed specifically to "Aaron and his sons" (e.g., 6:8, 24; 17:1; 21:1; 22:17), the whole book is addressed to the faith community and seeks to provide instructions for the Israelite community as it is ordered by the divine presence.

Leviticus is associated in its entirety with the Priestly traditions of the Pentateuch (→ Priestly Writer[s]; Sources of the Pentateuch). Although the Priestly materials are generally dated to the Babylonian exile in the sixth century B.C., significant questions continue to be raised concerning the origins of these traditions. Pre-exilic dates continue to receive support from a variety of scholars. One problem in dating the origins of the book with precision has to do with the nature of the material itself. Is Leviticus an instructional manual to guide the enactment of rituals, or is it a textual rendering of cult (or system of worship practices) that moves toward a ritualization of reading rather than the actualization of rites?

The book clearly reflects a complex process of growth and development, and this in two ways. First, several "blocks" of material are easily isolated within the book: the sacrificial instructions (chaps. 1–7); the narrated origins of the priesthood and tabernacle cult (8–9); the purity/impurity instructions (11–15); and the Holiness Code (17–26). Second, each of these blocks of material reflects, to some extent, its own internal development. For all of the emphasis on the strict adherence to "law" often associated with the Priestly traditions, the book of Leviticus reflects a great deal of interpretive freedom in presenting the instructions of Yahweh to the Israelite community.

Leviticus is located at the center of the Torah (Pentateuch) and must be understood within that context. More specifically, Leviticus is at the heart of Israel's stay at Mount Sinai (Exod. 19:1–Num. 10:10). Israel arrived at Mount Sinai and entered into the covenant with Yahweh (Exod. 19–24; → Covenant). Moses received the instructions for the tabernacle (Exod. 25–31), the people worshiped the golden calf, a new covenant was made (Exod. 32–34), and the tabernacle was constructed (Exod. 35–40; → Tabernacle). A high point in the narrative takes place when the divine glory seen on Mount Sinai takes up residence in the tent (Exod. 40:34–38). Leviticus opens with the statement that Yahweh spoke to Moses from the tent and intended for the instructions to be passed along to the entire Israelite community (Lev. 1:1–2). The book consistently emphasizes that the instructions it contains are the word of Yahweh addressed to the whole community. In addition, when the text reports the enactment of specific rituals by Moses or Aaron, it emphasizes that they were done exactly as Yahweh had commanded. Leviticus, then, has to do with the formation of the Israelite community in relation to the word of Yahweh. Just as the word of Yahweh brought the very good order of creation into being in Gen. 1:1–2:4a, so now the word of Yahweh brings into being the appropriate form of the Israelite community. The instructions in Leviticus play a crucial role in the unfolding of Yahweh's story with Israel. Leviticus provides Yahweh's instructions for enacting the life of the community within the context of the divine presence that dwells in their midst, the latter being a primary theological concern of the Priestly traditions (cf. Exod. 6:2–8; 25:8, 21–22; 29:42–46).

Enactment as Theme

Enactment is a central category in the book. The Israelites are directed to enact sacred rituals within the tabernacle cult, and they are directed to enact social justice within the context of the day-to-day life of the community. In particular, the Holiness Code (chaps. 17–26) provides the divine call for Israel to enact holiness in every type of human relationship: in the family, in economic transactions, in judicial proceedings, in cultic activity, and in the social processes of day-to-day interaction. Far from being a book entirely focused on ritual, Leviticus provides a divine call for the

community to enact a life of holiness in the context of Yahweh's abiding presence, as well as a means by which this may be accomplished (→ Holiness).

After the divine glory takes up residence in the tent, instructions are provided for the presentation of the sacrifices and offerings, activity appropriate for sacred space (chaps. 1–7). Although the initial sacrificial instructions provide a framework for cultic presentations, they also provide necessary information for the ritual enactments that follow in Leviticus 8–9: the tabernacle priesthood is ordained, the holy area is ritually anointed, and the newly ordained priests, represented by Aaron, present sacrifices and offerings on the altar. Leviticus 10 narrates the events that result in the death of Nadab and Abihu, Aaron's sons, and provides the context for the purity instructions that follow in Leviticus 11–15. The death of the sons in holy space raises in pointed fashion the problem of impurity in relation to the holiness associated with the tent. Leviticus 11–15 provides instructions for separating the clean and the unclean (see 10:10), and continues to focus on sacred space and the need to keep it free of impurity. Leviticus 16 provides instructions for the annual day of purification, the yearly ritual by means of which sacred space is cleansed of impurity. The instructions in Leviticus 1–16 reflect a common concern: how to maintain the holiness and purity of the tabernacle so as not to drive away Yahweh, who dwells in it.

Ritual enactment gives way to greater focus on social enactment in the Holiness Code (Lev. 17–26). This is not to say that the first sixteen chapters show no concern for social enactment, or that the Holiness Code has no concern for cultic enactment. The issue is relative and a matter of emphasis. The shift to social enactment as a means by which the Israelite community is able to reflect the holiness of Yahweh represents a stronger focus on the social interactions of the community. The instructions move from a rather narrow focus on sacred space, certainly a social issue, to a concern for just community processes. The context for Israelite interaction remains the divine presence, which dwells in the midst of the community.

Ritual and Text

The book of Leviticus raises in pointed fashion the relationship between ritualization and textuality. What precisely is the relationship between text and ritual? Do the texts present themselves as rigid directives for ritual enactments? Are the instructions to be read in order to gain information on the correct way to enact a ritual? The book presents itself as the spoken word of Yahweh to the community. Embedded as it is within the larger pentateuchal context, Leviticus must be understood, at least in part, as one element of the narration of Israel's sacred story. The book is intended to be read within the narrative context of that story! Leviticus suggests a hermeneutical movement toward a ritualized reading of the text. A strict dichotomy between instruction and story does not hold in the case of Leviticus, or the whole Torah for that matter. Attention must be given to the nature of the text as the word of Yahweh directed to the faith community. One must ask about the role of spoken instruction in the formation and development of the Israelite community, not only about the proper form of this or that sacrifice.

COMMENTARY

1:1–7:38
Sacrificial Instructions

Sacrificial rites are at the heart of divine-human interaction in the book of Leviticus. Chaps. 1–7 provide instructions for presenting the basic types of sacrifices and offerings, divided into two distinct sets: 1:3–6:7 and 6:8–7:36. The first set, consistently addressed to the entire Israelite community, details the basic presentational form of the various sacrificial rites and offerings. The second set focuses more specifically on priestly matters and addresses a variety of cultic issues. These instructions are easily distinguished from the first set by the repeated use of the introductory phrase, "This is the *torah* [Heb., "instruction, teaching"] of . . ." (6:9, 14, 25; 7:1, 11, 37), and the divine directive that Moses is to deliver them to Aaron and his sons (6:8–9, 24–25). The final two series of instructions in this set, however, are directed to all the people of Israel (7:23, 29), and the concluding statement clearly views all the instructions as applying to the whole community (7:37–38). Both sets of instructions reflect a long and complex history of development and redaction.

Far from providing a detailed account of the rites of offering, these instructions present a general framework of the essential elements for the presentation of sacrifices and offerings. For example, the instructions say nothing about the sounds of ritual or the performative nuancing of the sacrificial presentations by the offerer and the officiating priest. These instructions provide the essential shape of the rites, but leave a great deal open to hermeneutical and/or performative interpretation.

The basic structure of sacrificial offering reflects the giving of a gift: the human offerer brings an animal into the divine realm and presents it to the deity. In priestly sacrificial rites, this basic structure is organized into four distinct movements: presentation, slaughter and flaying, blood manipulation, and ritual "removal" of the animal remains. The specifics of each movement vary from ritual to ritual and may differ within various presentations of the same type of sacrifice (e.g., the multiple forms of the purification offer-

ing; 4:1–5:13). The offerer brings an animal to the holy place, places a hand on the animal's head, and identifies the type of sacrifice to be presented. The offerer then slaughters the animal and cuts its body into pieces. The officiating priest takes the blood of the slaughtered animal and puts it on the altar, the specific location and method varying from rite to rite. Finally, the remains of the animal are, for the most part, burned or eaten.

For the Priestly traditionists, sacrificial rituals address matters relating to the divine-human relationship. This relationship is understood to take place within the multiple contexts of the very good order of creation, Israelite social interaction, concerns associated with the purity and holiness of the tabernacle, and the divine presence that dwells in the midst of the community. Sacrificial rites are found in rituals of founding (e.g., the ritual founding of the priesthood and the tabernacle cult in Lev. 8–9), rituals of maintenance (e.g., the regular calendrical rituals that function to "mark out" the sacred times of the year; see Lev. 23; Num. 28–29), and rituals of restoration (e.g., the ritual for the person recovered from an unclean skin condition in Lev. 14:1–32). Although such categories are helpful in mapping out ritual procedures, some ritual processes reflect multiple purposes. For example, the annual day of purification (Lev. 16) is clearly a ritual of restoration, a day when the camp is "set right" through the communal cleansing of impurity and elimination of sin. At the same time, because this day plays a significant role in the regular calendrical rites, it functions as a ritual of maintenance. The ritual maintains the good order of the tabernacle cult and community, but it does this by restoring the tabernacle and camp to a state of purity and holiness.

Sacrificial rites reflect a wide range of human emotions generated by everyday experiences of the world and the divine. The cult provides one means for responding to the important realities of daily existence (→ Worship). The joy, sorrow, thankfulness, wonder, guilt, relief, and hope of the common Israelite are given concrete expression in the sacrificial cult. The Israelites are provided the opportunity to bring into the context of the sacred their experiences of and responses to the world. The everyday joy of a bountiful harvest, for example, is sacralized when the first fruits are offered. The anguish of guilt is provided a means of concrete expression and resolution in the presentation of the reparation offerings. The sacrificial cult provides a means and context for transforming the experience of guilt into an experience of divine forgiveness.

1:1–2
General Introduction

The general introduction to the sacrificial instructions follows immediately on the announcement that the divine glory has taken up residence in the tabernacle (Exod. 40:34–35; cf. Exod. 24:15–25:1; Num. 9:15–23). Yahweh calls to Moses from the tent, a tradition that associates the tent with the ongoing revelation of Yahweh to Moses (cf. Exod. 25:22). Leviticus also reflects a tradition that locates divine revelation on Mount Sinai (7:37–38; 25:1; 26:46; 27:34). The summary statement that concludes the sacrificial instructions states that the sacrificial *torot* (Heb., ritual instructions) were commanded by Yahweh on Mount Sinai (7:37–38). The Priestly traditions recognize both the mountain and the tent as places from which Yahweh gave Moses authoritative instructions for the Israelite community.

Verse 2 provides a general introductory statement to the sacrificial instructions: "when any of you presents an offering of livestock to Yahweh." "Livestock" is a general category more specifically defined as animals from the herd or flock, i.e., bulls, goats, or sheep.

1:3–6:7
First Set of Instructions

In the first set of instructions, headings indicating that Yahweh spoke to Moses are found in 1:1; 4:1; 5:14; and 6:1. The first one introduces instructions for the burnt offering, the grain offering, and the well-being offerings (chaps. 1–3). On the basis of language and style, the material discussing the grain offering (chap. 2) appears to be distinct from that on the burnt offering and well-being offering. Although not certain, it is probable that the burnt offering and the well-being offering once were the two primary offerings in Israel. The burnt offering was given completely to the deity, whereas the well-being offerings were consumed by the human participants. Thus, these two sacrifices concretely actualized the "coming together" of God and the Israelite. The instructions concerning the grain offering were, in all probability, inserted into their present textual location because grain offerings were regularly presented with burnt offerings (see Num. 15:1–10). These chapters consistently emphasize that the smoke of these presentations provides a soothing aroma for Yahweh.

The materials in 4:1–6:7 reflect a later development in the Israelite sacrificial system. These chapters have undergone their own redactional development. Both the purification offering and the reparation offering are concerned to bring about "expiation," a setting right of disruptions in the divine-human relationship caused by sin, impurity, guilt, or trespass (→ Expiation). Both of these sacrifices reflect a desire to protect and maintain the integrity of sacred space.

Certainly, Leviticus 1–7 reached its present form through a complex process of redaction and editing. With that said, a second point must be emphasized: the final editors clearly wanted these chapters to be read as a block of material addressed to the whole community. Ritual enactments are moving toward becoming textualized presentations.

1:3–17, The Burnt Offering. The smoke that ascends to and provides Yahweh with a soothing fragrance is at the heart of the burnt offering (Heb. *'olah*). The whole animal, with the exception of the hide, which is given to the officiating priest (7:8), is burned on the altar. Three types of animals may be used: a male without blemish from the herd, a male without blemish from the flock, a turtledove or pigeon if the sacrifice is a bird.

The basic structure of the ritual reflects four movements. First, the offerer brings the animal to the tabernacle, presents it to the priest, and identifies it as a burnt offering. The hand-laying rite functions to identify the type of sacrifice and the one on behalf of whom it is being offered, not as an act of "sin transference." Second, the offerer slaughters the animal (on the north side of the altar, v. 11). Third, the priest puts the blood on the sides of the altar (→ Altar). Sacrificial blood must be placed on the altar, at least in part to avoid the punishment associated with the taking of life (see 17:10–17; Gen. 9:4–6). Fourth, the offerer cuts the animal into pieces and washes its entrails and the legs, after which the priest burns the animal on the altar. The smoke produced by the burning of the animal is a gift to Yahweh providing a pleasing and soothing aroma.

In the Priestly traditions, the burnt offering reflects a variety of ritual contexts. Lev. 1:4 states that it effects "expiation" (Heb. *kipper*); in the Priestly traditions, however, its expiatory role is generally limited to larger ritual processes (e.g., 14;16). Lev. 22:17–20 (Holiness Code) indicates that a burnt offering may function as either a votive offering or a freewill offering (cf. Num. 15:1–10). A burnt offering is required of a new mother (Lev. 12:6), a person recovered from an unclean skin condition (14:19–20) or unclean bodily discharge (15:13–15), and in the consecration ritual for a Nazirite (Num. 6:13–20). The burnt offering is prescribed for several community rituals (Lev. 16:24; cf. Lev. 23; Num. 28–29). Burnt offerings are required every morning and evening as part of the regular sanctuary ritual (Exod. 29:38–46); these sacrifices function as maintenance rituals designed to mark the creation and regular movement of the day (see Gen. 1:3–5). The burnt offering is also required for the ritual consecration of both the tabernacle and the priesthood (Lev. 8), one-time rituals of founding. Thus, in the Priestly traditions, the burnt offering plays a variety of roles in a variety of ritual contexts. The primary concern is not sin or its consequences, but the ritual marking of a state of peace, rest, and joy.

2:1–16, The Grain Offering. Leviticus 2 consists of two parallel statements regarding the grain offering (Heb. *minchah;* vv. 1–3, 4–10), a prohibition against the use of leaven or honey (vv. 11–12), a prescription for the inclusion of salt (v. 13), and instructions regarding the offering of first fruits (vv. 14–16). In the Priestly traditions, grain offerings generally accompany burnt offerings (Num. 15:1–10; Num. 28–29; Exod. 29:38–42; cf. Ezek. 46:4–15) and, with three possible exceptions (Lev. 2:14–16 [cf. 23:9–14]; 6:19–23 [cf. Exod. 29:38–42; Num. 28:1–8]; and Num. 5:11–18), are part of larger ritual processes (e.g., Lev. 8:25–29; 14:20; 23:16–19). In some cases, a grain offering might well have functioned as a less expensive form of the burnt offering.

Five distinct types of grain offerings are noted: uncooked fine flour (vv. 1–3) or grain (vv. 14–16), thin cakes baked in an oven (v. 4), wafers baked in an oven (v. 4), cakes prepared on a griddle (v. 5), and flour cooked in a pan (v. 7). Obviously, the preparation must be understood as part of the larger ritual process. Uncooked offerings of fine flour (vv. 1–3) and first fruits (vv. 14–16) require oil and frankincense (Num. 15:1–10 indicates that frankincense was not included for grain offerings presented in conjunction with blood sacrifices).

The ritual proper consists of two primary movements: the presentation by the offerer and the burning of the representative portion by the priest. The burning of the representative portion provides a soothing and pleasant aroma for Yahweh. The remainder belongs to the priests. An offering placed on the altar must not include leaven or (fruit) honey (vv. 11–12) because, in all probability, the fermentation process was viewed as a form of decay. Salt, however, must be included with the offerings (v. 13). The association of this prescription with the "salt of the covenant" suggests that these offerings were thought to be a sign of the binding covenant between Yahweh and Israel. Special instructions are given for offering the first fruits of barley (vv. 14–16), a required offering. The first-fruit offerings reflect the ritual response of gratitude and thanksgiving to Yahweh for blessing the land and providing food for the Israelites.

3:1–17, The Sacrifice of Well-Being. The well-being offering (Heb. *zebach shelamim*), sometimes translated as "peace offering," "communion sacrifice," or "covenant sacrifice," provides both a soothing aroma for Yahweh and a meal for the offerer. The Priestly traditions recognize three primary types of well-being offerings (7:11–18): a thanksgiving offering *(todah),* a votive offering *(neder),* and a freewill offering *(nedebah).* These basic types of sacrifice reflect a range of human responses to the world: thankfulness for acts of grace and mercy, the hopes associated with the making of a vow, and wonder at the goodness of creation. A well-being sacrifice is required on two occasions: on the occasion of the first sacrifices offered by the newly ordained priesthood (9:18–21) and at the Feast of Weeks (23:19). Celebration is at the heart of the presentation and consumption of this sacrifice. The ritual enacts the experience of joy and celebration in the context of the sacred.

The chapter consists of three statements concern-

ing the offering of animals (vv. 1–5, 6–11, 12–16) and a concluding prohibition against the consumption of either fat or blood (vv. 16b–17). Acceptable animals include a male or female from the herd (vv. 1–5), or a male or female from the flock (sheep, vv. 6–11; goat, vv. 12–16). Unlike with the ritual of the burnt offering, the offerer eats the meat of the well-being animal. In addition, the sacrifice is termed "a food offering for Yahweh" (vv. 11, 16; cf. 21:6, 8, 17, 21, 22; 22:25). The view that the well-being offering provides "food" for Yahweh is more ancient than the Priestly traditions, although its presence in this chapter suggests that the sacrifice is viewed as an occasion for a "meal" to be shared by Yahweh and the offerer.

The fat of the animal is placed on the altar and burned. The text provides no explanation for the prohibition of fat, which may reflect an older belief that fat was the "food" of Yahweh and, therefore, not available for human consumption.

4:1–5:13, The Purification Offering. Generally translated "sin offering," Hebrew *hatta't* is better understood as removing the impurity that defiles the tabernacle, thus, "purification offering." The sacrifice is required in response to guilt and impurity associated with sin (4:1–5:13; → Sin), but also for situations that have nothing to do with sin (e.g., purification for a new mother [chap. 12], or a person recovered from an unclean flow [15]). Several community rituals include a purification offering (e.g., the consecration of the tabernacle and priesthood [chap. 8], the annual day of purification [16]). The purification sacrifice addresses a range of concerns that arise in human life lived in the context of sacred space and functions to rectify situations that are viewed as disruptive to the realm of the sacred and the ongoing orderly life of the community.

Lev. 4:1–35 requires the sacrifice when an individual or the community sins unintentionally and does something prohibited by Yahweh (v. 2; see Num. 15:30–31 for intentional ["high-handed"] sins). The text presents two basic ritual forms: one for the anointed priest (vv. 3–12) or the whole congregation (vv. 13–21), and a second for a ruler (vv. 22–26) or a common person (vv. 27–35). The primary differences are found in the types of animals sacrificed, the priestly manipulation of the blood, and the disposal of the remains.

The ritual reflects the basic structure for the presentation of sacrifices. The animal is brought to the door of the tent, identified, slaughtered, and its blood collected. If the sacrifice is offered on behalf of the high priest or congregation, the priest brings the blood inside the tent, sprinkles it seven times before the curtain that closes off the Holy of Holies, places some of it on the altar of incense in the outer room of the tent, and then pours out the rest at the base of the outer altar. The priest burns the fat on the altar (cf. the well-being offering, Lev. 3) and the skin and remains of the animal are taken outside the camp and burned. The ritual for a ruler or a common person reflects two important differences. First, the blood is *not* taken inside the tent. Rather, the priest places some of it on the horns of the outer altar and pours out the remainder at the base of the outer altar. Second, the priest must eat a portion of the animal (6:26; cf. 10:16–20).

In the Priestly traditions, sin creates impurity that is attracted to the sanctuary, the dwelling place of Yahweh. Also, certain situations or actions that are not understood to be sinful (see Lev. 11–15) generate impurity that defiles the tabernacle. The holy God of Israel cannot remain in a defiled place. Thus, a ritual means of purification is necessary to restore the integrity of the holy place when it has been disrupted. The sin of the anointed priest or the whole congregation is more severe than that of lay individuals and generates impurity that defiles the inner room of the tabernacle. Thus, the blood of the sacrifice for the anointed priest or whole congregation must be taken inside the tent. A ruler or common person generates impurity that defiles the outer altar. Thus, the blood is placed only on the outer altar. In both cases, the blood is placed in two locations: at the top and at the bottom of an object associated with the sacred realm. Lev. 8:15, reporting the first presentation of a purification offering in the ordination service for the priesthood, states that Moses put some of the blood on the horns of the outer altar to "purify" it and poured out the rest at the base of the altar to "consecrate" it (i.e., make it holy). The sacred area has been defiled and its holy and clean status have been violated. The purification sacrifice cleanses the area of impurity and restores the integrity of the sacred realm. If the blood of the animal is brought inside the tent, the animal's remains are taken outside the camp and burned. If the blood is not brought inside the tent, the priest eats some of the animal. Both the burning outside the camp and the consumption of the meat by the priest are best understood as ritual acts that "consume" the cause of the original impurity.

The text states that through the enactment of the ritual the priest brings about "expiation" (Heb. *kipper*) and forgiveness (4:20, 26, 31, 35; 5:10, 13; → Expiation). *Kipper*, often translated "to atone," must be understood broadly to refer to the "setting right" of the disruptions to and violations of the very good order of creation (see Gen. 1:31). The ritual of the purification offering is a means of addressing both the guilt generated by sin and the associated impurity that defiles the sanctuary. The priests reflected on the Yahweh-Israel relationship in the contexts of creation and society and understood ritual as a means of regulating the divine-human interaction, the very good order of creation, and the well-being of society. The priests were guided by two primary rules: maintain the order when possible, restore the order when necessary.

Lev. 5:1–13 defines four specific situations that require a purification offering and provides a graduated

scale of offerings that reflects a sensitivity to the economic status of the offerer. In the first case (5:1), a person hears a public oath to testify, is able to do so, but refuses. The failure to act brings guilt. In the second case (5:2), a person has touched an unclean animal carcass, but is unaware of it. That person is guilty. The third case (5:3) is similar to the second, except the contact was with human uncleanness. The fourth case (5:4) has to do with the utterance of a rash oath. The basic pattern suggests that a person knew the action was done, but, for some reason, had become unaware of it or had failed to take appropriate ritual action. In the first and fourth cases, the problem concerns sacred speech. The second and third cases regard impurity created by contact. Failure to address the unclean situation with a purification ritual would generate greater problems (see 11:24–40; Num. 19; 31:19).

In all four cases, the individual recognizes and experiences the guilt associated with the improper activity, makes a public confession, and presents a purification offering. The ritual process of "setting things right" leads to the forgiveness of the offender. Confession and ritual enactment bring about a restructuring of human existence lived within the context of the divine presence.

The offering may reflect the offerer's economic abilities: a female sheep or goat (5:6); two turtledoves or two pigeons, one for a purification offering and one for a burnt offering (5:7); or one-tenth of an ephah of fine flour (5:11). The requirement for two birds reflects a practical concern. The priest wrings the head of the bird provided as a purification offering and puts some of its blood on the side of the altar to purify it. The remainder he drains at the base of the altar in order to (re)consecrate it. He burns the second bird, presented as a burnt offering, in place of the fat found in larger animals. The possibility of offering grain as a purification sacrifice is surprising in that it does not provide blood for the altar. In this case, however, the grain offering functions "to set matters right," which means purification, reconsecration, and forgiveness.

5:14–6:7, The Reparation Offering. Although the reparation offering (Heb. *'asham*), often translated "guilt offering," shares concerns with the purification offering, e.g., doing things that ought not to be done and guilt (cf. 4:3, 13, 22, 27; 5:17, 19; 6:4–7), the Priestly traditions view them as distinct offerings. The reparation offering is required in situations that constitute "trespass" (Heb. *ma'al*) against Yahweh, i.e., actions that transgress the boundaries of the holy, violate or disturb the sacred realm, or misappropriate holy things.

The text emphasizes situations that require a reparation offering rather than the ritual proper (for the ritual, see 7:7–10; → Restitution). The cases are presented in the form of two Yahweh speeches: 5:14–19 and 6:1–7. The first speech includes two cases (vv. 15–16, 17–19) identifying actions that generate guilt and specify the required reparation. In the first case (vv. 15–16), an individual unintentionally and unknowingly (mis)uses items dedicated to Yahweh, the holy things of Yahweh (e.g., sacrificial foods). In this case, the offender must present a ram as a reparation offering, make full restitution for the holy thing, plus pay an additional one-fifth of the item's value. In the second case (vv. 17–19), a person has unknowingly committed an act prohibited by Yahweh (v. 17) and has begun to experience guilt (Heb. *'asham*). The context suggests that the guilt experienced by the individual is understood to be the result of a *possible* trespass on the sacred things of Yahweh. The reparation offering is a ram without blemish or its equivalent. In both cases, "expiation" *(kipper)* recognizes that the offender has "made good" on the damage done and that Yahweh has accepted the reparation. The ritual sacrifice and restitution have set matters right and the initial experience of guilt gives way to the experience of forgiveness.

The second speech (6:1–7) states that trespass against Yahweh takes place when one swears falsely in an effort to violate the rights of another person. "Swearing falsely" must be understood as a form of speech that involves Yahweh, so that a false oath, in effect, attempts to involve Yahweh in a lie. Swearing falsely violates Yahweh's integrity. Three cases are detailed. In the first, a person deceives a neighbor in relation to a deposit, to an item held in pledge, or in a robbery. In the second, a person withholds something that rightfully belongs to another. In the third, a person finds an item that was lost and lies about it.

The three cases are troubling because they involve an intentional act: a deceitful act knowingly done. In these cases, the recognition and admission of guilt create a situation in which the guilty party may repair the damage done through restitution of the principle plus payment of an additional one-fifth and the presentation of a ram as a reparation offering. The ritual repairs the damage that was done, restores balance to the situation, and brings forgiveness for the guilty party.

6:8–7:36
Second Set of Instructions

The second set of instructions is, for the most part, more specifically focused on matters of particular interest to the priests. The instructions are redacted as a series of *torot*, priestly ritual rulings, and presented in the form of five Yahweh speeches to Moses (6:8, 19, 24; 7:22, 28). The instructions in the first speech are directed to Aaron and his sons and detail the way in which the priests are to clean the ashes from the outer altar (6:9–13) and present the grain offerings (6:14–18). The second speech (6:20–23) concerns the special grain offering to be presented by the priests upon the anointing of the high priest. The third speech is directed to Aaron and his sons and addresses matters relating to the purification offering (6:25–30), the

reparation offering (7:1–10), and the well-being offering (7:11–21). The final two speeches are directed to the people of Israel and focus on matters related to the consumption of sacrificial foods (7:23–27) and the well-being offerings (7:29–36).

6:8–18, Cleaning the Altar and the Grain Offering. The first speech (vv. 8–13) is directed to Aaron and his sons and provides instructions for cleaning the ashes from the altar of burnt offerings (→ Altar). The specific concern, however, is found in the repeated requirement that the altar fire be kept burning while the ashes are removed (vv. 9, 12, 13). The fire is of divine origin (see 9:24); it is sacred fire. The text specifically refers to the regular burnt offerings, those burned every evening (v. 9) and morning (v. 10). These perpetual (Heb. *tamid*) offerings, prescribed in Exod. 29:38–42 (cf. Num. 28:3–8), are specifically associated with Yahweh's presence in the tabernacle and the deliverance of Israel from Egypt (Exod. 29:42–46). The morning and evening offerings may well be ritual markers and reflections of divine creation: "And there was morning and evening, the . . . day" (Gen. 1:5, 8, 13, 19, 23, 31). The altar fire, itself described as "perpetual" (*tamid;* v. 13), is a sign of the presence of the God, who created the world and delivered Israel from oppression.

Although cleaning the ashes from the altar is a pragmatic matter, the cleaning process is ritualized in this text. The priest must wear linen garments, and a change of clothes is required before removing them to a "clean place" outside the camp. The clean place is an area set aside for the disposal of altar materials (cf. 4:12; for reference to an "unclean place" outside the camp, see 14:40, 41, 45; Num. 19:9).

The instructions for the grain offerings in 6:14–23 focus on issues relating to their consumption by the priests (see Lev. 2). The priests must eat the grain offerings in a holy place, in the court of the tent of meeting (v. 16), because these offerings are most holy. Anything that touches a grain offering becomes holy and remains set apart for the sacred realm.

6:19–23, The Special Grain Offering of the Priests. The second speech is concerned with the special grain offering that is to be presented on the day that Aaron is anointed and that is to continue as a perpetual *(tamid)* offering by future high priests. Part of the grain offering is to be offered in the morning and part in the evening. Although these offerings might be associated with the daily burnt offerings (Exod. 29:38–41; Num. 28:3–6), they are better understood as special priestly offerings that mark out the priesthood as a perpetual institution. These offerings are not to be consumed, but must be completely burned.

6:24–7:21, Miscellaneous Rulings on Sacrificial Benefits. This Yahweh speech, directed at the priests through Moses, addresses a variety of concerns related to sacrifices and offerings. In regard to the purification offering (6:24–30), the text states that the offerer is to slaughter the animal before Yahweh, at the place where the burnt offering is slaughtered, and that the priest who officiates must eat some of the meat in the court of the tent (cf. 6:16). A portion of the purification offering must be consumed by the priest unless its blood is brought inside the tent, in which case the remains must be burned. If blood from this offering splatters on clothing, the clothing must be washed in a holy place. If the sacrifice is boiled in an earthen vessel, it must be broken, although a bronze container may be scoured and rinsed in water.

The instructions for the reparation offering in 7:1–6 focus on the ritual process (cf. 5:14–26). The offerer slaughters the animal at the place where the burnt offering is slaughtered, the priest dashes the blood on the sides of the altar, and the fat of the animal is burned on the altar. Every male among the priests may eat of this sacrifice, which is most holy and must, therefore, be eaten in a holy place.

The notice concerning the eating of the reparation offering in 7:6 explains the placement of vv. 7–10, which specify the priestly portions of the sacrifices and offerings. The priest who officiates at the altar receives the proceeds of the reparation and sin offerings and the hide of the burnt offering. Grain offerings baked in an oven or prepared in a pan or on a griddle belong to the priest who offered them. All other grain offerings are available to all the priests.

Lev. 7:11–21 specifies that the grain offerings be presented with the three types of well-being offerings and provides instructions for the consumption of the sacrificial meal. Although all of the grain offerings belong to the priests, the meat of the well-being sacrifices belongs to the offerer. The meal is placed within the context of the sacred and is, to some degree, a ritualized expression of the divine-human relationship. The meat of the thank offering must be eaten on the day that it is offered, whereas the meat of the votive and freewill offerings may be eaten on the following day as well. Any left until the third day must be burned. If the meat is eaten on the third day, the sacrifice becomes ineffective and the responsible party becomes guilty of improper ritual activity. The thank offering arises as a response to an act of grace initiated by Yahweh, whereas both the votive and freewill offerings originate within the will of the offerer. This distinction may account for the difference in temporal rulings on the eating of the sacrifice.

If the flesh of a well-being sacrifice touches an unclean thing, the meat must be burned and remain uneaten. Only those who are in a state of ritual purity may participate in the sacrificial meal. Unclean persons who eat of the well-being offerings will be cut off (Heb. *karat*) from their family. Although not most holy, the meat of well-being sacrifices partakes to some

degree of the realm of the sacred and must not be consumed by the unclean. The ruling seeks to maintain a clear boundary between the sacred and the unclean.

The *karat* penalty is the consequence of actions that violate the sacred order and threaten to disrupt the boundaries that separate the holy from the nonholy. The penalty is carried out by God, as opposed to the community (see 20:2–5 for the distinction), and in all probability refers to the extermination of one's lineage.

7:22–27, Prohibition Against Eating Fat and Blood. The instructions in vv. 22–27 are intended for the whole community and prohibit the consumption of the fat (cf. 3:16) or blood (cf. 3:16b–17; 17:10–16) of animals. Israelites may not eat the fat of domestic animals, wild animals, or sacrificial animals. Any person who eats either the fat or blood of an animal will be cut off (Heb. *karat*). Both the fat and the blood have specific ritual uses and belong to Yahweh. Because of this, they are not available for human consumption.

7:28–36, The Priestly Portions of the Well-Being Offerings. The instructions in vv. 28–36 are intended for the whole community. The person who offers a well-being sacrifice must bring the animal in person and present it to the priest. The breast of the animal is raised as an offering to Yahweh and belongs to all the priests, whereas the right thigh of the animal goes to the officiating priest. Yahweh has set aside the breast and the thigh as the perpetual due of the priests. They function as payment to Aaron and his sons for their priestly work.

7:37–38
Summary Statement

The summary statement is most closely related to the second series of instructions and may at one time have functioned as their conclusion. The final form of the book, however, suggests that the statement is intended as a conclusion to all of the sacrificial instructions in chaps. 1–7. The statement places the origin of the instructions on Mount Sinai, as opposed to in the tent (cf. 1:1). Of particular importance, the statement emphasizes that the instructions are intended for the whole Israelite community, and not just the priests. Ritual presentations to Yahweh reflect community interests and concerns.

8:1–10:20
The Tabernacle, the Priesthood, and Tragedy

The instructions in Leviticus 1–7 give way to narrative in Leviticus 8–10. In Exodus 40, the divine glory on Mount Sinai moves into the tabernacle and takes up residence there in the sight of all Israel (vv. 34–35; → Tabernacle). Instructions for the sacrifices and offerings, activity that is prescribed for the tabernacle area, are provided in Leviticus 1–7. Leviticus 8 returns to the narrative unfolding of the origins and founding of the tabernacle cult. Very clearly in these chapters, narrative and ritual instruction begin to flow together and create new possibilities for instructional genres of storytelling.

In Leviticus 8, sacred space and the priesthood are ritually constructed. The instructions for presenting the sacrifices and offerings were essential for the enactment of this ritual. In Leviticus 9, Aaron for the first time in his role as high priest presents the sacrifices and offerings (→ Aaron). Divine fire comes out of the Holy of Holies and consumes the sacrificial materials on the altar, a sign that the tabernacle cult and its priests are accepted by Yahweh. The tabernacle cult is now operational. In Leviticus 10, on the same day that the divine fire signified the acceptance of the priesthood and the tabernacle cult, Nadab and Abihu, two of Aaron's sons, bring strange fire into the sacred realm and are consumed by a fire from the Holy of Holies.

All the events narrated are presented as one-time occurrences. The consecration ("the making holy") of the tabernacle and the priesthood are rites of founding, ritual enactments that create something that was not there before. Aaron's first presentation of the prescribed sacrifices and offerings inaugurates priestly activity in relation to the altar. The deaths of Nadab and Abihu are obviously one-time occurrences.

The narratives look back to the construction of the tabernacle (Exod. 35–40) and the instructions for the sacrifices and offerings (Lev. 1–7). Leviticus 8–9 narrate the concrete actualization of the first presentation of the sacred offerings. At the same time, the deaths of Nadab and Abihu look forward to and anticipate the instructions for purity and impurity in Leviticus 11–15 and the paradigmatic enactment of the annual day of purification in Leviticus 16.

8:1–36, Sacred Space and Sacred Status. In Leviticus 8, two interrelated ritual movements take place: the ordination of the priesthood and the founding of the tabernacle as a sacred cultic site. The weaving together of these two ritual processes is important. Aaron and the priesthood share a common status with the tabernacle. Sacred space and sacred status are constructed together through common ritual actions. Although a founding ritual, the ordination of Aaron and his sons reflects the general structure of a rite of passage: they are moved from lay status to priestly status. The text narrates the founding of the institution of the priesthood and, at the same time, the passage of Aaron and his sons into the status of priests (→ Priests).

Leviticus 8 emphasizes repeatedly that the ritual was enacted in accordance with Yahweh's instructions: "And Moses did just as Yahweh commanded him" (vv. 4, 9, 13, 17, 21, 29, 36). Although the instructions for

the ritual in Exodus 29 contain significant differences from the narration of the ritual in Leviticus 8, the final redactors clearly wanted the chapters to be read together in light of "divine command" and "human execution." The tabernacle cult and its attendant priesthood are both generated by the word of Yahweh.

With Moses officiating, the ordination ritual takes place at the entrance of the tent of meeting in the presence of the whole community (vv. 1–5). The institution of the priesthood is ritually located in the place where it will carry out its primary duties and in the context of the larger social body within which it functions. Moses brings forward and presents Aaron and his sons and washes them, a rite of purification that prepares them for further ritual activity (v. 6).

In vv. 7–13, following the presentation and washing, Moses clothes Aaron in the high-priestly garments (vv. 7–9; the clothes are described in Exod. 28:1–39), anoints both the tabernacle and Aaron with the special anointing oil (vv. 10–12), and then clothes Aaron's sons (v. 13; their garments are described in Exod. 28:40–42). In that ritual, enclothement serves to mark a person's status and identity, and Aaron's ritual enclothement must be separate from that of his sons. The movement of the ritual reflects this distinct status. Further, the anointing of the tabernacle and Aaron with the special anointing oil sets apart the status of the high priest from that of the ordinary priest. The graded holiness of sacred space—the Holy of Holies, the outer room of the tent, the altar area, the camp boundary—is reflected in the graded holiness of the priesthood.

In vv. 10–12, Moses anoints the tabernacle, sprinkles the altar and its utensils, and pours on Aaron's head special anointing oil (see Exod. 30:22–33 for the composition of this oil). The purpose of the application of the oil is "to make holy" (Heb. *leqaddesh;* → Sanctification) that on which it is placed. The common anointing of the tabernacle, altar, and Aaron gives them a common ritual status.

Presentation of sacrifices and offerings form the heart of the next movement of the ritual (vv. 14–29). Moses presents three animals: a bull for a purification offering (vv. 14–17), a ram for a burnt offering (vv. 18–21), and a ram for the ordination offering (vv. 22–29). These are the first sacrifices offered in accordance with the instructions found in Leviticus 1–7. Moses officiates as the inaugurator of the cult and, in that capacity, demonstrates the way in which the various sacrifices and offerings are to be presented and their normal order. Thus, the ritual of ordination takes on both paradigmatic and pedagogical characteristics.

The text provides important information on the purpose of the blood manipulation in the purification offering (cf. Lev. 4). Moses puts some of the blood on the horns of the altar and purifies it, then pours out the rest at the base of the altar and consecrates it. Purity and holiness, although related, are distinct categories (→ Holiness; Purity). The purification offering is designed to establish, and reestablish when necessary, the integrity of the sacred: it must be both clean *and* holy. A disruption of the sacred realm by impurity compromises both its purity and holiness. Ritual must address both categories and restore the full integrity of the sacred realm.

Having addressed impurity through the purification sacrifice, Moses offers the ram of the burnt offering to provide a soothing aroma for Yahweh (vv. 18–21). The burnt offering marks the restoration of the integrity of the sacred and suggests that Yahweh has recognized and accepted the sacrificial restructuring of the sacred realm and is at rest. The problems associated with impurity in the divine dwelling place have been addressed and resolved. A tone of celebration may well resonate in this offering.

In vv. 22–29, Moses offers the ram of ordination. Similar in structure to the well-being offerings (see 7:11–18), the ordination sacrifice is distinguished by the use of the animal's blood: it is placed on the right ear, the right thumb, and the right big toe of Aaron and his sons. The only other instance of this use of the blood in the Priestly traditions is found in the purification and restoration ritual prescribed for a person recovered from an unclean skin condition (14:14). In both cases, the larger ritual context reflects a seven-day process and a ritual movement associated with the realms of life and death.

Num. 12:10–12 indicates that "lepers" (see the discussion of unclean skin conditions in Lev. 13–14; → Leprosy) were viewed as "rotting" bodies, a sign of the decay of death. These persons were banished from the camp (see 13:45–46). The "death" in their bodies was dealt with by their removal from the social body, a form of social death. One who recovered from this form of impurity had to move ritually from the realm of death (a decaying body outside the camp) to the realm of life (a healthy body inside the camp). Passage from death to life was considered dangerous.

The priestly presence in the sacred realm is also considered dangerous. For example, in Num. 16:41–50, the people rebel against Moses and Aaron and a plague breaks out among them. Aaron takes a censer with incense and fire and stands between *the living and the dead* in order to effect expiation and stop the plague. The priests stand as mediators between Yahweh and the people and perform their duties within the sacred realm. The dual context of life and death found in both of these rituals suggests that the blood placed on the extremities makes dangerous passage possible. Aaron and his sons are ritually located in sacred space and are responsible for maintaining and protecting its integrity. They must do this carefully, lest they die! They stand between the living and the dead and are responsible for maintaining a distinction between the clean and the unclean, the holy and the nonholy (see 10:10–11).

In v. 30, Moses takes some of the anointing oil and

some of the blood that was on the altar and sprinkles the mixture on Aaron and his clothes and on his sons and their clothes. The mixture of oil and blood from the altar binds the altar and the priests to a common purpose and provides them with a common status.

Moses' final instructions to Aaron and his sons (vv. 31–36) address their consumption of the sacrifices and offerings and state that they must remain at the door of the tent for seven days in order to complete the ordination process. A final note indicates that all was done in conformity with Yahweh's instructions.

9:1–24, Inauguration of Priestly Activity. Aaron presents the sacrifices and offerings for the first time following his ordination. Moses' instructions for the occasion emphasize five points (vv. 1–7): the process must follow the commandments of Yahweh; the priests must offer the sacrifices at the door of the tent, before Yahweh; the whole community must be present as a witness to and participant in the ritual; the purpose of the ritual is to bring about "expiation" (Heb. *kipper*) on behalf of the community; and the enactment of the ritual will lead to the appearance of the glory of Yahweh.

Aaron presents, on his own behalf, a bull for a purification offering and a ram for a burnt offering. This reflects the normative order for these two sacrifices, already established by Moses in the ordination ritual. Aaron then presents the sacrifices and offerings on behalf of the people: a purification offering, a burnt offering, a grain offering, and a well-being offering. Following a priestly blessing, the glory of Yahweh appears to all the people and fire comes forth from Yahweh and consumes the materials on the altar. The divine fire indicates that the tabernacle cult is operational and that Yahweh is present in the Holy of Holies.

10:1–20, Tragedy and Conflict. On the very day that the glory of Yahweh appeared to all of Israel, Nadab and Abihu take "strange fire" into the holy place. Just as fire came forth earlier and consumed the materials on the altar (9:24), fire now comes forth and kills the two priests. The "strange fire" originated outside the realm of the sacred, and its presence inside the tent was a violation of the integrity of the sacred. Nadab and Abihu intentionally brought nonholy fire into the holy place. Since they failed to watch over and protect the boundaries of the sacred, they died. The priests are clearly stationed within a dangerous context!

The deaths of Nadab and Abihu create a problem: what is to be done about the impurity generated by unclean bodies in the holy place? The ritual of Leviticus 16, in all probability, attempts to address this problem to some extent (see 16:1–2).

Verses 8–15 address a variety of issues related to priestly activity. Of particular importance, vv. 10–11 provide a very clear general statement concerning the role of the priests. They are to distinguish between the holy and the common, the unclean and the clean. The word for "to distinguish" is the same one used in the Priestly creation account for God's acts of "separation" in creation (Gen. 1:4, 6, 7, 18). The priestly role of separating the holy and the common, the unclean and the clean, is part of the ongoing maintenance of the very good order of creation. Related to the separation of categories is a teaching duty. The priests are responsible for teaching (from Heb. *torah*) the people what Yahweh has spoken. Clearly, vv. 10–11 anticipate the purity/impurity instructions in Leviticus 11–15.

Verses 16–20 narrate a conflict that arises between Moses and Aaron concerning the failure of the priests to consume the meat of the purification sacrifice offered earlier in the day on behalf of the people. The text emphasizes that the priestly consumption of these sacrifices is part of the larger ritual process by which the guilt of the people is removed and expiation accomplished (v. 17). Aaron's response is not entirely clear, but he indicates that eating the meat on this day, in light of the death of his two sons, would have been out of place. Would the consumption of the meat have made any difference in the events of the day? The text demonstrates a significant degree of freedom in the priestly interpretation of Yahweh's instructions in specific contexts.

11:1–15:33
Purity and Impurity Instructions

The instructions defining purity and impurity follow immediately on the death of Nadab and Abihu and the statement that the priests are to separate between the holy and the common, the clean and the unclean (Lev. 10). The instructions in Leviticus 11–15 reflect a concern for sacred space and the ongoing presence of Yahweh in the midst of the community. Impurity is attracted to the tabernacle, the dwelling place of Yahweh, and, if left unattended, might drive Yahweh from the tent and from the midst of the community.

The instructions address a variety of common activities and situations within the Israelite community: clean and unclean foods (chap. 11), purity issues relating to childbirth (12), unclean skin conditions and rituals to mark recovery from such conditions (13–14), and purity concerns relating to bodily discharges (15). The human body, mirroring to some extent the social body, is central to these instructions. The ingestion of food, the birth of a child, skin disruptions, and discharges from the genital regions are all related to one degree or another to the integrity of the boundaries of the body.

Although distinct categories, purity and holiness are significantly related in the Priestly traditions (→ Holiness; Purity). Since the holiness of divine space is disrupted and violated by impurity, the Israelites must guard carefully the boundaries of the sacred. The life

issues addressed in these instructions—food, birth, skin, genital flows—reflect the Priestly understanding of the close relationship between holiness and life. Death is the primary form of impurity; life is at home in the context of the holy.

11:1–47, Clean and Unclean Animals. Yahweh addresses these instructions to both Moses and Aaron, a reflection of Aaron's newly acquired priestly status. The chapter provides guidelines for determining edible and inedible animals (vv. 2b–23, 41–45; cf. Deut. 14:3–21) and instructions concerning animal carcasses that generate impurity through contact (11:24–40).

No single theory will fully account for all of the rulings found in this chapter. A variety of factors are operative: an appreciation of the basic categories of creation (i.e., water, land, and sky); a concern that every creature fit appropriately into its own place in the world; a disgust for the anomalous; reflections on the nature of domestic and sacrificial animals; and recognition of the relationship between the human table and Yahweh's altar.

Verses 2b–8 state that edible land animals must have true hooves that are cleft through the middle and must chew the cud (Deut. 14:4–5 contains a list of edible animals; → Animals). Four animals are specifically excluded: the camel, the rock badger, the hare, and the pig. The first three do not have hooves cleft down the middle, whereas the pig does not chew the cud. Domestic animals available for sacrifice and consumption provide the basic characteristics the excluded animals fail to reflect. Edible animals are identified, in part, on the basis of bodily features and eating practices. An unclean animal is not to be eaten and contact with its carcass generates impurity.

Verses 9–12 emphasize that edible water creatures must have fins and scales. Excluded animals are detestable, although the text does not state that their carcasses generate impurity through contact. The identification of edible water creatures is based on their habitat, their bodily appearance, and their means of locomotion. Bodily characteristics are central to the construction of the category of "edible."

Verses 13–19 provide a list of some twenty "birds," winged creatures of the air, that are excluded (the precise identification of several remains uncertain; → Birds). Like the creatures of the water, the excluded birds are termed detestable and their carcasses are not said to generate impurity through contact. Those excluded are viewed as carrion birds, which eat dead bodies in the fields (cf. 11:39–40; Num. 19 for corpse contamination) and consume the blood of animals (consumption of blood is prohibited; see Gen. 9:4–6; Lev. 3:17; 17:10–16). The pattern for exclusion is based on habitat, means of locomotion, and feeding practices.

Verses 20–23 define inedible winged insects as those that walk on all fours, whereas those that have jointed legs and leap are edible. The locust, the bald locust, the cricket, and the grasshopper are specifically identified as edible. In this case, the exclusion, although identifying bodily characteristics and means of locomotion, is based on an anomalous status of a "winged" insect that "walks" on all fours. Walking is considered an inappropriate form of locomotion for a winged animal, whereas "leaping" is considered appropriate.

Verses 24–40 change the focus of the instructions and address the problem of impurity generated through contact with the carcass of a dead animal. The instructions reflect the Priestly concern to maintain a clear boundary between the realm of life and the realm of death. Life was associated with holiness and purity; death was associated with disorder and impurity. These instructions provide a means for "separating" the holy from the nonholy, the clean from the unclean, life from death.

Verses 24–25 provide the general framework. Touching the carcass of an inedible animal makes a person unclean until evening. The evening is a transitional moment in the structure of the day and marks the end of a defined period of impurity. Carrying also makes a person unclean until evening, but, in addition, requires a laundering of one's clothing. Carrying is understood to be more defiling because it suggests more prolonged and intentional contact.

Verses 26–28 identify two types of quadrupeds whose corpses generate impurity: those that do not have hooves split down the middle that do not chew the cud, and those that walk on paws as opposed to hooves. The general rules for purification found in vv. 24–25 apply.

Verses 29–38 discuss swarming things. Instructions concerning the edible status of swarming creatures are not given until vv. 41–45. A list of eight animals is included, although the precise identification of each remains uncertain. Contact with their corpse makes one unclean until evening. Swarming creatures were a problem because they were able to enter human space. Their ability to invade and violate human space generated four additional rulings concerned with uncleanness produced when their carcass came into contact with household items. If their carcass falls on an item of wood, cloth, skin, or sacking, the defiled item must be dipped into water and remain unclean until evening. If the creatures fall into an earthen vessel, it must be broken. Water stored in an earthen vessel contaminated by one of the swarming creatures is unclean and is able to communicate that uncleanness to both food and persons. An oven or stove on which any part of their carcass falls must be broken. The concerns are primarily focused on the storage and preparation of food, an effort to avoid the consumption of anything unclean. Clearly, the boundary of the body associated with the mouth is watched over and guarded in these instructions.

Two exceptions are noted. A spring or cistern holding water remains clean, although anything inside it that comes into contact with the body becomes unclean. Dry seed remains clean. Seed that has been watered becomes unclean because it has already begun the growing (i.e., life) process.

Verses 39–40 indicate that touching the carcass of an animal that has died of natural causes makes one unclean until evening. Eating or carrying such carcasses requires a laundering of one's clothing and the arrival of evening before one is clean.

Verses 41–45 return to and continue the dietary instructions of vv. 2–23. All swarming creatures are detestable and must not be eaten, whether they move on their belly, on all fours, or with many feet. A theological basis is provided for the ruling: Yahweh, the God of the Israelites, the one who brought them out of Egypt, is holy, and, therefore, the Israelites are to practice holiness (this reflects the language of the Holiness Code). The practice of holiness, grounded in the holiness of Yahweh, requires avoiding creatures that generate impurity.

Verses 46–47 provide a closing statement for these instructions. The summary statement lists the animals in a different order than that found in the chapter, fails to mention winged insects, and makes no mention of the concerns associated with impurity through contact with a carcass. Reference is made to the priestly task of separating the clean from the unclean (cf. 10:10), the edible from the inedible.

12:1–8, Childbirth and Purity Matters. The purity instructions relating to childbirth are addressed to Moses, who is to pass them along to the community. The instructions are of particular importance for the women who will experience childbirth, count the days of impurity, and present the purification offerings. After the birth of a male child, the mother is unclean for a period of seven days and; on the eighth day, the male child is circumcised (see Gen. 17:9–14; → Circumcision). An additional thirty-three days of impurity follow. During this time, the new mother is not to touch any holy thing, probably sacrificial food, or enter into the sanctuary. If a daughter is born, the new mother is unclean for an initial fourteen days and then for an additional sixty-six days.

Childbirth certainly is not a sin. In the Priestly traditions, giving birth is a means of actualizing the blessing of the creator God (Gen. 1:28). The text associates the impurity of birth with the impurity generated by menstrual blood (Lev. 12:2; cf. 15:19–24). Blood is the key. The life of the mother is "in her blood" (cf. Gen. 9:4–6; Lev. 17:10–12), so that the loss of blood is viewed as a loss of life. In the process of bringing new life into the world, she loses some of her own lifeblood. In childbirth, the mother embodies "life" and "death," an ambiguous situation that generates impurity. The boundary between life and death must be carefully protected in the view of the priests.

The extended period of impurity associated with the birth of a daughter recognizes the daughter as a potential mother. Her ability and potential to give birth generate the greater time of impurity. The text does not attempt to assign a normative role to women, but it does seek to gain ritual control (or priestly control) over childbirth. The ritual of purification includes a purification offering and a burnt offering. Either a bird and a lamb or two birds, the latter a reflection of economic realities, are required. The sacrifices effect "expiation" on the mother's behalf, i.e., they cleanse her from her flow (see v. 7).

13:1–14:47, Unclean Spots and Growths. Leviticus 13–14 identifies the signs of *tsara'at* (Heb.) on persons (13:2–46), clothing (13:47–58), and house walls (14:34–53), and provides instructions for rituals of purification when the "signs of impurity" have disappeared (14:1–32). *Tsara'at*, incorrectly translated "leprosy," refers to a wide range of skin eruptions, irritations, irregularities, and fungal growths (→ Leprosy). In all cases, *tsara'at* is viewed as a form of decay and deterioration related to death and disorder.

The text presents seven possible cases of *tsara'at* associated with persons (13:2–8, 9–17, 18–23, 24–28, 29–37, 38–39, 40–44). Although precise medical identification of each condition is not possible, the descriptions of unclean skin eruptions refer to spots "deep in the skin" that look to be "raw flesh." In Numbers 12, when Miriam is afflicted with *tsara'at*, Aaron asks that she not be like a stillborn "whose flesh is consumed" (v. 12). *Tsara'at* is also compared to the "flakiness" of snow in Exod. 4:6; Num. 12:10; and 2 Kings 5:27 ("white" is not in the Hebrew). Thus, a rotting, decaying, or flaking of the skin characterizes an unclean skin condition. *Tsara'at* was viewed as a sign of the presence of the realm of death and decay in the body of the individual. Purity instructions must guide the priests in distinguishing between life and death, purity and impurity. Finally, some viewed *tsara'at* as a form of divine punishment (e.g., Miriam in Num. 12:10 and King Uzziah in 2 Chron. 26:16–21; Elisha curses Gehazi with *tsara'at* in 2 Kings 5:27). *Tsara'at*, then, may also be a sign of sin and divine punishment.

The priests, functioning as purity specialists and not as medical diagnosticians, examine irregular skin conditions and declare them to be either clean or unclean. The priest can make an immediate determination and ruling or require additional time, anywhere from seven days to twenty-one days, before making a second examination.

Persons declared "unclean" are obliged to follow specific rules of behavior (13:45–46). They must wear torn clothes, keep their hair disheveled, cover their upper lip, and cry out, "unclean, unclean." The "decay"

of the physical body must be reflected in social appearance and behavior. Further, such persons must live outside the camp (cf. Num. 5:1–3). The encroachment of death on the physical body is actualized, to a degree, in the exclusion of unclean persons from the social body, a form of social death.

Lev. 13:47–59 provides instructions for determining unclean *tsara'at* growths on woolen, linen, or leather clothing. The presence of a greenish or reddish spot, a fungal growth, requires an initial priestly examination. The priest sets the material aside for seven days and if, upon reexamination, the spot has spread, the material is declared unclean and burned. If the spot has not spread, the material is laundered and reexamined in seven days. The priest may either declare it unclean and have it burned or tear the spot from the material. If the spot reappears, the material is unclean and must be burned. If it disappears, the material is washed and declared clean.

Lev. 14:1–57 prescribes an eight-day ritual process for a person who has recovered from an unclean skin condition. The ritual of restoration moves the individual from "death," understood as existence outside of the community, to "life," understood as existence within the community. Day one of the ritual (vv. 2–8) moves the person back inside the camp, but without full social integration (i.e., the person must remain outside the home, v. 8). The process begins with a priestly declaration that the person is "clean," the skin irregularity has disappeared. The ritual requires two birds, alive and clean, cedarwood, crimson yarn, and hyssop (the last three items are required in the purification ritual for corpse contamination; 19:6). One bird is slaughtered in an earthen vessel over running water. The second bird and the other ritual materials are dipped into the blood of the slaughtered bird and sprinkled seven times on the patient. The priest then declares the person clean and releases the living bird. The blood sprinkled on the individual lifts the "death" associated with the unclean skin condition from the body. This "death" is placed onto the living bird when it is dipped into the blood and, in flying away, the living bird removes the threat and power of death and decay associated with *tsara'at*. Shaving, laundering one's clothes, and bathing are ritual markers of one's newly attained status: death is gone, the reentry into life has begun, and the individual enters the camp.

On day seven, the individual shaves, launders clothing, and bathes (v. 9). The ritual actions focus on the appearance of the person and reflect a new status, alive and clean, by reversing the appearance of the old status, dead and unclean. The ritual enactment effects a real change, marked by the changed appearance, in the status of the person.

On the eighth day (vv. 10–32), sacrifices and offerings are presented. The reparation offering may address the possibility of trespass against Yahweh (see 5:14–6:7), although this is not certain. The blood of the sacrifice is placed on the lobe of the right ear, the right thumb, and the right big toe (elsewhere only in 8:22–29). The blood effects safe passage from the realm of death, expulsion, and life outside the community to the realm of life, restoration, and life within the community. The oil placed on the blood symbolizes, anticipates, and celebrates the restoration of community existence. The purification offering restructures the sacred area, whereas the burnt offering expresses thanksgiving.

Verses 34–47 provide instructions for unclean growths on the walls of Israelite homes. The house is emptied prior to the priestly declaration lest the contents become unclean and have to be destroyed. If the spots have eaten into the walls and appear to be reddish or greenish, the house is closed and examined again in seven days. If, at that time, the spots have spread, the discolored areas are removed to an unclean place outside the city, and new rocks and fresh plaster are added. If the spots reappear, the house is declared unclean, torn down, and taken to an unclean place outside the city. An unclean house communicates its impurity to any who enter it, sleep in it, or eat in it.

15:1–33, Bodily Discharges. Leviticus 15 discusses unclean bodily discharges ("flows"), ways in which the uncleanness is communicated, and necessary purification processes. The instructions reflect a desire to watch over and guard the integrity and boundaries of the body by establishing purity rulings on the primary fluids associated with the sexual organs, especially semen and blood.

Abnormal discharges from the male sexual organ generate impurity communicable to beds, chairs, saddles, and other persons (vv. 2b–12). Other persons become unclean through contact with a defiled bed or chair, through spittle, or through bodily contact. Purification from impurity generated by contact requires a laundering of one's clothing, a bathing of one's body, and the arrival of evening. Pottery made unclean through contact with "flow" impurity must be broken, whereas wooden items are simply rinsed. When a man "recovers" from an unclean flow, he counts seven days, the time it takes to effect significant ritual passage, launders his clothing, and bathes and on the eighth day presents two turtledoves or pigeons for a purification offering and a burnt offering (vv. 13–15). Any emission of semen outside of intercourse makes a man unclean. He must bathe his whole body and wait until evening to be clean (v. 16). Cloth or skin on which semen falls is unclean and must be washed and remain unclean until evening (v. 17).

Verse 18 states that sexual intercourse in which a man has an emission of semen makes both persons unclean. Understood as a life-generating moment, the emission of semen during intercourse created a

dangerous situation. The priests may have thought that the loss of semen was, to some degree, a loss of life. In that the flow of semen is paralleled in this text by the flow of menstrual blood, the priests have interpreted both in the context of "life flows." Sexual intercourse, like giving birth (see Lev. 12), was subject to ritual control.

Verses 19–24 discuss the "regular" flow of menstrual blood. A woman's impurity lasts seven days, during which time she is able to communicate her uncleanness to others. The rulings are similar to, although not identical with, the rulings in vv. 2b–15. The flow of menstrual blood was viewed by the Priestly traditionists as a loss of life (life is in the blood; cf. 17:11, 14). Impurity arises because the flow of blood, associated as it is with life *and* death, was viewed as dangerous. Verses 25–30 discuss abnormal flows of blood. The woman's impurity is the same as when she has her "regular" menstrual flow and is communicable to others. Seven days after the flow stops, she must make purification (similar to the purification for the unclean male, vv. 13–15).

16:1–34
The Annual Day of Purification

Leviticus 16 provides instructions for the annual ritual that purifies the tabernacle from impurities that have not been ritually addressed through the year and removes the sins of the people not already ritually resolved from the camp. The ritual does not attempt to resolve the problems of guilt associated with sin and impurity. The introductory verses establish a dual context for the ritual. First, reference is made to the deaths of Nadab and Abihu (see Lev. 10), which were the result of improper priestly activity. The divine fire killed them in the tent and their corpses within the holy tent generated a ritual problem: how is the community to address radical impurity which exists within the context of holy space? Second, and in part as an answer to the question, the instructions detail how Aaron is to enter into the Holy of Holies to effect purification. Once a year the high priest must take purificatory blood into the Holy of Holies to address the radical violation of the boundary between holiness and death.

Ritual preparations (vv. 3, 5–10) begin with the gathering of sacrificial animals, a bull, two goats, and a ram. Lots are cast over the goats; one is for Yahweh and one is for Azazel. The bull and the goat for Yahweh will be presented as purification offerings and their blood will be brought into the Holy of Holies. The ram will be a burnt offering. The goat for Azazel will bear the sins of the Israelites into the wilderness.

Aaron's role is detailed in vv. 4, 11–24a. Following the preparations, Aaron ritually bathes and puts on linen garments. The linen clothing is distinct from the rather extravagant clothing normally associated with the high priest (see Exod. 28:1–39). The linen garments reflect his "common" status in the ritual as representative of the people (e.g., he slaughters the animals offered for the people, he confesses the sins of the people). Later in the ritual, Aaron removes the linen clothing, washes a second time, and dresses in the regular clothing of the high priest. The two washings and acts of clothing mark out a ritual state of liminality for Aaron, a time during which the normal everyday structures do not hold.

During this carefully marked-out and bounded ritual time, Aaron fills the Holy of Holies with smoke, a sign of divine presence as well as a means for effecting safe passage into the heart of holiness. He then takes the blood of the purification offerings, first of the bull and then of the goat, into the Holy of Holies and sprinkles it on top of and before the "mercy seat" (Heb. *kapporeth*), the cover of the Ark (→ Ark). He also sprinkles the blood on the outer altar to cleanse it *(tihar)* and make it holy *(qiddesh)*. Following the blood rites, Aaron puts both his hands on the head of the goat for Azazel, confesses over it all the sins of the Israelites, puts them on the head of the goat, and sends it into the wilderness. The goat removes the sins from the camp, eliminating any further possibility of their defiling the tabernacle.

In these two ritual actions, taking the blood into the Holy of Holies and placing the sins of the people on the head of the goat, Aaron brings together in himself the "holiness" associated with the inner sanctum wherein Yahweh dwells and the defilement associated with the sins of the people. He is able to generate and survive this impossible situation because of ritual's ability to generate liminal times when normal structures do not hold. Aaron must enact this moment of deconstruction in order to reconstruct ritually the integrity of the sacred realm, which has been radically violated (by the corpses of Aaron's two sons and by the unaddressed sins and impurities of the Israelites).

The goat designated for Azazel (vv. 20–22) bears the sins of the people into the wilderness. If the sins of the people are the cause of impurity that defiles the sanctuary, then the sins must be eliminated lest they do further damage. Azazel is a demonic being associated with death, disorder, and the wilderness (→ Azazel). The wilderness itself is viewed as a chaotic place, the home of wild and fearful creatures (see, e.g., Num. 20:4–5; Isa. 34:9–16; Jer. 4:23–26; → Desert; Wilderness). Sin threatens the order of Israel's existence because it generates impurity that is attracted to the tabernacle. Yahweh is not able to dwell in the midst of impurity, so that sin and impurity pose a threat to Yahweh's continued presence in the midst of the people. The ongoing presence of Yahweh in the midst of the Israelite community is a central element of the

Priestly understanding of Israel's self-identity. Thus, the departure of Yahweh would create chaos, a loss of identity. Sin is put in its place when the goat takes it into the realm of chaos, disorder, and death and thereby separates it from the realm of order, life, and holiness.

In the concluding activities (vv. 24b–28), Aaron exits from his ritually marginal status, marked by a washing and change of clothing, presents the burnt offerings, and turns the fat of the purification offerings into smoke. The one who releases the goat in the wilderness must wash his clothes and bathe before reentering the camp (v. 26). The remains of the bull and goat slaughtered as purification sacrifices must be taken outside the camp and burned (v. 27). The one who burns them must launder his clothes and bathe before entering the camp (v. 28).

A concluding statement reflecting the Holiness Code in language and style (vv. 29–34) states that the ritual is to be observed on the tenth day of the seventh month. On this day, the whole community is to enact humility and experience a Sabbath rest (vv. 29–31). The humility of the community is reflected in the humble linen garments of the high priest. The ritual maintains the very good order of the tabernacle and camp by restoring both tabernacle and camp to a normal state of purity and holiness. The annual observance is a perpetual statute commanded by Yahweh.

17:1–26:46
The Holiness Code

Leviticus 17–26, generally referred to as the Holiness Code, is a unified redactional block of material that contains distinctive language, themes, and concerns. In this material, Yahweh repeatedly calls for the Israelites to be holy in such a way that they reflect the very holiness of Yahweh. Although the holiness associated with the divine presence in the cultic center remains important in these chapters, holiness also is understood as related to life in society. In this way, holiness, both divine and human, is understood, in part, in relational categories. Both social and ritual enactments are viewed as ways of actualizing and experiencing holiness. Such enactments also provide a means for reflecting on and understanding the Yahweh-Israel relationship, community life, and personal identity. In the Holiness Code, the practice of social justice and the practice of ritual processes are interrelated ways of reflecting the holiness of Yahweh. Thus Israelites are called to worship Yahweh properly and to exhibit honesty and integrity in their dealings with one another.

The Holiness Code also extends the boundaries of the community. Resident aliens, non-Israelites who live in the land with the Israelites, are recognized as an important element of the community and instructions are included for them (→ Foreigner; Stranger). Israelites must deal fairly and justly with non-Israelites. In several cases, the Israelite sojourn in Egypt is used as a basis for such directives. In the Holiness Code, the land itself takes on a life that is significantly related to and reflects the lives of the people who dwell on it. The land must not be polluted through sinful practices and it must be given a sabbatical rest. The Holiness Code expands the meaning of the Israelite community and seeks to embrace all of life within its rulings.

17:1–16
Sacrificial Meals and the Prohibition of Blood

This chapter addresses issues relating to the slaughter and consumption of animals, with particular emphasis on the prohibition of blood. The instructions are intended for the whole community. The chapter consists of five basic units, vv. 3–7, 8–9, 10–12, 13–14, and 15–16.

Verses 3–7 require the Israelites to bring their well-being offerings to the entrance of the tent so that the priest may enact the prescribed ritual (on the well-being offering, see Lev. 3; 7:11–36). Those who fail to do so are guilty of bloodshed (cf. Gen. 9:1–7) and will be cut off from the people (the *karat* penalty; see Lev. 7:19–21). The people must stop offering their sacrifices to "goat-demons" to whom they have prostituted themselves. The primary purpose of the ruling is to emphasize the tent as the location of acceptable sacrificial activity; a secondary purpose is to stop sacrifices to pagan deities.

Verses 8–9 state that the burnt offerings must also be brought to the entrance of the tent. The resident alien, a non-Israelite who lives in the land with the Israelites, must do the same. Anyone who does not comply will be cut off.

Verses 10–12 prohibit the eating of *any* animal blood, the *karat* penalty resulting for those who disobey. Blood is prohibited for human consumption because the life of the flesh is in the blood and the blood has been given by Yahweh for the purpose of effecting expiation (Heb. *kipper*) on the altar. The blood functions in this way because it is potent with life. The ruling may also reflect the belief that the taking of an animal's life constituted bloodguilt if its blood was not placed on the altar and returned to Yahweh. Blood placed on the altar in the context of ritual processes is able to address a wide variety of issues relating to the human experience of sin, trespass, guilt, impurity, thanksgiving, sorrow, and joy. For the Priestly traditionists, blood was potent with life, but, when it flowed from the body, it was viewed as the loss of life (i.e., a movement toward death). Blood functioned in ritual contexts as a symbol of both life and death.

Verses 13–14 state that anyone who hunts and kills an edible animal must pour out its blood and cover it with earth. Again, the text suggests that the blood is prohibited because the life of the creature is in it (cf. vv. 10–12).

Verses 15–16 detail the necessary purification procedures for persons who eat an animal found dead in the wild: purification comes through the laundering of one's clothing, bathing, and the arrival of evening (cf. 11:40). Failure to follow the cleansing procedures generates guilt.

18:1–20:27
Community Holiness

Leviticus 18–20 forms a distinct redactional block within the Holiness Code. The instructions in these chapters are directed to all the Israelites, whereas the instructions in Leviticus 17 are directed to both priests and people and those in Leviticus 21 are directed to the priests only. The opening speech (18:2–5; cf. vv. 24–30) and the closing speech (20:22–26) are similar in language, tone, and content and create a conceptual framework for the instructions. The divine self-identification formula, "I am Yahweh your God," and the call for Israel to be holy appear throughout these three chapters. The instructions focus on community life and seek to construct an order of justice, integrity, and honesty in and by the community and through which it may experience and enact the divine call to be holy. The instructions reflect a range of concerns: family relations, cultic activities, judicial rulings, sexual practices, and business matters. These chapters make clear that Yahweh calls the Israelites to practice holiness in every area of their lives, individually and communally.

18:1–30, Rulings on Sexuality. Leviticus 18 identifies acceptable and unacceptable sexual partners (vv. 6–18) and practices (vv. 19–23). The introductory words (vv. 2–5) caution the Israelites against following the practices of the land of Egypt, where they lived, and of the land of Canaan, the land to which they are going. The divine call for obedience weaves together instruction and history. The concluding words (vv. 24–30) caution against the defiling practices of the Canaanites, practices that polluted the land and led to their expulsion. The instructions on sexuality are presented within the context of a theology of land and maintain that the life of the people and the life of the land are significantly interwoven (cf. 20:22–26 and the non-Priestly texts of Hos. 4:1–3; Jer. 4:23–26).

Verses 6–18 define appropriate and inappropriate sexual partners. The text distinguishes relationships based on birth, i.e., blood relationships, and relationships grounded in marriage (→ Family, The). The instructions are presented from the point of view of the father. Two general rulings guide the instructions: a man is not to have sexual intercourse with a near kinsperson, "flesh of one's flesh," nor is he to uncover the nakedness of his father, i.e., the nakedness of his mother. From these two general rulings a list of prohibited sexual partners is generated: mother (v. 7), stepmother (v. 8), half sister (v. 9), granddaughter (v. 10), stepsister (the child of one's father and stepmother, v. 11), aunt (vv. 12–13), the wife of the father's brother (v. 14), daughter-in-law (v. 15), the wife of one's brother (v. 16), a woman *and* her daughter (v. 17a), a step-granddaughter (v. 17b), and a sister-in-law while her sister is still alive (v. 18).

Verses 19–23 prohibit five activities, four of which have to do with sexual practices (generally from a male point of view). Sex with a menstruating woman is prohibited (v. 19). She is considered ritually unclean and is able to defile others through contact (15:19–24). In addition, semen, associated with potential life, must not be mixed with menstrual blood, associated with the loss of life. Sex with another man's wife is prohibited because it violates the boundaries of family integrity as understood by the priests (v. 20). A child of this union would reflect the confusion and violation of integrated family boundaries. Israelites must not sacrifice their children to Molech (v. 21; → Molech). Such activity would constitute improper worship of another god and would violate the divine blessing to procreate (Gen. 1:28). A man must not lie with another man as with a woman (v. 22). No similar ruling is stated in relation to women. The ruling reflects a specific understanding of Gen. 1:26–28: God created human beings male and female and told them to be fruitful and multiply. Appropriate sexual activity must conform to the categories established by God in creation according to these instructions. Sexual activity with animals is prohibited for both men and women (v. 23). Such activity violates the categorical boundaries between animals and humans operative in the Priestly view and runs counter to the blessing of fertility. These five rulings share a concern for recognizing and maintaining specific boundaries and, at the same time, reflect a strong commitment to foster the divine blessing to procreate. The rulings reflect a hermeneutical effort to comprehend sexuality in terms of interpretive categories generated by a particular story of creation (Gen. 1:1–2:4a).

19:1–37, Miscellaneous Rulings. Leviticus 19 contains some forty-five distinct rulings. The chapter opens with a call for Israel to be holy and offers Yahweh's own holiness as justification: "You must be holy because I am holy, I am Yahweh your God." The repeated use of the divine self-identification formula suggests that the instructions for community life grow out of and reflect the divine life. In addition, Israel's life in and deliverance from Egypt provide context for the call to treat non-Israelites fairly as well as the directive for Israelites to use accurate weights and measures in their business transactions (vv. 33–37). The instruc-

tions address a wide range of common life situations experienced within the Israelite community.

Family relations are based on the dual call to respect one's father and mother (v. 3a) and to love one's relatives (17a). A man must not make his daughter act as a prostitute (v. 29, very likely a cultic concern). In judicial proceedings (v. 15), one's judgments must be fair and just and show no partiality. One specific ruling indicates that a man who has sexual relations with a woman promised to another must make reparation (vv. 20–22). The fruit of trees planted by the Israelites may not be eaten for three years, must be dedicated to Yahweh in the fourth year, and becomes available to the Israelites for consumption in the fifth year (vv. 23–25). Distinct categories must be carefully guarded in the breeding of animals, the sowing of fields, and the wearing of garments (v. 19).

In cultic matters, a variety of rulings are included. Positively, one must observe Sabbaths (vv. 3b, 30a), respect the sanctuary (v. 30b), eat the food of the well-being offerings on the appropriate days (vv. 5–8), and fear God (v. 14c). Negatively, one must not worship idols or make images (v. 4), consume blood (v. 26a), practice augury or witchcraft (v. 26b), cut one's hair or beard, mark the flesh (vv. 27–28), or consult with mediums (v. 31). Many, if not all, of the prohibitions refer to pagan cultic practices.

Social interaction is the primary concern of the chapter. The rulings are guided by a call for Israelites to practice honesty, integrity, faithfulness, and justice in their dealings with one another. The chapter includes several parallels to the Decalogue (see Exod. 20:4–17; Deut. 5:6–21; cf. Hos. 4:2; Jer. 7:9; 29:23; → Ten Commandments, The). Israelites must not steal, interact falsely with others, lie, swear falsely, defraud, or slander another person (vv. 11, 12, 13ab, 16a). They must not withhold the wages due a worker (v. 13c), profit by the blood of a neighbor (v. 16b), oppress non-Israelites who live with them (vv. 33–34), or use false weights and measures in their economic transactions (vv. 35–36). Finally, they are to reprove neighbors when needed (v. 17b), love their neighbors always, refrain from acts of revenge (v. 18), and show respect for the elderly (v. 32).

20:1–27, Holiness, Cult, and Sexuality. Leviticus 20 bases its instructions on two calls for Israel to be holy (vv. 7–8, 22–26). Israel's holiness is grounded in and must reflect the holiness of Yahweh, which is grounded, in a significant way, in Yahweh's acts in history. Israel enacts holiness through obedience to the divine commandments, specifically the command to keep the clean separate from the unclean. By being obedient, Israel separates itself from the other nations whose practices brought about their expulsion from the land. Indeed, Israel's inheritance of the land is related to the practice of holiness through obedience.

The blending of historical remembrance and instructional directive was crucial to the formation of community in Israel. The people recognized the saving acts of Yahweh in delivering them from oppression and sought to understand those acts in the context of divine instructions. History provides context for instruction. At the same time, Yahweh's instructions provided a means of enacting and practicing holiness in the day-to-day realities of life lived within the context of concrete social processes. History and holiness are brought together as story and instruction merge in Yahweh's words to Israel.

The instructions prohibit giving children to Molech (vv. 1–5; cf. 18:21) and consulting mediums, both of which are viewed as pagan practices (vv. 1–6; cf. 18:21; 19:31). Persons guilty of these practices will be "cut off" (Heb. *karat;* see 7:20). Anyone who acts as a medium or wizard, or interacts with the forbidden realm of the dead, must be stoned to death (v. 27). Also, those who curse their parents must be put to death (v. 9).

Verses 10–21 mark a return to the instructions regarding sexual practices in 18:6–23. Twelve rulings are detailed. Seven cases of sexual activity are identified in which both parties are to be put to death (vv. 10–16). All but one of these cases are written from the perspective of a male. In two cases, the couple is to be cut off from the community (vv. 17–18). In three cases, the parties must "bear their guilt," which in two cases means perpetual childlessness (vv. 19–21).

Taken together, the instructions in Leviticus 18–20 reflect an effort to bring every aspect of human action and interaction into the divine call for holiness: sexuality, family life, business matters, cultic life, and legal processes. Holiness is a quality of relational interaction that reflects faithfulness, honesty, integrity, justice, and compassion and is grounded in the holiness of Yahweh, the very good order of creation, and the history of Israel's redemption.

21:1–22:33
The Holiness of Priests and Offerings

Leviticus 21–22 addresses a variety of matters relating to priestly life and activity: corpse contamination, acceptable marriage partners, the exclusion of blemished priests from the altar, the proper use of the priestly portions of the sacrifices and offerings, the exclusion of blemished animals from the altar, and several miscellaneous rulings on sacrificial matters. Five times the text notes that the instructions were spoken by Yahweh to Moses. One speech is directed to the priests (21:1), one is to Aaron (21:16–17), one is to Aaron and his sons (22:1–2), one is to Aaron, his sons, and the people (22:17–18), and one is without specific addressee (22:26). A concluding speech locates the divine call for obedience in the redemptive activity of God.

Lev. 21:1–9 presents five rulings directed at the priests. The first two seek to maintain control over priestly contact with the impurity associated with

death (→ Mourning Rites). A priest may only be exposed to corpse contamination for nearest kin: his mother, father, son, daughter, brother, or virgin sister without a husband (vv. 2–3). Wives are the responsibility of their blood families, so priests may not defile themselves in the event of their death. Priests must refrain from pagan cultic practices associated with the dead. The third ruling is a general call for the priests to be holy because of their work at the altar. The final two rulings seek to control the priestly lineage by limiting marriage partners and eliminating daughters who act as prostitutes.

Lev. 21:10–15 specifies more stringent rulings for the high priest, the "anointed" one (see 8:12) who wears "the vestments" (see Exod. 28). He may neither mourn nor go near a corpse. He must not leave the sacred area while the anointing oil is on him, an act viewed as a violation of the integrity of the sacred. He may only marry a virgin of his own kin, an obvious effort to watch over and control the high priest's lineage.

Lev. 21:16–24 prohibits priestly activity at the altar by anyone with a physical "blemish" (cf. the list of excluded animals in 22:21–25). The Priestly traditions associate holiness with a particular understanding of physical wholeness. Although excluded from the altar, blemished priests may eat from both the holy and the most holy offerings.

The rulings in Lev. 22:1–16 focus on the eating of sacrificial foods. Verses 1–9 caution that the priests must be especially careful to follow the instructions of Yahweh, lest they die (v. 9; cf. Lev. 10). An unclean priest is not allowed to "come near" to the sacred donations of the people (v. 3). Before eating, he must launder his clothes, bathe, and wait for the sun to set. Animals found dead or killed in the wild may not be eaten.

Lev. 22:10–16 prohibits laypersons, bound servants, hired laborers, and priestly daughters married to nonpriests from eating food from the altar. Purchased slaves and widowed or divorced daughters may eat. Unintentional and improper eating requires the guilty party to restore the initial value of the food and make an additional payment equal to one-fifth of the original value. These rulings seek to protect the sacred foods and to maintain control over the priestly provisions.

Lev. 22:17–30 establishes rules for acceptable and unacceptable sacrificial animals. Votive and freewill sacrifices must be without blemish (vv. 17–21). Verses 22–25 provide a partial and probably representative list of blemishes that exclude animals from the altar. Blemishes that exclude animals are similar to those that exclude priests (cf. vv. 16–21). The rulings reflect the Priestly association of holiness and physical wholeness.

Domestic animals, such as an ox, a sheep, or a goat, are not acceptable for sacrifice until the eighth day of their lives. The seven-day waiting period is, to some degree, a ritualized process designed to maintain the distinctive boundary between the moment of birth and the moment of death. A mother and her offspring are not to be killed on the same day. Although not certain, the ruling very likely reflects a priestly concern to guard against the extermination of the life shared by mother and offspring. The food of a thanksgiving offering must be eaten on the day it is offered (cf. 7:15).

The conclusion (vv. 31–33) locates the instructions in the context of Yahweh's call for Israel to be holy and Israel's deliverance from Egypt. The call to holiness is grounded, to some degree, in history. At the same time, the conclusion addresses itself specifically to the priests: Yahweh sanctifies them and, in turn, demands that they sanctify Yahweh through their obedience to the divine instructions.

23:1–25:55
Sacred Days and Years

Leviticus 23 and 25 provide a temporal order for ritual observances. Chap. 24 disrupts the calendrical development with a discussion of the lamp and bread located in the outer room of the tent (24:1–9) and a narrative account of an act of "blasphemy" and its consequences (24:10–23). The reason for the inclusion of the materials in Leviticus 24 is uncertain.

The ritual calendar provides a temporal order for the Israelite community by identifying sacred times and specifying the ritual activities that are to take place during those times (cf. Exod. 23:14–17; 34:18–26; Num. 28–29; Deut. 16:1–17; → Feasts, Festivals, and Fasts; Pilgrimage). The Priestly traditionists have addressed the nature of sacred space (the tabernacle), sacred persons (the priesthood), and sacred activities (the holy and most holy sacrifices and offerings). In these chapters, they prescribe and construct sacred time and, by implication, nonsacred time (→ Time).

"Time" is a central element in the Priestly account of creation in Gen. 1:1–2:4a. God's first act of creation is light, which is separated from the darkness to create "the day" (Gen. 1:3–5). On day four, God creates the sun, moon, and stars to give light on the earth and to establish signs and times, days and years (Gen. 1:14). On the seventh day, God rests. The Sabbath is a day set apart, unlike the other days of the week. The sacred "times" of ritual are anticipated in creation, and Israel's ritual observance of these times provides a means of participating in the maintenance of the ongoing order of creation. Ritual, then, is a means by which Israel participates with Yahweh in maintaining the very good order of creation.

23:1–24, The Ritual Year. The observance of the Sabbath (v. 3; → Sabbath) reflects the rest of God at the

conclusion of creation (Gen. 2:2–3) and is a means of recognizing and celebrating the created order. By observing the Sabbath as an element of the created order, the Israelites preserve and maintain the order of creation. The observance of Sabbath is required in several texts and traditions (Exod. 16:22–30; 20:8–11; Num. 15:32–36; Deut. 5:12–15).

Passover and Unleavened Bread are prescribed in vv. 4–8 (→ Passover, The; Unleavened Bread, Feast of the). On the fourteenth day of the first month, the Passover lamb is to be slaughtered at twilight. On the fifteenth day, the seven-day observance of Unleavened Bread begins (Num. 28:16–25 lists the required offerings). On the first and seventh days, a holy convocation is observed in which the people must refrain from work. In Israel's national story, Passover and Unleavened Bread are associated with the Exodus from Egypt (see Exod. 12–13; → Exodus). Israel recognizes and actualizes the convergence of history and ritual observance in Passover and Unleavened Bread. Ritual enactment and remembrance provide access to historical memories, which, in turn, provide narrative context for the ritual observances.

Verses 9–14 discuss the presentation of the first fruits of the barley harvest in early spring. A sheaf is brought to the priest, who raises it to Yahweh on the following Sabbath. A burnt offering, grain offering, and drink offering are also required for the occasion. The offering of first fruits is a ritual enactment of thanksgiving for the productivity of the land and the certainty of food.

Fifty days after the raising of the barley sheaf, a presentation of new grain, probably wheat, must be made to Yahweh. Although the festival is not named in Leviticus 23, elsewhere it is called the Festival of Weeks (cf. Exod. 23:16; 34:22; Num. 28:26; Deut. 16:10; → Pentecost). Each settlement must present two loaves of bread. In addition, a large number of animals are to be offered. This observance closes the first half of the year, and its association with closure and transition may explain the large number of animals required.

The blowing of the trumpets (vv. 23–25; → Trumpets, Feast of) sounds the beginning of the second half of the year, a day of complete rest which includes fire offerings to Yahweh (→ New Year Festival). The Day of Purification takes place on the tenth day of the seventh month (vv. 26–32; see Lev. 16).

The Pilgrimage of Booths (vv. 33–36, 39–43) begins on the fifteenth day of the seventh month and continues for seven days (→ Tabernacles, Festival of). The first and seventh days are holy convocations in which no work is to be done. Verse 30 relates this observance to the produce of the land, whereas v. 43 views it in the context of the Exodus from Egypt, when Israel dwelt in booths. The double contextualization reflects the freedom exercised by the Israelites in interpreting their traditions, history, and ritual observances. The story of the Exodus and the productivity of the land provide hermeneutical insights into ritual observance.

24:1–23, The Lamp, the Bread, and Blasphemy. Lev. 24:1–9 requires that a perpetual light burn in the lamp located inside the tent and that twelve loaves of bread be placed inside the tent every Sabbath. That the lamp and bread are regular ritual observances may account for their inclusion at this point (→ Lampstand; Showbread). The lamp is to rest outside the curtain of the "covenant," the curtain that hangs in front of the Holy of Holies. The perpetual light reflects the ongoing covenant relationship between Yahweh and Israel. The bread reflects an older notion of a God who requires food (cf. Lev. 22). The loaves are also a sign of the perpetual covenant relationship (cf. Gen. 9:16; 17:7, 13, 18, 19; Exod. 31:16; Num. 18:19; 25:13) between Yahweh and Israel.

Verses 10–23 relate the case of a man who committed blasphemy. The man's mother is from the tribe of Dan and his father is an Egyptian. While fighting with another man, he committed blasphemy against the divine name with a curse. The offender spoke the divine name, but did it with contempt and without reverence for God; i.e., he took it lightly. Moses seeks the divine ruling on the matter, an indication that the priests thought the divine will addressed concrete situations in the ongoing life of the Israelite community.

The rulings come in the form of two Yahweh speeches. The first (vv. 13–14) states that the guilty man is to be taken outside the camp. Those who heard the utterance are to lay their hands on him and then the community is to stone him to death. The second (vv. 15–23) is more general and addresses not only blasphemy, but a number of other matters. First, anyone who curses God must bear the guilt of that act, and anyone who pronounces the name of God must be put to death (vv. 15–16). The community is responsible for enforcing the punishment. Second, a series of rulings on "the taking of life" are presented that apply to the Israelite and the non-Israelite sojourner (vv. 16b, 22). A person who kills another person is to be put to death (vv. 17, 21b), whereas a person who kills an animal must make restitution (vv. 18, 21b). The ruling reflects the law of equal retribution: an injury done to another may be returned in kind ("an eye for an eye"). The ruling seeks to create equity and balance in relation to social acts of violence.

The concluding verse reports that the people did as Yahweh commanded and stoned the guilty man to death (v. 23). In the enactment of instructions provided for the concrete situation, the text emphasizes the obedience of the people.

25:1–55, The Sabbatical and Jubilee Years. This chapter contains instructions for the Sabbatical Year (vv. 2–7) and the Jubilee Year (vv. 8–55), a continuation

of the observances prescribed in Leviticus 23. A complex range of theological, social, agricultural, and economic matters are interrelated in these instructions. The call for a regular, ritually prescribed rest for the land develops into a discussion of just socioeconomic practices. Thus ritual practice and the practice of justice are woven together into a single way of life.

Verses 1–7 require a regular sabbatical rest for the land (→ Sabbatical Year). The language, six years of work followed by a year of rest, reflects the language of creation (Gen. 2:2–3) and the weekly observance of Sabbath (→ Sabbath). A temporal order grounded in ritual is extended to construct a temporal order in history. The people are neither to sow nor harvest their fields and may eat only what the land yields of its own accord.

Verses 8–55 present rulings for the observance of the Jubilee Year (vv. 8–17), address questions that arise from the rulings (vv. 18–24), and provide details on economic issues related to the use of land and Israelite debt (vv. 25–55). Two statements provide the framework for these rulings. First, the land belongs to Yahweh; the Israelites live on it as aliens (a word used to refer to non-Israelites living in the land with the Israelites; → Stranger) and tenants (vv. 23–24). In that Yahweh has assigned the land holdings to the Israelites, they are not available for permanent sale. Second, the Israelites are the servants of Yahweh, who brought them out of the land of Egypt (v. 55). An Israelite may not be bought by another and placed into permanent slavery.

Verses 8–17 provide instructions for the observance of the Jubilee Year (→ Jubilee). Israel is to count off seven weeks of years and then in the fiftieth year observe the Year of Jubilee. The observance begins with the blowing of the shophar horn on the tenth day of the seventh month, the day of purification (see Lev. 16; → Shophar). This is a year of rest for the land, and the people are not to work their fields. The land itself will produce enough to sustain the Israelites for three years (vv. 18–22). In addition, lands that have been leased out are returned to their original holders, and persons who have become indentured slaves are set free. Israelite farmers who had economic difficulties might lease out their land and become indentured slaves to another. In the Jubilee Year, all land returned to the original holder and all debts were remitted. Verses 13–17 require honesty, fairness, and integrity in all of the economic transactions associated with Jubilee.

Verses 25–55 focus on matters relating to Israelites who have either leased out their land or made themselves indentured servants. Five basic situations are addressed: 25–28, 29–34, 35–38, 39–46, 47–55. The basic scenario is as follows. An Israelite encounters economic difficulties and rents out ("sells") a piece of land. Either the next closest relative "redeems" it, the original holder "buys" it back, or it reverts to the original holder in the Jubilee Year (vv. 25–28; → Redeemer; Redemption).

Houses within walled cities that are "sold" must be redeemed by the original owner within a year or they become the property of the purchaser. Houses in villages without walls may be redeemed at any time, but revert to the original owner in the Jubilee Year. Levitical houses within levitical cities may be redeemed at any time and revert to the original owner in the Jubilee Year. Land surrounding levitical cities cannot be "sold" because Yahweh gave it as part of the levitical benefits (vv. 29–34).

An Israelite who becomes dependent on a relative is to be treated like a resident alien, a non-Israelite who lives in the land with the Israelites. Work and pay must be guaranteed, whereas interest charges and food charges are prohibited. The Exodus and the gift of the land are used to support this ruling (vv. 35–38).

An Israelite who must work for wages as a hired laborer or work to pay off a debt as a bound servant must be released in the Jubilee Year. Israelites may make permanent slaves of non-Israelites, although they are not allowed to treat them harshly (vv. 39–46). Finally, if a non-Israelite buys an Israelite, either close relatives or the individual may pay the necessary price of redemption. All calculations are based on the time before the next Jubilee Year (vv. 47–55).

26:1–46
Blessings and Curses

Leviticus 26 sets out the blessings (vv. 3–13) and curses (vv. 14–39) that result from obedience and disobedience, respectively (cf. Deut. 28), and provides a vision of Israel's revival following the actualization of the destructive curses (vv. 40–45). Both blessings and curses are presented in intensely graphic language that generates images of fertility and peace, destruction and violence. The chapter opens with a prohibition against the worship of images, pillars, and carved stones and a call for Israel to observe the Sabbaths and show appropriate respect for the sanctuary (vv. 1–2). These verses appear somewhat misplaced in their present location.

Blessing begins with a fertile and productive land (vv. 4–5). The instructions have consistently related Israel's life on the land and the life of the land. Obedience leads to agricultural bounty. Rains will come, the land will produce, the trees will bring forth fruit. Sowing and harvesting will overlap. The people will eat bread and be at rest. Obedience also brings success against the nation's enemies and leads to peace (vv. 6–8). Not only will Israel be at peace with human enemies, but animals will not threaten the Israelites. Blessing also comes in the form of community fertility; the Israelites will be fruitful and multiply (vv. 9–10). The blessing of fertility reflects the divine blessing of creation to be fruitful (Gen. 1:28). Both the blessing of creation and the blessing that follows obedience, significantly juxtaposed in this text, are elements of the Yahweh-Israel relationship. Israel's obedience

functions to maintain the covenant. The priests seek to understand the life of the community within the contexts of creation, covenant, and obedience. Finally, obedience ensures the ongoing presence of Yahweh in the midst of the community. Yahweh, the one who brought Israel out of Egypt, dwells in the midst of this community, and obedience to the divine instructions is one means of experiencing the reality of the divine presence.

The list of curses is more extensive (vv. 14–39). An opening conditional statement provides the context for the complete list: "If you disobey, fail to observe my commandments, . . . and break my covenant, this is what I will do to you." Israel chooses whether to obey or disobey and must live with the consequences of its choice. Specific curses are interwoven with divine threats that intensify with continued disobedience (see vv. 16, 18, 21, 24, 28). The curses become progressively more harsh as the anger of Yahweh grows, the final consequence of disobedience being destruction.

Verses 16–17 contain two threats. Terror and sickness will fall on the people and the enemy will eat their crops. Yahweh states, "I will set my face against you" (normally, the divine face suggests favor, blessing, or hope; see Exod. 33:11; Num. 6:25; Pss. 4:6; 24:6; 27:8–9; 67:1; 119:135), and Israel will experience defeat at the hands of its enemies. Rather than victory and peace (vv. 6–8), Israel will experience defeat.

Verses 18–20 indicate that continued failure to obey will lead to a failure of the land to produce. The consequences of disobedience will increase sevenfold, suggesting a ritualized process, because of Israel's sinful impurities, an implied hope for purification. Verses 21–22 depict the ravages of wild animals (cf. v. 6). Deserted roads are a symbol of a land without people. In vv. 23–26, images of violence and war signify Yahweh's attack on the nation. Israel will suffer violence, pestilence, and a famine. In vv. 27–33, as Yahweh's hostility increases, the depiction of the land draws on images of death, destruction, desolation, and emptiness. Israel will be scattered; the land will become a waste. The end of disobedience is desolation.

While the people are scattered, the land will have a Sabbath rest from their iniquities, and the people will continue to suffer. If, however, they confess their own iniquities and the iniquities of their ancestors, if they recognize that they forced Yahweh's hand, if they will humble themselves, then Yahweh will remember both the ancestral covenant and the land (vv. 40–45). In desolation, confession can lead to renewal. Hope, not destruction, remains the final word for Israel.

27:1–34
Payment of Vows

Leviticus 27 is concerned with the payment of vows and the ritual dedication of persons, animals, houses, and land. Because a number of the assessment rulings refer to the Jubilee Year, the chapter has conceptual connections to Leviticus 25.

Verses 1–8 address the equivalent values for vows relating to human beings (see 1 Sam. 1:10–11; Judg. 11:29–40; → Vow). The values are based on (unspecified) labor productivity, not on the inherent value of persons. The priests make special assessments on behalf of persons economically unable to pay the prescribed values.

If an animal is vowed, another animal cannot be substituted for it. If such is attempted, both animals must be given in payment. If the vowed animal is unclean, its assessed value plus an additional one-fifth must be paid. A dedicated house is assessed by the priest, not subject to appeal, and redemption requires payment of the assessed value plus an additional one-fifth (vv. 14–15).

Verses 16–21 address the dedication and redemption of land that is part of one's family inheritance. The value of the land is based on the amount of seed it can handle and the number of years until the next Jubilee Year (see Lev. 25). Redemption of the land requires payment of its assessed value plus an additional one-fifth. If the land is not redeemed before Jubilee, it becomes dedicated to Yahweh and belongs to the priests. Verses 22–25 address similar issues relating to land that has been leased for use ("purchased"). If dedicated, the priestly assessment of its value must be paid immediately. The dedication and assessment are related to the anticipated productivity of the field in the years remaining until the next Jubilee Year. This land returns to the original holder in the Jubilee Year.

Verses 26–33 address a variety of issues relating to sacred dedication. A firstborn animal belongs to Yahweh. If the firstborn animal is unclean, its redemption equals its assessed value plus an additional one-fifth. If not redeemed by the owner, the animal is sold at its assessed value. Nothing that has been dedicated to Yahweh for destruction, either objects or persons, may be redeemed. All tithes from the land belong to Yahweh and redemption requires payment of the assessed value plus an additional one-fifth.

Lev. 27:34 forms the conclusion of the book (cf. 26:34) and indicates that these are part of the instructions given to Moses by Yahweh on Mount Sinai. The statement emphasizes that Israel's life must be lived in accordance with the divine commandments. As emphasized by the opening of the book, the instructions are directed at the whole Israelite community and are a means for living life in the presence of Yahweh.

Bibliography

Budd, P. J. *Leviticus.* New Century Bible Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1996.

Gerstenberger, E. S. *Leviticus.* Old Testament Library.

Trans. D. W. Stott. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1996.

Gorman, F. H., Jr., *Leviticus: Divine Presence and Community*. International Theological Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans; Edinburgh: Handsel Press, 1997.

Knohl, I. *The Sanctuary of Silence: The Priestly Torah and the Holiness School*. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1995.

Levine, B. A. *Leviticus*. JPS Torah Commentary. Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 1989.

Milgrom, J. *Leviticus 1–16*. Anchor Bible, 3. New York: Doubleday, 1991.

Numbers

DENNIS T. OLSON

INTRODUCTION

The book of Numbers derives its name from two census lists that count the numbers for each of the twelve tribes of Israel. One census list of the old wilderness generation begins the book in chap. 1. A second inaugurates the story of the new generation of Israelites in chap. 26. These two census lists mark the major generational transition in the story of Numbers. At the beginning of the book, the older generation of Israelites who escaped from Egypt initially obey every command of Moses and the Lord (chaps. 1–10). However, the Israelites abruptly begin to disobey and rebel against God (chaps. 11–25). Angered by their constant rebellions, God condemns the older generation to die in the wilderness, not allowing them to enter the promised land of Canaan. This older generation will give way to a younger generation of Israelites who will be born during Israel's forty-year wandering in the wilderness (14:20–35). By the end of the book, this new generation stands in hope on the edge of the promised land, ready to enter Canaan (chaps. 26–36).

Numbers contains a wide variety of literary forms and themes. The book consists of stories and laws, travel itineraries and census lists, lists of personal names and lists of instructions for worship, reports of military battles, and accounts of legal disputes. Some of the material probably originated quite early in ancient Israel's history; other material is much later in origin. The final form of the book likely arose sometime after the exile of Judah by the Babylonian Empire in 587 B.C. and the return to the homeland of Judah in 539 B.C. The struggles, conflicts, generational transition, and yearning for the promised land in Numbers offered models and paradigms for Israel's struggles and hopes in the midst of its Babylonian exile and return to rebuild the Jewish community in Judah during the Persian period (fifth century B.C.).

Numbers contains several important and well-known images and texts. Some of them include the priestly benediction, or blessing (6:22–27), the manna as food for Israel in the wilderness (11:7–9), Miriam's leprosy (12:1–16), the blue cord and fringes on garments (15:37–40), water from the rock (20:2–13), the bronze serpent (21:4–9), Balaam's talking donkey (22:22–35), and the bold daughters of Zelophehad (27:1–11; 36:1–13). The overriding image in Numbers of God's people on a journey through the wilderness has endured throughout the centuries of biblical interpretation as a meaningful paradigm for communities of faith in situations of turmoil and transition. The apostle Paul in the NT Letter of 1 Corinthians recounts the story of the wilderness generation in Numbers as an example that ought to apply to his readers: "These things happened to serve as an example, and they were written down to instruct us" (1 Cor. 10:11, NRSV). The Jewish community continued its interpretation of the book through the *Midrash Sipre* on Numbers and the Talmud, which focused in large part on the legal material within Numbers.

COMMENTARY

1:1–25:18
The Death of the Old Generation

The first half of Numbers recounts the fate of the old generation of Israelites who had been eyewitnesses to the Exodus out of Egypt and the revelation of God on Mount Sinai. The beginning of this first generation was marked by a census list in Exodus 1 with seventy people counted among the twelve tribes of Israel (Exod. 1:5). The new census list of the twelve tribes of Israel in Numbers 1 marks a major transition in the people's wandering. They have been liberated from the bondage of Egypt. They have received God's commandments and entered into a covenant with God at Sinai. Now with Numbers 1, this generation that is the first to have come out of Egypt is ready to organize and begin its march in earnest toward the promised land of Canaan.

Initially, the members of this old wilderness generation appear obedient as God organizes them into a holy military camp. This obedience and positive tone is, however, marred by a number of rebellions against God by the Israelites. These rebellions constitute a resumption of the series of rebellions that took place already in Exodus 16; 17; and 32. The most serious one is portrayed in the spy story in Numbers 13–14, in which the people refuse to trust God to lead them into the

land of Canaan. This rebellion provides the basis for God's judgment of death on the old generation and his promise of hope to the new generation to follow.

1:1–10:36
The Preparation and Inauguration of the March of the Holy People of Israel

This section of Numbers is dominated by a positive tone. The people of Israel obediently follow God's instructions to prepare for the march from Sinai to the promised land. The people of the twelve tribes of Israel are counted in a census and then organized into a four-sided military camp with three tribes on each side. Laws are given that preserve the holiness of the camp. The people obediently prepare for a holy war against the native inhabitants of the promised land. These preparations for the journey through the wilderness make up 1:1–10:10. Num. 10:11–36 recounts the actual inauguration of the march and the events of the first three days. The holy camp sets out for the first time from the Wilderness of Sinai to the Wilderness of Paran. The first three days of the journey occur without incident. All seems to be proceeding smoothly.

1:1–54, The Census of the Twelve Tribes. Numbers begins with the people situated in the Wilderness of Sinai fourteen months after the Exodus out of Egypt. God commands Moses to take a census of the twelve tribes of Israel. The census is not to be of all the people, but only of the males who are over twenty years of age and able to go to war (1:2–3). One person from each tribe is chosen to supervise the census (1:4–16). The results of the census for the twelve tribes are given in 1:20–46, with a grand total of 603,550 males over twenty years of age. The emphasis of this first census in Numbers is on the number of fighting men who are available for combat. In light of the goal of the promised land, this census is a preparation for the entry into and conquest of Canaan.

The census in Numbers 1 is the first since leaving Egypt. The only previous full-scale census of the twelve tribes of Jacob occurs at the end of Genesis 46 and lists the sons of Jacob and their offspring as numbering seventy people. Exodus begins by repeating this list of the sons of Jacob, or Israel, and the number of their families as seventy persons. Exod. 1:6–7 then reports the death of Joseph and "all his brothers and all that generation" as well as the emergence of a new and greatly expanded generation. This census at the beginning of Exodus marks a major transition from a state of blessing and prosperity to slavery and oppression (Exod. 1:11).

Two separate critical issues are involved in the study of the census list in Numbers 1: the list of the names of the twelve tribes of Israel and the high numbers reported in the census list. The earliest version of the names of the twelve tribes of Israel is given in 1:5–15, in which the tribal leaders are chosen to carry out the census. The names of the tribes occur in the following order: Reuben (the oldest son and thus the first tribe listed), Simeon, Judah, Issachar, Zebulun, Ephraim, Manasseh, Benjamin, Dan, Asher, Gad, and Naphtali. Other lists of the twelve tribes occur in 1:20–43; 2:3–31; 7:12–83; 10:14–28; 13:4–15; and 26:5–51.

It is probable that these tribal lists in Numbers are dependent upon even earlier versions of the twelve-tribe list in Genesis, most notably the narrative of the twelve sons of Jacob in Gen. 29:31–30:24. This genealogical story about the birth of the twelve tribal ancestors is rooted in a time in Israel's history when the tribal genealogy functioned to unify the society, since there was no king or other centralized government. With the rise of kings in Israel, the genealogical lists of the twelve tribes lost this sociopolitical function. The genealogies were then taken into the religious sphere and used in the emerging literary tradition to express the ideal Israel.

The second issue connected with the census list in 1:20–43 is the high numbers of people counted in the census for the twelve tribes. Num. 1:46 gives a total of 603,550 Israelite males over twenty years of age in the first generation. The enormous number has often struck commentators as amazing or impossible. How could the tiny clan that began in Exodus 1 with the census list of 70 persons swell to over 600,000 fighting men plus women and children and the elderly in the course of a few hundred years?

Many solutions have been offered. Some have suggested a possible alternate meaning for the Hebrew word for "thousand" as "tent-group." For example, the tribe of Reuben is counted in 1:20–21 as forty-six "thousand," five hundred. The number could, however, be translated as forty-six "tent-groups" with a total of five hundred people. This would significantly reduce the numbers in each of the tribes. Although this and other proposed solutions may be possible, it is clear that the present form of the text intends these figures to be taken as they stand as "thousands" and not "tent-groups."

In any case, the large numbers in the census lists are difficult to reconcile historically. Their present role in Numbers, however, seems in part to serve a broader theological purpose. The numbers appear to express the extent to which God has graciously blessed the Israelites in multiplying their descendants. God's promises to Abraham of innumerable descendants (Gen. 15:5; 17:4–8) are certainly in view. The emergence of the new generation in Egypt that "increased greatly" and "grew exceedingly strong" (Exod. 1:5–7) is part of this same theological concern to underscore God's faithfulness to his promises. The large number of fighting men counted in Numbers 1 also ought to be grounds for great confidence as the Israelites near the border of the promised land. The spy story in chaps. 13–14 will show, however, that the people will fail to have confi-

dence and will not trust God to bring them into the land. In short, the problem of the historicity of the numbers is important, but it should not cause us to lose sight of the theological message that the census numbers convey within the present form of Numbers and the Pentateuch.

2:1–34, The Holy Camp Prepared for the March to the Promised Land. Numbers 1 relates the number of people in the tribes of Israel. Chap. 2 specifies the arrangement of the camp by which this large community of tribes is to travel through the wilderness. The camp is arranged in concentric circles of holiness, for it is a holy war in the promised land of Canaan for which God is preparing his people. Verse 2 indicates that the tent of meeting, where God meets Moses and speaks to him, stands at the center of the camp (→ Tabernacle). The Levites, who are a tribe especially set aside to serve in important priestly functions, are also situated in the center of the camp around the tent of meeting (v. 17; → Levites). The holiness of the Levites is protected by the provision for a special and separate census in chaps. 3–4.

Numbers 2 continues by describing the arrangement of the other twelve tribes around the center of the camp occupied by the tent of meeting and the Levites. The three tribes headed by the tribe of Judah (Judah, Issachar, Zebulun) are placed on the east side of the camp and thus lead the march (vv. 3–9). The group led by Reuben (Reuben, Simeon, Gad) forms the south flank of the camp and sets out in second place (vv. 10–16). The tent of meeting and the Levites at the center of the camp are designated as the next group to set out (v. 17). The west side of the camp includes the three tribes led by Ephraim (Ephraim, Manasseh, Benjamin), which are next in line (vv. 18–24). The fourth group of three tribes, led by Dan (Dan, Asher, Naphtali), sets out last (vv. 25–31).

This almost monotonous recitation of the tribal groups in the camp serves to create an atmosphere of careful and meticulous obedience to God's commands. The final verse in chap. 2 hammers the point home: every member of every family of the people of Israel did as God commanded (v. 34). The impression is given of an eager and obedient people encamped and ready for God's holy war in the promised land. The sense of readiness and expectation begins to rise.

3:1–4:49, The Special Census of the Levites. Numbers 3 opens with an important generational formula: "These are the generations of Aaron and Moses." Genesis contains eleven such formulas, beginning with Gen. 2:4a ("These are the generations of the heavens and the earth") and extending through Gen. 37:2 ("These are the generations of Jacob"). These generational formulas provide the primary overarching structure of Genesis in its present form. A later editor probably added the generational formula in Num. 3:1 after those in Genesis were already in place. Num. 3:1, however, now extends the generational framework from Genesis into the present form of the book of Numbers. The formula also serves to reinforce the linkage of Numbers with the generations of Genesis that was already evident in the connection of the census lists in Numbers with the tribal genealogies in Genesis.

Two different numberings of the Levites are actually prescribed in Numbers 3–4. The census in chap. 3 is to include every male Levite over the age of one month (3:15). The context that surrounds this census of the Levites in chap. 3 emphasizes the Levites' role as a substitute for all the firstborn of the Israelites, who rightfully belong to God. Thus, the purpose of the census in chap. 3 is to check whether the number of Levites corresponds with the number of firstborn children in the other tribes. The results show that the number of Levites falls short of the total number of firstborn Israelites. These extra Israelites are then to be redeemed by another method: the payment of money (3:44–51). The Levites serve on behalf of and for the sake of the larger community of all the twelve tribes of Israel.

The second levitical census, in Numbers 4, includes only those male Levites between the ages of thirty and fifty years (4:2–3). The context of this census deals with the Levites' role in the service and maintenance of the tent of meeting. The Levites are to serve the sons of Aaron, who are the high priests in the worship life of the tabernacle (3:5–10). Therefore, the Levites serve both the larger community of Israel and also the more exclusive group of Aaron and his sons. The duties of each of the families of Levites are delineated in chap. 4. Again, the impression is left of an obedient people and priesthood preparing for the march through the wilderness (4:49).

5:1–6:21, Laws for Preserving the Holiness of the Camp—Ritual Impurity, Suspected Adultery, and Nazirite Vows. The preparations for the inauguration of the march continue with provisions for dealing with those within the camp who are considered impure or unclean. The requirement of purity or cleanness is an important concept in the OT. Purity meant being free from any physical, moral, or ritual contamination. Contamination resulted from such things as contact with a corpse, the involuntary flow of fluids from the sexual organs, a skin disease usually translated incorrectly in English versions as "leprosy," or the eating of prohibited foods (→ Purity).

The existence of unclean or impure individuals within the holy camp with God and the priests at the center constituted an affront to God and a threat to the well-being of the community. Numbers 5–6 provides instructions for dealing with the danger of impurity. These chapters are a composite of various laws and supplements that were added at a later stage in

the composition of the book. Num. 5:3 instructs the people to put those who are unclean outside the camp, since God is in the midst of the camp. Num. 5:4 records the people's obedient response to God's command.

Chap. 5 continues by turning from a concern to preserve the community's relationship with God to a concern to maintain harmonious relationships among the people within the community. Verses 5–10 mandate that a person who sins against a neighbor must confess the wrongdoing and make restitution in full plus 20 percent of the total loss. This corresponds to the law in Lev. 6:5. Numbers goes on, however, to consider a case not addressed in Leviticus, namely, when the person wronged is dead and has no relatives. In such a case, the priest is to receive the restitution.

Num. 5:11–31 continues the concern to maintain harmony within the community and to uncover any acts that endanger the purity of the community. A trial by ordeal is prescribed for a woman suspected of adultery. The concern is both to unmask a hidden sin and to vindicate one who is unjustly accused. The woman is to come to the priest at the sanctuary, drink a mixture of water and dust (v. 17), and take an oath (vv. 19:22). The result of the ritual will determine whether she is innocent or guilty of the breach of the marriage relationship. Such trials by ordeal were used in the ancient Near East in legal cases in which direct evidence and eyewitness accounts were lacking. The whole community was in danger as long as a judgment about the alleged wrongdoing was not made.

Num. 6:1–21 further elaborates the concern for maintaining the holiness of the camp. These verses address the Nazirites, those laypeople within the community who have been set aside as especially holy to God through commitments to abstinence from alcohol, uncut hair, and avoidance of contact with the dead (→ Nazirites). Num. 6:1–8 clarifies the nature of the Nazirite vows. Verses 9–12 make provisions for remedying the accidental violation of Nazirite vows through contact with the dead. The ordinary layperson could be cleansed from such contamination by washing in a special mixture prescribed in chap. 19. The special instructions for cleansing prescribed for the Nazirites in Numbers 6 underscore their exceptional holiness. Verses 13–21 detail a ritual for terminating the Nazirite vow, implying that the vows were to be of limited duration. Any commitment to the holy God of Israel, whether by a priest or a Nazirite, was to be taken with the utmost seriousness and discipline, for it impinged on the holiness of the whole community.

6:22–27, The Priestly Blessing of the Community. These verses are perhaps the best known in Numbers. They record the words of God's blessing that the priests are to pronounce over the congregation. This blessing continues to be used as part of the worship services of many different Christian and Jewish traditions.

The blessing is couched in poetic Hebrew style and is probably one of the oldest portions of Scripture. The elevated style is suggested by the parallelism and expansion of thought and words. In Hebrew, the first line of the blessing in v. 24 consists of three words, the second line of five words, and the third line of seven words. Each line in turn consists of two clauses. The Lord (Yahweh) is explicitly named as subject in the first clause of each of the three lines. That the Lord is the source of blessing is emphasized again in the closing statement in v. 27, in which God says, "*I* will bless them." The "I" is emphatic in the Hebrew.

The first line of the blessing in v. 24 speaks of God's blessing and keeping. Blessing refers to God's gifts of posterity, land, health, his presence, and all other things that make life possible and full (Deut. 28:2–14). God's keeping of his people involves guarding and protecting from evil (Ps. 121:7–8). The second line of the blessing in 6:25 uses the metaphor of light to refer to God's face as it shines benevolently upon God's people. This shining of God's face results in his being gracious and delivering the people in times of trouble (Ps. 67:1).

The third line of the blessing in 6:26 brings the blessing to a crescendo. The goal of God's blessing is summed up by the final word of the benediction, Hebrew *shalom,* or "peace." *Shalom* refers to more than simply the absence of conflict. It encompasses all of God's good gifts of health, prosperity, well-being, and salvation. This richly worded blessing comes at the end of the section in chaps. 5–6 that is concerned with the holiness and well-being of the entire community. It highlights God's will for all the people as one of blessing and peace. The Aaronidic benediction stands as an affirming centerpiece in this opening section of Numbers, which is overwhelmingly positive in its tone. God is blessing the community, and the people are obediently and eagerly following his commands.

7:1–89, The Offerings of the Twelve Tribes for the Altar. The portrait of an obedient people continues in Numbers 7. In thankful response to God's establishment of the priesthood and promise of blessing (6:22–27), the people bring offerings for the dedication of the altar. Num. 7:1–9 recounts the offering of oxen and wagons that will enable the Levites to transport the altar and tent of meeting on the march toward the promised land. Verses 10–88 are a repetitive account of the offerings for the altar brought by each of the twelve tribes of Israel on each of twelve consecutive days. The amount and type of offering are exactly the same for each tribe. The careful repetition underscores the unanimous and strong support for the tabernacle and its priesthood. Every tribe has an equal and strong commitment to the worship of God.

Num. 7:89 is probably a later insertion. In its present context, the verse affirms the sanctuary as the true locus of God's presence and revelation. God is shown

to be faithful to his promise to be present in the midst of his people, and the people are shown to be obedient in their response. This image of God's speaking to Moses in the tent of meeting that is now located at the center of the camp (chap. 2) is in contrast with the scene in Exod. 33:7–11. There the grave sin of making a golden calf necessitated locating the tent of meeting not in the middle, but on the outside, of the camp. Here in Numbers the tent of meeting has been restored to the center, and the holiness of God's people has been reestablished.

8:1–26, The Obedient Response of Aaron and the Levites. The meticulous obedience of the people in Numbers 7 is followed by evidence of the obedience of Aaron and the Levites. In 8:1–4, God commands Aaron to light the seven lamps in the sanctuary and to ensure that the light beamed forward in front of the lampstand. Verse 3 states that Aaron did exactly as God commanded; v. 4 underscores Aaron's obedience in constructing the lampstand. The details for the lampstand's design are given in Exod. 25:31–40. The lampstand, or menorah, is shaped like a flowering tree with seven branches and symbolizes the life-giving power and light of God's presence (→ Lampstand).

The next section (8:5–26) reports the dedication ceremony for the Levites as the substitutes for the firstborn of Israel. Numbers 3, 4, and 7 described the census of the Levites, their duties in caring for the sanctuary and its furnishings, and the gift of oxen and wagons for transporting the sanctuary. All that remains is the official dedication of the Levites to their tasks. The ceremony is a sign that the march of the holy camp of Israel is about to begin.

The Levites' dual roles as servants of Aaron and his sons (v. 19) and as substitutes for the firstborn of Israel (v. 16) are again stated. Verse 17 traces the consecration of the firstborn back to God's slaying of all the firstborn of Egypt (Exod. 13:2, 15). This reference to the Exodus out of Egypt opens up the way to Numbers 9 and its reference to the celebration of the Passover.

Again, however, the stress in Numbers 8 is on the obedience of Moses and Aaron and the people in dedicating the Levites to God's service (v. 20). Emphasis is also placed on the obedient service of the Levites in doing what God commanded through Moses (v. 22). The chapter closes with the age requirements for the Levites' service in the tent of meeting. They are to begin at twenty-five and retire at fifty years of age. Num. 4:47 presents a different age range for the Levites—from thirty to fifty years of age. There is no obvious reason for the discrepancy.

9:1–14, The Celebration of the Second Passover. We move from the obedience of the priests and Levites in chap. 8 to the obedience of all the people in chap. 9. That obedience is expressed in the celebration of the most important festival in Israel, the Passover (→ Passover, The). The first Passover, in Exodus 12, had been the prelude to a new beginning in the Exodus out of Egypt. This second Passover signals the reconstitution of Israel after the golden calf debacle had endangered its status as God's holy people. This second Passover marks as radical a new beginning as the one in Exodus. Verses 4–5 pick up the characteristic theme of the opening chapters of Numbers: the people obediently follow the words that God speaks to them through Moses.

The subject of the Passover provides an occasion for a legal decision regarding cases in which a person is unable to observe the festival at the appointed time. Two possible situations are raised. What if someone comes in contact with the dead and is thereby rendered unclean? Is the Passover of such importance that the unclean person should still observe the festival on the appointed day—the fourteenth day of the first month (vv. 6–7)? And what if someone is on a journey during the appointed time of the celebration (v. 10)? God decrees that a special supplemental Passover on the fourteenth day of the *second* month should be observed by those unable to observe the festival on the fourteenth day of the *first* month (vv. 9–11). This concession should not, however, be construed as a license for laxity in keeping the Passover (v. 13). As a matter of fact, the festival is so important that it should be observed even by the foreigners who live among the Israelites. It has been argued that the two dates for the Passover, with one in the first month of the year and the other in the second, represent two different traditions, one from Northern Israel and the other from the South. The story of Hezekiah's Passover in 2 Chron. 30:1–3 may be a hint of such divergent traditions. In any case, the traditions have now been reshaped to emphasize the importance of the festival and the people's careful observance in obedience to God's command.

9:15–23, God's Guidance Through the Cloud and the People's Obedient Following. This section carries forward the theme of Israel's obedient following and is a sign of the imminent beginning of the march from Sinai to Canaan. The image of God's presence in the cloud and its association with the tent of meeting here in Numbers appears to be a reshaping of the traditions found in Exodus. In Exod. 13:21–22, the cloud is shaped as a pillar that goes in front of the people and guides them in the Exodus out of Egypt after the celebration of the first Passover. Just as the cloud marked a new chapter in Israel's life in the Exodus, so too the appearance of the cloud motif after the second Passover, in Numbers 9, signals a major new transition in the life of the people. The march toward the promised land after the reorganization of the holy camp is about to commence.

The cloud in 9:15–23, however, does not go in front of the people as it did in Exod. 13:21–22. Rather, as in Exod. 33:7–11, the cloud is closely tied with the tent of

meeting, or tabernacle, which in Numbers 9 stands in the middle of the camp. In Exodus 33, the tent of meeting was located outside of the camp because the sin of the golden calf had rendered the community unclean. In Numbers 9, however, the tent of meeting has been restored to the camp's center and with it the cloud as a sign of God's presence and guidance. The central theme of this section and of all the opening chapters of Numbers is sounded in a refrain repeated three times (vv. 18, 20, 21): "At the word of the LORD the people of Israel set out, and at the word of the LORD they made camp." These and other verses in this section contain a chorus of affirmations of Israel's diligent obedience in following God's instructions.

10:1–10, The Signal of the March Soon to Begin—The Silver Trumpets. The role of the cloud and God's leading of the people in Numbers 9 is complemented by the leadership and guidance by the sons of Aaron through the blowing of the silver trumpets. Verse 2 suggests two functions for the trumpets. One is to summon the congregation to a gathering. When both trumpets are blown, the whole congregation is to assemble at the tent of meeting (v. 3). When only one trumpet is blown, only the leaders are to gather at the tent (v. 4). A provision that may have been added secondarily establishes the procedure for calling the people together when they come to the promised land. A special alarm signal would gather the people at times of war. The trumpets would also summon the people at times of religious festivals as a remembrance of God's faithfulness (vv. 9–10). This first function lifts readers' attention for a moment to the future goal of the march—life in the promised land.

The second function for the trumpets turns readers' attention back to the immediate context. The trumpets are a signal of the time for breaking camp and the inauguration of the march. The sound of the trumpets gives notice to the twelve tribes to move out according to the order assigned in the arrangement of the camp in chap. 2 (10:5–6). This latter function points to the beginning of the march that is to begin immediately, in 10:11.

10:11–36, The Actual Inauguration of the March of the Holy Camp of Israel. At long last, the camp of the twelve tribes of Israel begins its climactic march from the Wilderness of Sinai toward the promised land. The preparations for the march that were designed to maintain the purity and holiness of the camp have been elaborate and meticulous. The plodding and repetitive style of the narrative in Numbers thus far creates in readers a sense of impatience and anticipation of this moment when the camp finally picks up and moves. "They set out for the first time at the word of the LORD through Moses" (v. 13).

According to v. 11, the tribes set out nineteen days after the census was taken (1:1) and eleven months after arriving at Mount Sinai (Exod. 19:1). Num. 10:14–28 indicates that the tribes begin the march precisely in the order prescribed in chap. 2. The Levites carry out their tasks of taking down the tabernacle and transporting it in accordance with the instructions in chap. 3.

Num. 10:29–32 is typically thought to be from a much older narrative tradition than any of the previous material in Numbers. The mention of Hobab as the father-in-law of Moses in v. 29 raises problems, since the name of Moses' father-in-law in Exod. 3:1 is Jethro. Hobab may simply be an alternate name for Jethro from a different tradition, or the Hebrew term for "father-in-law" may have here the wider meaning of "a relative by marriage." Moses asks Hobab to be a guide for Israel, since he is of the desert tribe of the Midianites and thus well acquainted with the wilderness. Initially, Hobab refuses, but Moses insists and promises that God will be as gracious to him, a foreigner, as he will be to Israel (vv. 30–32). Hobab's response was presumably positive (see Judg. 1:16; 4:11).

The mention of a human guide, Hobab, is balanced in the verses that follow by a reaffirmation of the role of the Ark (10:33) and the cloud (v. 34) as instruments of God's guidance on the journey. Just as the cloud and the trumpets were paired as complementary divine and human instruments of leadership (9:17; 10:2), so too the human guide who is a foreigner and the divine presence in the cloud and Ark are paired as complementary means of leadership for the people. A subtle interaction is suggested here between the divine and the human as well as an openness to guidance and wisdom from non-Israel.

The words of Moses in vv. 35–36, which announce the breaking and making of the camp, are seen as ancient tradition and have an almost liturgical flavor. They reinforce the impression of the inauguration of the march as a liturgical procession with the holy God at the center leading the faithful people through the wilderness. This impression of a totally obedient and holy people is, however, about to be shattered.

11:1–20:29
Repeated Incidents of Rebellion and Atonement: The Death of the First Wilderness Generation Begins

The transition from the portrait of the people's complete faithfulness in Numbers 1–10 to the picture of their repeated rebellions beginning in chap. 11 represents a totally unexpected turnabout in the flow of the story. In 11:1 we encounter the first instance of a complaint and rebellion by the people in Numbers. It is a rebellion for which readers are totally unprepared. The abrupt and shattering break of the narrative flow between 10:36 and 11:1 reflects the shattering break in the relationship between God and his holy people.

Throughout chaps. 11–20, Israel continually rebels, and God punishes Israel with plagues and military defeats. God offers signs of atonement and forgiveness, but the people keep slipping back into rebellion. A general rebellion of the people in Numbers 11 is followed by the first rebellion in the wilderness by two leaders, Aaron and Miriam, in chap. 12. The most serious rebellion occurs in the story of the spy mission into the promised land in chaps. 13–14. This story provides the definitive basis for understanding the whole book of Numbers in terms of the death of the old generation and the birth of the new generation of hope on the edge of the promised land. After a word of hope is offered in Numbers 15, the people and even the Levites resume their rebellious ways. Chap. 20 recounts an act of rebellion even by Moses and Aaron against God. Aaron's death and the succession of his son Eleazar as priest in 20:22–29 is a sign of the coming end of the first generation of Israelites out of Egypt and the beginning of a new generation.

11:1–3, The First Rebellion by the People Against God. Numbers 11 marks a dramatic shift from the positive tone in chap. 10, in which people looked forward to the promised land and were sure of God's care and protection (10:29). Num. 11:1–3 involves the first example of the people's murmuring against God in Numbers. The motif of the people's murmuring in the wilderness occurred previously in Exodus, where the complaints were typically understood as legitimate. In response to the intercession of Moses, God met the people's needs in a positive way (e.g., Exod. 15:22–25; 17:1–7). In Numbers, however, the people's complaints are understood as acts of faithlessness. The complaints rouse God's anger and punishment, which is mitigated only by Moses' intercession. Num. 11:1–3 provides a clear and concise example of this second form of the murmuring story and establishes the theme for the entire section it introduces (chaps. 11–20).

The people's complaining arouses the fire of God's anger, which burns the fringe areas of the camp (11:1). Before the divine fire continues any farther toward the center of the camp, Moses prays on behalf of the people and the fire is removed (v. 2). The name of the place is then called Taberah (Heb., "burning"). The location of Taberah is unknown.

11:4–35, The Craving of Meat at Kibbroth-hattavah: Another Rebellion. This rebellion story probably evolved from an original story about the provision of quail in response to the people's request for meat. The story of the provision of additional leaders to support Moses was then added as the story developed in the course of transmission (vv. 16–17, 24–30). A rabble stirs up the people's desire for meat and for the variety of food they had in Egypt. This craving for meat is a rejection of the gracious gift of manna that God had provided so faithfully as food for the people throughout their journey through the wilderness (vv. 4–9). Everyone joins in the complaint that angers both God and Moses (v. 10).

The next section is a dialogue between these two. Moses laments the burden of leadership that God has placed on his shoulders (vv. 11–15). God, in turn, commands Moses to select seventy elders from the twelve tribes to share the burden of leading the people. He also commands Moses to have the people prepare to eat meat for an entire month, until it becomes loathsome to them (vv. 16–20). The people's desire for meat and their yearning for Egypt are signs of faithlessness and a rejection of God's gift of manna. Moses himself expresses doubt that God will be able to make good on his promise to provide a whole month's supply of meat for 600,000 people, but God tells him simply to wait and see (vv. 21–23).

God stops talking and begins acting through his spirit, or wind. The fact that the Hebrew word for "spirit" is the same as "wind" helps to tie together the two actions of God in vv. 24–35. In the first action (vv. 24–30), God takes some of the spirit from Moses and places it upon the seventy elders who stand at the tent of meeting in the holy center of the camp so that they may share the leadership of the tribes. The episode involving the two people prophesying in the camp illustrates the need to allow for the possibility that persons outside the institutional leadership of God's people may have genuine words and insights from him (vv. 26–30).

In the second action (vv. 31–35), God sends forth a "wind" that brings flocks of quail from the sea so that they fall far outside the camp. The quail lure the people to leave the security of the holy camp. As they eat the quail that lie at a day's journey outside the camp, God is angered and sends a plague upon the people. The story provides an explanation for the name of the place, Kibbroth-hattavah, which in Hebrew means "graves of craving" (v. 34). The precise location of Kibbroth-hattavah is unknown.

12:1–16, The Rebellion by the Leaders, Miriam and Aaron. Thus far, only the people, not the leaders, have joined in the rebellions. Numbers 12, however, introduces the complaint of Miriam and Aaron against Moses. The preceding episode in 11:26–30 opens the door to the possibility of legitimate prophets and revelation outside the official or institutional leadership of the tribes. Chap. 12 wrestles with the limits of such revelation. Miriam is described in Exod. 15:20 as a prophet and as a sister of Aaron and of Moses. The implicit question in this story is this: can prophetic or any other revelation override Mosaic revelation? In other words, is prophecy subordinate to the authority of Moses and the Mosaic tradition? It has been suggested that behind this story lies a conflict between specific

priestly or prophetic groups in Israel's history. The evidence for such a conflict is far from clear, and, in any case, the story in its present form has in mind the broader issue of the relationship of Mosaic tradition to prophecy in general.

The scene opens with Miriam and Aaron speaking against Moses because he had married a woman from Cush. The Bible often identifies Cush with Ethiopia (e.g., Isa. 20:3, 5). In other texts, Cush refers to the Arabian region of Midian (Hab. 3:7; see Exod. 2:15–22). The unnamed wife is, in any case, a foreigner. This initial objection is only a smoke screen, however, for the real cause for the rebellion by Miriam and Aaron. In two rhetorical questions, these two challenge Moses' unique role as the supreme channel of the words of God. After a note about Moses' humility (12:3), God appears and emphasizes the role of Moses as the unique and supreme vehicle of divine revelation (vv. 6–8). God punishes Miriam and Aaron by making Miriam leprous, which renders her unclean so that she must remain outside the camp for seven days until she is again allowed inside the camp. Moses demonstrates his integrity by interceding on behalf of Miriam, who had been the one who had opposed him (v. 13). A question that naturally arises is why God punished Miriam with leprosy and not Aaron. It may be that the story was originally only about Miriam, and Aaron was added secondarily. Another explanation may be that the writer simply could not tolerate having Aaron, the high priest, rendered unclean by leprosy. The requirements of purity or cleanness for the priests were very strict (see Lev. 21).

13:1–14:45, The Spy Mission into the Promised Land: The Decisive Rebellion. More than any other story in Numbers, the narrative of the spy mission in chaps. 13–14 provides the foundation for the unifying theme of the book, which is the death of the old generation in the wilderness and the birth of a new generation standing expectantly on the threshold of the promised land. The purpose of the census at the beginning of the book was to count all who were "able to go forth to war" (1:3). The twelve tribes were then organized into a holy camp as an army marching toward Canaan (chap. 2). The spy story in chaps. 13–14 records the first military action of the twelve tribes of Israel, who have been prepared in this way for a holy war.

Scholars are generally agreed that the story in Numbers 13–14 consists of at least two interwoven layers or literary sources, one older and one later. For example, one layer or tradition seems to assume that the area that the spies covered was confined only to southern Canaan around Hebron (13:22–24). A later layer extended the territory of the reconnaissance to include the entire land of Canaan from the Wilderness of Zin on the southern edge to Rehob on the northern (13:21). Another tension in the text that is a sign of multiple layers is the designation of the faithful spies among the twelve. In an earlier tradition, Caleb was apparently the only spy among them who was faithful to God (13:30). In the later tradition, Joshua was also included as a faithful spy (14:6).

Numerous suggestions have been made for the origin of the spy story. Some have proposed that the original story was about a successful conquest of a part of Canaan from the south by a tribe claiming Caleb as an ancestor. The story was then reshaped into a failed conquest story that provided a rationale for the entrance into the promised land from the eastern border of Canaan rather than the southern. Others have proposed that the story originated as a polemic by Judah in the South, represented by Caleb, against the Northern tribes. In any case, the story in its present form has been significantly reshaped for theological purposes and has lost any major thrust that it may have once had as one tribe's polemic against another.

The spy story begins with the Israelites in the Wilderness of Paran poised on the southern edge of the promised land of Canaan (12:16; 13:3). At last the Israelites have reached the doorstep of their destination. God commands Moses to send twelve men, one from each tribe, to spy out the land (13:2–24). After forty days, the spies return and report what they have seen. Initially, the spies give a favorable report about the fruitfulness of the land, but they warn against the inhabitants, who are strong and who live in large fortified cities (13:25–29, 31–33). Caleb and later Joshua, two of the spies, counter the unfavorable report of the others by urging the Israelites to trust in God and to proceed to conquer the land (13:30; 14:6–9). The people respond faithlessly by refusing to go into the promised land and by desiring to choose their own leader and return to Egypt (14:1–4).

God then appears and tells Moses that he will disinherit the people and instead make of Moses a new and even greater nation than the Israelites (14:10–12). The anger of God is so severe because the nature of the people's rebellion is unprecedented. The people's wish to choose their own leader and go back to Egypt is, in effect, a total rejection of God, whose essence and name is "Yahweh your God who brought you *out of* the land of Egypt, *out of* the house of bondage" (Exod. 20:2). This rebellion goes beyond the sin of the golden calf at Mount Sinai, which was not so much a rejection of God as an attempt to shape God into their own image (Exod. 32:4–5).

Numbers 13–14 is a story of high hopes and bitter disappointment. All the promises to the ancestors of Israel in Genesis, which extend through Exodus and Leviticus, have looked forward to this time when the people finally are on the verge of entering the promised land. Coupled with this high sense of anticipation, the census in Numbers 1, which counted an enormous total army of over 600,000 people, and the elaboration of the carefully ordered military camp with God visibly in its midst should have provided

grounds for complete faith and confidence. The tone of events in chaps. 1–10 is entirely positive. The initial spying out of the land reveals a beautiful and fruitful land, one that "flows with milk and honey" (13:27). The prospect is bright indeed.

But then comes the fateful rebellion. The people refuse to enter the land, afraid of the death that may await them and afraid to trust God to make good on his promise. As a result, God announces the punishment of death on this old, sinful generation.

Moses intercedes and asks God to forgive the people just as he had done after the sin of the golden calf in Exod. 32:11–13 (Num. 14:13–19). Although God had allowed the people to live and be reconstituted as his holy people after the golden calf incident in Exodus 32, the rebellion in Numbers 13–14 is a more serious matter. God agrees to forgive the people by allowing the next generation of Israelites to enter the promised land. The old wilderness generation, however, is condemned to die in the wilderness over the course of the next forty years (14:20–35). At this point, the story is explicitly linked to the census list in chap. 1, which contains the recurring formula "all your number, numbered from twenty years old and upward," now also used by God to designate who will die in the wilderness (14:29). Only two members of the old generation will enter the promised land: Caleb and Joshua, the two spies who trusted that God would be faithful to the promise to bring the people into the promised land (14:30). But out of the darkest moment of the entire Pentateuch comes the birth and the promise of a new generation of God's people. The children of the old generation, whom the rebels used as an excuse for not entering the land (14:3), will become the new vehicles of God's promise (14:31). The new census list in chap. 26 will be a concrete sign of the birth of this new generation of hope even as it signals the final demise of the old wilderness generation.

Numbers 14 concludes with two brief episodes. In vv. 36–38, the ten rebellious spies who refused to trust God to bring the people into the land die in a plague. Their deaths are a sign of the coming punishment that will eventually fall upon all members of the older generation. As if to confirm the people's failure to comprehend their own sin, they change their minds and resolve to go and fight the Canaanites. But Moses warns them that God will not be with them. They go anyway and are soundly defeated in battle (vv. 39–45). The death of the old rebellious generation has begun.

15:1–41, A Sign of Hope: Regulations for Life in the Promised Land. Numbers 15 is a collection of legal material that has been inserted at a relatively late stage of composition between two narratives, the spy story in chaps. 13–14 and the story of the rebellion of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram in chap. 16. Numbers 15 contains a number of laws concerning sacrifices and offerings that the people are to present to God when they live in the promised land (vv. 1–21). The next section includes regulations for sacrifices that atone for unintentional sins by the community (vv. 22–26) or by an individual (vv. 27–31). These laws concerning intentional and unintentional sins are followed by the legal case of a man gathering wood on the Sabbath day (vv. 32–36). Because the degree of guilt and punishment of the man is unclear, the case is referred to God's judgment. Originally the case may have had something to do with the law against kindling a fire on the Sabbath (Exod. 35:3) or with kindling a fire for a sacrifice to foreign gods. In the present context, however, the case provides a concrete example of the law that immediately precedes it concerning sinning flagrantly, or "with a high hand" (15:30). Such deliberate and defiant sin must be punished severely. Thus, this legal case and the laws that precede it share a common theme: the role of intentionality in determining the degree of guilt and punishment. Sins done unwittingly bear less guilt and can be atoned through sacrifice (v. 28), while a blatant and intentional act of disobedience (v. 30) involves great guilt and severe punishment.

Num. 15:37–41 continues with instructions to the people to wear tassels on their garments as reminders of God's commandments (→ Fringes). This section was included in the Jewish liturgy of the postexilic period as part of the prayer known as the Shema (→ Shema). The last verse of the chapter, v. 41, strongly reaffirms God's relationship to the people after the trauma of the rebellion in chaps. 13–14. In fact, the entire chapter functions in this way to provide reassurance to the new generation that God will indeed bring them into the land. The laws presuppose that the new generation will indeed live in the promised land (15:2, 18). The laws look forward to new generations in that they are to apply "throughout your generations" (vv. 14, 15, 21, 23, 38). The tassels on the garments serve as a reminder of God's covenant to future generations (v. 38) and of Israel's perpetual duty to observe God's commandments and to safeguard its own sanctity (v. 40).

In relation to chaps. 13–14, the laws of Numbers 15 function as profound promise for the future. In relation to the rebellion of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram in chap. 16, these same laws function as threat and burden. The laws in Numbers 15 are mediated exclusively through Moses, a fact repeatedly stressed (vv. 1, 17, 22, 23, 35, 36, 37). In the present shape of these chapters, Moses' unique role as God's mediator in chap. 15 apparently provides the reason for the otherwise unprovoked rebellion by Korah in chap. 16. Moreover, Korah's blatant and defiant revolt provides an example of sinning "with a high hand" (15:30), which requires the penalty of death, as we shall see.

16:1–35, The Rebellion of Korah, Dathan, Abiram, and 250 Leaders. Older and later traditions have been combined in this account of a rebellion against Moses

and Aaron. The revolt is led by a subordinate levitical priest named Korah and by Dathan, Abiram, and 250 other lay members of the community. The earliest form of the story may have focused only on a rebellion by Dathan and Abiram, members of the tribe of Reuben (vv. 12–15). The story was then expanded to include 250 laymen who claimed the right to offer incense but were refuted in a test (vv. 2b, 4–7, 18, 35). A further elaboration introduced Korah, a Levite, as one of the rebels (vv. 1a, 8–11, 16–17). These separate traditions have been expanded and tied together by one or more editors. The judgment on Korah stresses the subordinate role of the Levites in relation to the sons of Aaron in priestly duties. The issue of whether this conflict between Levites and sons of Aaron reflects an actual historical struggle within the priesthood in either the pre-exilic or postexilic period in Israel is a matter of some debate.

In its present context, the rebellion in Numbers 16 simply confirms the faithlessness of the old wilderness generation that was already demonstrated in the debacle of the spy story in the preceding chapters. The story in Numbers 13–14 and the story in chap. 16 signal the unraveling of the careful organization and preparation of the people at the beginning of the book (chaps. 1–4). The census and the holy camp in chaps. 1–2 prepared for the first military engagement, which should have occurred in the spying out of the land in chaps. 13–14. The spy story, however, ends in total failure. Moreover, the census and the preparation of the Levites for their important task of caring for the Ark and serving the sons of Aaron in Numbers 3–4 should have brought satisfaction and fulfillment to the Levites. Instead, Korah, a Levite, leads a rebellion against Moses and Aaron and challenges their legitimacy as leaders here in chap. 16.

The cause of the complaint against Moses in v. 3, "You have gone too far," is not clear in the immediate context. In the larger context and in the present shape of the text, however, Moses' exclusive role as mediator of the laws in Numbers 15 seems to provide the background to the revolt. As we saw, the laws in chap. 15 also function to dramatize the grave nature of the revolt in chap. 16. The revolt is an example of sinning openly and defiantly with "a high hand," which demands a judgment of being cut off from among the people (15:30). The judgment on Korah and his cohorts also serves to clarify the nature of the call in 15:40 for all God's people to be holy. The rebels incorrectly use their status as a holy people to seek their own advantage rather than accepting God's appointment of Moses and Aaron as their rightful leaders.

The story begins with the complaint of Korah and the Levites against the supremacy of Aaron and his sons in the practice of the priesthood (16:3–11). The rebels say Moses and Aaron have "gone too far" (v. 3), but Moses replies that the Levites have "gone too far" (v. 7) in their rebellion. A test is established whereby Korah and his company are to bring censers with fire in them on the following day so that God may choose who is to serve as priests.

The story then proceeds to the challenge voiced by Dathan and Abiram, two laypersons from the tribe of Reuben. They yearn to return to Egypt, which they ironically remember as "a land flowing with milk and honey" (v. 13), the stereotypical designation for the promised land of Canaan. They also throw Moses' own words in his face. Moses attempted to comfort Korah and the Levites concerning their subordinate but privileged role by saying (v. 9), "Is it such a small thing that the God of Israel has separated you?" Dathan and Abiram turn the words back on Moses with a sarcastic twist (v. 13): "Is it such a small thing that you have taken us up out of a land flowing with milk and honey?" Their words belie a lack of faith in God's promise to bring the people into the promised land. They blatantly reject the authority of God's appointed leader, refusing to heed Moses' call to come and stand before him: "We will not come up" (v. 14).

The rebels are then judged by God in a manner that corresponds with their complaints. Korah and the Levites claim to be full priests. As a test of whether God will accept them as priests, the rebels light censers to offer incense as only priests are to do. Rejecting this democratizing of the priesthood, God commands Moses and Aaron to separate themselves from the people so that God's wrath may consume the entire congregation (v. 21). Although Moses is very angry with the people (v. 15), he and Aaron reveal the quality of their character and leadership by pleading with God to judge only the guilty ones and to spare the rest of the people (v. 22). God complies, and Moses then asks the people to stay away from the dwellings of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram to see whether God will judge them (v. 26).

God then begins the judgment as the earth opens up and swallows the rebels. In accord with their complaints (v. 13), they do indeed die in the wilderness (vv. 31–34). And in accord with their complaints, these rebellious Levites offered incense to the Lord but were burned and killed as they did it (v. 35). Thus, God vindicates the rightful authority of Moses and Aaron.

16:36–50, Another Rebellion by All the People. God commands Moses to have Aaron's son, Eleazar, gather the bronze censers that the Levites had held as they were consumed in the fire of judgment. The bronze is to be hammered into a cover for the altar. This may have been intended as a supplemental covering or simply another tradition about an altar covering, since a similar bronze overlay is mentioned in Exod. 38:2. In Numbers, the covering serves as a sign to remind the people that only priests of the family of Aaron are to burn incense at the altar (16:36–40).

But the people soon slip back into their rebellious ways. They begin to accuse Moses and Aaron of killing the people of God, which includes Korah, Dathan, Abiram, and 250 others. God comes down and threatens again to destroy all the people of Israel since "all the congregation" is rebelling (vv. 41, 45). Whereas the question earlier had concerned God's justice in destroying the whole people when only a few were guilty (16:22), now God could destroy all the people since all were involved in the rebellion.

Moses and Aaron exemplify the quality of leadership as they again seek the good of the people rather than their own good or glory. They fall on their faces in an act of intercession on behalf of the people. Moses then instructs Aaron to take a censer throughout the camp and offer incense to make atonement for the people. The plague that is God's judgment kills 14,700 people before Aaron is able to step in to stop the spread of the plague through his intercession (vv. 45–50). Aaron's exclusive role as priest (Heb. *kohen*) is again vindicated, this time in a positive way. God had rejected and killed the Levites when they attempted to offer incense. In contrast, Aaron's offer of incense is accepted by God, and it effectively stops the spread of the plague. Leadership, priestly or otherwise, is to be exercised for the sake of the community, not for self-glorification.

17:1–13, Aaron's Almond Rod. The previous two incidents of rebellion against Aaron's exclusive role as priest in chap. 16 demonstrate the unwillingness of the people to accept the need for a priesthood. Numbers 17, however, confirms once and for all God's sole appointment of Aaron and his sons to the priesthood. At the end, the people finally acknowledge their need for a priesthood to represent them at the altar (vv. 12–13). The aim of the original form of this story of the almond rods may have been to legitimate the Levites as priests. In its present shape, however, the focus has been shifted from the Levites as a group to Aaron as an individual by having his name written on the rod representing the tribe of Levi (v. 3).

The story begins with God proposing a test to determine which tribe is to assume the privileges and responsibilities of the priesthood. God instructs Moses to collect twelve almond rods, or branches, and to write the names of the twelve tribes upon them. Aaron's name is to be written on the rod representing the tribe of Levi. Moses deposits the rods in the tent of meeting overnight. God suggests that the tribe whose rod sprouts on the following day will be considered the chosen tribe for the priesthood. God intends that the test will put an end to any further complaints from the people concerning the priesthood (vv. 5, 10). The rebellions that preceded clearly provide the reason for this test.

On the next day, the rod of Aaron is the only one of the twelve that sprouts buds, blossoms, and ripe almonds. God tells Moses to display Aaron's almond rod in the sanctuary as a visible sign of Aaron's rightful claim to the priesthood. The people come to recognize the necessity for a special priestly group to represent them at the tabernacle (vv. 8–13). The test and the previous rebellion stories in Numbers 16 affirm God's choice of Aaron as priest of the people of Israel. We lack exact evidence of any historical conflicts over the priesthood in the history of Israel that may have formed the original background to this sequence of narratives. As the stories stand, they simply reaffirm the uniqueness of the Aaronidic priesthood among all the other tribes or groups (→ Aaron; Priests).

18:1–32, The Rights and Responsibilities of the Priesthood of Aaron and the Service of the Levites. The preceding narratives finally convince the people of the necessity of the priesthood. They now can recognize the importance of providing the tithe offerings and sacrifices necessary to sustain the institution. The nature of these offerings as well as the role of the Aaronidic and levitical priesthood are spelled out in Numbers 18.

The chapter begins by stressing the responsibility of the priesthood to bear the sin of the community and to protect the community from drawing near to the holy vessels of the inner sanctuary. The Levites are to form a second circle of protection around the tent of meeting. The priests and Levites protect the people from compromising the holiness of God's presence in the sanctuary, thus guarding against the wrath of God and the death that it brings (vv. 1–5). The service of the priests and Levites is a gift from God to the community for its own good. Support of the priesthood ought then to be done out of a spirit of thankfulness and not only one of obligation (vv. 6–7).

In vv. 8–20, God speaks directly to Aaron rather than through the mediation of Moses. This is unusual and serves again to underscore Aaron's special role as priest. These verses summarize the sacrifices, the first-fruit offerings of the harvest, the firstborn animals, and the devoted items from holy war that are the priest's due. Many of these same laws are found elsewhere (e.g., Lev. 6–7; 27). The rationale for the offering to the priest is stated in 18:20. The priests will not inherit any of the property in the land of Canaan. Their only source of sustenance will come from the offerings given to God.

The Levites are specifically addressed in vv. 21–29. Although they had been involved in the preceding rebellions (16:1, 7), God reaffirms the role of the Levites' service to the sons of Aaron and their right to the tithe offering of the people. The provision for the support of the Levites leaves no doubt that their role remains crucial to the plan of God for the people. Like the Aaronidic priesthood, the Levites have no inheritance in

the land and must be supported through the people's offerings (v. 24).

The Levites are to receive the tithe offering in return for their service in the tent of meeting. In turn, they are to give a tithe of their tithe to the priests, or sons of Aaron. Moreover, the tithe is to be the best part of the offering. This ordinance emphasizes the important but subordinate role of the Levites in relation to Aaron. The rest of the offering, however, belongs to the Levites (vv. 25–31). The note in v. 32 reminds the Levites that any further rebellions like Korah's will lead only to death.

19:1–22, The Ritual of the Red Heifer and the Purification of the Unclean. The first half of the book of Numbers recounts the death of the members of the old wilderness generation in successive stages, leading up to the census and organization of the new generation in chap. 26. The presence of death and its threat to the community permeates these chapters. Several rebellions have already resulted in the deaths of thousands. Death occurs in the plague in 11:33; the punishment of the ten unfaithful spies in 14:37; the military defeat in 14:45; the punishment of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram and the other rebels in 16:33–35; and the plague that killed 14,700 people in 16:49.

After the rebellion of Numbers 16, the position of the priestly house of Aaron, which stands at the center of the wilderness camp, is reaffirmed in chap. 17. Chap. 18 follows by reconstituting the legitimate but subordinate role of the Levites in the next circle of holiness in the midst of the camp. Chap. 19 moves on to consider the major threat to the holiness of the laypeople in the rest of the camp by contamination through contact with the dead. Num. 5:2–3 has already stressed the seriousness of the threat to the holiness of the camp from touching a corpse. Given the several incidents of death among the people thus far and the theme of the death of the old generation in the first half of the book (chaps. 1–25), the concern of Numbers 19 for cleansing those contaminated by contact with the dead seems entirely appropriate.

The ritual of burning a red heifer or cow and using the ashes for a water of purification for the unclean probably reflects an ancient ritual. The details are contained in vv. 1–10. The redness of the heifer, the unusual burning of the blood of the animal (v. 5), and the scarlet stuff (v. 6) all seem to signify blood and its potent ability to cleanse that which is polluted. Cedarwood and hyssop (or marjoram) are other cleansing agents thrown into the fire as ingredients of the purificatory ashes (v. 6; see Lev. 14:4; Ps. 51:7). The ashes are to be gathered up and kept for mixing with water to cleanse the people from sin and impurity (Num. 19:9). There is no mention in vv. 1–10 of its specific use for purifying those who have touched a corpse.

This link of the ritual of the red heifer with cleansing those who have come in contact with the dead was established with the addition of the ritual laws of vv. 14–19. These verses deal in detail with the issue of uncleanness through contact with the dead and may reflect an originally independent tradition. Verses 11–13 serve as a literary bridge now binding the red heifer ritual with the concern for uncleanness from the dead. Thus, the ashes of the red heifer in v. 9 are identified in the present shape of the text with the ashes in v. 17. The notes in vv. 13 and 20 emphasize the importance of the cleansing ritual and focus the concern on preserving the holiness of the sanctuary at the center of the wilderness camp. The presence of God and the mechanisms for worship and life among the people can be maintained in spite of the continuing deaths of the people of the older wilderness generation.

20:1–29, The Ultimate Rebellion by Moses and Aaron Against God. The rebellion of the central leaders of Israel, Moses and Aaron, signals the pervasiveness of the sin of the old generation. Numbers 20 opens with a note about the death of one of the leaders, Miriam, who had rebelled along with Aaron in chap. 12. Her death and burial in the wilderness is a sign of what lies ahead for Aaron (v. 28) and for Moses (v. 12; cf. Deut. 34:5). None of the leaders of the old wilderness generation will lead Israel into the promised land.

The story of 20:1–13 appears to be a reworking of a similar narrative about the people's complaint of a lack of water in the wilderness in Exod. 17:1–7. Both stories include the complaint about a lack of water, the rod used by Moses, and the name Meribah for the place. The primary aim of the story has been changed, however. The one in Exod. 17:1–7 illustrates God's care for the people, whereas the focus of the narrative in Num. 20:1–13 is on the extension of the rebellion even into the leadership of Moses and Aaron. The story shows that the sin of Moses and Aaron leads to God's prohibition of their entering the land of promise in Canaan. The book of Deuteronomy gives an alternative explanation for Moses' not being allowed to enter the promised land. Deut. 3:26 and 4:21 suggest that the prohibition was part of Moses' vicarious suffering on behalf of the people for their sin. In either case, it is understood that the effect of the sin of the people has extended even to God's closest servant, Moses.

The precise nature of the disobedience by Moses and Aaron has been much debated. It is not immediately clear how their actions constituted an act of faithlessness against God. The most probable explanation may be found in God's command in 20:8 to take the rod and to *tell* the rock to produce water. Instead of just telling the rock to yield water, however, Moses strikes it twice (v. 11). The striking of the rock was not part of God's original instructions. Moses' failure to comply exactly with God's instructions is in contrast

to the early chapters of Numbers in which God's commands are obeyed with an almost monotonous and repetitive correspondence (1:54; 2:34; 7:1–89; 9:15–23). Readers sense in chap. 20 a breakdown in the relationship between the leaders and God.

This breakdown in leadership is heightened by the question that Moses and Aaron pose to the rebels (v. 10, italics mine): "Shall *we* produce water for you out of this rock?" The question assumes that it is Moses and Aaron who have the power to produce the water, not God. This arrogance, particularly on the part of Moses, is in marked contrast to the portrait of a humble Moses in 12:3. Moreover, the primary sin in the spy story in chaps. 13–14 was the people's desire to trust in themselves rather than in God's power (14:11, 39–45). Now this sin of pride that forgets the divine source of all power and blessing has even reached Moses and Aaron. They too are part of the old rebellious generation who are condemned to die outside the promised land.

The circles of holiness within the camp, so carefully organized in Numbers 1–10, have slowly been undone. The people of the twelve tribes in the outer circle of the camp rebelled in chaps. 13–14. The Levites who surround the tent of meeting in the midst of the camp rebelled in chaps. 16–17. Now even the leaders closest to God, at the center of the camp, the priest Aaron and the leader Moses, rebel in Numbers 20. The fate of the whole generation of Israelites who first came out of Egypt is now sealed. Except for Joshua and Caleb (14:30), none of them, not even Moses, will set foot in Canaan. The holy camp of Israel will have to be reorganized with a new generation of Israelites (chap. 26).

Num. 20:14–21 recounts Edom's refusal to allow the Israelites to pass through its territory on the way to the promised land. Edom was descended from Esau, the twin brother of Israel's ancestor Jacob (v. 14; cf. Gen. 25:26; 36:1). In spite of this kinship, Edom refuses the Israelites passage, so that they are forced to take a detour around Edom (20:21). This lengthening of the journey provides the occasion for another murmuring incident in 21:4. The incident with Edom also provides another example of Israel's leadership going its own way without consulting God. There is no command of God to Moses to approach Edom. Moses seems to be acting on his own (v. 14). Not even a promise of reimbursement will work (v. 19). The failure of Moses' mission may be related to his failure to involve God in carrying it out.

Verses 21–29 narrate the death of Israel's first high priest. Aaron's death is described with little fanfare, a somber reflection on his rebellion at Meribah in vv. 1–13. Aaron's priestly garments are stripped and placed on his son, Eleazar, who takes over the role of high priest for Israel. The death of Aaron and the succession of Eleazar are a sign of the coming end of the first generation and the beginning of a new generation of hope and promise. The continuance of the priesthood in Eleazar, however, indicates God's ongoing commitment to Israel and the institutions through which God works his will for the sake of the people.

21:1–25:18
The End of the First Generation: Signs of Hope Coupled with Ultimate Failure

A major break in the narrative occurs with Numbers 21. For the first time in this predominantly negative section of Numbers, a positive tone is struck with the story of Israel's military victory over the Canaanite king of Arad. Ever since chap. 11, Israel has continually rebelled and God has punished the people with military defeats and plagues. This negative portrait is abruptly altered by the positive conquest story in 21:1–3, which is followed by another rebellion (21:4–9) and then another positive conquest story with victories over two kings, Sihon and Og (21:10–35). A lengthy section involving King Balak and the prophet Balaam follows (22:1–24:25). The Balaam cycle concludes with a series of climactic promise oracles to Israel. A final rebellion story in 25:1–18 narrates the death of the remaining members of the old and unfaithful generation of the wilderness, who continue to rebel in spite of God's promises and faithfulness. This section concludes the first half of Numbers (chaps. 1–25) by weaving together accounts of ultimate failure by a generation past and notes of profound promise for a generation of the future.

21:1–3, God Gives Victory over Arad to Israel. One of the purposes of the original form of this story was to explain the name of a place called Hormah, which in Hebrew means "destruction" (v. 3). A conflict at Hormah had also been mentioned at the end of the spy story in 14:39–45. The story in 21:1–3 seems to be an alternate tradition about this same conflict. In the context of the present narrative, this successful conquest of Arad at Hormah signals God's continuing faithfulness and intention to bring Israel into the promised land. When Israel trusts in God alone, then God will give victory to Israel. The Hormah story in 14:39–45 makes the same theological point in negative terms: when the people disobey and do not trust in God but only in their own strength and resources, they will suffer defeat.

21:4–9, Another Rebellion by the People. In spite of God's gracious act in 21:1–3, the members of the old wilderness generation immediately return to their grumbling ways. The long detour in their journey was necessitated by Edom's refusal to let the people travel through its territory (20:21). The detour causes the people to grow impatient. They complain to Moses and God about the lack of food and water and about

the manna, which they detest. The people had complained about the manna before, in 11:6, and their complaint stirred up God's anger in the form of a plague (11:33). In 21:4–9, God's anger manifests itself in the form of poisonous serpents whose bite is deadly (v. 6). The people confess their sin to Moses, and Moses intercedes for them. God instructs Moses to set up a bronze serpent on a pole. Anyone who is bitten by a serpent and looks at the bronze serpent will live (vv. 8–9).

This story provides some background to 2 Kings 18:4, which mentions the bronze serpent made by Moses. People had been burning incense to the bronze serpent as part of their worship. King Hezekiah destroyed the bronze serpent because it apparently had too many associations with the pagan worship of the Canaanites, who lived in the land before Israel and for whom the serpent was an important symbol in worship. Thus, Hezekiah banned the symbol to avoid any associations with idol worship. In Num. 21:4–9, however, the bronze serpent is a positive symbol of God's healing power.

21:10–35, Israel Marches On with Victories over Sihon and Og. In spite of the preceding rebellion, God continues to lead the people on their march toward the promised land. The first section (vv. 10–20) describes the itinerary of the Israelites as they camp and then move on from place to place toward their goal. Most of the place-names mentioned are unknown. Two poetic passages or songs are included in these verses. The first (vv. 14–15) is drawn from the "Book of the Wars of Yahweh." This book was apparently a collection of ancient songs or accounts similar to the "Book of Jashar" mentioned in Josh. 10:13. The brief song in Num. 21:14–15 is not straightforward in its meaning, although the general sense seems to be an account of the victories or travels of Israel in the areas named. The second song (vv. 17–18) is inserted after the note about God's gift of water to the people at a place called Beer, which in Hebrew means "well." God continues to provide for his people as he leads them through the wilderness.

The next section (vv. 21–35) recounts two decisive military victories by Israel over Sihon, king of the Amorites, and Og, king of Bashan. The form of the account of the conflict with Sihon is similar to that of the story of the Edomites in 20:14–20. The Israelites request permission from Sihon to pass through his kingdom. They pledge not to take anything from the fields or wells as they pass. Sihon denies their request. In 20:14–20, when Edom refused passage to the Israelites, they avoided a conflict by taking a detour around Edom. In 21:21–26, however, Sihon attacks Israel and is soundly defeated. God gives Israel a foretaste of the conquest of the promised land. For the first time, Israel successfully captures cities and land, although they are still on the east side of the Jordan River just across from the promised land of Canaan (v. 25). An ancient song that may have formed the basis for the narrative of the victory over Sihon in vv. 21–26 follows in vv. 27–30. Jer. 48:45–46 contains a slightly different form of the same song. The note about Israel's settlement in the land of the Amorites in 21:31–32 provides the background for the controversy about the settlement of Reuben and Gad in the Transjordan area in chap. 32.

A second military encounter occurs in 21:33–35. Israel defeats Og, king of Bashan. Israel obediently carries out the requirements of holy war and leaves no survivors (v. 35; → Ban). As a result, God assures it of victory, and Israel is given the land of Bashan to possess. Once again when the Israelites are faithful and obedient, God shows his faithfulness by giving them victory over their enemies. Deut. 2:26–37 and 3:1–7 contain parallel accounts of Israel's victories over Sihon and Og. Whether one of the two parallel accounts in Numbers 21 and Deuteronomy 2–3 is dependent on the other is a matter of debate. The two may also be independent but parallel forms of a common tradition. In any case, the function of Num. 21:21–35 in its present context is to show God's faithfulness in giving victory to Israel as Israel moves toward the promised land. For the first time since the spy story in Numbers 13–14, the travels and victories of the Israelites in chap. 21 have moved Israel once again to the edge of the promised land "in the plains of Moab" (22:1). This hopeful setting provides the stage for the climactic promise oracles that Balaam speaks over God's people in the ensuing three chapters.

22:1–24:25, A Crescendo of Hope: Balak, Balaam, and the Blessing of Israel. Two main characters stand out in this enigmatic story. The first is Balaam, a professional prophet or seer who travels about and curses military enemies for money (→ Balaam). He is, in a sense, a hired gun, and his only weapons are words that have the power to curse. The second figure, Balak, is the king of Moab, a country that borders the promised land of Canaan on the east side, just across the Jordan River. Balak fears that the large number of Israelites moving through his nation will attack and devastate his kingdom. He has no faith in his own army and so decides to turn elsewhere for help.

The story tells how King Balak decides to send his messengers to hire the professional curser, Balaam, to curse the millions of Israelites who are camped on the plains of Moab. Throughout the story, the Israelites remain oblivious to the drama taking place outside their camp. They rest in peace, totally unaware of the curse that threatens them and of God's persistent efforts to block the curse and, instead, to bless Israel.

When Balaam is asked by Balak's messengers to curse Israel, God first tells Balaam not to go. Balaam complies and refuses to go with the messengers to Balak. Finally, however, Balaam does go with his don-

key. They find some roadblocks along the way, but eventually reach King Balak. Balak carefully makes the necessary preparations for Balaam to curse Israel. In three successive attempts, however, Balaam can only speak words of blessing and not of curse upon Israel. Balaam's last blessing is the most extravagant of all, as he promises a glorious future for Israel.

The Balaam story has been a source of intense fascination and great diversity in the history of biblical interpretation. Some commentators have viewed Balaam as a true and faithful prophet of God; others have seen him as an evil and false prophet. This difference in interpretation is due in part to the complexity of the biblical tradition itself concerning Balaam. Numbers 22–24 is an essentially positive portrait of Balaam. He ends up faithfully speaking God's words. But Deut. 23:3–6 conveys a very different opinion of Balaam and uses his association with the Moabites as a reason that Moabites and Ammonites are prohibited from ever entering the assembly of God's people (see also Num. 31:8). This tension in evaluating the figure of Balaam probably extends all the way back into the oral tradition, when stories about the legendary professional curser named Balaam circulated among Israel and its neighbors. Archaeologists have discovered writings on plaster panels in a temple at Deir 'Allah near the Jordan River that refer to a famous professional prophet named Balaam. These inscriptions are evidence that different traditions and stories about Balaam were well known and circulated widely.

The Balaam cycle falls into three parts. The first episode in 22:1–14 relates the mission of Balak's messengers as they try to convince Balaam to come with them. In Balaam's first encounter with God, God tells him not to go to Balak and he obeys (22:7–14).

The second episode is a folkloric tale about Balaam and his donkey. In Balaam's second encounter with God in 22:15–20, God reverses the earlier decision and this time commands Balaam to comply with the messengers' request and go to Balak (v. 20). Balaam saddles his donkey and begins the journey. In what now amounts to Balaam's third encounter with God, however, God seems again to reverse the decision to allow Balaam to go. An angel of God stands in the road and blocks the way. Only the donkey sees the angel. Balaam is blind to his messenger from God and so angrily beats his donkey, who has turned off the road to avoid the angel (22:22–23). The donkey sees the angel again on the road in a narrow place, but again Balaam fails to see the angel (22:24–25).

As they continue on the journey, the donkey sees the angel a third time and simply lies down in the road, since there is no way to go around the angel. Balaam angrily begins to beat the donkey, and the donkey opens its mouth and asks why Balaam is beating his faithful animal (22:21–30). Then God opens Balaam's eyes, and Balaam sees the angel of God. The angel chastises Balaam for treating his donkey so harshly, since it was the donkey who saved him from being killed. Balaam begs for forgiveness, and the angel instructs Balaam to go ahead with his mission to Balak. Balaam is to speak, however, only what God commands him to speak (22:31–35).

The third major episode in the Balaam cycle (22:36–24:25) reports the repeated attempts of Balak to have Balaam curse Israel. Each attempt is thwarted, however. Balaam ends up blessing rather than cursing Israel on three different occasions (22:41–23:12; 23:13–26; 23:27–24:25). Ironically, Moab, not Israel, becomes the one cursed by Balaam (24:17).

The experience of Balaam and his donkey (22:21–35) is parallel to that of Balaam and King Balak (22:36–24:25). The donkey was caught three times between the angel's sword and Balaam's stick. Balaam is likewise caught three times between Balak's demands to curse Israel and God's prohibitions. Moreover, in each of the three incidents with the donkey and the angel, the intensity rises at each stage toward a climax. Balaam becomes increasingly frustrated. In the same way, the anger of King Balak grows with each of the three oracles of blessing Balaam pronounces upon Israel. As in the incident with Balaam and the donkey, God's apparent arbitrariness is simply evidence of his control of Balaam and Balak and his resolve to bless Israel in the face of all outside pressures to the contrary.

Balaam's oracles of blessing all reaffirm the promises made to the ancestors in Genesis. God's initial promise made to Abraham in Gen. 12:1–3 provided for land, descendants, and blessing. Balaam's first oracle in 23:7–10 mentions Israel's positive relationship with God and Israel's great population (23:8, 10). The second oracle concentrates on God's faithfulness to the promises that he had made and on the irreversibility of his blessing of Israel (23:19–20). The third vision describes how Israel will shortly be given victory over its enemies and enjoy peace and prosperity in the promised land (24:3–9).

This last blessing moves somewhat beyond the promises to the ancestors in Genesis and looks forward to a distant time when a king or messiah will arise in Israel (24:14–19). Balaam describes what God will do to Israel "in days to come" (24:14) as he points to a future king in 24:17: "I see him, but not now; I behold him, but not near: a star shall come out of Jacob, and a scepter shall rise out of Israel" (NRSV). The image of a star could be used as a metaphor for a royal figure (Isa. 14:12), while the scepter, or royal staff, symbolized the authority of a king. The original fulfillment of this oracle was probably understood as coming with the reign of King David in Israel, but the promise of a king or messiah was then extended beyond David to a hope for a messiah who would usher in God's kingdom in the end days.

Scholars are generally agreed that the oracles of Balaam are good examples of Hebrew poetry that may be dated early in Israel's history (→ Poetry). Evidence

also suggests, however, that the Balaam oracles have been edited and reshaped in the course of transmission at various points in Israel's history.

The oracles of blessing that Balaam speaks sound a crescendo of hope and promise at the conclusion of the first generation. Even so, the first generation returns immediately to the way of rebellion and disobedience. The sin that follows in chap. 25 is the final rebellion of the old generation. The ensuing plague kills the last members of the generation counted in chap. 1. In the midst of the dismal end of the old generation of the wilderness, a new generation of hope arises and is affirmed by the powerful oracles of Balaam. The oracles point beyond themselves to a time to come. It will be a time of prosperity, strength, victory, and hope. Through Balaam, God blesses Israel with accolades and promises unsurpassed in the entire Pentateuch. Thus, Balaam stands at the end of one generation and points ahead to the coming of a new generation of God's people.

25:1–18, The Final Rebellion: The Death of the Remainder of the Old Wilderness Generation. This last episode in the first half of Numbers brings the story of the generation who experienced the Exodus and Sinai to an end. The story of Balaam in chaps. 22–24 demonstrated God's faithfulness to the promises he had made to the people of Israel. In contrast, the story in Numbers 25 shows the fickle and shallow nature of the faith of God's people.

Israel here has every reason to be hopeful and faithful. The Balaam oracles describe the glorious future that is theirs as they stand again on the threshold of the promised land. The setting is a replay of the spy story in chaps. 13–14, in which the people likewise had every reason to have hope and trust in God. And yet the Israelites in Numbers 25 quickly and easily turn from their God to worship a false god and commit sin. The Balaam story described how even a donkey can recognize an angel of God. Even a pagan prophet like Balaam can see God and do his will. Numbers 25 reveals that the same cannot be said of this old generation of God's own people. Balaam in chaps. 22–24 sees glorious visions of a great future. The Israelites in chap. 25 see only their own people playing the harlot, prostituting themselves with the foreign women of Moab and Midian.

It is generally agreed that 25:1–5 represents an earlier version of the story that focuses on the women of Moab, the punishment of the chiefs of the people, and the role of the judges in carrying out the sentence. This earlier story was then expanded in vv. 6–18 by including the women of Midian, the punishment of all the people (v. 9), the role of Phinehas in carrying out a specific act of punishment, and God's consequent promise of a perpetual priesthood to him. Some of these elements are found in a version of the story in Ps. 106:28–31, which may have provided source material to the writer of Numbers.

The inclusion of the women of Midian in seducing the Israelites into the worship of other gods provides the justification for the later attack against Midian in Numbers 31. The punishment of all the people by a plague as a sign of God's wrath repeats a motif found in some of the other rebellion stories in Numbers (11:33; 14:37; 16:46). The role of Phinehas in killing Zimri the Israelite and Cozbi the Midianite woman was a meritorious act that legitimized Phinehas and his descendants as priests forever. Some commentators have seen this as an attempt to vindicate the priesthood of Phinehas and his line during a time in Israel's history when the legitimacy of that priesthood was in doubt. The notes in Ezra 8:2 and 1 Chron. 9:20 concerning Phinehas have been suggested as reflexes of this concern to validate Phinehas's priesthood in the postexilic period. The great sin of Numbers 25 has two dimensions: sexual relations with foreign women and the worship of foreign gods, in this case the god named Baal of Peor. The Israelites succumbed to pagan seduction in both a physical and religious sense (see Exod. 34:12–16; Deut. 7:3–4). The two nations that lured Israel into sin are Moab (25:1) and Midian (25:6). These two nations are close neighbors, and their identification in this story is not surprising.

The specific sinful act that enraged Phinehas was the intermarriage of the Israelite Zimri and the Midianite Cozbi. Phinehas killed them with a spear, presumably in the act of sexual intercourse. God interprets the killing as a sacrifice for the atonement of the people (v. 13). Priests usually sacrificed animals, but in this extreme case the two people directly involved in the sin were killed. Phinehas acts in concert with the jealous anger of God and is rewarded with the promise of the priesthood for himself and his family.

The narrative of Israel's apostasy in Numbers 25 brings to a close the life of the first generation of Israelites out of Egypt. The twenty-four thousand people who die (v. 9) are presumably the last contingent of the old generation. They have been taken off the stage to make room for the coming of a new generation of Israelites who again stand on the edge of the promised land. The advent of this new generation of hope and promise is signaled by the second census list of the twelve tribes of Israel in Numbers 26.

26:1–36:13

The Birth of the New Generation on the Edge of the Promised Land

The second half of the book of Numbers begins with the second census list in the book. The first census list (chap. 1) signaled the preparation of the first generation of Israelites out of Egypt for the march through

the wilderness toward the promised land. The second list (chap. 26) signals the preparation of an entirely new generation on the edge of the promised land. Numerous parallels between chaps. 1–25 and 26–36 enhance the sense of symmetry between the first and second halves of Numbers. This symmetrical construction conveys the impression that the new generation is given similar opportunities and guidance with the hope that it will fare better than the old one that had died in the wilderness. For example, the census list in chap. 26 uses the same formula for God's command to count the people (v. 2) as in 1:2–3. The lists of the twelve tribes in Numbers 1 and 26 have exactly the same order, except for a minor reversal of Manasseh and Ephraim. A census of the Levites follows the twelve-tribe census in both cases (chap. 3–4 and chap. 26). A legal discourse involving women in Numbers 5 parallels the legal discourse involving women (the daughters of Zelophehad) in Numbers 27. Laws concerning vows in chap. 6 find an echo in the laws concerning vows in chap. 30. Provisions for the Levites in 18:21–32 are paralleled by the provisions for the levitical cities in Numbers 35. The list of offerings given by each tribe for the dedication of the altar in chap. 7 and the laws concerning offerings in chap. 15 find a parallel in the list of offerings to be given at the appointed feasts and holy days in chaps. 28 and 29. The celebration of the Passover in chap. 9 is mirrored in 28:16–25, where instructions for the future celebration of the Passover are given to all succeeding generations. The list of spies in Numbers 13 is also echoed in the list of tribal leaders chosen to divide the land of Canaan in Numbers 34. The itinerary of Israel's wilderness journey in Numbers 1–25 is summarized in chap. 33. The story of the spies and the rebellion of Israel in chaps. 13–14 is taken up and used as a lesson for the new generation in 32:6–15. Moreover, the victory of the first generation of Israelites over Sihon and Og in the Transjordan prepares the way for the new generation of the tribes of Reuben and Gad and the half-tribe of Manasseh to settle there in Numbers 32 (32:33). One final echo involves the last act of the first generation, which was apostasy in connection with the Midianites in 25:16–18. This act of seduction of the first generation of Israelites by the Midianites is avenged by the second generation in a holy war in chap. 31.

These parallels between chaps. 1–25 and 26–36, however, should not obscure the differences in the characterization of the old generation and the new one. The old generation began with its census in the wilderness, a place of hardship and despair (1:1). The second generation begins its journey poised in expectation and hope on the edge of the promised land in the plains of Moab (26:3). The first generation had been at the edge of the promised land twice before. When spies surveyed the land of Canaan and reported back, the people rebelled and were condemned to return to wander in the wilderness for forty years (chaps. 13–14). The members of the first generation were given the opportunity to come again to the threshold of the land of Canaan, but again they rebelled and so suffered their final death (chap. 25). In contrast, the new generation begins its life on the edge of the promised land (26:3) and remains there until the end of the book (36:13). Moses reminds the new generation of the wanderings of the preceding generation (33:1–47) and of the place where the new generation now stands (33:48–49). The new generation is also reminded of the goal: the new land to which they are going (33:51).

The fate of the first generation, as it attempted to live as God's holy people, was death and failure (11:1–25:18). But the fate of the second generation is left open. Signs of hope appear along the way as disputes move toward peaceful resolution rather than open rebellion (27:1–11; 32:1–42; 36:1–13). Laws are given to the second generation that can apply only when they actually settle in the promised land (chaps. 27, 34–36). Such laws are a subtle promise that there is hope for this new generation to enter the land of promise. In contrast to the death of a whole generation in a series of rebellions and judgments in the first half, the second half of Numbers does not record the death of any Israelite. The Israelites are victorious in their first military engagement against the Midianites (chap. 31). The second generation in Numbers 26–36 represents a new beginning. Its destiny lies before it as it stands on the doorstep of the land of Canaan. Thus, the second half of the story of the second generation remains undecided and untold. The outcome is a question mark. Will the members of this new generation be faithful and enter the promised land? Or will they rebel and fail as the first generation did? It is with this undecided future that the book of Numbers comes to an end.

26:1–65

The Second Census of the Twelve Tribes and the Levites: A New Generation

This second census of the twelve tribes of Israel and of the Levites is similar in form to the census report in Numbers 1–4. The same formulas are used in the command to take the census. The sequence in the list of tribes is virtually identical. The symmetrical construction of the two census lists suggests that they are intended to function together as the pillars of the structure of Numbers.

One significant difference between the two lists in chaps. 1 and 26 is that the second census list adds an enumeration of the various subclans within each tribe. For example, 1:24–25 simply lists the tribe of Gad and his family; 26:15–18, however, mentions as the children of Gad a son Zephon and the Zephonites, a son Haggai and the Haggites, etc. Many of the names for the subclans appear related to the list of the children of

the twelve sons of Jacob in Gen. 46:8–27. This elaboration of the family groups within the tribes in Numbers 26 functions to express the development of the tribes into a new generation that now has branched out into various subclans. The second census list represents a totally new generation.

Two important passages in Numbers 26 help to guide our interpretation of this second census list. First, vv. 52–56 suggest that the purpose of this second census list is primarily to determine the size of the territory that will be assigned to each of the twelve tribes when they enter the promised land. The focus has been shifted from the census as military preparation for war in Numbers 1. The formula repeated fourteen times in chap. 1, "all those who were able to go forth to war," is dropped entirely from the narrative of the census in chap. 26, with one exception (v. 2). The emphasis has shifted from the people's military preparation as the means of gaining the land to their receiving the land from God as a gift. The focus is not so much on conquest as on receiving the land as a gift from God and dividing it fairly among the tribes.

The second important passage in Numbers 26 is vv. 63–65. These verses explicitly pick up the theme of the whole book—the death of the old generation and the birth of the new generation of God's people. The spy narrative in chaps. 13–14 was the first to establish this overarching theme explicitly. The note in 26:63–65 takes it up and applies it to the second census. A new generation has now arisen to take the place of the old. This text represents a programmatic summary of the structure of the book of Numbers. The second census is a sign that God's judgment upon the first generation has been completed. But the census is also a sign that God's promise of a new generation of hope has also been fulfilled.

27:1–11

The Daughters of Zelophehad and the Inheritance of Land: A Legal Dispute Resolved

The preceding chapter of Numbers had already established the principle of dividing the promised land equally and fairly among the tribes and families of Israel (26:52–56). To ensure that the land remained with the tribe to which it was first apportioned, the land was passed from eldest son to eldest son within the same family. A problem arises, however, as is intimated already in the census list in 26:33–34, for Zelophehad, who had five daughters but no sons. After his death, his daughters urge Moses to allow them to inherit their father's land. In this way it will remain in the same family, even though there are no sons. But this would contradict the custom that only males can inherit property. Faced with this dilemma, Moses consults God for instruction on this unprecedented case. Is it more important that only males inherit property or that the land remain in the same family? God agrees with the daughters that the land must remain in their family's possession, even if it means violating the other custom (27:5–11). The further issue of what should happen to the land when the daughters marry is not addressed here. That issue will be taken up in the conclusion of the book of Numbers when the daughters of Zelophehad again appear (36:1–12). God affirms a high priority to the equal distribution of the economic base for each family. Other rules may be bent in order to ensure the well-being of each of the tribes and families of God's people. This legal dispute involving the daughters of Zelophehad provides an interesting look at the way in which new case law may have been developed in the absence of precedents. The successful resolution of the case and its relation to the promised land provide a positive and hopeful tone as the first incident recorded in the life of the new generation.

27:12–23

The Succession of Leadership from Moses to Joshua

God reminds Moses that he may only see Canaan and not actually enter it. Like his brother Aaron, Moses will die outside the promised land. The reason given is the sin of Moses and Aaron at the waters of Meribah of Kadesh when they rebelled against God's word (v. 14). The story is recounted in 20:1–13. As our commentary noted there, the precise nature of the sin or rebellion by Moses and Aaron is unclear. Nevertheless, the sin becomes the warrant for the prohibition of these two leaders from entering the promised land. Deuteronomy provides an alternate tradition. In Deut. 3:26, Moses must die outside the land not because of his sin, but because of that of the people.

The reminder of Moses' impending death causes him to plead to God for a new leader for the new generation of God's people. They already have a new priest in Eleazar. The succession of Aaron's priestly office to Eleazar and the death of Aaron were narrated together in 20:22–29. Num. 27:12–23 narrates only the succession of the Mosaic office and not the actual death of Moses, which comes much later, in Deuteronomy 34. Instead, we here read of the succession to the Mosaic office of Joshua, who was one of the faithful spies who God promised would enter the promised land (14:30). Joshua has frequently appeared as a close assistant to Moses (11:28; Exod. 17:8–13).

Joshua, however, is not to function as another Moses. Moses is to give only some or a portion of his authority to Joshua (27:20). Although Moses spoke to God face to face in a most intimate and direct way (12:6–8), Joshua will have to rely on indirect divine guidance provided by the priest and his casting of lots with the Urim and Thummim (cf. Exod. 28:30; 1 Sam. 28:6). The era and revelation associated with Moses remain unique in the history of Israel. Moses and Joshua will lead the people together in a coregency during the

time of transition that will end with the death of Moses in Deuteronomy 34. Then Joshua will assume sole leadership of the people, but his leadership will be guided by the book of the Torah of Moses (Josh. 1:7–8).

Although the roles of Joshua and Moses are different, an essential continuity between the two leaders also exists, underscored by the laying of hands on Joshua by Moses (27:18, 23). The imposition of hands transferred the power of authority, blessing, or sin from one to another. In any case, the one becomes a representative of or substitute for the other. Jacob blessed his grandsons by laying on his hands (Gen. 48:14). People could transfer their guilt or sin to another person or a sacrificial animal by placing their hands on the head of the person or animal (Lev. 1:4; 24:14). The Levites' function as substitute for all firstborn children was symbolized by the laying on of hands by the people of Israel (Num. 8:10–12). In chap. 27, authority is passed from Moses to Joshua by the imposition of hands. In this way, new leadership was publicly transferred from one generation to the next.

28:1–30:16
Further Ritual and Legal Regulations for the New Generation's Life in the Promised Land

This section includes a systematic program of sacrifices that Israel is to offer once in the land of Canaan and laws that remove any ambiguities about women and the legitimacy of their vows. Most commentators are agreed that this section of laws is among the latest parts of Numbers and of the whole Pentateuch. Much of it may have been added to Numbers during the postexilic period in Israel's history. The primary function of these laws in the present structure of Numbers is to offer guidance and indirect assurance of the new generation's life in the promised land of Canaan.

28:1–29:40, A Systematized Program for Sacrifices in the Promised Land. Chaps. 28–29 provide a systematic list of the dates and quantities for the sacrifices that Israel is to offer God. The dates mentioned include the daily sacrifice in the morning and in the evening (28:3–8), the Sabbath sacrifice (28:9–10), the sacrifice on the first day of the month (28:11–15), and the sacrifices for the festivals. These include the Feast of Unleavened Bread (28:17–25); the Feast of First Fruits (28:26–31); the first day of the seventh month, or Trumpets (29:1–6); the tenth day of the seventh month, or the Day of Atonement (29:7–11); and Tabernacles (29:12–34) together with its eighth day of assembly, attested in Lev. 23:36 but no other pentateuchal calendar (29:35–38). The various kinds of offerings or sacrifices include the whole offerings (the burnt flesh of animals), cereal offerings (grain and oil), drink offerings (wine), and purification offerings (the goat; → Worship).

This summary of the sacrifices appears to be based on similar material scattered in Exodus 29, Leviticus 23, and Ezekiel 45–46. The sacrifices listed here are in addition to other votive and freewill offerings given by the people (29:39). The purpose of these offerings is to purify and dedicate the people of the new generation as they look forward to living in the land of Canaan. The enormous quantities of animals and grain and wine presuppose a settled agricultural life in the promised land. Therefore, these laws function as a hopeful sign that the new generation will soon enter Canaan.

30:1–16, Women and Vows. Vows in the Bible typically took one of two forms. They could be made to give something to God, usually a sacrifice of some kind. Or a vow could involve abstaining from something as a sign of thankfulness or dedication. Examples include Jacob's vow of a tenth of his possessions to God (Gen. 28:20–22), Israel's vow to destroy the Canaanite cities in return for victory (Num. 21:2), Hannah's dedication of her son Samuel (1 Sam. 1:11), and the Nazirite vows of abstention (Num. 6:1–8). The vow may be seen as a type of freewill offering or sacrifice; this would explain its position following the laws concerning sacrifices in chaps. 28–29 (29:39).

The issue in Numbers 30 concerns situations in which a woman's vow may or may not be voided by the objection of a father or husband. The general principle is established at the outset: vows made to God by men are not to be broken (v. 2). In regard to vows made by women, the general principle followed is that the immediate objection of a father or husband to a woman's vow nullifies it without penalty (vv. 5, 8, 12). If a woman's husband does not protest the vow at first and only later objects, however, then he is responsible for fulfilling the vow and any penalty involved (v. 15). In the patriarchal society of ancient Israel, women were often economically dependent on men. In certain circumstances, the ultimate responsibility for fulfilling vows made by a woman could rest upon her father or her husband. The laws in Numbers 30 thus protect the husband or father from the requirement to honor a woman's vow in special cases. But the laws also protect women and the integrity of their vows by requiring a clear and immediate response by a father or husband if the vow is to be nullified. Otherwise, the vow stands, and the man bears the responsibility and any guilt incurred in not fulfilling the vow. The overriding concern is that the holiness of the people in the land be preserved and that all obligations to God be clearly fulfilled in a proper manner.

31:1–54
Revenge on the Midianites: A Foretaste of the Conquest to Come

This section recounts a war of revenge on the Midianites led by Moses in his last act of military leadership. The narrative may be based in part upon the account

of the conquest of the five Midianite kings in Josh. 13:21. The battle against the Midianites in Numbers 31 is the first military venture undertaken by the new generation of Israelites, and the success of their mission is overwhelming. This battle functions as a dress rehearsal and builds confidence and hope for the actual conquest of the promised land of Canaan, which lies ahead. The Israelites send out one thousand soldiers from each of the twelve tribes to fight the five Midianite kings (vv. 5–8). They kill every Midianite male and the prophet Balaam in revenge for the Midianite seduction of the Israelites into apostasy in Numbers 25. The guilty Israelites in chap. 25 were immediately punished by a plague (25:9). God commanded Moses at that time also to punish the guilty Midianites for having lured the Israelites into the false worship of a pagan god (25:16–18). Moses obeys this command in chap. 31 by a holy war of revenge. The prophet Balaam, who is depicted as a faithful spokesperson for God in chaps. 22–24, is accused in 31:15–16 of having counseled the Midianite women into leading the Israelites astray in the false worship of Baal Peor. Thus, Balaam is included among those who are killed (v. 8).

Although every male among the Midianites is killed, Moses is angry because the Midianite women who played an important role in seducing the Israelites in Numbers 25 were not killed. He instructs the Israelite warriors to kill all the Midianite women who have been sexually active, but all virgins may be kept alive (31:17–18). Moreover, the purity of the camp and the Israelites is also to be protected through strict adherence to the purity laws in connection with touching the dead in battle (vv. 19–20) and in purifying all booty through fire and water (vv. 21–24). The bulk of the rest of the chapter deals with the distribution of the spoils of the war, which includes both captives and animals. The booty is divided equally between soldiers and the people (v. 27; cf. 1 Sam. 30:21–25). A proportion of the booty is given to provide support for the priests and Levites (Num. 31:28–31). The list of the enormous quantities of booty that follows underscores God's faithfulness in leading the people in military success (vv. 32–47). It is discovered that not one Israelite died in the battle. In a response of thankfulness to God for protection in battle, a special offering is given in support of the sanctuary (vv. 48–54).

The narrative of the Midianite war plays an important role in portraying the obedience of the new generation of Israelites, which leads to God's blessing. The battle and the division of booty illustrate how the new generation puts into practice the laws given to the old generation earlier in Numbers. The trumpets are sounded in accordance with the instructions in 10:1–10 (31:6). Numbers 19 outlined procedures for purification after contact with the dead; these procedures are followed in 31:19–20. Guidelines were given in Numbers 18 to ensure adequate support of the priests and the Levites. These guidelines provide the basis for the division of the booty in 31:25–47. In Numbers 7, each tribe of the old generation had demonstrated its devotion to God by giving offerings to the support of the sanctuary. This devotion is echoed in the new generation's generous offerings to the sanctuary (31:48–54). Numbers 31 is an example of laws obediently followed and put into action. The new generation's victory in the Midianite war functions as an undoing or reversal of two incidents in the experience of the older generation. The first is the spy mission into Canaan in Numbers 13–14. Standing there on the edge of the promised land, the people had failed to trust God to lead them in victory. The result was death in the wilderness. In the first military expedition of the new generation in Numbers 31, however, the people trust God and obey his command to take revenge on the Midianites. The new generation experiences a resounding victory, and not one Israelite is killed in the process (v. 49). This first military victory of the new generation serves to undo the first military defeat of the old generation in Numbers 13–14.

The second incident in the life of the old generation here reversed is the apostasy in Numbers 25. The Midianites had led the people to worship a pagan god. The Israelites had been conquered not by military strength, but by religious seduction. In Numbers 31, the roles are reversed as the Midianites are conquered and the Israelites are victorious. The victory strengthens the hope and trust of the people as they look forward to entering the long awaited land of promise.

32:1–33:56
Words of Warning and Encouragement: Reminders from a Generation Past

Chap. 32 inserts notes of warning and hope into the story of the new generation of God's people. A potential crisis erupts that may upset the whole plan of entering the promised land. Two of the Israelite tribes desire to settle outside the land of Canaan on the east side of the Jordan River. Moses is angered by their request and warns the people that they may become like the old generation who died in the wilderness. A compromise is achieved, however, and the crisis averted.

Chap. 33 is a summary of the itinerary traveled by the old generation of Israelites from Egypt through the wilderness to the edge of the promised land. It contains a list of places where the people camped along with notes that provide words of both warning and encouragement to the new generation camped at the threshold of the promised land.

32:1–42, A Crisis Averted: The Request of Reuben and Gad to Settle Outside the Land of Canaan. This section is typically understood by commentators to be á composite of two or more layers of material. The earliest parts of the story may be found in

vv. 16–27 and 34–38. In its present form, the story recounts the request by Reuben and Gad to settle on the east side of the Jordan River. It was this territory that the Israelites captured from Sihon and Og in 21:21–35 (32:33). Since the Jordan River forms the eastern boundary of the land of Canaan, their request seems to suggest a desire not to enter the promised land of Canaan. Moses fears that the other tribes will be discouraged and lose heart if Gad and Reuben stay and do not cross the Jordan River into Canaan with the other tribes.

Moses draws a parallel between the experience of the old generation in the spy story in Numbers 13–14 and the request of Gad and Reuben. Like the spies' negative report of the land, Gad and Reuben's request may dishearten the people and cause them not to trust God to lead them into the land. If that happens, the fate of the old generation, which was death in the wilderness, may become the fate of the new generation as well (32:6–15). The lesson of the past becomes a paradigm that interprets the potential rebellion of the new generation again on the edge of the promised land. The outcome of the second generation remains an open question. If they rebel, God may again punish them. The people continue to live under the threat of God's judgment.

The last word in this episode, however, is one of promise and encouragement. Reuben and Gad propose a compromise whereby they will join the other Israelites in conquering the land of Canaan. Only after the conquest is complete will they return to the territory on the east side of the Jordan to settle there. Moses accepts the compromise as reasonable, and the crisis is averted (vv. 16–27). He instructs Joshua and Eleazar to enforce the agreement, and Reuben and Gad pledge their commitment to the plan (vv. 28–32). Moses then grants the territory and its cities to these two tribes and also to half of the tribe of Manasseh as their possession (33–42). This story plays an important role in the larger structure of Numbers, as it explicitly applies the central theme of the spy story in chaps. 13–14 to the new generation of God's people. Both the promises and the warnings from the old generation are focused on this new one. The final fate of this second generation is unknown at this point, but the successful resolution of the potential crisis brings the episode to a close on a note of hope and promise.

33:1–56, The Travel Itinerary of the Old Generation: Warning and Encouragement for the New Generation. Chap. 33 consists of a list of campsites of the Israelites as they traveled from Egypt to the boundary of the promised land. Many of the names of the campsites are found only in this list (vv. 13, 19–29). Most of the actual locations of the campsites in the wilderness are today unknown. The list of places may reflect a combination of one or more actual itineraries used by travelers or pilgrims in ancient times, but the precise background of the itinerary is very difficult to reconstruct.

Several of the names of the campsites do occur, however, elsewhere in the Pentateuch, and some have specific incidents connected with them. These incidents are recalled to engender hope in the new generation. For example, the recollection of God's victory over the Egyptians (v. 3) and over the Canaanite king of Arad (v. 40) would serve to encourage the new generation about to engage the Canaanites as they enter the land. Other incidents are recalled as warnings to the new generation: the judgment on the worship of false gods (v. 4) and the death of Aaron for his sin (vv. 38–39) are mentioned. The list of campsites is followed by a general word of assurance from God to the people about their imminent entry into the land of Canaan (vv. 50–54). The chapter concludes with a word of warning if the people do not carry out the conquest of Canaan faithfully and obediently (vv. 55–56). The overall effect of the lengthy and detailed list of encampments is to underscore God's faithfulness in bringing Israel through the long and arduous wilderness journey. Such faithfulness ought to inspire confidence and trust in God as the people enter the promised land.

34:1–36:13
Law as Promise: Divine Commands Concerning the Anticipated Residence of the People in the Promised Land

The book of Numbers concludes with a series of laws and instructions that assume that the conquest of Canaan is near at hand. These final chapters of the book strike a uniformly positive note as the new generation looks forward to its life in the land that had been promised to its ancestors for generations.

34:1–29, Boundaries and Divisions of the Land. The chapter outlines the procedures for the future division of the land of Canaan. It opens with precise instructions from God for drawing the boundary lines of the promised land. The boundaries in chap. 34 exceed those of Israel at any point in its history. The portrait of the land here is thus an idealized one; the promise always outdistanced its fulfillment in a particular historical time. And yet the land is a very tangible and carefully delineated promise from God; it is not simply an otherworldly or nebulous hope.

The description of the land in chap. 34 corresponds very closely to the description of the area covered by the spies in chaps. 13–14. The southern boundary is in the Wilderness of Zin (34:3), and the northern boundary extends to the entrance of Hamath (v. 8; cf. 13:21). The eastern boundary is the Jordan River (34:12), and the western boundary is the "Great Sea" (v. 6; cf. 13:29). These precise correspondences between the spy story and the boundaries of

the land delineated in Numbers 34 suggest that the original promise of the land to the old generation has now been extended in its entirety to the new generation.

35:1–34, Establishment of Levitical Cities and Cities of Refuge: Maintaining the Purity of the Promised Land. Provisions having been made in chap. 34 for the division of the land among the people, chap. 35 makes provisions for cities for the Levites to occupy and for pasturelands on which to graze their livestock (vv. 1–8). This material may be dependent in part on the list of levitical cities in Joshua 21. Numbers 18 provided for the support of the Levites from the offerings of the people, because the Levites "will have no inheritance among the people of Israel" (18:24). The levitical cities are thus not the permanent possession or inheritance of the Levites, but rather a place for them to live and pasture their flocks.

Forty-eight cities were to be designated as levitical by the twelve tribes of Israel, with the larger tribes contributing more cities than the smaller (35:7–8). In this way, the Levites, who guarded the holiness of God and the sanctuary, would be distributed throughout the land of Israel.

Six of the levitical cities were also designated as cities of refuge, to which a person who had killed another person could flee (34:6). Detailed instructions for the cities of refuge and for determining guilt and intention in the matter of murder or manslaughter are given in 35:9–34 (→ Murder). The holiness of God's promised land could be threatened through the shedding of human blood, one of the most serious defilements. Murder and its defilement of the land could be expiated only through the blood of the murderer (vv. 33–34). The cities of refuge, however, provided a place of sanctuary for a person who had killed another citizen unintentionally. Such a person would be admitted only after determination by the elders of the city that the killing was in fact unintentional. Guidelines for such a determination are given in vv. 16–25. The person was then to remain in the city of refuge until the death of the high priest; violation of this provision would make the person vulnerable to blood revenge by a relative of the victim (vv. 26–28). Related matters concerning the number of witnesses required for a murder conviction and the prohibition of paying ransom to expiate a murder are also given (vv. 30–32). The intent of these laws is to ensure the purity of God's holy land, which the new generation is about to receive.

36:1–13, The Daughters of Zelophehad Revisited: Maintaining the Equal Distribution of Land Among the Tribes. Chap. 36 resumes the case of the daughters of Zelophehad and the inheritance of their father's land in the absence of any male heirs, which first appeared in Numbers 27. There it was decided that the daughters could inherit their father's land in order to keep it within the family. Here another question arises. May the daughters of Zelophehad marry outside their own tribe, or must they marry only men in their own tribal group in order to prevent the alienation of the land (vv. 1–4)? God is consulted and proclaims that the daughters may marry any man as long as he is a member of their own tribe, Manasseh (vv. 5–9). The overriding concern is that the ancestral land remain within the tribe that originally inherited it (v. 9). The daughters of Zelophehad comply with the directive from God, and this brings the commandments of God concerning the land to a positive and hopeful conclusion (vv. 10–13).

The stories of Zelophehad's daughters in Numbers 27 and 36 form a frame that brackets all the material related to the new generation counted and organized in the second census list in chap. 26. Most of the material contained within this frame relates to life in the promised land. Thus, the two narratives of the five daughters of Zelophehad function as a positive confirmation of God's promise that the land will indeed one day be given to the new generation of God's people. Moreover, the case of the daughters and the land affirms the flexibility of the tradition and its need for new interpretation with the experience of each new generation. This adaptability provides a warrant for a new interpretation from another tradition that readers will encounter in the book of Deuteronomy, which follows Numbers as the fifth book of the Pentateuch.

Bibliography

Davies, E. W. *Numbers.* New Century Bible Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1995.

Levine, B. *Numbers 1–20: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary.* Anchor Bible. New York: Doubleday, 1993.

Milgrom, J. *Numbers.* JPS Torah Commentary. Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 1990.

Olson, D. T. *Numbers.* Interpretation Commentary. Louisville, KY: John Knox, 1996.

Sakenfeld, K. D. *Journeying with God: A Commentary on the Book of Numbers.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1995.

Deuteronomy

RICHARD D. NELSON

INTRODUCTION

Literary Analysis

Deuteronomy presents itself as a series of addresses offered by Moses to Israel just before its entry into the land of promise. Law giving, wilderness, and the conquest of the east bank of the Jordan are behind Israel. Canaan with its blessings and dangers lies before the people. A large number of introductory formulas and summaries are scattered through the book (1:1–5; 4:44, 45–49; 5:1; 12:1; 26:16; 29:1; 31:1), making a description of its literary shape and the history of its composition difficult. Deuteronomy has two introductions in the form of speeches given by Moses. In the first (1:1–4:43), Moses reviews history from Mount Horeb (Deuteronomy's name for Sinai) to the point of transition into Canaan and exhorts Israel to loyalty. In the second introduction (4:44–11:32), he exhorts and motivates Israel to obey the Torah (God's instruction to Israel), again reviewing history at several points. The central core of Deuteronomy consists of chaps. 12–26. Here Moses promulgates a law designed to shape Israel's life in the land as God's faithful people. The last part of the book, chaps. 27–34, directs this law at Israel's future life in Canaan.

The original book of Deuteronomy seems to have consisted of the reform-oriented law code proper (chaps. 12–26), framed by an introductory exhortation (chaps. 5–11) and some concluding chapters that directed the law at the readers of the book (chaps. 27–30). There is no agreement as to whether an even earlier and shorter form of the book once existed. A puzzling feature of Deuteronomy is its alternation between second-person singular and plural address. The plural portions often seem to be somewhat later than the singular portions, but there is no completely satisfactory explanation for this phenomenon.

Crisis and Reform

In its original form, Deuteronomy was addressed to Israel in the period of the monarchy (about the eighth century B.C.) by a group or an individual writing in the name of Moses. Just as Moses was the mediator for God's law, Deuteronomy sought to mediate God's will for the people in a new period of crisis and transition. The precise nature of the intended audience remains uncertain, but there are indications that the Northern Kingdom, Israel, provided the original context, rather than Judah. There are close affinities to the Northern prophet Hosea, especially in the use of the concept of covenant. The absence of any reference to the Davidic dynasty or Jerusalem and the demand for a radical reform of the kingship also point to the Northern Kingdom, as does Deuteronomy's focus on Shechem (11:29–30; 27:1–26).

Although its date cannot be fixed precisely, Deuteronomy provides us with clues to the crisis that caused it to be written. This crisis was partly religious. Loyalty to the God of Israel had been undermined by the worship of Canaanite gods. One source of this syncretism was the cities (13:12–18), which had retained much of their Canaanite heritage in spite of their inclusion in the Israelite state. Another source was the local sanctuaries, or "high places," scattered throughout the country (12:2–3). There the gods of Canaan and the God of Israel were worshiped side by side, sometimes with fertility rites abhorrent to the more orthodox guardians of Israel's traditions. Certain prophets were compounding the problem by authorizing syncretism and the worship of other gods (13:1–5). One practical result of Israel's lapse in religious loyalty was the precarious economic position of the Levites, whose cause Deuteronomy champions.

Another facet of the crisis was social. Deuteronomy reflects a breakdown in family solidarity caused by social change (21:18–21; 25:5–10). The shift from a purely agricultural barter economy to a money economy in which wealth could be accumulated and lent at interest had caused a critical social problem. Farmers who had worked their ancestral lands for generations were losing them to those who were in a position to lend them money. Sometimes the inability to satisfy a debt led to the enslavement of the peasant farmer and his family (15:12–18). The gap between the rich and poor was widening, and the traditional institutions to protect the poor needed to be revitalized (→ Economics in Old Testament Times).

A third aspect of the crisis was political. The judicial system was corrupted by bribery and had become unfair to those most in need of justice (16:18–20). The

authors of Deuteronomy clearly believed that the power and wealth of the monarchy needed to be sharply curtailed. They saw the king's professional army and the royal penchant for international adventurism as problems (17:16–17). Perhaps the danger of Assyrian control or even conquest was already ominously apparent.

To meet this crisis, Deuteronomy offered itself to Israel as a reform law. It imagined and described a new society, one based on renewed dedication to God and God's law. Deuteronomy's vision was fully utopian in the positive sense of the word, calling Israel to restructure itself in the spirit of Mount Horeb. There would be a seven-year cycle of tithes offered to God and the poor, culminating in a release of all debts and a national rededication to the law. There would be zeal for religious purity at all levels of society. God's law would penetrate all areas of life. The king would become an ordinary citizen whose primary task would be to study the law. Ancestral lands would be protected. Fair justice for all would be the rule, and the economic system would protect the poor from the greed of the rich. The ancient traditions of holy war would be revitalized. Most important, the tempting dangers presented by the local high places would be eliminated by centralizing all sacrificial worship at a single national sanctuary.

Rhetoric and Theology

This proposed reform of Israel's life before God was urged on the original readers of Deuteronomy by means of the theological concept of the covenant. Deuteronomy explicitly identifies itself as the content of a covenant made in the land of Moab, itself a renewal of the covenant made at Mount Horeb. This covenant is summarized in 26:16–19 and 27:9–10: Israel is to be God's people and the Lord will be Israel's God. The theme of covenant is further supported by the presence of extensive blessings and curses of the sort used to guarantee ancient treaty documents (→ Covenant).

It is often thought that the entire book of Deuteronomy may reflect the shape of ancient Near Eastern treaties and follow the format of some regular ceremony of covenant renewal. It may be more reasonable to look to the prophet Hosea as the source of this covenant concept. In any case, God's covenant with Israel does not only concern the past, but transcends generations to confront any new audience of Deuteronomy directly with its challenge.

Great rhetorical skill was used to convince readers to adopt the far-reaching reforms proposed by the book. Such skill points to some group that knew Israel's historical and legal traditions well and were practiced in presenting it to lay audiences. Scholars have suggested the prophets, the sages, and the Levites as possibilities. Like Moses, the authors of Deuteronomy were mediators of God's law who did not just promulgate it, but explained it (5:22–31). Readers are encouraged and motivated to obey through repetitious, sermonic language, repeated calls to remember the past, and explanations that rationalize the laws and uncover their meaning. Deuteronomy does not seek to reform external behavior only, but inner attitudes toward God and neighbor as well. It endeavors with great urgency to engage and change readers before it is too late, and that urgency is visible throughout the book. Deuteronomy confronts each reader personally and demands a personal response, best summarized by 6:4–9 and 10:12–13.

Characteristic theological themes permeate Deuteronomy. God is the central focus. This is the God of the Exodus (5:6), the God of history who has given victory in war and the promised gift of land (7:17–24; 9:1–6). This is also the Creator (10:14), the God of nature who blesses Israel with rain and fertility (11:10–17).

Israel is the people chosen by God (7:6; 10:15; 14:2). God loves Israel (7:8), and love becomes the basic principle of the relationship between God and Israel (6:5). This love is known to Israel through its memory of God's redemption in the Exodus (7:8; 9:26; 15:15) and nurture in the wilderness (8:2–4; 29:4–5). God's supreme gift to Israel is the good land, the land promised long ago to the patriarchs. The goodness, richness, and fertility of the land is constantly emphasized (8:7–10; 11:10–12), but this land also contains within it the temptation to forgetfulness and apostasy (7:1–6; 8:11–20).

Forgetful, apostate Israel is a people in critical danger. Discipline is part of God's parental love (8:5). The Lord is a jealous God who will not countenance the worship of other deities (5:9; 7:9–10). Israel must be a holy people, loyal only to the God who has liberated it (26:18–19). Israel is to worship the Lord alone, and to do so only in the place that God has chosen. Loyalty to God means following the divine will not only in matters of religion, but in political affairs and daily life. Yet Israel's record so far has been dismal. Israel is a stubborn and rebellious people (9:7–14) and punishment in the form of national destruction is imminent (29:18–28). Two ways are set before Israel: the way of obedience and life and the way of continued disobedience and death (30:15–20). The future remains open, but Israel must choose and do so immediately. The terrible curses of chap. 28 hang over the future. Yet the proper choice is so easy and obvious that it is really no choice at all. The law of God is near and easy to obey (30:11–14). Remember what God has done for you (7:18; 8:2; 16:3) and do not forget (6:12; 8:14–18). Circumcise your heart (10:16). Choose life (30:19)!

Revision and Editing

A second major stage in the composition of Deuteronomy began in 621 B.C. with its adoption by the reforming king Josiah as a new religious norm for the

kingdom of Judah, a story told in 2 Kings 22–23 (→ Josiah). Rather mysteriously, Deuteronomy seems to have reappeared in the Jerusalem Temple a hundred years after the collapse of the Northern Kingdom, where it had originally been composed. Recognized as the "book of the law of Moses," Deuteronomy initiated a spectacular but short-lived reform. Naturally, the people of Judah assumed that the Jerusalem Temple was to be the exclusive central sanctuary called for by Deuteronomy 12. Josiah abolished the local high places in Judah and in parts of the former Northern Kingdom. He also centralized the Passover in Jerusalem in accord with Deut. 16:1–8.

During the reign of Josiah (or perhaps somewhat later, early in the Exile), Deuteronomy was used as the first part of a long historical work we today call the Deuteronomistic History. This work tells the story of Israel in the land and stretches through the books of Joshua, Judges, 1 and 2 Samuel, and 1 and 2 Kings. Deuteronomy was integrated into this history by the addition of the first introductory speech (chaps. 1–3 and parts of chap. 4). This historical review by Moses became the first in a series of summary reviews that punctuate the Deuteronomistic History at critical points of transition: Joshua 1 and 23, 1 Samuel 12, 2 Samuel 7, 1 Kings 8, and 2 Kings 17. In this way, Deuteronomy was directed at a new audience and became the interpretive key for understanding the later history of the people. Israel prospered or suffered as a direct result of its obedience or disobedience of this law. Chap. 31 and portions of chap. 34 were also added by this Deuteronomistic historian to link Deuteronomy to the conquest under Joshua and Israel's life under the law (→ Deuteronomistic Historian).

The final stages in the history of Deuteronomy's composition took place in the Exile. Two related short additions (4:29–31; 30:1–10) call on the people to return to God and promise a return from exile. The addition of the Song of Moses (chap. 32) points beyond exile and punishment to God's vindication of the people in the face of their enemies. The Blessing of Moses (chap. 33) speaks of God's gracious will for the people and dreams of a better future. At the very latest stage, Deuteronomy became the fifth of the books of the Torah, or Pentateuch (Genesis through Deuteronomy). Portions from the Priestly writer were added to effect this merger: 1:3; 4:41–43; 32:48–52; 34:1a, 7–9 (→ Sources of the Pentateuch).

Canonical Significance

Deuteronomy plays a central role in the Hebrew Bible. As the authority and norm of the reformation sponsored by King Josiah, it may legitimately be considered the first book of the Bible to be treated as Scripture and in that sense canonized, i.e., admitted to the Bible (→ Canon). Indeed the book seems to claim canonical status for itself (4:2; 12:32; 31:24–26). Ideas and language from Deuteronomy helped shape the final form of the Pentateuch and the books of Jeremiah and Amos. Deuteronomistic theology undergirds the entire presentation of history in the Former Prophets (Joshua, Judges, 1 and 2 Samuel, 1 and 2 Kings).

As the last book of the Torah and the first part of the Deuteronomistic History, Deuteronomy may have served as a catalyst for linking these two complexes in the canonization process. In its present place in the canon, it links the narrative of desert wandering to the conquest of Canaan.

The reforming law of Deuteronomy became an important part of emerging Judaism in the Second Temple period. That the Jerusalem Temple was the only legitimate sanctuary was taken for granted. Passover was celebrated according to the dictates of Deuteronomy as a Jerusalem festival. The Shema and the verses following it (6:4–9) became a focus for the practice of piety. The influence of Deuteronomy may be traced in passages such as Ezra 9:12; Neh. 1:8–9; 13:1–3; and Tob. 1:6–8, as well as in the teaching of Jesus (Matt. 18:16; Mark 7:10; 12:29–30). The humane spirit of Deuteronomy, its concern for justice, and its call to love God above all else have challenged both Judaism and Christianity to ongoing reform through the centuries.

COMMENTARY

1:1–4:43
Moses Reviews History

The law of Deuteronomy (chaps. 12–26) is introduced by two successive speeches of Moses. The second one (4:44–11:32) is primarily exhortation. This first speech emphasizes history. Moses surveys the story of Israel from Mount Horeb (1:6) to Beth-peor (3:29) in a connected way and applies the lessons of this history to his audience (1:16–17, 29–30), especially in chap. 4.

Thus the basis for the law Moses is about to deliver is a review of Israel's experience with God. Ancient Near Eastern treaty documents began with similar reviews of history as prologues to the practical commands and prohibitions of the treaties themselves. It is very uncertain, however, whether such treaties actually influenced the shape of Deuteronomy. Scholars have also speculated that covenant renewal ceremonies in Israel may have followed a similar pattern, with historical review preceding a reading of God's law, but again certainty eludes us. It would be natural, however, for any agreement between two parties to reflect on their past relationship as a basis for their shared future. Certainly this is the pattern of Deuteronomy. Reference to the past (9:7–10:11; 11:2–7; 29:2–9) provides the basis for God's gift of the law and a motive for Israel to keep it.

Chaps. 1–4 were prefaced to Deuteronomy to integrate the book into the larger whole of the Deuteronomistic History. They find their counterpart in chap. 31, where the transition from Moses to Joshua is completed and the story moves on to that told in Joshua through 2 Kings. By adding these chapters, the Deuteronomistic historian addressed the book of the law to an audience somewhat later than the original readers of Deuteronomy, to Judah in the late monarchy or early Exile. The law of Deuteronomy is introduced as the evaluative principle for understanding the story of Israel in the land. The themes of victorious conquest (2:24–3:11), allotment of the land (3:12–20), and the leadership of Joshua (3:28) prepare for the following book of Joshua. The theological principle that obedience leads to success and disobedience results in destruction (1:41–44; 4:3–4) is the key to understanding the history of Judges and 1 and 2 Kings. In the present shape of the Hebrew Bible, this introduction also links Deuteronomy to the other books of the Pentateuch, covering many of the same traditions reported in Numbers.

Themes important to Deuteronomy as a whole are introduced: love and election (7:6–8; 10:15; 14:2), the dangers of apostasy (13:1–18), a concern for justice (16:18–20; 17:8–13). The focus of this introduction is God, who has guided Israel (1:31–33; 2:7) and given it victory in war (2:24–3:11). God also chose Israel in love (4:31, 37) and remains with it because of loyalty to past promises (1:8, 11). God has given the gift of the law. Now it is time for Moses to explain this law (1:5) and for Israel to adopt it as the basis for its new life in the land (4:1, 5, 14).

The ancient readers of Deuteronomy were meant to apply to themselves this situation of transition from old to new. The literary technique of distinguishing and merging three generations helped them do so. These chapters speak of the former evil generation, whose fate is to be taken as a warning (1:35; 2:14–16), of the present generation, which is Moses' audience and which must be attentive and faithful in the face of the crisis of transition to new leaders and a new land (1:39; 3:28), and of a future generation, which will experience the punishment and mercy of God (4:25–31). Yet all three generations merge together into one in the readers to whom Deuteronomy is addressed (1:26; 4:11, 40). These readers from the period of the late monarchy and early Exile had suffered destruction, yet looked forward in hope to God's mercy. They too faced the challenge of applying old traditions to a radically new situation.

1:1–3:29
The Road from Horeb

Moses begins his speech with a review of history that leads up to the place and time at which, according to the literary premise of Deuteronomy, he is addressing a new generation of Israel (1:5; 3:29). Retelling older traditions about the wilderness and conquest, these chapters cover about the same ground as the narrative portions of Numbers 11–31, but rely on traditions somewhat different from those preserved there. These stories are kept clearly in the past from the standpoint of Moses and his audience by the repeated phrase "at that time" (e.g., 1:9, 16, 18; 2:34). They have been joined together into a larger story tracing Israel's progress from Mount Horeb to the stopping point opposite Beth-peor. Linking passages describe the people's movements in the first person plural: 1:19; 2:1, 8, 13; 3:1. A different sort of progress is the transition from the previous disobedient generation to the present one (1:35; 2:14–15) and a consequent shift from failure to success (cf. 1:42; 2:33; 3:3).

1:1–8, Introduction. As an introduction to Deuteronomy as a whole and to its opening review of history (1:9–4:43) in particular, these initial verses answer the questions "Who?" "Where?" "When?" "What?" and "To whom?" Moses is the "who," the speaker of the words that follow. God is the actual source of Moses' words, however, for they are spoken at God's command (1:3). Moreover, Moses quotes God directly (vv. 6–8), as he will continue to do throughout Deuteronomy.

The people are at the end of an arduous journey. Pinpointing the "where" is made impossible by the piling up of contradictory geographical expressions, but the general locale, "across the Jordan" in "the land of Moab," is clear enough. The people are near the crossing point, about to invade Canaan. They will still be there when Deuteronomy draws to a close (29:1; 32:49). The "when" is the eleventh month of the fortieth and last year of wilderness wandering. Mount Horeb is in the past. The conquest of the land east of the Jordan is complete. Now is the moment of transition into the land of promise.

The "what" about to be spoken by Moses is law (Heb. *torah*), but more particularly law that will be explained, expounded on, and clarified (1:5). *Torah* proves to be the opposite of cold legalism in every way. Deuteronomy is a book of "preached law," applied with careful concern to life lived in the new land. This land is described expansively and, in words reminiscent of a legal formula, placed by God at Israel's disposal (vv. 7–8). It is promised land, sworn to the patriarchs and to their children.

These children are those "to whom" this law for a new life in the land is expounded. The former faithless generation has died (1:35). A new generation now awaits the move across the Jordan into nationhood. Yet those who hear the speech of Moses are also "all Israel" (v. 1), a universal address used more than a dozen times in Deuteronomy. This preached law addresses an audience that transcends generations, one that includes the original readers of Deuteronomy in the period of the monarchy and early Exile. They are carried

back in time to stand before Moses and to hear him explain the law that must shape their new life as the Israel they ought to become.

This introduction calls readers to give careful attention to what is to follow. Deuteronomy is to be taken with utmost seriousness. It is a law commanded by God and mediated by Moses. It is a law founded on the authority of God, who chose the patriarchs, promised the good land, and fulfilled that promise through victorious conquest. All Israel, as the beneficiary of God's gracious acts, is now to listen.

1:9–18, Judicial Organization. Even before Israel left Mount Horeb, it was structured into a society shaped by God's justice. These verses employ an old tradition, similar to the traditions preserved in Exodus 18 and Numbers 11, to implant in readers a concern for justice and to argue that a fair judicial system is expected of God's people. Here are revealed the first sketchy outlines of Deuteronomy's visionary portrayal of what life in the land ought to be like. There must be fearlessly impartial justice for both fellow Israelite and resident foreigner, for the powerful and the powerless alike. That is God's way (vv. 16–17).

The problem faced by Moses is, paradoxically, caused by God's blessing, the population explosion promised to the patriarchs (Gen. 15:5). It is a problem that will only get worse (Deut. 1:11). The people agree to a structure for handling legal disputes. This system would rely on well-qualified personnel and would penetrate every level of society from the tribes down to small groups of ten families.

This first story in the historical review establishes basic themes in Deuteronomy: concern for resident foreigners (10:19) and an interest in justice and juridical structures (16:18–20; 17:8–13). Deut. 1:18 presents this story as just one example of how Moses prepared Israel for life in the land. In actual fact, of course, Israel was not always a just society (Amos 5:7, 10–12; 1 Kings 21). Deuteronomy remembers, however, that Israel had once been in harmony with God's justice and dreams that this might be so again.

1:19–46, A Failed Invasion. Moses tells his audience (and Deuteronomy its readers) an illustrative story based on traditions similar to those preserved in Numbers 13–14. This is a cautionary tale, a negative example of what must never happen again. It calls forth fidelity by portraying rebellion. It evokes courage by describing both cowardice and bravado. Israel's disobedience is put in the worst possible light. It follows a wholly positive scouting report (Deut. 1:25; the bad news about Canaan is saved until v. 28). Israel mutters treason secretly in its tents. The people accuse God of hating them and impugn God's motives. Reversing the standard formula of holy war, they insist that they will be delivered into the hand of the Amorites, a grim, self-fulfilling prophecy.

The fear and infidelity of Israel's insurrection are undercut for readers in two ways: positively by Moses' two speeches of encouragement (vv. 20–21, 29–33) and negatively by the outcome of the story. Moses stresses that parental concern is obvious from what God has already done for Israel. Israel cannot question the Lord's motives, for God fought for Israel in Egypt (cf. vv. 30, 27). God does not hate Israel, but carries Israel like a beloved child (cf. vv. 31, 27). Israel's querulous question of v. 28, "Wherever are we going?" receives its answer in God's providential wilderness leadership (v. 33).

The narrative illustrates that rebellion against God leads to disaster. The land the Lord swore to give, God now swears to withhold (vv. 34–35). Even Moses suffers from God's anger (v. 37). Ordered back in the ominous direction of the Red Sea, the people instead compound their rebellion against the command of God (cf. vv. 26, 43) out of a false confidence in the ease of a campaign they had earlier dreaded. The results are defeat and God's refusal to listen to their tears. The people remain frozen at Kadesh (v. 46), no longer on the road to their destiny.

Themes are introduced that recur later in Deuteronomy: God's anger with Moses (3:26; 4:21; 34:4), faith and courage in war (7:17–21; chap. 20), and Israel's unworthiness (8:11–18; 9:1–9). Later readers were to apply the lesson of their forebears' folly to their own situation. Like Caleb, Joshua, and Israel's little ones (1:36, 38–39), these readers faced challenges of fidelity similar to those that had overwhelmed their ancestors. They were the survivors of defeats believed to have resulted from God's punishing anger. Now they needed courage to face the future and faith to bring into being the sort of community envisioned by Deuteronomy. God's past acts as parent, leader, and warrior could evoke such faith and courage.

2:1–25, Through Neighboring Territories. Historical recitation continues, based on traditions similar to Num. 20:14–21. Because Israel's goal is the conquest of the Amorites (Canaanites), non-Amorite nations are to be left alone (Edom, vv. 4–7; Moab, v. 9; Ammon, vv. 18–19). Just as God is giving Israel a homeland, so has he already given these nations lands previously promised to their ancestors Esau (v. 5) and Lot (vv. 9, 19). Edom is given the fullest treatment. Israel is cautioned lest Edom's fears lead to war. Purchasing food and water would defuse tensions. Israel is reminded that Edomites are a related people and that experience has demonstrated that God will provide.

These warnings, along with the parenthetical comments of vv. 10–12, 20–23, breathe a cosmopolitan, universalistic spirit. Israel's God is also the God of these nations and has dispossessed other peoples to give them promised lands. This broad vision implies disapproval of those acts of aggrandizement against these nations that preoccupied much of the foreign policy of

the Israelite and Judean monarchies. An imperialistic state is not what Deuteronomy is proposing (17:16).

The Zered marks the boundary of Moab here, but it is also a watershed of another sort (2:14). The former generation has died not just from natural causes, but through God's direct action (v. 15). Now the new generation to whom Moses speaks is ready for the conquest. Israel's fearsome reputation has preceded it (v. 25; cf. v. 4). Classic holy war language announces that Sihon will be at Israel's mercy, and warlike imperatives mark the transition from peace to war (v. 24; → Holy War).

2:26–3:11, Sihon and Og. Moses continues his review of recent history with the conquest of the east bank of the Jordan. The defeat of Sihon and Og was a standard component of Israel's national memory (29:7–8; Num. 21:21–35; Ps. 136:17–22). The accent falls on Sihon; the story of Og reiterates and seconds the point. In Deuteronomy's version, God is the prime mover behind the conflict and its outcome. The battle results from Sihon's intransigence, insists the narrative. Israel is not the aggressor. Moses peacefully proposes to keep to the roads lest crops be trampled and people harassed, to buy food and water, and in general to act as circumspectly as Israel already has done in Edom and Moab. Israel's true objective, claims Moses, lies across the Jordan. Yet God is really behind the whole event, strengthening Sihon's resolve to resist, encouraging Israel with promises of success, and handing it a pair of victories.

These victories are wonderfully complete, involving the whole east bank from Moab's border in the south to Mount Hermon in the north. The numerous defeated cities are put under the ban (→ Ban) according to the standards of 20:10–18, leaving Israel with rich booty. The note in 3:11 about Og as the last of the ancient powerful ones and his huge "iron bed" (perhaps a basalt rock formation) underscores the wonder of Israel's victory.

As an object lesson in courage and obedience, this success story is the reverse of the defeat of 1:19–46. Here the emphasis is on scrupulous obedience (2:37). The high fortifications of Canaan engendered fear in 1:28; here no city is too high or too strong for Israel to conquer (2:36; 3:5). Deuteronomy's original readers could face the uncertain future with courage. God is in ultimate control of events and gives victory to the faithful and obedient.

3:12–29, Foretastes of the Future. These last items in the historical review point forward to events that will take place after the speech of Moses is finished. They prepare his audience for the coming conquest and the first readers of Deuteronomy for whatever challenging transitions lie before them. Four topics are covered in four distinct sections, each marked by a first-person statement of Moses and the expression "at that time": vv. 12–17, 18–20, 21–22, and 23–29.

First (vv. 12–17), Moses recalls the allocation of the land east of the Jordan and the call for those tribes to aid in the rest of the conquest. The geographical description serves to solidify Israel's ill-defined eastern frontier. The exhortation of vv. 18–20 focuses on national solidarity. The very fact that God has already given these tribes their rich grazing land means they are now obligated to help secure this same gift for their fellow Israelites. In the spirit of Deuteronomy, the "haves" join the "have-nots" for the common good. In a preview of 31:3–8, Moses then charges Joshua to have confidence in the future based on God's past victories (vv. 21–22).

The topic of conquest leads naturally to Moses' submissive request and God's angry response to it, which itself leads back to the issue of Joshua's succession. Moses somehow bears the sin of the generation that died in the desert (1:37; 4:21–22). He cannot enter the future, but he is at least permitted to view it from afar, as he will eventually do in chap. 34. This dialogue underscores the richness and goodness of the promised land. It also suggests that the effects of disobedience cannot be facilely undone, a grim fact that Deuteronomy's original readers needed to face.

The movement toward Canaan stops with 3:29 and will not begin again until chap. 31. Now both Israel and the readers of Deuteronomy, primed for the challenges of the future, wait opposite Beth-peor for Moses to speak.

4:1–43
Transition to the Law

Chap. 4 is a bridge between the review of history in chaps. 1–3 and Moses' extended exhortation about the law, which begins with 4:44–5:1. In this chapter Moses takes up God's revelation of law from several different perspectives (4:1–40). Then Moses enacts one specific command of the law (vv. 41–43).

This material has a complex history of development. The basic exhortation consisted of vv. 1–14 and 21–22, encouraging readers to obey the whole law of Deuteronomy in the land and to teach it to their children. This may have been the link between chaps. 1–3 and the rest of Deuteronomy provided by the Deuteronomistic historian. At a somewhat later period, vv. 15–18 and 23–28 were added to highlight the specific temptation of image worship and warn that such worship would inevitably lead to destruction and exile. These verses have an outlook similar to that of 29:22–28. This warning was later broadened by 4:19–20 to include the worship of heavenly bodies. These additions taken together represent the viewpoint of the early Exile. At a still later and more optimistic period, another writer contributed vv. 29–40, material similar

in purpose and outlook to 30:1–10. These verses urge those who have suffered defeat and exile to repent and return to God. The report of the three cities of refuge (4:41–43) represents the final stage in this process of successive addition.

In spite of its complicated background, chap. 4 gives an impression of overall unity as an exhortation to keep the law of Deuteronomy, offering several different perspectives on a single central principle: obedience to the law leads to life and prosperity, but disobedience means death (cf. 30:15–20).

4:1–40, Exhortation to Obedience. Moses moves from history to exhortation, urging Israel to perform the law he is about to promulgate and explain. The balance shifts from reminders about the past to encouragement for the future. Those who read these words were motivated to keep the reforming law of Deuteronomy in their life in the land (vv. 5, 14). They were to pass on this law unchanged (v. 2) to future generations (vv. 9–10; cf. 6:7, 20; 11:19; 31:13; 32:46). The law is described with a variety of terms—"statutes," "ordinances," "commandments"—but most strikingly as God's covenant (4:13; cf. v. 31; → Covenant).

Repetition urges careful attention to prevent forgetfulness (vv. 9, 15, 23). Lest readers imagine that this law was for past generations only, Moses emphasizes the ever present "today" of its challenge (vv. 8, 26, 38, 40), while also evoking a "far-off" future that actually corresponds to the original readers' present (v. 25). Dramatic quotation (v. 6), the call for a universal quest for precedents (vv. 32–34), and the invocation of heaven and earth as witnesses (v. 26; cf. 30:19; 31:28; 32:1) all add to the rhetorical force.

A wide variety of motives for obedience are offered. Some are rational. Because you know that the Lord is the only God, you must keep this law (4:39–40). Because you saw no form on Mount Horeb, you must never make idols (vv. 15–18). Some motives are negative: the Baal of Peor incident (v. 3; cf. Num. 25:1–5) and God's anger with Moses (4:21–22). Apostasy will eventually lead to national destruction and exile to an idolatrous land (vv. 26–28). The awesome fire of theophany, God's visual manifestation (vv. 11, 15, 33), is sharpened into the fire of a jealous God (v. 24; cf. 5:9; 6:15).

Yet positive motives for obedience predominate: long life, the land, prosperity (4:1, 4, 40). The law is Israel's prized possession, surpassing the allotment God has given other peoples (vv. 6, 8, 19). The primary motive for obedience is, however, the character of a God who is near and easily found (vv. 7, 29). God is compassionate, never forgetting the covenant (v. 31). The Lord has given the land as a gift for all time, exile notwithstanding (v. 40). Two mighty deeds demonstrate God's regard for Israel. The Exodus was an unprecedented act of election (vv. 20, 34) that, along with the gift of the land, showed God's love (v. 37) and uniqueness (vv. 35, 39; cf. 6:5). The second great act was the revelation on Mount Horeb, manifesting God's tolerance (4:33) and discipline (v. 36; cf. 8:5).

The Baal of Peor incident (4:3–4) is paradigmatic. If you obey, you will live; if you commit apostasy, you will be destroyed. The assertion that there is an inevitable correlation between one's behavior and one's fate is basic to Deuteronomy's worldview. The future is always seen in terms of reward or punishment. This concept lies behind the use of blessings and curses in chaps. 27–28 to motivate obedience and can be traced throughout Deuteronomy's language of warning and exhortation (11:26–27; 30:15–20).

Deut. 4:24–31, however, reveals that there is more to the theology of Deuteronomy than this stark formula of retribution. Idolatry and disobedience will indeed result in destruction and exile from the land, punishments from a jealous God. Yet heartfelt return and renewed obedience will lead to a restoration of Israel's relationship with this merciful God (cf. vv. 31, 24). In contrast to all those things a false god cannot do (v. 28), Israel's God will neither fail nor utterly destroy Israel, nor forget the covenant (v. 31). And this, God's graciousness, is the most fundamental theological theme of Deuteronomy.

4:41–43, Cities of Refuge. The literary convention of the direct discourse of Moses is dropped for a moment to report the establishment of three cities of refuge in territory east of the Jordan. This note assures readers that Moses obeyed the law of 19:1–13 at the opportune time, perhaps as a way of motivating readers to strict obedience as well.

4:44–11:32

Moses Preaches About the Law

A second introduction (4:44–49) initiates a second speech of Moses, which prepares for his promulgation of reforming law in chaps. 12–16. Although historical recital continues to be part of his presentation (Exodus, manna, golden calf), as in the first speech, here the emphasis shifts to exhortation. The Ten Commandments are placed first and the role of Moses as mediator (5:23–31) is emphasized. In this way, the whole of Deuteronomy is viewed as an outgrowth of the Decalogue, as God's will communicated by Moses to Israel. The theological themes of Deuteronomy are developed in this second address in order to motivate obedience to the law and to encourage reform. This is done through a variety of rhetorical formats: sermonic exhortations centered on the basic principle set forth in 6:4–9 (5:23–6:9; 10:12–11:32), shorter individual sermons (6:10–9:6), and a first-person reminiscence (9:7–10:11). Moses' address focuses on God's grace,

protection, and election. It explores the dangers of life in the land, particularly apostasy and the temptation to forget the past. The importance of strict obedience to the law and the education of future generations is emphasized, along with the rewards of obedience. This second introduction ends with the contrast between the blessing that results from obedience to this law and the curse that follows on disobedience (11:26–32).

4:44–6:9
First Principles

The Ten Commandments are presented as the foundation for the rest of the law of Deuteronomy. They have been inserted in their present place in the book, interrupting Moses' recollection of the fearful fire of Horeb that breaks off at 5:5 and picks up again at 5:23. They have special authority, literally graven in stone, complete in themselves (5:22). By their placement here, they authorize and legitimate the rest of the book. Deuteronomy thus claims to be a continuation of God's revelation from Horeb (5:31), mediated by Moses in the same way as the Ten Commandments (5:5, 27).

The setting for Moses' re-presentation of the Decalogue is provided generally by 4:44–49 and then more pointedly by 5:1–5. Following the commandments themselves, Moses drives home their implications for his listeners (5:23–6:9). He continues the mode of historical recollection with 5:23–31, which returns to the topic of mediation begun in 5:4–5. Then he shifts back to the direct imperative address of 5:1, concluding with the extended imperative of 6:4–9.

4:44–5:22, The Ten Commandments. Cf. Exod. 20:2–17. An introduction (4:44–49) sets forth the basic dramatic premise of Deuteronomy: that Moses is addressing the law to Israel after the events recalled in chaps. 1–3. Then Moses summons Israel to hear the covenant made at Mount Horeb forty years ago (5:2, 4–5). This covenant and its law are now directed at a new generation (5:3; cf. 29:10–15). These Ten Words (the Hebrew expression; cf. 4:13) are addressed to a community that transcends time, for whom it is always "today." God's challenge was not just for the ancestors. It was directed at the original readers as well. They too had been slaves in Egypt (5:15) and had been liberated to stand at Horeb (5:4–6).

The Ten Commandments may be viewed as a concentrated version of the entire law of Deuteronomy. They provide a brief description of the love God calls for in 6:4–5. They serve as prologue to the whole law and provide, with the curse list in chap. 27, a frame for it. Like Deuteronomy as a whole, they represent preached law, law set forth with rhetorical flourish, law set in the historical context of God's acts (5:6, 15). Deuteronomy's interest in servants (12:18; 16:11), sojourners (10:19; 24:14, 17, 19–21), and even animals (22:1, 4; 25:4) is echoed in the Sabbath commandment. Deuteronomy's concern to motivate the law to evoke willing obedience is present as well (5:9–10, 11, 15, 16).

The self-identification of the God who speaks, the God of the Exodus (5:6), is the most important word. God's act of redemption is both a divine claim on those who hear and their motivation to rise to the challenge of these commandments.

These commandments describe how liberated Israel should live out its relationship to the God who freed them. Such a relationship demands fidelity. There can be no other gods, no empty use of the Lord's name, no violation of the Sabbath rest implicit in the Exodus. Such a relationship affects the entire society, cutting across generation and class. Because fidelity to God means limits must be set on behavior, these commands are mostly negative, marking off margins and boundaries. They are concerned not with "religious" life or the life of priests, but with the day-to-day existence of the ordinary Israelite before God and in relation to neighbor. The "neighbor" of 5:20–21 is a central focus of Deuteronomy's social ethic (19:4, 11, 14; 22:24; 23:25; 24:10). These commands protect a fellow Israelite's right to life, to a secure marriage and respect as a parent, to fair legal process, and to property.

Deuteronomy's challenge to a reformed Israel is based on the fact of God's oneness (6:4) and is goaded by the constant danger of apostasy and idolatry. The Ten Commandments begin at the same point, with God's claim to be the sole object of Israel's worship (5:7–9). The monotheism of Deuteronomy is no ethereal, philosophical principle, but the radical, personal claim of the God of the Exodus (→ Monotheism). God's claim on Israel means that there can be no other gods and no images of these gods, or even of the One God. Imageless worship is given a rational interpretation in 4:15–18, but here the motive to obey is provided by God's "jealousy" (5:9; also 4:24; 6:14–15). This jealousy is a powerful emotion that springs from God's fundamental character. According to the traditional confessional formula employed here (Exod. 34:7; Num. 14:18; cf. Deut. 7:9–10), God's jealousy implies both threat and promise. Deut. 5:9 means either that punishment will strike all three or four generations alive at the time of the offense or that those descendants who continue in their forebears' sins will share their punishment. In overwhelming contrast to these three or four generations, a thousand generations (or thousands of individuals) will be the objects of God's covenant loyalty (5:10).

God's personal name Yahweh (→ Names of God in the Old Testament) must not be lifted up for any idle, unnecessary, or frivolous purpose, especially in the taking of empty or false oaths (5:11). It is not to be employed to do magical harm, as though to coerce God

into action. False prophets must not use it to speak empty words (18:20–22).

Although the Sabbath (5:12–15) is not mentioned in the rest of Deuteronomy, its motivation in the Exodus from Egypt and Israel's servitude there certainly is (15:15; 24:18, 22). Here Sabbath represents a day of liberation, founded on Israel's own journey from bondage to "rest" in the good land (cf. 12:10; 25:19). It is a part of ordinary life (in contrast to the great festivals of chap. 16) set aside as holy, given back, as it were, to God, and so ordered that all levels of society may participate in God's gift of rest (→ Sabbath).

The command to honor parents (5:16) is addressed not just to children, but to adults, who in the extended family system of ancient Israel would have continued to live under the authority of their parents for many years. This situation would naturally have led to conflict, especially over matters of land inheritance. In critical economic circumstances there might also have been strong motives to deprive aged parents. Deut. 21:18–21 offers a specific legal process for a related situation. This is one place in OT law where a woman as mother has equal rights with a man. The motivational promise involving the inheritance of land and long life are especially appropriate for this command, both being special interests of Deuteronomy (8:1; 16:20). Deuteronomy adds further motivation to the parallel in Exod. 20:12 by underlining that this is God's command and promising that things will "go well."

The command of 5:17 did not concern all killing (for capital punishment, see 17:2–7 or 19:12; for warfare, see chaps. 20–21), but rather outright murder and careless accidental killing. Probably the issue of legally inappropriate vengeance (19:4–10) also comes into play here.

In the OT, adultery (5:18) did not correspond to our notions of the act; it was a much more limited issue focused on the rights of the wronged husband. Other sorts of sexual partnerships and marital issues are regulated by chaps. 22–25.

Scholars often assert that 5:19 originally referred to kidnapping a free Israelite and point to 24:7 as a parallel. Probably by the time these commandments were included in Deuteronomy, theft in general was meant.

The false, empty, and purposeless witness forbidden by 5:20 refers to testimony in court against an accused person. Deut. 19:15–21 also shows concern for possible abuses of the criminal justice system, which relied on the testimony of witnesses.

Coveting (5:21) moves into the sphere of the psychological and attitudinal. The first Hebrew verb used implies strong desire leading to an actual move to possess, but the second verb in the Deuteronomic version (Exod. 20:17 is different) refers to a completely internal feeling. Deuteronomy is concerned not only with deeds, but also with motives (15:10).

Those who were first confronted by these words were intended to hear, learn, and do what was commanded (5:1). By describing the life Israel ought to live as a nation freed from Egyptian bondage, these commandments seek to convert readers to become what God's act of liberation had already made them, a covenant people.

5:23–6:9, The Essence of the Law. Moses explores the meaning of God's law, especially as concentrated in the Ten Commandments. The impact of God's commandments is to be total and uncompromising, involving heart, soul, and strength, molding both individual and public behavior. The original readers of Deuteronomy were to appropriate this reforming law personally and live their lives in the good land of promise by its standard.

Deuteronomy was a reforming law, a new look at God's will for the new situation of Israel in the monarchy. It was law heard, as it were, a second time, an addition to what had already been encountered. For this reason it was important to authorize or legitimate the Deuteronomic reinterpretation of the law for its audience. To do this, the mediatory role of Moses is stressed (5:23–27, 31; 6:1). Moses reminds his listeners of how mere flesh, mortal and weak, seemed too vulnerable to hear the terrifying voice of God a second time. Encounter with the living God threatened death. The people's request for an insulating medium for revelation was approved. In this way, Deuteronomy claims for itself divine authorization and authority and presents itself to readers as God's own words mediated by Moses.

Deuteronomy urgently seeks to motivate its readers to observe its precepts. The deadly power of theophany (5:23–27; → Theophany) is emphasized, along with God's almost wistful wish for Israel's fidelity (5:29). The potential rewards of prosperity and long life in the rich, good land are reemphasized (5:29, 33; 6:2–3). God's own nature motivates obedience as well. The Lord is God alone, unique in power with a sole claim on Israel's loyalty. Unlike Baal, who was manifested at scores of local high places around the country, the one true God has only one true place of worship (chap. 12). The Lord is one, and therefore has no doubleness of purpose or intention. Such a God, and only such a God, is worthy of total obedience.

This law is to be appropriated personally, internalized by those whose lives it claims (30:14). They are to pay close attention to it and observe it scrupulously, as the language of 5:32; 6:6, 8–9 insists (→ Mezuzah; Phylacteries). They are to teach it to future generations, literally "sharpening" it for their instruction (6:7). This law must permeate every sphere of life and be bound on each Israelite and displayed publicly for all to see (6:7–9). It is law lived not only externally, but also with heart and soul, an expression of love for God and humanity.

6:10–11:32
A Motivational Introduction

This transition to the promulgation of law that begins in chap. 12 makes every effort to connect the law to the lives of the original readers in order to motivate their adoption of Deuteronomy and obedience to it. A number of different formats are used to change attitudes, create repentance, and evoke obedience. Eight short sermons (6:10–9:6) are followed by a first-person historical narrative (9:7–10:11) and a long exhortation (10:12–11:32). The overall purpose is to prepare readers for what is to follow, to cultivate an attitudinal seedbed in which the law of Deuteronomy can take root and flourish.

The sermons (6:10–9:6) require special comment. They are literary creations imitating Israel's tradition of exhortative oratory. They resemble sermons of a military, liturgical, or prophetic nature found elsewhere in the OT. Each of these sermons starts with a citation of some characteristic situation in which the audience might find itself, or perhaps of a tradition from Israel's past. From there the sermon draws conclusions and makes applications to the readers' own lives.

Shared themes hold these sermons together. The first (6:10–15) begins an exploration of what the situation will be when the land has been occupied. It also introduces a call to remember that permeates the other seven sermons, either explicitly or implicitly. Thus 6:16–19 is itself an example of remembering a story from Israel's tradition, as is 8:1–6. The issue of remembering in order to educate the next generation is presented in 6:20–25. The call to remember and never to forget is explicit in 7:17–26; 8:1–6; and 8:7–20. Two of these units seem to be literary imitations of war sermons of the sort delivered to the troops on the eve of battle (7:17–26; 9:1–6).

6:10–15, Do Not Forget. This sermon presupposes that the land has been given as promised. Its agricultural richness is described in an attractive way, perhaps following the fashion of ancient vassal treaties. The central theme is that God alone has given these good things; Israel has contributed nothing. The homiletical application is the sharp imperative of v. 12. Never forget the God who is identified by the act of Exodus liberation. In contrast to your former servitude, serve God. Swear only by the Lord's name and by no other, as might be required in making treaties with other, more powerful nations. This challenge is motivated by reference to God's character as revealed by the Ten Commandments (5:9). The grim result of forgetting this jealous God could be total destruction, complete removal from the rich land.

This sermon convinces readers to obey the law of Deuteronomy in order to remain loyal to God. Any complacency they might have felt about their security in the land is shattered. Any pride they might have had in the military accomplishments of their kings or in the prosperity that characterized some periods of the monarchy is here undermined. This sermon may also counter the temptation to enter into a vassal treaty with some foreign power.

6:16–19, Do Not Test God. This sermon recalls a tradition of wilderness testing, preserved in Exod. 17:1–7. A simple reference is enough, for readers know it well. The tradition is applied to readers in the fashion of a canonical text. Do not push God too far through disobedience. This unit seeks to motivate obedience by means of a negative historical lesson and a positive reference to the divine victories that gave Israel its good land.

6:20–25, A Child's Question. The situation from which this sermon begins is the rhetorical device of a question put into the mouth of a child. Deuteronomy is concerned with the issue of transmitting the tradition to coming generations. The answer to this question provides the sermonic application in the form of a confession of Israel's classic historical faith. Each succeeding generation of Israel is included by the repeated use of "us" as the object of God's liberation, gift, and command (vv. 21–24). The meaning of the law of Deuteronomy is found in the past acts of God and in the present and future blessings to which obedience leads. True "righteousness," that is, existence in accord with a right relationship to God, is found in keeping this law.

These verses seek to inculcate respect for the law through a recital of God's gracious history with Israel and by pointing to the rewards of obedience. Because a healthy relationship with the God of the Exodus is possible only through this law, it must be taught to each succeeding generation, just as Deuteronomy itself is teaching it to its original readers, who represent a new generation in the land.

7:1–16, A People Set Apart. The situation envisioned in this sermon is again the completion of the conquest. The address calls for the single-minded application of the ban, the wholesale destruction of Canaanite culture and religion (vv. 2, 16). Israel must make no treaties with these seven nations nor ever intermarry with them (though 21:10–14 permits marriages to foreigner captives, probably from nations other than these seven).

The motive advanced for such vigilance focuses on Israel's special relationship with God (7:6–10). Israel is holy, set apart for God's purposes (v. 6).

God has chosen Israel, not because of any special worthiness on its part, but out of God's personal attachment based on divine love and the promises made to the ancestors (vv. 7–8). The Exodus experience reveals that God's essential character promises covenant

loyalty over uncountable generations (vv. 8–9). However, the integrity of God's character also threatens individual retribution for those who are apostate (v. 10).

A further motive for wiping out Canaanite religion is offered by the promise of fertility for family, field, and flock (vv. 13–14), an especially appropriate counter to Baal's claim to bestow fertility. Obedience also leads to good health. The plagues of the Exodus tradition will be reserved for enemies (v. 15).

The original readers of Deuteronomy could certainly see themselves included in God's graciousness to the thousandth generation. On the other hand, they had also experienced the grim effects of Israel's involvement with international alliances and the dangers created by at least one mixed marriage, to the foreign queen Jezebel. Certainly these readers still lived in an environment of Canaanite religion and were all too likely to credit Baal for the blessings of fertility. These verses urge them to see themselves as a people set apart, a people defined, on the one hand, by the gracious blessing of the God of the Exodus and, on the other, by their own obedience to the reforming law of Deuteronomy, particularly those portions that forbid Canaanite religious practices (12:29–13:18).

7:17–26, Memory Cures Fear. This is a literary imitation of a war sermon of the sort delivered before battle in the tradition of Israel's holy wars (cf. 20:2–4). The postulated situation is fear and despondency over the numerical superiority of the enemy. The admonition is classic to the ideology of holy war: do not be afraid (1:29; 20:1; 31:6). The key to this confidence is the memory of the past victories of God, the divine warrior. The hornets of v. 20 ("pestilence" in some translations) seem to be a metaphor for the divinely induced panic by means of which God wins holy war victories (2:25; cf. Exod. 14:24–25; Judg. 7:19–22). This sermon seeks to bring its original readers back to traditional, premonarchical values and institutions, to the ban and the ideology of holy war. These traditions had been replaced by the institutions of the royal state, a state with a standing army and a tolerant attitude toward the Canaanite enclaves and urban centers still to be found in Israel. In the militaristic spirit that pervades Deuteronomy, this sermon insists that these Canaanites represent an unfinished task for Israel. Their continued presence is given a rationalistic explanation (7:22), but it cannot be tolerated (vv. 23–24). The royal policy of accommodation is to be rejected. Canaanite culture is to be eradicated without any concern for the intrinsic value of what must be destroyed (vv. 25–26).

8:1–6, The Staff of Life. This unit begins and ends with its central point, a call to obey the law (vv. 1, 6). This point is hammered home through theological reflection on Israel's tradition of wilderness wandering. The wilderness is seen as paradigmatic for Israel's entire experience with God (29:5–6). Those forty years were a training ground, an experience of parental discipline designed to test and temper the character of Israel. The key lesson was that of the manna, which taught that the importance of the "necessities of life" is only relative. The real staff of life is not bread, but that which comes out of God's mouth, every word that God decrees. God's law as set forth in Deuteronomy is Israel's true source of life in the land.

8:7–20, Remember and Obey. The sermonic situation is Israel's future presence in the land. A poetic description of the good land (vv. 7–10) leads to a portrayal of the twin dangers of pride and forgetfulness in vv. 11–13 and 17–20. Sandwiched between are vv. 14–16, a hymnlike recital of God's saving deeds and wilderness lessons, which undermine smug pride and must themselves never be forgotten. This sermon is constructed around the opposition between remembering, which leads to obedience, and forgetting, which results in apostasy. A second contrast is created by the land with its dangers of forgetting and the wilderness with its remembered lessons. Both land and desert are colorfully portrayed (vv. 7–9 and 15). The good land presents Israel with a test as dangerous as any offered by the wilderness. The wilderness lesson of humility counters the pride engendered by the land.

The point is sharpened by vv. 19–20, which threaten punishment and destruction. This section reflects an outlook similar to that of 4:25–26 and 6:14–15 and is often thought to come from a somewhat later writer. In any case, this threat harmonizes with the rhetorical power of the rest of the sermon in its impact on the original readers, who are living out the situation described. Their life in the good land has led them to forget, to become prideful and self-congratulatory, to worship other gods. National destruction looms on their horizon. From such readers, these verses urge a renewal of memory, seeking to counter pride with humility and calling for a new commitment to the God who brought Israel out of Egypt.

9:1–6, Dangerous Complacency. After a renewed bid for attention through solemn rhetorical address (5:1; 6:4), the dramatic premise of Deuteronomy is restated by 9:1. Moses is addressing the law to Israel after the events recalled in chaps. 1–3. In format, this unit is a literary imitation of a war sermon, words addressed to Israel before battle. As such its purpose is to build confidence in the military support of God, the divine warrior (vv. 1–3). Yet the actual homiletical situation is the same as in the previous unit: the danger of self-righteousness and complacency on the part of Israel already settled in the land (v. 4). This sermon intends to counter such complacency by asserting God's true reasons for the conquest, reasons that have nothing at all to do with any alleged virtue or sincerity on the part of headstrong and stubborn Israel. Instead, the conquest is described as punishment for the wicked

Canaanites (18:12) and as a result of God's promise to the patriarchs. Here we see Deuteronomy's concern that readers should obey the law with a proper attitude, not out of self-righteousness, but out of gratitude for God's gracious, unmerited gift of the land.

9:7–10:11, Rebellion and Forgiveness. Moses now returns to the mode of historical reminiscence to explore the topic of Israel's rebellion and God's forgiveness. The story of Israel's rebellion is told from Moses' own point of view (9:7–24). Then, as a flashback, parts of it are retold with an emphasis on intercession and forgiveness (9:25–10:11).

The first telling, enclosed in the repetition found in 9:7 and 24, dwells on Israel's disobedience and underscores its enormity. Israel was chronically rebellious, as the examples of 9:22–23 demonstrate. Even at Horeb, the high point of God's revelation, it "quickly" (9:12, 16) turned to make a molten idol, a sin so grave that Moses performed the symbolic act of shattering the tablets of the law, indicating that the covenant with God had been smashed as well. This was so terrible an apostasy that Moses lay fasting forty days and nights before God. This loathsome idol had to be burned, broken, ground up, and washed away. God's reaction matched Israel's catastrophic sin. God threatened in fury (9:19–20) to destroy Israel and start the process of election over from the beginning (9:14). The fire of revelation (9:10) became the fire of terror (9:15). God's words to Moses (9:12) carried a terrible message of rejection: they are your people, Moses, not mine.

The second telling, enclosed in the repetition of forty days and nights in 9:25 and 10:10, emphasizes Moses' intercession and God's forgiveness, exploring the implications of 9:18. Moses used convincing arguments to turn God around: this is your people, your inheritance. Remember the patriarchs. Guard your own reputation, lest it be said you were powerless to give us a land or lest your motives for the Exodus be questioned. Here Moses practiced the other side of the office of mediator, interceding for the people. God responded with commands indicating that Israel's life with God would go on. The reinscribed Ten Commandments were to be put into an Ark that in itself promised Israel future journeys and conquests. In 10:4, Israel found itself back where it had been in 9:10, as the repeated language indicates. In 10:10 the story returns once more to the intercession of Moses, this time to announce climactically that God had decided not to destroy the people. Israel could go on because the covenant had not been irrevocably shattered.

A side issue is introduced by 10:6–9. The tribe of Levi will carry the Ark, minister before God in worship, and bless in his name (→ Levites). Though these verses reflect Deuteronomy's concern for the status of the Levites, they also serve to contemporize this historical narrative for the original readers (10:8). This story of rebellion and forgiveness would have struck home. The readers' own history had been poisoned by recidivist tendencies toward idolatry, not the least in the form of Jeroboam's golden calves (→ Jeroboam I). God's wrath and destruction loomed on the horizon. They needed to hear that repentance and forgiveness were still possible and that the institutions of national faith could still continue after disobedience and punishment.

10:12–11:32, Incentives for Obedience. The exhortations of 6:5–9, 13 are taken up again and directed at readers through the imperatives of 10:12–13, 19–20 and 11:1, 8, 18–21. Fear, love, and serve God, and keep the law. The metaphorical imperatives of 10:16 and 11:18–21 call for an ongoing internal appropriation of Deuteronomy in all areas of Israel's life. A rich variety of motivations for obedience are offered. Some motivational material is attached directly to the imperatives; God's intent for good (10:13), the ability to conquer (11:8), long life in the land (11:21).

Longer motivational sections are interspersed between the imperative sentences. God's own character as reflected in the election of Israel provides the focus for 10:14–18, 21–22. Because God elected this tiny, enslaved people, they should now keep his law. Election requires internal circumcision, the removal of any obstacle to willing obedience (10:16). God's greatness is reflected in concern for the marginal people in society (10:18), a concern characteristic of the law that will follow (e.g., 24:17–22). The motivational impact of God's discipline in history is the topic of 11:2–7, where the traditions of the past are recounted in hymnic praise. The fertility of the well-watered land is portrayed in 11:9–17 as further incentive. The rains of April and October are sent by God, but this direct divine provision also means that drought threatens if apostasy occurs. A complete, nearly effortless conquest is promised, again to motivate obedience (11:22–25).

Reflecting the blessings and curses that conclude Deuteronomy (11:29; chaps. 27–28), this exhortation sets forth a simple choice of weal or woe (11:26–28; cf. 30:15–20). The law that is to follow is not a set of cold legal precepts, but a "way" that leads to blessing (11:26). As Moses reaches the end of his introductory discourse, he once more highlights Deuteronomy's literary setting as an address to those about to enter the land (11:30–31). In so doing, he appeals obliquely to the ancient audience of the book to obey what is being set before them "today" as they read (11:32).

12:1–26:19
Moses Proclaims the Law

As a renewal of Israel's traditional law intended to renew Israel as God's people, these chapters form the

heart of Deuteronomy. This reformed law is built upon older legal traditions, particularly those found in Exod. 20:22–23:19, the "Book of the Covenant." Moses' promulgation of new law for life in the land of promise provides the analogy for Deuteronomy's reform of law offered to its own readers.

Israelite law has two basic forms. Apodictic laws simply command or forbid behavior (e.g., 14:3; 15:1; 17:1). Casuistic laws set forth a situation and follow it with its appropriate result or penalty (e.g., 17:2–5; 21:1–8). Both apodictic and casuistic laws stand behind Deuteronomy's reformed legal presentation. Motivational and explanatory expansions often have been added to the basic laws to induce obedience (15:2–6, 15; 21:9).

The Deuteronomic restatement of the laws in the Book of the Covenant represents a utopian reform of older laws to meet the challenges of a new day. Deuteronomy's call to centralize all sacrifice leads to numerous changes (cf. Deut. 15:19–23; Exod. 22:29–30; Deut. 16:1–17; Exod. 23:14–17; Deut. 19:1–13; Exod. 21:12–14). Other modifications reflect Israel's shift to a money economy in monarchical times. This shift caused a social crisis that widened the gap between rich and poor and led to the enslavement of many free farmers to satisfy debts (Deut. 15:1–11; Exod. 23:10–11; Deut. 15:12–18; Exod. 21:1–11). Some changes seek to undo the social damage caused by changing times, reflecting Deuteronomy's concern for fairness and human dignity (Deut. 24:10–13; Exod. 22:26–27).

In the context of royal infringements on the traditional rights of free Israelites, Deuteronomy revitalizes old institutions that had become obsolete under the monarchy (holy war in Deut. 20; levirate marriage in 25:5–10). To meet the challenge of syncretism and the temptation offered by Baal worship, these laws call for fidelity in religious practices (14:1–21; 16:21–22).

12:1–14:21
Purity in Worship

Deuteronomy's reform law begins with worship as the center of Israel's life before God. In contrast to past practice, all sacrifice is to be centralized in one place to safeguard the purity and unity of God's covenant people in the face of tempting Canaanite religious practices. Thus the revolutionary renewal of society described by the rest of the law begins with an equally revolutionary reform of Israel's religious life.

12:1–28, Centralization. Although Israel may have earlier had some sort of national worship centered around the Ark, ordinary religious life was focused on the local sanctuaries scattered around the country. To these high places within easy walking distance the Israelites took sacrifices and tithes and gathered for the major festivals. It was to this local altar that fugitives ran for asylum and to the local priest that ordinary folk went for guidance in religious matters (→ High Place).

In a revolutionary attempt to preserve traditional values, Deuteronomy calls for the consolidation of all sacrifice at a single central sanctuary. As Amos and Hosea testify, monarchical Israel's worship at local holy places had often resulted in apostasy to Canaanite practices, the express context for this centralization law (vv. 2–3, 29–31). Deuteronomy seeks to avoid such contamination through a radical, perhaps utopian demand for centralization. This move reflects the theology of God's oneness (6:4). Another theological underpinning is Deuteronomy's "name theology," which protects God's transcendence by asserting that, although God is not actually present at the central sanctuary, God's name is at home there (vv. 5, 11). At the same time, the "name" of Canaan's gods is to be wiped out (v. 3).

This radical challenge addresses laypeople, not religious specialists. It concerns itself not with technical detail, but with a comprehensive call to centralize, the motivation of which is renewed obedience. Its utopian flavor is balanced by the pragmatic considerations of ordinary life. Repetition is used to fix this call in the minds of readers and to cover every eventuality.

The effects of this primary law of centralization on Israel's religious and juridical life will focus many of the laws to follow (14:22–29; 15:19–23; 16:1–17; 17:8–13; 18:1–8; 19:1–13). The call of Deuteronomy for reform was also concerned with matters other than centralization, but this was its most important and most revolutionary facet. The book itself gives no clue as to the identity of the place chosen by God, although Shechem is hinted at. Eventually this radical principle would find its realization in the kingdom of Judah under King Josiah, who took it for granted that Jerusalem was meant (2 Kings 22–23).

The basic content is repeated five times. Because God has chosen this place, bring all your sacrifices to offer and eat them there (12:5–6, 11, 14, 18, 26). Repetitious enumeration covers every type of sacrifice (→ Worship). The special focus of vv. 13–14 is whole burnt offering, while that of vv. 17–19 is the eating of tithes and firstlings. The mood of these offerings is one of joy (vv. 7, 12, 18). Typically, their social effects are not ignored (vv. 12, 18–19) and motivations are set forth: God's blessings, the security of the land, and general well-being (vv. 7, 9–10, 25, 28). The point is sharpened through repeated contrast. What Israel is to do is not like the former practices (v. 8), not done in every place (v. 13), not performed locally (v. 17), and not like secular slaughter (v. 26).

The practical problem of secular butchering is taken up by vv. 15–16 and 20–25. In the ancient world, all slaughter was viewed as a sacramental act, but in Deuteronomy's schema such noncentral, nonsacrifi-

cial killings had to be thoroughly secularized. Blood, as the essence of life, was still not to be eaten, however, but poured out in a completely secular manner, "like water."

12:29–13:18, Other Gods. The topic of this unit is how life in the land could lead to apostasy. These verses urge readers to fidelity and drastic action in the face of syncretism. Three times in these verses the tempting refrain "let us follow other gods" (13:2, 6, 13) occurs.

The possibilities suggested were all part of the actual experience of the original readers. General curiosity (12:29–31) is followed by three more specific scenarios. That a prophet should entice Israel to false worship (13:1–5) would have been a possible reaction to disasters from which God seemed impotent to protect Israel (cf. the thinking of Jer. 44:16–18). The prophet described would have been particularly tempting because he is able to perform the sign thought to authorize a word truly sent by God (18:22). The secret enticement of relatives and friends (13:6–11) would be especially tempting, resulting in the agonizing choice reflected by 13:9. Again this represents a real temptation resulting from intermarriage, one that Israel's royal families, at least, certainly experienced. The Canaanite cities that had been assimilated into the nation were also a dangerous source of temptation (13:12–18).

The original readers, living in an environment of apostasy, are challenged to take drastic action. God hates these detestable Canaanite practices (12:31). Such situations are tests (13:3). The Lord rescued Israel from Egypt, but these Canaanite gods played no role in Israel's history. Israel's zeal can deflect God's anger and lead to blessing (13:17). Undergirding this challenge is the canonical authority claimed by Deuteronomy itself (12:32).

Apostasy was an objective reality that had to be excised from national life (13:5). There is an uncompromising call for loyalty to God in the demand that one cast the first stone at one's apostate kinfolk (13:8–9). An idolatrous city must become the target of an internal holy war and ruthless destruction. From such zeal, Israel is to learn a salutary lesson (13:11).

14:1–21, Clean and Unclean. Quoting several traditional apodictic commands (vv. 1, 3, 21), Deuteronomy insists that both Israel's mourning customs and diet must correspond to the people's status as children of God, as a nation set off as holy. Election affects even the most personal and ordinary aspects of life. The customs forbidden by v. 1 seem to have been part of Baal worship, and the unclean animals forbidden as food may have been associated with Canaanite rituals. Boiling a kid in its mother's milk may also have been a non-Israelite religious practice. An animal that had died naturally would contain blood, forbidden for eating. Unclean animals are "abominations" (v. 3), things that defile and endanger one's relationship to God (7:25; 12:31). Incentive to knowledgeable obedience is provided both by rules of thumb (14:6–10, 19–20) and by traditional lists (14:4–5, 11–18; cf. Lev. 11).

14:22–16:17
Life in the New Land

The life Deuteronomy envisions for Israel in the land implies a radical reform of both religious and social practices. These are not seen as separate issues; rather, religion and social concern interpenetrate. Deuteronomy's proposed seven-year cycle of tithes and Sabbatical Years has revolutionary social effects (14:28–29; 15:4). On the other hand, the secular practices of money lending and slave release receive clear religious motivations (15:9, 15). This reform even modifies Israel's three traditional religious festivals, restructuring them according to Deuteronomy's concerns for centralization, social justice, and the memory of God's saving acts.

14:22–29, Annual and Third-Year Tithes. Using a traditional apodictic law (v. 22), Deuteronomy explores the implications of the centralization law and a money economy for the practice of tithing agricultural produce, a concern picked up from 12:17–19 (→ Tithe). These tithes are to be eaten as a joyful meal of communion fellowship at the central sanctuary. Geographic distance need be no barrier to obedience, for money can be used to eliminate any need to transport the food itself to the central sanctuary. The plight of the Levites, who would feel the economic impact of centralization, is a concern as Deuteronomy seeks to cushion the revolutionary effects of its proposed reform. The tithes of years three and six of the seven-year cycle (15:1–18) are to be used instead for social welfare and distributed to society's marginal members, again including the Levites.

The reforming goal of these verses is to restructure Israel's use of tithes along the lines of centralized sacrifice and social concern. The monarchy's stratified society and monetary economy are clearly in view. Typically, motives are provided to urge obedience: a lesson in reverence for God and the prospect of further blessing (14:23, 29).

15:1–11, The Seventh-Year Release. Israel's traditional practice of letting the land rest fallow every seventh year is restructured by Deuteronomy into a revolutionary solution to Israel's social inequities. The introduction of a money economy and the resulting alienation of ancestral lands had created a society with wide economic disparities. Israel's peasant farmers were under severe economic pressure, in constant danger of losing land and freedom to rich creditors.

The traditional law of release is cited in v. 1 and then reinterpreted in v. 2. A permanent and total re-

mission of debt every seven years is intended, as implied by v. 9. Issues of motivation and attitude are explored in vv. 3–11. Those in a position to lend are to do so without a grudging eye to the calendar. The motive for lending is the plight of one's fellow Israelite, not economic advantage. The institution of a seven-year debt release converts the oppressive practice of lending into a mechanism for social benevolence.

The intended utopian ideal is presented in vv. 4–5. Perfect obedience would lead to a society without poverty. The reality of poverty presented in v. 11 is seen as an opportunity for generosity. The vision of Israel as a major creditor nation motivates obedience.

15:12–18, Hebrew Slaves. Building on traditional law preserved in Exod. 21:2–6, Deuteronomy extends the principle of release to those victims of economic pressure who have been sold into slavery for debt. In this case, the seven years are the years of a slave's service, a different matter from the calendar cycle of 15:1–11. Reflecting its revolutionary social spirit, Deuteronomy goes beyond Exod. 21:2 by insisting on a generous provision for released slaves so that they can retain their independence. If a strong sense of affection should mean that a slave wishes to stay, he or she may be converted to the status of a permanent slave. The ceremony is a desacralized version of Exod. 21:5–6, made necessary by the institution of a central sanctuary. Here again Deuteronomy is concerned with proper attitude and motivation (15:10), the most telling motivation being the memory of Egyptian slavery.

15:19–23, Firstborn Males. Deuteronomy sets forth a reformed presentation of the traditional principle that any firstborn male animal must be set aside for God (Exod. 22:29–30). The apodictic law is cited in 15:19a, then explored within the limitations of the centralized system of animal sacrifice. The basic idea is that this animal belongs to God. Therefore no economic benefit can be derived from it. It must be eaten as a communion sacrifice at the central sanctuary. Any animal unfit for sacrifice is to be eaten at home as a completely secular meal (12:15–16, 20–25), shared by clean and unclean participants together.

16:1–17, Festival Calendar. Deuteronomy restates Israel's traditional religious calendar to convert these formerly local celebrations into pilgrimage festivals at the central sanctuary, as summarized in vv. 16–17. The emphasis is on the place chosen by God (vv. 2, 11, 15).

Deuteronomy brings the celebration of Passover in line with the principle of centralization (vv. 1–8). What had traditionally been a domestic festival is converted to a public one. What had been a local affair is transformed into a pilgrimage to the central sanctuary in order to perform the sacrifice there. The choice of sacrificial victim is widened to include cattle and not just a lamb or a young goat (v. 2; cf. Exod. 12:5). The practice of eating unleavened bread seems to be both local and centralized. Leaven is removed from all of Israel's territory, but unleavened bread is specifically eaten at the central sanctuary by the pilgrims in their temporary lodgings. The actual date of Passover is not given because Deuteronomy is not promulgating a brand new law, but reforming a well-established practice. Deuteronomy is concerned with attitude and with memory rather than with ritual details. What is important is that Israel remembers that Passover happens on the very same month, day, and hour as the Exodus did (vv. 1, 3, 6). Israel eats unleavened bread as the bread of affliction once devoured in haste (v. 3) in order to remember that most important night (→ Feasts, Festivals, and Fasts; Passover, The; Pentecost; Tabernacles, Festival of).

Interested in probing meaning rather than giving details, Deuteronomy has stripped the Feast of Weeks and the Feast of Booths of much of their distinctive character, along with many traditional practices appropriate only to their observance at local shrines (vv. 9–15). We no longer read of bringing loaves of bread before God or of dwelling in booths (Lev. 23:15–21, 39–43). Although the dates of these two festivals remain tied to the harvest schedule (Deut. 16:9, 13), the offerings are no longer closely specified and vary with the situation of the worshiper (vv. 10, 17). The character of the celebrations has been flattened out into joy over God's blessings in general (vv. 11, 14–15), rather than over any specific feature of the harvest. The shared celebration of the marginal classes of society is heavily emphasized, motivated by the memory of shared slavery (vv. 11–12, 14).

16:18–20:20
The Structures of Society

Deuteronomy goes on to describe the judicial, political, and social structures of Israel's reformed life. Chaps. 17–18 deal with legal procedures and public persons (king, priest, prophet). Chaps. 19–20 concentrate on issues involving the community as a whole (asylum, warfare). These laws do not offer a complete constitution for renewed Israel, but instead concentrate on those areas of life in which Deuteronomy sees the greatest need for reform. Concerns for fairness, fidelity to God, priestly rights, and centralization dominate this material. There is a distinct flavor of nostalgia and a desire to return to premonarchical values, particularly in the portrayal of the central tribunal of justice, the royal office, and the practice of war.

16:18–17:13, The Justice System. These verses demand a reform and restructuring of court process, first on a local level (16:18–20) and then on a centralized national level (17:8–13). Sandwiched between these concerns is material dealing with religious apostasy. Various older apodictic and casuistic laws

provided the skeleton for the presentation of these matters in Deuteronomy.

The discussion of local justice springs from three apodictic laws about impartial justice in 16:19, expanded by a proverb about bribes and some typical Deuteronomic motivation in 16:20. Here the judicial task traditionally performed by local elders falls under some sort of centralized appointment procedure.

The centralized tribunal is presented in casuistic form ("if," 17:8). This is not a court of appeal for the accused, but a resource for local judges who formerly would have turned to the priests of local sanctuaries in cases made difficult by the absence of clear-cut testimony or those involving fine questions of law. Legal distinctions involving intentional or accidental death, contradictory pleas, and various types of assault often fell into this category (17:8). Such cases would have been handled by imposing oaths or ordeals on the parties involved (Exod. 22:8, 11; Num. 5:11–31). Both civil and religious judges staff this central tribunal (Deut. 17:9, 12). To undermine its authority is presented as a very serious capital crime, an evil to be purged from Israel.

Deuteronomy urged these reforms on its original readers in the knowledge that improved judicial structures were needed to bring unbiased justice to all classes of society (16:19; 17:6–7; cf. 24:17). It is difficult to decide how much of this law reflected actual practice and how much was utopian proposal. In any case, Deuteronomy's general intentions are clear. The justice dispensed by local elders was to be brought under some kind of central control. The role of the local sanctuaries in deciding puzzling cases was to be superseded by courts attached to the central sanctuary. Priestly and civil justice were to work in harmony.

Strikingly, the king's role in preserving justice is completely bypassed in this reform. It was traditionally to the king that parties would appeal the decisions of the local elders. Reading between the lines, we may assume that Deuteronomy had a low opinion of the royal capacity for unbiased judgment. At the same time, Deuteronomy seems to have been convinced that its own reformed court system would have no need for an appeal process.

A concern for purity in worship is sandwiched within this proposal to restructure courts. Three apodictic laws (16:21, 22; 17:1) forbid a sacred pole (→ Asherah) beside the central altar, any stone pillar, and all defective sacrifices (cf. 15:21). Such abuses had motivated the demand for the centralization of worship in the first place. A situation similar to those discussed in 13:1–18 is presented in a casuistic format ("if," 17:2). The general crime is described as transgressing God's covenant and is illustrated by representative specific examples. The appropriate punishment is stoning. This coordination of religious purity with judicial fairness is hardly a surprise. Both had to be achieved if Israel was to become the people God wished it to be.

17:14–20, Kings. Deuteronomy reflects a low opinion of kingship. Doubtless, this was a result of the grim experience Israel had had with its kings. Instead of protecting the worship of God, the monarchy had introduced foreign forms of worship. Instead of providing justice for all classes of society, the kings had piled up riches. Instead of bringing peace and prosperity to the land, they had embroiled Israel in repeated wars and brought the danger of Assyrian conquest ever closer.

Deuteronomy nevertheless acknowledges that kings will still be part of Israel's reformed life in the land, but seeks to bring the monarchy under the control of God's law. The intent is not to promulgate a reformed political constitution, but to describe in a utopian way what the attitudes and behaviors of Israel's king ought to be. This is less a description of what to do than what to avoid. The result is an insubstantial royal figure who is more like a student of Torah than a traditional king. He is a "citizen king," one whose status does not separate him from the rest of the people.

In accordance with the ideal in both Judah and the Northern Kingdom, the king must be God's choice. His reward is long life for himself and his dynasty, again a wish appropriate to either of the two kingdoms. One wonders what unfortunate historical memories lurk behind the requirements that he be an Israelite, that he eschew a large harem or an impressive chariot force, and that he avoid hoarding wealth. Certainly Solomon comes most directly to mind, but Israel's whole dreadful experience with kingship is in view. The puzzling v. 16 may refer to trading mercenaries for horses. The tool for reforming the kingship is to be the book of Deuteronomy itself. The king is to transcribe a personal copy of this law, preserved under the guardianship of the levitical priests. Constant study will lead him to fear God and scrupulously obey the law. It will also prevent royal haughtiness and unconcern for his fellow Israelites. This is a clear instance of Deuteronomy's own view of itself as a reforming law that can convert all Israel to what the nation ought to become. To do this the law must be written on doorposts and gates, on stones and altars, and in books (6:9; 27:2–8; 31:24–27).

18:1–8, Levitical Priests. These verses seek to reform Israel's treatment of the Levites, whose distressed condition is reflected elsewhere in the book. Deuteronomy does not draw a sharp distinction between "levitical priests" (v. 1) and the other members of the tribe of Levi. Any Levite who relocates to the central sanctuary is to receive a priestly appointment (vv. 6–8). This provision seeks to cushion the economic effects of centralization on those members of the tribe of Levi who live at a distance from the central sanctuary. The intention is to induce lay Israelites to support the levitical priests with their rightful shares

of the sacrificial offerings. This is rationalized by pointing out that Levites have no inherited rights to the land. Their heritage is God. The levitical share of the promised land must come to them indirectly from those with a direct inheritance.

18:9–22, Prophets. This unit seeks to reform Israel's attempts to learn about divine will, the future, or other hidden mysteries. Its purpose is to encourage its readers to listen to those prophets who follow in the tradition of Moses. As a first step, all divination and magical techniques of inquiry must be eliminated (vv. 9–14), in accordance with Israel's traditional law (Lev. 19:31; 20:6, 27; cf. 1 Sam. 28:3). The fate of their Canaanite practitioners is a warning, as is the assertion that these are "abominations" that destroy the integrity of Israel's relationship with God. The only proper medium of revelation for Israel is the prophet (18:15–18). Here Deuteronomy gives an etiology, or rationale, for the institution of prophecy as it was known in monarchical Israel. Not just one, but a long series of prophets is in view (cf. 17:14, where more than a single king is obviously intended). The suitability of prophetic mediation is illustrated by Israel's experience on Mount Horeb. It is precisely prophets like Moses that Deuteronomy envisions. Such prophets indeed mediate the divine word, but also serve as intercessors for the people (9:7–10:11) and teachers of Torah.

The ways in which prophecy itself might become a problem are covered by vv. 19–22. Both unheeding audiences and presumptuous prophets are warned. Some advice is given to help with the recognition of prophetic words that are to be ignored. Prophecy in the names of other gods is easily rejected, but false prophecy in God's name is a more serious matter. This dilemma requires the application of a pragmatic criterion that, although clearly useless for judgments on individual oracles, is certainly a way to evaluate a prophet's overall performance (→ Magic and Divination; Prophet).

19:1–21, Asylum and Other Matters of Justice. Deuteronomy continues its reform of Israel's system of justice (16:18–20; 17:8–13), concentrating here on vengeance and asylum (vv. 1–13) and the unsupported malicious witness (vv. 15–21).

Israel's legal institution for dealing with murder was blood vengeance. A member of the victim's family, the "avenger of blood," would hunt down and kill the murderer. In tension with this custom was the principle of asylum, which permitted anyone who had unintentionally caused death to seek shelter at the altar of the local sanctuary (Exod. 21:12–14). Deuteronomy's revolutionary call for a central altar required that the institution of asylum be modified so that the basic fairness of the whole process could be preserved. Otherwise, the great distance to the central sanctuary would lead to frequent miscarriages of justice. Such cities of refuge are also mentioned in Num. 35:6, 13–14 and Josh. 20:7–8, both texts dependent on Deuteronomy. There is no evidence that these utopian provisions were ever actually carried out.

The basic reform law creates cities of refuge (19:1–3). Distances are to be surveyed (or perhaps roads prepared) to ensure that every accidental killer will have a fair chance of reaching them. A representative case of manslaughter is offered in vv. 4–7 to demonstrate how distinctions between murder and accidental death can be made by analyzing the circumstances. If national expansion should make distances too great (cf. 12:20), three more cities must be designated (vv. 8–10; cf. 4:41–43). Finally, the problem of illegitimate claims of asylum by intentional murderers is illustrated by a contrasting representative case (vv. 11–13). The rationale for this reform is that any miscarriage of justice involving human death would endanger the whole nation and subvert God's gift of the land (vv. 10, 13). Between these two sections, v. 14 pursues another matter of justice, the displacement of ancient boundary markers, probably as a result of economic pressure by the rich against the poor. Deuteronomy seeks to halt this practice of alienating ancestral lands by insisting that it too undermines the structure of God's good gift.

Israel's court system depended almost entirely on the testimony of witnesses. The traditional principle that two such witnesses are always required is quoted in v. 15 (cf. 17:6) to introduce the special case of a single, unsubstantiated witness to a charge of apostasy. This is an example of a matter that must be taken to the central tribunal described in 17:8–13. Again fairness is the issue. The lying witness must receive the exact punishment that would have fallen on the innocent victim as a salutary lesson for the rest of the nation. The *lex talionis* ("an eye for an eye"; 19:21) is quoted to forestall any temptation to leniency. The principle of just and appropriate retribution must be upheld.

20:1–20, War. Although war in Israel had become the province of the king, Deuteronomy seeks to reform warfare according to the older, premonarchical theology of holy war. These verses envision citizen soldiers rather than professionals employed by the king. This is war as it ought to be, war fought by God on Israel's behalf. God as the divine warrior fights with a heavenly army against Israel's foes with weapons such as lightning, storm (Judg. 5:20–21), and earthquake (Josh. 6:20). At the critical moment, usually at the break of dawn, a divinely induced panic falls on the enemy and routs them (Deut. 2:25; Judg. 7:22). Because such war was a sacred enterprise, the war camp had to be kept ritually clean (Deut. 23:12–13). Success was followed by the imposition of the ban, by means of which the fruits of victory were dedicated to God as the true victor. Any human use of this booty was forbidden.

In the theology of holy war, the faith of Israel is

decisive, not the respective size of the armies or the presence of chariots. In a dramatic portrayal of events before battle, a priestly war sermon (20:2–4; cf. 7:1–6; 9:1–6) repeats the message of 20:1. The memory of the Exodus is Israel's basis for confidence. Then the military officers address the troops, proclaiming exemptions for all whose presence might dilute the army's fearless faith (v. 8). The issue of fairness and of honoring God's gifts is important here as well. Those who have not yet tasted the fruit of what is theirs by right must not be denied (cf. 24:5).

The discussion of siege warfare also presupposes monarchical Israel, involving distant offensive campaigns. Again the tone is utopian and idealistic. Cities not in the promised land (20:10–15) are to be offered terms resulting in forced labor. Only a limited massacre is imposed when they are conquered. In contrast, foreign cities in Israel's territory receive no terms and are to be totally destroyed (vv. 16–18). At the same time there is a humane concern to ameliorate the destructive effects of siege warfare (vv. 19–20). The half-humorous motivation offered by v. 19 seems to suggest that even the trees deserve fair treatment.

Deuteronomy's reform stands opposed to those royal military practices known to its original readers, insisting on a return to older ideals of warfare in harmony with God's will for Israel. Royal compulsion is set aside (vv. 5–8). The practice of war must not subvert Israel's joy over God's gift of the land. In place of professional troops, there is to be a militia whose ad hoc nature is clear from v. 9. The barbaric prosecution of total war (cf. 2 Kings 3:25) is somewhat limited. The ancient ban, which undermines the acquisitive purposes of royal warfare (cf. 1 Kings 20:26–43), is restored. The conquest of Canaanite cities, the source of the apostasy infecting the nation (Deut. 20:18), must be taken up again. This is a revolutionary challenge to return to a utopian past, directed at readers who have suffered from the adventurism of their kings and who have a well-founded fear of invading armies numerically and technically superior to themselves. Deuteronomy seeks to rebuild their confidence in God's protection and urges that they restructure the practice of warfare along traditional models.

21:1–26:19
Interpreting Traditional Laws

As a reform document, Deuteronomy takes up laws from Israel's traditions and recasts them for a new age. Many of these laws can be found in a somewhat different form elsewhere in the Pentateuch. The result is not a complete legal code, but a selection of those laws most in need of revision or reemphasis.

By modern standards, the organization of the laws is problematic, but such disorder is typical of ancient law codes. A wide range of topics is covered by chaps. 21–25: unsolved murder, family life and sexuality, religious purity, economic exploitation. Deuteronomy's special concern for social justice for the powerless surfaces in many laws. In chap. 26 a description of the ceremony for offering tithes at the central sanctuary provides an opportunity to review God's saving acts once more. A concluding transitional exhortation leads into the last major section of the book.

21:1–9, Unsolved Murder. Israel believed that the objective guilt of a homicide could endanger the rest of society. Guilt was viewed as an objective reality totally apart from any issue of morality or punishment. Ideally, the murderer's execution should remove this danger, but in an unsolved death other steps had to be taken. This procedure is not a sacrifice (which involves a relationship to God), but an act of expiation. Therefore the animal, killed away from the central sanctuary, has its neck broken as a sign of its nonsacrificial function (Exod. 13:13). The guilt that threatened the community is transferred to the animal. Speaking for their city, the elders wash their hands as a symbol of their innocence and as a way of transferring the guilt by means of the flowing water. Both the animal and the place are special in the sense that no human benefit has been derived from them. They are empty vessels for the guilt. The characteristic reforming concerns of Deuteronomy are visible here. It is the land given by God that is contaminated by bloodguilt (21:1). The priests must be included in the process (v. 5). The quasi-magical ceremony of expiation must be supplemented by prayer, for in the end it is God who must cover the guilt and who does so out of concern for the people (v. 8; → Atonement; Expiation).

21:10–21, Aspects of Family Life. The reform urged on Israel is applied to three facets of family life. First, Deuteronomy advocates the just treatment of female captives desired as wives (vv. 10–14), women without male protectors in society. They are given legal status and some protection from unrestrained exploitation. The female prisoner of war makes a new start with new clothing, putting her old life behind her. She is fairly treated by being given a month to mourn those who have been killed or left behind. In the case of a subsequent divorce, she is no slave to be sold off, but may leave freely, for her husband has received his benefit from the relationship.

Again, fairness must be maintained in the situation described in vv. 15–17. When the father assigns his sons their shares of the inheritance before his death, the rights of the less-favored wife must be preserved. Here Deuteronomy asserts the principle of fairness over against what may have been a traditional custom of free choice on the father's part, reflected in Gen. 48:13–20. As a widow, the mother would be supported

by her son, who is to receive his proper double share as firstborn. This narrow special case seems to be used to advocate justice in general for women in polygamous marriages.

In 21:18–21, Deuteronomy seeks to reform the breakdown in family life that it senses as characteristic of its own era (cf. 5:16; 27:16). Disrespect for both father and mother is the issue, and both must agree to take action. Clearly the absolute power parents once had over children has disappeared, and the village elders must become involved. The seriousness of the son's offense is shown by his drastic punishment, which purges the evil from the nation and serves as a salutary lesson.

21:22–22:12, Laws Enhancing Solidarity. If anything serves as a common theme for this diverse grouping of laws, it may be the concept of solidarity. Israel's solidarity with God is protected when the purity of the land is guarded from the ritual pollution of a hanged body, something offensive to God (21:22–23). The transvestism forbidden by 22:5 may have been a pagan religious practice or viewed as blurring gender boundaries, but in either case it is labeled an "abomination" that subverts Israel's relationship to God. In a similar vein, various mixtures seen as violating distinctions made in creation are forbidden (vv. 9–11). The impropriety of these practices must have been clear enough to the original readers as to require no explanation. The solidarity of the social order is enhanced by 22:1–4. This basic law (v. 1) with its several variations (vv. 2–4) goes beyond the older formulation of Exod. 23:4–5 to a wider definition of national fellowship, even with unknown and far distant Israelites. The law of the parapet (22:8) eliminates a physical risk and, more important, guards against bloodguilt, a danger to the whole community. National solidarity in dress would be enhanced by wearing tassels (v. 12), a practice for which Deuteronomy provides no rationale (→ Fringes).

The law about birds (22:6–7) has overtones of conservation and humane treatment for animals. There seem to be echoes of the thinking that lies behind laws forbidding destroying fruit trees (14:21; 20:19; see also Lev. 22:27–28).

22:13–30, Sexual Behavior. Sex was not considered to be a matter of private moral decision in Israel; it was something of community concern. These laws regulate sexual behavior out of a concern for fairness to the parties involved and a recognition that the whole community has a stake in such matters. Although these laws are one-sided and operate from an exclusively male viewpoint, they did offer women some limited protection from the worst excesses of male domination.

The concern for fairness is clearest in vv. 13–21. The husband's charge may be a vicious pretext for divorce, but the parents may be able to clear their daughter's name by showing the "token" of her virginity, a cloth stained with the blood of her wedding night. Both mother and father share this parental role (cf. 21:18–21). The husband is punished severely because he has defamed her and the nation as well. She is justly protected from further attempts at divorce. If her parents cannot prove her previous virginity, however, she is assumed to have committed a disgraceful "folly in Israel" (22:21) and is stoned beside her father's house as a sign of the shame she has brought to her family. Whether she turns out to be guilty or innocent is no private matter of her personal behavior, for the reputation of the whole nation is at stake (vv. 19, 21). Five laws guarding sexual purity follow. Adultery and rape are seen as offenses against the husband or father of the woman involved. There seems to be no concern for rape as a crime of violence against the woman herself in these laws. If both parties are caught in adultery, that is, if the woman is married to someone else, both must die, for this is an evil to be purged from Israel (v. 22). The case is similar if she is betrothed, since that was the legal equivalent of marriage (vv. 23–24).

Deuteronomy's concern for fairness is evident if the couple is discovered in the country, for then this must be considered a case of rape by force in virtue of the circumstances (vv. 25–27). If the raped woman is not married or betrothed (vv. 28–29), the matter is less serious, a clear indication that rape was viewed as a crime against the victim's husband. In this case it is a crime against her father, and he is compensated for the loss of her bride price (cf. Exod. 22:16–17). She is, however, protected by the law from a life of shame and the destruction of her prospects for marriage (cf. 2 Sam. 13:13, 16, 19) by marriage to her attacker without any future threat of divorce.

This series of laws concludes with a prohibition of marriage to a former wife or widow of one's father (22:30; cf. 27:20). This law is designed to protect the integrity of the extended family in a polygamous context. Given the young age at which women married, a son of an earlier wife could easily be about the same age as his father's later wives (cf. Gen. 35:22).

23:1–14, The Purity of Israel. Deuteronomy seeks an idealistic return to traditional concepts of purity in the worship assembly and the war camp, settings in which the people were a sacral gathering, united for the purpose of worshiping God and fighting under God's guidance. The motive for revitalizing these laws was not a hatred of foreigners or a wish for better hygiene, but a desire to strengthen Israel's relationship with a loving, protective God (vv. 5, 14).

A five-part apodictic list restricts participation in the worship assembly (vv. 1–8). Castration may have been an aspect of Canaanite worship, although v. 1

more likely reflects the idea that it was simply offensive for someone less than whole to participate in sacred activities (cf. Lev. 21:17–23). The precise nature of those barred by 23:2, offspring of an irregular union of some kind, is unclear, but Moabites and Ammonites seem to fall under this rubric, given their traditional origin (Gen. 19:30–38). Two items from the wilderness tradition support their exclusion. In contrast, resident Edomite and Egyptian families might eventually gain admittance based on Edom's kinship and Egypt's hospitality to Israel's ancestors. The sacrality of the war camp was part of the holy-war tradition that Deuteronomy seeks to revive. Concepts of ritual pollution (cf. Lev. 15:16–17) and aesthetics are combined here. God's protective presence in the camp is both the rationale and the motivation for these practices.

23:15–25:19, A Renewed Society. These diverse laws protect the harmony of relationships, both with God and with other human beings. Deuteronomy seeks to reform Israel into a society of wholeness and social concord. The motivations offered for obedience describe the nature of this anticipated society. "Abominations" and evils that subvert the nation's relationship to God would be prevented (23:18; 24:4, 7). Instead, there would be blessing in the land of promise (23:20; 24:19) and approval from God (24:13). Israel would remember the lessons of the past (24:9, 18, 22; 25:19) and behave accordingly. There would be joy, life, dignity, and social harmony (24:5, 6, 13, 15; 25:3).

Such a society requires, above all, a healthy relationship with God. Certain kinds of male and female religious personnel are forbidden (23:7). These are not necessarily temple prostitutes, as many translations suggest. Sanctuary obligations must not be paid with money derived from prostitution by members of either sex (23:18). Vows to God must be kept (23:21–23). Even labor disputes (24:15) and commercial fraud (25:13–16) undermine Israel's harmony with God and must be avoided.

The divorce law (24:1–4) is written from an exclusively male perspective. General divorce procedures are reviewed in order to prohibit any remarriage to a former spouse after she has been another man's wife. Divorce is taken for granted as a simple dismissal of the wife by her husband (and not vice versa). The stated grounds could be minor: some undefined impropriety (v. 1) or even simple dislike (v. 3). The divorced woman's rights are safeguarded to a degree by a document attesting to her right to remarry. Clearly divorce was an institution by means of which injustices against women were perpetrated, but Deuteronomy is concerned here only with a danger to Israel's relationship with God. Divorce is reformed so that it is permanent rather than temporary, lest God be offended.

Renewed Israel would be a society in which marriage is affirmed (24:5), kidnapping is prevented (24:7), and "leprosy" (which included a wide variety of skin diseases) is regulated by the priests (24:8–9). The innocent are protected from unfair applications of the principle of communal guilt (24:16). Modesty is preserved between women and men and the danger of injury or infertility forestalled in cases like the one described by 25:11–12.

The society envisioned here would take special care of its poor and marginal members. Escaped slaves are not to be returned or reduced again to slavery (23:15–16). This is remarkable, for escaped slaves were a dangerous class and the obligation to return them was a common provision of ancient treaties. Hired servants, who live from hand to mouth, are to be paid promptly (24:14–15), protecting workers from oppression and employers from sin. Powerless people such as sojourners, orphans, and widows are guaranteed justice and economic protection (24:17). Even criminals deserve dignity and consideration. Verdicts must be clear and punishments humane, carried out in the presence of the judge responsible (25:1–3). Even domestic animals deserve fairness (25:4).

Lending is envisioned as a way the rich extend social benefits to the poor, not as a way of acquiring interest (23:19–20). The economically marginal could thus be helped over times of crisis. This conception of credit is even more remarkable when one remembers that all debts were to be canceled every seventh year (15:1–6). Moreover, the practice of taking pledges or collateral is strictly regulated to protect the domestic life and dignity of the debtor and to prevent undue hardship (24:6, 10–13). Because such pledges were taken not for their intrinsic value, but to pressure the debtor into payment, Deuteronomy is depriving the practice of much of its oppressive power. Such regulations show that Deuteronomy is thinking of the economic structure of a small town in which the borrower and the lender interact on a daily basis.

The poor are protected from hunger through the social support institution described in 24:19–22, while property owners are themselves protected from abuses of a similar custom in 23:24–25. These practices eliminate the need for direct handouts or begging, thus protecting the dignity of the poor, who must work for what they receive. The institution of the levirate marriage (25:5–10) offers protection for a man who dies without a son to inherit his property and carry on his name and, less directly, for his widow, who needs support and a niche in society. The brother (or other close relative) of the deceased was obligated to marry his widow in order to produce a son, who was then considered to be the son of the dead brother. This ancient practice of surrogate fatherhood rests on the institution of the extended family, in which brothers live together (v. 5). The possibility of refusal, which does not seem to exist in the levirate law presupposed in Genesis 38, is now offered the recalcitrant brother (see Ruth 4:1–8). Compliance is prompted by social pressure (25:9–10).

26:1–15, First Fruits and Tithes. The presentation of the law ends, as it began in chap. 12, with worship. By describing what an individual was to do initially when the land was first settled, Deuteronomy seeks to establish two ongoing liturgical events, providing appropriate liturgical recitations for each.

The offering of first fruits ties together the themes of deliverance, God's gift of the fertile land, the central sanctuary, the gifts due the priests (18:4), and concern for society's marginal people. In the context of Deuteronomy, these first fruits must be taken to be the same as the annual tithe (12:17–18; 14:22–27) brought to the central sanctuary and enjoyed by all. There are two declarations (26:3, 5–10), each followed by a presentation, first by the priest (v. 4) and then by the farmer (v. 10). A creedal prayer of thanksgiving reviews Israel's experience of salvation. It moves from the national story to the worshiper's personal story, tying God's present gift of agricultural fertility to these past acts of deliverance. The contrast between past and present is sharp. Jacob's wandering (or perishing) as a landless alien and Israel's slavery in Egypt are set over against rest and freedom in the rich land of promise.

The tithe of the third year (vv. 12–15) adds the theme of obedience and reiterates the issues of social concern and the land's richness. Third-year tithes were to be distributed to the economically distressed at home, not taken to the central sanctuary (14:28–29). Nevertheless, these tithes were holy and had to be kept from unclean persons and forbidden activities (26:13–14).

26:16–19, Concluding Summary. These verses conclude the legal portion of Deuteronomy begun with chap. 12 (cf. v. 16; 12:1). The literary premise of the book is restated by the "today" of 26:17. The theological concept of covenant is introduced to lead into chaps. 27–30. The audience is with Moses in Moab, about to conclude a covenant agreement with God. Each party has made a solemn declaration of the covenant relationship. God has taken Israel as a treasured, holy people and promised it a high position among the nations. Israel has declared this God to be its God. Israel's obedience to God's commandments is a factor in both declarations, and obedience with total heart and soul is urged upon it.

27:1–34:12
The Story Continues

Materials from a variety of sources work together to focus the reform law of Deuteronomy for readers and to challenge them to accept its authority over their lives. Chap. 27, speaking of Moses in the third person, describes a permanent display of this law before the people and a future ceremony by which they put themselves under its authority. Chap. 28 represents a further speech by Moses, in which he sets forth the blessings and curses that give this law power over Israel's future. This is followed by a motivational address set into the context of a covenant made in the land of Moab (chaps. 29–30). Portions of this speech were added during the exilic period and help focus the meaning of the law for those who had already disobeyed it and been punished (30:1–10). The transition from the age of Moses to the readers' present is carried forward by the Deuteronomistic historian's concluding narrative, which sets out the law of Deuteronomy as the standard by which Israel's continuing story is to be understood (chap. 31). The Song of Moses (chap. 32) and the Blessing of Moses (chap. 33) each had a separate history of transmission before being included in Deuteronomy. In their present context, they focus the law of Deuteronomy on Israel's future life in the land, an existence marred by disobedience yet empowered by God's vindication and blessing. The last chapter concludes both Deuteronomy and the entire Pentateuch with the death of Moses.

27:1–30:20
Covenant Making

Chaps. 27–30 direct the law of Deuteronomy at its readers by using the concept of covenant to challenge readers to live according to its precepts. In chap. 27 Moses sets forth a covenant ritual of curses by which Israel will accept its responsibility to live under the law. Blessings and curses (chap. 28) motivate obedience and cast the entire book into the shape of a covenant document. Covenant was a vital theological concept for Israel, used to describe the nature of God's relationship to the patriarchs, to David, and to the nation. Although some scholars trace the covenant concept back into Israel's earliest days, it may be that the prophets and Deuteronomy are the sources for this idea in Israel. The covenant was described as based on God's own past saving acts, shaped by precepts or laws, instituted by a covenant ceremony, and empowered by curses and blessings. This covenant format follows the analogy of human legal agreements and, more specifically, ancient Near Eastern international treaty practice. In its final form, Deuteronomy follows this covenant format closely.

The covenant theme is carried forward by chaps. 29–30, in which Deuteronomy becomes the content of a second covenant, one made between God and Israel in the land of Moab. The Ten Commandments are described as the covenant document given at Mount Horeb (4:13; 5:2–3; 9:9, 11, 15). In a similar way, the entire written law of Deuteronomy is converted into the expression of God's covenant will for Israel declared in Moab (29:1, 9, 14–15, 21).

27:1–26, The Shechem Ceremony. Moses no longer speaks alone, but with elders (vv. 1–8) and priests

(vv. 9–10), for the focus now turns to the future, when Moses will no longer be with Israel. Instructions for what is to be done on Ebal and Gerizim (11:26–32; 27:2–26) bracket his promulgation of law (chaps. 12–26), for Deuteronomy wants to direct this law at its original readers, who live in the land of promise. It is to them that it will be displayed on plastered stones (27:2–4, 8). Whatever relationship the altar on Ebal (vv. 5–7) might bear to the central altar of the rest of the book, it certainly signals the beginning of Israel's life as a worshiping community in the land, those to whom this book is really addressed.

Moses gives instructions for a covenant ceremony of blessing and curse, but provides here only the curses in an ancient series of twelve laws concerning deeds done in secret. Secret behavior could not be controlled by social pressure or legal process, but it could be regulated by curse, the threatening power of which was taken for granted. The people here agree to each curse with an "amen" and thus mark themselves off from any who would do such things. Many of these curses deal with concerns found elsewhere in Deuteronomy. Idolatry, honor for parents, and murder are topics of the Ten Commandments (vv. 15–16, 24). Displacement of a boundary marker (v. 17) was dealt with in 19:14 and intercourse with one's father's wife (27:20) in 22:30. Deut. 27:20, along with v. 22, was intended to protect the integrity of the extended family. The rights of strangers, orphans, and widows (v. 19) are basic themes of Deuteronomy. Bribes (v. 25) are the topic of 16:19.

The summary curse of 27:26 impels obedience to the whole law of Deuteronomy. Like the Ten Commandments, these curses concentrate the law into an intense, memorable list with a powerful impact. The Shechem ceremony aims Deuteronomy's reforming law directly and forcefully at its original readers. They are the people of the future addressed by Moses, for whom the law is written publicly and plainly (v. 8). As the people of God they are to obey (vv. 9–10) and respond to this law with their own "amen."

28:1–68, Blessings and Curses. Ancient treaties were often guaranteed by a concluding list of blessings and curses that gave the agreement power to regulate behavior. Deuteronomy uses curses and blessings for the same purpose, to motivate obedience to the covenant concluded between God and Israel on the plains of Moab. The basic structure of this covenant is set forth by vv. 1 and 9, which go over the ground of 26:16–19 and 27:9–10. The blessings will follow obedience (28:2); the curses will overtake Israel if it disobeys (v. 15). There is some balance between blessing and curse (vv. 3–6 and 16–19; 7 and 25; 12–13 and 43–44), but the curses are much more extensive and colorful. Their intended purpose is to motivate obedience to the law of Deuteronomy (v. 58) before it becomes too late. The preponderance of curses over blessings underscores the urgency of Israel's need to reform. These motivating blessings and curses are appropriate for their intended audience in monarchical Israel. They reflect a rural, agricultural life, on the one hand, and a deep concern over international affairs, on the other. The curses are very similar to those found in certain Assyrian treaties, and it seems likely that Deuteronomy made use of Assyrian curse language in formulating these frightful imprecations. Since Assyria was notorious for its wartime atrocities, this borrowing deepens the impact of this unit.

Taken together, these curses and blessings address a wide area of life. Fertility (vv. 3–5, 8, 11, 16–19, 38–40, 42) and rain (vv. 12, 23–24) were gifts that Israel was often tempted to associate with the gods of Canaan. Their inclusion here makes a statement about God's demand for exclusive worship. Other curses deal with sickness (vv. 21–22, 27–28, 35, 59–60). Israel looked to its God for military protection (v. 7), but these curses threaten defeat (v. 25), conquest by cruel foreigners (vv. 33, 49–57), and heartbreaking exile (vv. 36–37, 63–68). The blessings and curses are generalized in order to sweep all readers into their net (vv. 3, 13, 29, 43–44). The curses are also personalized (vv. 30–32) and made as frightful as possible (vv. 26, 34, 53–57) so that no reader might escape their power.

As the curses unroll, transitions are visible. A conclusion of sorts seems to be reached in vv. 45–46, but then a new section of curses begins, vv. 47–57. Here Israel's failure to obey seems no longer just a possibility, but a certainty. The curses focus on invasion by a ruthless enemy and the horrors of siege warfare. Then another new introduction begins with vv. 58–68. This section portrays Israel's future as a reversal of saving history, an exile back to Egypt, to a hopeless existence far from rest in the promised land. The most terrible thought of all may be v. 63, which describes God as taking grim pleasure in Israel's destruction (→ Curse and Blessing).

29:1–30:20, A Covenant in Moab. A renewal of the covenant in Moab (29:1, 12) provides the occasion for another oration by Moses. Israel is urged to adopt the reforming law that Deuteronomy presents in written form (29:20–21, 27; 30:10). The entreaty becomes insistent and impassioned. A sense of crisis looms. Today is the moment of decision (29:4). Choose life and not death (30:19).

A review of saving history (29:2–8) reminds Israel that past crises were times of providence and education. The meaning of those events was hidden then, but now has been revealed. Deuteronomy urges the adoption of its own particular interpretation of past traditions. Israel is to seize the present moment of crisis as an opportunity for decision and obedience. A renewed dedication to the covenant is required of all, from the greatest to the least (29:10–11). The nature of this covenant relationship is epitomized by v. 13, re-

peating 26:17–19. The original readers are directly included in the moment of decision by vv. 14–15.

This covenant is guaranteed by the curses set forth in chap. 28. These will fall on any man, woman, or group who worships a strange god (29:18–21). An effective literary device (vv. 22–28) carries the audience forward into a grim potential future. A vivid dialogue set into a blasted landscape portrays the destruction and exile that will result if this covenant is violated.

Israel is to concentrate on faithful obedience to what has been openly revealed in Deuteronomy. The mystery of God's ways remains an impenetrable secret best left to God (v. 29), but this law is not difficult to keep; it is clear and understandable (30:11–14). God's will for Israel is within easy reach; it need not be sought out in some epic quest. Israel is faced with the simplest of choices: life or death (vv. 15–20). Moses, backed up by the witness of heaven and earth, sets before Israel two clear ways. Apostasy means adversity and eventual exile. Obedience means prosperity and long life in the land of promise.

Although a somewhat different and later situation seems to be addressed by 30:1–10, here too Israel is called upon to repent and reform. These verses, resembling 4:29–31 in outlook, speak to an audience that has already experienced national destruction and exile. The path of return is set out step by step. Take these blessings and curses to heart in the land of exile and return to God through renewed obedience (30:1–2). Then God will gather and restore you to the prosperous land once more (vv. 3–5), circumcising your hearts so that love for God and obedience will become second nature to you (vv. 6, 8). The curses will be transferred to your enemies, while the blessings will shower on you (vv. 7, 9; cf. 28:4). All this will happen if you obey and wholeheartedly return to God (v. 10).

31:1–34:12
Transition to Canaan

This concluding section provides readers with bridges that connect the reform law of Deuteronomy to their own lives. Moses initiates a regular routine of reading Deuteronomy before the assembled community and gives final instructions that carry forward into the book of Joshua (chap. 31). The Song of Moses and the Blessing of Moses (chaps. 32–33) represent his last testament to Israel. These point forward into a future that is the readers' own present. The Song is a witness to the apostasy in which they have participated, as is the written law of Deuteronomy itself (31:19, 21, 26–27). Yet along with the Blessing of Moses, the Song also points beyond disobedience and punishment to God's gracious will for Israel. The future is ultimately to be determined not by Israel's infidelity, but by God's fidelity. Chap. 34 continues the transition to the story of Israel under Joshua and summarizes the career of Moses.

31:1–29, Preparing for the Future. A major turning point is reached with this unit. Moses' long speeches are over. There is a return to the narrative, which is picked up from where it left off in 3:23–29. Attention shifts to preparation for Israel's future in the land. This future (which is the original readers' present) will be grim. Following an ingrained predisposition to rebellion already evident to Moses, Israel will violate the covenant by worshiping foreign gods and idols and be punished by God's wrath (31:16–18, 20–21, 27–29).

Since Moses will not cross the Jordan because of age and God's command, Joshua is prepared for his role as military leader. In turn, Moses encourages both the people and Joshua to bravery (vv. 2–8). The transition from Moses to Joshua is made in a different way by vv. 14–15, 23, probably a fragment of tradition from some other source. Here the tent of meeting, the point of rendezvous between Moses and God, is the locale of God's direct authorization of Joshua (→ Tabernacle). The law is the focus of other preparations for the future. The written law, which is Deuteronomy, is entrusted to the priests and elders. It is to be read at the Feast of Booths every seventh year, the year of debt remission (vv. 9–13; cf. 15:1–11). This is to be an educational and motivational opportunity for coming generations. The book of the law is given to the Levites to be set beside the Ark as a witness against Israel's future disobedience (31:24–27). Another witness against Israel will be provided by a song that Moses writes down and teaches Israel (vv. 19–22; the Song of Moses, chap. 32).

This chapter connects Deuteronomy to its ancient readers, who were living in the grim future that Moses has predicted and prepared for. The book of the law has been passed on to them both as a warning and as an opportunity. Deuteronomy witnesses against their present apostasy, but at the same time it offers them a chance for renewal and obedience (31:10–13).

31:30–32:52, The Song of Moses. Moses, about to die, offers some last words to Israel in the form of a song. This is spoken rather than sung, indicating its didactic nature. Moses is represented as one with prophetic vision, uncovering the meaning of the past while providing a vision of the future and a challenge for the present. He tells the story of Israel from election through apostasy and punishment to God's gracious vindication. Like the law (31:26), this song is to be a witness against Israel (31:19, 21), describing the consequences of the apostasy against which Deuteronomy warns. It is directed at the Israel in Moses' future (31:29), those who have experienced punishment in the shape of enemy conquest. The poem (32:1–43) uses the traditional format of a lawsuit in which God brings Israel to trial for its infidelity. God calls witnesses to observe the proceedings (vv. 1–3) and then summarizes the prosecution's case (vv. 4–6). The details of the case then follow: God's past graciousness (vv. 7–14),

the indictment (vv. 15–18), the guilty verdict, and the sentence of total destruction (vv. 19–25). At this point, the poem abandons the lawsuit format and moves on to assert God's continued vindication of Israel for the purpose of preserving God's own honor.

The introduction (vv. 1–3) addresses the heavens and earth, invoked as witnesses against Israel throughout Deuteronomy (4:26; 30:19; 31:28). Water metaphors underscore the beneficial and refreshing intent of Moses' teaching. The song's theme is focused in 32:4–6a: God has proven faithful; the people have been faithless and perverse. The poem's central metaphor is God as a rock, the symbol of solidity and stability (vv. 4, 15, 18, 30, 31; cf. 37).

Israel's story begins with the nation's election at the time of the origin of all peoples (vv. 8–9). When parceling out the peoples of the earth to their gods, God kept Israel as a personal inheritance. God found this people in the wilderness and adopted them (a tradition of election found also in Hos. 9:10). God gave Israel the land of promise (32:13–14), nurturing it richly, sometimes from the most unpromising places. Complacency in prosperity, however, led to the worship of other gods (vv. 15–17; cf. 6:10–12; 8:7–20). Israel forgot the Rock who had given birth to it (32:18). Israel's idolatry roused God to jealous anger, and punishment followed in the form of invasion and defeat by a cruel people (vv. 19–25). The curses of chap. 28 have struck home.

Disaster does not have the last word, however. Punishment is not carried to its ultimate conclusion, but is moderated (32:26). God's inner thoughts reveal that this is not because of Israel's own merit, however, but grows out of God's own self-concern. The enemy people whom God had employed against Israel would misinterpret complete destruction and take the credit for themselves (v. 27). These enemies are not wise enough to see the divine pattern behind their victories (vv. 28–30). They are corrupt in origin and poisonous, and the vengeance of God is stored up against them (vv. 31–35). Israel's vindication begins when its power has reached low ebb (v. 36). Israel's false gods have been unable to help it (vv. 37–38). In contrast, the only one worthy of the designation "God," the one who kills and gives life, takes an impressive martial oath to be vindicated against all enemies (vv. 39–42). The hymnic conclusion (v. 43) applies God's vindication to Israel's own vindication.

This poem confronted its readers, those who had themselves experienced this history of apostasy, punishment, and vindication, with the law of Deuteronomy. They were not to imagine that national catastrophe meant that their God was powerless. Based on the confession that Israel's Lord alone was God (v. 39) and a conviction that God would turn back to rebellious Israel once punishment had run its course (cf. 30:1–10), readers are urged to recognize God's rock-solid faithfulness and to respond with loyalty and obedience.

In the prose section that follows, the center of interest moves back to the law, its transmission to future generations, and its vital importance to Israel's life in the land (vv. 45–47). Moses' impending death is referred to again in vv. 48–52, reflecting traditions like those found in Num. 20:10–13 and 27:12–14.

33:1–29, The Blessing of Moses. Blessings spoken by a leader near death were thought to be exceptionally powerful in shaping the future. This material had a history of its own before being used in Deuteronomy to point to Israel's coming life in the land. A diverse collection of tribal sayings is framed by vv. 2–5 and 26–29 to create a unified poem. The introduction describes God's coming in awesome theophany from Sinai as king over Jeshurun (a poetic name for Israel). Verse 4 connects this poem to its context, the giving of the law by Moses. God's power and love are emphasized, along with Israel's unity. The conclusion (vv. 26–29) speaks of the conquest and the gift of the land. It stresses the protection and providence of God, who rides the clouds (cf. Pss. 68:4; 104:3) to give Israel victory.

The sayings themselves reflect a time of peace and prosperity for the Joseph tribes (Ephraim and Manasseh) and Benjamin, the heartland of the Northern Kingdom. Reuben is small and struggling. Dan has moved to its second home in the North. It is indicative of a Northern perspective that Judah is separated from the other tribes and Simeon receives no mention at all.

Some of these sayings are less blessings than statements or aphorisms that characterize a given tribe's life in some way. Benjamin dwells safely, protected between God's shoulders (or the slopes of their hills; v. 12). Dan is aggressive (v. 22). Naphtali is sated with favor (v. 23). Zebulun and Issachar are addressed directly with a command to rejoice, followed by a description of their sanctuary at Mount Tabor and the riches that come from their access to the sea (vv. 18–19).

Closer to the idea of a blessing are sayings that are wishes and prayers. Moses wishes Reuben continued existence and Asher prosperity and security (vv. 6, 24–25). There is a prayer for Judah's reunification with the other tribes (v. 7) and a more extensive one for Levi (vv. 8–11). Levi has proved its fidelity to God (cf. Exod. 17:1–7; 32:26–29; Num. 20:1–13 for similar traditions). Levi's role seems to be insecure in some way. The prayer is that God defend them and prosper their undertakings. To them belong the sacred lots (→ Urim and Thummim), the task of teaching law to Israel, and sacrifice. The Joseph tribes receive a fertility blessing along with a description of their military prowess (vv. 13–17). A tradition similar to Exod. 3:1–3 is referred to in the mention of the bush in v. 16.

The Blessing of Moses is tied to the Song of Moses through the use of the ancient name "Jeshurun" for Israel (32:15; 33:5). The Blessing portrays the results of God's vindication of Israel that was promised by the Song. These blessings are also integrated with the entire book of Deuteronomy as a description of life in the land, offering a positive balance to the curses of chap. 28. The warlike ones connect to the coming conquest reported in the book of Joshua.

This chapter moves beyond Deuteronomy's penchant for exhortations and warnings, concluding the book with a picture of Israel's future that seems to transcend the categories of obedience and disobedience to the law. Yet, like Deuteronomy as a whole, it offers a utopian vision of what Israel ought to be when its life is lived out under God.

34:1–12, Moses Dies. Moses' final words are finished. The narrative returns to where it left off in 32:48–52. This chapter looks back, providing the conclusion for Deuteronomy and the entire Pentateuch as well. Moses' career is reviewed as that of a prophet with the closest possible communion with God, as one through whom God worked wonders (34:10–12). His extraordinary age and vigor testify to his virtue, and the thirty-day period of mourning to his popularity (vv. 7–8).

This chapter is also a transition to the rest of Israel's story, reported in the books that follow. Moses' mountaintop view points forward to the conquest and life in the land promised to the patriarchs. In ancient legal practice, a survey was one way of transferring land ownership. The past is decisively over: Moses is dead and his grave cannot be found. Now Israel is challenged to face the future. Joshua is empowered to carry the story forward, and the people accept his leadership.

Thus the challenge of the future was set before the original readers of Deuteronomy. For them, this challenge came in the form of the law written in this book. Continued life in the land of promise would depend on their faithful obedience to that law.

Bibliography

Mann, T. W. *Deuteronomy*. Westminster Bible Companion. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1995.

Miller, P. D. *Deuteronomy*. Interpretation Commentary. Atlanta: John Knox, 1990.

Olson, D. T. *Deuteronomy and the Death of Moses*. Overtures to Biblical Theology. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1994.

Tigay, J. H. *Deuteronomy*. JPS Torah Commentary. Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 1996.

Joshua

WALTER E. RAST

INTRODUCTION

Jewish tradition placed the book of Joshua at the beginning of the "Former Prophets" (Joshua–2 Kings), a group of writings relating the story of Israel from the entry into Canaan to the Babylonian captivity. The book picks up where the Pentateuch left off, with the people on the eastern side of the Jordan River. The central theme is highlighted at the very outset: Joshua and the people are to "proceed to cross the Jordan" (1:2) and to take possession of the land.

The twenty-four chapters of the book can be divided into a number of sections. Chaps. 1–2 describe preparations for entering the land under Joshua's leadership and the sending of spies to search it out. Chaps. 3–6 recount the stories of the crossing and the fall of Jericho. Chaps. 7–12 deal with wars and conquests in different regions of the country. Chaps. 13–21 describe how the land was settled. Chaps. 22–24 offer several accounts stressing the covenant relationship between the people and God, including the report of the assembly at Shechem in chap. 24.

Dominating the book is the belief that Israel was called to be a people in covenant with God, established on a land promised to its ancestors (→ Promise). The Book of Deuteronomy expressed the notion of the covenant people in a unique style and language (*see* Deuteronomy, Introduction), and since the same style and theology permeate large parts of the following books, the entire section from Deuteronomy through 2 Kings has come to be known as the "Deuteronomistic History," following the widely accepted proposal made by the late German scholar Martin Noth. The Deuteronomists who produced this historical work were influenced by the prophets, and they set out to show how the downfall of the Northern and Southern Kingdoms of Israel was the result of the people's persistent breaking of the covenant, even though at first Israel was loyal (Josh. 1:16–18; 24:24).

The Deuteronomists, it is held, lived about the time of Josiah's reform in the late seventh century B.C. (→ Josiah), and it was they rather than Joshua who were responsible for the final form of the book of Joshua. Their theological perspective can be seen in the speeches credited to different personages (Josh. 1:10–11, 13–15; 2:8–13; 3:3–5; 3:3–9; much of chap. 23). At the same time, many scholars hold that the historians incorporated material from earlier times, such as the poetic verse in 10:12b–13 (→ Jashar, The Book of), the story of Rahab (chap. 2), the list of defeated kings in 12:9–24, and the registry of cities in 15:20–62 and 18:21–28. Some parts of the conquest traditions in chaps. 8–11 also were probably formalized long before the historians made use of them.

Because of the strong interpretive tendency of its authors, the book of Joshua has become a subject of debate among scholars. Some take the book to be a mostly accurate picture of early Israel, while others are more skeptical about the history it relates. Archaeology occasionally helps to clarify a text, but it also sometimes increases the difficulty, the conquest of Jericho being an example (see the commentary below on 6:1–27). The conquest of the cities of Canaan is also contested: some interpreters hold that existing archaeological evidence for destruction at several towns supports the biblical account, while others argue that this evidence could just as well be credited to the Philistines as to the Israelites. Neither position can claim to be the final solution to the problems, and readers must try to decide among the debated issues. It seems best, in any case, to view the book as a partial record of important developments in the history of early Israel, even though the specific details have been obscured and the history was undoubtedly more complex than the version in Joshua.

The most disturbing problem for modern readers is the violence in the book, in which God plays the role of what some have called a divine warrior defending his people. This militaristic characterization may frustrate a fruitful engagement with the book, yet it seems that the Jewish and Christian communities decided wisely in including the book of Joshua in the scriptural canon. Despite the negative reaction some readers may have, this book provokes its readers to reflect on issues of war and peace, territorial claims, and nationalism. At the same time engagement with the book encourages thought about the problems of the justice and mercy of God, of holding one's commitments in a pluralistic world, and of achieving an understanding of life based in covenant.

COMMENTARY

1:1–2:24
Preparation for Entering the Land

Joshua 1 and 2 differ greatly in content. Chap. 1 contains a speech by God to Joshua and one by Joshua to the people. Chap. 2, on the other hand, consists of a narrative regarding the spies of Jericho. Both chapters build on the charge in 1:2: "Arise, cross over this Jordan."

1:1–9, God's Speech to Joshua. This section fulfills two purposes. First, it shows that Joshua is to carry through what Moses initiated but could not complete, bringing Israel to the land promised to the fathers. Second, it links Joshua to Moses by stressing Joshua's role as the one who, like Moses, is to see that all the law of the Lord is carefully observed, for only then could a successful entry into the land be made.

1:10–18, Joshua's Command to the People. For the first time in the book Joshua "commands" the people. This verb appears often in the Deuteronomistic historians' vocabulary. In their view nothing could occur unless divine action stood behind it. For that reason it is God who commands, because all authority derives from him. But in the Deuteronomic view it is "Yahweh's servants," such as Moses, who transmit the divine commands. This verb, therefore, stresses Joshua's authority to speak and act on behalf of the God of Israel, as Moses had done.

Joshua commands the officers to prepare the people to cross the Jordan. The term "officer" apparently refers to a group whose primary function was keeping records. If this is so, it could be evidence for the existence of writing already in early Israel. The title also denotes an overseeing function as in Exod. 5:14–15. It is not clear, however, whether mention of such functionaries provides an insight into the social organization of early Israel or whether it is a feature retrojected from a later period. In any case, this group of specialists appears in several places in the book (e.g., 3:2). The brief Deuteronomistic speech ascribed to Joshua in 1:13–15 reasserts what was earlier attributed to Moses (Deut. 3:8–20), that the two and a half Transjordanian tribes should cross the Jordan to help their kinsmen conquer their land there. The people respond with a statement of loyalty, which again has a Deuteronomic tinge to it: "As we heeded Moses in everything, so we will listen to you" (1:17).

2:1–24, The Spies at Jericho. The historians proceed to tell the story of the spies. This is clearly a piece of older narrative that fits well at this point, not only in providing the first contact of the Israelites with the land, but also in introducing tension into the story of the capture of Jericho. In the forefront are Rahab the harlot and the two Israelite spies, in the background the king's secret police trying to smoke out the potential menace of these outsiders. The tension in the story is in the relation of the spies to Rahab, which is characterized by the mutual suspicion of two inimical parties. Tension appears also in the flight of the spies to the hill country and their pursuit by the king's men.

The story of the spies at Jericho is one of a group of biblical spy accounts (e.g., Josh. 7:2–5; Num. 13; Judg. 18:2–10). No doubt such stories had a firm basis in reality, reflecting familiar military practices. Yet the various references to Rahab in the book do not suggest a unified account so much as a remembered tradition that has been incorporated at several points. When we examine the story of Rahab's family as this is taken up subsequently in 6:22–25, it becomes evident that this part was joined secondarily to the account of Jericho's conquest, since the walls of Jericho had already fallen when Rahab and her family are said to have been delivered. Most likely, therefore, the tradition of the spies and Rahab was joined to the narrative about Jericho by the Deuteronomistic historians themselves. Some features of the story of Rahab in Jericho are graphically illustrated by archaeology. The city described in the story fits well with what we know of Canaanite cities about the time Israelites were establishing themselves in the land. That the gate of Jericho was closed up at night recalls excavated examples of gates of Bronze Age Canaanite cities that were constructed for such protective purposes. The statement is also made that Rahab's house was "in the city wall" (2:15), suggesting a unique type of "casemate wall" excavated at several sites by archaeologists. This kind of fortification, known already in the Late Bronze Age, consisted of two parallel walls around the circumference of a city; crosswalls separated rooms within them. Perhaps it was in such a group of rooms that Rahab lived, although the wall of Jericho may also have been simply a single one with houses built up against it.

The account of the spies, then, is not merely an interlude. In returning they report that Yahweh was about to give the land into Israel's hands, and the Canaanite inhabitants would be unable to resist Israel's advance (2:24). The notion that the Canaanites became faint of heart derives from the idea of holy war, as held by the Deuteronomistic historians (→ War). According to this belief, every conflict was a contest between Israel's God and its opponents. Israel was to have courage, since it was Yahweh who would fight its battles. The "enemies" would be struck down in utter panic (cf. 10:10) before the intervention of God as the divine warrior.

3:1–5:15
Crossing the Jordan

Entry to the promised land required crossing the Jordan River, the natural barrier between Transjordan to

the east and Canaan to the west. Thus it is understandable that the conquest should place the river crossing as the first event and describe it with a greater amount of imagination than in the case of subsequent events. In fact, the crossing became a matter of festive memory. It is essential to bear in mind that chaps. 3–5 contain various elements that accrued in the course of liturgical celebration of these events. Three such items in particular can be singled out: the role of the Ark, the traditions of stones being set up in the Jordan and at Gilgal, and the site of Gilgal, where the festival of entry into the land seems to have been celebrated.

3:1–17, The Ark and People Cross the Jordan. The Ark appears for the first time in Joshua in 3:3 (→ Ark). This object, described in Exod. 25:10–22, originated during the early tribal period, at which time it had a prominent role as the place where Yahweh met his people and communicated his word to them. Later it was deposited in the Jerusalem Temple, from which it was borne into the streets during festivals celebrating the God of Israel as "king of glory" (Ps. 24:7–10). The Ark very early had a place in the wars of Israel, where it served as a symbol of divine presence and protection (1 Sam. 4–6). That it is the priests and Levites who are said to transport it probably has resulted from the liturgical influences in this account. It was characteristic of the Deuteronomistic school to make little or no distinction between these two groups of liturgical officiants.

Thus the role of the Ark in the story of Israel's crossing makes it possible for us to discern influences from later liturgical reenactment of the conquest tradition. A group of ritualistic formulas are introduced into the tradition of the crossing of the Jordan. The Israelites lodge on the edge of the Jordan for three days (3:1–2) before passing over the river. The crossing itself is described less as a military maneuver than as a liturgical procession, with a space of two thousand cubits between the people and the leaders carrying the Ark (3:4). The people "consecrate" themselves (3:5), and just as the feet of the priests are "immersed" in the water (3:15), the miraculous event occurs. The waters open up and the people cross, as they had done in leaving Egypt (cf. 3:16; Exod. 14:22). After all had crossed and the priests came out of the water, the waters returned to their place. The present shape of the text is thus a fusion of historical memory and an ongoing liturgical representation of this evocative series of experiences. The authors perceive the events through the lens of theological commitments and their own life of worship.

Many scholars have connected this liturgical form of the crossing account with a shrine established at Gilgal (→ Gilgal). Gilgal indeed is mentioned as the key location to which the people came after crossing (4:19–20; 5:9–10), and commemorative stones erected there became a lasting testimony to its importance as a center of worship. In this same narrative the motif of holy war continues to be accented by the Deuteronomistic historians (3:10). Yahweh fights for his people as they place full confidence in him. He drives out the peoples before them, so that they may enter the land under his protection. The Ark carried before them is the visible sign of this presence.

4:1–5:1, The Twelve Stones as Memorial of the Crossing. The liturgical descriptions of the passage through the river continue in this section, and the events are again connected with Gilgal (4:19–20), a site still unidentified by archaeologists. The name Gilgal, meaning "circle," no doubt recalls the circular position of the twelve stones set up at this site (cf. also 5:9). Actually two accounts are given of where the stones were placed. In one (4:9), they were set up in the river bed where the priests had stood with the Ark. In the other (4:4–8), twelve men were appointed by Joshua to carry twelve stones from the Jordan, apparently to Gilgal. Both accounts, of course, agree that the stones were a memorial to the divine guidance in crossing the river.

Such descriptions provide us with valuable insights into Israelite worship. The worship of early Israel was rooted in the celebration of God's dynamic action in continuously meaningful events. The twelve stones, which also point to connections with the twelve tribes, were not cultic stones like the Canaanite "pillars" (see Deut. 12:3; → Pillars), but commemorated a specific saving event.

5:2–12, Circumcision and Passover at Gilgal. Two additional ritual events are narrated before Israel's departure from Gilgal. First, since the Israelite males who had been in the wilderness for forty years had not been circumcised, a ceremony of mass circumcision was carried out at Gilgal (→ Circumcision). Verse 8 states that in this representative act "the entire nation" was circumcised. Not only does this indicate the importance that circumcision as a rite attained; it also points to the way later memory reflected on this act. In this manner the entire people were prepared to enter the new land and to take part in the wars of conquest.

The second rite, a celebration of Passover, is briefly described in vv. 10–12 (→ Passover, The). The date given for the observance ("fourteenth day of the month in the evening") is the prescribed day for Passover of the later Priestly tradition (Exod. 12:6; Lev. 23:5). As to why the Passover was being observed at this time and place, vv. 11–12 offer an answer: the manna with which the people had been supplied ceased. Thus the Passover here initiates a new time in which the Israelites begin to eat food from the land they are about to occupy.

There may be yet another meaning, however. Since the crossing of the Jordan paralleled the crossing of the

sea in the Exodus, and since the Passover was so central to that great episode (Exod. 12:1–27), so here the same feast had to be celebrated because another momentous act of God's deliverance was about to occur.

5:13–15, A Meeting with the Lord's Military Commander. This eerie description seems to be a fragment of early tradition. Its inclusion here is especially powerful because Jericho was the first of the cities to be confronted in the conquest. Just as the attacks against the cities of Canaan are about to begin, Joshua beholds the mysterious commander of the Lord's army with an unsheathed sword ready for the fight.

Several other traditions tell of such a figure sent by Yahweh with a sword in hand (Num. 22:23; 1 Chron. 21:16). Josh. 5:14 mentions not only a commander, but also Yahweh's army, which adds even greater emphasis to the encounter. Israel is about to enter hostile territory. Yet Israel's strong and courageous leader can have confidence that the heavenly army will be on his side. Like Moses (Exod. 3:5), Joshua removes his shoes in the presence of this awesome personage.

6:1–12:24
The Conquest of Canaanite Cities

6:1–27, The Destruction of Jericho. It has already been noted that the story of Jericho is not a simple historical description, but a recollection carried on in ritual celebration (→ Jericho). The description of priests bearing the Ark, the blowing of the *shophar* (ram's horn, → Shophar), the prescribed order and times for encircling the city, and the observance of days are all from the rubrics of ritual celebration. Additions from a later age are also evident in v. 25, where it is noted that Rahab's family continued to a later time in Israel.

Whether the conquest of this city is to be taken largely as a later liturgical creation or whether this town actually fell to Israel will remain debated. Here is a case where archaeology cannot seem to resolve the problem. The excavator of Jericho, Kathleen Kenyon, held that the archaeological evidence is unclear about whether a city existed on the site at the time of Joshua's conquest. A more serious problem in the narrative, however, is the motif of the commanded destruction of everything in Jericho except those items earmarked for the Lord's treasury (vv. 18–19). This notion, called the "ban," is found often in the conquest narrative and is an element in the institution of holy war (→ Ban; Holy War). The idea was important to the Deuteronomistic historians because they were convinced that Israel's failure had come from intermingling with the religious culture of the Canaanites. According to them, therefore, everything belonging to a captured Canaanite city such as Jericho was to have been offered to God through destruction. Had Israel carried this out throughout its history, as Joshua led it to do earlier, it would have removed this danger and even warded off the eventual destruction of both kingdoms (see Deut. 20).

As unsettling as the ban is to modern readers, like the notion of holy war, it fostered an absolute confidence that God was indeed directing all that was occurring. In the account of Jericho each step was prescribed and the outcome was preordained; all that Israel needed to do was to follow. Because Joshua had such undaunted faith in this divine guidance in the war, not only was he successful, but his reputation became great throughout the land (v. 27).

7:1–26, Achan's Sin and the Defeat at Ai. The story of Achan is the most elaborate account in the Bible of a failure to carry out the ban and its consequences (cf. 1 Sam. 15:1–33). Achan's taking of forbidden things from Jericho resulted in a curse upon the Israelites, so that their superior force of several thousand men was thrown back in defeat at Ai. The divine anger could only be turned away if the forbidden things held by Achan were removed (v. 13).

In addition to informing us about the ban, this story illustrates how the Israelites saw evil and its effects spreading beyond a single person to a larger group. Since all of Achan's family, and even his cattle and possessions, had become infected with Achan's misdeed, they too were put to death or destroyed. A stone heap in the Valley of Achor south of Jerusalem on the way to Jericho became a reminder of this distressing event (v. 26).

Although in these ideas of the ban and punishment we are dealing with conceptions bound to an earlier time, the story of Achan can make us aware of the continuing importance of corporate responsibility. To be sure, we are well rid of the tribalism that extracted punishment for guilt from innocent members of a group. At the same time, the privatism and apathy that dominate so much of modern life are also failings, and a prophetically informed conscience, such as that of the Deuteronomistic historians, will not allow these to go unchallenged either.

8:1–29, The Destruction of Ai. The capture of Ai takes place by means of a brilliant strategy. The occupants of Ai are lured from their city at the same time that a small group of Israelite ambushers attack it from the opposite side and burn it. The army of Ai is thrown into pandemonium, and the Israelites rout them thoroughly.

Ai, identified with et-Tell, nine miles northeast of Jerusalem, is the site of imposing ruins dating to the Early Bronze Age, a thousand years before the Israelite entry into the land. At the time the latter was happening, only a small village stood on the site, and the story in Joshua 8 may concern this village. Problems exist, however, since excavation has produced no evidence

of a destruction of this village dating to the time of Israel's entry into the land. Therefore the narrative may also be simply a story based on the earlier ruins, although that interpretation also cannot be taken as assured. In any case, the story of Ai alerts us to the danger of reading the book of Joshua as simple historical description.

8:30–35, An Altar on Mount Ebal. This section gives the impression of being out of place. The account may, however, make sense if it is recalled that in Deut. 27:1–8 Moses commanded Israel, once they entered the land, to build an altar on Mount Ebal and to set up stones with the Torah written on them. Apparently it was thought that this would be an appropriate place for the tradition that Joshua fulfilled this dictate, despite the fact that the rest of the chapter has nothing to do with either Shechem or Mount Ebal.

9:1–27, The Treaty with the Gibeonites. The land that Israel entered was inhabited not only by Canaanites, but also by a number of differing ethnic groups (v. 1). One of these was the Hivites, known in modern scholarship as the Hurrians. Although their main city was Gibeon, several other cities were also included in their territory (v. 17). Archaeological exploration has made a strong case that Gibeon is el-Jib, about five and a half miles northwest of Jerusalem.

The Gibeonites are here described as concocting a scheme to enter into a covenant with the Israelites, so that they might not be destroyed by them. The story shows how strong was the notion of covenant (treaty) in the world in which the Israelites lived. Covenants were serious relationships. They were religiously sanctioned and enforced by the threat of curse and death (vv. 19–20). Thus, even though the Israelites were stunned to find they had been deceived by the Gibeonites, they could not cancel the covenant obligations.

This chapter is a little window into what must have been the complex history of the entry of the Israelites into the land. It ends with a note about later times, when the Gibeonites served at the altar in Jerusalem as "hewers of wood and drawers of water" (v. 27).

10:1–27, The Battle with the Five Kings. Because of Gibeon's treaty with the Israelites, and because Gibeon was located so close to Jerusalem, Adonizedek, king of Jerusalem, enlisted a coalition of kings to move against the inhabitants of this city. As these five kings gathered for war at Gibeon, Israel answered the latter's appeal for help. Thoroughly routing the enemy, the Israelites pursued the fleeing armies into the Valley of Aijalon, where, in the heat of battle, Joshua uttered an old piece of verse calling upon the sun and moon to stay in their place (vv. 12b–13a). That an astronomical event such as an eclipse may have occurred is possible, but it seems more likely that, since the quotation is from the book of Jashar, the occurrence was metaphorical in the original poetry, although the prose explanation in v. 13b interpreted it literally. The focus in the account is on God's mighty deliverance of Israel in the battle (v. 12a).

10:28–43, The Capture of the South. Archaeologists have debated whether all of the conquests recorded in this section took place as described or whether these texts have greatly telescoped the events. We know from other biblical texts and sometimes from archaeology that most of the cities named eventually became Israelite. But in the case of some of them, this did not occur until the monarchy was well established. Gezer (v. 33), for example, did not become an Israelite city until the time of Solomon (1 Kings 9:16–17). And despite the defeat of the king of Jerusalem recorded in v. 23, in reality this city was first taken only by David (2 Sam. 5:6–10). It makes no great difference theologically, however, whether some parts of the land were occupied early or late. For the historians all of it was a divine bestowal upon a nation that, despite some lapses, was faithful in following Joshua.

11:1–15, The Battle of Upper Galilee. In this final part of the conquest story, the scene shifts to the north and to territory later allocated to the tribes of Naphtali and Zebulun. The two foci are the battle at the "waters of Merom" and the destruction of the great city of Hazor.

As in the case of the southern battle in chap. 10, the king of Hazor called for a coalition of northern cities (Achshaph, Shimron, and Madon) to come out against Israel. The large site of Tel Hazor has been excavated recently, and the director of the work, Yigael Yadin, attributed the destruction of the Canaanite city to the incoming Israelites, with the latter's own smaller settlement being built over the earlier ruins (→ Hazor).

11:16–23, The Grand Finale of the Conquest. This section is a summation of the Deuteronomistic historians' interpretation of the period of conquest. Here it is stated that the entire land from the Negev to Mount Hermon was taken, and that God's hand was in all events, including the resistance offered by the inhabitants. Thus God was able to establish his people in their own territories (v. 23). Only the Gibeonites (v. 19) and the Anakim in Gaza, Gath, and Ashdod (v. 22) were untouched by the conquest.

12:1–24, A List of Kings Defeated by Israel. This chapter contains a summary list of the "kings of the land" (vv. 1, 7) defeated by Joshua. Most of these "kings" were local rulers over city-states. Some, like the Transjordanian kings Sihon of Heshbon and Og of Bashan, controlled larger territories.

The list must have had a teaching purpose and thus was probably formulated much later than the time of Israelite penetration into the land. Its intent was to show how Moses and Joshua had led Israel to victory first in Transjordan and then west of the Jordan River.

Evidently the list is a telescoped summation rather than a description of events at the time of the Israelite entry, since it required a longer time for Israel to become dominant in the land than the list implies. Comparison must be made with Judges 1, which describes a more gradual settlement in different areas of the country.

13:1–21:45
Traditions of Land Assignments

These chapters become more meaningful if readers study them alongside the geography of the land of Israel, since frequent reference is made to locations of territories and towns. It is possible to discuss here only the most important locations and proposals for their identifications (*see* Color Map 3; → most individual place names).

13:1–33, Allotments in Transjordan

13:1–14, The Unpossessed Land. In comparison with 10:40–43, this description presents a very different picture of the conquest. Large parts of the land, especially along the Philistine coast and in Lebanon to the north, remained untaken. These verses fit well with what is presently known from archaeology, and they are also closer to the descriptions in Judges 1. In neither Philistia nor Lebanon did Israel gain a foothold until the time of David, nearly two centuries after Joshua.

The nine and a half tribes mentioned in v. 7 were settled west of the Jordan River. The distribution of land to the two and a half tribes east of the Jordan (cf. Num. 32:33–42) is introduced in vv. 8–13. Verse 14, on the other hand, notes the landless status of the Levites, who were set aside for special religious purposes.

13:15–23, The Territory of Reuben. Reuben's area lay directly east of the upper half of the Dead Sea. Its southern border was the Arnon River, the spectacular gorge known today as Wadi Mujib in modern Jordan. The tradition of the slaying of Balaam (v. 22) does not appear in the account of Balaam in Numbers 22–24, and it is bewildering why Israel is said to have killed this foreign seer who placed an unusual blessing on the people.

13:24–28, The Territory of Gad. The territory of Gad was east of the Jordan River, extending from near the north end of the Dead Sea to the Jabbok River (modern Wadi ez-Zerqa). The description has the border going as far as the southern edge of the Sea of Galilee or Chinnereth, but this area was controlled by Manasseh, as the following shows.

13:29–33, The Territory of Manasseh. This tribe, which had more extensive holdings west of the Jordan, occupied territory stretching east and southeast from the Sea of Galilee. The Transjordan allotments conclude with a summation statement in vv. 32–33.

14:1–15:63, Allotments West of the Jordan

14:1–5, Introduction. The description focuses on territories west of the Jordan River. Those in charge of the distribution here were Joshua, Eleazer the priest, and "the heads of the families of the tribes of Israel" (JB). It was they who apportioned the territories by lot according to the divine command given earlier to Moses (Num. 26:55). Lots are referred to throughout this account of the inheritance of the land. Although having some features of magic, the use of lots is better understood as an element in the divine gift of the land, which Yahweh alone could distribute.

14:6–15, The Allotment of Hebron to Caleb. Caleb's claim rested on an earlier pledge made by Moses (Num. 14:24–25). Caleb's request included the area around Hebron (formerly Kiriath-arba), one of the prominent towns of the southern Judean hills. As in the earlier account, he again demonstrates courage in vowing, even at his advanced age, to take Hebron from the Anakim.

15:1–12, The Boundaries of Judah. Judah's boundary on the south (v. 2) cut across the Negev from the south end of the Dead Sea to the Mediterranean Sea. The northern boundary (v. 5) began at the northern tip of the Dead Sea and continued across the hill country to the Mediterranean. Because the northern boundary skirted Jerusalem on the south (v. 8), it placed this city in the territory of Benjamin. Later, after the division of the kingdom, the city that David had made the capital of all Israel became the capital of the Southern Kingdom alone.

15:13–19, The Family of Caleb in Hebron. A further piece about Caleb is introduced at this point, probably because this clan's activities were centered in a major city in Judah, namely, Hebron.

15:20–62, A City List from Judah. This section contains an independent list of the cities of Judah. Scholars have debated its date, but a widely held view is that it was put into final form at the time of King Josiah (640–609 B.C.). On the other hand, there may be earlier parts reflecting an official tally of cities during the early monarchy.

The list has an interest in the four regions of Judah: the Negeb ("extreme south," v. 21), the Shephelah ("lowland," v. 33), the "hill country" (v. 48), and the "wilderness" (v. 61). In addition, it is arranged according to a series of twelve provinces, each with a capital city, suggesting the conditions of the monarchy.

15:63, Jebusite Jerusalem. This brief notation fits well with the account incorporated by the Deuteronomistic historians in 2 Sam. 5:6–10. There the city of Jerusalem was in the hands of the Jebusites until David's army conquered it.

16:1–17:18, Allotments to the Joseph Tribes

16:1–4, General Introduction. Although not mentioned until v. 4, "the sons of Joseph" refers to Ephraim and Manasseh, the two large tribes of northern Israel.

Here their southern boundary is very generally traced from the Rift Valley below Jericho to the Mediterranean Sea.

16:5–10, The Territory of Ephraim. The tribe of Ephraim was allotted its land in the central hill country. With a line beginning near Jericho, its southern boundary followed the Brook Kanah to the Mediterranean Sea. At this western end the area became lowland and coastal plain. The great city of Gezer, located within this territory, remained non-Israelite until Solomon's time (v. 10; 1 Kings 9:16).

17:1–13, The Territory of Manasseh. The account begins with an apportionment of land to a family within the tribe of Manasseh, the Machirites. This family traced its ancestry to Machir, Manasseh's first son (Gen. 50:23). Seeking a special allotment, the Machirites were assigned several territories in Gilead in Transjordan. Thus, as is mentioned elsewhere (Num. 32:33–42), Manasseh possessed land on both sides of the Jordan River.

The boundary descriptions for Manassite territory west of the Jordan (vv. 7–13) situated this tribe north of Ephraim, and in fact the southern boundary edged up on territories and towns properly in Ephraim (vv. 8–10).

17:14–18, Joseph's Colonization of the Hill Country. Archaeological survey has shown an upward swing in the intensity of settlements in the hill country during the time the Israelites were settling in Canaan. It is possible that terracing was introduced during this period, making a new type of farming in the hilly areas possible. In any case, Ephraim and Manasseh's large territories included newly cleared forest areas (v. 18).

18:1–19:51, Allotments to the Seven Remaining Tribes

18:1–10, Joshua at Shiloh. Joshua 18–19 report the distribution of land to the seven smaller tribes north of Ephraim. Whereas Joshua earlier (14:6) was said to have apportioned the land while at Gilgal, here he is at Shiloh in the land of Ephraim.

18:11–28, The Territory of Benjamin. The description shows the inheritance of Benjamin wedged between the larger areas of Judah on the south and Ephraim on the north. The northern border passed north of Jericho to Bethel, bending back to the south on the south side of Jerusalem and from there once more to the Rift Valley.

19:1–9, The Territory of Simeon. At some point Simeon's territory was absorbed into Judah, and thus its original boundaries are indefinite in the descriptions. Its most famous city was Beer-sheba (v. 2).

19:10–16, The Territory of Zebulun. The land allotted to Zebulun lay between Asher along the coast to the west and Issachar in the southern Galilee to the east. The Bethlehem mentioned in v. 15 is, of course, not the famous one in the land of Judah.

19:17–23, The Territory of Issachar. Issachar's inheritance included the fertile hilly land surrounding Mount Tabor as a western boundary, with its territory extending eastward to the Jordan River below the Sea of Galilee.

19:24–31, The Territory of Asher. Located along the coast north and south of modern Haifa, Asher included such prominent cities as Achzib (v. 29).

19:32–39, The Territory of Naphtali. Naphtali's inheritance stretched along the western side of the Sea of Galilee and included the territory north and west of the same sea.

19:40–48, The Territory of Dan. In its earliest history in the land of Canaan, Dan had settled southwest of Jerusalem in territory made famous by the stories of Samson (Judg. 13:2). As v. 47 shows, Dan lost this territory under pressure from the Amorites (Judg. 1:34) and probably the Philistines (Judg. 13:1–2). Thus this tribe migrated to upper Galilee north of Naphtali. Its boundaries there, however, are only imprecisely described.

19:49–51, Joshua's City and Summation. To Joshua finally was presented his own city by the people of Israel (v. 49).

In summary, it can be seen that Joshua 19 is based in part on a list of cities similar to the one noted in 15:20–62. It is also apparent from Judg. 1:27–36 that the Northern tribes, including Manasseh, did not win swift victories over the Canaanites, as the book of Joshua would have it. They only gradually attained dominance over these areas.

20:1–21:45, Cities of Refuge and Cities for Levites

20:1–9, Cities of Refuge. The establishment of sanctuary cities gives us a glimpse into the way ancient Israel handled the social implications of homicide (cf. Num. 35:9–34; Deut. 19:1–13). Since in Israelite belief the blood carried the life of a person, the shedding of blood not only deprived an individual of life, but was also a blow against the corporate group from which the victim came. The "redeemer" (v. 5) was a member of the tribe obligated to see that justice was done by taking the life of the slayer.

Three cities on each side of the Jordan were appointed to protect a person who had killed unintentionally. Fleeing to the gate of any of these cities, an "unwitting" slayer could receive asylum with the town's elders as long as the current high priest lived. Upon the latter's death, the slayer could return home.

21:1–42, Cities for the Levites. The Levites, as has been stressed (14:3; 18:7), received no allotment of land, but lived among the other tribes. The history of the Levites shows how they developed from being like the other tribes to a group devoted to special ritual activities. Some have held that the Deuteronomistic historians' interest in the levitical priests indicates that they themselves were from this circle, although the

point is disputed. Joshua 21 records forty-eight cities scattered among the twelve territories as special cities for the Levites. Included with these cities were also surrounding lands for livestock and presumably also for cultivation.

21:43–45, The Conquest of the Land Concluded. This summary is from the Deuteronomistic historians. It concludes the materials dealing with conquest and settlement, and also capsulizes the historians' theological perspective, especially their belief that the land was the most tangible sign of God's deliverance of Israel. As the historians view it, toward the end of Joshua's life the land was broadly occupied by Israel, and each part was happily settled.

22:1–24:33
Three Concluding Chapters

22:1–34, The Transjordanian Tribes Return Home. Earlier the two and a half tribes east of the Jordan River had been commissioned to assist the tribes west of the river to settle their lands (1:14–15). Upon their return when all of this was concluded, they built an altar near the Jordan River. This action clearly violated the key Deuteronomic precept (Deut. 12:13–14) that sacrifices and offerings were to be offered only at the central sanctuary of Israel. Shiloh was such a central sanctuary earlier, and later Jerusalem became for the Deuteronomic movement the only legitimate place of worship.

So serious is this violation seen to be that the western tribes prepare for battle against their Transjordanian kinsmen. But the mediation of Phinehas and "the leaders of the community" (NEB) reduces the tension. The eastern tribes present an apology that they meant their altar to serve only as a "witness" of their continuing allegiance to Yahweh. Indeed, their confession in v. 34 is that "Yahweh is God."

Through this episode the Deuteronomistic historians again assert that faithfulness to Yahweh and the covenant must never be compromised. And this included purity of worship in a centralized liturgical system in Jerusalem.

23:1–16, Joshua's Final Speech. The final chapters of this book are something like the closing movement of a symphony. A brief conclusion in 21:43–45 gives way to a new section in chap. 22. Joshua 23 then presents the last oration of the great leader, which is followed by the important Shechem assembly in 24:1–28. Only in 24:29–33 is the final note struck. Unlike a symphony, however, this undulating movement is no doubt the result of several stages in the book's composition.

Joshua's speech is one of the key addresses in the Deuteronomistic History, and again it is mainly the work of the historians. At the heart of the speech is the notion that Yahweh had set Israel aside on a land given by promise, making a covenant with this people that was grounded "in the book of the law of Moses" (v. 6). Faithfulness to the covenant meant the rejection of Canaanite forms of worship and, above all, intermarriage. Since vv. 14–16 suggest that the people have already gone into exile or are just about to be deported, the thoughts of Joshua's speech date not too far from the Babylonian exile that began in 587 B.C.

24:1–28, The Gathering at Shechem. It is generally agreed that Joshua 24 contains old traditions about a covenant ceremony at Shechem to which a good deal of Deuteronomic expression has been added (for instance, the listing of the peoples west of the Jordan in v. 11).

A key question for this chapter is whether this ceremony was one in which the various tribes of Israel for the first time gathered together to pledge their loyalty to Yahweh or whether it represented an ongoing, perhaps annual, ceremony of covenant reaffirmation. Scholarship has tended toward the first of these views, taking chap. 24 as an indispensable source of information about the way the tribes came together into a unity in early Israel. Most important, however, this great assembly at Shechem sums up the historians' perspective, which can be seen throughout the book. Like Joshua, Israel was called to be Yahweh's servant. Nothing more important could be said by all of Israel than the response given in v. 21: "It is Yahweh we wish to serve" (JB).

24:29–33, A Trilogy of Burial Traditions. The conquest and settlement history of the book of Joshua closes with brief accounts of the burials of its most important actors: Joshua, Joseph, and the high priest Eleazar. With these prosaic reports the book concludes. Yet taken as a whole the book of Joshua is far from prosaic. It abounds with a sense of urgency. Promise and responsibility are in tension throughout. According to the Deuteronomistic historians who have passed on this rich material, nothing is more wondrous than the covenanting God who gives his people a place and a future. The proper response to him is the committed covenant life that his promise evokes—a life of faithfulness and obedience.

Bibliography

Boling, R. G. *Joshua.* Anchor Bible, 6. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1982.

Brueggemann, W. *Revelation and Violence: A Study in Contextualization.* Milwaukee, WI: Marquette University Press, 1986.

Finkelstein, I. *The Archaeology of the Israelite Settlement.* Jerusalem: Israel Exploration Society, 1988.

Lind, M. *Yahweh Is a Warrior: The Theology of Warfare in Ancient Israel.* Scottsdale, AZ: Herald Press, 1980.
Nelson, R. D. *Joshua: A Commentary.* Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1997.
Noth, M. *The Deuteronomistic History.* Journal for the Old Testament Supplement Series, 15. Sheffield: University of Sheffield, 1981.
Soggin, J. A. *Joshua: A Commentary.* Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1972.

Judges

J. CHERYL EXUM

INTRODUCTION

Title and Scope

The English title of the book of Judges derives from the Latin, *Liber Judicum* (Heb. *shophetim*; Gk. *kritai*) and refers to the leaders of Israel in the critical period between the occupation of the land of Canaan under Joshua and the establishment of the monarchy under the leadership of Samuel (→ Joshua; Samuel; Saul). The death of Joshua, reported in chap. 1, marks the end of an old era, the period of conquest, and begins a new era, the period of the judges. The period of the judges extends beyond the book of Judges into 1 Samuel, where Samuel, in addition to being a prophet, is also a judge (1 Sam. 7:15–17; cf. 4:18, for Eli). Whereas the book of Joshua dealt with the occupation of the land of Canaan and its allotment among the Israelite tribes, Judges deals with Israel's inability to drive out all the inhabitants of the land and the reasons for its failure to do so. It thus presents a different picture from the one in Joshua, where the conquest is sudden and complete (though a careful reading of Joshua reveals inconsistencies in its version of the conquest). In Judges, Israel is still engaged in a struggle to wrest the land from the Canaanites and must repeatedly respond to attacks from hostile neighbors.

The book may be divided into three parts: a double introduction, which deals with Israel's failure to conquer Canaan completely, first from a military and then from a religious perspective (1:1–3:6); the main body of the book, consisting largely of the adventures of the individual judges (3:7–16:31); and a double conclusion (chaps. 17–21), which sets the stage for the transition to the monarchy by painting a picture of moral decline and political dissolution in a time when "there was no king in Israel and every man did as he pleased" (21:25). The stories of the judges are thus framed by an introduction that looks back to the book of Joshua and a conclusion that looks forward to the books of Samuel and Kings.

Who Were the Judges?

The main body of the book presents twelve figures as leaders of Israel: Othniel, Ehud, Shamgar, Deborah, Gideon, Tola, Jair, Jephthah, Ibzan, Elon, Abdon, and Samson. The number corresponds to the twelve tribes of Israel, but not every tribe is represented by a judge; most of the judges are from the central hill country. The exact duties of these figures are not at all clear. None is actually called a "judge" (apart from the introduction in 2:16–19, that title appears only once, in reference to God, 11:27). Only nine are said to have judged Israel (Othniel, Deborah, Tola, Jair, Jephthah, Ibzan, Elon, Abdon, and Samson), whereas some appear on the scene to "deliver" Israel from its enemies (Othniel, Ehud, Shamgar, Gideon, Tola, and Samson).

It has become customary to distinguish between "major judges," the military leaders about whose exploits we have stories, and "minor judges," the relatively obscure figures who appear in a list (10:1–5; 12:[7]8–15) and about whom we know almost nothing apart from the fact that they "judged Israel." Since Jephthah appears both in a story and in the list of minor judges, he is usually assigned to both categories.

The Hebrew word *shaphat* ("to judge") has a wider semantic range than the English, meaning not only "to judge" in the forensic sense, but also "to govern" or "to rule" (cf. 2 Kings 15:5; Pss. 2:10; 148:11). When applied to the minor judges, for whom no military functions are reported, the title suggests they may have been local rulers responsible for civil administration and jurisdiction (note that though they are said to "judge Israel," their sphere of influence is local). The major judges, except Deborah, are not judges at all in the judicial sense. The term "charismatic" is often used to describe their leadership; for the most part, they are divinely inspired by the "spirit of the LORD" to lead individual Israelite tribes against their enemies, and their leadership is limited to a particular crisis. Jephthah is appointed commander and head (Heb. *rosh*) by the elders of Gilead on condition that his military campaign against the Ammonites prove successful (11:9–11), but his duties, apart from military leadership, are not described. In contrast, Deborah appears to have rendered legal decisions to Israelites who came to her in the hill country of Ephraim (4:5); and from his home in Ramah, Samuel went on a circuit to Bethel, Gilgal, and Mizpah, apparently giving case decisions in all of these places (1 Sam. 7:16). The paucity of our knowledge about the political organization of Israel in this time makes it impossible to be precise about the actual functions of its leaders. We seem to be

dealing with two forms of leadership, represented by "judges" and "deliverers," which have been combined by the editors of the book under the concept of judges of Israel.

The Composition of the Book

Judges is the second book in the traditional division of the Bible known as the Former Prophets (Joshua, Judges, Samuel, Kings) and the third book of an account of Israel's history that many scholars believe begins with the book of Deuteronomy and continues through Kings (excluding Ruth, which in the Hebrew Bible belongs to the Writings). This composition, called the Deuteronomistic History because of its noticeable affinities with the style and theological outlook of Deuteronomy, presents a comprehensive religious history of Israel from the Exodus to the Exile (→ Deuteronomist; Deuteronomistic Historian). Although scholars disagree regarding the date and number of editions of the Deuteronomistic History, most believe it underwent at least two major editions, one in the seventh century B.C. during the reign of the Judean king Josiah (see 2 Kings 22–23), and the other, exilic (sixth century B.C.). In composing their religious history, the Deuteronomistic compilers used earlier sources, but their selection and presentation of the ancient material also reflect the particular religious and political issues of their own time. Thus, the sin-punishment pattern in Judges explains the fall of the Northern Kingdom in 721 B.C., and the prominence given to the tribe of Judah reflects the exclusive claims to leadership of the Judahite (Davidic) monarchy, while the final chapters (19–21) serve to discredit Saul and his tribe. The stories of unscrupulous Levites in chaps. 17–21 discredit the Levites, whom Josiah's reform deprived of livelihood by closing local cultic centers and centralizing worship in Jerusalem. It is evident that the compilers responsible for Judges in its final form have not produced a historical record of Israel's premonarchical past; instead, they created a version of that past from which their contemporaries could draw a lesson about God's discipline and mercy.

The kinds of sources available to the compilers for different periods of Israelite history and the way they dealt with these sources differ for each of the books of Joshua, Judges, Samuel, and Kings (*see* 1 Samuel, Introduction; 2 Samuel, Introduction; 1, 2 Kings, Introduction). Judges itself has a long and complex editorial history. The Deuteronomistic historians probably drew much of their material from local or tribal traditions, which arose orally and were later fixed into written form. The folkloristic character of the Samson stories, for example, is readily evident. Some scholars think that the editors had a book of "savior" or "deliverer" stories at their disposal. If the minor judges represent some kind of official list, this would mean the editors had access to an annalistic source. They have also included an inspiring victory song (Judg. 5), which is one of the oldest literary compositions in the Bible.

The present form of the book gives the impression that the judges exercised authority over a unified Israel and that they followed one another in an unbroken succession. Closer examination, however, reveals the artificiality of this picture. Chap. 1 details the struggle of individual Israelite tribes to establish themselves in their own particular territory. Moreover, in the individual stories of the judges, the tribes act independently or, at most, two or three tribes band together against a common threat. The exception is Judges 5, where Deborah and Barak lead a coalition of tribes against the Canaanites. The overall picture, then, does not support a view of Israel as a militarily and religiously unified tribal organization, but rather suggests that the settlement process was largely a local affair and the influence of the judges too was essentially local. That this picture is not immediately apparent results from the way Judges has been organized: tribal traditions have been nationalized and placed within a chronological framework so that local heroes, some of whom originally may have been contemporaries exercising authority in different geographic areas, have now become a series of deliverers of "all Israel."

In their organization of the book, the editors of Judges are primarily interested in presenting a religious interpretation of Israel's history during the period of the judges. They view this history as repetitive, illustrating again and again the consequences of unfaithfulness. The stories of the major judges appear within the framework of a cyclical pattern that illustrates this theological perspective. The main elements of the pattern are the Israelites do what is evil in the eyes of the Lord by turning to other gods; as a result the Lord gives them into the hands of oppressors for a stated period of time; the people cry out in their distress; and the Lord raises up judges who deliver them. After the story of deliverance, the land is said to "have rest" for periods of forty or eighty years.

A few things should be noted about this editorial framework. It is frequently described by scholars as a pattern of apostasy/punishment/repentance/deliverance, but in fact the Israelites repent only once (10:10–16) and other elements of the pattern also vary somewhat. God does not, therefore, act strictly in accordance with retributive theology; instead, a tension emerges between divine mercy, which is moved to intervention by Israel's plight, and divine justice, which demands that as a consequence of disobedience, the Israelites shall not prosper in the land that the Lord promised to their ancestors (2:1–3; 20–23; cf. Deut. 11:13–17; Josh. 23:12–13).

Although its basic orientation is cyclical rather

than linear, Judges does move forward. The pattern itself exhibits variation; for example, the rest formula appears for the last time after the story of Gideon, and few elements of the pattern occur in the story of Samson. Thus by the end of the main body of the book, the cyclical pattern of history has exhausted itself. A deterioration in the character of the judges themselves can also be observed. By the end of Judges, the pressing question becomes how Israel can break out of the repetitive pattern that has characterized its life in Canaan since the death of Joshua (2:11–23). Samson, unlike the judges before him, does not succeed in delivering Israel from its oppressor—in this case, the Philistines. Where is the leader who can do so? (Ancient listeners knew, of course, as we do, that David is that leader.) The concluding stories of Judges (chaps. 17–21) even more explicitly acknowledge the crisis of leadership. They look toward the institution of kingship as providing a possible answer to Israel's moral and political problems.

Social World and Literary Representation

It is impossible to get behind the highly stylized, artificial presentation of events in Judges to establish a chronology for the period or to discover very much about Israel's political or religious organization during this time. If the chronology of the book itself is followed, the figures for the number of years of oppression, the judges' tenure of office, and the periods of rest add up to 410 years (not including the time of Eli and Samuel), a period of time much longer than the generally accepted dating of the period of the judges between roughly 1200 B.C. and the accession of Saul, around 1020.

The picture Judges presents is one of social unrest and upheaval and of sporadic fighting to gain control of territory. It has been suggested that the conflict between "Canaanite" and "Israelite" society is essentially one between a city-state society, in which social structure was hierarchical, maintaining a clear distinction between a privileged ruling class and its subject population, and a rural, tribal social system, in which considerable power resided at the ground level, with the extended family serving as the primary social and economic unit and, beyond it, the clan and the tribe. In any event, evidence of a centralized administration in premonarchical Israel is lacking (chaps. 20–21, which depict a united Israel with the Ark of the Lord at Bethel, is of dubious historical value); the individual stories of Judges, however, do bear witness to occasional instances of tribal cooperation against common enemies.

The patriarchal structure of Israelite society, in which women and young men were subordinate to mature men, is reflected in the stories of the judges. In periods of social disturbance, such as are represented by the numerous military crises in Judges, and also in societies where power is centered in the domestic, rather than the larger political, sphere, women are often seen to exercise power (see, e.g., the story of Deborah, chaps. 4–5). At the same time, a perceived expansion of women's social and political power tends to give rise to cultural anxieties over the consequences of women's increasing independence. Thus, in spite of the attention it gives to women characters, Judges is no manifesto for women's rights. Jephthah's daughter is commemorated in a women's ritual ceremony, but her name is not recorded and she is valorized for her submission to her father's word (11:34–40). Although Samson's mother is more favorably portrayed than her husband, she poses no threat to his authority, and she, too, remains unnamed (chap. 13). And when another unnamed woman asserts her autonomy by leaving her husband, she ends up raped by a mob and subsequently dismembered by her husband (chap. 19).

It is not just women who are portrayed with increasing ambivalence as the book of Judges draws to a close; the judges themselves are ambiguous characters, leaders whose flaws become increasingly problematic, and God, as Israel's true king (8:23; cf. 1 Sam. 8:7), is entangled in the crisis of leadership. God is active in the affairs of Deborah and Gideon, bears direct responsibility for Abimelech's downfall, is implicated in Jephthah's tragic vow, and assumes a controlling, though behind-the-scene, role in the exploits of Samson. Curiously aloof from the events of chaps. 17–19, God plays a major role in the internecine war of chaps. 20–21, sending the Israelites twice to defeat before granting them victory over their "kinfolk the Benjaminites" (20:23) and thereby creating "a breach in the tribes of Israel" (21:15) that requires extraordinary and unethical measures to repair (see commentary below on 21:1–25).

COMMENTARY

1:1–3:6
Double Introduction

1:1–36
Introduction, Part One: The Military Problem

Judges begins with the words, "After the death of Joshua," a beginning comparable to that of Joshua, "After the death of Moses." The Israelites seek a divine oracle (through what means is not specified) to determine which tribe should lead the attack against the Canaanites. Their question indicates that Israel's conquest of the promised land is far from complete. The

Canaanites are the indigenous population Israel was supposed to drive out (Deut. 7:1–5; 20:16–18; Josh. 23:6–13); other terms used for the inhabitants of the land are Perizzites (Judg. 1:4–5) and Amorites (v. 34). Judges 1 appears to be based on ancient sources clearly at odds with Joshua's picture of a sudden and complete conquest. It functions to enhance the role of Judah, the tribe from which the Davidic kings will come, and to play down the accomplishments of the other tribes. Some consider it a more realistic account of Israelite settlement, as opposed to Joshua's idealized version. The tribes fight more or less on their own, and though some successes are reported, the account quickly becomes a list of failures to conquer the Canaanites. The Israelites were unable to overthrow the city-states in the fertile plains, occupying instead the mountainous regions and steppes. This was essentially the situation until the time of David.

The geographical movement in the chapter is from south to north; a similar movement may be observed in the book as a whole, which begins with Othniel as the judge from the south (3:7–11, also mentioned here in v. 13) and ends with Dan in the north (chaps. 13–18). For groups about whom success is reported (Judah, Caleb, and Joseph), vivid anecdotes appear to break up the otherwise matter-of-fact account (1:5–7, 11–15, 22–26).

1:1–21, Victories in the South. First to be reported are the victories in the southern hill country on the part of Judah and groups associated with it: the tribe of Simeon, the Calebites, and the Kenites. Judah has a central role here and also in chap. 20. The location of Bezek, the site of their first victory, is uncertain. They capture Adonibezek (a name meaning "prince of Bezek"), cut off his thumbs and big toes, and bring him to Jerusalem, where he dies (vv. 5–7). Only in the next verse, however, is Judah said to have captured Jerusalem, and that statement is contradicted by v. 21, which relates that the Benjaminites did not drive out the Jebusites from Jerusalem. Josh. 15:63 makes the same statement about Judah. In Josh. 18:28, Jerusalem belongs to the territory assigned to Benjamin. That Jerusalem was on the border between the two tribes may explain the discrepancy. In any event, it is David who actually conquers Jerusalem (2 Sam. 5:6–10).

According to Judg. 1:10, Judah attacked Hebron and defeated Sheshai, Ahiman, and Talmai, whereas v. 20 assigns Hebron to Caleb and both it and Josh. 15:14 credit Caleb with victory over the three sons of Anak—Sheshai, Ahiman, and Talmai (the Anakim are elsewhere identified as giants, Deut. 2:10–12, 20–21). Caleb was early assimilated to the tribe of Judah. The Calebite Othniel conquered Debir, winning Caleb's daughter Achsah as a wife in the bargain (cf. David's bride price for Michal of two hundred Philistine foreskins, 1 Sam. 18:25–27). Since Othniel is assigned the Negeb (the desert area in the south), Achsah shrewdly asks her father for springs of water (1:14–15). The story appears also in Josh. 15:13–19. Josh. 10:36–39, on the other hand, attributes the conquest of both Hebron and Debir to Joshua. The Kenites, related to Moses through marriage, are mentioned as accompanying the tribe of Judah (1:16; → Kenites). Judah and Simeon totally destroy Zephath; the verb used refers to the sacrificial ban or *cherem* (Heb.; → Ban), which is frequently invoked in Joshua, but only twice in Judges (see also 21:11). The name Hormah is a wordplay on *cherem*. The statement in 1:18 that Judah took Gaza, Ashkelon, and Ekron is anachronistic. These cities were members of the Philistine pentapolis and did not come under Israelite control until much later. Perhaps we should read the word "not" in v. 18, with the Septuagint (LXX). Verse 19 offers a more sober assessment of the situation, showing Judah in possession of the hill country, while attributing its inability to conquer the cities of the plain to the Canaanites' military superiority.

1:22–36, Setbacks in the North. Of the central and Northern tribes, victory is reported only for the tribe of Joseph. Its capture of Bethel is based on deception. Deception, it turns out, figures importantly throughout Judges, from Ehud's deception of Eglon (chap. 3) to Delilah's deception of Samson (chap. 16). Manasseh and Ephraim, the two tribes into which the tribe of Joseph was divided, were unsuccessful against the city-states of Beth-shean, Taanach, Dor, Ibleam, Megiddo, Gezer, and their dependencies (NRSV: "villages"). Failure is also reported for the Northern tribes of Zebulun, Asher, and Naphtali. That in later times Israel was able to subjugate these Canaanite enclaves is noted in vv. 28, 30, and 33, which inform us that the Canaanites were subjected either to forced labor or to taxation as a form of vassalage, depending on how one understands the Hebrew term. Probably the latter is meant. According to v. 34, the Danites were unable to get a foothold in the plains. Chap. 18 will return to their plight, describing their migration from the central hill country around Zorah and Eshtaol to the north, where they take over an unsuspecting city in a surprise attack.

2:1–3:6
Introduction, Part Two: The Religious Problem

The second part of the introduction to Judges seeks to explain the military setbacks detailed in the first part. Why, in light of God's promises to give Israel the land, has Israel not been successful? How does one account for the continued presence of Canaanites in the land? This introductory section begins by interpreting the continuing presence of the native population as punishment for Israel's unfaithfulness (2:1–5) and ends by describing the nations as a means to test Israel (2:20–23) and to teach war to the generations of Israelites who had not experienced it (3:1–6). These

three different but interrelated explanations frame the programmatic description of life under the judges that provides the theme of the main body of the book (2:6–19).

2:1–5, The Lord's Angel. A divine messenger, or "angel," appears to announce that Israel's disobedience is the reason for its failure completely to conquer the Canaanites. Israel broke God's command not to form alliances with the inhabitants of the land (cf. Exod. 34:12–16; Deut. 7:2–5). As a consequence, God refuses to drive out the Canaanites; they will remain a troublesome presence in the land and their gods will lead Israel astray (a pointed example of Canaanite worship becoming a "snare" to Israel is Gideon's ephod, 8:27). Gilgal was Israel's base in the conquest narratives of Joshua. The etiological story of Bochim (of uncertain location) rests on a wordplay; the place is called Bochim (Heb., "Weepers") because the people wept (2:4–5).

2:6–19, The Cyclical Pattern of Apostasy, Oppression, Deliverance. Verses 6–9 (= Josh. 24:28–31) offer a flashback to the time of Joshua. They function to contrast the faithfulness of Joshua's generation with the unfaithfulness of the present generation (v. 10). Verses 11–19 present an elaborate statement of the schema of apostasy, oppression, and deliverance, which serves as the framing device for the stories of the major judges. The Israelites forsake the Lord and worship the gods of the local population. The god Baal and the goddess Astarte are well known to us from the Ugaritic literature. The Bible uses these names, in the singular or plural, as general designations for the Canaanite deities (similarly the name of the goddess Asherah [plural: Asheroth], 3:7). The Israelites' apostasy provokes the Lord's anger, and he gives them over to their enemies (here again the nations are a means of punishment, 2:14–15). Although the Lord raised up judges to save them (v. 16; according to v. 18 the Lord acted out of pity for their plight), they did not listen to their judges (v. 17), and when the judge died, they behaved even worse than before (v. 19). Israel's faithlessness and stubbornness are thus underscored, and it becomes obvious that the Israelites are doomed continually to repeat this pattern. Whatever successes they have in the land are due to divine mercy, and not any merit on Israel's part. No lasting relief from this cycle is envisioned, so that the implicit question becomes, how can the pattern be broken?

2:20–3:6, The Nations That Remain. Verses 21, 23 contradict the claim in Joshua that God gave all the land into Joshua's power (see esp. Josh. 10–12). The nations said to remain comprise a standard list of indigenous people—Canaanites, Hittites, Amorites, Perizzites, Hivites, and Jebusites (v. 5; cf. Deut. 7:1 for the "seven nations")—as well as the Philistines, who occupied the coastal plain to the south, and the Sidonians (Phoenicians) on the northern coast (3:3). The Jebusites were the native population of Jerusalem. The Israelites intermarry with these peoples and, as a result, serve their gods (v. 6), both in explicit violation of God's commands.

3:7–11
Othniel

The account of the first judge consists almost entirely of framework formulas: apostasy (v. 7); oppression (v. 8); cry for help (v. 9); deliverance (vv. 9–10); rest (v. 11). For this reason, some interpreters have suggested that Othniel was supplied by the editors of Judges in order to have a judge from Judah (recall the prominence given to Judah in chap. 1). The foe ("Cushan of the Double Evil," king of Aram-naharaim [the biblical name for Mesopotamia]) also appears contrived, since it is unlikely Mesopotamia would have threatened southern Israel. Some (e.g., NJB) emend "Aram" to "Edom," thereby obtaining a southern adversary. According to 1:13–15, Othniel was the conqueror of Debir. The spirit of the Lord that comes upon him (v. 10) is a divine force that animates various leaders, often causing them to perform extraordinary deeds (Gideon, Jephthah, Samson, and later Saul and David are all inspired by the spirit at some point in their lives).

3:12–30
Ehud

The story of the next deliverer, Ehud, is set within the familiar editorial framework (vv. 12–15, 30). The oppressor is Moab, Israel's neighbor east of the Dead Sea, which, according to v. 13, enlists the help of the Ammonites, to the north of Moab in Transjordan, and the Amalekites, Israel's traditional enemies from the desert (Exod. 17:8–16). They capture the "city of palms," a common designation for Jericho; it is not, however, altogether clear whether the main action of the story takes place west of the Jordan near Jericho or in Transjordan. The Israelite territory primarily affected is Benjamin, and from this tribe the Lord raises up the deliverer Ehud. Ehud is "restricted in his right hand"; the Hebrew expression refers either to a physical handicap or, more likely, as in 20:16, to left-handedness (LXX and the Vulgate [Vg.] read "ambidextrous"; cf. 1 Chron. 12:2). Ehud achieves deliverance by assassinating Eglon and leading his compatriots from the hill country of Ephraim (Benjamin and neighboring Ephraim) to victory over the Moabites.

As tribute bearer, Ehud has access to the Moabite king, and as a left-handed man he is able to conceal a

sword on his right thigh. The assassination account is punctuated by grim and scatological humor. Having dismissed his followers and returned alone from Gilgal, Ehud secures a private interview in the king's cool roof-chamber by proffering Eglon a "secret message" (v. 19). To Eglon's surprise, the "message from God" (v. 20) turns out to be death. King Eglon is grossly fat—so obese, in fact, that the fat closes over the blade and the hilt of Ehud's sword. His name, which suggests a pun on the word for "calf," makes his assassination appear as a grotesquely humorous sacrifice of a fatted calf. The details are related with relish: Ehud's deed is not immediately discovered because Eglon's servants think their master is leisurely relieving himself. Thus they wait before entering the roof-chamber, giving Ehud ample time to escape and muster his troops. The Moabites, presumably thrown into confusion by the loss of their king, are defeated by Ehud and his followers at the fords of the Jordan.

3:31
Shamgar

No editorial framework accompanies the brief note about Shamgar. Shamgar seems to interrupt the cyclical pattern, since 4:1, which introduces the judgeship of Deborah, begins the cycle anew with "after Ehud died." Apparently Shamgar was well known, since his name appears in 5:6 for dating purposes. The mention of the name in Judges 5 may be the reason for the insertion of the reference to Shamgar here. Some LXX manuscripts place the Shamgar notice after the conclusion of the Samson story in 16:31. Like Samson, Shamgar fights the Philistines, and his mighty exploit of killing six hundred Philistines with an oxgoad is reminiscent of Samson's slaughter of one thousand Philistines with the jawbone of an ass. The name Shamgar may be Hurrian. The matronymic "son of Anat [NRSV: Anath]" is suspicious; Anat was the Canaanite goddess of war. It has been proposed that "son of Anat" is a military title and that Shamgar was a mercenary.

4:1–5:31
Deborah

The story of Deborah's victory over the militarily superior Canaanites in the north is told in two versions, one prose (chap. 4), the other poetry (chap. 5). The accounts differ in details, but it would be a mistake to try to harmonize them or to prefer one over the other as the more "correct" or "likely" version. Each should be considered on its own merits. The poem, which is older, offers a more dramatic, but also more elliptic, presentation.

4:1–24
The Prose Account

4:1–5, Introduction to Deborah. The editorial framework (vv. 1–3) introduces Deborah's judgeship; the concluding formula of the framework, "and the land had rest for forty years," occurs at the end of chap. 5. Israel suffers twenty years of oppression at the hands of Jabin, king of Canaan, and his general, Sisera, whose chariots outfitted with iron gave them a military advantage over the Israelites. The reference to Jabin who reigned in Hazor is problematic, since Josh. 11:1–11 reports Israel's defeat of a Canaanite coalition under Jabin, king of Hazor, in the time of Joshua. Jabin is not mentioned in the account of chap. 5, and the real antagonist there and in chap. 4 is Sisera, whose name is not Semitic and who may have belonged to the Sea Peoples (→ Sea Peoples). In contrast to Othniel and Ehud, of whom we are told, "the LORD raised up a deliverer" (3:9, 15), Deborah is already judging Israel when the crisis occurs. The judge Deborah is also identified (v. 4) as a prophet and by a Hebrew phrase usually translated "wife of Lappidoth," but perhaps meaning "fiery woman" (cf. the NEB footnote, "spirited woman"). Her sphere of influence is the hill country of Ephraim.

4:6–10, Deborah Commissions Barak. In her role as prophet and judge, Deborah summons Barak from the tribe of Naphtali and commissions him to lead the Galilean tribes of Naphtali and Zebulun against Jabin's army under Sisera. Her role can be compared to that of another prophet and judge, Samuel, who commissions Saul to fight the Amalekites (1 Sam. 15). Barak, however, is unwilling, unless Deborah accompanies him. She agrees, but prophesies that God will give victory over Sisera to a woman. The surprise for Barak—and for anyone hearing the story for the first time—is that the victor is not Deborah, which might be expected, but another woman, Jael.

4:11, The Kenites. This verse prepares for Jael's assassination of Sisera by explaining the presence of a group of Kenites, considered by some scholars to have been itinerant smiths, in the north near the site of the battle. Hebrew *cheber* is usually taken as a proper name, Heber; however, it has been argued that the word, whose basic meaning is "group," refers to an ethnic unit. If this is the case, v. 11 refers to a Kenite group that had separated from the main tribe whose home was in the south (cf. 1:16). The Kenites had ethnic ties with Israel through Moses' Midianite father-in-law, Hobab.

4:12–16, The Lord's Victory over Sisera's Forces. Topographical details of the battle are not entirely clear. Barak's forces advance from Mount Tabor, north

of the plain of Esdraelon, while Sisera's army and chariots proceed from Harosheth-of-the-Gentiles to the river Kishon. The battle takes place in the Plain of Esdraelon near the river Kishon, and victory gave Israel control over this strategic area (→ Esdraelon). Victory is attributed to God's intervention (v. 15); the entire army was slain except Sisera (v. 16).

4:17–22, Jael's Victory. Sisera, the general who had "nine hundred chariots of iron" (4:3, 13), is reduced to flight on foot. He is met by Jael, a woman of the Kenite group, who offers him refuge in her tent. The condition of peace (i.e., an alliance) between Jabin and these Kenites explains Sisera's willingness to seek protection there. Over against this alliance, however, must be weighed the ethnic bond between the Kenites and Israel, perhaps the deciding factor for Jael. Jael's actions give every appearance of generosity: when Sisera asks for water to drink, she gives him milk, and Sisera trusts her to stand guard at the entrance of the tent. Jael, however, takes a tent peg and a hammer—tools she most likely wielded skillfully, since pitching the tent was probably women's work, as it is among the bedouin today—and kills Sisera while he is sleeping. Barak, in pursuit of Sisera, is met by Jael, who invites him into her tent to view the enemy's body. Just as he was overshadowed in the battle scenes by Deborah, so Barak is overshadowed in the murder scene by Jael. The glory has been snatched from Barak's hands, and Deborah's prophecy, "The LORD will sell Sisera into the hand of a woman" (4:9), finds its fulfillment.

4:23–24, The Conclusion: Victory Is the Lord's. The prose account of chap. 4 concludes by ascribing victory to God (cf. v. 15). These verses thus form an appropriate transition to the song in chap. 5, which praises God for granting victory to his people.

5:1–31
The Song of Deborah

The poetic account, traditionally known as the Song of Deborah, is both about Deborah and Barak and, according to v. 1, sung by Deborah and Barak. The verb in v. 1, however, is feminine singular, which may indicate that Deborah was regarded as the singer, with Barak added later; in v. 12 Deborah is the one called on to sing. The poem extols God and his people, who bravely joined the Lord's battle (vv. 2, 9, 11, 13). The ancient poem, dating from about 1125 B.C., exhibits a repetitive style similar to the older, Canaanite poetry from Ugarit (→ Ras-Shamra). Its vivid descriptions, striking imagery, effective repetitions, and skillful use of various poetic techniques have rightly earned it the designation as a literary masterpiece. Unfortunately, the text and its meaning are often obscure. If the traditional dating is correct, the poem comes from a period not far removed from the events themselves.

5:1–12, Praise of God and Human Heroes. The poem begins with a call to "bless the LORD" (v. 2) and continues with an evocation of the Lord, the God of Sinai, marching forth from the region of Edom (vv. 4–5). The Hebrew text of vv. 6–12 is uncertain, and many quite varying interpretations have been offered. The verses appear to contrast the precarious social and economic conditions before Israel's victory with the situation after. In v. 7 Deborah is called a "mother in Israel"—a title indicating her authority and prophetic leadership (cf. the use of "father" for male prophets; 2 Kings 2:12; 13:14); elsewhere the title appears only in reference to a city (2 Sam. 20:19, referring to its status in Israel). The reference to Deborah as a mother at the beginning of the poem is balanced by the mention of Sisera's mother at the end.

5:13–23, The Battle. These verses are extremely important for the light they shed on premonarchical Israel's political organization. In contrast to the prose version, which mentions only the tribes of Naphtali and Zebulun, the poem praises Ephraim, Benjamin, Machir, Zebulun, Issachar, and Naphtali for their heroic participation in the battle, while censuring Reuben, Gilead, Dan, Asher, and Meroz for not responding to the muster. The list differs from the traditional twelve-tribe reckoning, which is later (see Gen. 29:31–30:24; 35:16–26; Gen. 49; Num. 26; Deut. 33). Meroz, which appears in an obscure context (v. 23), is otherwise unattested. Machir and Gilead appear instead of Manasseh and Gad, to which they are respectively related. Noteworthy is the absence of the tribes of Levi, Simeon, and Judah, particularly the last, which apparently was not reckoned as part of "Israel" at this time, and which historically always had a tenuous relationship with the Northern tribes (→ Judah).

In contrast to the battles led by the other major judges, in which Israel defends its territory against the encroachments of hostile neighbors, Israel here fights a Canaanite coalition in the plain, where the Canaanites had a clear military advantage. Victory meant the breakdown of the Canaanite city-state system and gave Israel control over central and northern Palestine. The setting at Taanach by the waters of Megiddo places the battle in the Esdraelon somewhat south of the battle site in chap. 4. According to vv. 19–22, the forces of nature intervened on Israel's behalf. Apparently the Canaanite chariots became bogged down in the marshy terrain created by the flooding of the Kishon.

5:24–31, Defeat of Sisera. The poem ends with the juxtaposition of two "domestic" scenes. The first heaps extravagant praise upon Jael for killing Sisera (vv. 24–27). Her violation of the laws of hospitality and

deception of Sisera are viewed with hearty approval, as was Ehud's use of a ruse to assassinate Eglon earlier (3:12–30). Here, apparently in contrast to chap. 4, Sisera is struck down while standing. The second scene (vv. 28–30) ironically shifts perspective to that of Sisera's mother, anxiously awaiting the return of her son from battle and attempting to assure herself that his delay is caused by the amassing of booty, including women as spoils of war.

Verse 31 concludes the story of Deborah's judgeship. The period of rest is twice as long as the period of oppression (4:3), but only half that of the period of rest after Ehud (3:30).

6:1–8:32
Gideon

6:1–10, Introduction. The editorial framework of apostasy/oppression/cry-for-help appears in vv. 1–6. The seven-year oppression takes the form of raids from Transjordan on the part of the Midianites, the Amalekites, and the people of the East (→ Amalekites; Midianites). Their forays across the Jordan, particularly into the territory of the tribe of Manasseh, severely threaten the local population's means of livelihood (vv. 2–6, 11). In response to Israel's cry, God sends a prophet (v. 8). Unlike the previous account, where the prophet Deborah was also the judge and deliverer, this anonymous prophet recites God's saving deeds (vv. 8–9), accuses Israel of disobedience in serving the gods of the Amorites (= Canaanites, v. 10), and then disappears from the scene. The accusation recalls that of 2:1–3, except that the consequences of disobedience are not spelled out (cf. also 10:11–14). In 2:3 God warns Israel that foreign gods will be a "snare" for them; this is precisely what happens at the end of Gideon's judgeship, when "all Israel prostituted themselves to it [Gideon's ephod] . . . and it became a snare to Gideon and to his family" (8:27). Verses 7–10 are lacking in 4 Judg. (→ Scrolls, The Dead Sea).

6:11–18, Gideon's Commission. In contrast to Othniel and Ehud, whom God "raised up" to deliver Israel, and to Deborah, who was already judging Israel when the crisis occurred, Gideon, from the Manassite clan of Abiezer, is commissioned by a divine messenger (NRSV, NJB: "angel") to deliver Israel. Like Barak before him, Gideon is hesitant, and his reply (v. 13) expresses his doubt (cf. the hesitancy of Moses [Exod. 3:10–12] and Jeremiah [Jer. 1:5–8] to accept God's call). God's response, "I will be with you," 6:16 (cf. v. 12; Exod. 3:12), turns attention away from Gideon's merits to the God who will be the source of his victory. Gideon, whose doubtful and hesitant nature will become clearer as the story continues, requests a sign (6:17).

6:19–24, Gideon Experiences a Vision of God and Builds an Altar. The messenger reveals his divine identity and Gideon, in a response typical of such visionary experiences, fears death because he has seen God (see Gen. 16:13; 32:30; Exod. 3:6; 33:20; Judg. 13:22). On the basis of God's words of assurance to him (6:23), Gideon builds an altar and names it "The LORD Is Peace" (v. 24). The account displays a number of similarities to the apparition to Samson's parents in Judges 13.

6:25–32, Gideon Destroys Baal's Altar and Builds an Altar for the Lord. These verses relate how a Canaanite sanctuary became an Israelite one. The Asherah Gideon was commanded to cut down was probably a wooden pole that served as a fertility symbol associated with the Canaanite goddess Asherah. It is further desecrated when Gideon uses it as firewood for a sacrifice to the Lord. Because Gideon is afraid, he carries out the deed by night; his character begins to emerge as not only hesitant (6:15, 17), but also timorous. Gideon's destruction and desecration of the Canaanite religious site and erection of an altar to the Lord in its place is used to explain the name Jerubbaal. One would not expect a follower of the Lord to bear a Baal-name; thus the story presents the name as meaning "Let Baal contend" and as bearing witness to Baal's impotence to defend his sanctuary. Some take the identification of Gideon with Jerubbaal as a sign of the fusion of two different, though related, traditions.

6:33–40, Preparations for Battle; Gideon's Tests. The Midianites and their allies encamp in the valley of Jezreel, at the eastern end of the Plain of Esdraelon, the site of the previous battle under Deborah and Barak. In addition to his own clan (Abiezer) and tribe (Manasseh), Gideon summons the neighboring tribes of Asher, Zebulun, and Naphtali (all but Zebulun are mentioned in 7:23 as pursuing Midian). Next to the coalition under Deborah (chap. 5), this is the largest muster of tribes mentioned in the battles of the judges (see commentary below on 21:1–25). What was perhaps originally a victory of the clan of Abiezer over the Midianites may have been expanded to include other tribes in the area that would have been affected by Midianite incursions (note the tension between Gideon's three hundred troops and the muster of the tribes in 7:23, and the comparison of Abiezer's accomplishment with Ephraim's, without mention of the other tribes, in 8:2). In spite of his animation by the spirit of the Lord (6:34), Gideon, still hesitant, tests God two times (6:36–40).

7:1–8, Preparations for Battle; the Lord's Tests. Gideon's forces camp on a hill near the spring of Harod (probably in the vicinity of Mount Gilboa); the Midianites are to their north in the plain below (vv. 1,

8). Now God makes use of two tests designed to reduce drastically the number of Gideon's troops and thereby ensure that the Israelites will acknowledge God, rather than their own might, as the source of their deliverance. The first test is straightforward: the fearful are sent home (v. 3; cf. Deut. 20:8). The second test has to do with the warriors' manner of drinking water (7:4–7). The text is problematic and the reason for preferring those who lapped with their tongues over those who knelt down to drink is not clear. Perhaps the point is that God chooses the least likely (least cautious) warriors to demonstrate that victory is due solely to God's intervention (v. 7; cf. 7:2).

7:9–15, Gideon Reassured. Again, Gideon's fearfulness and hesitancy are brought out. God reassures him by sending him down to the Midianite camp to overhear the recounting of a dream and its interpretation. Since dreams were regarded as divinely inspired, the enemy's dream of Gideon's victory offers Gideon confirmation of God's providence.

7:16–23, The Battle. Gideon's three hundred troops, divided into three companies and supplied with horns (Heb. *shophar*) and jars with torches in them, advance against the Midianites at the beginning of the middle watch (the night was divided into three watches), before the relief sentries would have become familiar with the appearance of the landscape by night. That Gideon's men could have blown horns and broken jars while holding torches in their left hands and horns in their right and also sounding the battle cry, "For the LORD and for Gideon" (vv. 18, 20), contributes to the spectacular nature of the account. The Midianites, thrown into a panic, flee, attacking their own companions (vv. 21–22). Victory is attributed solely to God (v. 22), and the account, with its sounding of the horn and absence of human involvement in battle, is reminiscent of the highly ritualized capture of Jericho in Joshua 6. Verse 23 reintroduces the warriors of Naphtali, Asher, and Manasseh, who rally to the aid of Gideon's three-hundred-strong force.

7:24–8:3, Ephraim's Involvement. The tribe of Ephraim plays a central role in Israel's history (→ Ephraim). Here the Ephraimites capture and execute the Midianite princes Oreb ("Raven") and Zeeb ("Wolf"). They are angry with Gideon for not calling them to join in the battle against Midian, apparently a reference to the earlier muster in 6:35 and 7:23 and not to Gideon's summons in 7:24. Gideon diffuses their anger with a sagacious response (8:2). A similar situation occurs under Jephthah, but with quite different results (see commentary below on 12:1–7).

8:4–21, Gideon's Pursuit. Like the preceding section, these verses tell of the capture and execution of two Midianite leaders, here called "kings" and given the names Zebah and Zalmunna (meaning in Heb. "Sacrifice" and "Protection-Withheld"). Gideon and his three hundred followers cross the Jordan River into Transjordan. Their requests for provisions, first from the citizens of Succoth ("booths") and then Penuel ("face of God"; see Gen. 32:30), meet with refusal on the grounds that Gideon is not yet clearly the victor. Gideon threatens cruel reprisals (8:7, 9). Gideon's forces catch the remainder of the Midianite army off guard in their camp at Karkor (location uncertain) and capture Zebah and Zalmunna. A victorious Gideon returns with his captives and fulfills his threats against Succoth and Penuel (vv. 13–17). Verses 18–21 introduce a new motive, blood revenge. To avenge the slaughter of his brothers at Mount Tabor (cf. 4:6), Gideon orders his son Jether to slay Zebah and Zalmunna. But the young man, like his father earlier, is afraid. Gideon, who by now has ceased to show fear and has begun taking action on his own initiative (8:1–17), kills them himself.

8:22–23, Gideon Is Offered the Kingship. Although the text repeatedly stresses God's role as the true deliverer of Israel (7:2, 7, 9, 22), the Israelites credit Gideon with the deliverance (8:22) and offer him a hereditary monarchy. They use the term "rule" (Heb. *mashal*) rather than the usual verb "to be king" (*malak*). Gideon's refusal is praiseworthy (some, however, have argued that v. 23 represents a positive, rather than a negative, answer). The antimonarchical sentiment that God alone is the proper ruler for Israel appears elsewhere (see esp. 1 Sam. 8:7) and plays a significant role in Israel's self-understanding. Nonetheless, there are hints that something is amiss here: one of Gideon's sons bears the suspicious name Abimelech ("My Father Is King") and, according to 9:2, Gideon's sons rule over at least an area of Israel. Thus even if Gideon himself refuses the kingship, his decision will shortly be overturned by his son (see commentary below on 8:33–9:57).

8:24–28, Gideon's Ephod. Although he refuses the kingship, Gideon allows himself some of its trappings: he requests a large share of the spoil, the golden earrings of the enemy, here identified as Ishmaelites. The Ishmaelites were related to Israel through Abraham's son by Hagar (Gen. 16), the Midianites through Abraham's second wife, Keturah (Gen. 25:1–4); for similar alternation of terms, see Gen. 37:25–28. From the spoil, Gideon makes an ephod, which becomes the source of idolatrous worship for Israel (8:27; cf. 2:3). The ephod was either a priestly vestment or ritual object, perhaps an image (cf. 17:4–5). It was used in divination (see 1 Sam. 23:9–12; 30:7–8). Gideon, who began his career by tearing down the Baal altar (6:25–32), finishes by leading Israel into apostasy. In contrast to the other

stories of the judges, Israel's apostasy begins while the judge is still alive and the judge contributes to it. The rest formula, which belongs to the editorial framework, appears for the last time in the book in 8:28.

8:29–32, Transition. Judg. 8:29–32 forms the transition to the account of Abimelech's abortive attempt at monarchy. As with the minor judges (see commentary below on 10:1–5), we have a report of the number of sons Gideon had, his death, and his burial. Abimelech is here introduced as one of Gideon's sons by a legitimate wife of secondary rank ("concubine" in most English translations) whose home is Shechem.

8:33–9:57
Abimelech

8:33–35, Introduction. The story of Abimelech begins in a way similar to that of the accounts of the major judges, with Israel's apostasy. This time the specific god Israel worshiped is named, Baal-berith, "Lord of the Covenant." Abimelech, however, does not illustrate the cycle of apostasy /punishment/cry-for-help/ deliverance, but rather interrupts the cycle. He is an oppressor, not a judge or deliverer. Moreover, this is not a story of oppression of "all Israel" or even of one or two tribes; only the city-state of Shechem and its territory are affected.

9:1–6, Abimelech Is Made King. Abimelech's power base is Shechem, a Canaanite city-state with a long history, now somehow incorporated into Israelite territory and administered ("ruled") by Gideon's sons (→ Shechem). Through his mother's influential kinspeople, Abimelech convinces the Shechemite leaders that the rule of one who is their blood relative is preferable to the rule of the seventy sons of Jerubbaal (Gideon). Seventy is a conventional number of largeness or totality (cf. 2 Kings 10:1; Judg. 1:7; 12:14); the citizens of Shechem give Abimelech seventy pieces of silver, with which he hires "worthless fellows" or "ruffians" to provide his personal entourage (9:4). These followers may be the same type of renegades or social outcasts who follow Jephthah and, later, David (cf. 11:3; 1 Sam. 22:2). Abimelech kills his half brothers, except Jotham the youngest, and is made king (Heb. *melek*) of the city-state Shechem.

9:7–21, Jotham's Speech. Jotham stands on Mount Gerizim, one of the two mountains overlooking Shechem (the other is Mount Ebal, which some identify with Mount Zalmon, 9:48), and excoriates the Shechemite leadership with a fable (vv. 8–15) and a curse (vv. 16–20). The fable, one of two examples of that genre in the Bible (see also 2 Kings 14:9; 2 Chron. 25:18), is strongly antimonarchical. It illustrates both the folly of kingship (only the worst and least qualified aspire to it) and its dangers (it destroys those who place their reliance on it). The bramble offers scant shade but is a prime cause of fire (v. 15). A monarchy founded on murder can come to no good and inevitably will destroy those who support it. Jotham's call for the mutual destruction of Abimelech and the Shechemite leaders (v. 20) anticipates their fate.

9:22–33, Conflict Between Abimelech and the Shechemites. Abimelech is said to have ruled over Israel for three years (the verb is *sarar,* not *malak*); however, there is no evidence to suggest that his influence extended beyond Shechem and its territory. According to 9:41, Abimelech lived at Arumah, southeast of Shechem, with Zebul acting as his deputy in Shechem. Verses 23–24 show the principle of retribution at work: God, by means of an evil spirit, brings about conflict between Abimelech and the Shechemites to punish Abimelech's mass murder and the Shechemites' support of him. The retributive theme is repeated in 9:56–57. Gaal the son of Ebed ("son of a servant") incites insurrection against Abimelech with a highly nationalistic speech during the harvest festival, when spirits were high and tensions easily excitable. Abimelech's deputy Zebul ("Prince") alerts Abimelech and counsels him to quell the rebellion in a surprise attack upon Shechem.

9:34–45, Abimelech Puts Down the Revolt. These verses report two successive and related campaigns, the surprise attack upon Gaal (vv. 34–41) and an ambush against the city using a stratagem similar to that employed in the capture of Ai (Josh. 8) and Benjamin (Judg. 20:29–48). Abimelech destroys the city and its inhabitants. The custom of sowing the city with salt (9:45), otherwise unattested in the Bible, has analogues in other ancient cultures and apparently symbolizes the finality and irreversibility of the destruction.

9:46–57, Campaigns Against Shechem's Tower and Thebez. When the people of Shechem's Tower hear of Abimelech's victory and violence, they take refuge in the temple of El-berith ("God of the Covenant"; cf. Baal-berith, 8:33). Shechem's Tower is either a quarter of the city or an outpost of it, but at any rate a separate place from the scene of the battle in 9:42–45. Abimelech burns down the stronghold, killing all the people (vv. 46–49). When he tries the same siege tactic against Thebez—perhaps in an attempt to extend his influence and support now that his base in Shechem has been destroyed—a woman throws a millstone on his head that crushes his skull. His death illustrates the imprudence of drawing too close to a defended city wall. By having his armor bearer run him through, Abimelech hopes to avoid the stigma of an ignominious death, for to be killed by a woman was a disgrace

for a warrior. Ironically, this is precisely what is remembered about him (2 Sam. 11:21). Judg. 9:56–57 attributes these events to God's retributive action in fulfilling the curse of Jotham. It is worth noting that Abimelech is not punished for establishing a monarchy, but for killing his brothers. As in the earlier stories (e.g., 4:15, 23; 7:2, 22), so here also God is in complete control of events. Charismatic leadership is preferable to a monarchy founded on violence, but charismatic leadership is not without its problems, as we saw with Gideon and as we will see even more clearly with Jephthah and Samson.

10:1–5
The Minor Judges

No editorial framework introduces the minor judges. Judg. 10:1–5 together with 12:(7)8–15 have the appearance of an annalistic list, which, along with the judges' names, gives information about their tribal or city affiliation, the length of their judgeship, and their death and burial. The minor judges are presented in succession (note the repetition of "after him"). For three of them—Jair (10:3–5), Ibzan (12:8–10), and Abdon (12:13–15)—we are given interesting family details, which testify to their substance and prestige. All are said to have "judged Israel," but whatever functions they exercised are not reported, and in spite of the pan-Israel perspective suggested by the phrase "judged Israel," nothing in the descriptions of these figures indicates a sphere of activity beyond a particular city or tribe.

Many suggestions have been put forward about the office held by the minor judges, but the fact is that the information in the list is too meager to permit any meaningful conclusions. The editors of the book of Judges apparently intend us to see these figures as exercising the same office as the other (major) judges, even though they report no stories about their delivering Israel from oppression (but note that Tola [10:1] is said to "deliver Israel" "after Abimelech"). Perhaps they governed local areas in times of peace.

Judg. 12:7 sounds as if it too belongs to the list. If so, the editors presumably interrupted the list because at this particular point they had substantial material to include about one of the judges' activities.

10:6–12:7
Jephthah

10:6–16, Theological Introduction. The Jephthah story interrupts the list of minor judges, 10:1–5; 12:8–15. The framework formula (10:6–10) is here elaborated into a full-scale indictment of Israel's apostasy. Similar theological elaborations occur in chap. 2 and in 6:7–10. For the first time, Israel actually repents (10:10, 15–16), but God does not, as at other times, raise up a deliverer in response to Israel's cry for help. The Gileadite elders appoint Jephthah their leader (11:4–11) and only later does God confirm their choice (11:29). In contrast to the following account, where the conflict is limited to Ammon and Gilead, 10:9 introduces a wider Israelite perspective (note that Jephthah is appointed leader only over Gilead, not over "all Israel").

10:17–11:11, Jephthah's Appointment as Leader. In response to pressure from the Ammonites (from central Transjordan), the elders of Gilead (in northern Transjordan) seek out Jephthah to be their leader. The elders represent a form of local leadership evidenced throughout the biblical period. Jephthah had earlier been driven away from his Gileadite homeland by his half brothers, jealous of their inheritance rights (11:2); 11:7 suggests that this may have been a political action involving the elders. The elders choose Jephthah because of his military skills (11:1), a consideration that outweighs his objectionable origins and current status as leader of a band of outlaws (for the same expression, see 9:4; see also 1 Sam. 22:2). Jephthah negotiates with the elders to have himself made not only their leader against the Ammonites (11:6, 11), but also their head (vv. 8, 9, 11). "Leader" (Heb. *qatsin*) may represent a temporary military leadership, and "head" (Heb. *rosh*) a permanent civil one. Thus Jephthah is appointed for the present crisis and for the future, if he succeeds in ridding Israel of the Ammonite threat (v. 9). The agreement is ratified at Mizpah (cf. 1 Sam. 11:14–15; 2 Sam. 5:3; on Mizpah, see commentary below on 20:1–17).

11:12–28, Jephthah Negotiates with the Ammonites. Jephthah tries to settle Israel's differences with Ammon through diplomacy. The Ammonite king contends that Israel took part of their land in central Transjordan between the Arnon and Jabbok rivers. Jephthah's laborious counterargument has two main points. First, he rehearses Israel's encounters with Edom, Moab, and Sihon, king of the Amorites, in the process of entering the promised land (see Num. 20–24), arguing that Israel conquered and took possession of the land of the Amorites because it was God's will to give Israel the land, and a nation has a right to whatever its god gives it through conquest (11:15–25). It is often claimed that the description fits Moab better than Ammon, but the fact that Ammon had conquered part of Moabite territory may help explain the confusion. The territory in dispute, the land east of the Jordan River between the Arnon and the Jabbok (v. 13), was taken in battle from Sihon, king of the Amorites (v. 22). Chemosh, according to the Bible and the Moabite Stone, was the national god of Moab, but may also have been worshiped by the Ammonites

(→Mesha; Moabite Stone, The). Jephthah's second point is that since Ammon laid no claims to the land during the three hundred years Israel occupied it, they have no right to dispute it now (v. 26). Jephthah's lengthy attempt at negotiation proves unsuccessful.

11:29–40, Jephthah's Vow and Its Tragic Consequences. Like Othniel and Gideon before him, Jephthah is animated by the spirit of the Lord (v. 29), but in Jephthah's case this takes place after he had assumed leadership. In return for victory over Ammon, Jephthah vows to sacrifice as a burnt offering to God the one who meets him upon his return from battle. In other instances of biblical vows a relationship exists between what is asked for and what is promised in return. Comparison of the situations and similar language in Judg. 11:30 and Num. 21:2 (note that it is to the events of Num. 20–21 that Jephthah refers in his negotiations with Ammon, vv. 12–28) reveals that Jephthah does not vow the obvious thing, an offering to God of Ammonite spoil. Some commentators have argued that Jephthah may have had in mind an animal, but both the language and the nature of a vow (namely, an extreme measure that would ordinarily entail the offer of something quite precious) suggest that a person was meant.

The Hebrew Bible generally condemns human sacrifice (Lev. 18:21; 20:1–5; Deut. 12:31; 18:10; but see also Gen. 22; Exod. 22:29–30; Mic. 6:7–8), and the actual biblical examples of the practice, which are few, view it with horror (see 2 Kings 3:27; 16:3; 21:6). Jephthah's vow of a sacrifice interferes with the logical progression of cause and effect in the account; its position between the coming of the spirit of the Lord upon Jephthah and his victory over Ammon renders it impossible to determine whether the great victory that God gives Jephthah (vv. 32–33) comes as the result of the spirit, the vow, or both. Having been granted victory in battle, Jephthah must fulfill his part (v. 35; cf. Num. 30:2). But his reaction (v. 35) makes it clear that he had not expected the one to meet him to be his daughter. She courageously accepts her fate, requesting only a two-month delay during which to engage in a ritual with her friends, either bewailing her virginity (so NRSV) or some sort of puberty rite. To die childless, as she does, was considered a great misfortune. Jephthah too will die childless, since his daughter is his only child. The sacrifice itself is treated in less than one brief verse (v. 39); the details are too terrible to receive elaboration. The young woman's tragedy is tempered both by the company of her female friends (vv. 37–38) and, after her death, by a women's yearly ceremony of remembrance in her honor (v. 40). NRSV and NJB, following LXX and Vg., read "to lament," but the Hebrew verb has the sense of "recount" or "commemorate" (cf. its only other occurrence in 5:11). The most startling feature of the narrative is the absence of any condemnation of Jephthah's sacrifice of his daughter to God.

12:1–7, Civil War Between Gilead and Ephraim. Some commentators understand the conflict as originating in Ephraim's reaction to the threat to its influence in Transjordan posed by the assertion of Gileadite authority. Unlike Gideon before him (8:1–3) and in marked contrast to his own lengthy attempt at negotiations with the Ammonite king, Jephthah does not seriously pursue diplomacy as a means of placating Ephraim's anger at not having been called up to join the battle against Ammon. Moreover, Jephthah and the Ephraimites have different versions of the events (12:1–3), and the text gives us no clue which to believe. Fighting breaks out and the Gileadites gain the upper hand. They seize the fords of the Jordan and slay any Ephraimite trying to escape to his own territory. Anyone trying to cross over into the area west of the Jordan had to say the word "shibboleth" (meaning "ear of grain" or "torrent of water"). The Ephraimites, who spoke a different dialect of Hebrew, pronounced it differently from the Gileadites and thus betrayed their true identity. The information about Jephthah's term of office, death, and burial (v. 7) links Jephthah with the list of minor judges, where the same type of information is summarily presented.

12:8–15
The Minor Judges

See commentary above on 10:1–5.

13:1–16:31
Samson

It is frequently observed that Samson does not behave like a judge. He does not lead any Israelite troops into battle, but rather engages in personal vendettas against the Philistines. When one considers his wild escapades and sexual liaisons, his character leaves much to be desired. Unlike the major judges before him, he does not achieve Israel's deliverance from its oppressor. Nonetheless, for the editors of the book, Samson was a judge (15:20; 16:31), and what were probably originally folktales—rowdy adventure stories told by an oppressed group as an outlet for their frustration at their inability to gain the upper hand over their more powerful oppressors—have been given a theological interpretation. The stories in their present form repeatedly remind us that Samson is the instrument of God (13:25; 14:4, 6, 19; 15:14, 18–19; 16:28–30). Even if he is ultimately unsuccessful in ridding Israel of the Philistine menace, his final act brings glory to God (16:28–30).

The setting is the Shephelah in the vicinity of

Zorah and Eshtaol (13:25; 16:31), with specific events related to the surrounding area: Timnah, Etam, Ramath-lehi, Hebron, the valley of Sorek. In the period of Israelite settlement, this area came increasingly under the Philistine sphere of influence. Ashkelon and Gaza, members of the Philistine pentapolis, are visited by Samson, and Gaza is the scene of his death. The Philistines, Sea Peoples who came from the Aegean and settled along the southern coast of Canaan in the twelfth century B.C., sometime after Israel, posed a serious threat to Israelite existence during the time of the judges and in the early days of the monarchy (see above commentary on 1:1–21; 4:1–5; → Philistines). Philistine pressure forced the Danites to migrate from their assigned territory in southwest Palestine to the far north of the country (see Josh. 19:40–48; Judg. 17–18). Samson's failure completely to defeat the Philistines, in spite of his victories, may reflect Dan's inability to get a stronghold in the plain.

13:1–25, Samson's Birth. Only two elements of the editorial framework appear in the story, apostasy and oppression. There is no cry for help, and deliverance from the oppressor is not achieved. Unlike the deliverers before him, Samson is chosen by God before birth. He is set apart as a Nazirite "to begin" or "to be the first" to deliver Israel from the Philistines (v. 5), but it will remain for David to complete the task.

Judges 13 has features in common with other birth accounts (see 1 Sam. 1; Gen. 18; 16:7–16). There are also strong similarities to Gideon's visionary experience in 6:11–24. The account enhances Samson's mother's role and portrays her as more perceptive than her husband. The divine messenger's appearance and announcement are to her alone (13:3–7). When Manoah manages to get an audience with the messenger and seeks to obtain more information, the messenger tells him even less than he told the woman (vv. 8–14). Although Manoah is unaware of the messenger's divine identity (v. 16), his wife senses it from the outset (v. 6). Manoah's fear of death upon witnessing the revelation of the messenger's identity is an appropriate response (vv. 15–22; see commentary above on 6:19–24); but his wife displays greater theological acumen, recognizing the divine intention behind the events (13:23).

Samson's Nazirite status (vv. 4–5, 7) has perplexed commentators. The Nazirite regulations of Numbers 6 do not fit the picture in Judges 13–16, where Samson is a lifelong Nazirite consecrated before birth who may never cut his hair (the injunctions against wine and beer and against unclean food are placed on his mother in 13:4, 7, 14). Samson does not behave like a Nazirite and, moreover, chaps. 14–15—where Samson touches a carcass (14:8–9) and presumably drinks at the feast (14:10)—make no mention of Nazirite status. Nazirite status appears to be a later development in the tradition to provide a theological rationale for the strong man's strength residing in his hair (16:17), a common folklore motif.

14:1–15:20, Samson's Marriage to a Philistine Woman and Its Consequences. Israelites and Philistines live side by side and even intermarry (though for faithful Israelites this is not desirable, 14:1–3; recall Deut. 7:3–4), but relations between the two peoples are strained. The account of Samson and the Timnite is modeled on the story of Samson and Delilah in 16:4–22. In both cases Samson is persuaded by a woman to reveal a secret: in 14:15–18, the answer to his riddle; in 16:4–22, the explanation of his great strength. The Philistines are behind each woman's attempt to learn Samson's secret, and each time the woman breaks down Samson's resistance by casting doubt on his love (14:16; 16:15). The woman betrays Samson's secret to the Philistines, and this leads—directly in 16:21 and indirectly, through a series of reprisals, in 14:19–15:13—to the handing over of Samson to the Philistines. Samson's riddle (14:14), based on his private experience (14:5–9), would have been insoluble had the Philistines not obtained the answer from Samson's wife by threatening to burn her and her father's house (14:15). Ironically, the fate she sought to avoid befalls her (15:6). Her betrayal of Samson's riddle to the Philistines occasions a series of reprisals between Samson and the Philistines (14:19–15:8) that finally leads to the Philistine attack on Judah and the Judahites subsequently handing over Samson to their oppressors (15:9–13). The Judahites are thus portrayed in a negative light; like Delilah, they deliver Samson into Philistine hands.

The spirit of the Lord inspires Samson's unusual feats of prowess (13:25; 14:6, 19; 15:14; see commentary above on 3:7–11). The spirit enables Samson to kill one thousand Philistines with the jawbone of an ass, providing the name of the place, Ramath-lehi, which means "hill of the jawbone" (15:14–17). Immediately thereafter, however, Samson falls victim to thirst and appeals to God (15:18). His response not only reveals his dependence on God; it also makes a crucial theological point: the strong man cannot save himself. God provides Samson with water, and another place receives its name, En-hakkore, "the spring of the caller" (15:18–19).

16:1–3, Samson and the Harlot of Gaza. This brief anecdote offers another illustration of Samson's enormous strength and equally large libido. The Philistines fail in their only attempt to trap Samson without a woman's help.

16:4–22, Samson and Delilah. That Delilah was Philistine is not stated in the text, but in view of Samson's other liaisons, it is quite likely. (On the similarity with the story of Samson and the Timnite, see the commen-

tary above on 14:1–15:20.) Delilah's first two unsuccessful attempts to discover the source of Samson's great strength involve binding Samson (vv. 6–9, 10–12). The third attempt comes perilously close to the secret, since it has to do with Samson's hair (vv. 13–14). Her fourth attempt succeeds, and Samson is captured, blinded, and imprisoned by the Philistines (vv. 15–21). Verse 22 offers a sign of hope and a hint of victory to come.

16:23–31, Victory at Gaza. What appears initially as a victory for Dagon, the Canaanite god of rain and fertility worshiped by the Philistines, becomes the victory of God. While the Philistines praise their god (vv. 23, 24), Samson calls on his (vv. 28, 30). He acts as the agent of God's punishment, in particular for the ignominy he has suffered at the hands of the Philistines (v. 28). Samson's death is not, strictly speaking, a suicide, since God grants his prayer for death, accepting him as an instrument through which to carry out the divine plan (v. 30). His death is viewed as achieving an important result, killing more Philistines than he had killed in his lifetime. The story closes with the statement that Samson judged Israel twenty years. No rest formula occurs, the cyclical pattern of Judges is at an end, and we move into the final chapters of the book on a somber note.

17:1–21:25
Double Conclusion

The concluding chapters of Judges sound a recurrent theme, "In those days there was no king in Israel" (17:6; 18:1; 19:1; 21:25). The first and last times this phrase occurs, the implications are spelled out: "All the people did what was right in their own eyes." Neither judges nor deliverers appear in the concluding stories and, significantly, the threat to Israel is no longer external but internal. Even when no foreign oppressor appears on the horizon, conditions do not improve, for Israel, left to its sinful ways, pursues a course that threatens its political and religious survival. From the evidence of the major judges, it would seem that charismatic deliverers who arise in time of need have not provided the kind of stable leadership Israel requires. Moreover, beginning with Gideon, whose ephod led to apostasy, followed by Jephthah, who made a human sacrifice, and Samson, who failed to live up to his calling, the judges themselves have displayed disturbing weaknesses. A serious crisis of leadership emerges. By illustrating the depravity and anarchy of the times when Israel had no king, Judges 17–21 looks forward to the monarchy as a possible solution. The degree to which kingship provides a solution to Israel's problems receives attention in the following books of Samuel and Kings.

17:1–18:31
Conclusion, Part One: The Origin of the Sanctuary at Dan

Although they contain no explicit censure, these chapters offer a subtle and ironic polemic against the sanctuary at Dan, which, along with Bethel, was a national sanctuary of the Northern Kingdom (see 1 Kings 12:26–33). The Danite sanctuary is founded on theft (18:14–26) and violence (18:27); its main ritual object is an idol of cast metal made by human hands (17:4; 18:24, 27, 31) from stolen silver (17:1–4). Judges 17–18 also portrays the levitical priesthood in a negative light, as do the following chapters.

17:1–6, Micah's Idol and Other Ritual Objects. The strange account begins abruptly with a theft, a curse, and the making of an idol. From the outset Micah is presented negatively. He steals a large sum of silver from his own mother (eleven hundred pieces of silver is the amount each Philistine lord promised Delilah, 16:5) and engages in apparent syncretistic religious practices that belie his name (the full form, which appears in vv. 1–4, is Micah-yahu, meaning "Who is like Yhwh [the LORD]?"). Idols and images are forbidden in Exod. 20:4–6; Deut. 5:8–10; Exod. 34:17; and Deut. 27:15; and warnings about the dangers of syncretism appear in Judg. 2:1–5; 6:7–10; and 10:10–15. Whereas Gideon made an ephod that led to apostasy (8:27), Micah has a shrine (lit., "house of god[s]") with an idol of cast metal, an ephod, and teraphim. (On the ephod, see above commentary on 8:24–28; teraphim were statues used in worship; → Teraphim.) Although the exact nature and function of all this ritual paraphernalia are obscure, there can be little doubt that the piling up of these terms is meant as ironic disapproval. The idol, after all, is made from stolen silver; and though Micah's mother consecrates all of it to the Lord, she obviously keeps the larger portion.

17:7–13, Micah Employs an Itinerant Levite as His Priest. Micah installs a Levite from the tribe of Judah as his family priest. Although 17:5 indicates that a priest did not have to be a member of the tribe of Levi (cf. 2 Sam. 8:18), these verses show that a Levite was especially desirable. Micah believes that having a Levite as his priest will bring him God's favor (v. 13), but the following events will prove him wrong.

18:1–6, The Danite Spies Consult God Through Micah's Levite. The Danites' appearance on the scene, seeking an inheritance, looks back to the beginning of the book (1:34). From their base in the area of Zorah and Eshtaol (see commentary above on 13:1–16:31), they send out spies, who, coming upon Micah's house, recognize the Levite's voice (18:3). Either they knew him or, more likely, they recognized his

dialect as Judahite or perceived him to be a priest on the basis of what they overheard him saying. He "inquires of God" on their behalf—probably a reference to divination by means of the ephod and teraphim—and gives them a highly ambiguous answer. "Your way is before the LORD" (v. 6) is not a clear promise of divine blessing, and its obscurity perhaps functions to dissociate God from the questionable conduct of the Danites.

18:7–26, The Danites Steal Micah's Priest and Ritual Paraphernalia. Laish, in the far north, was desirable because of both its fertile land and its military vulnerability, there being no allies to come to its defense (vv. 7–10). Upon hearing the spies' report, the tribe of Dan journeys to Laish (vv. 11–13). On the way, it steals Micah's idol and ritual objects (vv. 14–26). The Levite reveals himself as an opportunist happy to accompany the Danites as their priest (v. 20), and the Danites are bullies who intimidate Micah, threatening bloodshed, when he protests their plunder (vv. 23–26).

18:27–31, The Sanctuary at Dan. In an attack that resembles holy war, with its total slaughter and destruction by fire, the Danites capture Laish. They rebuild the city, naming it "Dan" after their eponymous ancestor, and establish their shrine with Micah's stolen idol and priest. Only the idol is mentioned; the other ritual objects have dropped out of the picture. But the syncretistic nature of this form of worship is nevertheless intimated by the phrase "Micah's idol that he had made" (v. 31). Only now do we learn the priest's name, Jonathan the son of Gershom, son of Moses (i.e., Moses' grandson or simply a member of the Gershomite branch of Levites). The copyists, reluctant to associate the name of Moses with a questionable type of religious service, changed the name *(mosheh)* to Manasseh *(menasheh)* by inserting a suspended *n* in the Hebrew text. The time the land went into captivity (v. 30) may refer to the deportation that took place under the Assyrian ruler Tiglath-pileser III in 734–732 B.C. (see 2 Kings 15:29). The reference to the house of God at Shiloh seeks to make the two religious centers contemporary (→ Shiloh).

19:1–21:25
Conclusion, Part Two: Violence at Gibeah and War Against Benjamin

The pan-Israel perspective of these chapters reveals the hand of a later editor, since the kind of tribal organization envisioned can hardly have preceded the consolidation under the monarchy (see Introduction above). The events recounted show how utterly low Israel has sunk without a leader (19:1; 21:25). The threat of dissolution through internecine warfare was avoided under Gideon (8:1–3), but fighting between tribes did take place, albeit on a smaller scale, under Jephthah (12:1–6). In Judges 19–21, one Israelite tribe is nearly wiped out by a confederation of the others. Near anarchy and moral depravity characterize the times. The crimes of rape and murder are punished by the Israelite assembly with violence that does not stop short of mass rape and murder.

19:1–9, A Levite Fetches His Wife from Her Father's House. These chapters exhibit a stronger antilevitical sentiment than Judges 17–18. The Levite here is not simply worse than the Levite of chaps. 17–18, but is possibly the most disreputable character in the book. None of the characters in this grisly story is named. The Levite is from the central hill country of Ephraim; his wife of secondary rank (see commentary above on 8:29–32) is from Bethlehem in Judah, south of Jerusalem. NRSV margin, "she prostituted herself," correctly represents the Hebrew in v. 2, but leaving her husband to live in her father's house does not sound like the action of a prostitute, and so many modern translations follow the versions that read she "became angry with him" (NRSV; similarly NJB). Leaving her husband and returning to her father's house may, however, simply signify a de facto divorce on the woman's part, which the text terms "prostitution," since ancient Israel did not legally permit a wife to divorce her husband.

The Levite's weakness of character is hinted at when he allows his father-in-law repeatedly to persuade him to remain in Bethlehem. First he is too irresolute to leave on his journey at a reasonable hour, and then too stubborn to remain yet another night. Had he left early in the morning as intended, the outrage at Gibeah might have been avoided. The woman does not participate in either the decision making or the merriment (vv. 4–9). In what follows, she is clearly treated as an object.

19:10–21, The Decision to Spend the Night in Gibeah. The Levite rejects his servant's suggestion to spend the night in Jebus (Jerusalem), because he can expect no hospitality from foreigners. Jerusalem was a Jebusite city (see commentary above on 1:1–21); Gibeah, north of Jerusalem, was Israelite, belonging to the tribe of Benjamin. They receive no hospitality in Gibeah (vv. 15, 18), however, until an old man from Ephraim, a resident alien in Gibeah, takes them in for the night. Gibeah was King Saul's hometown, and an anti-Saul polemic is noticeably at work in Judges 19–21.

19:22–30, The Rape of the Levite's Wife. In the night their merriment is interrupted by Benjaminite ruffians who demand that the man be brought outside so that they might sexually assault him. The account has

striking similarities to Gen. 19:4–11, except that here an assault is carried out, making this story perhaps the most gruesome in the Bible. The host offers his virgin daughter and the Levite's wife as substitutes. In Genesis 19, Lot's offer of his two virgin daughters is viewed by many scholars as demanded by the conventions of hospitality, which require that the guest be protected at all costs. In Judges 19, in contrast, the host offers one of his guests, and, in fact, only the Levite's wife is thrown out to the mob. It is not certain whether the host or her husband throws her out.

The men of Gibeah rape and abuse the helpless woman all night. When the Levite opens the door in the morning "to go on his way"—not to see what has happened to his wife—and finds her lying on the threshold, his crass response underscores his depravity, "Get up, so we can go" (v. 28). He puts her on his donkey, travels home, and—in a morbid parody of Saul's mustering of Israel in 1 Samuel 11—chops her body into twelve pieces, which he sends throughout the territory of Israel. It is not at all clear that the woman was dead when he dismembered her, a point that clearly concerned the translators of the LXX and Vg., who added "for she was dead" in v. 28. The abuse of the woman by her husband, her host, and the mob reflects Israel's moral and spiritual deterioration.

20:1–17, The Tribes Assemble Against Benjamin. All Israel responds to the crime by assembling at Mizpah "in one body." "Dan to Beersheba" is a conventional designation for the northern and southern extent of Israel; Gilead refers to northern Transjordan. Mizpah was a sanctuary on the border between Ephraim and Benjamin. For the first time in Judges, we have something that looks like a tribal confederation taking united action in response to the crime of one of its members. The historical value of the account is questionable, however; it has been suggested that an original story about warfare resulting from rivalry between Ephraim and Benjamin has been expanded to include all Israel. The figures given for the number of warriors involved are greatly exaggerated.

The Levite's testimony (vv. 4–6) confirms his baseness. He magnifies the threat to himself ("me they sought to kill," v. 5) and neglects to mention that he remained in the safety of the house while "my wife they raped." His final statement, "and she is dead," preserves the ambiguity whether the woman was alive or dead when he dismembered her (NRSV "until she died" makes the men of Gibeah responsible). The tribes march against Benjamin and demand that the criminals be given to them to execute the death penalty. The Benjaminites refuse, thereby assuming solidarity with the guilty, and the battle lines are drawn. The heavy odds against Benjamin are somewhat compensated for by the elite corps of left-handed or ambidextrous men skilled with the sling (v. 16; see also 3:15; 1 Chron. 12:2).

20:18–28, Benjamin Twice Defeats Israel. The Israelites go to Bethel to inquire of God by means of the oracle. Bethel and Dan (see commentary above on 18:27–31) were the two principal sanctuaries of the Northern Kingdom; in 20:27 we learn that the Ark was at Bethel. The question as to which tribe should lead the advance (v. 18) is the same question asked in 1:1 with regard to the Canaanites. The answer is also the same, indicating the primacy of Judah in these two narratives. Unlike in 1:2, God does not promise victory and, indeed, Benjamin defeats Israel. As in 2:4, the Israelites weep before God in a ritual lament and inquire again, this time asking not who should attack first but whether they should do battle at all (v. 23). It is a question they should have asked earlier. Again they fight Benjamin, are defeated, and lament before God at Bethel, fasting and offering sacrifices (vv. 24–26). Again they inquire of the oracle, and this time God promises them victory (vv. 27–28).

20:29–48, The Defeat of Benjamin. Two accounts of the same event may have been combined in these verses. On the third day, Israel defeats Benjamin by an ambush similar to the attack on Ai under Joshua (Josh. 8; see also Judg. 9:34–45). Judg. 20:35 attributes victory over Benjamin to God. Only six hundred Benjaminites escape, while Israel destroys the rest of the tribe in what sounds like an implementation of the ban (v. 48), but in this case is war against their own kinspeople!

21:1–25, Wives for Benjamin Obtained Through Violence. Israel again weeps before God at Bethel, ironically, this time, not because they could not defeat Benjamin, but precisely because they have (v. 3). They are distressed that one tribe faces extinction, and they question how to find wives for the few Benjaminites who remain (20:47) since they themselves have slain the Benjaminite women (20:48). The solution is to carry out the ban against Jabesh-gilead, which had not joined the war against Benjamin, sparing only four hundred virgins. As these are not enough, and everyone else is under oath not to give their daughters as wives to Benjamin, the Benjaminite men are told to kidnap wives from the dancers in the annual vintage festival at Shiloh. Since the women would have been stolen rather than given in marriage, their families would not be guilty of breaking the oath. Thus the book of Judges comes to a close with the outrage at Gibeah repeated on a mass scale by the whole assembly of Israel. To punish the violence done to one woman (and the threatened crime against the Levite), the Israelites kill many innocent women, women from Benjamin and women from Jabesh-gilead who are not virgins. They take by force four hundred virgins from Jabesh-gilead and capture others from Shiloh. At the end of Judges, Israel lacks direction; all behave as they please. This is the editor's final word on Israel's plight without a king.

Bibliography

Boling, R. G. *Judges.* Anchor Bible, 6A. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1975.

Brenner, A., ed. *A Feminist Companion to Judges.* Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1993.

Mayes, A. D. H. *Judges.* Old Testament Guides. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1985.

O'Connell, Robert H. *The Rhetoric of the Book of Judges.* Leiden: Brill, 1996.

Polzin, R. *Moses and the Deuteronomist: A Literary Study of the Deuteronomic History.* New York: Seabury, 1980.

Soggin, J. A. *Judges.* Old Testament Library. Translated by J. Bowden. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1981.

Yee, G. A., ed. *Judges and Method: New Approaches in Biblical Studies.* Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1995.

Ruth

ADELE BERLIN

INTRODUCTION

The book of Ruth is a short narrative independent of the long narrative running from Genesis through 2 Kings, but similar to it in style and outlook. There are two main traditions regarding the placement of Ruth in the canon (→ Canon). In Christian Bibles, which derive their order from the Septuagint and Vulgate, Ruth is found after Judges, for this is the period in which the story is set. Jewish Bibles follow the tradition of placing Ruth in the Writings, as the Masoretes did. Although there is some variation in the Masoretic ordering of the books in this section, in modern printed Hebrew Bibles Ruth is the second of the Five Scrolls, because it is read publicly on the festival of Shavuot (→ Weeks, Pentecost), the second festival in the year commencing with Passover.

According to rabbinic tradition, the main theme of Ruth is *chesed*, loyalty or faithfulness born of a sense of caring and commitment. *Chesed* is a Hebrew term used to describe God's relationship to Israel as well as the relationship among members of a family or a community (→ Loving-kindness). All of the main characters in the book, Naomi, Ruth, and Boaz, act with *chesed*. Naomi, although she technically had no responsibility for her widowed daughters-in-law, was concerned that they find new husbands; she went out of her way to see that Ruth did. Ruth, on her part, had no obligation to Naomi, but she remained steadfastly with her, even giving up her native land and religion; all of her actions were directed toward finding support and protection for Naomi. Boaz too took upon himself a commitment beyond what was required; not only was he willing to redeem the family's land, but he was eager to marry Ruth and enable the family name to be perpetuated. God also manifested his *chesed*, by virtue of which the individuals are repaid for their loyalty by finding security and fulfillment, and the family that came close to destruction finds new life and continuity.

Closely related to the theme of *chesed* is the theme of family continuity. The male members of Naomi's family who might normally be expected to perpetuate the family are quickly removed from the story, and it is through the women, an elderly widow and a non-Israelite, that family continuity is achieved. Nor is this the only time in the Bible that such is the case. The book of Ruth calls attention to its similarity to the story of Judah and Tamar (in Gen. 38; cf. Ruth 4:12) and to the matriarchs Rachel and Leah, "who built the house of Israel" (4:11). The first two chapters of Exodus also recount how, through the fertility and quick action of the women, Israel survived and grew to nationhood.

Another important element in the book, related to the national interest, is David and his ancestry. The book culminates with the Davidic genealogy, and the last word in the book is "David." In addition, the Judean and Bethlehemite interests are strongly felt at several points in the story. The book may be read as a glorification of David through the glorification of his ancestors. What fine stock the ideal king of Israel is descended from! And how fitting for his ancestors that they were to produce a figure like David.

A secondary motif that runs through the story is emptiness/fullness. This applies to the land—famine/harvest—and to the main characters, Ruth and Naomi, who first suffer death and then celebrate birth. Naomi gives expression to this thought in 1:21: "I went away full and the LORD has brought me back empty." On both a human and a national level, in small and large ways, emptiness is replaced by fullness and completion.

The book of Ruth is a masterpiece of literary artistry. This brief narrative, often called a short story or novella, seems disarmingly simple on the surface, but, like most biblical narrative, it is complex and sophisticated. The plot contains numerous symmetries and operates on various levels: the romantic, the quasi-legal, the familial-national, and the moral-religious. The characters are developed through their speech and actions; little of their inner life or the narrator's evaluation is expressed. Like most of the Bible, Ruth is written with great economy. Words are chosen carefully and their recurrence often signals significant connections or developments. Frequently occurring terms, like *chesed* and *go'el* (Heb., "redeemer"), point to the main concepts of the story. Although Ruth is not poetry, its language is elevated and elegant. The book leaves readers, as it leaves its characters, with a sense of fulfillment.

It is difficult to establish the date of composition accurately. Certainly in its final form Ruth cannot predate David, although the story is set in an earlier period. Because of its affinity in language and content to

some of the early parts of the Bible such as Genesis, Judges, Samuel, and the prose sections of Job, it is often dated between 950 and 700 B.C. If we interpret it as a glorification of David, then its date might be closer to the time of David, around 950–900 B.C. The period of David and Solomon saw a great flourishing of Israelite culture and the formation of some of the earliest parts of the Bible. It seems appropriate that Ruth might have been a product of this literary effort.

On the other hand, certain late linguistic features, especially Aramaisms, have prompted some scholars to date the book to the exilic or postexilic period (the sixth century B.C. and later). This view is reinforced by those who interpret the book as a polemic against the decree of Ezra that the returning exiles should divorce their foreign wives (Ezra 9–10; Neh. 13:23–29). This interpretation seems forced, but the exilic and postexilic periods were times during which many national traditions were preserved and became a source of comfort and encouragement. Many people looked forward to the reestablishment of the Davidic dynasty, and they would no doubt have derived hope from the book of Ruth.

It is, of course, entirely possible that the book was composed in an early period and was subsequently edited, thereby acquiring late characteristics as well. The uncertainty regarding its date of origin, however, does not diminish the book's significance or the pleasure that we derive from reading it, for these are timeless.

COMMENTARY

1:1–5, Setting the Scene. The story is set in the days of the judges, before the monarchy, but its pastoral tone is in marked contrast to the wars and violence of the book of Judges. A famine provides the impetus for the migration of a Bethlehemite family to Moab (cf. Gen. 12:10; 42:1–2 for other famines that lead to sojourns in foreign lands).

After having been introduced by their positions in the family—husband, wife, sons—the characters are introduced by names whose meanings appear to be symbolic: Elimelech, "My God is king," this being the period before human kings ruled Israel; Naomi, "Pleasantness," a woman whose lot in life turns bitter (cf. 1:20) and then fortunate; then Mahlon, "Weakness, Sickness," and Chilion, "Annihilation, Consumption," sons who die young and leave no offspring. Although Elimelech is named first, Naomi quickly becomes the focus of attention and other characters are named in reference to her: "Naomi's husband," "her two sons," "her daughters-in-law."

Since there was no ban on marriages between Israelites and foreigners in the early biblical period (cf. Joseph, Moses, David, and Solomon), it is quite natural that Naomi's sons should marry local Moabite girls. From the point of view of the dynamics of the story, however, this fact is crucial, for Ruth's loyalty to Naomi's family is extraordinary precisely because Ruth is not an Israelite. The name "Ruth" probably derives from the word for "friend, companion"; Orpah means "back of the neck" (as seen when one turns away). The character of Orpah, who is not bad but represents the norm or the expected, serves as a contrast to Ruth, who goes far beyond the norm in maintaining her loyalty.

1:6–15, Plans to Return to Bethlehem. The action of the story commences with Naomi's intention to return to Bethlehem now that the famine is over. Since she cannot provide for her widowed daughters-in-law, she begs them to return to their own mothers' homes, where they may find security in the form of remarriage. Both daughters-in-law initially refuse to leave, and this elicits a moving plea from Naomi (1:12–13) in which she calls Ruth and Orpah "daughters" (as she does Ruth throughout) and stresses that if she could have more sons for them to marry, she would gladly marry and bear children. But, alas, she is too old; and even if she were not, Ruth and Orpah would have to remain husbandless until these children were grown. This may seem to refer to the levirate marriage (see Deut. 25:5–10), but since these new sons would not be paternal brothers of the deceased, as the levirate law of Deuteronomy requires, it is more likely that these words are exaggerated rhetoric whereby Naomi attempts to convince her daughters-in-law how hopeless it is for them to look to her for support. There is also a note of bitter frustration on Naomi's part that she could not provide for Ruth and Orpah. Orpah is persuaded to depart at this point, but Ruth remains steadfastly with Naomi. Naomi urges Ruth to follow Orpah's example, but to no avail.

1:16–18, Whither Thou Goest. In moving rhetoric Ruth pledges her loyalty to Naomi. She will remain with Naomi always: while going and while lodging, in life and in death. In what amounts to a change of identity, from Moabite to Israelite (for there was as yet no formal procedure or even the theoretical possibility for religious conversion), Ruth adopts the people and God of Naomi. Religion was bound up with ethnicity in biblical times; each people had its land and its gods (cf. Mic. 4:5), so that to change religion meant to change nationality. Boaz recognizes the enormity of this in 2:11. Ruth is apparently totally accepted when she comes to Bethlehem, but the narrative continues to refer to her as "the Moabitess."

1:19–22, Arrival at Bethlehem. Naomi's return after her long absence creates a stir. She contrasts her name, "Pleasantness," with her present condition, deeming it

inappropriate. The motif of emptiness/fullness finds expression in v. 21. Indeed, Naomi is now empty, but will be fulfilled at the end of the story. The land, however, which had been emptied by famine, is now enjoying the barley harvest. The harvest sets the scene for the action in the next chapter.

2:1–23, Ruth Gleans in the Field of Boaz

2:1, Boaz. A new character is introduced. As in the case of the other characters, first his status and family connection are given, finally his name. The meaning of "Boaz" is obscure, although it has been explained as "In him there is strength." More important is the fact that he is a man of substance from Elimelech's family.

This chapter and the following one are each composed of three scenes: Ruth and Naomi at home, Ruth with Boaz, and Ruth returns home to Naomi.

2:2, Ruth and Naomi at Home. Ruth tells Naomi that she is willing to go out to glean in the fields. Gleaning is a form of charity in which the poor are permitted to gather the grain left by the harvesters (cf. Lev. 19:9; 23:22; Deut. 24:19). This underscores the poverty of Naomi and Ruth's willingness to support her.

2:3–17, Ruth with Boaz. Ruth happens on the field of Boaz (but readers sense that this is more than coincidence). At this time she does not yet know of Boaz or his relationship to the family. She appears throughout this section as hardworking, humble, and grateful for her good fortune.

Her fortune is indeed good, for Boaz accords her a number of special privileges in an incremental progression. She is invited to glean in his field for the entire harvest instead of moving from estate to estate; the male workers are warned not to bother her; and she is permitted to drink from the workers' water. Later she is invited to share a meal with the harvesters; they are ordered to let her glean among the sheaves, cautioned not to shame her, and even told to pull out stalks for her from the bound sheaves.

Most significant is the way in which the relationship between Ruth and Boaz develops. Boaz first refers to Ruth as "a young woman" and then addresses her as "my daughter," the same term used by Naomi, suggesting that Boaz feels a paternal protection toward Ruth. Ruth is at first surprised to have been singled out, since she is a "foreigner"; a wordplay is involved in v. 10: the words "take cognizance of" and "foreigner" are from the same Hebrew root, *nkr.* Then, in v. 13, Ruth addresses Boaz as "my lord" and refers to herself as "your maidservant, even though I am not [worthy of being] one of your maidservants." Ruth and Boaz both change their terms of reference, raising Ruth's status vis-à-vis Boaz, but on different planes. Ruth takes herself from foreigner (to whom Boaz has no obligation) to maidservant (to whom Boaz has some obligation); Boaz's terms for Ruth move from "young woman" (neutral) to "daughter" (family). This process will culminate in chap. 3.

2:18–23, Ruth Returns Home to Naomi. The first turning point of the story is reached as Naomi learns that Ruth has gleaned in Boaz's field and Ruth learns of Boaz's family connection. Even before learning Boaz's name, Naomi blesses the one who has taken cognizance of Ruth (using the same term that appeared in 2:10). When she hears that it is Boaz, Naomi blesses God, "who has not abandoned his *chesed*," and she tells Ruth that Boaz is a relative, in fact, a *go'el*, a redeemer (→ Redeemer) or family protector. Naomi encourages Ruth to accept the invitation to remain in Boaz's field throughout the harvest.

The *go'el*, usually translated "redeemer" or "next of kin," is one legally responsible for protecting the interests of the family. His main obligation is to buy land that must be sold or buy back land that has already been sold, so that the property will not become alienated from its original line of ownership (cf. Lev. 25:25; Jer. 32:7–10).

3:1–18, At the Threshing Floor. As in the previous chapter, there are three scenes, the second being the longest and most important. The tension escalates as the relationship between Ruth and Boaz develops.

3:1–5, Ruth and Naomi at Home. This section parallels 2:2, but here it is Naomi who takes the initiative. She seeks "security" for Ruth, meaning a husband, as she did in 1:9. "Boaz our kinsman with whose girls you were" is immediately juxtaposed, forcing Ruth and readers to view Boaz not as a father/master, but as a potential husband. Naomi does not call Boaz "our relative" or a *go'el*, as in chap. 2, but "our kinsman," as the narrator did in 2:1 when introducing Boaz. Naomi continues by outlining a plan whereby Ruth will approach Boaz at night at the threshing floor. The nature of this meeting is left ambiguous; there are undercurrents of a sexual encounter mixed with matters of family business and propriety.

3:6–15, Ruth with Boaz. During the harvest season the grain was threshed in the evening wind at an appropriate spot in the field and then guarded to prevent damage or theft. For this reason, Boaz was lying at night at the threshing floor. Ruth, doing as Naomi told her, approached him and "uncovered the place of his feet" (this may be a euphemism). It was perhaps Naomi's intention that Ruth should make her presence known to Boaz after he had eaten his dinner and lain down, but before he had fallen asleep. Boaz, however, does not become aware of Ruth until about midnight, when he is startled to find a woman "at the place of his feet." He asks, "Who are you?" a direct request for personal identification, in contrast to "Whose young woman is this?" in 2:5, which seeks to put Ruth in her family context. Naomi uses the same phrase, "Who are you?" in a different sense in 3:16. Ruth's response to

Boaz is significant, but difficult to interpret: "I am Ruth your handmaid; spread your skirt/wing over your handmaid for you are a *go'el.*" Ruth has raised herself from "maidservant" (2:13) to "handmaid" and has come to seek Boaz's protection in his role as *go'el.* "Spreading the skirt/wing" means taking one under protection, into the family; it recalls the same phrase used by Boaz in 2:12 in reference to God's protection. It is not clear whether Ruth is specifically proposing marriage here or not.

Boaz responds to this potentially embarrassing situation by making it seem that Ruth is doing him a favor rather than the reverse. He declares Ruth blessed (as Naomi did Boaz in 2:20) and views her coming to him as another, even greater, act of *chesed.* Indeed it is, for it shows that Ruth's actions were not motivated by selfishness, but out of family solidarity. Boaz adds that Ruth is a "worthy woman" (Heb. *'eshet chayil*), and by using this term he equates Ruth's status with his own; the narrator had used a counterpart term meaning "man of substance" *('ish gibbor chayil)* to describe Boaz in 2:1. Ruth is no longer a servant or a daughter, but a woman fit to marry Boaz. The major turning point of the story has been reached.

But just when we think a happy ending is in sight, we are told that there is another *go'el,* a closer kinsman who has a prior claim. Boaz bids Ruth "lodge [here] tonight"—this is the first time that Ruth has not "lodged" with Naomi, as in her declaration of 1:16—and promises to clear up the matter of who will act as *go'el.* He sends Ruth home early in the morning, thus protecting her reputation, and again provides her with food.

3:16–18, Ruth Returns Home to Naomi. Naomi greets Ruth with the words "Who are you?" meaning "What has happened? Has your status changed?" As before, Ruth tells Naomi what has transpired, emphasizing that the grain was sent especially for Naomi, for Boaz had said, "Do not return empty-handed to your mother-in-law." There is no record of his having said these words; Ruth wants to reinforce Naomi's positive image of Boaz as caring for the family. Naomi expresses her confidence that Boaz will expedite the matter of the redemption.

4:1–17, *Go'el,* Marriage, Progeny. The other *go'el,* left nameless in the story, is located by Boaz at the city gate, the commercial center of the town, and apprised in the presence of witnesses of the legal situation. The legal situation is complicated and puzzling. First of all, we are informed for the first time that Naomi has put up for sale or has already sold land that belonged to Elimelech. The *go'el* would have the first option, indeed the obligation, to buy it. The nameless *go'el* is willing to do his duty in the matter of the land, but is put off by a further complication. According to Boaz, the *go'el* who acquires the land also acquires the obligation to perpetuate the name of the deceased on his inheritance. Now this sounds like the law of the levirate, in which the widow of a man who died childless marries the brother of the deceased so that their firstborn may perpetuate the deceased's name (Deut. 25:5–10). If the transaction narrated in 4:1–12 is a form of the levirate, however, it is a form at variance with Deut. 25:5–10, which pertains only to the *brother* of the deceased. Neither Boaz nor the nameless *go'el* is the brother of Mahlon (nor apparently of Elimelech, despite Boaz's use of the phrase "our brother, Elimelech"), and therefore neither would be obligated to marry Ruth. Whatever the precise legal background may be, Boaz's obscure warning in 4:5 has the happy effect of dissuading the primary *go'el* from acquiring the land, so that when Boaz marries Ruth, as seems to have been his intention since 3:11, he, Ruth, and their children retain possession of the family inheritance. Unless one accepts an emendation in the text of 4:5, there is no mention in this verse of marriage. When Boaz makes his legal declaration in 4:9–10, however, he acquires both the land and Ruth as a wife. He has thus extended his role as *go'el* beyond the norm and thereby matches with his *chesed* the family loyalty already manifested by Ruth.

An ancient legal practice validating the transfer of real estate is noted in 4:7–8. Apparently it was no longer practiced by the time the book was written or edited. The removal and transfer of the shoe is an added confusion with the loosening of the shoe in the ceremony of rejection of the levirate (Deut. 25:9–10).

Wishes for progeny and communal status are given; they express the continuity with the patriarchs, hopes for many children, and continued prominence in Bethlehem. A more specific connection is made with Tamar and Judah because Boaz (and David) is a descendant of Judah; and through Ruth, as through Tamar, the family lineage is rescued and perpetuated.

A son is born to Boaz and Ruth. He is Naomi's comfort and fulfillment and the family's continuity and protector. Naomi takes him to her bosom and the women of the town proclaim "A son is born to Naomi." This helps to keep Naomi a central character; this is the culmination of Naomi's story no less than Ruth's.

4:18–22, The Davidic Genealogy. A brief genealogy listing three generations from Obed to David concludes the action of the story (v. 17). This is followed by a longer, more formal genealogy beginning with Perez, the son of Judah, and ending ten names later with David. Boaz occupies the significant seventh position. There is no mention of Mahlon, "the name of the deceased." There is no consensus on whether this genealogy was part of the original story or a later addition. In either case, it serves to focus on David, either to explain and legitimize David's ancestry or to legitimize a

wonderful story about otherwise obscure people by linking them to the great national hero.

Bibliography

Beattie, D. R. G. *Jewish Exegesis of the Book of Ruth.* Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1977.

Berlin, A. *Poetics and Interpretation of Biblical Narrative.* Sheffield: Almond, 1983.

Campbell, E. F. *Ruth.* Anchor Bible, 7. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1975.

Gordis, R. "Love, Marriage, and Business in the Book of Ruth." *A Light Unto My Path: Old Testament Studies in Honor of Jacob M. Myers.* Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1974. Pp. 241–64.

Rauber, D. F. "Literary Values in the Bible: The Book of Ruth." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 89 (1970): 27–37.

Sasson, J. M. *Ruth, A New Translation with a Philological Commentary and a Formalist-Folklorist Interpretation.* Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1979.

1 Samuel

ROBERT L. COHN

INTRODUCTION

Literary Analysis

The identification of 1 Samuel as a separate book derives from the Septuagint (LXX), in which Samuel and Kings are each divided into two parts and together constitute the four "Books of Kingdoms." Although the division of Samuel into two books may seem artificial, 1 Samuel does possess its own literary logic, which begins with the birth of Samuel and ends with the death of Saul. In fact, the book falls clearly into two parts centering upon these two figures: chaps. 1–12 chart Samuel's career from his birth to his farewell address; and chaps. 13–31 start with the notice of Saul's reign and conclude with the account of his death. But this division is not rigid: Saul appears as early as chap. 9 and Samuel continues to function after chap. 12. Yet these appearances are subordinated to the stories of Samuel and Saul, respectively.

The narrative strategy of the book depends upon the weaving of stories of successors into the lives of their predecessors: Samuel's into Eli's, Saul's into Samuel's, and David's into Saul's. In each case the narrative aims to reflect God's readiness to provide new leadership for his people as old institutions and individuals fail. With a sense of historical evolution as well as ideological revolution, the narrative of 1 Samuel moves us in stages toward the Davidic dynasty.

Composition

The classic theory of composition of 1 Samuel, fully articulated by Julius Wellhausen, divides the book into an early promonarchical source and a late antimonarchical source. The opposition of these two sources is most visible in the account of Saul's accession to kingship (chaps. 8–12), in which Samuel's strenuous opposition to the people's request for a king is interwoven with his enthusiastic support for Saul. Later theories insist that the source division is far more complex, that more than two sources are represented, and that compilation and redaction took place in several stages.

The final stage is the most evident. Most scholars agree that the last hands to work on 1 Samuel belonged to Deuteronomists, those anonymous writers and compilers of the books beginning with Joshua and ending with Kings that tell the story of Israel's life as a nation in its land. Unlike other parts of this Deuteronomistic History, however, 1–2 Samuel seems not to have been much edited or expanded in this last stage. The strict structure and formulaic introductions and conclusions so apparent in Judges and Kings are lacking here. Yet certain characteristic Deuteronomistic features surface: for example, the rehearsal of Israel's history of disobedience culminating in the need of a decision for or against God (1 Sam. 12:6–25) and the oracle against a "house" by a "man of God" (1 Sam. 2:27–36). If the Deuteronomists made only minor repairs to the materials of 1 Samuel, it was because those materials already fit their agenda well. True to the Deuteronomic understanding of the covenant, these pre-Deuteronomistic traditions showed how Saul's disobedience to God's command eventually led to his destruction, while David's faithfulness was rewarded by God.

Most scholars also agree that the materials in 1 Samuel came from originally independent narratives such as the tales of the Ark, the Saul cycle, and the rise of David. The Ark narrative appears to have been an Israelite version of a common ancient Near Eastern type of tale about captured deities wreaking havoc upon the enemy captors. The Saul cycle likely arose among partisans of Saul eager to champion his political cause and his military prowess. Only as a result of this cycle's combination with the David materials did Saul become a pitiful psychotic with no chance of success. The romanticized story of David's rise from a shepherd of sheep to a shepherd of God's people may have been composed during his reign to legitimate him against strong opposition or may be part of a much later attempt to underscore his exemplary qualities. Between these earliest materials and the Deuteronomistic redaction, there must have been other contributions to what became 1 Samuel, but here there is less agreement among biblical scholars. One popular view posits a prophetic history in which the earliest materials were arranged in three sections: the story of

Samuel (chaps. 1–7), in which the prophet Samuel replaces the priest Eli as the leader of all Israel; the story of Saul (chaps. 8–15), in which the prophet Samuel acts as both king maker and king breaker; and the story of David's rise (chaps. 16–31), in which God chooses his own king whom the prophet Samuel anoints privately (chap. 16) and, finally, confirms to Saul (chap. 28). In this history the prophet functions as sole intercessor even after the kingship is established with God's blessing. This focus on the prophet's role may reflect a northern Israelite perspective rather than the perspective of Jerusalem, where dynastic succession was well established. According to this view, the prophetic history nicely served the purposes of the Deuteronomists.

Importance

1 Samuel documents momentous changes in the character of the Israelite polity that took place roughly between 1050 and 1000 B.C. The book traces the beginnings of monarchy, the central institution of Judah and the cause of and the evidence for God's blessings upon Israel. It shows how this institution, which many from the very outset must have perceived as alien to Israelite identity and to the covenant tradition of early Israel, came to be not only accepted by Israel, but embraced by God. The book depicts the difficult transition from rule by charisma to rule by dynastic kingship by showing the inadequacy of judge, priest, and prophet to provide the stability necessary for national development. The book also explains the difficult problem of why, despite God's approval in principle of monarchy and his selection of the first king, that king failed and a new start had to be made under David. Saul is shown as a foil to David, who can do no wrong, for he alone is the man after God's own heart.

The treatments of the central personalities of the book constitute paradigmatic studies in the highly nuanced biblical vision of the relationship between divine control and human initiative. Thus Samuel, Saul, and David are all "chosen," but they exercise their freedom under God very differently. Samuel protests the people's rejection of him to God, but carries out God's order to anoint Saul king. Saul sees himself caught between the demands of the God who chose him and those of the people he rules and shows what happens to a leader who gets his priorities reversed. David's success depends on both God's favor and his own acumen; the complex interrelationship between these forms much of the dynamic of the engaging David cycle. So leadership under God has many human faces. 1 Samuel reads as a work deeply sensitive to the uses and abuses of human power and to the abiding ineluctability of divine election.

COMMENTARY

1:1–12:25
The Life of Samuel

The first part of 1 Samuel focuses on the life of the prophet Samuel, taking us from his birth (chap. 1) to his farewell speech (chap. 12). After chap. 12 the spotlight shifts to the first king, Saul, although Samuel plays a supporting role until his death in chap. 25. Samuel functions as priest, judge, and prophet—a kind of composite of premonarchical leadership roles. Like Moses, in whose image he is in many ways drawn, he intercedes with God on behalf of Israel. Although he surrenders his governing role to the king, his intercessory role remains crucial. Indeed, the books of Samuel are written not from a royal but from a prophetic perspective that accepts the institution of monarchy, but is critical of individual kings. Although the torch is passed to Saul and then to David, the book is rightly named after Samuel.

1:1–4:1a
The Coming of Age of Samuel

Unlike the accounts of many biblical figures who claim our attention only after they assume leadership, the story of Samuel, like those of Moses and Samson, begins before his birth. In this section the young and maturing Samuel is contrasted with the old and decaying Eli to underscore the dramatic new leadership Samuel will bring to Israel. The narrative heightens the contrast by opposing the piety of Samuel's parents to the corruption of Eli's sons. The climax of the section is reached in the first and only encounter of Samuel and Eli—when they come to terms with the invasive divine word that officially launches Samuel's career.

1:1–2:11, Samuel and His Parents. The story of Samuel's birth establishes both the piety of the family from which he hails and the reason that he, like Moses, comes to grow up in the house of the one he will displace. The tale begins with an unhurried narration aiming to root Samuel firmly in Israelite tradition both genealogically (1:1) and gynecologically (1:2), for like Isaac, Jacob, and Samson he is born of a long-childless mother. Next, Elkanah's piety is indicated by the description of his annual pilgrimage to Shiloh and by the special sacrificial portion that he reserved for his beloved but barren wife, Hannah. The verb forms in 1:7b signal the end of the parenthetical background (1:4b–7a) about Elkanah's yearly ritual and the beginning of the story's action. Thus, the tale starts: "One day when Elkanah sacrificed . . . [Hannah] wept and did not eat" (1:4a, 7b). Despite Elkanah's compassionate response to her (1:8), Hannah now turns to God to

pray for a son. The narrator, by contrasting our privileged view of Hannah's behavior with Eli's external observations, makes Eli look obtuse. Yet the priest reacts generously to Hannah's explanation, though she reveals nothing of the content of her prayer and vow. Ironically, the petition that he blesses will directly impinge upon him and his house. Eli is thus introduced as decent but lacking insight, a characterization that subsequent events will confirm.

Having devoted considerable attention to the tradition of the plight of the barren but beloved co-wife, the narrator swiftly telegraphs the conception and birth of the long desired son (1:19b–20). No ordinary conception this, but a joint venture, for after "Elkanah knew Hannah his wife, the LORD remembered her." Hannah alone knows what she had prayed for, and she alone sees the child as an answer to that prayer. The focus thus falls on Hannah's faith expressed both in the meaning of "Samuel," the name she gave the child ("because from the LORD I have asked him," 1:20), and in her fulfillment of her vow (1:21–28).

The emphasis on Hannah's piety continues in the narrative of the presentation of Samuel to Eli (1:21–28) and in the prayer following (2:1–10). The narrative is told from Hannah's perspective—Elkanah is identified as "her husband" (1:22–23) and Samuel as "her son" (1:23). Refusing to accompany "the man Elkanah and all his household" to Shiloh, she stays behind until she weans Samuel and is ready to deliver him to the priest. Then alone she treks to Shiloh and confronts Eli again. Elkanah is noticeably absent as Hannah returns to God at Shiloh what she received from God at Shiloh. Only at the very end of the scene do we hear that Elkanah was there too (2:11), a silent partner as his wife fulfills *her* vow and puts *her* son in the service of God.

The psalm that Hannah prays (2:1–10), usually regarded by critics as a late insertion, serves well to conclude Hannah's story and to preface the books of Samuel, for it celebrates the divine justice that reverses human expectations. It looks back to the barren woman (2:5) who has given birth, and it looks ahead to the king (i.e., David) whom God will empower (2:10). The movement of 1–2 Samuel is nicely encapsulated in the inclusio formed by the word "horn" in the first and last verses of the psalm: the poet begins with Hannah's good fortune ("my horn is raised up in the LORD," 2:1) and ends with the success of the king ("and he will raise up the horn of his anointed one," 2:10). As an expression of Hannah's thanksgiving, the psalm thus also sets the theme of the entire book.

2:12–36, Eli and His Sons. We turn from a tale of a mother's triumph to one of a father's tragedy; Eli's woe follows hard upon Hannah's joy. The narrator identifies the sons of Eli (whose names were mentioned earlier [1:3]) as "sons of Belial" (2:12), a derogatory epithet meaning "perverse" that Hannah earlier disclaimed in responding to Eli's charge (1:16). Next their habitual sin is detailed: they flout the "law of the priests" (2:13; stated here in legal rhetorical form) by greedily demanding the sacrificial meat and denying God his due.

By means of juxtaposition the narrator contrasts these "young men" (Heb. *na'arim*), sinful in "the LORD's sight" (*pene Yhwh*, 2:17), with the "boy" *(na'ar)* Samuel, who ministers "before the LORD" (*pene Yhwh*, 2:18; the Hebrew text has preserved only the consonants of the divine name, Yhwh, perhaps originally Yahweh; English version: "the LORD"). Indeed the reports about little Samuel's physical and spiritual growth (2:11, 18, 21, 26; 3:1) punctuate this tale of the corruption of Eli's sons. As Eli's natural sons degenerate in our eyes, his "adoptive" son blossoms. Meanwhile Samuel's natural parents have not abandoned him. The narrative stresses Hannah's ongoing maternal concern by mentioning her annual visits and gifts to her son (2:19). Hannah exits from the narrative with a notice of her remarkable fertility (2:21) preceding the report of Eli's sons' fornication (2:22).

Eli finally learns of his sons' perversity not from his none too keen observation, but from the people. In both the narration (2:22) and in Eli's own words (2:23–24), the text stresses that Eli does not *see* himself, but *hears* from others about his sons. Clearly he is not in control of his own family, let alone of his people. And his protests to his sons fall on deaf ears (2:25), deaf because God has his own plans for them. Eli asks his sons, "But if it is against the LORD that a person sins, who will pray for him?" (2:25). Though Eli asks the question rhetorically to condemn his sons, the answer ironically is hinted at in the next verse. There we are reminded that "the young man Samuel grew and prospered, with the LORD and with people" (2:26) at the same time that Eli's sons are sinning against people and God. Though there is no help for Eli's sons, Samuel will act precisely as intercessor later in the narrative by praying for the people. That Eli cannot even imagine such intercession is a sure indication that new leadership is needed.

The end of this unit (2:27–36) is an oracle against the house of Eli by an unnamed man of God. Its length and style identify it as a contribution of the Deuteronomistic writer eager to show God's tight control over events (cf. 1 Kings 13). This oracle appears to look ahead to Saul's massacre of the Elide priests of Nob (2:31; cf. 22:6–23), the escape of Abiathar alone (2:33; cf. 22:20–23), and Solomon's banishing of Abiathar from Jerusalem (cf. 1 Kings 2:26–27). Here Eli is held directly responsible for his sons' behavior (2:29), so that God appears justified in decimating and demoting Eli's house. To confirm the accuracy of these long-range predictions, a short-range sign is offered: the death of Eli's two sons on the same day (2:34; cf. 1 Kings 13:3). So when these two degenerates next appear (4:4), we know that their days are numbered. Hannah's song

echoes in this oracle: one house will be cut down and a faithful priest raised up (2:35). But though we expect Samuel to be this new priest—indeed, the narrator reiterates his priestly behavior immediately following the oracle (3:1)—events belie our expectation. The oracle, rather, looks ahead to the installation of Zadok and his house to replace the deposed Abiathar (cf. 1 Kings 2:35).

3:1–4:1a, Eli and Samuel. With Samuel's parents blessed and Eli's sons cursed, the text now turns to the encounter between the two principals. The pregnant stillness of the first verse hints that that encounter will be climactic: neither divine word nor prophetic vision breaks through these days. Eli, already shown as blind to his sons' deeds, is now physically blind as well. But it is not quite dark for Samuel—or for Israel—because the lamp still burns. The old man lies sleeping while the young lad is awake to the word of God. There is a comic touch to this scene: God speaks while his appointed priest sleeps and the young man Samuel races between them trying to figure things out. Just as Eli misread the meaning of Hannah's moving lips, so too does he misunderstand the source of the persistent voice Samuel is hearing. But similarly, just as he accepts Hannah's explanation, so now he accepts God's judgment against his house (3:18). God's oracle here is like a précis of the one in chap. 2, and again Eli is held responsible for his sons' misdeeds.

The chapter ends with the solution to the problem stated in 3:1. There "the word of the LORD was precious" and Israel lived with divine silence. But now Samuel becomes a channel for the word of the Lord and his reputation spreads throughout the land. So although Eli and his sons still live, they are no longer in control. The center of gravity has shifted to Samuel.

4:1b–7:17
The Philistine Interlude

But Samuel does not take over directly. In this section Samuel is depicted as a "judge" (7:15) who, following the pattern in the book of Judges, saves Israel from its enemies. Thus the Philistine defeat of Israel (4:10) precedes Samuel's assumption of leadership of an Israel leaderless for a formulaic twenty years (7:2). This section begins with Israel's loss to the Philistines and old Eli's death (4:10–18) and ends with Israel's triumph over the Philistines under Samuel's leadership (7:3–14). Between defeat and victory the scene shifts to Philistine territory for the tale of the adventures of the captured Ark of the covenant. This originally independent narrative, in which neither Shiloh nor Samuel figures, is fit into the space between the end of Eli's priesthood and the beginning of Samuel's judgeship.

4:1b–22, The Defeat of Israel. Two tragedies are interwoven here: the national and the personal. Israel goes down to the Philistines (4:1–11), and Eli and his daughter-in-law die, though for different reasons, as a result (4:12–22). Linking the two tragedies is the Ark of the covenant. The report of its capture by the Philistines occurs midway through this unit and both caps the defeat of Israel and precipitates the death of Eli (→ Philistines). The chapter begins with the unexpected slaughter of Israelites by the Philistines (4:2) and the elders' call for the Ark (4:3), which was believed to ensure Yhwh's presence in the battle. Lest there be any doubt about this motivation, the narrator calls the Ark by its full name: "the ark of the covenant of the LORD of hosts who is enthroned upon the cherubim" (4:4). Ominously, though, the already cursed (2:34) sons of Eli accompany the Ark to battle.

In 4:6 the scene shifts to the Philistine camp, where we see the Philistine reaction to the Ark. In their benighted pagan way they assume that Israel is polytheistic, but they do correctly identify the Ark with incomparable divine power. The identification of these "gods" with those that plagued the Egyptians (4:8) foreshadows the plagues that will soon strike the Philistines themselves. By stressing the Philistines' great fear of God, expressed in their emphatic direct address (4:7–9), the author allows them to defeat the Israelites, but does not compromise God's power.

Meanwhile back at Shiloh Eli awaits word of the battle (4:13), "watching," though, we soon discover, he cannot see (4:15). In a scene calculated to draw out the tragic effect of the bad news, the messenger first informs the city and only then approaches Eli (4:14). Then he repeats his credentials twice as if trying to avoid what he is about to say (4:16). At last he gives his report (4:17), but he reverses the chronological order of the last two disasters as given by the narrator (4:11). Though his intent may be to soften the blow, the climactic news that the Ark has been captured topples Eli and kills him. Not his sons' death, but the Ark's capture pushes him over the edge; our last view of him is, again, as a pious though powerless priest. And the narrator concludes his life with the formulaic conclusion of a judge's reign (4:18), for, from the Deuteronomistic perspective, every major figure between Joshua and Saul was a judge.

In a kind of human interest footnote to the death of Eli, the author recounts the impact of the events on Eli's daughter-in-law. Only after Hophni and Phinehas are dead are they differentiated by the information that Phinehas is survived by a pregnant widow. The narrator reverses the order of disasters yet again, putting the death of her husband last (4:19). And though we might think that it is this personal tragedy that sends her into premature labor and sudden death, her own last words suggest otherwise. She names her son Ichabod in memory of the lost Ark (4:21) and mourns its capture as she expires (4:22). This sad little incident hammers home the overriding tragedy we have just witnessed.

Finally, it should be noted that Yhwh is completely silent in this chapter. The loss of the battle and the Ark are not attributed to him, nor is his purpose clear in permitting his Ark to be captured. Israel could have suffered for the sins of the house of Eli in some other way. So though the scene ends in death and desperation, we anticipate some explanation for this strange turn of events.

5:1–12, The Hand of God upon the Philistines. That explanation is not long in coming, for our attention is now directed to Philistine country and the manifestation of God's power against the Philistine god Dagon (5:1–5) and against the Philistine people themselves (5:6–12). The first evidence that the capture of the Ark did not signify the humbling of Yhwh comes in a mock battle with Dagon. The Ashdodites, who understand the Ark as Yhwh's physical representation, set it up beside Dagon in his temple to symbolize Yhwh's honoring of Dagon's might (5:2). But, comically, Dagon is twice found toppled, the second time with hands and head cut off (5:4), a mutilation motif known from Canaanite mythology. Only the results of the battle are reported, not the battle itself, because for a biblical author Yhwh's battle with an idol could only be a mock battle. Yet it is clear both to the Philistines and to readers that Yhwh had defeated Dagon just as he defeated Pharaoh, the symbol of the gods of Egypt. And lest there be any doubt, the doubling of Dagon's downfall (5:3, 4), just like the doubling of Joseph's dreams, guarantees that the occurrence was no accident (cf. Gen. 41:32). Having punished the god, Yhwh turns to punish the people by striking the Ashdodites with a plague, the nature of which is not altogether clear. The Masoretic scribal tradition read "hemorrhoids" for the written "swellings" (5:6). But the LXX includes a verse here that tells of mice swarming upon the land from the Philistine ships. The combination of mice and swellings has suggested to commentators bubonic plague carried by rats and often spread among seacoast cities. In any case, the later fashioning of both golden tumors and golden mice (6:4, 5) would seem to presuppose a plague involving both.

The Ark is rapidly passed from Ashdod to Gath to Ekron and, by implication, to the other Philistine cities—Ashkelon and Gaza—as well (see 6:17), bringing tumors and death wherever it goes. Prominent are the cries of fear and desperation of the Philistines (5:7, 8, 10–11), who, like the Egyptians before them (cf. Exod. 12:30–33), want to rid their land of the source of the plague.

6:1–7:1, The Return of the Ark. Just as the biblical storyteller delighted in elaborating the ironic predicament of the Philistines smitten by their prize trophy, so too he relishes detailing the careful plan that the Philistines prepare for returning it. Bypassing the fallen and powerless Dagon, they ask their priests for aid (6:2). The priests respond with an extraordinarily lengthy plan (6:4–9) for sending back the Ark, but also with a test to determine if the source of the plague is really the god of Israel. They propose a "reparation offering" (6:3) to accompany the Ark back to Israelite territory. The five golden tumors and mice serve, on the one hand, as a sacrifice that decontaminates Philistine territory (hence, the need for a new cart and unyoked cows) and, on the other hand, as a payment of tribute symbolically representing the five Philistine lords and their cities. The priests further determine that if the young postpartum cows can, unnaturally, ignore the cries of their newborn calves and proceed without guidance to Beth-shemesh, then it must be Yhwh's power in the Ark that leads them now and that caused the plague in the first place (6:7–9).

Prominent throughout this choral instruction is the parallel to the Exodus story. Thus, just as the Egyptians "sent forth" the Israelites with "golden vessels" (Heb. *kele zahab;* Exod. 12:35), so too the Ark is to be "sent off" with the "figures of gold" (*kele hazzahab;* 1 Sam. 6:8). Consciously too the priests recall the Egyptians as a negative example for their countrymen: they are warned not to harden their hearts and be made sport of, as the Egyptians were (6:6; cf. Exod. 10:2). In 6:10–16 we see the journey of the Ark and its reception in Beth-shemesh from the Philistine perspective. From their purchase on the border, the Philistines hear nothing; no Israelite dialogue is recorded. Instead, with the Philistines, we watch as the men of Beth-shemesh rejoice (6:13) and sacrifice (6:15). When the Philistines finish their observation and return home (6:16), we too can see nothing further and the scene ends. The appearance of levitical priests, anachronistically here, is probably a late interpolation suggested because Beth-shemesh was a levitical city (→ Levites; Priests).

After a formulaic conclusion and etiology (account of origins; 6:17–18), the story takes a surprising turn. In an epilogue (6:19–7:1), some number of Israelites are slain for looking into the Ark. The tale then ends with a question that points to the theme of the whole: the Ark and its god are not to be taken for granted, owned as a prize possession. The naked power of Yhwh will strike out at Israelite and Philistine alike. So the Ark is sent off to Kiriath-jearim, a town on the border of Judah, Dan, and Benjamin, and put in the charge of someone especially consecrated to care for it. That way, presumably, it will pose no danger. But then Yhwh would also seem to be set at a distance. To solve this new problem, Samuel reemerges.

7:2–17, Samuel's Intercession. Balancing Israel's defeat at the hands of the Philistines in chap. 4 is Israel's victory over the Philistines here. The house of Eli fell then; now the star of Samuel rises. And, not coincidentally, Samuel names the place of victory Ebenezer (Heb., "stone of help"; 7:12), the name of the site of the earlier slaughter (4:2, 10).

This unit begins with the predicament of the Ark apparently out of commission and Israel mourning God's absence. Into this scene comes Samuel, who initiates a ceremony, with Deuteronomistic trappings, of a covenant renewal: the disposal of Canaanite icons, a water-pouring rite, the people's admission of guilt, a sacrifice, and prophetic intercession. Samuel's order to put away the foreign gods recalls Joshua's covenant renewal at Shechem (Josh. 24:14), while his care in offering the sacrifice contrasts sharply with the practice of the sinful sons of Eli. Samuel's intercessory role is spotlighted here. "I will intercede on your behalf," he announces (7:5). He becomes the answer to the question that for Eli was unanswerable (2:25): "Who will intercede for the sinner?" By successfully enlisting God's aid, Samuel accomplishes what neither Eli's priesthood nor the Ark could: the elimination of the Philistine threat.

The concluding narration (7:12–17) stresses Samuel's continued intercession: "and so the hand of the LORD was against the Philistines all of Samuel's life" (7:13). Thanks to Samuel, the equilibrium lost when the house of Eli fell apart is restored. Finally, the summary of Samuel's functions and regular circuit (7:15–17) telescopes the rest of his life in preparation for our next view of him as an old man. But also the report of his successful "judging" of Israel sets a backdrop against which the people's demand for a king to "judge" them and fight for them (8:20) appears unwarranted.

8:1–12:25
Samuel Prepares for His Successor

The lion's share of narrative space devoted to Samuel concerns his relationship with his successor, Saul, just as most of Saul's story is enmeshed with David's. The problematic of the book of Samuel is the quest for godly and durable leadership in Israel, so that the transitions between leaders prove to be the flash points of narrative interest. In this section the issues surrounding the introduction of kingship to Israel are brought together. Although some circles in Israel regarded this institution as necessary and desirable, others saw it as a threat to inherited tribal traditions. Both perspectives are represented in this section. Sources favorable to Saul are sandwiched in a narrative quite hostile to monarchy. Together they form a five-unit bloc, alternating between anti-king and pro-Saul views. As a result monarchy emerges as an institution fraught with ambiguity. Born out of human rebellion, it is nonetheless supported by God; kingship may bring disaster, but also salvation. Samuel appears in this seesaw story as both bitter lame-duck leader and joyful patron of his successor.

8:1–22, The People Request a King. Wayward sons in the Bible frequently bring ruin upon their fathers' houses (e.g., Ham, Abimelech, Absalom), but here the repetition of the motif first with Eli's sons and now with Samuel's points to a larger literary scheme. Just as Eli's two sons abused the priesthood and led to Samuel's judgeship, now Samuel's two sons pervert justice and provoke the people's request for a king. A new order—the monarchy—is about to emerge.

The unit centers on Samuel's lengthy harangue on the evils of kingship (8:10–18). It is bracketed on either side by dialogues in which Samuel intercedes between the elders' demands and God's responses (8:4–9, 19–22). The elders speak as representatives of the people as a whole who will later appear en masse to reap the fruits of the negotiations (10:17–27). Although judicial corruption provides a reasonable motive for the elders' request for new leadership, their blunt style and revolutionary demand conspire to make Samuel the more sympathetic figure. The narrator's neutral comment about Samuel's age (8:1) becomes in their mouths crude and cruel ingratitude when addressed to the man whose intercession had kept the Philistines at bay for a generation (8:5). Moreover, when they request a king "to judge us like all the nations," they show themselves eager to cast off their unique role as God's special people (cf. Deut. 17:14–15). Samuel's reaction reveals for the first time in his story a fragile ego stung by rejection. What reportedly irks Samuel is not the threat to the covenant, the desire to mimic the nations, but only the threat to himself, expressed in the words: "Give us a king to judge us" (8:6). God rejoins gently that it is not Samuel, but God, whom the people have rejected. The allusion to the Exodus (8:8) aligns the people's request with an unbroken series of apostasies reaching back to the beginning of Israel.

Samuel's recitation of the excesses of royal rule (8:11–18) begins and ends with ironic jabs at his audience. At the outset he calls his speech "the justice of the king" (8:11), yet details only injustice. And he concludes with the reminder that all this tyranny will be brought to you by "your king whom you have chosen for yourselves" (8:18). Many scholars have argued that this litany of deprivations and persecutions actually reflects the hardships suffered under Solomon. Yet opposition to monarchy as such never again surfaces in Deuteronomistic writings. Moreover, the royal corruption depicted here matches that of Canaanite kings from as early as the Late Bronze Age (ca. 1500–1200 B.C.). So it is more likely that this picture represents the view of those circles who, from the beginning, opposed monarchy, even if the text bears later Deuteronomistic markings.

The unit concludes with the elders' reiteration of their demand and God's reiteration of his order to Samuel to do what they say. God appears reluctant but resigned to the change in leadership, but Samuel, by again seeking God's reassurance, reveals his abiding resentment.

9:1–10:16, Samuel Privately Anoints Saul. Juxtaposed to the account of God's concession to popular outcry stands a folktale about God's gracious provision of a king for the people. With the elders' carping plaint still reverberating, the narrative cuts away to a quiet pastoral scene and the charming story of a man who, in search of his father's lost asses, finds a kingdom instead. This story comes at kingship from a different angle: Samuel is depicted not as national judge but as local seer, not threatened by kingship but embracing God's chosen. Kingship here is all God's idea, not the people's. Unlike chap. 8, in which we saw events through Samuel's eyes, this story proceeds from Saul's point of view. The difference in perspectives is the key to resolving the apparent conflict between the two tales. Saul lacks the readers' privileged access to the elders' request or knowledge of Samuel's pique. Saul experiences only Samuel's solicitude and God's onrushing spirit.

The tale begins with Saul's pedigree (9:1), syntactically identical to the one given Samuel (1:1), but continues not with a birth story, but with the mature Saul. This initial parallel marks Saul as, in some sense, Samuel's equal and prepares us for the role about to be thrust upon him. And Saul's distinctive good looks give him a further credential for leadership. The action proper is narrated through Saul's perceptions: we hear his father sending him out (9:3), follow his journeys (9:4), share his anxieties (9:5, 7), and search for an unnamed seer (9:11–13). Only when Saul and his servant actually arrive does the narrator intrude with Samuel's name (9:14) and reveal that Saul's quest for the seer is reciprocated by Samuel's search for him.

Throughout, Saul appears quite childlike, following the lead of others. Initially his servant, presumably his inferior, soothes his anxiety, leads him to the seer, and supplies the gift for him. Then Saul submits without a word to the instructions of Samuel (9:22–10:8), who dominates the rest of the unit. Although in the tradition of Moses (Exod. 3:11) and Gideon (Judg. 6:15), he questions Samuel's acclamation of him (1 Sam. 9:21), he silently follows Samuel to dinner, to sleep, and to his anointing. The elevation of this simple man is yet another enactment of the lyric of Hannah's song.

If Saul's star is rising, Samuel's is falling. Because he is seen from Saul's perspective, Samuel here lacks the judicial, executive, or military functions he wielded earlier. Samuel only anoints and predicts signs to confirm the legitimacy of the anointment. In fact, before he even appears in this chapter, he is demoted by the very terms used to refer to him. First, the servant tells of a "man of God in this city" (9:6), that is, a local clairvoyant. Then the narrator, in an explanatory gloss (9:9), tells us that the figure formerly called "seer" (Heb. *ro'eh*) is in his day called "prophet" *(nabi')*. Both terms get deflated in the story. Saul's concern that "we bring" *(nabi)* a gift to the man of God (9:7) defines the term (by the play on the unrelated homonyms) as one who receives gifts for his services. And though the maidens drawing water call Samuel a "seer," he does not "see" very well. Pointedly, the narrator tells us, "The LORD had opened up the ear of Samuel" (9:15), not the eye, to tell him of Saul's arrival. And even when Samuel sees Saul (9:17), he does not recognize him until God expressly identifies him. Samuel then looks rather ludicrous as he proclaims, "I am the seer" (9:19). The seer of this story sees only what God tells him to see; Samuel here functions purely as an instrument for God's elevation of Saul to "king designate" *(nagid)*.

From the perspective of this unit, monarchy derives exclusively from God's compassion. God's first words to Samuel (9:16) echo that earlier summons to Moses before the Exodus. There too he "saw" his people and "heard their cry come up to me" (Exod. 3:9). Now the Philistines are the new Egyptians, oppressing God's people and calling forth God's salvation. Saul is a new Moses. Monarchy here presents no challenge to the ancient traditions; it simply fulfills God's promise to his people to be with them. The "king designate" takes his place in a long line of divinely chosen saviors, not, as in the previous chapter, as the symbol of the people's latest rebellion against God. The hand of God lurks here in subtle ways too: a coin is found to give to the prophet (9:8) and maidens appear to point the way to the seer (9:11–13). But these are no chance occurrences. The onrush of God's breath upon Saul confirms to him all that Samuel has told him. Indeed, to all present he becomes another person (10:11–12), no longer recognizable as the "son of Kish," but as an ecstatic to be identified in terms of his prophetic "father" (the leader of a group of prophets).

As positive as the story is toward Saul, it leaves us wondering just a bit about what the future holds. Saul has been anointed privately as *nagid* (Heb., "king designate") but the public "election" as *melek* ("king") still lies ahead. And Samuel's warning that Saul must wait at Gilgal for seven days for Samuel to come to offer sacrifice raises the specter of trouble ahead in light of Saul's already demonstrated childlike behavior. The unit is rounded off by a return to the problem that launched it, the lost asses of Kish, and Saul's assurance to his uncle that they had been found. With the note on Saul's silence about his anointment, the narrator prepares us for the public selection in the next unit.

10:17–27, Samuel Orchestrates the Public Selection of Saul as King. Verses 17–27 may originally have followed upon 8:22. There the elders have been dispersed to their cities to convey Samuel's response to their demand for a king, while here Samuel assembles "all Israel" at Mizpah to execute that demand. The negative view of the king resumes here: again God interprets the people's request for a king as their rejection of

him (10:19). At the same time, the intervening positive view of Saul comes into play. Again Saul is described, this time from the point of view of the people rather than the narrator, as the tallest among them (10:23), and Samuel acclaims his uniqueness (10:24). Moreover, those who accompany Saul, enspirited by God, are called "sons of valor," while those who denigrate him are termed by contrast "sons of Belial [wickedness]" (10:26–27).

Yet the interweaving of positive and negative perspectives lends an ironic tone to the whole. Though the selection of Saul by lot indicates God's direct hand in the matter, in other stories the casting of lots determines not a hidden hero, but a hidden sinner whose sin has brought divine wrath upon the whole people (e.g., Josh. 7; 1 Sam. 14:24–45). Then too at the crucial moment our champion, Saul, is nowhere to be found: is his hiding a sign of the modesty or of the childish fear that we saw earlier? And does Samuel's acclamation of Saul's greatness after the people drag Saul into the open (10:24) carry a sincere or a sarcastic tone? These ambiguities are the inevitable result of the dovetailing of pro-Saul and anti-king traditions.

The unit ends with two final ambiguities that point ahead to a rocky future for kingship. The narrator alludes to Samuel's dire warnings of "the justice of the king" (8:11) when he tells of Samuel's writings of "the ways of the kingship" (10:25) in a book. Second, the wicked fellows' question, "How will this one save us?" raises questions about Saul's abilities before they are even tested. That question casts a giant shadow over the subsequent story of Saul's reign.

11:1–15, Saul Demonstrates His Leadership. Having been demanded by the elders at Ramah, privately anointed by Samuel in his city, and publicly selected by lot at Mizpah, Saul is now popularly acclaimed as king at Gilgal. Like colonial American cities each claiming that "George Washington slept here," important Israelite shrines preserved traditions connecting them with Israel's first king. One only wonders why no tale naming Bethel, Samuel's other haunt (7:16), is extant. But these tales have been transformed into a single linear narrative subordinating Saul to Samuel. In this unit that aim is most blatant, for Saul hears of the plight of Jabesh-gilead and responds to it quite without Samuel's intervention. Yet Samuel's name is included with Saul's in the rally cry to battle (11:7), and it is Samuel who leads the people to Gilgal to proclaim Saul's kingship. At every stage of this extended accession of the first king, the prophet Samuel remains in control; indeed, in the next unit (chap. 12), he has the last word, and a foreboding one.

Because the Philistines would seem to be the major threat to Israel (9:16), this tale of Saul's initial victory over the Ammonites comes as a surprise, but it fits the pattern of those of the "judges" and incorporates elements of holy war ideology. The enemy threat calls forth a hero empowered by God's spirit to muster the tribes and lead them to total victory. The pattern is broken, however, by the unlikely week-long reprieve given Jabesh by the Ammonites (11:3), a respite that gives the author time to dramatize the transformation of Saul from farmer to general. The conclusion to the war also breaks the pattern, this time definitively, for now the judge becomes king. In triumph Saul appears magnanimous, demanding amnesty for those who doubted him (11:13) and thus winning total support.

12:1–25, Samuel's Farewell Address. The last unit in this section ends the extended narrative about the beginning of monarchy on a sober note and concludes as well the era of the "judges," for Samuel, the last judge, takes leave of his people. This lengthy sermon and valedictory address marks Samuel's last public appearance, and he takes the occasion both to review Israel's history and to lay out the options that lie ahead. In terms of the larger Deuteronomistic History, this speech thus constitutes a major structural pivot between two different periods.

The first verse resumes the language of 8:7: Samuel reminds the people that kingship was all their idea, not his. He proceeds to extract from them a confession that he was an honest and honorable leader undeserving of their rejection. Against the backdrop of Samuel's justice, the people's demand for a king again appears ungracious. Having established his own unblemished leadership, Samuel recalls all of the "righteous acts" of God. Specifically, he alludes to those of God's salvific acts that featured heroes whom he deems his predecessors: Moses and Aaron, Jerubbaal, Bedan (perhaps another name for Jephthah), and Jephthah. The series ends with Samuel naming himself in the third person (12:11) as the final deliverer before kingship begins. This slip into the third person points to the author's intention: to punctuate his history with the career of Samuel, the last of the old order.

With the "and now" of 12:13, the speech shifts into the present and the choices that will determine the future. In Deuteronomistic language Samuel sets forth the people's choice: obedience to "the commandment of the LORD" or disaster (12:14–15; cf. Deut. 30:15–20). To prove his contention that the people have sinned in requesting a king, Samuel calls for divine confirmation in the form of an out-of-season thunderstorm. Struck by this miracle, the people for the first time admit their sin (12:19). Yet precisely at this point Samuel turns the tables and offers comfort and hope. Despite their sin, he promises, God will not forsake them, and he, Samuel, will continue to pray for them. So this speech envisions an important ongoing function for Samuel and his prophetic successors during the monarchy: as intercessor and instructor (12:23) he is not replaced by the king, but remains superior to him.

Samuel's swan song, though antimonarchical in its general thrust, nonetheless looks ahead to kingship with hope in God's continued faithfulness toward Israel and the prophet's continued intercession on Israel's behalf. Samuel's last word on kingship is thus more moderate and positive than his first. The intervening narrative, which looks at kingship from several different points of view, issues in this cautious look ahead.

In summary, the combination of "pro" and "anti" perspectives on kingship in 1 Samuel 8–12 created a wholly new examination of the beginnings of monarchy. Although the positive view of Saul in 9:1–10:16 and 11:1–15 would seem to contrast sharply with the negative view of kingship we saw in 8:1–22; 10:17–27; and 12:1–25, in these "anti" units not the person of Saul, but the institution of kingship is attacked. Only the wicked "sons of Belial" challenge Saul himself (10:27). Conversely, in the "pro" passages, where Saul is viewed as a savior, the institution of kingship as such is never discussed in general terms. It presents no threat because it is taken for granted, not viewed as a novelty. The effect of this combination is to place the hero Saul in an ambiguous position, the first incumbent of an institution hedged about with question marks. Ironically, it will be the institution and not the hero who survives.

13:1–31:13
The Reign of Saul

The second part of 1 Samuel spans the career of Saul as king, but is principally concerned with his relationship to David. Although Saul does not die until the last chapter, God's rejection of him at the outset casts a pall over his reign. The subsequent anointment of David sets the two on a collision course that runs through nearly every chapter. One finds only sparingly in this narrative the political, military, social, and demographic details that would be necessary to reconstruct a rudimentary picture of the early monarchy. Instead, one finds a story of two giant personalities caught up in a struggle of love and power that sends Saul spiraling downward and leaves David positioned to assume control.

13:1–15:35
The Beginning of the Fall of Saul

The reign of Saul begins with three successive tales in which disobedience to an order exposes his foolishness and leads God to reject him. Although in the previous section not Saul but the institution of monarchy was attacked, here Saul proves a failure while monarchy persists. Saul's ritual infractions may seem minor, hardly weighty enough to justify his punishment; God may appear to be looking for a pretext to depose Saul. Yet the sequence of errors suggests habitual behavior unbefitting God's chosen. Still, with the deck seemingly stacked against him from the start, he remains a sympathetic character.

13:1–22, Samuel Condemns Saul. The historian's difficulty in chronicling Saul's reign is pointed up in the formulaic verse with which the story of the first king opens, for the crucial age and regnal years have been dropped in transmission. This inauspicious opener is followed by the troubling report of a victory against the Philistines by Jonathan, as yet unidentified, for which Saul apparently takes the credit (13:3–4).

Next, sandwiched between accounts of Philistine might comes the first of the three episodes depicting Saul in a compromised position (13:8–15). The extended description of Israelite fear in the face of overwhelming Philistine power (13:5–7) gives teeth to the explanation that Saul gives Samuel for his failure to wait for the prophet's arrival (13:11–12). Moreover, the narrator is careful to point out that Saul did wait the seven days as Samuel had commanded and that Samuel appeared only afterward, just in time to condemn the king: "And so as he was finishing the offering of the burnt offering, here comes Samuel!" (13:10). Saul eagerly greets Samuel and responds to his question, unaware, it seems, of any guilt; his response to Samuel's harsh words of judgment can only be shocked silence.

On the one hand, it is almost as if the old Samuel is eager to abort the term of a successor he never wanted. Saul's sin hardly seems grievous enough to warrant God's rejection. On the other hand, because Saul did not keep the "appointment," or commandment (Heb. *mitzwah*), of God, God is justified in "appointing" *(wayetzawwehu)* a successor to him (13:13–14); the wordplay clinches the connection between the two acts and thus the justice of Samuel's charge. At this point, however, we sympathize with Saul, who seems to have followed the commandment and broken it at the same time.

The rest of the unit returns to narration about the Philistine might. Saul and Israel stay put while the Philistines send troops in several directions at once. Then the narrator flashes back to explain that the Philistine monopoly on iron prevented the Israelites from fashioning swords and spears. In light of Saul's inaction and Israel's weakness, the courage of Jonathan in the next chapter stands out even more sharply.

13:23–14:46, Jonathan's Valor and Saul's Folly. In this second episode of Saul's kingship, Saul looks bad again, this time in contrast to his son Jonathan. While Saul sits encamped under a pomegranate tree, Jonathan wreaks havoc behind the Philistine lines. When Saul at last goes to battle, he precipitously utters

an oath of vengeance that nearly destroys the heroic Jonathan. The focus on Jonathan in this chapter shows us the man who could succeed Saul were his kingdom to continue. But since we already know that Saul's kingdom will not survive (13:14), Jonathan, whose bravery and popularity clearly exceed his father's, becomes a poignant figure. The episode begins with the first identification of Jonathan as Saul's son (14:1) and thus as a logical candidate for succession. Already a victor in war with only half as many troops as Saul (13:2–3), Jonathan now sets off on a solo expedition to break the deadlock with the Philistines. While Jonathan is accompanied in this daring act over rough terrain (14:4–5) by only his armor bearer, Saul, with six hundred troops, sits motionless. As he sets out, Jonathan shows himself appropriately pious, again in contrast to Saul. Saul countermanded Samuel's order for fear of desertion by his troops, but Jonathan righteously affirms that God can save with many or few. Moreover, he waits for a sign from God before proceeding (14:8–12). Saul, on the other hand, having called for the Ark (or the ephod, according to the LXX) before battle, dismisses the priest and marches out without knowledge of God's will (14:18–19).

Although Saul's rashness does not lose the battle for him this time, his next impetuous act nearly costs him his son: he lays a curse on anyone who eats before he defeats the Philistines (14:24). Jonathan, who speaks rather pompously and disparagingly of his father after unwittingly disobeying his father's order (14:29–30), places the onus of guilt squarely upon Saul. And the altar that Saul builds, pointedly the very first (14:35), does little to assuage our growing sense that Saul cannot redeem himself.

Flushed with victory, Saul decides, again rashly, to pursue the Philistines to the last man (though, ironically, in the very next chapter he will fail to follow God's order to do precisely this to the Amalekites). This time he does inquire of God, but God does not respond because of the curse brought down by Jonathan's sweet tooth. After the casting of lots points to Jonathan as the culprit, the confrontation between father and son exposes sharply their contrasting personalities. Without apologies or excuses, the righteous Jonathan tells what he did, albeit in a manner that makes ludicrous both Saul's order and his own willingness to die: "I surely did taste with the tip of my staff in my hand a bit of honey; here I am ready to die" (14:43). But Saul, missing the irony, is adamant that he shall die. Saul is determined to follow strictly his own rashly taken oath, yet he has interpreted God's commandments freely and will do so again. Finally, the soldiers intervene on Jonathan's behalf, acclaiming his victory and charging Saul with stupidity. Saul departs without a word, though clearly humiliated, having surrendered to the people's will as he will again in the next episode—with grievous consequences for himself.

14:47–52, Summary of Saul's Reign. Abutting this unflattering view of Saul are two positive reports about Saul's military achievements (14:47–48, 52) bracketing a short family tree. Again we are reminded that in the eyes of some, Saul did valiantly despite the general negative impression we get from the episodes. The final author has positioned this regnal summary, however, not at the end of the Saul narrative, but close to the beginning, between two tales of Saul's recklessness. In so doing he suggests that the reign of Saul is, for practical purposes, over. The narration also serves to introduce members of Saul's family soon to come into play. Finally, the mention of Saul's victory over the Amalekites (14:48) connects this summary to the subsequent story, which views that battle differently.

15:1–35, God Rejects Saul. In this unit Saul's poor judgment, which we have seen twice already, seals his doom. By failing to execute the *cherem* (Heb., "ban") against the Amalekites, Saul directly contravenes God's command and merits God's rejection (→ Ban). Yet the matter is not quite so simple: Saul is no villain, and Samuel, who pronounces his fate, is not just a mouthpiece for God. In the complex dialogue between the two principals, we see the anguish of two men caught between the divine will and their own freedom.

The episode begins with God's uncompromising demand for extermination of the Amalekites, a sacred duty that rightly falls upon the first king, who has defeated his enemies round about (14:47; cf. Deut. 25:17–19). With the imperatives of 15:3 stated in the singular, there can be no ground for misunderstanding—or the excuses that Saul will later give. Dutifully, Saul sets out for battle, but mercifully he pauses to send the Kenites away (15:6). Although this thoughtfulness would seem to be unimpeachable, it is just that kind of independent judgment that, we next discover, has led Saul to "have mercy upon" (Heb., *wayyachmol*) not the women and children as we might expect, but the king and the best of the livestock and "upon all the good things" (15:9). Saul has utterly subverted God's commandment of *cherem* by taking the good things instead of devoting them to God.

God reacts by repenting of his choice of Saul as king, but Samuel, crying all night, apparently takes Saul's side. While Saul builds a self-congratulatory monument (15:12), Samuel approaches to deliver a devastating critique. In his subsequent dialogue with Saul, Samuel repeatedly offers him a chance to confess his sin, but obdurate Saul fails the test.

Saul treats Samuel's initial question (15:14) as a request for information rather than for confession. And in his answer he shifts the blame for capturing sheep and oxen to the people and takes personal credit for executing the *cherem*—this in pointed contrast to the narrator's objective report that Saul and the people together did the sparing (15:9). Saul altogether fails to mention Agag and invents out of whole cloth a sup-

posed sacrifice to the Lord for which the livestock have been reserved. To Samuel's second set of questions (15:19), Saul responds in a similar way, this time claiming total personal obedience and heaping all the blame on the people. Given every chance to confess, Saul, unlike Jonathan in the previous episode, mounts a cover-up.

With keen psychological insight, Samuel diagnoses Saul's problem: he is "little in [his] own eyes" (15:17), the victim, we might say, of an inferiority complex. When Saul finally does confess, he confirms this judgment in admitting that "I feared the people and obeyed their voice" (15:24). For the third time in three chapters we see Saul giving in to the people's wishes, following them rather than leading them, putting his public image before his responsibility to God, who alone is to be feared and obeyed. Saul's confession comes too late, however—only after Samuel, in formally metered couplets, has announced his verdict (15:22–23). In fact, though, Saul has condemned himself: since he was willing to kill Jonathan for unwittingly breaking his own oath, how much more so does he deserve punishment for knowingly defying God's order?

Saul, realizing that all that is left to him is the appearance of royalty, asks for Samuel to accompany him, but Samuel initially refuses. As God's spokesman he reiterates mechanically his reasons: you have rejected God, so he has rejected you (15:26); just as you have torn my robe, so has God torn the kingdom from you (15:28). His revenge upon Agag he explains with similar bloodless logic: as you have made women childless, so shall your mother now be (15:33). Yet, in the end, Samuel's sympathy for his favorite wins out and he consents to honor him (15:31). The last verse of the chapter confirms that Samuel's prophetic duties have not diminished his abiding love for Saul.

16:1–18:30
David in the House of Saul

Having rejected Saul, God wastes no time in finding a successor to him. This time, though, the king is unambiguously God's man; the people have no voice in his selection (16:1). David's resounding successes make us wonder whether Saul's failure was God's way of rejecting the people's choice. In this section David is twice introduced to Saul, who twice takes him into his house. As a musician David appears sensitive and intellectual; as a warrior he shows bravery and faith in God. These qualities endear him to Saul's son Jonathan and daughter Michal. By the end of the section, David has established formal bonds with both, but he has also earned the undying jealousy of Saul.

16:1–13, Samuel Anoints David. Despite his reluctance, Samuel sets out at God's command to find a replacement for Saul. Whereas Saul came to Samuel as if by accident, Samuel sets out purposefully to find David, thus underscoring God's greater initiative this time. Yet the anointing scene seems calculated to stress the similarities between Saul and David to show that David is indeed the proper successor. Both anointings are secret: in the case of David, even he is not told why he is anointed and his kingship remains hidden until Saul is dead. Both Saul and David are of similar social station before they are chosen. Saul claims to be of the least important tribe and clan (9:21) and is found while searching for his father's asses. David is the youngest of Jesse's sons and tends his father's sheep. The motif of the youngest or least likely who becomes the greatest clearly replays Hannah's song. Like Saul, David must be brought in from the wings to be anointed; neither seeks the position suddenly thrust upon him.

In this tale the power of Samuel continues its eclipse. Just as his ability as a "seer" was mocked in the story of Saul's anointment, here he wrongly assumes that the first son of Jesse upon whom he lays eyes must be God's choice, apparently because of his physical resemblance to Saul (16:6–7). God chastises Samuel for relying solely on outward appearance, yet when David is chosen, it is precisely his good looks that the narrator describes (16:12). Whether David, unlike Saul, has inner as well as outer substance only time will tell.

16:14–23, David Comforts Saul. Immediately following the rush of God's spirit onto David (16:13) comes its departure from Saul (16:14), as if it fled directly from one to the other. Ironically, the inheritor of the divine spirit is brought in to soothe a Saul possessed by an evil spirit also "from the LORD." More ironic still, he succeeds and wins Saul's gratitude and love. While David is described so promisingly as a sensitive artist and military warrior (16:18), Saul is pictured as pathetically unstable. As he was once led by his servant to the prophet Samuel, who held the key to his future, now he is directed by another young man to David, who has inherited that future.

17:1–54, David Defeats Goliath. Just as 1 Samuel provides multiple perspectives on Saul's initiation into kingship, so too it offers several introductions of David. First he is anointed by Samuel, then brought to the moody Saul, and now celebrated as the victor over Goliath and introduced again to Saul. Twice as long as most other chapters, this one tells its story at a leisurely pace, developing folktale motifs and including traditions missing in many Greek manuscripts (17:21–31; 17:55–18:5).

1 Sam. 17:1–10 presents the Philistine enemy personified in the ten-foot-tall Goliath, whose fearsome appearance and military equipment are described in more detail than those of any other biblical combatant. His fierce challenge panics the Israelites (17:8–10), but, remembering Hannah's proclamation that God punishes the arrogant (2:3–4), readers already antici-

pate Goliath's downfall. Next the text backtracks to introduce David, the challenger-to-be. Emphasized here are David's youth, his simple shepherd life, and his obedience to his father. Striking also is the echo of the Joseph story (Gen. 37:12–14), for there too the father sends the youngest son off to the older brothers and asks for word from them. Just as Joseph provokes resentment, so does David, and just as Joseph eventually triumphs, so, biblical logic predicts, will David.

In his first speech in the Bible, David reveals the two sides of his character, which the rest of 1 and 2 Samuel will develop. As he becomes acquainted with the dire straits of Israel, he displays his bravery and devotion to God, but not before he twice inquires about what is in it for himself (17:26, 30). In resolving, then, to challenge Goliath, David has determined to win the battle for God, but also for the hand of the princess. He accomplishes both aims. David's practical and devotional dimensions are also revealed in his encounter with Saul. To convince Saul of his ability to defeat Goliath, the untrained David naively relates to the king his practical experiences protecting his father's flocks from lions and bears. But it is only when David invokes God's protection (17:37) that Saul responds. Unable to wear Saul's armor, David symbolically refuses to play Saul; he is his own man and this is his battle.

In this battle the verbal duel is more important than the military maneuvers. To Goliath's taunts about David's primitive weapons, David responds with a resounding proclamation of God's ability to save without any human weapons at all. Like the plagues on Egypt, this victory has an ulterior motive, "that all the earth may know" (17:46) God's power (cf. Exod. 9:14). Having declared his faith, David—and the narrator—make short work of Goliath.

17:55–18:30, Saul's Recognition and Jealousy of David. In this unit various traditions have been structured into a thrice repeated pattern of two parallel episodes and a narrated summary about David's successes and popularity. The first sequence features the separate introductions of David to Saul and to Jonathan. Although Saul's ignorance of David's identity would seem to contradict 16:14–23, in which Saul already knows David intimately, the interest here is to legitimate David as a victorious warrior acclaimed by the king. Together that episode and this one show David fighting Saul's inner and outer battles. For his part, the brave Jonathan finds in David a kindred spirit. The language of love used to describe their relationship is found frequently in ancient Near Eastern texts to describe the loyalty of king and subjects, so here there are likely both personal and political connotations. Importantly, Jonathan gives David his clothes and armor, and David wears them, symbolically assuming the role of crown prince.

After a summary about David's success (18:5), the second pair of episodes sketches Saul's abrupt change of attitude toward David. In the first, Saul reacts jealously to the adulation of David the warrior by the young women of Judah. His inner thoughts are given voice (18:8) to show us that he already suspects what the future holds: "Only the kingdom is not yet his!" In the second episode this quite rational fear takes the form of irrational "prophesying," the raving of a man possessed (18:10), and he lashes out, ironically, at the man whose music formerly soothed his spirit. The second summary statement is more pointed than the first. Now we are told specifically that the Lord was with David (18:14) and that the people "loved" him (gave him their allegiance), while Saul stood in awe of David's success.

The third repetition of the pattern features two stories of Saul's efforts to do away with David without bloodying his own hands. Saul promises each of his daughters to David in return for David's victories against the Philistines, though he really intends for David to die at the Philistines' hands (18:17b, 21a, 25b). Though at an earlier stage of tradition the story likely told how David, through marriage to the king's daughter, established a rightful claim to inherit the loyalty of the Northern tribes, in its present form it aims to develop the theme of Saul's jealousy and his unsuccessful effort to destroy David. By the end, David has won from Saul his own son and daughter, leaving the king isolated. The final summary raises the tension to the breaking point. Now the desperate Saul "saw and knew that the LORD was with David" (18:28), and he is even more afraid than he was before. The three summaries thus map the rising tide of Saul's realization and concomitant fear of the enemy in his own court and of his recognition of God's hand in it all.

19:1–23:28
Saul in Pursuit of David

In this section Saul takes his vendetta against David into the open. But David has important allies—Saul's own son and daughter, the prophet Samuel, and the priest Abiathar—whose defection contributes to Saul's feeling of isolation. The pursuit is narratively orchestrated as a cat-and-mouse chase; we are led back and forth from Saul to David, from pursuer to escaper, but Saul never catches David. Instead, we witness Saul's rising desperation until, in the next section, he becomes the one who is caught.

19:1–24, Jonathan, Michal, and Samuel Shield David from Saul. Saul's public pursuit of David begins with four short episodes in which those people closest to Saul prevent him from killing David. First, Jonathan warns David of Saul's intention and then convinces Saul that to kill David would be to shed "innocent blood" (19:5). Importantly, Jonathan dissuades Saul from killing David by appealing to his sense of justice and by depicting David as God's agent against

the Philistines. The next scene (19:9–10) virtually repeats 18:10–11 and is placed here to illustrate the wild and repeated fluctuations of Saul's mood. Saul, just reconciled with David through Jonathan's intervention, now erupts violently against him, not coincidentally just as David wins another victory against the Philistines. In the third episode Michal follows her brother's lead and intercedes to protect her husband from her father. Sending David out the window and, apparently, over the city wall, she improvises a dummy in David's bed out of the teraphim (household idols) and some goat hair. When her masquerade is discovered, she disclaims responsibility and places the blame on David.

The last scene picks up the story of the fleeing David, who until now has not been credited with a single word; his friend and his wife have done his talking for him. But now David pours forth words to the prophet who had anointed him. In a popular folktale form (cf. 2 Kings 1), the text relates how Saul's attempt to seize David is frustrated as his messengers are repeatedly rendered useless by the contagion of ecstatic prophecy. Finally, Saul himself appears, but he too is possessed and unable to take David, who again escapes. This is the second time that the origin of the saying, "Is Saul also among the prophets?" is given an explanation. Although the first story of ecstatic possession signaled God's choosing of Saul (10:6), this one, symmetrically, underscores God's rejection of him. Thus Jonathan by persuasion, Michal by deception, and Samuel by prophecy have deflected Saul's wrath. But from here on David is on his own.

20:1–42, David and Jonathan Part. Escaping from the raving Saul, David returns to Gibeah for what turns out to be his parting rendezvous with his beloved Jonathan. Jonathan, whom we last saw successfully pacifying his father, appears stunned at David's new charge against Saul. Although this seeming contradiction may be the result of the juxtaposition of different sources, it serves in the text as we have it to emphasize Saul's erratic behavior. In a lengthy conversation (20:3–23) David devises a scheme to test Saul's intentions and Jonathan decides how to inform David of them. At the literary center of this dialogue Jonathan sounds the theme that carries forward the rest of the book: the inevitability of David's kingship. Before agreeing to David's plan, Jonathan invokes the "*chesed Yhwh,*" the mutual loyalty of those bound together in sacred covenant (20:14), to elicit an oath from David. Jonathan, not overcome by the emotions of the moment, makes David swear to protect his house after David has established himself. Again, after describing the secret message relayed with the arrows, Jonathan reminds David that the Lord stands "between" them, guaranteeing their fidelity (20:23).

David's absence from the new moon feast arouses, as he predicted, Saul's suspicions, and Jonathan's excuse for him provokes Saul to attack Jonathan himself with his ever ready spear. But in the midst of his fury, Saul backhandedly affirms his son's affirmation of David's kingship, for he correctly sees that David's life is the price that must be paid if Jonathan is to assume the throne (20:31).

According to plan, the grieving Jonathan the next morning shoots the arrows beyond his servant to signal to David Saul's murderous intentions. But then, seemingly rendering the signal superfluous, he sends the servant home and embraces David directly. Again a splicing of sources is indicated, yet by having the bad news transmitted through a sign, the text allows the final scene between the two comrades to be a poignant leave-taking. Jonathan repeats his prayer that the Lord will stand between himself and David, but extends their mutual loyalty to their progeny (20:42; cf. 20:23). Though they now part, God will continue to join them. On this pregnant note they go their separate ways, David to return only after Jonathan is dead.

21:1–22:5, David Flees from Saul. From here on David's path goes in two directions. At the same time that the narrative shows him fleeing from Saul, it has him edging closer to his own kingdom. As he escapes from the present crises, he prepares for the future. The featured story in the account of David's flight from Saul centers on David's use and Saul's abuse of Ahimelech, the priest of Nob and great-grandson of Eli. Arriving alone, hungry, and defenseless at Nob, David requests from the priest the two prerequisites of the successful fugitive: food and a weapon. But he does so with the aid of a verbal ruse to calm the nervous priest. Ahimelech, believing him to be on a mission from Saul, gives him not just any bread and sword but, the story emphasizes, the holy bread and the sword of Goliath, symbolizing perhaps David's authority over the priesthood and the military. Placed strategically between David's two requests is the seemingly irrelevant but actually ominous note about the presence of Saul's mercenary, Doeg the Edomite, at Nob while David masquerades as Saul's trusted servant (21:7). Filling in the time interval until Doeg reports to Saul about David's appearance at Nob, the text includes three more stations on David's path of escape. At the first, the Philistine city of Gath, David improvises his second masquerade (21:10–15). Preceded in Gath by his reputation as "king of the land," an ironic foreshadowing of his future position, David feigns madness to avoid capture. His behavior recalls the recent "prophecy" of Saul with the important difference that, though Saul was actually possessed, David is in full possession of himself. From Gath David goes to Adullam in southern Judah, where he attracts a following of Apiru types (→ Khapiru), who will serve him as a personal army (22:1–2). Here clearly the text shows David with his eye on his destiny. Similarly, at his next stop in Moab he alludes to his future when he deposits his

parents there in the care of the king "until I know what God will do with me" (22:3). As in the book of Ruth, here Moab serves as refuge for displaced Bethlehemites. The unit ends (22:5) with a prophetic word noteworthy both because it establishes David as the recipient of prophecy and because it directs David back to Judah and, ultimately, a confrontation with the king from whom he has until now fled.

22:6–23, Saul Slaughters the Priests of Nob. The scene now shifts to Saul, who eliminates his priestly support at the same time that David obtains his very own priest. In contrast to the ever moving David, Saul now sits in state at Gibeah (→ Gibeah). Ranting on to the silent tribesmen surrounding him about their ingratitude and their conspiracies against him, he reveals his sense of utter isolation. Referring to David only as "son of Jesse" (22:7–8), Saul makes him into a distant, nameless enemy. Only Doeg the Edomite breaks the silence with his eyewitness account of the visit of "the son of Jesse" to Nob. But Doeg, while reporting nothing of David's ruse, adds the information that "Ahimelech, the son of Ahitub" inquired of God for David (22:10). The text seems to present Doeg with his own motivation for not telling the whole story, on the one hand, and adding an important fact, on the other. If Doeg had been forcibly detained at Nob (21:7), he may have had his own gripe against Ahimelech. By making it seem that Ahimelech knowingly conspired with David against Saul and by stressing divine inquiry, Doeg baits Saul against the priest and his house. Indeed, in his report about Ahimelech, Doeg places divine inquiry in first position, because Saul is most threatened by David's having access to God, which he now lacks. And Doeg, in contrast to Saul's again silent servants, readily slaughters the priests at Saul's command and executes, perhaps at the same time, his own revenge (22:18b–19). The text describes the total destruction of Nob in precisely the same language as that of God's command to Saul to destroy Amalek (15:3). But although Saul failed to fulfill God's command to destroy the foreigners, he ruthlessly, through the foreigner Doeg the Edomite, fulfills his own order to slaughter Israelite priests. Saul's disobedience then and lack of humanity now come into sharper relief when seen in light of each other.

But if Saul is credited with destroying the priests, thereby fulfilling the prophecy of the man of God to Eli (2:27–36), David, with guilt on his conscience (22:22), promises to protect the one son of Ahimelech who escapes. Saul, rejected by the prophet Samuel, now has cut off his priestly link to God as well, while David has inherited both.

23:1–28, Saul Chases David. In this chapter Saul's actual pursuit of David is telescoped in two tales. While the king devotes all his energies to capturing David, David exercises the duty of a king by defeating the national enemy in battle. This is the point of the first episode in which David, not Saul, does battle on his own initiative against the Philistines and, like the judges of old, "saves" (23:2, 5) the Judahite town of Keilah. In this battle David apparently exploits the services of Abiathar (not, however, mentioned until 23:6), for he twice inquires of God before going into battle. In two further inquiries, he discovers the intentions of both Saul and the men of Keilah (23:11–12). The doubled questions and answers underscore David's reliance on God and God's support of David.

Saul meanwhile, bereft of priests and access to certain knowledge, gropes in the dark. First he plans to besiege Keilah, but David escapes. Then, responding to the Ziphites' voluntary offer to turn David over, Saul demands from them better reconnaissance, but David eludes him again. Saul's fruitless insistence on sure information (23:22–23) highlights the contrast with David, who has such knowledge for the asking. Finally, a Philistine attack calls Saul away from his pursuit of David, leaving the fugitive providentially reprieved (23:26b–28).

Between the two tales of David's escapes is placed the short episode of Jonathan's visit (23:14–18). Jonathan's encouragement thus occupies the literary center of the narrative of Saul's manhunt. More explicitly than ever he predicts David's future as king and his intention to be second in command (Heb. *mishneh*, 23:17; cf. Esther 10:3). He also provides objective confirmation of Saul's increasing desperation, for he adds, "Saul my father also knows this." The cutting of a "covenant" concludes this last rendezvous of the intimate friends, just as it marked their first meeting (18:3). In this chapter, then, God's assistance is mediated through oracles, through Jonathan, and, ironically at the end, through the Philistines.

23:29–26:25
David Confronts His Enemy

After successfully eluding Saul, David turns the tables and twice confronts Saul and mercifully spares his life. Between these two scenes comes the episode of David and Abigail, which forms a narrative analogy to them. Again David refrains from taking vengeance and leaves his destiny in God's hand. Indeed, the lesson he learns from Abigail in chap. 25 prevents him from killing Saul in chap. 26, as Abishai urges him to do. In sequence the three tales show David's growing mastery of his emotions and willingness to put his fate in God's hands.

23:29–24:22, David Spares Saul's Life. The first scene depicts an accidental encounter between pursuer and pursued in which David skillfully gains the upper hand. Discovering Saul preoccupied in relieving himself in the front of the cave where he and his men had been hiding, David cuts off Saul's skirt, symbolically emasculating him. Suddenly realizing that the

man his men called "your enemy" (24:4) is, in fact, "the LORD's anointed" (24:6), David is stricken with remorse and prevents his men from killing Saul. In the lengthy speech that follows David confronts Saul with the physical evidence of his mercy and innocence. Dramatically producing Saul's skirt, David challenges Saul to "see" (a verb repeated four times in 24:10–11) David's sinlessness and not to listen to hearsay reports about him. Forswearing vengeance, David declares his reliance on God's justice (24:12, 15). Saul's response is moving, for he humbles himself and declares David's righteousness. More important, he adds his voice to the growing chorus of those who acclaim David's future kingship (24:20).

25:1–43, David Saved from Bloodguilt. Although the story of David and Abigail initially appears to be unrelated to the episodes of David's encounters with Saul, this story too shows David forbearing from murder and consequently acclaimed as future king. Perhaps the isolated notice of Samuel's death at the outset (25:1) is meant to account for the new dimension of David we see here. His link to kingship now deceased, David strikes out on his own, ready to take vengeance against those like Nabal who stand in his way.

Nabal, a rich but stingy rancher, refuses David's request for food in return for what David claims has been his protection of Nabal's flocks. Nabal appears as a one-dimensional character whose name, as in a morality play, describes him: *nabal* means "fool" or "churl" in Hebrew (cf. Isa. 32:5–8). Wholly a skinflint, he responds to David's politely worded plea (25:6–8) with sarcasm. He stigmatizes David as a servant disloyal to his master (25:10–11), a charge that, ironically, will soon be applicable to one of his own servants, who takes up David's cause before Abigail.

Abigail is Nabal's opposite in every way. Introduced by the narrator as intelligent and beautiful at the beginning of the story (25:3), she remains in the wings until warned by Nabal's servant that David plans to attack her husband and his men. Then she emerges to use both her intelligence and her beauty to prevent David's revenge on her husband and win his heart for herself. Her lengthy, carefully crafted speech (25:24–31) to David is the centerpiece of the entire chapter. Sending tribute to David on ahead with her servants, she arrives alone ready to deal woman to man. Quickly she deflects attention from her husband, whom she dismisses as a crank, to herself, for she accepts the blame for Nabal's behavior (25:24–25). As a supplicant she then presents her gift and prophetically proclaims David's impending kingship. Because David fights "the battles of the LORD" (25:28), she says, his vendetta against Nabal is senseless; bloodguilt would destroy his stainless record (25:26, 31). Finally, having persuaded David of the folly of vengeance, she gives him a way to save face by making herself, not Nabal, the beneficiary of his change of heart (25:31). David responds exactly as Abigail must have hoped, for he blesses God and her as well and accepts her gifts in lieu of murdering Nabal's men, the "pissers on the wall" (25:34), as David none too delicately calls them.

The scene shifts abruptly to Nabal seen through Abigail's eyes. She returns home after her rendezvous with the future king to find her husband, whose life she has just saved, having a feast without her, ironically "like the feast of a king" (25:36). She saves her news until he is sober enough to appreciate it, the next morning when the fool who feasts like a king is just another "pisser" (25:37). His two-stage death allows for both natural and supernatural causation. David's reaction to the news of Nabal's death is no surprise, and Abigail, without a tear, responds to David's summons with the same alacrity she had shown twice earlier (25:18, 23, 42).

The tale aims not only to depict David's learning that revenge does not befit the Lord's anointed. As the final verses remind us, behind the story is the historical reality of David's cementing by marriage alliances with clans that will support him in his drive for power: Abigail, the widow of the Calebite chieftain, and Ahinoam, who may well have been none other than the wife of the reigning king, Saul (25:42–43; 14:50).

26:1–25, David Challenges Saul. The second account of David's sparing of Saul's life is usually identified by critics as another version of the one in chap. 24, but in its present context it plays a rather different role. It depicts a David more calculating and more in control than does the earlier story and a Saul stripped of all power and hope for the future. In this, their last meeting, David is cold and distant, challenging Saul to justify his conduct toward him, but finally looking toward God, not the impotent king, for his reward.

The first verse replicates 23:19, but in that episode it was Saul who sought reconnaissance to entrap David; here David sends out spies to pinpoint Saul's position. Earlier Saul chanced into the cave where David and his men were hiding (24:3), but here David plans his entrance into Saul's camp (26:6–7). In the first encounter David's remorse over cutting off Saul's skirt makes him prevent his men from killing Saul, but here David coolly calculates that to slay God's anointed would be counterproductive. Here David seems more intent on demonstrating his own righteousness than on showing mercy for the king. In detached third-person formality, David asks as he stands over the sleeping Saul, "For who can raise his hand against the anointed of the LORD and be guiltless?" (26:9). Alluding to the recent death of Nabal, David rather smugly declares that Saul too shall die in due course. In 24:6 an impassioned David fumbles for the right words to prevent his men from attacking Saul; in 26:11 the same sentiment has become a cold formula.

David's control of the situation is underscored by the thrice repeated mention of Saul's slumber. First,

from afar David sees Saul sleeping with his army surrounding him (26:5). Next, with Abishai, David enters the camp and approaches the sleeping Saul, who lies unprotected, for his army too sleeps (26:7). Finally, as David and Abishai steal out of the camp, the narrator explains that this deep sleep was divinely sent (26:12), and we again see God's hand behind David's fortune.

When David does awaken Saul, he is far away atop a mountain. The physical distance between them now symbolizes their irreparable rupture. David taunts Abner and protests to the suddenly awakened Saul. Though Saul, as earlier, familiarly calls David "my son," David replies correctly, "my lord king" (26:13–17). David is finished reasoning with Saul: he declares and Saul must listen. David claims that Saul's pursuit has forced him into apostasy (26:19); he wants only to return to his own land and his God. Saul's confession and apology do not move David. David challenges Saul to reclaim his captured spear, but there is no indication that Saul retrieves it. As he captured Goliath's sword, so now he possesses Saul's spear; Saul is left defenseless. In David's final words he talks past Saul to God (26:22–24). In return for sparing Saul's life, David seeks protection not from Saul, but from God. In his last words Saul blesses David, but David does not respond; it is too late to make amends (26:25).

27:1–31:13
Saul and David Part Ways

In this final section of 1 Samuel, Saul and David never meet. David escapes to Philistine territory and raids the enemies of his own tribe, Judah, all the while pretending to fight the battles of his overlord, the Philistine Achish. He thus establishes a power base in Judah for his rapid rise to kingship after Saul's demise. Meanwhile, Saul has abandoned his pursuit of David to fight the Philistines. But the ghost of Samuel warns him that the battle is lost, and the last chapter relates the predicted death of Saul. By alternating stories of David and Saul, the narrative communicates the simultaneity of the destinies of the once and future kings, but also the contrast between those same destinies.

27:1–28:2, David Among the Philistines. Despite Saul's apology to David and blessing upon him, David does what he claims Saul has forced him to do (26:19) and seeks refuge among the Philistines. In this second flight to Achish he faces him not alone (cf. 21:10–15), but with his whole retinue; he need not fear and feign madness now. Instead, he feigns loyalty. Granted his own property by Achish, as favored servants often were in ancient Near Eastern city-states, David professes to return the favor by fighting Achish's battles. In fact, David raids the enemies of Judah including the Amalekites (27:8), the enemy against whom Saul failed to complete the *cherem* (15:9). This narration plays upon that memory, for David, under no command to execute the *cherem*, leaves no one alive anyway and brings back booty in addition. While Saul is condemned, David is implicitly praised, for he outsmarts the hated Philistines and Achish trusts him completely.

The narrative transforms what must have been an embarrassing historical memory—the defection of the future king to the enemy camp—into a piece of dramatic irony. David, who came to Saul's attention by battling the Philistine giant, now flees that attention as a soldier for the Philistines just at the time that Saul will meet his death at their hands. Yet David, it is claimed here, only *feigned* service to the Philistines. He thus escapes Saul and, as we shall see, any involvement in the battle that brings on Saul's death.

28:3–25, Saul Learns His Fate. Breaking into the account of David's success comes the story of Saul's nadir. Not coincidentally Samuel's death is again reported (28:3), for with David in the wings, the Philistines encamped against him, and God silent, the entrapped Saul has only Samuel to turn to. The text plays upon Saul's name, *wayyish'al sha'ul* ("and Saul asked," 28:6), to point up the irony that the one whose name means "ask" gets no answers from God. So powerless that he must break his own edict rather than revoke it, Saul disguises himself and goes to a necromancer still in the land and persuades her to practice despite her fear of the king.

The woman's success gives us a unique picture of an Israelite view of the dead and gives Saul confirmation of his worst fears. Samuel, enraged at Saul's summons, which the dead apparently cannot resist, responds by hinging two new predictions upon one old fact. He predicates disaster upon Saul's disobedience in the battle against Amalek. Now, finally, Saul hears explicitly what he has always known in his heart about David. Now too he knows that tomorrow is doomsday for him, his sons, and Israel (26:16–19).

The audition over, Saul falls prostrate "from the words of Samuel" (28:20). The woman had seen Samuel, but not heard his words; Saul had heard the words, but not seen the apparition (28:13–14). Starved physically, Saul is now crushed spiritually as well. Again the seeing of the woman is stressed, for it is Saul's appearance that prompts her to insist that he eat to revive himself. Like a condemned prisoner on death row dining on steak and champagne the night before his execution, Saul eats the fatted calf. The secret nocturnal visit over, Saul returns to his troops, and the narrator returns to the interrupted story of David among the Philistines (28:21–25).

29:1–30:31, David Victorious. Having prepared readers—and Saul—for Saul's imminent demise, the narrator turns back to the story of David and Achish to explain how, despite his alliance with Achish, David had nothing to do with the Philistine defeat of Israel

and the death of Saul. By repeating the phrase "And the Philistines gathered all their troops" (29:1), which preceded the episode of Saul's consultation with the necromancer at Endor (28:1), the text indicates the simultaneity of Saul's unsuccessful masquerade before the necromancer and David's successful bamboozling of Achish. As Saul is discovering that he cannot escape an ignoble end, David escapes from an uncomfortable vassalage to Achish and prepares for his new beginning. Despite his own trust in David, Achish is forced by his allies to send David away from the battle and back to his fief at Ziklag (29:4; cf. 27:6). The irony of Achish's defense of David before the justly suspicious Philistines is highlighted by the innocent honesty of his words, "And *I* have not found in him a fault" (29:3). More ironic still are the gentle words with which Achish breaks the news to David. He amplifies his praise of David and downplays the Philistines' objections so as not to hurt him: "but in the eyes of the princes you are not so good" (29:6). And in response to David's feigned pique, in which David with intentional ambiguity expresses his desire to "battle against the enemies of my lord the king" (29:8), Achish compares the scheming David to "a messenger of God" (29:9). David submits without another word, rescued from having to either fight against Saul, God's anointed, or betray his new lord, Achish. Instead he soon finds himself in a position to continue building his own power base by distributing gifts to his Judean countrymen (30:26–31). Upon his immediate return to Ziklag, however, he confronts apparent catastrophe. Although we are told that it was the Amalekites who burned the city and took the women and children captive, David and his men see the result, but must discover the source. Trusting in God (30:6) and summoning the priest Abiathar with the ephod, David begins that process of discovery. To David and, we remember, not to Saul the oracle speaks, and David sets out to pursue the as yet unidentified raiders. Further information is provided by the abandoned Egyptian slave who just happens to cross David's path. Whereas all avenues to knowledge are closed to Saul, David's way is strewn with clues. Whereas the battle against the Amalekites proved to be Saul's undoing, David's battle against the same people paves the road to his success. Far from being condemned for capturing the Amalekite flocks and herds, David is lionized and distributes the spoil both to his own men, who stayed behind, and to his countrymen, whose support he will later need. The juxtaposition of Saul's pathetic, lonely last supper at Endor and David's triumphant, providential massacre of the Amalekites sets the stage for the final chapter in Saul's life.

31:1–13, Saul Defeated. With but a single line of direct discourse—Saul's request to his armor bearer to slay him—the author hurriedly sets the inevitable concluding scene. Whether the author understood Saul's suicide as a final show of force or a failure of nerve, Saul's end is a tragic one, made more so by the unadorned reportage of the narrator. Saul's sons are killed before him, and the armor bearer follows Saul's example. The death of the leader routs the Israelites, and the Philistines easily advance (31:1–7). The epilogue (31:8–13) adds a last ironic note. Saul, who had grown increasingly isolated and "little in his own eyes" (15:17), was not to be left abandoned in death. The men of Jabesh-gilead, whom Saul had bravely saved in the first battle of his career (11:1–11), now rescue the bodies of Saul and his sons from Philistine disgrace and give their bones proper burial. In this touching tribute to their fallen leader, Saul's followers demonstrate their abiding loyalty.

Bibliography

Garsiel, M. *The First Book of Samuel: A Literary Study of Comparative Structures, Analogies and Parallels.* Ramat Gan, Israel: Revivim, 1983, 1985.

Gunn, D. *The Fate of King Saul: An Interpretation of a Biblical Story.* Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series, 14. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1980, 1984.

Jobling, D. *1 Samuel.* Berit Olam. Collegeville, MN: Liturgical Press, 1998.

McCarter, P. K., Jr. *1 Samuel.* Anchor Bible, 8. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1980.

Miller, P. D., Jr., and J. J. M. Roberts. *The Hand of the Lord: A Reassessment of the "Ark Narrative" of I Samuel.* Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1977.

Miscall, P. *I Samuel, A Literary Reading.* Bloomington, IN: Indiana University Press, 1986.

Polzin, Robert. *Samuel and the Deuteronomist: 1 Samuel.* San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1989.

2 Samuel

DAVID M. GUNN

INTRODUCTION

Content and Context

Reading 2 Samuel as a separate book is rather like reading a single chapter in an episodic novel. The story makes sense, but keeps directing us beyond itself to its larger context. In the case of 2 Samuel, that context is the great story of God and Israel—its origins, nationhood, and eventual removal from the land—told in Genesis–2 Kings (*see* Introduction to the Biblical Story: Genesis–Esther).

2 Samuel belongs to the part of the story that recounts Israel's nationhood in the promised land and its attempt to adapt religious and political institutions to changing circumstances. Running through both books of Samuel is a major interest in leaders and the nature of leadership. 1 Samuel tells of the transition from the period of judges to a monarchy under Saul (*see* 1 Samuel, Introduction). The priest Eli, the prophet-judge Samuel, and Saul himself each hold center stage for a time.

The story is not just Israel's story, however; it is also God's. Above all, it is about Yhwh's attempt to maintain or recreate a relationship of loyalty between God and people. (The Hebrew text has preserved only the consonants of the divine name, Yhwh, perhaps originally Yahweh; English version: "the LORD.") Yhwh takes the people's desire for a human king as a rejection of divine sovereignty. Thus Saul, designated by God at the people's insistence, must be rejected in favor of one who is *freely* chosen by God (a man "after [God's] own heart," 1 Sam. 13:14). That man is David.

The story of David's rise, woven into the story of Saul, finds fulfillment in the story of his kingship in 2 Samuel. In turn, just as the account of Saul's end dovetails into 2 Samuel, so the account of David's death dovetails into the beginning of 1 Kings, which continues the story of monarchical Israel.

It may be helpful to regard the book as having three main parts. First is the story that lies between the death of Saul and the consolidation of the kingdom under David (chaps. 1–8). In the center is a story of the king's private life and its repercussions upon the kingdom; it becomes an account of his loss and regaining of the throne (chaps. 9–20). Finally some narrative and poetic units form a coda or epilogue connected to what has gone before not by plot, but by theme and allusion (chaps. 21–24).

Composition

Attempts to reconstruct the history of the composition of the book have depended largely on observations about writing style, plot (where a plot line seems to begin and end), and literary genre (for we find various kinds of material such as prose anecdotes, archival lists, annalistic reports, a psalm, short stories, etc.). The results remain speculative. Suggested dates for individual units often differ widely, ranging from near the apparent time of the events depicted (tenth century B.C.) to the period of the Exile (sixth century B.C. or later). This uncertainty over dating, together with a dearth of external evidence relating directly to the events of the book, also makes it difficult to determine the historical accuracy of the material.

Most commonly accepted of the ideas about sources is the view that chaps. 9–20 together with 1 Kings 1–2 were originally a separate document. This "story of King David" is often referred to as the "court history" or "succession narrative," since some have seen the struggle between David's sons to succeed him on the throne as its primary theme. A case has been made for including most of chaps. 2–4 (the war between David and Saul's son Ishbosheth) with this material and possibly parts of chaps. 6 (David and Michal) and 7 (the promise of a Davidic dynasty). But where this postulated document originally began is uncertain.

Many critics believe that another account, a "story of David's rise" can be traced in 1 Samuel and 2 Samuel, finishing in chap. 5 with David's coronation over all Israel (though some include chap. 8, David's victories over the neighboring states). Likewise, the story of the Ark's coming to Jerusalem (chap. 6) is often seen as the original conclusion to an "Ark narrative," which began in 1 Samuel 4–6. Other parts of the book appear to have had origins in a variety of sources—popular, prophetic, liturgical, and bureaucratic.

Isolating the original components of 2 Samuel has always been a tentative matter. It is now doubly so, as recent studies in the "poetics," or "art," of Hebrew narrative cast doubt on much of the evidence appealed to

by source critics. The further problems involved in determining the editorial stages through which the material might have passed are, in the view of increasing numbers of scholars, insuperable.

Hypotheses, however, abound. Most commonly accepted is the hypothesis that the last stage was the incorporation of the material into a "Deuteronomistic History"—Deuteronomy through 2 Kings—composed during the Exile in the sixth century B.C. (→ Deuteronomist; Deuteronomistic Historian). (Some think that an earlier edition was written near the end of the seventh century.) Although the exilic dating of the final form of Deuteronomy–2 Kings still has some merit, the idea that these books were composed as an independent work, separate from Genesis–Numbers, faces serious criticism.

Perhaps more helpful to modern readers than hypotheses about editorial history is some understanding of how the kind of Hebrew narrative we find in the books of Samuel works to unfold meaning. We need to be aware, for example, that the narrator is fond of using repetition, and variation on the basis of it, in a way that much modern Western writing tends to avoid. We also observe that the narrator is generally reticent about telling readers what to think. Thus, for example, readers are often left to judge characters for themselves on the basis of their speech and actions. And speech can rarely be taken as the plain, unvarnished "truth." Characters in Hebrew narrative, like people in real life, present their own point of view or attempt to manipulate someone else's point of view. Constantly we find ourselves invited to fill gaps of information or meaning. Why has this character done this? Has something happened about which we have not been told? Why does this character's report of an event not match the narrator's account?

Meaning emerges little by little as we try out one way of reading against another. But because the text is so open to interpretation, the process of discovering meaning is never complete. Reading 2 Samuel, which contains some of the finest prose in the Hebrew Bible, is always a rich experience of discovery.

Meaning

The David of 2 Samuel starts life in 1 Samuel, in Hannah's hymn (1 Sam. 2:1–10). A mother gives thanks for the gift of a child (Samuel) and speaks, prophetically, of the king, the "anointed one" to whom Yhwh will give power. As the child is a special gift to the barren woman, so the kingdom is a special gift to David. Both gifts are freely given by God.

Giving and grasping are at the center of the story. It is when David allows choice to lie in the hands of others, especially Yhwh, that he most seems to flourish. Then he provokes readers to contemplate forbearance, to recognize providence as reality (e.g., 1 Sam. 24; 26; 2 Sam. 15–16). It is when he cannot rest content with the risk entailed or accept injured esteem issuing from rejection that he falters (e.g., 1 Sam. 25; 2 Sam. 11–12). Then we are confronted with a reality we know only too well, the reality of deceit, greed, and violence that makes us judge the David story so "realistic," so "plausible."

Yhwh gives David the kingdom, the house of Israel and of Judah (cf. 2 Sam. 12:8). But David's life consists not only of the public world. What happens privately in his own house (palace and family) will have an effect on the nation. As his mighty men are fighting the Ammonites (chap. 10), David seizes Bathsheba (chap. 11). As the one house (the house of Israel) is secured, another (the house of David) begins to crumble. In the story of Amnon and Absalom that follows, both family and nation will be torn apart (chaps. 12–20).

The kingship arose out of the people's search for security. But David's story in 2 Samuel embodies an old truth: human security all too readily generates corruption. Kingship, God-given or not, turns out to be no talisman (cf. 1 Sam. 8; Deut. 17:14–20). Our story retells a story told and retold in Genesis–2 Kings: Yhwh alone is sovereign, Yhwh alone offers security, and even then the people of Yhwh cannot acquire that security and fashion it their own way.

Thus David here embodies the nation that is given the land, but falters in the receiving of it (in Joshua and Judges). His son Solomon falters in turn. Too soon the glory of Yhwh's house that Solomon has built (→ Temple, The) gives way to the expanding glory of his own house, from the security of which he serves other gods! So is torn from his house the house of Israel (the Northern Kingdom).

The house of Yhwh is no talisman. The larger story ends with it ruined, the people dispersed. So too with the house (dynasty) of David. 2 Kings concludes with a brief note about the exiled Davidic king, powerless in the house of his Babylonian conqueror.

The promise of an enduring house for David seems in 2 Samuel 7 to be unconditional, but turns out to have limits. God, we may hear the story saying, offers a gift that is lasting—a gift to Abraham, to Moses, to David. But God cannot be taken for granted. That comment catches the story of the nation from entry into the land to exit. The promise of a "house" offers a gift that establishes order. But in itself no institution can secure order, no institution *is* secure. The promise cannot be presumed upon. It is not a crutch, but an invitation to share in God's gift for the future.

David is not an ideal character. Rather, the story that he inhabits points to various ways, negative as well as positive, in which a relationship between Yhwh and humankind might work. The original readers of the story perhaps sat in exile and wondered whether they might hope to rebuild a broken house. Why, they asked, had the old one been destroyed? But it is not just their story. As Deuteronomy helps us to see (cf. Deut.

4–6), the readers of Genesis–Kings are those who "today" stand beyond a river and yearn to cross and to build or rebuild a house. This is a story for them, wherever their "today" might be.

COMMENTARY

1:1–8:18
David's Kingdom Established

The first major movement of the book begins where the story of 1 Samuel has come to rest, with the death of Saul (→ Saul). It ends with David on the throne, king of both Judah in the South and Israel in the North (2 Sam. 5:1–5). Jerusalem, lying strategically between the two regions, has become David's capital (5:6–9).

By the end of the section important questions raised early in 1 Samuel have been resolved. The failure of the families of Eli and Samuel, priest and prophet, had led to a crisis of leadership (1 Sam. 1–8). The problem has been met by the institution of kingship in the person of David, chosen by God and promised by God a stable and enduring dynasty, or "house" (2 Sam. 7). The symbol of the system of divine service, the Ark, has apparently found rest after much wandering and prominence at the center of the new kingdom (chap. 6; → Ark). The long-standing threat of national neighbors (cf. Judg.; 1 Sam.) appears to have been finally overcome. By the close of chap. 8, David appears to be established in power, in control of cult and state, and blessed by God.

1:1–27
The News of Saul's Death

1:1, Connections. The opening of the story resonates with earlier beginnings: "After the death of Saul" revives memories of Judges ("After the death of Joshua," 1:1) and Joshua ("After the death of Moses," 1:1), and beyond that the opening of Exodus ("Then Joseph died . . . and there arose a new king over Egypt, who did not know Joseph," 1:6, 8). Readers are at a pivotal moment.

Other stories from 1 Samuel also come to mind, creating some fine ironies. The narrator introduces David to us at his city of Ziklag, gift of the Philistines (1 Sam. 27:6) against whom Saul has just died fighting (1 Sam. 31). David has returned from slaughtering the Amalekites (→ Amalekites). That information reminds us of Saul's ill-fated campaign that led to his rejection as king for having spared some of the booty (1 Sam. 15). In striking contrast stands David's amazing good fortune in not only recovering his own family and property, but also seizing much booty (1 Sam. 30).

Thus to speak of David in the context of Ziklag and the Amalekites is to say something about the way that providence has moved, at times strangely, with David against Saul. To cap the irony, it is an Amalekite, of all people, who brings David word of Saul's death.

1:2–16, Message and Mourning. The narrator describes the messenger scene in terms that allude to Eli's hearing of Israel's defeat, the capture of the Ark, and the deaths of his two sons (1 Sam. 4). That story grew out of the failure of the priestly government (1 Sam. 2:22–36), which also led to God's choice of Samuel as the new leader. Now we are at another pivotal moment when the leadership is about to change. David will succeed Saul, by Yhwh's choice.

Yet the story of the message is not quite what it seems, for what the messenger says does not fit well with the narrator's account in 1 Samuel 31. Did Saul die by his own hand or by that of the Amalekite? Is the Amalekite lying, hoping to gain a reward? If so, he is mistaken, for his deed is rewarded by execution.

David takes the lie to be truth (or so it appears) and condemns him for having slain "Yhwh's anointed." Earlier, in Exodus and Leviticus, anointing has been associated with the Aaronidic priests; in 1 Samuel, however, it comes to refer to the king chosen by God (→ Messiah). Occurring in this sense first in Hannah's song (1 Sam. 2:10), it is used frequently of Saul by various characters and of David by Jonathan.

With Saul at his mercy (cf. 1 Sam. 24; 26), David explains his restraint as not putting forth his hand against Yhwh's anointed. Whether that restraint is an exercise in piety or in political shrewdness is not told to readers directly; perhaps it contains a measure of both. Although Samuel never tells him so, David seems aware that Saul has been rejected as king by God (1 Sam. 15) and that his own anointing (1 Sam. 16) has been an anointing for kingship. Yet he does not presume to seize immediately what may still lie in God's gift for the future. Rather, he bides his time, building his power base (his small army and his circle of well-treated "friends" [1 Sam. 30:26]) and waiting for others to see to Saul's demise. Dramatically now (1:14–16) he proclaims his innocence of Saul's blood by publicly mourning for him, by naming him once more (for the last time) as "Yhwh's anointed," and by having the Amalekite put to death.

1:17–27, A Song of Lament. David rounds off his public disclaimer with a lament for Saul and Jonathan ("to teach the people of Judah"; → Poetry). It crowns their death in glory and proclaims his own deep bond with Jonathan. Yet the song may also leave us uneasy. Were father and son truly "in life . . . not divided" (see 1 Sam. 19–20)? "How are the mighty fallen!" runs the refrain. Is that praise or a judgment? For so it might have been said of Goliath (1 Sam. 17)! Divided from

Saul in life, David claims him in death. That makes good politics, but it may leave his true feelings masked behind the words.

2:1–5:5
The Gift of the Kingdom

2:1–7; 5:1–5, King of Judah and Israel. The way to the throne is now clear. As in times past, David consults the oracle to determine his next move (2:1; cf. 1 Sam. 23:1–14; 30:6–9). Sure enough, the ascent to Hebron in Judah turns out to be the right one. At Hebron the leaders come of their own accord to anoint him king over the Southern nation ("the house of Judah"; → Hebron). Not that he was a person they could easily ignore, for he had not come alone, but had brought with him a powerful military presence (v. 3). Part of greater Israel is now David's. The remainder, the Northern nation ("the house of Israel"), will not become his without opposition. The story of enthronement culminates in 5:1–5 with the Northern tribes claiming kinship with him ("we are your bone and flesh," 5:1) and professing to know that even when Saul had been alive it had been David who had fought at their head, David whom God had designated to lead them. So David makes a treaty ("covenant") with them and they anoint him king over the Northern Kingdom. That makes him at last king of all Israel.

2:8–3:5; 3:17–30, War Between Brothers. The opening and closing scenes (2:1–7; 5:1–5) frame the story of the ongoing conflict between the ailing house of Saul and the ascendant house of David. And at the heart of the story lie two power brokers, the generals Abner (for Saul's son Ishbosheth) and Joab (for David; → Abner; Joab). Ishbosheth, the narrator infers, is largely a pawn in Abner's hands: "And Abner son of Ner, commander of Saul's army, took Ishbosheth son of Saul, and caused him to cross over to Mahanaim [a town east of the Jordan]; and he made him king over Gilead [a region east of the Jordan] and the Geshurites [in the far northeast] and Jezreel [in the north, between the Galilean and Samarian hills] and Ephraim [the main northern territory] and Benjamin [central territory and Saul's homeland] and all Israel [the entire land, probably including Judah]" (2:8–9). As the list expands, the claim to kingship looks increasingly hollow. Ishbosheth sits across the Jordan, virtually in exile, his power fragile and growing weaker (3:1).

Initially the issue is put to a kind of trial by combat. "Let the young men [or soldiers] arise and make sport before us," says Abner to Joab (2:14), clothing in jest the deadly seriousness of the occasion. But the contest solves nothing, since all twenty-four combatants fall dead, and war ensues. The battle goes against Abner and the Northerners but the narrator rapidly passes over the details (2:17) in favor of two scenes from the aftermath. In the first (2:18–23), Abner reluctantly slays Asahel, the son of Zeruiah, who was also Joab's brother (and David's nephew—Zeruiah was David's sister, according to 1 Chron. 2:16). In the second (2:24–28), Joab agrees to call off the pursuit, faced with a united band of Benjaminites under Abner who are determined to fight to the death (vv. 25–26).

In both cases the personal tensions peculiar to opponents in a civil war are focused sharply. Abner pleads with Asahel to give up his pursuit, lest by slaying him Abner start a blood feud with Joab (v. 22; cf. 3:27). Likewise, Abner challenges Joab to bid his troops stop pursuing "their brothers," lest "the sword devour for ever" (v. 26; note the repetition of "brothers" in Joab's reply).

There is a disheartening familiarity in this struggle between "brothers" right at the outset of David's reign; the story from Genesis to Judges is pockmarked with such strife, culminating in the virtual annihilation of Benjamin, the very tribe fighting so desperately here (Judg. 8:13–17; 9:1–57; 12:1–6; 20:1–21:25; cf. 5:14–18, 23). In turn, struggle between brothers will darken much of what remains of David's story in 2 Samuel and in 1 Kings 1–2. And within little more than a generation the kingdom will be split once more, brother against brother (1 Kings 12).

Within this struggle too readers see the close intertwining of personal and public concerns. The fact that Abner had killed his brother, Asahel, will perhaps tip the scales for Joab when deciding how to respond to Abner's secret visit to David (3:23–25). Abner has come as a spy, asserts Joab (3:25)—and given the extent of the enmity between them, private as well as public, why should Joab see it differently? While David was dealing "in peace" with the enemy general, Joab was out winning David's battles (3:22).

3:6–16, Rizpah and Michal. Abner's decision to desert Ishbosheth is crucial to the plot, for it leads to his death and thereby to the death of Ishbosheth (chap. 4). And crucial to the decision is a quarrel over a woman, Rizpah, one of Saul's concubines (3:6–11). The brief episode lies between a list of sons born to David's wives in Hebron (3:2–5; listed in order of birth)—a list that readers will want to remember from chap. 13 onward—and the account of David's recovery of his first wife, Michal, the daughter of Saul (3:12–16; cf. 1 Sam. 18:20–27; 19:11–17).

Neither Rizpah nor Michal has a voice in the narrative; they are disposed of like property. Whether David, who already has at least six wives, wants Michal for herself is not indicated—has, indeed, never been indicated (cf. 1 Sam. 18:20–27). As a symbol of his alliance with the house of Saul, however, her presence with him is politically invaluable. Yet she has her own presence, powerfully suggested by the grief of Paltiel, her second husband, at her departure (3:16). Of

Rizpah, on the other hand, we can glimpse nothing here. Both characters remind us that however much the Abners, Joabs, and Davids protest their loyalty, good faith, or piety, it is a soldier's world in which they seek to wield power. The two women will return to confront both David and readers again (chaps. 6, 21).

3:31–39, More Mourning. With the death of Abner, David cannot lose. He can, however, capitalize on the deed, and he does so at Joab's expense. His mourning for the enemy general is extravagant; and, caught up in the fever, the people weep and lament also. David's language is extravagant: "as one falls before the wicked you have fallen," he exclaims (3:34), conveniently forgetting for a public moment that the "wicked" Joab is his right arm. But his extravagance makes its point; it was not David who killed Saul's general.

4:1–12, The End of Ishbosheth and His Assassins. When two of Ishbosheth's unit commanders treacherously assassinate their master in his bed in the noontime heat, David is presented with yet another opportunity to write his own version of history and demonstrate his loyalty to Saul and his restraint in the taking of the kingdom. Alluding directly to the execution of the Amalekite in chap. 1 (vv. 10–11), he has the brothers Rechab and Baanah similarly dispatched (v. 12). Then he is ready to receive the gift of the house of Israel, the completion of his kingdom. And this duly takes place (5:1–5; see 2:1–7).

5:6–8:18
Consolidation

The story of the kingdom is now one of consolidation and centralization.

5:6–16, Jerusalem. David moves to counter the separatist politics of North and South by seeking a new, centrally located capital in the Jebusite (Canaanite) city of Jerusalem near the borders between Judah and Benjamin. (The reference to the "blind and lame" in vv. 6–8 is best understood as sarcasm, by the Jebusites toward David and vice versa; → David, City of.)

The narrator then pauses to add a word about the new king's growing power, "for Yhwh, the God of hosts [armies], was with him" (v. 10). Furthermore, David knew his success to be the doing of Yhwh "for the sake of his people Israel" (v. 12). David's relationship to Yhwh appears to be as firmly established as his kingdom.

Yet a jarring note follows (vv. 13–16). "And David took more concubines and wives from Jerusalem"—an unusual and interesting order of priority for Yhwh's chosen king! Moreover, to elaborate the king's establishment by first speaking of him "taking" from the city is to remind readers of Samuel's impassioned warning to the people about the ways of kings in 1 Sam. 8:10–20. The king, says Samuel, will take and take from you. It recalls too the law of kingship in Deut. 17:14–20. "He is not to multiply wives for himself," runs the law of Moses, "or his heart will turn away [from God]" (v. 17). These passages haunt the whole story of kingship in Samuel and Kings.

Later, when we read the story of David's taking of Bathsheba (chaps. 11–12), the phrase "he took wives from Jerusalem" will be seen to have strikingly foreshadowed the taking of Uriah's wife.

Verses 13–14 continue, "and more sons and daughters were born to David. And these are the names . . ." Yet only the names of sons follow. David perceives Yhwh's action toward him to have been "for the sake of Israel" (v. 12). Does that include daughters? Or are daughters of no account in David's Israel? These verses, then, bring back into focus those voiceless women, Rizpah, Saul's concubine, and Michal, Saul's daughter, taken for David from the weeping Paltiel.

5:17–25, Philistines. The focus switches from internal consolidation (both public and domestic) to the issue of external security and the defeat of the new nation's most pressing enemy, the Philistines (→ Philistines). With success on the front, the king is ready to continue centralizing power by establishing his capital as a center of worship (chap. 6).

6:1–23, The Ark. With its relocation from Baalah (i.e., Kiriath-jearim; cf. 1 Chron. 13:6; 1 Sam. 7:1–2; the Hebrew text may be garbled here) to Jerusalem, the wanderings of the Ark seem to be over. Great rejoicing marks the account. Two incidents, however, disturb the triumphal tone.

First is Yhwh's anger when Uzzah touches the Ark, which in turn prompts David's anger and fear of Yhwh (6:6–10). The Ark, the narrator reminds us, is a sacred object and represents the awesome and sometimes unpredictable power of the sacred (→ Ark; Holiness). Yhwh does not need Uzzah to prop up the Ark of God. Set against such mystery, Uzzah's very human reaction is made to appear of secondary importance. But if this is what can happen to Uzzah, what response might a deliberate sin of some magnitude bring forth?

The incident reminds both David and readers that David's relationship with Yhwh does not guarantee divine blessing on all he does. Is it even Yhwh's will that the Ark be brought to Jerusalem? In contrast to the preceding accounts of the Philistine battles, David has made no inquiry of Yhwh before acting. Now, fearful because of the setback, he waits for a divine sign (cf. v. 12).

The second incident is the quarrel between David and Michal over his dancing in public. The precise nature of his action in Michal's view is debated (v. 20: "uncovering himself" [NRSV]), though wordplay in

David's reply (not apparent in English) suggests he is boasting of his sexual endowment. Plainly Michal thinks his behavior is debasing for a king; hence the heavy sarcasm of "How the king of Israel has distinguished himself today!" (NIV). The narrator introduces her as "Michal the daughter of Saul" (v. 16, and again in v. 20), not "Michal the wife of David," thereby distancing her from David and reminding readers of her royal lineage. Here is a daughter who does count in David's kingdom, at least to the extent that she is useful to the new king. She can buttress his claim to the throne and no doubt produce a son who will then conveniently inherit both royal houses.

But this daughter is not prepared to be so used. She pits her sense of royal dignity against his public posturing. Like her father, she cannot win the contest, for Yhwh is on David's side, has chosen him above Saul, as David himself is only too ready to tell her. "And Michal the daughter of Saul had no child to the day of her death" (v. 23)—the due reward, readers might suppose, for opposing Yhwh's chosen. Yet in another sense David's is a pyrrhic victory, for not through her will David's line be able to legitimize succession to the throne of Saul. And without her son, the obvious heir, the way is open for the bitter struggle between brothers that will plague the latter part of David's story.

7:1–29, A House. Chap. 7 develops two elements of chap. 6—divine service and dynastic succession. Tying them together is a play on the word "house." David, dwelling comfortably in his house (palace) of cedar, decides that the Ark too should have a house (temple, v. 2; cf. vv. 5–7). Nathan the prophet, here introduced for the first time, makes an instant response: "Go ahead, do whatever you have in mind; for Yhwh is with you."

Alas, his advice proves less than sound. As we have already seen, the fact that Yhwh is with David does not give him carte blanche to do as he chooses. And Yhwh hastens to tell the prophet that very night to sort out his theology. On the contrary, Yhwh suggests with some sarcasm, a house is the least of the deity's concerns. Yhwh turns the conversation around instead. Rather than your building me a house, the deity says, I will build you one (vv. 11–16). The "house" in mind is, of course, a royal house, or dynasty. The deity offers the prospect of a peaceful transfer of power with a successor from among David's sons taking the throne with Yhwh's blessing. Let that heir, then, build a "house for my name" (though whether this refers to building, literally, a temple, or to building, metaphorically, a royal house, or perhaps even to building a nation—the "house of Israel"—dedicated to Yhwh is far from clear).

Yhwh is making here a major concession, for the history of Israel's leadership to this point has been one dissociated from dynasty. Again and again sons have proven unworthy successors and leadership has had to devolve elsewhere (e.g., Samuel and his sons, 1 Sam. 8:1–3; Eli and his sons, 1 Sam. 2:22–36; Gideon and his son, Abimelech, Judg. 8:22–9:57).

The prophecy hugely reinforces David's sense of being favored. He responds enthusiastically in a long prayer, acknowledging Yhwh's gift to Israel and to him (7:18–24). Yet he hovers curiously between the security of knowing great blessing and the insecurity of needing to have it confirmed for the future. With elaborate rhetoric the king urges Yhwh to "confirm for ever the word which you have spoken" (vv. 25–29).

8:1–14, Further Conquest. Having drawn us into the world of cult and prophecy, the narrator now pulls us back to where these themes entered, the Philistine war (8:1; cf. 5:17–25). Now all the nation's borders are secured. The list takes readers on a grand tour of Israel's boundaries.

Skirting the edge of the Deuteronomic law ("nor is he to multiply greatly for himself silver and gold," Deut. 17:17), the king dedicates gifts and booty of silver and gold to Yhwh (8:11). So "Yhwh gave David victory everywhere he went" (v. 14).

8:15–18, The Bureaucracy. This first movement of David's story comes to rest with a bland summary: "So David reigned over all Israel; and he did what was just and right for his whole people" (v. 15). A brief list of officials follows. It begins with Joab, the army commander, and includes the "recorder," the priests, the secretary, the commander of the Cherethites and Pelethites (the professional guard)—and some more priests! "And David's sons were priests" (v. 18).

Again, therefore, we find equilibrium disturbed (as earlier in 5:13–16). For David's sons to be priests is to flout the Mosaic law that draws the priesthood exclusively from the tribe of Levi (→ Levites; Priests). (Many versions, like many commentators, have attempted to smooth the text by rewriting it—cf. 1 Chron. 18:17.) Just as we sense completion at hand, the narrator unsettles us. David, chosen and supported by Yhwh, is no simple model of piety.

9:1–20:26
Kingdom and Family

The story moves into a new phase. Consolidation gives way to a new struggle for power within the kingdom. The story of the Ammonite war (chap. 10) has tempted readers to consider the greatest threats to David to lie beyond Israel's borders in the realm of international politics. Subdue those outside, it suggests, and all will be well. The story of David's taking of Bathsheba and murder of Uriah (chaps. 11–12) and the subsequent story of rape, murder, and rebellion (chaps. 13–20) tell

otherwise. It is a threat from within, a corruption that grows from within himself and his own family, that most menaces David's exercise of power. From this point on, despite enlivening moments, David's story becomes increasingly bleak.

Nathan's prophecy (chap. 12) presses us to see that David's crime and the events of chaps. 13–20 are part of a chain that is anchored in David's sin. Ironically, one of the seeds of disruption lies in the very thing that David so earnestly desired—the divine promise of a "house" (chap. 7). Although that promise offers the king security and stability by sanctioning the transfer of kingship to one of David's offspring (7:12), it opens up the question "Which one?" The appetite for power by and on behalf of various sons permeates the remainder of David's story, both in chaps. 13–20 and, equally bloodily, in the closing chapters of his life (1 Kings 1–2).

Though David is eventually restored to his throne, his power is in reality held by others, men of violence, most notably Joab. Moreover, the signs of division in the kingdom have already reappeared with the quarrel between North and South (19:41–43) and the withdrawal of support by some Northerners under Sheba ben Bichri, of Saul's tribe of Benjamin (chap. 20).

9:1–13
Mephibosheth, Son of Jonathan

The story of Mephibosheth's coming to court, in chap. 9, is transitional. On the one hand, it looks back to David's time at Saul's court, when Jonathan loved him (1 Sam. 18:1; 19:1; 20:17), dealt loyally with him (1 Sam. 19–20), and had him swear never to "cut off [his] loyalty [kindness]" from Jonathan's house (1 Sam. 20:14–17; cf. 20:42). And in raising the question of David's relation to Saul's family, the story brings to mind again the division between David and Michal, Saul's daughter (2 Sam. 6:20–23). On the other hand, the chapter looks forward to the forthcoming story of the rebellion of Absalom, David's son (chaps. 15–20), of which it forms part of a subplot.

David's action in summoning the lame Mephibosheth (9:3, 13; cf. 4:4) is clothed in the language of loyal dealing (9:1, 7). Yet once more we find ambiguity as Mephibosheth grovels fearfully before the king (v. 8).

David's generosity means restoring to Mephibosheth land that is in any case Mephibosheth's by right of inheritance. The produce, from the labor of Ziba's considerable household (v. 10), is to be brought to the king's table—far beyond Mephibosheth's needs and leaving, no doubt, a handsome surplus for the court. And for the heir of a defeated royal house to eat at the conqueror's table is itself an ambiguous honor. That way David has this heir of Saul under his scrutiny. Mephibosheth is effectively a prisoner.

We shall again glimpse this picture of Mephibosheth, "who used to eat always at the king's table" (v. 13; cf. vv. 7, 10), at the very end of the larger story (Genesis–2 Kings). Jehoiachin, defeated king of Judah and heir of David, is released from prison in Babylon by Evil-merodach—"and he used to eat food always before [the king] all the days of his life." His prison has but changed its appearance (as he changes his clothes, 2 Kings 25:29). Ironically, the fate of Saul's house and of David's will turn out to be the same.

10:1–12:31
War, Adultery, and Murder

The account of the Ammonite war in chap. 10 becomes, in 11:1, both starting point and background for the crucial story of David, Bathsheba, and Uriah. The war report is then resumed in 12:26–31, which details the taking of the Ammonite capital, Rabbah. Thus the domestic story of David's adultery and murder is framed by the public story of war and conquest. The taking of the city of Rabbah parallels the taking of Bathsheba and the life of Uriah.

10:1–19, The Ammonite War. From seeking to "deal loyally with [Mephibosheth] for Jonathan's sake" (9:1, 7)—and for the sake of internal security?—David now turns his attention beyond Israel's borders and seeks to "deal loyally with Hanun the son of Nahash [king of the Ammonites], as his father dealt loyally with me" (10:1). He sends envoys, says the narrator, "to console [Hanun] over [the death of] his father" (v. 2; → Ammonites).

But if we have been suspicious of David's motives in treating Mephibosheth "loyally," we might also wonder a little here. Is the narrator expressing only the publicly stated intent of the mission? Concern for the security of his borders and the maintenance of a treaty of nonaggression must be at least David's objective. But Hanun's advisers appear doubly suspicious. They persuade the new king that the mission is in fact espionage preparatory to an Israelite assault on the capital. Or is it that they too have a hidden agenda and wish to provoke a war to destroy the growing power of Israel under David while there is still time? The episode conjures a memory of Abner's visit to David (chap. 3) and Joab's accusation that the enemy general had come to spy (3:25).

Talk of "treating loyally" and "consoling" can all too easily conceal ulterior motives. What "seems to be" and what "is" in David's story—as in Genesis–2 Kings as a whole—turn out, so often, to be rather different things. As much as human beings struggle to communicate what "is" through what they say, they have an even greater propensity for using words to fabricate appearances. And between speaker and listener, moreover, there is always a void in which lurks the possibility of misunderstanding. So here we are not surprised to see the language of loyalty turned into the language

of enmity; and as readers we are left struggling to know what lies behind what seems.

The account of the war that inevitably follows the humiliation of David's envoys also unsettles our sense of knowing exactly the time frame of the events. When we read that the Ammonites hired the Syrians of Zobah and Rehob (10:6) in the first phase of the war (vv. 6–14) and note the Syrian king Hadadezer in the second phase (vv. 15–19), we begin to wonder whether this episode is not a flashback to the campaigns recounted in chap. 8 (cf. 8:3–12).

If, on the one hand, we think of the Ammonite war as after the events of chap. 8, we are struck by the rapidity with which what appeared secure has again become a threat. If, on the other hand, we read the war account as a flashback, we may be struck by the irony of the context in which David's adultery and murder have been set. It is at the very peak of his power, when Yhwh is giving him victory wherever he goes (8:14), that the king most conspicuously fails. Security breeds insecurity; success incubates failure. It is as the gift of the kingdom is being made complete that Yhwh's chosen one chooses to grasp most rapaciously what is not his to grasp. In short, it is at his most secure that David turns out to be most open to failure.

11:1–27, David, Bathsheba, and Uriah. The story is full of irony, starting with the narrator's dry comment that "At the turn of the year [i.e., the spring], at the time when kings march out [to battle], David sent Joab, and his servants with him, and all Israel . . . and David stayed in Jerusalem" (v. 1). So while the army besieges Rabbah, David takes an afternoon nap and then besieges Bathsheba. The narrator gives us few explicit clues to the inner feelings or thoughts of the characters. Bathsheba's point of view, particularly, is concealed. Rather, events unfold through David's eyes. The nature of the king's interest in Bathsheba is thus implicitly revealed. The word "bed" sets the tone, and we see that what he sees is "a woman" and "a very attractive woman" (v. 2). In due course we hear, with David, only the stark content of her message: "I am pregnant" (v. 5).

In the word choice, readers may also find a clue to another dimension of the story. David, we are told, was walking on the roof of "the king's house" (rather than "his house"). This is about a woman and a *king*, and that means a story about a disparity of power, not only that existing between a woman and a man, but between a woman and the most powerful man in the land. Bathsheba (and later Uriah) is the object of a king's transactions. The text is full of the word "send" (twelve times in chap. 11). The narrator provides another piece of important information. Bathsheba was "purifying herself from her uncleanness" (v. 4), that is, from her menstrual period (→ Purity). David's paternity of the child she conceives will be beyond dispute.

The interchange between David and Uriah follows directly (vv. 6–13). Readers know David's words cloak deceit from beginning to end. His asking after the welfare of Joab and the army is a sham, merely the pretext to get Uriah home. "Go down to your house," he says to the soldier (v. 8), adding lightly, as man to man, "and wash your feet"—a euphemism for sexual intercourse. The suggestion is designed to sound like indulgent generosity, especially since to follow it would be to break the rules of purity (v. 11; Exod. 19:14–15; Deut. 23:9–14; cf. 1 Sam. 21:5; Ps. 132:1–5). But, of course, to both David and readers the suggestion really means much more than "sleep with your wife." Rather, it means David's opportunity to pass off paternity to Uriah, the deceived husband.

With David's failure to subvert Uriah, the scene shifts again (11:14–25). David does not hesitate. "In the morning" he sets murder in motion. Ironically, the faithful Uriah carries his own letter of doom.

But does Uriah really not know what is happening? Can the affair, the subject of so much message sending, have remained hidden from the man who slept with "all the servants of his lord"? If David can speak in code, why not Uriah? Understood thus, Uriah's refusal to go down to his house is in fact his refusal to compromise his own house, to condone David's crime and so to embed further the corruption in the king's house. Does he therefore go to his death knowingly, still the king's loyal servant, but with his own integrity intact? In that case the irony of his death is turned against David. It is Uriah who is in charge of it, not David. It is Uriah the Hittite (whose name in Hebrew means "Yhwh is my light") who rules in Jerusalem. The narrator switches back for a brief moment to Bathsheba. Our focus is brought to bear on the marital relationship that has been destroyed: "And the *wife of Uriah* heard that Uriah *her husband* was dead, and she lamented over *her lord*" (v. 26, emphasis added). The proper social customs are observed: Bathsheba enters a period of mourning, feeling what we know not. Then David who began the episode ends it by once again sending to have her brought to his house, this time as his wife. She bears his son.

"Let not this thing be evil in your sight," David says to Joab concerning Uriah's death (v. 25). "But the thing that David had done was evil in the sight of Yhwh" (v. 27), concludes the narrator. Thus the first part of the story of adultery and murder closes with our glimpsing Yhwh's perspective. And that will preface Yhwh's action.

12:1–25, Judgment. The act of "sending"—people, words—has characterized David's manipulation of his power in chap. 11. Now it is Yhwh's turn. "And Yhwh sent Nathan to David" (12:1). What the prophet will wield against David are simply words, but they will be powerful words that will shape David's future. Then Yhwh will wield death against David's house as David has against Uriah's.

In the parable of the poor man's ewe lamb, Nathan deploys words that are slippery, an apt weapon against the David of slippery words. He teases readers with the parable's alternative referents: the lamb is pictured as a child, but also as one who "ate his morsel and drank his cup"—language often used in sexual imagery—and "slept at his breast"; she became to him like a "daughter" (Heb. *bath,* as in *Bath*-sheba!). The parable sucks the king in and extracts from him self-judgment.

Suddenly we are confronted with what was so palpably absent in chap. 11. As David sits in judgment upon others his feelings are opened up to our view. He responds to the account with passion and invokes Yhwh's name in righteous anger. We recognize once more the David who could so tellingly lend his emotions to a public occasion (e.g., at the deaths of Saul, Abner, and Ishbosheth, chaps. 1–4). And if his outburst in 12:5 means "the man who has done this deserves to die" (RSV; but it may mean something like "... is a hellish fiend"), it doubly exposes his own hypocrisy. He, after all, approved taking and slaughtering not a lamb, but a woman and a man.

He speaks of restitution. If "fourfold" is read (12:6, Masoretic Text [MT]; the Septuagint [LXX] has "sevenfold") there may be here a foreshadowing of the premature deaths of four of David's children: Bathsheba's first child, Amnon, Absalom, and Adonijah. "Let not this thing be evil in your sight, for sometimes the sword devours one, sometimes another," David had said to Joab (11:25). "So now," says Nathan (for Yhwh), "a sword will not turn aside from your house, a lasting sword.... Thus says Yhwh: Behold, I am raising up evil against you from your house" (12:10–11). "I gave you," says Yhwh, "your master's house ... I gave you the house of Israel and Judah (v. 8). "House" is ambiguous. It is kingdom, dynasty, extended family. One meaning slides into another. Just so, the king's private and political lives merge, often mirror each other. What he does in the one has a way of impinging on what he does in the other.

Yhwh's gift has been met by David's grasping. He has taken what is not his to take—Bathsheba and the life of Uriah. Therefore, says the prophet in Yhwh's name, "I will take your wives in your sight, and give them to your neighbor [cf. Samuel's words to Saul, 1 Sam. 15:28], and he shall sleep with your wives in the sight of this sun [i.e., with everyone's knowledge]" (v. 11). The words foreshadow Absalom's treatment of David's concubines (16:20–22).

David's response is powerful. In recognizing his sin against Yhwh he recognizes his ultimate antagonist in the matter. Somehow Uriah and Bathsheba become secondary. Readers too may sense that for Yhwh the stakes are more than the individuals concerned, for at issue is Yhwh's choice and support of David. Can the deity countenance the rejection of the chosen one? On the other hand, at what cost can the deity afford to continue supporting him? Nathan's response points to ongoing support, but at a price, paid first by the child conceived in adultery. We shall see it paid in turn by a succession of others in David's house—family and kingdom—in the episodes to come.

Powerful too is David's response to the child's death. Against what his servants expect, he shrugs aside his loss, symbolizing his commitment to living by asking for food and eating (cf. Saul's equally symbolic reluctance to eat in 1 Sam. 28:20, prior to his death). At the heart of David's action seems to be his recognition of Yhwh's power to give and take life (cf. v. 23).

The king's speech to his servants (vv. 22–23) may evoke different responses in different readers—as resignation, indifference, or even callousness. But there is a softening in the picture at the close. As we read of David renewing his relationship with Bathsheba, we note, at last, an affective verb: "And David comforted Bathsheba, his wife, and went in to her, and slept with her" (v. 24). A son is born and Yhwh's response, as if mirroring David's, is also affective: "And Yhwh loved him."

12:26–31, The Taking of Rabbah. Abruptly we are thrown back into the political world, where fighting and taking/capturing dominate the scene. It too is a world of appearances, for although Rabbah has effectively fallen to Joab, the king must be seen to be its captor. Torture (perhaps—so, e.g., Josephus and KJV, but few modern English versions) and forced labor are the lot of its people (v. 31). The momentary note of contrition and comfort is lost in the glorification of war.

13:1–14:33
Rape, Murder, and Exile

13:1–39, Tamar and Her Brothers. We meet three characters. Two are sons of David—Absalom and Amnon, whom we have met before as third-born and firstborn, respectively, in the list of sons born to David at Hebron (3:2–5). Introduced between them is a daughter, Tamar, sister of Absalom, half sister of Amnon.

From the beginning the familial relationships are sharply focused by constant definition and redefinition of characters (as the point of view changes) in terms of "son," "sister," "brother," and "father." This is a story of sickness within a family, where the very ties that betoken solidarity and protection are perverted into the means to commit crime.

That Tamar, the sister, is described at the outset as "beautiful" is perhaps ominous, given the way the David and Bathsheba story had started (11:2; Bathsheba is "very attractive"). And, indeed, so it proves: Amnon loved her and wanted to sleep with her (13:1–2).

But already our understanding has come under strain. We are first struck by the verb "love," which was,

together with other affective language, so obviously missing from David's story. Yet the word is immediately defined in terms of "doing something to her" (v. 2). "Love" looks more like "desire" and will soon most resemble "lust." (In the same way we will come to put quotation marks around the word "wise" used of Jonadab, "a very wise man," in v. 3.) Unlike David with Bathsheba, however, Amnon is unable simply to send for and take Tamar, because as a young marriageable woman (most English versions read "a virgin") she is subject to strict oversight. Hence he must use subterfuge to take her (cf. David with Uriah).

Thus the son's story both imitates that of the father and differs from it. And at the heart of the difference is perhaps the outcome for the woman. Bathsheba, whose taking is described in such dispassionate terms, is finally offered comfort by David. Tamar, excessively "loved" at the beginning (vv. 1–4), is at the end excessively hated by her rapist (vv. 11, 14–17; he "seizes," "overpowers," and "rapes" her). The violent fluctuation is conveyed also in the dialogue: "Come, lie with me, my sister" (v. 11) gives place to "Get this [woman] out of my presence" (v. 17).

By contrast too, Shechem, who raped Dinah, Leah's daughter, ends by loving her, speaking tenderly to her, and asking his father to get her to be his wife (Gen. 34:1–4). But there the contrast stops, for her brothers will not consider a marriage, since her honor (by which they really mean their own) has been slighted. Shechem is slaughtered and Dinah disappears from view, locked up in perpetual dependency upon her do-nothing father and dominating brothers. A similar fate awaits the now unmarriageable Tamar, shut up, desolate, in the house of her brother Absalom (13:20), while her angry father, like Jacob (Gen. 34:30–31), does nothing.

"And King David heard all these things and was very angry" (v. 21). Some ancient versions add here: "but he did nothing to vex his son Amnon because he loved him, for he was his firstborn." Again the woman is pushed to the margin. Abused by her brother, she is ignored by her father in the interests of the firstborn son. David, the lastborn (1 Sam. 16:11), has forgotten his own beginnings. The king, the assiduous taker of women, will not take up his daughter's cause.

Mention of favoritism toward the firstborn also prods us to reflect on Absalom's response to his sister's plight. Is the rape the beginning of his hate toward Amnon or but another episode in it? Does the fact that Chileab, the second-born son (3:3), is unmentioned make Absalom and Amnon rivals for the succession?

David's cynical disposal of Uriah was left to a chance enemy arrow. Absalom, however, leaves nothing to chance—"When I say to you, 'Strike Amnon,' then kill him" (13:28). Here is a character who knows how both to bide his time and to act. He also knows how far to push David. So he flees to Talmai, king of Geshur, his maternal grandfather (v. 37; cf. 3:3). The narrator's closing remarks typically provoke questions. For which son did David mourn (13:37)? And if David "was comforted" (or "consoled"; cf. 12:24, David "comforted" Bathsheba) over the death of Amnon, did he welcome it all along or at least see in it someone else's solution to his dilemma? Did he really suspect nothing, as Absalom pressed him to let *Amnon* go to the sheepshearing (13:24–27, esp. v. 26)? Or was David, after all, acting once more through abstaining?

His attitude toward both Amnon and Absalom may thus be complex. A hidden factor becomes evident only when we remember the larger setting of the story. David's hands are tied by his own evil (chap. 11), for the sons have merely mimicked the king, their father. To function as judge would thus be to expose himself fatally to a charge of hypocrisy. He would then be like his ancestor Judah, condemning the other Tamar to death (Gen. 38).

14:1–33, Absalom's Return. Again the plot turns on coded words—a parable intended to provoke the hearer to self-judgment (vv. 4–21; cf. 12:1–7; 1 Kings 20:35–42). Again a woman is at the center of the episode, apparently not this time as a victim of a man's grasping, but as a mediator and reconciler.

It is Joab, however, who initiates the attempt to bring Absalom back to court. And notice how David perceives that Joab is behind the action (14:19). That happens after the woman has made her judgment against the king (v. 13), as she seeks desperately to mitigate her dangerous effrontery. Her speech subtly transforms the story of threat to the widow and son in the parable into an account of the threat that has forced her to risk confronting the king in this way.

She has been threatened, she says, by "the people" (the word could also mean "army") and, in particular, by "the hand of a man who would destroy me and my son" (v. 16). She is speaking to the king now in her own voice, not the voice of the widow in the parable, but she allows the two voices to flow together, for she cannot openly accuse the king's general (perhaps standing nearby—cf. v. 21) of intimidating her. But she has no need to do so. In the language of violence David unerringly recognizes "the hand of Joab" (v. 19).

Whether it is wisdom to grant Joab's request remains to be seen. (And what is Joab's motive in making it?) Nor can we be sure that the wise woman thinks it to be wise, since the narrator never tells us what she thinks. The parable and judgment are put in her mouth by Joab (v. 3)—put there, moreover, to the accompaniment of other words of coercion (according to her) that the narrator mischievously neglected to mention (vv. 2–3). Thus her role as reconciler must be reconsidered. The nature of her wisdom remains elusive, to be sought perhaps in her skill as playactor and wordsmith. Perhaps she is simply trying to stay alive in a world where men wield power ruthlessly and capriciously.

Absalom's return is thus woven from words of deception and violence. That is both ominous and appropriate—for certainly violence is a language both he and Joab understand well, as the field burning exemplifies (vv. 28–33). Throughout the whole episode reconciliation is constantly compromised—by fear and coercion (the wise woman's speech), by the aggression of Absalom's message to Joab (vv. 28–33), by the king's refusal to let his son come into his presence (v. 24; so Absalom, like Tamar, dwelt apart in his house), and finally by the wordless reunion that conceals as much as it reveals (v. 33).

Absalom's story began in 13:1: "And Absalom, David's son, had a beautiful sister, whose name was Tamar." With Amnon dead and Absalom back in Jerusalem, the narrator pauses to fill in some details (14:25–27). They are details full of irony. We read of Absalom's unsurpassable beauty (a fateful thing in King David's family), of the absence of blemish in him (like a sacrificial animal), of the cutting of his extraordinary hair (like a Nazirite; cf. Num. 6:1–21; Judg. 13:3–5; 16:17), and of his three sons and one daughter. For once, the sons are unnamed, the daughter named: she was called Tamar, and, adds the narrator, "she was a beautiful woman to look at" (14:27; cf. 11:2; 13:1). Readers might well tremble for this Tamar too.

15:1–16:14
Rebellion and Exile

Now comes the story of Absalom's rebellion. In effect, it puts David back to the beginning of the book, with the kingdom in the grip of civil war. This reverse, however, has a curiously positive effect. As the king journeys across the Jordan into the wilderness (cf. 17:29), he rediscovers for a moment some of his sources of strength. There is symmetry in the way the narrative of exile and return unfolds. It draws our attention to similarities and differences between particular scenes, especially in the journeys to and from the Jordan (15:13–16:14; 19:15–20:3). Framed by these journeys are the central scenes of debate (between Hushai and Ahithophel, 17:1–14) and battle (between the armies of David and Absalom, 18:1–17). Each culminates in a messenger scene (17:15–21; 18:19–32) and an account of the king's response (17:22; 18:33–19:8).

15:1–12, Absalom Steals Hearts. The story gathers speed. From the picture of Absalom's ostentation (v. 1) and his cultivation in Jerusalem of support for himself and disaffection for the king (vv. 2–6), the narrator moves to Hebron, where David had been made king (vv. 7–12; cf. 2:4; 5:3). Four years (LXX; the MT has "forty") are traversed in a few sentences, compounding our sense of the rapid growth in Absalom's popular backing. That, of course, raises questions. What was David doing all this time? Is it possible that Absalom's claims about his father's failure to provide justice are well founded?

The son cloaks his visit to Hebron in piety, claiming that he must fulfill a vow to Yhwh, as though it were the deity who had brought him back to Jerusalem (15:7–8). Two verses later and rebellion declared, that implication might seem a striking blasphemy on Absalom's part. Yet Nathan's prophecy should nag our memory—"Behold," says Yhwh, "I will raise up evil against you out of your own house" (12:10–11; cf. 15:14). Perhaps, ironically, there may be truth in Absalom's deceptive words after all. There is irony too in the picture of the man "without a blemish" offering sacrifices to Yhwh while he summons Ahithophel, David's counselor, to betray his own father, Yhwh's chosen king.

The return of Absalom, begun with Joab's observation that "the heart of the king was [set] on Absalom" (14:1), culminates in "the hearts of the men of Israel [going] after Absalom" (15:13), for Absalom "stole the hearts of the men of Israel" (v. 6). With their hearts in the grasp of Absalom, the men of Israel who had given David the kingdom now revoke their gift. The roles of father and son are reversed. It is now David's turn to go into exile.

15:13–16:14, From Jerusalem to the Jordan. The speed with which David abandons his capital more than matches the rapidity with which rebellion overtakes him. Indeed, there is a touch of pathos, if not farce, in the response to Absalom by the conqueror of Rabbah. Barely has the flight begun before we find him in conversation with a powerful mercenary captain, referring to Absalom as "the king," and, of all things, urging this vital ally to desert him (15:18–22).

Read from another perspective, however, things may look different. David's flight is in the interests of preserving the city from the ravages of war and his response to Ittai illustrate his understanding of freedom. Ittai is made no unwilling captive to a contract. Instead, he matches David's gift of liberty with his own commitment. In Ittai's view, despite all appearances to the contrary, David is still his lord "the king" (v. 21). And in his commitment lie the seeds of David's restoration. Ittai will play an important role in making David's kingship real again (18:2).

It is similar with the Ark (15:24–29). Instead of grasping at it as a guarantor of success (like the Israelites in 1 Sam. 4), David returns it to the royal city. "If I find favor in Yhwh's sight," he remarks, "he will bring me back . . . but if he says, 'I have no pleasure in you,' behold, here I am, let him do to me what is good in his sight" (15:25–26).

Shimei of Saul's house expresses vehemently the view that Yhwh has indeed no delight in David (16:5–12): the rebellion is divine vengeance "for the blood of the house of Saul, whose place as king you took. . . . See, your own evil is upon you, for you are a

man of blood" (v. 8). Abishai's violent response (he is Joab's brother)—"Let me go over and take off his head" (v. 9)—is what we might expect of the participants in this world. David's restraint—"Leave him alone and let him curse" (v. 11)—is by contrast extraordinary. And again it is expressed in terms of Yhwh's doing.

Shimei we know to be wrong. It was, of course, Yhwh who gave David Saul's throne. The story was remarkable for David's restraint toward Saul, above all at the cave at En-gedi and in Saul's camp at Hachilah (1 Sam. 24; 26). But perhaps Shimei is also, unconsciously, right. As already observed (in 15:7–8, 14), given Nathan's perspective (12:10–11), it may well be David's own evil that is now upon him.

As for blood, we may recall an earlier flight from court—Saul's court—when David had recklessly taken supplies from Ahimelech the priest at Nob, knowing a spy to be there, and costing the blood of eighty-five priests and more, "men and women, children and sucklings" (1 Sam. 21–22; cf. 1 Sam. 15:3). We see too the blood of the civil war (2 Sam. 2–4), of the wars to secure borders—Moabites measured out for death (8:2), twenty-two thousand Syrians slain (8:5), eighteen thousand Edomites (8:13), and much more—and, of course, the blood of Uriah (11:14–25; 12:9–10). Has David no hand in any of this?

Yet that view of David as a man of blood need not dominate here. If we so choose, we may rather enjoy the king who lets power pass into the hands of others whom he trusts.

The account of David's progress out of the city has almost a ritual quality to it. It is full of participles indicating continuing action; the verb "pass over" ("pass on," "cross over") is repeated sixteen times (similarly in Josh. 3–4, the account of crossing the Jordan); and it is narrated at a measured pace, scene by scene.

In the procession comes the Ark (15:24–29), though that is turned back. But then David and the people with him, in the attitude of mourning, ascend the Mount of Olives (v. 30). Here word comes of Ahithophel's treachery, to which David responds with a prayer: "Yhwh, please turn the counsel of Ahithophel into folly" (v. 31). "And it came to pass," continues the narrator, "that when David came to the summit, where God was worshiped, behold, Hushai came to meet him" (v. 32). As the story unfolds it will become clear that Hushai is the answer to David's prayer. The king's friend (v. 37; 16:16) will persuade Absalom to reject Ahithophel's advice and so allow David to escape safely across the Jordan (17:1–22). The narrator makes explicit the connections in 17:14: "For Yhwh had ordained to frustrate the good counsel of Ahithophel, in order that Yhwh might bring evil upon Absalom."

Ahithophel, summoned to treachery as Absalom offered sacrifices at Hebron, finds his best counsel rejected. Hushai, called to loyalty as David prays "where God is worshiped," finds his deceptive counsel accepted. Irony is a hallmark of Yhwh's workings in this story.

16:15–17:23
Debate, Message, and Escape

With David at the Jordan, the narrator switches scene to Jerusalem. Ahithophel and Hushai are introduced side by side (16:15–16), and their battle of words will dominate the section.

First *(A)* Ahithophel advises the new king to take possession publicly of his father's concubines. So Absalom goes in to them on the roof of the king's palace, "in the sight of all Israel" (16:22)—a roof last mentioned as the place from which David saw Bathsheba bathing (11:2). Now Nathan's judgment is fulfilled: "I will take your women in your sight [says Yhwh], and I will give them to your neighbor, and he shall lie with your women in the sight of this sun . . . before all Israel" (12:11–12).

The narrator then *(B)* interposes a comment on Ahithophel's counsel: it was considered by all alike to be equivalent to the divine oracle (16:23). Implicitly Ahithophel is pitted against God.

The central scene of debate follows *(C)*. It hinges on whether pursuit should be immediate (Ahithophel) or cautiously prepared (Hushai, playing for time; 17:1–14).

Ahithophel's advice is expressed in terms of an apt and ironic metaphor. By killing the king alone, he says, he will "bring all the army [or people] back to you as a bride comes back to her man" (v. 3, following the LXX; so RSV, NAB). The army is depicted as a woman desired by Absalom. Kill but one man, David (the old husband), and she can come to him as a bride. We recognize the scenario. It is David, Bathsheba, and Uriah again, but with David this time playing Uriah's role! The advice ("word"), says the narrator, was "right in Absalom's sight" (v. 4). Just so had David assured Joab, "Let not this matter [word] be evil in your sight" (11:25)—to which the narrator had responded, "But [it] was evil in the sight of Yhwh" (11:27).

Absalom's decision to prefer the counsel of Hushai draws from the narrator a comment *(B′)* that puts firmly in divine perspective the previous evaluation of Ahithophel's wisdom. It may undoubtedly be good, but it cannot stand against the power of Yhwh (v. 14).

Finally *(A′)*, it is Hushai's turn to offer advice to the old king, David, via the priests who had returned with the Ark, Zadok and Abiathar (17:15–22). And in the adventure of the messengers (vv. 17–21), we recognize a striking allusion to the story of the spies at Jericho in the house of Rahab (Josh. 2). It is as though we are witnessing the conquest of the land in reverse.

Realizing that David has gained the time needed to escape safely, Ahithophel tidies his affairs and hangs

himself (17:23), for, like the divine oracle (cf. 16:23), he can see the outcome. Now readers know that both Yhwh and Ahithophel have foreseen Absalom's doom. That fate is no longer open to doubt. Interest now lies in the manner of the son's destruction and in David's response.

17:24–19:8
Battle, Message, and Mourning

The story of the ensuing battle and the death of Absalom centers on David's struggle to come to terms with his conflicting roles as king and as father.

17:24–29, Prelude. The stage is set. Absalom too crosses the Jordan, "with all the men of Israel" (v. 24).

Some brief items then bear witness to the strange twists and turns of loyalties in David's world. Mahanaim, where David finds refuge (vv. 24, 27–29), is the place from which Ishbosheth, son of Saul, had waged war against him (chaps. 2–4). Amasa, whom Absalom—now also across the Jordan—sets over the army in Joab's place, is David's nephew, Joab's cousin (though his genealogy poses some difficulties).

Shobi, a son of Nahash, is from conquered Rabbah of the Ammonites (chaps. 10–12). Machir, the son of Ammiel, was the guardian of Saul's grandson, Jonathan's son, Mephibosheth (9:4). They, together with Barzillai the Gileadite (see also 19:31–39), offer king and people manna in the wilderness (cf. v. 29).

18:1–18, Battle. The army is put under the command of Joab, his brother Abishai, and Ittai from Gath, the mercenary captain. Thus, when David adds that he too will go out with the army, his offer sounds a little lame; he already appears superfluous. Perhaps he has remained in Jerusalem too long (cf. 11:1) and is not the soldier he once was. Whatever their underlying reasons, the soldiers put a flattering construction on their insistence that he stay behind. To this he responds meekly, "Whatever is good in your sight, I will do" (vv. 1–4).

Yet he must still interfere: "Deal gently with [or perhaps protect] the young man Absalom" (v. 5), he commands the generals, unwilling to let them do what is good in their sight in the matter of his rebel son. The narrator adds that all the people heard this order, but leaves us to guess at their reaction—enthusiasm, indifference, dismay?

Two things rapidly become clear. First, Joab is determined to be rid of Absalom. Second, David's command, expressing his commitment to his son, has great potential for straining his men's loyalty and destroying morale. The man who reports Absalom's whereabouts is unwilling to kill him not simply because of his sense of loyalty and obedience to the king. He knows only too well how quickly he would find himself alone, a convenient scapegoat (like the Amalekite who claimed to have killed Saul [chap. 1] and the captains who killed Ishbosheth [chap. 4]). Thus soldier and general are set at odds.

18:19–19:8, Message and Mourning. The point is brought home in chap. 19 as the army slinks into the city as though loser rather than victor, "for the army heard that day, 'The king is grieving for his son'" (vv. 2–3). General is set at odds with king: "You have made it clear today," says Joab to David, "that commanders and servants are nothing to you. . . . So now, get up, go out and placate your servants!" (vv. 6–7). We come full circle—as at the outset, the king does what he is told.

At the center of the story of Absalom's death is David's reception of the news. The account is teased out by an elaborate messenger scene, neatly linking battlefield and waiting king through a switch in point of view at 18:24. Like a thread through the account is the question, how will the king take the news of Absalom's fate? Who will tell him and how? Will the messenger become the object of violent displeasure?

In the event, both young Ahimaaz, whom Joab tries to protect, and the Cushite, an African no doubt backed by long experience, prove able to deflect the king from anger. The Cushite's indirect language on top of Ahimaaz's hedging is brilliantly framed. It conveys the message without the brutality of the fact and in terms that force the king to see the news as his people must see it: "May the enemies of my lord the king be like the young man, and all who rise up against you for evil" (v. 32).

David's moving outburst (v. 33) ends the scene. That may be read as a poignant expression of a father's grief that invites us to identify with David's ordinary humanity. Or it may be read critically, through Joab's eyes (19:5–7), as revealing the king's absurd self-indulgence. It invites at least those responses along, perhaps, with others more nuanced.

At the close of the episode we glimpse the king, sitting mute at the gate, reviewing his triumphant army and nursing his parental anguish. We have an even more vivid image of the son, suspended between heaven and earth (18:9)—most appropriately for one who so aspired to raise himself up. For the man with the splendid hair this too is a fitting end—ensnared by his handsome head. (Josephus makes it his hair and so it is often portrayed in Western art.) And for the man without a blemish who is paying the price of his father's sin as well as his own there is also apt irony: for he is a ram caught in a thicket (cf. Gen. 22:13).

19:9–20:3
David's Return

Joab ejects David from his private chamber of grief into the world of public appearances. In doing so he makes apparent to readers the fragility of David's

power. Perhaps too he makes that apparent to David. Whatever the talk of providence and the hands of God (chaps. 16–17), it is, in this view, victory in battle and control of the army that counts.

19:9–14, David Sways Hearts. The fact that David has been deposed cannot be glossed over. The prelude to restoration is thus a passage that exudes compromise and irresolution (vv. 9–10). David must sway some hearts and minds. He makes his play hard for the support of Judah, his power base from the beginning. He calculates that by appointing his kinsman Amasa as army commander he can win over the remaining rebel forces and risk alienating the loyal Joab (vv. 11–14). The strategy works (v. 14), but it also proves divisive (19:41–20:3).

19:15–20:3, From the Jordan to Jerusalem. The road to exile saw a gradual decline in the quality of the relationships between David and the people he meets on the way. The loyalty of Ittai the foreigner and mercenary was striking. Hushai, the king's friend, risked his life to do what David asked, though that is perhaps what we should have expected from a friend. Ziba *appeared* to be a loyal subject, although his story of Mephibosheth's expectations (that he gain the crown) sounded suspiciously strained. Shimei was openly hostile.

The return has some interesting and ironical variations. Shimei is now making a passionate (and desperate!) declaration of loyalty. Mephibosheth's story—which, when heard in light of his lameness, carries a ring of probability—compromises Ziba and makes David's earlier judgment look more than a trifle hasty. Moreover, it leaves David in doubt about Mephibosheth and occasions an even more dubious judgment, that they are both equally in the right or the wrong! Whereas Hushai had wished to go on with the king but had gone back at his insistence, Barzillai resists the king's wish to go on and goes back at his own insistence, making it clear that he values a way of life independent of king and court. In stark contrast to the quiet loyalty of Ittai, the foreigner, the men of Israel who hotly claim kinship with the king are only too quick to refuse to have anything more to do with him.

Return, therefore, also reveals an undercurrent of decline. Both the inverted order of the scenes in the journeys to and from the Jordan (i.e., *A B C B′ A′*) and the ostensible occasion, a victorious restoration, lead us to expect the return to be narrated as a movement from a low point back to a high one. Instead, the movement to restoration is counterpointed by a falling tone. David's return is far from triumphal.

The return has some important links to the story ahead. The meeting with Shimei (19:16–23) resonates with the earlier encounter (16:5–13). Again an apparently magnanimous David refuses to acquiesce to Abishai's hardheaded ethic of power and offers mercy: "And the king said to Shimei, 'You shall not die'; and the king gave him his oath" (19:23). Yet when it is David's time to die, he will charge Solomon, "do not leave [Shimei] unpunished," but "send his grey head down with blood to Sheol" (1 Kings 2:9). Solomon will oblige, like David with Uriah, at arm's length (1 Kings 2:36–46). It is a jarring scene with which to bring David's story to a close, especially since it is clothed in a heavy layer of pious rhetoric.

The quarrel between the men of Israel and men of Judah takes us back to the civil war with which the book began, but also beyond that to Judges (e.g., the quarrel between the men of Gilead and the men of Ephraim in Judg. 12), to Joseph and his brothers, or to Jacob and Esau. For the nation-family to be riven by jealousy and status seeking is not new. Moving ahead, we hear Sheba's words echoed in the Northern secessionist cry against Rehoboam, Solomon's son (1 Kings 12:16). The nation's unity is fragile at best. With Rehoboam the split will become permanent.

The return ends where the journey into exile began, with the concubines whom the king left behind "to keep [watch over, guard] the house" (15:16, 20:3; cf. 16:21–22). Unable to keep in order his own house (family), unprepared to guard his own house (city and nation), he leaves ("forsakes," 15:16) the women whom he has taken for his pleasure. They are expected to do what he will not do—with a rapacious Absalom descending upon the palace! But now deeming them tainted by Absalom's intercourse, he will do what patriarchal honor and political wisdom dictate. He "takes" them and "gives" them . . . a prison cell, "the house of keeping"! "So they became shut up until the day of their death, living widows" (20:3). Thus these women are condemned by a man's sin to be shut out of society. Their fate at the hands of Absalom and David compounds that of Tamar (13:20) at the hands of Amnon and David (who offers her no help or consolation). They are both members and victims of David's house. Unlike the king's mercenary captain (Ittai; 15:19–20) or his cursing enemy from the house of Saul (Shimei; 16:11–12; 19:21–23), his women will receive from David no gift of freedom.

20:4–26
The Aftermath of Restoration

20:4–22, War Between Brothers. Given back the kingdom, David now takes action against those who choose to have no part in the giving. Amasa is commissioned to eliminate Sheba. Why he delays beyond the appointed time is unclear, though what little we know of Amasa already suggests either incompetence or treachery as possibilities. His death comes by deception, like the death of Abner in chap. 3. Joab is once more firmly in control. A wise woman's speech marked the beginning of Absalom's return to Jerusalem (chap. 14). Another wise woman's speech marks the close of

David's return (20:14–22). Her wisdom is her way with words—her ability to seize Joab's attention, to recognize the force of his demand, and to sell it to the besieged inhabitants. Joab, like his brother Abishai (16:9; 19:21), wastes no time with political opponents but deals effectively in death. The woman bows to that reality, but in doing so prevents more destruction in the family of Israel—the swallowing up of the city Abel Beth-maacah, a mother in Israel (v. 19; the city's name in Hebrew, ironically, means something like "mourning the house of Maacah"; Maacah was the name of Absalom's mother; 3:3).

20:23–26, The Bureaucracy. The plot of the central section of the book (chaps. 9–20), the story of sin, exile, and restoration, now seems to be exhausted (though it will briefly resume in 1 Kings 1–2, in the story of Solomon's accession to the throne). Marking its end, as its beginning, is a list of David's officials (20:23–26; cf. 8:15–18). A few changes stand out: there is no mention of David administering justice and equity to all his people; there is now an officer in charge of forced labor (20:24), foreshadowing the issue that will divide the kingdom (Adoram appears again in 1 Kings 12:18); and while David's sons are no longer listed as priests, another non-Levite appears in their place.

21:1–24:25
Last Words

The book draws to a close with chaps. 21–24. Like much of chaps. 1–8, it is fashioned, anthology style, from apparently disparate narrative accounts, lists, and poetry. Though no longer continuing the plot of the central section, it draws some of its characters from previous parts of 2 Samuel, and in this and other ways is closely linked to the body of the book. It soon becomes clear, however, that the events recounted need not all be considered as occurring after the events of chap. 20. The section encompasses the whole of David's life. The material is clearly structured in a chiastic pattern, *A B C C′ B′ A′*. It starts and ends with narratives of famine, plague, and death, where the action stems from a divine oracle and ends with God "heeding supplications for the land" (21:1–14; 24:1–25). Between these lie anecdotes and lists suggesting David's military power. At the center are two poems of David—a hymn of thanksgiving (chap. 22) and his own "oracle," his "last words" (23:1–7).

21:1–14, Rizpah and the Sons of Saul. In response to a long famine David consults the divine oracle ("sought the face of Yhwh") and receives what is to readers a puzzling response: there is "bloodguilt" on the house of Saul "because he put to death the Gibeonites" (v. 1). We know nothing of such an event. The narrator hastens to explain, reminding us of the story of the Amorite (Canaanite) Gibeonites' covenant with the Israelites (Josh. 9) and informing us that Saul had indeed attempted, "in his zeal for the people of Israel and Judah" (2 Sam. 21:2), to wipe out the Gibeonites—plainly without success. Ironically, in seeking to implement what the Israelites had originally been commanded, Saul now stands condemned for violating their subsequent oath, made through deception.

A moment's reflection reveals the issues of "guilt" and justice here to be highly complex. When does one covenant (or promise or commandment) override another? For how long must "bloodguilt" haunt a house? If Saul's house has blood on its hands, what of David's?

David's response is to allow the Gibeonites to name their compensation. Their request, obliquely, is for blood. The king takes them up with alacrity: "What are you saying [exactly]? I will do it" (v. 4). So seven sons of Saul are given into the hands of the Gibeonites for execution. Once again, conveniently for David, the house of Saul is reduced, and the blame laid at another's door.

The story is troubling. Does the oracle require the deaths of the sons, or does David only get from it the answer that he wants in the first place? (We see something similar, perhaps, in Judg. 20:18–28.) It is the Gibeonites who determine that only blood will compensate for blood, and David who encourages them in their demand.

Against Gibeonites and David—and Yhwh?—is set Rizpah. Against bloodguilt that traverses generations and swallows up the innocent is set a mother's care. Rizpah's loyalty traverses death as she fends off from her dead kin the ravening wildlife, the counterpart of the human world that consigned the sons to death. The Hebrew meaning of her name captures, with some irony, something of her spirit: she is "glowing coal," daughter of "falcon."

At the beginning of the book Rizpah was the voiceless pawn in a man's quarrel (3:6–16). At the end she is still voiceless and still a pawn, as she watches her sons destroyed in another quarrel between other men. Yet she succeeds in exercising power through the only action open to her—her mourning and her defiance of the gratuitous humiliation by exposure that was part of the execution (cf. Sophocles *Antigone*). Her action shames David into bringing the bones of Saul and his sons home, into their family tomb, in their own land.

21:15–22, Philistines Again. The narrative breaks off into some anecdotes of the Philistine wars—anecdotes of fights against descendants of giants. First we read of a tiring David rescued by his nephew Abishai—of whom we have earlier heard him exclaim in exasperation, "What is there between you and me, you sons of Zeruiah?" (16:10; 19:22; cf. 3:39). Among the items that follow, one is startling: Elhanan of Bethlehem slew Goliath of Gath, "the shaft of whose spear was like a weaver's beam" (21:19). That is exactly how the Goliath

whom David slew is described in 1 Sam. 17:7. So who did slay Goliath?

The narrative of 2 Samuel invites readers to question characters' actions, to probe behind their speech, and to find so often that appearance is not reality. Now it seems that even the narrator may not have all the "facts" reliably arrayed. Perhaps the "truth" of the narrative lies beyond the mere ordering of "facts." Meaning is found when what is important to readers and what seems important in the text interact. The narrator reminds us here that this is not a "story brought live," but a story of life woven out of many strands of information and many perceptions of value. There will be many times when we cannot make it all "fit."

22:1–51, The Righteous Psalmist. The song in chap. 22 is found also in Psalms as Psalm 18 with small variations. Its position here at the end of the books of Samuel links it to the song of Hannah at the beginning (1 Sam. 2:1–10). That also is in psalm form. It not only reflects Hannah's own situation, but foreshadows the concern with kingship of the two books; it ends with the expectation that Yhwh "will give strength to his king, and raise the horn [exalt the power] of his anointed" (1 Sam. 2:10). David's song is related to a specific occasion ("on the day when . . .") that turns out, however, to be occasions of deliverance throughout his life, including escape from Saul. It too reaches its climax with "Yhwh's anointed," now specified as David himself (22:51).

The opening imagery of Yhwh as rock (vv. 2–3; cf. vv. 32, 47) is apt for one who found refuge at the Rock of Escape (1 Sam. 23:24–29). The psalmist then recalls his cry in his distress, his enemies like waves sweeping over him, and the coming of Yhwh in lightning, thunder, and clouds of a storm (22:4–20). In the central section (vv. 21–28) the psalmist reflects on his own righteousness, the reason, as he sees it, for his reward. The focus then shifts back to God, but in order to speak of what the psalmist can do through God's support (vv. 29–51). As noted, it comes to rest on David and his descendants (v. 51).

Distress, theophany, and rescue are described in graphic terms. Participants, emotions, situations, actions—all are heightened into extremes. So too are the protestations of righteousness and achievement. In Psalms, in the context of much similar poetry, this characteristic might slip by readers unnoticed. In the present prose context it stops readers short: "I was blameless before [Yhwh]," proclaims David, "and I kept myself from guilt" (v. 24). One effect of this lengthy self-adulation, therefore, is to proclaim not righteousness, but self-righteousness, not piety, but hypocrisy. That is a reading hard to resist.

23:1–39, Last Words and Mighty Men. So it is too with the "last words of David" (23:1–7). As David's (non-Levite) sons had become priests, so now the king transforms himself into the divine oracle: "The spirit of Yhwh speaks by me" (v. 2). David speaks of ruling justly and being rewarded for it. "For a lasting covenant [Yhwh] has made with me, ordered in all and secure" (v. 5). These are confident words, yet hedged about with questions: "For is it not thus, my house, with Yhwh? . . . Will he not cause [all my deliverance and desire] to spring forth?" These are rhetorical questions, of course, but they invite scrutiny.

The poem shifts focus to the field (v. 4), to threatening thorns and the "weapons" of those who root out the forces of chaos (vv. 6–7). The vision is like that of David's psalm (chap. 22). Good arms itself for battle with evil, a David against a Goliath. (But, we might wonder, was it not Goliath who armed himself with iron and the shaft of a spear?) So the poem dissolves into a listing and telling of this weaponry—of the anointed's mighty men and their deeds (vv. 8–39).

In the center of the chapter is one of those great stories of David (vv. 13–17). In an unguarded moment he buys water at the price of other men's blood. We see the man who commands intense loyalty and who is alert to providence as he refuses to drink the water, pouring it out to Yhwh, blood upon the ground. That reminds us of the David who would not reach out against Saul, Yhwh's anointed (1 Sam. 24; 26), or who turned Abishai's sword back to its sheath when Shimei cursed him and called him a "man of blood" (2 Sam. 16:5–13; cf. 19:21–23).

In turn, however, to think of David as a "man of blood" raises disturbing recollections of other occasions, as we have noted before (in 16:5–12)—recollections of the slaughter of the priests of Nob (1 Sam. 22:11–23, esp. v. 22), or the murder of Uriah (2 Sam. 11), or the execution of the seven sons of Saul (chap. 21).

In fact, the tale of the water of Bethlehem is surrounded by recollections, for the chapter is full of names. As we recognize them we bring the whole story into review. David's psalm speaks only of himself, his God, and his righteousness. The lists of mighty men tell a different story. They tell of a house secured by many, with blood and pain and not always with righteousness.

The narrator reminds us of Abishai (23:18), who, we recall, saved David from the giant (21:15–17). Within a verse or two (23:24) another name, Elhanan from David's hometown, has resurrected that unsettling anecdote of Elhanan and Goliath (21:19). Asahel takes us back to the civil war and Joab's killing of Abner (2 Sam. 2–3); Benaiah takes us forward to Solomon's ruthless disposal of Shimei at David's behest (1 Kings 2:36–46)—Shimei of whom the king said, "You shall not die," and gave him his oath (2 Sam. 19:23).

The list in 23:24–39 is particularly rich in allusion to the Bathsheba story. Names jump out: Eliam (Bathsheba's father? cf. 11:3), Nathan, Zobah, and the Ammonites (chap. 10), Joab (chaps. 10–12). Finally (23:39) it comes to rest upon none other than Uriah the

Hittite! We might hear other oracular words: "Why have you despised the word of Yhwh, doing what is evil in his sight? Uriah the Hittite . . . you have slain with the sword of the Ammonites; so now a lasting sword will not turn aside from your house" (Nathan in 12:9–10). Is the psalmist blameless before Yhwh? Is his house secure? David's story has a way of shifting out from under us. It is a story that refuses to be tamed, secured, or neatly ordered.

24:1–25, King and People. Why Yhwh's anger is kindled against Israel we are not told. The divine anger is worked out, however, through David, who, as in chap. 21, appears a ready champion of this particular word (again, perhaps, an oracle or a decision by lot, with the questions put by the inquirer). To number the people is to number the army (the same word in Hebrew). A census is a tool for centralizing power; its purpose is usually to raise taxes and an army. The great irony of this story is that it is Joab, the power broker at the center of this centralized government, who protests against the action (24:3–4).

What exactly is wrong with the census is also unexpressed, though in the eyes of Yhwh (and the prophet Gad) it is perhaps its potential for military aggrandizement at the expense of trust in the power of Yhwh. That would take us right back to Samuel's speech about the grasping ways of kings, when the people first ask for a king (1 Sam. 8:10–12).

Yet once more it is difficult not to be impressed by David. He is boldly penitent (24:10, 17). He invites action against himself and his own house rather than the ordinary people: "these sheep, what have they done?" (v. 17). He is unwilling to make an offering to Yhwh that has cost him nothing (v. 24).

His choice of the plague is couched in piety: "let us fall into the hands of Yhwh, for his mercy is great; but let me not fall into human hands" (v. 14). He thus eliminates the crucial second option, that he flee three months before his foes—the only option in which he is the focus and the spread of death might be contained. So once more a question hangs over our reading. Is the king who promoted the census unwilling still to relinquish power in the interests of his people? Is he unwilling to return to his roots, houseless, living by his wits, pursued by Saul in the wilderness? Instead, he bequeaths on Israel the deaths of seventy thousand people.

"And Yhwh heard supplications for the land, and the plague was averted from Israel" (v. 25). But Yhwh had halted the plague before David had prayed for the people or offered his sacrifice (v. 16). Why, we are not told. And all along, while David thinks that he is the cause of the plague and that the expiation of his sin is the key to everything, we know that it is Israel that is the object of God's anger. David has been merely God's unwitting tool in the expression of that anger.

Saul seems to haunt this last episode of the book, like the first. David, so different from Saul, is yet so alike. David, induced by Yhwh to offend, reminds us of Saul, driven by the spirit to fits of jealous rage. Though each stands at the focal point of his story, Yhwh's action pushes us to see that they are not the ultimate focus of Yhwh's concern. Rather, they facilitate Yhwh's dealings with the covenant community. At heart the story is about God and the people.

Bibliography

Brueggemann, W. *First and Second Samuel.* Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox Press, 1990.

Flanagan, J. W. *David's Social Drama.* Sheffield: Almond Press, 1988.

Gunn, D. M., and D. N. Fewell. *Narrative in the Hebrew Bible.* Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1993.

McCarter, P. K. *II Samuel.* Anchor Bible, 9. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1984.

Noll, K. L. *The Faces of David.* Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1997.

Polzin, R. *David and the Deuteronomist.* Bloomington, IN: Indiana University Press, 1993.

Steussy, M. *David.* Columbia: University of South Carolina Press, 1998.

1 and 2 Kings

RICHARD D. NELSON

INTRODUCTION

Kings is a history of the two kingdoms of Judah and Israel as told from the particular theological perspective of the book of Deuteronomy. It is organized according to the reigns of the individual kings, who serve as the main characters. The religious loyalty or disloyalty of these kings determines the fate of each nation. However, prophets also play an important role as messengers of God. They warn and advise the kings and provide a commentary on events from God's perspective.

Literary Analysis

Opening and closing formulas for the individual kings organize the flow of history. Opening formulas date each king's first year by the reign of the ruler of the other kingdom. After covering the entire career of a particular king, the writer backtracks to describe the reigns of whatever king or kings of the other kingdom had come to the throne during the first king's rule. This synchronizing movement helps unify the history of the two kingdoms into the story of a single people.

These formulas uniformly evaluate all the kings of Israel (the Northern Kingdom) as having done "evil in the sight of the LORD" for sacrificing outside of Jerusalem at Bethel. From the author's theological viewpoint, this was a flagrant violation of the demand for centralized sacrifice set forth in Deuteronomy 12. Some kings of Judah are also condemned, while others receive only qualified approval because they permitted disobedient sacrifice at local sanctuaries. Only Hezekiah and Josiah receive total approval, because they centralized sacrificial worship at the Jerusalem Temple. The closing formulas refer to the writer's sources and report on the king's death and, in the case of Judah, give further details about age, mother's name, and a notice of burial. Two events take place outside of this structure: the transfer of prophetic authority from Elijah to Elisha (2 Kings 2) and the story of the illegitimate Queen Athaliah (2 Kings 11).

The majority of the kings receive only brief treatment. However, the careers of certain kings are reported at greater length, using narratives that usually involve prophets. In this way, stories about paired kings and prophets highlight the important turning points of history: Jeroboam and Ahijah, Ahab and Elijah, Hezekiah and Isaiah, Josiah and Huldah.

The announcement and subsequent fulfillment of various prophetic predictions provide another organizing structure. As the Lord's servants (2 Kings 17:13, 23), the prophets repeatedly announce judgments, and these threats come to pass in due time. A striking example is the precise prophetic forecast of Josiah's reform (1 Kings 13:1–10 predicts 2 Kings 23:15–18). An additional unifying device is the use of paired parallel narratives, such as "two mothers and their sons" (1 Kings 3:16–28; 2 Kings 6:26–31) or "a wicked queen dies" (2 Kings 9:30–37; 11:13–16).

Kings and History

Caution is required when using Kings as a historical source. Archaeology and other external sources sometimes show Kings to be correct about matters ranging from the name of the king of Moab (2 Kings 3:4) to Hezekiah's construction of a water tunnel (2 Kings 20:20). Unlike in modern history writing, however, the theory of historical causation used in Kings is theological rather than political or economic. For example, the short shrift given to the important Northern king Omri (1 Kings 16:23–28) manifests a controlling interest in theology that excludes more mundane concerns.

The author of Kings used older sources and cited three of these by name. The "Book of the Acts of Solomon" reported on Solomon's deeds and his "wisdom" (1 Kings 11:41) and provided administrative lists and other historical notes. It also contained legendary anecdotes illustrating Solomon's glory and wisdom. The conclusion of an earlier literary work, called by scholars the Throne Succession Narrative (2 Sam. 9–20; 1 Kings 1–2), was used to describe the accession of Solomon.

Data about the later kings was taken from two other sources: the "Book of the Annals of the Kings of Israel" and the "Book of the Annals of the Kings of Judah" (1 Kings 14:19, 29). These two works included particulars about each king's wars and building projects, as well as conspiracies they faced. These sources appear to have been literary works rather than official annals, but probably were based on inscriptions and other reliable materials.

Other stories used in Kings derive from previously existing prophetic sources. The stories about Elijah and Elisha that make up nearly all of 1 Kings 17:1–2 Kings 8:15 were most likely incorporated from a single source. Narratives about other prophets (Ahijah, 1 Kings 11:29–39; 14:1–18; Micaiah, 1 Kings 22:1–28; Isaiah, 2 Kings 18:13–20:19) were probably taken from similar prophetic sources. Before being written down, these prophetic narratives had originally been passed on by word of mouth in order to uphold the office of prophet and the power of the prophetic word. They present prophets as exemplary figures to be respected (2 Kings 8:3–6), obeyed (1 Kings 17:10–16; 2 Kings 5:10–14), and perhaps even feared (2 Kings 1:9–15; 2:23–24). These prophetic folktales cannot be used as historical sources except in an indirect way.

The chronology of Kings is not completely trustworthy. The years of reign given for the kings of Israel do not always coordinate completely with those for the kings of Judah, nor do the cross-datings between the kingdoms always agree with these totals. Sometimes the dates suggested by Kings do not match dates solidly established from outside sources (→ Chronology, Old Testament). For this reason, dating the reigns of the individual kings is an uncertain enterprise until one reaches Josiah of Judah and his four successors.

History of Composition

Kings is the last part of the Deuteronomistic History, a literary whole that begins with the introduction to Deuteronomy and goes on to chronicle Israel's life of obedience and disobedience in the land of promise. The theology of Deuteronomy pervades and inspires its presentation of history (→ Deuteronomist; Deuteronomistic Framework; Deuteronomistic Historian). Evaluative commentaries appear at two important turning points in Kings. These sections use the theology of Deuteronomy to review the past and to anticipate the challenges of the future. The first major evaluative passage is Solomon's Temple dedication prayer (1 Kings 8). The second spells out the reasons for Israel's downfall (2 Kings 17). These review summaries represent the editorial viewpoint of the Deuteronomistic historian. They serve to hold together the larger historical work and instruct readers on how to interpret events. Other examples are Deuteronomy 1–3; Joshua 1 and 23; 1 Samuel 12; and 2 Samuel 7.

The date of the composition of the Deuteronomistic History is debated by scholars. Some suggest that it was first produced in the early Exile to explain the disasters that devastated Israel and Judah. Others believe that an earlier, pre-exilic version was composed before or just after Josiah's death in order to support his reform. In the Exile, this original optimistic form was revised into a thoroughly pessimistic history of disobedience that blamed Judah's fall on Manasseh (2 Kings 21:10–15; 23:26; 24:3–4). Still other scholars propose an exilic work subsequently overlaid by two later revisions oriented toward prophecy and law, respectively.

Themes and Theology

Kings denounces the failure of Israel and Judah to worship the Lord in the faithful manner commanded by Deuteronomy. First, the worship of foreign gods is condemned. This practice is said to have started with Solomon and been continued by certain kings of both Israel and Judah. Second, in accord with Deuteronomy 12, criticism is directed at any sacrifice practiced outside Jerusalem. By sacrificing at Bethel, the Northern kings universally warranted condemnation for participating in the "way" or "sins of Jeroboam" (1 Kings 15:34; 16:2, 19, 26, 31). The infidelity of Israel eventually led to its destruction by the Assyrians (2 Kings 17:7–18, 21–23).

In Judah, noncentral sacrifice took place at local "high places" (outdoor shrines on raised platforms). Even otherwise faithful kings of Judah received only qualified approval because "the high places were not removed" (1 Kings 15:14; 22:43). The two offenses of worshiping other gods and sacrificing outside Jerusalem are brought together in the reform of Josiah. Josiah both suppressed the worship of foreign gods (2 Kings 23:4–5, 10–14) and shut down all sanctuaries where noncentral sacrifice took place (23:8–9, 15–20). However, in the end, Judah shared the same fate as Israel and was destroyed because of its religious infidelities (2 Kings 17:19–20), especially those sponsored by Manasseh (2 Kings 21:10–15; 24:3–4).

Another significant theological theme is God's special favor to David (1 Kings 11:12–13) and God's promise that David's descendants would always reign in Jerusalem (1 Kings 11:36; 15:4–5; 2 Kings 8:19). David's perfect fidelity to the Lord is used by the writer as a standard for later kings (1 Kings 3:3; 11:4, 6, 38; 15:3, 11). The Lord's special favor to David protected Jerusalem from Assyrian attack in Hezekiah's reign (2 Kings 19:34; 20:5–6).

Canonical Significance

For its earliest readers, Kings was a call for obedience to the law of Deuteronomy and fidelity to God, even in the face of national catastrophe. It served as an explanation for the doom that Judah had recently endured. Kings declared that God's judgment on Israel and Judah had been inevitable and just, given their dismal record of defiance and disbelief (1 Kings 9:6–9; 2 Kings 17:7–41). However, now that this judgment was behind them, the book of Kings also called on the people to repent (1 Kings 8:46–53) and to await God's response.

The later faith communities of Judaism and Christianity have had mixed reactions to the book of Kings. The NT Gospels report the miracles of Jesus in patterns similar to the stories of Elijah and Elisha. The Gospel of Luke shows a special affinity for Kings, alluding to it frequently. In contrast, the fourth-century missionary Ulfilas refused to translate Kings into Gothic lest it encourage the warlike tendencies of his barbarian converts! Perhaps the most important impact that Kings has had on the developing faith of Judaism and Christianity lies in its claim that God has chosen to work through the mundane processes of human history. Neither the machinations of politics, the ineptitude of government, the failings of rulers, nor the tragedies of war are alien to the God presented in Kings. This biblical God somehow incorporates these all too human failings into an overarching design that brings the divine will into effect.

COMMENTARY

1 Kings 1:1–11:43
The Reign of Solomon

After reporting Solomon's succession to the throne (chaps. 1–2), Kings divides the story about him into a positive section (chaps. 3–10) and a negative one (chap. 11). The positive features of Solomon's reign focus upon his wisdom, his wealth and power, and his building programs. The negative portrayal begins only late in life, when Solomon is enticed by his many wives into the worship of foreign gods. The Lord punishes Solomon for this sin. External adversaries and an internal rebellion by Jeroboam threaten him.

The story of Solomon introduces important themes that continue throughout the book of Kings. For one thing, his construction of the Temple made it possible for Israel to obey the law of Deuteronomy 12 for the first time. This law mandated the concentration of all sacrifice in one place. A second theme is that of Davidic kingship. 2 Sam. 7:1–17 records God's earlier promise through the prophet Nathan that David's royal dynasty in Jerusalem would be eternal. Now the prophet Ahijah repeats this, announcing an apparently absolute divine promise that David's descendants will reign forever in Jerusalem (11:31–39).

On the negative side, Kings also traces the nation's deadly sins of sacrifice on the high places and the worship of foreign gods back to Solomon's policies (11:4–8). Solomon's options of obedience and disobedience prepare for the pieties and impieties of future kings and the positive and negative possibilities that lie before the whole people. Already in the figure of Solomon, the book of Kings confronted its early readers with the somber realities of their national tragedy. Even at the zenith of Solomon's accomplishments, the Lord warns him (and those first readers) of the inevitable consequences of stubborn disobedience: a ruined Temple and a decimated people (9:6–9). The effects of religious infidelity would shatter Solomon's glorious kingdom, and this would be only a foretaste of the calamities to come.

1:1–2:46
Solomon Comes to the Throne

The author of Kings took these first two chapters from an earlier work sometimes called the Throne Succession Narrative or the Court History of David.

The choice of Solomon to be king converts an earlier situation of weakness and disorder into one of strength and peace. Previously David's sons had engaged in a deadly struggle to inherit his throne, as reported in 2 Samuel 9–20. Solomon's triumph over his half brother Adonijah means that the kingdom is now solidly under the control of the legitimate heir, designated by David and acclaimed by the people.

This is more than just a report of a successful royal succession, for it launches thematic concepts of continuing importance. God is the motive force behind the events of history and has brought Solomon to the throne (1:48; 2:15, 24). This outcome is a fulfillment of God's earlier promise to David that he would have a son who would build a temple and inaugurate a lasting dynasty (2:24, 45; 8:20; cf. 2 Sam. 7:11–16). David's last words to Solomon establish high expectations for future kings. Those who obey God's law (specifically meaning Deuteronomy) will prosper (2:2–3).

The story of Solomon's success also has disagreeable aspects to it. It involved taking advantage of David's weakness and old age and led to a series of politically inspired deaths. The throne was not necessarily Solomon's by legal right. Nevertheless, the writer seeks to convince readers that Solomon was the legitimate heir chosen by God.

1:1–53, Palace Intrigue. David is old and impotent. He cannot "know" either his new concubine (v. 4) or the court intrigue that swirls around him (vv. 11, 18). Beautiful Abishag represents a scheme to invigorate the failing old king, whose sexual proficiency may have been linked in the popular mind to the prosperity and fertility of the kingdom. One faction supports Adonijah, the older (v. 6) and perhaps legally more legitimate candidate, while another endorses Solomon. The two sides seem well balanced, with Joab and the priest Abiathar supporting Adonijah and Benaiah and the priest Zadok supporting Solomon.

Adonijah hosts a gathering that sounds suspiciously like an attempt to seize the kingship (vv. 9–10), although this is never explicitly stated. The event is a religious sacrifice at a sacred location, the spring

Enrogel, by a landmark the name of which means "Serpent Stone." However, Nathan and Solomon's mother, Bathsheba, engage in a counterplot. They put the worst possible construction on Adonijah's conduct (vv. 11, 18–19, 24–26). They convince the old king of a promise that is not recorded elsewhere and that he may never have actually made (vv. 13, 17, 30). Nathan pretends to think that he has been left in the dark about a possible order from David to enthrone Adonijah (vv. 24, 27). As a result of this pretense and intrigue, Solomon becomes king.

Nevertheless, the writer wants readers to understand that Solomon was the proper choice. The narrator vilifies Adonijah by associating his activities with the character and policies of Absalom, another son of David who had treacherously rebelled against him earlier (vv. 5–6; cf. 2 Sam. 14:25; 15:1). In contrast, Solomon is kept carefully out of the conspiracy and the preparations for his enthronement, which unfold entirely at the initiative of others. Solomon's accession rests solidly on David's authority and command (vv. 33–35), a proper act of anointing (v. 39), and the acclamation of the people (vv. 39–40). The Cherethites and Pelethites seem to have been non-Israelite mercenaries of Cretan and Philistine origin (v. 38). The participation of these special bodyguard units, the use of David's personal royal mule, and a priestly anointing with oil taken from the sacred tent further indicate that Solomon is the properly authorized successor. In the end, David insists that the Lord is really the one who has brought about this state of affairs (v. 48).

The description of Adonijah's subsequent conduct further bolsters the message that Solomon is solidly in office (vv. 50–53). By seizing the projections (horns) at the corners of the altar to seek sanctuary, he demonstrates his well-founded fear. Solomon is merciful, but the writer makes it clear that responsibility for his future safety rests entirely on Adonijah himself (v. 52).

2:1–12, David's Last Instructions. Kings uses the ancient literary form of a testament, i.e., advice on how to govern given by a dying king to his successor. David's initial words (vv. 2–4) use the distinctive vocabulary and style of Deuteronomy. His advice represents the theological viewpoint of the author, the Deuteronomistic historian. David urges Solomon to be the obedient and devout king envisioned in Deut. 17:14–20. At the same time, the writer is able to justify Solomon's later brutal treatment of his opponents by ascribing them to the virtuous David.

At first sight, God's conditional promise to David of a successor on the throne of Israel (v. 4) seems to contradict the unconditional promise made in 2 Sam. 7:12–16 and referred to in 1 Kings 11:36; 15:4; 2 Kings 8:19. Is the promise of a dynastic succession subject to the vagaries of royal obedience or not? One way to resolve this apparent contradiction is to stress that this conditional promise (also found in 8:25; 9:4–6) refers strictly to the "throne of Israel." This phrase most likely designates reign over the northern part of David's kingdom only, what would later be the kingdom of Israel. The "throne of Israel" understood in this way would be lost to David's family in the events of chap. 11. God would eventually offer it on similar terms to Jeroboam, the first king of Israel (11:38).

David's instructions grow out of his previous experiences with these three men. Joab's murderous acts of violence against Abner and Amasa are described in 2 Sam. 3:27; 20:8–10 (→ Abner; Amasa). To permit Joab to die in peace at a ripe old age would violate the principle of retributive justice; he must instead die through bloodshed (cf. vv. 6, 9). "Sheol" designates the final abode of all the dead beneath the earth (→ Sheol). Barzillai's earlier allegiance to David (v. 7) is reported in 2 Sam. 17:27–29; 19:31–39, although Solomon will not deal with Barzillai's case in the following report. Shimei's disloyalty and David's problematic oath to him are recorded in 2 Sam. 16:5–13; 19:16–23.

David's invocation of Solomon's wisdom (in the sense of political shrewdness; vv. 6, 9) reflects ironically on the divine gift of wisdom that Solomon will soon receive in chap. 3. Verse 11 reminds readers that David had ruled Judah from Hebron for seven years before also becoming king of Israel, i.e., the Northern tribes (2 Sam. 5:4–5). David's reign of forty years is unlikely to be historical. It represents, instead, the traditional duration of a generation. The intent of this entire section is to persuade readers that Solomon was completely justified in his initial acts of violence.

2:13–46, Eliminating Potential Enemies. When David died, Solomon enacted a bloody purge against likely troublemakers in order to establish his hold (lit., "hand"; v. 46) on the kingdom. He followed his father's admonitions concerning Joab and Shimei, but David had never suggested that any action should be taken against Adonijah or the priest Abiathar. The writer seeks to justify Solomon by fixing responsibility for their deaths on the victims themselves. Thus, Solomon chose to understand Adonijah's request for the hand of Abishag, David's former bed partner, as an implicit claim on the throne. This notion also lies behind the situations described in 2 Sam. 3:6–7; 16:21–22. Verses 19–20 indicate that the office of queen mother was held in high regard, something that will also be true in the later kingdom of Judah.

Abiathar and Joab had been two leaders of the pro-Adonijah party (v. 22). Solomon's banishment of Abiathar obviously resulted from his support of Adonijah. Yet the writer makes this exile sound like an act of clemency and points readers to the prophecy it fulfilled (v. 27; cf. 1 Sam. 2:27–36). The "faithful priest" promised in 1 Sam. 2:35 has turned out to be Zadok (1 Kings 2:35).

Joab, perceiving the real reasons behind Solomon's actions (v. 28), sought sanctuary in the holy area at the

altar that was not to be defiled by unclean bloodshed (cf. 1:50). Solomon's words contend that Joab was liquidated for his past crimes, not because of his earlier support of Adonijah (vv. 31–33). Solomon rewarded Benaiah's willingness to commit sacrilege by giving him Joab's former position as commander of the national army (v. 35).

The king set apparently reasonable conditions on Shimei, confining him within the borders of Jerusalem. Shimei himself accepted this as fair. The Wadi Kidron (v. 37) marks the city's east border, and Shimei probably would not have crossed it to go westward to Gath. However, Solomon's restrictions really prohibited travel to any place (vv. 36, 42). Readers are intended to blame Shimei for senselessly violating the terms of his sentence, but Solomon also states the underlying political reasons for his death in vv. 44–45.

In the end, Solomon was firmly established by his decisive and prudent actions. He fulfilled the word of the Lord (v. 27) and did the Lord's righteous work (vv. 32, 44). Even Adonijah admitted that Solomon was God's choice to be king (v. 15). Moreover, the author indirectly reminds readers of God's promise of an eternal dynasty for David's family (vv. 33, 45).

3:1–4:34
Solomon Governs Wisely

At first Solomon's reign is presented as a golden age of wisdom, wealth, and fame (3:12–13). His great wisdom is a gift directly from God, following a request that illustrates his dedication to duty. He exercises this wisdom in all things (3:16–28; 4:29–34; 10:1–13). Both Solomon and his subjects enjoy unparalleled peace and prosperity (4:1–28, esp. 24–25; 9:15–28; 10:14–29).

The historian's source, the "Book of the Acts of Solomon" (11:41), mixed apparently reliable historical data (such as a list of the administrative districts of the kingdom, 4:7–19) with popular folktales celebrating Solomon's wealth and wisdom. It is not always easy to distinguish between folktales and trustworthy historical data. Probably much of later Israel's picture of "Solomon in all his glory" originated from the universal human inclination to present the foundational past as a golden age. The writer, however, is able to use these traditions to depict the rewards that come to those who are obedient and faithful.

3:1–15, God Gives Wisdom to Solomon. This section is introduced by two pieces of background information (vv. 1–4). Marriage to a daughter of an Egyptian pharaoh, even at this time of Egypt's greatly reduced power, would have been a prestigious achievement. Like all ancient kings, Solomon entered into marriages as a matter of foreign policy. He received the city of Gezer as part of this arrangement (9:16–17). The author goes on to justify Solomon's practice of sacrifice at the old high place of Gibeon (→ Gibeon). The author wishes to make it clear that the king was not violating the centralization command of Deuteronomy 12 because the central sanctuary in Jerusalem had not yet been built. These references to a foreign wife and high-place worship foreshadow the shortcomings of Solomon's reign described in chap. 11.

The key question set before readers is whether Solomon will pursue a kingship of glory or, instead, choose to rule in line with the ideals set forth in Deut. 17:14–20. Verse 5 sets out the essential pattern of the plot that answers this question: Solomon asks and God gives. The word "ask" is used eight times and "give" is used five times in the Hebrew text of vv. 5–13. Stories of receiving supernatural communications while spending the night in a temple were common in the ancient world, as were claims that kings reigned on the basis of special divine favor. Solomon requests a practical sort of wisdom, a special skill in governing for the welfare of the people. Literally, he asks for a "hearing heart" (v. 9). Because the heart is the organ of thought and will, this can be translated as "an intelligence that understands" or even "an instinct for the truth." Solomon frames his request persuasively. He alludes to the past relationship of covenant loyalty (NRSV: "steadfast love") between David, who was faithful, and God, who keeps promises (v. 6). He demonstrates admirable humility by referring to himself as an uninstructed little child (v. 7). To "go out and come in" implies the duties of leadership, especially in the realm of warfare.

The purpose of this narrative is to praise Solomon as a king who was as godly as Hezekiah and Josiah later would be (cf. v. 12; 2 Kings 18:5–6; 23:25). At least in the first part of his reign, he would conform to the royal ideals set forth in Deuteronomy (Deut. 17:14–20). Readers are to understand that his reign received direct divine legitimization.

3:16–28, Solomon Demonstrates His Wisdom. This narrative provides a perfect example of the "hearing heart" Solomon asked for in v. 9. Solomon's dilemma as judge is stressed by v. 18. The usual practice of hearing witnesses is ruled out because the women had been completely alone. The author tells the story in a way designed to put readers on the side of the woman who speaks first and is compassionate (vv. 17–21, 26). In contrast, the second woman is not only brusque (v. 22), but also a moral monster who wants to see the boy dead even when she has actually won the contest because of the first woman's surrender (v. 26). In the end, this author expects readers to share the awed reaction of the people: the wisdom of God was in (lit., "inside") Solomon (v. 28).

4:1–34, A Wise and Prosperous Reign. These reports are designed to produce wonder and admiration over the prosperity, size, and stability of Solomon's kingdom. Two lists of royal officials demonstrate Solomon's administrative wisdom over "all Israel" (vv. 1, 7).

The first list (vv. 1–6) emphasizes continuity with the past by mentioning several holdovers from David's administration (cf. 2 Sam. 8:15–18; 20:23–25). The second list (of district governors; vv. 7–19) is widely accepted as a genuine historical document, in contrast to the folkloric nature of most of what is reported here about Solomon's reign. Readers are intended to marvel over such a sophisticated, efficient system of government.

Solomon's reign is presented as a golden age brought about by royal wisdom. Israel's large population is described with an allusion to God's ancient promises to the ancestors (v. 20; Gen. 22:17). Solomon's dominion extended to the extreme limits of God's promise (v. 21; cf. Deut. 1:7). Vast amounts of provisions testify to the glory and magnificence of his court (vv. 22–23). Each person owned what was needed for a comfortable life (v. 25). A huge chariot force kept the kingdom secure (v. 26).

Wisdom was an international affair in the ancient world, encompassing the study of psychology, rhetoric, political science, and the natural world. Egypt and the nations of the East (cf. Job 1:3; probably Arab tribes are meant) were thought to be especially adept at it. However, Solomon's wisdom exceeded all of those other famous examples (vv. 30–31). It rested solidly on his observation and analysis of plants and animals as instructive parallels to the world of human affairs (v. 33; cf., e.g., Prov. 6:6; 30:18–19, 24–31).

5:1–8:66
Solomon Builds the Temple

The centerpiece of Solomon's accomplishment is the construction of the Temple, a typical act of royal display and self-promotion in the ancient world. As was anticipated by Deut. 12:9–10, this achievement was made possible by the "rest" that God had granted Solomon from all his enemies (5:3–4; 8:56). It fulfilled a divine promise made to David (5:5; 8:15–21; cf. 2 Sam. 7:13). The Ark and the cloud of God's glory together attest to the splendor and effectiveness of this Temple (8:1–13).

Solomon's lengthy dedication prayer highlights the critical significance of the Temple as a place of prayer (8:22–53). The prayer also serves as one of the review summaries and commentaries that hold together the Deuteronomistic History and instruct readers on how to interpret events (see Introduction). In the overall story line of Kings, this new Temple means that the centralization of all sacrifice in the city of God's special choice was now possible (cf. 3:2). From now on, the author will pay special attention to the reform and refurbishment of the Temple and will judge each king based on whether he permitted sacrifice anywhere else.

5:1–18, Preparations. This section seeks to impress readers with the thoroughness of Solomon's arrangements. Solomon spared no expense in his agreement with the king of Tyre (→ Hiram). The description concentrates on the large number of workers, effective organization, and rich materials. Long beams were needed to span the spacious building, and other wood served as flooring and interior paneling. Enormous (and highly expensive) dressed stone blocks provided a firm foundation. Solomon was so fabulously wealthy that he could provide not only for all the workers, but for Hiram's entire royal court as well (vv. 6, 9). However, Solomon's requisition of forced labor under the supervision of Adoniram (v. 14) also portends future trouble.

6:1–38, Construction and Furnishings. This description aims to dazzle readers with the splendor and glory of cedar and gold and elegant carving. The outside is portrayed first (vv. 2–10), then the interior (vv. 15–36). Temple construction marks a symbolic midpoint in the history of Israel in the promised land (v. 1). It represents the end of a 480-year chronology that the Deuteronomistic History has carefully calculated since the first chapter of Deuteronomy. This year also correlates with the royal chronology of the book of Kings that begins with Solomon (2:11). God's conditional promise given in vv. 11–13 explores the significance and future of the Temple. God's enduring association with the Temple means that it can meet the requirements of Deuteronomy 12 to be the central sanctuary. However, this expectation remains subject to Solomon's continuing obedience.

Solomon's Temple was intended as a residence or palace for God, not a place of assembly for worshipers, who gathered outside for prayer and sacrifice. It followed a standard floor plan current among Israel's neighbors. The interior dimensions describe a building about 30 feet (10 meters) wide. An entrance porch about 15 feet (5 meters) long led to a main room about 60 feet (20 meters) in depth. Beyond this was an inner chamber forming a cube about 30 feet (10 meters) in each direction (vv. 2–3, 17, 20). A "domestic ritual" took place inside the main room involving lighting lamps, burning incense, and setting out loaves of bread. The public ritual of prayer and sacrifice took place in the courtyard outside the Temple.

The writer seeks to accentuate the scrupulous care with which the building was constructed (vv. 6–7) and the magnificence of its decoration and furnishings (vv. 15, 18, 21–22, 29–36). Gold was spread over almost everything. The cherubim (vv. 23–28) were heavenly beings in the shape of winged lions with human heads that served as guardians and carriers of God's throne. Two impressive images of these sheltered the Ark (cf. 8:6–7) and pointed to the enthroned divine presence. The Ark (v. 19), perhaps thought of as the footstool of God enthroned over the cherubim, indicates to readers that this was truly and legitimately God's house (→ Temple, The).

7:1–12, Other Structures. The Temple was only one part of a larger, integrated complex of government structures that also included two palaces and three public buildings. Solomon actually spent more time building the other five buildings than constructing the Temple. What is more, the dimensions of the House of the Forest of Lebanon, named for its impressive rows of pillars, exceeded that of the Temple. However, the writer subordinates these other buildings by sandwiching them into the middle of the Temple project. In this way, these descriptions serve to highlight Solomon's glory without lessening the grandeur of the Temple.

7:13–51, Bronze and Gold Furnishings. The accomplished artisan Hiram (not the king mentioned in chap. 5) was imported from Tyre, but the author assures readers that he was not really a foreigner (v. 14). Again, the writer seeks to awe and amaze readers with the incalculable weight of bronze, the persistent mention of gold, the intricate décor of the pillars, and the vast size of the symbolic bronze sea. Gourds, flowers, palm trees, and pomegranates echo God's gifts of fertility. The cryptic names of the freestanding pillars in front of the Temple (vv. 15–22) apparently indicate stability (Jachin in Heb. means "he makes solid"; Boaz, "with strength"; → Jachin and Boaz). The vast symbolic "sea" and the other enormous bronze castings, along with the huge amounts of metal involved, testify to Solomon's wealth and technical achievements.

8:1–66, Dedication and Prayer. A narrative description of the Temple dedication (vv. 1–13, 62–66) and theological commentary spoken by Solomon (vv. 14–21, 54–61) surround a long dedication prayer (vv. 22–53). The narrative affirms the unanimous and enthusiastic participation of all Israel (vv. 1–5, 62–66). The Lord's attachment to the Temple is vouched for in three ways. First, the Ark is present. Second, a cloud of thick darkness fills the hall as a symbol of the Lord's presence. Third, the "glory" of the Lord appears, the glowing radiance of divine visitation (vv. 6–13; cf. Exod. 19:16; 40:34–35). The note that the poles of the Ark were still visible (v. 8) helped the earliest readers identify with the description.

The dedication ceremony took place during the Festival of Tabernacles (or Booths; vv. 2, 65–66; → Tabernacles, Festival of). It was on this occasion, according to the Deuteronomistic historian, that the people of Israel were to reaffirm their loyalty to the law every seven years (Deut. 31:10–13). Solomon's theological commentary emphasizes the divine choice of both Jerusalem and David (v. 16). God has kept the promise to David that his son would rule and build a Temple (vv. 17–20) as well as the promise of "rest" spoken earlier through Moses (v. 56; a fulfillment of Deut. 12:10–11).

Solomon's prayer points to Israel's future. The first part (vv. 22–26) praises God's loyalty to the covenant with David and anticipates the realization of God's conditional promise of the throne of Israel (that is, a united kingdom) for David's dynasty (v. 25; cf. vv. 2:4; 8:20; 9:4–5). The second part (vv. 27–53) consists of seven petitions that cover all possible circumstances of prayer toward the Temple. These include the resolution of judicial disputes, defeat, drought, illness, prayer by a pious non-Israelite, war, and exile. The fourth petition (vv. 37–40) is a comprehensive catalog of almost every conceivable problem. In each case, Solomon urges the Lord to "hear in heaven" and respond. Solomon insists on the Deuteronomistic conviction that God does not literally reside in the Temple. Instead, it is only the Lord's "name" that dwells there (vv. 27–30; cf. vv. 12–13).

In the last petition (vv. 46–50), readers are put on notice that the ultimate future of at least some parts of Israel is in doubt. Defeat and exile may lie ahead. Later readers who were actually experiencing just such an exile are advised that repentance may lead to a better life in captivity. The overall purpose of this chapter is to honor the importance of the Temple and to urge readers to pray faithfully, keep God's law (vv. 58, 61), and repent in hopes of a better life.

The great extent of Solomon's kingdom, reaching north to Lebo-hamath in present-day Syria (v. 65), corresponds to what was envisioned in Josh. 13:5 (cf. 2 Kings 14:25).

9:1–10:29
Solomon in All His Glory

After a sobering warning from God, Solomon's reign is portrayed as a golden age of fabulous wealth interpreted as an inherent consequence of his renowned wisdom. The author seeks to impress readers with the glory of Solomon's reign, but also hints now and then at impending negative developments.

9:1–9, God's Promise and Threat. In this section the writer provides instructions on how to understand theologically the events that will take place as history unfolds. A second appearance by the Lord assures Solomon (and readers) that God has heard the king's prayer that the Temple be a focus of special divine attention (v. 3). Then in response to 8:25, the Lord restates the conditional promise concerning the throne of Israel (that is, a united kingdom) for David's descendants (2:4). A grammatical shift from the second person singular in vv. 3–5 to a plural "you" in vv. 6–9 directs the following dreadful warning to all the succeeding kings of David's line. God threatens plainly that disobedience and the worship of other gods will lead to national subjugation and the destruction of the Temple. In fact, God's threat lays out the tragic plot of the rest of the book of Kings. It ensures that readers living after Judah's defeat and exile would not imagine

that these catastrophes had been the result of God's weakness or betrayal. Instead, they were the inescapable consequences of the nation's constant sin.

9:10–28, Prosperity and Glory. This section seeks to impress readers with the glory of Solomon's reign. Although selling off national territory may appear to be an act of desperation, the writer manages to make Solomon's transfer of twenty good-for-nothing towns in Cabul in exchange for tons of gold seem like a shrewd deal (vv. 11–14). The name Cabul seems to be taken to mean "as nothing." Solomon's splendid building projects were expedited by his draft of slave labor from the subjugated Canaanites (vv. 15–22). (Cf. the apparently temporary conscription of Israelite subjects reported in 5:13–18.) The Millo ("filling," vv. 15, 24) refers to an artificially filled or terraced area of Jerusalem that the earliest readers could presumably identify. A number of archaeologists attribute similarly constructed defensive gates at Hazor, Megiddo, and Gezer (v. 15) to the period of Solomon.

Solomon's riches were the result of international commerce (vv. 26–28; cf. 10:14–15, 26–29). Ezion-geber was a port on the Gulf of Aqaba for trading south on the Red Sea (v. 26; → Ezion-geber). Ophir is thought to have been on the Arabian or East African coast (v. 27; → Ophir). Yet there is at least one hint that all is not well with Solomon's kingdom. His enslavement of the Canaanites (vv. 20–21) represented a failure to enforce the command for their eradication set forth in Deut. 7:1–6; 20:16–18.

10:1–13, The Queen of Sheba Pays a Visit. Solomon's impressive wealth and wisdom are further confirmed by praise from one who is herself sophisticated, wise, and rich. Sheba probably refers to a renowned trading nation in southern Arabia that may have had a tradition of female rulers (→ Seba, Sabeans). The queen tests Solomon with riddles and puzzles (v. 1), for wisdom in the ancient world implied proficiency in wordplay and mental gymnastics (cf. Prov. 1:6). This story is intended to underscore Solomon's wisdom and the benefits it gave to his subjects. Readers are expected to share in the queen's breathless reaction in vv. 5–9.

10:14–29, More Prosperity and Glory. Solomon derived his riches from international trade (vv. 14–15, 26–29; cf. 9:26–28). The amounts of gold reported are fabulous, presented to astonish readers rather than report sober history (vv. 14–17, 21). "Almug" wood is known from other ancient sources, but cannot be identified further. Solomon's "ivory" throne would have been wood inlaid with ivory (vv. 18–20), representing the height of luxury and sophistication. The lion figures symbolized royal power. "Ships of Tarshish" were trading vessels capable of long-distance voyages, in this case to remote lands requiring a round trip of three years (v. 22). Kue was a district in southeastern Asia Minor (v. 28). Again, however, the writer hints of negative circumstances. Trading with Egypt for horses (vv. 28–29) and piling up silver and gold are acts forbidden to the king by Deut. 17:16–17.

11:1–43
Solomon's Wrongdoing and Its Consequences

The portrayal of Solomon now twists from positive to negative. Enticed by foreign wives into the worship of alien gods, he is punished by the Lord. God stirs up two threatening foreign adversaries (vv. 14, 23) and a domestic rebellion by Jeroboam, the future king of the Northern Kingdom (v. 26). In a revelation made directly to Solomon, the Lord predicts partial success for this rebellion (vv. 11–13). The United Kingdom is to be ripped apart and divided between Jeroboam and Solomon's heir, Rehoboam. Then this same message is repeated to Jeroboam through the mediation of the prophet Ahijah (vv. 29–39).

11:1–13, Solomon's Infidelity. The unions described here were unquestionably diplomatic marriages contracted with the ruling families of Solomon's vassal states and allies. However, for the author, they also clearly violated the principle of Deut. 7:3–4, which forecasts that such marriages will lead to religious apostasy. The huge totals stem from the legendary celebration of Solomon's greatness. Astarte (v. 5) was not just a goddess of Sidon, but widely recognized in the eastern Mediterranean area. Milcom ("king") was the title of the sovereign national god of Ammon (cf. 2 Sam. 12:30) and Chemosh that of Moab (cf. Num. 21:29).

In Kings, the anger of the Lord is a major causative force in history. Readers are all the more likely to concur with God's angry reaction when reminded that the Lord had graciously appeared to Solomon not just once, but twice (v. 9). The king fell far short of the standard of David's obedience that God had set for him in each of those appearances (3:14; 9:4). Although Solomon's punishment would be both delayed (v. 12) and limited (v. 13), this dispensation was due solely to the promises God had made to David. Solomon's renegade shrines would eventually be demolished by the reforming king Josiah (2 Kings 23:13).

11:14–25, Solomon's Adversaries. For background on these events involving Edom and Aram, see 2 Sam. 8:3–8, 13–14; 10:15–19. Egypt, which traditionally considered Palestine as its dependent territory, also provided refuge for Jeroboam, another threat to Solomon's kingdom (cf. v. 40). The story of Hadad seems to break off prematurely, and that concerning Rezon is even more perfunctory. The important point is that

Solomon's troubles were brought about by the Lord (vv. 14, 23).

11:26–40, Jeroboam and Ahijah. The narrative hints at an attempted coup against Solomon by Jeroboam (vv. 1–2), but this never really materializes. The text is more interested in exploring the theological causes behind the success of Jeroboam after Solomon's death. Solomon's misdeeds mean that God will not fulfill the conditional promise previously made to David and Solomon concerning the "throne of Israel" (i.e., rule over a united kingdom; 2:4; 8:25; 9:4–5).

It may be significant that the prophet Ahijah was from Shiloh. This had been the location of a temple for the Ark (cf. 1 Samuel 1–3), now made obsolete by Solomon's religious policies. Ahijah initiates his message with the symbolic act of tearing up a cloak. Ten pieces symbolize the tribes of the independent kingdom of Israel that will soon emerge. Such performances ("prophetic acts") were more than just visual aids. They were thought to initiate in some way the future events they imitated.

Ahijah restates the Lord's promise of eternal rule for David's family first made in 2 Samuel 7. Because of David's model obedience, God vows that his lineage will reign in Jerusalem forever (vv. 32, 36). Because of this gracious relationship, the approaching punishment will be delayed to the next generation and limited in scope (vv. 12–13, 32, 34–35). Remarkably, a dynastic promise similar to that given David is also offered to Jeroboam, contingent on his future obedience (vv. 37–38).

Ahijah's message points to the future of both Israel and Judah. The promised enduring dynasty for Jeroboam would quickly prove to be unattainable because of his disobedience. However, the unfolding future of God's promise to David turns out to be a more complex matter. The book of Kings at times suggests that God intends to keep this promise unconditionally (cf. 15:14; 2 Kings 8:19). Yet in the end God seems to set this promise aside because of Judah's intransigent sin (cf. 2 Kings 22:17; 23:26–27; 24:3–4). According to Ahijah's word, in any case, any punishment to be suffered by David's offspring will not be "forever" (v. 39). This at least hints that Judah's future remains open to the possibility of eventually regaining sovereignty over Israel.

The story of Ahijah introduces the prophetic word to the story line of Kings. From now on, the Lord will never do anything significant without first providing a prophetic warning (2 Kings 17:13, 23; 21:10–15; 24:2). Prophets will regularly reappear to spell out royal sin and reveal God's unfolding plan.

11:41–43, Solomon's Death. Solomon's reign concludes with the standard formula that will be used for most subsequent kings. The writer cites "The Book of the Acts of Solomon" as a source in order to convince readers of the veracity of the narrative. The round number of forty years given for Solomon's reign merely reflects the traditional length of a generation (cf. 2:10).

1 Kings 12:1–16:34

Israel and Judah as Separate Kingdoms

From this point until the final collapse of Israel, history is presented on a "split screen." The narrative alternates between Israel and Judah. The story of the kingdom of Judah has both high points and low points with respect to its obedience to God's will. However, Judah would be sustained by the unchanging security conferred by God's eternal promise to David. In contrast, the story of Israel starts badly and only gets worse. In the end, the kingdom of Israel would commit national suicide through its obstinate disobedience.

The two small kingdoms of Israel and Judah initially experienced a period of mutual hostility. In addition, a newly revived Egypt represented a serious external threat. An invasion by Pharaoh Shishak early in the reign of Rehoboam sought to reestablish Egypt's former dominance over Palestine. In time, the Egyptian threat faded. Israel became the dominant kingdom, and Judah slipped into the role of a supportive junior partner. Israel's remarkable kings Omri and Ahab successfully engaged in international diplomacy and war. Omri was the first king of Israel to establish a stable dynasty, one that lasted about forty years. He subjugated Moab. His son Ahab joined with other small states to thwart a resurgence of Assyrian expansion at the battle of Qarqar (853 B.C.).

12:1–14:20
The Origin of the Kingdom of Israel

Solomon's death was followed by a partition of his realm into two kingdoms, Judah in the south and Israel in the north. Kings offers parallel stories about the beginnings of the two new kingdoms. It first tells of folly on the part of Solomon's son and successor Rehoboam (12:1–19). The author then mirrors this with a report of outrageous sin on the part of Jeroboam, founding king of the newly independent Israel (12:25–33).

The narratives about Jeroboam spell out the reasons for his initial achievements, but also set the stage for his eventual failure. In this way, the sins of Jeroboam are emphasized, not his accomplishments. By establishing places of sacrifice at Bethel and Dan, he violated Deuteronomy 12. He thus became the archetype of Israel's enduring apostasy as the nation persistently followed "in the way of Jeroboam" (15:34; 16:2,

19, 26). Two stories about prophets (13:1–32; 14:1–18) make it clear to readers just how serious the consequences of Jeroboam's sin will be.

12:1–24, Rehoboam's Folly. Rehoboam's succession to his father's, Solomon's, rule over Israel (that is, the Northern tribes) was not an automatic outcome, but required the affirmation of an assembly at the politically significant Northern city of Shechem (cf. 2 Sam. 5:1–3; → Shechem). Rehoboam's "youthful" folly (he is actually forty-one) caused the kingdom of Solomon to split into two realms (vv. 16, 19). Solomon's oppressive labor policies (5:13–18; 11:28) and Rehoboam's obstinacy were the immediate and human causes of this antagonism. However, at a deeper level, the writer insists that this division resulted from the Lord's determination to fulfill the prophetic word of Ahijah (12:15, 22–24). Jeroboam's role in this event remains ambiguous. In vv. 2–3, he is reported to be part of the Northern opposition party, but v. 20 (and the Hebrew text of v. 2) suggests that he returned from Egypt only after the assembly at Shechem.

The narrative begins with a national assembly that gathers all the characters (vv. 1–3). The people's proposal in v. 4 introduces a complication to Rehoboam's hopes. A three-day delay for consultations adds a note of dramatic tension. The counsel of his older advisers (v. 7) is transparently correct: make the sorts of concessions generally expected of a new king in order to secure your future. Long-term loyalty on the part of the people will grow out of your willingness to act as a public servant in the short run ("today"). In a similar way, readers are made to understand that the advice of Rehoboam's childhood companions, who have just come into government service with his accession, is obviously absurd. Nevertheless, the "we" of v. 9 already makes it clear the Rehoboam is going to take their side. Their three slogans (vv. 10–11) are arrogant, contemptuous, and sadistic. The word usually translated "scorpions" (v. 11) probably refers to a type of cruel lash.

The narrative climax comes in v. 16 when Israel breaks off negotiations, repeating the nationalistic rallying cry of a previous generation's rebellion (cf. 2 Sam. 20:1). "To your tents" indicates a willingness to take the field in battle and harks back to Israel's political existence before the monarchy. Verses 17–20 explore the various implications of this climax, especially the enthronement of Jeroboam over "all Israel" and the limitation of the rule of David's dynasty to Judah only (v. 20).

At this stage, the narrative influences its readers to have a negative opinion of Rehoboam and at least a neutral feeling about Jeroboam. Rehoboam is presented as arrogant and tactless, in contrast to the people, who make a polite, reasonable request. He follows what is clearly foolish advice from obviously unworthy advisers. Adoram is a characteristically foolish choice to be his negotiator (v. 18), for he had been the supervisor of the very forced labor to which the people objected! In contrast, nothing negative will be said about Jeroboam until v. 26. However, Rehoboam is rehabilitated somewhat in the readers' opinion in vv. 21–24. He obeys the prophetic word and accepts what has happened as God's will.

12:25–33, Jeroboam's Sin. Whatever sympathy readers might have for Jeroboam is quickly dashed. The writer seeks to persuade readers that the religious policies of Jeroboam were unmistakable and deliberate violations of God's law. In a move rare in ancient Hebrew literature, readers are made privy to the unworthy motives of Jeroboam by a report of an internal monologue (vv. 26–27). All blame is placed directly on him (vv. 28, 33). Jeroboam violated the law of Deuteronomy repeatedly. His most reprehensible offense was to sponsor Bethel and Dan as royal altars for sacrifice outside Jerusalem in violation of Deut. 12:5–7. What is more, erecting images of calves (really bulls) transgressed the prohibition against religious images (Deut. 5:8–10; 9:8–21). The provision of two calves and the plural noun "gods" (v. 28) adds polytheism to the catalog of his offenses (Deut. 6:4).

Compounding his sin of establishing Bethel as a sanctuary outside of Jerusalem, Jeroboam also built structures (apparently temples) on some of the high places (v. 31). These elevated, outdoor locations for sacrifice to the Lord are regularly condemned by the writer of Kings for the unorthodox religious activities held there (e.g., 14:23; → High Place). Jeroboam committed additional serious religious offenses by establishing a nonlevitical priesthood (violating Deut. 18:1–5) and altering the liturgical calendar. The festival referred to in v. 32 is that of Booths, properly celebrated in the seventh month, rather than in the eighth, as was the practice of Jeroboam (Num. 29:1).

Modern historical scholarship tends to judge Jeroboam less harshly than the writer of Kings did. Jeroboam was probably following traditional Northern worship practices. The bull images at Dan and Bethel certainly represented the Lord, not some idolatrous alien god. Both Dan and Bethel, situated on the northern and southern borders of Jeroboam's kingdom, had been sanctioned as worship sites in earlier periods (Judg. 18:30; 20:18; → Bethel; Dan). Moreover, the multitude of high places had existed long before the monarchy as local shrines to the Lord, and not all early priests were necessarily Levites (cf. Judg. 17:5). In celebrating the Feast of Booths in the eighth month, Jeroboam was probably following the established liturgical calendar of the North.

The noncentralized sacrificial worship of Jeroboam serves as the yardstick for the author's evaluation of every subsequent king of Israel, as well as of several of the kings of Judah. In the end, the reforming King Josiah of Judah would eradicate this corrupted worship (13:2; 2 Kings 23:15–20). Jeroboam is treated as

the paradigmatic example of national wickedness and the initiator of Israel's "original sin." In this way, he is the complete antithesis of David, who functions as the prototype for all those kings of Judah who were pious and obedient (15:5; 2 Kings 22:2).

13:1–10, God's Word Against Bethel. An unnamed "man of God" (i.e., a prophet; cf. 12:22) arrives to pronounce the first of two divine words against Jeroboam. It is directed against the noncentral altar at Bethel (13:2–3). Burning ritually unclean human bones would effectively make the altar unfit for use. This oracle points directly forward to the later reforms of King Josiah (2 Kings 23:15–16), who is named unequivocally.

An immediate sign (vv. 3, 5) and a subsequent miracle of affliction and healing (vv. 4, 6) work together to authenticate this prophetic word. Holy ashes (mixed with fat from the sacrifices) were supposed to be treated with great respect, but now they surge off the altar to the ground. Prophets frequently offered signs to encourage belief in their oracles. The book of Kings reports other examples of such signs in 2 Kings 19:29; 20:8–9.

The prophet's refusal to eat in the territory of Jeroboam (v. 9) may indicate a rejection of his policies and a divine judgment on his country, but it also sets up the background for the incident that follows. Perhaps to return home by the same way (vv. 9–10) was thought to symbolically "undo" the message that the man of God had come to deliver.

13:11–32, The Message Survives the Messenger. The writer uses a traditional story, originally intended to instill confidence in prophetic messages in general, to underscore the validity of the specific prophetic threat made against the Bethel sanctuary. Paradoxically, the lie of the old prophet in Bethel and the disobedience of the man of God from Judah both end up bolstering God's word of doom against Bethel. The man of God should have obeyed the divine directive that he neither eat nor drink (vv. 8–9, 16–17) in spite of the lie about a contradictory word told him by the old Bethel prophet (v. 18). The tomb of the man of God from Judah becomes a standing witness to the impending word against Bethel and against the high-place structures in the other cities (vv. 31–32). His grave marker will still be there when Josiah executes God's word against the high places (2 Kings 23:16–20).

This complex story is told with great narrative skill. For example, the two main scenes (vv. 15–25, 29–32) are each introduced by a parallel sequence of events. First news is brought to the old prophet. Then he speaks, has his donkey saddled, and finds the man of God (vv. 11–14, 26–28). The first main scene recounts temptation, disobedience, and punishment (vv. 15–24). The man of God at first resists the temptation to violate his prophetic responsibilities (vv. 15–17), but then succumbs to a false oracle (vv. 18–19). The old Bethel prophet claims that this word came from an angel rather that a direct revelation, and this seems to be a sign that his oracle should not have been taken at face value. The lion behaves oddly, leaving both the donkey and the prophet's body untouched (v. 24). This eerie abnormality implies that God is directly behind the incident. How ironic that this peculiar lion observes the very constraint that its victim refused to honor (v. 28)!

The second main scene recounts burial and a confirmation of the true prophetic word against Bethel (vv. 29–32). By burying him as a brother, the old prophet fulfills his own oracle (v. 22) and converts the death of the man of God into a permanent sign of Bethel's doom. Like the old prophet, readers now know that the doom of Bethel is certain. In order to make it clear that Jeroboam remained unrepentant, the writer goes on to stress that he persisted in his wicked ways and continued to appoint priests who were not proper Levites (vv. 33–34; cf. 12:31).

14:1–20, God's Word Against Jeroboam. This traditional story was originally told to emphasize the paranormal powers of the prophets. The author of Kings uses it to seal the inevitable doom of Israel. A prophetic word, delivered by way of Jeroboam's wife, prepares readers for the catastrophes that will soon strike Jeroboam and his family.

Jeroboam and his wife follow standard practice by seeking out an oracle in a time of crisis and bringing a present for the prophet (cf. 1 Sam. 9:7–8). But how silly to pretend to be someone else with a prophet known to be perceptive! This attempt at disguise indicates that Jeroboam knows that all is not well between himself and God. That Ahijah can still recognize his disguised visitor in spite of his impaired sight underscores the accuracy of his prophetic announcement (vv. 4–6). The conduct of Jeroboam has not been like David's good behavior (vv. 7–9), and so he has lost the opportunity to found a dynasty like David's, as the Lord had conditionally promised him (11:38).

In the Hebrew Bible, sin and punishment have strong communal implications. An innocent child was the first to suffer the fate of Jeroboam's whole dynasty, but the consequences of his disobedience would influence the fate of the entire nation. The sin of Jeroboam would have both short-term and long-term effects. In the short term, his dynasty would come to a violent end (vv. 10–14). In the long term, the sin of Jeroboam did permanent damage to Israel's relationship with God. From this point on, Israel was predestined to defeat and exile (vv. 15–16). The gruesome fate of Jeroboam's family (vv. 10–11) would be repeated for Baasha (16:2–4) and Ahab (21:21–24).

In the end, these doom-laden predictions would be entirely fulfilled in the total destruction of Israel as an independent nation (2 Kings 17:7–18, 21–23). The earliest readers of Kings would already have known about

Israel's destruction. Here the writer seeks to convince them (and warn them) that this catastrophe was a justifiable punishment from God for Israel's persistent disobedience.

In the concluding formula for Jeroboam, the citation of the source used by the writer aims to enhance the believability of the narrative (v. 19).

14:21–16:34
The Lessons of History

1 Kings 14:21–16:34 summarizes about fifty years of history in order to portray the consequences of Rehoboam's folly and Jeroboam's transgression. In a sense, this section tells the whole national story in miniature. Judah and Israel were addicted to sin. The anger of the Lord was aroused, there being ten references to it in chaps. 14–16 alone. The eventual consequences for both kingdoms were grim: invasion, civil war, conspiracies, and (in the case of Israel) a quick succession of short-lived royal dynasties.

Judah's transgression involved illicit sacrifice outside of Jerusalem at high places and is said to have been the fault of both the people and their kings (14:22–24; 15:3). However, Judah's apostasy was counterbalanced by efforts at reform by Asa (15:12–13). Moreover, the Lord remained committed to the promise to continue David's dynasty (15:3–5).

In the contrasting story of Israel, blame rests totally on its sinful kings, who uniformly "walked in the way of Jeroboam" (15:26, 34; 16:19, 26). They worshiped idols, presumably the golden "calves" (bull images) of Jeroboam (16:13, 26). Israel reached a low point in Ahab, whose apostasy surpassed that of any previous king (16:30). By supporting a state-sponsored worship of Baal (vv. 31–33), Ahab and his pagan wife, Jezebel, outdid even Jeroboam.

The rhythm of prophetic word and its fulfillment continues (15:29–30; 16:2–4, 7, 34). Repeated mention of the ongoing border war between Judah and Israel illustrates the extent to which matters had degenerated (14:30; 15:6, 7, 16, 32). Not all is completely negative, however, for Israel is still termed God's people (16:2) and Jerusalem remains God's special choice (14:21; 15:4).

14:21–30, Rehoboam (Judah). Under Rehoboam, Judah fell further into wrongdoing. The writer mockingly locates Judah's noncentralized worship on every hill and under every tree (v. 23), recalling the description of forbidden Canaanite worship in Deut. 12:2. Verse 24 condemns illicit religious personnel (NRSV: "male temple prostitutes") forbidden by Deut. 23:18. The precise meaning of this expression (lit., "holy ones") is unclear, but it probably includes members of both sexes and does not necessarily imply any sexual activity. These groups were successively removed by Asa (15:12), Jehoshaphat (22:46), and Josiah (2 Kings 23:7).

The invasion by Pharaoh Shishak (Shoshenq I) is also recorded in Egyptian sources (→ Shishak). These records indicate that Shishak attacked Israel as well as Judah, doubtlessly in an attempt to restore Egypt's earlier dominance in Palestine. The writer hints that this attack and the resulting loss of Temple treasure came about because of Rehoboam's sin.

15:1–24, Abijam and Asa (Judah). Abijam continued Rehoboam's sin. Nevertheless, God's eternal covenant with David endured (15:4–5; the story of David and Uriah is found in 2 Sam. 11). In comparison with Abijam and the kings of Israel, Asa was a model of obedience. His heart was true to God, in contrast to Solomon, whose had not been (cf. 11:4). Asa undid some of the religious improprieties introduced by Rehoboam (cf. vv. 12–13; 14:23–24) and adorned the Temple with rich donations. Although the office of "queen mother" was an important one in Judah (cf. 2:19), Asa removed Maacah from this position because of her devotion to the goddess Asherah. She may have actually been his grandmother rather than his mother (cf. vv. 2, 10).

Relations with Israel remained hostile, although Asa was able to bring the fighting to a decisive conclusion. Baasha's fortification of Ramah threatened the security of Jerusalem. Asa paid out some of the gifts just given to the Temple to persuade Ben-hadad, the ruler of Aram, to invade Israel (vv. 18–21; cf. v. 15). The Arameans captured extensive territory along Israel's eastern and northern borders (v. 20). This permitted Judah to solidify its zone of control farther north of Jerusalem. The writer may intend to present Asa's covenant with Ben-hadad and his demand for forced labor as a negative analogy to Solomon's covenant with Hiram and the forced labor that resulted from it (5:1–18).

15:25–16:7, Nadab and Baasha (Israel). The narrative backtracks to pick up the two Israelite kings who reigned during the time of Asa. This structural practice emphasizes that the story of these two kingdoms is really the history of a single people under God. The annihilation of the dynasty of Jeroboam (v. 29) fulfilled Ahijah's prophetic prediction (14:10). In his attempts to found a replacement dynasty, Baasha served paradoxically both as an agent of the prophetic word (15:29) and as one of its victims (16:2–4, 7).

16:8–20, Elah and Zimri (Israel). The dynastic disorder continued as Baasha's son was soon overthrown. As ranking military officers, Zimri and Omri were both well placed for conspiracy. Omri as commander of the citizen army had the upper hand and the support of his troops. Zimri committed a sensational act of suicide in Tirzah, the capital of the Baasha dynasty

(15:33). The writer emphasizes that this was a fulfillment of a prophetic oracle (16:1–4) and blames Zimri's fate on whatever sins he could have committed in his brief, weeklong rule. Zimri's name became a byword for someone who betrays a master (2 Kings 9:31).

16:21–34, Omri and Ahab (Israel). Chaos in royal succession finally ended when Omri was able to seize the throne and establish a stable dynasty. The role of his rival, Tibni, and the circumstances of Tibni's death remain obscure. Omri's reign apparently did not formally begin until about four years after Zimri overthrew Elah (cf. vv. 15 and 23), so these years may represent a period of struggle between Omri and Tibni. From the perspective of secular history, Omri was a very important Israelite king. He founded a long-lasting, stable dynasty. According to a Moabite source, he seized control of much of Moab (→ Moabite Stone, The). Like David, Omri founded a new capital city, one that was considered to be his personal property by right of purchase (→ Omri; Samaria, City of). That so little is said about him here shows a religiously oriented perspective altogether different from the concerns of modern historians.

The principal narrative focus rests on Ahab, who serves as a flagrant example of the constant sinfulness that led to Israel's destruction as a nation. Like his father, Ahab was an important and successful ruler (→ Ahab). Nevertheless, the writer judges him to be the wickedest king Israel ever had (v. 30). His marriage to the foreign princess Jezebel was no doubt arranged to solidify his father's alliance with the coastal trading city of Sidon. However, the writer treats this marriage as significant because it led to the state-sponsored worship of Baal in Israel. Building an altar and temple for Baal in the new capital city of Samaria probably made political sense to Ahab as a way of unifying a multiethnic kingdom made up of both Israelites and Canaanites. Actually, Jezebel's "Baal" (i.e., "lord") was most likely Melqart, god of her home city, Tyre, rather than the native Canaanite god also designated as Baal (→ Baal). However, such fine points of divine identity meant nothing to the author of Kings, for whom all apostasy was equally appalling.

The fulfillment of a long-standing prophecy concerning Jericho (made in Josh. 6:26) is noted. In this way, the writer reminds readers that the history of the kingdoms of Judah and Israel is part of a greater story of God's relationship with the people, one that extends back to the conquest.

1 Kings 17:1–2 Kings 10:36
Prophets and Kings

In this section, the focus shifts from kings to prophets. The segment 1 Kings 17–2 Kings 1 concentrates on the prophet Elijah, while 2 Kings 2–8 focuses on his successor, Elisha. A series of mostly short narratives recounts their conflicts with the faithless kings of Omri's dynasty (Ahab, Ahaziah, Jehoram). Elijah and Elisha confronted these apostate kings with the consequences of their disobedience. The prophets assailed the way they practiced war (1 Kings 20:31–43; 22:1–40), the social injustices they committed (1 Kings 21), and their apostate religious practices (1 Kings 18; 2 Kings 1).

The writer insists that the Lord's prophets can be victorious over all the malignant powers that stand against life. The words and deeds of Elijah and Elisha overcame drought (1 Kings 18:41–46), hunger (1 Kings 17:8–16; 19:4–8; 2 Kings 4:42–44; 7:1–20), and thirst (2 Kings 2:19–22). This powerful pair triumphed over poverty (2 Kings 4:1–7), infertility (2 Kings 4:11–17), and disease (2 Kings 5:1–19). Even death itself was no match for the authority of God's prophets (1 Kings 17:17–24; 2 Kings 4:18–37).

The stories featuring Elijah reflect a conflict between Israel's Lord and the rival god Baal and between the powers of life and death (→ Elijah). They start with a deadly drought begun at Elijah's command (1 Kings 17:1). The Lord's word overcomes famine and death (17:2–24). The Lord wins a public contest with Baal on Mount Carmel (18:20–40). Only then does rain fall again. Following a retreat from the dangers and frustrations of his prophetic office (chap. 19), Elijah rallies and returns to the conflict to confront the impieties of Ahab (chaps. 20–22) and Ahaziah (2 Kings 1).

Elijah turns his prophetic office over to Elisha and is taken up into heaven (2 Kings 2). After performing many spectacular miracles, Elisha's ministry climaxes with his initiation of Jehu's reforming revolution, which brings the dynasty of Omri and Ahab to a bloody end (chaps. 9–10; → Elisha).

In these stories, the Lord remains an active player in the drama of Israel's history. In spite of their sinful kings, God safeguards the people and gives them victory (2 Kings 3:4–27; 6:8–23). The Lord continues to keep the special promise made to David (2 Kings 8:19). Moreover, Israel's God is unmistakably the motive force behind the powerful words and deeds of these two prophets.

17:1–18:46
Elijah Versus Baal

The central organizing theme of this part of Kings is the drought that was commanded by Elijah (17:1) and terminated in the aftermath of the contest between the Lord and Baal on Mount Carmel (18:45). Drought signifies the power of death, but Elijah's power-laden word was able to overcome death and give life in the face of famine and mortal illness (17:14, 21, 24). His word also challenged the disloyalty of Ahab and the people (18:18–19, 21) and called down lightning to

demonstrate that the Lord was absolutely the only God Israel should worship (18:38–39).

Scholars call tales such as these prophet legends. Such prophet legends were originally told to extol the power and greatness of the prophets in general and to instill proper attitudes of awe and respect to them. Here the writer uses them to demonstrate God's miraculous power and to prove that Israel's deity is indeed the true and only God.

17:1–16, Food in the Midst of Famine. Elijah's potent word (v. 1) is a challenge to Ahab's false worship. The writer implies that this drought was intended as a punishment. The drought means that rainfall is under the control of the Lord, not Baal, the supposed storm god. Two parallel stories describe how the prophet was nourished during the ensuing famine (vv. 2–7, 8–16). Each story is initiated by God's direct command to the prophet (vv. 3, 9a) and an implicit command to the agents who will feed him (vv. 4, 9b). Almost passive in the first story, in the second Elijah becomes an active herald of what God plans to do.

The first story begins when God's initial means of support for the prophet comes to an end when the brook dries up because of the drought (v. 7). Because Zarephath was a Phoenician city, Elijah was trespassing on Baal's home territory (→ Zarephath). Baal's sponsor, Jezebel, was from nearby Sidon (16:31). Widows without the economic support of a father or older son could easily be reduced to poverty. By means of her own poignant description of how she will prepare and serve an inadequate final meal (v. 12), the story presents the widow as a completely unlikely source of support for the prophet. Miracle stories sometimes contain tests of faith (cf. Naaman in 2 Kings 5:10–14), and she passed her test successfully by agreeing to feed Elijah (vv. 13, 15).

The writer uses this tale as a preamble for the coming battle between Baal and the Lord on Mount Carmel. The miracle is to continue until rain falls (v. 14), which points forward to the climactic resolution of the drought plot in 18:45. It is Israel's Lord, and not Baal, who provides sustenance.

17:17–24, Life in the Midst of Death. Here Elijah is not merely a messenger of the Lord's word, but takes an active role as one who prays effectively and acts decisively to bring life. This story has a double movement. The woman moves from hostility against the prophet to belief in his word, while her son moves from death to life. The plot action moves from an interchange between the mother and Elijah (vv. 18–19) to a private scene between God and Elijah in the prophet's upper room (vv. 20–22). It then moves back downstairs to a closing scene with the mother (vv. 23–24). Elijah "took him up" (v. 19), "brought him down," and "gave him to his mother" (v. 23).

The woman's initial reaction (v. 18) assumes that the prophet's presence has attracted unwanted divine attention to some previously overlooked sin. Elijah's actions seem to reflect an almost magical transference of life energy from his body to that of the boy. Yet the emphasis is more on the power of prophetic prayer (vv. 21b–22) than on magical technique. The woman's confession validates Elijah's prediction of drought (v. 1) for readers. Like the previous story, this narrative functions as a prelude to the climactic battle between Baal and the Lord in chap. 18. It asserts that the Lord—not Baal—is the God who gives life.

18:1–20, Elijah Confronts Ahab. Three dialogues (vv. 5, 7–16, 17–19) provide background for the impending competition between Baal and the Lord on Mount Carmel. Readers learn about the seriousness of the drought, the danger to the Lord's prophets, the hostility between Elijah and Ahab, and the peril in which apostate Israel finds itself. The Lord, who has caused this three-year drought (17:1), now announces the coming of rain (v. 1). Its arrival will demonstrate that the supposed rain god Baal is powerless.

The divine announcement and command of v. 1 set up the direction of the unfolding plot. However, dramatic tension is quickly created by a delay in bringing Elijah and Ahab together (vv. 2–16). Obadiah objects three times to Elijah's commission out of a well-justified fear for his life (vv. 8–9, 11–12, 14). The feasibility of Elijah being transported away by the Lord's spirit (v. 12; cf. 2 Kings 2:16) emphasizes the power and legitimacy of his prophetic office.

When they finally meet, Ahab accuses Elijah of being a "troubler" of Israel. This word describes someone who has brought the nation into a state of religious interdiction or taboo as evidenced by the drought (cf. Achan in Josh. 7:25). However, Elijah insists that it is really Ahab who has put Israel into this dangerous situation. He is the one who has broken Israel's relationship with God.

18:21–40, The Contest: The Lord Is God! Verses 21–24 prepare the groundwork for the contest. Elijah's ultimatum to choose between gods was a demand unique to Israel's jealous God (cf. 14:22; 2 Kings 19:15, 19). The challenge to produce fire from heaven was an appropriate one. As a storm god, Baal ought to have been able to strike the altar with lightning. Yet fire from the sky was something one might expect from the Lord as well (Gen. 19:24; Exod. 9:23–24; 2 Kings 1:10).

The Baal prophets get a clear advantage. They go first, giving them a chance to achieve a preemptive victory. Their preparations and prayers are brief, but their ritual activity is intense (vv. 27, 28–29). They perform a characteristic limping or skipping ritual dance (v. 26; the same verb is used ironically in v. 21). Elijah uses

mocking humor to diminish Baal in the eyes of readers (v. 27). He may be taunting the Baal prophets with their mythological belief that Baal needed to be awakened from death in order to bring on the rainy season. In a mourning ritual for the supposedly dead Baal, they gash themselves to attract their god's attention and prove their earnestness. Their futile frenzy goes on for hours, from noon to the usual time of evening sacrifice (vv. 26, 29).

The narrative reaches its climax as the Lord's wonderful act and its consequences are described (vv. 30–40). However, Elijah's deliberate preparations and prayer delay the narrative and build dramatic tension before this eagerly anticipated climax. He behaves in stark contrast to the prophets of Baal. His preparations are thorough, and some are intended to make the miracle even more wonderful. Twelve stones (v. 31) and twelve jars of water (vv. 33–34) symbolically recall Israel's tribal heritage. Elijah's prayer is dignified and proper, invoking the memory of Israel's ancestors. It makes clear what is at stake (vv. 36–37).

In contrast to the dancing and slashing prophets of Baal, Elijah himself does not act. The Lord does it all. The clear sky signals that this descending fire is no ordinary lightning. Whatever can vaporize even stone can be nothing other than a divine wonder. The converted people respond with a repeated acclamation of faith (v. 39). The prophets of Baal are slaughtered in accordance with Deut. 13:13–15. This action counterbalances Jezebel's earlier murder of the Lord's prophets (vv. 4, 13).

18:41–46, The Lord Sends Rain. God's earlier proclamation of imminent rain (v. 1) is realized. Indeed, Elijah suggests a celebration even before there is a cloud in the sky (v. 41). He then assumes a strange posture, possibly that of concentrated prayer. Elijah is able to forecast the result accurately and warns Ahab to flee even before the rain begins. Charged with superhuman vitality by the agency of the Lord's spirit, the prophet runs the 17 miles (26 kilometers) to Jezreel at chariot speed. Once again the writer uses a tale of superhuman prophetic powers to celebrate the authority of the prophetic word.

19:1–22:53
Elijah Versus Ahab and Jezebel

After retreating to Mount Horeb and being assigned a new set of prophetic tasks, Elijah acquires Elisha as a follower (chap. 19). The prophet aids Ahab in his wars (20:1–34). However, Ahab is condemned for failing to follow the ancient practices of the holy war (20:35–43) and for an act of juridical murder (chap. 21). As punishment, the Lord arranges for Ahab to die in battle (chap. 22). The writer uses these stories to illustrate the principle that the Lord readily punished kings who committed wickedness and announced these punishments beforehand through the prophets.

Chaps. 20 and 22 report stories of Israel's military struggles against Aram. However, there is a historical problem. According to trustworthy Assyrian sources, Ahab was actually an ally of Damascus, whose king at the time was apparently Hadadezer, not Ben-hadad (→ Ben-hadad). For this reason, some scholars have assigned the narratives about Israel's wars with Aram to a time several generations later than Ahab's reign. They point out that these stories often speak of an unnamed "king of Israel" (e.g., 20:4), suggesting that Ahab was not the king originally involved. Although this conclusion is probably correct historically, the author of Kings was more likely to be confused about this point than intentionally inaccurate. In any case, the writer was certainly more interested in theological truth than in precise historical accuracy.

19:1–18, Elijah Retreats to Mount Horeb. Threatened by Jezebel's retaliation, Elijah seeks to renounce his prophetic office. However, God insists that he carry on. Elijah flees first to Beersheba (v. 3), then to the wilderness (v. 4). As a "burned out" prophet, Elijah seeks to die, but instead God miraculously feeds him and converts his flight into a journey to Mount Horeb (another name for Sinai; vv. 7–8).

Ensconced in his cave, Elijah sets forth his complaint (v. 10). The Lord seeks to counter his melancholy despair by providing an imposing experience of the divine. The Lord passes by. Wind, earthquake, and fire were traditional means of the Lord's self-revelation (e.g., Ps. 18:7–15), but in this case the Lord is not directly present in any of these phenomena. Following these imposing but empty displays of power comes a quieter interval (NJPS: "a soft murmuring sound"; NRSV: "a sound of sheer silence"). When Elijah hears this hush, he steps forth. However, an exact repetition of the earlier divine question and his petulant answer (vv. 9b–10, 13b–14) signals that the Lord's passing by has made no difference in Elijah's despondency. Only God's new commission to a new set of tasks can move Elijah off dead center.

God's commission to Elijah (vv. 15–17) organizes and drives the narrative action through 2 Kings 13. Elijah will adopt Elisha as successor in the next few verses, and this choice will be confirmed in 2 Kings 2. Elijah's responsibility to designate Hazael as the new king of Aram and Jehu as a reforming king over Israel would be fulfilled in due time by Elisha (2 Kings 8:7–15; 9:1–13). These three acts will lead in turn to a threefold violent purge of wayward Israel. Hazael's armed attacks will coordinate with Jehu's ruthless rebellion and Elisha's powerful words to cleanse the nation. However, a remnant of the faithful will survive (v. 18). With this assurance, God rebuts Elijah's earlier complaint

that he is the only remaining worshiper of the Lord (vv. 10, 14). Kissing the image of a god was an act of devotion and worship (cf. Hos. 13:2).

19:19–21, Elisha Accompanies Elijah. The cloak of vv. 13, 19 will reappear in the story of the shift of prophetic office from Elijah to Elisha (2 Kings 2:8, 13–14). Elijah's ambiguous response to Elisha's natural request of v. 20 signals to readers that it is not yet time for Elisha to succeed him. Yet Elisha does perform a symbolic act of sacrifice that indicates a conclusive break with his past life (v. 21) and then follows Elijah.

20:1–22, Israel's First Defeat of Ben-hadad. In the context of an attack on Samaria and the enemy king's arrogant demands, an unnamed prophet delivers a promise of success and tactical instructions. An Israelite victory gives temporary respite. Elijah himself is not present in this narrative.

Verse 1 introduces the siege as the main narrative problem. Verses 2–11 add further complications in the form of failed surrender negotiations that deteriorate into an exchange of insults. Ben-hadad initially suggests the standard formula of vassal submission, and Ahab accepts in principle (vv. 3–4, 7). Then Ben-hadad pushes the matter too far. He demands actual possession of what was theoretically his as Ahab's overlord (v. 5). He even insists on imposing the humiliation of a palace-wide search and seizure operation (v. 6). With the threat of v. 10, Ben-hadad engages in a bit of psychological warfare. Ahab's answer of v. 11 must have been a cautionary popular proverb (cf. "Don't count your chickens before they hatch").

Verses 12–15 describe battle preparations. The appearance of a prophet indicates that this is to be a holy war fought according to Israel's ancient tradition. Speaking for the Lord, the prophet offers tactical guidance and a formula promising success. Typically, the purpose of victory is that God might be known as Lord (v. 13). The battle itself is portrayed in vv. 16–20. These verses shift back and forth from the perspective of Israel to that of the enemy. The narrative seeks to put Ahab into a positive light in contrast to the insulting, drunken, heedless Ben-hadad. It serves chiefly as background and introduction to the story that follows, for Ben-hadad escapes, but v. 22 makes it clear that there is more to come.

20:23–43, Israel's Second Defeat of Ben-hadad. Ben-hadad initiates this second battle with an equal army and an improved command structure (vv. 24–25). Israel is badly outnumbered (v. 27). However, this time the insult is directed not just against Ahab, but against the Lord! The enemy has fatally misunderstood the situation. The Lord is not a god limited only to the hill country (vv. 23, 28). Given the Lord's association with holy mountains and the concentration of Israel's strength in the highlands, however, the enemy's opinion may not have been uncommon.

Again, this action is described as a holy war in unmistakable terms. Another anonymous prophet gives assurance of victory. The wall of Aphek falls on the enemy, reminding readers of what happened long ago to Jericho (v. 30; cf. Josh. 6). As before, the battle is fought and won in order that God might be known as the Lord (v. 28, cf. v. 13). This time Ben-hadad, who had escaped before, is trapped.

Now the negotiating positions are reversed (vv. 32–33). Sackcloth is put on instead of armor (cf. v. 11). Sackcloth was a sign of remorseful humility, while the ropes may indicate captivity and servitude. Ben-hadad's envoys use the vassal language of "your servant," but Ahab responds with "brother," the typical language for a treaty partner of equal status (9:13). Ben-hadad approaches in a chariot as an equal and the two brother kings negotiate a mutually profitable agreement. However, this battle had been fought as a holy war, and the code of holy war demanded the application of the age-old, ruthless practice of devoting the enemy to destruction (see Deut. 20:16–18; → Ban).

A prophetic denunciation of Ahab points forward to his upcoming death in chap. 22. The preliminary incident with the disobedient prophet (vv. 35–36) provides readers with interpretive guidance for what will follow. Perhaps it is outrageous to hit a fellow prophet (or to slay a fellow king), but the consequences of disobeying God can be fatal. The bandage both disguises the prophet and provides support for the story that he has just been in battle (v. 38). The disguised prophet tells Ahab a fictitious story that causes the king to pronounce judgment on himself (vv. 39–40; cf. Nathan and David in 2 Sam. 12:1–4). The compensation of a thousand talents is ridiculously excessive (cf. 2 Kings 15:19), but overstatement is part of the style of parables. The point is that, in agreeing to what might seem to be a reasonable understanding between brother kings, Ahab has in fact violated the holy war ban and consequently will forfeit his own life.

21:1–29, Naboth's Vineyard. This narrative explores what happens when royal plans and claims come into collision with the traditional rights of an Israelite citizen. Although Ahab is the center of attention, Jezebel is the primary actor. Ahab's proposal to convert Naboth's vineyard in Jezreel into a vegetable garden may echo the common image of Israel as a vineyard (Isa. 5:1–7). There is no royal pressure at first; the offer is a reasonable and fair one. However, by an oath stressing that it is his ancestral inheritance, Naboth blocks any possibility of purchase (v. 3). The sale of family territory was discouraged in Israel and even prevented in certain legal traditions (cf. Lev. 25:23). Jezebel takes over authority in the shape of the royal seal. The two witnesses required by Israelite legal custom (Deut. 17:6–7) ap-

parently distort Naboth's oath in v. 3 into treason and a blasphemous curse.

The implicit narrative condemnation of Ahab and Jezebel in vv. 1–16 is repeated by an expanded prophetic condemnation in vv. 17–29. Two communications from God to Elijah (vv. 17–19, 28–29) bracket the prophet's direct confrontation with Ahab. God's judgment on Ahab as an individual is extended to involve his entire family. It is coordinated with the formulas of judgment that have already consumed the families of Jeroboam and Baasha (vv. 21–22, 24; cf. 14:10–11; 16:3–4). However, Ahab's repentance leads to a temporary stay of execution (vv. 27–29). This means that the delayed disaster will fall on Ahab's second son, Jehoram (2 Kings 10:17). Although v. 19 implies that Ahab's death will happen in Jezreel, 22:38 will locate it in the city of Samaria. Jezebel's predicted doom (v. 23) will take place in 9:36. The loss of a body before burial was a calamity viewed with horror in the ancient world (vv. 23–24).

22:1–28, The Prophecy of Micaiah. This section begins as the first part of a battle report presenting the background for Ahab's death (vv. 1–6). Ramoth-gilead, a crossroads city critical to Israel's control of territory east of the Jordan, had fallen into enemy hands. A prophetic word predicts success in regaining it, using a formula similar to that which had forecast two previous triumphs over Aram (v. 6; cf. 20:13, 28). However, Jehoshaphat's request for a confirming oracle redirects the narrative into a complex exploration of the enigmatic question of truth and falsity in the prophetic word.

While Micaiah is being sought, the prophets repeat and intensify their prediction, and one Zedekiah performs a symbolic act using horns (vv. 11–12). Such prophetic acts were understood to have the power to initiate the events they predicted. At first, Micaiah simply answers the same question with the same positive response (vv. 6, 15), but from previous experience (v. 8), Ahab recognizes that Micaiah's uncharacteristically positive message is problematic (v. 16). This word is apparently what the Lord has given him to speak (v. 14), but is it the truth?

Micaiah then reports two prophetic visions. The first (v. 17) implies Ahab's death, for the shepherd was a common ancient image for the king (2 Sam. 5:2). Micaiah's second vision relates his experience in the throne room of the Lord (vv. 19–22). What he experiences there is similar to what is described in Isa. 6:1–8. His vision vouches for the authenticity of his prophecy. At the same time it explains the otherwise mystifying disagreement between Micaiah and the other prophets. The assumption shared by both parties is that an outside spirit inspires all prophecy. Zedekiah claims inspiration from the Lord's spirit and so concludes that Micaiah must be lying (v. 24). But Micaiah's vision makes it clear that his four hundred rivals are not intentionally false prophets, for they are both inspired and deceived by a spirit, albeit a lying one. They are instruments in God's plan to entice Ahab to his death.

Remembering what happened to Ben-hadad (20:30) clarifies the meaning of the threat directed against Zedekiah (v. 25). Ahab may be intending to weaken the force of Micaiah's word by imprisoning and starving him. In any case, readers hear nothing further concerning the fate of either prophet. This first part of the battle story ends with a final warning to Ahab (v. 28). In the end, both the lying word from God and the true word from God advance God's plan. Ahab does go up to Ramoth-gilead in accordance with the oracle of his own prophets, but he does so in disguise, futilely attempting to evade the death foretold by Micaiah.

22:29–40, Ahab Dies in Battle. Ahab seeks in vain to block Micaiah's word, endangering his vassal Jehoshaphat in the process. However, a haphazard arrow shot into a weak spot in his armor (v. 34) undoes his careful precautions. The theme of deception continues as Ahab's wound is concealed in order to prevent panic in the army (v. 35). What happens with regard to the bloody chariot (v. 38) only partially fulfills the prediction of 21:19. The reference to prostitutes is unexpected and puzzling, but is obviously intended to add to the shame of Ahab's death. Although Ahab's exploits were impressive (v. 39), the judgment of the author of Kings was that his evil was unprecedented (16:30). The "ivory house" points to the luxury of furniture inlaid with ivory uncovered at Samaria (→ Samaria, City of).

22:41–53, Jehoshaphat (Judah) and Ahaziah (Israel). Jehoshaphat paralleled the reforms of Asa in eliminating certain forbidden Temple personnel (v. 46; 15:12). Nonetheless, his policies are presented as a stunted and failed attempt to emulate Solomon's great success with foreign trade (vv. 48–49). In contrast to pious Jehoshaphat, who walked in the ways of his father, Asa, Ahaziah was predictably corrupt, serving Baal and walking in the ways of Ahab, Jezebel, and Jeroboam. He will meet his deserved end in the next chapter.

2 Kings 1:1–2:18
The Conclusion of Elijah's Ministry

The traditional prophetic sources used by the author connected the prophetic exploits of Elisha to those of Elijah. Elijah concludes his ministry with one last confrontation with the house of Ahab over the issue of fidelity to the Lord and prophetic authority (chap. 1). The twin aims of the narrative recounting Elijah's ascent to heaven (chap. 2) are to glorify Elijah as a great

religious hero and to prove that Elisha was his authorized and worthy successor. The motif of "heavenly fire" (e.g., 1:10; 2:11) links these two stories and points readers back to Elijah's highest point of triumph in 1 Kings 18:38.

1:1–18, Elijah Versus Ahaziah. Ahaziah dares to inquire of a foreign god, and this leads to his death as predicted by Elijah's word. Much of the interest in this story stems from the middle section describing repeated efforts to get Elijah down off his mountain. Baal-zebub (v. 2; "lord of the flies") may be a mocking parody on the more noble title, Baal-zebul ("Prince Baal"; → Baal-zebub). The Lord's angel (Heb., "messenger") commands Elijah to short-circuit the king's messengers with an oracle predicting his death. Elijah's rhetorical question (v. 3; "Is there no God in Israel?") will be answered by fire from heaven and finally by the king's death. The menacing prophetic message for Ahaziah is repeated three times (vv. 4, 6, 16). Elijah is easily recognizable either because he wears a hairy garment or because he has a hairy appearance (v. 8).

The three encounters between the prophet and the king's captains introduce dramatic delay. The first two captains speak brusquely with direct imperatives (vv. 9, 11). The two expressions "man of God" and "fire of God" in v. 12 are similar in Hebrew and form a wordplay. The last captain uses the sort of polite address proper for an honored person (vv. 13–14). The angel of v. 3 returns to the story, and Elijah obeys it rather than the king's command. This time instead of fire coming down, the prophet himself comes down (v. 15). The narrative concludes with Elijah's direct delivery of the message and a notice of its fulfillment.

This story was most likely originally told to celebrate the special protection and awesome power enjoyed by prophets. It encouraged its hearers to treat prophets with respect. The author of Kings employed it to illustrate the depth of Ahaziah's apostasy and his well-deserved punishment. Readers are warned not to inquire of foreign gods. The chronological note of v. 17 conflicts with that of 3:1, probably reflecting inconsistencies in the author's sources.

2:1–18, Elisha Inherits Elijah's Mantle. The author slots this mysterious event into the structure of Kings so that it transpires apart from the period of any king. It takes place in an in-between time, for Ahaziah and Jeroboam are both dead and the reign of Jehoram of Israel does not start until 3:1.

Geography shapes the plot to a degree. The route of the action goes from Bethel to Jericho and then across the Jordan. After Elijah has vanished, Elisha reverses this direction back across the Jordan to Jericho and then eventually to Bethel (in v. 23). A second pattern of organization turns on whether Elisha will actually succeed Elijah. Elisha needs to pass certain tests to do so. He passes the test of loyalty by sticking close to Elijah on his roundabout journey (vv. 2, 4, 6). However, the critical test is whether Elisha will be able to "see" Elijah as he ascends (v. 10), and he passes this test as well (v. 12). Although the fiery chariot separates the two, Elisha can still watch and see. He tears his clothes as a sign of bereavement. The climactic focus is reached in v. 15: the spirit of Elijah has indeed passed to Elisha.

What will happen to Elijah is revealed immediately in v. 1. The characters in the story also know what will happen (vv. 3, 5), but not where or when. The real question is how this event will take place and what it will mean for Elisha. Crossing the Jordan on dry ground (v. 8) echoes the events of the Exodus and conquest (Exod. 14:21; Josh. 3:17). In asking for a double share, Elisha is requesting the inheritance of the firstborn son, who received twice as much as the other heirs (v. 9; cf. Deut. 21:15–17). Acclaiming Elijah as the "chariots and riders" of Israel (v. 12) means that he has been the equivalent to those effective weapons all too frequently deployed by the enemy. The notion that the prophet represents the invisible forces that protect Israel will return in various ways in the upcoming narratives about Elisha (6:15–17; 7:6–7; 13:14–21).

Elisha shows he is indeed the true successor by repeating the miracle of v. 8 in vv. 13–14. Elijah's mantle had been a token of Elisha's initial call to service and so now serves as a reminder to readers of the older prophet's unfinished tasks (1 Kings 19:15–16, 19). The other prophets are aware of Elijah's penchant for supernatural journeys (v. 16; 1 Kings 18:12). Their fruitless search confirms the complete transfer of Elijah's authority to Elisha.

Originally this tale inculcated awe and respect for Elijah and supported the authority of the prophets who came after him. The writer of Kings used it to authorize Elisha's right to succeed to Elijah's office and complete his tasks. Elijah's mysterious departure into heaven persuaded later generations to suppose that he would someday return (Mal. 4:5).

2:19–8:29
The Career of Elisha

A collection of traditional folktales enhances Elisha's authority and reputation. Like his predecessor, he performs miracles of nurture (2:19–22; 4:1–7, 38–44; 8:1–6) and restoration (4:8–37; 5:1–27). He also takes a predictive and protective role in military campaigns (3:4–27; 6:8–7:20) and becomes involved in political intrigue (8:7–15). Some of his miracles may sound intolerant or trivial to modern readers (2:23–24; 6:1–7 in particular), but would have been taken in stride by the ancient audience as clear evidence of the prophet's dignity and authority.

Unlike Elijah, who is presented as something of a lone maverick, Elisha appears from time to time as the leader of a communal band of prophets (4:1, 38; 6:1).

The members of this company seem to have married and engaged in secular life (4:1), but also had a meeting house of some sort (6:1–2) and sometimes gathered for meals (4:38–44). Elisha was associated with the venerable ecstatic tradition of Israelite prophecy (cf. 1 Sam. 10:5–6, 9–13), using music to induce a prophetic trance (3:15) and engaging in quasi-magical performances (2:21; 4:34, 41; 6:6).

2:19–25, Two Deeds of Prophetic Power. These popular folktales were told to enhance the reputation of prophets and increase respect for the prophetic word and office. The author includes them to prove that Elisha was just as powerful a prophet as Elijah had been. Elisha's first word (v. 21) takes the shape of an effective incantation to promote life and fertility. His second word is a potent curse (v. 24) that teaches readers that God's true prophet is not to be dishonored. Perhaps parents once used this as a cautionary tale to scare children into respect for their elders! The boys apparently mock the prophetic custom of shaving some sort of tonsure in the hair. Forty-two (six times seven) seems to have been a conventional number for casualties (cf. 10:14; Judg. 12:6).

3:1–27, War with Moab. For most of its course, this narrative tells of a typical holy war. The Lord grants victory thorough a miracle. God provides needed water for the army, but this water also becomes a trap that lures the enemy into destruction. Yet the very last verse twists things around, so that Israel and Judah must withdraw in the face of some sort of cryptic "wrath."

Jehoram of Israel may have achieved admirable reforms (v. 2), but the writer continues to be chiefly concerned about the sin of noncentral sacrifice (v. 3). The narrative prefers Jehoshaphat, who properly insists on prophetic guidance (v. 11). It is for his sake that Elisha supports the military operation (v. 14). Jehoram's faith is more ambiguous; he seems convinced of God's power, but not of God's benevolence (vv. 10, 13). Somewhat confusingly, this king of Israel and an overlapping king of Judah shared the name Jehoram (→ Jehoram). The historical figure of Mesha, king of Moab, is known from an ancient inscription erected by him (→ Moabite Stone, The).

The rebellion of Moab meant a loss of tribute for Israel (v. 4). Jehoshaphat of Judah joins the campaign as Jehoram's deferential vassal (v. 7). The march south and then east through the wilderness of Edom was intended to attack Moab at a weak spot, but leads to the complication of a water shortage. Fortunately, Elisha is available to provide guidance. Reference to the act of pouring water (v. 11) authenticates his prophetic status by indicating that he had formerly been Elijah's close personal servant. The inspiring influence of music was a feature of early prophecy (v. 15; cf. 1 Sam. 10:5–6).

God's double promise of water and victory is fulfilled by a single miracle. The desperate state of the Moabites is demonstrated by their total muster (v. 21). They misinterpret God's miracle for Israel as evidence of an easy victory. The writer describes the course of battle by alternating between the perspectives of Moab and Israel. Verses 21–23, 26–27a tell the story from the viewpoint of Moab. Verses 24–25 and the climactic v. 27b depict the perspective of Israel. Paradoxically, Israel's prosecution of ruinous total war (vv. 19, 25) would have constituted a violation of Deut. 20:19–20.

In desperation, Mesha performs a human sacrifice, as imperiled kings sometimes did in moments of extreme national crisis (e.g., Ahaz, 16:3; Manasseh, 21:6). The author leaves unexplained the exact nature of the "wrath" that drove off Israel and Judah and saved Moab. Are readers to think of Israel's appalled trepidation at such a drastic deed? Is this the wrath of the Lord? Or does this describe the defense of the city by Moab's own national god, Chemosh? Another possibility is that Mesha's drastic deed inspired his own troops to an enraged and successful counterattack against Israel. The issue is left open for readers to decide. Nevertheless, the story clearly communicates the power of the prophetic word and the forceful involvement of the Lord of hosts (v. 14) in combat. Jehoshaphat's words about Elisha in v. 12 are proved true; the Lord's word is indeed with him.

4:1–7, Reversing Poverty. This passage begins a series of miracle stories intended to enhance Elisha's authority and reputation. The problem is poverty (v. 1) and the solution is enough money to pay off debts and live (v. 7). Slavery for debt was a feature of Israel's legal and social system (Exod. 21:7; Amos 2:6). Paradoxically, the single oil jar that is the sign of the widow's poverty (v. 2) becomes the instrument of her salvation. She is to shut the door because such marvelous happenings require privacy (cf. v. 33).

4:8–37, Raising the Dead. This well-crafted story highlights the assertiveness and self-reliance of the woman who is its central character. Her attitude and behavior drive the unfolding plot. She takes advantage of opportunities (v. 10), but is independent, unwilling to take favors (v. 13). She knows how to behave and speak properly and effectively (vv. 15, 27–28, 37). Most important, she is decisive in crisis. Her husband's failings highlight her virtues. His old age hinders her possibility of having a child (v. 14). He passes the crisis of his son's illness on to her (v. 19). He is disconcerted that she goes to seek out Elisha on an inappropriate day (v. 23).

Verses 8–17 function as a preamble to the main event of the child's death and revival. This prelude discloses both the woman's decisive character and the prophetic power controlled by Elisha. A suitable reward for her good deed is eventually suggested by Elisha's sidekick Gehazi, and it comes to pass exactly as

predicted. However, her objection in v. 16 serves as a premonition that there is more to come in the story.

When her son dies, she is galvanized into action. By putting the child in the prophet's room she hides the death from others (including her husband) and reveals that her plan is already formed. She brushes off her husband's querulous objections and urges haste. Refusing to waste time on Gehazi, she heads directly to the prophet himself and makes her impassioned speech. Half measures involving Gehazi and Elisha's staff introduce an element of dramatic delay. One's staff could be an extension of one's authority (Gen. 38:18) and a tool of miraculous power (Exod. 4:1–4); but in this case nothing happens. Gehazi's failure highlights Elisha's contrasting success. Finally her stubborn tenacity pays off, and Elisha agrees to come.

The door is shut to isolate the miracle from the world of the ordinary (cf. vv. 4–5). Elisha's course of action suggests that he is transferring his life force to the body of the boy. The climax comes with a sevenfold sneeze as a sign of reanimation and returned breath (v. 35). The woman, who had earlier taken hold of the prophet's feet in her desperate plea (v. 27), now falls at his feet in reverence and awe (v. 37). The writer's purpose of glorifying the power of Elisha has been achieved, and her original judgment about him has proven true: he is indeed a "holy man of God" (v. 9).

4:38–44, Feeding the Hungry. The narrative problem of the first of these two stories is poisoned food in a time of famine. The solution is a marvelous deed that purifies the stew so the prophetic fellowship can eat. The problem of the second story is that there are too many hungry mouths and too little food. The solution is a word of the Lord that produces a miraculous multiplication. The leftovers are a narrative sign of abundance.

5:1–27, Healing Naaman the Leper. The wonder of the healing (vv. 1–14), the conversion of Naaman (vv. 15–19a), and the punishment of Gehazi (vv. 19b–27) testify together to the miraculous power of Elisha. Each of these three subjects is focused by a fateful meeting with the prophet (vv. 9–10, 15–19a, 25–27).

The narrative problem is introduced in v. 1. Many types of skin disease were classified as leprosy in Israel. Although it was expected that one would bring a gift to a prophet (1 Sam. 9:7; 1 Kings 14:3), Naaman's offering is enormous beyond belief. Two complications are introduced before the healing can take place. First, there is a comic interlude involving the hapless king of Israel (vv. 6–7). Elisha himself breaks this impasse (v. 8). The next complication is Naaman's attitude. His arrival with horses and chariots asserts his superior status. He expects an impressive audience with the miracle worker and expresses his chauvinistic scorn for Israel's Jordan River. However, the intervention of his servants proves effective, and healing is accomplished (cf. the similar intervention of the servant girl in vv. 2–3).

Now Elisha and Naaman meet face to face, and Naaman's language ("your servant," vv. 15, 17, 18) signifies that he now recognizes his subordinate position. Astoundingly he confesses not just that the Lord is a powerful god, but that the Lord is the only God. His request reflects the common notion that the worship of a god must be anchored to that god's territory (v. 17; cf. Deut. 32:8; Ps. 137:4). Yet Naaman's position in life and his loyalty to his royal master will require some external compromises, to which the prophet gives implicit approval with a noncommittal "*shalom*" (v. 19a).

The final episode exposes Gehazi's impious greed in order to highlight Elisha's noble qualities. His oath in v. 20 stands in direct opposition to that uttered by the prophet (v. 16). Gehazi's breach of faith is made to seem even more squalid by Naaman's contrasting graciousness (v. 23). The prophet's paranormal "second sight" catches Gehazi in his lie, and the prophet berates him with a shopping list of all that two talents of silver could buy (v. 26). The story comes full circle and ends in a satisfying way. Gehazi has gotten just what he deserved, and the leprosy has found a new home so that it cannot return to reinfect Naaman. The words of the little servant girl (v. 3) have proven true, and both readers and Naaman have learned that there is indeed a prophet in Israel (v. 8). The story has attained its goal of extolling Elisha as a miraculous healer.

6:1–7, Making an Ax Head Float. This tale intends to glorify the power of prophets and bring about an attitude of awe regarding Elisha. The man's distress is not exaggerated, for an iron tool would have been quite costly. There are magical elements in Elisha's action. The narrative may consider the stick as a substitute ax handle meant to attract its mate, or perhaps it is a way of inducing the iron to imitate wood in its ability to float.

6:8–23, Stopping Aramean Raiders. This tale opposes the concepts of blindness and sight in order to glorify the power of Elisha. The central problem is that of Aramean raids (cf. 5:2). In the end, these are thwarted by Elisha's intervention (v. 23). The prophet's paranormal insight (v. 9) causes the king of Aram to demand that his officers "go and *see*" where he is (the Heb. of v. 13). Although a frightening force of chariots and infantry is sent to seize him, the powerful prayer of Elisha permits his frightened servant to *see* another sort of horses and chariots (v. 17). These make up the Lord's fiery, protective host, which outnumbers anything the enemy can muster (v. 16). There are two contrasting prayers by Elisha (vv. 18 and 20). The first causes the attacking soldiers to be struck blind. The second restores their sight so they may *see* that they are trapped. When the king of Israel *sees* them (v. 21), he is

dissuaded from killing troops he himself has not captured. This victory is from the hand of the Lord, and a gracious banquet is in order, not an execution.

6:24–7:20, Thwarting Famine in Samaria. This complex story is marked by pathos, ambiguity, and mystery. The primary plot moves from famine to plenty as signaled by the contrasting price reports for foodstuffs before and after the Aramean retreat (6:25; 7:1, 16). Three subplots work together with this primary plot to form a narrative whole. The dreadful tale behind the woman's complaint and the king's reaction to it (6:26–30; cf. Lam. 2:20; 4:10) stress the city's hopeless situation. The captain's disbelief and the consequences he suffers (7:2, 17–20) accentuate the marvel of the miracle. Finally, the amusing incident of the lepers' discovery and the reaction to their news (7:3–5, 8–15) provides a way for the king to discover God's act of salvation. These incidents also invite readers to participate in the contrasting emotions of resignation and joy.

When reading about the terrible conditions in besieged Samaria, the ancient audience may have remembered that Deut. 28:53–57 threatened the people with famine and cannibalism should they prove disobedient. "Dove's dung" (v. 25) may have been the popular name for some sort of food product that resembled pigeon droppings. The point is that the famine has reached an unendurable stage. Jehoram apparently blames Elisha as the Lord's representative (6:31) for the calamity that he assumes to be the Lord's fault (expressed in 6:33 either directly by him or through his messenger). The king seems to be thinking of God's failure to help as Samaria's protector rather than in terms of divine judgment. The confrontation between king and prophet is reported in a confusing way (6:32–33), but both the king's despair and the prophet's uncanny abilities are effectively illustrated. The disbelieving captain refers to the windows of heaven through which rain falls (Gen. 7:11) and from which the wilderness manna descended (Ps. 78:23–24). Elisha's prediction of his coming fate is vague enough to arouse reader interest about how this will take place.

The lepers who remain outside the city are perfectly placed and well motivated to make the wonderful discovery. A flashback (7:6–7) describes the irrational panic that is the most common weapon of the Lord as divine warrior (cf. Exod. 14:24–25; Judg. 7:19–23). The noise that terrifies the enemy is that of the Lord's chariots and horses, the supernatural military force already revealed to readers in 6:17. Complications involving initial disbelief and a plan to confirm the lepers' report introduce dramatic delay before the climax is finally reached in 7:16. A second flashback (7:17–20) underscores the excited reaction of the rescued citizens and hammers home the reality that Elisha's word came true for the doomed captain. The writer has used this traditional story to increase the awe in which readers hold Elisha and to illustrate a typical lack of faith on the part of the king of Israel. It provides a sobering foreshadowing of Samaria's eventual downfall.

8:1–6, Restoring a Widow's Property. This story looks back to the miracle reported in 4:8–37. It testifies that Elisha's fame was so great that it could bless and rescue even when the prophet was not physically present. The woman's economic and legal problems are solved (v. 6). However, this is not the result of some prophetic word or deed, but of the mere act of telling stories about Elisha. This narrative has the effect of further validating all the stories reported about Elisha.

8:7–15, Encouraging Hazael's Coup d'Etat. Contemporary Assyrian sources partially confirm this account by noting that Hazael was "son of a nobody," i.e., a usurper. This narrative describes God's direction of important events by means of a prophetic word that is both truth and lie. One part of Elijah's assignment that had been passed on to Elisha was to anoint Hazael to become king of Aram (1 Kings 19:15). Here, this act of "anointing" takes the form of planting the seeds of rebellion and assassination in Hazael's mind.

Ben-hadad's inquiry serves to bring Elisha and Hazael together. Ben-hadad's enormous present and reference to himself as Elisha's "son" indicate both the prophet's high standing and the king's desperation (v. 9). Elisha responds with an ambiguous dual message: prevarication for delivery to Ben-hadad and a true prediction given to Hazael (v. 10). The message for Ben-hadad is true up to a point. As far as the threat of this particular illness is concerned, he will live, but he will die nonetheless. These words sketch out a classic self-fulfilling prophecy.

The pronoun references in the Hebrew of v. 11 are ambiguous, so that it remains uncertain who is doing the staring and who becomes ashamed. However, vv. 11–12 clearly go on to portray Elisha's pessimistic reaction to the fateful train of events he has just set in motion. He uses the standard language of military atrocity (cf. 15:16; Amos 1:13; Hos. 13:16) to declare that what is good news for Hazael will turn out to be a catastrophe for Israel. The writer used this narrative to emphasize God's control over international events through the prophetic word and to foreshadow the ultimate doom of Israel.

8:16–29, Jehoram and Ahaziah (Judah). Under these two kings the kingdom of Judah joined Israel in its apostasy. Jehoram and Joram are variant spellings of the same name, confusingly shared by this king of Judah and a contemporary king of Israel (cf. 3:1–3; → Jehoram). Jehoram's marriage to a daughter of Ahab (v. 18) had probably been intended to guarantee a

treaty arrangement between his father, Jehoshaphat, and Ahab. This "daughter of Ahab" was most likely Athaliah, the mother of Ahaziah. The writer implies that Jehoram's problems in Edom and with Libnah resulted from his religious apostasy. Jehoram's involvement with the transgressions of Ahab's family is also used as an opportunity to restate an essential theological point: God promised that the monarchy of David's line would continue in Jerusalem permanently (v. 19; cf. 1 Kings 9:25; 15:4). The word usually translated "lamp" signifies "rule" or "dominion."

Verse 26 identifies King Ahaziah's mother, Athaliah, as a "daughter" of Ahab's father, Omri, which many translations take to mean "granddaughter." Ahaziah of Judah was thus a nephew of Joram of Israel. The statement that Ahaziah was also a "son-in-law" to the family of Ahab (v. 27), if taken at face value, would indicate an even more involved familial entanglement of the two royal houses.

Information about the conflict at Ramoth-gilead and Ahaziah's visit to the wounded Joram at Jezreel sets up the background for the following narratives.

9:1–10:36
The Revolution and Reform of Jehu

The rebellious army commander Jehu obliterated the dynasty founded by Omri and established a new one. Jehu's family was to reign for about a hundred years (from the mid 840s to the mid 740s). One consequence of Jehu's bloody purge was to undo Israel's system of international alliances, leaving the country vulnerable to attacks from Aram. Moreover, the Assyrians were on the rise once more, and both Jehu and his grandson Jehoash were forced to pay them tribute.

These two chapters make up a relatively independent literary unity. With the anointing of Jehu, the last of the assignments given to Elijah has now been fulfilled (1 Kings 19:16). Moreover, the prophetic words spoken by Elijah against Ahab and his house now yield their fateful results (9:8–10; cf. 1 Kings 21:21–24). Jehu's ruthless rebellion is presented as God's retribution on Omri's dynasty for the murder of the prophets at the instigation of the present king's mother, Jezebel (9:7; cf. 18:4), but also for the crime committed by Ahab against Naboth (9:25–26).

Jehu's revolution begins encouragingly. He is prophetically commissioned by the Lord's command in the same way David had been (9:6). He exterminates the entire house of Ahab in fulfillment of the Lord's word (9:7–10, 24–26, 36–37; 10:10, 17). He is the agent of God's will (9:22; 10:30). The fanatically devoted Jehonadab son of Rechab champions his reforming program (10:15–16, 23). Jehu suppresses the worship of Baal. His furious zeal (9:20; 10:16) gains for him a dynasty that would rule Israel for four generations (10:30). Taken in its entirety, however, the writer's evaluation of Jehu is ambiguous at best. Although Jehu expunges the worship of Baal from Israel, in the end Israel's overall situation remains precarious. He continues the detestable noncentral sacrifices begun by Jeroboam (10:29, 31). The ultimate result is that Israel's territory is diminished (10:32–33).

9:1–13, Elisha Designates Jehu as King. A traditional designation by prophetic anointing and an enthusiastic acclamation by his troops work together to validate Jehu's claim to be the first king of a new dynasty (1 Sam. 16:3; 1 Kings 1:34). God's commission to Elijah on Mount Horeb (1 Kings 19:16) has prepared readers for Jehu's succession to the kingship. Moreover, Elijah's threat in 1 Kings 21:21–22, 29 had forecast that the demise of the family of Ahab would take place during the reign of one of Ahab's sons. This now turns out to be Joram of Israel, who succeeded his brother Ahaziah (cf. 3:1).

The anointing scene moves from assignment (vv. 1–3) through performance (vv. 4–10) to results (vv. 11–13). A military commander in the field would be well placed to institute a coup (cf. Omri in 1 Kings 16:16). The young prophet's words in vv. 7–10 cross-reference back to 1 Kings 21:21–24. That Jehu hesitates at first to proclaim his new status has a positive effect on readers' opinion of him. Given the almost demented zeal that Jehu will soon display (v. 20), his officers' characterization of typical prophetic behavior as mentally deranged (v. 11) sounds ironic. Jehu's retinue treat him to the traditional acts of royal acclamation (cf. 11:14; 1 Kings 1:34).

9:14–29, Jehu Kills Joram (Israel) and Ahaziah (Judah). Jehu personally assassinates Joram of Israel (v. 24) and commands the murder of Ahaziah of Judah (v. 27). These deaths bring the period of Jehoram of Israel (starting in 3:11) and that of Ahaziah of Judah (beginning in 8:25) to an abrupt, simultaneous end. They also launch the new period of Jehu.

Verses 14–16 remind readers of the background circumstances already set forth in 8:28–29. The paths of the main characters converge at the town of Jezreel. Jehu makes it certain that Joram will remain ignorant of developing events (v. 15b). Dramatic delay, introduced by the successive horsemen sent out by Joram, builds suspense for readers. Does this lone chariot driver bring news from the battlefront? If it is true that he is the commander Jehu himself, the news he brings must be radically important. So the two kings set forth on separate chariots.

The confrontation takes place at a location fraught with significance (v. 21). The repeated question about peace (vv. 18, 19, 22; Heb.: "Is it *shalom?*" "Does all go well?") finally receives a negative answer. This is not a matter of peace or war, but of the lack of a peaceful relationship between God and Israel. The accusation of

harlotry and sorcery made against Jezebel (v. 22) is intended to be taken metaphorically as religious infidelity, not literally (cf. Nah. 3:4). The incident that Jehu remembers in vv. 25–26 is not recounted earlier in Kings, but it does allude in an oblique way to prophecies made by Elijah in 1 Kings 21:19, 21–22. Readers are intended to believe that this unreported event did indeed take place because Bidkar serves as the confirming second witness. The writer reports the death of Ahaziah using only part of the usual formula (v. 28); the matter of his successor to the throne of Judah is left open. A chronological adjustment to 8:25 follows in v. 29.

9:30–37, Jehu Orders Jezebel's Death. Jezebel's attention to her hairdo and makeup communicates both highborn luxury and her disdain for Jehu. Their encounter reproduces a scene commonly represented in the art of the period, that of a woman looking out a window. Usually such portrayals were charged with an atmosphere of sexuality (Song of Sg. 2:9). Her mocking reference to Zimri, the notorious traitor, is entirely apt (v. 31; cf. 1 Kings 16:9–10). Her sarcastic question ("Is it peace?") links her death to Jehu's reforming mission (cf. v. 22). Jehu's commentary on her death cites the earlier oracle of 1 Kings 21:23 and goes on to supplement it (vv. 36–37).

10:1–17, Jehu Slaughters the Family of Ahab. Two further murderous acts serve as narrative milestones on Jehu's way to the capital city of Samaria. The writer seeks to justify Jehu's violent behavior and ensuing reform as a fulfillment of God's will and the prophetic word (vv. 10, 17). The dispatch of letters helps to create narrative tension. Jehu's first letter demoralizes his potential opponents. His second, by means of a gruesome wordplay on "heads" (v. 6), slyly suggests that they murder the royal heirs. In Hebrew as in English, this word can also mean "leaders," but those in charge of Samaria understandably take the word at literal, face value. Seventy is a round number signifying that a large group was killed. Jehu's statement to them in v. 9 is shrewdly cryptic, but communicates clearly that no blame will be placed on either them or Jehu himself. Then follows a fortuitous but deadly encounter with the relatives of Ahaziah, king of Judah (vv. 12–14). Again, the number of victims is conventional (cf. 2:24).

Jehu's deeds are championed by Jehonadab, an influential member (Heb., "son") of a group called the Rechabites. This was apparently a guild of itinerant metal workers. Jeremiah 35:6–7 describes their legendary fidelity to ancestral clan traditions (→ Rechab). Jehonadab's endorsement of Jehu's zeal is intended to gain readers' concurrence, but the political details of what this originally may have meant are lost to us.

10:18–36, Jehu Eliminates the Adherents of Baal. Jehu uses a trick to identify and gather the worshipers of Baal. He speaks cryptically (v. 19; cf. v. 6); "sacrifice" can also indicate a slaughter. The pillar of Baal had been put away by Joram (3:2), but now it is destroyed. The Baal temple in Samaria had been built by Ahab (1 Kings 16:32). Its permanent conversion to a latrine mocks Baal's empty pretensions to be a god.

The history of Jehu concludes with a summary of his reign and an evaluation of his significance (vv. 28–36). An extrabiblical source indicates that he paid tribute to the Assyrian king as a vassal (→ Shalmaneser). In the opinion of the Deuteronomistic author, Jehu's reform did not go nearly far enough. His elimination of Baal did not affect the equally serious problem of Israel's sacrifice to the Lord outside Jerusalem and the abominable calf images at Bethel and Dan. Jehu was conditionally promised the "throne of Israel" just as Solomon had been (v. 30; 1 Kings 2:4), but he failed the test of obedience. The Lord's punishment, in the shape of Hazael's victories, began even during Jehu's lifetime. Scholars suggest that a temporary slackening of pressure from Assyria gave Hazael of Aram a freer hand to attack Israel at this time. The writer's disapproval of Jehu points forward to the termination of his dynasty in 15:12.

2 Kings 11:1–17:41

Hope for Judah, Destruction for Israel

Jehu's purge of the relatives of Ahab led to the death of Ahaziah, king of Judah, who was descended from Ahab on the side of his mother, Athaliah. Athaliah then seized power in Judah and nearly destroyed the royal house of Judah. Eventually a palace coup restored David's family to the throne of Judah, but relations between the two kingdoms remained hostile. This led to an armed conflict between Jehoash of Israel and Amaziah of Judah. Both kingdoms endured a period of weakness and threats from Aram.

Under Jeroboam II (Israel) and Azariah (Judah), the two kingdoms enjoyed a temporary period of recovery and prosperity. However, the threat of Assyrian imperialism became an increasingly serious matter in the latter half of the eighth century. Although Judah managed to retain some degree of independence as a tribute-paying vassal state, Israel eventually fell victim to an Assyrian campaign under Tiglath-pileser III (732 B.C.). Subsequently, an ill-fated attempt at rebellion led to Israel's complete annihilation by the Assyrians in 722.

The author presents these historical events in order to make a theological point. God's attitude toward Israel was patient and forgiving (13:4–5, 23; 14:25–27), but in the end the nation's sins proved to be too much. Israel stubbornly continued to follow the example of

Jeroboam (13:2, 6, 11; 14:24; 15:9, 18, 24, 28). The fall of Israel was a well-deserved punishment from the Lord (17:7–18, 21–23). In contrast, the story of Judah's monarchy remained a mixture of virtue and transgression (12:2–3; 14:3–6; 15:3–4, 34–35; 16:2–4), although the balance would eventually tip in the direction of judgment and destruction (17:19–20).

11:1–12:21
Restoration and Reform in Judah

The coup engineered in Judah by the priest Jehoiada and the ensuing reform of King Jehoash counterbalance Jehu's revolution in Israel, described in chaps. 9–10. Trumpets and popular acclamation accompany each royal anointing (9:12–13; 11:12, 14). In both episodes a wicked queen mother is killed (9:30–37; 11:13–16) and a temple of Baal is destroyed (10:26–27; 11:18). In the end, the Aramean king Hazael threatens each kingdom in spite of these attempts at reform (10:32–33; 12:17–18). As a whole, the story of Joash is viewed more positively than that of Jehu. Jehu's revolution entailed excessive violence; the accession of Joash resulted in only two, clearly necessary, deaths (11:16, 18). Joash was acclaimed publicly and properly by all (11:12), Jehu only secretly by his commanders (9:13). Jehu was wicked because he followed Jeroboam (10:31); Joash was righteous because he followed his mentor, the priest Jehoiada (12:2). Most of all, Jehu was a usurper, a "Zimri," whose dynasty would last only four generations (9:31; 10:30). In contrast, Joash was the legitimate descendant of David, enthroned according to customary procedures (11:12, 14, 19).

11:1–21, The Overthrow of Athaliah. A revolution under the leadership of Jehoiada restored the Davidic dynasty to the throne of Judah. Jehu had killed Judah's King Ahaziah as part of his sweeping obliteration of Ahab's relatives (9:27). Ahaziah's mother, Athaliah, seized the throne of Judah, but her royal claim was illegitimate in the eyes of the writer because she was not descended from David. Instead, she belonged to the apostate royal house of Ahab (cf. 8:18, 26). To emphasize the illicit status of her reign, the writer placed it completely outside the structural system created by the reigns of parallel kings. The period of Jehu was over (10:34–36), but Jehoash of Judah had not yet come to the throne (12:1–2). Athaliah's attempt to eliminate the rest of the Davidic family meant that all hope for a restoration rested on little Joash (alternate spelling: Jehoash). This last scion of David's line lived hidden away by his aunt in the living quarters contained within the Temple, the stronghold of priestly resistance.

The priest Jehoiada uses his control of the Temple and the Temple guard to launch a successful rebellion. The makeup of the guard used in the coup is described in a confusing manner (vv. 5–8), but the main point is that the large force recruited is more than adequate for the task. The writer emphasizes that Joash became king in a lawful and legitimate way through the traditional practice of anointing and popular acclamation. Joash is given some enigmatic but significant object as part of his elevation to the kingship (a testimony? an emblem?). The author probably intends this to be understood as the king's personal scroll of the law like the one described in Deut. 17:18–19.

Verse 13 is told from the queen's perspective. The "people of the land" (v. 14), a politically powerful group of influential rural landowners, support the new regime. Athaliah must die outside the Temple, because ritually unclean bloodshed would endanger its holiness. Jehoiada brokers a three-way covenant involving king, people, and God. This covenant reestablishes both religious and political affinities (v. 17). The "people of the land" go on to obliterate the elements of apostasy previously sponsored by Ahab's family, including a temple of Baal that had not previously been mentioned. The summation of v. 20 recapitulates the main point of v. 16: Athaliah is indeed dead. The city of Jerusalem, which may have been less zealously committed to reform, is at least calm, if not joyful. This chapter intends to persuade readers that the enthronement of Joash was completely legitimate and supported by all loyal elements of the population.

12:1–21, The Reform of Joash (Judah). Joash receives a mixed evaluation (vv. 2–3). The positive aspects of this evaluation are illustrated by the king's care for the Temple. Joash seems to be more enthusiastic about Temple repairs than the priests are. The former procedure (vv. 4–6) gave control of all the money to the priests, who failed to spend a proper portion of it on Temple repairs. In the new arrangement, offerings for repairs are to be specifically kept aside for direct payments to the workers who make repairs. No Temple vessels are to be made from these precious metals (v. 18). Nevertheless, the special prerogatives of the priests also remain protected (v. 16). The author seeks to persuade readers that the new system was effective, honest, and scrupulously correct. In this way, the writer stresses the king's wisdom and piety. Joash's reforms foreshadow the later accomplishments of the outstanding reformer Josiah (cf. 11:17; 23:3; also 12:4–16; 22:4–7).

However, Judah's orthodoxy remains incomplete, for Joash fails to remove the improper high places (12:3). The writer may have intended the startling turn of events reported in vv. 17–21 as an implied reference to divine punishment. Ironically, the king who has put Temple finances on a stable footing must now use the Temple assets to buy off an enemy. In the end Joash is assassinated in a palace coup similar to the one that put him on the throne.

13:1–16:20
More Lessons from History

These chapters quickly cover almost a century. Although Israel remains corrupt, its collapse takes generations. The Lord remains engaged with the kingdom of Israel and protective of it (13:4–5, 23; 14:26–27). By emphasizing this, the author wishes to make it clear that blame for the final catastrophe lies with the people and their kings, not with the Lord. Yet, Israel's situation became increasingly desperate. The resurgence of Assyrian power in the region meant that King Menahem had to pay an enormous vassal tribute (15:19–20). A failed rebellion against Assyria by Pekah led to the loss of major portions of Israel's territory (15:29; 16:5–9). As the end drew near, the kings of Israel were overthrown and replaced rapidly.

Judah's story remains ambiguous and uncertain. Piety is incomplete and successes are mixed. Amaziah follows his father Joash in piety and obeys the law of Deuteronomy (14:3, 6), but loses a foolish war with Israel (vv. 8–14) and is killed by conspirators (v. 19). Azariah reigns for over half a century, but contracts leprosy (15:2, 5). His grandson Ahaz is a singularly enigmatic figure, committing depraved apostasies on the one hand (16:2–4), but also building the Lord a new altar with ambiguous implications (vv. 10–16). In the end, he too is obliged to pay tribute to Assyria as a dependent vassal (v. 8).

13:1–13, Jehoahaz and Jehoash (Israel). In spite of its continuing sin (vv. 2, 6, 11), the continued survival of Israel is due entirely to God's promise and compassion. Israel is delivered by an unnamed savior and by historical events unclear to us (v. 5). Scholars often suggest that the author had in mind the Assyrian king Adad-nirari III (810–783 B.C.), who defeated Israel's enemy Aram in 796. In any case, this pattern of divine punishment, entreaty to the Lord, and deliverance by a divinely appointed savior (vv. 3–5) is comparable to that found in Judges (cf. Judg. 3:7–9). The writer's purpose is to highlight the saving graciousness of God (cf. also v. 23). Nevertheless, Israel's history remains primarily a history of sin. The notorious Asherah, or sacred pole, erected by Ahab (1 Kings 16:33) continues to stand in Samaria (v. 6; cf. 17:16). It serves as an indication that Jehu's attempts at reform were incomplete (2 Kings 10:31).

The name of the successor of Jehoahaz is spelled in two ways (Jehoash and Joash) and is the same as that of the overlapping king of Judah (v. 10; → Joash).

13:14–25, Elisha's Final Wonders. Two popular stories about Elisha's marvelous powers are used to illustrate God's protection of Israel. The first declares that Israel's subsequent victories over Aram were due entirely to the favor of the Lord (v. 25). King Joash of Israel recognizes that, as Israel's chariots and riders (v. 14; cf. 2:12), Elisha's prophetic power is the equivalent of the weapons of Israel's enemies. Joash can maintain only a few real chariots (v. 7). Prophets often engaged in symbolic actions that were thought to have a decisive influence on unfolding events (cf. 1 Kings 22:11). In this case, the flying arrow guarantees victory, but the king's half-hearted participation in striking with the arrows means that Israel's victories will not be decisive.

The following story of resurrection (vv. 20–21) originally demonstrated that the prophet's power continued to be effective for those pilgrims who visited his grave. The writer has included it to illustrate God's commitment to life and God's gracious provision of prophets for Israel's welfare.

Verse 22 moves back in time to consider events during the reign of Jehoahaz. The writer stresses that Israel's survival up to this point was due only to God's loyalty to the covenant with its ancestors (v. 23). Perhaps the writer is thinking of the prayer of Moses in Deut. 9:27. It was never God's wish to destroy Israel (cf. 14:27), but in the end it became unavoidable (cf. 17:20).

14:1–22, Amaziah (Judah). Amaziah's reign exhibits certain parallels to that of his father, Joash (v. 3). His policies led to the loss of Temple treasures (cf. v. 14 and 12:18), and he too died as the result of a conspiracy (cf. v. 19–20; 12:20–21). His careful obedience to the law (v. 6; Deut. 24:16) illustrates the author's positive judgment made in v. 3.

By tracing the genealogy of Jehoash back to Jehu (v. 8) and that of Amaziah back to Jehu's victim Ahaziah (v. 13), the author makes it clear that the conflict between the two kings had deep roots in past hostilities. However, the author also indicates that Amaziah's aggressive moves against Israel proceeded from a foolish conceit caused by his victories against Edom (vv. 7, 10). His folly is disclosed in a fable put into the mouth of Jehoash of Israel (vv. 9–10). In this fable, plants are personified to make a political point (cf. Judg. 9:7–15). The point is that a vulnerable thistle like Amaziah should not imagine itself to be on a par with a lofty cedar such as Jehoash. The victorious Jehoash tore down about 600 feet (200 meters) of the west part of the wall on the north side of Jerusalem, leaving the city vulnerable to further attack. The description of the conspiracy suggests that elements in Jerusalem opposed Ahaziah, probably because of the effects of his ill-fated military policies. However, the population of Judah proper (i.e., outside the capital) supported the enthronement of his son (cf. vv. 19, 21).

14:23–29, Jeroboam II (Israel). Jeroboam was a politically powerful and important king, but the author deals with him only briefly, concentrating largely on his religious significance. In accordance with the

prophetic word, Jeroboam was able to enlarge Israel's territory (or influence) back to the great northern extent of Solomon's realm (vv. 25, 28; 1 Kings 4:21; 8:65). Again, as in 13:3–5, 23, the author emphasizes the Lord's ongoing relationship to Israel and continued acts of deliverance (vv. 26–27). God had no foreordained plan to destroy Israel totally (cf. Deut. 9:14, 29:40). God's gracious favor saved the people in spite of the wickedness of their king.

15:1–7, Azariah (Judah). As with Jeroboam, the coverage given this king is meager in comparison with his actual historical importance. Azariah, who was also called Uzziah (15:13; cf. Isa. 6:1), reigned for half a century and overlapped with six kings of Israel. Because his leprosy was the Lord's doing, readers are invited to consider it as a punishment for his failure to remove the high places. It seems to have led to a coregency (shared reign) with his son Jotham (v. 7).

15:8–22, Zechariah, Shallum, and Menahem (Israel). After a period of relative inactivity, the Assyrians were again pushing westward and southward toward Israel. Israel declined into political chaos and suffered the effects of Assyria's growing international power. Zechariah's death at the hands of the usurper Shallum led to the termination of Jehu's dynasty after the predicted four generations (v. 12; cf. 10:30). Shallum himself was immediately overthrown by Menahem, who is accused of a war crime that Israel typically invoked to condemn its enemies (v. 16; cf. 8:12). By paying a substantial tribute, Menahem became a vassal of "Pul," i.e., the aggressive Tiglath-pileser III (744–727 B.C.; → Tiglath-pileser III). Taxing the wealthy to raise this money (v. 20) could not have been popular with the upper classes.

15:23–38, Pekahiah (Israel), Pekah (Israel), and Jotham (Judah). Apparently, Pekahiah's continuation of the taxation and tribute policies of his father, Menahem, led to his overthrow and replacement by Pekah. The interpretation of "Argob" and "Arieh" in v. 25 is disputed. They may have been people killed along with Pekahiah or perhaps represent a description of where the assassination took place.

Verses 29–30 describe the effects of what biblical scholars call the Syro-Ephraimite war (734–732 B.C.). Israel's new king, Pekah, formed a rebellious alliance with Rezin, king of Damascus (Aram). In order to present a united front against Assyria, they sought to force Judah into their rebellion. Jotham of Judah was the first target of their aggression (v. 37), although his successor, Ahaz, would experience the full impact of this threat (see 16:5–9). Tiglath-pileser III reacted by fighting three annual campaigns in Palestine (734–732), in the end destroying Damascus and defeating Israel. As a result of these victories, Assyria appropriated most of Israel's territory to the north and east and incorporated these regions into its empire as three provinces (v. 29). As one consequence of this catastrophic defeat, Pekah was assassinated by Hoshea, who became Israel's last king. Only the central territory around the capital, Samaria, remained. Characteristically, the author insists that it was actually the Lord who instigated these political events (v. 37).

16:1–20, Ahaz (Judah). The author's evaluation and presentation of Ahaz is mixed. On the one hand, he is denounced sharply for apostasy. Like the past villain Jeroboam and the future villain Manasseh, Ahaz imitated the abhorrent practices of the former inhabitants of the land (v. 3; 21:6; 1 Kings 14:24). Like the people of Israel (17:17) and Manasseh (21:6) he even burned his son as a sacrifice in violation of Deut. 18:10. Ahaz is accused of personally taking part in noncentral sacrifices at the high places, on the hills and under the green trees favored by Jeroboam (1 Kings 14:23) and Israel (2 Kings 17:10). On the other hand, Ahaz built and dedicated a grand new altar of sacrifice in the Jerusalem Temple (vv. 10–16). Although it was patterned on a foreign model, the author appears to present this as a positive move on the part of Ahaz.

What is recorded about Ahaz's foreign relations (vv. 5–9) reflects the circumstances of the Syro-Ephraimite war, which the author has already touched on in 15:29, 37. Rezin, king of Damascus (Aram), had joined with Pekah, king of Israel, in a rebellion against Assyria. Ahaz refused to join this coalition. To neutralize their southern flank, they besieged Jerusalem, intending to replace King Ahaz with a puppet king friendly to their cause. It was perhaps in response to this crisis that Ahaz took the ultimate step of sacrificing his son (v. 3). One effect of this state of affairs was that Edom regained the Red Sea port of Elath from Judah (v. 6). Ahaz took the seemingly reasonable step of sending a large diplomatic present to Tiglath-pileser III and calling for Assyrian aid (vv. 7–8). The language of his message ("servant" and "son") is presented as that of a vassal to an overlord. Kings offers no comment on the wisdom or propriety of Ahaz's move, unlike the prophet Isaiah, who condemned it as a faithless act of apostasy (Isa. 7:1–8:10). Ahaz apparently had to remove much of the bronze from the Temple in order to make up the tribute he sent to Assyria (v. 17). Subsequently, Assyria conquered Damascus (v. 9) and defeated Israel, absorbing a large part of its territory (15:29).

17:1–41
The Destruction of Israel

Catastrophe struck when Hoshea, the last king of Israel, rebelled. The Assyrians captured Samaria, crushed the kingdom, and exiled its population (ca. 722–721 B.C.). Israel's fate comes as no surprise to readers, who have been duly warned by the author's consis-

tently negative judgments on its kings. At the very beginning of the story of the newly independent kingdom of Israel, Ahijah's prophecy to Jeroboam had explicitly predicted its total destruction (1 Kings 14:15–16). In 17:7–41 the author describes in detail the reasons for the fall of Israel. All the past faults of the nation are rehearsed (vv. 7–18, 21–23). Moreover, the foreign settlers in Israel's territory, newly imported by the Assyrian conquerors, behave no better (vv. 24–41). This accusatory commentary also forecasts Judah's continued wicked behavior and hints at its eventual doom (vv. 19–20).

17:1–6, Hoshea (Israel). The chronological information in v. 1 correlates the start of Hoshea's reign with Ahaz of Judah. This is at odds with 15:30, which dates this event in the reign of Ahaz's father, Jotham. It has been suggested that Jotham and Ahaz ruled together in an overlapping coregency. Even though the author states that Hoshea was not as bad as his predecessors (17:2), the commentary that follows declares firmly that the cumulative effect of Israel's wickedness brought disaster (vv. 7–18, 20–23).

Hoshea's diminished kingdom consisted only of the territory surrounding the capital city, Samaria. In hopes of support from Egypt, Hoshea withheld tribute from his Assyrian overlord, Shalmaneser V (→ Shalmaneser). "So" in v. 4 most likely reflects the name of the Egyptian capital of the period (Sais), since no pharaoh by that name is known. After somehow capturing Hoshea, Shalmaneser invaded Israel and besieged Samaria for three years (v. 5; 18:9–10). It is unclear from the historical evidence whether it was Shalmaneser V (727–722 B.C.) or his successor, Sargon II (722–705; → Sargon II), who actually captured Samaria. Assyrian imperial policy used deportation and massive population exchanges to break a subject people's will to resist. Accordingly, Sargon scattered elements of the population of Israel into various obscure and remote places to the north and east and replaced them with foreign settlers (vv. 6, 24; 18:34). The former kingdom of Israel was reorganized into the Assyrian province of Samaria.

17:7–23, Why Israel Fell. The author seeks to justify and explain the fall of Israel and to warn readers to avoid the dangers of any similar misconduct. Israel's two fundamental transgressions were its perpetuation of the noncentral sacrifices of Jeroboam (vv. 21–22) and its worship of alien gods. Israel's obstinacy provoked the Lord's anger (vv. 11, 17–18). The evaluative stance of this section is taken directly from Deuteronomy. Noncentralized sacrifice is forbidden in Deut. 12:2–4 and the worship of the gods of Canaan in Deut. 7:1–5. Worship of the heavenly bodies (v. 17) was a violation of Deut. 17:2–5. Deuteronomy 18:9–12 prohibits the practices described in v. 17. The writer seeks to emphasize the universality of disobedience: "all towns," "every high hill," "all the high places" (vv. 9–11). The people had no excuse, for God had warned them repeatedly by means of the prophets (vv. 13, 23; again "every" and "all").

This review adds some new evaluative perspectives to those used so far in Kings. It is not just Israel's kings who are to blame for this disaster, but also the people as a whole (vv. 7, 9, 22). In the previous stories, the prophets had warned Israel and Judah and announced impending divine judgment, but now the author adds that they called on the nation to repent (v. 13).

The author also deplores the continued disobedience of Judah (v. 19) and prepares readers for the tragic climax of the book of Kings. The ambiguous language of v. 20 at least hints that Judah will share Israel's fate. In the chapters that follow, the Lord's anger will strike out against Judah just as it has against Israel (21:6, 15; 23:19, 26; 24:20; cf. 17:11, 17). Judah will duplicate Israel's refusal to listen (21:9; cf. 17:14, 40), its devotion to idols (21:11, 21; 23:24; cf. 17:12, 15), and its worship of other gods (22:17; cf. 17:7, 35–38).

17:24–41, Half-Pagan Settlers in Israel's Territory. The writer engages in an indirect attack on Israel's transgressions by describing how the pagans imported by Assyria repeated Israel's experience. The story of how they were instructed by a priest from Bethel in order to ward off lion attacks (vv. 24–28) functions as a parody of Israel's catastrophic experience with God's law. These benighted idol worshipers mirrored Israel's former behavior by worshiping the Lord and their own false gods at the same time. The names of their gods probably are given in corrupted form in order to satirize them (vv. 30–31). These foreigners (vv. 29–34a) simply repeated the religious offenses of Israel (vv. 34b–40). They put their idols into the houses of the high places previously constructed by Israel and, like Israel, they appointed improper priests (vv. 29, 32; cf. 1 Kings 12:31). The continued existence of these immigrant groups brings this appalling situation right down to the readers' own day (vv. 34a, 41).

2 Kings 18:1–25:30

Judah Stands Alone

As the story of Israel ends, the author turns to Judah, which now stands alone to work out its fate before God. Virtuous kings (Hezekiah, Josiah) alternate with villainous ones (Manasseh, Josiah's four successors) to produce a mood about Judah's ultimate destiny that shifts between hope and despair. Hezekiah achieves the pinnacle of obedience (chaps. 18–20), but the low point of Manasseh's idolatry follows immediately (chap. 21). At this point, the writer announces Judah's inescapable sentence of death (21:10–15). Even so, readers might still entertain hope, for then good king Josiah comes into view (chaps. 22–23). Josiah's reforms

undo Judah's long-standing apostasy and at first seem to lead to a bright future. However, this turns out not to be the case. A shocking oracle announced by the prophet Huldah makes it clear that Judah is doomed no matter what Josiah chooses to do (22:16–17).

Judah's last four kings presided over a rapid slide into national catastrophe (23:31–25:21). The last grim scene reports defeat and exile (25:1–26). The Babylonians overran Jerusalem. Its king was captured and mutilated, its walls were demolished, and its Temple was plundered and burned. It leaders and notable citizens were put to death or exiled.

The catastrophic ending of Kings may come as a wrenching surprise to unwary readers. God's promise to the family of David (1 Kings 11:36; 15:4; 2 Kings 8:19) might appear to guarantee the unconditional survival of Judah. Moreover, Josiah's correction of all Judah's violations of divine law would seem to ensure the nation's future. Yet in spite of these positive factors, God still chose to punish Judah with defeat and exile. Nonetheless, the author has given readers plenty of warning about this. The possibility of the Temple's destruction was first raised by the Lord in 1 Kings 9:6–9. The writer bluntly asserts that Judah's fall will be a certainty in 2 Kings 17:19–20 (cf. 21:15–19; 23:26–27).

At its very end, the author reports King Jehoiachin's situation as an honored captive in Babylon (25:27–30). Some interpreters have seen this enigmatic notice as a hint of possible hope for a positive future for Judah and the Davidic family.

18:1–20:21
The Piety of Hezekiah

Hezekiah's faithful integrity is underscored by his success even against the invincible Assyrians (18:13–19:37) and his piety in the face of mortal illness (20:1–11). Yet the deep ambiguity of Judah's ultimate fate continues to be an issue. The Lord's miraculous deliverance of Jerusalem from Assyria stands in marked contrast to Isaiah's prediction of an impending triumphant invasion by Babylon (20:12–19).

The fall of Israel meant that the Assyrian border was only a few miles north of Jerusalem. Judah regularly paid tribute like the other small states in the area, although Hezekiah seems to have been implicated in the early stages of a seditious international plot in the year 713 B.C. (cf. Isa. 20). After making extensive defensive preparations (reflected in 18:8; 20:20), Hezekiah eventually did rebel in 701. The Assyrian king Sennacherib (705–681) responded by invading Judah (→ Sennacherib).

Kings tells a wondrous story of God's miraculous rescue of Jerusalem from this attack (esp. 19:35–37). However, this tale is difficult to reconcile with the story told in Sennacherib's own annals. Archaeology and the Assyrian sources make it evident that the Assyrians actually captured a large number of Judah's cities and fortresses, notably Lachish. Although Sennacherib besieged Jerusalem, he did not claim to have conquered it. Nevertheless, Hezekiah had to pay a huge tribute (18:14) in order to bring about an Assyrian withdrawal. Judah also lost some of its territory on the west to states loyal to Assyria.

For early readers, especially those living under Babylonian oppression in the exilic period, the story of Jerusalem's deliverance would have been a summons to continue to put their ultimate trust in God in spite of their present circumstances. They could count on God's sure promises. God had strong motives to save them out of concern for his own reputation (19:19) and his promise to David (19:34). God had the power to control history (19:25–28). A remnant of Judah would certainly survive the present calamity (19:30–31).

18:1–12, The Events of Hezekiah's Reign. Hezekiah receives a highly positive evaluation, unprecedented for any king so far. This is because he was the first king to remove the high places in Judah and centralize all sacrifice in Jerusalem. He was so devout that he even caused the removal of an ancient relic traced back to the traditions of Moses and the wilderness wandering (Num. 21:4–9; → Nehushtan). The writer's theology is that of Deuteronomy. Because Hezekiah obeyed the law of Moses (Deuteronomy), the Lord was with him and he was successful (vv. 6–7). Verses 9–12 go over the events of Israel's fall, already covered in 17:5–8, in order to provide a contrast to Hezekiah's virtue (v. 12) and to furnish the background for Assyria's attack on Judah.

18:13–37, Assyria's Threat. Sennacherib chronicled his conquest of Lachish (vv. 13–14) on impressive palace bas-reliefs in Nineveh (→ Lachish). Kings reports Hezekiah's payment of heavy tribute as something that took place before Sennacherib's armed threat against Jerusalem (vv. 14–16). This order of events implies that Sennacherib took the offered tribute and then treacherously attacked Jerusalem anyway. From the standpoint of actual history, it is much more likely that Hezekiah's great tribute was paid after the siege of Jerusalem had begun in order to save the city from destruction.

The crisis is not immediately resolved. Instead, a long interval of negotiations and reactions serves to delay the narrative climax. The writer uses these to highlight the core theological issue at stake: will Hezekiah trust in the Lord? The exotic titles of the three high-ranking Assyrian emissaries add to the realism of the literary portrayal (v. 17). The Rabshakeh (a high court official, lit., the "chief cupbearer") serves as spokesperson for Sennacherib. The issue of reliance and confidence permeates his speech (repeatedly in vv. 19–22, 24, 30). Do you rely on unreliable Egypt or your own puny forces? Dare you rely on the Lord, seeing that you have torn down the Lord's altars all over

the country (v. 22)? With this last argument, the Rabshakeh offers a negative interpretation of Hezekiah's reforming activity, one probably shared by many of his more traditionally minded subjects. The Assyrian emissary even makes the extraordinary claim that Sennacherib is an agent of the Lord, charged with the mission of destroying Judah (v. 25).

The negotiators for Judah request that secrecy be maintained by conducting the conversation in Aramaic, the language of international diplomacy and trade not widely known among the ordinary people (v. 26). However, the Assyrians are interested in undercutting the morale of the city (v. 27) and so speak directly to the populace in Hebrew in order to undercut their loyalty to their king. The Rabshakeh effectively commits blasphemy by suggesting that the Lord will turn out to be no more capable of delivering Judah than the gods of Assyria's other defeated subjects have been (vv. 33–35). Rather than relying on the Lord, the people should understand that Sennacherib can give them what the Lord apparently cannot: prosperity, life, and a new land (vv. 31–32).

19:1–7, Hezekiah's Reaction. Hezekiah's admirable piety is in stark contrast to the Assyrian king's arrogant blasphemy in mocking the living God (cf. vv. 4, 16, 22). What is probably a popular proverb in v. 3 means that the crisis of Hezekiah's rebellion has come to full term, but Judah is too weak to bring it to completion. Isaiah responds that the Lord has taken offense at Sennacherib's blasphemy and will cause him to return home to his death by means of some sort of rumor. Unwary readers might imagine that the solution to Judah's problem is near at hand, but the writer instead moves on to a second cycle of blasphemous message, response by Hezekiah, and oracle from Isaiah (vv. 8–34).

19:8–19, More Threats and Hezekiah's Prayer. Sennacherib does hear a report, but it turns out not to be the rumor predicted in v. 7. Instead, the Assyrian king sends a letter and again insults the Lord in terms similar to those in 18:33–35. In fact the level of blasphemy is raised further, for now Sennacherib claims that it is God rather than Hezekiah who seeks to deceive the people (v. 10; cf. 18:29).

Hezekiah's Temple prayer (vv. 15–19) is a model of piety and monotheistic faith. It highlights the critical theological issue implicit in the crisis. Any comparison with those nongods the Assyrians have so easily destroyed mocks the living God. There is no resemblance, for the Lord is the creator, the God of all nations, and indeed the only God. Hezekiah argues that the Lord must save Jerusalem to prove to the world that there is no other God but the Lord. Both the theological stakes and the motive proposed for God's action are the same as those announced by Elijah on Mount Carmel (cf. 1 Kings 18:24, 36–37).

19:20–37, The Lord's Answer. Isaiah responds with three oracles. The first (vv. 21–28) scoffs at the arrogant pretensions of the Assyrian king, contrasting the typical boasts of Assyrian royal inscriptions with Sennacherib's impending doom. Verses 25–28 present a theology of history. God has used Assyria as a tool in a grand historical design that goes back to ancient times. Sennacherib, however, has gone too far by arrogantly belittling God. The second oracle (vv. 29–31) offers a sign or visible token of God's promised deliverance. It refers to the time needed to recover from the agricultural devastation of Assyria's invasion. A full cycle of planting and harvesting will finally be possible the year after next. The third oracle (vv. 32–34) unambiguously nullifies all further danger. Jerusalem's security is rooted in God's special relationship to David.

A sensational supernatural occurrence consummates Isaiah's promise (v. 35). In contrast to the mighty power of Hezekiah's God, Sennacherib's ludicrous and fraudulent god cannot even protect him in its own temple. The threat of 19:7 finally comes to pass. The otherwise unknown divine name "Nisroch" is probably a deliberate parody.

20:1–11, Hezekiah's Illness. A prophetic miracle story illustrates Hezekiah's piety and God's favor. It links together the king's recuperation and the Lord's defense of Jerusalem into a single act of divine graciousness (v. 6). Hezekiah confronts his fatal illness with devout prayer, using the spirit and language of the lament psalms. He asserts his own righteousness (cf. Ps. 17:3–5) with sincere tears (v. 5; cf. Ps. 6:6). The Lord's response is prompt, for Isaiah has scarcely left the palace. The Lord's saving actions are founded on the special relationship God has with David and his family (vv. 5, 6).

The request for a sign to serve as a confirmation of God's impending act of restoration is typical of such stories. This miraculous reversal of time (v. 11) correlates with God's grant of fifteen extra years of life. A deity who can countermand the advance of time can easily add to Hezekiah's life span! The shadow was most likely cast on a flight of steps rather than on what we would think of as a sundial. This story would encourage readers of later periods to practice virtue and prayer (vv. 2–3) and to trust that God's power and promise will safeguard their future (vv. 5–6).

20:12–21, Hezekiah's Folly. Contemporary sources about Merodach-baladan indicate that this incident must have taken place before Hezekiah's revolt against Sennacherib. The narrative moves from situation (vv. 12–15) to prophetic oracle (vv. 16–18) to Hezekiah's reaction (v. 19). In some ways it resembles Solomon's warm reception of the Queen of Sheba (1 Kings 10:1–10), but illustrates careless folly instead of royal wisdom. Merodach-baladan, for a time the independent ruler of Babylon, was a successful opponent of

Assyrian imperial power (→ Merodach-baladan). The language of Isaiah's oracle is vague and falls short of predicting outright the fall of Jerusalem and the exile of Judah. Nevertheless, it prevents readers from assuming that any absolute guarantees are implied by God's rescue of Jerusalem from the Assyrians. Readers are to understand that Babylon's eventual triumph over Judah was God's will, not an event beyond God's control. Hezekiah's rejoinder (v. 19) is usually understood as complacent and smug, but the author may have intended to communicate the king's faithful and grateful submission to divine will. Hezekiah's underground water conduit and pool (v. 20) still exist, along with an associated inscription (→ Siloam Inscription).

21:1–26
Manasseh and Amon

Assyrian sources show that Manasseh was a submissive and supportive vassal. The author of Kings presents Manasseh as Hezekiah's complete opposite. He reversed his father's obedient religious policies (21:2–9), provoked the Lord's wrath (v. 15), and led the whole people into sin (v. 16). From this point on, Judah's plunge into catastrophe appears to be unstoppable (vv. 10–15). The writer sets forth Manasseh's sins as the direct cause of Judah's fall (23:12, 26; 24:3). Although King Josiah would dismantle all of Manasseh's apostate acts (23:4–6, 10, 12, 24), the doom of Judah could not be reversed.

21:1–18, The Wickedness of Manasseh. A lengthy catalogue of offenses mushrooms out of the standard evaluation formula for Manasseh. He imitated and even surpassed the wicked behavior of the dispossessed Canaanites and Amorites (vv. 2, 11). He recapitulated most of the significant sins of his predecessors in Judah and even followed the practices of Ahab of Israel (vv. 4–7). His misdeeds match the characteristic sins of Israel as set forth in chap. 17 and unmistakably violate the law of Deuteronomy. Verse 2 correlates with Deut. 12:29–31; 18:9; and 2 Kings 17:7. Verse 3 connects with Deut. 12:2–4; 17:3; and 2 Kings 17:9–10, 16, while v. 6 violates Deut. 18:9–14 and reflects 2 Kings 17:17. As was earlier the case with Israel (2 Kings 17:13), the warnings of God's prophets have no effect (vv. 10–14). Two striking images announce the total and intentional elimination of everyone and everything contained in Jerusalem (v. 13). The city is being surveyed for the destruction that toppled Samaria and the house of Ahab. Exile will empty it and wipe it clean of inhabitants.

21:19–26, Amon. In his brief reign Manasseh's son simply duplicated his father's policies. However, the intervention of the rural elite, the "people of the land," ushered in a better future in the shape of Manasseh's grandson, Josiah.

22:1–23:30
The Incomparable Reforms of Josiah

Momentous international developments occurred during the reign of Josiah that made a new policy of reform and expansion possible. Following the death of Ashurbanipal (668–627 B.C.), Assyria experienced a four-year period of civil conflict that led to its downfall as a world empire. As Assyria decayed, Egypt and Babylon contended for dominance. Egypt supported the declining Assyrians, while Babylon and its allies opposed them. The Assyrian capital, Nineveh, fell in 612, and the last remnants of Assyrian rule were eliminated by a Babylonian victory in 609.

According to Kings, the catalyst for Josiah's reform was the rediscovery of the book of God's law (22:3–11). The details of his reform make it clear that this document closely resembled the core of the present book of Deuteronomy. The unfulfilled demands of the newly recovered law book endangered the nation with the Lord's wrath (v. 13). The prophet Huldah announced that nothing could avert the coming catastrophe (vv. 16–17). In spite of this, Josiah faithfully went ahead with his reform. He made a covenant with the whole people in a renewed commitment to obedience (23:1–3). He extended his reformation both to Judah (vv. 4–14) and into territory in the former kingdom of Israel (vv. 15–20).

Josiah's reform represents the dramatic climax of the story told by Kings. Many of the book's unresolved themes are settled at this point. In obedience to the law book, Josiah eliminates all the "high places" where sacrifice outside of Jerusalem had been practiced (23:8–9). These had been left untouched by generations of Judah's kings. Josiah abolishes apostate worship practices that had persisted since Solomon (vv. 13–14) and eliminates innovations made by the kings of Judah and especially those of Manasseh (vv. 5–7, 10–12). Josiah also resolves another persistent issue by explicitly undoing the "sin of Jeroboam" at Bethel. His demolition of the Bethel altar (vv. 15–18) finally fulfills a prophecy announced back in 1 Kings 13:2. Although Josiah's reform makes no difference whatsoever in the Lord's determination to punish Judah (vv. 26–27), it is still deeply satisfying from a literary standpoint. Josiah's willingness to obey the law without any hope of reward or any motive of earning God's favor is heroic and admirable.

The plot line of Kings takes an abrupt twist when Josiah dies mysteriously at the hand of Pharaoh Neco (23:29). This comes as a jarring shock after Huldah's prophecy that Josiah would be buried "in peace" (22:18–20).

22:1–20, Discovery of the Law Book. Two royal commands (vv. 3, 12) lead to the discovery of the book of the law. The author makes use of the Temple repair procedures earlier developed by Joash (12:4–16) in order to demonstrate Josiah's devout character and to provide a context for the discovery. Readers are left to assume that this find was somehow the result of Temple reconstruction. Modern scholars have tended to disagree about the precise nature of this newly discovered law book (→ Deuteronomy; Josiah). Guided by earlier statements of the author, however, early readers would have automatically assumed that this scroll was the book of Deuteronomy (cf. Deut. 31:9, 24–26; 2 Kings 14:6).

Deuteronomy ends with a series of frightful curses on the disobedient (Deut. 28). By tearing his clothes, Josiah acknowledges the impending danger represented by this book. Huldah reemphasizes this danger in vv. 16, 19. The size and prestige of the committee sent to her signal the gravity of the situation. The issue is not the authenticity of the book, for this is simply taken for granted. Rather, Josiah's question (v. 13) has to do with his fate and the fate of the nation. Huldah's response speaks first of the inevitable doom of Judah (vv. 15–17). Then she turns to Josiah's personal exemption from this comprehensive catastrophe (vv. 18–20). He has earned a postponement of punishment similar to that given to Ahab (1 Kings 21:27–29). Josiah will die "in peace." As it turns out, this would not be a serene passing at the end of a long and pious life (as in Gen. 15:15). Yet Josiah's death was peaceful in the sense that he would not see the catastrophes that would soon engulf the nation.

Nothing could be done to cancel the effects of past disobedience, but at least Judah's present misdeeds could be eliminated. Josiah made the newly discovered law book the constitutional center of a renewed and rededicated nation. In this, he achieved the standard set by David for Solomon in 1 Kings 2:3. For this reason, the author judges Josiah as David's equal in piety (v. 2) according to the pattern of behavior furnished by Deut. 17:18–20.

23:1–25, Reforms Based on the Law Book. Three commands by Josiah (vv. 1, 4, 21) initiate a wide-ranging reform. His reform moves from south (vv. 4–14) to north (vv. 15–20), and then to Jerusalem (vv. 21–28). The king's first command initiates a covenant renewal ceremony in which he and the people agree to abide by the provisions of what is now called the "Book of the Covenant" (cf. Deut. 31:10–13).

His second command commences a reform, first in Judah and then in the territory of the former kingdom of Israel, constituting an item-by-item reversal of Manasseh's misdeeds (cf. vv. 4, 6, 8, 10, 12, 24 with 21:3–7), as well as those of Solomon (v. 13; 1 Kings 11:5–7) and other kings (vv. 5, 11–12, 14). The exact function of the religious personnel described in v. 7 (NRSV: "male temple prostitutes") remains unknown (cf. 1 Kings 14:24). Like the pillars and Asherah poles of v. 14, they go back to the very beginning of the kingdom of Judah (1 Kings 14:23–24). The second half of v. 7 probably refers to the manufacture of ritual garments for worshipers (cf. 2 Kings 10:22). Josiah removed those priests who served alien gods (v. 5). He transferred the priests of Judah who had served outside of Jerusalem, including those who had sacrificed to the Lord at local high places (vv. 8–9). In contrast, he had the high-place priests of the former Northern Kingdom killed (v. 20). Topheth (v. 10) alludes to an installation south of Jerusalem where child sacrifice was apparently offered to a deity titled Molech ("king"). Outrage over these offenses is expressed by altering the name of the Mount of Olives into the similar Hebrew form, "Mount of Destruction" (NRSV; v. 13). Josiah's reform was ruthless and complete.

Josiah himself then travels to Bethel to undo the foundational sin of Jeroboam and to fulfill precisely the prophetic predictions of 1 Kings 13:2, 32. The confidence of the old prophet who was from Samaria (i.e., Bethel, in contrast to Judah) is posthumously rewarded (v. 18; cf. 1 Kings 13:31–32). Josiah goes on to undo the rest of Jeroboam's apostasy (vv. 19–20; cf. 1 Kings 12:31; 13:2, 32). Ritually unclean human bodies would have effectively profaned the holiness of these worship sites.

Josiah's third command (vv. 21–23) institutes a national Passover, celebrated in Jerusalem according to the command in Deut. 16:5–7. Deuteronomy required a unified celebration held at the central sanctuary, in contrast to the local Passovers that had been the rule after the time of Joshua (Josh. 5:10–11; → Passover, The). The writer summarizes with vv. 24–25 and makes it clear once more that the source of Josiah's unparalleled and exemplary faith (cf. Deut. 6:5) was the newly discovered book of the law.

23:26–30, Judah's Doom Remains Inevitable. However, in spite of Josiah's incomparable reform, Judah's doom remains sealed and the appalling judgment of 21:10–15 is reiterated (vv. 26–27). The narrative of Josiah's death is laconic and obscure. We know from other sources that Pharaoh Neco was heading north to join in support of beleaguered Assyrian forces, who were being pressured by the newly expanding power of Babylon (→ Neco II). Megiddo was a strategic point on Egypt's line of march. Scholars generally assume that Josiah attempted to block Neco's advance and died in an ensuing battle. The text itself is silent on Josiah's intentions and mentions no battle (unlike 2 Chron. 35:20–24). Josiah was only forty-one when he was killed. A powerful group of upper-class rural landowners ("the people of the land") bypassed an older son of Josiah (Eliakim, later to be King

Jehoiakim) and enthroned a younger son, as King Jehoahaz.

23:31–25:30
The Decline and Fall of Judah

Brief reports sketch the corruption and rebellions of Josiah's four successors. He was followed first by a younger son, Jehoahaz (23:31–33; three months), then by an older son, Jehoiakim (23:34–24:7; eleven years), and in turn by Jehoiakim's son Jehoiachin (24:8–17; three months; cf. also 25:27–30). Judah's last king was a third son of Josiah, Zedekiah (24:18–25:7; eleven years).

Because of Judah's repeated defiance, Babylonian forces twice captured Jerusalem (597 and 586) and on the second occasion brought the kingdom of Judah to an end. Judah forfeited almost every facet of its national culture: its capital, Jerusalem, and its Temple (25:9–10), the Davidic kingship (24:12; 25:7), the priesthood (25:18), and the leadership class (24:14–16; 25:19–21). The last vestiges of Solomon's great Temple were broken up, melted down, and carted away (24:13; 25:13–17). Even the very Exodus itself was reversed in a sense, as some of the people returned to Egypt (v. 26). Behind the political maneuvers of Israel, Egypt, and Babylon, the real cause of these events was the Lord. The author insists that God was acting out of divine anger in order to fulfill the prophetic word and punish the sin of Manasseh (24:2–4). Verses 3, 20 use parallel language to make this same point for each of the two defeats of Jerusalem.

23:31–24:7, Jehoahaz and Jehoiakim. As Assyrian power collapsed, both Egypt and Babylon vied to fill the power vacuum. The powerful rural aristocracy made Jehoahaz king, bypassing Jehoahaz's older brother Eliakim (609). The Egyptian ruler Neco, seeking to reestablish Egypt's former hegemony in Palestine, soon deposed and imprisoned Jehoahaz and replaced him with his older brother Eliakim. Ruling as an Egyptian vassal under the name Jehoiakim, he paid a moderate tribute.

After a decisive victory in 605, however, the Babylonian king Nebuchadnezzar prevailed over Egypt and replaced Assyria as the dominant power in the area (→ Nebuchadnezzar). Sometime afterward, Jehoiakim switched allegiance and became a vassal of Babylon. However, after three years of subjugation, Jehoiakim rebelled against Nebuchadnezzar. He died during the early stages of Babylon's military response, leaving his young son Jehoiachin to face the music. The author stresses that this series of misfortunes was caused by the retributive anger of God. It was actually the Lord (rather than Nebuchadnezzar) who sent enemy raiders against Judah to punish the sins of Manasseh in fulfillment of the prophetic word (vv. 2–4).

24:8–17, Jehoiachin: Defeat and Exile in 597 B.C. After capturing Jerusalem (on March 16, 597 B.C., according to Babylonian records), the Babylonians replaced Jehoiachin with his uncle Mattaniah, another of Josiah's sons, who ruled under the name Zedekiah. Jehoiachin and his family were taken to Babylon. Viewed by many as the legitimate heir to David's throne, he remained a focal point for nationalistic aspirations (→ Jehoiachin). Once again, the author asserts that these events fulfilled the prophetic word (v. 13).

24:18–25:21, Zedekiah: Defeat and Exile in 586 B.C. Zedekiah reigned as a Babylonian vassal for some years, but eventually revolted, probably at the instigation of Babylon's rival, Egypt. After a siege that lasted a year and a half, Jerusalem fell (probably in 586). The Temple was destroyed a month later. Although the upper classes and artisans were exiled, the ordinary peasants remained behind as farmers (v. 12). In vv. 13–17, the author repeats some of the language of 1 Kings 7:15–50 to make the point that the glory of Solomon's great Temple had come to a complete end. Zedekiah was captured and would die in captivity.

25:22–26, Gedaliah. To fill the vacuum left by the exile of the royal administration, Babylon appointed a former royal official named Gedeliah as an executive leader of some sort. However, supporters of the Davidic royal family assassinated him at his headquarters city of Mizpah, prompting many remaining Judahites to flee for safety to Egypt. Further information about this incident is recorded in a longer account in Jer. 40:7–41:18.

25:27–30, The Release of Jehoiachin. The ending of Kings is ambiguous. Although released from prison (about 560), Judah's true king, Jehoiachin, remained as an honored captive in Babylon until his death. Contemporary Babylonian records actually name Jehoiachin and his five sons as recipients of provisions.

On the one hand, this incident could be interpreted negatively as the decisive final act in the national tragedy of Judah. The king's honorable captivity until death only emphasizes the hopelessness of Judah's situation. After all, the most the book of Kings ever promises to exiles is an improvement in the circumstances of their captivity (8:46–50). The story of Jehoiachin indicates that life can go on, even in exile, but offers no hope beyond this. On the other hand, this event could also be understood positively as a hint of some sort of potential future for the Davidic dynasty. Perhaps the writer is hinting that the Lord may still be willing to rescue defeated and exiled Judah. After all, God never expressly repudiates the promise of an eternal reign made to David. The hint of national reunification expressed in 1 Kings 11:39 may still be possible.

Probably it is best to understand this final report as the writer's indication that Judah's future remained open, but that readers should not anticipate or hope for anything definite or certain.

Bibliography

Long, B. O. *1 Kings*. Forms of the Old Testament Literature, 9. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1984.

———. *2 Kings*. Forms of the Old Testament Literature, 10. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1991.

Nelson, R. D. *First and Second Kings*. Interpretation Commentaries. Atlanta, GA: John Knox, 1987.

Provan, I. W. *1 and 2 Kings*. New International Biblical Commentary. Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1995.

Walsh, J. T. *1 Kings*. Berit Olam. Collegeville, MN: Liturgical Press, 1996.

1 Chronicles

MARK A. THRONTVEIT

INTRODUCTION

The books of 1 and 2 Chronicles were originally a single Hebrew entity entitled "Events of the Days." The translators of the Septuagint (the Greek OT, LXX) divided it into two books under the title "Things Omitted," possibly because it appears to supplement the earlier history contained in Samuel and Kings. This title is quite misleading, however, since Chronicles also omits much of the earlier history and often presents the same material in different ways. The current title derives from Jerome, fourth-century translator of the Latin Vulgate (Vg.), who suggested that "A Chronicle of All of Sacred History" would better describe the contents of a work that spans a period stretching from Adam to Cyrus the Great (538 B.C.). These books appear at the end of the third and final division of the Hebrew canon, the Writings, following Ezra-Nehemiah. In the LXX, Vg., and English versions they are grouped with the other historical books and placed between 2 Kings and Ezra-Nehemiah.

History of Composition

For many years the books of Chronicles were thought to form a single work with Ezra and Nehemiah based upon the following observations. First, 2 Chronicles ends with the same decree of Cyrus with which Ezra begins (2 Chron. 36:22–23; Ezra 1:1–3a). Second, the continuous reading of 2 Chron. 35–36, Ezra 1–10, and Neh. 8:1–13 that is found in the apocryphal 1 Esdras suggests that these books were joined at one time. Third, the language of Chronicles is very similar to that of Ezra and Nehemiah, sharing many peculiarities of vocabulary and syntax. Finally, all three books exhibit similarities in outlook, interests, and theological perspective. Today, however, many scholars question this assumption of the common authorship of Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah. The first three observations have been shown to be inconclusive. More important, while these books do share an interest in the continuity between their common postexilic audience and pre-exilic Israel, the Temple, worship, covenant renewal, and the Mosaic law, they differ at crucial junctures. These include such key elements as the nature of "Israel," the Sabbath, mixed marriages, the Davidic covenant, the place of prophecy, retributive justice, the function of the Levites, and the significance of the Exodus.

The so-called Chronicler, for we do not know the author's name, used the books of Samuel and Kings as his primary source, though in editions different from those preserved in the Hebrew Bible. A wide variety of other OT books, especially the Pentateuch, several psalms, Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Zechariah, and a number of ancient documents now lost to us are also important as sources. In addition, the Chronicler frequently assumes his readers' familiarity with these earlier sources. Debate about the unity of Chronicles centers on possible expansions to the lists of 1 Chron. 1–9; 15–16; 23–27; a growing number of scholars support the essential unity of the work.

The dating of Chronicles is also debated, and proposals often relate to prior decisions regarding its original form. An emerging consensus, recognizing the separate authorship of Chronicles and Ezra-Nehemiah as well as the integral nature of 1 Chron. 1–9 to the work as a whole, favors a date in the Persian period, somewhere in the fourth century B.C. The lists of David's descendants in 1 Chron. 3:17–24 and the inhabitants of Jerusalem in 9:2–34 are decisive here. Those who allow for later expansion in the above lists situate Chronicles in the early postexilic restoration of the Temple under Zerubbabel and Joshua, the high priest, as a historical expression of the movement associated with Haggai and Zechariah 1–8 (ca. 520–515 B.C.).

In either case, Chronicles addresses the particular needs of the postexilic community living in Jerusalem under Persian rule. Nebuchadnezzar II had taken Jerusalem in 587 B.C., destroying the Temple and deporting the fruit and flower of the population to Babylon. Starting with the Persian defeat of the Babylonians under Cyrus in 539 B.C. and continuing for many years, the exiled people of Israel began to return to Jerusalem, where they eventually rebuilt the Temple. For two hundred years the community formed an insignificant, poverty-stricken outpost on the frontiers of the Persian Empire.

Literary Characteristics and Theological Themes

Chronicles falls into four major sections. A genealogical introduction (1 Chron. 1–9) is followed by a presentation of the period of the United Monarchy under

David and Solomon prefaced with an account of the death of Saul (1 Chron. 10–2 Chron. 9). A third section discusses the period of the Divided Monarchy, concentrating on the kings of Judah (2 Chron. 10–28), and the work concludes with an interpretation of the period from Hezekiah to the Babylonian exile (2 Chron. 29–36).

The importance of the long second section for the Chronicler's interpretation cannot be overestimated. Recent scholarship insists that the reigns of David and Solomon are presented as a single unit in which two divine promises, made respectively to David concerning the monarchy (1 Chron. 17:3–14) and Solomon concerning the Temple (2 Chron. 7:11–22), are of unparalleled theological significance. The genealogies that precede this crucial section present a vision of the people's original unity within the context of God's gracious provision. The section that follows applies these twin principles of throne and Temple, kingship and cult, to evaluate the kings who ruled during the period of the Divided Monarchy, which had shattered the Chronicler's vision. The final section presents Hezekiah as a new David and Solomon who restores that vision of all Israel reunited under a Davidic king worshiping at the Jerusalem Temple.

In addition to a tendency to divide history into definite periods, the Chronicler also uses a number of other literary devices. These include the introduction of speeches and prayers that convey his theological perspectives, the presentation of people and events as models to emulate or avoid, and the repetition of key words and phrases as theological and rhetorical guideposts.

Three theological themes support the Chronicler's literary presentation. First, a concern for "all Israel" is evident (→ Israel). Recent scholarship has overturned the past consensus that the Chronicler's concept of "Israel" was narrowly exclusive and confined to the tribes of Judah and Benjamin (as in 2 Chron. 11:3; 12:1; cf. 10:16; 11:13, where "all Israel" refers to the North and, 9:30 where both North and South are meant). Rather, his inclusive understanding of Israel goes back to the ancient ideal of twelve tribes as regularly depicted in the enthusiastic and unanimous participation of "all Israel" at every turning point in the narrative. Consequently, he sees the division of the kingdom into North and South as a severing of God's people (2 Chron. 13:4–12), and there are frequent calls for the return of the people to common worship in Jerusalem.

Second, a concern for continuity with the past first appears in the genealogies (→ Genealogy) that linked the author's generation with its historical, geographical, and spiritual roots. The presence of the Temple at the center of the postexilic community's life, however, meant that worship, properly led by the Levites, would provide the people with their sense of identity and connect them with the traditions of the past.

Third, the Chronicler's theology of blessing and judgment, often described in terms of "immediate/individual retribution," proposes a connection between obedience and blessing and disobedience and judgment and plays an important role in 2 Chron. 10–36. Although it is true that Chronicles endorses this view, it is neither as mechanical nor as simplistically applied as previously thought. The withholding of judgment after a repentant response to prophetic warning (1 Chron. 21:15–19; 2 Chron. 12:5; 15:1–8; 36:15) suggests that the Chronicler is much more concerned with restoration and repentance than retribution, as Chronicles' most familiar text (2 Chron. 7:14) asserts.

Message

The earlier Deuteronomistic History had used the story of Israel's kings to answer the questions of a people in exile who had experienced the destruction of the Temple and the end of Davidic rule (→ Deuteronomistic Framework). Chronicles, however, speaks to those who have returned from that exile. Instead of asking, "Why did this disaster happen to us?" they want to know about their relationship with the past: "Are we still the people of God?" "What do God's promises to David and Solomon mean to us, today?"

The Chronicler addresses these questions by retelling the story of the kings of Judah in such a way that his people are invited to see themselves as living in situations of either "exile" or "restoration." Exilic situations result from unfaithfulness, serving other gods, or failing to seek the Lord. Even if literal exile does not occur, ruinous consequences inevitably follow the loss of God's blessing. That blessing can be restored, however, through repentance and claiming God's promise to Solomon (2 Chron. 7:14). Thus, the Chronicler seeks to encourage his struggling postexilic community to serve God wholeheartedly, knowing that a patient and merciful God awaits their response and hears their prayers.

COMMENTARY

1:1–9:44
Genealogical Introduction

The genealogies with which the books of Chronicles begin, though tedious to modern tastes, served a very important purpose. The lists are carefully constructed to stress the importance of David and the significance of the tribes of Judah, Benjamin, and Levi. By tracing the history of the people of Israel from Adam down to the generation living in Jerusalem, the Chronicler was able to convey a sense of belonging and continuity with the past that this community sorely needed to hear. God had not abandoned them. The Exile had not

cut them off from their roots. As Israel, they were the heirs of God's promise.

1:1–54
From Adam to Esau

The Chronicler quickly moves from Adam to Esau by compiling information from lists in Genesis and arranging it in two groups of ten generations each, separated by the Flood (vv. 1–23; 24–27). By beginning with Adam and eliminating all competing lines of descent before presenting the line that would become Israel, the Chronicler situates the nation in the wider context of humanity as a whole and emphasizes its election by God.

1:1–4a, From Adam to Noah. Adam's genealogy lists the ten generations who lived before the Flood. The list is identical with that found in Gen. 5:3–31.

1:4b–23, The Descendants of Noah. The genealogies of Noah's sons, Japheth, Ham, and Shem (vv. 5–7, 8–16, 17–23), reverse the order of the names found in v. 4b. This procedure of sketching secondary lines first, before giving fuller presentations of key figures, is characteristic of this initial chapter and establishes a pattern that will be broken with great effect in the presentation of Israel.

1:24–27, From Shem to Abraham. The genealogy of Shem (vv. 24–27), taken from Gen. 11:10–32, lists ten generations who lived after the Flood, mirroring that of Adam (1–4a) and bringing us down to Abram, whom the Chronicler identifies with Abraham.

1:28–34, The Descendants of Abraham. Abraham's descendants are arranged according to their various mothers, though not in chronological order. Once again the significant line is presented last: those through Hagar, Abraham's concubine and the mother of Ishmael (vv. 29–31, based upon Gen. 25:12–16); those through Keturah, the wife Abraham took in his old age (vv. 32–33, based upon Gen. 25:12–16); and finally, Isaac, through Sarah (v. 34).

1:35–54, Esau and Edom. Esau, Seir, and Edom are grouped together according to Gen. 36:9. The considerable detail is surprising in light of the Chronicler's purpose and Israel's usual enmity toward Edom elsewhere (e.g., Ps. 137; → Obad). The pattern of presenting the secondary line (Esau) first as a means of emphasizing the primary line, that of Israel (2:3–9:1), continues.

2:1–9:1
The Tribes of Israel

The primary concern in the genealogies is the presentation of the tribes of Israel. They have been carefully arranged to emphasize the tribes of Judah, Levi, and Benjamin, the three tribes that remained loyal to David at the time of the schism (922 B.C.) as well as the major components of the Chronicler's postexilic community, the Persian province of Judah. These three tribes, by virtue of their extended treatment, provide a framework for the entire section. Judah (2:3–4:23) comes first because a ruler came from him (5:2; the word translated "ruler" is used with reference to David in 11:2; 17:7). Benjamin, forebear of Saul, Israel's first king, nicely balances the royal claims of Judah at the end (8:1–40), while the priestly tribe of Levi anchors the middle (6:1–81). Sandwiched between Judah and Levi are genealogies of the Northern tribes located on the eastern bank of the Jordan (5:1–26), balanced by the rest of the Northern tribes, placed between Levi and Benjamin (7:1–40).

The emphasis upon the royal tribes of Judah and Benjamin and the priestly tribe of Levi signals the Chronicler's interest in the twin concerns of king and cult. The placement of the schismatic Northern tribes within the structure, however, suggests that the Chronicler is also concerned with "all Israel" descended from Jacob/Israel.

2:1–2, The Sons of Israel. The sons of Jacob appear in a list that differs from Gen. 35:23–26 only in the placement of Dan before Joseph and Benjamin. They serve as a heading to the extended presentation of the tribes that will continue through 9:1. With the exception of 16:13, 17, itself a quotation of Ps. 105:6, 10, the Chronicler always refers to Jacob as "Israel." The inclusion of all of Jacob/Israel's sons in the genealogy typifies the Chronicler's concern for all Israel, both North and South.

2:3–4:43, Judah and Simeon. The Chronicler's pattern in the genealogies through Jacob/Israel (2:2) has been to deal with the secondary lines of descent first. In this way the primary line is emphasized. But with the appearance of the descendants of Judah this pattern is reversed. Despite his position as fourth-born (2:1), the genealogy of Judah is placed in rhetorical exposure, betraying the Chronicler's consuming interest in this tribe in the midst of "all Israel" as well as in the rule of David and Solomon.

Recent scholarship insists that, despite the haphazard appearance of the following lists, so uncharacteristic of the Chronicler and unexpected at the center of his genealogical introduction, they have been carefully structured and form yet another marker of the centrality of this material. The whole section (2:3–4:23) is concentrically arranged in five parts. At the center is the important family of Hezron (2:9–3:24). Framing this is genealogical material concerning Judah's twin sons, Perez and Zerah (2:5–8; 4:1–20). The family of Shelah (besides the twins, Judah's only son to have descendants) encloses the whole (2:3–4; 4:21–24).

A second concentric arrangement then structures the central element of the first, Hezron's family (2:10–3:24). An outer framework concerning the descendants of Ram (up to David in 2:10–17; and after David in 3:1–24) and an inner frame of Caleb's family (2:18–24; 2:42–55) surround the family of Jerahmeel (2:25–41). This structure emphasizes the family of Ram at the beginning and at the end. Thus, David's clan, the family of Hezron, dominates the center of the composition and frames the center with David's closer kin, the family of Ram. The overall effect is to heighten the presence of David within the Chronicler's genealogical introduction and the work as a whole.

The line from Judah to Hezron is traced in 2:3–8 and contains a listing of Judah's five sons (vv. 3–4) as well as the descendants of Zerah, his youngest (vv. 6–8). Of greater interest than the lists, however, is the brief indication of the Chronicler's attitude toward the workings of God's judgment and grace. Verses 3–4, drawn from Genesis 38, provide three striking incidents unexpected in the Chronicler's account of his favorites. First, Judah's first three sons were born to Judah's Canaanite wife, "the daughter of Shua" (NIV; not "Bath-shua" as in most versions). Second, "Er, Judah's firstborn, displeased Yahweh who put him to death" (NJB). And third, Judah's two other sons were the product of an incestuous relationship with his daughter-in-law, Tamar. Judgment is seen in the swift dispatch of Er (and possibly Onan, if a similar verdict has dropped out of the text). The cryptic "Achar, the troubler of Israel" (v. 7) is a reference to Achan, who was stoned to death for his guilt (Josh. 7:24–26). Since "Achar" derives from a Hebrew verb meaning "to trouble," the Chronicler's misspelling of the name is an intentional pun designed to highlight Achan's guilt. On the other hand, God's grace is seen in the working out of the promise through the ill-conceived line of Perez.

1 Chron. 2:9–17 presents the first half of Ram's genealogy. The second half appears in 3:1–24. This is the line that will produce Jesse and, ultimately, David, the focal point of the Chronicler's whole view of history and the climax of this section (v. 15).

1 Chron. 2:18–24 presents the first half of Caleb's genealogy, the "Chelubai" of v. 9. The second half appears in 2:42–55. The line from Judah through Caleb is problematic. This Caleb cannot be the Caleb who helped to spy out the land of Canaan (Num. 13:6; see 1 Chron. 4:15 for the spy). Most interesting is the inclusion of Bezalel, the craftsman responsible for the construction of the tabernacle (Exod. 31:1–5) in v. 20. Here is a glimpse of the Chronicler's juxtaposition of the themes of cult and king that will continue throughout the narrative.

1 Chron. 2:25–41 presents Jerahmeel's genealogy without parallel in the OT. This clan may have been a non-Israelite tribe on the southern border of Judah that was eventually absorbed (1 Sam. 27:10; 30:29).

The second half of the Caleb material appears in 2:42–55 and continues 2:18–24. Several of these names are actually references to cities in the south including Ziph, Mareshah, and Hebron. These lists further document the holdings of Judah, the only tribe to survive the Exile.

David's royal family (3:1–24) lies at the heart of the Chronicler's concentric structuring of Judah's genealogy. Three segments of the royal line are covered. Verses 1–9 present the fullest listing of David's immediate family in the OT. They balance the first half of the family of Ram presented in 2:10–17 and establish David as the hinge upon which the whole structure turns. The spelling of Bathsheba's name as Bath-shua (v. 5) is no longer seen as an attempt to disguise David's adultery.

Verses 10–16 cover the kings from Solomon through Zedekiah. The Chronicler's concern with David is especially pronounced in this massive reduction of the books of Kings. Only Athaliah, Ahab's non-Davidic daughter who usurped the throne (2 Kings 11), is missing from the rulers of Judah. Since the Chronicler also omits the kings of the Northern Kingdom we should probably regard this section as a listing of the Davidic dynasty down to the Exile.

Verses 17–24 bring the list down to the postexilic descendants of Jeconiah (the Jehoiakin of 2 Kings 24:8). His epithet "the captive," found in most modern translations, correctly emends the Hebrew, which has another name here. Only David's royal family is traced down to the Chronicler's own day. This mention of a Davidic descendant ruling in Israel after the Exile (v. 19, Zerubbabel, the first governor of the Persian province of Judah following the return from Babylon) indicates the concern to display continuity between the Israel of old and the contemporary postexilic community. Because of the author's efforts to forge this link, this list has been used to date the work as a whole. If the list were entirely the work of the Chronicler, and not a later addition, a date of 400 B.C. would be most reasonable.

1 Chron. 4:1–23 is a collection of shorter genealogies, unparalleled in the OT and gathered here for the sake of completeness with regard to the Chronicler's all important tribe of Judah. Geographical and historical considerations have linked the tribes of Simeon and Judah since the time of the settlement (Josh. 19:1, 9; Judg. 1:3). By the time of the monarchy Simeon had been absorbed into Judah for administrative purposes (4:31), but this does not prevent the Chronicler from modifying his usual approach in the genealogical introduction. Here, the typical genealogical records found in vv. 24–27 are augmented with geography (vv. 28–33), examples of faithful administration resulting in great increase (vv. 34–38), and two instances of traditional material concerned with geographical expansion (vv. 39–43). The first of these occurred in the days of Hezekiah and relates Simeon's expansion into

Philistia (the LXX reads "Gerar," for Gedor) to the northwest (vv. 39–41). The second reminiscence reports the displacement of the Amalekites, who lived in the hill country of Seir in Edom (vv. 42–43). The Chronicler's community, recently returned from exile, would have cherished these stories of faithfulness rewarded with land.

5:1–26, Northern Tribes East of the Jordan: Reuben, Gad, East Manasseh. Comparison of vv. 11, 18, 26 suggests that these two and a half tribes be treated as a unit. Besides their common geographical setting in Gilead on the eastern bank of the Jordan River, they also represent a significant portion of the Northern tribes that eventually fell to the Assyrians. As such, they and their Northern allies in chap. 7 flank the Chronicler's presentation of Levi in chap. 6.

Reuben (vv. 1–10) is introduced with an aside recalling his incest with Bilhah, his father's concubine (v. 1; cf. Gen. 35:22). The Chronicler properly notes that Reuben was the firstborn even though the rights of the firstborn had been transferred to the twin tribes of Joseph, Ephraim, and Manasseh as a consequence of Reuben's transgression. The author's bias appears, however, with the notice that Judah ultimately prevailed (v. 2). Reuben, like the tribe of Simeon, was assimilated early, so that the locations given in the text represent the Chronicler's concern for the shape of "all Israel" in the conquest tradition of Josh. 13:8–13.

The minimal information concerning the tribes of Gad (vv. 11–17) and Manasseh (vv. 23–24), especially the lack of an introductory presentation of tribal families, further suggests that the Chronicler considered these three tribes as one. Two incidents from their collective experience interspersed within the tribal information, however, illustrate a major theme in Chronicles. Contrary to those who detect an anti-Northern bias in these books, the Chronicler is pleased to relate an incident of faithfulness on the part of these Northern tribes who defeated the Hagrites and retained possession of the land until the Exile because they put their trust in God (vv. 18–22). The unfaithfulness of these same tribes, however, leads to their defeat when God hands them over to Tiglath-pileser III of Assyria, also known as Pul (ca. 733 B.C.; 2 Kings 15:29). Interestingly, the terminology used to describe the exiles of both the Southern and Northern Kingdoms, whether one speaks of cause or effect, is the same.

6:1–81, Levi. The extensive tribal genealogies of Judah (2:1–4:23) and Benjamin (8:1–40) introduce, conclude, and dominate the Chronicler's concentric presentation of the tribes. Both the extent of this section and its pivotal location at the center of the tribal listings mark the significance of Israel's priestly tribe. The chapter falls into two roughly equal sections, levitical genealogies (vv. 1–53) and levitical cities (vv. 54–81).

In both sections the priests are carefully distinguished from the Levites and, strangely for the Chronicler, who usually champions the Levites, given pride of place (→ Levites). In the first, two lists of Levites (vv. 16–30, 31–48) are flanked by the priestly lists of vv. 1–15 and 49–53, while in the second, the list of thirteen priestly cities (vv. 54–60) precedes that of the levitical allotment (vv. 61–81).

The list of high priests in vv. 3–15, which begins with Aaron and continues through Eleazar and Phinehas down to Jehozadak at the time of Judah's deportation to Babylon in the sixth century B.C., is obviously incomplete. Several high priests known to us from other biblical sources are missing: Eli (1 Sam. 2:27–36), Jehoiada (2 Chron. 22:11), Uriah (2 Kings 16:10–16), and at least two other Azariahs (2 Chron. 26:20; 31:10–13). Nevertheless, the list serves the Chronicler's purpose well since the legitimacy of the postexilic priesthood of the Chronicler's community depended upon that of Jehozadak, the father of Joshua, the high priest of the return (Ezra 3:2; Neh. 12:26; Hag. 1:1).

Verses 16–30 present the three central genealogies of the Levites through Gershom, Kohath, and Merari. The Levites were responsible for specific religious duties, and their authority in the cult derived from their descent from these three families. Verses 25–28 establish a second Kohathite line that effectively makes Samuel a Levite (cf. 1 Sam. 1:1, where Samuel is an Ephraimite, though whether this term has genealogical or geographical significance is unclear).

The singing of praise in the Temple is the highest form of worship, instituted by David himself (1 Chron. 15–16). Following a virtual summary of David's activities in this regard (vv. 31–32), vv. 33–48 list the genealogies of the levitical musicians appointed by David: the line of Kohath, represented by Heman (vv. 33–38), the line of Gershom, represented by Asaph (vv. 39–43), and that of Merari, represented by Ethan (vv. 44–47). The lists have been augmented so that the founders of the singing guilds are contemporaries of David. Once again, the Chronicler seeks to legitimate the claims of present cultic officials by demonstrating their continuity with David's earlier modifications. As mentioned above, vv. 49–53 return to the priests and serve to distinguish the duties of the Levites from the priests, who alone could offer sacrifice (Exod. 27:1–8), burn incense (Exod. 30:1–10), or make atonement (Lev. 4:31; 16).

The list of cities in vv. 54–81 follows the list of cities found in Joshua 21 with only a minor rearrangement of the material. By placing the descendants of Aaron at the head of the list (vv. 54–60) the priestly line is emphasized once again. The cities allocated to the priests follow in vv. 54–60. Significantly, they are all located at the geographical core of the Chronicler's postexilic community, in the territories of Judah and Benjamin. The levitical cities are recorded in vv. 61–81. Since the Levites did not receive an allotment with the other tribes (Num. 1:47–53), they were given these cities in

which to live and raise their families. As representatives of all Israel they were evenly distributed throughout the land with an average of four cities contributed by each of the twelve tribes, if Joseph is understood to include Ephraim and Manasseh. God's ownership of the land and the importance of a levitical presence throughout all Israel are equally stressed in this presentation.

7:1–40, Northern Tribes West of the Jordan: Issachar, (Benjamin), Dan, Naphtali, Manasseh and Ephraim, Asher. This chapter completes the survey of the tribes introduced in 2:1. These Northern tribes west of the Jordan, with the inexplicable exception of Benjamin, are the complement of the Northern tribes east of the Jordan discussed in chap. 5. The lists that appear here (with the exception of Manasseh and Ephraim) are drawn at least in part from military census lists at the time of David. The emergence of a second, longer Benjaminite genealogy in chap. 8 and the apparent omission of the tribes of Dan and Zebulun remain vexing problems.

The family of Issachar (vv. 1–5) comes first, as might be expected from 2:1. It is drawn from Num. 26:23–25 and Gen. 46:13, though the figures suggest that a military census list has also been employed. That the Chronicler would underscore significant military assistance to David provided by Issachar and other Northern tribes indicates his inclusive respect for "all Israel."

The interpretation of vv. 6–12a is uncertain. As a genealogy of Benjamin they are somewhat intrusive in a listing of Northern tribes, especially since a full genealogy of Benjamin occurs in chapter 8. The programmatic list in 2:1 suggests that Zebulun should appear at this point, but there is no listing for Zebulun anywhere in chaps. 1–9. The Hebrew text of v. 6 lacks "the sons of," found in most English versions. Recognizing this, and that the three letters that comprise these words are the same three letters that begin "Benjamin," has led to the suggestion that a copyist has written "Benjamin" instead of "The sons of Zebulun" here, inadvertently eliminating that tribe. Unfortunately, the names here do not match other lists of Zebulun that are known (Gen. 46:14; Num. 26:26).

On the basis of the LXX and Gen. 46:23, v. 12b should read, "The sons of Dan: Hushim" (NEB, NAB, TEV, REB), restoring at least a mention of Dan in these lists.

The brief description of the family of Naphtali (v. 13) follows Gen. 46:23–25 very closely, including a reference to Bilhah, the mother of Dan and Naphtali. Reference to Jacob's concubine and her sons implies that part of the Dan list has somehow been lost.

The record of the half tribe of Manasseh (vv. 14–19) is corrupt, leading to a host of problems that have so far defied solution: Gen. 50:23 claims that Machir and his sons were Egyptian, not Syrian (Aramean). Num. 32:39–40 claims that they settled Gilead, i.e., the land on the eastern side of the Jordan. Maacah appears both as the sister (v. 15) and the wife (v. 16) of Machir. We read of a "second" in v. 15 with no antecedent "first." Thus, there is a tendency among modern scholars to reconstruct this list on the basis of Num. 26:29–34. Despite the hopeless state of the text, the prominent place of non-Israelites (v. 14) and women (Maacah, whether as sister, wife, or both; Zelophehad's daughters, pointing to the crucial legislation in Num. 27; 36; and Hammolecheth) welcomed into the line of the Chronicler's ideal Israel is significant.

The Ephraimitic material (vv. 20–29) reflects three different pieces of tradition. A genealogy traces the line of Joseph's second son, Ephraim, down to Joshua, by means of two lists of ten names each (20–21a, 25–27). The lists are separated by a snippet of tribal lore (21b–24) concerning the naming of Ephraim's child Beriah (NRSV: "disaster"; NJB, NIV: "misfortune"), following a disastrous incident with the people of Gath/Gittaim. Once again the Chronicler singles out the achievements of a woman and her clan, Sheerah, the daughter of either Ephraim or Beriah (v. 24). The section concludes with a listing of cities and possessions belonging to Ephraim and Manasseh (vv. 28–29).

The family of Asher (vv. 30–40), again drawn from Davidic military census lists, concludes the Chronicler's listing of these Northern tribes. Why such an insignificant tribe is treated at such length is not known.

8:1–40, Benjamin. Although this complex chapter is difficult to harmonize with other Benjaminite genealogies (Gen. 46:21; Num. 26:38–40; 1 Chron. 7:6–11) and displays no obvious organizing principle, it seems that vv. 1–32 trace four different branches of Benjaminites. Verses 1–7 are concerned with the clan of Bela and lead to Ehud, Israel's second judge (Judg. 3:15–30). Since Gera (v. 3) was the father of Ehud (Judg. 3:15), some of the difficulty in these lists is eased if we read "Gera the father of Ehud" (v. 3, NEB, JB, NIV mg, NRSV mg) instead of "Gera, Abihud." Verses 8–14 deal with the clan of Shaharaim; vv. 15–28 recount those Benjaminites living in Jerusalem; and vv. 29–32 do the same for those in and around Gibeon. Verses 33–40 conclude the section with the climactic genealogy of Saul, the greatest of the Benjaminites.

Geography plays an important role in this chapter. Each of the Benjaminite clans discussed is associated with specific sites: vv. 1–7 with Geba; vv. 8–14 with Moab, Ono, and Lod; vv. 15–28 with Jerusalem; and vv. 29–32 with Gibeon. The Chronicler was also interested in geography at the beginning of his survey of the tribes (Judah, 2:42–55; 4:1–23) and at its center (Levi, 6:54–81). The same concern regarding Benjamin serves to further link these three tribes, which formed the basis of the postexilic community.

9:1, Summarizing Conclusion. This pivotal verse is widely recognized as a summary of chaps. 2–8, which includes "all Israel," not just the Chronicler's own postexilic community, which is the subject of the remainder of chapter 9. As such it serves to highlight the Chronicler's desire to keep the full extent of the promised land before the eyes of his people. The ominous note of exile and its cause, the unfaithfulness of the people, is also a part of this pithy verse. The Chronicler's source, the "Book of the Kings of Israel," not to be confused with the canonical books of Kings, is probably the "Book of the Kings of Israel and Judah" (NJB), a major source for 2 Chronicles.

9:2–34
The Chronicler's Postexilic Community

If v. 1 is taken as introductory to this section, "The first" (v. 2) may be taken in a temporal sense as referring to the previous, pre-exilic residents of Jerusalem. Most modern versions, however, correctly indicate that the list refers to the Chronicler's own postexilic community by translating "the first to live again [settle again, resettle, return to, etc.]." This list of the restored Jerusalem community and its inhabitants is similar to Nehemiah 11, though the questions of dependence and relative dating cannot be answered. The chapter is important for its establishment of the crucial link between Israel's past and present.

9:2, Resettled Towns. This verse stands apart from vv. 3–34 by its discussion of the resettlement of the towns around Jerusalem, suggesting that these outlying areas were repopulated before the city. It also provides the outline for the rest of the section, which presents the inhabitants of Jerusalem, first the Israelites (vv. 3–9), followed by the priests (vv. 10–13), and the Levites (vv. 14–34). The Temple servants, though mentioned here, do not appear outside of Ezra-Nehemiah.

9:3–9, Israelites. Pride of place goes to the people. The Israelites listed come from four tribes (v. 3). Not surprisingly, Judah and Benjamin, the Southern tribes that had remained loyal to the Davidic dynasty at the time of the schism, head the list. The presence of the Northern tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh are another story. Their appearance may symbolize the inclusion of the entire Northern Kingdom, indicating the Chronicler's concern for "all Israel." Nevertheless, only Judahites (vv. 4–6) and Benjaminites (vv. 7–9) are listed.

9:10–13, Priests. Six priestly families are named in a list that is reasonably close to Neh. 11:10–14. In v. 11 the title, variously translated "chief officer of the house of God" (NRSV) or "official in charge of the house of God" (NIV, REB), can indeed refer to the high priest, as it does in 2 Chron. 31:10, 13. However, in 2 Chron. 35:8b two Levites share this title with Hilkiah, the high priest.

9:14–34, Levites. Three levitical families are traced back to the three primary levitical groups of Merari (missing in Nehemiah), Asaph, and Jeduthun (vv. 14–16). The relationship between these Levites and the lists of Temple personnel that follow is not entirely clear. With the appearance of the gatekeepers (v. 17), the Chronicler's use of Jerusalem census lists that have dominated the chapter so far gives way to substantial expansion, due to the addition of Shallum as well as the detailed listing of their authority (vv. 17–23), leadership (vv. 24–27), and duties (vv. 28–32).

Though not necessarily one of their ranks, the Chronicler highly prized this particular group and links their origin to the tent at the time of Moses (vv. 19–20; cf. Num. 2:17; 25:6–8). Since David died before the building of the Temple and Samuel died before David became king, the reference to their installation by David and Samuel the seer (v. 22) serves to universalize their influence.

9:35–44
The House of Saul

This list repeats the genealogy of Saul, the first king of Israel, given in 8:29–38. There, the list conveyed important geographical information. In this context, however, it serves to focus our attention upon Saul's tragic death in chap. 10, which in turn provides a preface to the reign of David.

1 Chronicles 10:1–2 Chronicles 9:31
The United Monarchy

Chronicles presents the reigns of David and Solomon as a unity that depicts their individual stories in ways that parallel and complement each other. Following the rejection of Saul's kingship (1 Chron. 10) that serves to introduce the United Monarchy, David is depicted as the founder of the Temple, responsible for its location, materials, staffing, organization, and economic support (1 Chron 11:1–27:34). Solomon is depicted as the actual builder of the Temple, who constructs and dedicates it according to the plan he received from his father (2 Chron. 1–9). The stories overlap in 1 Chron. 22:1–29:3, where David commissions his son, passes on the Temple plans, and recruits the prayers and financial support of the people for its construction. The stories are also told in ways that focus upon the Temple and draw attention away from the kings. Recognition of this focus helps to explain the Chronicler's omission of those parts of Samuel and Kings that present the sinful, human side of both these kings.

A final indication that the Chronicler presents the reigns of David and Solomon as a unity lies in their literary setting. The period of the United Monarchy is framed by two crucial events in the history of the nation. The end of Saul's reign is marked by the statement that God "turned the kingdom over to David" (1 Chron. 10:14, NRSV). This is echoed at the beginning of the reign of Rehoboam with the statement that the division of the kingdom following Solomon's death "was a turn of affairs brought about by God" (2 Chron. 10:15, NRSV)—"turn of affairs" and "turned over" have the same Hebrew root. The period between these crucial turning points in the narrative is thus set apart.

10:1–22:1
David

In addition to introducing us to Israel, the nine genealogical chapters have also prepared us for David. The significance of the Davidic material in Chronicles should not be underestimated. The rest of 1 Chronicles will focus upon this central era in the life of Israel. Nevertheless, the Chronicler's overall presentation of the reigns of David and Solomon is a unity centered upon the Temple and worship.

10:1–14, The Death of Saul. The repetition of Saul's genealogy at the end of chap. 9 signals a transition to the narrative portion of the book. The first character to appear in the narrative is Saul, Israel's first king. Where 1 Samuel devoted twenty-three chapters to Saul, Chronicles is interested only in the last one, which records the story of his death (1 Sam. 31). Two changes in the text of 1 Samuel are especially instructive. 1 Sam. 31:6 reads, "So Saul and his three sons and his armor-bearer and all his men died together on the same day" (NRSV). But in Chronicles there is no mention of the armor bearer, and "all his men" is replaced by "all his house" (v. 6). This alteration, at some odds with the genealogical material in 8:29–40; 9:35–44, suggests that the Chronicler is primarily concerned to emphasize that the line of Saul has come to an end. This is confirmed by the theological evaluation in the Chronicler's concluding summary. There it is unequivocally stated that the Lord slew Saul and turned the kingdom over to David as a direct consequence of Saul's unfaithfulness and failure to listen to the word of the Lord or seek him (vv. 13–14).

This "unfaithfulness" that attends Saul's reign has appeared before in Chronicles. The unfaithfulness of the Northern tribes had resulted in military defeat and exile (5:25, NIV), just as the unfaithfulness of Judah was the cause of their military defeat and exile to Babylon (9:1; cf. 2 Chron. 36:14). The abandonment of the cities recorded in v. 7 is a theme that will reappear throughout the rest of Chronicles. Thus, the Chronicler begins his narrative of the United Monarchy with a picture of Israel in "exile," defeated by enemies due to the unfaithfulness of a king who is a graphic illustration of everything a king should not be. The message is clear. In Chronicles, exile is not a single event. Exile is an ever present possibility for those who, like Saul, are unfaithful and for those who, like the Israelites in v. 7, follow after them.

11:1–12:40, David Anointed King of All Israel. These chapters form a clearly structured literary unit designed to demonstrate the immediate and unanimous approval of David's kingship by "all Israel." No less than fourteen tribes are listed as providing support to David (12:23–38). The continuing struggles between David and Saul's family (2 Sam. 1–4) are passed over in agreement with the notice that all Saul's house perished in the battle with the Philistines (10:6) and David is anointed king over Israel (not just Judah as in 2 Sam. 4) at Hebron (11:1–3). Immediately afterward, "David and all Israel" (not "the king and all his men," 2 Sam. 5:6) capture Jerusalem, a neutral city situated between Judah and Benjamin, and establish it as their political center (vv. 4–9). The anointing is recapitulated at the end of the unit (12:38–40), where it is again emphasized that "all Israel" unanimously proclaimed him king, revealing David's widespread support. These notices of Israel's unity under David, along with accompanying lists of his military support (11:10–41a; 12:23–38), restate a major theme in Chronicles and form an outer framework for the rest of the unit.

1 Chron. 12:1–7 and 12:19–22 form an inner frame for these chapters and continue the theme of all Israel's support of David as warriors from the tribes of Benjamin (vv. 1–7) and Manasseh (vv. 19–22) join his retinue. Here the setting is Ziklag, the site of David's self-imposed exile from Saul and command center for his alliance with the Philistines in 1 Samuel 27. By means of this literary flashback the Chronicler demonstrates early support for David in a time prior to his anointing at Hebron.

Continuing his flashback technique, the Chronicler now moves one stage back to David's time at "the stronghold in the wilderness" (12:8–18). Here, warriors from the tribe of Gad (vv. 8–15) as well as Judah and Benjamin (vv. 16–18) come to David. At the heart of these chapters, Amasai delivers a prophetic oracle in support of David, wishing David and his gathered throng that best of all Hebrew gifts: *shalom* (v. 18). The richness of this gift is not captured by its usual English translation, "peace" (NRSV, NKJV, NJB). "Prosperity" (REB) and "success" (NIV) are closer, but still fall short of the emphasis on wholeness, coherence, integrity, and the sense of all things working together that *shalom* connotes. The help and support that will carry David through to victory, exemplified here as military might and commitment (12:1, 17, 18, 19, 21, 22) has its true source in David's God, "the one who helps" (v. 18).

These chapters conclude with a description of the exuberant festivities that accompanied David's unani-

mous acclamation as king (vv. 39–40). Verse 40 also contains the first reference to "joy" in these books. The Chronicler uses this term to mark events of special religious significance such as the appointment of the singers (15:16), Solomon's coronation (29:9, 17, 22), the contributions for Joash's repair of the Temple (2 Chron. 24:10), and especially Hezekiah's reformation (2 Chron. 29:30, 36; 30:21, 23, 25, 26).

13:1–16:43, David Brings the Ark to Jerusalem. With David firmly established in Jerusalem as king over all Israel, the Chronicler turns to his primary concern, the establishment of proper worship. This long section relates the transfer of the Ark of God from Kiriath-jearim to Jerusalem by all Israel at David's command (→ Ark). An unsuccessful attempt to bring the Ark to Jerusalem (chap. 13) is matched by the successful completion of that task (15:1–16:6) after a brief interlude concerning David's successes (chap. 14). Appropriately, the section concludes with worship and thanksgiving (16:7–43).

1 Chron. 13:1–14 relates the initial, unsuccessful, attempt to transfer the Ark. 2 Samuel views the transfer of the Ark as a military affair (2 Sam 6:1–11) and places its transfer after David's establishment in Jerusalem and subsequent defeat of the Philistines (2 Sam. 5:11–25). For the Chronicler, however, the transfer of the Ark is essentially a religious affair. Consequently, on the principle of first things first, he presents the transfer of the Ark as David's first concern following his anointing at Hebron (13:1–14), to be followed by the construction of his house in Jerusalem (14:1–7) and his defeat of the Philistines (14:8–17). One aspect of the unfaithfulness that cost Saul his life as well as his kingdom was his neglect of the Ark (13:3). The Chronicler here strives to present David as an example of faithful adherence to Israel's cultic institutions. Unfortunately, the attempt ended in failure due to an unintentional transgression of cultic regulations (vv. 9–14).

1 Chron. 14:1–17 follows and tells of David's successes. The transposition of chaps. 13 and 14, so theologically fruitful in the last chapter, continues to be productive here as well. For one thing, since they now follow David's care for the Ark, David's successes, whether measured in terms of fame, children, or a newly constructed palace, are to be seen as the result of seeking the Ark. More important, however, the paradigm of Israel "in exile," so convincingly drawn in the portrait of Saul's demise in chap. 10, is thoroughly reversed through several contrasts. David's house increased (14:3–7); Saul's was eliminated (10:6). David inquired of God (14:10, 14); Saul had not (10:13–14). David defeats the Philistines, who had defeated Saul, and burns the gods before whom Saul's head was presented (14:16; 10:8–10). David's kingdom was established (14:2); Saul's had been taken away (10:14).

1 Chron. 15:1–24 is unique to Chronicles. It consists of a series of preparations in anticipation of a second attempt at bringing the Ark to Jerusalem, as well as several lists. David had learned the importance of procedural correctness during the tragic first attempt at moving the Ark. This time, in addition to his preparation of a place for the Ark (vv. 1, 3, 12), only Levites bear the symbol of God's presence (vv. 2, 12–15), as Moses had commanded (v. 15; cf. Deut. 10:8). Accompanied by musicians and singers (vv. 16–24), the levitical procession is portrayed in liturgical fashion in Chronicles, another difference from the military portrayal in 2 Samuel.

1 Chron. 15:25–16:3 describes the actual transfer of the Ark to Jerusalem and follows 2 Sam. 6:12b–19. Different emphases include continued insistence upon the participation of "all Israel" (v. 25) and levitical (not priestly!) sacrifice of seven bulls and seven rams (vv. 26–27). 2 Sam. 6:13 reports that only an ox and a fatling were sacrificed, and that this was done by David.

In 1 Chron. 16:4–43 Levites and priests, the Asaphites in particular, are enjoined to minister before the Ark in Jerusalem (vv. 4–6, 37–42). They immediately respond with a marvelous Hymn of Thanksgiving comprised of Pss. 105:1–15 (vv. 8–22); 96 (vv. 23–33); and 106:1, 34–36 (vv. 34–36). The detailed account of God's past faithfulness to his covenantal promises (vv. 8–22; Ps. 105) would encourage the Chronicler's postexilic community, recently returned to the land, as would the prayer to be gathered and delivered from the nations (v. 35; Ps. 106). Psalm 96 (vv. 23–33), which declares God's sovereignty over the gods of other nations, would also reassure a community so "few in number" (v. 19) and under Persian rule.

17:1–27, God's Promise to David. This chapter, one of the most important in the OT, also forms one of the two foci around which the Chronicler's entire work revolves, the other being found in 2 Chron. 7:11–22.

1 Chron. 17:1–15 relates Nathan's oracle to David following a dream in which God corrected Nathan's earlier encouragement regarding David's desire to build God's house. Taking advantage of the ambiguous nature of the word "house," which in Hebrew can mean "palace" (v. 1), "the temple" David wished to build (v. 4), or David's "descendants" (v. 10b, 14), the Chronicler makes two main points. First, one of David's "house," one of his descendants, will build a "house," the Temple for the Lord (v. 12). Second, David's "house," his descendants, will be established forever.

Although 2 Sam. 7:1–29 is followed very closely, three crucial differences reveal the Chronicler's concerns. In vv. 1, 10 the statements that link David with a God-given "rest" (2 Sam. 7:1, 11) are omitted. "Rest" is characteristic of the reign of Solomon and plays a role in his being selected to build the Temple rather than

David (22:6–10). In v. 13 the Chronicler omits the suggestion that Solomon might sin (2 Sam. 7:14). Finally, instead of "your house and your kingdom" (2 Sam. 7:16), the Chronicler has "my house and my kingdom" (v. 14). In Samuel "your house" means David's descendants; in Chronicles "my house" means God's house, i.e., the Temple. It also stresses the Chronicler's understanding that God rules (cf. 28:5–6; 29:23; 2 Chron. 1:11; 9:8; 13:4–8).

1 Chron. 17:16–27 relates David's prayerful response as a beautifully structured model prayer. The opening section concerns itself with David's present gratitude for God's gracious activity on his behalf (vv. 16–19). This is followed with praise for what God has done in the past, especially in redeeming Israel and making them his people (vv. 20–22). The prayer concludes with a petition concerning the future of God's promise, the fulfillment of which the Chronicler sees as already having begun (vv. 23–27).

18:1–20:8, David's Wars. In this summary of some sixteen chapters of the so-called Succession Narrative (2 Sam. 8–23), David forges the Israelite empire. Much of the abbreviation results from the omission of several episodes interspersed among the battle reports in 2 Samuel that catalogue David's increasing inability to govern his personal and family affairs. Chief among these are his adultery with Bathsheba (2 Sam. 11–12), the incest and subsequent murder of Amnon (2 Sam. 13), and the rebellions of Absalom and Sheba (2 Sam. 15–20). Although it is possible that the Chronicler is trying to idealize David here, it should be noted that he also omits episodes that reflect favorably upon the king. David's kindness to Saul's family (2 Sam. 9), the birth of Solomon (2 Sam. 12:24–25), and his beautiful psalms (2 Sam. 22; 23:1–7) also find no place in Chronicles. Close attention to the context provides a better explanation for the omissions. The Chronicler has used this material to describe the relationship of David's military expansion and empire building to the promise of a dynasty (1 Chron. 17) and his subsequent preparations for the building of the Temple (1 Chron. 21–29).

Major elements of the dynastic promise are recalled in these accounts. Most important, the fulfillment of God's promise to subdue David's enemies (17:10) is seen in the almost two dozen references to defeat, subjugation, striking down, killing, etc., that pepper the narrative (18:1; 20:4, with the same Hebrew verb as 17:10). This is especially significant in light of the promise of an undisturbed place for Israel (17:9) accomplished through the defeat of its traditional enemies, the Philistines, the report of which serves to enclose the entire section (18:1; 20:4–8). In addition, God's promise to increase David's reputation (NRSV: "name" in 17:8) finds at least partial fulfillment in the homage paid to David by foreign rulers (18:10; 19:19).

The consolidation of the kingdom also provides confirmation of God's blessing (18:6b, 13b) and sets the stage for David's final preparations for the building of the Temple. Ironically, it will be these very victories, sanctioned by God, that prevent David, as a "man of war" (28:3, NRSV, NIV: "warrior"; see 22:8–9) from building the Temple. Nevertheless, the wealth amassed in these military campaigns will be dedicated to the Lord (18:11) recalling the procedures of the old holy-war traditions with a singular difference. The booty is not destroyed; rather, it will be dedicated to the construction of the Temple (18:8).

All this is accomplished in three distinct literary units. Chap. 18 is a loose collection relating several of David's wars. Verses 14–17 provide a glimpse into the growing complexity of David's government, possibly modeled upon the administrative organization of Egypt. 1 Chron. 19:1–20:3, on the other hand, provides a fairly detailed description of one war, against the Ammonites and their Aramean allies, taken from 2 Samuel 10–12. During this campaign David's adultery with Bathsheba and murder of her husband, Uriah, took place, though the Chronicler refrains from mentioning either for the reasons given above. 1 Chron. 20:4–8 relates the heroic exploits of three of David's soldiers against Philistines descended from Rapha, a deity (NRSV: "giants," vv. 4, 6, 8). In v. 5 the Chronicler has attempted to smooth out an inconsistency with regard to who killed Goliath (cf. 2 Sam 21:19; 1 Sam. 17, where David slays the giant).

21:1–22:1, Selection of the Temple Site. Although this account of David's census is based upon 2 Samuel 24, several alterations help to account for the significance of the Chronicler's different use of this material. First, "Satan" (v. 1), not "the anger of the LORD" (2 Sam. 24:1), incites David to count the people, possibly reflecting the postexilic community's reluctance to ascribe enticement to sin directly to God. Second, David's guilt is increased, though, as in the Samuel text, it is not made entirely clear why the census was sinful. Joab's final accusation, "Why should he [David] bring guilt upon Israel?" (v. 3b) and several references to David's sin/guilt (vv. 6–7, 17) are not found in 2 Samuel. Third, David's payment of six hundred shekels of gold "for the site" (v. 25), instead of the fifty shekels of silver paid to Ornan ("Arunah" in 2 Samuel) for "the threshing floor and the oxen," recorded in 2 Sam. 24:24, reveals the Chronicler's concern for the future site of the Temple. Finally, God's approval of the Temple's future site is marked by the confirming sign of fire from heaven (2 Chron. 7:1; cf. Lev. 9:24; Judg. 6:21; 1 Kings 18:38).

These differences indicate that David's repentance and God's gracious forgiveness (vv. 15–27) are at the heart of the Chronicler's presentation, not David's sin and God's judgment (vv. 1–14). The Chronicler's new

ending to the story (21:26b–22:1) links this place of reconciliation and forgiveness with the Temple's future site, bringing this first half of David's preparations to a close and setting the stage for the final preparations for its construction.

22:2–29:30
David and Solomon

The reigns of David and Solomon overlap in this section. Consisting essentially of three Davidic speeches and a prayer that either address or refer to Solomon (22:6–16; 28:2–21; 29:1–5; 29:10–19), this material presents Solomon as the divinely chosen Temple builder. Even the lengthy section of lists recounting David's organization of the Levites (23:1–27:34), though anachronistic and possibly a later addition, begins with a reference to David and his coronation of Solomon (23:1). The lack of parallels in the earlier history further encourages the belief that the Chronicler is presenting the reigns of father and son as a unity.

22:2–5, David's Initial Preparations for the Temple. The purchase of the threshing floor from Ornan the Jebusite (21:1–22:1) marked the end of the first phase of David's preparations for the Temple. Following the purchase, but before assigning responsibility for the construction to Solomon (22:6–19), David begins his own final preparations by assembling a workforce of resident aliens (i.e., non-Israelite inhabitants of Canaan) as well as the necessary materials (vv. 2–4). Solomon's youthful inexperience and possibly David's approaching death, are given as the reasons for David's preparations (v. 5).

22:6–19, David's First Speech. God had already promised that one of David's sons would build the Temple (17:11, 12). Here, in the commissioning of Solomon for that task (vv. 6–16) and David's appeal to Israel's leaders for their support (vv. 17–19), the designated Temple builder is finally revealed.

Another theme from 1 Chron. 17, the theology of "rest," is also explained. Deuteronomy had already established God's schedule: first, God gives the people "rest" in the land; then the people gather in the central sanctuary (12:9–11). David cannot build the Temple because of the bloodshed associated with his military endeavors (22:8, cf. 28:3, NJB: "man of war"; not NRSV, NIV: "warrior"). Solomon fulfills God's promise of a son who would build the Temple (17:11–14) following the necessary condition of God's gift of "rest" for the land. This is accomplished by means of a pun on Solomon's name, relating it to *shalom*, "Peace, Peaceful" (v. 9b; in v. 9a KJV: "man of rest"; not NRSV, NIV: "man of peace"). Recent scholarship recognizes that the Chronicler's depiction is modeled upon Moses' transfer of authority to Joshua in Deuteronomy 31 and Joshua 1. Just as Moses was not allowed to enter the promised land, so David is forbidden to build the Temple. Three elements related to commissioning, a formula of encouragement, a description of the task, and a promise of God's presence, appear in both. Several verbal parallels are also present, especially the connection of "Be strong and of good courage; do not fear, be not dismayed" (v. 13b) with "be careful to do the statutes and the ordinances" (v. 13a), which only occur together in Joshua 1. The main point seems to be a linking of the momentous nature of the two paralleled tasks, the occupation of the promised land and the construction of the Temple.

23:1–27:34, David's Organization of the Levites. The Chronicler is fond of introducing major narratives with long lists (cf. 1 Chron. 1–9; 15:4–10, 16–24). Although it is likely that this collection, unique to Chronicles, has grown and developed over the course of time, at least a skeletal form of these chapters seems necessary for the argument of the work as a whole. Essentially, the lists emphasize David's devotion to the Temple, this time by lifting up his concern for its administration and liturgy rather than the accumulation of materials for its physical construction. *'Abodah* (Heb.), a key word occurring thirteen times in this section, can mean either "work" or "worship" and nicely summarizes the dual nature of the task.

1 Chron. 23:1–2 serves as a general heading for the remainder of 1 Chronicles (the narrative will resume with 28:1). The passage begins with the simple statement that David made Solomon king over Israel, passing over the bloodstained events of 1 Kings 1–2 in silence. David is depicted at the end of his life with a formula, "old and full of days," reserved for those who deserve great honor, such as Abraham (Gen. 25:8), Isaac (Gen. 35:29), and Job (Job 42:17). The translation "David was now an old man, weighed down with years" (REB), presents a feeble David that quite misses the point. The Chronicler intends to convey a David who, in the fullness of his life and as the climax of his reign, takes it upon himself to pass on the kingdom to Solomon, complete with an organized administrative system. This system divides into two carefully delineated areas: the religious (chaps. 23–26) and the secular (chap. 27).

1 Chron. 23:3–32 lists the divisions of the Levites (a supplementary list of Levites occurs in 24:20–31). Though this information has more to do with the postexilic situation than the time of David, it reaffirms the Chronicler's insistence that the roots of the present community reach deep into Davidic soil. After the Levites are numbered (the figure, thirty-eight thousand, is surely an exaggeration; cf. 12:26; Ezra 8:15–20), they are organized into three divisions according to the sons of Levi: Gershonites (vv. 7–11), Kohathites (vv. 12–20), and Merarites (vv. 21–23). The age for service in the Temple is notoriously varied in the OT: thirty, here in v. 3 and Num. 4:3; twenty-five in Num.

8:24; and twenty in v. 24 and Ezra 3:8. Verses 24–32 list their duties. As summarized in v. 32 the Levites were charged with responsibility for the tent of meeting and the sanctuary, as well as assisting the priests. With the erection of the Temple they were no longer required to carry the tabernacle (v. 26). The subordination of the Levites to the priests in these verses may reflect postexilic struggles over control of the Temple (Ezek. 44:10–14).

This distinction between priests and Levites continues in 24:1–19. Following an introduction tracing the priests through Aaron's surviving sons Eleazar and Ithamar (vv. 1–6a), these verses are exclusively concerned with describing David's division of the priesthood into twenty-four courses at God's command (v. 19). Historically, this organizational system was developed only after the return from Babylon and not in David's day. Two motivations led to its development. The first is a practical matter: the increased number of priests required a rotation in priestly duties. Second, this ordering of the priesthood may have been an attempt to resolve a squabble between the line of Abiathar, banned from the priesthood by Solomon (1 Kings 2:26), and the line of Zadok, represented by those priests returning from exile. By placing Zadok in Eleazar's line opposite Abiathar in Ithamar's line (v. 3, "Zadok . . . and Ahimelech" should read "Zadok . . . and Abiathar"; see 15:11; 1 Sam. 22:20) both are linked with Aaron through his two sons.

In 25:1–31 David enumerates and divides the musicians, like the Levites and priests in the previous chapters, into twenty-four courses of twelve musicians each (→ Music). As in chaps. 15–16 the musicians are regarded as Levites and the three families of Asaph (four divisions, v. 2), Heman (fourteen divisions, vv. 4–5), and Jeduthun (six divisions, v. 3) are mentioned, though this time the family of Heman is lifted up rather than that of Asaph (6:31–48).

Of interest here is the equation of music with prophecy (vv. 1–3; cf. 2 Chron. 20:14; 29:25; 34:30; 35:15). Most scholars recognize these twenty-four divisions as an ideal structure that did not exist in the Chronicler's time. By linking the musicians to the early cultic functions of pre-exilic prophecy, the work of the singers is elevated to the level of proclamation of God's word.

1 Chron. 26:1–32 lists the gatekeepers and other officials, elevating them to the status of Levites. Once again, three lines of gatekeepers are traced in vv. 1–19: Korah (vv. 1–3, 9), Obed-edom (vv. 4–8), and Merari (vv. 10–11); and the familiar ritual of casting lots is described in vv. 12–19. Interspersed among these last verses the Chronicler describes the Temple as it existed in his own day.

Verses 20–32 describe "other Levites," whose tasks were performed among the people themselves rather than within the confines of the Temple.

1 Chron. 27:1–34 lists the secular officials in David's administration. Four lists are presented, two of which deal with the nation (vv. 1–15; 16–24) and two of which pertain to the king (vv. 25–31; 32–34).

The number twelve abounds in the Chronicler's lists, probably due to the division of the year into twelve months (v. 1). In vv. 1–15 the military is organized into twelve divisions headed by commanders whose names have appeared in the list of David's "chief warriors" (11:10–47, NAB). Twenty-four thousand soldiers per division seems extremely high. Many have suggested that the Hebrew word translated "thousand" can also mean "military unit." This would result in twelve divisions with twenty-four military units in each division. The second list dealing with the nation enumerates the tribal leaders (vv. 16–24). By omitting the tribes of Asher and Gad the Chronicler keeps the number of tribes at twelve and reveals his interest in "all Israel."

1 Chron. 27:25–31, the first of the two lists pertaining to the king rather than the nation as a whole, lists those officials in charge of the royal fields, flocks, and treasuries. No trace of Solomon's intricate organization (1 Kings 4:7–19) is evident. The second list (vv. 32–34) enumerates David's seven advisers. Many suggest that the Jonathan mentioned in v. 32 is David's friend and Saul's son.

These varied lists combine to attribute to David the organization of both the secular and the religious spheres.

28:1–10, David's Second Speech. Actually, chaps. 28:1–29:25 form a single literary unit. In addition to the setting of Solomon's enthronement at a special ceremony, the various officials of Israel and the mighty warriors that frame the unit's beginning and end (28:1; 29:24) reveal this unity. Verse 1 introduces five sections: David's testament (28:2–10); David's transfer of the Temple plans to Solomon (28: 11–21); the people's contribution (29:1–9); David's prayer (29:10–20); and finally, the ceremony itself (29:21–25). Although the passage gives the appearance of being about the enthronement of Solomon, it will soon become obvious that the Temple is at the heart of the Chronicler's presentation.

1 Chron. 22:2–10, David's second speech, is addressed primarily to the officials (vv. 2–8). The king's words to his son (vv. 9–10) are clearly subordinated, possibly because the speech simply develops what David had earlier said to Solomon privately (22:7–16). As in that earlier speech, the two "houses" of God's promise in 1 Chron. 17 stand behind David's words. Once again, we hear of God's rejection of David's hopes to build the Temple (vv. 2–3; cf. 22:7–8); God's selection of Solomon as David's successor, thus instituting the dynasty (vv. 4–5; cf. 22:9); and God's selection of Solomon as the Temple builder (v. 6; cf. 22:10).

Three developments of the themes of 1 Chron. 17 deserve mention. First, the unparalleled reference to Solomon's election. The verb "choose" occurs three

times in these verses with reference to Solomon's becoming king (v. 5), adoption as God's son (another royal metaphor, v. 6), and construction of the Temple (v. 10). Second, a phrase in v. 5, variously translated "the throne of the kingdom of the LORD" (NRSV, NIV), "the throne of the LORD's sovereignty" (REB), or "Yahweh's sovereign throne" (NJB), recalls "my kingdom" in 17:14 and reiterates the idea that God is the true king of Israel. This would be especially important to the postexilic community living in a time when kingship in Israel meant Persian rule. Third, vv. 7–10 emphasize the need for obedience from both the leaders and Solomon.

28:11–21, The Temple Plans. Within 28:1–29:25 David's transfer of the Temple plans to Solomon (and all the people, v. 21) is of central importance, not the passing on of political leadership. The Chronicler may be modeling David upon the ministries of Moses and Ezekiel here. All three receive divine revelation concerning their building projects (cf. Moses and the tabernacle in Exod. 25:9, 40; and Ezekiel and the ideal temple in Ezek. 40–48). In addition, the Hebrew word for the "plan" (vv. 11, 12, 18, 19) is the same as that used in Exod. 25:9, 40 and similar to one used in Ezek. 43:10. The detailed description of the Temple vessels (vv. 13b–18; cf. 2 Chron. 4:6–22; 36:18; Ezra 1:7–11; 8:24–34) indicates the importance of these articles for the postexilic community, which rejoiced in the continuity in worship these utensils symbolized.

29:1–9, David's Third Speech. The Chronicler continues to draw parallels between David's preparations for the Temple and Moses' preparations for the tabernacle in the wilderness (Exod. 25–31; 35–40). Just as Moses had used a variety of materials for the construction of the tabernacle, now David uses these same materials (except iron, which was unknown in Moses' time). Just as Moses had sought contributions from the people (Exod. 25:1–7; 35:4–9, 20–29), now David does the same (v. 5b). David's generous contribution from his personal treasure is a new element, however, and serves to challenge the people to respond in similar fashion. Since only Levites could enter the Temple, this was the only way for the laity to participate in the construction, and the Chronicler uses terminology usually reserved for the priesthood ("consecrating themselves," v. 5b) to describe their response. The exaggerated figures of their enthusiastic contributions demonstrate the dedication of "all Israel" to the Temple.

29:10–20, David's Prayer. This magnificent prayer, one of the best-known passages in the books of Chronicles, comes at the completion of David's preparations for the Temple, just as his earlier prayer (17:16–27) stands at the beginning enclosing his activity. As if to symbolize all aspects of worship, the prayer employs all three common liturgical postures, each introduced with a stylized liturgical formula. The prayer begins with praise of God (vv. 10–12), modulates into thanksgiving for the offerings received (vv. 13–17), and concludes with petitions for God's continued presence with the people and Solomon (18–19). Once again we are reminded that the Chronicler's primary concern in these chapters is the Temple and the worship of God that takes place within its walls, not David.

29:21–25, Solomon's Enthronement. These verses, describing the enthronement of Solomon, reprise several of the themes first encountered in chaps. 10–12, David's rise to power, thus framing David's reign and contributing to the presentation of both reigns as a unity. The most important of these is the climax of the "all Israel" theme (11:1–3; 12:38–40), where it is claimed that "all the sons of King David pledged their allegiance to King Solomon" (v. 24; cf. vv. 21, 23, 25). This is a direct contradiction of 1 Kings 1–2. The pledge of support made by the leaders and mighty warriors (29:24; cf. 12:18) and the combination of feasting and joy in Israel (29:22; cf. 12:39–40) are additional indications of this paralleling of the two accessions.

29:26–30, Concluding Formula for David's Reign. With these glowing words the Chronicler concludes his account of David's reign, but not before he has related Solomon's accession to the throne. The reigns of David and Solomon form a single entity that this unusual reversal of the expected order serves to highlight. The sources mentioned here in conjunction with the prophetic names of Samuel, Nathan, and Gad are widely assumed to be our books of Samuel. "All the kingdoms of the lands" (v. 30) refers to those kingdoms close to and ultimately dominated by David's rule.

Bibliography

See 2 Chronicles, Bibliography.

2 Chronicles

MARK A. THRONTVEIT

INTRODUCTION

See 1 Chronicles, Introduction.

COMMENTARY

1 Chronicles 10:1–2 Chronicles 9:31
The United Monarchy (continued)

Chronicles was originally a single book. When it was translated into Greek, it was divided into two scrolls of roughly the same size. Unfortunately, this division rends asunder what the Chronicler worked so hard to join together: the reigns of David and Solomon.

1:1–9:31
Solomon

Solomon's role continues, complements, and completes that of David in that it is dominated by a detailed discussion of the construction of the Temple, seen to be the prime condition for the establishment of the Davidic dynasty (1 Chron. 17:12). The continuation of the dynasty, however, was contingent upon Solomon's obedience (1 Chron. 28:7). Accordingly, the Chronicler has omitted those details in 2 Kings 1–11 that question that obedience as well as several personal details of a positive nature that do not further the cause of glorifying the Temple or explaining God's purposes.

These chapters display a concentric arrangement. The actual construction (3:1–5:1) and dedication (5:2–7:22) of the Temple form a twin central core that is framed by Solomon's initial preparations (2:1–18) and finishing touches (8:1–16). Material relating Solomon's legendary wisdom and wealth serves to enclose the whole (1:1–17; 8:17–9:28).

1:1–17, Solomon's Worship, Wisdom, and Wealth. A brief introduction, omitting the earlier history's bloodbath, continues the blessings enjoyed under David (v. 1).

Verses 2–6 speak of Solomon's worship. Placing the tent of meeting, ordered by Moses to be made in the wilderness, and the bronze altar at Gibeon renders "the great high place" of 1 Kings 3:4 a legitimate place of worship (cf. Lev. 17:8–9). Thus, the Chronicler avoids the unfortunate image of Solomon worshiping at an illicit shrine. Instead, the first impression of Solomon is that of a pious king at the head of a procession of "all Israel" going to worship (NRSV, NIV: "inquire") and sacrifice at the only legitimate site before the construction of the Temple.

Verses 7–13 speak of Solomon's wisdom. Solomon's selfless prayer for wisdom (v. 10; granted in v. 12) is exactly what David had asked for him (1 Chron. 22:12). In Chronicles wisdom consists in the ability to build the Temple, not prudence, administrative skill, or insight into the natural sciences as in the omitted sections of the earlier history (1 Kings 3:16–28; 4:1–5:8; 5:9–14).

Verses 14–17 speak of Solomon's wealth. Moving this notice of Solomon's fiscal success from the end of his reign (1 Kings 10:26–29) suggests that such riches were a fulfillment of God's promise (v. 12b) and a preparation for the building of the Temple.

2:1–18, Initial Preparations for the Temple. The next seven chapters document the central event of Chronicles, the building of the Temple (→ Temple, The). Here, the crucial skills and materials of Huram, king of Tyre ("Hiram" in 1 Kings) are negotiated through correspondence. A central core of Solomon's letter (vv. 3–10) and Huram's response (vv. 11–17) is framed by Solomon's conscription of laborers for the project (vv. 2, 17–18). In keeping with his role as designated Temple builder, Solomon is in complete control throughout the narrative. He, not Hiram, initiates the correspondence and sets the price for the timber (vv. 3, 10; cf. 1 Kings 5:1, 9). Furthermore, Solomon clarifies that the Temple is a place of worship, not a house for God (vv. 4–6; cf. 7:12).

3:1–5:1, Construction of the Temple. Both Kings and Chronicles connect the Temple with Israel's past, Kings with the Exodus, the beginning of the nation (1 Kings 6:1), Chronicles with Abraham, the beginning of its faith (2 Chron 3:1; cf. Gen. 22:2, 14). The Chronicler abridges 1 Kings 6–7 to emphasize proper worship over architecture and presents the Temple as the continuation of the tabernacle through several allusions and parallels. Following a plan of the Temple in vv. 3–7, fourteen repetitions of "he made" occur in 3:8–4:11,

reproducing the format of the construction of the tabernacle in Exod. 36:1–39:32. Both Moses and Solomon were empowered by God for their respective tasks of building (Exod. 35:31; 2 Chron. 2:3–7). Both make the bronze altar (Exod. 27:1–2; 2 Chron. 4:1) and the other furnishings for their respective sanctuaries (Exod. 31; 2 Chron. 4). The "nails," referred to only in 1 Chron. 3:9, serve the same purpose as the "hooks" used in the tabernacle (e.g., Exod. 26:32), and the "curtain" (v. 14), only here with reference to the Temple, normally appears in the tabernacle (Exod. 26:31–35; 36:35–36).

5:2–7:22, Dedication of the Temple. Twice as long as 1 Kings 8:1–9:8, the account of the dedication of the Temple falls into three sections.

2 Chron. 5:2–6:2 models Solomon's installation of the Ark in the sanctuary on David's transfer of the Ark to Jerusalem (1 Chron. 13–16). Both took place during a national assembly (1 Chron. 13:1–5; 15:3; 2 Chron. 5:2–3), with sacrifices during the procession and installation (1 Chron. 15:26; 16:1; 2 Chron. 5:6), musical accompaniment (1 Chron. 13:8; 15:16–28; 2 Chron. 5:12–13), and a royal blessing (1 Chron. 16:1–3; 2 Chron. 6:3). In both, the Levites, not the priests as in the earlier history, carry the Ark (1 Chron. 15:2, 11–15; 2 Chron. 5:4) and sing, "He is good, his steadfast love endures forever" (1 Chron. 16:34; 2 Chron. 5:13). As at the tabernacle's dedication (Exod. 40:34–38), the Temple is filled with a cloud (vv. 13–14) signifying the divine acceptance that Solomon relates in his closing statement (6:1–2).

2 Chron. 6:3–7:3, Janus-like, looks backward and forward. Verses 3–11 look back to God's promise to establish Solomon on David's throne (1 Chron. 17:10–14; 22:6–13; 28:2–10). Verses 12–42, Solomon's prayer of dedication, look forward to the many prayers that will be offered in or toward the Temple in chaps. 10–36. God visibly confirms all David and Solomon have done and accentuates the continuity between the wilderness tabernacle and the Temple. A Temple filled with the glory of the Lord recalls the installation of the Ark (v. 2; cf. 5:13–14; Exod. 40:34–38). The accompanying fire from heaven recalls the designation of the Temple site in David's time (7:1; cf. 1 Chron. 21:26). The people add their approval by singing once again, "He is good, his steadfast love endures forever" (7:3; cf. 1 Chron. 16:34; 2 Chron. 5:13).

2 Chron 7:4–22 concludes the Temple's dedication. In vv. 4–11 two weeks of extensive dedicatory sacrifices and feasting culminate in "all Israel's" joy. Verses 12–22, God's response to Solomon, are crucial for the Chronicler's theology, especially as set forth in v. 14, where the vocabulary of repentance is introduced: God will forgive and restore those under judgment when they "humble themselves, pray, seek [God's] face, and turn from their wicked ways." The rest of 2 Chronicles "chronicles" this principle of repentance in the lives of the kings of Judah.

8:1–16, Completion of the Temple. These verses summarize Solomon's other achievements. Building programs typify blessing in Chronicles. Further contributing to Solomon's dominance in the narrative, v. 2 claims that Huram ceded twenty cities to Solomon (cf. 1 Kings 9:11, where Solomon gives Hiram twenty cities). Israel reaches its greatest extent in these verses (vv. 3–4, 17–18) despite the historical probability that Solomon lost territory during his reign. These instances of political success, however, are tempered by references to the building of the Temple that enclose them (vv. 1, 16) and descriptions of the establishment of Mosaic sacrifice (vv. 12–13; cf. Num. 28–29) and Davidic cultic organization (vv. 14–15; cf. 1 Chron. 23–27).

8:17–9:31, Solomon's Wisdom, Wealth, and Fame. Solomon's account ends as it began (1:1–17), with a blended discussion of his exemplary wisdom, wealth, and fame.

"The greatness of [his] wisdom" is especially praised by the Queen of Sheba (vv. 5–6) during her visit (vv. 1–12). The Chronicler also reaffirms the belief that God's rule would last forever, even without a king on "his" (i.e., "God's") throne (v. 8; cf. 1 Chron. 17:14; 28:5; 29:23; 2 Chron. 13:8), a belief with obvious significance for his postexilic community.

The legendary wealth of Solomon is depicted in vv. 13–21. His annual income of 666 talents of gold (v. 13) totals nearly 25 tons! This idealized vision of wealth also includes golden shields, an ivory throne, a golden footstool, other luxury items, shiploads of exotic animals, and commodities from the ends of the earth.

As a consequence of such wisdom and wealth, Solomon's fame spreads among all the kings of the earth, who bring him tribute (vv. 22–28). By omitting the earlier history's negative evaluation of Solomon's apostasy (1 Kings 11), the Chronicler concludes his picture of the United Monarchy with a pious Solomon seated in splendor upon God's throne at what amounts to the center of the universe.

10:1–28:27
The Divided Monarchy

In 1 Chron. 10:14 God had "turned" the kingdom over to David, thereby initiating the period of the United Monarchy (1 Chron. 10:1–2 Chron. 9:31). Now the same Hebrew root refers to God's control of events at the beginning of the period of the Divided Monarchy (2 Chron. 10:15, NRSV: "turn of affairs"). These chapters relate the fortunes of Judah following the separation of the Northern Kingdom. In marked contrast to Kings, Chronicles focuses upon the Southern Kingdom and carefully omits references to the North except where they illuminate the affairs of Judah. This distinctive approach accords well with the Chroni-

cler's interest in the Davidic dynasty and Solomon's Temple. Both king and cult were situated in Jerusalem, as was his audience, the postexilic community.

The unified reign of David and Solomon is now the yardstick by which the reigns of the following kings are measured (cf. 2 Chron. 7:10; 11:17; 35:4). Obedient kings prosper, usually in such tangible terms as wealth, military victory, and subsequent tribute, "rest," successful building projects, and large families. Disobedient kings experience punishment, usually in the form of military defeat, but also illness and the loss of the people's support. In addition, the text is peppered with a host of otherwise unknown prophets who tirelessly point out the ramifications of this theological perspective.

10:1–12:16
Rehoboam

Rehoboam's reign plays an important role in the Chronicler's presentation. Additions to the story related in 1 Kings 12 and 14 establish three patterns that will govern much of the following narrative: sin brings failure (the division of the kingdom 10:1–11:4); obedience brings success (11:5–23); and although disobedience brings punishment, repentance can bring deliverance (12:1–16).

10:1–11:4, The Monarchy Divides. The earlier history and Chronicles disagree on the division of the monarchy. 1 Kings sees Israel's separation from Judah as a judgment on Solomon's apostasy (1 Kings 11). Since Chronicles omits this material, however, the schism cannot be blamed on Solomon's excesses. Rather, the rebellion is presented as the revolt of an ungrateful slave (1 Chron. 13:6). Yet, the Chronicler alludes to Ahijah's prophecy (v. 15; cf. 1 Kings 11:29–39), in which God promises to tear the kingdom from Solomon and give it to Jeroboam (vv. 31, 38), whose rebellion is said to be God's will (10:15; 11:4)! Although textual problems in vv. 2–3 preclude a satisfactory solution, the heavy yoke imposed by Solomon (vv. 4, 9–11, 14), Rehoboam's failure to heed the elders' advice (vv. 6–8, 13), and Jeroboam's rebellion (v. 19) suggest that all three must share in the blame.

11:5–23, Rehoboam: Obedience Rewarded. The Chronicler uses Rehoboam's reign to illustrate the principles by which God directs Israel's history. Careful selection and rearrangement of information from the earlier history and the composition of new material result in a different portrayal of this king, demonstrating that God rewards faithful obedience with prosperity and blessing.

The united reigns of David and Solomon established the pattern of success; now Rehoboam and the people exemplify that ideal by walking in the way of David and Solomon for three years (v. 17). The story of their faithful obedience and the blessing and prosperity that resulted is recounted in three sections. Verses 5–12 list fifteen strategic locations fortified by Rehoboam to protect the nation from attack on Israel's western, southern, and eastern frontiers, though this building activity was actually undertaken following Shishak's invasion (12:1–12). By placing it first, the Chronicler furthers his depiction of Rehoboam as an obedient and therefore prosperous king in this charmed three-year period of his reign. Verses 13–17 narrate Jeroboam's religious practices and the resultant defection of "all Israel" as represented by the priests and Levites who rallied to Rehoboam and the Temple in Jerusalem. Verses 18–23 lift up a third mark of God's blessing, the gift of many children—twenty-eight sons and sixty daughters to be exact. Building projects, concern for worship, and the gift of children will continue throughout Chronicles as signs of blessing.

12:1–16, Rehoboam: Punished and Repentant. The Chronicler completes his portrayal of possibilities for subsequent kings in the reign of this first king after David and Solomon. Unlike his source (1 Kings 14:25–28), the Chronicler clearly attributes the invasion of Shishak of Egypt (Sheshonq I, ca. 945–925 B.C.) to the sin of Rehoboam and all Israel (vv. 1–2, 5). Just as clearly, however, the Chronicler states that because Rehoboam and the leaders humbled themselves and repented, God spared them from complete destruction (vv. 6–7, 12). Thus, the Chronicler has reshaped this material in order to illustrate his theology of retribution, in this case the effects of unfaithfulness and repentance. The blessing of obedience was illustrated in the beginning of Rehoboam's reign (chap. 11). In keeping with the paradigmatic character of these chapters, the Chronicler's terminology of retribution, established in Solomon's prayer at the dedication of the Temple (6:24–25) and God's response (7:14), is abundantly present ("forsake," "be unfaithful," "humble oneself," "seek," "abandon," and "rebel").

13:1–14:1
Abijah

Chaps. 13–16 are thematically united. They are tied together by the fivefold repetition of the key word "rely" (13:18; 14:11; 16:7 [twice], 8) which appears nowhere else in Chronicles. This suggests that we are to see the reigns of Abijah and Asa as "sermons" preached back to back on the theme of "reliance upon God."

The earlier history had roundly condemned Abijah (Abijam) for his unfaithfulness (1 Kings 15:3–6). The Chronicler, however, devotes nearly three times more space to this ruler and refrains from any negative judgments regarding his reign, portraying him as a staunch defender of the faith. The Chronicler is more interested in depicting the importance of faith and what

God did through Abijah than in historically accurate biography. This appears, above all, in the otherwise unrecorded battle account between Jeroboam and Abijah (vv. 2b–19). The huge numbers of v. 3 cannot be taken literally. Rather, the two-to-one ratio emphasizes the God-given nature of the victory and may illustrate the defensive nature of Abijah's participation.

The extraordinary speech that forms the core of the chapter (vv. 4–12) bristles with the basic points of the Chronicler's theology: David's throne, Solomon's Temple, and "all Israel." The perpetuity of the Davidic dynasty (vv. 5–8a; cf. 1 Chron. 17:12, 14) as a "covenant of salt" (v. 5, NRSV, NIV; NJB: "inviolable covenant"; cf. Num. 18:19) and the legitimacy of the Jerusalem cult (vv. 8b–12a) serve as focal points for the address. Whether through Jeroboam's rebellion or Rehoboam's folly, both North and South had fallen short of the Chronicler's theocratic ideal in the past. Now, however, since there is a faithful Davidic king on the throne and proper worship in Solomon's Temple, no excuse remains for the Northern people to continue in their previously justified rebellion. Thus, Abijah's speech is a summons for them to return to their rightful place as part of "all Israel" following the schism of 922 B.C., which shattered the unity forged in the reigns of David and Solomon. Hezekiah will offer a similar summons for the North to return following the fall of the North to Assyria in 722 B.C. (30:6–9).

The account closes with an illustration of the futility of fighting against the Lord (v. 12) in terms of the "holy war" that follows (vv. 13–20). Justified as their rebellion might have been at the time, Abijah, as Rehoboam's successor, serves as God's instrument in the chastisement of those who persist in their rebellion against the house of David.

14:2–16:14
Asa

1 Kings 15:9–24 presents Asa's reign in glowing terms, concluding that his heart was "true to the LORD all his days" (1 Kings 15:14). His foreign alliance with Ben-hadad of Damascus (1 Kings 15:19) and the diseased feet of his old age (1 Kings 15:23), however, allowed the Chronicler to recast Asa's reign in ways that more clearly reveal his own theological concerns.

The Chronicler's discussion of Asa forms the second half of his investigation of the theme "reliance upon God" already begun in the account of Abijah (chap. 13; see commentary above on 13:1–14:1). It was noted there that all five occurrences of the root "rely" in Chronicles appear in these four chapters. In Asa's case, however, another key term in the Chronicler's theological vocabulary makes its presence felt. Two roots, each with the meaning "seek," appear a total of nine times in chaps. 14–16.

The Chronicler's affinity for patterns that organize and portray the kings as models to emulate or avoid is also in evidence. As in the case of Rehoboam, Asa's reign divides into two unequal periods, a first in which he experiences the blessings of covenant faithfulness (chaps. 14–15) and a second in which the dire results of his apostasy are made clear (chap. 15).

Less obvious is the concentric arrangement of Asa's reign that sets the positive aspects of his first period against his troubled closing years. Asa's covenant renewal (1 Chron. 15:9–19) contrasts sharply with the covenant (JB, NRSV, REB: "alliance"; NIV: "treaty") made with Ben-hadad (16:1–3) and forms the central pivot of the narrative. His victory over Zerah and the Ethiopians, the result of his trust in God (14:8–15), and his reforms in obedience to the prophetic word of Azariah (15:1–8) again contrast with his lack of trust and Hanani's prophetic rebuke (16:4–10). Enclosing the whole is the dramatic contrast between the report of Asa's prosperity (14:1b–8), linked to his devout seeking of the Lord (vv. 4, 7), and his diseased feet (16:11–14), the result of his failure to seek the Lord (16:12).

14:2–15:19, Asa's Faithfulness. The Chronicler expands upon the favorable report of Asa's cultic reforms found in 1 Kings 15:9–15 in order to drive home his message that faithfulness leads to blessing. On three occasions it is said that the land had "rest" during his administration (vv. 1, 6, 7 [NRSV: "peace"]), a characteristic accolade in Chronicles (cf. 1 Chron. 22:8–10). Asa uses the peaceful nature of his first ten years to build fortified cities (v. 7), another characteristic of blessing and prosperity. Finally, he is able to mobilize an army of 580,000 drawn from Judah and Benjamin (v. 8).

2 Chron. 14:9–15 reports an attempted invasion by Zerah the Ethiopian. Faced with the loss of his kingdom and outnumbered two to one (v. 9), Asa displays his complete reliance upon God (v. 11) and his prayer is answered, as God had promised (6:34–35).

2 Chron. 15:1–19 continues the expansion of Asa's pious acts with a second stage of the religious reforms begun in 14:1–8 (vv. 8–19) in response to the encouraging words of Azariah (vv. 1–7). These addresses, delivered by otherwise unknown prophets, explicate the Chronicler's own theological application of retributive justice. They do not follow the usual outlines of prophetic speech and are better seen as sermons on biblical, usually prophetic, texts that were already well established in the Chronicler's postexilic community. Azariah's typical address begins with a "doctrinal statement" that the Lord will be with them as long as they remain faithful (v. 2b). A second section, devoted to "application," recalls Israel's past (here, probably the time of the judges, when Israel was without the true God, a teaching priest, or the Torah) in order to show the effects of faith and disbelief (vv. 3–6). A final sec-

tion of "exhortation" quotes Jer. 31:16 and Zeph. 3:16 and urges Asa to complete his cultic reform.

16:1–14, Asa's Faithlessness. The second period of Asa's reign, covering the last five years, is styled as a complete reversal of his first, faithful, period (see commentary above on 14:2–15:19). His bribe of Ben-hadad and subsequent "covenant" (vv. 1–6) betray his reliance upon foreign alliances rather than God. Hanani's prophetic rebuke (vv. 7–10) attests the change in the king's behavior that had earlier elicited prophetic encouragement from Azariah. Ironically, even at the end of his life (vv. 11–14) physicians are sought rather than the Lord (v. 12) by a king named "He [God] heals."

17:1–21:1
Jehoshaphat (ca. 874–850 B.C.)

In the very center of his presentation of the Divided Monarchy (chaps. 10–28), the Chronicler devotes four chapters to the reign of Jehoshaphat, who exemplifies the Chronicler's concept of a strong leader, though not without flaws. Praised for his faithfulness and rewarded for his obedience with building projects, honor, wealth, rest, and victory in battle, Jehoshaphat nevertheless experiences prophetic censure (19:1–3) and punishment (20:37) for his alliance with the Northern kings Ahab and Ahaziah.

17:1–19, Jehoshaphat's Reign. All the earmarks of a pious king characterize the opening of Jehoshaphat's reign, including the construction of extensive fortifications in Judah as well as those Ephraimite garrisons captured by Asa (v. 2), removal of the high places (v. 6; contra 20:33), and his faithfulness in seeking God (v. 4). As usual in Chronicles, seeking God results in God's presence and the establishment of his kingdom (v. 3), though the mention of tribute received from Judah (v. 5) is unique to Jehoshaphat's reign. Other unusual characteristics include the delegation of sixteen princes, priests, and Levites in an itinerant teaching commission charged with instructing the people in the "book of the law of the LORD" (vv. 7–9), which would have been the Pentateuch for the Chronicler. The chapter, which serves as a general introduction to one of the Chronicler's model kings, closes as it began, with stereotypical reference to Jehoshaphat's military prowess (vv. 10–19).

18:1–19:3, Alliance with Ahab of Israel. The Chronicler's use of this story from 1 Kings 22 is instructive. There, the pitting of Micaiah, the lone prophet of the Lord, against four hundred court prophets dramatically illustrates the difference between true and false prophecy and relates Ahab's gruesome demise. The Chronicler, however, employs this Northern story, quite unflattering to Jehoshaphat, as a warning against the dangers of foreign involvement through the addition of a new introduction (18:1–2) containing the ominous mention of Jehoshaphat's marriage alliance with Ahab's house (v. 1b) and a new conclusion complete with prophetic rebuke (19:1–3).

The fateful alliance was unnecessary. Ahab may have needed Jehoshaphat's support against Syria, but Jehoshaphat was in no such need. The previous chapter had shown Jehoshaphat's kingdom to be strong and prosperous. Nevertheless, the alliance was made and strengthened through the marriage of Athaliah, the daughter of Ahab and Jezebel, to Jehoram, Jehoshaphat's son (2 Kings 8:18; 2 Chron. 21:6). The effects of this alliance, through the influence of the Omrides, who would occupy the throne of David until the reign of Joash, were disastrous. Jehoshaphat's reforms were overturned, Baal worship was cultivated in Judah, and the Davidic dynasty was nearly extinguished (22:10–12). Yet despite his condemnation of foreign alliances, the Chronicler clearly favors Jehoshaphat as he affirms God's sovereignty behind lying prophets (v. 22), wayward arrows (v. 33), and the avoidance of God's wrath (19:1–3).

19:4–11, Judicial Reform. These verses have much in common with Jehoshaphat's teaching delegation (17:7–9) and may have been placed here as a testimony to the "good" that brings about Jehoshaphat's avoidance of God's wrath (19:3). On this reading, the king responds to Jehu's warning by furthering his earlier religious reforms in the judicial sphere, largely through the creation of a double system of local tribunals and a central court lodged in Jerusalem aimed at bringing the people back to God. Jehoshaphat's name, "Yahweh is Judge," may have suggested this king's pious motivation. The system itself is in general agreement with the provisions of Deut. 16:18–17:13, with the exception of the division into sacral and civil law (v. 11) that arose in the Persian period and reflects the Chronicler's own time.

20:1–21:1, Jehoshaphat's Victorious Prayer. Jehoshaphat's magnificent "battle of faith" is the centerpiece of the Chronicler's account of the Divided Monarchy (2 Chron. 10–28). All the major themes appear, including the necessity of dependence upon God rather than foreign alliances, retribution, and levitical leadership in worship, as well as those twin pillars of Chronistic theology, God's promises of an eternal dynasty (1 Chron. 17:12) and answered prayer (2 Chron. 7:14).

The story itself falls into an interesting structure. Verses 1–4 and 28–30 frame the whole, dramatically contrasting Jehoshaphat's fear (v. 3, NRSV: "Jehoshaphat was afraid") with the "fear of God" that fell upon Israel's enemies (v. 29). Within these bookends Jehoshaphat's prayer (vv. 5–13), God's response (vv. 14–

19), and the "battle" itself (vv. 20–27) chart the reasons for the change.

The key word "stand" is important throughout. The first and third sections are introduced with the phrase "Jehoshaphat stood . . ." (vv. 5, 20b). More important, a salient statement containing the key word "stand" has been strategically placed in the center of all three. In the first section, Jehoshaphat's prayer, "we will stand before this house . . . and cry to you in our distress, and you will hear and save" (v. 9), echoes Solomon's prayer at the dedication of the Temple (6:20, 28–30; cf. 7:13–15). In the second section, God's response, the people are advised to "stand still and see the victory of the LORD" (v. 17), evoking Moses' speech at the Red Sea (Exod. 14:13). Finally, in the third section, we read that "the Ammonites and Moab stood against [NRSV: "attacked"] the inhabitants of Mt. Seir" (v. 23), recalling the similar rout under Gideon's leadership (Judg. 7:21–23). Jehoshaphat's positive reformulation of Isa. 7:9, "hold firmly to your faith in the LORD your God and you will be upheld; have faith in his prophets and you will succeed," summarizes the Chronicler's message in chaps. 10–28 succinctly. These elements combine to remind the Chronicler's postexilic community, which was experiencing conflict with the descendants of these same peoples (v. 1; cf. Neh. 2:19; 4:1–3, 7–9; 6:1–4; 13), of the benefits of prayer and a trusting faith in God.

The account closes with a summary of Jehoshaphat's reign (20:30–34; 21:1b) framing another prophetic reproof of this exemplary ruler, whose only flaw was involvement in foreign alliances of a military (18:1–2; 19:1–3) and an entrepreneurial (20:35–37) nature.

21:2–22:1
Jehoram (ca. 850–843 B.C.)

Jehoshaphat's fateful alliance with Ahaziah of the Northern Kingdom resulted in more than shipwreck and economic disaster (20:35–37). The tragic sequel to that alliance unfolds in the reign of Jehoram, the first king to receive a totally negative presentation in Chronicles, but only the first of three reigns in which the Davidic dynasty is threatened with extinction.

As usual, the Chronicler expands his source (2 Kings 8:16–24) and structures the story to highlight his theological concerns. At the center of the Chronicler's presentation is a letter from the prophet Elijah (vv. 12–15) framed by two sets of rebellions: Edom and Libnah (vv. 8–11) and the Philistines and Arabs (vv. 16–17). The Chronicler's religious appraisal of Jehoram's reign (vv. 6–7) and the judgments of God and the people upon the king (vv. 17–19) surround these rebellions. The whole is enclosed by the similarly worded chronological notices of vv. 5, 20.

We are meant to compare these paired items by reading them through the theological lens of Elijah's letter. 1 Chron. 21:12–15 is a scathing judgment upon the king's unfaithfulness that announces plague for the nation and Jehoram's family, as well as a revolting disease for the king himself. The paired rebellions that frame this horrific announcement (vv. 8–11, 16–17) testify to the appropriateness of the judgment regarding Jehoram's political failure. Retributive justice is expressed in the poetic justice of a king who began his reign by murdering his own brothers (v. 4) and ending his reign with the loss of his sons and wives (v. 17; 22:1). The pairing of the Chronicler's theological judgment of Jehoram (vv. 6–7) with the judgment of God and the people is interesting on two accounts. First, the Chronicler uses this bleak moment in the history of the Davidic dynasty to fan the flames of God's promise regarding the "house of David" (v. 7; cf. 1 Chron. 17:12; not "Judah," as in 2 Kings 8:19). Second, the Chronicler's dispassionate judgment (v. 7a) contrasts starkly with the gruesome details of God's judgment (18–19a) and the macabre judgment of the people who "made no fire in his honor" (v. 19b).

22:2–9
Ahaziah (ca. 843 B.C.)

Ahaziah, Jehoram's youngest son, reigned for one year. He cannot have been forty-two at his accession (v. 2, MT, NEB, RSV, NRSV), since his father died at forty (21:20). But whether he was twenty-two (2 Kings 8:26; NIV, REB) or twenty (LXX) is impossible to say. His reign is a continuation of the evil influence of the Northern house of Ahab, especially in the person of his mother, Athaliah (vv. 3–4).

Ahaziah was so thoroughly identified with the house of Ahab that he, too, dies in Jehu's bloody coup (vv. 7–9; cf. 2 Kings 9–10). For the Chronicler, Ahaziah's death was divine retribution meted out for his foreign alliance with the North (v. 7). Now, however, there is no Davidic heir (v. 9), and God's promise of an eternal dynasty (1 Chron. 17:12) is very much in jeopardy.

22:10–23:21
Athaliah (ca. 843–837 B.C.)

Athaliah represents the final link in the chain of events following Jehoshaphat's tragic alliance with Ahab. After usurping the throne, Israel's only ruling queen solidified her position with the annihilation of those members of the royal household with a claim of succession, extending even to the murder of her own grandchildren. Her tyrannical six-year reign is mercifully devoid of detail; even the standard royal formulas are omitted in a subtle denial of the legitimacy of this reign. The biblical record prefers to relate the story of another woman, Jehoshabeath, who hides the true

king (1 Chron. 23:3, 7, 10), the infant Joash, in the Temple, thus preserving her nephew and, more important, the Davidic line from extinction.

Several differences in the Chronicler's version of the story are instructive. First of all, he makes Jehoshabeath the wife of Jehoiada, the priest who ultimately engineers the coup against Athaliah. Second, the part played by the priests and Levites is significantly enhanced. The popular support that Jehoiada enjoyed in Kings is also present in Chronicles, but since only priests and Levites can enter the Temple (v. 6), it is they who actually carry out the capture and execution of the queen (vv. 12–15). Third, in addition to merely presenting the seven-year-old king to the assembly, Jehoiada dramatically announces, "Here is the king's son who must reign, as the LORD promised concerning the sons of David" (23:3b, NAB), recalling the programmatic promise of 1 Chron. 17:12. Fourth, in Kings the covenant that follows is made between the people and God (2 Kings 11:17). In Chronicles the same covenant is struck between Jehoiada, the people, and the king (v. 16), emphasizing the enhanced role of the high priest in the Chronicler's postexilic community. The terms of the covenant restore the exclusive worship of the Lord and result in the banishment of Baal worship throughout the land (vv. 16–21).

24:1–27
Joash (ca. 837–? B.C.)

The accession of Joash restored the house of David to the throne of Israel following three reigns of "captivity" in the house of Ahab. 2 Kings 12 evaluates this reign positively (v. 2). Joash's payment of tribute to Hazael of Syria (vv. 17–18) and his violent death in the midst of a conspiracy (vv. 19–21), however, conflict with that judgment. Thus, the Chronicler returns to the stylized pattern previously seen in the depictions of Rehoboam (2 Chron. 11–12) and Asa (2 Chron. 14–16), in which an initial period of success is followed by a period of sharp decline. This pattern will hold for the next three kings (Joash, Amaziah, and Uzziah) as well.

24:1–14, Faithful Joash. To illustrate the faithful character of the first period of Joash's reign, the Chronicler presents his restoration of the Temple. Although after 130 years the Temple was probably in need of structural repair, the invasion and misuse of its space and its objects in the service of Baal, most recently at the hands of Athaliah (v. 7; the meaning of "her sons" is unclear), constituted the real problem. The Levites played an important role, though they are criticized (a very rare occurrence in these books!) for being slow to respond (v. 5). In the end, the young king secured the necessary funding for the project by means of a tax originally employed by Moses for the building of the tabernacle (Exod. 30:12–16; 38:25–26), and by David and Solomon for the original construction of the Temple (1 Chron. 29:1–9). The joyful response of the people, coupled with their generosity (v. 10), reflects the joy of the wilderness community (Exod. 36:4–7) and that of David's subjects (1 Chron. 29:9) upon the completion of the tabernacle.

24:15–16, The Death of Jehoiada. The death of Jehoiada, though not mentioned in Kings, serves to divide the Chronicler's account of the reign of Joash into two halves. While Jehoiada was alive, Joash remained faithful (vv. 1–14; cf. v. 2). Following the death of the faithful priest, however, the king reverted to the sins of his forbears (vv. 17–27). The length of his life, 130 years, and his burial in the royal tombs in the city of David is a testimony to Jehoiada's faithful service.

24:17–27, Faithless Joash. Without Jehoiada to guide him, Joash is persuaded to allow the remnants of Athaliah's officials (possibly those referred to as "her sons" in v. 7) to abandon the Temple and return to their idolatry (vv. 17–19). The following prophetic rebuke comes from the son of Jehoiada (v. 20). Zechariah's public execution at the command of the king (v. 21) results in invasion by a Syrian army empowered by the Lord to defeat a larger Judean force and the transfer of booty to Damascus. The assassination of the king by "his servants" (vv. 23–25) completes the answer to Zechariah's dying prayer, "May the LORD see and avenge!" (v. 22).

25:1–26:2
Amaziah (?–? B.C.)

Like his father, Joash, Amaziah is faithful at the start of his reign and is considered a good king by the earlier history (2 Kings 14:3). Also as with his father, the nation suffers military defeat (v. 22) and Amaziah dies at the hand of his own people, the target of a conspiracy (v. 27). The Chronicler solves the problem of the defeat and inglorious death of an essentially good king by attributing his end to his sin. As he had done with his description of the reign of Joash, he splits this reign into a faithful and an unfaithful period and provides two long additions to his sources (vv. 5–10, 13–16; cf. v. 20). The Chronicler's evaluation is ultimately drawn against the backdrop of the king's responses to two military efforts and two prophetic encounters.

25:1–13, Relatively Faithful Amaziah. "Faithful" is used guardedly here. The Chronicler carefully qualifies his verdict that Amaziah "did what was right in the eyes of the LORD" with the addition that this was not done "with a true heart" (v. 2, NRSV; NIV: "wholeheartedly"). This might refer to the differences between the two periods into which his reign is divided, but the

negative notes sounded in vv. 6 and 9 regarding his hiring of mercenaries suggests a wavering faith throughout. Perhaps we should say that instead of moving from good to bad, he goes from bad to worse!

Verses 5–13, the report of the battle with Edom, provide the context for the more positive judgment of Amaziah. His hiring of mercenaries from the North is utterly condemned by a prophet who warns the king of the dangers of foreign alliances. In obedience to the prophetic word, Amaziah dismisses his Northern allies and proceeds to defeat the Edomites with God's help.

25:14–26:2, Faithless Amaziah. The Chronicler has connected the two battle accounts with an unparalleled report that Amaziah worshiped the idols of his defeated foes (v. 14). Another nameless prophet who reiterates the inevitability of divine retribution immediately opposes this foolish act (vv. 15–16). Why would one worship the defeated gods of a defeated people? Nevertheless, pleased with his success at the expense of Edom, a prideful Amaziah decides to take on King Joash of Israel. Even this Northern king realizes the arrogant pride that will cause Amaziah's downfall and colorfully says as much in the delightfully macabre fable of the thistle and the cedar (vv. 17–19). The Chronicler's additional comment that Amaziah's refusal to heed the prophet was "God's doing" (v. 20, NRSV, REB; NAB: "God had determined") indicates his theological appraisal of Amaziah's idolatry. Assassination (v. 27) fulfilled the prophetic announcement of his death (v. 16) and indicates that the conspiracy had begun in response to his apostasy. The precise ending of this section is difficult to determine. These last verses (26:1–2) are taken from the earlier history, where they form the clear conclusion to the reign of Amaziah (2 Kings 14:21–22). In Chronicles, they really form a transition between the reigns of Amaziah and his son Uzziah.

26:3–23
Uzziah (?–? B.C.)

Uzziah completes the triptych of kings whose reigns started well, but ended badly. Between an introductory section drawn from 2 Kings 15:2–3 (vv. 3–4) and a conclusion drawn from 2 Kings 15:5–7 (vv. 20b–23) the Chronicler has again divided his account into two periods. The more positive section enlarges upon the blessings that resulted from Uzziah's faithfulness (vv. 5–15). The second section explains the leprosy that struck the king later in life (2 Kings 15:5) as due to his unfaithfulness (vv. 16–21). The success enjoyed by Uzziah (and Jeroboam II, his Northern contemporary) was largely due to the ineffectiveness of Assyria during this period.

26:3–15, Faithful Uzziah. These verses attempt to account for the fifty-two years of Uzziah's reign (v. 3) and his restoration of Elath, the harbor on the northeast corner of the Red Sea that had revolted under Jehoram (21:8–10). Three parallels with the treatment of the previous two reigns suffice. First, the Chronicler cites the earlier history's positive verdict, itself containing a parallel reference to Amaziah (v. 4). Second, he omits the qualification concerning the high places in the same verse, as he had done for Joash and Amaziah. Finally, he provides the king with Zechariah, a godly counselor in the mold of Joash's mentor, Jehoiada (v. 5). Building projects, success in war, fame, and strength complete the picture of a pious ruler who prospered "as long as he sought the LORD" (v. 5).

26:16–23, Faithless Uzziah. These verses attempt to account for Uzziah's leprosy. Again, certain parallels with Joash and Amaziah are evident. Uzziah's sinful pride (v. 16) causes his downfall, as it had his father's (25:19). Again, "prophetic" rebuke and the announcement of judgment follow an unfaithful act, this time from a priest named Azariah (v. 18). And, yet again, the announcement results in punishment from the hand of God. Despite the last chapter of his life, a virtual illustration of Prov. 16:18, it would be wrong to overlook the splendid achievements of this king, who is slighted in the earlier history.

27:1–9
Jotham (ca. ?–742 B.C.)

The brief account of Jotham is concentrically structured with blessings at the center (vv. 3–5), surrounded by the reasons for such blessing (vv. 2, 6) and opening and closing formulas taken from 2 Kings 15 (vv. 1, 7–9). It also begins a new pattern in the Chronicler's presentation of the kings of the Divided Monarchy. In contrast to the previous three presentations of Joash, Amaziah, and Uzziah, which had been divided into positive and negative periods, Jotham receives the first unblemished report since Abijah, though his subjects did not share in this commendation (v. 2b). The totally negative presentation of Ahaz and the exemplary reign of Hezekiah that follow are similarly consistent and suggest that these alternating reigns illustrate the sequence of a righteous man followed by a wicked son and a righteous grandson upon which Ezekiel bases his teaching of individual responsibility (Ezek. 18: 5–20). This assurance, coupled with Jotham's example of faithfulness (vv. 2, 6) and God's ability to bring blessing and victory in unpromising situations (vv. 3–5), would be welcome words, indeed, for the Chronicler's beleaguered postexilic community.

28:1–27
Ahaz (ca. 742–727 B.C.)

The third major division of the books of Chronicles, the period of the Divided Monarchy (10:1–28:27), ends

as it had begun (2 Chron. 10–13), with a narrative of utter apostasy and rebellion. This time, however, the Southern Kingdom abandons the Lord and ends in political disarray. The Chronicler has reworked the portrait of Ahaz found in 2 Kings 16 to present a complete reversal of the relationship between Israel and Judah that obtained at the beginning of the period of the Divided Monarchy, especially as seen in Abijah's programmatic speech (2 Chron. 13:4–12).

The cause for this state of affairs is the willful apostasy of Ahaz, whose reign stands alone in its total absence of redeeming characteristics. First of all, Ahaz is depicted as a second Jeroboam who casts molten images and worships foreign gods (vv. 2, 10–16, 23; cf. 13:8–9), the very opposite of righteous Abijah. Second, Ahaz shuts the Temple doors (28:24), extinguishes the lamps and stops the rounds of sacrifice (29:7), and neglects the consecrated bread (29:18), all in direct opposition to Abijah's claim to orthodoxy (13:11). Third, at the time of the division, Judah had obeyed the prophet Shemaiah with regard to Israel (11:1–4), but now it is Israel that obeys the prophet Oded with regard to Judah (28:9). Fourth, whereas in Abijah's day Israel was defeated (13:18), in the days of Ahaz it is Judah that suffers defeat (28:19).

This reversal shows that Judah had now fallen to the same level of apostasy as had their Northern counterparts at the time of the schism. Since the North fell to Assyria and went into exile at this time (30:6b), the religious collapse of Judah cleared the way for a reunited Israel under the reforming leadership of Hezekiah.

Once again, the material is concentrically arranged. Opening and closing formulas (1a, 26–27) form the outermost ring and enclose the chapter as a whole. This narrows into a ring of idolatry in which the magnitude of Ahaz's sin is graphically portrayed (vv. 1b–4, 22–25). Framing the central section, Oded's prophetic appeal to the North (vv. 8–15), is a ring of humiliating military defeats suffered at the hands of Aram and Israel (vv. 5–7) and Edom and Philistia (vv. 17–19), framed, in turn, by Ahaz's disastrous appeal to Assyria for help (vv. 16, 20–21).

The depiction of the so-called Syro-Ephraimite war (vv. 5–15) is important. Unlike in the Chronicler's usual battle reports, only Judah's defeat at the hands of Syria and Israel is related (vv. 5–8). The rest of the narrative is devoted to a discussion of the unity that should obtain between Judah and Israel. This is presented through the prophet Oded, yet another prophetic representative of the Chronicler's theological views (vv. 9–11). His message consists of an appeal to the North to reunite with its "brothers" (vv. 11, 15; cf. v. 8) in the south. The response (v. 13) is an amazing admission of its guilt as spelled out in Abijah's earlier address (13:4–12). The note that this response was made by the "leaders in Ephraim" (v. 12, NIV) indicates that the line of Northern kings has already fallen, making such a reunification possible.

29:1–36:23
From Hezekiah to Exile in Babylon

The Chronicler's theological history draws to a close with this fourth and final section. The genealogical introduction (1 Chron. 1–9) and the United Monarchy of David and Solomon (1 Chron. 10–2 Chron. 9) had presented "all Israel" as a people fully united under a Davidic king around the Jerusalem Temple. The third section, however, had presented "all Israel" as a divided monarchy (2 Chron. 10–28) that threatened this ideal situation.

The Assyrian defeat of the North (30:6) and Ahaz's apostasy (28:6, 24–25) completely reverses the situation at the start of the Divided Monarchy. More important, Hezekiah is presented as a second David and Solomon, who through his repair of the Temple, reinstitution of proper worship, and invitation to the North to join in Passover celebrations, restores the ideal situation that had been lost.

29:1–32:33
Hezekiah (ca. 727–698 B.C.)

The earlier history considered Josiah the preeminent reforming king. Consequently, its description of Hezekiah's reign deals primarily with Sennacherib's invasion. For Chronicles, however, the situation is reversed and Hezekiah is presented as the pious, reforming king who reestablishes religious purity and political unity. Numerous parallels with both David and Solomon suggest that Hezekiah is a second David and Solomon, who restores the unity of "all Israel" lost after the death of Solomon and missing throughout the period of the Divided Monarchy (2 Chron. 10–28).

29:1–36, Purification and Rededication of the Temple. Hezekiah's repair and "opening of the doors of the house of the LORD" as soon as possible (v. 3) typifies his whole reign as a reversal of that of Ahaz, who had "shut up the doors of the house of the LORD" (28:24). But restoration is more than repair. Following this momentous event, the first stage in Hezekiah's reform concerns the purification of the Temple and takes place in three stages.

Verses 4–19, dealing with the actual cleansing of the Temple, begin with Hezekiah's charge to the Levites (vv. 4–11). Recalling David's similar address (1 Chron. 28:2–10) the king orders the removal of the "filth" that had accumulated in the Temple as the result of many years of sinful abuse. Contained within this charge, however, is the Chronicler's theological explanation of the relationship between proper worship and political fortune (vv. 6–10). The Levites respond quickly and complete their task in sixteen days, unfortunately missing the prescribed date for the celebration of the Passover by two days (vv. 12–19).

Verses 20–30 present the rededication of the sanctuary and the altar. Especially noteworthy is the double mention of "all Israel" in v. 24, which highlights Hezekiah's concern for the members of the Northern Kingdom. Hezekiah's restoration of worship, here depicted under the musical leadership of the Levites (vv. 15–30), casts Hezekiah in Solomon's role at the dedication of the Temple (7:6).

Verses 31–36 conclude the festivities with the reintroduction of the regular round of Temple worship in conjunction with the offerings of the people. The summary in v. 35b recalls the summary of Solomon's dedication of the Temple (8:16).

30:1–31:1, Passover. The second stage in Hezekiah's reform concerns the celebration of Passover, traditionally observed as a commemoration of Israel's deliverance from Egypt. The Chronicler shapes his account to emphasize the deliverance of the North from "exile" and the reunification of all Israel around the Temple.

Verses 1–12 are essentially an invitation to "all Israel and Judah" (v. 1) "from Beer-sheba to Dan" (v. 5), i.e., to one and all who live within the ideal, Solomonic limits of the land, to worship the Lord. The invitation is offered especially to members of the Northern tribes who have recently "escaped from the hand of the kings of Assyria" (v. 6). It is offered in the form of a letter calling for repentance and serves to enclose the period of the Divided Monarchy when paired with Abijah's similar speech to the North following their forsaking of Jerusalem under Jeroboam (13:4–12). Those with ears to hear heard, or rather "humbled themselves" (v. 11; cf. 7:14), and joined their Judean kin in a divinely orchestrated reunion of "all Israel," which had been separated since the days of Rehoboam (vv. 10–12).

Now that the land and its people have been reunited as in the days of Solomon, vv. 13–27 describe the Passover, here called "the festival of unleavened bread." Just as the priests had earlier purified the sanctuary (29:16), now the people purify the city of Jerusalem (vv. 13–14). The slaughter of the Passover lamb and the actual celebration were carried out in conformity with the law (vv. 15–17), and Hezekiah himself prays for the people in terms reminiscent of Solomon's great prayer, with the result that God hears and forgives them (vv. 18–20; cf. 7:14). As in Solomon's feast of dedication (7:8–10), joyous celebration continues for fourteen days (vv. 23–27).

31:2–21, Provisions for Worship. Hezekiah's whirlwind reversal of Ahaz's apostasy, carried out in two months' time, though necessary, was not sufficient. Provision for the continuation of regular worship was also required and is here reported as the third stage of the reform.

Verses 2–10 relate a reorganization of the cult modeled upon those of David and Solomon. Appointment of priestly and levitical divisions, provision of sacrificial animals, and arrangements for clergy stipends (vv. 2–4; cf. 1 Chron. 23–26; 29:3 for David; 2 Chron. 8:12–16; 9:10–11; 7:5 for Solomon) results in the generous response of Israel and Judah (vv. 5–10; cf. 1 Chron. 29:1–9).

Verses 11–19 set forth the bureaucratic administration of the fruit of the people's generosity, "the contributions, tithes, and dedicated things": their storage (vv. 11–13) and distribution, both urban (vv. 14–18) and rural (v. 19).

Verses 20–21 form a fitting conclusion and summary of Hezekiah's three-pronged reform in terms characteristic of Chronicles.

32:1–33, Faithfulness Rewarded. Having finished his expanded account of Hezekiah's religious reforms (chaps. 29–31), the Chronicler turns to a greatly abbreviated account (cf. 2 Kings 18–20) of the political achievements that marked his reign. No dry chronicle, these verses, situated between paired statements of Hezekiah's "success" (31:20–21; 32:30, NJB; NRSV, REB: "prospered"), illustrate a central theme of these books: that God's blessing, measured in terms of success and prosperity, is the reward of faithfulness.

Verses 1–23 relate the blessing of deliverance. By omitting references to such things as Hezekiah's surrender, his trust in foreign alliances, the stripping of the Temple, and the prophetic mediation of Isaiah, the Chronicler presents the Assyrian invasion as an illustration of the effectiveness of prayer and God's ability to save. Hezekiah's exhortation to be strong and fear not because of the presence of the Lord (vv. 7–8; cf. Isa. 7:14) expresses his complete trust in God and recalls the encouragement of other faithful kings (1 Chron. 22:13; 2 Chron. 19:5–7; 20:15–17, 20). Even his preparations for war (vv. 2–6) serve as signs of blessing when they are seen as building projects, fortifications, and the preparation of large armies, all familiar indicators of divine favor. Sennacherib's taunt sets the stage. Assuming that Hezekiah's reforms were a destruction of the Lord's sanctuaries, he mistakenly infers that Hezekiah cannot be trusted (vv. 9–12) and questions whether God can deliver them from his hand (vv. 13–15). This double threat against God and Hezekiah (v. 16; cf. "against the LORD and his anointed," Ps. 2:2) is answered with prayer (v. 20), resulting in God's deliverance as a vindication of Hezekiah's faith (vv. 21–23).

Verses 24–26 relate the blessing of grace. Hezekiah's pride at having been miraculously healed in answer to his prayer leads to divine wrath. Nevertheless, unlike with Uzziah in similar circumstances (26:16–21), Hezekiah's act of humbling himself (cf. 7:14) results in a gracious postponement of the effects of God's wrath.

Verses 27–33 employ the Chronicler's usual indica-

tors of blessing: wealth, building projects, and prosperity, in praise of this exemplary representative of his Davidic-Solomonic ideal.

33:1–20
Manasseh (ca. 697–642 B.C.)

The Chronicler's portrait of Manasseh as a repentant reformer is at odds with the earlier history's depiction of him as the vilest of all Judah's kings and the one chiefly responsible for the Babylonian exile (2 Kings 21:11–16; cf. 24:3–4; Jer. 15:4). The fifty-five-year length of his reign (v. 1), the longest of any king, has prompted many to interpret this passage as the parade example of the Chronicler's penchant for rewriting history in order to demonstrate the machinations of retributive justice. The Chronicler is, indeed, concerned with retributive justice. However, nothing is made of this exceptionally long rule in the Chronicler's presentation, and length of reign is not elsewhere a sign of blessing. Thus, it is best to see the story of Manasseh as a pattern of exile and restoration, a dramatic example of the efficacy of prayer and repentance (7:14) directed at the experience of his postexilic community.

Once again, the Chronicler has structured the passage concentrically. At the center of the text Manasseh's unexpected repentance and restoration provides the pivot around which the whole revolves (vv. 12–13).

Framing this center is the contrast between Manasseh's exile to Babylon resulting from his sin (vv. 10–11) and the building programs and military fortification resulting from his repentance (v. 14). Building programs are a frequent sign of blessing in Chronicles (e.g. 11:5; 14:6–7; 17:12; 27:3–4; 34:10–13), as are strong armies (e.g. 11:1; 14:8; 25:5; 26:10). The unexpected exile to "Babylon" at the hands of an Assyrian king reinforces the suggestion that the Chronicler is presenting Manasseh as a type of the later exile and restoration of the people as a whole.

A second set of contrasts, in turn, surrounds the first. This time, however, contrast is drawn between Manasseh's rather full complement of detestable religious practices prior to his repentance (vv. 2–9) and the religious reforms that followed his change of heart (vv. 15–17). The plural forms of "Baals," "sacred poles" (v. 3), and "sons" (v. 6, NIV; NRSV: "son") may signal the extent of his apostasy. In the reforms, Manasseh cancels his own cultic innovations and reestablishes proper worship of the Lord, though he fails to completely undo the horrors of vv. 2–9.

As usual, introductory (v. 1) and concluding (vv. 18–20) remarks concerning the reign of Manasseh enclose the narrative as a whole. The reference to his prayer (v. 18) became the basis for the fifteen-verse apocryphal Prayer of Manasseh written shortly before the birth of Christ.

33:21–25
Amon (ca. 642–640 B.C.)

In 2 Kings 21:19–26 Amon's brief reign appears as little more than an appendix to the evil reign of Manasseh, his father. The Chronicler agrees that Amon "did what was evil in the sight of the LORD, as his father Manasseh had done" (v. 22a). But in light of the tradition concerning Manasseh's repentance, the evil that Amon did, especially his failure to repent, serves to undo the good of the last years of his father's reign and sets the stage for the important reforms of Josiah that follow.

34:1–36:1
Josiah (ca. 639–609 B.C.)

Josiah is a breath of fresh air following the stultifying, though mercifully brief, reign of his father, Amon. The waning influence of Assyria in this period is a decisive factor. Since political subjugation often involved participation in the cult of the conqueror, Josiah's reform was as much a reassertion of Judah's political independence as it was a resurgence of religious piety.

According to the earlier history, Josiah most closely corresponds to the Davidic ideal of kingship (2 Kings 22:2). The Chronicler, however, sees Hezekiah as the parade example of the Davidic-Solomonic ideal. This means that although Josiah is praised, especially for his Passover (35:1–19), the description of which is greatly expanded over its brief notice in 2 Kings 23:21–23, his reign is less pivotal for the Chronicler's depiction of Judah and, thus, less glowingly portrayed. For example, the lavish praise of 2 Kings 23:25 is omitted by the Chronicler.

The sequence of events is also different, resulting in different emphases. 2 Kings presents the reform as a single-minded act of scouring the land and the Temple of Manasseh's apostasy, the young king's pious response to the discovery of the book of the law in his eighteenth year. The chronological framework in Chronicles, however, presents the reform as a more protracted affair beginning with Josiah's seeking God in the eighth year of his reign (34:3a). It is sustained through the purging of the land (vv. 3b–7) in his twelfth year (v. 3b) and, following the discovery of the law book (vv. 8b–28), concluded only in his eighteenth year (v. 8) with the renewal of the covenant (vv. 29–33) and the celebration of Passover (35:1–19).

Four topics comprise the account: Josiah's early reforms (34:1–7); repair of the Temple, discovery of the book of the law, and renewal of the covenant (34:8–33); Passover celebrations (35:1–19); and the story of his tragic death (35:20–27).

34:1–7, Josiah's Early Reforms. The introductory assessment of the earlier history provides a clear indication of the Chronicler's reduced estimation of Josiah.

The "all" in "he walked in all the way of David his father" (2 Kings 22:2) is missing in Chronicles (34:2). The actual reforms are confined to the land, which is "purged" (vv. 3, 5). The Temple is "repaired." The reforms are also much more modest than 2 Kings 23:4–20 would suggest, Hezekiah, and even Manasseh, having already been given credit for many of them. Interestingly, reform extends to such Northern locations as Manasseh, Ephraim, and Naphtali (v. 6). The concern here is to emphasize the range of the reform. Politically speaking, this suggests a reclamation of areas of the former Northern Kingdom recently dominated by the Assyrians. Theologically speaking, the Chronicler depicts "all Israel" ideally reunited under Josiah, scion of the house of David.

34:8–33, Temple, Book, and Covenant. These verses follow 2 Kings 22:3–23:3 very closely, the expanded role of the Levites accounting for most of the minor differences. For example, Levites go throughout the land and collect Temple contributions from both North and South, rather than merely receiving them (v. 9). They are also placed in charge of the repair of the Temple (vv. 12–13).

During these repairs, Hilkiah the priest discovers "the book of the law of the LORD given through Moses" (v. 14). 2 Kings refers to this as "the book of the law" (22:8), i.e., some form of Deuteronomy. The Chronicler's expanded identification suggests he believed it to be the whole Pentateuch. Huldah's announcement of Jerusalem's destruction as a result of the city's idolatry comes as no surprise (vv. 23–25), but the promise that Josiah would die "in peace" (vv. 26–28) has troubled readers due to the decidedly unpeaceful nature of Josiah's later death (35:23–24). The prophet intends to announce that Josiah will not personally experience the destruction of the city.

Verses 29–32 narrate Josiah's response to Huldah's prophecy, a renewal of the covenant. 2 Kings 23:1–3 is followed rather closely except that in Kings the covenant is followed by a lengthy account of Josiah's religious reforms. Here, since these particular reforms were enacted prior to the discovery of the law book (vv. 3–7, and summarized in v. 33), the covenant serves as an introduction to the Chronicler's detailed account of the Passover.

35:1–19, Josiah's Passover. If Kings is more concerned with elaborating the religious reforms of Josiah, Chronicles is more concerned with the celebration of the Passover. Not only is 2 Kings 23:21–23 increased to these nineteen verses; the role of the Levites is also expanded, probably with reference to the practices of the Chronicler's own time. Their duties included teaching, bearing the Ark, though this was no longer needed since the Ark was now permanently housed in the Temple (5:7–10), and the slaughter and preparation of the sacrificial animals. In both the construction of the Temple (v. 3) and the establishment of these levitical duties (v. 4) the towering figures of David and Solomon are prominent. Josiah's generosity (v. 7), regardless of the historicity of the huge figures, is also reminiscent of David. Once again the Chronicler lifts up the presence of Northerners in line with his concern for "all Israel" (vv. 17–18).

35:20–36:1, Josiah's Death. Troubled by the circumstances of Josiah's tragic death, the Chronicler includes a command from Neco, Egypt's pharaoh, as a word from God (v. 21). Josiah's disobedience results in his death.

36:2–21
Judah's Last Kings

Historically speaking, Judah was caught in the struggle for power that accompanied the decline of the Assyrian Empire. Egypt's attempts to prop up the Assyrians in the face of Babylonian aggression were especially problematic for Judah. Egypt had killed Josiah, deposed Jehoahaz, and installed Jehoiakim as king all within a four-month period in 609 B.C. Four years later, however, power shifted to Babylon in Nebuchadnezzar's defeat of Egypt at Carchemish. Following the death of his father, Jehoiakim, in 598 B.C., Jehoiachin was deposed by the Babylonians, who then placed Zedekiah on the throne of Judah.

The Chronicler tersely presents this period as one of continuous decline in which each of these kings foreshadows the fate of the nation through his own experience of "exile." Omission of such formulaic matters as the names of their mothers and the details of their deaths binds these kings together. Repeated references to doing evil (vv. 5, 9, 12; though strangely omitted in Jehoahaz's case, cf. 2 Kings 23:32), deportation (vv. 3, 4, 6, 10), and loss of the Temple vessels (vv. 7, 10, 18, 19) point to the inevitability of the exile and serve as its theological justification.

36:2–4, Jehoahaz (ca. 609 B.C.). Cf. 2 Kings 23:30–34. Besides the 2 Kings passage, Jer. 22:10–12 witnesses to the evil of Jehoahaz. Since this appears to be one of the elements intentionally used by the Chronicler to bind these last four kings together, it is difficult to say why this negative judgment has been omitted.

36:5–8, Jehoiakim (ca. 608–598 B.C.). Cf. 2 Kings 23:34–24:6. Again, the Chronicler omits most of his source, including its censure of Manasseh for Judah's destruction (2 Kings 24:2–4), to continue his emphasis on royal deportation and Temple depredation.

36:9–10, Jehoiakin (ca. 598/597 B.C.). Cf. 2 Kings 24:8–17. This account is even more drastically curtailed

than the previous ones; only the harbingers of exile and themes of deportation and desecration remain, apart from the necessary details of accession.

36:11–16, Zedekiah (ca. 597–586 B.C.). Cf. 2 Kings 24:18–25:17. Although the Chronicler continues the pattern established in the previous three reigns, stressing the deportation of the king and the depredation of the Temple vessels, this account ultimately modulates into a theological explanation of Judah's final destruction and exile in familiar terms that summarize the message of the entire book. Here, the pattern shifts, in that Zedekiah's sin (vv. 12–13) is followed by an account of the people that judges them as even more sinful than their king (vv. 14–16). Their unfaithfulness echoes the unfaithfulness of Israel and Judah alike in the genealogical introduction (1 Chron. 5:25–26; 9:1); Saul, at the beginning of the Chronicler's narrative (1 Chron. 10:13) and regularly throughout the books of Chronicles, is a major cause of exile. Yet it was their failure to heed the message of the prophets that brought destruction (vv. 15–16). Thus, sin did not bring about the exile, as the books of Samuel and Kings had claimed. Failure to repent was the cause.

36:17–21, Exile. The Chronicler's differing theological explanation of the Exile also accounts for the distinctive portrait of Judah's destruction and exile found in these books. In contrast to the account in 2 Kings 25, destruction of the Temple and city is complete, and whether by death or deportation the elimination of the people from the land is total (vv. 17–19; note that "all" occurs no less than five times). God, working through the king of the Chaldeans, is unequivocally named as the agent of the destruction, again, acting in response to the people's failure to heed the words of the prophets and repent (vv. 15–17).

Nevertheless, this grim depiction of divine judgment and wrath is tempered by the Chronicler's amalgamation of texts from Leviticus and Jeremiah into a word of hope. As for the people, their exile will be limited to seventy years (Jer. 25:11–12; 29:10). The seventy years between the destruction of the first Temple and the dedication of the second (586–516 B.C.) is the most plausible of several suggestions of the significance of this time frame. But God's emptying will also result in a seventy-year Sabbath rest for the land and atone for the 490 years of neglect (v. 21; Lev. 26:34–39).

36:22–23
Appendix: The Edict of Cyrus

The books of Chronicles close with a quotation from Ezra 1:1–3a, possibly from the Chronicler, itself a citation of a decree issued in 538 B.C. that effectively reverses the disaster of vv. 17–21. Just as God had used Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon to destroy the Temple (vv. 17–19) and exile those unlucky enough to survive (v. 20), so now another foreign ruler, Cyrus of Persia, will be used to rebuild the Temple and restore the exiles to their homeland. This anticipation of the return expands upon the promise already contained in v. 21 and suggests that neither persistent sin nor the reality of judgment can ever nullify the promise of forgiveness or the hope of reconciliation.

Bibliography

Ackroyd, P. R. *1 & II Chronicles, Ezra, Nehemiah.* Torch Bible Commentary. London: SCM, 1973.

Japhet, S. *I & II Chronicles.* Old Testament Library. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox Press, 1993.

Jones, G. H. *1 and 2 Chronicles.* Sheffield: Academic Press, 1993.

Selman, M. J. *1 Chronicles.* Tyndale Old Testament Commentaries. Downers Grove, IL: Inter-Varsity Press, 1994.

———. *2 Chronicles.* Tyndale Old Testament Commentaries. Downers Grove, IL: Inter-Varsity Press, 1994.

Williamson, H. G. M. *1 and 2 Chronicles.* New Century Bible Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1982.

Ezra

RALPH W. KLEIN

INTRODUCTION

A principal issue in studies of Ezra and Nehemiah is whether they were once part of a longer "Chronicler's History," which included 1 and 2 Chronicles, or whether they formed from the beginning an independent work. Although the former opinion prevailed for most of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, recent studies, based on linguistic and theological arguments, have demonstrated that Chronicles and Ezra-Nehemiah were separate works. Chronicles emphasizes retribution, shows an openness to include people from the Northern Kingdom, and puts great emphasis on the Davidic monarchy, but these ideas are basically absent from Ezra-Nehemiah. In Chronicles Israel comprises all twelve tribes, whereas in Ezra-Nehemiah Israel is limited to Judah and Benjamin.

The book of Ezra contains a theological history of the postexilic community, from the first return in 538 B.C. to the end of the first year of Ezra in 457 B.C. Ezra 1–6 describes the return from the Babylonian exile and the rebuilding of the Temple; Ezra 7–10 describes the first year of the work of Ezra.

Although the majority of the book is written in the standard Hebrew of the postexilic period, Ezra 4:8–6:18 and 7:12–26 are written in imperial Aramaic. The first of these sections contains letters sent to the Persian kings Artaxerxes and Darius and their replies (4:8–16; 4:17–22; 5:6–17; 6:3–12), but it also contains Jewish narrative that connects these letters to one another. This Aramaic section was one of several sources available to the author of the book of Ezra. The second Aramaic section, 7:12–26, is the Persian king's commission to Ezra.

The account of the work of Ezra, conventionally called his memoir, consists of paragraphs written in the first person (7:27–9:15) as well as in the third person (7:1–26; 10:1–44; Neh. 8; and part of Neh. 9:1–5). All of the Ezra memoir may once have been written in the first person and may come from Ezra himself. It is possible that Nehemiah 8 originally stood between Ezra 7–8 and 9–10 and that Neh. 9:1–5 stood between Ezra 10:15 and 10:16.

S. Japhet divides Ezra-Nehemiah into two units. In the first, Ezra 1–6, there are two leaders, Zerubbabel and Jeshua, heads of the secular and religious establishments, respectively. The building of the Second Temple is the main event in this unit, with events happening only in the first two and last two years. The intervening years, when work on the Temple was stopped, are described in one verse (Ezra 4:24). The second unit, Ezra 7–Nehemiah 13, extends from the arrival of Ezra to the second term of Nehemiah. This period is defined by its leaders, not by its projects. Ezra at first works by himself, then Nehemiah by himself, then the two together, and then Nehemiah again by himself. Nehemiah alone works on the walls, the social reform, and the repopulating of Jerusalem, but in the reading of the Torah and the dedication of the wall both Ezra and Nehemiah are present. For the first unit the author did not have a continuous literary source, but combined existing documents with his own narrative. For the second unit he was able to incorporate the Ezra memoir and the Nehemiah memoir (*see* Nehemiah, Commentary). Because of the author's method of composition, it is impossible to reconstruct fully his sources or the events they report. If we follow the traditional dates for Ezra (458 B.C.) and Nehemiah (445–432 or later), the book of Ezra-Nehemiah must have been composed later, but well within the Persian period. A date in the first quarter of the fourth century, before the weakening of the Persian Empire, seems reasonable.

According to Ezra 1–6, the Lord brought about the return of the exiles and the rebuilding of the Temple through the favorable actions of the Persian kings. The book seems to foster a collaborative attitude toward the Persians. This may explain the absence of any reference to the Davidic ancestry of Sheshbazzar and Zerubbabel.

The book of Ezra is concerned about the purity of the community in Jerusalem and gives the impression that this community was made up primarily of those who returned from exile. Continuity with pre-exilic Israel is based on the return of the Temple vessels through Sheshbazzar and on the restoration of both the altar and the Temple on their former sites. The delay in the building of the Temple is not blamed on the people's concern for their own comforts (as in Hag. 1:4), but on the actions of the enemies of Judah and Benjamin, who persistently opposed the work in Jerusalem and disheartened the people. The celebration of the Feast of Tabernacles after the completion of the altar (Ezra 3:4–5) anticipates the joyful dedication of the Temple (6:16–18) and the equally joyful obser-

vance of the Passover a few months thereafter (6:19–22). The Temple was completed by Zerubbabel, the governor, and Jeshua, the high priest, with the hearty endorsement of the prophets Haggai and Zechariah.

Ezra, who was linked to Aaron by his genealogy and to Moses by his attitude toward the law, was sent by the Persian king in 458 B.C. to make inquiries about conformity to the law in Judah and Jerusalem and to appoint officials to teach the law. When a problem arose about intermarriage with peoples of the land, Ezra appointed a commission to remove the foreign wives and children and so to create a purified community. For Ezra's additional actions on behalf of the law—reading and teaching it publicly—and the people's subsequent covenant to keep the law's prescriptions, *see* Nehemiah, Commentary, 7:73b–10:39.

COMMENTARY

1:1–6:22
Return from Exile and Rebuilding of the Temple

1:1–4:7
A Narrative in Hebrew

1:1–11, The Return Under Sheshbazzar. Cyrus the Persian began his rule in Babylon in October 539 B.C. His permission for the Jews to return home is seen in Ezra as the fulfillment of a prophecy made through Jeremiah (Jer. 29:10) that the Lord would bring the exiled Judeans home after a seventy-year captivity. The author expresses in these opening verses a positive, collaborative attitude toward the Persian authorities of his day (cf. Isa. 44:24–45:6). The generosity of Cyrus to the Jews was part of a wider policy toward all the peoples held captive in Babylon (→ Cyrus II; Persia). The Hebrew decree issued by Cyrus (Ezra 1:2–4) is paralleled by a similar Aramaic record in 6:3–5. The Hebrew copy of the decree provides for the repatriation of the Jews in addition to the rebuilding of the Temple. It is unclear whether these verses are an authentic document available to the author (perhaps the text of a herald's proclamation) or whether the author created this decree on the basis of 6:3–5.

Those Jews who elected not to return to Jerusalem were urged to offer financial support to those who planned to return (v. 4). Only members of the tribes of Judah and Benjamin were present in Babylon and available for the return. The clergy consisted of priests (descendants of Aaron) and Levites (non-Aaronidic descendants of Levi, who were assigned the less important tasks in the system of worship). That the return pleased God is shown by the reference to all who returned as "those whose spirits God had stirred up." Material assistance from gentile neighbors makes the return resemble the Exodus from Egypt (cf. Exod. 3:21–22; 11:2–3; 12:35–36).

The Jewish leader of the return was Sheshbazzar, the prince (1:8) or governor (5:14) of Judah. Appointed by Cyrus and entrusted with the Temple vessels (1:7–11), he laid the foundation of the Temple (5:14–16; but see 3:10–12). Sheshbazzar is a Babylonian name ("May the sun god Shamash protect the father"), although he is clearly Jewish. Recent studies have undermined the proposed identification of him with Shenazzar (1 Chron. 3:18). The length of his tenure at the head of the restoration community is unknown, but was probably fairly brief.

The Temple vessels themselves establish a continuity between the Solomonic Temple and the postexilic Temple, lending an aura of authenticity to the latter. An exilic prophet had also announced that the returning exiles would bring the vessels of the Lord home (Isa. 52:11–12).

2:1–70, The List of Those Who Returned. This list presupposes that Zerubbabel has replaced Sheshbazzar (v. 2). Zerubbabel is called the son of Shealtiel in 3:2, 8; 5:2 (cf. Neh. 12:1) and in the book of Haggai (where he is also given the title of "governor," Hag. 1:1; 2:2), but a genealogy in 1 Chron. 3:17–24 makes him the son of Shealtiel's younger brother, Pedaiah. It is possible that Pedaiah was his biological father, while Shealtiel was his father according to the rule of levirate marriage (Deut. 25:5–10). In any case, the genealogy in 1 Chronicles identifies him as a descendant of David. The silence about this in Ezra may result from the author's acceptance of Persian domination and the absence of any hope for deliverance through the Davidic house. The list of those who returned may be a composite summary of a number of returns to Palestine made during the reigns of Cyrus and his successor, Cambyses. Some have taken it as a census of Judah from about the time of Nehemiah (cf. Ezra 2:2). A copy of this list, with many variations in the numbers and in spellings of names, appears in Neh. 7:6–73, which is probably its original location.

The list of leaders in 2:2 should include a twelfth, Nahamani (cf. Neh. 7:7). Jeshua was the grandson of Seraiah, the last high priest before the destruction of Jerusalem (2 Kings 25:18). Laity are listed in Ezra 2:3–35 (identified by family in vv. 2–20 and by place of residence in vv. 21–35); priests (about one-tenth of the total population), a few Levites (cf. 8:15), and other Temple personnel (Temple servants and Solomon's servants [cf. 1 Kings 9:20–21]), in Ezra 2:36–58; and those who could not prove their ancestry, in vv. 59–63. The latter were excluded temporarily from the priesthood until a high priest could be installed who could consult Urim and Thummim, the dicelike objects that had been used in earlier days to determine God's will

in matters that were beyond human wisdom (→ Urim and Thummim). The "governor" mentioned in v. 63 is designated by a Persian term *(tirshata')*. It is not clear whether the author intended to refer to Sheshbazzar, Zerubbabel, Nehemiah, or some other official. Since the vast majority of people *could* prove their ancestry, the continuity between the restored community and the community before the Exile is affirmed (cf. the twelve leaders mentioned in v. 2).

The whole assembly numbered 42,360, plus some 7,337 male and female servants and 200 singers (vv. 64–65). The totals cannot be harmonized with the numbers assigned to the individual families in the list (did copyists make errors, or do the larger totals include women?). The large number of servants may indicate that the postexilic community was not as impoverished as many assume. The gifts for the Temple (2:68–69) are discussed in the commentary on Neh. 7:1–73a (7:70–72), where the text is more nearly complete. The priests, Levites, and some of the laypeople settled in Jerusalem, but all the rest of the people returned to their own towns (v. 70). The list presupposes that the community in Palestine was composed almost exclusively of Jews who had been in exile (cf. Jer. 24:4–10). Though this does not conform to historical fact, it does reflect the exalted station of the eastern Diaspora in the author's theology.

3:1–6, The Reestablishment of the Altar. Jeshua (identical with Joshua of Hag. 1:1) and Zerubbabel, the joint leaders of the restoration community, reestablished the sacrificial altar on its old site—thus stressing continuity with pre-exilic Israel. The Lord himself had indicated where the altar of burnt offering for the first Temple should be by answering David's petition at the threshing floor of Ornan (1 Chron. 22:1). The restored altar was presumably made of unworked stones, as prescribed in the Mosaic law (Exod. 20:25). Although occasional sacrifices had taken place in Jerusalem during the Exile (Jer. 41:5), the returning leaders may have considered the existing altar unclean.

Fear of hostile neighbors led to scrupulous observance of the law in hopes of ensuring God's protection (3:3), but it also kept the community from engaging in other building projects at this time (cf. 4:4–5). The text implies that the altar was set up in September 538, but the major period of activity for Jeshua and Zerubbabel was in 520 and later. The author may have mistakenly identified Zerubbabel with Sheshbazzar. In any case, he emphasized that regular worship was initiated without delay.

The people celebrated the Feast of Booths, or Tabernacles (Heb. *Sukkot*), which began on the fifteenth day of the seventh month, and offered up daily sacrifices required for this feast (cf. Lev. 23:33–36 and the detailed laws of Num. 29:12–38). Thereafter, all appointed feasts were kept (3:5), surely including Passover/Unleavened Bread, the Feast of Weeks (Pentecost; Heb. *Shavuot*), and Booths again (Lev. 23).

3:7–13, The Foundation of the Temple Laid. Though sacrifices began on the first day of the seventh month (September 17, 538), the foundations of the Temple were not yet laid (3:6) or, perhaps, "the Temple was not yet repaired." It is possible that the activities described in these verses were actually undertaken during the reign of Darius, while the altar itself was restored during the reign of Cyrus. The second year mentioned in v. 8 is the second year of the exiles' work on the house of God, not the second year after their return from exile. With the permission of Cyrus, they arranged for cedar logs to be imported from the Phoenician cities of Sidon and Tyre. Logs had also been imported for the Temple in Solomon's time (2 Chron. 2:16). Joppa was located just north of the modern city of Tel Aviv. The masons and carpenters who were hired for the reconstruction (3:7) recall similar workers who were used in building Solomon's Temple (1 Chron. 22:2, 15).

Levites twenty years of age or older were appointed to supervise the work, although Mosaic law set the minimum age limit at thirty (Num. 4:23, 30) or at twenty-five (Num. 8:24). Perhaps it was necessary to lower the age limit because of the few Levites who were part of the community (Ezra 2:40–42).

The ceremony at the beginning of the repairs echoes the dedication of Solomon's Temple (1 Kings 8; 2 Chron. 5–7) and of David's bringing the Ark to Jerusalem (1 Chron. 15–16). The cymbals were played by the levitical sons of Asaph (Ezra 3:10), who are identified in 2:41 as singers. Their song (v. 11) appears to be a citation of Ps. 106:1 and the refrain in Psalm 136, praising the Lord in advance for the completion of the Temple. The Levites, who once had been assigned to carry the Ark, were given new duties by David after the Ark was placed permanently in the Temple (cf. 1 Chron. 15–16; 23–26; 2 Chron. 7:6; 29:25–26).

Although most of the people shouted when the repairs were begun, many of the older priests, Levites, and other leaders, who had seen the Solomonic Temple years earlier, cried. Did some fear they would not live long enough to see the completion of the Temple? Or did the plans for the restored Temple seem pale by comparison with the original (cf. Hag. 2:3; Zech. 4:10)? The din from the combined shouting and weeping aroused the attention of hostile neighbors (4:1), with nearly disastrous consequences.

Throughout this chapter the theme of continuity plays an important role. The altar was placed on its old site and erected according to the law of Moses. The Feast of Booths was kept "as it is written," and there are many parallels between the repairs of the Temple and the construction and dedication of the first, Solomonic, Temple. Even the singers praised the Lord

according to the directions of David. The author of chap. 3 is building an argument against those who might question the validity of the postexilic Temple and its worship.

4:1–3, Offer of Assistance Refused. The noise created by the rites of 3:10–13 attracted the attention of hostile neighbors, who offered to assist with the building of the Temple and who claimed to have worshiped the God of Israel since they had been brought to Palestine by the Assyrian emperor Esarhaddon (681–669 B.C.), presumably to fill a gap left after the Assyrian deportation of the population in 721. Their offer was categorically rejected. Why?

A passage from 2 Kings 17:41 suggests that the new residents in Samaria were syncretistic, worshiping the Lord but also their native deities. The Jewish community in Ezra argued that they alone had been commissioned for this work by Cyrus.

4:4–5, Opponents Stop the Building of the Temple. Once their offer to help had been rejected, the people of the land employed various strategies to frustrate work on the Temple. Work on the Temple had begun under Cyrus (559–530), and it was only resumed under Darius I (522–486).

4:6–7, Summary of Letters. These verses describe negative reports about the Jews that were sent to the Persian authorities long after the completion of the Temple, first in the reign of Ahasuerus (Xerxes), 486–465, and then in the reign of Artaxerxes I, 465–424.

4:8–6:18
A Narrative in Aramaic

Aramaic was the official diplomatic language of the Persian Empire. The Aramaic text incorporated here into Ezra contains a number of official Persian documents and a Jewish narrative. It is currently debated by scholars whether only the letters themselves (4:8–16; 4:17–22; 5:6–17; 6:3–12) were available as sources to the author of Ezra or whether the correspondence had been woven together into an Aramaic chronicle prior to its editing by the biblical writer.

4:8–16, A Letter from Rehum to Artaxerxes. Rehum and other Samaritan leaders wrote to the Persian king that Jews who had returned from exile had attempted to rebuild the walls of Jerusalem and that this effort constituted rebellion and could lead to a decrease in revenue for the king. The Samaritans claimed to have been settled in Palestine by Osnappar, that is, Ashurbanipal (669–627 B.C.). "Beyond the River" (Trans-Euphrates) is a Persian administrative title for the area from the river Euphrates to the Mediterranean. The words of v. 14 suggest that the Samaritan officials and the Persian authorities were treaty partners (cf. the "salt of the covenant" in Lev. 2:13; Num. 18:19; 2 Chron. 13:5) who required mutual support of one another. The Samaritan leaders informed the king that the state records of his predecessors, including those of the Babylonian kings, would show that Jerusalem had always been rebellious and that was the reason it was destroyed in 587 B.C.

4:17–23, The Reply of Artaxerxes and Its Consequences. The Persian king replied to the Samaritans that a search through the state records had confirmed their accusations: Jerusalem had constantly been rebellious. Since some of his predecessors had ruled over "Beyond the River" and been successful in collecting taxes (v. 20), Artaxerxes made a decree that the work on the walls of Jerusalem should be brought to an immediate end. Perhaps this failed attempt to rebuild the walls of Jerusalem lies behind the report of Jerusalem's broken walls and destroyed gates at the beginning of Nehemiah (Neh. 1:2–3). After receiving the king's reply, the Samaritan officials immediately went to Jerusalem and brought the work of the Jews to a halt through the use of force.

4:24, Work on the Temple Stopped. This verse treats vv. 6–23 as a digression and continues the story of v. 5, where the people of the land had stopped work on the Temple from the time of Cyrus to that of Darius. The digression justifies the Jewish rejection of help from their neighbors, since subsequent history proved that the Samaritans had no positive interest in the restoration of Jerusalem.

5:1–5, Opposition to Renewed Temple Building. Haggai and Zechariah, whose words are preserved in the canonical books named after them, gave prophetic support to the efforts of Zerubbabel and Jeshua to rebuild the Temple (cf. 3:8). Tattenai, the governor of "Beyond the River," asked the Jews if they had proper authorization for rebuilding the Temple, but he did not stop their construction projects while he sought a ruling from higher Persian officials. His leniency is interpreted as God's providence: "The eye of their God was on the elders of the Jews" (v. 5).

5:6–17, A Letter from Tattenai to Darius. This letter repeats and expands upon information provided in vv. 1–5. The technique of building with courses of stone interspersed with wood is known from other places in the ancient Near East (cf. 1 Kings 6:36; 7:12; Ezra 6:4). In vv. 11–17 is the Jews' defense of their building activities. They claimed that the God of heaven and earth was the deity whose Temple they were rebuilding—such a God would require a magnificent building. Because of the sins of their ancestors, God had

delivered them to the Babylonian king, Nebuchadnezzar (606–562), who destroyed the first Temple and exiled the population (2 Kings 25). Cyrus, here identified as king of Babylon, granted permission for the Jews to rebuild the Temple on its former site in the first year of his reign (cf. 1:3), and he restored to them the ceremonial vessels that had been removed from the first Temple. Sheshbazzar, to whose care the vessels were entrusted and who had also been named governor (cf. 1:8) by Cyrus, repaired the foundations and began the rebuilding of the Temple immediately after his return. In chap. 3, the laying of the foundations is credited to Zerubbabel and Jeshua during the reign of Darius. The ascription of this work to Sheshbazzar and the claim of uninterrupted work on the Temple (which contradict 4:4–5, 24; Hag. 1:2, 4, 9) seem to be attempts by the restoration community to impress the Persian authorities that the edict of Cyrus had not been ignored. Tattenai and his associates ask that the Jewish claims be checked against the official records in the city of Babylon. As it turned out, the records actually were found in Ecbatana, the summer residence of the Persian kings (6:2).

6:1–12, Darius Replies. The king began his reply to Tattenai and his associates with a quotation of the original decree of Cyrus (vv. 3–5). This decree authorized the building of the Temple, with support from the royal treasury, and it provided for the restoration of the Temple vessels to the Jewish community. If this Persian financial support had actually been provided, it is hard to imagine why the Temple was delayed as long as it was. Strangely, the decree mentions only the height and breadth of the building. If the length were restored from the account of Solomon's Temple (1 Kings 6:17, 20), the Temple would be a cube 60 cubits on each side. But since this would make it much bigger than Solomon's Temple (60 cubits long, 20 cubits broad, and 30 cubits high), this reconstruction is unlikely. Perhaps the text should be emended to give the new Temple the same dimensions as Solomon's (cf. 1 Esd. 6:27).

Darius endorsed the earlier provisions and ordered the group associated with Tattenai not to interfere with the Jews. He also mandated financial support for the building project and for the daily sacrifices. In exchange for this support, he asked that prayers be offered for the life of the king and his sons. Cyrus made a similar request in a famous inscription: "May all the gods whom I have settled in their sacred cities ask daily Bel and Nebo for a long life for me" (J. B. Pritchard *Ancient Near Eastern Texts* [1969], p. 316). Jeremiah too had urged the exiles to seek the welfare of the city where they had been taken as captives and to pray on its behalf (Jer. 29:7). If people dared to change the decree of Cyrus or disobey it, they would be impaled and their houses destroyed (Ezra 6:11).

The governor referred to in 6:7 is probably Zerubbabel, although the immediate context of this verse might suggest Sheshbazzar (cf. 5:14). In v. 12 the decree refers to the God who has caused his name to dwell in Jerusalem, which is so similar to a characteristic phrase of Deuteronomy (e.g., Deut. 12:11) that one suspects that a Jewish scribe helped give expression to the royal decree.

6:13–15, Completion of the Temple. Tattenai and his associates complied with the king's decree, and the building of the Temple went forward with the support of the prophets Haggai and Zechariah. Neither Zerubbabel nor Jeshua is mentioned in these verses. It is often proposed that Zerubbabel's term of office ended before the Temple was finished. God's command and the Persian decree enabled the elders (cf. 5:5, 9) to finish the task. The mention of Artaxerxes is out of place in v. 14, since he ruled long after the dedication of the Temple. Perhaps his provisions for the Temple at the time of Ezra (7:12–27) led to the addition of his name here. The Temple was finished on March 12, 515 (or on April 1, 515, if the word "third" in v. 15 is emended to "twenty-third" to avoid making the work end on a Sabbath day).

6:16–18, Dedication of the Temple. More than seven hundred animals were sacrificed at the dedicatory rites, although Solomon had offered up almost sixty times as many at the dedication of the first Temple (1 Kings 8:63)! The priests and Levites were installed according to their divisions and courses. Although 1 Chronicles 23–26 ascribed these divisions to David, the author here traces them back to the time of Moses (cf. Exod. 29; Lev. 8; and Num. 3; 4; and 8).

6:19–22
The Celebration of the Passover

The language is Hebrew once more. Passover was celebrated by those who had returned from exile and by those who had separated themselves from the surrounding pollutions. The joy at Passover and the subsequent seven-day celebration of the Feast of Unleavened Bread expressed the people's thanksgiving for the assistance of Darius, who is here given the unusual title of "the king of Assyria."

7:1–10:44
The Initial Work of Ezra

7:1–26
A Third-Person Narrative About Ezra

7:1–10, Ezra's Return. Ezra's genealogy traces his ancestry back to Aaron, the chief priest. Seraiah, identi-

fied in the genealogy as Ezra's father, preceded him by about 150 years, since he was a pre-exilic high priest (1 Chron. 6:14). Perhaps Ezra's father was in fact a different Seraiah, and the names between his father and the pre-exilic priest of the same name were lost accidentally. Ezra is also called a scribe skilled in the law of Moses. He may have been secretary of state for Jewish affairs in the Persian bureaucracy. The law that he desired to teach is the Pentateuch, although it is impossible to tell whether it was identical with the present text of that document. The seventh year of Artaxerxes I was 458 B.C. (Many scholars in the past have put Ezra in the time of the second Artaxerxes, that is, at 398.) The period intervening between his reign and the last date of the previous chapter, 515, is passed over in silence. Ezra was accompanied by laypeople (the people of Israel) and clergy (priests, Levites, singers, gatekeepers, and Temple servants; cf. 8:1–14). His nine-hundred-mile trip lasted about fourteen weeks, from the twelfth day of the first month (April 8) to the first day of the fifth month (August 4).

7:11–26, The Letter Commissioning Ezra. Verse 11 provides a Hebrew introduction to the letter that, like other governmental documents, is written in Aramaic. The letter commanded Ezra to lead Jews to Jerusalem (v. 13); deliver gifts to the Temple from the Persian authorities, the people of Babylonia, and Babylonian Jews (vv. 15–18); make inquiry about compliance with the law in Judah and Jerusalem (v. 14; 10:16–17); and appoint magistrates and judges to teach the law (7:25).

The law of Moses was very likely already known in Judea (cf. 7:25), and those who did not yet observe it were to be instructed to do so. Artaxerxes required the treasurers to support the Jewish community with grants and to exempt the clergy from various kinds of taxation (7:21–24). The grants were enormous. One hundred talents of silver, for example, was the amount of tribute paid by all Judah to Pharaoh Neco (2 Kings 23:33). Ezra 7:23 suggests that Israel's God would be angry with the king and his sons if the grants were not paid. God's law is equated with the king's law in v. 26; failure to obey it could be punished with execution, banishment, confiscation of goods, or imprisonment.

7:27–9:15
A First-Person Narrative About Ezra

7:27–28, Doxology. This first-person account, written in Hebrew, thanks God for giving Artaxerxes the idea of beautifying the Temple (by improving its worship practices) and for giving Ezra favor before the Persian authorities.

8:1–14, The List of Those Who Returned with Ezra. After naming the priests from the lines of Phinehas and Ithamar first (unlike Ezra 2), the list identifies some fifteen hundred laymen from twelve families, suggesting that the total number of persons with Ezra was about five thousand. Hattush (v. 2), a descendant of David (cf. 1 Chron. 3:22), heads the list of laypeople.

8:15–36, Ezra's Trip to Jerusalem. Ezra discovered that no Levites had decided to make the trip with him. Perhaps they had heard of the inferior status that would be afforded them in the land of Israel. Ezra's urgent request of Iddo for additional returnees led to 38 Levites joining his entourage, plus 220 Temple servants to assist the Levites. As in chap. 2, the Temple servants, whom David is credited with establishing, outnumbered the Levites. The names of the river Ahava and of the place Casiphia are otherwise unknown.

Ezra proclaimed a fast before he set out on the trip home to secure God's protection on the way. Nehemiah was provided with a military escort (Neh. 2:9), but Ezra refused to ask for similar help. He had assured the king that his God would protect all who seek him, and to request an escort from the Persian king might seem to express doubt about God's ability to care for his own.

Ezra entrusted the gifts he was bringing along to twelve priests, who were responsible for them until they could be turned over to the authorities in Jerusalem. Six hundred and fifty talents of silver would amount to nineteen tons; a hundred talents of gold would be three tons. Clines estimates that Ezra's entire treasure would have been equal to the annual income of one hundred thousand to five hundred thousand people. These inflated totals may be an attempt to give glory to the Temple, or they may result from a misunderstanding of the original figures in the list.

The delay caused by the need to recruit Levites led to a departure of Ezra's entourage from Babylon on the twelfth day of the first month (8:31; cf. 7:9). They arrived in Jerusalem safe and sound—delivered from the hand of the enemy and from ambushes—and rested three days before turning over the gifts to two priests and two Levites (8:33).

Ezra and the other exiles offered a series of sacrifices in thanksgiving for their safe arrival. All the numbers given are multiples of twelve, which may imply that the restoration community was the legitimate continuation of the twelve tribes of pre-exilic Israel. The king's officials in "Beyond the River" offered financial assistance for the returnees in their conduct of the Temple worship. The final two verses of the chapter describe the returnees and their actions in the third person and so are not an original part of the first-person narrative.

9:1–5, Crisis over Mixed Marriages. Pentateuchal law ruled out marriage with the inhabitants of Canaan (Exod. 34:11–16; Deut. 7:1–6) for fear that "their daugh-

ters would play the harlot after their gods and make your sons play the harlot after their gods" (Exod. 34:16). In Ezra's time there was intermarriage with the non-Jewish peoples of the lands, who are denoted in 9:1 by a stereotyped list of the pre-Israelite inhabitants of the land. The marriages were between Jewish men and non-Jewish women; the officials of the community led in this offense. Ezra dramatically expressed his shock and fasted, while he was surrounded by faithful Jews who trembled at the contrast between the law of God and the behavior of their fellow Jews.

9:6–15, Ezra's Prayer. Ezra confessed the sins of Israel throughout its history, but also noted the gracious actions of God that had restored the Jewish community within the Persian Empire and had allowed it to repair the Temple. The recent sin of intermarriage violated commandments given by the prophets, prohibiting the marriage of Jewish men or women with outsiders. The law as stated occurs in none of the extant books of the Prophets, though its essential content is recorded in the pentateuchal laws cited in the previous paragraph. Since Ezra no doubt regarded Moses as a prophet (Deut. 18:15; 34:10; Hos. 12:13), such laws could be considered prophetic. Ezra claimed that the calamities Israel had experienced were less than the nation deserved (cf. Isa. 40:2), and he proposed that the sin of intermarriage raised the possibility that God would wipe out the community completely. Although individuals had intermarried, the whole community bore the responsibility and faced the consequences of this guilt.

10:1–44
A Third-Person Narrative About Ezra

10:1–17, Decision to Expel Gentile Wives and Children. The people echoed Ezra's confession of sin and entered into a covenant to expel the foreign wives and their children from Ezra's religious community. Ezra spent a night fasting and mourning in the chamber of Jehohanan the son of Eliashib (v. 6). Those who date Ezra to 398 have seen this meeting with Jehohanan as crucial, since Eliashib was the high priest in Nehemiah's time (Neh. 3:1). Jehohanan, then, would have been high priest at the end of the fifth century and the beginning of the fourth century (cf. Neh. 12:22–23). F. M. Cross, however, suggests that the names of another Eliashib and J(eh)ohanan have fallen out of the list of high priests before the Eliashib of Nehemiah's time, and this reconstruction allows the dating of Ezra to 458. Others suggest that Jehohanan was not a member of the high-priestly family at all, since v. 6 does not explicitly make this identification.

When the community assembled during inclement weather to express its contrition, it requested the creation of a special commission to carry out the removal of the gentile wives and their children. Only four men expressed opposition. Did they want more severe actions? The assembly met on the twentieth of the ninth month (December), Ezra appointed the commission on the first of the tenth month, and the work was completed on the first day of the first month. Within a year of Ezra's departure from Babylon (cf. 7:9), a purified community had been created in Jerusalem.

10:18–44, The List of Those Involved in Mixed Marriages. There were twenty-seven clergy (members of the high priest's family, other priests, Levites, singers, and gatekeepers) and eighty-four to eighty-six laity (in twelve family divisions) who had intermarried—out of a community of some thirty thousand. The problem was largely confined to the upper strata of the society (cf. 9:2).

Bibliography

Blenkinsopp, J. *Ezra-Nehemiah.* Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1988.

Clines, D. J. *Ezra, Nehemiah, Esther.* New Century Bible Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1984.

Cross, F. M. "A Reconstruction of the Judean Restoration." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 94 (1975): 4–18.

Eskenazi, T. C. *In an Age of Prose: A Literary Approach to Ezra-Nehemiah.* Society of Biblical Literature Monograph Series, 36. Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1988.

Japhet, S. "Composition and Chronology in the Book of Ezra-Nehemiah." In *Temple Community in the Persian Period.* Edited by T. C. Eskenazi and Kent H. Richards. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series, 175. Sheffield: Academic Press, 1994. Pp. 189–216.

Throntveit, Mark A. *Ezra-Nehemiah.* Interpretation: A Bible Commentary for Teaching and Preaching. Louisville, KY: John Knox Press, 1992.

Williamson, H. G. M. *Ezra, Nehemiah.* Word Biblical Commentary, 16. Waco, TX: Word, 1985.

Nehemiah

RALPH W. KLEIN

INTRODUCTION

The book of Nehemiah contains an account of the career of Nehemiah, the story of Ezra's public reading of the Torah, and a number of lists from the postexilic period. Nehemiah 1–7 describes Nehemiah's return to Palestine and his rebuilding of the wall of Jerusalem; Nehemiah 8–10 depicts Ezra's reading of the law and the responses to it; Nehemiah 11–13 reports additional acts of Nehemiah.

The history of Nehemiah is based primarily on the Nehemiah memoir, an autobiographical narrative in which the author frequently appeals to God to remember him and hear his prayer (1:1–7:73a; 12:31–43 [partly]; 13:4–31). A first edition of this memoir (chaps. 1–7) may have been composed a year or two after Nehemiah's arrival in Jerusalem in 445 B.C. A second edition, contained in the present book of Nehemiah, gives Nehemiah credit for a number of later reforms in the community (see esp. chap. 13).

The materials dealing with Ezra are drawn primarily from the Ezra memoir (*see* Ezra, Introduction). Nehemiah 8, the present text of which makes Ezra and Nehemiah contemporaries, is thought to have dealt originally only with Ezra and to have had a location within the Ezra memoir between Ezra 8 and 9. An earlier version of Neh. 9:1–5 may have been located between Ezra 10:15 and 10:16 or at the end of Ezra 10.

An editor combined the Ezra memoir with the Nehemiah memoir, thus juxtaposing the lives of the two great leaders of the restoration and bringing their careers to a joint climax in Nehemiah 8–10. He added, from the Temple archives and other sources, the prayer in 9:6–37, the pledge to keep the law in chap. 10, the report of the repopulation of Jerusalem in 11:1–2 (plus vv. 3–20), and an expanded description of the dedication of the walls in 12:27–43. A later hand provided the lists in 11:21–12:26. Sometime in the fourth century, an editor added Ezra 1–6 to the Ezra-Nehemiah narrative and produced the present books of Ezra and Nehemiah.

The book of Nehemiah can be summarized as follows: Nehemiah, authorized by the Persian authorities, led a group of Jewish exiles home and rebuilt the walls of Jerusalem despite the persistent opposition of Sanballat of Samaria and his allies. Nehemiah corrected abuses dealing with loans and the charging of interest and generously provided for others at his table, with no help from the taxes enjoyed by former governors (chap. 5). He also resolved to relocate to Jerusalem people whose genealogy could be correlated with the list of those who returned with Zerubbabel (chap. 7).

Before the actual repopulation of Jerusalem had taken place, the people requested Ezra to read them the law (8:1). This reading was explained by the Levites and heard by the people with a mixture of joy and weeping. On the basis of their study of the law, the people revived the correct celebration of the Feast of Tabernacles (8:17). Thereupon, the people separated themselves from foreigners and confessed their sins (9:1–3). After a speech rehearsing the history of Israel's sinning and the Lord's repeated benefactions (9:6–31), the community entered into a covenant to walk in God's law and to do all his commandments (10:28).

This purified community relocated one of every ten persons from local towns to Jerusalem (11:1–2) and then dedicated the walls (12:27–43). Lists identify those who lived in Jerusalem (11:3–24) and in the villages (11:25–36) and those who served as priests, Levites, and high priests at various times in the restoration period (12:1–26). The final paragraphs of the book report reforms effected by Nehemiah (12:44–13:31).

COMMENTARY

1:1–7:73a

The Return of Nehemiah and the Rebuilding of the Walls of Jerusalem

1:1–11, Nehemiah's Response to the Destruction of Jerusalem's Walls. In November/December (the Jewish month Chislev) of 445 B.C. (the twentieth year of Artaxerxes I, 465–424 B.C.), Nehemiah, who lived in Susa, one of the three capitals of the Persian Empire, received a discouraging report about the physical condition of Jerusalem (→ Shushan; Persia). Hanani, who delivered the report, was a brother of Nehemiah.

Nehemiah engaged in various acts of sorrow (weeping, mourning, and fasting), during which he confessed his own sin and that of the people. According to the kind of retributive theology characteristic of

Deuteronomistic thought, sin was the moral cause of the Exile and of the dismal state of affairs in Jerusalem. The formulaic list in v. 7 does not allow us to identify the specific sins he may have had in mind. Verses 8–9 are a loose paraphrase of Deut. 30:1–5. Nehemiah identified the people in Jerusalem as heirs of the original group that experienced God's redemption in the military acts of the Exodus (1:10; cf. Deut. 9:29). He prayed that God would remember the promise revealed to Moses and bring about the restoration that was supposed to follow acts of repentance.

In addition, Nehemiah appealed to the Lord to pay attention to his prayer and that of the people—whose obedience and dedication to God are indicated by the term "servants" (1:6, 10)—and to give him a favorable response from "this man" (i.e., Artaxerxes I).

A cupbearer tasted the king's wine to thwart assassination attempts and also guarded the royal living quarters. Some Septuagint manuscripts identify Nehemiah as a eunuch instead of a butler, but this is probably only a confusion in the Greek text and not a reflection of the Hebrew. Nehemiah's opponents would have used his condition as a eunuch to disqualify him for leadership in the community (cf. Deut. 23:1) if he had in fact been castrated.

2:1–10, Artaxerxes Authorizes Nehemiah to Return and Rebuild the Wall. Four months later, Nehemiah found an opportunity to present his case before the king. The king's solicitous question about his depression led to great anxiety in Nehemiah. A royal official should not bother the king with his own personal problems! But Nehemiah revealed his concerns, after praying to the God of heaven (cf. 1:4–5), wishing the king a long life and referring to the spoiled condition of his home city, where his ancestors had been buried. His silence about the name Jerusalem may mean that he knew of the city's rebellious reputation among Persian officials (cf. Ezra 4:9–16).

The king's favorable attitude toward Nehemiah may have been enhanced by the queen's presence, before whom the king may have wanted to appear generous. Her name was Damaspia, as we are told by the classical writer Ctesias. Perhaps the king was also generous because of the start of a new year (the incident is dated to Nisan, the first month of the Jewish year). Nehemiah named a time span for his absence, which surely was not as great as the twelve years that his first term in Jerusalem actually lasted (5:14). In addition, he requested safe passage and a supply of lumber from the royal forest to use in repairing the gates and walls and in building (or repairing) a house for himself. Nehemiah attributed the king's generosity to the intervention of God's good hand (cf. Ezra 7:9; 8:18).

Accompanied by a military guard (cf. Ezra, who refused such a guard, Ezra 8:22), Nehemiah presented his credentials to the governors of the various provinces through which he passed. Two officials, however, were displeased by his coming, and Nehemiah interpreted their opposition to him as hostility toward the Israelites as a whole. Sanballat, whose name is of Babylonian derivation ("May the moon god Sin give life"), was governor of Samaria, though Nehemiah never uses this title in connection with him. Instead, he calls him the Horonite, which may be a term of derision. Sanballat continued as governor of Samaria until at least 407 B.C.; the names of his two sons, Delaiah and Shelemaiah, known from the Elephantine papyri, show that he was a worshiper of Yahweh (the ending "iah" is a shortened form of the name Yahweh). Tobiah, the other opponent, who also has a Yahwistic name, is called an Ammonite. According to the Pentateuch, Ammonites were to be excluded from the worship assembly of Israel (Deut. 23:3–6; cf. Neh. 13:1), but Tobiah had ingratiated himself with some of the rulers in Jerusalem (6:17–18; 13:4–5), and this was no doubt an irritant to Nehemiah. Tobiah was probably the governor of Ammon, whether as an Ammonite himself (4:3) or as a Jew who rose to power in the Persian system (→ Sanballat; Tobiah).

2:11–15, Inspection of the Walls. Nehemiah inspected the walls and gates by night before he informed the Jewish officials what his plans were. The city at the time of Nehemiah included the Temple area and the spur to its south, called Ophel (*see* Color Map 15). He left the city by the Valley Gate, which exited into the Tyropoeon (or Central) Valley, and proceeded around the city in a counterclockwise direction. The Dung Gate (through which rubbish was removed from the city) and the Fountain Gate were on the southern end of Ophel.

2:16–20, Opposition to Nehemiah's Plans. When Nehemiah reported on his inspection tour to the Jewish officials, he made mention of his divine and political authorization (v. 18). A ruined Jerusalem brought its people and its God into disrepute (v. 17; cf. 1:3). The people immediately accepted Nehemiah's proposal to rebuild the walls and gates, but strong opposition was raised by Sanballat, Tobiah, and a previously unnamed Geshem, who controlled vast areas south and east of Jerusalem. The opponents ridiculed the project and suggested that Nehemiah was engaged in rebellion against the Persian Empire. Nehemiah, in reply, called on the God of heaven (cf. 1:5; 2:4) and denied his opponents civic, legal, and liturgical rights in Jerusalem.

3:1–32, A List of Those Who Worked on the Wall. Despite the fact that this list is at times obscure and incomplete, it is of great value to geographers of Jerusalem and Judah in the postexilic period. Five administrative centers are mentioned (Jerusalem, v. 9; Beth-haccherem, v. 14; Mizpah, vv. 15, 19; Beth-zur, v. 16; and Keilah, vv. 17–18). The area included in Judah was perhaps less than half of the pre-exilic kingdom of

Judah (cf. the area of pre-exilic Judah [*see* Color Map 7] with that of later Judea [*see* Color Map 11]). On the north and west, the workers were able to repair the older walls and gates (vv. 1–15), but on the eastern side a whole new wall had to be constructed closer to the crest of Ophel (vv. 16–32). Archaeologists have found remnants of this wall that are 2.75 meters thick.

Eliashib (v. 1) was high priest during the time of Nehemiah (cf. Ezra 10:6). The Sheep Gate (3:1, 32) was probably on the eastern end of the northern wall; the Fish Gate (v. 3) was on the northwest corner, facing the Mediterranean Sea; the Water Gate (v. 26) was on the east, near the spring of Gihon (since Nehemiah's wall was built to the west of the pre-exilic city wall, the old Water Gate was outside the new wall); the Horse Gate (v. 28; cf. Jer. 31:40) was also on the east, near the Temple area (note that priests did the work on this area of the wall).

4:1–5, Ridicule by Opponents. Sanballat and Tobiah made fun of Nehemiah's efforts and scoffed at his ability to build a formidable defensive wall. Nehemiah's prayer is much like the imprecatory psalms (e.g., Ps. 109), which wish harm to one's enemies. The Hebrew text of 4:4 has a play on words between the words "despised" and "plundered." The acts of the opponents deserved a punishment to fit their crime. Nehemiah identified the hostility toward the Jews as a sin that would provoke God's own anger. Since God clearly intended that Jerusalem should be reestablished, any opposition to the building plans was opposition to God himself.

4:6–23, Wall Building and Guard Duty. As building on the wall progressed, so did the opposition—Sanballat and Tobiah on the north, the Ammonites on the east, the Arabs on the south, and the Ashdodites on the west. While the enemies planned to disrupt the project by guerrilla raids (v. 11), the Judeans themselves were losing their morale. Verse 10 seems to be a lament song, bemoaning their loss of strength and the abundance of the debris.

Those Jews who lived away from Jerusalem appealed to those working in Jerusalem to escape danger by returning home (v. 12). Nehemiah, however, rallied his workers by assembling them and reminding them of the capabilities of the Lord as a great warrior (vv. 14, 20; cf. Exod. 15:3). He urged the people to fight for their families and their homes. This assembly was held in an exposed place so that it might impress the opponents with the military capabilities of the Jews.

Nehemiah divided his workers into three groups. One contingent served as soldiers, armed with various kinds of weapons (4:16). Another group, the porters, reserved one hand for their labors and the other for a weapon (v. 17). The builders themselves, who needed both hands for their task, had a short sword girded on their side (v. 18).

Since the circumference of the city was about 1.5 miles, Nehemiah appointed a trumpeter to rally the forces in case of crisis. He also lengthened the work day from the usual sunset (Deut. 24:15) to the time when the stars appeared. He increased both security and efficiency by eliminating the daily commuting to the workers' hometowns. All spent the night in Jerusalem, fully dressed and ready for any emergency. Nehemiah not only claimed credit for all of these innovations, but he also set an example of readiness himself.

5:1–13, Socioeconomic Problems. A severe famine and the need to pay royal taxes forced a number of Judeans into an economic crisis. To get food, people offered their sons and daughters as pledges for loans (v. 5). Others mortgaged their fields, vineyards, or homes. A third group went into debt to pay their taxes.

A cry of moral outrage (v. 1) arose because children, especially daughters, were being sold into debt slavery to fellow Judeans (cf. Exod. 21:7–11). Since all the crop money went to creditors, there was nothing left over that they could use to redeem their children (5:5). Nehemiah was enraged, and he contended with the moneylenders, who were mistreating their own flesh and blood. The point at issue seems to have involved the practice of seizing pledges from debtors, rather than the taking of interest (despite the translation in NRSV; → Loan).

Previously, Jews had been buying back their sisters or brothers who had been forced to sell themselves into debt slavery to gentile masters. But now people were selling themselves into slavery to fellow Jews, with the result that the community had to use its precious money to pay off Jewish creditors. Nehemiah urged his colleagues to stop such outrageous loan practices. Anything taken in pledge—fields, vineyards, olive orchards, and houses—should be returned to its rightful owner.

The creditors agreed to follow Nehemiah's reforms, and he sealed their commitment with an oath administered by the priests. In a symbolic curse, he asked that anyone who did not follow through on these reforms be shaken out, like pockets. By their "amen," the creditors agreed to be bound by the stipulations of the oath.

5:14–19, Nehemiah's Generosity. Nehemiah's first term as governor lasted from 445 to 433/432 B.C. In distinction from his predecessors, he refused the governor's food allowance, which amounted to about forty shekels of silver a day (roughly one pound). His piety and his sympathy for the people's heavy tax burdens (vv. 15, 18) were behind this generous policy. Nehemiah persisted in his work on the wall at considerable expense and assigned his servants to fill in wherever they were needed. Daily he fed some 150 officials in addition to numerous foreign guests. One

modern commentator has estimated that the oxen and six sheep he butchered every day would provide enough meat to serve some 600 to 800 people. His prayer for God to remember his generosity to the people (v. 19) is repeated in 13:14, 22, 31. It expresses a strong belief in the doctrine of retribution (cf. 6:14). Of course, Nehemiah also recognized that forgiveness was ultimately possible only because of God's great loyalty or steadfast love (13:22).

6:1–14, Escapes from Enemy Plots. Two of his opponents, Sanballat and Geshem, invited Nehemiah to a meeting in the plain of Ono, some twenty-five miles northwest of Jerusalem. Their intentions were to do him bodily harm and to stop his work on the walls. Nehemiah declined their invitation with an ironic excuse: he was too busy working on the walls to meet with them! After receiving four negative replies to his invitation, Sanballat sent a fifth invitation in an open letter delivered by a courier. Sanballat charged that the wall building was part of a rebellion designed to make Nehemiah king. He also alleged that prophets were hailing Nehemiah as king, and he threatened to send word of these activities to the Persian king if Nehemiah failed to meet privately with him. Nehemiah categorically branded the charges as futile attempts to frighten the Judean community and make it weak. In his prayer he asked God, therefore, to strengthen his hands so that the work might be completed.

A second effort to discredit Nehemiah came in an invitation from the prophet Shemaiah, urging him to seek asylum in the Temple. Although laypeople could seek asylum by grasping the horns of the altar in the Temple courtyard (1 Kings 1:50–53; 2:28–34), it was not permitted for them to enter the Temple itself. If Nehemiah had followed Shemaiah's invitation, he would have violated an important law. Nehemiah angrily rejected this invitation and accused Shemaiah of being paid off by Tobiah and Sanballat. Perhaps Shemaiah's suggestion that he enter the Temple in defiance of the law helped Nehemiah to see through his pretensions. Nehemiah prayed for God to punish Tobiah and Sanballat appropriately. He also mentioned a prophetess Noadiah and a group of other prophets who wanted to make him afraid, though the details of these incidents are not preserved.

6:15–19, Completion of the Wall. The repairs of the wall were completed on October 2, fifty-two days after they had been begun on August 11. This speedy completion may have resulted from the high dedication of Nehemiah. It needs to be remembered that he did not restore the severely damaged eastern wall, but relocated it further up on the ridge. Archaeologists have not been impressed with the workmanship on the "wall of Nehemiah" that they have unearthed.

The speed shown in this task convinced Nehemiah's enemies that the wall had been completed solely with the help of God (v. 16). Consequently, their own self-confidence and self-esteem suffered.

All during this period ("in those days," v. 17), a lively correspondence was carried on between the nobles of Judah and Tobiah the Ammonite. Tobiah and his son Jehohanan had both married women from Jerusalem, perhaps women of some importance (cf. 3:4, 30, in which Meshullam seems to possess a high rank). The nobles tried to mediate between Nehemiah and Tobiah, but Nehemiah observes that Tobiah himself tried to intimidate him (6:19).

7:1–73a, The List of Those Who Returned. Only the first five verses of this chapter are new; the rest of the chapter is duplicated by Ezra 2 (*see* Ezra, Commentary, 2:1–70). Nehemiah, who was governor of Judah, appointed his own brother as governor of Jerusalem. This man's name was Hanani or Hananiah (alternate spellings of the same name); several English versions give the impression that Nehemiah appointed two people with nearly identical names. Hanani feared God, and he also was faithful to both Nehemiah and the Persian authorities. Verse 3 deals with details of the security system for Jerusalem. Apparently, the gates of the city were to be closed during the midday hours, when the guards might be drowsy. Lay inhabitants of Jerusalem were also appointed for security purposes at positions near their own homes and wherever else they were needed.

Jerusalem at the time of Nehemiah may have comprised thirty or forty acres, but the population seemed sparse to the governor, and this increased the security risks about which he was worried. Nehemiah decided to remedy this situation by bringing 10 percent of the province's purely Jewish population to Jerusalem (cf. 11:1). To determine genealogically who was eligible to be transferred to Jerusalem, he referred to the extant list of those who had returned from the Exile, which was probably a composite summary of a number of returns to Palestine during the reigns of Cyrus and Cambyses.

In 7:70–72, the list notes the donations given to the Temple. The unnamed governor in v. 70 was especially generous, and Nehemiah may have believed that his own gifts made him that governor's legitimate and worthy successor. According to a plausible reconstruction of v. 73a, the priests, the Levites, and some of the people lived in their country towns, but the leaders lived in Jerusalem.

7:73b–10:39

The Climax of the Work of Ezra

7:73b–8:12, Ezra Reads the Law. This unit originally was part of the Ezra memoir and probably did not refer to Nehemiah (the reference to him in 8:9 is lacking in the Greek translation known as 1 Esdras). Chap.

8 belongs chronologically after Ezra 8. Thus the public assembly here described took place on the first of the seventh month (8:2), whereas the assembly called to deal with the problem of mixed marriages (Ezra 10:9) came together on the twentieth of the ninth month. In later times, the first day of the seventh month was celebrated as New Year's Day (Lev. 23:24–25; Num. 29:1–6).

The book from which Ezra read for five to six hours (8:3) was very likely some form of the Pentateuch (note "the Torah of Moses" in 8:1; 13:1). Since the books of Ezra and Nehemiah are not explicit about the extent of this Torah-book, one's view of its identity may be colored by one's view of the composition history of the Pentateuch. Some would restrict this Torah to the book of Deuteronomy or to the so-called Priestly portions of the Pentateuch.

Ezra had six lay officials on his right and seven on his left (unless Meshullam, the seventh person on his left, is the result of a textual error; see 1 Esd. 9:44). Ezra stood on a platform, much like the one Solomon used at the dedication of the first Temple (2 Chron. 6:13), and opened the scroll containing the Torah. The people assented to the reading by calling out "amen, amen" and by prostrating themselves to the ground. Thirteen Levites helped the people understand the Torah, perhaps by translating it on the spot into Aramaic or by moving among the people and explaining it after every paragraph had been read.

The people heard the Torah with a mixture of joy and weeping (8:9, 12). Weeping expresses the sorrow people felt for failing to observe its demands. Ezra reassured them that the joy of the Lord offers protection against the judgments that the Torah proclaimed against transgressors (v. 9). Since the day of the law reading was holy to the Lord (vv. 9, 10, 11), Ezra commanded the people not to mourn or weep and to celebrate the occasion with a festival meal. All were urged to share their food with those who had not had the opportunity or the wherewithal to prepare for this celebration.

8:13–18, Celebration of the Feast of Booths. The people resolved to study the Torah just as Ezra had done (v. 13; cf. Ezra 7:10). On the basis of this study, they held a unique celebration of the Feast of Tabernacles (Booths), unparalleled since the days of Joshua (here called Jeshua the son of Nun, 8:17). This festival was normally held on the fifteenth to the twenty-second days of the seventh month (Lev. 23:33–36, 39–43). Perhaps Ezra's celebration marked the first time that the Feast of Booths had been held at the central sanctuary since Israel was gathered at Gilgal during the time of the conquest or the first time in centuries that the booths represented Israel's wilderness wanderings and not just the way people lived at harvest time.

Each day of the festival Ezra read from the book of the Torah. According to Deut. 31:10–13, the Torah was to be read every seventh year. The solemn assembly or holiday on the eighth day is in accord with the ordinances of Lev. 23:36, 39 and Num. 29:35–38 (cf. Deut. 16:13–15).

9:1–5a, National Day of Mourning. This national day of mourning should perhaps be placed between Ezra 10:15 and 10:16 or at the end of that chapter. The position after Ezra 10:15 would place this incident on the twenty-fourth of the ninth month of Ezra's first year; the position at the end of Ezra 10 would place it on the twentieth of the first month of his *second* year. In either case, it seems to be related to the incident in which Ezra forced the people to divorce their foreign wives. The present context may be an attempt to depict an ideal response to the law: reading of the law (chap. 8), confession of sin (chap. 9), and enacting a covenant, or firm agreement (chap. 10).

This section reports that the people resolved to separate themselves from all foreigners and that they spent half the day in reading the Torah and in making confession of their sin. This act of separation shows the purity of all those who entered into covenant (9:38). The worship was led by Levites, who are listed in vv. 4–5; they also are the ones who recited the following prayer.

9:5b–37, Confessional Prayer. The prayer begins with words of blessing and praise for the Lord, whose righteousness in judging Israel is acknowledged toward the end (v. 33).

First among God's praiseworthy acts is his creation and preservation of the entire world (v. 6). God's uniqueness is reflected in his worship by the whole host of heaven (the stars or heavenly beings).

This mighty God is the one who chose Abram, took him from southern Mesopotamia to the promised land, and entered into a covenant with him to give him the land. God's fidelity to this relationship (his righteousness) brought about the fulfillment of these promises (vv. 7–8).

God also heard the cries of distress in Egypt and led Israel to freedom in the Exodus (vv. 9–11). During the wilderness wanderings, God guided Israel in a pillar of cloud and fire and gave it the Sabbath, commandments, and laws at Sinai. The Lord also fed the Israelites with manna and provided water from the rock; he told them to proceed with the conquest of the land, in fulfillment of his promises (vv. 12–15).

Despite numerous rebellions and the apostasy in the incident of the golden calf (Exod. 32), God showed his readiness to forgive and be merciful. Although God led the Israelites by the pillars of cloud and fire more than once and gave them food, water, and clothing over a forty-year period, he gave the Torah only once. Finally, at the end of the wilderness period, God gave them victories over the kingdoms of Sihon and Og in

Transjordan. Increase in population among the descendants of the Exodus generation served as a fulfillment of God's earlier promises, and he subdued before them the various peoples and kings of the Canaanites. The richness of the God-given land is described in terms of its many crops. The notice in v. 25 that they "became fat" may have a double meaning: it can be a sign of blessing and prosperity or it can be a prelude to stubbornness, haughtiness, and rebellion (cf. Deut. 32:15).

The behavior recounted in these verses follows the pattern of the Deuteronomistic History (→ Deuteronomistic Historian). God's goodness is followed by Israel's rebellion—Israel rejected the law and killed the prophets! Evidence for killing prophets in OT times is very slim, and the charge, so frequent in the NT, is first raised in the Bible here. It dramatically illustrates how Israel rejected the prophetic word. As in Judges, sin was followed by deliverance into the hand of enemies, a cry to God for deliverance, and his raising of saviors to deliver them (9:27). After a period of rest, the whole cycle would begin again. God delivered them "many times" (v. 28) and patiently warned them over "many years" (v. 30). The spirit, which had instructed them in the wilderness period, spoke through the prophets, but the people refused to hear. The history of Israel in the land, as in Ezek. 20:28–29, is very brief, and the moral is clear: because of its disobedience in the face of repeated warnings and divine acts of mercy, Israel was turned over into the hands of great nations like Assyria and Babylonia.

Neh. 9:32–37 resembles the communal laments in the book of Psalms. The poets affirm God's covenant loyalty and ask God not to overlook the hardships they have experienced since the invasion of Assyria. The history reported in this chapter demonstrates that the Lord has dealt faithfully and Israel has acted wickedly (v. 33). Since the ancestors refused to "serve," those who pray these words "serve" or become slaves in the rich land that had once been given to the ancestors. Here the Persian rule is not viewed from a collaborationist perspective. The people complained that the produce of the land went to the victorious kings, who forced them to work on state labor projects and who requisitioned livestock whenever they wanted to. The last words of the prayer are poignant: we are in great distress.

9:38–10:39, A Pledge to Keep God's Law. The community entered into a covenant to walk in God's law and to do all his commandments. A number of the areas identified as in need of correction required Nehemiah's direct actions later in the book: mixed marriages, the Sabbath, the wood offering, first fruits, levitical tithes, and proper care of the Temple. It seems that after Nehemiah's efforts at reform, the community as a whole resolved to put these abuses to an end permanently. From a historical perspective, therefore, chap. 13, which mentions Nehemiah's efforts on these problems, preceded chap. 10. For the editor of the books of Ezra and Nehemiah, however, this making of a covenant served as the climactic work of Ezra and Nehemiah.

The list of signatories includes Nehemiah, Zedekiah (perhaps Nehemiah's chief official), twenty-one priests, seventeen Levites, and forty-four heads of the people. The vast majority of names can be found in other lists in Ezra and Nehemiah. Their inclusion here shows that the entire community agreed with what had been covenanted. In 10:28, the groups within the community are called people (laity), priests, Levites, gatekeepers, singers, and Temple servants.

The decision not to enter into mixed marriages (v. 30; cf. 13:23–30) is based on Exod. 34:11–16 and Deut. 7:1–4, where marriages with the pre-Israelite inhabitants of the land are prohibited. No provision is made here about mixed marriages that already existed (cf. Ezra 10).

The people also resolved not to purchase goods on the Sabbath or other holy days (10:31; cf. 13:15–22) and to observe the Sabbatical Year by letting the land lie fallow (cf. Exod. 23:10–11; Lev. 25:2–7, 20–21) and by canceling all debts (cf. Deut. 15:1–8). Thus, by this unique combination, farmers and merchants/employers alike would share equally in the observance of this year (cf. 5:1–13; → Sabbatical Year).

An annual Temple tax was designated to provide sacrifices and to make repairs on the Temple (10:32–33). The community decided by lot when the various families would bring an annual wood offering to keep the fire on the altar burning perpetually (v. 34; cf. 13:31; Lev. 6:8–13). Gifts in kind are specified in 10:35–36: first fruits of crops and livestock (cf. 13:31) and firstborn sons. Firstborn sons and the firstborn of unclean animals would be redeemed. Tithes from the crops were perquisites for the Levites (Num. 18:26–32; cf. Neh. 13:10–14). A final pledge not to neglect the Temple (10:39) seems to respond to the complaint of Nehemiah in 13:11.

11:1–13:31
Further Acts of Nehemiah

11:1–2, Action to Increase Population. By casting lots, the community decided to bring one of every ten people in Judea to live in Jerusalem. Neh. 7:1–5a had also been concerned with the low population of the holy city.

11:3–24, A List of Family Heads in Jerusalem. This list shows the success of the repopulation effort by identifying those who lived in Jerusalem: people of Judah (vv. 4b–6); people of Benjamin (vv. 7–8); leaders (v. 9); priests (vv. 10–14); Levites (vv. 15–18); gatekeep-

ers (v. 19); Temple servants (Nethinim; v. 21); and singers (v. 23). Pethahiah (v. 24) was an official in charge of Jewish affairs connected with the Persian monarch. How his office was related to that of Ezra or Nehemiah cannot be determined. Verses 1–19 are roughly paralleled by 1 Chron. 9:2–17.

11:25–36, A List of the Settlements in Judah and Benjamin Outside of Jerusalem. The editor of Ezra-Nehemiah thought it appropriate to specify the population in the rest of Judah (cf. vv. 1–3, 20). (For identifications of the various place names, see the book-length commentaries listed in the Bibliography.)

12:1–9, A List of Priests and Levites from the Time of Zerubbabel and Jeshua. The authenticity of this list is widely questioned. It may have been artificially reconstructed from 12:12–25 to provide a list of clergy from the first period of the restoration community.

12:10–11, A List of High Priests from Jeshua to Jaddua. Jeshua, the first in the list, was high priest in 520 B.C., and Jaddua, the last, was a contemporary of Alexander the Great, who died in 323 B.C. Since there are only six names in the list, this creates an average tenure of more than thirty years. F. M. Cross argues that papponomy (the naming of a baby after his grandfather) was used within the high-priestly line. He conjectures that an additional Eliashib and Johanan should be inserted before the Eliashib of v. 10 and an additional Johanan and Jaddua before Jaddua. His reconstructed list of high priests is as follows (additions in brackets): Jeshua, Joiakim, [Eliashib I], [Johanan I], Eliashib II, Joiada I, Johanan II (an emendation for "Jonathan"; cf. vv. 22–23); Jaddua II; [Johanan III]; and [Jaddua III]. Cross locates Ezra in the time of Johanan I and Nehemiah in the time of Eliashib II. Critics of his solution have pointed out that there is no necessary reason to conclude that papponomy was practiced at this time in the high-priestly line, that the relationship between Joiakim and Eliashib I that Cross proposes (brothers) is contradicted in 12:10–11 (Eliashib is the son of Joiakim), and that the chronological difficulties are not as severe as Cross implies.

12:12–26, A List of Priests and Levites from the Time of Joiakim. The dating of this list to Joiakim is found in vv. 12, 26. The latter reference puts both Nehemiah and Ezra during the high-priesthood of Joiakim. Though this is not accurate historically (Nehemiah's high priest was Eliashib; 3:1), the editor of this list was intent on showing the unified character of their work, a concern that is also behind the present arrangement of chaps. 8–10. Neh. 12:23–25 puts the list of Levites in the time of Johanan (= Jonathan of v. 11). Though Johanan is called the son of Eliashib in v. 23, the Jonathan of v. 11 is Eliashib's grandson. Some, therefore (e.g., NEB), translate the Hebrew word *ben* (usually, "son") in v. 23 as "grandson."

12:27–43, Dedication of the Wall. This dedication, which one might expect to have taken place shortly after the completion of the building, is reported now after a series of intervening events and lists (8:1–12:26). A double procession emphasizes the joint contributions of Ezra and Nehemiah to the founding of the postexilic community. Ezra led a procession that proceeded around Jerusalem in a counterclockwise fashion; Nehemiah led another group clockwise around the city. Both groups came together in the Temple square. The sacrifices at the dedication were "great," i.e., many; the joy was also great. The verb "rejoice" is used three times in v. 43; the noun "joy" is used two times. The joy on this occasion did not cause the political troubles it did at the beginning of the restoration of the Temple (Ezra 3:13).

12:44–47, Contribution Supervisors Appointed. This paragraph associates the appointment of contribution supervisors with the completion of work on the city. The community's happiness with the clergy continued from the time of Zerubbabel to the time of Nehemiah (v. 47). Authority for the various distinctions within the clergy is traced back to the efforts of David and Solomon (→ Levites; Priests).

13:1–3, Separation from Foreigners. The action described in these verses prepares readers for Nehemiah's treatment of Tobiah in the next paragraph. The ban on Ammonites and Moabites is recorded in Deut. 23:3–6. Balak, king of Moab, had hired Balaam to curse Israel during its trip through the wilderness (Num. 22–24).

13:4–9, Misuse of Temple Chambers. While Nehemiah had returned to Mesopotamia after completing his first term as governor, Eliashib (not the high priest of 3:1, etc.) had allowed Nehemiah's enemy Tobiah to take over one of the rooms in the Temple. When Nehemiah returned to Jerusalem for his second term, he immediately banished the Ammonite Tobiah from these quarters and threw out all his furniture. Perhaps Eliashib and Tobiah had concluded that Nehemiah would never return. From the Temple area Tobiah would have been in a good position to develop his local contacts (cf. 6:17–19).

13:10–14, Provisions for the Levites. Because the people had provided no income for the Levites, they had fled to the countryside, leaving the Temple understaffed. Nehemiah brought the Levites back to the city and saw to it that tithes were once again paid and that treasurers were appointed to collect and distribute the contributions. Three times in this chapter he asks God to remember his good deeds and reward him for them (vv. 14, 22, 31; cf. v. 29).

13:15–22, Reform of the Sabbath Day. Ezra's work was thirty years old at the time of Nehemiah's second term, and people had begun to violate the Sabbath commandment, which his Torah demands be enforced. Nehemiah warned that the present offenses might lead to the same dire consequences as the offenses of the ancestors—destruction of the city and exile. By closing the gates of the city during the Sabbath, he tried to ensure that no burdens would be carried into the city and no commerce would take place. He warned those merchants who set up their shops just outside the city on the Sabbath and appointed the Levites to guard the gates in order to keep the Sabbath holy.

13:23–29, A Crisis of Intermarriage. Nehemiah noted that many Jews had married women from Ashdod, Ammon, and Moab and that the children of these unions often could not speak Hebrew. We are not told that he dissolved existing marriages, but he did rebuke those who had intermarried, both verbally and physically. He forced the community to swear not to intermarry with foreigners in the future, that is, to keep the law recorded in Deut. 7:3. The criticism of Solomon's marriages with foreign women in 13:26 is an important argument against the notion that one person wrote both 1–2 Chronicles and Ezra-Nehemiah, since Solomon's foreign marriages are not reported in Chronicles, but only in 1 Kings 11.

Nehemiah acted decisively against one of the grandsons of Eliashib, the high priest during his first term, who had married the daughter of his archenemy, Sanballat. Nehemiah expelled them from the community and asked God to "remember" them because they had violated the requirement that a high priest should never marry a Gentile (Lev. 21:13–15; in Ezek. 44:22, the prohibition against having a gentile wife applies to all priests; on the levitical covenant, see Mal. 2:4–8).

13:30–31, Summary of Reforms. These verses rehearse Nehemiah's efforts to cleanse the community from foreign influence and to regulate the duties of the priests and Levites and the offerings of the people. The final prayer for God to remember him makes no additional requests for rewards.

Bibliography

Blenkinsopp, J. *Ezra-Nehemiah.* Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1988.

Clines, D. J. *Ezra, Nehemiah, Esther.* New Century Bible Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1984.

Cross, F. M. "A Reconstruction of the Judean Restoration." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 94 (1975): 4–18.

Eskenazi. T. C. *In an Age of Prose: A Literary Approach to Ezra-Nehemiah.* Society of Biblical Literature Monograph Series, 36. Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1988.

Throntveit, Mark A. *Ezra-Nehemiah.* Interpretation: A Bible Commentary for Teaching and Preaching. Louisville, KY: John Knox Press, 1992.

Williamson, H. G. M. *Ezra, Nehemiah.* Word Biblical Commentary, 16. Waco, TX: Word, 1985.

Esther

DAVID J. A. CLINES

INTRODUCTION

The book of Esther is the story of the greatest threat to the survival of the Jewish people. It recounts how a series of happy coincidences, allied with the courage and wisdom of the Jewish woman Esther, so successfully averted the threat that not a single Jewish life was lost.

The story of Esther exists in two principal versions. The first is the ten-chapter form we find in the Hebrew Bible and in Protestant translations of the OT. The second is the sixteen-chapter form appearing in the Septuagint (Greek) version of the Bible and in Roman Catholic translations. The material that appears in the Roman Catholic but not the Protestant book of Esther is put by Protestants in the Apocrypha, where it is known as the Additions to Esther (*see* The Additions to Esther, Introduction and Commentary). The Additions do not appear in Jewish Bibles.

History

Given the serious threat to the Jewish people narrated by this book, readers are naturally eager to know whether the events it depicts actually occurred or the book is fiction. Most scholars agree that the book is essentially a fictional account in which a good deal of historical detail is incorporated.

There is no doubt that the Persian king Ahasuerus of the book of Esther is the historical Xerxes (486–465 B.C.) known to us from the Greek historian Herodotus's *History of the Persian Wars,* especially Books 7–9 (→ Ahasuerus). The book of Esther also contains many details of Persian life that we find confirmed from extrabiblical sources, such as the extent of the empire from India to Ethiopia (1:1), the impressive postal system (3:13; 8:10), the keeping of official diaries including records of the king's benefactors (2:23; 6:1–2), and the use of impalement as a form of punishment (2:23; 5:14; 7:10).

But the plausibility of the chronological framework and the accuracy of the local color do not amount to a demonstration of the book's historicity. It is more significant that the essential plot of the book hangs upon a considerable number of improbable coincidences—for example, that there should be a Jewish queen on the Persian throne at the very time when genocide of the Jews is being plotted; that Mordecai's service to the king (2:21–23) is not rewarded at the appropriate time, but brought to the king's attention merely hours before Haman, the prime minister, arrives to ask for Mordecai's life (6:1–3); and that Haman, in begging for his life at Esther's feet, should be thought by the king to be attempting to rape the queen and for that reason be executed (7:8–10). The combination of coincidences, none perhaps entirely improbable in itself, brings the historical credibility of the work into question.

Structure and Plot

The book has a clearly demarcated beginning, middle, and end; chaps. 1–2 form the exposition, chaps. 3–9 the complication, and chaps. 9–10 the resolution. The exposition contains seven distinct scenes, and the complication nine scenes.

The plot proper begins with the refusal of the Jew Mordecai to do obeisance to his superior Haman, on the religious ground that Haman the Agagite comes from a race once hostile to the Jewish people. From Haman's angry response there develop two arcs of tension, the one the question of what will happen to Mordecai, the other the question of what will happen to the Jews, since Haman has determined that the whole of Mordecai's race should suffer for Mordecai's intransigence. Mordecai's fate is first determined when the king, discovering that he has failed to reward him for an earlier favor, elevates him to a position of honor. The fate of the Jews still hangs in the balance, however, as long as the unalterable Persian decree Haman has issued against them remains in force. Only when Mordecai dispatches a second decree that, although not literally canceling the first, effectively annuls it, are the Jews safe. The fateful day on which a mass assault, a veritable pogrom, against them was planned becomes a day on which—on the contrary—they manage to kill their enemies throughout the empire without loss of a single Jewish life.

Function

The book addresses itself to the Jewish community as an affirmation that God is just as concerned with the

survival of the Jewish people as they themselves are and that no danger to them can arise that will not issue in "relief and deliverance" (4:14). Within that affirmation stands the assertion that Jewish and gentile interests are not necessarily contradictory (despite Haman in 3:8) and that Jews should expect to enjoy security through peaceful cooperation with their gentile masters. The more ostensible function of the book is to recount the origin of the Jewish festival of Purim (9:20–32)—a goal it manifestly does not accomplish if the book is not historical. But what it does do is to insist that this festival celebrating Jewish survival should not be an acclamation of Jewish military might or Jewish diplomatic cunning, but serve as reminder of an occasion when simply "rest," or "relief," came the Jews' way (9:16, 18); at Purim the order of the day should be domestic merrymaking and the exchanging of gifts rather than solemn or militaristic ceremony (→ Purim, The Feast of; Lot, Lots).

COMMENTARY

1:1–2:23
Exposition

1:1–4, The Royal Banquet for the Officials. The story begins at some distance from the main action of the plot, with the depiction of a sumptuous 180-day banquet for officials from all over the Persian Empire. The function of this scene is principally to portray the magnificence and luxury of the Persian court as a backdrop to the decidedly shabby treatment that will be meted out to one of the subject races of that empire, the Jews.

1:5–9, The Royal Banquets for the Citizens of Susa. The narrative focus sharpens on a briefer, but equally pretentious, pair of banquets given immediately thereafter by the king and the queen for the citizens of the Persian capital, Susa. The king's banquet for the males is, according to the Persian custom, primarily an extended drinking bout, the only rule for its conduct being that "the drinking is to be unstinted" (1:8). The ostentation of the men's banquet and the elaborate description of the decor of the palace pavilion where it is held contrast with the perfunctory notice given to Queen Vashti's banquet for the women (1:9). But at least the queen, who will prove a mainspring of action in this chapter, has been introduced, even though her strict subordination to the king is emphasized with the notation that her own quarters, where she gives her banquet, are "the palace that belonged to King Ahasuerus" (1:9).

1:10–22, Vashti's Refusal to Obey the King's Command. On the seventh and closing day of the festivities and thus presumably as the climax to his self-advertisement, the king sends for Vashti to appear before him at the men's banquet "to show off her beauty" (1:11)—to his advantage rather than hers. Contrary to custom and expectation, she refuses. It is all the more alarming that she gives no reason for her refusal, not even the fact that the king is tipsy. A feminist reading of the narrative is today inescapable, but the author more probably intends a satire against Persian men as incapable of commanding their wives' obedience. It is hardly to the credit of this absolute monarch, fabulously wealthy and masterfully supreme in every sphere, that on the domestic front he can be so decisively worsted. He, rather than Vashti, has become the spectacle.

Vashti's unelaborated refusal forms an amusing contrast to the histrionic reaction of the king and his counselors. Although the outcome is (perhaps) tragic for Vashti—though we observe that her punishment, never to come again before the king (1:19), is conceivably her dearest wish—it is in other respects pure farce. It involves the whole elaborate machinery of Persian law and administration—to say nothing of the postal service—in asserting the right of every man in the empire to be master in his own house. And it is implied that the story of Vashti's independence will spread like wildfire throughout Persian lands, every wife in the empire waiting only for this sign from the empress to break out in long-stifled rebellion against her husband.

2:1–4, The King's Decision to Seek a New Queen. We move closer to the main action of the story in this chapter as we discover how the Jewish girl Esther, who will be indispensable for the salvation of her people, comes to be queen on the Persian throne. Certainly her ancestry will be no recommendation for the post of successor to Vashti; only a nationwide beauty contest, open to virgins everywhere regardless of ethnic background or social status, will succeed in replacing a Persian queen with a Jewish one. It is an extra piece of satire against the king, and so against Persians, that he cannot think how Vashti may be replaced without the advice of his counselors.

2:5–11, Esther's Admission to the Court. Esther is an improbable candidate for the throne of Persia, being not only Jewish, but also the descendant of captives (2:6), and lacking both father and mother to promote her cause. She is, however, beautiful. It is only later that we learn of her other qualities. For the moment it is her beauty alone that gains her entrance to the harem and, once there, to the favored position in the eyes of the harem-master.

2:12–18, Esther's Accession to the Throne. The depiction of the twelve-month course of beautifying treatments for potential bedfellows of the king is hard to take seriously; it highlights the extravagance and artificiality of the court. A hint is dropped of Esther's character when we learn that she takes no advantage of the custom of taking possession of the most expensive jewelry and clothes for her night with the king. But we cannot be sure that it signifies her modesty or unwillingness to enrich herself at the king's expense. Could it be her innate cunning to distinguish herself from her competitors by "dressing down" for the occasion, or is she making a silent protest against Persian ostentation?

2:19–23, Mordecai's Discovery of the Plot Against the King. This episode serves a foreshadowing purpose; it will become truly functional only for the events of chap. 6, when Mordecai's good deed is rewarded. Mordecai appears to be a palace official, with his seat "at the king's gate," though perhaps the story gains in punch if we see him as simply one of the crowd of loungers who gather outside the palace gate. We do know that he walks in front of the harem to pick up gossip on how Esther is faring (2:11). In either case, his position enables him to overhear a plot to assassinate the king, and because he still has contact with Esther he can pass the news on to her. She, because she stands so high in the king's favor, has ready access to him and can inform him of the plot "in the name of Mordecai" (2:22).

Up to this point everything has been setting the scene. The real action of the story will begin only in chap. 3.

3:1–8:17
Complication

In the ten scenes that form the complication, or main action of the plot, we are confronted with a constantly changing grouping of the four main characters of the plot—Esther, Mordecai, Ahasuerus, and Haman.

3:1–6, Haman's Promotion and Mordecai's Refusal to Honor Him. The focus shifts from the figures of Esther and Mordecai to the axis of Mordecai the Jew and Haman the prime minister. Haman is not himself a Persian, but an "Agagite." We never hear in nonbiblical literature of such a racial designation in the Persian Empire, but Jews know that Agag was not only the foe of Saul who indirectly cost him his kingship (1 Sam. 15:8–33), but also the king of Amalek, the tribe that was the archetypical enemy of Israel (Exod. 17:14–16; Deut. 25:17–19; → Amalekites). Jewish readers immediately understand that Haman will play the role in this story of the "enemy of the Jews" (8:1). In this connection, note that just as Haman's descent recalls Agag, so does Mordecai's recall Saul (2:5; 1 Sam. 9:1). But whereas Agag is Saul's downfall, Mordecai will be Haman's. Why Mordecai refuses the customary obeisance to Haman remains unclear. The narrative makes no judgment on Mordecai's behavior or its motive; it is simply the datum of the text from which the narrative will take its rise. If there is a recklessness or an excessiveness about Mordecai's behavior, there is an irrationality about Haman's, who promptly decides that to humiliate Mordecai would be beneath his dignity and that the only adequate retribution would be to wipe out the whole people of Mordecai. This is the first notice we have of the nervousness and overreaction characteristic of Haman, the outsider and parvenu.

3:7–15, Haman's Plot Against the Jews Gains the King's Consent. Haman first chooses by lot the most suitable day for carrying out his design. The impression is given that Haman remained firm to his evil design throughout the whole of the twelfth year of Ahasuerus, from the first to the twelfth month. The day fixed upon is the thirteenth day of the twelfth month; thirteen is an unlucky number among Babylonians and Persians. Could this be a hint that the day will turn out worse for Persians than for Jews?

Haman's speech, like the courtier Memucan's in 1:16–20, states first the precise offense, then a proposed solution, and then the advantages to be gained. In both cases the disproportion between the actual events and the proposed punishment is striking. Haman cunningly mixes truth, half-truth, and innuendo: the Jews are indeed scattered throughout the empire (though Haman manages to make that sound like a conspiracy); they do indeed have their own customs, but it is a misrepresentation to suggest that means they therefore do not obey the king's law. (Haman is playing upon the fact that the same word means "custom" and "law.")

His offer of an enormous bribe, equivalent to two-thirds of the annual budget of the Persian central government, does not alert the king to the likelihood that Haman cannot be acting disinterestedly, out of pure concern for the king's welfare.

4:1–3, Mordecai Hears the News. Mordecai's reaction to the threat of genocide against the Jews is not dismay at what damage his principles have done to his people, but a public protest ("at the king's gate") at the injustice that now has royal assent. Mirroring Mordecai's public response is the more private and religious response of the less powerful Jews throughout the empire; though God is not mentioned in the book, their fasting is a sign of their religious commitment (→ Fasting; Sackcloth).

4:4–17, Mordecai Impresses on Esther the Need for Action. In this brilliant narrative, communication between Mordecai and Esther passes through three stages. In the first (4:4), no words are spoken, and the gift of clothes that Esther sends to Mordecai is rejected. In the second (4:5–9), a message, both oral and written, is sent from Mordecai to Esther, but the words are not reported. In the third (4:10–17), words from Esther, from Mordecai, and from Esther again are narrated. The whole narrative represents a movement from ignorance to understanding to decision. Esther is the one who initiates each of the communications, but Mordecai's part is equally crucial: it is he who gives news of the king's decision, challenges Esther to approach the king, and convinces her against her inclination to act courageously.

In this scene Esther comes of age; by the end of it she is no longer acting as merely the adoptive daughter of Mordecai who obeys him in everything (cf. 2:10, 20), but as the one who takes charge, Mordecai going away and doing "everything that *Esther* had commanded *him*" (4:17; my emphasis). The change has come about through Mordecai's argument that staying out of the king's presence is no less dangerous than entering it: "Do not think that in the king's palace you have more chance of escape than do the other Jews. . . . If you keep silence, you and your family [including Mordecai!] will die" (4:13–14). But Esther does not need only to be convinced intellectually of the right action; she needs also the support of her compatriots, expressed in an exceptionally rigorous period of fasting that is in keeping with the enormity of her undertaking.

5:1–8, Esther's First Audience with the King and Its Outcome. The difficulty in approaching the Persian king lies in not being summoned (4:11), and now that the king has apparently tired of her and she has not been called to his presence in the past month, there is little reason to think that she will again be summoned. There is no extrabiblical evidence for this rule of the Persian court, but it is in harmony with the picture the book has drawn of the exceptional severity of the Persian autocracy.

Since the king offers Esther anything she wants, up to half his kingdom, it seems strange that she does not ask there and then for the deliverance of her people. From a narrative point of view, her invitation of the king and Haman to a banquet retards the resolution of the plot for another three chapters and keeps the tension alive. But from the point of view of the characters, we are perhaps meant to know that it is impolite (and risky) to take monarchs' extravagant promises at face value and that some more delicate bargaining needs to be done before the safety of her people is secured. And who is to say what will count as half the kingdom, especially if the head of the prime minister is at risk? In this narrative we have simply the first exchange in a play of oriental courtesies.

Even more surprising is her refusal, at the first banquet (5:6–8), to say what her request actually is. But what she commits the king to, in extending the invitation to the second banquet, is the granting of her petition sight unseen, without any quantifying of fractions of the kingdom. Unlike the first banquet, which she said she had already prepared when she invited the king, the second will be prepared only when the king has agreed, by accepting her invitation, to give her exactly whatever she will demand. So ingenious is her logic that by the end of her speech she is able to represent what *she* wants as "what the king has said" (5:8); it has all been a subtle play of bargaining.

5:9–14, Haman Grows More Incensed Against Mordecai. The domestic setting of this scene makes Haman's malice all the more sinister. There is a parallel with Ahasuerus in the setting of his palace in chap. 1: Haman at home, worsted by his inferior, Mordecai, and in desperate need of counsel about his next move, mirrors Ahasuerus in the palace, worsted by his inferior Vashti. Like Ahasuerus, who must put every woman in the kingdom in her place in order to assert his own dignity, Haman must butcher the whole race of the Jews to conquer his own sense of inferiority and alienness. All his honors do him no good, he pathetically admits (5:13), as long as one Jew does not offer him the customary respect. Haman's friends rightly understand that Haman has been so publicly dishonored that something more than Mordecai's death is required: it must be public humiliation. The pole 50 cubits (80 feet) high, on which Mordecai's body is to be impaled, will stand in Haman's courtyard but be visible throughout Susa. And Mordecai's death must not be an act of private vengeance, but authorized by the king.

6:1–14, Mordecai Is Rewarded by the King. With a flurry of coincidences the narrative now suddenly begins to move toward a resolution favorable to the Jews. The king is by chance that night sleepless. By chance the passage in the royal chronicles recording Mordecai's benefaction to the king is read aloud before him. By chance Mordecai has not already been rewarded. Haman is by chance the first afoot in the palace in the morning ready to give the king advice—advice without which Haman cannot act against Mordecai, the very man the king delights to honor. All these key events are such pure chance that readers are compelled to wonder whether they are chance at all and not the workings of a hidden providence (cf. 4:14).

Any courtier would have served the king's purpose, but for the sake of the irony it is Haman who must give advice on how Mordecai should be honored and who alone is in the position to propose honors for Morde-

cai because he has come to seek authorization for Mordecai's execution. There is irony too in the way the king unintentionally destroys Haman by keeping from him the name of the man he wishes to honor, just as Haman had intentionally kept from the king the name of the people he wished to destroy (3:8). Haman's dearest desire for himself is intimacy with Persian royalty; hence the thrill when he is invited to private dinner parties with the king and queen (5:9, 12) and his ambition to wear clothes the king has already worn and ride on the horse the king has himself sat on. This is the psychology of the outsider who can never believe he has truly become an insider. As the roles of the honored and the endangered are reversed, Haman adopts Mordecai's garb while Mordecai is clothed in the garment Haman had coveted for himself.

7:1–10, The Fall of Haman. Here the narrative reaches its first major climax. The fate of the Jewish people remains undecided and will not in fact be settled until chap. 9. But here the fall of their archenemy is a clear enough sign that they will escape his design upon them. In the three scenes depicting Haman at the court of Ahasuerus his fate has been disclosed: in the first (3:8–15), Haman has initiated the conversation and has achieved his purpose; in the second (6:4–11), the king has initiated the conversation and has diverted Haman from his purpose; and now in the third (7:1–10), Haman is excluded from the conversation and has his own purpose turned against him.

In this scene Esther reappears; she is now in firm control. With her characteristic subtlety, she responds to the king's repeated offer of the half of his kingdom with the apparently minor request for her own life—and for that of her people; surely this request has no financial implications on the scale of half a kingdom! Since the king has to this moment known neither that Esther is Jewish nor that the race whose death warrant he has signed is that of the Jews, it only gradually dawns on him what the significance of her request is. Paradoxically, in the moment when she pleads for her own safety, she puts herself in her greatest danger by revealing her Jewishness, for the unalterable law of the Persians and Medes (cf. 1:19) still stands written against them. And in the moment when she is most obedient to Mordecai's exhortations to her, she first disobeys his one command—not to make known who her people are (2:20).

Everything is happening too fast for the king, and for the first time in the story he is without counselors to turn to. When he has to make a decision for himself, his first instinct is to run away—out into the garden, for more than the wine (7:2) has made him dizzy this evening. Whether he realizes it or not, Esther has pointed the finger of accusation against him as well as Haman; for who has "sold" the Jews to death (7:4) and who has "bought" them except Ahasuerus for the one part and Haman for the other? The culprit, and the "foe and enemy" (7:6), is perhaps not only Haman in his genocidal design, but also the king who, in his fecklessness, agrees to mass murder without even inquiring who its victims are to be.

When the king returns from the garden, he has evidently not yet decided between his queen and his prime minister, for it is the sight that meets his eyes that determines his move. He sees Haman on his knees beside Esther, begging for his life. Whether he really believes Haman is trying to assault or rape Esther or whether he simply finds it convenient to put that construction on Haman's posture, the king knows how to behave once his "property" is threatened. To his decidedly theatrical cry of outrage, "Will he even assault the queen in *my* presence, in *my own* house?" (7:8; my emphasis), Esther raises no objection; but this is hardly callousness, for is it not true that Haman by his plot has already "assaulted" the queen, even in the palace? Haman's end, quickly narrated, is a nice piece of dramatic irony: he is impaled on the stake he himself has prepared (cf. Prov. 11:27; 26:27). The story folds back on itself, reminding us that the previous impalement was that of the conspirators against the king (2:23), while this impalement is of the man who has plotted against both the queen and the man who saved the king from the first conspiracy.

8:1–17, Haman Is Replaced and His Plot Overturned. A major narrative problem still remains to be solved. Even after the death of Haman, the edict against the Jews still stands, and, being written in the king's name and sealed with his ring (3:12), it is irreversible. How can unalterable law be altered?

It is not enough that Mordecai is elevated to the position of prime minister. Nor will it be of any help for Esther to beg the king tearfully to "avert the evil design of Haman the Agagite" (8:3). The king is not unsympathetic (8:7), but he refuses to regard it as his problem. Esther and Mordecai have his permission to take any action they care to about the decree and "write whatever [they] like about the Jews" (8:8). Mordecai now has the king's signet ring, and any edict he seals with it cannot be revoked. But there is a sting in the tail, for the edict of Haman has also been sealed with the selfsame ring! Write what you like, says the king, as long as it does not alter, contradict, or revoke what has already been written!

The plot has encountered a conundrum. Before we are told the terms in which it will be solved, we are tantalizingly treated to an elaborate description of how the letters conveying its solution are dispatched (8:9–10). Then at last we learn of Mordecai's ingenious ploy: a second decree, not contradicting the first verbally, but effectively annulling it by giving authorization to the Jews to defend themselves against anyone who tries to carry out the first decree. If attack and defense are

both recommended by the Persian government, what is the honest citizen to do on the thirteenth of Adar?

Not very surprisingly, both the Jews and the inhabitants of Susa regard the issuance of the decree as a bloodless victory for the Jewish cause, and throughout the empire it is so clearly felt that the Jews now have the upper hand that many Gentiles convert spontaneously to Judaism (8:17).

9:1–10:3
Resolution

9:1–19, What Actually Happened on Adar 13? Though the intellectual problem is solved, readers are still curious to know what, if anything, actually happened on the day assigned for the massacre of the Jews. The Jews, in fact, do not wait for anyone to attack them, but take the initiative in slaying 75,800 of their enemies (somewhat surprisingly, since hitherto Haman has been the only enemy of the Jews we have heard of). They themselves apparently do not suffer a single casualty.

The narrative does not linger too long over the unsavory details, but tends to concentrate on the pacific results of the killing. Adar 13 is noted not as a day of triumphant bloodletting, but as a time when a reversal of expected fortunes occurs, as a day of gaining mastery, as an occasion of self-defense, and above all as a gaining of relief from hostile neighbors (9:1, 16). What is celebrated thereafter is not the victory itself, but the day(s) of rejoicing after the victory (9:17–19). A distinct program of demilitarization of the memory has been going on.

9:20–32, The Institution of the Festival of Purim. So signal an event in Jewish history is bound to be commemorated. It is the community in the first place that decides to celebrate the events (9:19, 23). But this being the Persian Empire, and Mordecai and Esther now being officeholders in that empire, we are hardly surprised that they should take it in hand to give the celebration the full Persian bureaucratic treatment. So Mordecai harnesses the resources of the chancellery and the imperial postal system, and Esther duplicates the whole undertaking rather unnecessarily (9:29–32), both of them dispatching letters throughout the empire in order to ensure that annual celebrations be carried out by Jews everywhere. In the fashion of a prudent bureaucrat, Mordecai even prevents potential conflict among the Jews over which day to celebrate by authorizing commemorations on both of the days suggested.

The name by which this festival of rejoicing for deliverance (not of gloating over slain enemies) is to be known is Purim, "lots." The name probably originally referred to a Persian spring festival at which lots were cast to determine destinies and fortunes for the coming year. But in this narrative the word "pur" has been linked with the "lot" cast by Haman to determine the most propitious day for the extermination of the Jews (3:7). This is not a major element in the plot, but it serves to give a specifically Jewish dimension to a festival much older than the Jews' first celebration of it. Today Purim remains a major festival of the Jewish year, an occasion of feasting, gift giving, and charity. Its principal religious ceremony is the public reading, once in the evening and once in the morning, of the book of Esther from a special scroll (Heb. *megillah*).

10:1–3, Mordecai as a Symbol of Jewish Success. This closing note, perhaps later appended, of the high office and esteem of Mordecai is probably not intended to detract from the significance of Esther, but to round off the story with a cameo portrait of the possibility and desirability of Jewish-gentile cooperation. A Jew who is highly esteemed by his compatriots (10:3) may still be a Persian official of the highest rank, to the advantage of Jews and Gentiles alike.

Bibliography

Clines, D. J. A. *The Esther Scroll: The Story of the Story*. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series, 30. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1984.

———. *Ezra, Nehemiah, Esther*. New Century Bible Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans; London: Marshall, Morgan and Scott, 1984.

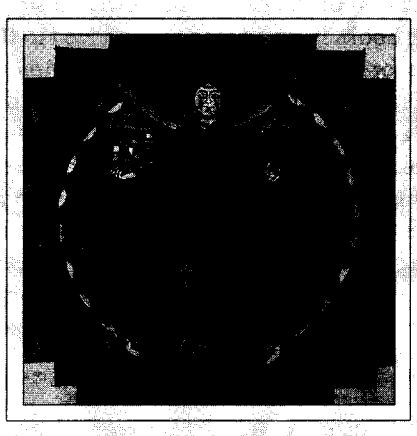
Levenson, J. D. *Esther. A Commentary*. Old Testament Library. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox Press, 1997.

Moore, C. A. *Esther*. Anchor Bible, 7B. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1971.

———. *Studies in the Book of Esther*. New York: Ktav, 1982.

PART TWO

Psalms and Wisdom



Introduction to

Psalms and Wisdom

WILLIAM P. BROWN

The so-called wisdom books—Proverbs, Job, Ecclesiastes—and the Psalter, or Psalms, together reflect the intellectual and liturgical life of ancient Israel. Composed primarily of poetry, these books served as vehicles for worship and ethical reflection in the ancient community. In his enumeration of the canon, the Jewish historian Flavius Josephus (A.D. 37–100) evidently had these books in mind when he referred to those "books [that] contain hymns to God and precepts for the conduct of life" (*Against Apion* 1.37–41).

Modern scholars frequently refer to these books, along with the Song of Songs, as the Bible's poetic corpus, more a grouping by convenience than necessity. Although they are part of a larger collection of books in the Hebrew canon called the "Writings," these five books are diverse in content and form. Psalms, for example, consists primarily of liturgical material, whereas Proverbs comprises terse sayings oriented toward life and conduct outside the sacral sphere of worship. The Song of Songs celebrates the power of sexual attraction, and Ecclesiastes bemoans the fragility of life. Yet despite the various literary forms and themes found throughout this poetic corpus, these books are inextricably tied together canonically.

Canonical Place and Placement

Historically, the poetic books were relative latecomers in the formation of the biblical canon (→ Canon). Indeed, two of the five books—Ecclesiastes and Song of Songs—evidently provoked some controversy among the early rabbis, although both managed to gain full canonical status by the end of the first century A.D. Much later, by the tenth century A.D., the books came to be associated with two of the great festivals of the Jewish liturgical year: Song of Songs with the celebration of Passover and Ecclesiastes with the Feast of Booths, known in Jewish liturgy as "the season of our rejoicing."

As a result, both books are found in most modern editions of the Hebrew Bible under the subdivision known as the five *megillot,* or "scrolls," which also includes Ruth, Lamentations, and Esther, each associated with a particular festival. The liturgical association of these books in rabbinic tradition led in part to an ordering of the "Writings" of the Hebrew canon

PREVIOUS PAGE:
The Personification of Wisdom; *detail of a late eleventh-century illustration in the Limoges Bible. Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris, France.*

that differs slightly from the arrangement found in the Christian canons. Most significantly, Ecclesiastes and Song of Songs, given their liturgical association in the Jewish canon, were separated from the other poetic writings. The three remaining works—Psalms, Job, and Proverbs—came to be grouped together and designated the books of "Truth," or *'emet* (Heb.), an acronym whose three consonants stand for the initial consonants of the book titles: *'aleph* for Job *('iyyob), mem* for Proverbs *(mishle),* and *taw* for Psalms *(tehillim).* In the Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox canons, two other books—the Wisdom of Solomon and Sirach (or Ecclesiasticus)—were included in the wisdom corpus, even though they did not find entry into either the Hebrew or Protestant canon; they thus are referred to as apocryphal or deuterocanonical works.

A contributing factor to the canonical status of these books in the Hebrew canon was their association with prominent figures of biblical history, particularly David and Solomon. Internally, seventy-three of the psalms in the Hebrew text are attributed to David, and in the Greek translation (or Septuagint) even more are credited to him. Moreover, thirteen psalms came to be associated with certain events in David's life (Pss. 3; 7; 18; 34; 51; 52; 54; 56; 57; 59; 60; 63; 142), and many other psalms were attributed to musicians in David's court (see 1 Chron. 15:19). Since David was regarded in biblical lore as the founding organizer of worship in Jerusalem, many psalms were arranged according to the life and legacy of united Israel's first king. In due time, as Moses came to be regarded as the author of the Pentateuch, so the Psalter was considered, directly or indirectly, the work of David. Indeed, in one of the great manuscripts of the Greek Bible, the Codex Sinaiticus, the Psalter ends with the words "The 151 Psalms of David." (The Jewish and Western Christian canons contain only 150 psalms.)

As the Psalter was attributed to David, so Proverbs, Ecclesiastes, and the Song of Songs came to be associated with Solomon (see Prov. 1:1; 10:1a; Eccl. 1:1; Song of Sg. 1:1). In biblical tradition, King Solomon is presented as the consummate patron of wisdom (1 Kings 3–4), having composed 3000 proverbs and 1005 songs (4:32). According to later rabbinic tradition, the Song of Songs was written by Solomon in his youth, Proverbs in his prime, and Ecclesiastes in his old age. Although historically suspect, such a conclusion suggests a way of reading much of the wisdom corpus as a veritable compendium of experience and learning, from youth to wise old sage. To that one can also add the story of Job, a non-Israelite who, at the height of his moral and physical prowess, experienced traumatic disorientation and became all the wiser for it. Each offering distinctive emphases, the poetic books together convey a rich and complex picture of Israel's life and piety.

Wisdom Connections Among the Poetic Books

Although the poetic books are far from uniform in content and tenor, they share certain similarities. What they have in common may be most easily grasped by describing what they all lack when compared with other parts of the Hebrew Scriptures. Most conspicuous is the "ahistorical" character of much of the poetic corpus. With the exception of several psalms (see below), the great themes of biblical history, such as the Exodus, covenant, and conquest of the land, are strikingly absent. God's role as deliverer and lawgiver, central to the historical books, is scarcely mentioned in the wisdom tradition. Rather, emphasis is placed upon creation and humanity's place and conduct in it. Similarly, the wisdom traditions, in contrast to Psalms, do not so much address issues related to worship as reflect upon life within the household and the larger community outside the priestly sphere.

The Way of Wisdom

As indicated above, a natural grouping within the poetic corpus is found among the wisdom books, which include not only Proverbs, Job, and Ecclesiastes, but also the later works of Sirach (Ecclesiasticus) and the Wisdom of Solomon. Each of these books deals with certain dimensions of wisdom, which, broadly defined, is the art of navigating the complexities of life and discerning God's ways in the world. All share certain literary conventions, from short aphoristic sayings to lengthy instructions, and common sapiential rhetoric, including the language of intellectual discernment, moral agency, and piety. Indeed, there is even evidence of cross-referencing (e.g., Prov. 26:27 and Eccl. 10:8; Prov. 30:4 and Job 38:1–7). One topic that all three canonical books share is the "fear of the LORD" as the foundation of wisdom (Prov. 1:7, 29; Job 28:28; Eccl. 12:13). The wisdom books, in sum, provide instruction that is both theologically charged and morally pragmatic, a prudential form of theological ethics.

The complex literature of the canonical and deuterocanonical wisdom books is not the product of any one social movement or even one consistent way of thinking. Broadly speaking, the authors and tradents of these books constitute part of a diverse intellectual and ethical perspective from the village elder to the royal scribe that lies primarily outside the priestly-cultic sphere. Throughout the Hebrew canon, the *hakam,* or sage, often denoted a person—a woman or a man—endowed with certain artistic skills, political shrewdness, resourcefulness, or virtue (2 Sam. 14:2; 1 Kings 2:6; Isa. 40:20; Eccl. 2:14; → Wise Men). In a few cases, the term *hakam* indicated a professional class of intellectuals, usually teachers or those responsible for formulating and codifying wise sayings (e.g., Prov. 15:7; 22:17; Job 15:2; Eccl. 12:9; cf. Prov. 25:1). For example, the sage profiled in Ecclesiastes, Qohelet, is described as one who "taught the people knowledge, weighing and studying and arranging many proverbs" (12:9).

"Counsel" frequently characterizes the discourse of the wise (Isa. 19:11; Jer. 18:18; cf. Ezek. 7:26). Often, such advice is associated in biblical narrative with the work of members of the royal bureaucracy (2 Sam. 8:16–18; 20:23–26; 1 Kings 4:1–6). With the establishment of the monarchy, a professional, highly educated class of courtiers emerged equipped to handle the complex affairs of state, which included international diplomacy, professional training, and scribal activity. King David, for example, employed two noted counselors, Ahithopel the Gilonite and Hushai the Archite (1 Chron. 27:33–34; 2 Sam. 15:12–34; 16:23; 17:5, 14). In addition, officials of the Judean king Hezekiah (715–687 B.C.) are said to have been responsible for a major collection of wisdom sayings that eventually formed a significant portion of the book of Proverbs (25:1–29:27). Moreover, the remarkable parallels between biblical wisdom and ancient Near Eastern traditions, particularly Egyptian and Mesopotamian (e.g., Prov. 22:17–24:22; *The Instruction of Amenemope*), suggest widespread familiarity with the international world among the royal and scribal classes of ancient Israel. Those who were responsible for codifying and preserving Israel's wisdom literature no doubt represented a highly literate class, a small percentage of Israelite society.

In addition to serving as counselors and scribes, the sages were also considered educators (→ Education). The scribe Ben Sira, whose sapiential legacy is found in Sirach (Ecclesiasticus), modeled after the book of Proverbs, conducted an academy (Heb. *bet midrash*) for young men in Jerusalem during the early decades of the second century B.C. (Sir. 51:23). Whether schools were in existence prior to Ben Sira's career, however, is open to question, since direct evidence of formal education outside the home is lacking until the Hellenistic period (fourth to second centuries B.C.). What is clear, however, is that education occurred in ancient Israel and that the wisdom literature reflects a distinctly pedagogical thrust (Prov.

1:1–7; Job 12:7–12; 15:7–9; 42:1–6; Eccl. 12:9–14). Given its familial ethos, Proverbs counts both mother and father as the primary agents of childhood education (1:8; 6:20). They are, in effect, the sages of the household. In addition, mention is made of "teachers" and "instructors," presumably educators, perhaps "elders," outside the household (5:13). Indeed, references to "father" and "son" or "child," so prevalent in Proverbs 1–9, came to indicate the pedagogical relationship between teacher and student.

Since proverbial sayings play a perennial role in regulating social relations and sustaining common values in traditional societies, much of the wisdom literature, particularly as found in Proverbs, is drawn from the earliest roots of Israel's social history. The final editing of the wisdom books, however, occurred comparatively late. During the Persian (sixth to fourth centuries B.C.) and Hellenistic periods, Israel's socioeconomic life underwent significant change. Traces of social and economic tensions resulting from increased stratification and contact with various ethnic groups in Palestine are evident in the moral language of the wisdom corpus. Conflicting views of wealth and poverty, for example, are in ample evidence. Although the poor are sometimes denigrated in Proverbs, elsewhere the book commands acts of justice and equity on their behalf. Job is a rich man who becomes an impoverished outcast and meets God in the midst of his godforsakenness. Qohelet laments the plight of the poor and complains of the sudden loss of wealth from those who have earned it.

Related to the motif of the poor and the wealthy is a nativistic quality in which rigid social demarcations are made between foreigner and native, demarcations that correspond in no small measure to the moral categories of the wicked and the righteous. In Proverbs, the foreign or foolish woman *(nokriyah 'eset kesilut)* represents a grave threat to home and community (2:16–19; 7:6–27; 9:13–18). In Job, however, such distinctions are deliberately blurred when the protagonist himself, the quintessential righteous character, is treated as a veritable alien by his community and castigated as wicked by his friends (19:15–19). Qohelet, the sage profiled in Ecclesiastes, complains of the "stranger" who does not deserve the blessings of wealth (6:2).

Perhaps Israel's conflictual social history during this late period is partly responsible for the provocative diversity of thought reflected in the wisdom literature. Compared to other biblical traditions, the wisdom corpus bears a distinctive, if not deliberate, open-endedness. The literature defies facile summary or simplistic comment. As the history of interpretation over the centuries demonstrates, these books have occasioned radically divergent readings. Interpreters have struggled to make sense of the irrepressible contradictions in Ecclesiastes and the theological tensions in the book of Job. Even Proverbs has its share of contradictory advice (e.g., 26:4–5). The wisdom corpus thus reflects a tensive unity ranging from confident optimism to searing skepticism. Although it has left a legacy of controversy for future generations, the aim of biblical wisdom is explicit, namely the readers' instruction (e.g., Prov. 1:1–7; Eccl. 12:9–11; Job 8:8–10).

Psalms

Bearing the Hebrew title *tehillim* ("Songs of Praise") the Psalter, like the wisdom corpus, exhibits a remarkable literary diversity. The book of Psalms comprises a vast collection of prayers, didactic poems, hymns, and liturgies, in short, the stuff of worship and devotion. Many of the psalms seem to have their home in a royal setting (e.g., Pss. 2; 18; 20; 21; 45; 72; 89; 101; 110; 132), while others vividly capture the cry of the disenfranchised individual (e.g., Pss. 3; 5–7; 13; 17; 22; 41–43; 51).

Compiled in Israel's postexilic period (sixth century B.C.), the book of Psalms is

concerned with survival and hope after the collapse of the Davidic monarchy. The Psalter collection expresses both the unified voice of Israel's worship, an ethos of praise and thanksgiving, and a panoply of many voices caught up in conflict or misfortune within the community, the pathos of lamentation (e.g., Pss. 6; 1; 38; 39; 41; 51; 69; 102; 130). In those psalms that present the solitary supplicant in adverse circumstances, the language is often too vague or stereotyped to determine the specific circumstances that would have given rise to the psalmist's impassioned complaints. Deliberately masking the sociological realities behind the texts, such psalms were designed to encourage wide usage and appropriation in *diverse* contexts. In these texts, the psalmists voice the agony of human existence as they offer urgent petitions to God and testimonies to the community, capturing both the ethos and the pathos of life under God's reign.

The Psalter reflects a measure of dependence upon the literary form, style, and content of the religious literature of the ancient Near East, including that of Egypt, Sumeria, Babylonia, Assyria, and Ugarit. A wealth of hymns, prayers, royal literature, and wisdom texts from Israel's national neighbors has been discovered, all of which predate Israel's psalms, yet exhibit numerous similarities to them. Vocabulary, motifs, and genres common to both Israel's psalms and the religious texts of other cultures suggest a degree of familiarity on the part of Israel's psalmists with the literature of their ancient Near Eastern counterparts. Psalm 29, for example, reflects much of the structure and tenor of a Ugaritic prayer to the high god El, and Psalm 104, some scholars contend, is dependent upon the Egyptian Sun Hymn of Pharaoh Amenophis IV (Akhenaton, ca. 1364–1347 B.C.).

Despite the wealth of diversity in the psalms, there are indications that the Psalter as a whole, at least in the final stages of its compilation, was read as a source of devotion and instruction. Introducing the collection, Psalm 1 refers to the delight of "meditating" upon the law (Heb. *torah*) day and night (v. 2). Elsewhere, such meditation is directed toward God's presence and handiwork in creation and history (19:14; 63:6; 77:12; 142:5). Echoing the first psalm, Psalm 119, the longest psalm in the book, is an extended meditation upon divine law, the source of delight and enlightenment (119:105; cf. Prov. 3:21–23; 4:18, 26). Placed at strategic points within the Psalter, Psalms 1 and 119 indicate a comprehensive way of understanding the Psalter in all its complexity.

In its final form the Psalter was designed to impart instruction and devotion. Indeed, interspersed throughout the Psalter are many psalms that share an affinity with the pedagogy of wisdom (Pss. 25; 32; 34; 36; 37; 49; 62; 73; 75; 78; 111; 112; 119; 127; 128). One psalmist beseeches, "Make me to know your ways, O LORD; teach me your paths" (25:4). Elsewhere God responds, "I will instruct you and teach you the way you should go; I will counsel you with my eye upon you" (32:8). As in Proverbs, the "fear of the LORD" is a thing to be taught (34:11). Functioning as a teacher of wisdom, the psalmist enjoins: "Hear this, all you peoples. . . . My mouth shall speak wisdom; the meditation of my heart shall be understanding. I will incline my ear to a proverb; I will solve my riddle to the music of the harp" (49:3–4). As Proverbs imparts wisdom through the medium of poetry, the Psalms, in part, set wisdom to the music of worship. Even the historical psalms, which recount the story of God's providential care of Israel, present their recital as a source of instruction (78:1–4; 105:1–6; 106:1–3; cf. 136:5).

Although certain psalms are commonly recognized for their emphasis on instruction and wisdom, another level of pedagogy is discernible throughout the Psalter. From the cries of lament and fervent petition to the rapturous exultations of praise, the many voices of the Psalter *model* for readers appropriate conduct in diverse contexts, whether in public worship or private meditation. Indeed, both Psalms and Proverbs exhibit similar overarching movements: as the Psalter moves from matters of obedience and petition to praise (see Pss. 1; 3–7;

145–150), Proverbs progresses from admonition to praise of the one who embodies wisdom (see Prov. 1:8–2:33; 31:28–31). The similar language and parallels between the Psalter and the wisdom literature suggest that the Psalms were ultimately read in a fashion similar to the way the wisdom literature was intended to be understood, namely, for readers' edification, whether in worship or in the exercise of daily life.

Song of Songs

Although not sapiential per se, the Song of Songs—a collection of love poems set in dialogical form—was read, for a time at least, alongside the wisdom books. That this collection of love lyrics came to be associated with the wisdom books suggests some common way of reading the wisdom corpus and Song of Songs. Like Proverbs and Ecclesiastes, Song of Songs was attributed to Solomon, the wisest of kings. Furthermore, the erotic power of the book is not without sapiential parallel. As the Song of Songs conveys the power of sexual attraction between a man and a woman, so Proverbs describes wisdom's erotic power in relation to her followers. As the Song of Songs speaks of the mutual love between a man and a woman, so Proverbs speaks of wisdom as a woman "found" and loved by a man (Prov. 3:13; 4:6–8; 8:17, 35). Both wisdom in Proverbs and the beloved in the Song of Songs are called "sister" (Prov. 7:4; Song of Sg. 4:9–5:1).

Such similar language opens the possibility, at least, of interpreting Song of Songs from a sapiential perspective. Song of Songs is meant to instruct in the ways of love, to channel the power of erotic attraction in life-affirming ways: "Love is strong as death, passion fierce as the grave. Its flashes are flashes of fire, the flame of Yah[weh]" (8:6–7). The poet declares that the power of love, death's fierce rival, intimates the power of God. Such evocative language, moreover, reflects, if not models, an egalitarian desire: one gender does not dominate the other (cf. Gen. 3:16b); rather, both woman and man actively and equally share in the enjoyment of love.

Poetic Form

Despite the various genres and themes found among these books, poetry is the dominant literary style (→ Poetry). Song of Songs is composed of love poetry whose intensity rivals even the most sensuous verses of the great English poet John Donne (1572–1631). Proverbs is filled with ethical reflections conveyed in poetic form, from the terse proverbs of "folk wisdom" to the lengthier instructions, including numerical sayings (6:16–19; 30:15–33), similes (25:11–26:26), and acrostic poetry (31:10–31). From lament and petition to praise and thanksgiving, the book of Psalms is essentially liturgy in poetry set to music.

Job and Ecclesiastes are more mixed literarily. Although framed by prose narrative (1:1–3:1; 42:7–17), the poetry of Job stands on its own, constituting the bulk of the book. As in the Song of Songs, poetry pervades the heated dialogues of the featured participants as they grapple with the complexities of Job's suffering. Presenting himself in autobiographical narrative, Qohelet, the sage profiled in Ecclesiastes, adopts the poetry of proverbial instruction to convey the paradoxes of humanity's plight in the face of toilsome existence and death. In short, poetry is the essential medium of the message of these books.

To modern ears, the ancient poetry of these books, when read aloud, may at first sound strange. Although it does not rhyme or exhibit fixed meter, Hebrew poetry has certain distinctive features, including what is frequently called parallelism, its most distinctive mark. A line of typical Hebrew verse consists of paired segments or couplets (bicola), although

triplets (tricola) and more elaborate patterns are also common. In a poetic couplet, the second segment intensifies, modifies, or in some fashion completes the thought of the first segment (cf. Prov. 10:1; Eccl. 7:8; Job 38:7; Song of Sg. 2:13). Furthermore, the relationship between the two cola may not always be obvious or even parallel in any strict sense (cf. Prov. 10:8; Song of Sg. 1:6a; 4:2a). Yet such regular pairing of clauses conveys a sense of lyrical elegance and symmetry. In addition, poetic devices such as alliteration, paraonomasia (wordplays), chiasmus, inclusio, and ellipsis abound.

Starting with the simplest arrangements of poetic segments, one can find clear instances of balanced parallelism by which the first colon is repeated or amplified in the second:

The LORD is king, he is robed in majesty /
The LORD is robed, he is girded with strength //
(Ps. 93:1)

The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom /
And the knowledge of the Holy One is insight //
(Prov. 9:10)

O that his left hand were under my head /
And that his right hand embraced me //
(Song of Sg. 8:3)

The first colon in each example, demarcated by a single stroke to denote a pause (/), is paired with a succeeding, parallel colon (//) in corresponding fashion. The semantic correspondence between "robed in majesty" and "girded with strength" in the first example—as also exemplified in the parallel phrases "fear of the LORD" / "knowledge of the Holy One" and "left hand" / "right hand" in the subsequent examples—conveys a sense of poetic symmetry and balance.

More often, however, Hebrew poetry evinces a more nuanced relationship between the cola, as is evident in the following examples:

The mouth of the righteous is a fountain of life /
but the mouth of the wicked conceals violence //
(Prov. 10:11)

The teaching of the wise is a fountain of life /
so that one may avoid the snares of death //
(Prov. 13:14)

I would give you spiced wine to drink /
the juice of my pomegranates //
(Song of Sg. 8:2)

In the first example an antithetical parallelism between the two cola contrasts the discourse of the righteous with that of the wicked. The second example begins in much the same way, but rather than contrasting wise teaching with foolish discourse, the second colon illustrates the salutary *effect* of wise discourse. The two cola in this verse are, thus, said to be enjambed, or related in nonparallelistic fashion. Finally, the last example exhibits echoing or elliptical parallelism in which the corresponding verbal element in the second cola is simply assumed.

The juxtaposed segments of Hebrew poetry exhibit a wide variety of correspondences and relations (see, e.g., Pss. 28:6; 37:16; Eccl. 7:8, 13; Prov. 25:15; 30:19). Determining the relations between the particular components of Hebrew verse is an essential part of discerning the subtlety and power of Hebrew poetry.

Poetic Metaphor

As evident in three of the examples given above, another defining mark of ancient (as well as modern) poetry is the frequent use of metaphor and simile, figures of speech by which one thing connotes or invites comparison with something else.

Opening the Psalter, the image of a luxuriant tree "planted by streams of water" identifies the one whose "delight is in the law of the LORD" (1:2–3). Like the penetrating light of the sun, the law both enlivens and enlightens the worshiper (19:7–8). On a darker note, the Psalter paints by metaphor a picture of a community *in extremis:* the faithful are afflicted by illness, death, and unnamed enemies, prompting cries to God for deliverance. "O that I had wings like a dove! I would fly away and be at rest," intones the anguished supplicant (55:6). The desperate psalmist is an "owl of the wilderness," a frail and "lonely bird" (102:6–7), a "worm and not a human" (22:6). The psalmist's enemies are likened to ravenous lions, bulls, and dogs (22:12–21).

Other psalms, however, mend this disorienting sense of vulnerability and desperation by frequently making reference to God as "refuge," "rock," "stronghold," and "fortress" (e.g., 3:1; 5:11; 7:1; 18:2; 19:14; 46:1; 61:2). More vividly, the supplicant seeks protection under the "shadow of [God's] wings" (17:8; 57:1; 63:7; cf. Kings 6:23–28). The use of such metaphors establishes a sense of stability and protection, likening God's protective presence to the solidity of the Temple on Zion, Jerusalem's holy hill (cf. Pss. 48:12–14a; 50:2). God's holy residence is also Israel's protected habitation, providing firm rootage for the community's identity before God as it "flourish[es] like the palm tree and grow[s] like a cedar of Lebanon . . . planted in the house of the LORD" (92:12–13a; cf. 1:3; 52:8).

As in the poetry of liturgy, the power of proverbial instruction lies in its evocative use of language, mnemonically tailored and abounding in metaphor. Loyalty and faithfulness are described as adornments to be worn (Prov. 1:9; 3:3). Prudence and understanding serve as guardians on the path of life and prosperity (2:11–12). To heighten the pedagogy of sapiential instruction, the language of virtue is frequently cast metaphorically in Proverbs. Moreover, personified Wisdom serves as a root metaphor binding the various instructions and images together. She exceeds the value of precious jewels (3:15) and is the tree of life (3:18; cf. Gen. 2:9; 3:22–24). Personified wisdom is akin to a prophet (1:20), lover (8:17), child of God (8:22–24, 30), and friend (7:4). To the son, the conventional recipient of the sages' instruction, wisdom is "sister" and life partner (4:1–9; 7:4; cf. 31:10, 26–27). Attesting to her metaphorical power, wisdom coexists with God and the human family.

In contrast to the enticing metaphors with which wisdom is described in Proverbs, Joban poetry is riddled with scathing, even violent, metaphors. Job is "fenced in" by God (3:23), becomes the target of God's "arrows" (6:4), and is likened to a muzzled sea dragon (7:12). Job's pathos is vividly revealed when he identifies himself with the proverbial stranger, abhorred by his family and castigated by the community (19:13–19; cf. Prov. 5:7–10). His lot is with the outcasts, who "like wild asses in the desert go out to their toil," scavenging the wasteland (24:5; cf. 30:1). Metaphorically drawing from the animal kingdom, Job describes himself as "a brother of jackals and a companion of ostriches" (30:29).

Like that of Job, the poetry of the Song of Songs is the medium of passionate dialogue and

is rife with metaphors. Indeed, of all the poetic books, Song of Songs contains the greatest concentration of metaphorical references. Pastoral images abound (e.g., 2:9; 4:1). Occasionally, the metaphors are applied in nonstereotypical ways: the man describes his lover as one who is "terrible as an army with banners," ravishing his heart (6:10; 4:9). The woman compares the man's eyes to "doves beside springs of water" and his lips to "lilies, distilling liquid myrrh" (5:12–13; cf. 1:15; 2:2; 4:1). In addition, the garden setting for lovemaking constitutes a poetic leitmotif in the collection. The young woman is a "keeper of the vineyards" (1:6) as well as a "garden locked, a fountain sealed" (4:12; cf. 5:1; 6:2; 7:11–12). This metaphorical setting recalls the primordial garden in which the woman was made from the man as his perfect and equal match (Gen. 2:18, 21–23). In the garden is delineated a blissful relationship between man and woman based on mutuality and shared intimacy.

In the book of Ecclesiastes, the use of metaphor imparts a certain level of discernment that takes account of the world in all its bewildering complexity and absurdity (e.g., 1:15; 7:2; 9:12; 4:12; 11:1). Qohelet saves his most evocative language for his final musings about death, which he conveys in a succession of graphic images: a crumbling household, a blossoming almond tree, a lumbering grasshopper, a funeral procession, and a broken pitcher, to name a few (12:1–7). Among the various images that surface in Qohelet's discourse, a root metaphor stands out that serves as the book's leitmotif, "vapor" (Heb. *hebel*), usually translated "vanity" (e.g., 1:2; 2:1; 11:8), which typifies in various ways the ephemeral nature of human existence.

In sum, through expressive poetry and vivid metaphor the poetic books of the Bible not only give powerful voice to human experience in all its complexity and pathos, but also instruct the community in the ethos of living before God, in what is "good for mortals to do under heaven during the few days of their life" (Eccl. 2:3).

Bibliography

On Biblical Poetry:

Kugel, J. L. *The Idea of Biblical Poetry: Parallelism and Its History*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1981.

Petersen, D. L., and K. H. Richards. *Interpreting Hebrew Poetry*. Guides to Biblical Scholarship, Old Testament Series. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1992.

On the Psalms:

Mays, J. L. *The Lord Reigns: A Theological Handbook to the Psalms*. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1994.

McCann, J. C. *A Theological Introduction to the Book of the Psalms: The Psalms as Torah*. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1993.

Seybold, K. *Introducing the Psalms*. Edinburgh: Clark, 1990.

On Wisdom:

Brown, W. P. *Character in Crisis: A Fresh Approach to the Wisdom Literature of the Old Testament*. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1996.

Crenshaw, J. L. *Old Testament Wisdom: An Introduction*. 2d ed. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1998.

Murphy, R. *The Tree of Life: An Exploration of Biblical Wisdom*. 2d ed. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1996.

Job

EDWIN M. GOOD

INTRODUCTION

The praise the book of Job has received may put some readers off. Who feels equal to comprehending "one of the grandest things ever written" (Carlyle)? But Job is too well worth the effort of understanding for readers to pass it by in favor of the mediocre. Like other great works, Job requires effort of its readers, a willingness to work mentally, to read a passage again when comprehension does not come immediately, and to think hard about what one has read.

About reading more will be said shortly. For now, readers are urged to approach Job as fiction. The book refers only to itself; it does not factually portray anything outside itself. To view Job as fiction may help to keep distractions about the book at bay.

Overview

The book consists of two kinds of material: a narrative at beginning and end (chaps. 1–2; 42:7–17), and speeches. In the opening tale (chaps. 1–2), the great man Job loses his wealth and children and is subject to a painful disease after discussions between God and a character called in this commentary the Prosecutor. This experience does not cause Job to curse God. Three friends come to comfort him and sit with him in silence for seven days.

The speeches extend from chap. 3 to 42:6. First is a dialogue between Job and the three friends (3:1–31:40). Job begins by cursing his birthday (chap. 3), and the friends' replies urge him to admit his fault and return to good terms with God. Job insists over and over that he has done nothing to deserve the punishment he is receiving. Neither side persuades the other of anything except bad faith, and Job closes with a long speech describing his pleasant past life and lamenting its loss (chaps. 29–31). With a series of curses on himself he calls on God to answer him. Elihu, a previously unmentioned fourth friend, argues that both Job and the others were wrong about suffering (chaps. 32–37).

Now Yahweh speaks to Job "out of the whirlwind," asking hard questions about the universe and the habits of various powerful animals, challenging Job to reply (38:1–40:2). Job is noncommittal (40:3–5), at which the deity insists that he answer and invites him to control human evil and two monstrous creatures named Behemoth and Leviathan (40:6–41:34). Job replies in a conciliative way, saying that he now has firsthand knowledge (42:1–6). In the closing narrative (42:7–17), God criticizes the friends. Job is comforted for his troubles, receives his former wealth and a new family of children, and comes to a peaceful death.

The opening and closing stories are in prose, and the speeches are poetry (there is one brief prose introduction of Elihu, 32:1–5). The dialogue between Job and the friends falls into a consistent pattern in three cycles. Job speaks first (chap. 3), and Eliphaz replies (chaps. 4–5). A second speech of Job (chaps. 6–7) is followed by a speech of Bildad (chap. 8), and after Job's third speech (chaps. 9–10) comes one by Zophar (chap. 11). The same pattern occurs in chaps. 12–20; Job speaks between each of the friends' speeches. The third cycle begins like the others, with speeches of Job (chap. 21), Eliphaz (chap. 22), and Bildad (chap. 25). Job then speaks without interruption (chaps. 26–31), and Zophar is silent in this cycle. Thus the third cycle is slightly skewed in structure. Job has both the first word (chap. 3) and the last (a summation speech, chaps. 29–31).

Elihu's speech is divided into four parts by opening formulas. The dialogue between Job and Yahweh (38:1–42:6) also falls into four parts, two long speeches by Yahweh and two short ones by Job.

Origins of the Book

Language

Job is written in an extremely sophisticated Hebrew, with a higher proportion of words unique to itself than any other book of the Hebrew Bible. Some scholars have proposed that the book was originally written in Aramaic or Arabic. Such theories cannot be demonstrated. That a work so subtle and complex in style was a translation seems unlikely.

Authorship

One Jewish tradition names Moses as the author of Job (*b. B. Bat.* 14b–15a), but otherwise there was little speculation. Reticence is well advised. Most scholars believe there was more than one author, others that one

or more editors gave the book its final form. Surely Job is the work of more than one mind, if only in the sense that it underwent changes in the process of copying and, perhaps, of editing. Authors and editors, however, left no discernible traces of their identities.

Location of Writing

That the language is Hebrew suggests that the book was written in Israel. That it is set not in Israel but in Edom, southeast of Israel, is no more reason to think that Job was composed in Edom than the setting of *Hamlet* in Elsinore is reason to think that Shakespeare wrote the play in Denmark. Because chaps. 40–41 describe animals that some scholars identify as a hippopotamus and a crocodile, they have argued an Egyptian location, where those animals are native. The commentary will show that Behemoth and Leviathan do not refer to a hippo or a crocodile. Geographical location is not significant to the book's meaning.

Date

It is even more difficult to say when the book was written. Ezekiel referred to Job as an important person alongside Noah and Daniel (Ezek. 14:14–20), and tradition placed him and the book in the patriarchal period. Modern scholars are skeptical of such claims to antiquity, but proposed dates range from the tenth to the third century B.C. The book itself is completely silent about its time, having no allusions to historical events or topical subjects (some take 12:17–19 as a depiction of the Babylonian exile in the sixth century B.C.). Certainty about the history of the Hebrew language or of the relations of one text to another might allow more confidence in assigning a date. Affinities between Job 3 and Jer. 20:7–18, however, do not allow certainty about which passage came first. Stylistic similarities between Job and Isaiah 40–55, if proven, would suggest a time before the early sixth century B.C., if Job is prior, or in the late sixth or early fifth century B.C., if Job is later. Job 7:17–18 is almost surely a parody of Psalm 8, which, however, cannot securely be dated. Job 3:4 alludes parodistically to Gen. 1:3, a creation account usually dated after the Exile in the sixth century B.C. Such evidence suggests, but does not prove, that Job was composed after the Babylonian exile.

Composition

What was the process through which the book achieved its final form? We must realize that modern assumptions about books are inappropriate for ancient ones. They were laboriously copied by hand, and we cannot be sure that we read what an "original" author wrote. The structure of the book, described above, may provide some clues. The narratives in chaps. 1–2 and 42:7–17 are written in a relatively simple prose that some scholars have compared to folktale. The poetry in the speeches is very complex and difficult, full of unusual words and unexpected thoughts. Assuming that a single mind tends not to produce such different kinds of writing, scholars propose that one or more poets inserted the dialogues into an existing folktale (perhaps the one to which Ezekiel referred?). Because Elihu appears only in chaps. 32–37, many scholars think that his speeches were interpolated by another poet whose style was different from that of the other speeches. Some scholars have argued that Yahweh's speeches (chaps. 38–41) were added or modified later.

People are puzzled, too, about chap. 28, which breaks suddenly into the debate to discuss mining, metallurgy, and wisdom; but those who argue a later insertion seldom explain why it was made. Bildad's very short speech (chap. 25), and Zophar's absence from the third cycle have suggested to some scholars that 26:5–14 ought to be transferred to Bildad, and such passages in Job's mouth as 24:18–20, 22–25, and 27:8–23 might have constituted Zophar's missing speech. All of these observations have suggested several stages in the book's composition. Such a conclusion can be no more than a guess, as we have no copies of Job representing these stages. In my opinion, a poet probably used an existing prose story as an occasion for the debates. Elihu's entrance was staged by a later editor, and perhaps chap. 28 was added by someone with great sensitivity to the argument around it. It is doubtful that the third cycle became garbled, and Yahweh's speeches belong. In any case, the book as it now stands is the one to be read, and omitting later additions gives us no demonstrable access to the minds of earlier authors.

Relations to Other Works

Other Ancient Literature

No book is unrelated to any other, and some theorists think that every book is a comment on other books. Job has forerunners in the use of dialogue in Mesopotamia, Canaan, Egypt, and perhaps Greece, and some of the dialogues raise the question of the meaning of suffering. But Job seems unique in the ancient world, with no indications that its dialogue was influenced in style or form by other known works. The problem of undeserved suffering was a staple of ancient literature from early in the second millennium B.C., and the problem was solved in various ways, but no ancient Near Eastern work can be found that influenced the ways in which Job handles the problem.

The book is often classed as "wisdom literature" with other Near Eastern and biblical books, on the basis of the high value placed on wisdom in these

works (→ Wisdom). The term is modern, not ancient, referring in the Hebrew Bible to Job, Ecclesiastes, and Proverbs, along with a few psalms. Job alone has the dialogue structure, but its point of view is opposite, for example, to most of Proverbs, in which wise people are righteous and fools are wicked. Job's friends display the attitudes of the wise in Proverbs, but show them to be false and unproductive. Perhaps Job belongs in the wisdom literature as an exception to its rigidities.

Job in the Bible

In the Hebrew Bible Job appears either before or after Proverbs among the Writings (Heb. *ketubim*), the third division of the canon. The different placements have yet to be explained, and we do not know how Job was used in the Jewish community. In the Christian OT, Job appears most often as the first of the Writings, preceding Psalms, but sometimes at the end of the Writings before the Prophets, sometimes after the Prophets. Early Christian sermons took texts from Job, and some church fathers, e.g., Clement of Alexandria, Origen, and Chrysostom, wrote commentaries on Job. The book was translated into Greek in the Septuagint (→ Septuagint), but modern scholarship has shown how thoroughly that version eviscerated the hard edge of the Joban arguments. As most Christian interpreters read the book in Greek, they used a rather pallid text.

Job and Modern Culture

In modern times, when people are willing to ponder a Bible not blandly consonant with the central strands of their religious traditions, Job has come into its own. Since William Blake's very imaginative engravings and Kierkegaard's independent interpretation of Job in *Repetition,* many modern writers have used the book to comment on human problems, e.g., Archibald MacLeish *(J.B.),* Robert Frost *(A Mask of Reason),* Joseph Roth (*Job,* a novel), the Yiddish writer I. L. Perets *(Bontsye Schwaig),* and Robert Heinlein *(Job, A Comedy of Justice).* Some critics interpret Franz Kafka's *The Trial* as a transposition of Job. The Italian composer Luigi Dallapiccola set parts of Job to music, and Ralph Vaughan Williams wrote *Job, A Mask for Dancing.* Like much of the Bible, the book has become an important artifact of culture and no longer the exclusive property of religious communities.

On Reading Job

It was suggested that Job be approached as fiction. That means to think of Job, the friends, and the deity as characters in the story. Like characters in any story, they may be presented with mixed motives and attitudes, with both knowledge and ignorance. Readers may find it hard to think of God as a character in a story, but the thought may allow perception of the unexpected in the divine speeches. Some interpreters have proposed that the deity comes across as a blustery windbag! That thought is worth considering as at least a possibility—it doesn't have to be adopted if it doesn't fit.

The book is carried by the speeches, so attention must be paid to the words themselves. Reading aloud may help the hearing of tones of voice, inflections, anger, sarcasm, irony, humor, despair, or many other ways of talking. Job is complex. Consideration must be given to the ways people reply—or fail to reply—to what others have said, and how any speech carries on the debate or stalls it. Do Job and the friends talk past each other, as some have proposed? Is it a mixture of conversation and scoring debating points?

Perhaps the crucial part for reading is chaps. 38–42. What is Yahweh's tone of voice? What is Job's? Is Job responsive to Yahweh's words? Does Yahweh respond to what went on in the rest of the book? Does he suggest a solution to the problem of Job's suffering?

The fact that firm conclusions can't be reached about many of these things is not a cause for concern. It only means the book needs to be read again and again, and minds challenged about it again and again.

COMMENTARY

1:1–2:13
The Opening Tale

Ezekiel mentions Job, with Noah and Daniel, as one of the most righteous ancient worthies (Ezek. 14:14, 20). The righteous Noah we know from Genesis 6–9; the Daniel referred to by Ezekiel we know not from the Bible, but from a Canaanite epic about a good king named Danel; Job we know only here. All three figures, Noah, Danel, and Job, were able to save others by their righteousness. Ezekiel's reference suggests that, like Noah and Danel, Job was a folk hero, the epitome of "righteousness," whom our story calls "scrupulously moral" (1:1, 8; 2:3). The story in Job 1–2 and 42:7–17 resembles a folktale in some respects; it has the "once upon a time" beginning (1:1–5), formulaic structural markers ("It was the day," 1:6, 13; 2:1), the messengers' refrains ("And I escaped all alone to tell you," 1:15, 16, 17, 19), the formal greetings between Yahweh and the Prosecutor (1:7; 2:2), and the repeated formula describing Job (1:1, 8; 2:3). Yet this narrative is not naive—it is pure in its simplicity and density. If calling Job 1–2 and 42:7–17 a folktale leads readers to expect something rough, we should not call it that. It seems unnecessary to designate the genre more closely than as story or narration. The story structures itself in six parts, the

first general and introductory, the others successive episodes:

Episode A (1:1–5): Job's character and circumstances
Episode B (1:6–12): First scene in Yahweh's court
Episode C (1:13–22): Job's first calamity
Episode D (2:1–7a): Second scene in Yahweh's court
Episode E (2:7b–10): Job's second calamity
Episode F (2:11–13): The arrival of the friends

The outer episodes frame the story, the first describing Job, the last showing a ritual action, seven silent days (2:13), which make us expect that something is about to happen. The middle four episodes alternate between Yahweh's court and Job's troubles in the land of Uz, a balanced regularity that is underscored by the formal similarity between episodes B and D. Yet balance is also upset by the change from episode C, told from Job's point of view as the messengers come one by one, to episode E, which narrates the calamity objectively and comments on it in the dialogue between Job and his wife. Moreover, episodes B–D all begin with the same phrase, "It was the day when," and end with similar conventional formality, but episode E plunges abruptly into action with no structural prelude.

The tale drives from a beginning in permanence and certainty to a transitional conclusion, though it presents a mixture of symmetry and difference. The similar remarks made about Job in 1:22 and 2:10 suggest that he has successfully met the Prosecutor's challenges to his moral integrity, though neither he nor his possessions remain intact. The issue has apparently been resolved. On the other hand, at the beginning and in both scenes in Yahweh's court, Job is described as "one who avoids evil" (1:1, 8; 2:3), but the friends come because of "all the evil that had come upon him" (2:11). The "feast days" of Job's sons in episode A (1:4,–5) turn to a death day in episode C (1:13); the meeting "days" of Elohim's sons in B and D (1:6; 2:1) issue in Job's suffering; and all give way in episode F to seven "days" of silence (2:13). By this point, it seems that the tale's problem has been intensified: evil formerly avoided is now present; days formerly joyful are now tragic and painful.

With the transition implied in the seven days of silence, we must wonder: what *is* the problem of this story, and is it resolved or intensified? To the latter we must say, "Both." For the former we must look again at the transactions between the Prosecutor and Yahweh.

To Yahweh's incautious boast about Job (1:8), the Prosecutor's response is heated: "Is Job religious [fears God] for nothing?" (v. 9). The rhetorical question calls for a negative answer, and the heat of the Prosecutor's reply overrides logic: Yahweh has "hedged around" Job and his goods with "blessing," but those goods have "burst out over the earth." If Yahweh ensures so responsive a piety as Job's, he ought not to boast about the man as if he were responsible for it.

The Prosecutor's challenge is extremely powerful. He proposes that Yahweh "touch" Job's possessions and goes on, "If he doesn't curse you to your face . . ." (1:11). The statement is a self-curse that omits the result clause. The curse formula is, "If A happens (or does not happen), may B happen." Usually the "B" clause is omitted (Job 31 presents a series of such curses, and in some, e.g., vv. 7–8, 9–10, the "B" clause is present). According to 1:11, the Prosecutor is willing to call down a calamity upon himself. He proposes neither a test ("Let's see if he flunks") nor a wager. The Prosecutor puts his own welfare on the line: the present clause implies the continuation, "May something awful happen to me!"

The word "bless" (Heb. *brk*), occurring several times in these chapters, sometimes seems to mean "to bless" (e.g., 1:10, 21), its usual meaning (→ Curse and Blessing), but sometimes appears to mean the opposite (1:5, 11; 2:5, 9). In the latter sense, have we a euphemism, a word substituted to avoid saying the unacceptable (e.g., that a person might—heaven forbid!—curse the deity)? Or does the text present a deliberate ambiguity?

The Prosecutor proposes to call down a presumably nontrivial calamity upon himself if Job fails to "curse" *(brk)* Yahweh. That seems only fair, if Job's calamity is to be serious. The fact that in chap. 2 the Prosecutor is as healthy as before suggests that the curse has not been fulfilled. Indeed, Job did bless Yahweh, in the hymn in 1:21: "May Yahweh's name be blest." But in 2:5, when the Prosecutor repeats his self-curse, Job's wife urges him to do what the Prosecutor was sure he would do: "Curse *(brk)* Elohim and die!" (v. 9). Job accuses her of talking foolishness (v. 10) and does not do it, arguing that only good comes from God (if 2:10 is an assertion; if it is a question, he expects to receive both good and evil from God).

The Prosecutor never reappears. The reason is quite clear: Job did not "bless" *(brk)* Yahweh the second time, and the Prosecutor's prediction was fulfilled. This eventuality indicates that the ambiguous "bless/curse" is a structural element in the story.

Who is this "Prosecutor"? Most translations refer either to "Satan" or to the "Adversary." The Hebrew reads "the satan," the definite article showing that the word is a title, not a proper name. The term occurs several times in the Hebrew Bible meaning a legal opponent. He is certainly not the devil, who in Judaism had various names, "Satan" among them, while Christianity preferred Satan to others (→ Satan). In Job 1–2 and in Zechariah 3, "the satan" is a member of the divine court whose job is to maintain law and order, a kind of district attorney who brings malefactors to justice. The term "Prosecutor" shows that the word is a legal title, while "the Adversary" still suggests the later idea of a principle of evil. Understanding "the satan" as Yah-

weh's opponent has raised unnecessary questions about divine morality in the treatment of Job. By ancient lights, there is no such problem: a curse operated objectively, automatically, and without moral entailments.

Job has done nothing to put him in trouble with Yahweh, and yet at the end of chap. 2, his trouble is deepened, not resolved. His possessions are gone, his children are dead, his suffering is unremitting, his wife's support is ambiguous, and the friends who arrive to "console and comfort him" (2:11) perform funeral rites as if he were already dead (vv. 12–13). The debate in Yahweh's court is apparently settled, but the debate in the land of Uz has only begun.

3:1–31:40
The Dialogue

3:1–11:20
The First Cycle of Speeches

3:1–26, Job. Job had refused, even on serious provocation, to curse God. Now, after a week's silence, he curses (3:1) not the deity, but "his day," i.e., (v. 3) his birthday. His curse (vv. 4–5) alludes to creation: "That day, let there be darkness" (v. 4a) parodies Gen 1:3, "Let there be light." By images of God's and light's absence, of darkness dominating, avenging, and terrifying day, Job curses his birthday as a reversal of the first process of creation. In vv. 6–7, his curse on the night of his conception cancels time, which creation set in train (v. 6), and human procreation, which imitates divine creation (v. 7). Calling for those who by magic can control the Sea (a mythic enemy of the deity in Job) and Leviathan (see 41:1–34 [Heb. 40:25–41:26]) and for the reversal of night and dawn (v. 9), Job further invites the undoing of the creation. Light (v. 9) has become "toil" (v. 10). Job comes very close to cursing the deity without actually saying the words. Cursing the creation and all of its cosmic and human effects covers everything the deity has done.

The rest of the speech focuses on himself in two stanzas each beginning with "Why?" (vv. 11–19, 20–26). In the first, Job wishes he were dead, stillborn (vv. 11–12, 16), asleep (v. 13). Death is the leveler, sleep in company with kings, counselors, and princes (vv. 14–15), the absence of oppression and power (vv. 17–19). Death wishes are unusual in Israelite culture (but see Elijah, 1 Kings 19:4; Jonah, Jon. 4:3, 8). Still, because Israelites thought the deity did not visit the realm of the dead (Ps. 139:8; Amos 9:2 are startling exceptions), Job's perception of death as freedom must include the notion of liberation from God.

Even though extending the idea to toilers and the world's weary (3:20–26), Job is thinking primarily of himself. The Prosecutor's description of Yahweh's protecting him by "hedging" around him (1:10) feels to Job like constriction (3:23). He is reduced to animal conditions (v. 24), but, most surprisingly, "I was terrified of something, and it arrived, / what I feared comes to me" (v. 25). A most intriguing statement! Has his remarkable piety been motivated all along by the fear of suffering?

The last couplet (v. 26) drains away emotion. Life's positives, "tranquil," "quiet," "rest" (cf. vv. 13, 17), have given way to the negative, "turmoil" (cf. v. 17). Job's questions here flow from his curse on the creation and his birth: "Why am I alive? Why is anyone who prefers to be dead alive?" He does not ask, "Why did this happen to me?"

4:1–5:27, Eliphaz. This is the longest and most elaborate of the friends' speeches. Praising Job for strengthening others in trouble (4:2–5), he is sure that, because Job is religious, he will never experience the troubles of the wicked (vv. 6–11). But his frightening vision (vv. 12–21) has taught him that every human is liable to error (5:7a). Describing the fool's brief career (vv. 2–5), he counsels Job to turn to God, who puts down the strong and raises the weak (vv. 8–16). Finally he assures Job that the "discipline" of suffering (v. 17b) will bring him to a satisfying end (vv. 17–26).

But the speech is not as generously positive as that summary suggests. In 4:6, for example, Eliphaz says, "Is not your religion your confidence, / your hope, and the integrity of your ways?" The question is very ambiguous. "Religion" (lit., "fear") and "integrity" (Heb. *tom*) characterized Job in chaps. 1–2 (see, e.g., 1:1; 2:3), and here they are sources of his "confidence," *kislah*. But in Job (8:14; 31:24) and elsewhere (Ps. 85:9), that word and its cognate *kesel* appear to denote misplaced confidence, and they are related to the noun *kesil*, "fool, stupid." Again in 4:8, Eliphaz says, "As I have seen, those who plow iniquity / and sow toil, harvest it too." The parallelism indicates a similarity between "iniquity" and "toil." Job has said that he received "toil" (3:26); Eliphaz must think that he has also "plowed iniquity." Thinking that "the race is born to toil" (5:7) does not remove the difficulty, for Eliphaz says in the same breath (v. 6) that humans are responsible for it.

Eliphaz is at least unkind to describe the plowers of iniquity as "finished by [God's] nostril's wind" (4:9) after the "great wind" that killed Job's children (1:19). He tactlessly refers to the sons of the fool who "are crushed in the gate, no rescuer near" (5:4). Job suffers very much as Eliphaz describes the fool's suffering (vv. 4–5). The generous advice, couched as "If it were I, I would . . ." (vv. 8–26), sounds rather hollow in the light of these implicit similarities between Job and the fool or the wicked. Eliphaz is good at promises: "In six troubles he will rescue you, / in seven, evil will not touch you" (v. 19). But evil *has* "touched" Job. The Prosecutor urged Yahweh to "touch" his goods and himself (1:11; 2:5), and Eliphaz himself said that it

"touched" him (4:5). He is clearly not on Job's side emotionally or rationally.

Eliphaz has introduced a new term into the discussion. Job did not ask about justice, but Eliphaz brings it up very quickly: "Think, who that was innocent has perished, / where have moral people been destroyed?" (4:7). Those rhetorical questions expect negative answers, and they are modified, if at all, only by his idea that all human beings sin by virtue of being human (4:17–21). Eliphaz's question contains the idea, common in the Hebrew Bible, of divine retributive justice. The deity governs justly, rewarding righteous people with health and prosperity and punishing wicked ones with calamity and suffering. The suffering of the innocent or the happiness of the wicked are contradictions in terms. If suffering is punishment for wickedness, a sign of the deity's just handling of human affairs, there can be no undeserved suffering.

Job did not raise this issue. He skirted it in 1:21 with the idea that Yahweh both gives and takes, and in 2:10 he avoided it either by ascribing both good and evil to the deity (if 2:10 is a question) or by asserting that anything the deity does must be good (if it is a statement). In chap. 3, he damned the whole creation, wishing he were dead; but he did not wonder why he, being good, suffered. Eliphaz has brought up the question, and by his apparent identification of Job with fool and wicked has proposed that Job deserves what has happened to him. From now on the question of deserved suffering becomes a central issue.

6:1–7:21, Job. "Passion," said Eliphaz (5:2), "murders the fool." Job clearly takes it personally: "Would that my passion could be weighed" (6:2). Eliphaz said that the deity "wounds" in order to heal (5:18). Job hopes God will "crush me, free his hand and cut me down" (6:8–9). So Job defines "hope" as "crushing," a word Eliphaz used to describe general human ephemerality (4:19) and the particular fate of the fool's sons (5:4). Job's second speech is a wild, stream-of-consciousness spray of confusing, contradictory images, as if it depicted a man trying to think in the throes of pain.

In chap. 3 he wished that his life could be cancelled; now he both complains that the deity attacks him (6:4) and desires that he would attack him and put him out of his misery (vv. 8–9). Job lacks the strength to continue and wishes for help to die (vv. 11–13). Yet the metaphor (vv. 15–20) of wadis in the desert that store water in winter ice but suddenly go dry in the summer, causing death to caravans, shifts toward a wish *not* to die, as the caravans are first "eager" (v. 19) and then "ashamed because they trusted" (v. 20). The friends are like them: "You stare at ruin, and you're scared" (v. 21—the pun is in Hebrew too).

They fear that his "ruin" may put them in a dangerous legal, moral, or physical situation (vv. 22–23). Or do the healthy, being sure they know what suffering means, worry that it might happen to them? Is it the fright Job admitted in 3:25: "what I feared came to me"? It is important that just here Job begins to use legal terms. The friends are planning an "indictment" of him, they accuse him of having "erred" (6:24–27). He asks them (v. 24) to "instruct" him about his guilt. For the first time Job has become conscious of the issue of guilt, and his "innocence" is at stake (v. 29). Why is he being dealt with as if he were guilty? "Does not my palate understand a disaster?" (v. 30). He now thinks in terms of Eliphaz's understanding of the relation between suffering and wrongdoing.

Perhaps that is why Job turns in 7:1 to address the deity, who could solve the problem if he so wished (6:8–10). All through the dialogue, Job addresses the friends in the plural and the deity in the singular (some apparent exceptions are troubling). Verse 7 includes a singular imperative in Hebrew ("Consider that my life's a wind"), and in v. 8 a singular second-person pronoun ("Your eyes will be on me").

Describing his pain and desolation (vv. 1–6), Job emphasizes his evanescence in vv. 7–10. He is a "wind," invisible, disappearing. "Your eyes will be on me, but I'll not be there"; the last clause reappears as the last word of the speech, v. 21, with a similar idea: "You'll search for me, but I won't be there." God must act soon, before it is too late.

When complaining bitterly, Job likens himself to the Sea or a sea monster, opponents of the deity in combat myths (v. 12), imagery ironically opposite to his actual insubstantiality. Like Eliphaz, Job has dreams in which the deity terrifies him (v. 14). He cannot understand why he is worth all this attention, expressing his amazement (vv. 17–19) in a splendid parody of Psalm 8:

> *What's a man, that you magnify him so,*
> *set your mind on him,*
> *visit him every morning,*
> *test him every moment?*
> *How long will you not turn your gaze away,*
> *let me be till I swallow my spit?*

He is not perfect ("I sin," he says in v. 20), but he cannot see that it is that big a thing. "Why not lift my guilt, carry away my iniquity?" (v. 21). There is the guilt again. His perception of his situation has changed from seeing it positively as God's doing in chaps. 1–2; now he is guilty. Surely God has but to see how ridiculous it is for him so to treat Job. But it will soon be too late (v. 21).

8:1–22, Bildad. Bildad's bluntness would be refreshing if he had any ordinary kindness. After one sarcastic couplet comparing Job's words to "a gusty wind" (v. 2), he jumps into his ideas, that God is unbendingly just and always responds favorably to the right human ap-

proach. Job has but to "search" for him and "ask mercy" (v. 5) to be repaid with a greatly improved future (v. 7).

Bildad shows, in a metaphor of a plant, that wicked folks receive what they deserve (vv. 11–12), admitting that bad people, like plants, may look prosperous for a time (vv. 16–17). But their hope "perishes" (v. 13), and they are "swallowed up" from their places (v. 18). He even brutally assures Job that "if your sons have sinned against him, [God] has sent them off in custody of their guilt" (v. 4).

He is sure, however, that good people are in no ultimate danger. Job will live happily later (vv. 7, 21). But the theory fails to solve an inconsistency: Job is good now, and by the theory his goodness ought to be recognized now. Bildad implicitly acknowledges that God is treating him as if he were not what he is: "If you are pure and moral, though now he rouses up against you, he will repay your innocent dwelling" (v. 6). Just that "later" upsets Job, for little time is left.

Bildad's closing comment (8:22) alludes rhetorically to the end of Job's previous speech: "You'll search for me, but I won't be there" (7:21). Bildad uses the same final word: "The tent of the wicked will not be there." However, it is not exactly comforting. "The tent of the wicked" becomes the analogue of the sufferer.

9:1–10:22, Job. Job begins with a near quotation from Eliphaz (4:17): "How can a man be innocent with El?" (9:2). Eliphaz was talking morality, but Job is talking law: "If one wished to enter a case against him, he couldn't answer him once in a thousand" (v. 3). Although using the same word ("innocent"), they do not mean the same thing by it. Participants in this dialogue often talk past each other.

Job's speech intertwines a number of images around the central theme of law. God is both powerful and in charge of justice. The power is unreasonably directed against Job, and he sees no justice at work. Borrowing the language of hymnic praise of a God who does wonders in nature (as in Ps. 136 or Isa. 40:12), Job reverses its implications: "He who removes mountains, and they don't know / whom he's overturning in his anger; / who shakes earth from its place, / and its pillars shudder; / who speaks to the sun and it does not rise, / and puts a seal on the stars" (9:5–7). This is chaotic power that does not maintain order but undoes it, that prevents human comprehension of the divine: "Ah, he passes me by, and I don't see him, sweeps on, and I don't discern him" (v. 11). Reverting in v. 14 to the language of trial, Job emphasizes his inequality with an opponent whom he, "though innocent, couldn't answer" (v. 15a) and from whom he must "beg mercy" (v. 15b). The judge is also the prosecutor who "enlarges my wounds" (v. 17) and brutally "gorges me with bitter things" (v. 18).

Innocence is of no use, and Job's emotion rises to hysterical pitch as he describes himself as "perfect" (Heb. *tam*, v. 21; cf. 1:1, 8; 2:3). The deity is indifferent to moral stature: "He finishes off both perfect and wicked" (v. 22). Job moves very quickly from seeing God as amoral to accusing him of immorality: "Earth is given over to a wicked hand; / he covers its judges' faces— / if not, then who is it?" (v. 24). Only God can be the subject of that astounding statement. He is not merely amoral, but so "wicked" that he does away with his own kind (v. 22).

In v. 27, Job speaks directly to God, as he did in chap. 7. His pain is evidence that God thinks him guilty (v. 28), and he has no hope of a fair outcome to the trial: "I'll be condemned" (v. 29). He is already condemned, and the muck of guilt will cling to him (vv. 30–31). Turning away from address to God (9:32–10:1), Job resumes it only in 10:2.

Meanwhile, he reflects on the difference between human and divine: "For he's not a man like me whom I could answer" (9:32). That is not just theology, but represents the problem of the trial. Because God is both wicked and not human, no fair trial is possible. Job introduces and at the same time rejects the idea of a third-party advocate: "There's no arbiter between us / to lay his hand on us both" (v. 33). We will meet this "arbiter" and others like him in chaps. 16, 19, and 40.

Address to God resumes in 10:2 as a report of what he intends to say. In v. 3 it is sarcastic: "Is it good to you that you oppress, / despise your hands' toil, / and beam upon the counsel of the guilty?" Is God actually "not a man" (9:32)? "Have you fleshly eyes; do you see as a man sees?" (10:4). If God is the creator (vv. 8–11), it seems either that he is no greater than a human being, thus not deserving so much power, or that he is undermining creation: "Recall that you made me like clay, / yet you're turning me back to dust?" (v. 9). Job is put under guard (v. 14), hunted down (v. 16), attacked as if by troops (v. 17). He has proclaimed his "perfection" (9:21) and the deity's "wickedness" (9:24), but he cannot know whether he is guilty or innocent (10:15).

Discouraged, worn down by pain and by the assaults of friends and deity alike, he closes his part of this cycle of speeches (v. 18) by returning to the theme of his beginning: "Why did you bring me out of the womb?" In chap. 3 he thought it would be better to be dead, and in 7:16, 19 he proposed to be left alone. He ends with a figure of the darkness to which he will go, "deep shadow, all disordered, which shines like dusk" (10:22). It is the mirror image of his beginning in 3:4: "That day, let there be darkness."

But Job has come to a different point. Then being alive was too terrible; now he wants to be dead because his structure of assumptions has fallen apart. Divine power is not correlated with divine justice, and, though he deserves the latter, he is subjected to the assaults of the former.

11:1–20, Zophar. Job was worried in chap. 9 about answers. Zophar is sure that if Job received an answer directly from God (11:5) he would understand that he is getting off easily: God "lets some of your guilt be forgotten" (v. 6—or "exacts from you less than your guilt deserves"). But Zophar is more concerned with Job's understanding of the matter than with objective facts. Job does not comprehend (vv. 7–9) that the deity is so transcendent as to be unknowable. There is no hindering him (v. 10), no contradicting him (v. 11), because humans are invincibly stupid. That appears to be what Zophar's proverb means (v. 12): "A hollow-headed man will be intelligent / when a wild ass colt is born human."

"Be intelligent" is a verb cognate to the noun "heart," the organ in which Israelites conceived thinking and planning to take place. Yet if the race's problem is a flaw of the heart, how can Zophar so lightly propose (vv. 13–14) that Job just "prepare [his] heart" and "if guilt is in your hands, send it away"? If only all human flaws could be so readily mended.

Zophar is sure that nothing more is wanted than what Job has known to make reality of the vision of a better life: "Your life will rise above noon [like the sun?] / gloom will become like morning [past?—a strange image]" (v. 17). Yet he must have his last twist of the knife: "The eyes of knaves will be exhausted, / refuge perished from them, / their only hope to breathe their last" (v. 20). Job said in 6:8–9 that his "hope" was to be crushed and cut down by the deity. Zophar implicitly identifies Job with the knaves of this world.

12:1–20:29
The Second Cycle of Speeches

12:1–14:22, Job. In the first cycle, the friends argued for God's moral governance of the world, and Bildad and Zophar explained Job's punishment by his guilt. At first Job wished he could get out of his life of suffering and appealed to the created order, but shortly he began to think more about the question of justice and a trial that would establish his innocence. Yet Job thinks that justice has gone wrong, as his situation reverses the structure that everyone assumes. If there is to be a trial, is Job already presumed guilty?

In this opening speech, Job spends about half his time addressing the friends (12:2–13:19a) and about half addressing God (13:19b–14:22). He flings the friends a textbook example of sarcasm: "In truth, you are the people, / and with you dies wisdom" (12:2). If Zophar knows the divine secrets (11:6–7), Job can claim at least as much intelligence as they (12:3). They, on the other hand, are contemptuous in principle of any sufferer (v. 5), because they have the security available to "violent" people (v. 6).

He appeals to the creation, to "Behemoth" (cf. 40:15–24) and to birds, plants, and fish (12:7–8), all of whom know God's control (vv. 9–10). But the friends mistakenly persist in thinking that such control is fair and just, and Job piles up evidence that it is no such thing (vv. 13–25). God's "wisdom" is the arbitrary, unprincipled power to change nature (vv. 13, 15, 22) and to overturn human order (vv. 14, 16–21, 23–25). It might remind us of prophetic descriptions of the reversals of human power, except that Job describes divine retribution on human power with the insidious language of subversion (v. 19), deprivation of discretion (v. 20) or of "mind" (v. 24), contempt (v. 21), consignment of people to precreation "chaos" (v. 24; cf. Gen. 1:2) and to "lightless dark" (v. 25). As in chap. 9, this control, far from sustaining the created order, disintegrates it.

But Job persists in wanting the trial (13:1–2): "I want to speak to Shaddai, / desire to argue the case to El" (v. 3). Is that not strange? If God is so cynically careless of order and principle, why does Job want a trial over which he is judge? He continues to hold inconsistently both that the deity's justice is untrustworthy and that a trial is the solution to his own problem.

Meanwhile, he is fed up with arguing with the friends. Silence would be their wisdom (v. 5), as they speak "perversely" (v. 7) and try to "trick" God (v. 9). They argue with "dusty proverbs" and hold up "shields of clay" (v. 12). Job wants to speak with God, "whatever happens" (v. 13). Verse 15 is a famous passage:

> *He's going to slay me; I cannot wait,*
> *but I must argue my ways to his face.*

The first line has been discussed a great deal, especially because the KJV mistranslates it: "Behold, though he slay me, yet will I trust in him." It is a splendid religious concept, but it does linguistic damage to the line. The verb "he will slay me" is not a subordinate clause, and the verb KJV renders "trust" means rather "to wait, tarry" (NRSV says "hope," which is also not quite correct). The words "in him," moreover, reflect a traditional interpretation of the Hebrew *lo'*, "not." The interpretation, pronouncing the word in the same way, leaves out of account the letter aleph (') and reads a preposition with an object, "to him or it" (Heb. *lo*). It is too bad to lose from Job so valuable a religious concept as that of trusting in the deity no matter what the deity does, but other passages propose the same idea (see, e.g., Hab. 3:17–18). Here the notion is a sudden, radical contradiction of what Job says otherwise in this and other speeches, and he never returns to it. The translation is not rejected for that reason, however; it is rejected because the text does not say it.

This is a moment of the most powerful intensity. Job must gather all of his courage (13:14) to declare that he has "marshalled a case" and to insist that he knows he is "innocent" (v. 18). But he looks forward to no positive outcome, and as he begins his address to

the deity (v. 19b), he must request that God "remove your hand from me, / and don't fall on me with terror of you" (v. 21). We have seen something of that terror in Job's descriptions of God's awful, chaotic power.

Now he calls for an accounting: "Let me know my guilt and sin" (v. 23). Punning on his name (Heb. *'iyyob*), he wonders (v. 24) why God counts him as his "enemy" (*'oyeb*). He assumes that he is being punished for guilt. But he, the human, is too worn out and ephemeral to justify all of this divine attention (13:24–14:6). He compares himself to a "drifting leaf" and "dry straw" (v. 25) and wonders in passing if such weakness may be the very reason that God watches and tries him (14:3). The trial and the creation come together in v. 5: "You've set him limits he cannot exceed" may mean both limits of nature, as in the images of ephemerality (13:28–14:2), and legal regulations that humans may not transgress. It is as if God forces the human to be guilty simply by being created. "Gaze away from him [the human], and he'll cease" (14:6). Only if God leaves us alone can we even die in peace.

The implication of v. 6 leads to the remarkable analogy between a felled tree and human evanescence (vv. 7–12). The tree has hope, does not "cease" (v. 7), can sprout again with the right water. "A man lies down and doesn't get up" (v. 12). The Hebrew Bible has no expectation of a pleasant afterlife, and the analogy to the tree has a rueful tone. Job goes on to wish (vv. 13–15) that, as a special case, he might have an afterlife, that God might conceal him among the dead ("in Sheol," v. 13; → Sheol) until he is ready to deal with him. He would wait eagerly for a positive outcome (v. 15). But it is for nothing. The idea is raised only to be dropped. The physical world wears away, "and you destroy a man's hope" (vv. 18–19). Nothing is there for Job except "his flesh's pain" and a lamenting soul (v. 22).

Job had said in 12:10 that "every living soul" is in God's hand. Now he sees that to be in that hand is only pain, to be not merely in contrast but in opposition to God. Job (Heb. *'iyyob*) has definitely become enemy (*'oyeb*).

15:1–35, Eliphaz. Speakers in this debate typically begin with sarcastic remarks about the others' arguments (Bildad, 8:2; Zophar, 11:2–3; Job, 12:2–6). Eliphaz too shrugs his shoulders at the notion of answering "windy knowledge" (15:2) and arguing against "useless talk" (v. 3). Job threatens "religion" (lit., "fear" [of God]) and constrains "complaint" (v. 4). Ancient Israelite piety saw no contradiction between fear of a powerful God and willingness to complain about what that God did to them. Both were central elements of the concourse between humans and deity. Eliphaz seems to worry that, because Job is unacceptably guilty, he may undermine his religious freedom to complain. Job is becoming the prosecution's star witness in this trial. Every word he speaks ensures a guilty verdict. "Your mouth condemns you, not I, / your lips testify against you" (v. 6).

Job is claiming too much. "Were you born the first human?" (v. 7). Eliphaz pours scorn on the grandiose idea that Job thinks he is Adam's equal. He is only asking questions, to be sure, but they imply that Job thinks of affirmative answers to them. And Eliphaz is sure that he and the others know as much and understand as well as Job does (vv. 9–10).

It is not at all clear that he is right to think that. His next question is incredible: "Are El's consolations too slight for you, / the gentle word against you?" (v. 11). If that is irony, it is stupidly insensitive. "Consolation" is the wrong term for what both he and Job assume the deity has done to Job, and if the situation proposes a "word" to Job, it is hardly "gentle" (but Zophar said in 11:6 that it is gentler than Job deserves). Eliphaz goes on to criticize Job for losing his mind and talking wildly (vv. 12–13). He can hardly be both ironic and critical. If, on the other hand, he is serious, he has abandoned rationality. To think that God *is* both consoling and gentle with Job is to refuse to experience the real world.

But perhaps he is doing that. In v. 14, Eliphaz repeats the theological doctrine he had proposed in chap. 4, that the human race is condemned before it starts; and he echoes Job's parody in 7:17 of Psalm 8 and the nature of divine attention: "What is a man, that he can be pure, / innocent, one born of woman?" Did Job misconstrue God's heed to humans as serious, though vindictive? Eliphaz insists (vv. 15–16) that the deity finds everyone less than himself, and, especially a human like Job, contemptible: "He doesn't trust his holy ones, / and the sky is not pure in his eyes. / What then of one horrible and corrupt, / a man who drinks wrongdoing like water?" The "holy ones" are probably members of the divine court, such as the "sons of Elohim" in chaps. 1–2, and the drinker of wrongdoing is surely Job.

The image leads Eliphaz to a detailed, conventional description of the fate of wicked people (vv. 20–24), "terrible sounds" and destruction in a time of well-being (v. 21), darkness (vv. 22–23), starvation (v. 23), and "strain and stress" and attack (v. 24). Verses 25–27 portray the aggressive rebellion and active, if temporary, prosperity of the wicked. Verse 29, at least, proposes that it will be temporary; but Eliphaz confuses himself in v. 30 by saying both "He won't escape from darkness" and "He'll escape with the wind in his mouth."

Eliphaz is sure that what looks like a good life for the wicked is at best fleeting, cut off before its prime (v. 32), dropping blossoms and fruit before ripeness (v. 33). An image of sterility in v. 34 gives way to an oddly mixed metaphor of fruitfulness and uselessness: "conceiving toil and bearing guilt, / their womb fosters deceit" (v. 35).

The entire speech contains not one word of encouragement. In his first speech, Eliphaz ambiguously assured Job that the matter was not hopeless. Here Job is the outstanding case of corruption in an already corrupt universe (v. 16). Eliphaz seems to have given up on Job's rehabilitation.

16:1–17:16, Job. In the first cycle, speakers alluded to one another a good deal, sometimes in indirect rather than direct reference. In the second cycle, we find less such interaction, though it is not absent. In 16:2, for example, Job turns Eliphaz's closing shot at the wicked as "conceiving trouble" (15:35) back on him, calling the friends "troublesome comforters." He wishes that "windy words have an end" (v. 3), echoing Eliphaz's condemnation of his "windy" wisdom (15:2). Eliphaz had criticized him in 15:6 as testifying against himself, but Job replies, "my emaciation . . . testifies against me" (16:8). Later, describing God, who "runs against me like a warrior" (16:14), Job ironically reverses Eliphaz's image of the human rebel, "playing the hero," who "runs toward" God in attack (15:26). These responses are almost explicit answers. It is simply that there were more and subtler responses in the first cycle; as the dialogue proceeds, one discerns more talking past one another than before.

Except for chap. 3, Job turned, in earlier speeches, to speak directly to God, complaining of mistreatment or requesting special attention. Here he addresses God only twice, very briefly, with a couplet at 16:7b–8a and a quatrain at 17:3–4, both with second-person pronouns. After these speeches, he immediately discusses God in the third person. Later speeches contain very little address to God. It is important to our perception of Job's character and feelings that he drastically reduces his direct speech to the deity in the latter parts of the dialogue. Job's isolation increases as the book goes along.

Yet the dialogue *is* painful. The friends do not diminish Job's pain by "piling up words" against him (v. 4), and his own talk does not stop it (v. 6). After complaining that God causes his alienation and forces him to be a witness (vv. 7b–8a) so that his very condition is legal testimony ("my emaciation . . . testifies against me"), he describes how God increases his pain with a metaphor of attack by a beast that "tears" its prey (v. 9; cf. Gen. 37:33). God uses human mobs against him (v. 10), "abandons me to the vicious, / flings me to the hands of knaves" (v. 11). Job suffers military assault: he is used for target practice (v. 12c), troops surround him (v. 13), besieging forces break through a wall (v. 14). He emphasizes the deity's immediate, physical force: "He shook me up, grabbed my neck and broke me apart" (v. 12a–b). The troops stand aside while God (the verbs are masculine singular) "splits open my guts without pity" (v. 13) and "runs against me like a warrior" (v. 14). It is a most unpleasant image of a violent God, and the irony is deepened by Job's certainty that his despair has no effect on this viciously tyrannical deity (vv. 15–16) and that his purity ought to justify the opposite treatment.

Even that graphic image of Job's feelings does not prepare us for the outburst in vv. 18–21. Job expects to be murdered and calls on the earth itself not to conceal the evidence: "Earth, do not cover my blood, / do not provide a place for my outcry!" (v. 18). Since God knew that Cain had murdered Abel because "the voice of your brother's blood is crying out to me from the ground" (Gen. 4:10), Job wishes no concealment of the traces of his murder by God.

Earth is not the only witness. "Even now, Ah! my witness is in heaven, / my supporter is on high" (16:19). This passage moves beyond 9:33, where another third party, an "arbiter," was denied. Here Job asserts the "witness's" presence and his power to "interpret" Job to God (v. 21a) and to make a decision in the case (v. 21): "And he will decide for a hero against God, / between Adam and his friend." The translation is controversial; JPS prefers "let him arbitrate between a man and God," and NRSV has "that he would maintain the right of a mortal with God." But the verb means to decide in a case; therefore that it is a decision "for" Job (the "hero") and "against" God is to be preferred.

It is fascinating that Job refers to a third party with power to carry out a legal decision against the deity. It causes some difficulty, no doubt, with the idea of the Hebrew Bible's unequivocal monotheism, though one might argue (somewhat lamely) that bitterness leads Job theologically astray. The provocation to be bitter is very great.

From this emotional high point, Job slides quickly down into deep discouragement. Time is running out, and "I own the grave" (16:22–17:1). Even the somewhat feisty demand addressed to God (17:3–4) has a certain formulaic tone to it. His heart is not in it. People spit on him (v. 6), and he is reduced to a shadow (v. 7). The temperature rises a bit in vv. 8–10. Job's suffering moves "good" people not only to shock, but to opposition: "The guiltless rouses up against the impious" (v. 8). People who conceive themselves as good oppress those who, they think, deserve punishment. Job's suffering hardens the dogmatism of those who think themselves pure. It is the same contempt for the sufferer that Job noted in 12:5, and it rests in the same fear he saw in his friends' eyes (6:21). More helpful would be a wise person, but Job knows better than to expect to find one (17:10).

So he falls back to lethargy and the wish for death: "My days are past, / my purposes shattered" (v. 11). He has no hope except death (cf. the ends of chaps. 7, 10), no companions except "muck" and "maggot" (v. 14). Death would be better.

18:1–21, Bildad. Job himself predicted that his outburst would anger the friends (17:8–9). However, he

seems to have confused them, since Bildad begins almost unintelligibly. Verses 2–3 are addressed to someone plural (plural verbs and pronouns), criticizing them for delaying the friends' speaking ("we," v. 2b) and for considering them as stupid animals (v. 3). Such charges would be perfectly comprehensible if addressed to Job in the singular. Is Bildad so upset that he has forgotten his grammar? Or is he speaking to Eliphaz and Zophar? If the latter, his criticism of their failed arguments and of a supercilious attitude toward him (editorial or royal "we"?) introduces a serious disharmony among the friends.

In v. 4, he speaks directly to Job in the second line: "Will earth be abandoned on your account?" But no more; from then on, Job is included only by the implication of context. These disputants *are* talking past each other! Like Eliphaz, Bildad proffers no word of assurance or positive expectation, but his series of images is interesting. He goes from the metaphor of cattle in v. 3 to the image of a beast of prey who tears only itself ("preys angrily on his soul," v. 4). "Will earth be abandoned on your account?" The rhetorical question expects a negative answer, and a quotation from Job ("A rock disintegrates from its place," 14:18) ridicules Job's pretensions to greatness and influence. The extinguished lights in 18:5–6 continue the ridicule (Bildad is still having difficulty with singular and plural; v. 5 refers to "knaves," v. 6 to a singular "he"), and vv. 7–10 play out an elaborate image of trapping, which harks back to the beast of prey. He then moves into an image of sickness and death, which begins with "shiver" (v. 11) and moves to famine, disaster, and the minions of personified Death snatching a sick person from a tent (vv. 12–14).

Reference to the tent leads to the poignant picture of a tent occupied by someone else and the dwelling sprinkled with sulfur (v. 15) to disinfect it and then shifts to the metaphor of a tree that dries away from root to twig (v. 16). The dying tree merges in vv. 17–19 with the picture of the dying or dead person whose very "memory" and name die (v. 17). He is chased "out of the world" (v. 18) and deprived of survivors (v. 19). The ancient world, expecting no future life, laid its hopes on the memory of the descendants, which Bildad summarily rips away from Job. The images of disintegration from v. 5 on illustrate Bildad's quotation from Job in v. 4 ("A rock disintegrates from its place"), which seemed scornful there.

But Bildad closes with another self-contradiction: "They shudder over his day in the west, / in the east the hair stands on end" (v. 20). Having depicted the wicked person as lost from the world and memory, he now describes the catastrophe as notoriously worldwide. The dwelling, dissolved in vv. 15–16, returns as "the evil dwellings" in v. 21. Bildad seems confused from beginning to end of the speech. Its multiple images would be interesting if they did not result in a contradiction.

19:1–29, Job. Job begins by repeating Bildad's opening words, "How long?" (cf. 18:2). We can imagine this indignant quatrain spoken in a parodying tone of voice: "How long will you pain my soul, / pulverize me with talk?" (v. 2). It is also exaggerated: "These ten times you've insulted me" (v. 3). It has been only five times, but ten is a good round number, even if an exaggeration.

Much of the rest of this relatively short speech revolves around images of distance and closeness, of travel and staying at home. Job asks, "Have I truly strayed?" but insists that "my straying stays at home with me" (v. 4). In 6:24, he asked about error with the same verb, and perhaps here he suggests that his "error" is like a houseguest who goes nowhere and bothers no one. Echoing Bildad's metaphors of trapping, he describes how God "circled his net" over him (19:6). Justice is undiscoverable (v. 7).

The next stanza (vv. 8–12) piles up travel images: blocked roads and darkened paths (v. 8), devastation around the walker (v. 10), God's "gangs" who build a highway and camp around his tent (v. 12), the latter an image of home set against words of journey. These images are combined with military ones. Job experiences again God's attacks (v. 11) and the gangs (the word often refers to raiding parties) building a highway for an army to pass on the way to siege. The object of all of these military attentions, Job notes, is merely his "tent" (v. 12). Proportion has been abandoned.

Images of distance become psychological rather than physical in vv. 13–19. Job begins with the verb "to distance" and lists those who were once close and are now, by God's agency, far: brothers, acquaintances, visitors (vv. 13–14), strangers given hospitality (v. 15), slaves (vv. 15–16), his immediate family (v. 17), social inferiors (v. 18), and social equals (v. 19). The reversals are ironic. "Those who know me are alien (Heb. *zaru*) from me" (v. 13), and his maids think of him as "alien" *(zar)* and foreign (v. 15). A slave refuses his commands, and the young "heckle" rather than respect him (v. 18). His wife recoils from his "stinking" breath (v. 17, *zur*, a pun on *zar*, vv. 13, 15). Most surprising, "I am loathsome to my own children" (v. 17). Has Job forgotten that they are dead?

Suddenly, images of distance give way to those of unbearable closeness: "My bones cling to my skin and flesh" (v. 20); God's "hand has touched me" (v. 21)—the same verb as in 1:11 and 2:5, used also of the wind that "touched" the house and killed his children in 1:19; both friends and God "pursue" him (v. 22). Yet in the midst of these metaphors comes a poignant plea for a positive closeness: "Pity, O pity me, you my friends" (v. 21). It is a very brief change from the sarcastic invective that Job and the friends usually use on each other.

These images of motion taken and blocked (vv. 4–12), of psychological distance (vv. 13–19), and of painful closeness (vv. 20–22) suggest change itself as the essence of Job's suffering. In vv. 23–24 he shifts rad-

ically to permanence: "Would that my words were written, / would that they were engraved in an inscription / with an iron stylus and lead / forever in rock they were incised." As in 16:18, where he called on earth to testify to the martyr's blood, Job is anxious that his complaint not be lost. He wants the testimony not of mute fact, but of "words," the unmistakable meaning of his story, to be permanently "incised" in a public monument.

If only what he says next could be deciphered! Ironically, it was written not in rock "with an iron stylus and lead," but on papyrus or parchment. The first line of v. 25 can be read, but the six lines following (vv. 25b–27) are unintelligible. Each word is readable, but the words do not join in sentences that make sense. Nearly every interpretation of these lines rests on a scholar's proposal to rewrite some part of them. Since this commentary rejects doing that, it can give readers no help with them.

The first line of v. 25 is clear: "As for me, I know that my avenger lives." The line is familiar to music lovers from Handel's *Messiah:* "I know that my Redeemer liveth." But the word is not "redeemer," much less "Redeemer." Job is not referring to a divine savior or to Jesus. The Hebrew *go'el* alludes to a custom known from passages such as Num. 35:19 and Deut. 19:6, 12, which refer to "the avenger of blood." When someone was killed by a member of another tribe or clan, the injured clan appointed one of its number to take vengeance on the murderer on behalf of the deceased. The person so appointed was the *go'el,* the "avenger," not a "redeemer," because Job's *go'el* furthers the opposition between God and himself. God is attacking Job, not enhancing friendship, as we have seen in chap. 16 and earlier in this chapter. The figure of the "avenger" is born of Job's desperate awareness that God "considers me like his foes" (v. 11). It reminds us of the earlier third parties, the "arbiter," whose existence Job denied in 9:33 but who could hypothetically intervene between two parties in a dispute, and the "witness" of 16:19–21, whose presence with God Job affirmed with great certainty and who had, he thought, the power to decide the controversy. Job makes a more serious move with the avenger. This is the kin who takes vengeance on the guilty enemy for damage done to the sufferer.

The exploration of divine justice has come to this pass. Because that justice, so confidently proclaimed by the friends, turns out on examination to be injustice, its solution cannot be acquiescence, the mediation of the "arbiter," or the controversy of the "witness." Only revenge is left. The avenger, moreover, "lives." A commission of vengeance is given only on the death of someone. For Job to be avenged, he must, it seems, be dead, but by the same token the avenger must be alive. Significantly, Job does not address God in chap. 19. For the first time since chap. 3, his speech is entirely within himself or to the friends. Conceivably, part of the garbled passage in vv. 25–27 could have been addressed to the deity, but there is now no way to know.

When the text returns to intelligibility in vv. 28–29, Job is warning the friends of danger to themselves from a "sword" as "fury on wrongdoing" (v. 29). Whose sword is it? Does he threaten them with the avenger's attentions or with God's sword, which has so far pursued no one but Job? Like him, the friends will soon learn about judgment. The sword will make them "know that there is a trial" (v. 29). Something legal is still in Job's mouth as he ends his part of the second cycle.

20:1–29, Zophar. Zophar can hardly wait to leap into the discussion. He begins with "therefore," which we would expect in the middle of a sentence, and his first quatrain, vv. 2–3, seems breathless. He is taking it personally: "I hear indication of an insult to me" (v. 3), of which Job also complained (19:3).

Like the other friends in this cycle, Zophar has no word of reassurance or support. He emphasizes images of sudden, radical reversal. Bad people's "triumphal shout" and "joy" are short (20:5), and they themselves disappear like dreams (v. 8). They "ascend to the sky" and "reach into the clouds" (v. 6; an allusion to the Tower of Babel, Gen. 11:4?), then perish like dung (Job 20:7). The seen becomes unseen (vv. 7b, 9). Their lusty bones will "bed" in the dust (v. 11), a painfully ironic consummation of lust in the bed of dust, echoing Job's expectation of going down to Sheol's dust with his hope (17:16).

The images of 20:12–23 center on eating and oppose sweet to bitter (vv. 12, 14), good taste (vv. 12–13) to vomit (v. 15), and gall and poison (vv. 14, 16) to honey and butter (v. 17). The knave cannot see the latter (v. 18), because moral retribution is at work. The wicked person, oppressing the oppressed, taking what is not one's own, having ulcers (vv. 19–20), gives the signs and causes of wrong. Zophar proclaims the justice that meets injustice: "There's nothing left for him to eat, / therefore his property cannot increase" (v. 21). He is not the model of consistency here. Verse 21 pictures the person with nothing to eat, v. 22 with plenty to eat, v. 23 with something to eat. Eliphaz too exaggerated the case and contradicted himself (15:20–21). Perhaps Zophar is discussing different situations at different times. Yet the friends claim the certainty of correlation between sin and suffering, between goodness and prosperity. That they contradict themselves as they describe it suggests that the principle is self-contradictory.

Zophar's images of battle and storm (20:24–28) are also not utterly meticulous. "He flees an iron weapon, / a bronze bow cuts him down" (v. 24). The crescendo from iron to bronze would be effective if a "bronze

bow" were good for anything or even if a bow could "cut down" someone. Perhaps one expects too much: Zophar called attention to his own agitated state at the beginning. Yet the rest of the speech has some relatively consistent pictures of reversal and opposition and a nicely developed bit on the shift from sweet to bitter. Here his reversal of situation pretends precision, but fails to deliver it. The battle moves to the cosmos itself. Supernatural fire (v. 26), sky and earth (v. 27), storm and flood (v. 28) fight to bring the sinner down. Zophar sounds very like a hellfire preacher, with his reference to "the wrathful day" (v. 28). His conclusion reverses two positive terms: "This is the lot of evil humankind from God, / the heritage that God bespeaks him" (v. 29). One may receive a "lot" (or "portion") in a special banquet (see, e.g., 1 Sam. 1:4–5), and "heritage" is usually a bequest. The images of food in 20:12–23 and those of property in vv. 19–21 come to climax with this ironic promise. The knave—Job's category—has no positive gift from God to anticipate.

The negativity of the friends in this cycle is thorough and consistent. It is hard to suppose that they could go further in the third, but they do.

21:1–28:28
The Third Cycle of Speeches

21:1–34, Job. The second cycle (chaps. 12–20) was an unfriendly one. The friends turned unfriendly to Job, concentrating on lurid visions of how the wicked are punished, with the implication that Job is undergoing some version of these punishments. Job turned unfriendly to God, progressively diminishing direct speech to him from the long passage in 13:19b–14:22 through the brief remarks in 16:7b–8; 17:3–4, to the absence of address to God in chap. 19. Twice he asserted a new assurance for the presence of third parties to his dispute: a "witness," whose power to decide he affirmed in 16:19–21, and an "avenger," whom he "knows" to be alive in 19:25. These figures of Job's imagination are, as it were, "anti-Prosecutors," who advance beyond the "arbiter" whose existence Job denied in 9:33. Job has implicitly agreed with the friends that he is being punished and has continued to desire a trial to clear him, though his references to the helpers may indicate doubt about it. But the vivid, horrific terms in which he has described God's attacks on him match the friends' visions of divine punishment on sinners.

The third cycle takes the argument into interesting, unexpected turns. Eliphaz wondered (15:11) whether Job found God's "consolations too slight." Job suggests sarcastically that, if the friends listen carefully, they may receive "some consolation" (21:2). Their increased certainty that he is hopelessly guilty may console them. But v. 3b presents a strange singular: "And after I've spoken, you [masculine singular] can scoff away." Is he addressing Zophar, as most scholars think, or Eliphaz, who, in the established pattern, will speak next? Or, as the singular has been before, is it addressed to God, a passing, truculent shot—"You up there!"? The latter may be implied by his next questions (v. 4): "Now for me, is my complaint with humans? / Why shouldn't my breath be short?" The answer to the first must be negative: "No, the complaint is with someone other than humans." The second, like Job's exhortation to the friends, suggests the magnitude of the complaint: "Face me and be appalled, / lay your hands on your mouths. / If I recall it, I'm frightened, / and my flesh grasps a shudder" (vv. 5–6). The friends refuse to realize that the problem originates not with the sufferer, but with the punishing deity. That is what is so appalling. Job's condition requires the thought that *God has done this without any good reason.* If God punishes by suffering—and Job and the friends think he does—the effect ought to result from a discernible cause. The friends have not found one, and Job can find none in himself that is proportional to the suffering. Not only has he not done enough to justify the divine reaction; he has done nothing whatever to justify it. An inexplicable blow from the back of God's hand has thrust rudely away Job's entire system of laws, assumptions, assurances, and truths on which his daily living rested comfortably. "My flesh grasps a shudder"—a strange expression. Perhaps he can find nothing more solid to grasp.

In the rest of the speech, Job proposes an understanding of life and the world exactly the opposite of the one that has just dissipated. Job and the friends have supposed that God rewards with prosperity those humans who please him and punishes with suffering those who displease him. They have assumed that prosperity rewards virtue, suffering punishes vice. Turn it upside down, Job proposes, and one has just as accurate a view of the world. "Why do the wicked live, / mature, and increase strength . . . ?" (v. 7). He does not ask *whether* the wicked live this way; he asks *why,* assuming that they do. Verses 8–12 provide a series of pictures of healthy fertility in family and flocks (vv. 8–11), happy children and music (vv. 11–12), exactly the opposite of what Job experiences. His herds are destroyed, his children neither dance nor sing. But he is the model of virtue, and those who prosper are "the wicked."

They manage, moreover, to keep God at arm's length, tell him to his face that "knowing your ways does not please us" (v. 14), that service to him is unprofitable (v. 15). Yet something less attractive lurks in their thoughts (v. 13): "They wear out their days with good"—an odd but somewhat attractive way to picture decline to death, but not so odd as the next line—"are terrified at the moment of Sheol." Such terror of death might motivate the distance from God articulated in vv. 14–15. An alternative reading of v. 13b is:

"They go down to Sheol in peace." I see no basis except personal preference to choose one reading over the other. The duality persists in v. 16. "Their good is not in their hand" might mean that it is in the deity's hand, whether the wicked like it or not, or, if the line is a question, as NRSV has it ("Is not their prosperity indeed their own achievement?"), that prosperity or happiness is actually in these people's own power. Job wishes (vv. 19–20) that they would receive a deserved punishment, but he does not see that they do (v. 17). The person who dies "all secure and at ease" comes to the same dusty end as the bitter one who has never had it good (vv. 23–26). But the thought is different from the one in chap. 3. There the sameness of destiny was pleasant. Here it is unfair that the unhappy righteous have no better prospect than the prosperous wicked. The friends apparently try to appeal to contrary evidence (v. 28), but Job proposes unaccustomed sources of wisdom (v. 29). Wayfarers, gypsy nomads, traveling caravaneers—not the polite society Job and his friends know—have a different sense of the world: "On a calamitous day a wretch is spared" (v. 30). People do not receive what they deserve (v. 31): "When he has done something, who pays him back?"

The wicked wealthy person has a funeral attended by crowds, and the "clods of the wadi" where he is buried "taste sweet to him" (vv. 32–33). As the images of death throughout this chapter put the cap on the images of life, so Job turns upside down the friends' reflection on life. Certainly God rewards those who please him and punishes those who displease him. But they are completely mistaken about who pleases God: *he rewards the wicked.* Job cannot imagine their being more wrong: "How you console me with empty air, / and your replies leave only fraud behind!" (v. 34). He began the speech by saying that they might receive some "consolation." He closes it with the irony that they "console" him only with puffs of wind.

22:1–30; 25:1–6, The Friends. The speeches of the friends in the third cycle will be looked at together. There are only two; Zophar has no third speech. Bildad's speech is unusually short, and he says nothing new.

Eliphaz's opening statement, echoing his first stanza in chap. 15, comes very quickly to a climax: "Are you not in fact greatly wicked, / with no end to your misdeeds?" (22:5). He has not said that quite so bluntly before, and his process of getting there is interesting. Asking if a human "benefits" God, he answers that one "benefits only himself" (v. 2). Verse 3 repeats what he said before, that God is indifferent to Job's "innocence." Appearing to grant that "innocence," the next rhetorical question, "Does he charge you out of your religiousness?" (v. 4), calls for a negative answer. Seeming to say that God does not accuse Job for being good, he really says that Job must be guilty if God charges him. He makes a similar point in v. 5, still retaining the form of the rhetorical question—but "Are you not?" demands the affirmative answer "Yes, I am." It is a sneaky switch in a series of rhetorical questions that call for negative answers.

Eliphaz now leaps at Job with a series of specific accusations. In vv. 6–11 he specifies Job's moral crimes, and in vv. 12–20 he describes theological faults. In his conclusion, vv. 21–30, Eliphaz proposes a solution to Job's dilemma. He delivers the accusations with utter certainty, and we must imagine Job's jaw dropping in astonishment. The whole is a tissue of invention. Job has done none of what he is accused of in vv. 6–9. Eliphaz's assurance that wicked people suffer means that people who suffer are wicked. Thus, if Job has not crushed the arms of orphans (v. 9), he must have done something just like it. His accusation is structured exactly like certain oracles of the prophets. The opening "because" governs the accusations in vv. 6–9 and introduces the resulting punishment by "therefore" (cf., e.g., Hos. 2:7–8; Isa. 8:6–7, and many other passages). But "because" is followed by sheer fiction, made the more ironic by contrast to the praise of Job's compassionate care for those in trouble, an allusion with which Eliphaz began his first speech (4:3–4).

He now moves to the theological sins (vv. 12–20). Assuming that Job must grant God's transcendence (v. 12), he purports to quote Job about the limits of divine knowledge: "And you say, 'What does God know? / Does he give order through the thick cloud? / Clouds conceal him, and he does not see, / and he walks around on the circle of the sky'" (vv. 13–14). Job has said nothing of the sort, but has consistently complained that God "sees" too much (e.g., 7:19–20; 13:27; 14:3, 6; 16:9). To accusations of deeds Job has not done, Eliphaz adds criticisms of thoughts he has not expressed. He nearly gives his game away when he blurts out about those who remain distant from God (v. 17) that God "filled their houses with good" (v. 18)—which was precisely Job's claim in chap. 21, namely, that God showers good on the wicked. And v. 19, "the righteous see and rejoice, / the innocent mocks it," remarkably echoes Job's sarcasm in 17:8–9 about how his plight hardens the attitudes of "good" folks.

As suddenly as he began his frontal attack, Eliphaz leaves it to propound a solution (vv. 21–25) and to predict a happy future (vv. 26–30). However, his head is not yet quite together. "Then benefit him [God]," he says, forgetting that in v. 2 he denied that a human *could* benefit God. The advice is conventional: take instruction (Heb. *torah,* with a hint of submitting to rules), turn to the deity, put wrongdoing at a distance (vv. 22–23). He should give up crass materialism in favor of the divine treasure (vv. 24–25), a metaphor wearied by vast overuse. The result will be a future filled with success: pleasure in God (v. 26), prayer answered and vows paid (v. 27), decision definitively made (v. 28), rescue of lowly sinners from the depths (vv. 29–30). It sounds so easy, but it ignores the depth

of evil Eliphaz ascribed to Job earlier in the speech. Is this the work of a rational mind?

If Eliphaz's last contribution combines unjust accusations with ostensibly warm hopes for Job's future, Bildad's hardly has time for more than a "good-bye." His style is the tersest of the three, but this speech is short even for him, only ten lines. He makes but two points. In 25:2–3, he affirms the utter power of God, and in vv. 4–6 he argues that nothing in the creation can measure up to divine standards. Neither point is remotely new, and the second, interestingly, circles back to where the discussion began. Bildad echoes Eliphaz's point (4:17–14:18): "How is any man righteous with God, / how is one born of woman pure?" (25:4) and adds another (cf. 15:15), even the moon and stars are not pure (25:5). So we return to the beginning, and it seems that the friends have learned nothing. Eliphaz lambasts Job but, strangely, promises him a future; Bildad closes with Eliphaz's cynical view of the human race; and Zophar—well, Zophar is reduced to silence.

23:1–24:25, Job. In chap. 21, Job argued that the converse of the conventional notion of retribution is correct: the wicked are rewarded and the good punished. In this speech he focuses on the divine absence. "Oh that I knew, and could find him, / could enter his throne room" (23:3). I have wondered before, why, given Job's strictures against God, does he insist on a trial with God as judge? If, as he argued in chap. 21, God rewards evil, what is the trial's attraction? He even talks about it in positive terms, anticipates that God will say something that he will understand (v. 5), expects personal attention (v. 6), and thinks that he may win a case rationally handled (v. 7). In chaps. 9 and 13, the trial seemed already decided—and lost.

Discouragement resumes in force, as Job boxes the compass in an unsuccessful search for God (vv. 8–9). He is "not there" in the east, cannot be discerned in the west or perceived in the north, and when Job reaches the south (v. 9b), he understands: "He hides in the south." God deliberately avoids him, and Job thinks he understands that too: "Because he knows the way I'm on; / he'll test me, I shall emerge as gold" (v. 10). God avoids the sufferer precisely because the trial will turn out in Job's favor or because God will be publicly shown unjust. Job, after all, has been flawless in his conduct (vv. 11–12). But God is arbitrary: "His soul wishes something, and he does it" (v. 13). There is no time between desire and deed, and the thinking comes later: "He will come to terms with my sentence" (v. 14). That is enough to raise Job's abject fright (vv. 15–16). Yet that terrorism does not "silence" Job with the prospect of darkness (v. 17).

God is still irresponsibly absent. "Why are not proper times treasured by Shaddai, / and those who know him don't see his days?" (24:1). The proper times are probably times for trial, which God simply ignores. The divine absence, however, becomes for Job an explanation of errant behavior by humans, as he accuses God, in chap. 24, of responsibility for human wrong. The accusation is implicit, since Job does not address God directly.

Chap. 24 is very difficult, complex in images and ambiguous in language, full of verbs with unspecified subjects and pronouns with unclear antecedents. Translators have an inordinately hard time with it, changing singulars to plurals and finding conjecture necessary. It is no wonder that modern scholars have tried to recover from chap. 24 traces of "lost" parts of Bildad's speech (chap. 25) and of Zophar's nonexistent one. Any interpreter must confess uncertainty about this passage.

God's absence explains why humans go bad, oppressing the weak, stealing their goods, and behaving arrogantly with them (vv. 2–4). Job compares them with the wild asses (vv. 5–8), who live by the wits they can muster. Humans live in the same way, whether they are the oppressors (v. 9) or the oppressed (vv. 10–11). But the comparison to wild asses suggests that Job is not criticizing these people morally. It is the fault of God: "From the city the dying cry out, / the throats of the wounded call, / but God thinks nothing amiss" (v. 12). If God fails to give people guidance because he is absent, and if he ignores trouble about which he ought to care, can one expect anything but beastly behavior? Job makes an interesting advance on his revised theory of divine retribution. In chap. 21 he argued that God rewards misbehavior. Here he implicitly argues that God *causes* it.

In the two following stanzas, Job draws an opposition between humans and God, vv. 13–17 specifying the evil humans do, vv. 18–24 the deeds of God. The controlling image of vv. 13–17 is the opposition of light and darkness. Human wickedness depends very much on darkness, from the murderer who can kill in broad daylight but expands his activities at night (v. 14) to the adulterer's use of twilight (v. 15) and the thief's dependence on darkness (v. 16). But all of these wrongdoers are "rebellers against light" (v. 13) and "familiar with darkness's terrors" (v. 17).

The subject of v. 18 must be God. Verse 13 began with the emphatic Hebrew pronoun "they." Likewise, v. 18 begins with a pronoun "he." As the implicit cause of the human sins in the earlier verses, God is the obvious referent of this emphatic singular. Verses 18–24 are, if anything, more difficult than vv. 13–17. Divine curses cause barrenness in soil and humans (vv. 18, 20–21), dryness overcomes melting snow (v. 19). In one line, "Wickedness is bought like wood" (v. 20c), Job explicitly blames God for social disorder. God seems to raise up strong people in order to cast them down (vv. 22–24). Some of these images modify the earlier emphasis on God's absence, but Job reaffirms it: "They are exalted a little, and he is not there" (v. 24). This claim is the divine counterpart to Job's threat (7:21)

that he would not be there. God departs "swiftly" (24:18) from the scene and leaves behind disaster and chaos. All of this reflects the absence of which Job complained when he looked for the trial among all points of the compass (23:8–9).

And again we must wonder why Job wants a trial with this God. Not only is he absent; he is corrupt and a corrupter. Delving deep into the ground of human evil, Job finds there the work of God. Will such a deity acquit an uncorrupted human being? The statement about God in this chapter is devastating, and Job challenges the friends at the end: "If it is not so, who will prove me a liar / and bring my words to nought?" (24:25). The friends are not equal to the challenge. Bildad returns, in the next chapter, to a conceded point, that God is mighty and transcendent, and Zophar falls back on silence. Elihu (chaps. 32–37) tries to meet the demand of 24:25, but surely fails, and Yahweh (chaps. 38–41) makes no effort to do so. Job has already won the argument. But he still has a good deal left to say.

26:1–27:23, Job. The opening reply to Bildad is sharply sarcastic, emphasizing Job's weakness and the poor argument directed against him. "By whose help have you declared these words? / Whose breath is it that comes out from you?" (v. 4). It sounds like a nearly sinister accusation of guilt by association. It is even more devastating that vv. 2–4 are cast entirely in the second-person *singular*, which Job has used otherwise only to address God. Is he speaking to God or to Bildad? One may try taking it both ways. To Bildad, he tramples on whatever remains of kindliness and scorns their wisdom and help. To God, he criticizes help, "deliverance to the arm without strength," advice, knowledge—none of which God has conveyed to him. The divine absence, indeed, is his subject. Verse 4 even suggests that God must have help from someone else in order to speak.

Verses 5–14 characterize the creation in terms of power. This identification might appear to agree with the friends' assessment of God's transcendence (and therefore some scholars assign these verses to Bildad). Yet the tone, tinged with the foregoing sarcasm, is not normal theology. The cosmos is under the thumb of a cruel, harsh tyrant, who causes the dead to "writhe in agony" (v. 5), strips the place of the dead naked (v. 6). The universe lies passive under his rule (vv. 7–10), or "the sky's pillars tremble, / stunned by his rebuke" (v. 11). The usual divine enemies, Sea, Rahab (Isa. 30:7; 51:9–10), the "fleeing Dragon" (Isa. 27:1), who are respectively "stilled," "smashed," and "pierced," are joined in 26:12–13 by a surprising one, "Sky," who has also been somehow undone (the crucial verb is obscure). The presence of Sky is surprising because sky deities are never displaced in ancient mythologies. It is as if Job is making up mythic themes and dubious theologies. And he responds to the friends, implicitly, that they have trivialized God's doings: "Oh, these are but the edges of his ways. / What whispered word do we hear of him, / and the thunder of his might who understands?" (v. 14). Only a tiny corner of God's power reaches human knowledge, and therefore Bildad's and Eliphaz's certainties are misplaced (Zophar's confidence seems to have left him). Bildad's limping reference to moon and stars is blown apart by Job's account of the cosmic powers.

Yet we do not know how Job has received his knowledge. Why should we believe his account more than theirs? It is never clear that we should. The first surprise in chap. 27 occurs when Job takes an oath on God's own life. From what he said in chap. 24, an oath on the life of a radically unjust God would seem a strange thing. The oath is, as so often in Job, a self-curse, calling down an unspoken disaster if he speaks "viciousness" or "deceit" (v. 4). And its basis is Job's staunch statement of utter certainty about his own "integrity" and "righteousness" (or, as I have sometimes translated the word earlier, "innocence"): "I'm damned if I'll say you [plural: the friends] are right; / until I perish, I'll not turn away my integrity. / To my righteousness I hold fast, will not weaken it; / my heart finds nothing from my days to taunt" (vv. 5–6). In effect, Job claims here that he is the exception to chap. 24, that the God who has corrupted the whole world has failed to corrupt him.

He now proceeds to redefine God—the second surprise. In 13:24 Job wondered why God thought of him as "enemy," and in 19:11 he decided that God "considers me like his foes." Moreover, in 16:9 he referred to the deity as "my foe" (same word as in 19:11), and in 9:24 declared that, in God's hand, the world is in a "wicked hand." At last, in 27:7 he combines two ideas, that God is his enemy and that God is "wicked" and "vicious," unlike himself (see v. 4): "Let my enemy be considered wicked, / the one who rises against me, vicious." The thought is out: Job has but one "enemy." Not only is he alienated from this God, but he condemns him, claiming implicitly that he is the moral superior of God. Job is the righteous (v. 6), God the wicked (v. 7).

The third surprise: Job has redefined God, and now he redefines himself: "For what hope has the godless when he is snipped off, / when God carries off his life?" (v. 8). "Godless" is not quite right for the Hebrew word, which has to do rather with ritual pollution. The important thing is that, having condemned God, Job uses the term to describe himself, defines himself as not only distanced from God but repugnant to God. To maintain the integrity of his own moral stance, which he has solemnly sworn, Job redefines God as wicked enemy and himself as polluted, alienated, godless. The meanings of these words are radically turned on their heads. Job has no more "hope" of a better fate (vv. 9–10) now than he did back in 6:8–9, when he wished God would "crush" him and finish the matter.

He cannot imagine, though, how the friends can

miss the truth of what he says. Offering to help them understand (27:11), he reminds them of what they have seen and of their incomprehension: "You, of course, have all seen it, / and why, then, are you so utterly vapid?" (v. 12, more literally, "why do you puff a gust of wind?"). To underscore his point, he slightly skews a quotation from the end of Zophar's last speech (20:29), which described the desperate fate of the wicked as their rightful "lot" and "heritage" from God. "They receive this lot of evil humankind with God, / this heritage of oppressors from Shaddai" (27:13). Zophar spoke of the "lot" *from* God, Job *with* (the connivance of?) God. And Job refers in the plural to those who "receive" the heritage from Shaddai. He divides, then, the plural "evil humankind" who are on God's side from himself, the singular "godless" (v. 8). And he proceeds, in vv. 14–23, to use that singular term to describe the sufferings of the hopeless opponent of a powerful deity. It is a scathing parody on the friends' conventionalized visions of the sufferings of the wicked—so effective that many modern scholars propose to assign these verses to Zophar's missing speech. He even proposes (v. 17) that the "righteous" and the "pure" will profit from looting the wealth of the "godless." But one must remember that Job has inverted the terms, and the "righteous" and "pure" are on the side of God, who is the "wicked enemy." And, as we might expect, the very forces of nature, which are under the complete control of God (26:5–14), participate in the destruction of God's hapless enemy (27:20–23). Job closes with an ambiguous description of mockery, ambiguous because it is not clear whether it is the "east wind" (v. 21) or God himself who "claps his [or its] hands over him, / whistles derisively at him from his [or its] own place" (v. 23).

28:1–28, Job. The consensus of scholars is that this chapter, usually referred to as the "Hymn to Wisdom," was a late addition to the book. Still, here it is, a beautiful poem that makes very good sense in its context. But it is surprising. Immersed as readers have been in issues of righteousness and virtue, it is unexpected to find a description of mining and metal-working technologies. But these topics bring readers to the center of "wisdom," for the ancient world understood wisdom, it seems, principally as skill.

The first part, vv. 1–11, runs a kind of circle from the knowledge implied in mining (vv. 1–2) through distance (vv. 3–4) and discovery (vv. 5–6), around ignorance (vv. 7–8), and back to the hard work of knowledge (vv. 9–11). At this point, one encounters the first question about wisdom and where she is to be found (vv. 12–14; the Heb. noun "wisdom" is feminine, but we have the example of Prov. 1–9 for thinking it may be personified). Neither humans (Job 28:13) nor the cosmic powers of Abyss and Sea know where she is. The knowledge in the first part gives way to ignorance about wisdom. The middle section (vv. 15–19) is a somewhat repetitious catalogue of gems and other objects of great value, none of them in any way commensurable with the value of wisdom. Question and answer, very like vv. 12–14, again ask whence wisdom comes (vv. 20–22) and then respond with another answer of ignorance. Neither earthly life (v. 21) nor cosmic powers (v. 22; → Abaddon; Death) know more than "rumor."

But in the last section (vv. 23–28) God's understanding and knowledge come into play. He is the origin of wisdom and even "dug her out" (v. 27; the same verb as "digs" in v. 3). And he has informed humans about wisdom: "Now, the fear of the LORD, that is wisdom, / and avoiding evil is understanding" (v. 28). The contrast with the standard understanding of wisdom in vv. 1–11 is complete. Wisdom has nothing to do with knowledge, and the ancient Israelites would have found our research universities, laboratories, and government grants unthinkable. Wisdom for them arises from religion ("fear of the LORD" equals religion) and from morality. To be wise is to be religious and to avoid evil. Where have we seen that remark before? We were told that Job "feared God [or was religious] and avoided evil" back in 1:1. More than that, God himself described Job in the same terms (1:8; 2:3). Job possesses what the poem presents as the divine definition of wisdom. This chapter adds to Job's powerful assertion of his moral righteousness (27:4–6) the claim to divinely certified wisdom. Yet one has the hunch that, just as Job redefined righteousness and wickedness as they applied to God and humans in chap. 27, perhaps this very claim to wisdom also has its ironic twist. Perhaps insofar as wisdom involves "avoiding evil," as v. 28 has it, it constitutes avoiding God. Job surely has no illusions left, but has, in Nietzsche's famous phrase, "transvalued his values."

29:1–31:40
Job's Summation

The summation divides itself into three parts, corresponding to these three chapters. Chap. 29 describes the "good old days" when Job was happy. Chap. 30 sketches the miserable present. Chap. 31 prepares for the trial, as Job pronounces a series of curses to clear himself from the cloud of accusations over him. The speech, then, is a final preparation for the trial, about which we have heard so much. With the self-curses in chap. 31, moreover, Job circles back to the curses on his birthday, with which he began the dialogue in chap. 3.

29:1–25, Job's Past. Job describes his past situation in a symmetrical structure (which coheres with that shown by Habel, *The Book of Job*):

Part One (29:2–6): Past blessing
Part Two (29:7–10): Past honor and admiration
Part Three (29:11–17): Administration of justice

Part Four (29:18–20): Expected blessing
Part Five (29:21–25): Past honor and admiration

The thematic connections of parts four and five with parts one and two are evident, and the content seems simple enough. Beloved by God (vv. 2–6), respected by the people (vv. 7–10), helper of the weak and scourge of the wicked (vv. 11–17), flourishing in prosperity (vv. 18–20), influential as if he were a king (vv. 21–25)—one might almost think Job has forgotten his pain. However, he has not, and what he says is not as simple as it seems.

"Would that I were as past months, / the days when God watched over me" (v. 2). When Job discussed God's "watching" him before, it included sometimes "guarding" (10:12), sometimes "stationing a guard" (7:12; 10:14), "watching" his paths in connection with putting his feet in stocks (13:27). God "watches" him too much, more like a hostile prison guard than like a benevolent hospital nurse.

Though 29:4–5 is generally positive ("my autumn days," v. 4a, refers to his youth, as autumn in Palestine is the beginning of the year, not the end), an odd duality appears in v. 6. "My steps were washed with milk" seems a pleasantly positive image of luxury. But one is able to translate with the word "milk" only by correcting the word in the Hebrew text on the plausible supposition that it is misspelled. What is there in Hebrew is a word that means "rage" ("footsteps washed with rage" is quite a different metaphor) or, even more interestingly, "poison." Multiple meanings may be confusing, but they can also be interesting. In this instance, it sounds as if the great man is in danger of assault or assassination.

Job's description of the people's respect for him (vv. 7–10) is equally interesting. We might have thought from chaps. 1–2 that Job was a nomadic herdsman, but he speaks here of "going out to the gate of the city / to take my seat in the square" (v. 7). The city gate was where legal business was done in Israel. There was no professional judiciary, it seems, and wise, elderly men were expected to sit in the gate to act as intermediaries in disputes and hear legal cases. Job speaks of his "seat" as if he always occupied the same one. But most interesting is his description of people's attitudes toward him: "Young people saw me and hid, / old ones rose and stood, / princes restrained words / and laid their hands on their mouths, / the voices of leaders were hidden, / and their tongues stuck to their palates" (vv. 8–10). Respect is there, but also terror. The young hide, not only in admiration; princes are quiet by self-restraint, leaders silenced by voices that refuse in fright to work. These lines point to respect, but they also bear a negative connotation. Job's self-satisfaction at well-deserved success conceals underneath an arrogant man's testimony to the success of his arrogance.

As Job describes his administration of justice, one discovers that he is an activist jurist, personally leading and assisting the handicapped and punishing the hurtful (vv. 12, 15, 17). Besides acting justly, that quality describes his very character, the "robe and turban" that he wears (v. 14). In contrast to the silence of his social inferiors in vv. 8–10, this justice is accompanied by sound, the "cry" that calls attention to the need for justice (v. 12) and the joyful "song" of the widow (v. 13). But Job is also violent, breaking the wrongdoers' jaws (v. 17 recalls the princes' "hands on their mouths," v. 9).

Job's expectation of future blessing (vv. 18–20) has interesting and mixed images. Just what "I'll die with my nest" means ("with" is odd in Hebrew too) is not clear, but it seems a bit contradictory to "multiply days like sand" (both v. 18). Then one finds a pleasant image of a plant with well-watered roots and misted twigs (v. 19). Yet the second line, "Dew lodging on my twigs," is ambiguous. Dew notoriously disappears at first sun, and "lodging" explicitly means a temporary stay. The line at least exhibits a somewhat strange choice of words. There is even a hint of double meaning in v. 20, where "my bow successful in my hand" points at first to military prowess. But the word "successful" might also mean something like "changed" or "exchanged" in a less than positive sense.

The last stanza, vv. 21–25, repeating the silence idea but less harshly than in vv. 9–10, points to motifs of kingship, i.e., "they waited for me as for rain, / opened their mouths as for showers" (v. 23; see Ps. 72:6), and "I chose their way, sat at the head, / lived like a king among the troops" (v. 25). The phrase "the light of my face" (v. 24) is also a royal reference (see, e.g., Prov. 16:15) as well as a divine one (see Num. 6:25; Ps. 4:6). Is Job claiming divinity? After chap. 27, anything seems possible. The old duality appears here too. "If I smiled at them, they did not believe it," he says (29:24). Why not? Was it so rare that people were pleased? Or so unusual that they were surprised and incredulous?

What is clear throughout the speech is Job's satisfaction with his past honor. What is not nearly so clear is whether, even as he himself describes it, others were so satisfied.

30:1–31, Job's Current Plight. In 29:24, Job remarked on others' reactions to his smile (the verb could also be translated "laugh"). As chap. 30 opens, the reversal has taken place: "And now they laugh at me" (v. 1) in derision. They "shout" (v. 5) and "bray" (v. 7). He is "their [mocking] song" and "word" (v. 9). And as he closes the chapter, Job refers to his sounds: weeping (vv. 25, 31), crying out (vv. 20, 28), disgusting noises in his bowels (v. 27). In chap. 29 the oppositions of sound and silence showed Job's power and others' weakness. In chap. 30 sound and silence show Job as weak, his opponents strong. The movement is visible even in the structure of the chapter. Three times (vv. 1, 9, 16) he begins a new thought with "And now." In vv. 1–8, he expresses contempt for his tormentors' worthlessness. In vv. 9–15, he describes the terrifying brutality of their

tormenting. And in vv. 16–19, he ascribes this torment directly to God. He goes on to complain to God about the mistreatment and his expectation of death. In vv. 24–31, he returns to his feelings of pain and hopelessness. From being the king "who consoles mourners" (29:25), Job has become the mourner: "My lyre has become mourning, my flute a weeping voice" (30:31).

Job's contempt for his tormentors comes to the surface in a vivid figure: "And now they laugh at me, / those much younger than I, / whose fathers I disdained / to station among my sheepdogs" (v. 1). He is still thinking of inferiors and superiors. The rest of the section (vv. 1–8) is a confusing mixture of prepositions with singular and plural verb forms. For example, "What is their hands' strength to me?" (v. 2a) surely refers to the tormentors of v. 1. But the next line includes a singular preposition (lit., "upon him [or it] perishes vigor"), which might refer to "strength," giving something like "the vigor of which is gone," or might be an unusual third-person reference to Job himself, giving "whose vigor is gone." Depending on how one reads that preposition, vv. 3–4 either continue Job's description of his tormentors or describe his own bad state. Complication arises again in v. 5: "From the community they cast out, / shout over him as over a thief." Who are they, and who is he? The singular, we would think, ought to refer to Job, and "over him" repeats "upon him" in v. 2a. Then one would want "vigor" in v. 2 to be Job's and vv. 3–4 to describe him. But the plural verb, "they cast out," works best if it continues the "they" that began in v. 1, with vv. 2–4, referring to the laughers. To make sense of both vv. 2 and 5, it seems that one needs vv. 2–4 to refer at the same time to both Job and his persecutors. These details are indicative of the trouble the book of Job can present readers. Such trouble is compounded in vv. 5–8, where the tormenting pursuers ("they cast out") in v. 5 seem suddenly and fantastically to merge with the pursued, described like wild donkeys ("bray," v. 7; cf. 24:5–8) and social outcasts.

The next stanza (vv. 9–15) has some images familiar from chaps. 16 and 19. Job has become the (mocking) "song" of his pursuers (v. 9; cf. Ps. 69:12; Lam. 3:14). They "detest" him, "spit" at him (v. 10), because God hates him. The disdainful God "has loosened his bowstring," casting aside the weapon to show the victim's complete helplessness, "and humiliated me" (v. 11). Motivated by God's contempt, Job's tormentors "put off the bridle," which might mean casting off restraint or becoming wild beasts (cf. the donkey's bray, v. 7). From v. 12 on, one returns to a siege metaphor, as in chap. 19, with "building up roads" (v. 12), coming against Job like a "breach" (in the wall, v. 14). In v. 15, he becomes both the dumping ground ("Terrors are dumped over me") and airy, evanescent vapor ("my standing is driven off like the wind, / my safety sweeps away like a cloud"). The controlling image seems to be military attack by God and his agents, an attack motivated by hatred and contempt.

God is responsible. He "bores out my bones" (v. 17; cf. 16:12–13), an image of surgery that gives ceaseless pain: "my gnawing pain never lies down." After the unintelligible 30:18, he refers again to God's contempt, "He has flung me to the muck" (v. 19; cf. 9:31), as if the useless corpse were dropped in the sewer. Job presents a verbal conclusion to his being "song" and "word" to his tormentors (30:9): "I'm a cliché, like dust and ashes" (v. 19). The first phrase stems from the activity of making proverbs, and it suggests the proverbs and metaphors bandied about by "miserable comforters." He is indeed a cliché to an entire culture. Mention Job, and someone will invariably speak of patience. So does the misreading of Job in James 5:11 control our implicit reading.

Now Job addresses God (30:20–23), almost exactly in the middle of the summation. Since the long speech in 13:19b–14:22, Job has spoken to God only briefly, in 16:7b–8; 17:3–4; 21:3 (one line); 26:2–4. He will do so only twice more (40:4–5; 42:1–6). But he says nothing new here. God responds to him inappropriately, no matter what he does: "I cry out to you, and you don't answer me, / I stand [silent], and you examine me" (30:20). To complain that God has "been changed to cruelty toward me" (v. 21) may seem odd, since Job has complained about cruelty for some time. But his main complaint is the unpredictable, inconsistent character of tyranny: "You lift me to the wind, make me ride, / you dissolve me, level me" (v. 22). The first line reminds us of God riding the clouds (Ps. 68:4) or the wings of the wind (Ps. 18:10), but the second returns to the ground with a thump. Job can be sure of nothing but death (Job 30:23), and he has been sure of that for a long time.

In the difficult last stanza (vv. 24–31), Job curiously changes his tune. Verse 24 is nearly unintelligible, but in v. 25 Job claims constant concern for other sufferers, using the same kind of curse formula the Prosecutor used in chaps. 1–2: "If I did not weep for a difficult day, / or my soul grieve for the poor . . ." He ought to be rewarded for that. "I hoped for good, and evil came, / waited for light, and darkness came" (v. 26). His body is ravaged by suffering (vv. 27, 30), his colleagues are indifferent (v. 28), his only company is the animals of the uninhabitable desert (jackals and ostriches, v. 29), and his musical instruments, usually employed for happy song and dance (as in chap. 21), now become mourning and weeping. And he has apparently reverted to the friends' position. He has been good, and he deserves reward. Has Job reversed himself so suddenly?

31:1–40, Job's Oaths. Job has received good press for this part of his speech: "The Code of a Man of Honor" is Robert Gordis's title (see Gordis, p. 339). The ethical system involves not only external action, but also inner

attitudes and principles of ethical thinking. The chapter is a series of oaths, some in the form we have seen without a result clause, some in the more complete form with result clause. These oaths are often interpreted as Job's final preparation for the trial, whose ups and downs in his mind we have followed since the idea first came up in chap. 9. Yet the redefinitions in chap. 27 seemed to render the notion of a trial impossible. If God has become Job's vicious enemy, and if Job is as righteous as he has claimed, the trial will be unjust by definition, and he can hope only for death (30:23).

Chap. 31 is a very complex, powerful series of oaths and other kinds of statements. An outline may be helpful:

- Questions: retribution (31:1–4)
- Oaths and statements (31:5–12)
  - Oath without result: fraud (31:5)
  - Statement: integrity (31:6)
  - Oath with result: impurity (31:7–8)
  - Oath with result: adultery (31:9–10)
  - Statement with "for": crimes (31:11–12)
- Oaths, questions, and statement (31:13–18)
  - Oath without result: justice (31:13)
  - Questions: God and common origin (31:14–15)
  - Oath without result: aloofness (31:16–17)
  - Statement with "for": care for poor (31:18)
- Oaths and statement (31:19–23)
  - Oath without result: clothing for poor (31:19–20)
  - Oath with result: fairness (31:21–22)
  - Statement with "for": fear of disaster (31:23)
- Oaths and statement (31:24–28)
  - Oath without result: wealth (31:24)
  - Oath without result: power (31:25)
  - Oath without result: idolatry (31:26–27)
  - Statement with "for": crimes (31:28)
- Oaths and statements (31:29–34)
  - Oath without result: arrogance (31:29)
  - Statement: curse (31:30)
  - Oath without result: food (31:31)
  - Statement: hospitality (31:32)
  - Oath without result: hypocrisy (with "for") (31:33–34)
- Statement and oaths (31:35–40)
  - Statement (exclamation): challenge to trial (31:35)
  - Oath without result: pride (31:36–37)
  - Oath with result: soil (31:38–40)

Such a design enables readers to visualize what Job is saying. At first glance, the speech looks rather disjointed. From the covenant of v. 1 (where Job is denying not lustful thoughts about young women, but connection with a goddess) to the covenant with his soil in vv. 38–40, he ranges over sins he has not committed and attitudes he has not had. Some are like those of which Eliphaz gratuitously accused him in chap. 22. The subjects, as indicated in the outline, comprise an impressive claim to moral honor, interspersed with statements of assurance that God knows his integrity (31:6), that some crimes are notoriously actionable (vv. 11, 28), that he has not cursed loosely (v. 30), and that he has hospitably opened his doors (v. 32). He denies improper attitudes such as despising justice due to the slave (v. 13), being pleased at others' misfortune (v. 29), and concealment of something out of fear of displeasure (vv. 33–34). These are sins we take seriously, attitudes we are taught to avoid. We respond positively to this epitome of the ethical person. Such a response lends credence to the first characterization of Job we saw as "scrupulously moral" (1:1, 8; 2:3).

We must remember, however, that these are actually *curses* that Job calls down on himself. The curse in the ancient world was no casual expression, but was the most powerful way one had to set in motion forces of action and reaction. The curse worked itself out, objectively and irresistibly, and even God could not hinder it. Our culture has nothing that corresponds to it, and we tend not to understand why other cultures have taken curses so seriously. As the Prosecutor did in chaps. 1–2, Job lays his own future and welfare on the line. If he is mistaken about anything in his claims to moral integrity, the unspoken catastrophe will strike him still further down.

But not only himself. Unusually, four of these curses do contain the statement of the catastrophe (what I have called the "result"). In 31:21–22, the result matches the evil denied: "If I have shaken my fist at the orphan / because I saw my helpers in the gate, / may my arm fall from my shoulder, / my forearm be broken at the elbow." In vv. 38–40, the evil of exploiting the soil is matched by the soil's growing inedible produce. In vv. 7–8, the penalty for having "strayed from the way" and having an impure stain on his hands falls partly on Job ("may I sow and another eat") and partly on others ("and my descendants be uprooted"). It is surprising, because in 21:19–20 Job opposed the idea that descendants might be punished for a person's acts, though the law allows it (Exod. 20:5). But worse comes in Job 31:9–10: "If my heart has been fooled over a woman, / and at my neighbor's door I have lain in wait, / may my woman grind for another, / others kneel over her." Job calls for the effects of his sexual misdeeds to fall not upon himself or upon his partner in adultery, but upon his innocent wife!

With this series of curses on himself, Job demands divine attention as the Prosecutor did at the beginning. He calls for the trial again: "Oh that I had someone to hear me— / here is my mark; let Shaddai answer me— / and the inscription my accuser has written!" (v. 35). He even reverts to royal language about himself: "Like a prince [I will] approach him" (v. 37), hav-

ing tied the "inscription" (presumably the written indictment) on himself "like a wreath" (v. 36). Yet that picture of the emaciated victim getting up from the ashes to march around with a "paper crown" (a phrase from Habel, p. 439) provides a comic parody of Job's arrogant parading to his seat of justice in 29:7–10. Does the comic occur to Job?

The most interesting aspect of this speech is 31:2–3: "What is God's portion from above, / Shaddai's inheritance from on high? / Is it not disaster for the vicious, / calamity for evildoers?" We have seen several of those words in chap. 27. "Portion" and "inheritance" were God's reward to the "evil" and "oppressors" in 27:13 and are now punishment to the "evildoers." "Vicious" characterized God in 27:7. Job has reverted to retributionism. The curses exhibit him as the model of the ethical person, the follower of the rules and the attitudes inculcated by the ancient Hebrew superego. He has climbed from despair about a fair trial (chap. 23) and the savage redefinition of terms that portrayed him as the deity's moral superior (chap. 27), and he trots out the weary old rewards and punishments to which he so furiously objected before. He *deserves* acquittal because he is free of the improprieties he describes. How has Job made so stark a shift of position? Was he so enraptured by his memory of past power and influence as to wish to recapture them? Does he suppose that, getting them before by obedience to the rules, he might regain them by the same route?

And what now? Surely the next activity must be God's direct entry on the scene. At the very least, he must respond.

32:1–37:24
The Speeches of Elihu

Thinking we would hear the voice of God, we get instead Elihu, who is angry at the elderly incompetents who cannot show Job how he is wrong. Elihu is young and brash, given to long prefaces and pretentious language, not a very attractive character. Most scholars think his speeches were inserted into the book. They speculate variously about the interpolation, e.g., that Elihu gives a different answer to the problem of suffering from the others or that he gives the right answer to the problem, thus relieving God of answering it (a popular Jewish understanding of Elihu in the Middle Ages and later). Perhaps Elihu is here *because* we expect God, and his often boring speech maintains tension by delaying the entrance of the divine voice. That seems indeed a better reason than the other two. His idea of suffering is only marginally different from the others, and it is evidently not the "right" one.

The speech *is* boring, and we need not devote a great deal of space to it. After the introduction, it falls into four basic sections: 32:6–33:33; 34:2–37; 35:2–16; and 36:2–37:24.

32:1–5, Introduction. In the narrative introduction, Elihu gives his genealogy and notes his anger.

32:6–33:33, Elihu I. Most of the speech (32:6–33:7) is preface, grumbling about the others' inability to deal with Job. They are old but not wise; he is young but "full of words" (32:18), which are about to burst him "like unopened wine, / like new wineskins" (v. 19). He reassures Job with a straight face that there is nothing to fear from him (33:6–7).

In 33:8 begins the one-sided debate, to which Job never replies. Quoting Job's claim to moral perfection in skewed form ("I am pure, without transgression, / I am clean, have no iniquity," v. 9), he argues, like Eliphaz, that no human can claim purity, and one must admit imperfections and sins (v. 27). To Job's claim that God has made him his enemy (vv. 10–11), Elihu opposes a divine revelation that shows humans where they are wrong. As Eliphaz said (chap. 4), messages come through dreams (33:15–18), and Elihu interprets suffering as God's education that transforms the sinner into a righteous person (vv. 25–26). He even alludes to Job's witness-interpreter (16:19–20), postulating an "angel over him, / one interpreter out of a thousand" (v. 23). Suffering, like dreams and angels, is a medium for the divine message to restore the sinner. God "does all these things / twice, thrice with a man, / to turn his soul back from the Pit" (33:29–30). If Job does not want to debate, Elihu will proceed: "Be silent," he says pretentiously, "and I'll familiarize you with wisdom" (v. 33).

34:1–37, Elihu II. The second speech is addressed to the friends—or the world: "Hear my words, you wise people" (v. 2) and "Therefore, intelligent men, listen to me" (v. 10). It is strange that Elihu would compliment the friends, when he so disdained them in chap. 32.

Elihu says, as did Bildad (8:3), that God "does not bend justice" (34:12). But he and the others know what justice is: "Justice we will decide for ourselves; / we know among us what is good" (v. 4). Job does not qualify, for he "wanders in company with evildoers, / walks with wicked men" (v. 8). Elihu's vision of the divine control over humans (vv. 19–30) is perhaps more detailed than that of the friends, at least as vivid in its depiction of punishment, and more aware of divine compassion than either Job's or the others'. Job is wrong about God: "He hears the outcry of the oppressed. / He gives content—and who finds that bad?" (vv. 28–29).

At the end, Elihu addresses Job briefly and a bit cryptically (v. 33): "Does he repay you out of what is yours because you despise?" But he turns back to the "intelligent men" (v. 34) and quotes them: "Job does

not speak with knowledge" (v. 35) and "adds to his sin, / in transgression jeers among us" (v. 37).

Elihu may be a bore, but one thing can be said for him: only he among the friends both refers to and addresses Job by name.

35:1–16, Elihu III. Sometimes one feels an unreality in Elihu, as if he were not quite in touch with this world. He quotes Job: "Is this what you consider justice, / that you say, 'I am more righteous than God'?" (v. 2). Job said the opposite of that in 9:2. Elihu goes on, "For you say, 'How is he of use to you? / How do I profit from my sin?'" (35:3), putting into Job's mouth a word ("to be of use") that only Eliphaz has used (22:2, 21). Of course, Job implied in 27:6–7 that he is God's moral superior, and perhaps one should credit Elihu with shrewd insight. His promise that he will "refute your words" (35:4) after quoting words that Job has not used is nevertheless pretentious.

In vv. 5–8, Elihu repeats Eliphaz's idea that a human's action has no effect on God (22:2–3). Sin does not diminish God, nor does excellence add to him. Job had agreed with the former in 7:20, as he had agreed with Elihu's next contention (35:11), that humans should accept instruction from animals (12:7–8). And he has staunchly agreed with Elihu's remark (it sounds inadvertent, as if Elihu were not perceiving reality again), "There they [the beasts, perhaps] cry out, and he [God?] does not answer, / before the pride of the evil ones" (35:12). Elihu can only assure Job that he is wrong to think that God pays no attention to him (vv. 13–14; Job has complained that he does).

36:1–37:24, Elihu IV. The last speech verges on an exalted vision of a world filled with God's glory. But Elihu nearly throws it away by bragging: "Certainly my words are not lies, / faultless knowledge is in your presence" (v. 4).

In vv. 5–25, he amplifies his point made first in chap. 33, that God instructs humans through suffering. "If they are bound in fetters, / trapped in cords of misery, / he is telling them their deed / and their transgressions" (36:8–9). If they pay attention, they will have pleasure (v. 11), and if they do not, "They will cross the channel, / die without knowing" (v. 12; "channel" implies the myth of a river before the place of the dead). Suffering itself is the opportunity to learn: "He rescues the miserable in their misery, / opens their ears in their torment" (v. 15). Job must avoid wickedness and despair (vv. 17, 20) and join in praising God's power and instruction (vv. 22–25).

In the rest of the speech (36:26–37:24), Elihu expands on God's power in nature without abandoning his theme of divine instruction. The wonders of rain (36:27–30) are a means for informing humans about "judgment" (v. 31) and for telling people about "wickedness" (v. 33). A remarkable picture of a storm, complete with sound and light effects (37:2–4), underscores the divine control. Elihu's account demonstrates how important water was in that culture, where rain, frost, snow, clouds, moisture, and storm were central. Both humans and animals depend on it (vv. 7–8), and God controls to his ends not only storms (vv. 9–11), but also events involving dryness, "the things that whirl" (v. 12; e.g., "dust devils, cyclones"). He makes everything "find its goal" (v. 13). Elihu insists that Job is far inferior to this powerful God. Moreover, vv. 14–20 anticipate Yahweh's following speech. Elihu asks questions in some of the same ways as will Yahweh: "Do you know about the cloud-rolls, / the marvels of perfect knowledge, / you whose clothes are hot / when the land lies still from the south wind? / Can you hammer out the clouds with him, / strong as a cast-metal mirror?" (vv. 16–18). In these verses, Elihu points to oppressive qualities of God's control. In the final stanza (vv. 21–24), he emphasizes both positive power ("From the north gold comes forth," v. 22) and negative ("Shaddai—we cannot find him," v. 23). Yet just his righteous power, which "does not oppress" (v. 23), arouses fear: "Therefore men are afraid of him, / he does not see any who are wise of heart" (v. 24). Elihu does not recollect his earlier claim for exalted wisdom.

The effect of Elihu's intervention is an odd one. He proposes a new meaning for human suffering, as a teaching device from God, and he shows a high appreciation for God's natural power for both support of life and its destruction. But he surrounds the nuggets of semiprecious metal with so many clods of ordinary dirt as to weary the miner beyond reason. The style is wordy, convoluted, often hardly intelligible. Translating excellent poetry is hard, but exhilarating; translating Elihu is just hard.

38:1–42:6
Dialogue with Yahweh

Each character has two speeches. Yahweh speaks "from the whirlwind" in 38:2–40:2, and Job responds in 40:4–5. Yahweh resumes at length in 40:6–41:34, and Job answers in 42:1–6. Never has Job been so terse.

38:1–40:2, Yahweh. Yahweh is not terse. Having been silent for so long, it is as if he bursts into speech as the sea bursts out of the womb (38:8). Why he comes from a "whirlwind" (v. 1) is not entirely clear. Storms were portents of divine presence in Israel (e.g., Pss. 18:7–16; 77:17–19), though whirlwinds were not especially prominent in this regard. The whirlwind is devastatingly powerful, and it certainly lends an awesome atmosphere of darkness and noise to accompany God's cosmic outpouring.

Does he refer to Job at all? "Who is this who darkens counsel / with ignorant words?" (v. 2) could as well mean Elihu, whom we might picture scuttling away in terror. God has heard enough questions; he will now

ask them and expect answers (v. 3). The questions are hard, with more than a tinge of sarcasm in them. "Where were you when I laid earth's foundations? / Tell me, if you know so much. / Who set its measurements—surely you know!— / or who stretched the line out on it?" (vv. 4–5). Verses 4–38 pass across the regions of the universe: earth, whose foundations rest on pedestals, the laying of which elicited the song of the morning stars (vv. 4–7); Sea, limited by "bar and doors" and clothed in cloud (vv. 8–11); morning, which shakes the wicked out of "the skirts of earth" (vv. 12–15); the watery Deep (v. 16) and the realm of Death (v. 17); the roads of light and darkness (vv. 19–21); the realms of weather, snow, and hail (vv. 22–23), winds (v. 24), storm (vv. 25–27, with the lovely picture of rain falling in a kind of divine exuberance on uninhabited barren ground); the origins of nature's water (vv. 28–30); the stars and constellations (vv. 31–33); and back to the rainstorm (vv. 34–38, with a side glance at the Egyptian gods Thoth and Sekwi, v. 36). He draws an astounding portrait of a world full of complicated, powerful forces and uses it to ask whether Job can control it. "Have you commanded morning?" (v. 12). "Have you entered Sea's springs?" (v. 16). "Can you raise your voice to the cloud?" (v. 34). Yahweh promised questions, and we have questions. What is the purpose of this series of questions, the answers to which must be, "No, I haven't" or "No, I can't" or "I don't know"?

The same may be said for the rest of the speech (38:39–39:30) about the animals and their qualities: the lioness and her prey (38:39–40); ravens and their food (v. 41); the birth season of rock goats and fallow deer (39:1–4); the freedom of the wild ass (vv. 5–8); the untamable wild ox (vv. 9–12); the ostrich's stupidity and speed (vv. 13–18); the war horse and its courage (vv. 19–25—the only domesticated animal in the group); the hawk and eagle (or vulture; the Hebrew word means both) and their affinity for height (vv. 26–30). Does Job control the animal or give it its quality? "Can you hunt prey for the lioness?" (38:39). "Who sets the wild ass free?" (39:5). "Do you give the horse his strength?" (v. 19). They are again questions the answers to which are "No, I can't" or "No, I don't" or "I don't know."

After asking these questions, Yahweh speaks directly to Job: "Will an accuser of Shaddai yield, / God's arbiter answer it?" (40:2). It is a fascinating echo of Job's agents. He had denied the existence of the "arbiter" in 9:33. By implication, Yahweh wonders whether any of the helpers (the "witness" of 16:19 or the "avenger" of 19:25) can be of assistance to Job with this deity, whose universe has just been described so vividly. Does this mean, as is often said, "What makes you think you have anything to say? Shut up and do as I tell you"? Is it an answer to any of Job's questions? Yahweh makes no reference to suffering or to justice. Is the cosmological outburst simply irrelevant to the book? Are Job's suffering and his questions about it beneath the notice of the God who at least allowed it?

40:3–5, Job. Job seems to feel so, in his noncommittal reply: "Oh, I am small, what could I reply to you? / I put my hand on my mouth. / I spoke once, and I will not answer, / twice, and I will add nothing" (vv. 4–5). Is that "All right, I will shut up," or is it "If you're going to be like that, I have nothing more to say"? The former is acquiescence to being trampled down; the latter is resignation to the inevitable but not acceptance of it, Job the "refusenik." In either case, Yahweh looks and sounds like an overwhelming tyrant. But we cannot be sure of the outcome, as each has one speech yet to give.

40:6–41:34, Yahweh. Yahweh begins the second speech like the first (v. 7), and we think more strongly than ever of the tyrant. He refuses to accept Job's prior response and requires a better one. If Job's answer was acquiescent, Yahweh wants either a more heartfelt agreement or something else. If the answer was refusal, perhaps he wants agreement.

He asks a new question (v. 8), aimed at Job and his questions: "Would you even annul my order, / treat me as guilty so you may be innocent?" To make the issue one of guilt and innocence, of wickedness and morality, a duality whereby, if Job is right, then God is wrong and vice versa, is to "annul my order." "Order" can also be translated "justice," and it has to do with both moral justice and cosmic structure. Yahweh means it in both senses. The world does not spin on the axes of guilt and innocence, and ever since Eliphaz raised the question of justice back in 4:7, the conversation was deflected, at least in Yahweh's judgment, from its proper aim. Suffering is not a sign of guilt, and the dialogue between Job and the friends went off on a wrong tangent.

If Job still thinks guilt and innocence is the issue, Yahweh has some friends he wants to lend him. If God is guilty, then let Job deal with the problems of justice and immorality in the human world (40:9–14). Let him be the king he said he was in chap. 29 and exert his power against the wicked: "Strew about the furies of your anger, / see everyone high, bring them low, / see everyone high, humiliate them, / and trample wicked people where they stand" (vv. 11–12). Once he has won Yahweh's own acclaim for that "victory" ("I will praise you," he says, v. 14), he can go on to Behemoth (vv. 15–24) and Leviathan (41:1–34).

Scholars once interpreted those two astonishing creatures as a hippopotamus and a crocodile, respectively. More recent awareness of various mythological beings in the Bible and the discovery of Leviathan in Canaanite mythology have led scholars to view Behemoth and Leviathan as imaginary monsters, creatures of myth and fantasy. Behemoth belongs to the same act of creation as does the human ("whom I made with you," v. 15), but primal in that creation ("the first

of God's ways," v. 19) and extremely powerful (v. 16). "His bones [are] tubes of bronze, / his limbs like iron rods" (v. 18). He can even withstand the power of the river (vv. 23–24), which may be oceanic water rather than a freshwater river. Yahweh describes him as living where "all the wild animals play" (v. 20), suggesting an aspect of pleasure. Behemoth may be a lovable monster.

Leviathan is emphatically not, for he is beyond any sort of human control (41:1–8). One does not fish for him (41:1–2), make him a pet (v. 5—a ludicrous image: "Can you play with him like a bird, / put him on a leash for your little girls?"), market him (v. 6), hunt him (v. 7). "Put your hand upon him— / think of the fight; don't do it again" (v. 8). He is a frightful monster, frightening even to God (41:9) and the gods (v. 25). The description of him emphasizes his unbreachable armor (vv. 13–17), his fiery breath (vv. 18–21—even his sneeze is a flash), his immovable bulk (vv. 23–24). No weapon is of any use against him (vv. 26–29), and he churns up the surface wherever he goes, whether on land (v. 30) or in the sea (vv. 31–32). No one surpasses him for power or terror. "He looks on everything lofty, / he, king over all proud beasts" (v. 34).

Yahweh does not taunt Job with these animals. He simply describes them in all of their unconquerable might. His invitation to Job to rule presents a progression: first the realm of humans (40:9–14), then the realm of natural power beyond human force (Behemoth, vv. 15–24), and finally the realm of supernatural, mythic power above creation (Leviathan, 41:1–34). The implication is clear: if Job wants to control the deity by the power of his moral innocence, he must contend with forces that, though less than the deity, are more than Job can handle. But Yahweh has already suggested (40:8) that guilt and innocence are not the issue.

42:1–6, Job. Job begins by acknowledging God's overwhelming power: "I know that you can do everything, / no plan is inaccessible to you" (v. 2). Job alludes to omnipotence in the first line, omniscience in the second. Now, thinking about what Yahweh said to him, he quotes 38:2 (inexactly): "'Who is this who obscures counsel ignorantly?' Therefore I told, and didn't understand, / wonders beyond me, and I didn't know" (42:3). It is an odd sentence, in which the first phrase of the second line completes the first phrase of the first, and the second parts of the two lines are parallel. Job admits having spoken beyond his competence. He quotes again, more exactly, from 38:3 and 40:7: "Hear, and I will speak, / I will ask you questions and you instruct me" (42:4). Yes, Job has heard, and he says so in v. 5: "With ears' hearing I hear you, / and now my eye sees you." Some scholars think "hear" ought to be translated in the past tense, and some think it ought to read "I heard of you." Either reading conveys the idea that secondhand knowledge is replaced by firsthand knowledge, the immediate sight of God that Israelite tradition firmly refused (e.g., Exod. 33:20; though there is the counterinstance in Exod. 24:9–11, in which seventy-four people "saw" God and—amazingly—"he did not lay his hand on" them). But "now" does not necessarily stand in contrast with the first line. Both lines claim firsthand knowledge as opposed to the lack of knowledge attested in 42:3. The knowledge has a most surprising result, a "therefore": "Therefore I despise and repent / of dust and ashes" (v. 6). An astounding shift! Job takes a religious action to forswear religion. "Dust and ashes" stands for the ritual surrounding repentance, the machinery and concept of guilt and innocence as the central issue of human life, and Job rejects all of it. Accepting what Yahweh said in 40:8, he takes it a step further. It is another indication that Eliphaz moved the debate off center when he introduced the notion of retribution, categorizing the world by guilt and innocence. Job was so sure of his own moral purity that the slur seemingly cast on it by the friends' retributionism seduced him into seeking a way out. The friends urged him to repent. And so he does, but not as they thought. He repents of repentance.

42:7–17
The Closing Tale

To many readers, the closing tale is an anticlimax. The fireworks are over, the point has been reached, and people are bothered that, after all the talk about rewards and punishments, Job gets back his fortune twice over. We have been led to think that a "Hollywood ending" is sentimental and tacky, but here it is, and we need to examine it.

42:7–9, The Friends. Yahweh comes immediately to the friends with an angry criticism: "You have not spoken truth of me, as has my servant Job" (v. 7). He requires of them a sacrifice, in Job's presence and with Job's intercession (v. 8). On performance of that requirement, everything will be all right. It is interesting that the friends, whose theology is most impeccably Deuteronomic and prophetic, are so thoroughly condemned. That suggests, as other parts of the book do, that Job is not as close to the center of the biblical tradition as is sometimes thought—or at least the text itself, apart from its interpreters, is more radical.

42:10–12, Job's New Wealth. Job is restored to his friends and relatives (v. 11), who reverse the alienation of which he complained in 19:13–19 and succeed in "consoling and comforting" him. The three friends came originally to do that (2:11), and Job complained bitterly in the dialogue that they failed miserably. The consolation and comfort are for "all the evil that Yahweh had brought upon him" (v. 11). The tale assumes, on the one hand, that it *was* evil, not in a moral sense,

but in the sense of something unpleasant to endure, and, on the other hand, that Yahweh did it. Not only did the Prosecutor disappear from the story, but the story seems to have forgotten him entirely. In any case, his action did not preclude the principle that God is in charge. The relatives also give Job rich gifts, "each one *qesitah* and one gold ring." A *qesitah* is a large unit of exchange; Jacob bought land at Shechem for one hundred *qesitahs* (Gen. 33:19). This is not coinage, but probably a weight of precious metal, and, with a gold ring, it adds up to a large sum. Yahweh has "blessed" him more now than before. He acquires twice the number of animals he had before (Job 42:12), but we see no mention of slaves. Does this "blessing" reverse the rejection of the retributive theology in the dialogue with Yahweh? One could argue that, just as Job knew better than to take literally the intercession to restore the friends (v. 9), he knows better than to take the flocks and herds as a sign of his virtue. They are just flocks and herds.

42:13–17, Job's New Family. The fantasy world of the tale is evident here. No new wife is mentioned, and the one we met in chap. 2 was the mother of ten grown children. Suddenly, with no reference to the passage of time, she is the mother of ten more, and in a trice, they are grown. Job's wife deserves better than she receives in this book. Not only does she seem mainly a machine for producing babies, but one of Job's curses on himself turned her in prospect into the slave and sexual toy of other men (31:9–10). All the sharper is the contrast with the daughters, more beautiful than anyone and, unusually, sharing the inherited wealth with their brothers (42:15). They are carefully named: Jemimah, "Dove" (or perhaps an epithet for a Canaanite goddess that might mean "progenitress"); Keziah, "Cassia," used in ancient times for perfume and incense (or perhaps "bow"); and Keren-happuch, "Horn of Antimony," used then as mascara is used now. It is interesting that the text deals so carefully with the daughters, seeming to tell us so much while actually telling us very little. But Job himself remains the focus, a grand old man whose 140 years after the catastrophe are twice the normal life span (Ps. 90:10) and more than Moses' 120 years (Deut. 34:7). "Then Job died, old and sated with days" (42:17).

Any summary of this huge, sprawling, complex book would gravely insult its integrity and its depth. The only thing to do is to read it again.

Bibliography

Dhorme, É. *A Commentary on the Book of Job.* Translated by H. Knight. London: Nelson, 1967.

Glatzer, N. M., ed. *The Dimensions of Job: A Study and Selected Readings.* New York: Schocken, 1969.

Good, E. M. *In Turns of Tempest: A Reading of Job.* Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 1990.

Gordis, R. *The Book of Job: Commentary, New Translation, and Special Studies.* New York: Jewish Theological Seminary of America, 1978.

Habel, N. C. *The Book of Job: A Commentary.* Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1985.

Janzen, J. G. *Job.* Interpretation: A Bible Commentary for Teaching and Preaching. Atlanta, GA: Knox, 1985.

Pope, M. H. *Job: Introduction, Translation, and Notes.* Anchor Bible, 15. 3d ed. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1973.

Terrien, S. L. "The Book of Job: Introduction and Exegesis." *The Interpreter's Bible.* Edited by G. A. Buttrick et al. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1954. Vol. 3, pp. 877–1198.

Psalms

CARROLL STUHLMUELLER

INTRODUCTION

The book of Psalms is an anthology of some one hundred and fifty compositions. The collection consists predominantly of units composed as prayers, songs of praise, and instruction. The individual compositions have come to be called "psalms" because of the name given to the Greek versions of the book, *psalmoi*. Most of the psalms were originally independent pieces, composed for use in various ceremonies and proceedings in Israel's religious life. As part of the book of Psalms, or Psalter, they have been given a new literary context and an identity as Scripture.

The Individual Psalms

All of the psalms have been composed as poetry. They are written in some version of the echoing style of rhythmic interrelated clauses and sentences characteristic of Hebrew poetry. Their lines are replete with metaphors, similes, idiomatic phrases, and specialized vocabulary that reflect the various milieus in which they were composed (→ Poetry).

When their literary form is examined, psalms fall into groups based on similarity of elements, arrangements, and motifs. This similarity seems to represent the generic identity of the groups; each psalm in its individuality is a variation and version of the common features of the genre or type. This implies that a psalm should be studied in terms of both its generic or typical identity and its individual reality. In the following discussion of the major generic groups, certain psalms displaying the characteristics of the genre most closely are cited (→ Biblical Criticism).

Laments (supplications) are prayers for help. There are more of this type in the Psalter than any other. They come in two voices. Most are composed in the first-person singular, the voice of an individual. These typically address God directly and call his name. A petition, a request for divine help, appeals to God's responsiveness. Statements of confidence in God and promises of praise and/or sacrifice are usually included. See Psalms 3 and 13.

Some laments are composed in the first-person plural, the voice of the community, and are largely composed of the same elements found in the first-person singular laments. A distinctive feature is the use of recollections of God's way and work with the worshiping community in the past as the basis for the appeal for help. See Psalms 44 and 74.

In some of the supplications of an individual the declaration of confidence in God is expanded so much that it becomes the primary function of the psalm. The prayer becomes, instead of an insistent cry for help, a song of trust that God will always help. See Psalms 16 and 23.

A few of the psalms are composed as songs of thanksgiving of an individual. These songs are clearly counterparts to the first-person singular laments. They typically refer to a past cry for help and to God's response of hearing and help, summon others to join in praise, offer testimony about the meaning of help received, and present promised praise. See Psalms 30 and 115.

Hymns of praise make up the second significant group of psalms. A large proportion of the hymns are songs composed simply of imperative and declarative sentences, calling the community to praise and giving the contents or reasons for praise. See Psalms 117 and 100. Some hymns contain only the component of praise itself; this is typically the case where the topic of praise is Zion as the city of God (e.g., 46; 48) or the kingship of the Lord (e.g., 93). Most hymns of praise are composed as the voice of the worshiping community, but there are a few in the voice of an individual (e.g., 8; 103).

The third major group is called wisdom psalms, because they are psalmic poems that employ literary devices typical of wisdom literature and are written, like wisdom, to serve the purpose of instruction (→ Wisdom). There is formal variety in the group. Psalm 37 is composed of didactic proverblike sentences. Psalm 1 is an expanded beatitude. Psalm 119 is arranged according to an alphabetic pattern designed to guide learning and display completeness. Techniques and motifs characteristic of wisdom appear in all the other types of psalm; the presence of these motifs is a clue to work of teachers as well as liturgists in the composition of psalms.

The Psalter also contains some songs, speeches, and liturgical pieces that do not fit into the three major groups. For a pilgrimage song, see Psalm 122; an entrance liturgy, 15; a processional, 118; and an enthronement declaration, 110. (For further identifications, see the commentary.)

The classifications of these single psalms refer more to their use, the occasion for which they were composed, than to their literary form. This raises the question of the social context, the setting in Israel's religious life in which the different types were at home. Some general conclusions can be inferred with reasonable confidence, but much remains uncertain. Jerusalem with the Temple on Mount Zion and references to ritual actions figure in many of the psalms. National festivals would have been the occasions when the corporate hymns would have been performed. There were public ceremonies of lamentation in times of danger and disaster. Individuals came to the Temple and to other shrines to present their distress and thanksgiving. The Davidic king played a significant role in the religious life of Israel, and a number of the psalms make sense as texts for ceremonies centered on the king.

All this suggests that many of the psalms were composed and used as individual pieces in the recurring round of Israel's public and private religious life. But that conclusion must be qualified by the pervasive presence of wisdom poems and features in the Psalter. Teachers have been at work revising and expanding the heritage created by singers and prophets and devout worshipers. The collection appears to include, moreover, psalms from the postexilic period (sixth to fourth centuries B.C.). "Early" and "late" psalms are spread around in the book without any chronological order. The book itself is a complex literary product. When one asks the crucial question, "As what shall I read this psalm?" the complex and deep context of the book gives further advice beyond that of the generic classification.

Composition of the Book of Psalms

The complexity of the book of Psalms is a product of the long process of its creation. The book seems to have emerged in stages, beginning with smaller collections, which were then expanded by insertions and additions of other psalms, groups, and collections.

The earliest step in the identification, preservation, and reuse of prayers and hymns was the addition of introductory lines at their beginning. These superscriptions, clearly not part of the psalms themselves, are composed mostly of little-understood notes classifying the unit (psalm, *shiggaion, miktam*), giving instructions about its performance ("with stringed instruments," "for the flutes," "according to the gittith"), and attributing the psalm to persons (David, Asaph, sons of Korah). These notes show that cultic songs and prayers were being reused as part of the repertoire of religious ceremonies and, most important, were being read in connection with the traditions and writings about David. In all, some ninety-seven of the psalms are attributed to David and the Asaphite and Korahite guilds of Temple singers associated with him. The process of claiming psalms for David continued into their translations into Greek and the manuscripts of Psalms found in the library of Qumran. Thirteen superscriptions include a biographical notice associating the psalm with an incident in David's story as told in the books of Samuel.

In most versions of the Bible in English the introductory lines are not numbered (e.g., NRSV, ASV, NASB, KJV). But some versions number verses in the way the Hebrew Bible does and begin with the introductory line; in these versions the numbering of verses will differ by one (e.g., NAB, JPS).

The earliest phase of the book seems to have been a "prayer book of David" apparent in Psalms 3–41. To this was added another David collection (51–72) set within Asaph (50, 73–83) and Korah (42–48, 84–89) collections. Ps. 72:20 notes, "The prayers of David, the son of Jesse, are ended." At this stage Psalms 3–89 would have read like a prayer and hymn book whose themes were David as the chosen servant of the Lord and Zion as the royal city of God and whose purpose was an appeal to God about the loss of both.

The rest of the book appears to have been added in stages. At some point Psalms 1 and 2 were combined to serve as an introduction. Psalm 119, with its theme of the "law" corresponding to that of Psalm 1, could well have been the conclusion of that stage. The book would have had a form that added an emphasis on the law and way of the Lord alongside David and Zion as themes of the whole. Another small block added to the growing Psalter is evident in the collection of songs for pilgrims on the way to Jerusalem/Zion, the "psalms of ascent" in 120–134. A sequence of "Praise the Lord" or "Hallelujah" psalms (146–150) has been set at the conclusion. In theme and interpretation of the purpose of the book, this ending corresponds to the name given the Hebrew Psalter, *tehillim*, "praises."

The five concluding psalms also echo and emphasize the doxologies appearing at the end of Psalms 41; 72; 89; and 106 and complete a creation of a Psalter with five parts. At the end of its formation the book is shaped as a Scripture of praise, probably corresponding to the five books of the law at the beginning of the OT. The whole process of the formation of the Psalter can be understood as a claiming and organizing of material coherent with its several purposes into a book of Scripture. It is one case of the enscripturation of Israel's religion.

The Form of the Book

The form or arrangement of the book as it now stands is the outcome of the long and complex history of its growth. The form has incorporated into its pattern the kinds of psalms that were preserved and the various purposes and commitments that motivated their collection.

The feature that provides the theme for the whole and gives some integration to the variety included in it is its focus on David. Most of the psalms are attributed to David and the singers associated with him. Twice the voice of Solomon, David's son and successor, is heard (Pss. 72; 127). The only other voice heard is that of Moses (Ps. 90) in a response to the great lament over the tribulation of the messianic king (89). The predominance of David psalms invites readers to take the psalms that lack an attribution also as the voice of David.

The presentation of David in the Psalter is two-dimensional. He is the David of the prayers, a human in need, weak and afflicted. He is also the David of the psalms that speak of the anointed, the servant-king who is the representative of God and God's claim on the nations (e.g., Pss. 18; 89; 110). He is very much like his fellow Israelites, and he is yet unique in his role in the purposes of the Lord. The first makes it possible for all Israelites, individually and corporately, to read the prayers as their prayers. The second encourages Israel to wait in hope for the fulfillment of God's purpose in David. The Psalter can be, and has been, used under the rubrics of prayer book and prophecy.

Psalms 1 and 2 compose a double introduction to the book. Psalm 2 opens the theme of the Davidic king as the anointed with a unique relation to the Lord. In Psalm 1 David speaks as advocate and teacher of *torah* (Heb.), the "instruction/law" of the Lord. This anticipates the division of the Psalter into its five books that can be read as *torah* alongside Genesis–Deuteronomy.

At the conclusion of the book David promises "My mouth will speak the praise of the LORD" and calls on all to "bless his holy name for ever and ever" (145:21). The following Hallelujah psalms (146–150) fulfill his promise and conclude with another universal call to praise (150:6). The conclusion views the whole book as David's *torah*, his instruction in praise.

James L. Mays

COMMENTARY

Psalms 1–41

Book One

The first two psalms are united by the exclamation "How happy" (Heb. *'ashre;* 1:1; 2:12). In fact, the same phrase bonds together the first book of psalms (1:1; 41:1), forms a link with the second and third books (89:15; 106:3), and is a frequent refrain in the fifth book (112:1; 119:1–2; 128:1; 137:9; 146:5). This word, more secular than *baruk* (Heb., "Blessed"), reaches out into daily life. The psalms were intended as everyone's book, even though in the postexilic age the collection became more formally liturgical. Psalm 2 was originally composed for the coronation of a Davidic king and keeps alive the memory of David and his dynasty.

Psalm 1. The opening psalm manifests its close contacts with the wisdom tradition (→ Wisdom). The opening phrase, "Happy the one," occurs frequently in Proverbs within the context of reward and punishment (e.g., Prov. 28:14); other statements about meditating upon the law day and night are found in Josh. 1:8; and the sequence of "walk, stand and sit [or abide]" in v. 1 recalls the exhortation in Deut. 6:4–9. A comparison may be made with Jer. 17:5–8, which similarly uses the motif of the tree planted by waters to describe the one who trusts in God. Yet Psalm 1 is less tragic in tone than Jeremiah, less legal and ritual than Deuteronomy, and closest of all to wisdom literature. Psalm 1 presumes a body of instruction upon which to meditate. It reflects a person of experience, totally dedicated to the traditions of Israel. The psalm can be divided into vv. 1–3, the way of the righteous; vv. 4–5, the way of the rebellious; and v. 6, conclusion.

Verses 1–3 move from the past tense, where one has taken a clear position with Yahweh (v. 1), to a present tense of satisfaction (v. 2), to a hope for a happy future (v. 3). The Hebrew term *derek,* "way," indicates the conduct of individuals (37:5–7) or of all Israel (Isa. 40:3), a way mysteriously directed by God, yet clear in its moral expectations.

Verse 5 is probably not to be interpreted as a statement about the punishment of the wicked (so NJPS), but as a claim that they will not be included among those who gather to sit in judgment, that is, "the assembly of the righteous" (NRSV, NIV).

Psalm 2. Composed very probably for a royal coronation at Jerusalem, Psalm 2 moves with skillful balance: vv. 1–3, earthly kings, who speak in their own voice, in revolt (v. 3); vv. 4–6, a heavenly setting of peace for ratifying the choice of a new Davidic king, concluding with an oracle from Yahweh; vv. 7–9, the words of consecration (2 Sam. 7:14; Isa. 9:6–7; Pss. 89:26–27; 110:3) and other ritual actions; and vv. 10–12, advice to princes and, indirectly, to the new king.

In v. 2, the term "anointed" indicated a special relationship with Yahweh, as it does elsewhere for altars (Exod. 29:36), priests (Exod. 28:41), prophets (1 Kings 19:16; Isa. 61:1), and especially kings (1 Sam. 10:1; 16:3). In v. 4, "The LORD laughs" denotes his supreme control (37:13), not necessarily a laugh of ridicule or disdain (59:8). God paralyzes the efforts of all opponents (v. 5)

and with a decree fixes the limits of chaos (v. 7). Beginning with v. 9, the text is disturbed, or "corrupt." "Shatter the clay vessels," like the symbolic actions of the prophets (Jer. 19:10–11; 28:10), announced the end of all opposition. Despite a tone of fierceness within the psalm and its exclusive concern for the king, Psalm 2 modulates into a statement of calm protection for all who take refuge in the Lord.

Through this psalm, especially v. 7, the early church proclaimed its faith in Jesus' messiahship and divine enthronement at his resurrection from the dead (Acts 4:25–26; 13:33; Heb. 1:5; 5:5).

Psalm 3. The first major collection of psalms, which the titles associate with David, begins with Psalm 3 and extends to the end of Book One. Psalms 3–4 have traditionally been considered prayers for morning (4:4, 8) and evening (3:5). A sequence of words identical in the Hebrew further bonds these psalms together: "foes" or "distress" (3:1; 4:1); "many say" (3:2; 4:6); "my glory" or "honor" (3:3; 4:2); "I call" and the "LORD hears" (3:4; 4:1, 3); and "I lie down and sleep" (3:5; 4:8).

Although the title refers to David's flight from his son Absalom (2 Sam. 15–18), the reference to "my holy mountain" (3:4) presumes a date after Solomon had constructed the Temple (2:6). The titles are the work of postexilic editors and should not be taken as indications that David composed them. They do, however, presume readers who would be familiar with the story of David as it was told in the books of Samuel and thus understand the appropriateness of the psalm to the narrative occasion.

This individual lament begins with a cry for help to Yahweh (3:1–3), continues with a meditation about Yahweh, one's true confidence (vv. 4–6), and concludes with a stirring supplication for help (v. 7) and a final ritual blessing (v. 8). Two key words set up a strong tension between the foes who are many (vv. 1 [twice], 2, 6) and Yahweh, the source of salvation (vv. 2, 7, 8). Many of the lines begin dramatically: "Yahweh, how many!" (v. 1); "Many say" (v. 2); "But you, Yahweh" (v. 3); "My cry to Yahweh" (v. 4); "I" (v. 5); "Rise, Yahweh" (v. 7); and "With Yahweh is salvation" (v. 8). Verse 7 resonates with the traditional summons to God (Num. 10:35; Pss. 7:6; 44:26; 68:1) and links the rise of a new day to Israel's march into the mystery of its divinely directed future.

Psalm 4. More serene than Psalm 3, but with a more disturbed text, the prayer of supplication in Psalm 4 sustains confidence within a setting, or at least a remembrance, of Temple sacrifice (v. 5). The psalmist, falsely accused, may have been cleared in a ritual judgment at the Temple (v. 3). The psalm concludes with renewed assurances for the person faithful to Yahweh (Lev. 26:3–8).

An opening cry for help (v. 1) is followed by reflections addressed either to persecutors or fellow worshipers (vv. 2–5); the psalm then modulates from ridicule to gratitude (vv. 6–8).

Verse 1 appeals to a just God fulfilling covenant promises to Israel and asks that "in distress you open wide" horizons and remove oppressive borders. The same Hebrew word, here translated "open wide," occurs in Gen. 26:22 for the name of a well within a spacious area for living. Verses 2–5 blend the thinking of wisdom literature (the good are blessed, the evil punished, Ps. 1) with references to the covenant and Temple ritual. The difficult v. 4 is translated in the Septuagint (LXX), "Be angry and sin not," which is quoted in Eph. 4:26. The Hebrew may be more appropriately translated as "tremble" (NJPS) and the verse as a whole read as advice to the psalmist's foes to reflect on God's judgment in favor of the psalmist.

Verse 6b, spoken by the "many" in Psalms 3–4, declares sarcastically that the light of Yahweh's face has vanished. Verse 7 announces that a person receives greater joy from one's interior peace than from abundant material resources (17:15; 84:10).

Psalm 5. A morning prayer for accompanying Temple sacrifice (Pss. 3; 4) or possibly a ritual at the Temple gate (Pss. 15; 24), Psalm 5, a supplication, repeats in its second half the sequence in the first. The introduction (vv. 1–3), like the entire psalm, is addressed to Yahweh, worshiped as holy (vv. 4–6) and good (vv. 7–8); the wicked fall (vv. 4–6, 9–10), but the upright are joyful (vv. 7–8, 11–12).

Verses 1–3 begin as though God, alive within the Temple, may be deaf and silent (22:1–2). Salvation is given to the righteous, who in faith wait upon the Lord (Isa. 7:4; 30:15–18) and follow the way of the Lord (Ps. 5:7). Verse 2, "my King and my God," recalls Isaiah's vision in the Temple (Isa. 6). Dawn was the time of sacrifice (2 Kings 3:20; Amos 4:4) and salvation (Ps. 46:5; Isa. 33:2; 37:36).

Verse 4 can be translated: "A no-god takes pleasure in evil; but you, no evil one is ever your guest." This verse introduces an entrance liturgy, proclaiming the purity of the true worshiper (Pss. 15; 24). The psalmist in entering the Temple asks to be led in God's ways (v. 7; Ps. 1; Isa. 40:3–5; 43:16–20).

Verses 9–10 point to deceit as the most serious sin, for it reaches deeply into communication between friends (12:2–4). "All who take refuge in you" repeats the antiphonal response in Psalm 2.

Psalm 6. The first of the seven psalms designated in Christian tradition as penitential psalms (see also Pss. 32; 38; 51; 102; 130; 143), Psalm 6 is a filigree of stereotypic phrases found throughout psalms of supplication ("hear" and "shamed," twice; "terrified," three times; "Yahweh," seven times). Yet it remains a poem with high emotional intensity established by the I-Thou relation, the life-death polarity, and the effective use of questions and commands.

Verses 1–3 involve supplication and petition, beginning with imperatives and ending with a question; vv. 4–5, emotional fear of death, again with imperative and question; vv. 6–7, acute physical suffering; and vv. 8–9, confidence, beginning with imperative and concluding with a clear statement.

The psalm struggles with the relation of suffering and sin, whether this be the sin of an individual or of the group. God as healer never addresses simply physical or emotional ailments, but the whole person as bonded within Israel. Healing includes conversion. This psalm became very popular within Israel, at first as morning prayer, except on Sabbaths and festivals. Because of the reference to "the eighth" *(Sheminith)* in the title, it was sung at circumcisions, which occur on the eighth day after birth; for Christians, it announced the resurrection on the day after the Sabbath.

"How long?" (v. 3) occurs approximately thirty times in the Hebrew Scriptures. The question is always left unanswered.

"In Sheol, who offers you praise?" (v. 5). Sheol is the grave, a place of murky silence and of no return, with little or no contact with Yahweh (88:3–7; 94:17; 143:3; Job 7:9). Only very late in the postexilic age was the notion of God's presence with the dead in Sheol accepted (Ps. 139:8). Belief in life after death is found earlier only within popular religious beliefs (1 Sam. 28:8–25; 2 Kings 2:11; → Hades; Sheol).

Psalm 7. The title is not clear, since no story concerning a Benjaminite named Cush is preserved in 1–2 Samuel. A person betrayed and persecuted seldom follows clean lines of response and closure but reacts with melancholic, abrupt transitions, with anger and imperfect grammar. Such is the case in Psalm 7. The editor, however, has imposed a reasonable development: vv. 1–2, summary introduction; vv. 3–5, confession of innocence; vv. 6–8a, trial beginning; vv. 8b–9, prosecution of the wicked; vv. 10–11, hymnic interlude; vv. 12–16, verdict and punishment; and v. 17, thanksgiving. This lament wrestles with the biblical problem of reward and punishment, particularly when the question touches personal relationships. God is present as one seeks to sort out the parts from a web of emotions and confusion.

The introduction is relatively calm, repeating the stereotypic phrase "I take refuge in you, Yahweh, my God" (Pss. 11; 16; 31). In view of v. 7, the reference may be to Yahweh's presence in the sanctuary where disputes were sometimes settled (Exod. 22:6–8; Num. 5:6–10). Lions (v. 2) were to be found in Israel up to the time of the Crusaders. In pleading innocence and taking no initiative to punish evildoers, the psalmist will risk death if there is any dishonesty (vv. 3–5). "Guilt on my hands" refers to a deliberate breach of personal trust.

In asking for God's judgment in his own case, the psalmist uses imagery of God's cosmic judgment of nations and peoples (vv. 6–8; cf. 96:10–13; 98:9). Verses 8b–9 modulate into a calmer, legal action of indicting the wicked party. Verse 9b reads literally, "Searcher of heart and kidneys," a reference to the seat of reason and emotions.

Verses 12–16 appear excessively stark in their realism. Yet not even God can forgive, much less reward the unrepentant sinner. Such people do not need divine punishment, for they destroy themselves (Prov. 26:27). Verse 17, a liturgical conclusion, suggests that the demise of the wicked is an expression of God's righteousness.

Psalm 8. Psalm 8, a hymn of praise, resolves into peaceful joy the somber and at times agonizing outcries of Psalms 3–7, yet in v. 3 it is linked with them as a prayer at night. Verses 1 and 9, calling for praise of Yahweh, form an envelope, technically an inclusio, around the body of the psalm that provides the motive for singing to the Lord's name. The language reaches high poetical flights, yet the thought is simple enough: humanity, which feels overwhelmed by the universe, if redeemed by the Lord, has this world at its feet.

Like Genesis 1–3, Psalm 8 delicately blends human excellence and human lowliness. In the postexilic age the psalm became a popular night prayer and still later was sung in the New Year's festival celebrating creation. Job 7:17–21 reversed the sense of v. 4, while the LXX made "the son of man for a little while less than the angels" refer to the small stretch of time till the Messiah comes. The NT calls upon the psalm to announce the messianic presence in Jesus (Heb. 2:6–10; 1 Cor. 15:20–28). Matt. 21:15–16 recalls the link with the Davidic dynasty. Not surprisingly, Christian liturgies reserve the psalm for Sundays and major Christological feasts.

The motivation for praise is sung by special choirs, narrating, questioning, and answering (vv. 2–8). Verse 2 announces definitive victory with only a hint of the violent struggle over chaos in creating the good order of the universe (Pss. 29; 89:5–12; Isa. 51:9–10). New creation delights in the sound of new life in "babes and sucklings." Verse 5, "little less than gods," like 1 Kings 22:19; Job 1:6; and Isa. 6:1–7, refers to the divine assembly; later these figures are renamed angels. Humankind, redeemed and lifted up from its lowly state by the Lord, shares in the divine governance of the world. The harmony of nature depends upon the harmony of men and women among themselves and with their God. Ecology belongs to the theology of redemption.

Psalms 9–10. Although the question is not completely settled, many solid reasons support the unity of Psalms 9–10. First, ancient manuscripts, especially the LXX and the Vulgate (Vg.), unite them. For this reason, after Psalms 9–10, the liturgical tradition of the Greek and Latin churches generally numbers its psalms one

behind the Hebrew. Second, very unusual for psalms in the first book, Psalm 10 has no title.

Although the literary form varies between hymn, supplication, reflection, thanksgiving, and confidence, the atmosphere is generally somber, at times anguishing, and therefore one understands Psalms 9–10 best as a lament from the individual. The clue to the form of Psalms 9–10 is to be sought in liturgical ceremony at the Jerusalem Temple where the Lord is enthroned (9:4, 7, 11; 47:5). Part One of the service includes 9:1–12, praise and thanksgiving, with an introduction (vv. 1–2), motivation for praise in God's protection of the individual and the nation (vv. 3–10), and a hymnic interlude (vv. 11–12). Part Two includes 9:13–20, an appeal for justice, with prayer (vv. 13–14, 19–20) and reflection (vv. 15–18). Part Three includes 10:1–18, a cry of distress over the prosperity of the wicked (vv. 1–11), followed by prayer (vv. 12–15). Part Four includes 10:16–18, hymnic conclusion of confidence.

The opening hymn (9:1–12) begins with "I praise the LORD with all my heart; I announce all your wonders!" (For translating the first word as "praise" instead of "thanksgiving," see Gen. 29:35; 49:8.) The word "wonders" occurs forty-five times in the OT, twenty-seven in the Psalms, and refers to the Lord's great acts of creation and redemption as they reach the ordinary Israelite (71:17) and all the nation (75:1), both in Israel's history (44:1) and in cosmic creation (136:4). Problems arise later in Psalms 9–10 from this broad perspective concerning earth and history. Praise involves faith in the Lord's justice (9:4) to fulfill every promise and hope of the righteous person (Exod. 34:6–7). The psalmist does not flinch from stating clearly at the outset that the Lord is always dependable and just (Ps. 44). Beneath 9:10 lies the rich theology of knowing or cherishing the name of the Lord and all that the Lord personally stands for in relation to Israel. "Those seeking you" is another phrase so frequent (about 165 times in the OT) that one cannot adequately unpack its richness. Verses 11–12 depict God in terms of the "avenger of blood," referring to the obligations of a kinsperson to "seek" the integrity of the family by executing anyone who murders a family member (Lev. 25:23–55; Num. 35:16–29).

Ps. 9:13–20 comprises an appeal for and reflection on justice. The gates of death are contrasted with the gates of daughter Zion in vv. 13–14, so that justice is the door to life, injustice to death. Because the gates of death were firmly closed forever, does the psalmist also imply eternity for life with God? Not clearly, but these intuitions prepare for such a theological development. The end of v. 16 includes two Hebrew words difficult to translate, *higgayon selah.* The first implies meditation (1:2), the accompanying sound of the harp (92:3), and the movement of the heart (19:14). The second word probably indicates a pause. The liturgy calls for silent reflection, to be terminated abruptly: "Rise, LORD!" (9:19).

In 10:1–15 what was perhaps an original acrostic (i.e., alphabetic) arrangement is no longer clearly visible; the tone is somber, even desperate. The psalmist confronts the just Lord with the proud and prosperous wicked: "Why, LORD?" in startling contrast to the confident "Rise, LORD" (9:19). A personal bonding in faith enables the psalmist to be this forceful without being arrogant or skeptical. The statement about the Lord's forgetfulness surges with agony (v. 11; 13:1; 44:24; 77:9). Here the conclusion is carefully arrived at "in the heart," or seat of reason. It will be repeated more vigorously in the final appeal.

Even though the external situation has not improved in 10:16–18, the faith of the psalmist has been strengthened by describing it as it is; and the conviction emerges that "you hear, LORD," a phrase that is the turning point. The final Hebrew words are somewhat uncertain, yet even so they reflect the simplest and deepest human desire for peace and shelter.

Psalm 11. A psalm of confidence, Psalm 11 witnesses to the faith of a devout Israelite, weathering the collapse of the nation's leaders and the betrayal of personal friends. The psalm begins and ends with strong trust in the Lord (vv. 1a, 7); in between we encounter the advice of false friends (vv. 1b–3) and the motivation for loyal confidence in the Lord (vv. 4–6).

In v. 1a, rather than "flee like a bird to your mountain" (Gen. 19:17; Judg. 6:2), the psalmist declares, "I take refuge in the LORD" (2:11; 7:1; 16:1). Some understand this to be a statement about the right of asylum in the Jerusalem Temple (Exod. 21:12–14; 1 Kings 1:50–53). Yet in vv. 1b–3, all the underpinnings of life are obliterated, be they laws or leadership or buildings.

Nothing but Yahweh is left for one's confidence. Verse 4 follows the tradition that the Lord's normal throne is above the heavens (18:6; 20:6; 29:10; 1 Kings 8:27); the Jerusalem Temple is an earthly mirror of the heavenly house of the Lord, yet only on condition that Israel remains faithful (Ezek. 10). Verse 4b denotes a God who sees hidden reality and explores unknown places. Verse 6 bursts with the Lord's fierce anger against the wicked, recalling the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah (Gen. 19:23–24).

Psalm 12. A communal lament, Psalm 12 involves people suffering from deceit, particularly at the hands of their own religious leadership. In fact, the key words all center around speaking. The structure follows a chiastic arrangement (an *A B C B′ A′*). After the call for help (v. 1a), we find *(A)* lament, vv. 1a–2; *(B)* prayer, v. 3; *(C)* words of the wicked, v. 4; *(D)* Yahweh's own words, v. 5; *(C′)* choral response of the devout, v. 6; *(B′)* prayer, v. 7; *(A′)* lament, v. 8.

As the psalm advances to its center moment in v. 5, symbols and other people drop away and God speaks directly in an oracle of salvation. God saves, but not by changing the general human situation, for in the final

verse nothing changes. That verse even repeats a phrase from v. 1, "sons of men" or "humankind." Yet if people "wait upon me," as the Lord here advises, salvation has already begun.

Psalm 13. A personal lament, Psalm 13 describes a desperately sick person (v. 2), abandoned by friends who gloat over this miserable end of virtuous living. The psalm consists of lament (vv. 1–2), petition (vv. 3–4), and statement of confidence (v. 5).

"How long?" (vv. 1–2), a biblical formula for fright and exasperation, demands an explanation from the provident God who has let things get completely out of control. God even "forgets" (9:18; 10:12; 42:9). Verse 2a can be translated, "How long do I lay up counsel in my heart," as though to say, "Must I keep on learning forever from my pain?"

"Look! Answer me!" These strong words (vv. 3–4) challenge God to scrutinize the psalmist through and through. The phrase ends with the affectionate, "My God! Illumine [or open] my eyes," which long for life and not death, for God and not oblivion.

Psalm 14. Psalm 14 is textually damaged (yet repeated again in Ps. 53 in much better condition) and mixes features of prophetic diatribes against evil (cf. Jer. 5) with a discussion of foolishness that recalls wisdom literature. The overall attitude seems to reflect a personal lament. After the introduction (v. 1), the universal collapse of morals is described (vv. 2–3), a verdict against the wicked awaits fulfillment (vv. 4–6), and a prayer begs for the Lord's return to Jerusalem (v. 7).

"There is no God" displays a practical atheism (v. 1). God is useless and ineffective, so why bother? Verse 3 is quoted in Rom. 3:10–18 along with six other OT passages, all of which found their way into some Greek manuscripts of Psalm 14 and even into a Hebrew manuscript.

Psalm 15. Composed for a service at one of the Temple gates (118:19), Psalm 15 along with Psalm 24 enabled a person to be declared worthy of entering into a sanctuary.

The psalm combines the question-answer method and the concern for morality as in prophecy (Isa. 33:14–16) or in wisdom literature (Prov. 30:4). After the initial question, probably spoken by a representative of the congregation (v. 1), the officiating priest or Levite responds (vv. 2–5a) and officially welcomes the party (v. 5b).

In v. 1 the words for "sojourn," "dwell," and "tent" evoke nomadic days and the movable tabernacle that preceded the Jerusalem Temple (see 2 Sam. 7:1–13).

In vv. 2–5a the list does not include ritual requirements (Lev. 15) or serious sins like apostasy, but those faults that disrupt family and neighborhood. The prohibition of lending at interest reflects the ancient practice of the extended family and its obligations to help. Currency did not yet exist and precious items were given as pledge. In the ancient Near East, interest rates were exorbitantly high (e.g., 33 1/3 percent in Babylon; 50 percent at Nuzi).

Psalm 16. A prayer of confidence, Psalm 16 employs cultic imagery (drink offering, cup, etc.) and other terminology that might suggest the author was a priest or Levite. The parallels with Isa. 56:9–57:13 suggest that the psalm might have been composed in the early postexilic age around 500 B.C. After a call for help (v. 1a), the confusing religious scene is put before us (vv. 1b–4), followed by an expression of confidence (vv. 5–8) and rewards (vv. 9–11).

Significantly, the psalmist does not take refuge in anything sacred, not even in the sacred word, but states that his good comes only "in you, LORD."

"The LORD, my portion and cup" (v. 5) is imagery that might suggest Levites who, though they possessed no property (Josh. 13:14; Deut. 10:9), were a symbol of an attitude proper for all Israel (Pss. 73:26; 142:5). Verse 7 refers to prayer at night (4:8; 91:5–6; 119:62).

The rewards of confidence included a return to health (vv. 9–11). Yahweh will not allow this devout worshiper to be consigned to the grave. Verse 11 repeats six key words or ideas from the psalm and is clearly the finale.

Psalm 17. Word parallels and the act of praying at night (vv. 3, 15) connect Psalms 16 and 17. Sorrow and outrage, which Psalm 16 pushes to the background, Psalm 17 brings forward prominently. Psalm 17 may also expand upon the conditions, listed in Psalm 15, for entering the sanctuary. Although the Hebrew text is seriously damaged, the sense and structure seem clear: first, an appeal to Yahweh (v. 1) with a protest of innocence (vv. 2–5); second, a request for an oracle (v. 6) with prayer (vv. 7–9b) and lament (vv. 9c–12); third, an appeal to Yahweh (vv. 13–14a) with lament (v. 14bc); and fourth, the conclusion (v. 15).

The opening appeal may be translated either "Hear, just LORD" or, with justifiable emendation, "Hear, LORD, my plea for justice." Verses 1 and 15 reason from the psalmist's righteousness, not God's. Again one encounters deceit among religious people (Ps. 12).

In vv. 2–5 the psalmist protests his innocence, derived from the pure light of the Lord's presence (v. 2), which searches the mysterious darkness of each person's heart (Jer. 12:3) during prayer at night (v. 3). The image extends from heart (reasoning) to mouth (speaking) to feet (acting).

After the initial request for an oracle from the Lord (v. 6), lovely images of divine care are introduced: "at your right hand" (16:8); "apple of your eye," literally, "the little image in the pupil of your eye" (Deut. 32:10; Prov. 7:2); "shadow of your wings" (Deut. 32:11; Isa.

51:16; Lam. 4:20), possibly an allusion to residing in the shadow of the wings of the cherubim, which were located on either side of the Ark (Exod. 25:20; Isa. 6:1–2; Ps. 36:7). In 17:9c–12 the psalmist speaks with the agonizing accents of suffering and betrayal (Jer. 12:3).

Verses 13–14 are textually damaged. The message seems to be all earthly gifts are from God, but only for the righteous do these gifts lead to peace. The difference comes from bonding with the Lord.

Liturgy seems to reach beyond orthodox limits (v. 15). "I will see the vision of your face," yet no one can see God and live (Exod. 33:20; Isa. 6:5). "Upon awakening I rejoice before your presence" (Num. 12:8). The text refers simply to awakening after a night vigil in the sanctuary.

Psalm 18. A biblical masterpiece and a majestic ode of thanksgiving, Psalm 18 summons a universe of cosmic images to announce Yahweh's giant steps through the life of faithful Israelites. Rather than be terrified at the roaring darkness and the grinding of people into dust, one is instead caught up in ecstatic wonder at Yahweh's immediate presence in Israel's history and in the marvelous protection of the chosen people. Thanksgiving, however, centers less in Yahweh than in the work that Yahweh is accomplishing among the Israelites. Images describing manifestations of God, exalted vocabulary, and stately Temple ceremonies enable one to envision the awesome world where each person battles for deliverance.

Although this psalm seems to be repeated in 2 Samuel 22, only vv. 9, 10, 17, 22 are identical. Stylistically, Psalm 18 reflects many features of Israel's earliest poetry (Deut. 32–33; Exod. 15; Hab. 3). Rather than an eschatological poem dealing with the final age of complete divine renewal, Psalm 18 reflects Canaanite literature about the yearly struggle of the gods' creating the world anew in harmony and fertility (Pss. 29; 89:9–13; 93). The psalm was composed in an early age, though some would date it to the postexilic period.

The psalm proceeds: introduction (vv. 1–6); theophanic presentation, with Yahweh's departure from heaven (vv. 7–12), upheavals on earth (vv. 13–15), and deliverance (vv. 16–19); historical presentation, with the righteous rewarded (vv. 20–30) and military victory (vv. 31–45); and epilogue, with thanksgiving (vv. 46–49) for the Davidic royalty (v. 50).

The opening line of the psalm is problematic. It is missing in 2 Samuel 22; the verb "pity," sometimes translated "love," never has God as its object. The text should probably be emended slightly to read, "I exalt you."

Verses 4–5 voice a litany of death! "Breakers of death" refers to the angry sea, which swallowed its victims, never to release them. Israelites were not seafarers and dreaded the open waters. God answers "from his [heavenly] temple" (11:4). In vv. 6–7 the clash of symbols is typical of Semitic poetry: raging waters, smoke from Yahweh's nostrils, and fire from the Lord's mouth. Symbols such as these communicated a mysterious divine presence that could not be rationalized as in the stately symbolic world of Greece and Rome. The psalmist is delivered against all odds, "because the LORD delights in me" (v. 19b).

The psalm leaves aside theophanic symbolism and enters the world of conscience (vv. 20–30). Verses 20–24 recall the entrance liturgies of Psalms 15 and 24. This fact raises the question whether or not the preceding verses were also part of Temple ritual, inaugurating a solemn service. Verses 25–26 stun readers with their lapidary style after the extravaganza of the preceding section. At times, one needs the sober truth. God does not tolerate being mocked or the covenant being ridiculed. The measure for divine righteousness is gauged from caring for the lowly. In vv. 31–45, the language reflects "holy war," a phrase found in Mic. 3:5 and Joel 3:9. It refers to warfare in the book of Joshua as well as in the very late apocalyptic literature (Zech. 14; Dan. 7–12). As Israelites kept the ancient law (Josh. 1; Dan. 1), the mighty power of Yahweh was on their side to fight their battles. "Holy wars" seemed to be more religious instruction and Temple liturgy than actual military venture. Yet if conflict occurred, Israel would be mightily empowered. Vengeance must be left to Yahweh, who sets the record straight (v. 47).

Psalm 19. Resting between the royal Davidic Psalms 18 and 20, Psalm 19 may have found its place in the Psalter because of the relation of vv. 4b–6 to Isa. 41:1–5, which refers to royalty. Verses 4b–6, which acclaim the resplendent way of the sun, act as a bridge from the first part, praising the glorious creator in vv. 1–4a, to the praise of Israel's glorious law in vv. 7–10. According to Babylonian mythology, as exemplified in the prologue to Hammurabi's law code, the sun god Shamash grants the code of laws to the king. Verse 11, in turn, provides a transition from the glory of the law in vv. 7–10 to the darkness of disobedience in vv. 12–13. The psalm concludes with v. 14.

The entire psalm holds together primarily through the image of splendid light across the universe and within the law, which in turn casts its shadow should there be any opposing disobedience, and secondarily through the rubric of God's mysterious word, manifest through the good order of the universe (vv. 1–4a) and in Israel's law (vv. 7–14). Each section expresses the sense of mystery, the first concerning all the world by using the common name for God (Heb. *'el*), the second specifically for Israel by using the proper name Yahweh.

The luminous yet mysterious wonder of the world proclaims not only God's glorious presence (vv. 1–4a), but its orderliness and balance set the stage for appreciating the law in vv. 7–10. The structure of v. 1 is chias-

tic: *A B C C′ B′ A′*: "The heavens proclaim the glory of God; the work of God's hands is revealed in the heavenly vault." The imagery in v. 2 is exquisite: water gurgling from rocks in the daytime, wind breathing through the space of the night. Verse 1 can be compared to the sacred place, v. 2 to the liturgical action within it. Though v. 3 denies that any voice is heard, v. 4 announces its message throughout the universe (quoted by Paul in Rom. 10:18).

Verses 4b–6 unabashedly incorporate the mythology of Babylon and Egypt about the sun god, so that the sense of mystery is not lost. The natural law of the universe that lies behind the laws and traditions of Israel reaches beyond rational understanding.

Law in vv. 7–10 embodies early clan traditions, enactments in the Torah, and later practices—all that governs the good order of Israel. Most of all, law expresses the qualities of Yahweh—perfect, loyal, luminous, pure, sweet, and just. So described, law almost becomes the immediate presence of Yahweh with Israel.

The transitional v. 11 speaks of "your servant" (so v. 13) and of law's abundant reward (so vv. 7–9). In vv. 12–13, sins of inadvertence or ignorance are mentioned first, the stage after willful sins have been confessed and restitution made (Num. 5:5–10) and before the ceremony at the Temple gate (Ps. 15). Then more serious, presumptuous transgressions are cited (Gen. 20:6; Exod. 32:21, 30–31).

Verse 14 concludes: "How pleasant is God's word and the rhythm of one's heart in meditation before you, Yahweh, my rock, my redeemer." "Redeemer" carries the early meaning of the Hebrew word *go'el*, one's kinsperson with the obligations of blood relationship (Lev. 25:23–55).

Psalm 20. The sequence of verses in Psalm 20 follows that of a service before battle: v. 1, introduction as the king arrives at the Jerusalem Temple; vv. 2–5, ritual sacrifices and intercessory prayer; vv. 6–8, priestly assurance of victory; and v. 9, concluding prayer (1 Sam. 7:9; 13:9–12; 2 Chron. 20:1–19). Because the Ark is not said to be carried into battle (1 Sam. 4:1–11; Ps. 68), one may presume a date of composition in the late pre-exilic period.

"A time of crisis" (v. 1) grips the nation (Gen. 35:3; Ps. 50:15). "The name of the God of Jacob" extends God's pledge of fidelity and compassion (Exod. 34:6–7) to "Jacob," possibly all Israel (Isa. 2:5–6) or else to the southern tribe of Judah (Jer. 5:20), God's chosen people (Exod. 19:3; Isa. 41:17).

Verses 2–5 summarize Temple services. "Offerings" of grain or animals were partially burned on the altar with the rest used for sacred meals (Lev. 2–3); "holocausts" or "burnt sacrifices" were completely consumed on the altar in total adoration of the God of life (Lev. 1). The practice of raising banners has biblical precedent (Num. 10:13–28). "Victory" is the same Hebrew word generally translated "salvation," one instance among many of deriving sacred vocabulary from nonreligious words.

An oracle may have been given by the priests (Ps. 12:5) before the response in vv. 6–8. The phrase "holy heavens" shows that the earthly tabernacle was a symbolic replica of God's dwelling in the heavens (11:4). While Israel prepares for war, the people confess that victory does not result from instruments of war (Isa. 30:15–17). "LORD, grant victory to the king" or "Save the king" in v. 9 inspired the joyful shout honoring royalty in England.

Psalm 21. The royal Psalm 21 has a less defined setting within the Temple ritual than does Psalm 20. After the introduction in v. 1, Yahweh is addressed in the name of the king (vv. 2–6); the transitional v. 7 leads to an address to the king in the name of Yahweh (vv. 8–12). Verse 13 functions as a conclusion to the ceremony and repeats a key phrase of v. 1, "in your strength."

"Victory" (v. 1) is understood according to its use in 20:5. "Heart's desire" is a request granted to those possessed of God's spirit (1 Sam. 10:7; 13:14). God never jealously hoards divine gifts, but gives them freely. "Length of days for ever and ever" implies not only long life, but also a fulfillment through offspring (2 Sam. 7:16; Ps. 89:29).

The blessings for the Israelite king are reversed for the enemy in vv. 8–12. Although the language is figurative (Isa. 13:7–8; Lam. 5:10), one must never underestimate the inhuman fury of warfare (→ War).

Psalm 22. The role of Psalm 22 as a carrier of Israel's faith in times of distress appears in its stages of composition. First, after a long ordeal of sickness and imprisonment (vv. 1–21), an individual sufferer realizes that God is truly listening (v. 21) and so anticipates a liturgy of thanksgiving in the Temple, including a sacred meal (vv. 22–26). Then by its exquisite beauty, the psalm found its way into Temple liturgy and became the property of all Israel. Within this communal setting, vv. 27–31 were added.

The long opening section is divided into seven units: vv. 1–2, introductory cry of agony; vv. 3–5, confession of faith; vv. 6–8, lament; vv. 9–10, prayer of confidence; v. 11, prayer; vv. 12–18, lament; and vv. 19–21, prayer.

Verses 1–2 and 19–21 form an inclusio by repeating three key words: "distant," "save" or "salvation," and "help."

Three times repeating in vv. 3–5 "our ancestors trusted in you," the psalmist will not abandon faith, even though seemingly abandoned by God. Yet is the psalmist protesting too much and about to give up? It is difficult to distinguish the mystic darkness of faith (139:11–12) from the black void of unbelief.

Ridicule and shame besmear the psalmist in vv. 6–8. He is like a worm (cf. Job 25:6). Though the an-

cestors were not shamed (22:5), the psalmist definitely is and so is experiencing the reverse of what faith teaches.

A series of metaphors in vv. 10–18 articulate physical and psychological pain. Therefore, it is better not to take literally "they pierce my hands and my feet" (v. 16b). In fact, the Hebrew does not support this reading, but declares, "Like a lion [they maul] my hands and my feet."

It is not at all surprising, as in vv. 22–26, for a psalmist who has endured extreme physical suffering and severe psychological onslaught on faith to align himself with the isolated outcasts of society. He invites the poor and lowly to a thanksgiving banquet. In vv. 27–31, the group is swelled by other outcasts: foreigners (v. 27), the sick, the dying, and possibly the dead (v. 29).

Allusions to this psalm play an important role in the passion narratives of the NT. When v. 8 is paraphrased by the leaders against Jesus on the cross (Matt. 27:41–43), the Evangelist was associating Jesus with the devastated psalmist. Matthew and Mark describe the dying Jesus as speaking in Aramaic the opening words of the psalm, "My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?" (Matt. 27:46; Mark 15:34), and John quotes v. 18 in relation to the soldiers casting lots for Jesus' tunic (John 19:23–25).

Psalm 23. The psalm shows an overlay of covenant traditions about journeying through the wilderness and renewing the covenant; the release of an individual from trial (Ps. 121); the return from exile (Isa. 40:1–11; 41:10; Jer. 31:10); a liturgical ceremony of thanksgiving and sacred meal (Pss. 111; 118). If we keep the Hebrew reading of v. 6b, "I will return," the psalm is one of confidence; or if we follow the LXX and read "I will dwell," as in 27:4, the psalm turns into a thanksgiving.

In vv. 1b–4, the language is metaphorical about the "LORD, my shepherd" (Gen. 49:24; Isa. 40:11; Ezek. 34:11–31; → Shepherd). Yet metaphors gradually give way to realistic expressions: "path of righteousness" or "straight path," depending whether one understands the phrase as symbolic or realistic; "valley of darkness" is still metaphorical in the first word, realistic in the second; "at my side" describes concretely Yahweh's continual presence. Verses 5–6 describe a thanksgiving sacrifice and a sacred meal before returning home. Yahweh is no longer the shepherd, but the host at home.

The early church sang Psalm 23 as the baptized person emerged from the font and proceeded into the newly illumined church for Eucharist.

Psalm 24. One encounters in Psalm 24 an entrance liturgy far more elaborate than Psalm 15. Verses 1–2 were perhaps sung during a solemn procession with the Ark through the city or countryside (Pss. 68; 132). Upon arrival at the "gates of justice" (118:19), questions are asked to determine the fitness of those who seek entry (24:3; Num. 5:5–10). Finally, the Levites return the Ark to the Holy of Holies (vv. 7–10). Questions and answers as well as solemn acclamations may have been sung by separate choirs.

Verses 1–2 recall the ancient cosmogony about the earth's foundations upon underground "seas and . . . ocean currents" (Gen. 7:11; Exod. 20:4; Ps. 136:6; → Water).

In vv. 3–6 the stable order of creation was not preserved by ritual, but by a moral life. Echoes of the prophets may be detected here (Amos 4:4–5; 8:4–8; Hos. 4:1–3). "Who shall go up?" is a phrase that refers to Israel's Exodus out of Egypt and to its pilgrimage to Jerusalem (Amos 3:1; Jer. 31:12; Ps. 122:4), which later rabbis ascribed to Moses' ascent of Mount Sinai to receive the law (Exod. 19:3). With "clean hands and pure heart" one truly seeks the Lord, not some false god (Ps. 31:6). The Hebrew word "to seek" means to visit a sanctuary (Amos 5:5) and worship God (Amos 5:6) as well as to inquire into God's ways (Ps. 9:10) and to repent (78:34).

In vv. 7–10 the language is militaristic, but in the sense of the "holy war" (18:31–45) in which God alone wages war for Israel (Exod. 15:1–18), surrounded by the heavenly hosts (Judg. 5:20; 1 Sam. 4:4; Ps. 29:1).

Psalm 25. The alphabetical or acrostic arrangement of Psalm 25 is almost perfect. Each new line begins with the succeeding letter of the Hebrew alphabet, except that two letters are missing and two are doubled! Such an arrangement, along with other didactic aspects, suggests that this is a wisdom psalm. Yet, similar to Psalms 9–10, the overriding tone includes reference to sin and troubles, characteristic of the lament, thereby hinting that we have a blend of literary forms. Key words support this mixture: "Yahweh" is used ten times, to sustain the religious spirit; "shamed," four times, for supplication; and the wisdom aspect is supported by the use of "way," ten times, "to learn," three times, and "the poor," twice.

A clear development of thought is not evident, the absence of which is typical of a reflective piece where the purpose is wisdom, not logical achievement. An overarching chiastic form (19:1) is evident: vv. 1, 22, calling upon Yahweh; vv. 2–3, 19–21, saved from the foes and not shamed; vv. 4–5, 16–18, following the path of Yahweh and the relief of heart's tensions; vv. 6–7, 11–15, covenantal love; and at the center the covenantal love of Yahweh that leads in the right way, vv. 8–10.

The first major section (vv. 1–7) stresses the need to "wait" (Isa. 30:15–18); otherwise one will be shamed by sad results (Pss. 22:6–8; 44:9) and be in danger of breaking faith (Hab. 2:1–6). The directions for "the way" must be learned from God; they cannot be self-taught. People sinful from youth (Gen. 8:21; Job 13:26)

make no claim except that based on God's compassion (Jer. 31:1–6).

Verses 8–10 are central because they repeat the key covenant formula of Yahweh's "loving kindness and fidelity" (Exod. 34:6–7). The stereotypic phrase, in v. 20, "I take refuge in you," occurs frequently (2:11; 7:1; 11:1).

The conclusion (v. 22) resides outside the alphabetical sequence, perhaps because it was to be sung antiphonally after each line.

Psalm 26. With continuous allusions to Temple ritual, Psalm 26 appears to be part of a ceremony for acceptance into the worshiping assembly (Pss. 15; 24). On the basis of vv. 6–8, the author appears as a Levite, but the imagery, which derives from priestly activity, may have come to be applied more generally in a symbolic sense to any worshiper.

Structurally, the psalm is carefully knit together: an inclusio and repetition of key words unites the entire psalm (vv. 1, 11) and the lines of the introduction (vv. 1, 3); the Hebrew text shows repeated chiasms, i.e., *A B C B′ A′* patterns (19:1), especially in vv. 4–5; contrasts between the assembly of the righteous and of the wicked, between the person of the psalmist (first-person singular, twenty-nine times) and Yahweh; frequent verbs of walking and standing; and the covenant virtues of love and fidelity (Exod. 34:6–7). After the introduction (vv. 1–3), two stanzas juxtapose the assembly of the wicked with that of the just (vv. 4–7, 9–12).

"I walk in integrity" (v. 1) implies completion, sincerity, trustworthiness, all that is expected for calm and capable interaction within community and family (Pss. 18:25; 19:8a). Verse 2 is close to Jeremiah's protestation in the first of his confessions (Jer. 12:3), to which the Lord responds (Jer. 12:5) with the expectation of still stronger trust. Like Psalm 16, the Lord is the only refuge for the psalmist. Verse 3 repeats the covenantal virtues of "kindness and fidelity" (Exod. 34:6–7).

Verses 4–5, 9–10 repeat the prophets' demand for moral and social integrity if ritual is to be acceptable (Isa. 1; Mic. 3). Verses 6–7 bring us fully into the Temple: ritual washing of hands (and feet) to symbolize cleanliness and trustworthiness (Exod. 30:17–21); processions around the altar (Pss. 68:24–27; 118:27); and a thanksgiving sacrifice (Amos 4:5; Jon. 2:10).

Psalm 27. Two poems of confidence (vv. 1–6) and supplication (vv. 7–14) are so closely interwoven that it is difficult to know if they ever existed independently. Psalm 27 oscillates between longing for the Lord, awareness of a powerful enemy, and reaffirmation of one's trust in the Lord. While vv. 1–6 sound more strident in expressing confidence and in using military language, vv. 7–14 proceed more cautiously within community situations.

Each section moves toward and away from a center. The first part: v. 1, confession of trust in question form; vv. 2–3, answer; v. 4, the center of longing; v. 5, a new affirmation of trust; and v. 6, reward for trust and Temple sacrifice. The second part: v. 7, address to Yahweh; vv. 8–9, petition and longing; v. 10, the center of confessional trust; vv. 11–12, petition for guidance; and vv. 13–14, reward for trust and challenge to persevere.

In vv. 1–6 the presence of the Lord in Jerusalem's Temple does not depend upon the faith of the psalmist; rather, this faith depends upon the Lord's presence, initially understood as present in God's great deeds in Israel's history and then, symbolically, as these are celebrated anew in the Temple and in people's lives. The phrase "The LORD is my light" (v. 1) occurs only here in the OT (cf. John 8:12). Light has important roles: ceremonially (Exod. 25:31–40; 34:29–35; 40:34–38); prophetically (Isa. 10:17); and eschatologically (Zech. 14:7). Here it seems closer to the prophetic way of distinguishing integrity from deceit (on "evil people . . . devour my flesh," cf. Mic. 3:2–3). Language such as "dwell in the house of Yahweh each day of my life" and "to gaze," or, literally, "to behold a vision" through faith, indicates that with this faith the psalmist returns joyfully to the ritual of sacrifice and song (v. 6).

To seek the face of God (v. 8) was a stereotypic phrase that referred to visiting a sanctuary (Deut. 31:11; Ps. 42:3). The Canaanites thought it possible to behold the faces of the gods by looking at external images, but the Israelites did not. The psalmist was seeking, through faith, the interior and personal presence of the Lord (24:6; 123:2). Forsaken by family (27:10; Jer. 12:6) and community (Ps. 27:12; Deut. 19:15–21), the psalmist prays in v. 12: "Do not give me over to the throat of my foes," i.e., to the greed that dominates the life of the foes (Mic. 3:2–3). "Be strong-willed" repeats the encouragement of Josh. 1:6–18 for entering the promised land (cf. Hag. 2:4).

Psalm 28. An individual supplication, Psalm 28 is addressed to the "deaf God" (v. 1; 22:1–2). Although the psalmist is not explicit, the problem may have been illness. The psalm consists of lament (vv. 1–5) and thanksgiving for a cure (vv. 6–7). Verses 7–8, focusing upon the anointed king, recall the cure of King Hezekiah (Isa. 38). The sequence from lament to thanksgiving or statement of confidence is normal.

In vv. 1–5 God seems mute and deaf like the idols ridiculed in 115:5–6. The word "pit" or "grave" originally meant a quarry (Isa. 51:1), well, or cistern (Gen. 21:25, 30), which when empty became a place for detaining people (Jer. 38:6). The term also came to signify the abode of the dead, because of the dank, dark, and unhealthy conditions of these cisterns (Pss. 30:3; 88:6; Isa. 38:18). By contrast, "prayers . . . [like] hands are lifted up towards the Holy of Holies." "Prayers," the same word as in Ps. 22:1, conveys the shrill sound of urgency. Evil or rebellious people speak of peace mockingly (cf. Isa. 57:19b–21). Verses 4–5 skillfully contrast the deeds of the wicked and the kindly ones of the

Lord; each has its own inevitable result of sorrow or blessing.

In vv. 6–7 it is not clear if the phrase "I give God thanks" refers to a thanksgiving sacrifice or to a song of praise (26:7). The former seems likely in view of the overall ritual setting. The LXX of v. 7 enhances the notion of healing from sickness.

Psalm 29. Probably one of the earliest psalms, Psalm 29 appears as a significant link between several competing and at times hostile perceptions of God. Various similarities relate Psalm 29 with the Song of Moses (Exod. 15), the theophany of Mount Sinai (Exod. 19), and the enthronement of Yahweh in Psalms 46–48, 93, 96–99. In this psalm, Israel's theology seeks to surround Yahweh, the warrior God and savior of the desert, with the glorious accoutrements of the creator God, who overcomes the chaotic forces of nature, a theme prominent in Canaanite city temples. Exodus 15 and Psalm 29 do not have the theological and liturgical finesse of Psalms 46–48 or 96–99. Psalm 29 extends a bridge into the Canaanite world of Baal worship through several significant word parallels. Yet Psalm 29 actually parodies Baal worship, since power and enthronement are granted exclusively to Yahweh (→ Baal).

A psalm of such majesty invited frequent use and adaptation. The LXX places it on the last day of the Feast of Tabernacles (Lev. 23:33–43) and relates it to the prayer for rain (Zech. 14:16–19). The Talmud linked it with the Feast of Weeks (Pentecost), which commemorated the giving of the law to Moses on Mount Sinai (Exod. 19). Psalm 29 may have made its own contribution to the story of Pentecost in Acts 2; it was sung by the early church for the ancient feasts of Pentecost, Epiphany, and Transfiguration.

Psalm 29 begins with a call to adore Yahweh (vv. 1–2); moves to the motivation for praise in the description of a fearsome thunderstorm (vv. 3–9b); and concludes with the enthronement of Yahweh (vv. 9c–11).

In vv. 1–2 "children of the gods," a phrase drawn from Canaanite religion (Heb. *bene 'elim*), constitute the heavenly council of Yahweh (Gen. 6:2, 4; Job 1:6; Pss. 82:1; 89:5; 1 Kings 22:19), lesser gods subservient to Yahweh, an embarrassment when this line is quoted in Ps. 96:7 (where they become the "families of nations"). They are to ascribe "Glory!" to Yahweh, a word announcing the manifestation of Yahweh's power in redeeming Israel (Exod. 16:7; Isa. 40:5; → Glory).

One hears (vv. 3–9) the seven mighty claps of thunder (which the Hebrew word *qol* or "voice" can mean) splintering the cedars of Lebanon, sweeping the desert and its wadis or valleys into writhing swells of sand and roaring cataracts. The phrase in v. 8, *midbar kadesh,* occurs in Canaanite literature meaning "the awesome desert." In Psalm 29, Israel changed *kadesh* from the adjective "awesome" to a proper name, designating the oasis of Kadesh-barnea far to its south, where the people encamped during the period of wandering the desert (→ Kadesh). The storm has thus been rerouted south, making a half circle around the promised land, where the Israelites are at peace.

In vv. 9c–11 the Lord is enthroned "above the floodwaters," a word used elsewhere only in the Flood story (Gen. 6–9; Sir. 44:17), but here referring to the massive waters thought to reside above the earth (Ps. 148:4). From this heavenly temple, Yahweh imparts strength (an inclusio with v. 1) and *shalom* (Heb., "peace"), the wholeness of a happy, harmonious life. With the untamed storm, a glorious symphony fills the universe and echoes in the Jerusalem Temple.

Psalm 30. Once seriously sick, the psalmist offers thanksgiving for a return to health. At a much later period the title was expanded (something unusual in these early psalms) to refer to the dedication of the Second Temple in 515 B.C. Because the word "dedication" reads *chanukkah* in Hebrew, some associate the title with 1 Macc. 4:52–59 and the rededication in 164 B.C., on a feast called Hanukkah. In both cases national mourning, like a serious sickness, ended. After thanksgiving by a solo voice (vv. 1–3) and then the congregation (vv. 4–5), one hears in vv. 6–10 of sickness and prayer and in vv. 11–12 the conclusion.

Verses 1–5 show that this psalm followed the ancient belief that death was like slipping into silent oblivion (6:5; 16:10). The Bible always associates healing with a message about Yahweh as savior. Verse 4 may refer to a grateful memorial sacrifice.

In vv. 6–10 the first two verses seem textually damaged, yet the general thought is that success is always a temptation to indifference toward God, especially for religious people. Arguing with God (v. 9) recalls the confessions of Jeremiah (Jer. 12:1–5). Motifs of reversal (mourning into dancing, sackcloth into joy, silence into praise) conclude the psalm in vv. 11–12 (cf. Jer. 31:13).

Psalm 31. Psalm 31 is a complex psalm borrowing heavily from Jeremiah and other psalms. The memory of sacred texts sustained this sick person: vv. 1–3a, identical with Ps. 71:1–3; v. 7b is similar to Ps. 10:14; v. 9a to Psalms 35; 38; 39; 71; v. 10b to Ps. 38:10; v. 12 to Jer. 22:8; v. 13 to Jer. 20:10; and v. 17 to Jer. 17:18. This psalm is the first example of an anthological style with similarity to modern hymn writing.

The structure is unusual in that psalms generally begin with supplication and move into thanksgiving (Ps. 22). This one begins with confidence (vv. 1–8), drops into supplication, where the language is more graphic but also more derivative (vv. 9–18), follows with thanksgiving (vv. 19–22), and ends with a liturgical addition (vv. 23–24).

With extraordinary daring, possible only with the humble, the psalmist (vv. 8–10) challenges God to be faithful to the divine promises, which v. 3 identifies

with the name or specific vocation of God toward Israel. Verse 7 completes the covenant formula about Yahweh, faithfulness (v. 1), and bonding love (Exod. 34:6–7). Though deserted by foes, neighbors, and friends, the psalmist thinks as a member of Israel.

As the psalm turns into supplication (vv. 9–18), the language shows more signs of borrowing. It begins with the classic call of lament (51:1), "Have mercy on me," a word that recognizes distance and undeserved recognition; the appeal here is to God's concern for suffering people. Verse 10b reads, "My strength drains away because of my sinfulness," which the Greek, Syriac, and most versions change to "because of my misery" by a slight variation of Hebrew letters. One should retain the Hebrew reading, not only because the more difficult reading is preferred as less likely to have been a correction, but also because of the connection of sickness with sin in the Bible (38:3). Verse 13 recalls the whispering crowd that threw back into Jeremiah's face as a nickname the threat that he had been calling down upon the nation: "Terror on every side" (Jer. 6:25; 20:3–4, 10).

The thanksgiving in vv. 19–22 may have been a public sacrifice in the Temple, "the shelter of your presence." The psalmist hoped others would find their faith strengthened by his example. Verses 23–24 were perhaps added later from the repertoire of Temple thanksgiving services. As with Psalm 22, NT writers drew upon this psalm in their accounts of Jesus' death. Verse 5 became Jesus' final word from the cross (Luke 23:46), repeated again in the death scene of Stephen (Acts 7:59).

Psalm 32. The second of the seven psalms designated as penitential psalms in Christian tradition (see also Psalms 6; 38; 51; 102; 130; 143), Psalm 32 is recited by priests in the Greek church for personal purification before conferring baptism. Ashkenazi Jews recite it as night prayer on each Monday. Psalm 32 shows some of the repetitive qualities of Psalm 31; its didactic style removes some of the latter's intensity. Yet it rings with sincerity.

The psalm may have been an instruction at the Temple, composed by an individual whose spiritual and physical life changed as a result of a confession of sin. The development is as follows: vv. 1–2, introduction by Temple priest; vv. 3–7, edifying autobiography about the power of grace; vv. 8–10, instruction; and v. 11, liturgical conclusion.

The title announces this psalm as a *maskil*, from a Hebrew word meaning "to be wise or skillful," a clue to the wisdom instruction to follow. "Happy is that one" recalls Psalm 1 and its wisdom characteristics. The vocabulary for sin and forgiveness in vv. 2–3 reminds one of Psalm 51. Divine forgiveness always presumes not only admission of faults, at times publicly if the offense was public, but also restitution (Num. 5:5–10). From the autobiographical account in vv. 3–7, one learns that the psalmist was physically ill (cf. 38:3 for the connection of sickness with sin). Once the psalmist stopped dissimulating and covering up, God extended a cover of forgiveness over the sins. Verses 6–7 address a prayer of gratitude to God, equally a lesson for others. The final instruction in vv. 8–10 is spoken by the priest. On "senseless like the horse and mule," see Prov. 26:3; Sir. 30:8. The final line of v. 9 is an awkward intrusion. Verse 10 expresses the orthodox position, especially prominent in the wisdom literature, that the wicked are punished and the virtuous are blessed. This statement does not harmonize well with Psalm 31.

Psalm 33. Because Psalms 1–2 were added later as a general introduction to the Psalter and Psalm 10 originally was a continuation of Psalm 9, Psalm 33, therefore, is the only psalm without a title in the first book (Pss. 1–41). A late composition, it was attached here by a repetition of a key word, "exult" or "rejoice" at the end of Psalm 32 and at the beginning of this psalm. Reasons for arguing postexilic authorship include "Sing a new song" in v. 3 (Isa. 42:10; Pss. 96:1; 98:1); a wisdom style, prominent in the postexilic age; and stereotypic phrases common with other late psalms (v. 1 and 97:12; v. 2b and 98:5; 147:7). Yet there are also touches of originality, which flow mostly from its oral composition: repetitions (33:1, 7, 9, 11) and the continual use of word pairs such as "spoke/commanded," "plan/design," and "nation/people." Most of all this psalm presents a theology of the divine word.

After the call to praise (vv. 1–3), an initial motivation is given from Yahweh's fidelity (vv. 4–5) and omnipotent word (vv. 6–7). This motivation extends to Yahweh's providential control: across the earth (vv. 8–12) and through human plans (vv. 13–19). The conclusion comes in vv. 20–22. The divine name Yahweh (thirteen times) and the covenant formula of mercy and fidelity keep the focus upon Israel, God's chosen people (v. 12).

The first stanza (vv. 1–7) opens with musical instruments echoing the symphony of heaven and earth (→ Music). With this "new song," Yahweh is creating anew at the moment of worship. This psalm is not like most of wisdom literature, generally aloof toward Temple ceremony (Ps. 1; Prov. 10–31). Verses 4–7 place the universe within the covenantal kindness and fidelity of the Lord (Exod. 34:6–7).

In vv. 8–12 one observes an earth teeming with people, all within the embrace of Yahweh's loving concern and strong control. The people Israel (vv. 11–12) are chosen forever as God's heritage (cf. Deut. 32:8–9).

Heaven is not a silent retreat where the deity resides at a remove from humanity; Yahweh is continually looking down (v. 13) on everyone (v. 14), even into each human heart (v. 15). Not even kings are exempt (v. 16). Like most OT literature, the psalm does not extend God's plans beyond any person's lifetime (v. 19;

Pss. 6:5; 30). The psalm closes in vv. 20–22 with the classic vocabulary of confidence. It does not center upon musical instruments as in the introduction, or upon plans and interaction as in the body of the psalm, but upon the person of the Lord. Verse 22 contributed the final words to the ancient classic Christian hymn "Te Deum."

Psalm 34. Psalm 34 is another acrostic poem like Psalms 9–10 and 25, but in it the alphabetic sequence is almost perfect, except that the letter *waw* is missing and v. 22 was added both to complete the number of letters in the Hebrew alphabet and to ensure a happy ending. After a hymnic introduction (vv. 1–3), the first major section gratefully narrates the Lord's intervention to save (vv. 4–10) and the second provides typical wisdom instruction (vv. 11–22). The title, one of few lengthy ones in the first book of the Psalter, is curious with historical inaccuracy. According to 1 Sam. 21:11–16, the Philistine king's name was not Abimelech, but Achish.

The opening phrase in vv. 1–10, "I will bless," recognizes God's gracious, strong presence in life, generally expressed liturgically, e.g., in a sacred meal (Exod. 18:10–12). Verse 2 begins a series of references to a person oppressed, afflicted, and troubled, but now thanking God for deliverance. The phrase "angel of the LORD" (v. 7) is generally a circumlocution for simply saying "the LORD" (so Gen. 31:11–13; Exod. 3). Angels appear in the Bible to unite earth with activity in the heavenly court (Zech. 3:1–10) and to surround God's servants with care (Josh. 5:14; 2 Kings 6:17). This reference to supernatural protection is unusual for wisdom literature and more in accord with Israel's popular piety, which believed the world was inhabited by good and evil spirits (Ps. 91; → Angel; Angel of the Lord).

The characteristics of wisdom literature come to the fore in vv. 11–22, with an address to children or pupils common in all ancient wisdom literature (Prov. 1:8; 2:1). Verses 12–16 constitute one of the longer quotations of the OT in the NT (1 Pet. 3:10–12).

Psalm 35. A long, somewhat monotonous and repetitive psalm, Psalm 35 oscillates between sorrow, anger, curse, and thanksgiving, between narrative and intercession. Some of the lines are rapid and direct (vv. 21–24) with vigorous images (vv. 5–8) and strong emotions (vv. 13–16). The Hebrew text is not well preserved, overloaded perhaps with glosses and corrections, so that translations differ in their reconstruction.

The psalm is divided according to the enemy and the type of image: vv. 1–10, images of warfare and the hunt, against impostors; vv. 11–18, images of mourning, against ingrates; and vv. 19–28, images of legal procedure, against perfidious people. In v. 1, the demand "Take up my [legal] case, LORD" exhibits a person confident of innocence before human and divine tribunals. "I myself [no other] am your salvation" (v. 3) emphasizes the personal response of Yahweh. The word "salvation" ought to be taken in its original meaning, to liberate by removing barriers and providing space for the psalmist simply to live again. In vv. 7–8 the example of the *lex talionis* (Lat., "law of retribution"), "an eye for an eye . . . " (Exod. 21:23–25; Ps. 7:16), does not vindicate vendettas and revenge, but states a law of reality: we become in our heart and facial features as well as in the events of life what we think and do. Violence breeds violence. Liars are caught in the web of their own lies.

The types of mourning cited in vv. 11–18 can be paralleled in numerous narratives and prophetic texts. Sackcloth was donned for mourning (Gen. 37:34; 2 Sam. 3:31). Fasting with sackcloth was undertaken privately by David at the death of his son (2 Sam. 12:16). When Moses fasted, it was rather in awesome trembling before the wonder of the divine presence (Exod. 34:27–28), not out of grief or a sense of sinfulness. During and after the Exile, fasting was prescribed for all Israel on fixed days commemorating national calamities (Joel 1–2; Zech. 7:1–14; → Fasting). "I prayed with bowed head" accurately communicates for us what the Hebrew declares more poignantly: "My prayer returns to my bosom or heart." Verses 15–16 are severely damaged textually.

In vv. 17–26 the psalmist entreats God to move from inertia to activity, from silence to a verdict against the oppressors (44:23–26). Too long have they been ridiculing God's justice by abusing the psalmist. Verses 27–28 provide thanksgiving after a proper verdict from the Lord.

Psalm 36. Although this psalm contains elements of a lament or complaint, it is more a reflection on the wicked and a profession of faith in God. Yahweh's mercy and fidelity, the core covenant intuitions (Exod. 34:6–7), are viewed either as repudiated by the wicked (vv. 1–4 and 10–12) or as celebrated by the faithful (vv. 5–9). Yahweh as Lord of the covenant is the sole remedy to universal injustice.

In vv. 1–4 the opening phrase is most unusual: "Oracle of transgression for the wicked." The word "oracle" commonly occurs in the prophets in conjunction with the divine name ("oracle of Yahweh"). Perhaps the point here is that transgression speaks the authoritative word to the wicked. Verse 4 reminds one of Mic. 2:1–2, where wicked people, complacently lying on their couches at night, plot ways to satisfy their greed; then with the break of day they seize whatever they want. Words like "understand" (v. 3) and "way" (v. 4) are telltale signs of wisdom influence (cf. Ps. 1; Prov. 1:10–18; 10:5).

Verses 5–9 offer a celebration of Yahweh's covenant presence. The Lord's kindness and fidelity (Exod. 34:6–7) reach into the heavens; the Lord knows no limits in arranging everything for the sake of the chosen

people Israel. This idea returns almost verbatim in 57:10 and echoes in the preaching of Second Isaiah, Isaiah 40–55 (Isa. 40:12–14), and in Ps. 139:7–10. In all these cases, the writer appears to be in severe crisis. These are the occasion either for destroying faith or for extending it beyond the limits of previous theological statements. For "shadow of your wings" in v. 7, see 17:8. "River of your delights" (v. 8) was later taken as a reference to paradise; the word for "delights" stems from the same root as does the word "Eden." The image of light is often linked with water as here, "In your light we see light." These images occur in Jeremiah (2:13; 17:13), where Yahweh is the "fountain of living water."

Verses 10–12 are a fitting conclusion that alludes again to the covenantal qualities of kindness and fidelity and to the arrogance of the wicked and their downfall.

Verses 7–9 are recited by Ashkenazi Jews as they put on the tallith, or prayer shawl. In Christian tradition vv. 8–9 came to be used for the blessing of a baptismal font.

Psalm 37. This acrostic psalm, like Psalms 9–10, 25, and 34, perfectly executes its sequence of letters. It shares many key themes with Deuteronomy, like the possession of the land (vv. 3, 9, 11) as well as blessings and curses for the obedient and disobedient (vv. 22, 37–38), only here the focus has passed from the nation Israel to the individual Israelite. The question of retribution for the individual is a common theme in wisdom literature. If one compares Psalm 37 with other wisdom pieces, one finds that unlike Proverbs it does not seek to form disciples and unlike Job it does not seek to solve problems. Rather, it provides points for meditation and for preaching. The author was an elder sage (v. 25).

On the question of retribution the author displays the good sense to avoid stereotyped simplicity. Despite a hewing of the traditional position (vv. 1–2, 25), other verses recognize that neither are the virtuous immediately blessed nor are the wicked quickly reduced to disgrace (vv. 7–9, 12, 35). Neither does the psalmist take the next step and seek a final solution after death.

The development within the psalm is not clear. One may detect an introduction (vv. 1–9) and a conclusion (vv. 34–40) by the frequent use of the imperative mood. In the central part, one observes the ruin of the impious (vv. 10–15), prosperity as the gift of Yahweh (vv. 16–26), and a return to fidelity (vv. 27–33). Logically, one can begin almost anywhere and proceed in any direction. This poem is not so much instruction or proof as quiet meditation. Nor is it mysticism for saints—it centers on earthly problems, temptations, and occasional lapses.

"Do not fret," or stir with anger and frustration (v. 1)—such is not proper for the calm attitude expected of a sage! "Let your confidence be in the LORD and do what is good" (v. 3) gives a fine balance between interior trust and external action. "Delight in the LORD" (v. 4) puts a proper stress upon delicate sensitivity (Isa. 58:14). In v. 13, "the LORD laughs," as in 2:4, but nonetheless this is a rare attitude for God in the Bible. The foolish, egotistic pretentions of the wicked are too amusing to be taken seriously. (For the *lex talionis* in v. 15, see the commentary above on 35:7–8.) Jeremiah develops a similar theme. Sin always brings suffering; suffering can be disciplinary and redemptive, depending on one's attitude (Jer. 2:19; 5:25; 30:11; 31:18). Laws regulating debtors (v. 21) are frequently enough discussed in the OT: 2 Kings 4:1; Amos 2:6; 8:6. Interest rates were staggering (see commentary above on 15:2–5a). The phrase in v. 27, "to dwell forever," applies to one's offspring. In fact, the Hebrew word "to dwell" denotes a tent, not a permanent type of home (15:1; 2 Sam. 7:5–7). In v. 28, "his faithful ones" derives from the covenant word in Hebrew for loving mercy, *chesed.* Wisdom literature, however, as in Proverbs, Job, and Ecclesiastes generally, refers neither directly to the covenant nor to other aspects of Israel's history and worship. The ending (v. 40) is similar to other psalms in the first book (Pss. 2:12; 7:1; 11:1), perhaps a deliberate way of incorporating this poem into the collection.

Psalm 38. This is the third of the seven penitential psalms according to Christian tradition (see also Pss. 6; 32; 51; 102; 130; 143). It is recited as evening prayer on the third day of the week by the Ashkenazi Jews. Psalm 38 is not exceptional in style; it is repetitive and stereotyped. Yet it looms powerfully before us because of its intense recital of physical pain and emotional isolation and because of its honest acceptance of responsibility (vv. 4, 18). Unlike Job, the psalmist does not argue his innocence, but simply pleads for human recognition and compassion.

The imagery with which the psalmist describes his suffering suggests a terrible disease (vv. 3, 5, 7), but such descriptions may be metaphorical. The language of Psalm 38 is conventional, with numerous parallels to other psalms.

Parts of vv. 4, 5, 11, and all of 18–19 reflect Psalm 35; v. 1 reflects Ps. 6:1; vv. 20–21 are from Ps. 22:1, 11, 19. From these biblical prayers the psalmist was encouraged to present a new plea before the Lord and before the society of Israel. The psalmist was convinced that God was concerned about a person's physical ugliness and moral guilt as well as about society's taboos and banishment.

This prayer of supplication can be divided as follows: vv. 1–2, call for help; vv. 3–10, serious sickness; vv. 11–20, isolation and even persecution; and vv. 21–22, repeated call for help.

The title, "the memorial offering," indicates that this psalm was received into Temple liturgy, possibly

for the readmission of cured lepers (Lev. 14). The phrase refers to a liturgical practice of remembering the name of the Lord at sacrifices (Ps. 70).

The request in v. 1, "chastise me not angrily," implies suffering that disciplines and purifies (Jer. 2:19; Isa. 53:5). The psalmist begs that it be done with minimum wrath. "Arrows" indicate the piercing sharpness of the pain (Job 6:4); they may also be associated with the sense of being under a curse from evil spirits (Ps. 91:5).

In vv. 3–10 the severity of the sickness is intensified by the pounding of the heart (vv. 8, 10) and a consuming fever (v. 7). Yet the psalmist is able to direct "all my desire" toward the Lord. In v. 5 the sufferer does not argue against personal guilt and foolishness (107:17). The verb in v. 8, "I roar from anguished heart," is generally used of lions (22:13).

Even "those [once] loving me . . . stand at a distance" (v. 11) with devices to keep the psalmist far away (v. 12), so that the leper neither hears nor is able to converse (vv. 13–14). Verses 15–20 pursue the reasons why Yahweh should cross the barrier into unclean territory and intervene.

The conclusion (vv. 21–22) calls upon a key word of Psalm 22, "Be not distant" (vv. 1, 11, 19), and begs God not irreverently, only with urgency, to "hurry" (Ps. 22:19).

Psalm 39. The piety of Psalm 39 seems highly individual, even if the title, in attributing it to "Jeduthun," links it with one of the guilds of psalm writers for worship (2 Chron. 5:12; 35:15–19). To Jeduthun are attributed two other exquisite compositions (Pss. 62; 77). These, with Psalm 39, may have offered a more quiet or reflective type of worship.

Psalms speak often enough of the brevity of life, but only here do they ask God for peaceful insight into its meaning. Psalm 39 is not blindly accepting whatever happens; it struggles, even with the danger of rash questioning, though it prays to be spared such a fault. As with Psalm 16, frequently with the confessions of Jeremiah (12:1–5; 15:10–21; 20:7–18), and dramatically with the songs of the suffering servant (Isa. 49:4), security is not obtained by answers from God, certainly not by gifts from God, but only in personal bonding with the Lord.

After an introductory apology for speaking (vv. 1–3), the psalmist reflects on the inconstancy of life (vv. 4–6) and poignantly petitions God for assistance (vv. 7–11). The psalm concludes with supplication (vv. 12–13).

If the psalmist intends (vv. 1–3) to trust God, then silence is appropriate. Verse 2b is variously translated; it probably had to be heard in its abruptness to be understood: "I kept silent without any good." The insolence of the wicked had blown the flames of dissatisfaction red-hot in the heart, and one hears the desperate cry to God: "To my weeping do not be deaf" (v. 12; 22:1–2).

After an initial prayer for insight (v. 4), there follows, it seems, an acceptance of life's transitoriness (v. 5a). Yet the Hebrew now begins three lines with the very abrupt word *ak*, "surely," as though the previous statement is inadequate, even if found frequently in the OT (Pss. 62:9; 90:3–6; Job 7:6–10; Eccles. 5:9–16). The psalmist follows the traditional position that after death no personal existence is assured (Ps. 6:5).

The psalmist begs God for deliverance, simply by being with him (v. 7–11). Strong, dissenting forces merge: peace from waiting upon the Lord, a sense of sin and of deserving the punishment, panicking at being dissolved into nothing, and confessing that punishment chastens and purifies.

Verses 12–13 allude to earlier lines in the psalm (vv. 4–7). The conclusion gets nowhere. The psalmist makes contradictory requests: "hear my prayer" and "turn away!" Yet such contradiction may be sustained in God's presence.

Psalm 40. In Psalm 40, an editor stitches together two earlier psalms (the second of these occurs identically in Ps. 70). In uniting a psalm of thanksgiving (vv. 1–10) with one of supplication (vv. 13–17)—actually an unusual sequence—and adding the transitional vv. 11–12, the inspired editor has produced a new work, stressing dependency upon God for authentic Temple worship.

The opening song of thanksgiving in vv. 1–10 reads better stylistically if vv. 6–8 are deleted, yet their presence strengthens the need of interior attitudes for proper worship. Waiting upon the Lord (v. 1) implies that a dark period continues, as one waits patiently and expectantly (Isa. 25:9; 40:31). Second Isaiah (Isa. 42:10) and the time of the Exile (Ps. 33:3) perhaps provide the context for the "pit of destruction" and the time for a "new song." National resurgence corresponds with the individual's moment of being rescued, possibly from serious sickness (Ps. 30:2–3). Verse 3 announces a community festival at which Psalm 40 is to be sung. Verse 4 warns against false worship, certainly a danger in postexilic Israel (Isa. 56:9–57:13; Ps. 16). The formula "happy that one" shows the touch of wisdom literature (Ps. 1:1; 32:1), which continues in v. 5, recognizing a divine mystery even in the most meticulous ordering of life (Prov. 8:22–31; Sir. 43:28–33). This verse may also allude to the "wondrous deeds" of Israel's history, reenacted in sanctuary worship (Deut. 5:1–5; 26:1–11).

Verses 6–8 interrupt the sanctuary hymn of thanksgiving to assert the secondary place of sacrifice to the internalizing of God's *torah* ("teaching"; 1 Sam. 15:22–23; Isa. 1:10–16; Mic. 6:6–8). The major types of sacrifice are enumerated: "sacrifice," an all-purpose word; "offering," generally of grain (Lev. 6:7–16); "burnt offering," an act of adoration in which the en-

tire offering is consumed by fire (Lev. 1); "sin offering," a ritual after the offense has been confessed and restitution has been made (Num. 5:5–10; → Worship). The phrase "ears you have dug [or opened] for me" is to be understood metaphorically as the capacity for obedience to the Lord (Prov. 28:9; Isa. 50:4–5). In v. 8 the law within the heart alludes to a long sequence of texts, all insisting upon the interior attitude necessary for covenant and worship (Deut. 6:4–9; Jer. 31:31–34; Ezek. 36:26–27; Ps. 37:31).

Verses 9–10 return to the community assembly in the Temple commemorating its covenant with the Lord. Verse 10 ends the hymn of thanksgiving, referring to the covenant of "love and fidelity" (Exod. 34:6–7), whereas vv. 11–12 function as a transition to the prayer of supplication that follows.

Verses 13–17 (identical with Ps. 70) express the powerlessness of people left to themselves. Those who seek the Lord in community worship (40:16; 27:8) ought not to be shamed by the ridicule and success of wicked people. It is sufficient to be held within the strong gaze of the Lord.

Psalm 41. The prayer of a sick person, Psalm 41 is a psalm of supplication transformed into one of confidence by a new introduction and conclusion. The complicated structure exhibits a long history before its final editing. We are dealing as much with an inspired tradition as with a single inspired author. The psalm follows a chiastic structure (see commentary above on Ps. 19:1): *(A)* didactic introduction and prayer of confidence, 41:1–3; *(B)* prayer of the psalmist, v. 4; *(C)* words of the enemy, vv. 5–7; *(C′)* words of the enemy, vv. 8–9; *(B′)* prayer of the psalmist, v. 10; *(A′)* didactic conclusion with Temple worship, vv. 11–12. Verse 13 functions as a conclusion to the first book of the Psalter (see 72:18–19; 89:52; 106:48; 150).

In v. 1 the exclamation "Happy that one" echoes 1:1 and 32:1–2. This person "is solicitous for the poor," a disposition associated in wisdom literature with careful regard and resultant insight (Prov. 28:3–6). "Not hand him over to the life [or greed or will] of his enemy": the word for life (Heb. *nepesh*) can mean "throat" and hence greed or desire.

The prayer (v. 4) combines a sense of sin with sickness (Ps. 30). Verses 5–7, 8–9 permit the enemies to speak for themselves; the sins that inflict sickness are those of the larger world. The biblical concept of sickness linked it at once with community responsibility and community offenses. In vv. 7–8, "whisper" can refer to casting a spell (58:5), and "a deadly thing" reads, literally, "a word of Beliyyaal," possibly hinting at a demonic curse. Sickness involved the evil world not only of people, but also of evil spirits (→ Magic and Divination). The betrayal of close associates (v. 9) reminds one of Jer. 12:6; the line is quoted in the NT passion narrative in reference to Judas Iscariot (John 13:18).

After a prayer, wisdom style picks up again in vv. 10–12 with its theory of retribution: the evil are punished and the good are rewarded by God. "Stand before you" refers to Temple worship. The psalm may have been an offering at the sanctuary from a sick person now restored to health who is now repaying a vow (see 40:7).

Psalms 42–72

Book Two

In Books Two and Three we meet two new guilds of composers: Korah (Pss. 42–49; 84–85; 87–88) and Asaph (Pss. 50; 73–83). The tradition, preserved in Chronicles, that David organized the Temple musicians, with the Levite Asaph as chief (1 Chron. 16:1–7, 37) is unlikely to be historical. The references in Chronicles to Asaph and Korah (2 Chron. 5:12; 20:19) more likely reflect the status and role of these levitical clans in the Second Temple period when Chronicles was written (ca. 350 B.C.). Although the clan of Asaph sustained a prominent position, the Korahites seem to have been demoted to gatekeepers (1 Chron. 26:1, 19) and bakers of sacred bread (1 Chron. 9:31–32).

The "Elohist Psalter" (Pss. 42–83) begins here with the psalms of Korah and extends to the end of the Asaph psalms (Ps. 83). In this section of the book the name for God is generally Elohim instead of Yahwèh, which otherwise dominates the psalms.

Psalms 42–43. Two psalms in enumeration but one in structure, Psalms 42–43 share a refrain at the end of each of three stanzas (42:5, 11; 43:5). The pen of a master poet is exhibited here: in the intricate structure, the correspondence of imagery and mood, the play on words and sounds, and the momentum forward. Ps. 42:1–5 places us, timid and afraid, in desert terrain, thirsty, saddened in personal exile by the memories of Temple worship. Ps. 42:6–10 transports us, scorned by enemies, absorbed in suffering, strong and affirmed, to mountains that roar with mighty, even destructive waterfalls. Ps. 43:1–5 directs our gaze to future hopes, into a sanctuary flooded with light.

The language and images in the elegy (42:1–5) evoke memories of Temple worship. The psalmist is "athirst" not just for the Lord, but also for the Temple, where the Lord's bountiful presence was symbolized by water (46:4; Ezek. 47). Ps. 42:2b originally read, "When will I go and see the face of God" (see NRSV), an expression for visiting a sanctuary (Deut. 31:11; Ps. 27:4) derived from the Canaanites who had material figures of their deities. Later a scribe corrected the reading, "When will I go and be seen before God" (see NJPS), for no one can see God and live (Exod. 33:20). Sacred meals are recalled, now only a memory of tears. "I pour out my soul" expresses sorrow, a metaphor

drawn from the ritual of pouring water (1 Sam. 7:6; Isa. 57:6).

In 42:6–11 the geography is that of upper Galilee at the base of Mount Hermon, snowcapped year-round, with waterfalls and gushing springs. Water is now destructive, and the psalmist uses a Hebrew word, *tehom,* which summons images of the sea monster Tiamat and the angry depths of the sea (cf. 89:9–10). The image of being overcome by breakers and waves is a common metaphor of distress (69:1–2). Elements of hope and despair are mixed together in 42:8–10, with the second instance of the refrain again reasserting hope (42:11).

In 43:1–5, the psalmist experiences a public vindication from the Lord, who allows him to return to Jerusalem, "your holy hill" (2:6; 3:4), to participate in worship and to bask in the light of God's face (31:16; 44:3). Light indeed bursts out as the dominant motif in this third stanza. "God, my God" originally read "Yahweh, my God" before the phrase was changed for the Elohist Psalter.

Psalm 44. A communal lament composed after a serious military defeat, Psalm 44 could fit into various occasions: when King Jehoshaphat (873–848 B.C.) was faced with an Edomite invasion from the south and ordered fasting and public prayer (2 Chron. 20); when the Assyrians finally left Judah with Jerusalem alone intact and the rest of the country in ruins during the reign of Hezekiah (727–698 B.C.; 2 Kings 18:13–19:37); or at the tragic death of King Josiah in 609 B.C. (2 Chron. 35:20–25). The psalm begins in hymnic style with a creed confessing God's great redemptive acts for Israel (vv. 1–8); a community lament challenges the faith (vv. 9–16); a reflective meditation follows (vv. 17–22); and finally there is a prayer for help (vv. 23–26).

Verses 1–8 provide a chant for a large choir, except for vv. 4, 6 in the singular for solo voices and v. 8 a refrain to be sung repeatedly by the congregation. Other stylistic flourishes add strength, such as the repetition of the emphatic Hebrew word *ki,* "indeed," three times in v. 3. The language reflects the "holy war" fought on Israel's behalf by the Lord (cf. 18:31–45).

In vv. 9–16 the creed is reversed; even the vocabulary used in v. 7 is introduced into v. 10 in reverse meaning. "Sheep for the slaughter" is a very common phrase: Jer. 11:19; 12:3; Zech. 11:4, 7. In v. 15 a solo voice rings out over the words of the large choir.

Verses 18–22 are like Job in miniature, reflecting upon useless and undeserved suffering. The psalmist will speak to God (vv. 17–19, 22) and in between insert words about God (vv. 20–21).

In vv. 23–26 the psalmist dares to challenge God to "Arise! Why are you asleep!" For God to sleep, especially in times of Israel's serious need, contradicts 121:4 and 1 Kings 18:27. God hides (Pss. 10:11; 13:1) and forgets (10:12)—a deaf and dumb deity (22:1–2). The psalmist's final appeal is to God's loving and faithful kindness, the technical phrase for the covenant (Exod. 34:6–7).

Psalm 45. As a nonreligious marriage song, Psalm 45 is the only such example in the Psalter and, as such, is capable of comparison with the Song of Songs. It was composed for a royal wedding, but whether for the Northern or Southern Kingdom is uncertain. Some favor the Northern Kingdom with its ivory elegance at Samaria (v. 8; 1 Kings 22:39; Amos 3:15; 6:4) and its contact with Tyre and Sidon (Ps. 45:12; 1 Kings 16:31).

Ancient rabbinical and early church writers consistently interpreted the psalm as an announcement of the messianic king. The Aramaic Targum addresses this ode to the "Messiah King." The symbolic interpretation of the relation between God and Israel as like that of spouses in marriage derives from the prophet Hosea and continues throughout the OT and NT (Hos. 2:21–22; Isa. 54; Matt. 9:15; John 3:29; Eph. 5:22–33; Rev. 21:1–2).

Psalm 45 includes a rather elegant introduction (v. 1) and conclusion (vv. 16–17) and centers upon the bridegroom (vv. 2–9) and the bride (vv. 10–15). According to the title, the psalm is to be sung according to the melody of the song "Lilies." The introduction in v. 1 is every bit as solemn as that for Psalms 49 and 78. The poet sings excitedly, majestically.

The bridegroom in vv. 2–9 is acclaimed principally as king. Surrounded with power and dignity, he is to protect the poor and secure justice against any opposing or deviant forces whether at home or abroad. "Your throne, O God" in v. 7 could be equally well translated "your most honorable throne"; the Hebrew word *'elohim* can be considered an adjective of majestic grandeur or awesome power (see Gen. 1:2, where the "spirit of God" is sometimes translated "a mighty wind," or 1 Sam. 18:10, which reads, lit., "a divine evil spirit," namely, "an overwhelming, preternatural evil force"). Ivory luxury (v. 8) reminds us of the northern capital of Samaria (Amos 3:15; 6:4), though Solomon's throne was inlaid with ivory (1 Kings 10:18) and Tyre was known for trafficking in ivory (Ezek. 27:15). The queen mother (v. 9) stood at the king's right hand. While wives remained hidden in the royal harem, the queen mother enjoyed rather free access to the king (1 Kings 1:11–14). Ophir was a region in southern Arabia and a supplier of fine gold (1 Kings 9:28; 10:11).

Verses 10–15 provide another impressive introduction. "Forget your people" inculcates more than loyalty to the husband; the foreign princess is not to import foreign religious beliefs and practices (1 Kings 11:1–10). Verse 11 implies honor as given to divinity (see v. 6 above); kings represented all Israel in their role as children or firstborn of God (2:7; Isa. 9:5).

The concluding praise in vv. 16–17 is reserved for the king and bridegroom. The "I" who speaks in v. 17 may be either the poet or God. In the latter case, the line serves as a divine blessing.

Psalm 46. Psalm 46 is the first in a trilogy praising God for Jerusalem and its Temple. It also served as the inspiration for Martin Luther's hymn "A Mighty Fortress Is Our God." This psalm, like Psalm 48, contains many mythological, Canaanite references honoring the creator, who struggled against chaotic forces to bring and keep peace (Isa. 51:9–10; Ps. 89:9–10). Psalm 46 divides neatly into vv. 1–3, praise of Yahweh-Creator in mythological language; vv. 4–7, praise of Jerusalem in historical terms; and vv. 8–11, praise of God with almost mystical awe. The Hebrew places the refrain only after the last two sections, allowing it to focus explicitly on Israel's religion. Since in the ancient worldview mountains were the structures that held up the sky and anchored the land over the waters of the deep, vv. 2–3 describe a veritable collapse of the earth into chaotic destruction. The psalmist uses this image as a means of expressing complete confidence in God. Because God is "our refuge and strength" (v. 1), there is no fear (v. 2).

In vv. 4–7 the image of water is that of a stream, joyfully flowing with life from the Lord's presence in the Temple. The language is religious metaphor, for no springs actually flowed from the altar.

Streams were associated with the Garden of Eden (Gen. 2:10), however, and in this way the Temple was symbolically linked with paradise (Ezek. 47; Zech. 14:8–9). It is thus an image of God's presence, and hence of security. The upheaval that has been depicted in cosmic terms in vv. 2–3 is depicted as political and military threat in v. 6. But the refrain in v. 7 reasserts the grounds for confidence. The term "LORD of hosts" is an ancient title for God, meaning "Yahweh of the [heavenly] armies" (1 Sam. 17:45). Verses 8–11 depict God as the triumphant king whose victory brings peace throughout the earth (Isa. 2:1–4; Mic. 4:1–4).

Psalm 47. This psalm celebrates the kingship of Yahweh and was probably used in connection with some form of liturgical procession (v. 5).

There are two calls for praise (vv. 1, 6), with the motivation after the first more patriotic (vv. 2–4) and after the second more religious (vv. 8–9a). Each stanza ends with a reference to the ritual enthronement of Yahweh (vv. 5, 9b). Various Temple ceremonies are reflected here (cf. Pss. 24; 68). The first part was sung during a procession with the Ark through the city (vv. 1–4) and its return to the Holy of Holies (v. 5). The second part envisions the obeisance of vassal nations before the princes of Israel.

Clapping of hands and shouting (vv. 1–4) were ceremonial actions originally associated with military or political action (Josh. 6:16, 20; 1 Sam. 10:24; 1 Kings 1:39–40). The epithet "LORD, Most High" goes back to an early period (Gen. 14:18–20), and that of "Great King" was used of Assyrian and Babylonian monarchs (Isa. 36:4, 13; 2 Kings 18:19, 28). Ceremonial trumpets were prominent in political celebrations (Josh. 6:20; 2 Sam. 15:10; 1 Kings 1:39; Ps. 81:3).

In v. 7, the injunction to "sing skillfully" refers to an artistic quality in the service. Verse 9 provides one of the very few references in the Psalms to Abraham (cf. Isa. 51:2, where Sarah also is included), the source of blessing for all nations (Gen. 12:1–3).

Jews recite this psalm seven times before sounding the trumpet to begin the new year. Christians associate the psalm with the Feast of the Ascension.

Psalm 48. In the opening stanza of Psalm 48 one meets a litany honoring Yahweh and Jerusalem, with epithets drawn from Canaanite mythology (vv. 1–3). This use of Canaanite language in Israel's religion is not surprising at Jerusalem, a cosmopolitan capital where cultures merged, including especially those of the sophisticated Canaanites. Yet the psalm remembers a startling victory for Israel. The mythological references are historicized within Israel's experience before becoming the language of faith (vv. 4–8). Similar to Psalms 46–47, the third section focuses upon liturgical functions, here a procession through the city (vv. 9–14).

The psalm commences with reference to God's home. "Recesses of the north" (v. 2) in Canaanite literature referred to Mount Zaphon (Mount Cassius in classical sources) near the mouth of the Orontes River in Syria. It was the major point of assembly for the gods (so Isa. 14:13). The symbolic identification of Mount Zion with Mount Zaphon serves as a claim for Yahweh's sovereignty and Jerusalem's status as the city of God. The notion that God's presence was a "sure defense" for Jerusalem became an important but theologically controversial claim (Isa. 7:1–7; Jer. 7:1–15).

Verses 4–8 attest to the memory of a near defeat and wondrous deliverance, perhaps like the invasion of Sennacherib in 701 B.C., which is relived through Temple ceremonies. Or, more likely, it may be stereotyped language that reflects historical memory only in a general way. "Ships of Tarshish" recall a battery of texts about fear and havoc: 1 Kings 22:49, a wreck of Israelite ships heading south in the Gulf of Elath; Jon. 1:3, a place in Spain, again with shipwreck in the story; Ezekiel 27, the collapse of Tyre under the image of shipwreck.

During the procession (vv. 9–14), the covenantal graces of Yahweh's loving-kindness and strong fidelity are celebrated. The very architecture of the city's physical defenses becomes a testimony to the God who protects Zion.

Psalm 49. This difficult psalm, disturbed in the Hebrew text, advances two positions about death, one that ultimately seems to make life and perhaps God meaningless and another that dares to reach beyond death. The text represents a dialogue between the two views.

After the imposing introduction in vv. 1–4, a chiastic structure appears (see commentary above on Ps. 19:1), so that the conservative position at the center is surrounded with the alternative one: *(A)* self-confidence, vv. 5–6; *(B)* earthly possessions, vv. 7–8; *(C)* overcoming death, v. 9; *(D)* the center piece, repeating the conservative position, vv. 10–14; *(C′)* overcoming death, v. 15; *(B′)* earthly possessions, vv. 16–17; *(A′)* self-confidence, vv. 18–19. The refrain (v. 20) repeats the pessimistic position.

The first of the Korah psalms (Pss. 42–43) began in a melancholy way, but ended with Temple worship flooded with light; this last one in the Korah collection also begins pessimistically with the theologically conservative position, but comes to consider life beyond the limits of earth.

The solemn introduction in vv. 1–4, similar to that of 45:1 and 78:1–11, is accompanied by the "music of the harp" (33:2). The touch of wisdom literature is very evident. Rich and poor, people of lowly or noble birth, are all invited; distinctions disappear in the face of death.

According to vv. 5–9, wealth can never provide enough resources to ransom someone from the grip of death and prevent the person from descending into the silent abode of the pit (6:5). Verse 9 denies what it is hoping against hope to be true.

Verses 10–14 are the centerpiece of the psalm and the heart of the problem. Orthodox theology refused to look beyond life on earth for fear of contamination with sorcery and mediums (Deut. 18:9–14). In its fear it showed its limits in dealing with the pastoral question of dying and death (Ps. 44). Verse 12, repeated in v. 20, was an enigmatic proverb intended to stir discussion as much as to settle it.

Even though vv. 15–20 go the same route as vv. 5–9, they are nonetheless dominated by the statement in v. 15, "God will ransom my life from the pit. Indeed, God takes me." After this verse we find the Hebrew particle *selah,* requesting a pause for meditation. The Hebrew verb "to take" is a strong word, used of people like Enoch and Elijah taken alive from earth by divine intervention (Gen. 5:24; 2 Kings 2:11). The verse is not necessarily speaking of being saved from premature death. The psalmist separates out the wealthy but unjust person who will never see light, but will vanish in oblivion. The enigmatic refrain, repeated again at the end, is all the more mysterious and open to question in view of v. 15.

Psalm 50. The first of the psalms of Asaph, the only one in Book Two of the Psalter, is a harbinger of those to follow in Book Three (Pss. 73–83).

After a solemn prelude similar to the preceding psalm, yet this time like a theophany (vv. 1–6), the author critiques worship (vv. 7–15) as unacceptable to God because of social injustices (vv. 16–21). The conclusion sounds one final warning (vv. 22–23).

Verses 1–6 recall the spectacular theophany of Sinai and the high liturgical pieces of Exodus 19; Habakkuk 3; and Psalm 68 (→ Theophany). Yet this introduction also blends in prophetic motifs, summoning the heavens and the earth for a public legal hearing (Mic. 1:2–4; Isa. 1:2–3). As in fiercely honest prophetic preaching, God appears just as formidable "in a consuming fire and roaring storm." The "covenant . . . by sacrifice" in v. 5 refers to the solemn covenant at Sinai between God and people (Exod. 24) and forms the basis for the following words of judgment.

As in the prophetic critiques (Isa. 1:10–16; Amos 5:21–24), there is no condemnation of sacrificial worship of itself (v. 8), though there is some sarcasm (vv. 9–13) reminiscent of the polemics against idols (Jer. 10:1–5; Bel and the Dragon). The problem here is that a dead conscience lies behind the feverish ritual, reeking with sacrificial smoke, on one side, and, on the other side, ignoring public morality (cf. Hos. 7:8). People think that ritual wraps its sacred mantle round them to hide the rotten morality of their lives. Ritual, however, is no alibi for sinning.

The "wicked" addressed in v. 16 should probably be understood as none other than the "people" of v. 6, who are as eager to recite statutes as they are to offer sacrifices, though without taking to heart the obligations of the covenant. Verses 18–20 allude to the Decalogue's prohibitions against theft, adultery, and false witness. Yet it is also possible, since priests and Levites had a responsibility to teach God's *torah,* that the criticism is directed specifically at them. These leaders are afraid to condemn what the people are doing lest they lose their stipends (Deut. 18:8). They even encourage sin to receive greater sin offerings and so "they feed off the sins of my people" (Hos. 4:8). Tolerating such deviousness, they give the impression that God also is deaf and blind to the situation (cf. v. 3). In concluding the entire psalm, vv. 22–23 echo phrases from the minor conclusion (vv. 14–15) and realistically warn once more against the sin of religious externalism. The guild of Asaph remains faithful to covenant and Temple.

Psalm 51. This is the fourth of the seven penitential psalms in Christian tradition (see also Pss. 6; 32; 38; 102; 130; 143). The psalm echoes many prophetic texts: for v. 1, see Isa. 63:7; for vv. 3–4, see Isa. 59:12–13; for v. 5, see Ezek. 16:2–4; Jer. 3:25; for v. 6, see Ezek. 36:25.

Despite its intensity, the psalm flows easily: vv. 1–2, introduction; vv. 3–6, confession of sin; vv. 7–9, prayer for forgiveness; vv. 10–12, prayer for moral renewal; vv. 13–17, promise or vow of thanksgiving; and vv. 18–19, liturgical addition.

The superscription associates the psalm with David's sin, the adultery with Bathsheba and the consequent death of Uriah. Although these superscriptions are the work of a postexilic editor and cannot be taken to indicate the authorship or origin of the psalms, the association of this psalm with that incident

is apt, for the narrative of 2 Samuel 12 emphasizes the gravity of the sin. Yet 2 Samuel 12–13 records David as saying only, "I have sinned against the LORD." The superscription's application of this psalm to David enriches the tradition by indicating the type of prayer appropriate for such remorse.

Verses 1–2 are a storehouse of Hebrew vocabulary for sin and forgiveness: *chanan,* "graciousness shown to nonrelatives and outsiders"; *chesed,* "loving bonds within family and tribe"; *rachamim,* "compassion," from the Hebrew for "womb"; *machah,* "wipe or blot out"; *pesha'*, "rebelliousness"; *kibbes,* "thoroughly wash [i.e., in cold water, beating the clothes against rocks and bleaching them in the sun]"; *'awon,* "twisted out of shape"; *chatta',* "like arrows missing the mark"; and *taher,* "cleanse so as not to contaminate others." With the clash of images behind these words, the text points out the disruption wrought by sin. Only God can restore the lost harmony (→ Sin).

The confession of sinfulness (vv. 3–6) begins with a conscience sensitive to wrongdoing (v. 3), an admission of guilt (v. 4) and of powerlessness to remedy the situation (vv. 5–6). Verse 3, very similar to Isa. 59:12, stresses the first-person "I" with a verb that reaches beyond theoretical knowledge to an inner experience. Verse 4a turns the focus just as pointedly upon God: "Against you, against you alone . . . and that which is evil in your eyes I did." Whatever harm sin inflicted upon people, it touched not just the holiness, but the kindliness of God. In v. 7 the guilt does not derive from conception and birth in themselves. The image rather indicates the pervasive depth and inescapability of sin. One can just as easily say, "In sin I eat or work."

The prayer for forgiveness in vv. 7–9 draws upon the memory of Temple worship: happy songs of praise; hyssop, a small bushy plant used for sprinkling to signify cleanliness (Lev. 14; Num. 19); and divine protection (Exod. 12:22). One of the Hebrew words for sin *(chatta')* is used as a verb here to mean "cleanse," as though if one thoroughly realizes the ugliness of sin, one will purge and purify oneself completely.

In the prayer for moral renewal (vv. 10–12), the psalmist admits that only God creates; the Hebrew word *bara'* has only God as its subject. The new creation will be total and integrated, as the phrase "sturdy spirit" implies.

In vv. 13–17 forgiveness fires one with zeal. From guilt (as blood signifies, Isa. 1:15; Hos. 4:2) to innocence, from death to life, the psalmist breaks into songs of praise and is restored to the Temple assembly (Pss. 15; 24). Yet Temple sacrifice did not achieve this transformation, only God did. Lest the previous verses be misinterpreted with anti-Temple bias, vv. 18–19 were added.

Psalm 52. The title, "maskil of David," introduces four of the least prominent psalms (Pss. 52–55) and, in this case, one of the more damaged textually. *Maskil* is a favorite wisdom word (Ps. 47:7; see the commentary above on Ps. 32). A wisdom psalm similar to Psalms 1 and 37, Psalm 52 discusses the lot of the liar (vv. 1–5) and the honest person (vv. 6–9), specifically contrasting worthy and unworthy priests (Ps. 16).

The mention of Doeg in the title alludes to his part as informer and executioner in the massacre of the priests at Nob (1 Sam. 21:7; 22:9–19). In the psalm some persons are "killing" others by lies and intrigue.

The style of addressing the wicked in person (vv. 1–5) is unusual in the Psalter, but normal with prophecy (Amos 4:6–11). The destructive power of lies, slander, and conspiracy is a common theme in wisdom literature (Prov. 6:12–15; 12:6; 24:1) and in Psalms (Pss. 7:14; 31:18; 109:2).

During the rapid demise of the wicked (vv. 6–9), the others will stand in silence, smiling in disbelief. "Green olive trees" are durable and long-lived. For other images of the righteous as a flourishing tree see 1:3; 92:12–15; Jer. 17:7–8. Verse 9 sees the righteous reinstated in the Temple assembly of "your devoted ones."

Psalm 53. This psalm is identical with Psalm 14 but for three exceptions. The divine name Yahweh drops out, as is customary in the Elohist Psalter (Pss. 42–83; see commentary above on Pss. 42–72, Book Two), in favor of the generic form for God, "Elohim." The title adds, "According to Mahalath. A maskil." (For the relation of the latter word to wisdom literature, see the commentary above on Ps. 32.) *Machalat* derives from a Hebrew root signifying sickness or sorrow. It may be the name of a song for the sick, according to whose melody this psalm was to be sung, or it may join this psalm to such a group of prayers. Ps. 53:5 rings with a more strident tone than Ps. 14:5–6.

Psalm 54. All the customary sections of a lament, even the standard vocabulary of supplication, occur in this short poem. Verses 1–2 call for help; v. 3, motivation; vv. 4–5, prayer of confidence; and v. 6, thanksgiving.

The title, like others for a "Psalm of David" in Book Two, is more extensive and more liturgical than those in Book One, as here with the reference to "stringed instruments." For the Ziphites' betrayal of David, see 1 Sam. 23:19; 26:1.

Expressions in vv. 1–3 are repeated in other psalms, a fact that indicates a repertoire of stock phrases for supplication: "save me" in 3:7; 6:4; 7:1; "hear my prayer" in 4:1; 17:1; "give ear" in 5:1; and "your name" in 20:1; 52:9. Verse 3 is identical with Ps. 86:14. The freewill offerings (vv. 6–7) are sacrifices not under obligation by ritual or personal vow.

Psalm 55. Psalm 55, poorly preserved, contains obscurities due as well to occasional Aramaic forms, a sign of late editing. The following outline directs us through the complicated form: vv. 1–2b, introduction with stereotyped phrases (54:1–3); vv. 2c–15, lament; vv. 16–

17, prayer for help; vv. 18–19, confidence; vv. 20–21, lament; and vv. 22–23, confidence. Sickness (vv. 4–5) and betrayal (vv. 13–14) leave little energy for good order and self-control. Although the introduction is somewhat flat, the rest of the psalm evinces vigor and passion.

Verses 2c–15 range over many human reactions to distress. Emotional distress and probably physical sickness are detected in vv. 4–5: heart tremor, terrors of death, fear, and shaking. Verses 6–8 evince gentle sensitivity (Song of Sg. 2:14), susceptible to disappointments. Jeremiah's longing to flee to a desert inn is recalled (Jer. 9:1). In vv. 12–14 the psalmist faces treachery among closest friends, again with parallels in Jer. 12:6; 20:10; Job 19:19; and Psalm 16. The Aramaic Targum supplies the name of David's betrayer, Ahithophel, who later committed suicide (2 Sam. 16:15–17:23). The language in v. 15 is reminiscent of the opening of the earth to swallow the jealous Levites of the Korah clan (Num. 16:31–34). (For the netherworld or Sheol, see the commentary above on Ps. 6:5.)

Verses 16–17 reflect continuous prayer. Verse 17 influenced the practice among the rabbis of praying: in morning, honoring Abraham (Gen. 19:27); at midday, honoring Isaac (Gen. 24:63); and at evening, honoring Jacob (Gen. 28:11). The early church adapted these three hours to Christ's resurrection in the morning, ascension at noon, and rest in the tomb at night. The psalm ends with a statement of confidence (vv. 22–23). The ultimate basis for trust is God.

Psalm 56. A supplication, this psalm begins a series of *miktam* psalms (Pss. 56–60; 16). This Hebrew word from the psalm's title possibly designates atonement.

The first section of the psalm includes 56:1a, call for help; vv. 1b–3, lament and confidence; and v. 4, refrain. The second section includes vv. 5–9, lament, curse upon the enemy, and further lament; and vv. 10–11, refrain. The third section is vv. 12–13, thanksgiving offering in the Temple.

A phrase in the title, translated literally, reads "dove of silent distant places." The LXX reads this phrase as "the people removed from the sanctuary" and the Aramaic Targum as "the community of Israel, composed of a silent dove in the time of the distant deportation from their cities." Dove, therefore, appears as a symbol of Israel (68:13). The title also associates the psalm with David's experiences in Gath (1 Sam. 21:10–14).

The first section (vv. 1–4), like the closing one (vv. 12–13), imparts a typical liturgical cast to the psalm: "Have mercy, God" (51:1) and "process before God in the light of the living" (43:3–4). Confidence is restored not simply by Temple services but by encounter with the person of God. The Hebrew text of v. 4 moves with a solemn cadence; it contrasts God with "flesh," humanity in its weakness.

In vv. 5–11 jealous adversaries employ intrigue and spying (Jer. 12:6) to draw religious people into open antagonism and displays of passion, reactions destructive to an image of piety. "My tears . . . in your flask" blend memories of sorrow with the custom of carrying water in a goatskin container for treks in the dry wilderness (Gen. 21:15). Suffering and tears strengthen the psalmist in resolve to seek the Lord (42:3). There is a long tradition for writing names in a book (v. 8) to ensure a permanent relationship with God (69:28; 139:16; Exod. 32:32; Job 19:23; Mal. 3:16).

In vv. 12–13 a vow is fulfilled through thanksgiving sacrifice (→ Vow). The reference to light reflects the dazzling sunlight over the land of Israel and the important role of lamps in Temple services and, generally, in Israelite life (43:3–4).

Psalm 57. Another song similar to Psalm 56 laments false accusations and harassment. Verses 1–5 petition God for help, ending with a refrain. After a transitional v. 6, one hears a quiet, somewhat plaintive song of thanksgiving, again with refrain, in vv. 7–11.

The phrase in the title, "Do not destroy," indicates a song according to whose melody this psalm is sung (Pss. 59; 75). The mention of David's flight from Saul into a cave alludes to 1 Sam. 22:1–2; 24:1–23.

In vv. 1–5 "wings" may refer to the cherubim on either side of the Ark, where God was said to be invisibly enthroned (Pss. 17:8; 36:7; Exod. 25:17–22; Isa. 6:1–2); the psalmist takes refuge in this intimacy with God (Pss. 2:12; 7:1; 11:1; 16:1). "Love and fidelity" describe the principal attributes of the covenant God (Exod. 34:6–7). Verses 3–4 and the transitional v. 6 repeat the *lex talionis* (7:16; 35:8) whereby God does not stand idly by when innocent people are persecuted. (For the presence of lions, see commentary above on Ps. 7:2; Amos 3:4.) The refrain (v. 5) rhetorically extends the domain of God, who is worshiped in the Temple across the cosmos. The language about heaven and earth, as in Isaiah 40–55, is highly poetical.

Verses 7–11, repeated in 108:1–5, perhaps celebrate the conclusion of a night vigil in the Temple, symbolizing the end of dark oppression. Dawn represents God's dramatic end of oppression (46:5; Isa. 37:36) and the extension of God's warm care in the light of a new day (Ps. 139:9). "Lyre and harp" spread the soft music of peace (33:2). Verse 10 has been drawn almost verbatim from 36:5. A liturgical refrain closes the psalm.

Psalm 58. Psalm 58 is a communal lament, with a Hebrew text poorly preserved. Verse 10 almost defies translation. Some of the most violent images in the Psalter occur here, moving in a world of magic and a dreadful miscarriage of justice, yet all the while pulsing with extraordinary vigor. Verses 1–2 introduce the conniving judges; vv. 3–5 their embodiment of evil; vv. 6–9, their punishment; and vv. 10–11, the vindication of the righteous.

Curiously, the title stipulates that a psalm of brute

force follow the melody of a song entitled "Do not destroy" (Pss. 57; 75). Is this a way of controlling anger?

The opening phrase in vv. 1–2 is generally emended to address the immoral judges as "gods," similar to the use of Hebrew *'elim* or *'elohim* for princes in 45:6 and for judges in 82:1, 6. Pompous, self-confident judges are sarcastically compared to lesser gods.

In vv. 3–5 the phrase about being wicked "from the womb" does not refer to the Christian doctrine of original sin, unknown in these ancient times, but to a sense of complete and utter evil. For their sly manipulation of justice, magistrates are compared not only to snake charmers, who procured oracles from the "whispering" of snakes, but also to the snakes themselves (140:3; Gen. 3:1).

The seven curses in vv. 6–9 intensify their fury with each new statement; seven signifies completion. Though vv. 10–11 repeat a hyperbole common in the ancient Near East (68:23; Isa. 63:1–6), the image nonetheless remains revulsive. It affirms the theological fact that God communicates in the Bible through human style and passion.

Psalm 59. A lament for an individual at a time of serious crisis within Israel is adapted to communal supplication (vv. 5, 13). The title refers to 1 Sam. 11–19.

Parallel movement is perceptible in vv. 1–9 and 10–17: lament and petition, vv. 1–5, 11–13; refrain about despicable dogs, vv. 6, 14; confidence of divine help, vv. 7–8, 15–16; and final refrain about "God, my stronghold," vv. 9, 17.

In vv. 1–9 the psalmist protests innocence from any serious offenses (for the vocabulary of sin, see commentary above on 51:1–2). The contempt shown here for dogs is typical of the Bible. They prowl through garbage heaps (1 Kings 14:11), savagely run in packs (Ps. 22:16), even provide a title for male prostitutes (Deut. 23:19). Verse 8, "You, LORD, indeed laugh at them," signals a victory celebration over a rival (2:4; 37:13; Isa. 37:22).

Verses 10–17 identify the offense as lies and intrigue. The psalmist prays that such sinners be caught in the web of their own deceit (35:7; 57:6). With their collapse the psalmist sings "at dawn," always a time of transition to a new day of divine favor (46:5; 90:14) and therefore a moment for prayer (5:3; 57:8; 92:2). The Hebrew word *chesed,* generally translated "steadfast kindness" within family or treaty relationships and used repeatedly in acclaiming the God of the covenant (Exod. 34:6–7), here stresses the strength of blood and covenant bonding (Ps. 59:9, 17; Jonah 2:9; Pss. 44:26; 94:18).

Psalm 60. Because of its many historical and geographical references, Psalm 60 is difficult for modern readers. It is fired by faith in God's mysterious presence within Israel's history. That the land was truly theirs by promise (Gen. 12:1–2; Deut. 34:1–4) and by right of settlement (Josh. 1:1–9) is presumed in the ancient oracle (vv. 6–8). Colossal military defeats shake this faith to its foundations (vv. 1–4) and lead to prayer (vv. 9–12). Verse 5 functions as a transition from the communal lament to an ancient oracle. Verses 5–12 occur almost identically in 108:6–13.

In Psalm 60 the long title adds a panoramic scope of history and geography. It is to be sung "according to the [melody of] lily of testimony," also used for Psalms 45, 69, and 80, psalms of high emotional intensity. "Testimony" recalls the tables of the law and the origins of Israel (Exod. 31:18), a historical moment thrown into doubt by later military defeat. Aram-naharaim is an ancient name for Mesopotamia, the birthplace of Abraham and Sarah as well as the wives of Isaac and Jacob (Gen. 11:27–28; 24; 29–30). Aram-zobah, north of Damascus, and Edom, south of the Dead Sea, were conquered by David (2 Sam. 8:3–14; 1 Chron. 18:2–3).

The lament in vv. 1–4 brings memories of Psalms 44 and 74, though more positively. The metaphor of earthquake (v. 2) evokes the language of Amos (1:1; 4:11; 6:11; 8:8; 9:1). In v. 4 "banner" and "flee" are spelled almost alike in Hebrew. With painful irony the banner leading forward to victory becomes the instrument for fleeing backward. Verse 5 is a transitional verse. "Loved one," the name for the vineyard in Isa. 5:1 and for Solomon in 2 Sam. 12:25, appeals to God's tenderness (Hos. 11).

Verses 6–8 speak of the ancient promise to the patriarchs and its initial fulfillment under Joshua and David. Shechem, about forty miles north of Jerusalem, quickly made an alliance with the newly settled Israelites. Succoth was east of the river Jordan where Jacob thanked God for his safe return to the promised land (Gen. 33:17–18). Gilead is a large area also east of the Jordan; Manasseh and Ephraim represent the principal Northern tribes. "Ephraim my helmet" alludes to the major military force, and "Judah my scepter" the place of royalty.

Verses 9–12 end with the faith that only God restores Israel's hopes. A reassuring though grim echo of the image in v. 12 is given in Isa. 63:1–6.

Psalm 61. Psalm 61 is a lament that opens with calling upon God (vv. 1–2a), prays for relief (vv. 2b–4), and concludes with thanksgiving (vv. 5, 8). Verses 6–7 were added, in a different meter, as intercession for the king. Many phrases are reproduced elsewhere in the Psalter.

The "shrill cry" at the beginning imparts a note of urgency (17:1). Verse 2 remains ambiguous. "Earth's end" may refer to exile (Isa. 41:5; 42:10) or possibly to the edge of the grave (Jon. 2:7–8). Verse 4 perhaps provides prayer for a return to the Temple, though "tent" may simply be a metaphor for protection (17:8; 27:5). Verses 5, 8 manifest a certitude of being heard, the ap-

propriateness of a vow (50:14), and thanksgiving sacrifice (4:5). Thanksgiving gives to God only the joyful acknowledgment of God's care. The prayer for the king (vv. 6–7) links the covenantal qualities of Yahweh as merciful and faithful with the eternal promises granted to David (2 Sam. 7:22–29; Ps. 89:1–4).

Psalm 62. A scribe uses the setting of a psalm of confidence (vv. 1–7) to communicate a message from the wisdom tradition (vv. 8–12). Throughout, one perceives the composure of a book like Proverbs. Yet it is the God of wisdom, not wisdom itself, who brings rest and strength. The major theme, "only in God," is stylistically evident in the Hebrew text, which begins six lines with the emphatic particle *ak*, "only," and the final two lines with another such particle, *ki*, "indeed." To have refrains at the beginning rather than at the end of strophes is unusual and attracts attention to the lovely way of singing one's soul to rest "only in God." The sequence flows easily: vv. 1–4, refrain and external threats; vv. 5–8, refrain and internal peace; and vv. 9–12, meditation upon social morality within the peace of God's presence. "Jeduthun" (v. 1) belonged to one of the guilds of singers at the postexilic Temple (1 Chron. 16:41; Pss. 39; 77).

In vv. 1–4 silence is more than a quality; literally, "only in God silence is my soul." Customary titles for God provide a litany of praise: "my rock," 18:2; "my salvation," 27:1; and "my fortress," 46:7, 11. Not to be disturbed means to share in the stability of Jerusalem (46:5). Though prosecuted, the psalmist calmly sees through the lies of hypocrites (Isa. 30:12–13; Ezek. 12:24).

The psalmist's interior peace (vv. 5–8) contrasts with the deceit of the persecutors (vv. 3–4). First a new litany in praise of God (v. 7), then wisdom addresses "my people." "Pouring out one's heart" metaphorically alludes to the practice of pouring water to express interior trust (42:4).

Verses 9–11 evince the trademarks of prophetic discourses for social justice, only here less stridently (Amos 8:4–8; Mic. 2:1–2). Another litany in praise of God is embedded within the final advice, typical of wisdom literature with its numerical form (Prov. 6:16–17) and its insistence upon human cooperation. While admitting human weakness (Ps. 62:10), with God providing strength and bonding in love, the respondents are expected to give a proper accounting of their lives (Ezek. 18).

Psalm 63. Though a lament, Psalm 63 breathes such tranquillity it almost modulates into a prayer of confidence. As it reaches out to speak in the name of the king, the individual merges into the community. The words are reminiscent of Psalms 27, 42–43, 84, and 91 and their desire for dwelling peacefully with God, yet here the tone never reaches the thirst and darkness of Psalms 42–43, nor the distance of Psalm 84, nor the demonic dangers of Psalm 91. Such peace befits a morning prayer, as Psalm 63 became for the early church. The Armenian church prays Psalm 63 at the Eucharist.

After the introductory lament (v. 1), the language moves in the direction of a narrative of thanksgiving. The final section focuses on the king (vv. 9–11).

The title associates this psalm with David's experience when he wandered in a wilderness (1 Sam. 24). Verse 1 includes a cry from the depths, "God, my God!" and adds emphatically, "you!" as though God were already present. "I seek you" represents the word from Israel's wisdom literature for discovering God in everyday affairs. The same word stands for "dawn" and explains the use of this psalm for morning prayer. In vv. 2–6 "I looked" has the sense of seeking a vision of the mysterious God in sanctuary worship. "Strength and glory" are associated with the Lord of the sanctuary (24:8; 29:1–2). "I bless you in my living" so that life itself, received totally from God, becomes the psalmist's return to God. The strophe ends with imagery evoking a night vigil in the Temple and a sacred meal, gratefully celebrating God's gift of life (cf. Exod. 18:9–12; 24:11).

Verses 7–8 blend the thought into an expression of confidence, again within the sanctuary and beneath the wings of the Lord (Ps. 57:1) where "my soul clings toward you," Hebrew language for intimacy and longing. Verses 9–11 conclude with a final prayer for the king.

Psalm 64. Psalm 64 comprises an individual's lament over intrigue. The psalm imparts a personal touch to a common, disquieting problem. Hounded by deceit, the psalmist is not discouraged. The poor transmission of the text, especially the almost untranslatable v. 7, has not deprived the style of its vigor. After the call for help (vv. 1–2) because of evil schemes (vv. 3–6), God intervenes to restore trust (vv. 7–9), a cause for rejoicing (v. 10).

Opponents who scheme secretly are to be feared more than an enemy in open warfare, not only because it is difficult to second-guess them, but also because their religious appearance makes one doubt one's own faith (vv. 1–2). Although the images in vv. 3–6 are drawn from the hunting and stalking of animals, the secret manipulation hints as well at sorcery (Pss. 58; 91), always possible when religious people are laying the snares.

Verses 7–9 present God's response with words from the preceding section, like shooting arrows. God meets the schemers on their own ground (18:25–26) and shatters their sham of religious righteousness. The *lex talionis* shows up again (35:8); the results of sin turn out to punish the sinner. "All humanity," Israelite or not, understands this kind of language and peers to the depths of what is really happening. The psalm ends

(v. 10) with the motif of seeking refuge in the Lord (2:12; 7:1).

Psalm 65. Psalm 65 is a national hymn of thanksgiving perhaps to celebrate the end of a drought. It was possibly used for the Feast of Tabernacles, when prayers were offered for rainfall (Lev. 23:33–43; Zech. 14:16–21). In the spirit of pilgrimage, the LXX extends the application to "exiled people as they begin their return."

A rather long introduction locates the psalmist within the sanctuary thanking God and offering appropriate sacrifice (vv. 1–4). The next two stanzas allude to the struggle of God the creator with angry oceans (vv. 5–8) and the quiet presence of God the recreator in rainfall (vv. 9–13).

In vv. 1–4 the opening line is generally translated according to the ancient versions, yet the Hebrew text may be correct: "for you, God, silence is praise," a possible reference to congregational reverence (Hab. 2:20) as the thanksgiving sacrifice was placed on the altar for burning. The service included burning a small part of the animal in adoration, followed by a sacred meal (Deut. 16:1–15; Exod. 18:9–12; Ps. 22:22–26). Verse 4 perhaps refers to this sacred meal. (For vows, see 22:25; 50:14; for a description of the ceremony, 118:19–20, 26–28.)

In vv. 5–8 the psalmist's words sweep back to God's struggle in creation (89:9–10; Isa. 51:9–10), which was also a battle for justice (Pss. 24; 97). The Temple was the place where God maintained harmonious order in creation and in history. The world's inhabitants marvel at such signs (1 Sam. 10:7; Isa. 7:10–14) and wonders (Isa. 40:5).

Verses 9–13 rejoice in a bountiful rainfall, not just the heavy precipitation in late November through February, but also the special gift of the early rains in October and early November as well as the late rains in March and early April (Deut. 11:10–17; Joel 2:23). The literal translation of v. 11b, "The tracks of your chariot overflow with fat," blends ancient images: God rides upon a chariot through the sky (18:10; 104:3); "fat" signifies abundance of life or its best part, reserved for the altar (20:3), a sign of rejoicing (23:5) and prosperity (Prov. 11:25); "tracks . . . overflow" recalls the overladen cart dropping some of its produce along the way.

Psalm 66. Although structurally a complex psalm, the themes of deliverance from trials and of thanksgiving at a sanctuary appear clearly and repeatedly in Psalm 66. A close reading perceives that the three major sections are carefully integrated. Each includes special lines for praise and then for thanksgiving: vv. 1–4, 5–7, for past deliverance; vv. 8–9, 10–12, for a recent deliverance of Israel; and vv. 13–15, 16–19, for the deliverance of the psalmist.

The psalm is animated by an artistic melange of individual and community, of formal and spontaneous prayer, of past and present deliverance. Although Psalm 66 transports one back into the past with Moses in the Exodus, it challenges readers to relive these experiences of salvation in their own lives (cf. Deut. 5:1–5; 6:20–25). In v. 1a some Christian manuscripts, including the Vg., add, "A psalm of the resurrection," in accord with the psalm's spirit of new life after harsh trials.

Verses 1b–7 recall the Exodus out of Egypt. Points of contact show up with Psalms 96–100 and Isa. 40–55. The opening invitation is identical with those of Pss. 98:4a and 100:1. Although "the glory of his name" occurs in 29:2, here the psalmist does not invoke "the children of the gods." (For a similar theological refinement, see the commentary below on 96:7–9.) In summoning "all the earth," the psalmist confesses that what happens to Israel affects all other nations. "Come and see" (v. 5) refers to ceremonies symbolizing a great act of salvation, probably the Exodus through the Red Sea. Verse 6, "There let us rejoice" may indicate the sanctuary, some say at Gilgal near the river Jordan. Psalm 114, which combines crossing the Red Sea with the passage through the river Jordan, may also have originated at Gilgal. God "rules forever" by enabling Israel to relive the Exodus in other deliverances like the return from Exile.

Verses 8–12 focus upon a deliverance within the recent experience of the Israelite community. The references to being tested (Ps. 95:9; Jer. 12:3; Job 23:10), tried as silver (Ps. 12:6; Isa. 1:25), brought into a snare (Ps. 57:6; Ezek. 12:13), severely constrained (Deut. 28:53), and walked upon by others (Isa. 51:23) accumulate images for painful trials from throughout the OT, summarized in passing through fire and water (Isa. 43:2). God is mysteriously preparing a new Israel, as one sees has been the result in the biblical references just cited.

Verses 13–20 first present a liturgy of thanksgiving performed publicly by the psalmist and then refer to personal trials that the psalmist expressed by referring to biblical traditions about Israel's sufferings and deliverance by God. Holocausts, or "burnt offerings," were completely burned on the altar out of adoration and total self-giving to God; other offerings were partially burned on the altar, thus providing food for a sacred meal of thanksgiving (Exod. 18:9–12; Deut. 26:1–11; 1 Kings 8:62–64). Verses 16–19 recall personal confessions of deliverance as in 22:22–26.

Psalm 67. The interpretation of the short, intense Psalm 67 depends upon the translation of the verbs in vv. 6–7 and upon the sequence of its lines. If the verbs are read in the past tense, as in most translations, then the psalm thanks God for bountiful crops (cf. Lev. 23). If the verbs are rendered as a prayer or exhortation, grammatically possible ("May the earth give its fruit . . . and may God bless us"), then the psalm turns into

a community lament after a poor harvest! Within the psalm the enigmatic *selah* calls for a pause after vv. 1 and 4; v. 4 thus becomes the centerpiece, an announcement of God's providential care over the nations of the world. Without the *selah*, the psalm divides into three sections with the emphasis upon the refrain after each (it is supplied after v. 7). In this case the nations stand in awe at what God is doing for Israel, as in Isa. 40:1–5. Each explanation is legitimate, depending upon the occasion for worship. The image of harvest announces the final salvation (Hos. 14:5–9; Isa. 45:8; 61:11).

The service opens with the priestly blessing from Num. 6:24–26. The "way" of God (v. 2) leads through the farmers' fields; "salvation" consists in rain and a good harvest. The refrain thanks God, the source of all good gifts.

Psalm 68. Like a centuries-old cathedral, Psalm 68 manifests exceptional antiquity, major historical and theological developments, confessions of faith at times of crises, war, and neglect, and further use—artistic accretions not always in good taste or in the name of the best theology. Within Psalm 68 several significant movements are detected. One is historical: from the period of Moses (vv. 1–3, 6–8) to settlement in the land (vv. 4–5, 9–10), from the time of Deborah and the judges (vv. 11–14) to the capital and Temple at Jerusalem (vv. 15–18), military adventures (vv. 19–23), victory celebrations (vv. 24–27), political and military problems (vv. 28–31), and prophetic hopes (vv. 32–35). This sweep through history theologically accepts dramatic changes, like that from the wilderness austerity with Moses to the cosmopolitan grandeur of David and Solomon, or that from the sacred object of an Ark carried by the people in their journeys to the sacred place of the Temple where people came to pray before the Ark, or that from charismatic rule by judges and prophets to the autocratic institution of kings, or the change from great deeds of salvation in early history to their ceremonial symbolism in Temple ritual, or the geographical transfer of places of worship from the meeting tent in the wilderness to the sanctuary of Mount Tabor and finally to the Jerusalem Temple. Psalm 68 can be read and celebrated on many different levels. Though a unified composition, it has aged over centuries of inspired composition and use.

Verses 1–3 and 4–6 each form a minihymn with its own call to praise and its own motivation. Verses 1–3, set in the Sinai wilderness, repeat the summons to break camp under God's guidance (Num. 10–35). Here, however, the passage moves from the second-person summons ("Arise, LORD") to the third-person statement ("God arises"). The statement becomes more generic or symbolic; each day in the land is like breaking camp and moving onward. Because this psalm is in the midst of the "Elohist Psalter" (see commentary above on Pss. 42–72, Book Two), the divine name changes from Yahweh to Elohim, or God, the first of twenty-three times in the psalm, with Yahweh used only once in v. 17 and an abbreviated form, Yah, in v. 18. In vv. 4–6 God is acclaimed with Canaanite imagery as one "who rides upon the clouds" (18:10; 104:3), but associated closely with the compassionate and faithful God of the covenant (Exod. 3:7–8; 34:6–7).

After the solemn introduction, vv. 7–10 begin over again, echoing the theophany of Mount Sinai (Exod. 19) and the victory song of Deborah (Judg. 5). This latter may have been originally composed for a celebration at the sanctuary on Mount Tabor (Judg. 4:12–14). Already the biblical accounts do more than record events; they provide texts for sanctuary worship so that application can be made to the lives of later generations of Israelites. Verses 11–14 continue to catch memories of the days of the judges, when women spread the news of victory and divided the spoils (Judg. 5:30). (For the comparison of Israel to a dove, see Hos. 7:11; 11:11.)

Verses 15–18 record the installation of the Ark in the Jerusalem Temple, transferring to the Temple the theological significance of Sinai. God, accordingly, is no longer revealing the law but, through the Levites and priests, is interpreting and applying the law (Deut. 31:9–29). Verse 18 reads, "You [God] have gone up the mountain . . . received human beings as gifts . . . the LORD God within the [holy] dwelling." At first this verse mirrored a ceremony in which the Ark was returned to the Holy of Holies after a triumphal procession through the city (Pss. 47; 132) and the booty of war, including slaves, was offered to the Temple (Josh. 9:23; Neh. 7:72). Later Israelite armies no longer marched to war, so weak and minuscule had the country become. The scribes were scandalized that God should need gifts, particularly slaves. A new reading, therefore, was provided in what is called the style of midrash, or rabbinic interpretation. Moses, not Yahweh, ascends the mountain of Sinai and receives gifts from Yahweh, namely the Torah. Eph. 4:7–13 relies upon the midrash and reinterprets the passage about Christ who ascends on high and, by sending the Spirit, confers the gifts of leadership in the church (→ Midrash).

Verses 19–23 continue to celebrate the military victory, v. 23 with violent but stereotypic language (58:10; Isa. 63:1–6). Many biblical allusions occur here: the defeat of King Ahab near Bashan (1 Kings 22:29–40) and the end of the wicked queen Jezebel (2 Kings 9:30–37), all with the lesson that evil is not tolerated by God, whether among foreigners or Israelite royalty. Verses 24–26 continue the ceremony with a new procession. The presence of northern tribes at Jerusalem points to the reign of David or, better, of Solomon (1 Kings 12). The procession of both women and men into the inner courts of the sanctuary also points to a pre-exilic period before this area was reserved to Levites and

priests. The psalm continues with prayer (vv. 28–31), implying military humiliation. In v. 32, another mini-hymn, with God again enthroned in the heavenly heights (v. 4), reaches like the earlier parts of the psalm across the nations of the earth to conclude this extraordinary song of national thanksgiving.

Psalm 69. One of the longer laments of an individual sufferer, Psalm 69 is also one of the most quoted psalms in the NT, especially in the passion narrative. Moreover, it contains an extensive curse of the enemy (vv. 22–28), thus providing an opportunity to deal theologically with both the early Christian use of this psalm as well as with the curse tradition itself.

The psalmist's words are reminiscent of the prophet Jeremiah and like this prophet he was hounded unjustly (v. 4), even by close friends and family members (v. 8). The delicate sensitivity of this writer shows up not only in the personal agony of forced isolation (v. 20), but also in the resultant outburst of anger and cursing (vv. 22–28). It is not surprising that the writer becomes physically sick (vv. 3, 14–15, 18). There are a number of contacts between the book of Jeremiah and this psalm: vv. 1–4, in the deep mire, Jeremiah 38; v. 3, crying out, Jer. 45:3; v. 7a, shame before God, Jer. 15:15; v. 8, betrayed by family and friends, Jer. 12:6; and v. 20, God knows the brokenhearted and their shame, Jer. 15:18; 18:23; 23:9.

The sections are clearly identifiable: v. 1a, call for help; vv. 1b–4, lament; v. 5, confession of sin; v. 6, prayer; vv. 7–12, lament; vv. 13–18, prayer; vv. 19–21, lament; vv. 22–28, curse of the enemy; v. 29, final prayer; vv. 30–33, thanksgiving; and vv. 34–36, later addition (51:18–19). The gloom turns out to be heavier, the words of thanksgiving shorter, the anger against the enemy fiercer than in Psalm 22.

The title suggests that the psalm be sung according to the melody of a song named "Lilies," like Psalms 45, 60, and 80, all highly emotional compositions. In calling for fasting and sackcloth in vv. 10–11, the psalmist is following popular religion, manifested in the prophetic books (Josh. 7:6; 1 Sam. 7:6; 1 Sam. 12:16; Isa. 58).

The slanderers sat openly and shamelessly "at the [city] gate," where everyone came and went, the obvious place for news and gossip (1 Sam. 4:13), for business even as important as lawsuits (Deut. 17:5; 21:19). Evil closes in upon the psalmist from all sides, like angry floodwaters (Ps. 46:2–3), swirling one into the netherworld (6:5; 16:10; 49:14).

There are frequent citations of Psalm 69 in the NT: v. 4 in John 15:25; v. 9 in John 2:17; Rom. 15:3; and Heb. 11:26; v. 21 in Matt. 27:34; vv. 22–23 in Rom. 11:9–10; v. 24 in Rev. 16:3; v. 25 in Acts 1:20; and v. 28 in Rev. 3:5. NT writers read OT passages within the context of their own times and experiences.

Verse 9a, "zeal for your house eats me [alive]," when quoted in John 2:17 and further explained in John 2:21, undergoes substantial change in meaning. For the psalmist, zeal was directed principally toward the house of Israel, secondarily toward the Temple; he was the one being eaten alive by hostile reactions to his zeal. For John, Jesus' own zeal for the holiness of the Temple consumed him emotionally as he drove out the money-changers. Later the image changes so that his body becomes the Temple, to be consumed on the cross by the jealous rage of persecutors. Events in the life, death, and resurrection of Jesus influenced the way in which the OT passage was understood.

The other major theological matter raised by Psalm 69 revolves around the curse of the enemy. The explanation of such curses involves a number of issues. Biblical language is emotional and eloquent; it blessed and cursed with intensity. Some of the rhetoric followed its own literary patterns, so that 137:9 does not mean to dash babes against the city walls, but rather that the enemy city and its inhabitants be conquered at any cost (→ Curse and Blessing).

The pronouncement of a sacred curse upon the enemy as well as upon a person suspected of a crime was intended to go into effect only if the person or group was really guilty (Num. 5:18–28; Deut. 27:15–26). Israel did not have an internal police force or prisons; the judicial process was handled speedily. The curse was one way of hurrying the procedure and leaving the result completely in God's hands.

Biblical anthropology did not easily distinguish sin from sinner or the individual from the community. This outlook had its disadvantages, but it also kept people thinking in a communal and responsible way. Based upon the preaching of Jeremiah (2:5, 19; 31:18), as developed within the fourth song of the suffering servant in Isaiah (52:13–53:12), some Israelites believed that the sorrow inflicted upon the sinner or the servant could be turned into a purifying and transforming force for the larger community. One must be human to pray, and oppressors are known to dehumanize their victims. As a result, those who have not been dehumanized must pray in place of those who have been victimized, and on such rare occasions there is only one possible prayer, that God destroy the oppressor. The people who wrote the curse psalms had suffered radically for sin. Such suffering serves to explain the prominence of the curses as well as the bitter tone of these psalms.

Psalm 70. From the viewpoint of literary excellence and textual preservation, Psalm 70 is one of the finest. It is repeated in 40:13–17, though with some textual disturbance and with the reintroduction of the divine name Yahweh. Psalm 70 is within the "Elohist Psalter" (see commentary above on Pss. 42–72, Book Two). The title to Psalm 70 adds that it is to be employed with memorial offerings (Exod. 30:11–16; Lev. 2:2). The opening verse of Psalm 70 became the traditional way for beginning the divine office of psalms and readings in Christian monastic communities.

Psalm 71. An elderly (vv. 9, 18), sick (v. 20) person evokes the memory of other psalms for strength to withstand persecution or rejection in Psalm 71. Verses 1–3 are identical with 31:1–3a; vv. 5–6 similar to 22:9–12; v. 7a to 31:11, 12; v. 12a to 22:11; 35:22; v. 12b to 38:22; 40:13; v. 13 to 35:4, 26; v. 18 to 22:30, 31 and v. 19 to 36:5. Although a patchwork without title, Psalm 71 nonetheless offers its own quiet insight into old age.

The sections of the psalm are not clearly differentiated. After the introductory statement of confidence in "you, LORD" (vv. 1–3; an unusual invocation of Yahweh in the Elohist Psalter), the psalm continues with petition and motivation for the lament (vv. 4–13), follows with hope (vv. 14–21), and concludes with anticipated thanksgiving (vv. 22–24).

Verse 6 evokes Jeremiah (Jer. 1:5; 20:16–17) and Isaiah (Isa. 49:1). The psalmist appears as a sign or portent (v. 7), whose life of suffering becomes a more effective instrument of help to others than words had ever been. There are moments of revolt and anger (v. 13), but this single verse of cursing is mild compared to the preceding Psalm 69.

Concern for the community shows up in a scribal correction in v. 20. The Hebrew text preserves two different readings, one of which, reflected in most translations, continues the first-person singular orientation of the text ("you have caused me to see . . ."). The other reading, however, is first-person plural ("you have caused us to see . . ."), the voice of the congregation, those who identify themselves and their faith with the psalmist.

Psalm 72. Book One of the Psalter began and now Book Two ends with attention to the royal family of David. (For other royal psalms, see Pss. 2; 45; 89; 110; 132).

Such is the case of Psalm 72, composed, as the title declares, "for Solomon," since it reflects hopes of justice for the needy and of fertility for the country, with promises of eternal dynasty, qualities associated with royalty in the ancient Near East. Whether or not the psalm actually originates in the Solomonic period is difficult to say, since psalms are very difficult to date, and the titles are not a reliable guide to the original context. Nevertheless, Psalm 72 was most likely used for the coronation of kings of the Davidic dynasty in pre-exilic Jerusalem. It provides a valuable glimpse into the theology of kingship. After the Babylonian conquest of Judah and the end of Davidic kingship, the psalm came to be interpreted eschatologically.

After the introduction (vv. 1–4), four short stanzas acclaim the right exercise of justice and the prosperity of the country (vv. 5–7, 8–11, 12–14, 15–16). The psalm ends with v. 17. Verses 18–19 mark a formal conclusion to the second book of the Psalter, v. 20 to the major collections of psalms from the guild of David.

The opening words of vv. 1–4, "God, give your decrees to the king," probably accompanied a ritual act of handing to the king the scroll of the laws; or, since Israel was an oral culture in which important political events were enacted publicly, the decrees may have been given by proclamation. "He shall judge your people" significantly points out that the people are God's, not the king's. "To judge" is repeated twenty-five times in the psalm, an indication of the seriousness of proper public order. The judgment extends first of all to the poor, who will loom large on the messianic canvas (Zeph. 2:3; 3:12; Isa. 41:17). If a good order embraces the poor and defenseless, then it will certainly be universal, and the mountains will resound with "peace" (Heb. *shalom*), the integral, all-embracing fulfillment.

Verses 5–7 paint a panorama of peace and justice. To the extent that this vision reflects God's hopes, it will be eternal. Rain is a major symbol of abundance (Hos. 6:3; Isa. 45:8; 55:10–11; Joel 2:23).

Verses 8–11 revive the vast extent of the kingdom, reached only in the days of David (Gen. 15:18; Exod. 23:31; Josh. 1:4; Zech. 9:10), not the more limited boundaries of post-Solomonic days (Deut. 34:1–2; Judg. 20:1; 1 Kings 5:5). Tarshish (in western Spain) and Arabia were never subject to Judah. Verse 10 is simply a hyperbolic wish (cf. 89:25). The ritual blessing at the end (v. 17) is formulated from the promises to Abraham (Gen. 12:2–3; 22:17–18), bestowed also upon Isaac (Gen. 26:1–5).

Verses 18–19 conclude the second book (Pss. 42–72) and tie in well with the blessing of the preceding verse. Verse 20 may originally have marked the end of the Davidic collection (Pss. 51–72), though in the final form of the book other Davidic psalms are also included (Pss. 86; 101; 103; 108–110; 122; 124; 131; 138–145).

Psalms 73–89

Book Three

The major collection of Asaph (Pss. 73–83) completes the "Elohist Psalter" (see commentary above on Pss. 42–72, Book Two). A second group of psalms from the guild of Korah appears next (Pss. 84–88, except 86). The final, Psalm 89, comes from the repertoire of psalms for Davidic kings. With the third book, the three principal guilds of psalm writers have completed their contribution to the songs and prayers of Israel.

Psalm 73. Psalm 73, an Asaph psalm, treats the topic of retribution for good and wicked people more vigorously than Psalms 1 or 37, more confidently than Psalm 49 or Job, and with less cynicism than Ecclesiastes. The writer, like the author of Psalm 16, appears at home in the sanctuary, something to be expected in the Asaph collection (1 Chron. 16:7, 37). The style of questioning and challenging God about human affairs appeared occasionally in early literature (Exod. 3:11; 5:22; 32:11), but became solidly placed in biblical tradition with

Habakkuk (Hab. 1:5, 13b) and especially with the confessions of Jeremiah (Jer. 12:1–5; 15:10–21). The Hebrew text is not the best; vv. 10 and 20 make little sense.

The psalm divides into a series of dialogues about the good and wicked: first, vv. 1–12, the unhappiness of the just (vv. 1–3) and the prosperity of the unjust (vv. 4–12); second, vv. 13–20, confiding to God the lot of the just (vv. 12–17) and the unjust (vv. 18–20); and third, vv. 21–27, the crisis and its quick solution for the just (vv. 21–26) and for the unjust (v. 27). Verse 28 concludes with a reference to God as king.

Verses 1–12 begin with absolute faith in the goodness of God. Whatever the problem, the biblical writer never doubts God's goodness, only how to reconcile it with human events. The first confession of Jeremiah begins pointedly: "You are faithful, LORD, but I must still argue against you" (Jer. 12:1); God's reply in v. 5 never answers the question, but rather insists upon stronger faith (Jer. 12:5). In the Hebrew text of Ps. 73:1, "How good toward Israel is God!" "Israel" is generally changed to read "the just," a variation quite simple in the Hebrew, so that the personal dialogue of the psalm explicitly embraces all the people. Verses 4–5 sweep rhetorically beyond the truth. If one were to inquire of wicked people, they would admit to their share of sickness and troubles. Yet prosperous people can hide their problems more easily than the poor. Privacy is seldom a poor person's luxury. What the wicked cannot mask are the effects of luxury on their puffy faces (v. 7); their dangling jewelry reinforces their cruel indifference toward others (v. 6).

Verses 13–20 begin as emphatically as v. 1, with an effective use of sound in the Hebrew text: "Indeed, a pure heart is empty and useless!" The image of washing hands comes from the Temple ritual (26:6) and is often used as an expression of moral purity (Job 9:30; Isa. 1:16). Yet for the psalmist to walk in the attractive way of the wicked would end in treacherous action toward "the generation of your children," to the covenant faith of one's offspring, who are really God's children (v. 15; Gen. 17:7). Verse 17 may refer to night vigils in the Temple (42:4), where in silent darkness the psalmist finds the strengthening light of God's word (139:11–12).

Verses 21–27 begin in desperation, always the moment of surrendering, either to despair or, heroically, to God. God grants a passing intuition of eternity, the memory of which sustains a person for years afterward. Eternity, however, is not time, but the endless embrace of Yahweh. The language of vv. 23–26 recalls 16:5 and is exquisite with strong repetitions of "you" and "I" (v. 23) or with the contrast between a heart like flesh wasting away and a heart with the endurance of a rock because of its experience of the Lord's delight (v. 25).

Psalm 74. Perhaps only a Temple guild as self-confident as Asaph could write so realistically concerning the tragedy of 587 B.C., the destruction of the Temple and the exile of Israel, all the while sustaining faith in the covenant upon which Yahweh seems to have reneged (v. 20). For these various reasons Psalm 74, along with Psalm 79, enables Jewish people to commemorate national tragedies, so that the absent God can be tracked down by intuitions of faith. Such catastrophes as the breaching of the city walls by the Babylonians (2 Kings 25:3–4), the burning of the Temple (2 Kings 25:8–10), and the murder of Gedaliah by fellow Israelites (2 Kings 25:25) were commemorated by days of mourning and fasting during the Exile and afterward (Zech. 7; 8:19). Very different from prophecy, this psalm never puts any blame on the people's sins; it is too close to the agony to speculate about the cause of such a tragedy.

The grammar of verbs within the psalm leads to its explanation and divisions: imperatives addressed to God that Yahweh live up to promises (vv. 1–3, 18–23); perfect or completed tense of verbs representing the total victory of the enemy (vv. 4–9, 12–17); and imperfect or incompleted tense of verbs for Yahweh's impotent distance from Israel's tragedy (vv. 10–11). If one recognizes chiastic structure here (an *A B C B′ A′* pattern), then God is at the center, dealing with divine anger by remaining indifferent and inactive. The psalm enables Israelites to bring the silence of broken hearts before the silent Yahweh. Implied in the presence of God is a faith, albeit plunged in dark agony, that God affirms what is happening and that this God remains faithful to the covenant.

Verses 1–3 begin with the challenging "Why?" frequent enough in Israel's laments (10:1; 22:1; 44:24). Yahweh is not asked but told, with the imperative mood of the verb, to "remember" the Mosaic covenant (Exod. 34:6–7) and the promises to Jerusalem (Ps. 46). God is told to walk through the ruins of the desecrated holy place, as though God may have forgotten what has happened.

Verses 4–9 allow one to walk through the stages of Jerusalem's destruction: v. 4, the enemy has broken through the walls and set up victory banners within the city; vv. 5–6, they plunder and destroy; and v. 7, the Temple is put to the torch. In Isa. 63:7–64:11 the agony of such moments turns into the question "Why do you remain silent, LORD?" the only kind of prayer possible. The denial of prophetic presence in v. 9 overlooks Jeremiah, who remained in Jerusalem throughout the final chaotic days. Perhaps the author's problem is precisely with a Jeremiah who announced such an outcome as God's punishment against a sinful people (Jer. 26; 28). The psalmist refuses to accept the ruins of Jerusalem and Temple as a "sign" that God spoke through the prophets. In exile, the author of Second Isaiah argued repeatedly on Jeremiah's side against the position of this psalm (Isa. 44:24–45:7). Other writers, earlier (1 Sam. 3:1; Lam. 2:9) as well as later (1 Macc. 4:46; 9:27), have recognized the silent void of prophecy.

Verses 12–17, again with the perfect tense of completed action, compare the destruction of Jerusalem with the chaos before the earth was created. If the psalmist confesses that God created good order and fruitful life out of such uncontrollable darkness, then the implication is whispered: God can do it again. This description of creation is one of the closest in the Bible to Canaanite descriptions. In the silence of God, the psalmist felt obliged to reach beyond the customary language of Israelite religious confession, for how can creeds exist in the absence of the God whom they confess? Verses 18–23 conclude this strange statement of faith ordering God to "remember" and to "rise" and "defend," again to "remember" and not to "forget."

Psalm 75. The question of retribution in Psalm 75 recalls wisdom literature (Pss. 1; 37), yet the focusing upon God as judge leads in the direction either of prophetic psalms (Ps. 50) or even of eschatological psalms (Pss. 96–99). Deliverance from injustice points to thanksgiving. A vigorous style (vv. 4–5) and strong imagery (vv. 3, 8) point one to the Temple. In fact, Temple liturgy may be the clue to appreciating this work: v. 1, a communal expression of thanksgiving; vv. 2–5, an oracle from the Lord, delivered by a priest or Temple prophet; vv. 6–8, the verdict upon the wicked, recited by a choral group; and vv. 9–10, a conclusion of praise sung by an individual cantor.

The call for thanksgiving in v. 1 associates God's imminent judgment against the wicked with God's "wondrous deeds" in Israel's history, as these are acclaimed and symbolically reenacted at the Temple. The litany of God's saving acts explains the divine name (Exod. 3:13–15).

The oracle in vv. 2–5 is placed at a fixed time, possibly on one of Israel's three major feast days (Lev. 23). Verse 3, typical of other Temple services, introduces Canaanite images of the world's collapse until God brings stability (46:1–3; 74:12–17). "Horns," a symbol of strength from animal life (22:21; Dan. 8), came to be associated with the corners of the altar and divine strength (Lev. 4:7; Ps. 118:27). The latter use may have prompted the psalmist to think of the animal-like force and fury that the wicked directed against the Lord as though they were divine.

Verses 6–8, reaching to the four corners of the universe, east, west, desert (to the south of Israel), and mountains (to the north), announce the presence of the judge, lifting up the lowly, humbling the proud (1 Sam. 2:3–8), pronouncing the sentence of punishment under the symbol of "cup," sometimes a good omen (Pss. 16:5; 23:5) but here one of pain, even agony (11:6; Isa. 51:17–22).

Psalm 76. The concern for divine judgment against the opponents of Israel, whether internally within the ranks of the chosen people (Ps. 75) or externally from foreign invaders as in Psalm 76, continues to dominate the Asaph psalms. Psalm 76 may well be one of the earliest in the Psalter; because it refers to Jerusalem as the capital of Judah and Israel, it can be no later than the time of Solomon.

Psalm 76 speaks about God gloriously enthroned at Jerusalem in vv. 1–3, addresses God about past victories in vv. 4–6 and about new victories in vv. 7–9, and again speaks mostly about God in vv. 10–12. Verses 1–3 provide an excellent setting by recalling the ancient and mysterious figure of "Melchizedek, priest and king of Salem," who acclaimed Abraham's victory over the four kings of the north by a ritual meal of bread and wine (Gen. 14:18–21). The Hebrew words for "peace," "his name," and "there" (i.e., at Jerusalem) sound much alike and tie these lines together. In vv. 7–9 the battles are not fought by Israel, but by the Lord, so that the heavenly and earthly temples merge together and an awesome silence stuns all human forces into immobility (Hab. 2:20). This is a theophany of justice, not of wonder, as God arises to save the poor and defenseless (Ps. 75:7). Verse 10 is difficult, but its sense is apparently that "the anger of all humanity will be turned to your praise." The psalm concludes with an invitation to make and perform vows (v. 11), an action often associated with thanksgiving (116:17–18).

Psalm 77. Although composed in the singular, Psalm 77 does not reflect an isolated person in the guild of Asaph, but speaks for all Israel at a time of sorrow. The tragedy is not named, but the association with the preceding psalm implies a military defeat or some public calamity. Despite the intensity lurking beneath silent darkness (vv. 2, 5), the psalmist remains detached from God's anger and Israel's sins. If we take seriously the presence of *selah,* or "pause," after vv. 3, 9, and 15, the psalm divides as follows: vv. 1–3, introductory call for help from God; vv. 4–9, lament; vv. 10–15, a confession of faith; vv. 16–19, an ancient hymn of praise; and v. 20, a conclusion of confidence. The reference to "Jeduthun" in the title, as in Psalms 39 and 62, refers to a Levite who was apparently the head of a family or guild of singers (1 Chron. 25:1–6; 2 Chron. 5:12; 29:14; 35:15).

In vv. 1–3 the psalmist cries aloud to God, if only to break the pall of silence over the night vigil (6:6; 22:2; 32:4). Verse 3 recalls the refrain in Psalms 42–43.

The opportunity for meditating during the night leads, in vv. 4–9, to inner perplexity. Beneath the silence there stirs serious anxiety, yet such human emotions lead to the remembrance of God's compassion. It is only a question, but for the person of faith, a question of critical consequence: has God forgotten pity and compassion? If so, then God has reneged on the covenantal promise and revelation in Exod. 34:6–7. The confession of faith in vv. 10–15 begins in a surprising way: has God changed? The remembrance (one of the key words in this psalm along with "meditation") of God's deeds in Israel's history revives faith. The

reference to foreign peoples suggests that this psalm addresses military defeat.

Verses 16–20 represent an ancient hymn, inserted here as a conclusion to the Temple service. The armed forces of foreign countries, massed against Jerusalem, evoke the remembrance of the ancient creation stories in which God overcomes chaos and brings order and prosperity. The Temple symbolized this victory and assured its repetition (Pss. 46; 74:12–17; 93). Typical of other texts (Exod. 15:1–18; Isa. 51:9–11), this hymn associates the renewal of creation with the Exodus out of Egypt.

Psalm 78. The opening lines of Psalm 78 (vv. 1–11) bear the marks of wisdom literature (Prov. 3:1; 4:2). Individual verses are chiseled finely as in Proverbs, where each two or four lines serve as independent units. In Psalm 78, however, these verses are like gems in an elegant setting, as each blends into the continuous epic style. The psalm also diverges from wisdom literature, at least as known in Proverbs, Ecclesiastes, and Job, by its concern for Israel's history, its extended treatment of its subject (to become the second longest poem in the Psalter), and in its strong testimony for the Jerusalem Temple.

Psalm 78 shows its closest affinity to Deuteronomy 32 and appears to be a historical epic composed by Jerusalem priests to explain the destruction of Shiloh, where the Ark resided in the early days of Samuel (1 Sam. 1:1–7:2), and the orientation of all Israel around the new shrine at Jerusalem. Yet history is not recited simply to know the past, but rather to be assured of God's direction in later ages. Most of all, the psalm insists that catastrophes, which seem to break continuity and invalidate divine promises, fit into a larger pattern under God's direction. After God's mysterious control, the next most decisive factor in history is Israel's fidelity or infidelity.

The psalm presumes the Philistine destruction of Shiloh in 1050 B.C. (1 Sam. 4) and the transfer of the Ark to the Jerusalem Temple by Solomon (1 Kings 8). It also envisages a bonding of the Northern and Southern tribes in worship at Jerusalem, consequently suggesting a date of composition either during the reign of Solomon (970–924 B.C.) or, better, toward the end of the reign of King Hezekiah (727–698 B.C.). At this latter time, Jerusalem emerged from near destruction and extended its control again over the north (2 Chron. 30:1–22). Events of collapse and restoration had emphasized the mysterious ways of Israel's history under God's direction. Important for the theology of history in this psalm is God's plan, first, for a unified Israel and, second, its location in Judah and Jerusalem instead of in the Northern tribes and Shiloh.

The psalm begins and ends in the land of Israel, its theological point of concern. It breaks chronological order regarding the earlier events in Egypt, to indicate that history was not being recited for its own sake. After a lengthy, solemn introduction (vv. 1–11; Deut. 32:1–6), the first recital extends from v. 1 to v. 41, the second from v. 42 to v. 72. Each of these, like Deuteronomy 32, is subdivided: first, God's gracious acts in vv. 12–16, 42–55, and Deut. 32:7–14; second, Israel's rebellion in vv. 17–20, 56–58, and Deut. 32:15–18; third, divine anger and punishment in vv. 21–32, 59–64, and Deut. 32:19–25; and fourth, judgment and new beginning in vv. 33–41, 65–72, and Deut. 32:26–43.

The introduction in vv. 1–11 follows a well-known pattern (Deut. 32:1–6; Ps. 50:1–6). These opening verses combine, like the rest of the psalm, remembrance of God's mighty deeds for Israel with warning and rebuke, exhortation and promise. The speaker would be an authoritative person at Jerusalem with a thorough command of tradition, manifesting a profound faith in God's presence not only in glorious moments, but also in disaster and punishment. That speaker affirms that nothing breaks the continuity of Israel's history.

Verse 2 refers to proverbs (comparisons) and obscure riddles (as in the Samson story, Judg. 14:12) or to words spoken by God to prophets (Num. 12:8; Ezek. 17:2). Such sayings require contemplation and a heart willing to be challenged by God. Verses 8–11 are addressed principally to the Northern tribes, since eventually the psalmist appeals to them to seek unity with all Israel at the Jerusalem Temple. The ancestors (v. 8) are the patriarchs, parents of all twelve tribes.

The point of comparison in vv. 12–32 is always to be located in God's gracious deeds for Israel. These wondrous acts are principally those in the wilderness of Sinai, providing food, drink, and direction. Yet the Hebrew text in v. 12 centers not so much upon wonders as upon "you, that very God, working wonders." The participle keeps the action in the present tense, implying that now God is doing the same. Yet in vv. 17–20 the people forget quickly and "test God," as in Exod. 16:3; 17:2, 7; and Ps. 95:9. In Num. 11:4–6 the problem was not food and drink, which they had, but rather the kind of food, "the cucumbers, melons, leeks, onion, and garlic" they craved. Testing God turned into a demand for a different kind of God, one who catered to sensuality and selfishness.

God's anger flared against them in vv. 21–32, verses that still concentrate upon God's goodness and strength in caring for Israel. Anger is the exasperation of goodness taken for granted and betrayed or, as in v. 21, goodness that is not accepted as a permanent quality in God, but only as an occasional exercise that cannot be counted upon in the future. Faith here is not a body of doctrine, but adherence to the person of God as gracious and faithful (cf. Exod. 34:6–7).

Despite the serious break in the continuity (the previous generation was not to enter the promised land, Num. 14:20–23), the next generation will participate in the same promises (vv. 33–41). These verses repeat, only now more reflectively, what had already been said in the preceding section.

Within vv. 42–72 the second major recital of Israel's history is given. It begins with the plagues in Egypt, chronologically out of place but theologically well placed. Because the preceding section ended with the new generation, which will enter the land and be brought into contact with the Canaanites, this new section emphasizes God's preferential care for Israel against the non-Israelites. In the plagues God was acting for his people against foreign oppression. The plagues are adapted to the produce of Israel, vines and sycamores instead of the flax and barley stricken in Egypt (Exod. 9:31). In v. 54 God not only brings the people into the Holy Land, but also establishes a major sanctuary for the Ark of the covenant at Shiloh. After the account of God's gracious deeds for Israel (vv. 42–55), the people rebel (vv. 56–58), and God allows the holy city of Shiloh to be leveled and the Ark to be captured by the Philistines (vv. 59–64). Again this serious break in continuity did not end God's fidelity to the covenant. A new generation and a new Temple at Jerusalem become the pledge of the future.

The psalm ends, affirming that this sacred history teaches that God's skillful hand and dedicated heart are always guiding the people. No break or collapse snaps the bond of God's presence. God continues to lead the people into their destined future. The end of the Northern Kingdom did mean the end of the Northern people's participation in the covenant. Many new breaks will occur, like the destruction of Jerusalem, yet Israel's history proceeds with God's direction. The citations of this psalm, or allusions to it, in the NT are numerous: v. 2 in Matt. 13:35; v. 3 in 1 John 1:1–4; v. 18 in 1 Cor. 10:9; v. 24 in John 6:31; v. 37 in Acts 8:21; and v. 44 in Rev. 16:4.

Psalm 79. The psalms of Asaph tackle hard theological and pastoral problems. With the backing of Deuteronomy, Psalm 78 discussed at length such abrupt changes as the destruction of the holy city of Shiloh and of the Northern Kingdom and concluded that these do not break the continuity of God's plans for the chosen people. Their life and worship will continue at Jerusalem. Psalm 79 faces up to the tragedy of Jerusalem's destruction. The guild of Asaph is courageously addressing Israel's national destiny: in Psalm 78, past history; in Psalm 79, the disaster of Jerusalem's reduction to ashes; in Psalm 80, the restoration of the nation; and in Psalm 81, the national return to liturgical worship.

The reflective style of Psalm 78 is impossible with the memory still tortured with agony and guilt. Psalm 79 becomes one of the most plaintive pieces in the Psalter. Many religious attitudes convulsively relate with one another: the sins of Israel and those of the nations; defilement of the Temple and God's glory; and God's compassion and the groans of prisoners. The psalmist supports his faith by echoing lines from many other biblical laments: v. 1 from Jer. 26:18; v. 4 from Ps. 44:13; v. 5 from 89:46; vv. 6–7 from Jer. 10:25; v. 8 from Ps. 142:6; v. 9 from 23:3; 25:11; 31:3; v. 10 from 115:2; v. 11 from 102:20; v. 12 from 89:50–51; and v. 13 from 100:3.

Verses 1–4 give a description of ruin; vv. 5–7, a prayer against the enemy; vv. 8–9, a request for pardon; vv. 10–12, a call for revenge; and v. 13, a promise of thanksgiving. Today Psalm 79 is recited by Jews on Friday evening at the western wall, the only section of the Second Temple in existence, and on the ninth day of Ab (the fifth month of the Jewish calendar), commemorating the various destructions of Jerusalem.

In vv. 1–4 the psalm opens onto a Temple defiled, a city strewn with corpses and bleeding with the blood of God's covenanted people. Neighboring nations are not horrified, not even moved to compassion; they scornfully joke about Jerusalem. The psalmist draws phrases from the prophets, especially from Jeremiah, who announced that if Jerusalem continued in sin, it was doomed (Jer. 7:30; 32:34). Once Jeremiah had been ridiculed (Jer. 28) and threatened with death (Jer. 26) for making this prediction.

Verses 5–12 pour out reactions pell-mell, oblivious to some of the contradictions: revenge against the enemy and an appeal to God's compassion, the sacrilegious scene and the appeal to God's glory. It is more than an issue of Israel's distress, it involves God's honor. The psalmist will shame God into acting on Israel's behalf. In v. 12 the psalmist requests the sevenfold vengeance of Cain (Gen. 4:15). The final verse returns to the theology of Psalm 78. Future generations will look back upon this tragedy. It did not break the covenant or deny the fidelity of God. In God's subsequent compassion they will find a motive for their faith and thanksgiving.

Psalm 80. Typical of a psalm, as the title indicates, to be sung like Psalms 45, 60, and 69 "according to [the melody of] Lilies," Psalm 80 is characterized by great themes handled with restraint and nobility. A national tragedy, affecting the Northern Kingdom, is being lamented. Yet the traumatic effects are moderated by epithets acclaiming God as savior, by confessions of faith and a refrain. The placement of the psalm after Psalm 79 suggests that it may have been revised to express grief over the fall of the Southern Kingdom.

Though vv. 14–17 are textually damaged, one may detect a sequence of prayer and ceremony: vv. 1–3, an opening confession of faith, almost in the style of a hymn, with a petition for help; vv. 4–6, a lament of quiet agony; vv. 7–11, a second confession of faith acknowledging the gift of the promised land; and vv. 12–19, another lament almost with a touch of panic and again a reflective petition for help.

In vv. 1–3 the opening title for God, "shepherd of Israel," shows the preference of the Asaph psalms for pastoral images (74:1; 78:52; 79:13) and for the Northern tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh. God as gloriously "enthroned [over the mercy seat above the Ark] between the cherubim" (Exod. 25:17–22; Ezek. 1) con-

trasts with the hidden, even pitiable presence of God within Israel's recent history. Such is the type of understatement in many Asaph psalms. The refrain alludes to the priestly blessing in Num. 6:24–26 (Ps. 67:1) and adds: "bring us back," a request for national restoration and for inward turning to God.

Verses 4–6 echo lines from Psalm 42, in which the memory of Temple worship and its sacred meals becomes a sad way to describe the silencing of these rituals. Verse 5 in the Hebrew ends with a vague allusion to "triple tears," which Rabbi David Kimchi (ca. A.D. 1160–1235) interpreted in reference to the three exiles: all the people in Egypt; the Northern tribes in Assyria; the Southern tribes in Babylon.

Verses 8–11 recall, like 44:1–8, the early redemptive acts of God, especially the settlement in the promised land. The psalmist generously draws the boundaries according to the widest limits (2 Sam. 8:3; 1 Kings 5:1, 5; Ps. 72:8). Whatever be the surface details of life, the psalmist will not compromise the promises received from long tradition.

Many of Israel's earthly sanctuaries, once the places of worship for the patriarchs upon entering the land of Canaan (Gen. 12:6, 8; 28:10–22) and later important centers of instruction and worship, are now silenced in their charred ruins (vv. 12–19). God nonetheless remains enthroned in a heavenly sanctuary (v. 14; 11:4), able to fulfill ancient promises. Verse 18, which treats the gift of "new life," literally asks for revival of the nation. Out of such resurgence Israel will develop a belief in personal immortality (Dan. 12:1–3).

Psalm 81. Psalms 81 and 95 have much in common, but also differ significantly: cf. 95:9 with 81:7. Psalm 95 reflects Jerusalem theology and ritual; Psalm 81, with explicit reference to Joseph, the religious thought and ceremony of the Northern sanctuaries. Yet Psalm 81 survived at the Jerusalem Temple. Its points of contact with Deuteronomy indicate a time for final editing during the reform of King Josiah (640–609 B.C.; 2 Kings 22:1–23:30). "The day of our feast" (v. 3) is likely the Feast of Tabernacles, or Succoth, the final harvest festival, announced with trumpets (Lev. 23:33–43), at times simply called "the feast" (1 Kings 8:2; Neh. 8:14).

After the solemn introduction (vv. 1–5b) and a prophetic call for silence (v. 5c), two alternate rituals are provided: one that speaks about Israel in the third person (vv. 6, 11–16) and another addressed to Israel in the second person (vv. 7–10). Each concludes with imagery of a sacred meal.

Verses 1–5 summon a full orchestra for the opening hymn. "New moon" refers to the New Year's celebration announced by trumpet blasts (Lev. 23:23–25); the "full moon" came on the fifteenth day when the Feast of Tabernacles began (Neh. 8:1–18). Temple prophets gave their instruction at times in parables and riddles (Ps. 78:2; Num. 24:4, 16) and spoke about hidden knowledge received in visions (Mic. 3:6–7).

Verses 6, 11–16, a prophetic warning against hardness and sin, may have been preceded by a proclamation of Scripture (Deut. 26:1–15). God delivers the people over to the consequences of their hard, stubborn hearts (Deut. 29:18; Jer. 3:17), yet suffering can purify and renew the people (Jer. 2:19, 30; 31:18). "The finest wheat" and "honey from the rock" combine a memory of God's care for Israel in the wilderness (Exod. 17:1–7) and the abundance of the promised land flowing with milk and honey (Exod. 3:8, 17; Ezek. 47:1–12).

Verses 7–10 begin with a reference to God's thunderous descent upon Mount Sinai, a secret place of revelation. After condemning the worship of Canaanite gods, Yahweh declares, "It is I, Yahweh, your God, bringing you up from the land of Egypt." The participial form of the Hebrew combines praise with contemporaneity: Sinai and the Exodus are now.

Psalm 82. The prophetic speech in Psalm 82 summons wicked judges before the divine tribunal (v. 1), marshals the evidence against them (vv. 2–4), pronounces the verdict and sentence (vv. 5–7), and ends with an acclamation of God's universal power (v. 8). Judges are called "gods" (Heb. *'elohim*) in that they stand in the place of God (Exod. 4:16; Ps. 45:6). If they do not act as Yahweh would, then they are relegated to the status of false Canaanite gods, to be condemned and swept away (Isa. 14:12–15).

The trial is placed in the heavenly assembly (89:5–8; 1 Kings 22:19–23) and based on impartial care for the needy (Lev. 19:15). Verse 5, in announcing the chaotic dissolution of the earth with its evil, declares the strong bonds between the moral and physical order.

Psalm 83. The last of the Asaph psalms, typically composed with strength and broad perspective, is also the final psalm in the Elohist Psalter (see commentary above on Pss. 42–72, Book Two). Psalm 83 may also be one of the earliest in the entire book of Psalms. Its geographical references reflect the hostile nations circling Israel in the period of the judges (1250–1050 B.C.; Judg. 4–5, 7–8), except that the reference to Assyria comes from the ninth century. It is possible, however, that a much later author drew these names from the ancient past to symbolize all angry forces through the ages (cf. Isa. 66:19). (To identify the nations listed in vv. 6–11, → entries for the individual names.)

After the call for help (v. 1), a long lament voices the fear and anger of Israel as armies march against its land (vv. 2–8). Lines similar to the prophetic oracles against the nations follow, drawing down a divine curse upon them (vv. 9–18). These sections may have originated in sanctuary services before war (1 Sam. 4:4–9; 7:5–9), but the prophets turn them into a theological discussion of the role of the nations in the salvation of Israel (cf. Amos 1:3–2:16; Isa. 13–23). This final

section transforms the military assault into an attack upon Yahweh as supreme God. Such an early text is not announcing the worship of Yahweh by other nations, only that Yahweh controls world events for the sake of the chosen people, Israel, and that survivors from these nations will join Israel, a phenomenon happening continuously from the time of the Exodus out of Egypt (Exod. 12:38).

Psalm 84. The second group of psalms from the guild of Korah (Pss. 84–85, 87–88) begins with the same melancholic tone as the first (Pss. 42–49). Psalm 84, along with Psalms 63 and 120–134, may have been sung on pilgrimage to the sanctuary. In v. 6 the reference to rain may locate the psalm at the festival of Tabernacles (Lev. 23:23–43; Zech. 14:16–19). The psalm is structured as follows: vv. 1–3, a meditative introduction; vv. 4–7, on the journey; vv. 8–11a, prayers and reflection at the Temple; and vv. 11b–12, preparations for the return journey. The Hebrew text is frequently difficult and variously translated.

Verses 1–3 begin with peaceful sadness. The desire for God touches every side of the psalmist's person: soul, the center of breathing and responding to life; heart, the center of reflection and understanding; and flesh, the site of deeply felt weakness. The mention of a bird adds a touch of delicate sensitivity (Gen. 8:6–12; Jer. 4:25).

Verses 4–5 begin as v. 12 ends, with a formula about the happiness of dwelling in the house of the Lord and trusting always in the Lord (1:1). The two moments coalesce in "ever singing the LORD's praises." In v. 6a the rare and difficult Hebrew word *baka* with a slight emendation can be read as "tears." The ancient church hymn to Mary, "Salve Regina," followed the Latin Vg. with a phrase common in ordinary speech: "in this [earthly] vale of tears." Tears offer a parallel to the early rain in the second part of this verse. Yet that passage too is not absolutely safe textually and can be translated, "The choir intones blessings [for God]."

After a ceremonial prayer for the king (vv. 8–9), the psalmist's personal reflection is recorded (vv. 10–11a) and, finally, the prayer for a safe journey home (vv. 11b–12).

Psalm 85. Psalm 85 is a national lament not nearly as intense as those of Asaph (Pss. 74; 80); it is moderated by ritual and the repetition of key words. Ritual, in fact, may explain the unusual structure. The ceremony begins with a hymn of confidence (vv. 1–3) and follows with lament and prayer (vv. 4–7). An oracle of peace from a Temple prophet marks the centerpiece of the service (vv. 8–9), and afterward there is a meditation upon the oracle (vv. 10–13). The Hebrew text exhibits an effective use of key words: *shub,* or "return," in vv. 1b, 3b, 4a, 6a, 8b; *'eretz,* or "land," in vv. 1a, 9b, 11a, 12b; *shalom,* or "peace," in vv. 8b, 10b, 13b; and *chesed,* or the Lord's "steadfast love," in vv. 7a, 9b, 10a. For these and other reasons, the psalm may be a prayer for a return from exile and for a new era of peace in the promised land.

Verses 1–3 focus at once on land, always the recipient of God's blessings when the people are faithful (Amos 9:13–15), otherwise the victim of devastation (Jer. 14:1–22; Joel 1–2; Isa. 24). The new exodus cannot start without forgiveness of sin (Isa. 40:1–2; 43:25).

Verses 4–7 border on the outer edge of impatience. Must suffering for one's sins continue indefinitely (74:1; 77:8–9; Isa. 63:7–64:11)? As at the end of Psalm 44, the final appeal is to *chesed,* the steadfast love uniting Yahweh and Israel in covenant. Verses 7–9 respond with an oracle pronouncing peace, yet peace with its own expectations (Isa. 57:19–21; Jer. 14:13). Therefore the warning is given in v. 8b, "Let them not return to foolishness." In meditating upon the oracle in vv. 10–13, the psalmist links the gift of new peace with the covenantal promises of Yahweh (Exod. 34:6–7). This "truth" or "fidelity" springs from the earth in the righteous living of people.

Psalm 86. The sole psalm of David in Book Three and an individual's lament, Psalm 86 remains an anomaly in a section otherwise dealing with national sorrows. Its contacts are with other "Psalms of David" in Book One or in Book Five (Pss. 138–145). The psalm, moreover, is more a filigree of phrases from elsewhere in the Psalter than an independent creation (e.g., v. 1b from 40:17a; v. 2 from 25:20; v. 3 from 57:1–2). Verse 14 is lifted out of 54:3 and breaks the spirit of gratitude here. This anthological method becomes even more common in Book Five (so Pss. 135; 143).

A style such as this presumes time to moderate one's initial shock over tragedy and to meditate. More verses deal with confidence and thanksgiving in the center of the psalm than with lament at the beginning and end. The transitional v. 11, asking Yahweh to "teach me your way," begs for still more time to enable more profound appreciation.

After the initial call for help (vv. 1–7), a hymn of confidence is voiced (vv. 8–10) and then one of gratitude (vv. 11–15). The psalm ends with renewed lament and prayer (vv. 16–17). The covenant theology of Exodus 34 returns at important moments: in v. 5 to induce God to respond and in v. 15 to sustain thanksgiving. Yahweh shows up differently from all other gods (v. 8) precisely because of his loving-kindness and fidelity and therefore a penchant to forgive (which Voltaire called God's *métier* or normal lifestyle). These qualities that make Yahweh to be truly God define what the Bible means by divinity and show the complete deficiency of all other pretenders at divinity. This monotheism leads to a rare biblical statement on universal salvation (v. 9). The same sequence from Yahweh's extraordinary kindness and forgiveness, to the nothingness of other gods, to universal salvation marks the writing of Second Isaiah. It may have been

this prophet's interpretation of the Mosaic covenant that led to Psalm 86.

Psalm 87. Textually one of the most difficult in the Psalter, Psalm 87 leaves readers guessing about its meaning. The phrase three times repeated, "this one [or everyone, in v. 5] was born there," in a context speaking of major foreign countries, leaves the first impression of new life for all nations by their worship of Yahweh. Their names will be recorded in the book of the living (v. 6; 56:8; 69:28; 139:16). Perhaps like other isolated statements about the salvation of the nations (Amos 9:7; Isa. 49:6), this one was too important to suppress and yet too difficult to integrate with other biblical positions—so Psalm 87 was neglected. It adds a special contribution to other psalms from the Korah guild honoring Jerusalem (Pss. 46–48).

The psalm may possibly have a more restricted meaning, referring not to foreign nations but to individual converts from their midst (Isa. 44:5) or simply to Israelites living among them and always tempted to apostasy. This sequence is suggested: vv. 1–3, Yahweh's choice of Zion; vv. 4–6, Zion, mother of all; and v. 7, conclusion.

Psalm 88. Completely isolated and close to death from serious illness, without the luxury of community liturgies or traditional prayers as in Psalm 86, the psalmist is hardly a human being, only a cadaver ready for the grave in Psalm 88. This is not a theological commentary on death, but a prayerful diary of personal depression. For this psalmist, all answers to the absurdity of death smack of pious simplicity; prayer is the only refuge. "Dialogue" may best direct us through the psalm: vv. 1–2, calling to God for a hearing; vv. 3–5, a lament oblivious of God; vv. 6–8, dialogue with a hostile God; vv. 9–12, another appeal to God; vv. 13–16, again the silent God; and vv. 17–18, conclusion.

The title attributes the psalm to the family of "Heman" within the guild of Korah, a group well known for liturgical songs and leadership (1 Chron. 6:17–18; 16:41–42). The psalmist, however, in sickness experiences a silent isolation from worship. "Ezrahite" indicates a native-born person, possibly from early Canaanite stock (Lev. 19:33–34). "Mahalath," from the word for sickness, suggests a sad melody (Ps. 53).

In vv. 1–2 the appeal to "God, my salvation" extends through day and night. After setting up this contrast, the psalmist, in vv. 3–5, suddenly turns completely away from God and peers into the dark, inactive, formless experience of Sheol (6:6). In vv. 6–8 the psalmist paradoxically turns to God from this pit where God is said to remember no one. The sickness, like leprosy (Lev. 13), puts friends, who have once experienced one's deepest thoughts, at a distance. Again in vv. 9–12 the psalmist appeals to God from Sheol, introducing aspects of Israel's creed and worship into the unclean abode of the dead; these lines bristle with contradictions. Verse 12 has led to this psalm's use as a traditional morning prayer, the normal time for interceding with God (5:3; 30:5). The psalm concludes in vv. 17–18, very similar to the end of the first half (vv. 7–8).

Psalm 89. Psalm 89 provides a commentary on 2 Samuel 7 and the perpetual promises to the Davidic family. By a skillful transfer of titles from God to David, this psalm places in the king's hands the power of God to bring peace out of chaos, to induce life out of sterility. Psalm 89 belongs to the repertoire of royal psalms (Pss. 2; 45; 72; 110). Located at the end of Book Three, it links this book (with only one psalm of David, Ps. 86) with the Davidic sponsorship of psalm writing. The psalm ends with a long lament, as though God had reneged upon divine promises by permitting a major military defeat.

Psalm 89 is frequently quoted or alluded to in the NT: vv. 3–4 in Peter's Pentecost discourse (Acts 2:30); v. 20 in Paul's speech at Pisidian Antioch (Acts 13:22); v. 10 in Mary's canticle (Luke 1:51); and v. 52 in Zechariah's canticle (Luke 1:68).

The psalm divides into three major sections, stitched together by the key words of "covenant," "steadfast love," and "fidelity" (Exod. 34:6–7). Quite a few other parallels help achieve a compact unity within this long psalm. First is a hymn honoring Yahweh: vv. 1–2, invitation; vv. 3–4, oracle for the king; and vv. 5–18, Yahweh's supremacy over all gods (vv. 5–8), over the universe (vv. 9–14), and over the liturgy (vv. 15–18). Second is an oracle honoring the Davidic king: v. 19a, introduction; vv. 19b–27, the king as Yahweh's representative; and vv. 28–37, divine promises to the king. Third is a lament over the rejection of the king: vv. 38–52.

The opening lines (vv. 1–2; for a further explanation of the title's reference to an Ezrahite, see the commentary above on Ps. 88:1), in announcing a hymn of praise for Yahweh, center upon the covenantal qualities of Yahweh as merciful and faithful (Exod. 34:6–7); these are linked with the stability of the heavens, for who can ever disturb the movement of the sun and stars (so Jer. 31:35–37). Verses 3–4 transfer the same words and image to the dynasty of David. Royalty receives unconditional, divine promises, as in 2 Samuel 7, and so exhibits more stability than the Mosaic covenant, dependent upon the people's obedience. The king, as "my chosen one," represents all Israel, God's chosen people (Exod. 19:5–6; Deut. 7).

The cosmic hymn to Yahweh (vv. 5–18) is sung in part by the heavenly hosts (vv. 5–8), another part by a combined choir of heaven and earth (vv. 9–14), and the final section by an earthly assembly (vv. 15–18). The hymn opens with Yahweh enthroned in the heavenly sanctuary (11:4), surrounded by an assembly of holy ones, "children of the gods" (cf. 29:1; 82:6), the host of heaven (1 Kings 22:19)—various names drawn from

Canaanite religion and represented by the statues of the cherubim on either side of the Ark (Exod. 25:17–22). Decisions about the Davidic dynasty are first ratified before the heavenly throne. In vv. 9–14 the mythology about Baal's conquering the sea (Ps. 29) is transferred to the one supreme God, Yahweh, who overcomes the sea monsters of evil and chaos to create a new stable world, the home of the Lord's kindness and fidelity. The final lines of the hymn (vv. 15–18) bring us to the earthly sanctuary where the Davidic king is waiting.

Verses 19–37 present an oracle (cf. v. 19a with 2:7; 110:1) along prophetic lines (Isa. 2:1), promising the king many of the powers reserved to Yahweh. The strong arm of the Lord crushing sea monsters (v. 10) now strengthens the king (v. 21). The Lord who rules the sea and the ocean currents (vv. 9–10) places the hand of the king over these forces. "Kindness and fidelity," God's special qualities (vv. 1–2), rest with the king.

The final section consists of a lament (vv. 38–45) and a prayer (vv. 46–51), stitched closely with the preceding two parts: kindness and fidelity (vv. 1–2, 14, 24, 28–29, 33, 49); "right hand" of Yahweh (v. 13), of the king (v. 25), and now of the enemy (v. 42); and ancient eternal promises to David (vv. 3–4, 36–37, 49–50). Military disaster poses a serious threat to Yahweh and the religion of Israel. The strong, stereotyped phrase, "How long!" bursts out (cf. 6:3). Verse 52 concludes Book Three (cf. other such concluding verses, 41:13; 72:18–20; 106:48).

Psalms 90–106

Book Four

The psalms here are almost completely unassigned. After the major collections of David, Korah, and Asaph in the first three books, this collection appears like an appendix. Psalms 101 and 103 come like stragglers from the David guild. The name of Moses bonds these psalms together (90:1; 99:6; 103:7; 105:26; 106:16, 23, 32).

Psalm 90. Psalm 90, a communal lament, stems perhaps from a sick person too young for death and humbly conscious of sin. Because life is short and irreversible, the psalmist begs God for immediate forgiveness. Perhaps this divine action will bring a return to good health (v. 13). Little is granted to conscious survival after death (6:5), nor does the psalm allude to God's great historical deeds in Israel's favor. The absence of these ideas brings the psalm into the realm of wisdom literature. Major sections may be spotted by stylistic changes: vv. 1–2, hymnic introduction; vv. 3–12, wisdom stanza about the shortness of life; and vv. 13–17, prayer for assistance. The Hebrew text is poorly preserved and variously translated.

"Man of God" in the title surrounds Moses with the authority of a charismatic figure like Samuel (1 Sam. 9:6) and Elijah (1 Kings 17:18, 24). The opening hymn (vv. 1–2) praises Yahweh for giving birth to the cosmos just as Yahweh later begets Israel as a favorite people. Comparing the earth to Israel declares that each has an origin, a character, and a purpose uniquely bestowed by Yahweh. Suffering disrupts this divine order and, therefore, poses a fundamental problem.

Verses 3–12 begin with reflection common to the sages: life for everyone is very short, so quickly the sentence is delivered, "return to dust" (v. 3), possibly a reference to Gen. 3:19. Because life is transitory, "a thousand years are like yesterday." The psalmist refers to the suddenness of death and one's descent into the dark grave of Sheol. Even children are not always guaranteed survival, as vv. 5–6 (textually very damaged) says: "Their offspring change as grass changes; in the morning it sprouts and flourishes and in the evening it fades and withers." "Hidden sins" (v. 8) refers to violations of ceremonial taboos and other unknown infringements (19:12; Lev. 5:14–19).

"Seventy" (v. 10) was not a normal life span, since the average life span of a person at this time was forty-four years. According to Jer. 25:11, "seventy" indicated the full number of years for the Exile. "Daybreak" (v. 14) refers to a revival of life, a special time for prayer (30:5; 46:5; 143:8), to realize the wisdom of divine providence.

Psalm 91. Psalm 91, a psalm of confidence, was prepared for an entrance and departure liturgy at the Temple; other examples for solemn entry occur in Psalms 15 and 24, with a longer service in Psalm 95. At the beginning there is a blessing from a priest (vv. 1–4) and a promise of protection from Yahweh (vv. 5–9); similarly at the end, a blessing for the return into daily life (vv. 10–13) and an oracle promising God's protection (vv. 14–16). Although there is some contact with wisdom literature (Prov. 3:13–16; Job 5:17–26), closer bonds tie Psalm 91 with the Blessing of Moses in Deuteronomy 32 (see the title for Ps. 90). Because of allusions to pestilence and sickness, the psalm is adapted to a prayer service for good health that included exorcism of demons.

Verses 1–2 invite the worshiper into the protection of the Temple, possibly for a night vigil (1:2; 42:3). The wings of the cherubim on either side of the Ark (Exod. 25:17–22) symbolize Yahweh's protective overshadowing (Pss. 17:8; 36:7), though the reference may also be metaphorical. The darkness of the night contrasts with the blinding glory of the Lord's presence (1 Kings 8:10–13; Ps. 139:11–12), which does not reflect blind superstition but a personal bonding with "my God in whom I trust." Fearful demons (cf. Isa. 34:14; Tob. 3:8; 6:15) prowl the night, killing the firstborn of Egypt (Exod. 12:29) and the army of Sennacherib (Isa. 37:36). The exorcism of evil spirits leads to new promises

from God (Ps. 91:5–8). The "noonday demon" (v. 5) may refer to sunstroke (→ Satan).

The second blessing from the priest before departure (vv. 10–13) asks the protection of the angels, so that each individual Israelite is led as all the people were conducted through the wilderness (Exod. 23:20; 32:34). God does not remove the dangers, but provides strength for the struggle that purifies and strengthens. The promise of a long, peaceful life (v. 16) represents a supreme biblical gift (23:6; 34:12), a sign of the final age (Isa. 51:6; 65:20), possibly of eternal happiness.

Psalm 92. Psalm 92 is a hymn of thanksgiving with a strong wisdom influence. The psalm bears the earmarks of worship. After opening with a fully orchestrated call to worship (vv. 1–3), vv. 4–5 offer motivation from Yahweh's mighty deeds for Israel (Ps. 136). Next, one meets wisdom's instruction about retribution (vv. 9–11) and a closing benediction upon righteous people (vv. 12–15).

The title assigns Psalm 92 to Sabbath services. The people are to rejoice (v. 2) as God did at the end of creation (Gen. 2:3). The psalm, like the Sabbath, combines joy over nature's beauty with care for moral harmony between people. The divine name Yahweh occurs seven times in the psalm, perfect for "Sabbath," which means "seventh."

In vv. 1–5 music from many types of instruments becomes an intuitive, almost mystical way of providing dialogue with God and of reliving the Lord's wondrous deeds toward Israel. The Hebrew word for "melody" comes from a root that signifies quiet, repetitive prayer. Daily Temple sacrifices at dawn and in the evening may have been one of the early settings for this psalm (Exod. 29:38–42).

Verses 6–11 give an instruction prompted by wisdom literature and its concern about proper retribution for the wicked and the just. Wisdom, close to nature, also shows a penchant to think about creation (Prov. 8:22–31). Because of the Sabbath, the praise of "your works, LORD" (v. 5) may direct attention to the works of God's hand across the heavens and the earth (Gen. 1:1–2:4; Ps. 8:3). The wicked will be buried in darkness. At this early age the text refers to oblivion, not to eternal damnation.

The comparison of the just to palm trees and the cedars of Lebanon (v. 12) evokes memories of many biblical passages about strength and uprightness (1:3; 29:5; 80:10), wealth and beauty (1 Kings 5:21–23), and future, eschatological blessing (Hos. 14:5–6; Isa. 41:18–19). The everlasting Sabbath will have arrived.

Psalm 93. The LXX as well as the Talmud assign Psalm 93 to the eve of the Sabbath (92:1), when God had completed the created world for habitation. The thought and language echo the Canaanite myths of creation (Pss. 29; 89:9–13) and the divine enthronement (Pss. 96–99; Zech. 14:16–19). Each Sabbath marked a new victory of Yahweh as king, allowing the worshiper to begin life anew, in harmony with creation and covenant.

The style is rapid, condensed, and forceful, almost like thunder, effective with repetition, and controlled in its development. Verses 1–2 lay out the setting; vv. 3–4 orchestrate the liturgical action; v. 5 concludes gloriously. Though in a different mood, vv. 1–4 present a similar scenario.

The opening words, "Yahweh rules as king" (v. 1), echo the shouts in 2 Sam. 15:10 and 1 Kings 1:11, except that here the name of the king is first, emphasizing the person of Yahweh rather than the moment of enthronement. Yahweh's normal throne is above the floodwaters in the heavens (Pss. 11:4; 29:3). In v. 5 the phrase "your precepts" may possibly read "your throne," so that the psalm ends as it begins, in the heavenly sanctuary.

Psalm 94. A national lament, Psalm 94 utilizes many literary forms such as narrative, interrogation, mourning, and instruction, with a clear, vigorous style and a sincere, forthright attitude. The structure, after the introduction (vv. 1–2), follows the format of chiasm (see commentary above on Ps. 19:1): *(A)* pretensions of the lawless (vv. 3–7); *(B)* questions (vv. 8–10); *(C)* the center with Yahweh's care for persecuted people (vv. 11–15); *(B′)* questions (vv. 16–20); and *(A′)* pretensions, with resolution in Yahweh (vv. 21–23). The LXX and the rabbinical tradition add a title: "Of David, for the fourth day of the week."

In vv. 1–2 the language is less violent than it seems, if one recalls that it uses stereotypic formulas (18:47; 58:10; Isa. 34:8; 35:4). Vengeance is often the response of someone who loves dearly and witnesses abuse heaped upon a loved one. More than once Israel shouted to God: "Rise up!" (Pss. 7:6; 44:23). The word for "pride" (v. 2) is from a root, "to rise up" arrogantly. When vv. 3–7 record the insolence of the wicked, prophetic language merges with the psalm (cf. Amos 8:4–6; Mic. 2:1–3). The center of the psalm (vv. 11–15) records the Lord's reaction (Ps. 12:5). Verses 11 and 15 contain a notion, frequent in Jeremiah, that punishment can be purifying and instructive (Jer. 2:19, 30; Prov. 3:12). Human plans are no more substantive than breath or *hebel*, a Hebrew word sometimes translated "vanity" (Eccles. 1:1–2). Such empty and dark silence was almost the lot of the psalmist (v. 17), a line that is dramatically reversed in v. 19. The questions in vv. 16–20 reflect agony but not doubt, as they lead to the finale (vv. 21–23).

Psalm 95. The LXX assigns Psalm 95, like Psalms 90, 92, 93, to the Sabbath or its eve. Later rabbinical tradition associates it with the New Year's festival, preparing for

the Yahweh-as-king songs, Psalms 96–99. Significant similarities and differences show up in comparison with Psalm 81, with mention of Meribah and Massah, of the hardening of heart, of testing God in Psalm 95 or the people in Psalm 81.

A procession makes its way toward the Jerusalem Temple, possibly beginning at the Gihon sanctuary (1 Kings 1:33), up the Kidron valley, and climbing to the Temple Mount (vv. 1–5). Before the Holy of Holies, there is a ceremony of adoration and prayer (vv. 6–7a) and then perhaps of biblical reading and sermon. The ceremony concludes with the prophetic oracle in vv. 7b–11. The hypothesis of biblical reading and sermon explains the abrupt transition in v. 7b. The literary style stands out clearly: vv. 1–7a, two hymns with a call to praise in vv. 1–2 and 6 to be sung by the entire congregation, and with motivation for praise in vv. 3–5 and 7a to be chanted by a special choir; and vv. 7b–11, an oracle by a Temple prophet (Ps. 50).

Verses 1–2 encourage the people in their procession: "Come, let us draw near God's face" (cf. 42:2); v. 6 calls upon the people at the Temple to fall prostrate before the Lord. Yahweh, "a great king over all the gods" (v. 3), stands in contrast with the various gods worshiped by Solomon's wives on a neighboring hill. God, in searching out the peaks of the mountains and the depths of the valleys, appears as king over the universe as well as over the height and depths of the human heart. In creating sea and dry land, God is master of all creation, even in its hostile forms (Pss. 29; 89:9–10).

The transition to the prophetic oracle begins with "Today!" as in Deut. 4:40; 5:3; and 6:6. Meribah and Massah are the places where the people angered God and where Moses struck the rock for water (Exod. 17:1–7; Deut. 6:16; 8:15). If the present generation continues with the same stubbornness, then they will be exiled from the land of rest (cf. Deut. 12:8–12).

Psalm 96. Psalm 96 is the parent of hymnology, sacred compositions composed of phrases and lines from the Bible: cf. v. 1a and 33:3a; Isa. 42:10a; v. 2b and Isa. 40:9; 52:7; v. 4b and Pss. 48:1; 95:3; vv. 7–9 and 29:1–2; v. 10b and 93:1c; v. 10c and 9:8b; v. 11a and 97:1; v. 11b and 98:7b; and v. 13 and 98:9. The psalm itself became part of a new hymn in 1 Chron. 16:8–36, which combines Pss. 105:1–15; 96; and 106:1, 47–48. Biblical writers continued to adapt older passages to new historical and religious settings.

Because Psalms 96–99 were intended for Temple worship (the LXX indicates for the Feast of Tabernacles), these psalms are not so much addressing the final age of the world as its anticipation in liturgy (Zech. 14:16–19). The structure stands out clearly: two calls for praise, vv. 1–3, 7–9; two motivations, vv. 4–6, 10–13.

Verses 1–3 draw heavily from Isaiah 40–55 to relive within the liturgy the herald's announcement of a new song. For the sake of Israelites, not the nations, v. 3 proclaims, "the nations' gods [Heb. *'elohim*] are worthless *['elilim]*."

In citing 29:1–2, the psalmist makes two theological corrections in vv. 7–9: "children of the gods" becomes "families of nations" and, instead of Canaanite phrases about thunder, ritual gifts are presented in the Temple. (For the acclamation "Yahweh reigns as king," see the commentary above on Ps. 93:1.) Yahweh's world kingship is exercised for the sake of divine justice, fulfilling the covenantal promises to Israel (Exod. 34:6–7).

Psalm 97. Like Psalm 50, Psalm 97 too draws upon prophetic preaching to insist that true worship includes social justice. Psalm 97 uses many terms found in Isaiah 40–55, the great prophetic book of consolation from the Exile. It weaves the key word "righteousness" (Heb. *tsedeq*) in and out of the psalm. Yahweh will always be true to divine promises and so exemplify "justice" and "righteousness." Concerned this much about liturgy, the psalm is not announcing the end, technically called "eschaton," but a momentary fulfillment in Israel's liturgy, especially at the Feast of Tabernacles (Pss. 29; 93; 96; Zech. 14:16–19). Other major sources for the author are Pss. 18:7–15; 77:16–19; and Habakkuk 3.

Verses 1–6 describe a theophany like the awesome manifestation of Yahweh on Mount Sinai (Exod. 19) and traditional hymns dependent on that episode (Judg. 5; Hab. 3; Ps. 68). All together these brilliant songs announce a continuously glorious presence of Yahweh in Israel's history. The liturgy reenacts what the eyes of faith recognize in hidden depths. Liturgy brings such reality to the surface at least for the day. Twice righteousness enters the theophany: at the base of Yahweh's throne (v. 2b) and in heavenly proclamation (v. 6a).

In vv. 7–12, motifs and imagery from literature about the "day of the LORD" bring a fiery judgment upon all who set up rival deities and abuse the rights of people (Zeph. 1:14–18). Life-giving light will envelop Yahweh's faithful ones, those with the Lord's concern for the poor and the hopes of Israel (Isa. 2:2–5; 60:1–4; → Justice).

Psalm 98. The spirit, literary form, and themes of the two preceding psalms continue in Psalm 98 with the same similarity to Isaiah 40–55. In fact, the final verse repeats the end of Psalm 96. While Second Isaiah sings of the glorious new exodus to the homeland, Psalm 98 repeats the melodies back in the land of Israel. Even if the fulfillment of Second Isaiah's expectations hardly lived up to the excitement and grandeur of the announcement, nonetheless by faith one can relive such hopes and so anticipate their final realization through Temple liturgy (vv. 4–6). Again salvation and justice

are joined carefully together (Isa. 46:13; 51:5, 6, 8) so that Israel is advised that the glorious fulfillment of divine promises requires the pursuit of social justice with the compassion of the covenant God (v. 3). Yahweh's future is mysteriously linked with Israel's obedience.

Psalm 99. Yahweh's royalty is not a myth like that of Canaanite gods; it is closely associated with Israel's history and institutions as well as with justice for the people. References to king and priesthood allude to the pre-exilic age and, especially, the time of First Isaiah (Isa. 1–39). Psalm 99 is divided into three stanzas: vv. 1–3, enthronement of Yahweh; vv. 4–5, Yahweh's concern for justice in the rule of kings; and vv. 6–9, Yahweh's reception of prayers from three mediators. The doxology of Isa. 6:3, "Holy, holy, holy," becomes a refrain, expanded with each stanza. The refrains keep the focus entirely upon the Lord as enthroned above the Ark (Exod. 25:17–22). In v. 5, however, the Temple and Ark are rightly presented as "the footstool" for Yahweh; the normal presence of God is in heaven (11:4).

The great priest-intercessors are named: Moses (Exod. 17:11–15; 32:11–14); Aaron (Exod. 28:29–30; Num. 17:11–15); and Samuel (1 Sam. 7:7–12; 12:19). Because of God's holiness, human mediators are needed, trained in the traditions and in dialogue with Yahweh. God, who once led by the pillar of cloud (Exod. 14:24; 33:9–10; Num. 10:34), in v. 7 just as truly directs the people through priests at sanctuaries.

Psalm 100. If Psalms 91–99 constitute a booklet for worship on Sabbaths and important feasts, Psalm 100 is their final doxology. It consists of two minihymns: vv. 1–3 for the procession and vv. 4–5 for the thanksgiving service within the Temple, leading to a sacred meal (81:10, 16). The call to praise in each case breaks with excitement. Yahweh made Israel by bringing it out of Egypt to be a chosen people (100:3; Exod. 3:7–10; 19:3–6). "Steadfast love" and "fidelity" conclude the psalm with the major attributes of God as Lord of the covenant (Ps. 100:5; Exod. 34:6–7).

Psalm 101. A discourse from the throne, possibly on the day of coronation (Pss. 2; 110) or on some other royal festival (Pss. 18; 72), Psalm 101 begins with a call to praise (v. 1) and a promise to live and judge morally (vv. 2–3a). Specific pledges are mentioned, some negative (vv. 3b–5) and some positive (vv. 6–7). In the conclusion, the psalmist affirms that justice shall prevail (v. 7). A strong influence from wisdom literature is recognizable (Prov. 4:14; 6:12–19; 8:15–16).

The opening words, "steadfast love and justice," accord to the Davidic royalty the major goals of the Mosaic covenant (Ps. 89:1–4; Exod. 34:6–7); they also bring the support of Moses to the throne. A series of "I" statements pledge the king's word to the cause of moral integrity (Ps. 18:20–24). The hope within the final verse in Psalm 78 will be pursued (cf. Gen. 20:5–6; 1 Kings 9:4). The negative side of what is unacceptable (vv. 3b–5) as well as the positive requirements (vv. 6–7) recall the conditions for entering the sanctuary (Pss. 15; 24). The king was the guardian of the Temple and of the Torah (1 Kings 8). These lines stress the king's personal obligation by using the first person, "I hate . . . I do not know . . . I destroy." The break of morning (v. 8) was not only the time for judicial procedures (Jer. 21:12), but it was also the moment of salvation (Ps. 46:5; Isa. 37:36).

Psalm 102. In the fifth of the seven penitential psalms according to Christian tradition (see also Pss. 6; 32; 38; 51; 130; 143) the lament of a sick person merges with lamentation over devastated Jerusalem. Yahweh's everlasting presence provides the theological backdrop. Unlike Psalm 51, words for sin and guilt are conspicuously absent. As the prayer of an individual, the psalm is suffused with tender sensitivity; this attitude is directed in turn to the stones and dust of Jerusalem. National mourning over fallen Jerusalem keeps the individual's lament from excessive introspection and adds the element of faith in Yahweh's eternal presence and promises. Publicly expressed pain leads to personal strength and a vision beyond older limitations. The influence of prophecy and wisdom may have opened the door of the psalmist's vision for Jerusalem and the world. Verses 1–11, 23–24 record the individual's lament, vv. 12–22, 25–28 a lament over Zion that leads to new confidence. Jewish tradition in the Mishnah (*m. Taan.* 2.3) assigns this psalm to fasting days (Zech. 7:5; 8:19). The opening call for help (vv. 1–2) speaks in the traditional language of prayer. There follow other accepted expressions for sorrow; "my bones burn with fire within" (v. 3) repeats the urgent pleading of Jer. 20:9. Groans from physical pain direct us to a very sick person, without appetite, sleepless, gaunt and emaciated, in danger of premature death, and, worst of all, quarantined and lonely. The sound of an unclean bird, the night owl (v. 6; Lev. 11:17), captures the whole scene.

Verses 12–22 weave in passages and themes from prophetic literature of the exilic and postexilic ages. The rebuilding of Zion will bring a new glorious presence of Yahweh to the wonderment of the nations (Isa. 40:5; 41:5; 59:19; 60:2). The psalmist is still speaking from loss (Ps. 42), for in quoting Lam. 5:19, v. 12 replaces the "throne" of Yahweh with "the memory of you." In v. 18 the psalmist requests a writing tablet to record these words. Future generations will be supported in their faith by Yahweh's restorative power and love (22:30–31).

Verses 23–28 return first to personal lament and then, like the preceding section, to confidence. The

Lord not only acts with loving concern, but is forever present with the chosen people, as the promises to Zion and the stability of the earth testify.

Psalm 103. In many ways a transitional poem, in the first part Psalm 103 relates to Psalm 102, expressing gratitude for a return to health (vv. 1–18). The second part, a hymn of praise, introduces Psalm 104. The psalmist expresses gratitude for both physical and spiritual healing. Sickness and sin (unlike Ps. 102 in this regard) are linked together (like Ps. 30); pardon is frequently begged of God because of its promise in the ancient covenant (vv. 7–8; Exod. 34:6–7). Like Psalm 102, personal questions are linked with communal problems and traditions and thereby receive a solid basis for an answer. The psalm comes from the postexilic age, quoting Isa. 57:16 in v. 9, Isa. 55:9 in v. 11; and Isa. 40:6–8 in vv. 15–16. It draws upon Israel's traumatic experience of sin and suffering. It is sung on the Day of Atonement by Jews (Lev. 16) and each morning by Greek Christians.

After the opening hymn (vv. 1–2), the psalmist asks for pardon and healing (vv. 3–5), relying upon the promises of the covenant (vv. 6–18); vv. 19–22 conclude with joyful songs of praise for Yahweh in the heavenly sanctuary.

Verses 1–5 identify the major ingredients of a blessing, that is, publicly proclaiming God's gifts through moral strength and physical health. "Soul," which derives from a Hebrew word for "throat," provides the way not only for manifesting life or death by breathing, but also for interacting personally with one's environment. Healing, consequently, involves the entire community and its sensitivity to social justice and the earth's ecological balance. Health presumes the end of selfish abuse of others and of the world. In v. 5, "your life" is a different type of Hebrew word, meaning "adornment." If one follows the translation in ancient versions, "desires" (Gk.) or "body" (Syriac), the reference then is to sexual vitality and the ability to share life in family (so Gen. 18:11–14).

In vv. 6–18 justice certainly embraces "the rights of the oppressed" and punishment upon wrongdoers, yet justice is most of all a divine attribute: Yahweh's way of living up to divine assurances of forgiveness, rooted in the covenant (Exod. 34:6–7). The history of Israel becomes a "way," revelatory of a merciful God. Isa. 55:6–11 revels in the mystery of God's ways as high above earth as the heavens are, yet soaking the earth like rain and returning to God through earthly produce and human lives. Therefore in v. 17 Yahweh's "steadfast love" and "justice" parallel each other and merge together. These verses could serve as a commentary on the first and last sections of Second Isaiah (Isa. 40 and 55). Verses 19–22 introduce Israel's praise into the heavenly sanctuary where God is enthroned (Pss. 11:4; 29).

Psalm 104. Gen. 1:1–2:4a is turned into magnificent poetry. Psalm 104 shows many parallels with an Egyptian hymn to the sun god Aten, composed during the reign of the monotheist Akhenaton (ca. 1380–1362 B.C.). Psalm 104 does not acclaim creation, but Yahweh the creator; Yahweh appears not primarily as all-powerful, but as all-merciful. Yahweh creates a happy world where even the lion's roar becomes a prayer (v. 21). The psalm does not reason from creation to the existence of God, but vice versa. It proceeds from faith in the covenant God of kindness and fidelity (Exod. 34:6–7) to a new appreciation of creation. God's people Israel are at the center. Verse 30 accounts for the Christian use on the Feast of Pentecost.

Verses 1–9 acclaim the royal creator, who in vv. 10–18 is dispenser of nourishment; in vv. 19–23, master of the seasons; in vv. 24–26, Lord of earth and sea; and in vv. 27–30, controller of life and death. Verses 31–35 provide a glorious finale. The psalm also divides according to the days of creation in Genesis 1: first day, creation of light, vv. 1–2a; second day, creation of the firmament or sky, vv. 2b–4; third day, separation of heaven and earth, vv. 5–9, and the adornment of earth, vv. 10–18; fourth day, creation of heavenly bodies, vv. 19–20; fifth day, creation of ocean creatures, vv. 25–26; and sixth day, creation of terrestrial creatures and humankind, vv. 21–23. Verse 24 is like the refrain in Genesis 1, "And God saw that it was good!"

Verses 1–9 begin with "Bless the LORD" (103:1–2, 19–22), an important theological formula. Here the active form of the verb occurs, an indication of early origin. Later Hebrew tradition turned it into the passive, more dignified form, "Blessed be the LORD." This account belongs to a liturgical reenactment of God's gracious deeds and to a hymn of praise. Praise, therefore, is much less Israel's gift to God than it is a recognition and ritual reliving of God's gifts to Israel.

The language of praise (vv. 1–4) and of cosmogony (vv. 5–9) can be traced back into ancient mythology: the Lord's palace built above the heavenly waters (11:4; 18:4–9; 29:10), surrounded by stars and moon and wind as attendants and servants (Pss. 29; 82; 103:20). Verse 9, repeated almost verbatim in Jer. 5:22, refers to the taming of primeval chaos.

Verses 10–18 reveal the abundant graciousness with which God creates. Very clearly God is at the source of whatever human beings need for physical nourishment and delight, even of "wine to make the heart joyful" (v. 15). Verses 19–23 show Yahweh to be master of the seasons of the year and of the passage from night to day. The heavenly bodies, which regulated the seasons, were worshiped as divine by many people (Deut. 4:19), but here (vv. 1–4) they are God's heavenly retinue and servants. When vv. 24–26 extend God's control over the oceans, the imagery is unusually tranquil as compared with Ps. 89:9–10 and Isa. 51:9–10. The Lord even makes sport of the sea monster Leviathan,

a feat declared impossible for human beings (Job 40:25–32).

In vv. 27–30, Yahweh directs life and death through the gift or withdrawal of the spirit. The sequence life, death, new life through the spirit follows the common biblical pattern for Jerusalem or the people Israel. Those persons upon whom God bestows promises generally succeed at first, undergo serious difficulties to the seeming frustration of faith (Ps. 44), but rise to a fulfillment never anticipated earlier.

In the glorious finale (vv. 31–35) Yahweh reaches down from the heavenly sanctuary touching the earth with smoke, a symbol of divine manifestations (Exod. 19; Judg. 5:4–5; Hab. 3:3–6). Such a world has no place for sinners. The psalm, therefore, sees a world of good people, innocent of any innate corruption, with God's gift of goodness.

Psalm 105. Writing at the time of the Exile (cf. v. 47 of the companion Psalm 106), the author of Psalm 105 draws upon Israel's history as far back as the age of the patriarchs to establish the thesis that people frequently go through a cycle of promise, followed by setbacks, but climax in a new possession. No gift, especially the promised land, was Israel's by right, only by the grace of God. The poem communicates this major message by the repetition of three key words: "patriarch," "servant," or "chosen one" (vv. 6, 9–10, 17, 25, 26, 42–43); "land" or "territory" (vv. 7, 11, 16, 23, 27, 30, 31, 32, 33, 35, 36, 41); and "word" or "promise" (vv. 11, 14–15, 19, 27, 42). Land accordingly turns out to be God's most ancient and continuous promise, reaching back to the patriarchs. Israel had to go through many experiences of land possessed, lost, and regained to realize that land is always and foremost a grace. The importance of Psalm 105 is affirmed in its choice to form, with Psalms 96 and 100, a trilogy for worship in 1 Chron. 16:7–36.

After an invitation to seek God's presence (vv. 1–6), the basis of development (from loss to new possession) is provided in vv. 7–11 with the eternal promises to the patriarchs. Verses 12–45 dwell upon various ways God protected his people: vv. 12–15, the patriarchs amid hostile kings and vv. 16–22, imprisonment in Egypt, first of Joseph and then, in vv. 23–38, of all the people. Verses 39–41 recall the difficulties in the wilderness, whereupon vv. 42–45 close the psalm.

Verses 1–6 offer a new way for the exiles to view their situation. With liturgical language the psalmist calls upon the people to "inquire of the LORD . . . constantly seek God's face" (v. 4). This language implies turning to Yahweh in the Temple for an answer (1 Kings 14:5; 22:5) and, through the Temple services, to contemplate God's past redemptive actions. The psalm thus instills a longing for returning to the land and rebuilding the Temple. Like Abraham, Israel is about to receive a call to go forth to the promised land. The patriarchs are not prominently mentioned outside of Genesis, except in selections from the prophet of the Exile (Isa. 51:2–3; 54:9). Verses 7–11 reach behind the Mosaic covenant to assure Israel that, despite its breaking of the covenant laws, the patriarchal promises remain intact. The land is affirmed as the allotted portion for all Israel in language reminiscent of Levites, for whom the Lord was their allotted portion and cup (Ps. 16:5; Deut. 32:9). All Israel was a priestly people (Exod. 19:6) whose lives, especially in the promised land, were to make important contributions to worship (Deut. 26:1–11).

In vv. 12–45 the plagues of Egypt are lined up differently than in Exod. 7:14–11:10 and Ps. 78:43–51. The purpose of the biblical accounts is a theological elaboration for the religious instruction and worship of later generations. Chronological accuracy was not to the point. Darkness is recorded first (v. 28), though it was the ninth plague in Egypt (Exod. 10:21–23), to show that opposition to Yahweh wraps a person in obscurity and shame. By contrast (v. 39) Yahweh will provide light at once for Israel to depart and to be led through the wilderness. Verses 25–29 form a long, important chiasm in which the central line, v. 27, states that "words or signs" go together, so that the words of Moses and Aaron were seen in their inner strength by the wonders that accompanied them. Verses 42–45 bring together the three principal key words. The psalm ends with the people still in exile, but ready to obey the Lord's precepts. Otherwise all is lost.

Psalm 106. A communal lament over the dismal conditions of the postexilic age (Ps. 16; Isa. 56:9–57:13; Zech. 7–8), Psalm 106 follows the pattern of Deuteronomy not only in the sequence of events in Egypt and during the wandering in the wilderness, but also with prophetic warning, instruction, and comfort for contrite hearts. The psalm treats Israel's inexplicable guilt and God's inexhaustible mercy. A comparison with Psalm 105 exhibits surprising differences. Although each psalm relives the Exodus and wilderness experiences, Psalm 105 molds it into a praise of God, Psalm 106 into a communal lament. Israel's religion is not subject to divine fate if such divergences occur from the same traditions and are due to Israel's reactions. The sins of early Israel are repeated again during and after the Exile.

The incorporation of Psalm 106 (along with Pss. 96; 105) into a Temple service (1 Chron. 16:7–36) testifies to the psalm's existence before 400 B.C. and its popularity for rebuilding hope. Lines or phrases are frequently woven into NT preaching: v. 10 in Luke 1:71; v. 20 in Rom. 1:23; v. 28 in 1 Cor. 12:2; v. 37 in 1 Cor. 10:20; v. 45 in Luke 1:72; and v. 48 in Luke 1:68; Rev. 19:4.

The preaching style of Deuteronomy, which dominates Psalm 106, makes it difficult to section it off into poetic stanzas, but the following outline may direct study and worship. After a short entry chant (vv. 1–3)

and prayer (vv. 4–5), the psalm divides into two main parts: first, Israel's ingratitude in Egypt and in the wilderness (vv. 6–23) and Yahweh's just punishment (vv. 24–27); second, Israel's disobedience before and after entering the promised land (vv. 28–39) and the Lord's new punishment and grace (vv. 40–46). Verse 47 is a final prayer for the psalm and v. 48 a doxology for Book Four of the Psalter (Pss. 90–106).

Verses 1–5 begin with the popular postexilic refrain, "Hallelujah," used twenty-three times as an introduction or conclusion to psalms within Psalms 104–150. The Greek and Latin translations generally transliterated the word (without the initial *h*, hence the "Alleluia" spelling within the Roman and Orthodox churches) rather than translating it as "Praise the Lord." Two other congregational responses occur, generally paired together: "Praise [or 'Give thanks to'] Yahweh, for God is good" and "God's kindness lasts forever" (Pss. 107:1; 118:1, 2, 3, 4, 29; 136). The confession of sin that is to follow becomes a way for the community to praise God's fidelity and goodness. In this setting of a family tradition of faith, the individual humbly and peacefully asks God, "Remember me."

Verses 6–27 recall, with sorrow and hope, the Lord's extraordinary interventions and Israel's rebellious or indifferent response in Egypt and in the wilderness. The opening verse repeats traditional words for sin and repentance (51:1–2). Israel's faith rested squarely upon God's willingness to forgive repeatedly (Exod. 34:6–7). Such was the way that God was to be remembered and named (v. 8). Goodness was no easy gift from God; the language of v. 9 recalls God's battles against chaotic, evil forces, symbolized by water (Exod. 15; Pss. 29; 89:9–10; Isa. 51:9–10). In the wilderness, cowardice (Num. 14:1–4), sensuality (Exod. 32; Num. 11:4–6), and selfish ambition (Num. 12; 16) provoked Israel's sinful responses. Similar to Hosea's and Jeremiah's intuition, sin is described as a forgetfulness of God (Hos. 2:13; Jer. 3:21). Moses appears as the great intercessor before God (Num. 14:13–19; Ps. 99:6). The Exile is traced to sin similar to that of the Israelites in the wilderness, who died in perpetual exile (Num. 14:20–38). Ezek. 20:23 echoes v. 27 announcing the Exile.

Verses 28–47 move the thought to a hopeful setting, advancing beyond the point of sentence and punishment where the preceding section ended. Like the people in the wilderness, those in exile were severely tempted to worship the Babylonian gods who seemed to have defeated Yahweh. Yet Israel's defeat was planned by Yahweh to purify and strengthen morally the chosen people (Isa. 44:9–20; 44:25–26; 45:4–7). Even Moses, for some mysterious offense, must die with the people in the wilderness (v. 32; Num. 20:6–13; Deut. 1:37–40; 34). The story of sin continues, even with human sacrifice (v. 37; Gen. 22; 2 Kings 16:3; Jer. 7:31). Yahweh still remembers the covenant and its pledge of forgiveness (Exod. 34:6–7). Verse 48 completes Book Four (Pss. 90–106) with a doxology similar to that at the end of Psalms 41, 72, and 89.

Psalms 107–150

Book Five

The final book reflects the full flowering of postexilic Temple liturgy. A first series of "Hallelujah Psalms" (Pss. 111–118) includes the "Egyptian Hallel" (Pss. 113–118), which was sung for the three great pilgrimage festivals of Passover, Weeks, and Tabernacles (Exod. 23:14–17). The "Psalms of Ascent" (Pss. 120–134) constitute a small booklet to accompany pilgrims to or from Jerusalem. Psalm 136 is the "Great Hallel" for Sabbath services. Psalms 146–150 conclude the Psalter with an exultant "Te Deum" or "Glory to God in the Highest" (→ Feasts, Festivals, and Fasts).

Psalms 107 and 119 are, possibly, introductory psalms—Psalm 107 to the entire ensemble of Book Five and Psalm 119 to the "Psalms of Ascent." Psalm 137 is untitled, typical of unclassified songs always finding their way into a hymnal. A final group of "Psalms of David" shows up, generally in a very poor textual condition, due to long neglect (Pss. 108–110; 138–145).

Psalm 107. An intricate, yet carefully structured and free-flowing hymn of praise, Psalm 107 draws motivation from Israel's history (vv. 1 and 4–32) and was later adapted to thanksgiving for the return from exile (vv. 2–3) and augmented with another hymn colored by the concerns of the wisdom tradition (vv. 33–42). Each stanza within vv. 4–32 has four sections clearly marked off by refrains: first, a narrative about a distressing situation, traveling across land or desert (vv. 4–5), imprisonment (vv. 10–12), illness and sin (vv. 17–18), traveling by sea (vv. 23–27); second, a prayer refrain (vv. 6, 13, 19, 28); third, an account about deliverance (vv. 7, 14, 20, 29–30); and fourth, a thanksgiving refrain (vv. 8–9, 15–16, 21–22, 31–32). The theology of the psalm, God's loving and effective answer to dire human needs, is summarized by key words: in the first refrain, "distress" or "trouble"; in the second refrain, "God's wonderful works" and their recipients, "the children of men."

Verses 1–3 begin with stereotypic expressions of praise (cf. 106:1). The phrase "redeemed of the LORD" (v. 2) reflects the preaching, during the Exile, of Second Isaiah, who transformed a nonreligious word, "kinsperson," with its accompanying obligations (Lev. 25:23–55) into a technical, theological word, "redeemer" or "to redeem" (so Isa. 35:9; 51:10; 62:12). Verse 3 deliberately adapts the psalm to Israelites scattered in foreign lands, a new phenomenon called the Diaspora, a Greek word for "scattered abroad."

Verses 4–9 lay out the consequences of being lost in

a desert wilderness: hunger, thirst, and inevitable death. Yahweh responds according to the law of desert hospitality (Gen. 18:1–5). God cannot do otherwise, once having heard the cry of distress, for Yahweh is to be named by kindness and fidelity (Exod. 34:6–7). The deliverance of travelers, lost physically or morally, becomes part of Israel's repertoire of praise for Yahweh. Such language implies aimless wandering (Exod. 23:4; Isa. 53:6), a way that needs to become straight in its directions and just in its morals (Pss. 25:8; Isa. 40:3).

Verses 10–16 blend words for imprisonment due either to physical coercion from others or to one's own moral condition. Rebellion against God's word leads to punishment (Josh. 1:18; Ps. 106:33). Israel spurned God's counsel (Num. 14:2; Isa. 5:24) and so was destined for execution. They were already as good as dead (Ezek. 37:1–14). God breaks the bars of oppression and reverses the death sentence (Isa. 45:2).

Verses 17–22 consider simultaneously physical health, moral integrity, individual status, and community responsibility (Pss. 6; 30; 38; 69; 88). Just as the imprisonment in the preceding section links physical and moral chains in a condition near to death, likewise here the condition leads a person and (symbolically) a community close to the dark, silent grave (6:5; 16:10). For these reasons, healing consisted of more than a physical cure. Only God, therefore, is the true, effective physician, converting the community in its attitudes, reaching tenderly to the sick person, securing moral transformation (Exod. 15:26; Hos. 5:13; 6:1; 11:3).

Verses 23–32 correspond with many other biblical passages. The sea was almost always portrayed as a hostile, dangerous place (Pss. 29; 46:1–3; 89:9–13). Only Yahweh can overcome this demonic force and deliver Israel (Exod. 15:1–18; Isa. 51:9–10).

Verses 33–35 evoke Second Isaiah, prophet of the Exile (Isa. 42:15; 43:19), and lead into the final hymn with its strong wisdom coloration (Prov. 23:34; 30:18–19; 31:14; Job. 12:21, 24).

Psalm 108. A composite psalm, Psalm 108 is made up of vv. 1–5, from 57:7–11, and vv. 6–13, from 60:5–12. The change of the divine name from Yahweh to Elohim is preserved as in the Elohisti Psalter (see commentary above on Pss. 42–72, Book Two). Joined together, Psalm 57, an individual's lament, modifies the fierceness of Psalm 60; Psalm 60, a community lament, provides a larger setting for the isolation in Psalm 57. All three psalms locate the solution to suffering and oppression somewhere in between the exclusively military and exclusively religious response.

Psalm 109. Psalm 109 is a lament from an individual who is slandered (vv. 4, 20, 29), falsely judged (vv. 7, 31), weak and probably sick (vv. 23–24), isolated and rejected (v. 25). The psalm consists of an opening lament (vv. 1–5), an extended curse of the enemy (vv. 6–20), a prayer for help and further lament (vv. 21–29), and finally a vow to offer public thanksgiving when exonerated (vv. 30–31). The strong influence of Jer. 18:19–23 is recognized, and therefore the composition is generally placed during the Exile or later. Repetition of words argues for unity of authorship. There are a number of reasons for thinking that the long imprecation in vv. 6–20 is mainly a quotation from the enemy: first, although the psalmist speaks generally in the plural about others, these verses use the singular; second, the curses of the adversary are mentioned in vv. 20, 28; third, the psalmist relates a separate set of curses against the enemy in v. 29. (For a further explanation of biblical curses, see commentary above on Ps. 69.)

Verses 1–5 reveal a God functionally dead or nonexistent (14:1; 22:1; 28:1), no more effective than the statues ridiculed by the prophet of the Exile (Isa. 44:9–20; Ps. 115). Such a weak God is put to shame by the psalmist's foes, who are efficient in hatching plots. The psalmist, like Jeremiah, feels betrayed by close friends (Jer. 11:18–19; 12:6). In v. 6 the word for accuser (Heb. *satan*) generally indicates strong opposition (2 Sam. 19:23; 1 Kings 5:18) and, in the postexilic age, a superhuman adversary (Job 1:6; Zech. 3:1). The curse may include demonic opposition. (For the *lex talionis* in v. 17, see commentary above on Ps. 35:7–8.)

Psalm 110. Psalm 110 rose and fell with the Davidic dynasty; the text became obscure as the ritual of the dynasty ceased with the end of the monarchy. Psalm 110 becomes more intelligible as we associate it with other biblical passages involving royalty (2 Sam. 7; Isa. 9:6–7; Pss. 2; 89:1–37). Each verse indicated a long ceremony in the multiday ritual of a royal coronation.

Verse 1a begins with the announcement of the Temple prophet: "The oracle of Yahweh for my lord [the crown prince]." In the Jerusalem Temple, the crown prince is being introduced to the assembly. "Sit [as supreme judge] at my right," i.e., directly south of the Temple where the royal administrative buildings were situated. (Directions were always taken facing east, so Ps. 48.) At this point perhaps the assembly processed solemnly to the reception hall in one of these buildings. Verse 1b refers to the ritual of vassals, no longer enemies, making their obeisance to the new king (2:1–3, 8). Verse 2, "Your strong scepter the LORD extends to you," is the signal for investing the crown prince with the symbols of royalty (2:9). The scepter extends "from Zion," the center of the universe (Ezek. 5:5; 38:12), around which world history revolves.

With v. 3 the assembly is back again in the Temple for the most solemn moment of all, the consecratory words by which the crown prince becomes king. The form accepted by the Jerusalem scribes reads, "Your people offer themselves willingly on this, your day of strength; in holy splendor from the womb of dawn yours is the dew of your youth." The Greek depends upon a slightly different set of vowels within the same consonants: "Yours is regal power on [this] day of your

birth; in the splendor of the holy ones, from the womb before the daystar, I beget you" (cf. 2:7). Both versions acclaim the mysterious origin of the king's position and power. Dew appears "miraculously" without rain (Hos. 14:6; Ps. 133:3; Job 38:28).

In v. 4 the king is declared "priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek," one of the titles of the Jebusite kings who ruled Jerusalem before its capture by David (Gen. 14). This title became highly controversial. It was taken over by the Hasmonean kings against the Zadokite family, who controlled the high-priesthood up till then (1 Macc. 10:21; 14:41). Still later the Samaritans legitimated their priesthood as that of Melchizedek against that at Jerusalem. Qumran saw in Melchizedek the messianic figure (11QMelch); the NT recognized here a prototype for the priesthood of Jesus, which was thereby eternal (Heb. 7:24, 28) and superior to that of Aaron (Heb. 5:10; 6:20; 7:11).

Verse 5 continues at the Temple. The new king is enthroned "at the pillar" reserved for royalty (2 Kings 11:14; 23:3), directly north of the holy place. Therefore "The LORD['s dwelling] is at your right hand." With rhetorical flourish, vv. 5–6 announce the invincible power of the new king. Verse 7 locates the final ceremony in this week or more of pageantry at the spring of Gihon, the supplier of water for the city and also a sanctuary where Solomon was crowned (1 Kings 1:38–40). Here the king drinks from consecrated water, symbolic of receiving life from God, and with uplifted head leaves the sanctuary to begin his reign.

Psalm 110 is one of the most cited OT passages in the NT, principally v. 1 in connection with Christ's resurrection (Matt. 22:44; 26:64; Acts 2:34–35; 1 Cor. 15:25; Heb. 1:13; 10:13). In the NT, royalty is not normally claimed for Jesus during his earthly life, only after his resurrection, when he rules by sending the Spirit to his disciples.

Psalm 111. Psalm 111 is an alphabetical or acrostic psalm (like Pss. 9–10; 25; 34), with each half-verse beginning with the next letter of the alphabet. This and other didactic features (v. 10) suggest a postexilic composition when the wisdom tradition was strong. Psalm 111 relates well with Psalm 112 in rhythm, ideas, and vocabulary: righteousness in v. 3; 112:2; steadiness in v. 8; 112:8; and remembrance in v. 4; 112:6. Together they lead to the "Egyptian Hallel" (see commentary above on Pss. 107–150, Book Five). Psalm 111 celebrates a righteous God, Psalm 112 a righteous person.

Verses 1–3 introduce a didactic hymn; vv. 4–6 root all blessings in the covenant because Yahweh is faithful (vv. 7–9). Verse 10 concludes on a strong wisdom note.

"The assembly of the righteous" (v. 1b) is gathered in a public edifice, possibly a school. Yahweh's works are "studied for their delights." The word "studied," from the Hebrew word *darash,* lies at the root of a special type of rabbinical interpretation called "midrash." The works pondered by the group center around the Exodus, the Lord's care in the wilderness with the food of manna (Exod. 16; Ps. 81:10, 16), and the gift of the land. Verse 10 states that "the fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom," meaning that the basis and support of a wise person are found in reverence toward God and neighbor (cf. Prov. 1:7; Job 28:28).

Psalm 112. Linked carefully with the end of Psalm 111, Psalm 112, also showing wisdom features, follows the same alphabetical style. The traditional position that the just are rewarded and the wicked are left poor and barren (Pss. 1; 37) imparts a steady peace here. Benefits redound both to the just person (vv. 1–3) and to the neighbor (vv. 4–6), with protection against adversity (vv. 7–8) to the confusion of the wicked (vv. 9–10). This solution was not always obvious (Ps. 49; Job), but seemed more than sufficient for the majority of cases in times of peace. In v. 3 "wealth and riches" are identified with "righteousness," a word, however, that in postbiblical Judaism also signified "generosity" (NAB; Sir. 3:30; 7:10). Words like "light" (Ps. 27:1) and "compassionate and just" (Exod. 34:6–7), normally attributed to Yahweh, are here bestowed on the righteous person. The psalm does not end in revenge, but in the satisfaction that wickedness does not succeed.

Psalm 113. Psalm 113 is a song related to some of the most frequently cited and ancient canticles (Exod. 15; Deut. 32; Judg. 5; 1 Sam. 2) and to the songs of the poor (Zeph. 2:3; 3:12; Isa. 41:17–20). Psalm 113 begins the "Egyptian Hallel," sung partly at the beginning (Pss. 113–114) and partly at the close (Pss. 115–118) in the context of the three pilgrimage festival dinners (Exod. 23:14–17). Psalm 113 indicates some kind of antiphonal singing: v. 1, a request to begin; vv. 2–4, choral response; v. 5, question by a solo voice; and vv. 7–9, choral response.

"Servants of the LORD" in v. 1 indicates anyone loyal to Yahweh, especially under trial (Deut. 34:5; Isa. 42:1; Ps. 79:2). The choral response in vv. 2–4 reaches to people true to the covenant even at a distance from Jerusalem (Mal. 1:11; Ps. 107:3). Thrice "the name of the LORD," Yahweh, is acclaimed, affirming the special relation of the people with their God. In reply to the question (v. 5), the choir responds that Israel's God is distinguished by "raising the poor" from disgrace. During the Exile, Israel realized its impotence, like many saintly persons (Gen. 16:2; 20:18; 1 Sam. 1:5) who became typical of all Israel (Isa. 54:1–10; 66:7–16).

Psalm 114. The hymn in Psalm 114 possesses high literary and liturgical qualities involving parallelism, brevity, imagination, and surprise. All verses, except the final one, comprise a call to praise, so the LXX united Psalm 115 with it. The psalm may have been composed for the sanctuary at Gilgal near the river Jordan (Josh. 5; 1 Sam. 10:8) and was later transferred to the Jerusalem Temple with its symbolism

of water flowing from the rock of sacrifice (Ps. 46:4; Ezek. 47).

Verses 1–7 quickly move from the Red Sea to the river Jordan and overlook the long, trying period of the wilderness (95:7b–11). Israel celebrated and relived the crossing of the Red Sea at a more convenient geographical location, which, however, was unlike the Red Sea area and was surrounded with mountains. A similar ritual "actualization" occurs throughout Joshua 1–6.

Psalm 115. Originating in a service like Josh. 7:19; Mic. 7:7–20; Isaiah 12; and Amos 4:6–13, with confession of faults, forgiveness, and praise of Yahweh, Psalm 115 perhaps represents a religious service especially for diaspora Jews living among foreigners and tempted to apostasy. The psalm was ideal for pilgrimage to Jerusalem (see commentary above on Pss. 107–150, Book Five). The heart of the service was vv. 12–15, a priestly blessing (Num. 6:22–27), preceded by renewed consecration to the Lord of the covenant (vv. 1–2) and a prayer of confidence (vv. 3–11), followed by thanksgiving (vv. 16–18).

Verses 1–2 reflect the agonizing taunt of 79:10 and attribute strength and glory "not to us," or as the Aramaic Targum reads, "not because of our justice." All confidence rests with the Lord of the covenant (Exod. 34:6–7). Verses 3–11 ridicule the helpless gods of conquered people, something commonly done (2 Kings 18:33–35; Isa. 44:9–20). For Israel, the religion of other nations appeared like fetish idolatry. Israel is divided between priests, laity, and "God-fearers," a term that in later times referred to converts who were not completely following the full laws of circumcision and food (cf. Acts 10:2, 22). Verse 17 reflects the ancient, traditional opinion about the afterlife (Pss. 6:5; 30:9).

Psalm 116. Intended for a Temple service of thanksgiving (vv. 9, 14, 18–19; Pss. 65:4; 100:4), Psalm 116 expresses the sentiments of a person fulfilling vows if released from critical sickness (vv. 3, 8) or from bonds and execution (vv. 3, 16). The psalm may be divided as follows: vv. 1–2, confession of faith in Yahweh's regard for the needy; vv. 3–4, expression of distress; vv. 5–11, chant of praise and thanksgiving; and vv. 12–19, sacrifice of thanksgiving in the Temple. The LXX, which unites Psalms 113–114, separates 116:10–19 as a distinct psalm. Sung as part of the "Egyptian Hallel" (Pss. 113–118; see commentary above on Pss. 107–150, Book Five), this psalm belonged to the second segment toward the end of the sacred meal.

In vv. 1–2 the psalmist is able to love because the Lord has been loving and caring all along; this psalm does not begin with a silent, deaf God as do 22:1 and 28:1. Yet the phrase "my voice, my supplication" implies a loud, persistent supplication (28:2). In vv. 3–4 the understanding of the afterlife is traditional (6:5; 115:17); still God's presence with an unclean, sick person is not traditional, as the rules in Leviticus 21 point out.

Verses 5–11 begin the chant of thanksgiving, based on the covenant's intuition of a kind and faithful God (Exod. 34:6–7; Pss. 111:4; 112:4; Isa. 49:10; 54:10). The "simple" or "little ones" (v. 6) are vulnerable people, at times naive, who seem to trust too easily (cf. Pss. 9:10; 19:7; 119:130; Prov. 1:22). According to v. 10, faith remains as a sturdy support even when a person's emotions are crying out against faith (Pss. 22; 44; Job 14:2).

Verses 12–19 recognize that God's goodness and gifts cannot be purchased. Temple sacrifice, therefore, gives nothing to God, but recognizes ever more fully God's gifts by enabling one to surrender oneself symbolically with the holocaust of joyful adoration (Lev. 1). The "cup of salvation" is the wine shared at a sacred meal, a metaphor for the joy already received from the Lord and shared with others, intensified by the Lord's presence (Ps. 23:5).

Psalm 117. The shortest of the psalms, Psalm 117 is a hymn of praise. It represents Yahweh as the universal lord, receiving praise from all nations. Yet the motivation for praise (v. 2), "love and fidelity for us" (Exod. 34:6–7), uses the terminology of covenant graciousness. The psalm clearly represents the three fundamental parts of a hymn of praise: the call to praise (v. 1); the reason for praise (v. 2ab); the repetition of the call to praise (v. 2c).

Psalm 118. The "Egyptian Hallel" (Pss. 113–118), sung for the three pilgrimage feasts, concludes in Psalm 118. It accompanied the fourth cup of wine at the Passover meal. It may also have been used for an entrance ritual (v. 19; Pss. 15; 24). Several details indicate that it was most of all at home with the Feast of Tabernacles, with reference to tents (v. 15), day (v. 24; 81:3), light (v. 27), plants used for the family tent (v. 27), and hosannah (v. 25). Long usage meant additions and shifts, so that the structure became complex. The psalm moves between community thanksgiving (vv. 1–4, 22–29) and individual thanksgiving (vv. 5–21). It allows for individual adaptation within its larger pattern. Some Hebrew manuscripts begin separate psalms at vv. 5 and 25.

Verses 1–4 begin with a traditional community expression of gratitude (107:1; 136:1; Ezra 3:11) embracing all Israel, lay, priests, and God-fearing converts (vv. 9–11).

Verses 5–21 are adaptable to many forms of individual thanksgiving: people freed from severe restrictions (vv. 5–9), from harassment by outsiders (vv. 10–16), or from sickness (vv. 17–18). It probably permitted additions for other situations. Verses 5–9 refer to something like occupation by foreign troops (Lam. 1:3) or confinement in death (v. 3). Everyone,

but especially people with nomadic background, possesses a basic necessity of being "set free" from burdensome restrictions (Gen. 26:22; Ps. 31:8). "The LORD is with me. . . . What can any human being do to me?"—a common refrain (56:4, 11), repeated in Rom. 8:31. Taking refuge in the Lord is another familiar response (2:12; 7:1; 11:1). In vv. 10–16 the language is so strong that one suspects a king is speaking about a national disaster, an individual is identifying personal tragedy with the nation's, or someone in the Diaspora is persecuted for the faith by surrounding Gentiles. The language of gratitude in v. 14 is taken from the nation's song of deliverance in Exod. 15:6, 12. In vv. 17–18 sickness is now seen as a chastisement that disciplined and purified one (Deut. 4:36; Jer. 10:24; Isa. 54:8). The gates of justice may be named from the ceremony of receiving a person into full membership after sin or uncleanness (Pss. 15; 24).

Verses 22–25 allow the congregation to absorb all individuals again in communal thanksgiving as at the beginning. "The stone rejected by the builders [now] the cornerstone" refers to the enigmatic text of Isa. 28:16, in which the prophet refers to the testing of one's faith and one's faithful reliance upon the Lord (Isa. 7:9b; 30:15–18). The phrase probably became a proverb suitable for many situations.

It is evident that "this is the day the LORD takes action" (v. 24a); the present tense here reflects the liturgical custom of actualizing the past moment of a great redemptive act. The Hebrew form of v. 25a preserves the origin of the refrain, "Hosannah," originally a call for help (12:1; 28:9) or mercy (2 Sam. 14:4), but later a stereotypic word for praise (so Matt. 21:9). This verse was repeated seven times on the last day of Tabernacles as the congregation processed up to and around the altar (v. 27).

Verses 26–27 offer a blessing upon "the one who comes in the name of the LORD." Here the phrase refers to any devout Israelite; eventually in Judaism it became a messianic title (Matt. 11:3). Verse 27a, with its reference to light, may provide the occasion at the end of the service for imparting the priestly blessing from Num. 6:22–27.

Psalm 119. On first reading, Psalm 119 seems exceptional for nothing except its length. It is the longest of all psalms, but does not display exceptional poetry, vivid images, original insights, or excitement about anything; it just exhibits a quiet, meditative tone about "law" with no internal development. One can start at the end and read the verses backward, and it makes equally good sense. One concludes that Psalm 119 was not composed for the epic moments of life, but for the 90 percent of time in which life is uneventful, even monotonous. Psalm 119 becomes the moment of prolonged contemplation in God's presence.

Each stanza of eight verses begins with the succeeding letter of the Hebrew alphabet, and all eight verses of a stanza start with the same letter. Each verse has one of eight synonyms for law, except that v. 90 has a ninth synonym and v. 122 none at all.

The psalmist meditated intently, especially upon Deuteronomy, but also upon Proverbs, Job, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel, and to a lesser extent upon Isaiah 40–66, writing in what is called an anthological style. Little derives from the historical or former prophetic books of Joshua through 2 Kings. Despite its legal appearance, there seems to be no contact with the priestly tradition of the Pentateuch. Some examples of borrowing are: v. 2 and Deut. 4:29; Jer. 29:13–14a; v. 25 and Job 40:13; vv. 33–40 and Prov. 4:13; v. 31 and Deut. 10:20; v. 70 and Isa. 6:10; v. 76 and Isa. 51:3; v. 85 and Jer. 18:20a; and v. 89 and Isa. 40:8. The sources lean toward a style of lament, with a strong secondary impulse of instruction and exhortation. Psalm 119, therefore, is difficult to categorize, yet its overall appearance tilts toward a wisdom psalm. It stems from a contemplative type of person within the Deuteronomic school.

"Law," or *torah* (lit., "teaching"), as implied already, is not to be interpreted as a legal code, or as the five books of Moses. It is the Lord who teaches the law (vv. 12, 19, 26, 64, 68); and so in keeping the law, one seeks the Lord (vv. 2, 10, 19, 48). Law is not kept simply by human determination, but through prayer and the Lord's assistance (vv. 10, 18, 25, 26, 36). Obedience to this law becomes a source of unfailing joy (vv. 24, 35, 77, 92). Law thus becomes an important part of conversion and reformation (vv. 19, 67, 176). Law is identified with the inner force of conscience in a person persistently in touch with the Scriptures and prayerfully in God's presence. Such a law is the most binding and most liberating of all, for it represents one's best self formed by God along the way of the Scriptures.

The psalmist seems to be peering into the mystery of a personal, loving, caring God. Prayer at night is taken for granted (vv. 55, 62, 147); prayer is requested seven times a day (v. 164), giving rise to the seven "hours" of the monastic office in Christianity.

The alphabetical style adds its own mystic tone. Each letter is seen as a gift from God, enabling a person to refine ever more carefully the least dictate of God's will. This style endows a person with inner strength and consistency.

Psalm 119 shows no interest in Israelite history and institutions. Temple and feast days seem far from the mind. This psalmist may have been among the first of the pietists, the forerunners of individualistic religion.

Some scholars look upon Psalm 119 and especially its later stanzas as an introduction to or a part of the "Psalms of Ascent" for pilgrimage (Pss. 120–134). Pilgrims often passed through hostile territory (vv. 81–88) and were grateful at the end (vv. 89–96), with prayers during the stay at Jerusalem (vv. 97–128) and before departure (vv. 129–136), with further reflections

for the return journey (vv. 137–160) and upon arrival home (vv. 161–176).

Psalm 120. Psalms 120–134 are each entitled "A Song of Ascent" or, in some older Bibles, "A Gradual Psalm." Various reasons are offered: there is the steplike or progressive rhythm of repeating words from the previous verse (Pss. 121:3–5; 123:1–2; 127:1–2; 130:5–6); fifteen psalms were to be sung on the fifteen steps from the Court of the Women to the Court of Israel in the Temple (Ezek. 40:22, 37; *m. Mid.* 2.5–6); they allude to return from Babylonian exile (Ezra 2:1; 7:9); and, most probable of all reasons, they were chanted by pilgrims to and from Jerusalem, especially at the time of the harvest festivals, as the "Egyptian Hallel" (Pss. 113–118) was sung at Jerusalem during these feasts.

Psalm 120 is a prayer for help combining sorrow and confidence. Verse 1 calls for help because of the distressful circumstances of the Diaspora and the difficulties of the journey to Jerusalem. Verses 2–4 respond in the only way possible in a culture without internal police forces, by a curse that places the evil situation squarely in God's hands (Ps. 69). In vv. 5–7 the foreign lands stretch as far north as Meshech near the Black Sea (Gen. 10:2) to Kedar in southern Arabia (Isa. 21:13–17). Despite its dangers the psalmist confesses the need (v. 7) to go on the pilgrimage to pray for peace.

Psalm 121. Psalm 121 is a quiet dialogue. Verse 1 is the question, vv. 2–8 the reply.

Lifting one's eyes to the mountains implies a yearning look toward Jerusalem (42:1) and a fearful glance at hostile mountains along the way. The blessing in v. 2 is founded on Isa. 41:10, 13–14; 42:5 and was repeated frequently (Pss. 115:15; 124:8; 134:3; 146:6), as it is in Christian prayers. That God does not slumber or sleep (v. 4) reassures anyone doubtful, as in 7:6; 44:23. Verse 5 reads in *Psalms Scroll* [a] from Qumran (11QPs[a]), "By night the LORD is your keeper, by day your shade at your right hand," like a promise given to Abraham (Gen. 28:15). God will protect the pilgrim not only from sunstroke (2 Kings 4:18–20) and the evil influence of the moon, but also from demonic attack (Ps. 91:5–13).

Psalm 122. Joyfully arriving at Jerusalem (vv. 1–2), the pilgrim praises the holy city (vv. 3–5) and prays for its peace (vv. 6–9). The walls of Jerusalem offer security after the dangerous journey for those obeying the law of pilgrimage (Deut. 16:16–17). The reference to "the house of David" reflects postexilic hopes for a Davidic messiah (cf. Zech. 9:9).

Psalm 123. Although beginning almost the same way as Psalm 121, Psalm 123 has a tone of lament over the memory of personal and national sorrows. A quiet, wholesome trust sustains the pilgrim, despite an arrogant smirch from oppressors. The psalm was composed at a difficult time (cf. Neh. 2:19–20; Isa. 63:7–64:11; Zech. 1:15).

Psalm 124. Psalm 124, a hymn of community thanksgiving perhaps composed for an occasion such as the completion of the city walls after a period of internal indifference and outside harassment (Neh. 12:27–47), was easily adaptable for pilgrims. "Were it not for the LORD," the psalmist, like Israel, would never have survived (Ps. 94:17; Gen. 31:42). People are summoned to witness publicly to their faith in the holy city as well as their own deliverance by the Lord (Pss. 107; 118). A series of precise images sweeps us forward: fire, torrential rain, wild animals, a helpless bird; people were in danger of being swallowed up in death (cf. Num. 16:30). The psalm recalls the mythological accounts of chaotic waters associated with Jerusalem (Pss. 29; 46). Verse 8 repeats a standard prayer of confidence (121:2).

Psalm 125. This psalm of confidence, Psalm 125, was perhaps composed during foreign occupation or subversion from evil leadership within (Isa. 56:9–57:13; Ps. 16). It was ideal for pilgrims reflecting upon the perils of their own hostile environment at home and on the journey. In the opening expression of assurance (vv. 1–3), righteous Israelites merge into city, mountains, and Temple and these into God, a God who surrounds the chosen people with complete protection (Zech. 2:9[5]; 2 Kings 6:17). Verses 4–5 ask a blessing upon the upright, those who are "straight and true with God," but upon the wicked, "those who bend and twist their ways," an expulsion from the community (18:25–26; 35:8). The psalm ends with a liturgical blessing (v. 6).

Psalm 126. Psalm 126, another psalm of confidence, may have been composed for the festival of Tabernacles, when the people celebrated the autumn harvest and prayed for rain (Lev. 23:33–43; Zech. 14:16–19), but which was at times a feast of disappointment (Hag. 1:6; 2:16; Neh. 8:9–18). Verses 1–3 dream about a happy future under God's direction (Gen. 37:5–11; 20:3–7; 1 Kings 3:5–15). Verses 4–5 pray for the speedy fulfillment of dreams, like sudden rainfall in the wilderness, or for a sure fulfillment, like sowing seed in the dark earth with hopes for a good harvest. The sequence of joy into sorrow with new hope may also be observed in Jeremiah 31.

Psalm 127. Psalm 127, a wisdom psalm, examines the special blessings of a large family for the virtuous person. It may have been composed to greet the birth of a child, yet it was ideal for pilgrimage, since the child represented the continuity of Israel within the family home of the Temple. The association of wisdom, blessings, and Temple attracted the name of Solomon in the title (cf. Ps. 72). In vv. 1–2, and throughout the Bible, to

build a house meant to have a family (Deut. 25:9; Ruth 4:11). If the Lord does not give children, then every effort at building a physical home is useless. Verses 3–5 witness to the blessing of children and the protection they provide against false witnesses at the city gate (Deut. 25:7; Ruth 4:1–2, 11).

Psalm 128. The preceding psalm ends and Psalm 128 begins with the formula "Happy that one . . . " (cf. Ps. 1). Each, a wisdom psalm, emphasizes the happiness of children for the married couple, here compared to olive plants (Ps. 52:8; Hos. 14:7). At Jerusalem the pilgrim received this formal blessing upon the family. The wife is portrayed living within the private interior of the home with little visibility. The psalm retains the notion of earthly retribution for a virtuous or wicked life (Lev. 26).

Psalm 129. Psalm 129 blends lament, thanksgiving, and most of all, confidence so as to overcome deep disappointments. The tone and images are calm and peaceful, plowing fields and cleaning the housetop, yet the significance is traumatic in that the live flesh of the back is being turned over in the plowing (cf. Isa. 1:4–9) and the withered lives of people are being burned up like grass. The psalm reflects the sad disillusionment upon returning from exile (Hag. 1:6; Ezra 3:12; Neh. 1). The psalm is a pilgrimage through Israelite history from oppression in Egypt (vv. 1–2; Hos. 11) to the difficulties through the centuries from foreign invaders (vv. 3–4; Jer. 31:15–20) and the destruction of Jerusalem (v. 5; Lamentations). A liturgical blessing, which may have become a popular greeting (Ruth 2:4), closes the psalm.

Psalm 130. This is one of the seven psalms designated as penitential psalms in Christian tradition (see also Pss. 6; 32; 38; 51; 102; 143). More personal than Psalms 15 and 24, Psalm 130 also prepared a worshiper for full entry into the Temple through "the gate of justice" (118:19). It includes a word or oracle from the priest (v. 5) in preparation for sacrifice. The Aramaic Targum interpreted "sentinels" (vv. 6–7) as Levites who signal the morning sacrifice (Lev. 6:5–6).

After a plaintive cry for pardon (vv. 1–2) and an admission of guilt (vv. 3–4), the tone moves to confidence (vv. 5–7a) and the assurance of forgiveness (vv. 7b–8). The sincerity of the psalmist shows in a skillful choice of words and style. "Depths" reveal an abyss of torment (18:15; 69:2, 14) and opaque darkness (18:28) beneath the psalm's calm rhythm. Verse 5 positions one humbly before the Lord, but three times declares, "I wait!"

Psalm 131. Forgiveness, with memories of failures and guilt, induces a humble attitude toward God (v. 1) and toward one's neighbor (v. 2), so that a community exhortation is appropriate (v. 3). Biblical humility is not so much a state of soul, but a healthy, honest relationship with others. The psalmist does not venture recklessly into God's domain (cf. Gen. 3:1–7; Exod. 3:6; Isa. 40:12–14).

Psalm 132. Although other "Psalms of Ascent" (Pss. 120–134) tend to be subdued and date to the postexilic era, Psalm 132 sings enthusiastically and reaches back into early history when David conquered Jerusalem and solemnly brought the Ark from Kiriath-jearim to the holy city (1 Sam. 7:1; 2 Sam. 6–7; 2 Chron. 6:41–42 associates Psalm 132 with Solomon's dedication of the Temple. The first half inaugurates a procession at Kiriath-jearim, repeating David's oath to bring the Ark to Jerusalem (vv. 1–5) and concluding at Jerusalem with the installation of the Ark in the Holy of Holies and prayer for the king (vv. 6–10). In the second half, God (through the priests) declares an oath in favor of David's dynasty (vv. 11–12), associating it with the divine presence at the Temple (vv. 13–16) and ending with a prayer for the king (vv. 17–18). With the disappearance of the dynasty after the destruction of Judah, the pilgrimage to Jerusalem reaffirmed Israel's hope in a messiah to appear in the Temple.

A wordplay in vv. 1–5 associates "afflictions," "my eyes," and "sleep," so that David's total concern, indeed his willingness to suffer, is directed toward the Ark. Verses 6–10 locate the beginning of the procession at "Ephrathah," referring to David's clan within the tribe of Judah (Gen. 35:19; Ruth 4:11; Mic. 5:2) and at the "fields of Jaar," "Kiriath-jearim," a village directly west of Jerusalem. "Arise" (v. 8) announces the beginning of the procession (cf. Num. 10:35; Ps. 68:1). Yahweh's "resting place" is a name for the Temple (Isa. 66:1; 1 Chron. 28:2) with important religious consequences (Ps. 95:11). The clothing (v. 9) would be priestly and royal vestments (cf. Zech. 3:3–5). In vv. 17–18 "horn" symbolizes strength (Ps. 18:2; Ezek. 29:21); "lamp," one's presence before God (Exod. 27:20–21; 1 Kings 11:36).

Psalm 133. Psalm 133 is ideally suited to express the joyful companionship of pilgrims at Jerusalem. Closely associated with wisdom (Prov. 15:23; 16:16), it declares that harmony anoints a family and neighborhood as though they were a high priest directing worship at the Temple. Scented oil symbolized peace, health, and joy (Pss. 23:5; 45:7; Exod. 30:22–33). Mount Hermon, reaching over nine thousand feet into the sky and continually capped with snow, became a source of abundant water and dew. Dew is symbolic of blessings (Hos. 14:5; Ps. 110:3), especially "life forever" in family descendants.

Psalm 134. The last of the "Psalms of Ascent," Psalm 134 presents a final evening service at the Temple with a blessing upon the Levites (vv. 1–2) and a priestly

blessing upon the people (v. 3; Num. 6:22–27; Pss. 121:2; 124:8). Psalm 134 may provide the rubrics for a much longer farewell service.

Psalm 135. Like Psalms 96–97 and 119, Psalm 135 presents a mosaic of biblical passages: compare v. 1 and 113:1; vv. 1–2 and 134:1; v. 3a and 136:3a; v. 4 and Exod. 18:11; 19:5; and vv. 15–20 and Ps. 115:4–11. In the postexilic age, a repertoire of sacred literature and formulas was available. The difficulty of detecting a poetical sequence may be due to the psalm's purpose of indicating various liturgical actions. Three minihymns are present: vv. 1–4, 13–14, and 19–21. Verses 4–21 were sometimes joined with Psalm 136 as part of the "Great Hallel," so that Psalm 135 was sung every Sabbath except the one before New Year's; on the eighth day of Passover, it was attached to the "Egyptian Hallel" (Pss. 113–118).

For the call to praise in vv. 1–4, cf. 8:1; 134:1; and Exod. 19:5. All depends upon God's initial election of Israel as a special possession. Verses 5–18 provide motivation for the hymn, first from creation (vv. 5–7), beginning with "I know," a solo voice from the choir. The sea was always a mysterious, fearful place (42:6–11; 107:23–32). The scanning of Israel's history (vv. 8–12) covers the plagues in Egypt and the early settlement in the land. The first Canaanite kings defeated by Israel were Sihon and Og (Num. 21:21–24, 31–34). Verses 13–14 recapitulate creation and history in the remembrance of the divine name Yahweh; all flows from the self-revelation of God's person within the Mosaic covenant, a remembrance acted out liturgically in Temple ceremonies and prayers. (For vv. 15–21, cf. Ps. 115:4–11.)

Psalm 136. To be chanted antiphonally between a solo voice or special choir and the entire assembly, Psalm 136, a most solemn hymn, is fittingly called the "Great Hallel" or "Great Praise" (see commentaries above on Pss. 107–150, Book Five; and on Ps. 135). After the introduction (vv. 1–3), Yahweh is acclaimed for great deeds: in creating the universe (vv. 4–9), in redeeming Israel from Egypt (vv. 10–16), and in conquering the promised land (vv. 17–22; Deut. 34:1–4). Verses 23–26 either summarize everything as Yahweh's love or else extend that love to the return from exile. In any case, each moment of God's intervention from the beginning of creation was directed toward Israel's joy and peace.

The opening exclamation can be translated either as "Give thanks!" or "Praise!" The latter meaning is even more germane to this Hebrew word: to lift or cast (Lam. 3:53), praise (Ps. 49:18), or confess sin (32:5b)—the context determines the lifting of oneself to God. The refrain begins with the Hebrew particle *ki*, best translated in its original meaning, "Yes!" or "Indeed!" Nature and history do not give the reason for praise as they direct one's joyful faith already stimulated by what Yahweh has been doing. The word for "loving-kindness" or "mercy" is also pregnant with many connotations: at times "strength" (Isa. 40:26; Ps. 59:9) or "pledge" (Gen. 20:13; Isa. 55:3). Therefore, it connotes love that is enduring and dependable. The refrain became extremely popular in postexilic Israel (Pss. 106:1; 107:1; 118:1; Jer. 33:11; Ezra 3:11).

"God of gods" (v. 2) originally referred to elevating Yahweh above all other gods (Deut. 10:17), but here it means "God is certainly God." "Lord of lords," similarly. Creation according to the designs of wisdom (v. 5) directs God's activity across heaven and earth for the sake of Israel (Prov. 8:22–36; Sir. 24). Verse 13 reflects Yahweh's struggle against monstrous, even superhuman hostile forces to free Israel from oppression (Exod. 15:3–8; Isa. 51:9–10). (On vv. 17–20, see Ps. 135:10–11.)

Psalm 137. Psalm 137, a communal lament, closest of all to a funeral dirge, may be divided between vv. 1–4, lamenting the impossibility of chanting songs honoring Jerusalem in enemy lands, and vv. 5–9, first lamenting the holy city destroyed before one's eyes and then cursing the two great enemies, Babylon, which burned Jerusalem to the ground (2 Kings 25) and Edom, which looted the countryside afterward (Obad. 8–15; Isa. 63:1–6). The psalm was written with the same agony as present in Isa. 63:7–64:11, between 537 and 520 B.C., perhaps by a repatriated singer from the guild of Asaph (Ezra 2:41; Ps. 79).

Verses 1–4 begin with a contrast of "rivers of Babylon" and the stream of one's tears (42:3), between remembering and forgetting (vv. 1, 5, 6, 7). The tormentors who ask, "Where is your God?" (79:10; 115:2) hardly want a song to this God. The reference to "Songs of Zion" may dictate the placement of this psalm here, after the Zion songs in Psalms 120–134, 135–136. (For curse psalms, see the commentary above on Ps. 69; and for atrocities of war, expressed in the metaphor of dashing children against city walls, Hos. 14:1; Nah. 3:10.) The metaphor expressed the capture of an enemy city, at which time defenders, born within the city, were frequently overwhelmed and killed by the assaulting troops.

Psalm 138. The last series of "Psalms of David" commences with Psalm 138, generally in poor textual condition. The reference in v. 1b to praising God "before the gods" may indicate that the psalmist is in a foreign land. Two hymns of thanksgiving and praise (vv. 1–3, 4–6) are completed by a song of confidence (vv. 7–8).

Verses 1–3 begin in a fashion similar to the canticles of the redeemed in Isa. 12:1; 25:1. The phrase "in the presence of the gods [Heb. *'elohim*]" became embarrassing to the scribes. The Greek and Latin versions read "angels" (NAB); the Syriac, "kings"; the Aramaic Targum, "judges." Originally *'elohim* could have a generic meaning of exalted authority (Ps. 45:6) or Yah-

weh's heavenly court (29:1, 9; 89:5–8) or discredited foreign gods (Ps. 82; Deut. 4:19).

In vv. 4–6 the recognition of Yahweh's gracious deeds by the nations depends upon Israel's faith and its manifestation to outsiders (Isa. 40:9). Verse 8 confesses that the Lord of the covenant outlasts every difficulty.

Psalm 139. Topically one of the most beautiful of psalms, textually Psalm 139 is one of the most difficult. Once the unity is established by an inclusio, bonding vv. 1–3 and 23–24, then the lament in vv. 19–22 controls the meaning of vv. 4–18. Darkness comes from the encirclement of disloyal, hostile people. As at night, this darkness enables the psalmist to peer deeply into the heavens and into the depths of human existence, perceiving the presence of Yahweh, otherwise hidden by the glare of daylight. With no mention of Israel's history or Temple, the psalmist is related to wisdom literature like Job, yet even stronger ties show up with prophecy (Jer. 11:20–21; 12:3; 17:10; Isa. 40; 49).

Persecution (vv. 19–22) plunges the psalmist into a dark mystery where God is pursued in the paths of knowledge (vv. 4–6), into the farthest reaches of the universe (vv. 7–12), into the silent moments of conception and birth (vv. 13–18). The introductory hymn (vv. 1–3) is paralleled by a confession of innocence (vv. 23–24). The psalmist is not so much seeking wisdom as reaching for peace with God.

When the verb "know" in v. 1 is left without an object, the implication is that Yahweh knows everything. The juxtaposition of sitting and standing (cf. Deut. 6:7; Ps. 127:2), journeying and resting in vv. 2–3 intends to include every moment in between.

Verses 4–6 leave the psalmist in fear and awe at the mystery of God within oneself. To be hemmed in is expressed using language of siege and adversity (Judg. 2:15; Jer. 10:18). The psalm, therefore, is not written from a peaceful setting. When vv. 7–12 reach to the limits of sky and earth, the psalmist is defiantly saying to persecutors, you cannot hound me away from God. In fact, to locate God in the highest heavens or in Sheol speaks defiantly to the limits of Israel's theology. Deut. 30:12 forbade seeking God in the skies; Pss. 6:5; 88:9–12 denied God's presence in Sheol. This search for God through impenetrable, even forbidden darkness is not to be dismissed as black magic (vv. 11–12).

Verses 13–18 move from the dangerous darkness of public life to the warm, life-sustaining darkness of the mother's womb. The psalmist senses the kindly protection and wise planning of Yahweh. "My inward being" (lit., "my kidneys") refers to the seat of conscience (16:7) and personal integrity (Jer. 12:2), where one learns true wisdom (Ps. 51:6). This and other classic texts on pregnancy confess God's presence already forming the entire future of the person (Pss. 22:9–10; 71:5–6; Jer. 1:5; Isa. 49:1; Job 10:8–12). God sees "my embryo," an Aramaic expression for something unfinished, and inscribes the entire future "in your book." From Ps. 69:28; Exod. 32:32–33; Dan. 7:10; 12:1, and many other texts, this expression assures a person of faith that a happy, peaceful outcome will ensue. Verse 18b, "when I awake, behold you are still with me," may originally have indicated light at the end of an earthly trial, but the Aramaic Targum saw here an allusion to the resurrection.

Verses 19–22 pray for the destruction of the wicked, a prayer that would have eliminated the need of a psalm like this. Verses 23–24 pick up imagery from the opening verses, now as a confident invitation to God's searching and a request for continual guidance.

Psalm 140. Laborious with words rare or unusual, Psalm 140 represents the prayer of an Israelite innocently accused, possibly the victim of a curse. The opening section contains a double prayer for deliverance (vv. 1 and 4), each time followed by lamentation (vv. 2–3 and 5); there follows an expression of faith in Yahweh (vv. 6–8), a curse upon the slanderers (vv. 9–12), and a final prayer of confidence (vv. 13–14). The dismal, deceitful situation perhaps reflects the early postexilic age as described in Isa. 56:9–57:13 and 59:1–15.

The opening appeal is against people with venomous tongues who may have put a curse upon the psalmist (v. 3; 41:7; 58:5); the image of a snare trapping the unsuspecting victim is equally frequent (v. 5; 91:3; 124:7). The confession of faith (v. 6) uses familiar expressions from the repertoire of Israel's prayer (16:2; 22:10b; 31:14; 35:3; 60:7). The curse against the enemy (vv. 9–12; see the commentary above on Ps. 69) incorporates the *lex talionis* (35:8). Reminiscences of the fiery destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah (Gen. 19; Ps. 11:6) and the opening of the earth to swallow Dathan and Abiram (Num. 16:32–33) explode upon readers. The concluding prayer of confidence presumes eventual vindication.

Psalm 141. Psalm 141 is even more textually disturbed than Psalm 140. In fact, vv. 5–7 are unintelligible in the Hebrew with a wide variety of restructuring in modern translations. Yet Psalms 117, 138, 141, and 142 were chanted each evening for the lighting of lamps within the Temple evening service; today Psalm 141 is frequently sung with the burning of incense at Christian vesper services. The psalm opens with an appeal to God for assistance (vv. 1–2) against temptation (vv. 3–4). After the perplexing vv. 5–7, another prayer for help is directed against deceitful adversaries (vv. 8–10).

Verse 1 voices a classic appeal to Yahweh (17:6; 22:19; 38:22). The evening sacrifice consisted of prayers, incense consumed in adoration, cereal and lamb offerings partly burned and partly given to the priests for livelihood (Exod. 30:8; Lev. 2:1; 6:1; Num. 28:3–8). This custom was faithfully followed in the postexilic age

(Ezra 9:5; Dan. 9:21; Jth. 9:1). Through prayer one seeks wisdom and circumspection (v. 3; Prov. 13:3; Eccles. 5:1, 4–6). The psalmist prays that God not "incline my heart to evil" (v. 4) in that only God's grace, freely offered and freely received, opens the heart to goodness.

Psalm 142. Psalm 142, a lament, stems from an individual falsely accused and under dark confinement; prisons as known today did not exist (Lev. 24:12; Num. 15:34; Jer. 38:6). The composer borrowed freely from other laments (Pss. 16; 22; 27; 30). The structure is typical: a call for God's attention (vv. 1–2a), a lament (vv. 2b–4), and a prayer for help (vv. 5–7). The title associates the psalm with David's hiding from Saul in a cave (1 Sam. 22:1), certainly an encouragement for anyone under persecution who, like David, is assured Yahweh's special care.

For v. 1, see 30:8; 77:1. Consolation is found in memorized prayers. Verse 2 literally speaks of pouring out "my meditations," my continuous mumbling of prayers. The psalmist in v. 4 challenges the Lord: "Look carefully to the right [where a friend ought to be] and see; there is no one willing to acknowledge me." Verse 5 accumulates familiar phrases to express a sense of security in God (73:26).

Psalm 143. The last of the seven penitential psalms, according to Christian tradition (see also Pss. 6; 32; 38; 51; 102; 130), Psalm 143 confesses that only through Yahweh can anyone arrive at goodness and persevere in it. The popularity of this psalm is exemplified by the Greek church's recitation of it every morning. One meets an initial appeal to Yahweh (vv. 1–2), a lament (vv. 3–6), a new call for God's attention (v. 7), and petitions (vv. 8–12). The psalm is a potpourri of prayers across the Psalter; almost every line can be documented elsewhere. Verse 2 acknowledges the powerlessness of anyone to be a righteous person left to themselves (Job 15:14; 25:4) and is quoted by Paul (Rom. 3:9, 20; Gal. 2:16). Verse 5 indicates the value of memory of the traditions of God's deliverance (77:5; 119:52). Verse 7 follows the traditional position of no remembrance of Yahweh in Sheol, the place of the dead (6:5). The psalm ends by describing the psalmist as a suffering, obedient servant (Deut. 34:1–5; Isa. 42:1; 50:4–9a; 52:13–53:12).

Psalm 144. Just as Psalm 18 was considered a most typical psalm of David and inserted as chap. 22 in the appendix to the Davidic narrative (2 Sam. 21–24), Psalm 144, almost at the end of the "Psalms of David" in the Psalter, draws upon Psalm 18 to thank God for the glorious Davidic tradition and to beg God for its renewal. The first part (vv. 1–11) represents the royal Davidic tradition, drawing upon 18:2, 4, 9, 14, 16; the second part (vv. 12–15), a fragment of a psalm, adapts wisdom traditions to the later age. The text has been damaged by neglect or scribal incompetence.

After the opening hymn (vv. 1–2), an admission of human frailty (vv. 3–4) leads to a theophany and a prayerful refrain requesting God's intervention (vv. 5–8), to an expression of gratitude with a repetition of the refrain. Verses 12–15 ask for peaceful prosperity in the family (v. 12), farmlands (vv. 13–14a), and cities (v. 14bc). The psalm concludes joyfully (v. 15).

After a hymnic introduction from Psalm 18, human weakness is confessed with the images and expressions of 8:4; 39:5–6, 11; Job 7:17–18; 14:2; Eccles. 6:12 and leads to a cry of desperation that God break through the desolation with a marvelous theophany. This is a prayer for urgent help now. The language is drawn from Pss. 18; 14; 104:32; Isa. 64:1–4. The reference to foreigners who swear falsely (vv. 7–8) may point to apostate Jews or to those who intermarried in postexilic Israel (Isa. 56:6–57:13; Neh. 9:2). The new song (v. 9; Isa. 42:10; Pss. 33:3; 96:1) prepares for the addition of a new prayer in vv. 12–15.

Psalm 145. An alphabetic psalm (Pss. 9–10) with the line beginning with the Hebrew letter *nun* supplied at v. 13b in the Greek, Syriac, and Qumran scroll (11QPs[a]), Psalm 145 is typically restrained in its creativity. An anthological method appears throughout: cf. v. 1 and 30:1; v. 2b and 34:2; v. 3a and 48:1. Structure is often obscured by the alphabetic approach, but it may be helpful to recognize: the call to praise in vv. 1–2, 4–7, 10–12; motivation in vv. 3, 8–9, 13–20; and conclusion in v. 21.

With this poem, the "Psalms of David" are concluded, even though the major collections ended at 72:19. Rabbi Eleazar ben Abina (fourth century A.D.) assured anyone who recited Psalm 145 three times daily a place in the world to come (*b. Ber.* 4b). It is recited daily in the synagogue for morning, noonday, and evening prayer. Verse 2 was incorporated into the traditional Christian hymn of praise "Te Deum," and vv. 10, 15–16 into grace before meals. Yahweh's domain according to this psalm will be universal (vv. 15, 16, 21), but especially over Israel (vv. 10b, 18–20), and eternal (vv. 1, 2, 13, 21). These qualities are reinforced by the inclusive and enduring nature of an alphabetic psalm.

Verses 4–9 draw praise from the roots of the covenant (Exod. 34) and may refer to the remembrance (v. 7) of Yahweh's great deeds for Israel as reenacted in liturgy (Pss. 102:12–17; 111; 135:13). Verses 15–16 are drawn from 104:27–28. Because the Lord is close, manifest, and just "to all who call with sincerity" (vv. 17–18), the only requirement is a turning to God with faith in God's graciousness and fidelity, excluding whatever smacks of deceit, frivolousness, or superstition. The final phrase, "for ever and ever," is placed after each "letter" or verse in the Qumran *Psalms Scroll* [a] (11QPs[a]) and may represent a community refrain.

Psalm 146. The last five psalms may constitute the final doxology of praise (41:13; 72:18–19; 89:52; 106:48).

Psalm 146 exhibits a strong anthological style and draws especially from Psalms 103–104. After the call to praise (vv. 1–2) and an exhortation from the priests (vv. 3–4), the motivation comes principally from Yahweh's care for the defenseless (vv. 5–9), Yahweh's role as king (v. 10).

Verses 1–2 transform one's entire life into praise through the reception of Yahweh's gift of life. The second half of v. 2 hints at a translation such as "let my entire life be music to my God." Verses 3–4 contrast the eternal God with every human resource that ends in death (Gen. 3:19; Ps. 104:29–30).

Verses 5–9 begin in the style of wisdom (1:1), but proceed with participles in hymnic style: "making heaven and earth . . . guarding fidelity, securing justice . . . giving food . . . opening [the eyes of] the blind." Worship acknowledges creation as happening now and links it closely with social justice (Pss. 96–98). Verse 6 is recited in a prayer of thanksgiving in Acts 4:24. The anthological style is enhanced in the Qumran 11QPs[a] with the insertion after Ps. 146:9 of 33:8 and 145:10–12.

Psalm 147. Like Psalm 146 in its strongly anthological style, Psalm 147 also draws from Psalms 33 and 104 as well as from Isaiah 40; 55; 56; and 61. Three hymns, with frequent use of participles, are stitched together: vv. 1–6, Yahweh, Lord of history; vv. 7–11, Lord of nature; and vv. 12–20, God of Zion, where the creative word is announced. The Greek and Latin versions separate vv. 12–20 as a separate psalm. The references to Jerusalem in the first and third stanzas create literary unity. Because of the mention of the city walls in v. 2 and of rain in the second and third stanzas, the psalm may have close links with the dedication of the walls (Neh. 12:27–43) and with the Feast of Tabernacles (Zech. 14:16–19).

Verses 1–6 join creation with Yahweh's care for the poor and outcasts. The creator God who reaches into the stars (Isa. 40:26) appears as a healer for personal sorrows (Hos. 11:3; Jer. 30:17); both acts proclaim a message of salvation about a compassionate God. The second hymn (vv. 7–11) contrasts the strength of a merciful God with the weakness of the instruments of war. The fear of the Lord is identified with hope in the Lord's steadfast love, bonding everyone with the God of the covenant.

Verses 12–20 begin within the Temple at Jerusalem, and from the word of proclamation and prayer there goes forth a creative word (Ps. 33:6; Isa. 55:10–11) to bring important snow in winter, especially on the mountains north of Galilee. The melting of this snow and the later rains assure abundant crops in the new agricultural year (Deut. 11:10–17). This stanza of the hymn leads up to Israel's faith as a chosen people (Deut. 7:5–15; Isa. 44:1–5). In vv. 19–20 the creative word, giving ever new life, is identified with the Torah (Deut. 4:7–8; Sir. 24).

Psalm 148. Psalm 148 is a hymn of praise that allows many comparisons: with scribal lists from ancient Egypt; with Psalms 33; 103–104; Genesis 1; Job 38; Song of Three Youths 28–68; and with St. Francis's "Canticle to the Sun." Psalm 148 consists of an invitation to the heavens and their inhabitants (vv. 1–6) and to the earth and its inhabitants (vv. 7–13a) to praise Yahweh. Each section consists of imperatives completed by the exhortative clause, "Let them praise the name of the LORD" (vv. 5, 13a), each with its own finale (vv. 6, 13b). Verse 14 centers this universal phrase in Israel. While the first stanza descends from the angels, to sun, moon, and stars, down to the body of rain clouds above the earth, the second stanza ascends from sea monsters, to earth's surface, to animals and humankind. A lovely symmetry directs the liturgical action.

Verses 1–6 place the liturgical action in the universe beginning before God's throne in the heavens (1 Kings 8:27; Pss. 11:4; 18:4–19), surrounded by the heavenly court (1 Kings 22:19–23; Job 38:7; Pss. 29; 82). Later tradition speaks of a series of heavenly spheres (2 Cor. 12:2; *T. Levi* 3:1–8), drawing one ever more closely to the divine presence. All of these heavenly creatures are completely subject to Yahweh's will.

Verses 7–13 bring together sometimes hostile sea monsters (Ps. 89:10; Isa. 51:9–10) and wild beasts (Isa. 11:6–8), mountains that quake and spit fire (Ps. 46:1–3), kings at times belligerent (Isa. 10:5–6; Jer. 6), together with young men and maidens, old and young (Ps. 68:24–27; Jer. 31:4, 13) into the liturgical choir. In v. 14 the "horn" or strength (18:2) of Israel appears supreme in this sacred assembly. Israel is God's chosen and beloved, joined to them by steadfast love (Exod. 34:6–7).

Psalm 149. Psalm 149 continues the theme of praise of Psalm 148, but now locates it specifically in Israel (v. 2). The opening words, "sing a new song," invite praise for God's acts of power (Isa. 42:10; Pss. 96:1; 144:9) using the extravagant language of Israel's "holy war" tradition (Ps. 18:31–45).

The opening stanza calls for praise (vv. 1–3) based on the motive of Yahweh's care of the poor (v. 4); the second stanza is a call to battle (vv. 5–6) to achieve victory and peace (vv. 7–9a); and v. 9b, like the close of Psalm 147, centers the action in Israel.

Verses 1–4 blend the titles "chosen people" (Exod. 6:6–7; Deut. 7:6–7; Ps. 95:7), "Maker" (Isa. 44:2; Ps. 100:3), and "King" (Isa. 44:6; Pss. 96–100). In Psalms 148–149 Yahweh creates and rules the universe for the sake of chosen Israel, even for their lowly ones (cf. Isa. 60:14).

Verses 5–9a, with slight emendation, call upon all "the clans" (instead of "couches" in v. 5). The "two-edged sword," literally, "sword of double mouths" (v. 6; Isa. 41:15), devours with double fury, a phrase for the clear, swift justice of God's word. So certain is the

victory that it is already written in the heavenly records (Pss. 69:28; 139:16).

Psalm 150. If Psalms 146–150 are not the final doxology (cf. Ps. 146), certainly the last psalm fills that position magnificently. Although the Psalter opens with a series of "Psalms of David," characterized mostly by lament, it concludes with exuberant praise.

Psalm 150 rings with either hallelujahs or *halleluhu* (Heb., "Praise him") or *hallelu-el* ("Praise God"), ten within the body of the psalm, vv. 1b–5, or thirteen if one counts the conclusion in v. 6 along with the opening and closing hallelujah, typical of Psalms 146–150. The rabbis recognized the symbolism of ten in the ten words of the commandments (Exod. 34:28) or thirteen in the thirteen times that God the Creator speaks in Genesis 1 or in the thirteen divine attributes in Exod. 34:6–7.

Yahweh is praised in the heavenly sanctuary (Ps. 11:4), in the firmament that upholds the heavenly waters, and for mighty deeds in Israel's history (Deut. 3:24), ceremonially reenacted (Ps. 106:2). The musical instruments include even the pipe, only here in a formal liturgy (Gen. 4:21; Job 21:12). Music catches the pulse and breath of the universe, the inutterable longings of the spirit.

The Hebrew text adds, "The book is complete; there are 2,527 verses." The Greek, Latin, and Syriac versions as well as the Qumran scroll (11QPs^a) have a Psalm 151 (see Psalm 151).

Bibliography

Anderson, B. W. *Out of the Depths*. Rev. ed., Louisville, KY: Westminster, 2000.

Brueggemann, W. *The Message of the Psalms*. Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1984.

Kraus, H.-J. *Psalms 1–59: A Commentary* and *Psalms 60–150: A Commentary*. Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1988 and 1989.

Mays, J. L. *Psalms*. Interpretation Series. Louisville, KY: John Knox, 1994.

Miller, P. D. *They Cried to the Lord*. Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1994.

Seybold, K. *Introducing the Psalms*. Edinburgh: Clark, 1990.

Stuhlmueller, C. *Psalms*. Old Testament Message Series, 21, 22. Wilmington, DE: Glazier, 1983.

Westermann, C. *Praise and Lament in the Psalms*. Atlanta, GA: John Knox, 1981.

Proverbs

CAROLE R. FONTAINE

INTRODUCTION

Date and Background

Proverbs, the oldest of the wisdom books of the Hebrew Bible, has a complex history and literary form. The book bears the title "The Proverbs of Solomon, Son of David, King of Israel" and hence follows the traditional ascription of authorship of this work (along with Ecclesiastes and Song of Songs) to Solomon. This would suggest a date in the tenth century B.C. (1 Kings 4:30 [Heb. 5:10];→ Solomon), but, in fact, the book is not a unified composition. Rather, it comprises collections dating from various periods in the history of ancient Israel. The book of Proverbs probably received its final editing in postexilic times (the latter part of the sixth century to the middle of the fourth century B.C.) and hence reflects the needs of the later community as well as the "practical ethics" of the earlier monarchical period (→ Persia; Postexilic Period).

More than other biblical traditions, wisdom literature exudes something of a cosmopolitan air, reflecting its origin in a scribal tradition common to the ancient Near East. The literary genres found in Proverbs, Job, and Ecclesiastes and the content they convey have parallels in Mesopotamian and Egyptian literature. Moreover, in a number of instances it is clear that such extrabiblical literature has had direct impact on Israelite traditions. For example, Prov. 22:17–24:22 reflects a classic Egyptian wisdom text, *The Instruction of Amenemope,* and the speculative "problem literature" of Mesopotamia bears a striking resemblance to the tone and form of Job and parts of Ecclesiastes. Nevertheless, the Israelite sages subsumed any teachings borrowed from their neighbors into a fully Israelite perspective, one integrated with the teachings of the Torah and Prophets. Wisdom literature speaks of God more as "Creator" than "Redeemer" or "Covenant Lord" and understands persons as generic humans rather than as members of the specific covenant community of Israel. Nevertheless, it is the same worldview that undergirds both the teachings of Proverbs and the rest of the Hebrew canon. (For example, cf. wisdom's concept of retribution to the laws of Deuteronomy or the oracles in Amos 3:3–8; → Retribution; Wisdom.)

In biblical wisdom literature, this common Yahwistic perspective (the act-consequence relationship drawn from the salient or unique characteristics of Israel's God) is expressed as "fear of the LORD." This catchphrase refers to the religion of ancient Israel in its entirety and involves both the beginning of wisdom and knowledge (Prov. 1:7; 9:10) and the implicit end of wisdom's search (Job 28:28). Without a right relationship to the Holy One of Israel, neither can intellectual efforts hope to succeed, nor life be preserved (Prov. 3:5–8). "Foolishness," then, as the antithesis of wisdom, must be understood not so much as ignorance or inability of intellect, but as a moral position that denies the necessity of this prior orientation of heart and mind toward the deity (→ Ethics; Fear of the Lord).

Literary Description

Major Sections. Proverbs may be divided into a series of major collections, many of which bear superscriptions and may be distinguished by the use of similar form or content. These divisions are:

1:1–9:18, wisdom poems and instructions
10:1–22:16, "The Proverbs of Solomon"
22:17–24:22, "The Words of the Wise" (superscription restored from 22:17a, see below)
24:23–34, further "Words of the Wise" (lit., "also these [belong] to the wise ones")
25:1–29:27, "Further 'Proverbs of Solomon,' Copied by the Men of Hezekiah, King of Judah"
30:1–14, "The Words of Agur, Son of Jakeh"
30:15–33, mostly numerical sayings (no superscription)
31:1–9, "The Words of Lemuel, King of Massa, Which His Mother Taught Him"
31:10–31, acrostic poem on the Strong Woman (no superscription)

Many of these collections may be subdivided further, based on criteria of form and content. For example, the first Solomonic saying collection, 10:1–22:16, easily divides into two sections, 10:1–15:33 and 16:1–22:16, based on the preference in the first for antithetic parallelism and in the second for synonymous parallelism (→ Parallelism; Poetry). It should also be noted that the Greek text (Septuagint, LXX) of Proverbs differs considerably from the Hebrew text (Masoretic Text, MT) in both content and arrangement.

Literary Forms: The Proverb. The basic unit of the book is the poetic *mashal,* or "saying/proverb" (→ Proverb). This Hebrew word has two basic meanings: "to be similar to" and "to rule over." Both of these aspects are embodied in the biblical saying and proverb. First, these forms encapsulate or make visible the relationships inherent in the events they observe. In Prov. 16:18, we read:

Before destruction, pride;
and before a fall, haughtiness of spirit.

This proverb expresses a connection between a psychological attitude and the subsequent effects of that orientation. Once this "similitude" is understood, the proverb then allows people to "rule over" similar situations wherever they are encountered, fulfilling the second meaning of *mashal.* Quoting this proverb to someone possessed of a proud and haughty disposition acts as a warning against the "comeuppance" so often observed to be the outcome of such attitudes. Proverbs are thus not simply "observational"; these forms attempt to exert social control. The citation of a proverb or saying to analyze a situation (whether social or literary) may be termed a "proverb performance" (see Fontaine).

Although the term *mashal* may refer to other "sentence" forms such as the taunt (Jer. 24:9) or parable (Ezek. 17:2), in wisdom literature it is most often used to refer to a two-lined proverb that exhibits parallelism between its lines. The second line in some way restates the thought of the first, either through agreement (synonymous parallelism), disagreement (antithetic parallelism), or expansion of the basic idea (formal or synthetic parallelism), usually through use of parallel words (e.g., father/mother; wise/foolish). Ancient Israel also knew of one-lined traditional sayings that probably circulated among the people orally (see, e.g., Judg. 8:2, 21; 1 Sam. 24:13; 1 Kings 20:11). The presence of the second line, which produces parallelism, is usually taken as an artistic attempt at literary shaping and, hence, signals the proverb's origin among the educated class of "sages" rather than the "folk."

The short, pithy nature of the proverb and saying helps characterize the style of these forms. The *mashal,* whether folk or literary, incorporates observations of the world in a witty, imaginative, and striking way that enhances memorization. These observations work as portable categories that help people organize their experiences in familiar ways when applied to new and ambiguous events. An African proverb of the Yoruba tribe expresses this function of proverbs quite nicely: "A proverb is like a horse: when the truth is missing, we use a proverb to find it." By mounting a horse (as opposed to a pig or hedgehog), one obtains an overview of what is happening on the ground and hence one is no longer bound by a limited perspective. In the same way, applying a known and accepted proverb to an immediate context allows a group to integrate the new events into its earlier experience, thereby gaining greater perspective and a sense of cultural continuity. The use of a proverb signals the existence of a situation that necessitates comment to restore the group's social stability. Although proverbs are typically used in ways that support a group's worldview, they may also be used by persons of lesser status to challenge dominant perspectives. Indeed, this is precisely the way great religious figures such as Second Isaiah (chaps. 40–55), Ezekiel, Qohelet (Ecclesiastes), and Jesus often use proverbs.

Specialized proverbs include the "better than" form and its negative counterpart, the "not good" proverb. Examples of the former occur in Prov. 3:14; 12:9; 15:16–17; 16:8, 19; 17:1; 19:1 27:5, 10b. "Not good" proverbs are found in 17:26a; 18:5a; 20:23b; 24:23b; 25:27a; 28:21a; a variation on the form is found in 17:7; 19:10; 26:1 (see Murphy, pp. 66–67).

Another variation on the simple proverb/saying form is the riddle (Heb. *chidah*), in which artful language deliberately conceals the relationship between the topic of the sentence and the comment made concerning it. Although the riddle in its pure form is found only in Judg. 14:10–18, the term occurs in parallelism with *mashal* in Prov. 1:6, suggesting that the sages considered mastery of the riddle to be within their purview. Disintegrated riddle forms may underlie Prov. 5:1–6, 15–23; 6:16–19, 23–24; 16:15; 20:27; 23:27, 29–35; 25:2–3; 27:20; 30:15–33 (see Crenshaw, p. 242;→ Proverb; Riddle).

Numerical Sayings. Closely related in form to the proverb and riddle is the numerical saying, which provides a list of items with an explanation. Title lines may occur at the beginning ("Four things on earth are small, three are wisely expert," Prov. 30:24) or at the end of the list (Exod. 21:10–11). The number of items in such lists follows numerical conventions: two, three, and seven are the favorite numbers (→ Numbers). In "graded" numerical sayings, the title line gives two numbers, x and $x + 1$, which are then illustrated ("Under three things the earth trembles; under four it is not able to bear up," Prov. 30:21). Like other wisdom forms, this graded pattern has been observed in the literary traditions of Israel's neighbors.

Commands: Admonitions and Prohibitions. Admonitions and prohibitions are commands using second-person ("you") or third-person ("he/she") language. Such imperative directives make their appeal to hearers far more plainly than the experiential proverb, as if hoping to compel compliance. "Motivational clauses" are often appended to the command, usually beginning with "for," "because," or "lest" (e.g., Prov. 4:21–22; 5:7–10). Commands are found mainly in Proverbs 1–9 and in the longer, unified compositions

in the later collections influenced by the "instruction" form (e.g., 22:17–24:22).

Instructions. From the courts of the pharaohs, the (Egyptian) *sebayit,* or "instruction," genre finds its way into Prov. 1:1–9:18; 22:17–24:22; and elsewhere. It is a sustained discussion, longer than the proverb or command. The instruction usually addresses its male audience as "my son" and takes on a parental, teaching role for the sage author. It builds up its arguments by making use of proverbs, admonitions, and prohibitions, and includes a liberal sprinkling of motivational clauses to "sell" its advice. The instruction covers a wide range of topics necessary for a young man's success in diplomatic circles and, more generally, life: how to handle arguments, proper table manners and conduct at court, guidelines for handling the various threats posed by familiarity with women, and so on. Instructions are found in Prov. 1:1–19; 2:1–22; 3:1–12; 3:21–35; 4:1–9; 4:10–19; 4:20–27; 5:1–23; 6:20–35; 7:1–27; 22:17–24:22; 31:1–9 (→ Education; Family; School).

Wisdom Poems. Like the instruction, the wisdom poem is a long, unified composition. It may include proverbial sayings, admonitions, prohibitions, rhetorical questions, and hymnic elements as well as other forms. Found in Prov. 1:20–33; 8:1–36; 9:1–6, these poems are marked by a most unusual feature, the personification of wisdom as a woman, along with female personifications of her negative counterparts (Folly, Stranger). Speaking directly to prospective students, Woman Wisdom sounds like prophet, lover, counselor, scolding mother, or goddess as she expounds the goals of the sages and entices her hearers with the promise of rich reward—life itself. Such a powerful, semidivine female figure speaking with divinely sanctioned authority must be considered an anomaly in Israel's official patriarchal monotheism. Consequently, some scholars have seen in these compositions a borrowing of scribal or fertility goddess traditions from Israel's neighbors: life-giving goddess functions are assigned to Woman Wisdom; demonic or chthonic and destabilizing death-related traits of surrounding goddesses are transferred to Woman Folly and Woman Stranger. Others view these characters as a culmination of Israel's own traditions about the constitutive roles, positive and negative, of real women in society, developing at a time when a new authority figure was needed to replace the king as mediator between human and divine spheres of life (see Camp). Prov. 3:13–18, 19–20 may also be considered wisdom poems, although Woman Wisdom is spoken of there in the third person, rather than speaking directly.

Acrostic and Alphabetizing Poems. Using the twenty-two letters of the Hebrew alphabet, these poems consist of twenty-two or twenty-three lines, which signifies the idea of perfection or completion. In Prov. 31:10–31, we find a complete acrostic poem, one in which each line begins with successive letters of the alphabet. *Aleph* and *lamed,* the letters that begin the first and second halves of the alphabet, respectively, play a significant role in structuring the instruction in 2:1–22, hence allowing critics to speak of an "alphabetizing poem." Attempts to locate other alphabetizing poems of twenty-two lines each in Proverbs 2–7 are less convincing, since the present text must be rearranged to yield the hypothetical structure.

The Role of Proverbs in Ancient Israel, Early Christianity, and the Canon

Questions concerning the place of the book of Proverbs in Israel's life are closely related to the study of its origins and dates of composition. There is firm evidence for the existence of court and temple schools in Mesopotamia and Egypt in which wisdom literature, with all its characteristic forms and typical themes, was used as a teaching tool. Since Israel consistently links kings and court counselors with the wisdom tradition (see the ascription of proverbs to Solomon in 1 Kings 4:32, to Hezekiah's men in Prov. 25:1, to Lemuel in Prov. 31:1–9, and to Ahithophel in 2 Sam. 15–16), it is reasonable to posit similar schools in Israel that trained court officials and scribes in the monarchical era and potential leaders as well as scribes in the postexilic period. Direct evidence for such institutions is, however, admittedly slim.

The royal court does not provide the only possible setting for the origins and use of the book of Proverbs. Scholars have demonstrated that wisdom sayings functioned in family and tribal settings to settle disputes, a goal not unrelated to the courtly, diplomatic use of wisdom. Some biblical sayings and proverbs may have had such oral, folk origins. Similarly, the emphasis on the "torah of your mother" (Prov. 1:8b), the role of Lemuel's mother in the transmission of his royal instruction (31:1), the wise queen of Sheba (1 Kings 10:1–10), as well as the figure of Woman Wisdom herself, reminds us that education of children in the ancient world began in the female realm of the home. Hence, the village family must also be considered a probable setting for the origin and use of some of the materials found in Proverbs.

Within the context of the Hebrew Bible, Proverbs is often considered by scholars to represent the tradition of old wisdom against whose naive and deterministic worldview the later wisdom books of Job and Qohelet (Ecclesiastes) revolt. Themes such as the measured confidence in human reason and the ability to respond appropriately to the world, the trust in Israel's special god, Yahweh, and the notion that Woman Wisdom is accessible to humanity appear in altered form

in subsequent wisdom literature, as authors respond to new and ambiguous cultural contexts (see Introduction to Psalms and Wisdom). Other studies suggest that the social location for old wisdom and later theological wisdom provides the key to understanding such shifts: early wisdom comes from the life of the agricultural village, has its beginning in oral exchanges, and makes use of concrete, experiential observations; late wisdom reflects the more cosmopolitan world of the city and its elite educators, is a conscious literary product, and favors philosophical speculation and abstractions (see Westermann). In the village setting, the best model for understanding the role of Woman Wisdom is the idealized "Strong Woman" of Proverbs 31, who is manager of her family's economic life. For elite scribal bureaucrats immersed in the world of international politics and court intrigue, Woman Wisdom is understood more along the lines of the scribal goddesses who were patrons of the sages of Mesopotamia (Nisaba) and Egypt (Ma'at) or the fertility goddesses who suckled Kings (Isis) and served as the sought-for object of a hero's quest.

From its beginnings in the Near Eastern Bronze Age well into the intertestamental and Christian eras, wisdom books were still being composed, showing that this form of transmitting social guidelines continued to be valued by the sages and their communities (→ Education). For early Christians, the methods of using wisdom argument and the figure of Woman Wisdom became especially important for understanding the meaning of the person and ministry of Jesus of Nazareth. Not only does Jesus teach using the *mashal* forms of the sages (→ Parable), thereby challenging many of the religious and ethical assumptions of his time, but the theology embodied in the figure of Woman Wisdom undergirds the application of *logos* theology, theology of the "Word" to Jesus in John 1. In 1 Cor. 1:24, Paul explicitly identifies Jesus as the "wisdom (Gk. *sophia*) of God." Despite the change of gender, literary threads bind the two human-divine mediators together into a single figure who can not only promise life, but deliver it as well. Moreover, the character of Sophia, the Greek incarnation of Woman Wisdom, takes on a life of her own in the Gnostic tractates from Nag Hammadi. Indeed, the female self-revealer who speaks so paradoxically in the Nag Hammadi text "Thunder, Perfect Mind" sounds like nothing so much as Woman Wisdom in her speeches in Proverbs 1–9. The rediscovery of Gnostic materials in modern times has enhanced our appreciation of the role of wisdom and the book of Proverbs in the religious and literary heritage of Christians and Jews (→ Gospel of Thomas; Logos; Nag Hammadi; Wisdom).

The extraordinary figures of Woman Wisdom, Woman Stranger, and Woman Folly also provide a clue to Proverbs' enduring usefulness to the communities that claim it as Scripture. It may be that by co-option of surrounding goddesses to create the Yahwistically subordinated characters of Woman Wisdom and her wicked sisters, Israel met its own psychological need for female imagery of the divine without serious compromise of patriarchal monotheism. In a male-centered worldview that assigns primarily domestic roles to women, it makes sense that the symbolization of well-being and disorder in the home and society takes female form for these authors. Woman Folly and Woman Stranger are actively used as figures upon which the postexilic community projects its fears about ethnic and social continuity. At the same time, their positive counterparts, Woman Wisdom and Strong Woman, symbolize all the good things for which a family yearns. Woman Wisdom and Strong Woman represent the positive female acquisition of knowledge, reversing the portrait of Eve's disastrous curiosity in Genesis 3, just as Mary of Nazareth will later erase the effects of sin in Christian thinking by replacing Eve as the new, more blessed Mother of All Living (→ Eve; Mary, the Virgin; Women).

COMMENTARY

1:1–9:18
Theological Introduction: Wisdom Poems and Instructions

1:1–7
Superscription and Introduction

1:1, Superscription. The superscription, which introduces the book, labels its contents as *meshalim,* or proverbs, even though much of the ensuing literature consists of longer poetic compositions that depart from the strict two-line proverb form. Ascription of authorship to Solomon is based on tradition, namely, the wisdom vignettes found in 1 Kings as well as the statement in 1 Kings 4:32 that Solomon authored three thousand proverbs, probably of the "nature wisdom" type (cf. 1 Kings 4:33). Yahweh's gift of wisdom to Solomon (1 Kings 3:3–15) and this king's subsequent display of that royal and judicial wisdom in 1 Kings 3:16–28 (judgment of the two prostitutes) and 1 Kings 10:1–10 (riddle contests; the "hard questions" of v. 1; with the queen of Sheba) all work to create a picture of an astute, judicious, and creative monarch—a fitting figure to preside over teachings of the "good life." Attribution of important literary traditions to famous kings was common practice in the ancient Near East.

1:2–6, The Sage's Program. Similar to a teacher passing out a syllabus on the first day of class in modern

educational settings, the sage makes clear the purpose of the material that follows. The piling up of infinitives in vv. 2–4, along with the multiple use of specialized wisdom vocabulary, suggests that the acquisition of wisdom is an all-encompassing process that must be approached with the same care with which it is described in these verses. However arduous the enterprise might be, the ignorant and the young will be richly rewarded for their work, and even the wise will acquire greater expertise by reflecting on the matters that follow, many of which are explicitly related to the ability to understand and use wisdom's literary forms. The mention of righteousness, justice, and fair dealing in v. 3b, classic virtues extolled by the Torah and the Prophets, adds a special Israelite flavor to this wisdom curriculum.

On the whole, the opening is reminiscent of that of the Egyptian *Instruction of Amenemope:*

> *The beginning of the instruction about life,*
> *The guide for well-being,*
> *All the principles of official procedure,*
> *The duties of the courtiers;*
> *To know how to refute the accusation of one who made it,*
> *And to send back a reply to the one who wrote,*
> *To set one straight on the paths of life,*
> *And make him prosper on earth;*
> *To let his heart settle down in its chapel,*
> *As one who steers him clear of evil;*
> *To save him from the talk of others,*
> *As one who is respected in the speech of men*
> (Simpson, p. 242)

The nautical metaphors in *Amenemope* are hinted at in v. 5b, "and the discerning may acquire the art of steering" (RSV, NRSV: "acquire skill"; JB: "the art of guidance"). The Hebrew term *tachbulot* is related both to the word for a woman writhing back and forth with labor pains and the twisting of ropes to change the course of a sailing craft. In both cases, extreme physical effort produces the desired end, a successful birth or change of course. The knowledge of when to push or pull, expending just the right amount of effort at just the right moment, is the type of practical mastery that is one of the goals of wisdom instruction.

1:7. The introductory section ends with a contrastive proverb about "fear of Yahweh," the Hebrew Bible's terminology for its religion. This phrase does not mean simple fright, but involves awe, reverence, and obedience to the Lord. Without this proper *prior* commitment (which the foolish implicitly spurn by rejecting wisdom and discipline), no intellectual enterprise is sound. Hence, the acquisition of wisdom is not simply an academic pursuit but, fundamentally, a theological and spiritual activity.

1:8–19
The Sage's First Introduction

1:8–9. Most appropriately, this instruction opens with the imperative "Listen, my child" (lit., "my son," but this term is often translated inclusively elsewhere, as in "children of Israel" for the literal "sons of Israel"). Egyptian wisdom stresses the importance of listening carefully to one's elders, and a similar notion is found here as the parental authority of mother and father is stressed. The prohibition in v. 8b ("do not forget") balances the admonition "listen . . . ," thus emphasizing harmony within the teachings of both parents. Similarly, v. 8 suggests that true understanding consists of taking in information and remembering it. A motivation in v. 9 tempts the young listener with a metaphor that suggests Egyptian body ornaments often worn by successful officials. Here such ornaments allude to the beauty of wisdom teachings. The garlanded head and shoulders of the wise youth stand in implicit contrast with the feet of wicked companions that "run to evil" (v. 16, perhaps a gloss from Isa. 59:7).

1:10–16. This section, which pictures the sinners taking counsel to tempt the unsuspecting youth, twice (vv. 10, 15) repeats the sage's "my son/child" of v. 8. Such repetition emphasizes the instruction as heartfelt advice "for one's own good," rather than as an expression of casual disapproval of certain companions. The sinners of v. 10 lie in wait for the innocent "without cause." (Note the importance of this term in the prologue to the book of Job: the Adversary, or Prosecutor, wonders if Job worships God "without cause" [Job 1:9b]; in Job 2:3b, God is incited to afflict Job "without cause.") The description of the intended victims as harmless has the effect of defusing the very real danger of such behavior: reprisal will not come from the victims, but from the ultimate outcome of a life of criminal acts (see commentary below on 1:17–19). As the description continues, we discover that the sinners are motivated by greed (vv. 13–14) and share a surprising degree of cooperation and camaraderie ("one purse for us all!" 14b), which might be expected to deceive the unwary into a desire to be part of this closely knit group. The sage meets this threat directly with a forceful one-two punch, another balanced set of negative ("My child, don't go!. . . ") and positive ("withhold your foot!. . . ") commands (v. 15). The teacher understands well youth's desire to "fit in."

1:17–19. An example of proverb performance occurs in v. 17 with the citation of an out-of-context proverb (the sage was not discussing birds previously, but warning against the temptations of wicked companions) to categorize a social situation and suggest its proper resolution. Here, our informed youth, like the

wary and observant bird, will not be tempted to join in, for he sees the net spread before him, a tactic "without cause" or "in vain" since he is forewarned. Verses 18–19 conclude the instruction with a typical appeal to wisdom's understanding of retribution: those who seek to dig pits for others fall into the very same pit themselves (26:27). Even when that pit is "Sheol," the underground cavern in which Israelites believed the dead led a shadowy, unconscious existence, the result is the same (→ Retribution).

1:20–33
Direct-Address Wisdom Poem

1:20–21. The introduction of Woman Wisdom's speech places her clearly in the public eye, like a prophet, prostitute, or a woman coming to the city gates for judgment (Gen. 38:14; Ruth 3:11; cf. Camp, p. 129). Her appeal is made in the most open way (no esoteric, hidden wisdom here!), on many levels.

1:22–28. Opening with the poignant phrase "How long?. . . " (cf. Jer. 4:14, 21; 12:4), the rhetorical question in 1:22 prepares the audience for the ensuing series of reproaches, threats, and announcement of doom. The text's form and content evoke a notion of someone judging on behalf of God, even though reference to the deity does not occur until v. 29b, and there obliquely as "fear of Yahweh." This notion strengthens Woman Wisdom's claim to be heard and, by extension, the sage's authority as one who discloses wisdom to his students.

The speech stresses Woman Wisdom's availability to the simple (those untutored, but capable of learning). Are these the same persons addressed in 1:4? Use of the word "knowledge," also found in 1:4, seems to confirm this identity. Similarly, there is an implicit link between 1:22–23 and the opening commands in the sage's first instruction (1:8). Verses 10–19 gave an example of "your father's instruction"; now the female figure of wisdom explicates "the Torah of your mother." The inclusion of Woman Wisdom, thus, provides for total instruction.

Despite Woman Wisdom's willingness to pour out her spirit and make known her thoughts, her offer will not remain valid in perpetuity for those who persist in rejecting her (vv. 24–28). Moreover, her reproaches echo the pathos of Yahweh's questions to the people in Mic. 6:3.

1:29–33. The calamity that overtakes the mockers and fools is once again viewed as their just deserts in the reproach of vv. 29–30 and the announcement of doom in vv. 31–32. In ancient Israel, no act could be separated from the consequences it produced; rather, the effects were implicit within the deed, just as a seed contains the future plant. The positive side of this act-consequence relationship is rehearsed in a proverb (v. 33) that offers security to those who follow Woman Wisdom's counsel.

2:1–22
The Second Instruction

2:1–11. Making use of a twenty-two-line alphabetizing structure (see Murphy, p. 56, for discussion) and numerous repetitions of vocabulary items from chap. 1, this instruction builds up its argument through a series of "if/then" sequences ("if": vv. 1, 2, 4; "then": vv. 5, 9). Motivations ("for," "because") in vv. 9, 10, 18, 21 intensify the argument. In v. 3, the student is to echo back the cry of Woman Wisdom heard in 1:20–21 and search for her, the "sought-for one," more diligently than for treasure (v. 4). In v. 6, we see once more that it is Yahweh who bestows wisdom on those who search. Moreover, the impact of this statement is amplified by the recognition, in v. 5, that the search for wisdom is equivalent to the search for God. There are many paths to spiritual growth, but only one destination.

2:12–22. The topic again is the excellence of wisdom teaching as a guard against evil companions, here represented as both male (as in the first instruction) and female. Who is the "Woman Stranger" and "Foreign Woman" of v. 16, against whom the youth must be on guard? Some have postulated the fertility goddess Ishtar (Canaanite Astarte) as the one who tempts young men into apostasy; v. 17 suggests an Israelite adulteress may also function as the Woman Stranger. The Sumerian goddess Inanna/Ishtar descended to the "Great Below," or underworld "Land of No Return," in a famous ancient myth; this may be alluded to in v. 18. However, Lev. 20:10 mandates the death sentence for simple adultery, thus supplying another possible meaning for this warning. Similar warnings against relationships with women are found in the Egyptian *Instruction of Ani* and the *Instruction of Ptahhotep.* Contrasting proverbs on the fates of the upright and the wicked in vv. 21–22 confirm and round out the argument of the instruction (→ Foreigner).

3:1–12
The Third Instruction

3:1–4. A series of positive and negative commands with motivations organized into six couplets (vv. 1–2, 3–4, 5–6, 7–8, 9–10, 11–12) moves from general advice in vv. 1–4 to specific commands in vv. 5–12. Similar thoughts are found in sections three and four of the *Instruction of Amenemope.* Just as the sins of the wicked bring death, so adherence to wisdom's teaching lengthens life and brings healing and prosperity (vv. 2,

8, 10). Like the commandments of the Torah in Deut. 6:8, wisdom teaching is to be bound to one's body (3:3) where it acts as a constant reminder of right conduct.

3:5–12. Excellent as wisdom may be, no one who possesses it can hope to be truly wise when compared to Yahweh. The limitations of human wisdom are clearly stated (vv. 5, 7). Verses 11–12 anticipate some of the reflections of the book of Job on the relationship between wisdom, adversity, and the God-fearing person.

3:13–20
Two Descriptive Wisdom Poems

3:13–18. Strong Egyptian influence marks this section, which deviates from the normal instruction form in that it consists of two hymns to Wisdom or wisdom poems (vv. 13–18, 19–20). Making use of the blessing formula ("How happy/blessed is the person who finds wisdom!") in v. 13, this section concludes with a wordplay on the same Hebrew root in v. 18b ("those who take hold of her are blessed"). Is the wisdom alluded to here personified Woman Wisdom? Imagery in v. 16 describing wisdom in terms associated with the Egyptian scribal goddess Ma'at suggests an affirmative answer. The "tree of life" motif in v. 18, perhaps to be associated with Hathor as goddess of the sycamore tree, is also popular in the *Instruction of Amenemope* (→ Tree of Life, The).

3:19–20. A hymnic interlude on the relationship between Yahweh, Woman Wisdom, and creation also draws heavily on Egyptian themes, where Ma'at constitutes the plan by which the creator god creates the world. The association of wisdom with water ("deeps," "dew") virtually equates wisdom with life in the minds of those who exist in arid climates (v. 20).

3:21–35
The Fourth Instruction

3:21–26. The typical instruction style resumes as the sage draws conclusions from the previous sections. As in the first instruction (1:8–19), we find the teachings of wisdom gracing the neck and safeguarding the ways of the feet. From top to toe, wisdom bestows protection and the untroubled sleep of a clear conscience on those who adhere to the ways of discernment and sound judgment. The confidence that wisdom brings is once again closely related to the protection God bestows: both function to guard the steps and paths of their followers (vv. 25–26).

3:27–35. A series of prohibitions on various matters demonstrates that failure to do good, when it is in one's power to do so (vv. 27–28), is strongly condemned as wrongdoing (vv. 29–30). The temptation to envy (and hence emulate) the seeming security of the wicked is first discouraged by a prohibition in v. 31 and then countered with four proverbs assuring the hearer that, although the wicked are detestable to Yahweh (cf., e.g., Deut. 7:25; 12:31; 18:12) and the mockers soon to be mocked, the righteous, wise, and humble find favor in God's sight (3:32–35).

4:1–9
The Fifth Instruction

4:1–4a. Family tradition, a motif familiar from Egypt, is evoked here to authorize the sage's advice, which follows in vv. 4b–9. Despite the prominence of this literary tradition of instructions, oral teachings are also important in vv. 3–4a. (A number of irregularities in the Hebrew text are customarily solved by reference to the LXX [see esp. the REB].)

4:4b–9. After the introduction invoking traditional authority in the previous section, we find the father's advice couched in language appropriate to admonitions concerning the choice of a mate. As in the Sumerian deity Dumuzi's union with Inanna, Woman Wisdom will exalt those who embrace her (v. 8), crowning the searcher who is rewarded after finding this sought-for female (v. 9; cf. 1:9; 3:22), protecting the faithful and watching over them (v. 6). The use of positive and negative imperatives throughout this section, along with key words such as "commands," "live!" "grace" (though this term is not used in the NT sense of the word), and "honor," forms a summons that is not easily ignored. Verse 7a may legitimately be translated in a variety of ways. Woman Wisdom will bring all good things in her train once acquired as a mate. Hence, she is the first thing that must be sought by inquisitive students.

4:10–27
The Sixth Instruction

4:10–23. The catchword "life" begins and ends this section of traditional teachings with an insightful, if perhaps overdrawn, description of the wicked sandwiched between in vv. 14–17. The now familiar theme of the path, with its associated terms ("step," "run," "stumble") is developed further and provides a link, along with the verbal root "life/live" (4:4b), to the previous instruction, which ended with Woman Wisdom placing a garland of grace on her lover's neck. These motifs occur clustered together earlier in Proverbs 3. In 3:2, the sage's teaching prolonged life; in v. 3 those same wisdom teachings bound around the neck led to straight paths in v. 6 and health to the body in v. 8. In 3:22, discernment and sound judgment lengthened life

and provided grace for the neck, leading to feet that do not stumble (v. 23) and sweet sleep (v. 24). Now, all these aspects of the right path appear conjoined once more, but the sleep described is that of the wicked, who cannot retire fulfilled unless evil has been done (4:16).

4:23–27. The instruction ends with more imperatives concerning control of the body. In ancient Hebrew thought, the heart (v. 23) was comparable to the modern term "mind" as the locus of thought, will, emotion, and memory (→ Heart), making it the focus of the strongest warnings. As in other instructions, the potential perversity of language is a special subject for wisdom admonitions (v. 24; cf., e.g., 6:2, 12; 8:13; 10:6, 11), even as the special and positive attributes of "mouth," "word," "command," "speech," and "lips" are celebrated elsewhere (cf. 2:6; 4:5; 5:7; 8:8; 10:11). One might expect both such concerns to be shared by those whose main work is literary. These authors are shrewd observers of the inevitable deception and trickery present in human communication, problems that may be attributed as much to the inherently ambiguous nature of language as to the dastardly intent of some language users.

5:1–23
The Seventh Instruction

5:1–6. This instruction begins with language nearly identical to that found in 4:20, with "my wisdom/my insight" in v. 1 substituted for the word pair "my words/my advice" found earlier. That these loaded terms may be freely interpreted in light of each other should occasion no surprise, given the sages' view of the preeminence of language as a tool for complex communication. The Woman Stranger, who is the subject of these admonitions, is dangerous precisely because she too knows the use of smooth speech (v. 4). The use of "honey" imagery carries erotic overtones familiar from the Song of Songs and the love songs of Sumerian Inanna for her mate, whom she names "the honey-man" (see Pritchard, p. 645). Possible allusions to Inanna's descent or Israelite punishment for adultery are again developed as in 2:18. The sweet/bitter contrast found in vv. 3–4 is present in the Aramaic wisdom text the *Words of Ahiqar* ("Be not [too] sweet, lest they [swallow] thee: be not [too] bitter [lest they spit thee out]"; see Pritchard, p. 429). It probably represents a standard proverbial contrast. Her death-dealing "way of life" (Heb. *'orach-chayyim*, v. 6 [cf. 2:19]) presents a wordplay on the "length of days" *('orek-yamim)* in Woman Wisdom's right hand (3:16).

5:7–14. After a reprise consisting of the standard introductory formula, this section of positive and negative commands further develops the sage's warnings against Woman Stranger. The "door of her house" (v. 8) carries sexual allusions. The remainder of this passage reminds one of the fate of Samson in the hands of Women Strangers in Judges 14–16.

5:15–20. The language of love and fertility abounds in this section, which recommends the joys of marital love as an antidote to the slippery allure of the Woman Stranger. Thus, it is clear that the sages do not condemn sexuality per se—far from it!—but rather forbid sexual behavior they consider inappropriate. In their judgment, part of the excellence of a loving wife is her exclusive availability to her husband. The prostitute or Woman Stranger is to be avoided because she owes her loyalty to no one, but is available to many. This theme is also clearly developed in Akkadian wisdom counsels (see Pritchard, p. 427), texts that report that "reverence and submissiveness are not with her."

5:21–23. Three instances of proverb performance round out the sage's discourse on sexuality. Though the topic of much of the seventh instruction has been the evil, life-killing behavior of the Woman Stranger in contrast to the safety of the beloved wife, these proverbs (vv. 21–23) are addressed to men, presumably those who have disregarded such teachings.

6:1–19
Miscellaneous Counsels

A number of short units appear together here: advice on standing surety on loans that may be defaulted (vv. 1–5), an expanded *mashal* on the diligence of the ant (vv. 6–11), a section describing the ways of the troublemaker (vv. 12–15), and a numerical saying on things hateful to God (vv. 16–19). Though the content of these passages is unrelated, they are linked together by bodily imagery.

6:1–5. Only the first section, which finds a parallel in the *Words of Ahiqar*, uses the typical instruction form as it advises the person standing pledge for a loan to rectify this situation while there is still time. The motif of word and mouth as a potential snare, which is repeated elsewhere in the instructions, appears again in v. 2. The "palm of the hand" is struck in v. 1, symbolizing the making of a bargain, and occurs again in v. 3 as the hand of the neighbor. The more common term for hand (Heb. *yad*) appears in the proverbial images of the bird and gazelle escaping from hunters' hands (v. 5).

6:6–11. The *mashal* of the ant represents typical nature wisdom and develops the theme of detrimental sleep, an activity of the body, in vv. 9–10. Folded hands, familiar as an image of sloth in Eccles. 4:5, appear in 6:10b.

6:12–15. The behavior of the villainous, worthless man is painted in terms of body language (cf. 10:10; 16:30) that expresses his evil intent (by magic or by colleagues lying in wait for his signal?). Typically, he is fully and suddenly repaid according to the laws of the act-consequence relationship (cf. 24:22; 29:1).

6:16–19. Telling body language is again the topic of the customary "x, $x + 1$" numerical saying. Verses 16–17 follow the descriptive pattern familiar from the lament psalms and Song of Songs, moving from the top of the body to the bottom (eye, tongue, heart, feet). Study of traditional societies has shown that troublemaking activities such as gossip and slander are strategies typically used by those of lower status to cope with social problems. Hence, this text may provide an index of problems in postexilic Israel (disputes over inheritance and land claims?), rather than simply representing the behavior of a few "bad apples."

6:20–35
The Eighth Instruction

6:20–26. The instruction style resumes in vv. 20–21 with imagery familiar from 1:8 and 3:3. The author supplies motivations evoking the clarity and protective qualities of parents' teachings in vv. 22–23 (some scholars place v. 22 after 5:19, a judgment based on the presence of the feminine gender in both verses). Bodily imagery (tongue [v. 24], beauty and eyes [v. 25]) link this instruction to other units in chap. 6. Concrete reference to prostitution occurs for the first time in Proverbs in v. 26. Previously, there had been reference to foreign or strange women. Verse 26 suggests that the prostitute, like the thief (v. 30), is also hungry.

6:27–35. Two rhetorical questions, which may be interpreted as proverb performance, open this section, which compares adultery to theft and, in so doing, reminds readers that adultery with married women was condemned as much for its violation of men's property rights as for its inherent dishonesty or immorality (cf. Exod. 20:14–15; Deut. 5:18–19, where the two are clustered together). Although thieves are allowed to make sevenfold restitution (contrary to Exod. 22:1–9), no amount will compensate the jealous husband (cf. 5:9–11).

7:1–27
The Ninth Instruction

A story exemplifying the temptations of the Woman Stranger (vv. 6–23) stands between a standard introduction (vv. 1–5) and typical admonitory conclusion (vv. 24–27). Egyptian and Mesopotamian influence may be discerned in vv. 6, 16, 19, 26–27. Moreover, imagery familiar from previous instructions is used freely (cf., e.g., 1:20; 3:3; 6:21). To call Woman Wisdom "sister," i.e., "bride," is to gain salvation from the perils of Woman Stranger (v. 4), even though the recommended figure could hardly be described as "stay-at-home" (cf. 7:11b; 1:20).

8:1–36
Wisdom's Second Speech

The pinnacle of wisdom thought appears here in the self-proclamation of Woman Wisdom, a form of literature familiar from texts listing the miraculous deeds of Isis, an Egyptian goddess, and dating to the Hellenistic period (fourth to sixth centuries B.C.). This wisdom speech presents a view of Woman Wisdom as more than a teacher, desirable human mate, or attribute of Yahweh. The translation and interpretation of no passage in Proverbs is more hotly contested than this one, no doubt because Woman Wisdom's claims are so difficult to assimilate within later Judaism and Christianity. Significant parallels to this passage are found in the "Hymn to Wisdom" of Job 28, some of the material in the "Yahweh speeches" of Job 38–42; Sir. 1:1–10; 4:11–19; 14:20–15:10; 24:1–19; and Wisd. of Sol. 7:22–8:1. The view of wisdom found here becomes important for the *logos* theology in the prologue of the Gospel of John and elsewhere in the NT (Matt. 11:19; Luke 11:49; Matt. 23:34–36; 1 Cor. 10:4; Col. 1:15–16).

8:1–3. Once again, Woman Wisdom stands in this introduction in full view of the people, in the places where power is exercised and choices are made (vv. 2–3; cf. 1:20–21).

8:4–11. Woman Wisdom's speech is deliberately described here in terms that refute and undercut the seductive language of Woman Stranger in Proverbs 7, as though the sage has become aware that his fascination with Woman Wisdom's "evil twin" might prove dangerous. Motifs familiar from 3:14–15, where Egyptian influence was noted, occur here, and the "simple ones" or untutored (1:4, 22) are again addressed.

8:12–21. Despite problems in the Hebrew text, the meaning of this section of Woman Wisdom's self-praise is reasonably clear. Woman Wisdom's relation to kingship is explicated in vv. 15–16 and allows at least three possible interpretations: first, the goddess Ma'at's special function of undergirding the throne (and hence, justifying the reign) of pharaoh; second, the role of the Mesopotamian fertility goddess (Inanna/Ishtar) in certifying human males as fit for kingship through the sacramental sacred marriage rite; and third, the special link between rulers and wisdom in Israel and the ancient Near East (cf. 1 Kings 3; 2 Sam. 14:17; Isa. 11:2). The last option rests on a pragmatic observation: kings who routinely display poor judgment in governing their subjects have trouble in

maintaining their grasp on power. The pattern of "*x* loves those who love *x*" in v. 17a is familiar from Egyptian theological language. Moreover, 17b finds echoes in Wisd. of Sol. 1:1; 6:12.

8:22–31. This most disputed section of Woman Wisdom's speech involves her exact relationship to Yahweh and to creation. Verse 22 is the crux. Should the Hebrew verb and its object, *qanani* (v. 22a), be translated as "begot me," following the Targum, Greek, and Syriac versions? Those who adopt this option usually render the phrase "created me" to avoid sexual connotations (cf. Eve's statement in Gen. 4:1 and the epithet of the Canaanite mother goddess [see Pritchard, pp. 131–32]). Or should one read "acquired/possessed me" with the more literalistic ancient authorities: Aquila, Symmachus, Theodotion, and Jerome? Modern commentators are divided on the issue.

The translator's view of Woman Wisdom's nature helps determine the selection of an appropriate translation. Since we have earlier noted Woman Wisdom's literary appearance as the "sought-for person" who bestows needed abilities and goods upon her human seekers (1:9; 3:22; see commentary above on 4:4b–9), it is not unreasonable to find this motif applied to Woman Wisdom's relationship to the Creator. Though the translation "Yahweh possessed me, at the beginning of his acts" is preferred here, Camp's translation of vv. 22–25 (see Camp, p. 84) deserves a hearing, since it seeks to incorporate the physical overtones of verbs in the text:

> *Yahweh conceived me at the beginning of his way,*
> *the first of his acts of old.*
> *Ages ago I was woven in the womb,*
> *at the first, before the beginning of the earth.*
> *When there were no depths, I was brought forth,*
> *when there were no springs abounding with water.*
> *Before the mountains had been shaped,*
> *before the hills, I was brought forth.*

It should be noted that the Hebrew verb *cholaleti*, here translated "brought forth" (vv. 24–25), derives from the root *chyl*, which is generally associated with the physical activity of the *female* in giving birth. Hence, one must ask, does Yahweh, in the manner of a female, give birth (metaphorically?) to Woman Wisdom? Though Woman Wisdom appears to exist prior to the rest of creation, is used as a model or principle in Yahweh's subsequent creative activity, and does *not* serve as an attribute of Yahweh, she, nevertheless, must have come from somewhere.

Disputes over vv. 22–31 continue in v. 30, since the translation of *'amon* remains problematic. Does it mean "master craftswoman," an analogy with the "artisans" of Jer. 52:15 (so, apparently, with the LXX), or "nursling, darling child," an analogy with Lam. 4:5 and Esther 2:7, or was it revised to yield a different form altogether? Egyptian parallels may be adduced to support either reading, for Ma'at is both playful child and master plan for creation. But on the whole, the purport of the passage, with its allusions to delight and play, suggests that "darling child" is preferable.

8:32–36. Woman Wisdom's remarkable speech concludes with a surprising invitation: those who find her find life itself (v. 35). This is the kind of language that is normally used only of Yahweh, but here Woman Wisdom is fully endowed with divine attributes since she appears as guarantor of earthly salvation. Students who reject her invite death (v. 36).

9:1–18
The Tenth Instruction

Reference to two banquets (9:1–6; 13–18), the first given by Woman Wisdom and the second by another manifestation of her "evil twin," Woman Folly, is divided by assorted counsels (vv. 7–12) in the final instruction, which serves as a literary, theological introduction to the proverb collections.

9:1–6. Woman Wisdom's house is described as a mansion. Some scholars have found deeper significance in the phrase "seven pillars" (v. 1). The term may allude to wisdom's architectural role in creation (cf. 8:30), since the ancients believed the world to be supported by seven great pillars, or it may refer to the literary structure of Proverbs 2–7 (see Murphy, p. 52; → Pillars). Woman Wisdom is connected with women other than the "mother" of the sages' traditional word pair ("father/mother" in 1:8; 6:20; 10:1; and elsewhere), since she is served by maids who do her bidding (v. 3), in much the same way that devotees of a fertility goddess solicit worshipers for their deity. Woman Wisdom's banquet (vv. 5–6) is one of the few in the Hebrew Bible that does not lead to disastrous consequences for those who attend.

9:7–12. Counsel on the correct handling of the scoffer or mocker (vv. 7–8, 12) forms a ring around the centerpiece of wisdom teaching in v. 10: "fear of Yahweh" is the beginning of wisdom (cf. 1:7); knowledge of the Holy One, understanding. Although a sage or righteous person profits from correction (vv. 8b, 9), the scoffer turns on the one who attempts a reproof (vv. 7–8a). As with all acts, the consequences will be borne by the actor (vv. 11–12). Verse 11 suggests this section is to be interpreted as Woman Wisdom's "table talk" at her banquet.

9:13–18. Oddly, the last portion of the instructional introduction to Proverbs is not a speech by Woman Wisdom, but another brush with her opposite counterpart. Sitting like a prostitute where she may oversee potential customers (v. 14), she calls to passersby (v. 16); this call is a parody of Woman Wisdom's sum-

mons (v. 4), complete with an example of proverb performance (v. 17) to spice her proposition, even as Woman Wisdom spiced her wine (vv. 2, 5). Her connection with the underworld, familiar from 5:23 and 7:26–27, ends the section, replacing the sweet taste of stolen water and secret food with the odor of death.

10:1–22:16
"The Proverbs of Solomon"

Beginning with 10:1, one moves from lengthy, unified compositions of wisdom poems and instructions to the collections of proverbs. The first collection, associated with Solomon explicitly through its superscription in 10:1a, contains 375 proverbs. This is the same numerical value given to the name "Solomon" in Hebrew, which appears in the superscription. The compiler of this section seems to be working at joining together two collections of approximately the same size, chaps. 10–15 and 16–22, since a number of peculiarities (repetitions of sayings, vocabulary peculiar to one section and not the other, patterns linking a series of proverbs, preferred type of parallelism) occur at the "seam" in chaps. 14–16 (see Murphy, p. 64). In addition, a cluster of "Yahweh sayings" (15:33–16:9) located near the center of the book (16:17) seems to provide a theological core for the collection.

Commentators customarily consider morally neutral or observational proverbs as belonging to an earlier "old wisdom" stage of the collection; any theological proverbs represent a later, pietistic attempt to incorporate these insights into a Yahwistic framework. However, such a thesis need not be necessary, especially if Proverbs 1–9 were dated to the Solomonic period. Rather, it would not be surprising to find "theological knowledge" present at all stages of Israelite wisdom reflection, since wisdom in the ancient Near East was habitually viewed as a gift from the gods. In general, content alone is not an infallible guide to the date of a text's composition. Rather, content ought to be considered along with structural features in the literature before any final determination is made.

Attempts to provide a social or even a literary context for this collection of proverbs have proved highly speculative, since "sentence literature" resists the type of analysis that has proved so fruitful in determining contexts for longer compositions. Proverbs such as one finds here might have originated and been employed in a variety of contexts: family or tribal settings, court or scribal schools, or simply in society at large (see the Introduction above). The search for a literary structure in these proverb collections has proved as elusive as the quest for social context. However, it is generally recognized that proverbs were grouped together by a variety of methods: content ("royal" proverbs in 16:10–15); wordplay and catchwords ("hear" in 15:29–32); preferred form of parallelism (antithetic parallelism in chaps. 10–15); or other mnemonic devices.

10:1–15:33
The Antithetic Collection

10:1–32. After the superscription (10:1a), the first proverb ties what follows to the preceding instructions in an explicit way. The use of "son" as the topic of 10:1, along with the "father/mother" word pair (cf. 1:8; 6:20) suggests that what follows provides "midrash," or commentary, on the earlier teachings. That such is indeed the case is confirmed by the way the proverbs of chap. 10 restate the vocabulary and themes present in 1–9: righteous/wicked contrasts (vv. 2–3, 24–25, 27–32), the theme of language (vv. 18–21, 31–32), and the catchwords "life" (vv. 16–17) and "wisdom" and "wise men" (vv. 13–14). Crop gathering in the summer (v. 5) recalls the wise ant of 6:8; the winking troublemaker (v. 10) reminds one of the same gesture made by a plotter (6:13). The stirring up of dissensions (10:12a) suggests the gossip (6:19b), who is hated by Yahweh; the positive path to life (v. 17a) stands in contrast with the paths to life not attained by those who consort with Woman Stranger (2:19b). The fool, who takes pleasure in doing evil (v. 23), alludes to the imagery of 2:14; 4:16. Only one clearly observational, neutral saying is found: the poor are ruined by lack of goods, but wealth is the fortified city of the rich (10:15). However, this comment is immediately contextualized by v. 16 and later by v. 22. The sages would prefer to believe that wealth is a gift of Yahweh that confirms its possessor's righteousness. Otherwise, the standard act-consequence relationship is displayed throughout the chapter.

11:1–31. Various catchwords link the proverbs of this chapter together: "righteousness" (vv. 4–6), "upright" (vv. 5–6), "justice" (vv. 18–19), and "blessing" (25–26). "Delight" or "fitting" ties 11:1 to 10:32 (see Murphy, pp. 68–69), and that which is detestable to Yahweh (11:1, 20) recalls the numerical saying of 6:16. The theme of the requisites for survival is developed in vv. 3–11, where the sages recommend, not unexpectedly, righteousness, knowledge, and integrity rather than confidence in wealth. The proverb warning against standing surety for a pledge (v. 15) distills the instruction of 6:1–5. The mysteries of generosity are attested (vv. 25–26); moreover, tree of life imagery appears in vv. 28, 30. Women appear as topics in both positive and negative form (vv. 16, 22). The proper use of language, a favorite subject, recurs (vv. 9, 12–14).

12:1–28. The contrast between wicked/evil and righteous/upright is developed in vv. 3, 5–7, 10, 12–13, 17, 20–21, 26, 28, with the wise/foolish motif a second major interest (vv. 15–16, 23, 27). The benefits and pitfalls of language are treated (vv. 6, 8, 13–14a, 17–19, 22,

25) with a keen observation on the stressful effects of anxiety (v. 25a). A "better than" saying on the follies of pretense and a synonymous proverb on righteousness as the way to life break the regular antithetic pattern in the rest of the proverbs. Verse 22 includes a parallel with chap. 10 of the *Instruction of Amenemope.* Catchwords include "wickedness" (vv. 1–3), "righteous/wicked" (vv. 5–7), "righteous" (vv. 10, 12–13), "fool" (vv. 15–16), "tongue" (vv. 18–19), "evil/trouble" (vv. 20–21), and in vv. 26, 28 both "way" and "righteous/ness" are used.

13:1–25. Antithetic relationships between the behavior of the wise/diligent and the proud with sluggards/mockers, as a variant for the former comparison (vv. 1, 4, 10, 13, 15–16, 18, 19b–20), continue as the main topics. The righteous and wicked are compared (vv. 5, 6, 9, 17, 21–22, 25) and the wealthy/poor contrast appears in v. 8 (also implicitly in vv. 11, 23). The effects of hope and longing on the human spirit are observed in vv. 12, 19a, and a cynical proverb on the deceptive appearances of wealth occurs in v. 7. Synthetic parallelism marks the praise of wisdom teaching in v. 14, a proverb perhaps evoked by the tree of life imagery in v. 12 and the term "command" in v. 13. Catchwords continue to bind short units together: "desire/soul/life" (vv. 2–4); "righteous/wicked" (vv. 5–6); "righteous" (vv. 21–22); and "poor/rich" (vv. 7–8). In addition, wordplays occur in vv. 15–19, 20.

14:1–35. A midrash on the two banquets described in 9:1–6, 13–18 opens this chapter, which continues the juxtaposition of wise and foolish behavior (vv. 1, 3, 6, 8, 15–16, 18, 24, 29, 33). Wicked/foolish images stand in contrast with those involving the righteous/upright (vv. 9, 11, 22, 32, 34), whereas the poor/rich form another pair of contrasts (vv. 20–21, 31). Psychological insights undergird vv. 10, 12–13, 30, and two royal sayings arise for the first time (vv. 28, 35). "Fear of Yahweh" proverbs appear three times (vv. 2, 26–27), with the latter two occurrences breaking the antithetic pattern in favor of synonymous parallelism. Various verbal roots act as catchwords, along with other typical vocabulary: "to know" (vv. 6–8), "fool" (vv. 7–8), and "to be great" (vv. 28–29).

15:1–33. The same antithetic pairs apparent in chaps. 10–14 round out this collection: wise/prudent versus fool/mocker (vv. 5, 12, 14, 18, 20 [cf. 10:1], 21, 24, 31–32); righteous/wicked (vv. 6–9, 19, 26, 28–29). Language provides an important topic (vv. 1–2, 4, 7, 23, 28), and popular psychology appears in vv. 1, 4, 13, 14, 30. Two "better than" sayings (vv. 16–17) point out that abundance is not everything, if accompanied with strife (cf. *Amenemope* VI, 9:5–8 in Pritchard, p. 422, as noted by Murphy, p. 70). Imagery of death and the underworld marks vv. 10–11, 24, 27. Verbal roots for "to be good" in vv. 2–3 and "to be glad" in vv. 20–21, 23 act as catchwords, along with other typical language: "heart/mind" (vv. 13–15), "righteous" (vv. 28–29), "hear" (vv. 29, 31–32), etc.

"Yahweh proverbs" abound in this transitional chapter (vv. 3, 11, 16, 25, 29, 33), with "detested by Yahweh" forms occurring in vv. 8–9, 26. The awesome sovereignty of God is conveyed not simply by content—the good and the wicked, even the underworld lie open to Yahweh's sight—but also by repetition of this theme. The collection ends appropriately with the equation of "fear of Yahweh" to the teachings of wisdom (15:33).

16:1–22:16
The "Royal" Collection

Breaking away from the pattern of antithetic parallelism, this collection displays more varied forms, more attempts at thematic arrangement, and high valuation of the monarchy and, perhaps, reflects a city rather than rural background.

16:1–33. A cluster of "Yahweh proverbs" (vv. 1–7) begins this chapter, with these forms continuing to punctuate the rest of the proverbs in vv. 9, 11, 20, 33. People may fret, plan, and wonder, but in the end it is Yahweh who prevails. Verse 2 recalls the Egyptian scribal god Thoth, who weighs the heart of the dead against the measure of Ma'at. The diverse ways of the king are discussed in vv. 10, 12 (cf. 8:15), 13–15, where the monarch is seen as the upholder of Yahweh's just order, an idea created as much by the placement of these verses after the Yahweh proverbs as by their actual content. The topic of language occurs in vv. 21, 23–24, 27–28. "Better than" sayings appear in vv. 8, 16, 19, 32, and psychological observations in vv. 25–26. An admonition to acquire wisdom, a precious commodity in v. 16, recalls 4:5 and 3:14. Variants for some of these proverbs exist: cf. v. 2 with 21:2, v. 5b with 11:21, and v. 25 with 14:12. Catchwords continue to unite short groups of proverbs (vv. 10–11, 12–13, 18–19, 21–24, 27–29), but thematic development is the more important organizing technique in this chapter.

17:1–28. A great variety of topics is treated here, with unusual stylistic features and few catchwords ("companion" in vv. 17–18, "joy/cheerful" in vv. 21–22). References to the caprice of human language occur in vv. 4, 7, 20, 27–28, and reflections on proper conflict resolution are discussed in vv. 9, 13–14, 26. The wise are the subjects of vv. 2, 10, 24, with fools appearing in vv. 12, 16, 21, 25. The image of Yahweh testing the heart (v. 3) reflects the Egyptian influence already noted in 16:2. Other subjects appear briefly: bribes in vv. 8, 23; friendship in v. 17; parent-child relationships in v. 6; standing pledge in v. 18; treatment of the poor in v. 5;

and role reversal in v. 2. The sage continues to record insights on psychological stress: a "better than" saying in v. 1 celebrates peace and quiet, and a cheerful disposition is found to be the best medicine in v. 22.

18:1–24. The main topic is the power of speech, developed in vv. 4, 6–8, 13, 20–21, though the benefits of wealth receive some attention (vv. 11, 16, 23), along with conflict resolution and justice in court (vv. 17–19). The negative and positive sides of friendship frame the chapter in vv. 1, 24, respectively. Yahweh appears as a strong tower to the righteous in v. 10 and the "Donor" of wives in v. 22, much as God was seen to be the provider of Woman Wisdom in the instructions of chaps. 1–9. A person's spirit can sustain or be crushed, according to the psychology of v. 14. Perhaps the strongest programmatic statement occurs in v. 21: death and life are both in the "power of the tongue," i.e., language. Catchwords are used in vv. 10–11, 18–19, 20–21. Verse 12b shows how a phrase may be reused in a new context; it appeared earlier in 15:33.

19:1–29. Emphasis on family relationships (vv. 13–14, 18, 26), wisdom (vv. 11, 16, 20, 25, 27), and folly in its various modes (vv. 1, 10, 22b, mockers in vv. 25, 28–29, sluggards in vv. 15, 24) accompany the resurgence of the instruction style in vv. 18, 20, 23, 27, as the sage urges the "son" to take instruction. Insights on the life of the poor and their relationship to Yahweh occur in vv. 7–8 (note the shift from sentence style), 10, 17. Discussion of the false witness (vv. 5, 9, 28) involves the reuse of phrases; vv. 5a and 9a are identical. Various catchwords, associated with the topics above, appear in vv. 1–2, 6–7, 13–15, 18–19, 20–21, 26–27, 28–29. As in 18:22, Yahweh is the provider of a good wife in v. 14, even as parents provide an inheritance.

20:1–30. A wide range of topics and styles (cf. vv. 6–7, 18) characterizes this chapter, which opens with the mocker in v. 1, a reference that provides a tie to 19:28–29. Royal sayings appear in vv. 2 (cf. 19:12a), 8, 26, 28, with reuse of the image of winnowing evil in vv. 8, 26. An allusion to Yahweh's maintenance of just weights, a motif familiar from 11:1; 16:11, occurs in vv. 10, 23, with other Yahweh proverbs occurring in vv. 12, 22, 24, 27. The proverb on gossips (v. 19) provides a variation on 11:13, and the typical advice against standing surety on a pledge (v. 16) is repeated exactly in 27:13. The gray hair of the old (v. 29), a white badge of wisdom, recalls 16:31. Violence is recommended as an efficacious corrective in v. 30 (for similar statements, see 13:24; 19:18, 25). Numerous catchwords are used throughout this chapter.

21:1–31. These verses provide readers with the sages' cast of typical characters: the wicked (vv. 4, 7, 10, 12, 18, 27, 29); the mocker (vv. 11, 24); the craving sluggard with idle hands (vv. 25–26, cf. 19:24; 20:4); the false witness (v. 28, cf. 14:5; 19:5, 9, 28); and the quarrelsome wife (vv. 9 [= 25:24], 19). On the positive side, Yahweh appears in vv. 1, 2 (cf. v. 2a with 16:25a, v. 2b with 17:3), 3, 30–31; the wise in vv. 11, 20, 22; the righteous and diligent in vv. 5, 21; and the king in v. 1. Beyond the familiar themes and catchwords with which these characters are associated, the idea of "plan" and "way" unites thoughts present in vv. 2, 5, 8, 16, 29. Additionally, remarks regarding proper attitude toward sacrifice occur toward the beginning and end of the chapter: in v. 3, Yahweh prefers justice and righteousness to sacrifice; in v. 27, the sacrifice of the wicked, brought with evil intent, is detestable. Both proverbs echo the programmatic statements of Psalm 50. Yahweh figures as absolute sovereign over human events in vv. 30–31: no counsel prevails against God, no human plan can, by itself, bring salvation.

22:1–16. As this large collection ends, treatment is given to the themes of generosity to the poor (vv. 9, 16); the training of children (vv. 6, 15); the value of a good name (v. 1); and, of course, the wicked (vv. 5, 8); the mocker (v. 10); the sluggard, now feigning fright of lions to avoid work (v. 13); the prudent (v. 3); and the king (v. 11). Even as Yahweh was the source of a good wife (18:22; 19:14), those feeling God's wrath will fall into the "Pit"-like mouth of Women Strangers (22:14). Thus, the major Solomonic collection of 10:1–22:14 ends as did the instructions in 9:13–18, with the image of woman as the way to death.

22:17–24:22
"The Words of the Wise"

This section of Proverbs, a free adaptation of the highly moral Egyptian *Instruction of Amenemope,* returns to the longer, more developed instructional style. However, instead of the unified poems of Proverbs 1–9, we find here a series of positive and negative commands, expanded by the addition of motivation clauses and sayings to enhance their authority. The antithetic parallelism of the previous Solomonic collection is found only in 24:16 (Murphy, p. 74).

Only a third of the material in these chapters is actually based on the Egyptian text. It appears in 22:17–23:11 and in different order than it does in *Amenemope.* Parallels to the Aramaic *Words of Ahiqar* are also evident in 23:13–14. Direct address, to "my son," appears in 23:15, 19, 26; 24:13, 21. The topics treated range from table manners among the powerful (23:1–3, 6–8) to the dangers of alcoholism (23:20–21, 29–35), suggesting that this instruction may date from the monarchical period as training material for those entering court service (cf. 22:21; commentary above on 1:2–6). Other typical wisdom themes also appear:

treatment of the poor, the oppressed and their relationship to Yahweh (22:22–23; 24:11–12); the excellence of wisdom (23:23; 24:3–7, 13–14); family relationships and discipline of the young (23:13–16, 24–25); envy of sinners (23:17–18; 24:1–2, 15–20); the dangers of harlots (23:27–28); and advice against guaranteeing debts (22:26–27). The rest of wisdom literature's cast of characters are also to be found in this instruction: the fool (23:9; 24:7, 9); the angry man (22:24–25); the king (22:29; 24:21); and Yahweh (22:19, 23; 23:17; 24:18, 21–22; implicitly in 23:11 [cf. Num. 35:19]; 24:12).

22:17–23:11
The Egyptian Prologue

22:17–21. The title of this instruction has been mistakenly embedded within the first sentence in Hebrew in v. 17. The Hebrew text may be translated, following the LXX, "The Words of the Wise. / Give ear and hear my words, / and apply your mind to my teaching." In addition, the Hebrew *shlshwm* of v. 20 must be understood to mean "thirty" in view of the Egyptian *Amenemope,* which is divided into "thirty houses" (i.e., chapters). Efforts of commentators to divide this instruction into thirty distinct units have not been particularly successful, however. Verse 21 reflects the typical concern of officials in traditional societies to entrust messages only to those capable of delivering them accurately.

22:22–23:11. Reference to boundary markers (22:28; 23:10–11) also occurs in *Amenemope,* as well as in 25:25 and elsewhere in the Hebrew Bible (Deut. 19:14; 27:17; Isa. 5:8–10). A common method of oppressing the poor, especially widows vulnerable by having no male protector but the Lord, is dispossessing them of their land. Since a boundary marker sets the limits of a field and provides legal evidence of ownership, their movement or removal is forbidden and will be avenged by Yahweh (23:11).

23:12–24:22
The Sage's Instruction

Issues such as the exemplary benefits of wisdom, the plight of the drunkard, the temptation to envy the wicked or fall prey to the harlot are developed in this section. As in previous verses, the sage invokes Yahweh to lend authority to his teachings. Prov. 23:29–30, which focuses on the drunkard, may be a remnant of an earlier riddle (see the Introduction above). Prov. 24:5–7 has implicit parallels in 11:14; 20:18. Elsewhere in the Hebrew Bible, too many counselors lead to the downfall of Absalom in 2 Samuel 17. (On the significance of the "weighing the heart" motif in 24:12, see 16:2 [cf. 21:2].) The Greek text for this instruction has five additional verses occurring after 24:22.

24:23–34
Further "Words of the Wise"

This short collection is usually understood to be an appendix of the previous instruction.

24:23a. The first half of v. 23 may be interpreted as a heading for this collection. It might, however, have a more specialized function, namely, a title linking 24:23–34 to 22:17–22, since this half-verse could also be rendered "These also belong to the [collection of 'sayings of] wise men'" (Skehan, quoted in Murphy, p. 76).

24:23b–25. Concern about impartiality in judgment is common in the Hebrew Bible (cf., e.g., 18:5; 28:21; 31:5; Lev. 19:15; Deut. 1:17; 16:19; Amos 2:6; 5:7–10; Isa. 10:2; 11:3–5; Mic. 3:9, 11).

24:26–29. This miscellany of saying, admonition, and prohibitions begins (v. 26) and ends (vv. 28–29) with a focus on proper speech. Verse 28 reflects the experience of the law court. The admonition (v. 27) comments on the prudential road to success. The final prohibition (v. 29), one directed against revenge, however well justified, finds a striking parallel in Matt. 6:12, 14–15.

24:30–34. This example story concerning the self-generated plight of the sluggard provides insight into what the sages mean by the word "instruction" (v. 32), used so often in Proverbs 1–9. Reflection on life's events or on humanity's foibles may engender a paradigmatic insight, which can be used to help someone avert disaster or achieve success. Verses 33–34 are identical to 6:10–11. For other comments on the sluggard, cf. 6:6; 26:13–16.

25:1–29:27
"Further 'Proverbs of Solomon,' Copied by the Men of Hezekiah, King of Judah"

Another collection of proverbs is here attributed to Solomon. Although this attribution is probably another example of traditional ascription of, rather than actual, authorship, the information "copied by the men of Hezekiah" (25:1) is generally considered historically accurate and gives an insight into wisdom activity at the royal court. The number of proverbs in this section (approximately 130) is equivalent to the numerical value of the Hebrew name Hezekiah as it was traditionally calculated. Like the previous Solomonic collection, this one may also be divided into two minor groupings, Proverbs 25–27 and 28–29, each internally structured by the typical devices observed earlier (i.e., catchwords, wordplay, onomatopoeia, topic). Proverbs 25–27 prefers comparisons, prohibitions, and the

topics of natural world and trade and uses antithetic parallelism far less than is usual. Proverbs 28–29 returns to antithetic parallelism as it treats the themes of the poor, the king, and justice.

25:1–27:27
The Comparison Collection

25:1–28. The topics of the king (vv. 2–7, 15), language (vv. 11, 15, 23), treatment of one's neighbor (vv. 8–9, 17–18), and psychological insights (vv. 20, 25) highlight this chapter of extended comparisons (more than one verse) and commands. Other typical wisdom motifs are also present: false witness (v. 18); behavior at court (vv. 8–10); the boaster (v. 14); the quarrelsome wife (v. 24 = 21:9); the righteous (v. 26); and the wise (v. 12). Missing are the typical antithetic contrasts between wicked and righteous, wise and fool. Particularly noticeable are comparisons using lush, evocative imagery drawn from nature. Golden apples (v. 11), the refreshing coolness of snow or cold water (vv. 13, 25), and wind and rain (vv. 14, 23) all work to cast their content into especially memorable form with the crafted beauty of their similes and metaphors. The gentle tongue, which patiently breaks the bones of the powerful (v. 15), must be a special insight of the sages, who habitually counsel against hot-tempered, ill-mannered, and loud-mouthed assaults on convention. Here it is clear they do not think their students should simply endorse the status quo, but should rather choose available and effective means to change it. Such recommendations also highlight the sages' lack of ultimate power in Israelite social structure: where kings are concerned, they may counsel, but they cannot command.

26:1–28. The fool (vv. 1 [cf. 19:10a], 3–12 [cf. 10:13b; 19:29b for v. 3b]), the sluggard (vv. 13–16), and the malicious users of language for quarrels, gossip, and deceit (vv. 20–26, 28; v. 22 = 18:8) are the main topics of this chapter. Imagery drawn from the natural world again serves as a vehicle for the sages' observations in vv. 1–5, 9, 11, 13, 17, 20–21, 27. Weapons technology gone out of control due to human error forms an appropriate counterpoint in vv. 8, 10, 18–19. Unlike fools of earlier chapters, whose behavior carried moral overtones, those pictured here are simply foolish, thoughtless persons whom those in authority would do well to recognize and avoid entrusting with serious matters (vv. 1, 6, 8, 10). Verses 4–5 present a striking contrast in counsel on how to handle reprimanding a fool. These two verses demonstrate that the insights couched in proverbial form are not eternal truth carved in stone but, rather, depend on context for their application. (This is no doubt why the fool will never understand how to use a proverb correctly [vv. 7, 9; cf. Sir. 20:20].) The character portrait of the sluggard is painted with wicked clarity: idlers use any excuse, however ludicrous, to avoid work (v. 13; cf. 22:13; 24:30) and are too lazy even to feed themselves (26:15 = 19:24). Both sides of the act-consequence relationship are affirmed here: no curse "without cause" will find an innocent victim (26:2), and those who dig pits for others will not escape falling in themselves (v. 27; cf. 28:10; Ps. 7:15; Eccles. 10:8; Sir. 27:25–27).

27:1–27. Explorations of the relations between friends and neighbors (vv. 9–11, 14, 17, 19); strange paradoxes (vv. 5–7); uncertainty (v. 1); and human psychology (vv. 4, 17, 19, 20 [cf. 30:15–16]) are nestled among typical wisdom concerns: the fool (vv. 3, 22); prudent behavior (v. 12; cf. 22:3); pledges for loans (27:13 = 20:16); language and boasting (vv. 2, 21); nagging wives (vv. 15–16); and success in one's work (vv. 18, 23–27). Imagery from nature is important in vv. 3, 7–8, 15–16, 18–19, and in vv. 23–27, which provide a small "instruction" on farming (cf. Isa. 28:23–29). Again, context is everything: honey is sweet, but not to the satisfied; to the hungry person, even something bitter is counted as sweet (v. 7). A friend may be better than kin under the right circumstances (v. 10, cf. 18:24; Sir. 37:6); a rousing blessing given too early becomes a curse (v. 14); and too much affection can mask more sinister motives (v. 6).

28:1–29:27
The Ruler's Collection

Returning to the antithetic parallelism that characterized the earlier Solomonic collections, this section favors the two-lined proverb rather than commands and extended comparisons. The topics are those important to rulers: justice, treatment of the poor, the nature of power, along with typical wisdom concerns (righteous/wicked, wise/fool, father/mother).

28:1–28. Explicit and implicit contrasts between the righteous and wicked (vv. 1, 4, 10, 12, 13, 16, 18, 28), the rich and poor (vv. 3, 6, 8, 11, 19 [cf. 12:11], 20, 22, 25, 27), and the nature of rulership (vv. 2, 3, 15–16, 28) provide the main topics in this chapter. Yahweh appears as protector and instructor of those who are God-fearing (vv. 5, 25) and is the implicit referent of the verb "fear" in v. 14 (cf. Sir. 37:12). "Torah" is mentioned specifically in vv. 4, 7, 9. Although "Torah" has been used in the general sense of teaching throughout Proverbs, the highly juridical, moral tone of this chapter suggests that *the* Torah, Israel's legal tradition, is also implied here. Family relationships are the subject of vv. 7, 24, and wisdom themes of flattery/rebuke (v. 23), wise/fool (v. 26), guilt (v. 17), and justice (vv. 5, 8, 21 [cf. 24:23]) round out the selection of proverbs. The Hebrew text of vv. 2–3 is difficult and usually restored

from the LXX, a situation that gives rise to varying modern translations.

29:1–27. In the same way that Proverbs 10, the first chapter of the proverb collections, was composed of proverbs that took up themes developed in Proverbs 1–9, so the last chapter of the proverb collections is marked by its use of items that had previously appeared in slightly different form (29:1b = 6:15b; cf., e.g., 29:2 with 11:10; 28:12, 28; 29:5 with 11:9; 29:11 with 12:16; 29:13 with 22:2; 29:20b = 26:12b). The main topics are again the contrast between wicked and righteous (29:2, 6–7, 10, 16, 27) and rulers (vv. 2, 4, 12, 14, 26). The contrast between the man who loves (Woman?) Wisdom and the one who goes to prostitutes (v. 3) builds on the imagery present in Proverbs 1–9, while mockers and fools are contrasted with the wise in 29:8–9, 11. Once more, the sages, who generally condemn violence in others, recommend it (vv. 15, 17, 19, 21; cf. 13:24; 19:18) to control their own families and domestic slaves. Apparently the patient, gentle tongue of 25:15 is to be used only when the one being corrected is of higher status and capable of self-defense.

30:1–14
"The Words of Agur, Son of Jakeh"

Commentators disagree on the precise length of this section, with vv. 4, 6, or 14 serving as possible ending points for the passage. Topical groupings seem to organize these verses (see Murphy, p. 80).

30:1–4
Agur's Oracle

30:1. Although the heading of this collection is understandable, the rest of the Hebrew verse makes little sense. The names Agur and Jakeh do not occur in the rest of the Hebrew Bible and should perhaps be translated literally (Agur, "I am a sojourner"; Jakeh, an abbreviation of "Yahweh, blessed is he") as a symbolic answer to the riddle in v. 4. Agur, then, would stand for Israel, the perpetual sojourner people (cf. Gen. 47:9), and for the "son" of Yahweh, who is the referent of the questions of 30:4 (see Murphy, p. 80). The word "Massa" (v. 1a) is usually interpreted as a name (so too in 31:1) of a tribe or of an area in north Arabia associated with one of Ishmael's sons in Gen. 25:14 and 1 Chron. 1:30 (see Whybray, p. 172). Such a reference here is not out of the question, since the Hebrew Bible contains many traditions about the fabled wisdom of "the sons of the East" (1 Kings 5:10; Jer. 49:7). However, "Massa" may also be translated "oracle," even though the following verses are not oracular in form. Prov. 30:1b ("Ithiel," "Ucal") is corrupt, or textually damaged, and usually emended to read "there is no god"; "I am not god"; "I am weary, O God, I am weary, I am worn out."

30:2–4. Agur's opinion of his own intelligence when compared to the wisdom of the Holy Ones (cf. 9:10) is in keeping with the concept of wisdom's limits as developed in Proverbs 1–9 and throughout the proverb collections. The cosmological questions in 30:4 draw on the same tradition of God's actions found in Job 38; Isa. 40:12; and Sir. 1:2–3.

30:5–14
Answers, Admonitions, and Observations

The remainder of the passage may be divided into four units: vv. 5–6, an instruction on God's word; vv. 7–9, a prayer framed in numerical saying style; v. 10, a prohibition against defaming slaves; and vv. 11–14, four proverbs on the "breed" or "generation" of the wicked. The instruction in vv. 5–6 seems related to Ps. 18:30 (= Prov. 30:5), Deut. 4:2 (cf. Prov. 30:6a), and Job 13:10; 24:25b (cf. Prov. 30:6b). The notion of "not adding to the word" may be characteristic of late wisdom's insistence on the reliability of sacred Scriptures, a judgment that provides a postexilic date for this unit as well as the entire Agur passage. The prayer of vv. 7–9 steers the traditional middle way of "nothing too much" recommended throughout the book of Proverbs. The typical "father/mother" word pair occurs in the extended description of the wicked (vv. 11–14), where each line begins with the word "generation."

30:15–33
Mostly Numerical Sayings

Some commentators take the conclusion of chap. 30 to be an extension of the discourse of Agur, in which case these numerical sayings may have been taken over from Israel's neighbors to the south (where the names Agur and Jakeh have been attested in south Arabian inscriptions) and east. The collection consists of five numerical sayings (vv. 15b–16, 18–19, 21–23, 24–28, 29–31), of which all but vv. 24–28 are sayings built on the same pattern, referring first to three things, then to four things. Interspersed with these are sayings (vv. 15a, 17), interpretations (v. 20), and commands (vv. 32–33).

30:15–16. The saying about the leech and her daughters (a reference to a leech's two suckers?) is difficult to understand. Are the words "Give! Give!" to be understood as the names of the leech's children, the cry of the leech and her daughters, or are they in some way related to 15b, whose referents (Sheol and the barren womb) could also be understood as uttering the same exclamation? Some commentators have suggested that

the word for leech refers to a bloodsucking demon (cf. the [Akkadian] *lilitu* [= Lilith], night demon of Babylon and Israel). The saying may have been placed here because of its symbolic connection to the four insatiable items in 15b–16: the underworld that is greedy for lives; the barren womb desperate for children; parched land thirsty for water; and fire that exists only so long as it has fuel to consume.

30:17–20. The ravens and vultures who pluck out the mocking eye connect the saying in v. 17, reminiscent of 30:11–14, to the numerical saying in vv. 18–19, whose catchword is "way." Punishment for reviling one's parents is death in Exod. 21:17, a judgment echoed here by reference to the ancient horror of lack of proper burial. The saying about the mysterious "ways" (vv. 18–19) may refer to lack of visible means of propulsion or movement that leaves no trace, with "the way of a man with a fertile woman" as a reference to either procreation or sexual attraction generally. The saying about the adulteress (v. 20) makes use of the euphemism of eating for illicit sexual behavior (cf. 9:13–18) and probably appears here because of its topical relationship to v. 19b, as well as the occurrence of the catchword "way."

30:21–33. Inappropriate or undesirable human behavior (vv. 21–23, 32–33) provides a frame for the noble, amazing, and stately aspects of the natural world, a favorite source of knowledge for traditional wisdom teaching. The unbearable human types of vv. 21–23 seem to display a progression of sorts: the slave-turned-king in v. 22a could easily be the gorged fool of v. 22b; the unloved (and for that reason perhaps barren) wife of v. 23a might easily be displaced by a slave girl providing sexual services for her master in v. 23b (cf. Hagar and Sarah in Gen. 16:1–6). Ants (6:6–8), rock badgers, locusts, and lizards are all praised (vv. 24–28) for their cooperative efforts or abilities to prevail in seemingly impossible situations, thereby demonstrating that wisdom is not to be measured by size. The stately stride and bearing of certain animals (vv. 29–31) is probably to be associated with power. (Two of the terms of this three/four saying must be restored from ancient versions: the Greek reads "the cock that proudly struts among the hens" for the Hebrew "one girded about the loins"; various translations are advanced for the "king with his [Heb.] *'alqum* with him" in v. 31b, where the meaning of *'alqum* is not known. It may be that the text is damaged here, and some other stately animal was the original referent.) The effects of pressure are the topic of vv. 32–33, although the relationship between the two verses is obscure, since v. 32 uses the instructional style and v. 33 appears to return to the itemization of examples seen in the numerical saying. Since the words "nose/blood" in v. 33a can also mean "anger/bloodshed" in Hebrew, v. 33b may in fact be a variant of the preceding line, though another translation for v. 33b, such as "so the stirring up of dissension produces lawsuits," could also provide a suitable climax for the saying while leaving the text intact.

31:1–9

"The Words of Lemuel, King of Massa, Which His Mother Taught Him"

Instructions in the ancient Near East were often made for kings and princes of Egypt and Babylon, but this is the only surviving biblical example of an instruction made by a woman, though royal wives could, in certain circumstances, wield considerable power (1 Kings 1:11–13; 15:13; 2 Kings 9:22; 11:1). Here we are provided with a concrete instance of the "torah of your mother" mentioned previously by the sages (1:8b, 6:20).

31:1–3. The Greek text does not read "Lemuel" as a proper name, but translates v. 1 with "my words have been spoken by God—the oracular answer of a king, whom his mother instructed." (On the meaning of "Massa," see commentary above on 30:1.) Foreign influence appears in 31:2–3, as is evident in the use of the Aramaic words for "son" and "kings." Verse 2 reads, literally, "What, my son?!" with a threefold repetition of the interrogative "what," which functions either as an interjection to highlight the intensity of the mother's comments or to refer to that which follows. The ascription to mothers of advice against involvement with women is common in traditional literature. Verse 2a may reflect a folk belief that sexual excesses quite literally shorten a man's life. Verse 2b is usually interpreted with reference to the LXX or other versions; the Hebrew text reads "your ways" for the conjectured "your loins."

31:4–9. The mother's instruction continues with advice on the appropriate and inappropriate uses of intoxicants (vv. 4–7) and duties of the king (vv. 5b, 8–9). The sentiment in vv. 4–5, that drunkenness may impair judgment and the righteous exercise of power, echoes earlier concerns about partiality in judgment (24:24) and abuse of strong drinks (20:1). On the other hand, when all hope is gone, strong drink may act as a palliative (31:6–7). The Talmud records that compassionate women in Jerusalem used to offer drugged wine to condemned prisoners to minimize their sufferings (so the note to Luke 23:27 in JB). The wine that Jesus refuses in Matt. 27:34 (cf. Luke 23:27; Mark 15:23; John 19:28–30) was probably meant for this purpose. Prov. 30:8–9 explicates the legal role of the king: the ruler is the upholder of the rights of the oppressed, a human mediator who acts on God's behalf to enact justice (cf. the portrait of the ideal king found in Isa. 11:1–5).

31:10–31
Acrostic Poem on the Strong Woman

The "Strong Woman" (others translate: "a capable wife," "a perfect wife," or "woman of worth"), who balances and explicates the imagery of Woman Wisdom found in Proverbs 1–9, provides a fitting ending to Proverbs and rounds out wisdom literature's cast of stock female characters. This wisdom poem is an acrostic (see the Introduction above); that is, each line begins with a succeeding letter of the Hebrew alphabet (cf. Pss. 9–10; 25; 119; Lam. 1–4)—a perfect form for the perfect woman. This stylistic device changes the typical word order in Hebrew sentences and causes some problems in the creation of a logical development of thought. Placed after the teaching of Lemuel's mother, this passage could easily be taken as a further development of her instruction, but its internal structure makes clear that it was originally an independent composition.

Though the family pictured here is prosperous and of fairly high status, the wife who maintains it is praised by the sages for symbolic reasons (in Hebrew, "wife" and "woman" are designated by the same word, *'ishah*. The poem about her expresses the great value placed on the family as the important social and religious unit within Israelite society, both in the premonarchical period and in postexilic Judaism, from which this composition probably comes. It is not surprising to see her depicted as wholly "male-identified," i.e., viewed from the perspective of her fulfillment of roles that enable the lives of the men who depend on her. Nevertheless, the picture presented here acts as a corrective to the notion that women are dangerous beings who sap away men's lives and fortunes and may have been included here precisely to counter such one-sided, negative views seen earlier with a positive "last word" on the subject (so with Westermann).

31:10–12. The opening rhetorical question suggests how unlikely sages consider the prospect of finding a strong, capable, worthy woman for one's wife, which is not surprising given their general opinion of women (cf. 11:22; 21:9. 19; 22:14). The word for strong, *chayil*, when used of men, denotes their strength and effectiveness as military champions (Judg. 6:12, "mighty warrior," NRSV), and by extension comes to mean "successful" or "wealthy" when used of community leaders. Such a woman is said to be more precious than jewels in 31:10 (REB: "coral"; NJB: "pearls"), language directly recalling Woman Wisdom in 3:15; 8:11. The one who succeeds in finding her (31:10) does not lack material goods (v. 11), reminding us of those who find Woman Wisdom and are materially rewarded by their association with this sought-for person in 3:13–14; 8:17, 21 (see Camp, p. 188). The wife's gift of "good" to her husband (31:12) recalls the proverb of 18:22, in which "he who finds a wife finds good, and he receives favor from Yahweh."

31:13–19. No sluggard, the mistress of the house works diligently even though her home is equipped with servants (vv. 14–15, 17–18). She engages in the typical tasks of spinning, weaving, and sewing, "woman's work" of paramount importance in the ancient world (vv. 13, 19; → Spinning and Weaving). Verse 16 seems to indicate that she engages in at least some activities that are thought to be usually reserved for men, such as the purchase of real estate. Historical evidence suggests, however, that women of extremely high (and extremely low) status have always had more freedom than women of "average" status to move about in the public domain, so that the range of activities attributed here to the wealthy wife need not surprise us.

31:20–27. The "provider" motif (vv. 21–22, 24–25) continues, interspersed with description of her wise, righteous, and compassionate actions (vv. 20, 26). Her generosity to the poor, along with her wise speech, loyal instructions (Heb. *torat-chesed*, "teaching of steadfast/covenant love," or loving-kindness) give a living example of the "mother's torah" (1:8: 6:20; 31:1). All these attributes contribute to her husband's good name (31:23) and allow him to earn the respect of his peers when he appears in places of power, especially the legal assembly.

31:28–31. Her single-minded devotion to the needs of others earns her the praise of those for whom she lives in vv. 28–30. Verse 29 reads literally "many daughters," rather than the "many women" usually rendered. The selection of this language is in keeping with the "male-identified" tone of the poem, although it is also possible that this term was selected rather than "women" because it provides a superior rhyme in Hebrew. "A woman who fears Yahweh" (v. 30) may originally have read "a woman of understanding," as it appears in the LXX. The change may have been made by the final redactor of Proverbs to distinguish Strong Woman from Woman Wisdom, who appears as Understanding in 8:14 (see Camp, pp. 96–97). Within the context of this poem, the effect of such a statement is to suggest that women in the community for whom this text was Scripture most properly worship God through fulfillment of their domestic roles, rather than through forms of observance (such as public religious leadership), which men preferred to assign to themselves. The command that her menfolk provide for Strong Woman suggests that, although she is the source of all good things, she may not automatically have shared in the profits of her own labor (31:31a). Verse 31b concludes the poem and the book with a return to the powerful imagery of Woman Wisdom: the works of

Strong Woman will praise her in the same city gates where Woman Wisdom first issued her call (1:21; 8:3).

Bibliography

Brenner, A., ed. *A Feminist Companion to Wisdom Literature.* The Feminist Companion to the Bible, 9. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1995.

Fontaine, C. R. *Traditional Sayings in the Old Testament: A Contextual Study.* Bible and Literature, 5. Sheffield: Almond, 1982.

Murphy, R. E., and E. Huweiler. *Proverbs.* Word Biblical Commentary. Waco, TX: Word Publishing, in press.

Pritchard, J., ed. *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament.* 3d ed. with supplement. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1969.

Simpson, W. K., ed. *The Literature of Ancient Egypt: An Anthology of Stories, Instructions and Poetry.* New ed. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1973.

Westermann, C. *Roots of Wisdom: The Oldest Proverbs of Israel and Other Peoples.* Translated by J. D. Charles. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1995.

Whybray, R. N. *The Book of Proverbs.* New English Bible Commentaries, Old Testament. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1972.

Ecclesiastes

C. LEONG SEOW

INTRODUCTION

The Hebrew title of the book is Qohelet, after the pen name of its author (1:1, 2, 12; 7:27; 12:8, 9, 10). "Ecclesiastes" is the Latinized form of the Greek translation of the Hebrew word, which the Greek translators interpreted to mean a member of the assembly. Early Christian interpreters took the name to refer to one who gathers the assembly and, hence, the traditional name, "the Preacher." The appellation Qohelet, however, probably means simply "Gatherer"—that is, one who tries to acquire everything.

Authorship and Integrity

The traditional view is that Qohelet is the pen name of Solomon. In favor of this view, it may be noted that the author is called "the son of David" (1:1), allusions in 1:12–2:11 point to Solomon, and Solomon is said to have been a patron and author of wisdom materials (Prov 1:1; 10:1; 25:1; → Wisdom). Moreover, the designation "Gatherer" would also fit Solomon, for he was Israel's quintessential gatherer of wisdom and life's pleasures (→ Solomon). Yet the language of the book is historically much later than Solomon. Moreover, the literary fiction of kingship is not continued beyond 2:11. In fact, it is clear from a number of passages that the author looks at kingship from a distance and not as an insider of the royal court (4:13–16; 8:1–6; 10:16–20). It is further unlikely that a king would point to injustice in the land (3:16; 4:1–2; 5:8) or to the prevailing social instability (10:4–7). Finally, the epilogue refers to the author not as a king, but as a sage (12:9).

Related to the question of authorship is the issue of the book's integrity. The author usually refers to himself in the first person, except in 1:1, 1:2, 7:27, and 12:9–14. The voice that refers to the author in the third person is usually considered editorial. This conclusion is understandable, for the epilogue not only refers to Qohelet in the third person, but also commends him and his work. Accordingly, the epilogue is said to be the work of a later editor or editors. Yet there are compositions in the Bible and elsewhere in the ancient Near East whose integrity is not in doubt that also show similar framing techniques. Whether Qohelet is the actual author of the book or only the persona of the author, the perspective of the book is one and the same as the framework. The only exception is the very end of the epilogue (12:13b–14), where a call to obey God's commandments and an allusion to eschatological judgment occur, both new elements in the book. Indeed, 12:13a sounds decisively final: "end of the matter; everything has been heard." This may have been the original ending of the book to which an additional text was tacked on. Thus, one may compare the original ending of the book (12:13a) with the colophons marking the end of various Egyptian wisdom texts.

Beyond the tension between the third-person and first-person accounts, the most serious questions concerning integrity revolve around the contradictions. To many scholars, these inconsistencies may be explained as evidence of multiple sources, interpolations, and expanded annotations. The dissonance between the conservative statements and the central teachings of the book is, however, frequently exaggerated. Modern interpreters classify various statements in the book as either positive or negative, optimistic or pessimistic. Such categories are, however, foreign impositions on the text. The pessimistic texts in the ancient Near East often explore contradictory viewpoints, sometimes by means of dialogues between various persons, sometimes by means of an individual's inner struggles with conflicting positions. As in such literature, Qohelet refers to his conversations with his heart or his heart's perspective, as if the heart were an independent entity (1:16; 2:1; 3:17, 18). If the book as a whole is any reflection of the author's inner struggles, one should not be surprised that various perspectives are considered at once. In any case, it is evident that to Qohelet there are all sorts of inconsistencies in the world. That, indeed, is one of his main points: that the real world is full of inconsistencies and even contradictions that cannot be explained away.

Structure

According to the epilogue, Qohelet had been very careful in his work (12:9–10). Moreover, the motto of the book is stated in 1:2 and repeated almost verbatim in 12:8. Thus, apart from the superscription (1:1) and the epilogue (12:9–14), the sweeping judgment in 1:2

and 12:8 that all is *hebel* (Heb., lit., "wind, vapor") marks the beginning and the end of the book. The opening poem (1:3–11) is also matched at the end by a concluding poem (12:3–7). Furthermore, it is clear that 6:10 is the midpoint of the book, as the Masoretes, the medieval Jewish scholars who preserved the traditional text of the Bible, note in the margins and at the end of the book. Indeed, the two halves of the book are of remarkably equal lengths. Beyond these tantalizing clues, however, the structure of the book is elusive.

Sociohistorical Setting

There are no reliable historical references within the book and no compelling external evidence for its date apart from the existence of the fragments of Qohelet manuscripts from Qumran that date to 175–150 B.C. and establish the latest possible date for the book.

The language of the book, however, provides important clues as to its provenance. The presence of two Persian loanwords suggests a date no earlier than 450 B.C., since there are no Persianisms anywhere in Hebrew prior to that time (→ Persia). Moreover, a number of terms not found in Hebrew prior to the fifth century are paralleled by a significant cluster of cognates in Aramaic documents from the fifth and early fourth centuries. The Semitic verb *shalat* is used repeatedly in the economic and legal sense, "to have proprietary rights, to have right of disposal (of income and assets)." This is a technical usage found in the Persian period, but not from the Hellenistic period on, when the root came to be used only in the general political sense. Based on a typology of language, then, Ecclesiastes belongs to the last hundred and twenty years or so of Persian rule in Palestine, ca. 450–330 B.C. The Persian-period dating is corroborated by an allusion to the ubiquity of government informants (10:20), a situation that Greek historians noted as a feature of the Persian era.

Among the most significant reforms of the imperial Persian government was the standardization of currency at the end of the sixth century (→ Money). This innovation brought about an economic revolution hitherto unknown in the ancient Near East. We now know that the Persian period witnessed an unprecedented growth of mercantilism and the rise of professionalism. The monetary economy with its many innovations gave the impression that even the poorest people could succeed in the world: one could begin by seeking employment, renting or leasing a plot, participating in joint ventures or otherwise investing a portion of one's assets, or starting a business with a small lot. Certainly, there were ample opportunities for people to climb the ladder of success (see 5:7), but the economy was so volatile that there were real risks of financial ruin (see 5:12–14; 7:5–7; 11:1–2). People kept toiling because of envy (4:4), insecurity (2:18–23), or simply because they were caught in a culture where acquisition had become a habit (4:7). People loved money for its own sake (5:10), trusted the security of money (7:12), and thought that money was the answer to all things (10:19). It was a period of tremendous economic vitality and volatility, a period full of opportunities and risks. For the ordinary citizen of the empire, there was much about which to worry, but not much about which one could be certain. No doubt the many success stories of those who went from rags to riches (4:14; 10:7) must have spurred people to toil endlessly. The reality of the Persian-period economy, however, is that individuals were caught in the winds of political and economic change, and most people were helpless in the face of all that was happening. It was in such a world that Qohelet insisted on the need to recognize that there is nothing that human beings can control.

Message

Qohelet and his audience live in a world of rapid political, social, and economic changes, and it is in such a context that he reflects on humanity's plight. It is a world full of inconveniences, inconsistencies, and contradictions. Nothing that mortals do or have is ultimately reliable—not wealth, pleasure, wisdom, toil, or even life itself. People try to cope with the situation of anomie in various ways. They worry. They are never satisfied. They are obsessed with discovering any formula that will bring success and happiness. They try to give an accounting of all that is happening. They endeavor to straighten everything that is crooked, correct every injustice, fill every void. They strive to gain an immortality of sorts through fame, progeny, wealth, or accomplishments. They try everything to gain some control, if not actually to secure an advantage in life. Nothing works, however, and still there looms the large shadow of death, from which no one can escape.

As Qohelet sees it, humans have no control over the world in which they live, for all is "vanity" (Heb. *hebel*). His most persistent counsel, therefore, is to take pleasure in all that one does (2:24; 3:12, 22; 5:18–19; 8:15; 9:7–9; 11:7–10). Indeed, this call for enjoyment is so prominent that it is sometimes seen as the main message of the book. Yet enjoyment can hardly be the central message of the book. Nowhere in the book does Qohelet say that one should seek pleasure and, when he does speak of his own quest for pleasure, he tells us that he finds it to be, like everything else in life, elusive, fleeting, and as unreliable as wind (2:1–3). For Qohelet, human beings have no control over what will happen in the world, and so one should live moment by moment.

Throughout the book, there is a profound aware-

ness of God, although it is not an immanent deity of whom Qohelet speaks. The deity does not relate personally to anyone, does not enter into a covenant with anyone, does not intervene in the history of any nation in any identifiable fashion. God is wholly transcendent, and, indeed, the fundamental dissimilitude between God's being and humanity's being is stressed. This is what Qohelet means by the fear of God (3:14; 5:7; 7:18; 8:12–13; → Fear of the Lord), a concept that conveys the indisputable distinction between divinity and humanity.

God remains an utter mystery to Qohelet. Although he would speak repeatedly of the power of God and the activity of God, he admits that he is not able to make much sense of them. There is no epistemological system by which to know God. Wisdom cannot fathom the significance of history (7:22). Nature, too, reveals nothing save the sovereignty and mystery of God (1:3–10; 11:1–6). Neither history nor nature yields any knowledge of God to Qohelet, but Qohelet knows that there is nothing better for humanity than to enjoy the present as a gift of God (3:12–13).

COMMENTARY

1:1
Superscription

The book is introduced as a collection of the teachings of the "Gatherer." The allusions in the author's "autobiography" in 1:12–2:11 suggest that Solomon is meant. The author assumes the persona of Solomon, the quintessential gatherer of wealth and wisdom.

1:2–6:9
First Half

1:2–11, Preface. The opening chapter contains prefatory remarks that set the tone for the entire book. A thematic statement appears in v. 2 that is repeated in virtually the same form at the end of the book (12:8). Qohelet proclaims that everything under the sun is beyond human ability to grasp.

The poem in vv. 4–9 paints a picture of a universe that is full of activities by the elements of nature and by human beings. The monotonous nature of the activities is conveyed by the repetition of words. At the same time, the author creates an impression of busyness through the abundant use of Hebrew participles, a grammatical form that describes continuous action (vv. 4–7). Thus, the language subtly conveys the point there seems to be much going on in the cosmos. In the end, however, nothing new happens. What goes around comes around. No advantage is gained despite all the activity.

1:12–2:11, A Fictional Autobiography. In style, vocabulary, and content, this passage resembles a royal inscription. Yet the intent of the passage is decidedly different from that of royal texts found elsewhere. The inscriptions of kings were typically written to show that the king was extraordinary, indeed better than anyone else. Against such a background, Qohelet's deliberate imitation of the genre is all the more poignant in its irony. In the end, the passage makes the point that none of the accomplishments of the "king" really matters. For human beings, even kings, there is no immortality of any sort. The legendary acts, wealth, and wisdom of Solomon-Qohelet turned out not to have abiding significance after all.

2:12–26, The Leveling Effect of Death. In the face of death, any advantage that wisdom may have over folly is really moot. The wise and fools will face the same fate, death. The sages traditionally exalted wisdom over folly in a rhetoric of extremes: wisdom is light, whereas folly is darkness; wisdom brings life, whereas folly leads to death (e.g., Prov. 9). The author of Ecclesiastes carries that rhetorical exaggeration to its logical conclusion in order to deny that such is wisdom's advantage. Wisdom cannot be distinguished from folly when it comes to the issue of death.

Like wisdom, toil brings no advantage in the face of death. If wisdom will not allow one to bypass the fate that all mortals face, neither will toil. Death will put an end to every aspiration for which one has striven. One cannot beat the system by passing on one's accumulation to posterity either. In traditional wisdom's rhetoric, it is the right and worthy people who will get the inheritance. In reality, however, one cannot predict the true character of those who will inherit. Indeed, it is the lack of distinction between the deserving and the undeserving that is the "great tragedy" (2:21).

In view of death's leveling effect, there is no good for people but to "eat and drink and enjoy" (2:24). Enjoyment is the antidote to people's experience of all that is bad, and one can enjoy despite the reality of toil. Conventional wisdom asserts that it is the fool who hoards to give to others (e.g., Prov. 10:2; 11:18), but even the consummate wise person that Qohelet pretends to be has accumulated wealth only to benefit others. The fool accumulates and gathers to give to the favored, and yet the author introduces himself as the "Gatherer" (1:12).

3:1–15, The Determination of Events. Following the thesis statement (v. 1), there is a series of twenty-eight items occurring in broadly antithetical pairs (vv. 2–8).

The form of the list may be likened to the various catalogs people of antiquity produced to instruct about the way things in nature work. Here we have a catalog of times and situations that human beings encounter. Such a catalog may at one time have identified the situations of which people ought to be aware in order to act responsibly. This is not how it is used here, however. One can, indeed, find no order in the presentation. This is the way the world is. People are tempted to discern an order so that they can predict the changes and not have to face surprises. Yet the occasions merely present themselves, and people simply have to respond appropriately in each situation.

The issue is clarified in a prose commentary in vv. 10–15. It turns out that God is the principal "actor/doer." People neither determine the timing of those occasions, nor can they even anticipate them. God is responsible for giving both time and eternity, and the human being is caught in the tension between the two. The God who makes everything appropriate only "in its time," also puts "eternity" in human hearts. That is the irony of the human situation. Humanity can expect to know the appropriateness of what God has done only in its moment, not hope to discover what God has done "from the beginning to the end" (v. 11).

Qohelet's observation leads him to two certainties: he knows that people are supposed to enjoy the moment (v. 12), and he knows that everything God does is not bound by time (v. 14, "eternal"). The timeless character of God's activity (v. 14) stands in contrast to the "eternity" that exists only in human hearts, which are limited by their inability to discover the activity of God "from the beginning to the end" (v. 11). In contrast to God, human beings can only "do well in their lifetime" (v. 12). Their activities are only transient, whereas God's are timeless. The passage affirms a certain amount of determinism in events (v. 15): things happen because of God's activities, which human beings may not understand, and God will take care of the things that people pursue in vain.

3:16–22, The Determination of Humanity's Lot. This unit addresses the problem of injustice that occurs precisely where one might expect justice. In the face of the seeming arbitrariness of God's activity Qohelet concludes that "God will seek that which is pursued" (v. 15). Confronting the prevalence of injustice, he suggests that "God will judge the righteous and the wicked" (v. 17). The ultimate evidence of God's inscrutability is the common fate of all living creatures. The leveling effect of death is thus made more poignant than before. Human beings have one breath, just like animals, and they die just like animals. As far as mortality is concerned, there is no difference between the wise and the foolish, or people and animals.

Qohelet concludes, again, that people ought to find enjoyment in all their activities. That is all that the human "actor/doer" can really do in the light of God's unpredictable activity. Qohelet speaks of the possibility of enjoyment in terms of the "portion" that humanity has; despite the inevitability of toil, it is possible for one to find enjoyment in that limited portion that is life.

4:1–16, Relative Good. This unit contains a series of "better-than" sayings. There are many examples of this type of saying in Israelite and other ancient Near Eastern wisdom texts, testifying to the readiness of sages to proffer advice about relative good (e.g., Prov. 17:1; 28:6). Even Qohelet, who has assiduously asserted that there is no advantage under the sun, gives a series of what is "better." It is important to note, however, that these sayings come immediately after the conclusion that there is "nothing better" than for people to enjoy themselves (3:12, 22). The things that are "better" are relativized from the start.

5:1–7, Attitude Before God. The common issue in these verses is one's attitude before God, with Qohelet counseling caution, reverence, restraint, moderation, and sincerity. The emphasis throughout the passage is on the necessity of respecting the distance between humanity and God. This emphasis is encapsulated by the imperatives that frame the unit: "watch your steps" (v. 1) and "fear God" (v. 7).

5:8–6:9, Enjoyment Instead of Greed. The literary unit consists of subsections that mirror one another in vocabulary: 5:8–12 // 6:7–9; 5:13–17 // 6:3–6; and 5:18–19 // 6:1–2. The first pair, the outermost sections, concern the insatiability of some people either because of their ambition or sheer greed. The next pair, the middle sections, concern those who, for various reasons, are not able to enjoy the present. The innermost sections address the arbitrariness of God in granting humanity in general the freedom to enjoy good, while depriving a few of those very privileges. The passage as a whole, thus, moves inwards toward its focus at 5:20, which contains an exhortation to enjoy the moment and not to think too much about the possible misery that may lie ahead: "Indeed, [people] should not much call to mind the days of their lives, for God gives a preoccupation through the joy of their hearts!" God's initiative in the gift of joy in human hearts is the answer to the deadly threat of human discontentment.

6:10–12:14
Second Half

6:10–7:14, No One Knows What Is Good. The second half of the book begins with a reflection on God's

determination of all that happens in the world and humanity's place in it (6:10–7:14). God alone is in control, and human beings are not in a position to challenge the divine. That point is made at the beginning (6:10–12) and the end of the literary unit (7:12–14). Yet, sandwiched between these two ends of the theological framework, with their emphasis on human ignorance, is a series of "better-than" sayings that appears to give guidance on what is good. Following the insistence that no one knows what is good, these "better-than" sayings are surely to be interpreted as a parody of all the many vain ramblings in which people indulge. In truth, people can only accept what the deity does, whether good or bad (7:13–14). They cannot know what will happen, for such knowledge eludes humanity.

7:15–29, The Elusiveness of Righteousness and Wisdom. This literary unit may be divided into two parts: the first concerns the impossibility of perfect righteousness and wisdom (vv. 15–22); the second concerns the threat of folly and the elusiveness of wisdom (vv. 23–29). The traditional doctrine of retribution is contradicted in reality. The righteous and the wicked do not always get what they deserve; no amount of righteousness or wisdom will avert disaster. So one must not try to be too righteous or too wise. At the same time, one must not be too wicked or foolish. Extreme righteousness and wisdom are impossible, and wickedness and folly are realities from which human beings cannot escape. The only alternative is to accept human limitations, "for the one who fears God goes forth with both of them" (v. 18). The fear of God that accepts the reality of both righteousness/wisdom and wickedness/folly is the opposite of the hubris that leads one to believe that one can find perfect righteousness and wisdom. No one can escape the grasp of wickedness/folly, for "there is no one on earth so righteous, who does only good and does not err" (v. 20).

As righteousness is elusive, so is wisdom (vv. 23–24). Just as it is difficult to escape the hold of wickedness, so it is difficult to avoid folly. One may seek an accounting of it all, as if wisdom and folly can easily be clearly identified on a ledger, but it is impossible to find the right balance. Qohelet seems to mix metaphors here, using the language of commerce and accounting as well as the language of a lover's pursuit. As other wisdom teachers have done, he depicts folly and wisdom as two women, the one a pernicious seductress and the other the elusive virtuous bride (cf. Prov. 7–9). Humanity is caught in a crazy game of seeking and finding. People are constantly chased by Folly, a dangerous "woman" from whose deadly snares they must try to escape; but only those favored by God can do so, while others are inevitably caught (v. 26). At the same time, one tries desperately to find Wisdom, the "woman" who could save one from danger, but she is elusive (vv. 24, 28).

8:1–17, An Arbitrary World. Inadequately equipped though people are (since wisdom and righteousness elude them), they live in an arbitrary world dominated by powerful people who impose their will on others. The traditional doctrine of retribution does not seem to apply. The wicked are properly buried when they die, and even honored, while those who have acted justly are ignominiously abandoned when they die. Moreover, even if justice might be carried out, it is often so delayed that the wicked dare to keep doing evil (vv. 10–11). This situation poses a problem for those who believe in a doctrine of retribution. One may follow the traditions and say that all will have their just recompense, but the truth is that reality contradicts the doctrine. Qohelet does not resolve the problem, however. Instead, he counsels enjoyment of life's pleasures and readily admits that the situation is beyond human control (vv. 15–17).

9:1–10, *Carpe Diem* ("Seize the Day"). Qohelet says that everything is in the hand of God. It is true that no one knows what is to come, except that all mortals suffer the same fate. It is unfair that the same fate comes to all, no matter how one has led one's life, but death does have this leveling effect. This may lead one to despair over life. Yet Qohelet says that life, for all its uncertainties, still provides one with some possibilities, whereas in death all is gone. In death there will no longer be hope, indeed, no longer any possibilities at all. So he counsels people to live fully, for this is humanity's assigned portion in life.

9:11–10:15, The World Is Full of Risks. Qohelet paints a picture of a world fraught with uncertainties and risks of every sort. It is a world in which there are no guarantees; everything in life is subject to chance. People do not control time, and they do not determine their fate. Death may come suddenly, without distinguishing the species or the readiness of its victims. No one is safe from the danger of that fate. By the same token, there is no formula that will guarantee one success. Thus, even if it is true that wisdom is better than might, there are cases where wisdom will not be used and, therefore, cannot be effective. Likewise, wisdom may be better than the weapons of war, but all it takes is for one fool or one foul-up to destroy all the good that wisdom may have accomplished (9:16–18). There are no fail-safe formulas in life. Yet Qohelet does not leave readers with the impression that wisdom is of no use whatsoever. True, it does not guarantee results, but there are times when it may still make a difference. Practical wisdom is not a formula for sure success, but it may yet do some good.

There are all kinds of risks in society. All sorts of political, social, and economic forces are at work, the results of which may be devastating. Social order may be completely disrupted. At the micro level, too, one is vulnerable to all sorts of dangers, including everyday

occupational hazards. In all these situations, there are no rules to follow guaranteeing safety, although the practical application of wisdom may reduce the risks. Even so, some problems cannot be solved even with all the precautions and the assistance of experts. Some accidents may be attributed to the lack of wisdom. Other accidents, however, cannot be explained in this way. People must do their best to cope with life's vicissitudes, but risks can never be eliminated altogether.

10:16–11:6, Living with Risks. Qohelet speaks of risks in the political and economic realms. The first section of the unit (10:16–20) contains a warning to avoid political subversion, whether overt or covert. The second section (11:1–6) urges liberality despite economic uncertainties. In the face of political and economic dangers, caution is necessary, but too much caution is unnecessary. There are risks that one must avoid, but there are also times when one must take risks. Those who are too cautious will never do anything that needs to be done. The text moves from the unpredictability of the "wind" (11:4), to the mystery of the "life breath" entering the human body (11:5), and finally to the mystery of divine action (11:5). In the face of life's mysteries and the mystery of what God might do, Qohelet counsels spontaneity. From a literary point of view, one sees the spontaneity (11:6) as a balance to the call for responsibility (10:16–18).

11:7–12:8, Enjoy Before It Is Too Late. In the final literary unit of the second half of the book, 11:7–12:8, the author returns to the subject of enjoyment, even as he does in the final literary unit of the first half (5:8–6:9). Whereas the call at the end of the first half is not to remember the days to come (5:20), the message at the conclusion of the second half is to remember the days to come (11:8). Correct remembering of the days to come prompts one to enjoy. If one remembers that there may be days of misery still to come, then one may enjoy while there is the possibility of doing so (11:3). In any case, the message is clear: people should enjoy life while they are able, for there will come a time when they will not be able to do so anymore.

The final poem in the book is decidedly conclusive. Despite the constant threat of darkness and gloom throughout the book, there has always been the possibility of enjoyment. Now in his final exhortation to enjoy (11:7–12:8), Qohelet has raised the specter of an end of possibilities for all humanity. He begins with the passing of life from youth to old age (11:9–12:1). Popular litanies about geriatric woes might have inspired his final words. He does not dwell on old age, however. Rather, he recasts the vision of the end through a radical revision reminiscent of prophetic eschatology. He paints a picture of the end of the world, with the darkening of all the luminaries of the sky and every possibility of light, sheer terror even among the strong and dignified, sudden cessation of life-sustaining activities and the anticipation of dashed hopes, the end of all economic activities and social intercourse, the noisy settlement of birds of prey in desolated human habitats, and panic in the thoroughfares. The languishing of nature, too, testifies to the cosmic character of the catastrophe, all because humanity is proceeding to an "eternal house," a place of no return. The permanence of the end of human existence is then reiterated through symbolic actions borrowed from funerary rituals (12:6). The conclusion is that all of creation will be returned to its original state or source. Enjoyment is both a gift of God and an imperative for here and now, because there will come a time when there will no longer be any possibility of enjoyment by anyone, for creation will be taken back. Indeed, as the author has stressed from beginning to end in the book, everything—humanity and all that goes with it—is ultimately *hebel.*

12:9–14
Epilogue

The epilogue assures readers that Qohelet has been careful and deliberate. He has spoken rightly, although it may be difficult to hear his words and those of other sages. The epilogue also certifies that the text preceding it is authentic and complete.

Bibliography

Crenshaw, J. L. *Ecclesiastes: A Commentary.* Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1987.

Fox, M. V. *Qohelet and His Contradictions.* Bible and Literature Series, 18. Sheffield: Almond, 1989.

Longman, T. *The Book of Ecclesiastes.* New International Commentary on the Old Testament. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1997.

Murphy, R. E. *Ecclesiastes.* Word Biblical Commentary, 23A. Waco, TX: Word Books, 1992.

Seow, C. L. *Ecclesiastes.* Anchor Bible, 18C. New York: Doubleday, 1997.

Towner, W. S. "The Book of Ecclesiastes." In *New Interpreter's Bible,* 5. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1997. Pp. 267–360.

Whybray, R. N. *Ecclesiastes.* New Century Bible Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1989.

The Song of Songs

MICHAEL V. FOX

INTRODUCTION

Though Song of Songs is ascribed to Solomon and sometimes dated to First Temple times (tenth to sixth centuries B.C.), the language of the book belongs to a later stage of Hebrew and suggests an origin in the fourth or third century B.C. This conclusion is supported by certain details, such as the reference to feasting on a *couch* (1:12), which is a distinctive Hellenistic practice.

Traditional Jewish interpreters read the book as an allegory of God's love for Israel, while Christian interpreters saw it as representing God's love for the church. Such interpretations allowed the Song of Songs to become sacred Scripture, but they do not accord with the plain sense of the poem. One modern interpretation associates the Song of Songs with Mesopotamian sacred marriage rituals, the annual reenactment of the marriage between the king (representing the god Dumuzi-Tammuz) and the goddess Inanna-Astarte. But this, too, is detached from the obvious concerns of the poem. Some have suggested that the poem is a wedding song, sung in honor of the couple. The couple in the Song of Songs, however, are unmarried; the girl still lives in her mother's house and their relationship lacks public recognition until the last chapter.

The present commentary reads the Song of Songs as a secular poem about unmarried, human lovers. Such a song would originally have been sung for entertainment (a use that Rabbi Akiva mentions, and deplores, in the second century A.D.). Only in the course of long use was it reinterpreted as a religious document and included in the biblical canon. The Song of Songs is a celebration of private human experience. It treasures adolescent love and does not seek to infuse a "greater" meaning into this joyous experience. It does not even use the opportunity to extol, or appeal for, the blessings of procreation, family, and prosperity. Love is its own justification.

The Song of Songs bears some striking similarities to the love poetry of ancient Egypt (thirteenth to mid-twelfth centuries B.C.), so much so that there is a likelihood of indirect influence. The Egyptian songs, too, are secular poetry describing the joys and frustrations of young, unmarried lovers. These songs were labeled as "diverting the heart," that is to say, entertainment. They were probably sung by professional singers at banquets such as those portrayed in numerous tomb murals. Other notable parallels come from the Mesopotamian "Lyrics of Nabu and Tashmetu." These poems belong to a ritual text and describe the relationship between two gods, but the forms and usages are probably taken from poetry describing human love (see The Bible and the Literature of Antiquity: The Ancient Near East).

Some scholars view the Song of Songs as an anthology of short, originally independent poems (thirty-one, according to Falk). Others read it as a well-structured unity, though there are various and opposing ways of describing the structure. A third view, assumed in the present commentary, holds that the book is indeed a unity, a single composition by one author, but that it lacks formal structure. Rather, its unity is achieved and exhibited in its recurring phraseology and motifs and in its consistent portrayal of character, experience, and setting.

The action does not progress in a simple line. Several units show the same pattern of challenge and separation leading to union and fulfillment. Rather than having a progressive narrative, the Song of Songs moves forward in a series of vignettes that capture different aspects of the love experience, sometimes looping back and starting from an earlier stage in the process. The book as a whole may best be described as a song cycle, in which the songs have a degree of independence, but together form a thematic and linguistic unity.

The persons who speak in the Song of Songs are young lovers—adolescents, insofar as they stand in the space between childhood and independence. They are not yet married, but are determined to be so. They are at once "boy and girl" and "man and woman."

The poem as a whole is dialogue. Even when one partner speaks at length, someone is presumed to be listening, whether this is the other lover or the "girls of Jerusalem." The lovers often respond to each other and echo words in the other's speech. Such dialogue reveals love not only as an emotion, but as the interaction and mutual influence of two equals.

The couple's relationship is strikingly egalitarian, as if bracketed out for the moment from the assumptions of patriarchal society. Though social constraints

restrict the girl far more than the boy, within the one-to-one relationship their possession is mutual (2:16), their desires indistinguishable, and their description of each other of much the same sort. This is an idealization of love, but one not devoid of roots in private experience.

COMMENTARY

1:1, Title. "Song of Songs" is a superlative meaning "the sublime song." The Song is attributed to Solomon, the archetypal poet, sage, and lover (1 Kings 5:9–14; 11:1, 3; → Solomon). But Solomon is not the speaker, the subject, or the center of interest in this poem, nor is there anything in the Song itself imputing authorship to him.

1:2–4, The Maiden's Praise. The words of the Shulammite (to use a name given her in 6:13) open and close the book. The Hebrew word for "love" here, *dodim* (v. 2), refers to physical expressions of intimacy and could be translated "lovemaking" or "caresses."

Some commentators identify the king in 1:4a as Solomon, but "king" is probably a term of affection and esteem for the youth. (Similar terms of endearment, such as "prince," "queen," and "god," appear in the Egyptian love songs.) The "king" is none other than the youth who has brought his beloved to his "chamber." As a royal "chamber" is the way the maiden views their leafy bed in the field, beneath the trees (1:16b–17).

1:5–8, The Maiden's Complaint. The girl bridles at the restrictions her brothers have placed on her freedom of movement. They made her keep the vineyards, as a result of which she is sunburned ("black")—clearly a feature she does not like, since she is angry about it. Nevertheless, she knows that she is still lovely (vv. 5–6).

She asks her lover (perhaps in a mock pout) where she can find him, without having to wander about the shepherds' encampments like "one who is veiled" (a harlot? v. 7). His reply teases her in return (v. 8).

1:9–2:7, A Love Dialogue. The lovers exult in each other as they lie under the trees in a bower. They are cuddled together, and he is nestled between her breasts like her pouch of spices. He praises her (v. 15), and she echoes his words as she praises both him (v. 16a) and their "house" (v. 16b–17). She fishes for compliments: she is just a crocus of the Sharon Plain, merely one among thousands (2:1). He turns this into high praise: she is incomparably superior to the other girls (v. 2). She commends him in kind (v. 3).

Now she calls the leafy bower a banqueting house (lit., "house of wine," 2:4). Several Egyptian songs are set in booths or in the fields, where the lovers picnic and exchange caresses.

The "girls [or 'daughters'] of Jerusalem" are apparently the maiden's companions, who serve as a sort of chorus and sounding board to her thoughts and wishes. (For a negative depiction of the "girls of Zion," see Isa. 3:16–26.) Her enigmatic adjuration in 2:7 (also in 3:5; 8:4) has been understood either as a plea not to stir up love (perhaps by aphrodisiacs) or a request not to *disturb* the lovemaking ("love"). Since her love is already fully aroused and cannot be affected by her companions, the latter is more likely. The scene fades away, with the sequel left to readers' imaginations.

2:8–17, A Nighttime Visit. Just before dawn the youth appears from a distance and secretly invites his beloved to go out with him to the blossoming springtime fields. The description of earth's fragrant awakening in spring (2:10b–13) is suggestive of the girl's nascent sexuality.

Behind her wall, she seems to him like a dove in the cliff, elusive and distant (v. 14). Verse 15 is a parenthetical aside in which "foxes" allude to lusty young men and "vineyards" to nubile women. The declaration of mutual possession in v. 16 (cf. 6:3) epitomizes an egalitarian relationship. Her lover "grazes [rather than 'pastures his flock'] among the lilies" (v. 16), which implies kissing her lips (see 5:13) or lovemaking more generally, the lilies being the girl's charms in her "garden" (see 4:16–5:1).

The youth is finally sent away, apparently back to the mysterious mountains over which he came: the "cleft mountains" or possibly the "mountains of Bether" (perhaps modern Beitar, southwest of Jerusalem; v. 17). Some read this sentence as the woman's bidding her lover to come *to* her. The ambiguity may be deliberate.

3:1–5, A Nocturnal Quest. Now it is the maiden who goes forth at night to pursue her lover. Each lover is willing to face the dangers of the night to seek the other. Running about the city, she finds him, embraces him, and resolves to bring him home. The adjuration (v. 5) again hints that she does not want to be disturbed. Verse 5a shows that the entire scene is narrated to the "girls of Jerusalem." Some commentators see the entire scene as a dream.

3:6–11, A Wedding. "Who [not 'what'] is this coming up from the desert" (v. 6) is really a rhetorical question, that is to say, an exclamation of awe, as in 8:5 (cf. 6:10), and as those verses show the implied answer is: the beloved woman. The phrase "coming up from the wilderness" is an enigmatic idiom. In 8:5, at least, it certainly does not seem to refer to an actual wilder-

ness. Some commentators wove a story about the phrase, imagining a processional in which an Egyptian princess comes to marry Solomon.

Most commentators take 3:6–11 as a literal description of Solomon's wedding. But Solomon plays no role in the events elsewhere in the Song. Others have conjectured that "Solomon" or "king" was a customary designation for a groom carried in processional. More likely, however, Solomon is mentioned only by way of comparison, as if the woman is exclaiming to her companions (3:11): Look, my lover in his bower (described in 1:16b–17) is as majestic as a Solomon in his gilded pavilion on his wedding day, and we two are as secure in the night as if guarded by sixty warriors (v. 7). Lovers have no need of actual royal luxuries: they luxuriate in love.

4:1–8, Praise of the Woman. The Description Songs (cf. also 5:10–16; 6:4–10; 7:1–9) describe the beloved part by part, usually in a loose head-to-foot sequence and culminating in a summary declaration. As they gaze at each other, the lovers praise each others' bodies, as if caressing each part in words. They use bold and surprising metaphors that cannot always be visually assimilated to the body part. The metaphors are intended less to describe physical appearance than to express the lovers' emotions as they look at and think of each other. The imagery of the metaphors, taken as a whole, depicts a rich and memorable landscape, a verdant, fertile world, gleaming with artistry and majesty. This is the world as seen through lovers' eyes.

The dove (v. 1a) is known for its delicacy and softness. Flowing tresses of black hair call to mind lines of black goats seen from afar as they wend their way down the mountainside (v. 1b). A flock of shorn, clean ewes, all of which bear healthy twins (v. 2), is suggestive of white, matched teeth, none of which are missing. Her lips are as red as a thread of expensive scarlet (v. 3a). The mesh of her veil casts a shadow on her cheek that resembles the webbing of a sliced pomegranate (v. 3b), which is also evocative of red cheeks. Her neck is long, like (not "as long as"!) the (otherwise unknown) Tower of David (v. 4a). This tower is built in courses of stones (v. 4b), a feature suggestive of multiple strands of a necklace. The shields hung on the tower (for such a practice, see Ezek. 27:11b) may allude to the beads of her necklace. Her breasts are like twin fawns (v. 5a), matched and graceful. The extension of the metaphor enhances the charm of the pastoral scene. Reversing the girl's plea in 2:17, the boy declares that before daybreak he will come *to* her: to the "mountain of myrrh" and "hill of frankincense," perhaps meaning her breasts (v. 6).

The praise culminates in a declaration of her perfection and an invitation to come away with him. He bids her come from the mountains to the north and east of Israel (v. 8). She cannot be thought to be actually in that distant place (especially since different mountain ranges are mentioned). Rather, the mountains belong to the fantasy geography of the lovers' world, like the Tower of David (4:4) and the Tower of Lebanon (7:4). The mountains evoke remoteness, danger, and mystery.

4:9–5:1, An Admiration Song. An Admiration Song describes the beloved's body as a whole rather than part by part. This one shows little orientation to the visual, but is concerned mainly with the beloved's impact on the speaker.

As in the Egyptian love songs (and some Mesopotamian poetry), the youth calls his beloved "sister," an expression of affection and intimacy that does not imply kinship. He also calls her "bride," though she is not that yet, because it is his hope to make her one.

Just one glance of her eyes, indeed, just one strand of her necklace, is enough to capture his heart (v. 9). The boy's homage to his beloved's love echoes her effusions in 1:2–3.

Her lips and mouth are honeyed, meaning both that her words are delightful and that her kisses are sweet. She is a locked garden, a sealed fountain, modest and inaccessible. "Fountain" alludes to sexuality. A woman's sexuality is a "spring." This garden is nourished by fountains and channels of fresh water, as crystalline as those that flow from the Lebanon (vv. 13, 15). The "garden" abounds with a profusion of the most exotic and delectable of spices (v. 14).

Knowing well what garden her lover speaks of, the girl invokes the winds to blow upon her garden and waft its fragrance to him. She invites him into the locked garden, opening it to him alone. Her "garden"—that is to say, her self, her body—is "his garden," for "I am my beloved's" (6:3a). There he may enjoy its luscious fruits. He accepts her invitation and enters what is now "his" garden to partake of its luxuriant delights (5:1). To close the scene and leave our fancy free to imagine the outcome, an unidentified voice urges the couple to eat and get drunk on love, meaning sexual ecstasy (cf. Prov. 5:15, 19).

5:2–5:9 Another Nocturnal Search. The young woman tells the girls of Jerusalem about a second nighttime visit by her beloved and her pursuit of him (see 3:1–5). "I slumbered, but my heart was alert" (v. 2a) gives the impression that the entire experience was a dream, as does the man's mysterious visit and disappearance and the woman's phantasmagoric, half naked run through the dark streets. But perhaps it means she was sleeping restlessly and woke up when her lover spoke to her.

He begs to be admitted (v. 2b). "Open unto me" means to open the door, but it also has clear sexual connotations, highlighted by the threefold repetition of "open" (vv. 2, 5, 6) without a direct object. The

reason he gives is flimsy, the real motive far more pressing.

She hesitates to open the door, giving lame excuses for her reluctance (v. 3), as if she doesn't want to convince him—or herself. He "sent his hand from the hole" (thus literally) seems to mean that he withdrew it after having put it in. The hole is one of the "windows" and "lattices" mentioned in 2:9. Many commentators see the "hand" and "hole" as euphemisms for genitalia. The terms are indeed provocative, but the youth is still outside her house. If there is an allusion to sexual intercourse, it comes when the youth goes down to his "garden" (6:2), but the terms are delicate and elusive.

She gets up to let him in, her hands dripping perfumed unguents (v. 5). She finds to her despair that she has lost her opportunity, for he has already slipped away, and she must go in search of him (v. 6). Roaming the city at night was a bizarre and dangerous deed, as she painfully learns when she runs into the watchmen (v. 7), who may take her for a prostitute. They, the guardians of the social order, attack her and strip her, but she seems to shrug off the attack and continues her obsessive quest.

By the usual understanding, in v. 8 the maiden asks the girls of Jerusalem to tell her beloved that she is sick with love, but the syntax is better read as a negative imperative: Do *not* tell him this. Her behavior has been irrational and she is embarrassed about it. Her comrades gently tease her: What is so special about *your* beloved? (v. 9). She responds by describing him in superlatives, in the form of a Description Song (5:10–16).

5:10–6:3, The Woman's Praise of Her Beloved. The imagery of this Description Song is mostly drawn from the plastic arts. Though the Shulammite is supposedly describing her lover to the girls of Jerusalem so that they can recognize him, her praise is descriptive less of his looks than of his inner qualities.

Her beloved is bright and ruddy (v. 10), features thought to indicate youth and vigor. Some of his body is compared to valuable stones and metals, precious and beautiful, with vv. 11a and 15a in particular suggestive of a statue. The locks of his hair are like fronds of a palm, thick and dark (v. 11b). His eyes, like hers, resemble doves (v. 12a). The rest of the comparison describes the doves, not the youth's eyes, though certain elements of the description (e.g., whiteness) may apply to these as well. The image of doves bathing in milk is a fantasy picture, but ceramic vessels from Cyprus and Rome show this image. His cheeks are as fragrant as perfume ("towers of spices" is hyperbole); his lips (like hers) are lilies (v. 13). His body is firm and straight. Like the cedars of Lebanon, his form is luxuriant, fragrant, and tall (v. 15b). His palate is sweet—both in his words and in his kisses. She sums up his praises (5:16b): this, precisely this, is my beloved. She speaks in triumphant satisfaction, as if her magnificent verbal creation has irrefutably answered the girls' skepticism. Now the girls of Jerusalem can only agree to help her find her lover (6:1), and they ask where he went.

Somewhat confusingly, but befitting the dreamlike quality of the scene, it appears she knows where her beloved has gone: down to his garden, to graze in the gardens, to feed among the lilies (6:2). This alludes to erotic pleasures yet to come (see the commentary above on 5:1). (Instead of "graze," some translations read "to pasture his flocks," but "flocks" is not in the Hebrew.) She concludes with the declaration of mutual possession (v. 3; cf. 2:16).

6:4–10, The Man's Praise of His Beloved. The youth celebrates his beloved in turn, repeating and elaborating the tribute he paid her earlier (4:1–3). In his eyes she is downright fierce or "terrible" (vv. 4, 10)—a trait that emerges in her obsessive nocturnal quests and in her defiant proclamation in 8:6–7. Her proud beauty matches that of the grand cities Tirzah (once capital of the Northern Kingdom) and Jerusalem (v. 4). He feels her power firsthand in her dazzling gaze (v. 5).

His beloved is a gentle dove, her mother's flawless darling (v. 9a). Yet she is not just a pretty girl. Even queens and royal concubines—observers who are both objective and noble, though hypothetical (vv. 9b–10)—must grant her lofty splendor.

6:11–7:6, Praise of the Woman. In v. 11, the woman echoes her lover's call to go with him to the fields and see the blossoming of the land (cf. 2:10–14). In the difficult v. 11, she seems to express both confusion and exaltation at being with her beloved, who is (to her) a prince. In 6:13a, a group, perhaps the girls of Jerusalem, summon her to them. They call her "the Shulammite," which probably means "the perfect one." Since she has gone to the garden to be with her beloved, they may be teasing her, and in 6:13b her lover chides them in turn.

He continues with another Description Song (vv. 1–6), with imagery evocative of plenitude, beauty, and grandeur. They have little relation to visual appearance, and, indeed, some of the parts praised (thighs, navel, belly, breasts) would be covered by her clothes. The visual elements here only suggest curves and colors. Her navel resembles a well-crafted bowl (v. 2a) in its roundness and beauty. A heap of wheat would usually be hedged with thorns to keep it from being blown away or eaten by cattle; *this* hedge is of lilies (v. 2b). An ivory tower is one ornamented by ivory, suggestive of a multistrand necklace (v. 4a). Her eyes are large and limpid, like pools in Heshbon, a village in a fertile area eighty kilometers east of Jerusalem (v. 4a). Bath-rabbim was presumably the name of the gate near the pools in Heshbon, but the phrase can also mean "daughter of noblemen" (cf. 7:1)—a suitable epithet for this girl, who is noble in her lover's eyes. Her

nose is like the Tower of Lebanon, straight and long (v. 4b). The name Lebanon itself is suggestive of fragrance and plays on *levonah* (Heb.), "frankincense." Height and pride are additional qualities conveyed by this image. Her head sits upon her as tall and proud as Mount Carmel, a name that plays on the word *karmil*, "scarlet" (v. 5). "The tresses of your head are like purple" (v. 5a) suggests long cascading curls. No surprise, then, that "a king"—the youth himself—"is captured by the tresses!" (v. 5b). He caps off the description by summing up her delights (v. 6).

7:7–13, A Lovers' Dialogue. The youth compares the maiden's stature to a palm tree (v. 7), which he determines to seize hold of (v. 7–8a). He will enjoy her fragrant fruits (vv. 8b–9a). Eating and drinking clearly allude to various aspects of lovemaking, including kissing breasts, smelling the nose (perhaps referring to an Oriental custom of nose-kissing), and deep kissing with open mouth.

The lovers' words intertwine. He says, "and your palate like the best wine," and she completes his sentence in a way that immediately offers him this delight: "flowing smoothly to my beloved" (v. 9).

The woman exults in her lover's passion for her (v. 10). She invites him to go with her to the fields where she will offer him her *dodim*, her sexual love. The fact that they will lodge in the villages and wake up in the vineyards leaves little doubt about what she intends (*kefarim*, "villages," also means henna plants). Her invitation closely resembles his own in 2:10–13. "Our doors" may be the doors of their bower (1:17). The luscious fruits that she has laid up or "hidden" for him (v. 13) signify, as 7:8–9 shows, her sexuality.

The Shulammite's depiction of the countryside is extraordinarily lush and sensual. Her own developing sexuality is adumbrated with images of blossoming trees and ripening fruits.

8:1–5, Public Recognition. The couple are now lying in each other's arms, perhaps in the bower to which the Shulammite invited her lover in the preceding unit. She now yearns for public recognition of their relationship. She wishes he were like a brother to her, but only insofar as she wants to be able to kiss him openly and bring him home. This verse shows that the couple is not betrothed, let alone married.

The enigmatic rhetorical question in v. 5a is an exclamation about the girl spoken by a third party, perhaps the girls of Jerusalem, who are addressed in the adjuration in v. 4.

8:6–7, Love's Power. This is the high point of the poem. Only here is there an abstract or general pronouncement about love. The woman uses strong, even vehement, images to express her determination to attain her desire and implicitly to warn off anyone who might try to stand in the way.

She wishes to be as a seal on her beloved's heart and arm (v. 6a), implying constant possession and special intimacy, to be bound to him in thought and action. Love is as strong and possessive as death, which takes hold and holds forever. Love is as fierce as fiery arrows or flames; but unlike them, it cannot be extinguished even by mighty waters (v. 7a). Nor can love be bought for money (v. 7b).

8:8–10, The Brothers' Offer. As if impressed by this display of passion in their little sister, the brothers speak up. In the absence of a father, it is their job to provide for her at marriage. They promise to lavish ornaments upon her when she is ready for marriage (v. 9). They may not be convinced that she is yet mature (v. 8a), but *she* certainly believes she is. They will lavish upon her the most appropriate ornaments: a silver turret for a wall, a cedar panel for a door (v. 9). She responds that she is a wall, and, contrary to v. 8a, she is sexually mature (v. 10). She has moved from girlhood to womanhood and demands society's acceptance of the union.

8:11–12, The Youth's Possession. The parable of Solomon's vineyard reinforces what was said in 8:7—that love is precious beyond compare. The youth says that even the thriving vineyard of Solomon in Baal-hamon (which means "possessor of wealth") is as nothing compared to his own vineyard, which is his beloved herself. She is his vineyard, as she is his garden (5:1). This is the vineyard that she was prevented from "tending" in 1:6b; now her lover will tend it. Since "vineyard" is a trope for women (of which Solomon had a "thousand," according to 1 Kings 11:3), the youth is scorning all women but his own, and unlike Solomon he will not turn his vineyard over to others for tending.

8:13–14, Conclusion. "You who dwell in the gardens" is the woman; the phrase may mean that she spends her time in the gardens and fields. The man asks his beloved to speak up (v. 13). She responds by telling him to flee to the mountains, using wording from 2:9, 17; 4:6. Perhaps this is an invitation to go away (from the "companions" mentioned in v. 13a?) and come *to* her. Her breasts may be the "mountains of spices," to which the youth earlier declared he would go (4:6).

These verses seem to leave the story up in the air. But perhaps the poet does not want a conclusion, because the story of love is without end.

Bibliography

Bloch, A., and C. Bloch. *The Song of Songs*. New York: Random House, 1995.

Falk, M. *Love Lyrics from the Bible: A Translation and Lit-*

erary Study of the Song of Songs. Sheffield: Almond, 1982.

Fox, M. V. *The Song of Songs and the Ancient Egyptian Love Songs*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1985.

Keel, O. *The Song of Songs*. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1994.

Murphy, R. E. *The Song of Songs*. Hermeneia. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1990.

PART THREE

The Prophetic Books

Introduction to the

Prophetic Books

JOSEPH BLENKINSOPP

The Latter Prophets

Together with the historical books (Joshua through Kings, known in the Hebrew Bible as the "Former Prophets"), the fifteen prophetic books form the central section of the Hebrew Bible. In the Septuagint (the Greek version of the Hebrew Scriptures, designated LXX) the order is different, with the prophetic books coming at the end. This collection of prophetic material was in place, more or less as we have it today, by the beginning of the second century B.C. Writing about 180 B.C., Jesus ben Sirach lists Isaiah (Sir. 48:22–25), Jeremiah (49:6–7), Ezekiel (49:8–9), and the twelve Minor Prophets (49:10) in that order. Later in the same century we begin to hear allusions to "the law and the prophets" (Prol. to Sir.; 2 Macc. 15:9), a phrase familiar from the NT. The complete scroll of Isaiah from Qumran (1QIsa[a]), dated on epigraphical grounds (i.e., on a study of the script) to the second century B.C., suggests further that by then the text of prophetic books was well on the way to being firmly established. From the Qumran community we also have the earliest commentaries on prophetic books (Isaiah, Hosea, Micah, Nahum, Habakkuk), known in Hebrew as *pesharim;* these too point in the same direction, since the capacity to generate commentary is one of the clearer indications of canonical status.

The inclusion of the histories within the category of prophecy, explained in Jewish tradition by prophetic authorship (Josephus *Against Apion* 1:37–41; *b. B. Bat.* 14b–15a), points to a broad expansion of the semantic range covered by the term "prophecy" in the later period. We can detect this tendency as early as Chronicles (probably about the middle of the fourth century B.C.), the author of which lists several prophets and seers among his sources and also speaks of the composition and rendition of liturgical music as a form of prophecy (1 Chron. 25). The writers of apocalypses also thought of themselves, and were thought of by others, as fulfilling a prophetic role (2 Esd. 15:1; Rev. 1:3).

All of this, however, leaves open the question what meanings should be assigned to the term when used of those to whom canonical books are attributed. It would be well to bear in mind that those whom we think of as *the* prophets formed only a small and in some respects

PREVIOUS PAGE:
God Speaks to Jeremiah; *detail of an illustration depicting Jeremiah's prophetic experience.*

anomalous minority among Israelite prophets at any given time. It may also be disconcerting to discover that when they themselves speak of contemporary prophets, they more often than not condemn them as inauthentic (e.g., Jer. 23; Ezek. 13). It therefore remains to be determined in what relation they stand to the phenomenon of prophecy in general and in what sense the term may be appropriately used of them (→ Prophet).

What Is a Prophetic Book?

To speak of these fifteen units of varying size—from Obadiah with 21 verses to Jeremiah with 1,364—as "books" may be somewhat misleading for modern readers. A book is generally understood to be a self-contained production of one author, less commonly several, published on a specific date and protected by copyright law from the intrusion, well meaning or otherwise, of later hands. In all of these respects prophetic books are quite different. Critical study has established that the sayings of the original "author" have in many cases been edited and amplified over a period of several centuries (→ Biblical Criticism). Isaiah, for example, was active during the second half of the eighth century B.C., but it is acknowledged that the second and third parts of the book (Isa. 40–55 and 56–66) cannot be earlier than the sixth century B.C., and even in the first part (Isa. 1–39) there are sayings and entire sections (e.g., much of Isa. 13–27) that are post-Isaian. In some instances we can see this process of adaptation and expansion at work. Isa. 15:1–16:11 contains a long oracle in verse directed against Moab. (There is another version in Jer. 48 that complicates the issue of authorship.) It is followed by what is clearly the comment of a later seer: "This is the word which Yahweh spoke concerning Moab in the past; but now Yahweh says . . . "—and a new oracle follows (Isa. 16:13–14). We conclude, then, that in most cases prophetic books reached their present form as the result of a cumulative process of editing, adapting, and expanding. This redactional history continued until the individual books and the collection as a whole achieved such an authoritative status that no further adaptation or commentary was deemed permissible.

The Formation of Prophetic Books

Attempts to reconstruct the formation of prophetic books have to be based almost entirely on internal evidence. That prophets delivered their messages orally is amply attested. Since they functioned for the most part in the public and political domain, it is not surprising that their sayings were often widely disseminated. Amaziah, priest-in-charge at Bethel, could quote verbatim a particularly ominous oracle of Amos (Amos 7:11). At his trial for sedition in 609 B.C. Jeremiah was saved from death by the timely quoting of a saying of Micah from more than a century earlier (Jer. 26:17–19; Mic. 3:12). In many cases individual sayings and collections of sayings would have been written down shortly after they were delivered, a practice for which we have Assyrian parallels from the seventh century B.C. In 605 B.C. Jeremiah dictated from memory sayings delivered by him over a period of more than two decades. When this collection was read to King Jehoiakim by Jehudi, his secretary, Jehoiakim tore it up and threw it on the fire, after which Jeremiah produced a second and amplified edition now part of the biblical book (Jer. 36). In some cases writing may have been an emergency measure, undertaken when the prophet was unable to deliver the message orally. Amos may have had recourse to writing after being expelled from the kingdom of Samaria

(Amos 7:12), and Jeremiah, in the case just cited, was barred from speaking in the Temple precincts (Jer. 36:4–6). Writing could also have had the purpose of authenticating predictive prophecy (e.g., Isa. 30:8; Jer. 30:1–3). The need to preserve prophecies when political or military disaster threatened must also have been a factor and may help to explain why written prophecy dates from the Assyrian crisis in the eighth century B.C.

Although we have little information on prophetic disciples during the high period of Israelite prophecy, it is difficult to see how the sayings of prophets outside of the royal establishment and the Temple could have been preserved and transmitted without some kind of support group. In several cases the first stage toward the formation of a prophetic book would have been the memorizing, collecting, and writing down of smaller collections of sayings (→ Oracle). Some would have been held together by formal or stylistic features, e.g., a recurring refrain (Amos 4:6–12; Isa. 5:24–25; 9:8–10:4), or an initial formula (e.g., the woe sayings in Amos 5:18–20; Isa. 5:8–23). Others have in common a particular theme (e.g., Jer. 23:9–40) or bear on a particular historical occurrence (e.g., Isa. 7:1–8:15). In the course of time these collections would have been put together, usually in some meaningful arrangement, and amplified with a biographical or autobiographical memoir where available. It is also possible that some sayings of unknown origin were simply attached to one, or in some cases more than one, named collection (e.g., Isa. 2:1–5 = Mic. 4:1–5).

In Israel, as elsewhere, prophetic activity tended to intensify during periods of political, military, or cultural crisis. The Mari oracles come from the last decades of that kingdom's existence before its conquest by Hammurabi (ca. 1765 B.C.;→ Mari); in Israel the most intense period of prophetic activity occurred more than a millennium later, during the final decades of Judah's existence (640–586 B.C.) before its conquest by another Babylonian king. It is reasonable to conclude that the collecting and editing of the sayings of Amos and Hosea were one aspect of the Judean response to the fall of Samaria in 722 B.C. After the fall of Jerusalem 135 years later a major effort was made, for the same reasons, to collect prophetic texts, adapting them to the needs of communities in the Diaspora and the homeland. Although prophetic activity continued during the postexilic period, the dominant tendency was retrospective (e.g., the allusion to "former prophets" in Zech. 1:4; 7:7), moving in the direction of the interpretation of earlier prophecy as the basis for claims in the religious sphere (e.g., Dan. 9:1–2).

In its present form, therefore, the Latter Prophets is the end product of a cumulative process extending over several centuries. Those involved in this process did not share our critical perspective on prophecy and were less interested in historical authenticity than in serving the needs of the communities to which they belonged. Hence the pattern of judgment followed by salvation (often expressed in terms of a fulfillment beyond history) that is a prominent structural feature of many prophetic books. The finale of Amos, for example, imposes a new interpretation on the book by making it into a prophecy of salvation *through* judgment (9:11–15). This too is part of the total meaning for modern readers.

The Literary Character of Prophetic Writings

Since the only way to understand prophetic authors is through the texts, we must, so to speak, make our way upstream from the book in its present form to the smaller collections and eventually to the individual sayings. These sayings can often be identified by formal characteristics and a more or less regular internal structure. This is, of course, true of all

forms of oral or written communication that purport to be understood by a specific audience in a given culture. The determination of form or genre is therefore not just an exercise in literary criticism, but an essential precondition for grasping intention and meaning. Since the culture of modern readers is different from that of the biblical author, this task is not always easy. The difficulties are not, however, insuperable.

The basic prophetic unit is, undoubtedly, *the proclamation of judgment or salvation,* the former much more in evidence than the latter in the pre-exilic prophets. Since it is presented as a verbatim communication from the deity who has commissioned the prophet as go-between, it is couched in the divine first person and is generally introduced by such formulaic expressions as "thus says Yahweh," "the word of Yahweh came to me," and the like. The judgment saying is often preceded or followed by an *indictment* that explains the verdict in the words of the prophet. Understandably, the form and wording of this indictment-verdict unit often reflect the sphere of law (e.g., Isa. 3:13–15), which has influenced other forms of prophetic discourse, e.g., the trial speech (Isa. 1:2–6; 41:1–4) and the case history (e.g., Ezek. 18:5–18).

Though especially prominent, the forensic sphere is only one aspect of social life on which prophetic speech draws for its characteristic forms. From the sphere of worship and the ritual of daily life are drawn hymns (Isa. 42:10–13; Jer. 33:11), laments (Jer. 14:17–18), funeral dirges (Amos 5:2; Isa. 14:12–20), the description of the righteous based on qualifications for worship (Isa. 33:14–16; cf. Pss. 15; 24). More familiar to modern readers would be songs (Isa. 5:1–2), parables (Isa. 28:23–29), allegories (Ezek. 16), reproaches (Amos 4:6–11), and woe sayings (Mic. 2:1–2; 7:1–7; Hab. 2:6–17).

But it is not enough to identify these units: they must be understood in the context in which they occur, which is not necessarily or even generally identical with the social context to which they refer. Amos, for example, uses ironically and subversively forms of speech otherwise familiar to his audience. The book opens with oracles against foreign nations—one of the oldest and best attested of prophetic genres—but by including Israel in the list, the normal expectations aroused by the genre are subverted and the entire book is given the character of indictment (Amos 1–2). In like manner he makes use of the familiar call to worship only to condemn the worship of his contemporaries (4:4–5) and of the funeral dirge as an advance announcement of death and disaster (5:1–2).

With the passing of time we note the gradual breakdown of these relatively simple forms and the prevalence of longer discourses. Something of this is already apparent in Hosea, but these tendencies emerge most clearly in Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and Second Isaiah (Isa. 40–55). This transformation at the literary level may signify a shift in the understanding of the prophetic role and in the social context in which the role was played out. Jeremiah's Temple sermon (Jer. 7:1–8:3) illustrates the prophetic function of preaching, which was not then, as it is now, the responsibility of priests. After the destruction of the Temple, the exilic communities may have evolved something akin to the synagogue in which the longer discourses of Second Isaiah and the sermons attributed to Moses in Deuteronomy were first heard. At the same time, we note that prophecy is becoming more of a literary activity. One of the clearer indications is the figurative and allegorical narratives of which Ezekiel makes generous use (e.g., Ezek. 12–24) and that earned him a reputation among his contemporaries as a skillful user of words (20:49; 33:30–33). There is also an increasing tendency, noted earlier, to comment on earlier prophecy. Ezekiel 7 appears to be a prophetic sermon based on the fourth vision of Amos (Amos 8:1–3), and a good part of Third Isaiah (Isa. 56–66) relates to Second Isaiah as commentary on prophetic text.

Biographical and Autobiographical Narrative

In addition to collections of sayings, fragments of prophetic biographical and autobiographical narrative have also come down to us. The author of the so-called Deuteronomistic History (Joshua through Kings) has woven into the fabric of his story popular "legends" about seers and ecstatics, especially in recounting the history of the Northern Kingdom. The most extensive of these deal with Elijah (1 Kings 17–19; 21; 2 Kings 1–2) and his disciple Elisha (2 Kings 2–9; 13:14–21), and it is clear that they have been excerpted from a much larger cycle of hagiographical narrative.

Beginning in the eighth century B.C., and no doubt because of the mortal danger posed by the Assyrians, there is a notable shift in emphasis from the person to the message of the prophet and, correspondingly, from stories about prophets that quote their sayings to collections of oracles in which the biographical element, when present, is minor and incidental. Amos contains only one short biographical passage recounting his confrontation with the priest of the state sanctuary at Bethel (Amos 7:10–17). Here, too, we have the impression of an excerpt from a longer narrative, perhaps from an alternative version of the reign of Jeroboam II, one less sympathetic to that king than the version incorporated into the history (2 Kings 14:23–29, with perhaps a covert allusion to Amos in v. 27). A similar situation confronts us with the third-person account of Isaiah's intervention in the crisis of 734 B.C. when Syria and Israel attempted to force Judah into an anti-Assyrian alliance (Isa. 7:1–17; cf. 2 Kings 16:5). The Isaiah sayings collection has also been supplemented by a much more extensive narrative cycle taken, with modifications and additions, from the history (Isa. 36–39; cf. 2 Kings 18–20). Here we encounter a rather different figure from the Isaiah of the sayings: a miracle worker and holy man not unlike Elisha, but one who plays a supportive rather than critical and disruptive role in affairs of state. In other instances narrative serves to introduce and contextualize specific sayings (e.g., Hos. 1:2–9; cf. 3:1–3 in the first person).

Beginning in the last decades of the independent existence of Judah, there seems to be a renewed interest in the personal history of the prophet. Unlike Amos and Hosea, Jeremiah was clearly the object of considerable biographical interest. Starting with the superscription to the book (1:1–3), a greater effort is made to place sayings and discourses in a chronological and topographical framework (e.g., 3:6; 21:1; 22:11; 24:1; 34:1, 8–11). What, however, sets the book apart from its predecessors is the inclusion of longer biographical passages (Jer. 26–29; 32), especially the sustained account of his role in events immediately preceding and following the fall of Jerusalem (Jer. 37–44). Whoever authored this long biographical memoir—perhaps his faithful attendant Baruch—it is agreed that the book as a whole, including these continuous narrative sections, has been edited and expanded by a Deuteronomistic hand during the exilic period. A careful study of the editorial procedures involved in this rewriting reveals an intent to present Jeremiah as a prophet after the manner of Moses (Deut. 18:15–19) and as the last in a prophetic series beginning with Moses. This intent is already apparent in the call narrative (Jer. 1:4–10; cf. Exod. 3:1–4:17), less obviously in assigning to Jeremiah a forty-year ministry (Jer. 1:2–3, corresponding to the years 627–587 B.C.). It is to the Deuteronomistic school that we owe the portrait of Moses as prophetic figure whose mission meets with opposition but is ultimately vindicated by God. Not surprisingly, therefore, the book is rounded off with the last chapter of the Deuteronomistic History that begins with Moses and ends with the Exile (Jer. 52 = 2 Kings 24:18–25:30).

The same profile of the prophet destined to a mission from the earliest years, or even from conception, who is opposed and persecuted but ultimately vindicated by God appears in the passages in Second Isaiah known rather inappropriately as the "servant songs" (Isa. 42:1–4;

49:1–6; 50:4–11; 52:13–53:12). Although all of these passages may not refer to the same individual, we hear of an intermediary who is set aside for a special mission from conception (49:1), who experiences failure, rejection, and persecution (49:4; 50:6–9; 52:13–53:9), and who is finally vindicated, perhaps posthumously (53:10–12). That this anonymous figure is designated "servant of Yahweh" may also suggest a connection with Deuteronomistic usage following which the designation "servant" is used of prophetic intermediaries in general (e.g., 2 Kings 9:7; 17:13, 23; 21:10) and preeminently of Moses himself (e.g., Num. 12:7–8; Deut. 34:5).

The greater attention given to biographical narrative, detectable in Jeremiah, the Deuteronomistic portrait of Moses, and the Isaian Servant, corresponds to a development in understanding the prophetic function. Prophecy could still consist in a simple mandate to speak on behalf of the deity, but there is now in addition the idea that the call can involve the entire life of the individual. This pattern of prophetic biography was further developed in the Greco-Roman period (e.g., *The Martyrdom and Ascension of Isaiah,* Bel and the Dragon, *The Lives of the Prophets*) and left its mark on early Christian presentations of Jesus, especially in Luke.

Call Narratives and Vision Narratives

In the prophetic books themselves, biographical interest has concentrated primarily, and in some cases exclusively, on the critical moment of the commissioning of the prophetic intermediary. In both the ancient and modern worlds, extraordinary circumstances accompany this event, whether a dream (often repeated on successive nights), a vision, or significant psychic and behavioral changes (→ Dreams; Vision). Since the intermediary always acts on behalf of a particular constituency, the commission must always be validated in some way by the society or a particular group within it. One way in which this could happen is illustrated by the call of Samuel at the ancient tribal sanctuary of Shiloh (1 Sam. 3). In the course of an incubation ritual (sleeping in the sanctuary to receive a revelation from the deity worshiped there), Samuel heard a voice calling him that was deemed to be an authentic revelation after the third occurrence. After receiving a message that he was to transmit to those concerned, his prophetic role was publicly acknowledged (3:20). It may also be noted that though his experience was auditory, it is called a vision (3:15, 21).

The call of Elisha (1 Kings 19:19–21) illustrates a rather different kind of commissioning, since what is involved here is prophetic succession and endowment with authority vis-à-vis the guilds of dervishlike ecstatics known as "sons of the prophets." Elijah performed the symbolic act of placing his mantle, the distinguishing mark of the master prophet, over the disciple-elect. At a later point (2 Kings 2:9–12), the transmission of the spirit had to be validated by acts of spiritual power including extrasensory perception (cf. 6:17), precognition (8:7–15), and various miracles, the first of which involved the prophetic mantle of the master (2:13–14). Here too the acknowledgment of the commissioning is explicitly noted (2:15).

Both of these accounts have been incorporated into the Deuteronomistic History, no doubt undergoing some editing in the process. In the prophetic books themselves, most of the call narratives are written in the first person and are, with the possible and problematic exception of Hosea (3:1–5), accompanied by visions. Isaiah's vision of the heavenly court (Isa. 6:1–13), closely paralleled by that of Micaiah (1 Kings 22:19–22), may represent a special Judean variant since it appears to have taken place in the Temple and represents the prophetic intermediary as royal messenger or herald. After a purification ritual, Yahweh as king

calls for a volunteer, the prophet offers his services, and the commissioning follows. The same scenario has been assumed for the exilic Isaiah (40:1–11), though in this instance the situation is less clear and the command in vv. 1–5 is addressed to a plurality. That Judean prophetic books are either introduced under the title "vision" (Isaiah, Obadiah, Nahum) or as words received in vision (Amos, Micah, Habakkuk) may indicate a special regional characteristic, though one that was not, of course, unique.

Habakkuk, the only pre-exilic prophet to be named such (Heb. *nabi'*) in the title, provides a brief glimpse of the preparation for receiving a visionary revelation (2:1–2), and an equally brief description of the behavioral changes that tended to occur during this period of waiting (3:16); cf. the similar situation of an anonymous exilic seer announcing the fall of Babylon (Isa. 21:6–10).

Amos describes his commissioning only indirectly, in the course of defending himself before the priest Amaziah. Although the interpretation of this passage (Amos 7:14–15) has long been in dispute, Amos appears to be saying that his commission came to him directly in a private capacity, not after apprenticeship in a prophetic guild. Various attempts have been made to establish a connection between the vision series (7:1–9; 8:1–3; 9:1–4) and the prophetic commissioning. In the first two visions, which threaten locusts and drought, respectively, Amos successfully discharges the prophetic task of intercession. The third vision, presaging earthquake and military disaster, might mark the point at which Amos received his charge to preach against the kingdom of Samaria and its ruler, especially since it is followed immediately by the defense of his prophetic calling.

The description of Jeremiah's call to be prophet to the nations is also accompanied by visions of the same type as the third and fourth of Amos (Jer. 1:11–19; cf. Amos 7:7–9; 8:1–3). They are in the first person, the prophet is shown an object, the significance of the exhibit is explained, and the explanation depends on either a symbolic explanation of the object or an ambiguity of pronunciation. The actual commissioning that precedes (Jer. 1:4–10) follows a different and distinctive pattern found also in the earlier of the two versions of the call of Moses (Exod. 3:1–4:17): divine address, expostulation of the intermediary-designate, confirmation and encouragement designed to overcome his hesitation, the giving of a sign (absent in Jeremiah), an act of installation accompanied by a form of words ("Behold, I have put my words in your mouth"), and finally the specifics of the mission. Though the similarities may be explained in part by the Deuteronomistic intent to portray Jeremiah as a "Mosaic" prophet, the pattern itself is older than either of these examples, as may be seen in the nonprophetic commissioning of Gideon in what is certainly a pre-Deuteronomistic narrative (Judg. 6:11–18).

The account of Ezekiel's call also conflates two quite different narratives: the vision of the chariot-throne (Ezek. 1:4–28) and the commission to speak unwelcome words, signified by having the prophet-elect eat a papyrus scroll containing lamentations (2:1–3:3). The latter is the original commissioning (with later expansions in 3:4–9; 3:10–15) to which the "school" of Ezekiel has prefaced the chariot-throne vision, so that the call emanates from the one enthroned thereon (1:28). This detailed description of the *merkabah* (Heb., "chariot"), which was to become a major source of Jewish mystical speculation, marks a transition from the earlier, relatively simple prophetic vision narrative to the complex scenarios produced by the writers of apocalyptic tracts (e.g., Daniel, the Enoch cycle).

The visions of Zechariah, dated to 519 B.C., are also of a different kind and symptomatic of the changing perception of the prophetic function in the early postexilic period (Zech. 1:7–6:8). One of the most interesting innovations is the presence of a supernatural agent, the

angelic interpreter, in the vision. His function is to explain what is going on, and in many cases he does this with reference to motifs in earlier prophetic books: the seventy years of exile (Jer. 25:11; 29:10), the smiths (Isa. 54:16–17), the measuring line (Ezek. 42:20), the north country (Jer. 1:13–16), the wall of fire around Jerusalem (Isa. 4:5), and others. Here too we see the shift from the classical prophetic mode of direct communication to the indirect mode of interpretation, including the interpretation of prophetic texts.

The Place of Prophecy in the Bible as a Whole

One way of viewing the Latter Prophets in the context of the Hebrew Bible canon is as a supplement to the history (Former Prophets). Chronologically, the correspondence is not exact, since we know that five of the Latter Prophets (Joel, Jonah, Haggai, Zechariah, Malachi) are postexilic, and of these the last three were always known to be postexilic. The three longer books (Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel) were apparently grouped together in chronological order for practical reasons as early as the second century B.C., and the twelve Minor Prophets also appear to have been arranged in what was thought to be chronological order (in LXX the series also begins with Hosea, but the next five are arranged somewhat differently).

A strong argument can be made in favor of the supplement theory in that the Deuteronomistic historian does not so much as mention any of the Latter Prophets with the exception of Jonah (2 Kings 14:25), not originally part of the collection, and Isaiah (2 Kings 19:1–7, 20–37; 20:1–19), but a very different Isaiah from the author of the sayings. The role of the prophets who are mentioned in the history also corresponds closely enough to that of Latter Prophets to justify this conclusion. One of the chief aims of the exilic historian was to explain the massive disasters that had occurred within living memory. Many of his contemporaries were raising serious questions about the justice and ethical character of the God of traditional religion who, it seemed, had abandoned them to their fate. The historian's reply is that, throughout the history beginning with Moses himself, Yahweh had sent "his servants the prophets" to warn the people of the consequences of *their* infidelity. The reading of the prophecies, therefore, served as a reminder of the justice of God's ways and as a guide to the moral requirements flowing from the covenant relationship (see, e.g., Zech. 1:1–6). At the same time, these texts were edited and expanded to testify to the assurance of salvation beyond judgment (e.g., Isa. 40–55; Amos 9:11–15; Mic. 4:1–5; Zeph. 3:14–20), an assurance that could also be extended to the gentile world (e.g., Isa. 45:22–23; 66:18–21; 19:24–25; Zeph. 3:9–10; Jonah).

The relation of prophecy to law is one of the most important and difficult issues in biblical theology. It can be shown that much of the ethical teaching of the pre-exilic prophets was based on stipulations of law the antiquity of which cannot be doubted (e.g., Amos 2:8; cf. Exod. 22:26–27). At the same time, prophetic teaching also contributed to the mature formulation of Israel's legal traditions. The Deuteronomic law (Deut. 12–26) betrays the pervasive influence of prophetic preaching that may also have contributed to the final form of the Decalogue (see esp. Hos. 4:2; Jer. 7:9–10). The tendency to subordinate prophecy to law and to the figure of Moses, the fountainhead of both, is already apparent in Deuteronomy, which carefully circumscribes the scope of prophetic activity (Deut. 13:1–5; 18:15–22) and insists that prophecy represents a lower order of mediation than that of Moses (34:10). The Deuteronomistic History also assigns to prophets the task of preaching the law and warning against the consequences of nonobservance (e.g., 2 Kings 17:13–20). We may find here the

source of the view, which was to become normative in Judaism, that the primary role of the prophet was to serve as a vital link in the transmission of the law from Moses down to the present (*m. Avot* 1:1).

A quite different line of development was followed by those who read prophetic texts as predicting the future and heralding the consummation of history. As suggested earlier, the first stage of this eschatological reinterpretation of prophecy has to be recovered from the texts themselves. The sects that begin to emerge clearly in the latter part of the Second Temple period (the second century B.C.) found this mode of interpretation especially congenial. The author of the visions in Daniel, for example, thought of the prophetic books as containing a coded message about the future, with special reference to the destiny of the group to which he belonged (e.g., Dan. 9:1–2). In the biblical commentaries of the Qumran sect, we even find the idea that the prophetic author did not himself know the meaning of his prophecy that was only now revealed to the initiates within the sect (1QpHab 7:1–2). Something of the same approach is apparent in early Christian interpretations of prophecy with reference to the events of the life of Jesus (e.g., Matt. 1–3) and the founding and development of the Christian movement (e.g., Acts 2:24–32; 15:15–18). In spite of challenges from different quarters, this interpretive scheme of prophecy and fulfillment has remained to the present an essential aspect of the Christian appropriation and use of the Hebrew Scriptures.

These views of prophecy traditional in Judaism and Christianity have to be balanced against the results of the historical-critical investigation of the texts that began in earnest about the middle of the nineteenth century and is still in progress. The principal aim of historical-critical analysis was to arrive at the authentic sayings through a critical reading of the texts and thus be in a position to determine the identity and agenda of the prophetic author. Stated in general terms, the conclusion was that the biblical prophets were concerned primarily with contemporary social and political realities rather than with prediction. In mediating the tradition through an intense personal experience of the divine, they brought about a new religious consciousness, at once ethical and spiritual, over against the popular religion of the day centered on the sacrificial cult. With the benefit of hindsight, we can now see the extent to which this critical work was colored by the cultural prejudices of the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries—for example, dogmatic evolutionary ideas of religious development and a devaluation of ritual. The critical rediscovery of prophecy has, nevertheless, been enormously influential, bearing, for example, on the religious interpretation of history and the social responsibilities of synagogue and church. It has also enabled us to get into clearer focus one of the most fundamental contributions of prophetic religion, namely, the idea of people called to be instruments of service.

Bibliography

Blenkinsopp, J. *A History of Prophecy in Israel.* 2d ed. Louisville, KY: Westminster, 1996.
Clements, R. E. *One Hundred Years of Old Testament Interpretation.* Philadelphia: Westminster, 1976. Pp. 51–75.
Rofé, A. *Introduction to the Prophetic Literature.* Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1997.
Tucker, G. M. "Prophetic Speech," *Interpretation* 32 (1978): 31–45.
von Rad, G. *Old Testament Theology.* Vol. 2. New York: Harper & Row, 1965.
Wilson, R. R. *Prophecy and Society in Ancient Israel.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1980.

Isaiah

GERALD T. SHEPPARD

INTRODUCTION

Few books of the OT have supplied more fuel to the fire of Jewish and Christian interpretation than the book of Isaiah. Ben Sira's eulogy in the early second century B.C. illustrates the positive perception of the prophet (Sir. 48:22b–25):

> *. . . a great man trustworthy in his vision.*
> *In his days the sun went backward;*
> *he lengthened the life of the king.*
> *By the power of the spirit he saw the last things.*
> *He comforted the mourners in Zion.*
> *He revealed what was to occur to the end of time,*
> *and hidden things long before they happened.*

For Jews the words of comfort expressed Israel's own hope for restoration after the Exile, accompanied by God's promise that all the world would enter into a new era of peace and justice. For Christians these same promises found such perfect fulfillment in Jesus Christ that the book was occasionally called "the Gospel of the Old Testament."

Content

The modern tendency to divide the book into separate parts has prevented readers from viewing the book as a whole. Therefore the lines of continuity within the entire book will be considered before turning to the present debate regarding its organization.

Fear Not!

The first part of the book, chaps. 1–39, contains a few descriptions of the eighth-century prophet Isaiah and the mixed responses to his oracles by Judahite kings. According to Isaiah 7–8, King Ahaz rejects Isaiah's message not to seek foreign help when he was threatened by northern Israel and Syria. Due to Ahaz's alliance with Assyria, that nation demolished and deported the remainder of the Northern Kingdom around 722 B.C. Later (Isa. 36–39), King Hezekiah obeys the prophecies of Isaiah, so God delivers Jerusalem from Assyrian threats and even prolongs peace in the lifetime of the king. In all these cases (7:4; 8:12; 37:6), the message of God to Ahaz, Hezekiah, and Isaiah himself is, in brief, "Do not fear!" Throughout the entire book, "Fear not" recurs like a password into the community of faith.

After Isaiah 39, Isaiah no longer appears, though the theme "Do not fear" continues along with other familiar vocabulary, for example, God as "the Holy One of Israel." The prophets in chaps. 40–66 speak as if they were with Isaiah in Palestine. Though they briefly mention Cyrus, they say nothing specifically about Ezra and other major figures in the postexilic restoration. These prophets maintain to some degree the persona of the prophet Isaiah even when the person is no longer presented historically.

Learn Righteousness!

In Isaiah 40–66, the organization seems much more subtle and artful than in Isaiah 1–39. Though Isaiah is named and described only in 1–39, the impress of his character still plays a significant role throughout the later parts of the book. At a few places, anonymous prophets speak. One of them twice states emphatically in 50:4 that God has appointed him (or her) to play a role like "those who have learned" or "have been taught." In Isa. 8:16, Isaiah uses these same terms. Likewise, 54:13–14 may refer indirectly to later editors and prophets who in this book bear witness to the same word of the Lord that Isaiah himself (and probably his spouse, "the prophetess," 8:3) had delivered.

The final editors of the book of Isaiah use the words of other prophets, as well as their own words, not as original additions to the words of Isaiah, but as complementary materials that make explicit Isaiah's own witness to the word of the Lord. These later prophets testify to Isaiah's earlier witness. Similarly, anyone who hears this book read publicly, even the nations, should join "those who have learned" by hearing the testimonies of the various biblical prophets to the same revelation, the "Torah," and for Christians, the "gospel."

Hurry and Wait!

Isa. 40:1–2 presumes that Jerusalem has been decimated and its people have been deported into exile. It announces that God will now turn from anger to "comfort," a promise also found in 12:2. The assurance of the release from the Babylonian exile is also presented as a recapitulation of God's deliverance of the

Hebrew slaves from Egypt. In this sense, it belongs to a broader scriptural testimony within which the events of the sixth century B.C. made sense. Nearly half a century before, Jerusalem and the Temple had been burned to the ground and left in ruins (e.g., 64:10–12 [Heb.: 64:9–11]). Now, just like Moses' extraordinary prophecies of a promised land, Isaiah offers equally amazing promises to these released exiles. The city, Temple, and nation will be restored to heights surpassing their old splendor. Nations will "see" what God has done, and convert to worship "the Holy One of Israel."

The book of Isaiah is addressed, like the Torah of Moses, to "your children and . . . your children's children, from now and forever" (59:21). To the present and future listeners to this scriptural book, God commands two things: hurry and wait! They must hurry to establish the justice and the peace God requires (e.g., 56:1–2). Yet, following the example of Isaiah himself, they must also "wait upon the LORD" (8:17; cf. 40:31; 30:18; 49:33; 64:4).

One element of this dual command—hurry and wait—pertains even to "the coastlands." This term refers to peoples who reside in the far western regions around the Mediterranean Sea and know nothing of the God of Israel (66:19). As impartial representatives of distant nations, they are frequently summoned to hear this book (e.g., 41:1; 49:1). We are told that the coastlands "wait for me [the LORD]" and "wait for his Torah" (42:4; 51:5; 60:9). The public reading of the Torah of Moses, and Isaiah also, "will *show* your wisdom and discernment to the nations," who will consequently judge Israel to be "a wise and discerning people" (Deut. 4:5–6).

Prepare to Return to the Promised Land!

Just as the Hebrew slaves are addressed in the Torah of Moses *before* they cross the Jordan to the promised land, the book of Isaiah addresses newly released "survivors" (Isa. 1:9) or "kept ones" (49:6) with promises and a command to return to the land. In dramatic terms, a prophet declares, "Go out of Babylon, flee from Chaldea!" (48:20). The people whom God has chosen and who overhear these Scriptures read aloud over the centuries are liberated slaves about to enter a promised land. In Isaiah, the same words are also directed to a city, Jerusalem, which "is about to be filled with people of her exiles," as the Targum of Jonathan paraphrases Isa. 40:2. The Torah provides a context out of which to understand liberated slaves who are in immediate danger of becoming enslaved once more.

Recent Efforts to Describe the Major Parts of the Book of Isaiah

Until the modern period, interpreters viewed Isaiah as a single "book," comparable to Jeremiah or Ezekiel. As with the Torah scroll (the five books of Moses), Isaiah could also be divided into parts that might be called "books" (e.g., Martin Luther called chaps. 40–66 the "Second Book of Isaiah"), though they belonged together in the one scriptural scroll of Isaiah. The premodern awareness of differences within the book became a logical point of departure in the late seventeenth century for an entirely new historical appraisal.

An Old Modern Paradigm: First, Second, and Third Isaiah

With the dawn of modern criticism in the last half of the seventeenth century, critics sought to isolate traditions present in biblical books and to determine their historical "authors." A popular consensus emerged in the nineteenth century. Scholars divided the book of Isaiah into three parts: First Isaiah (chaps. 1–39), Second Isaiah (40–55), and Third Isaiah (56–66). This stratification overstated the evidence, since scholars at that time already recognized that many traditions in chaps. 1–39 presupposed the sixth-century threat of Babylon rather than Assyria, which was the enemy during the life of eighth-century Isaiah (cf. 13:1, 19; 14:4, 22; 21:9; see 23:13, "Chaldeans . . . not Assyria"). Although most scholars treated chaps. 40–55 as Second Isaiah, Isaiah 40 clearly assumes a larger literary context. Finally, there was little consensus about so-called Third Isaiah, with its consistent depiction of a distinction between "the wicked" (57:20–21) and "the righteous" (57:1) in the community. This distinction may well reflect sharp divisions within the postexilic community, but the editors seem to have used preexilic oracles to make this same point (e.g., 56:9–12; 57:1–2; 57:3–6). The promises in chaps. 60–62 announce a full restoration and rebuilding of the Temple, with the help of "foreigners," though again the language lacks specific historical details and looks to a distant horizon when "the sun will no longer be your light by day" (60:19; cf. 60:1–3). Aside from mentioning the name of the Persian king, Cyrus (44:28; 45:1), the testimonies in Isaiah 40–66 remain elusive and at most an indirect reference to the postexilic period.

This tripartite description had two primary advantages. First, it recognized historical and religious differences between the oracles delivered by eighth-century Isaiah and later oracles in the same book. Second, modern critics thought they could reconstruct a sixth-century Second Isaiah with as much flesh and blood as Isaiah himself. Westermann, therefore, tries in his commentary on Isaiah 40–66 to describe "the two men's situation and what they sought to achieve" (p. 309). For modern critics, the rediscovery of Second Isaiah also solved a major problem because it removed the "anonymity" of a prophet who must have been well enough known to mock publicly other prophets for their inability to predict events before they have occurred. Without a sixth-century Second Isaiah, the

oracles in chaps. 41–55, they thought, would be unintelligible. Within the same argument, the "former things" mentioned in Isaiah 40–66 could not be found in Isaiah 1–39, since they would need to be predictions by Second Isaiah himself or his contemporaries, perhaps Jeremiah, and not by the eighth-century Isaiah. Though the notion of a Second Isaiah offers a persuasive explanation for many of the oracles in chaps. 40–55, it does not account for evidence of postexilic traditions within 1–39 and pre-exilic oracles in 56–66, nor does it adequately account for the overall coherence of the book.

Both Isaiah 1–39 and 40–66 are admixtures of traditions, pre-exilic and postexilic, so an independent collection of Second Isaiah's prophecies probably never existed. The designations First, Second, and Third Isaiah, if they are intended to refer to independent literary compositions, fail to reflect the complexity of the history of this book's formation.

A Late Modern Alternative: Isaiah 1–33 and 34–66

In recent years, an entirely new proposal for the structure of the book has gained wide currency. Some scholars had observed that chaps. 34–35 share themes, ideas, and motifs with 40–66. Obviously the narratives about Isaiah and the faithful King Hezekiah in chaps. 36–39 conclude with an oracle about a future threat to Judah by the Babylonians, who only become a threat in the sixth century, not in the eighth century when Isaiah prophesied to Hezekiah (cf. 39:6–7). Such a Babylonian victory over Judah provides the background to much in chaps. 40–66 (cf. 40:1–2). Therefore, Isaiah 34–39 could be viewed as a prologue to 40–66. Isaiah 33, unlike chaps. 34–35, resonates with themes found in *both* 1–32 *and* 34–66. If it "mirrors" both the opening traditions in Isaiah and those that follow, then it might serve as a conclusion to Isaiah 1–32 and provide, at the same time, a bridge to the "second" part (34–66) of the book. In theory, the creation of a biblical book of two basic parts by fifth-century editors could also explain why the editors do not name "Assyria" in the old oracles of Isaiah 33 (cf. 33:1, 19). The unnamed enemy would allow later people to hear, typologically, a reference to an enemy that would fit "Babylon," the later antagonist of Judah.

This proposal offers a good rationale for the odd compilation of traditions in chap. 33. One analysis explained this hodgepodge of traditions as a prophetic liturgy based on early and independent units of oral tradition. If Isaiah 33 is a late compilation concluding the first part of this book (Isa. 1–33), then the older, ritual character of the traditions has been eclipsed by their reediting and new function, as it sets the context for the second part of the book (Isa. 34–66). Hence late modern scholars can view both of these two parts of Isaiah to promise "the worldwide sovereignty of God at Zion." The first part concerns the prophet, Isaiah, speaking to past events that anticipate a later time, while the second addresses events in the exilic and postexilic periods. In this arrangement, the name of "Isaiah" occurs in both parts of the book. The organization of the book of Isaiah could have supported the codification and reading of "the book of the Torah of Moses" by Ezra (cf. Neh. 8–10), which helped guide life in postexilic Judah.

This proposal raises questions about *which* editorial criteria actually define the shape, scope, or structure of the book. If the book's second section begins with 34:1, how does this verse provide a note so new and noteworthy that we might think it marks the beginning of the second part of the book? It does not appear to offer significance similar to that of 1:2, at the beginning of the first part of Isaiah, which summons heaven and earth to be witnesses to Israel's folly.

Another major question: does this description of Isaiah show sufficient awareness of how the fifth-century scriptural book of Isaiah differs in its very nature from *prescriptural* stages of redaction that preceded it? Should the scriptural editing be treated as a final redactional "stage"? From the standpoint of comparative religions, one may argue that Scriptures are more than the final redactional stratum.

A final problem is raised by the question of how to evaluate "quotations" of traditions, especially in "Second" and "Third" Isaiah. Some scholars have treated any small duplication of a historically prior "text" as a sign that that text has been reinterpreted by a later "text," governed by "the intent" of some editor, tradent, or author. So Isaiah 33 can be understood as an intense moment of retrospective "interpretation" and prospective "interpretation," and, therefore, as a "mirror" between two parts (1–33 and 34–66). In the same way, the older modern proposal found confirmations of its divisions on the basis of "Second Isaiah's reinterpretation" of other traditions outside of "First Isaiah" and "Third Isaiah's reinterpretation" of traditions in First Isaiah, Second Isaiah, and other "biblical traditions." This evidence has tempted scholars to find in these differences evidence for determining theological opinions that vary from one "author" to another (e.g., First, Second, or Third Isaiah). However, "citation" and "reinterpretation" cannot adequately account for similar features when they occur at more than one redactional level, nor does such language do justice to the different types of "texts" that result. What might be a quotation by one prophet of another prophet in ancient Israel often ceases to be a citation at all when viewed within another level of tradition history.

When earlier traditions become parts of a Bible, the role of duplication, resonance, and repetition change dramatically. For example, the tradition shared by both Isa. 2:2–4 and Mic. 4:1–3 may have, in theory, been a matter of dispute between editors who wanted to assign it to one or the other of these two named

prophets at a prebiblical level of tradition history. But in scriptural books, such duplications are quite common, including Isaiah 36–39 and its counterpart in 2 Kings, Psalm 18 in 2 Samuel 22, and 2 Kings 25 at the end of Jeremiah. Within the *scriptural* books of Isaiah and Micah, the duplication of similar words in Isa. 2:2–4 and Mic. 4:1–3 signifies that they testify to the same revelation of "the word of the LORD." In sum, the rules that govern an assessment of repetitions, citations, intertextuality, resonance, and duplication must change depending on what is being interpreted—oral or written materials, prebiblical tradition, redactional levels, or a biblical book.

Literary analysts have recently suggested a variety of structural elements, e.g., chiasm, to explain the coherence of the book. However, at present, the older modern agreements about a "general hermeneutics" valid for all "texts" have broken down. The most basic questions must be asked anew. What is it really that we want to interpret? This commentary will try to describe the book of Isaiah as Scripture, Jewish and Christian. That decision implies, as well, a need to reassess both modern and premodern interpretations of this book. In no way does such an approach need to devalue insights gained from diverse methodologies, including the historical-critical perspective.

Isaiah as Scripture

To describe the book of Isaiah as Scripture, we must know more about the characteristics of Scripture, which can be found stated most explicitly in the Torah of Moses. It is the first book of Jewish Scripture, publicly read by Ezra in the middle of the fifth century B.C. (see Neh. 8–10). This claim does not question the presence of nonscriptural "oral Torah" and other normative traditions. Moreover, Jewish Scripture from its conception has implied the importance of more than one book. The editorial process that eventuated in the Torah of Moses relied on materials from larger collections of tradition and other materials (e.g., the rest of the Deuteronomistic History), which were probably regarded as having something like scriptural authority. One of the earliest references to Scripture occurs in Dan. 9:2, where the prophet interprets Jeremiah to be among "the scrolls" (or "the books"), a technical name for Scripture. (In English, the singular term "book" or "Bible" came into common usage around the ninth century A.D.) The Torah of Moses provided the standard characterization of Scripture, so that the editors of other biblical books would no longer need to repeat it elsewhere. Whenever we find these features in other biblical books, they may be signs of late Scripture-conscious editing, reflecting the process by means of which prebiblical traditions became biblical books. In sum, these key characterizations of Scripture, spelled out most clearly concerning the Torah of Moses, belong to a preunderstanding that we must bring to Isaiah and all other biblical books, if we want to hear them as Scripture.

A "Testimony" Rather Than a "Text" of Isaiah

In one perspective Scriptures are not "texts," but a kind of human activity. One simply does not read a Scripture in the same way one reads any other "text." That does not mean the reading of Scripture is reduced to the reader's own subjective response. Rather, in each religion the envisioned form of Scripture rises up to meet and to reward those who confront it. The nature and form of "Scripture" vary greatly from one religion to another.

If the Torah of Moses cannot be properly described as a "text," then we ought to take seriously its own internal claims. In Deut. 31:26, Moses tells the Levites to put "the book/scroll of the Torah" into the Ark of the covenant, calling that scroll "a witness against/concerning you." The term "witness" and its synonym "testimony" become equivalents for the Torah (so Ps. 119). When the writer of Hebrews recites part of Psalm 8, it is introduced by the statement, "someone has testified somewhere" (Heb. 2:6). Without knowing where this scriptural passage derives from, the writer of Hebrews at least knows what Scripture does—it "testifies."

Related to the nature of Scripture as a "witness" is the response that Scripture elicits from those who hear it. At the covenant renewal in Joshua 24, the hearing of this Torah leads to an exchange of vows in which Joshua declares, "You are witnesses . . . ," and the people respond, "We are witnesses" (vv. 22). To be on the safe side, Joshua singles out a large stone that also "heard all the words of the LORD" and will be "a witness against you" (vv. 26–27). Nature itself, upon hearing the Torah, will testify to it, even if Israel ever fails to do so. Scripture as a witness, when properly heard, can make "witnesses" of those listening to it.

If we look for a similar understanding of Scripture in the book of Isaiah, we find an unusual representation of these features compared with other biblical books. When Isaiah writes oracles down in 8:16, they are called "testimony and *torah*," and then in later verses, which portray conditions of devastation corresponding to the destruction of Judah and Jerusalem, the same written tradition is called "*torah* and testimony" (8:18). Hence, a prebiblical testimony and *torah* has arguably become in the editor's perspective "Torah and testimony." Similar to the charge given to the people at the hearing of the Torah and renewal of the covenant in Joshua 24, we find in Isaiah God declaring, "You are my witnesses" (43:10, 12; cf. 44:8). Although this language seems to derive from an exilic dispute with prophets of other gods, it resonates with the response attested in Joshua at the reading of the Torah of Moses and the renewal of the covenant. Foreign na-

tions are summoned repeatedly, especially in Isaiah 40–66, to hear the word of the Lord when the book is read publicly. Isa. 19:19–22 depicts a future time when an altar and a pillar in Egypt will provide "a witness" to the Lord. In response the Egyptians will seek God for help when they are oppressed, be delivered, and both "know" and "worship" the Lord with sacrifices, vows, and offerings as prescribed by the Torah. Likewise, in 55:4, the statement that God has made David "a witness to the peoples" suggests the possibility that the many allusions to Psalms in this part of the book of Isaiah are predicated on a similar public reading of both Isaiah and some form of Psalms.

Isaiah: "Testimony" to What?

If the Torah of Moses and all other biblical books, including Isaiah, are "testimonies," rather than "texts," then we may logically ask what they testify or bear witness to. Deut. 29:29 [Heb.: 29:29] offers perhaps the best answer of any verse in both Jewish and Christian Scripture. First, the Torah of Moses claims to be a witness to "secret things" made public by God. For both Jewish and Christian Scriptures, this explanation belongs to the classic definition of "revelation" as hidden knowledge that God alone can know and God alone makes accessible to Israel by prophets and by the testimony of Scripture. So scriptural books testify or bear witness to God's revelation, which is the subject matter of Scripture. That subject matter has a name, the "Torah," for all Jewish Scripture, and within Christian Scripture it is the "gospel," which incorporates the "Torah." Second, the witness of Scripture is assumed to address future audiences with what we might call a durative present tense. Its revelation pertains directly "to us and to our children forever, to observe all the words of this Torah" (Deut. 29:29b [Heb.: 29:28b]). The Torah is presented as a covenant being read and made "with us . . . but also with those who are not here with us today" (Deut. 29:14–15 [Heb.: 29:13–14]; cf. 32:46; 6:2, 7).

There are similar features in Isaiah; we have already noted the reference to "Torah and testimony" in 8:18. Likewise, 59:21–22 repeats the formulation of words not departing "from your mouth, or out of the mouths of your children, or out of the mouths of your children's children . . . from now on and forever." This verse corresponds closely, in its opening words, "This is my covenant with them," to the Torah of Moses. Does "this" covenant now include the testimony of the book of Isaiah alongside the Torah of Moses? These verses in the context of the book of Isaiah are unusual. They may be a Scripture-conscious redaction, relating this biblical book of Isaiah to the Torah.

Who "Wrote" the Book of Isaiah?

Another characteristic of Scripture according to the Torah of Moses is the naming of a specific person, "Moses," as the one who "has written" it "to the very end" (Deut. 31:24) and who is a prophet par excellence (Deut. 34:10–12). This feature includes assumptions that Moses is a historical person and that he has in some sense "written" the book of the Torah, which is elsewhere called "the Torah of Moses." Although not every book of Scripture had an explicit author, the ones that did found their precedent in the Torah of Moses.

The claim that Moses wrote the Torah is complicated. There is no mention of him even retrospectively as a writer in the book of Genesis. What connects Genesis most obviously to the other parts of the Torah are the promises of God given to the forerunners of Moses and the genealogies that lead to the birth and the naming of Moses in Exod. 2:10. Likewise, the account of Moses' death and burial in Deuteronomy 34 includes a reference to Joshua, who continues what Moses had begun—"the Israelites obeyed him, doing as the LORD had commanded Moses" (Deut. 34:9). In brief, one may say that Genesis provides a witness to the word of the Lord that existed since creation, long before Moses. This word of the Lord is integrated with the words of Moses' own personal testimony in Exodus. Premodern scholars sometimes speculated that Joshua may have written the last chapter of Deuteronomy about the death of Moses.

With these limitations in mind, we might say that these claims about Moses oscillate between designation and description. On the one hand, Moses may be called "the designated writer" of the book without eliminating the obvious presence of other "writers" of parts of it and editors who included the notice about him in Deut. 31:24–29. On the other hand, Moses is described in the book. The five-book Torah provides the extensive account of him—from his birth to his death. The description of him as a prophet without equal (Deut. 34:12) tells us also about the central importance of the Torah among other books of Scripture.

If we compare these statements about Moses with the modern search for an "author," a number of problems arise. The term has changed in its usage, often dramatically, over the centuries. The so-called King James Version of 1611, for example, employed the word "author" only three times in its translation of both the OT and NT (1 Cor. 14:33; Heb. 5:9; 12:2). In each case, the "author" is God. In these instances, "author" has nothing to do with writing a scriptural book. Certainly, one can say God is the author of salvation, but God is plainly not the "writer" of these biblical books and cannot be their "author" in the modern sense. Although in Jewish and Christian Scripture the Torah and the gospel may be called the subject matter of revelation that God authorizes, the whole point of naming "Moses" or "Isaiah" as the ones who "have written" a biblical book is to ensure that Scripture is a testimony in *human* words to a revelation that surpasses the limits of human language.

Within the book of Isaiah, Isaiah is told to write the name of his son on a tablet in 8:1. Later, he wrote down his oracles that were "testimony and *torah*," which God has him seal and preserve (8:16). Isa. 30:8 comes the closest to identifying Isaiah as a writer of this scriptural book, including a description of the book as a "witness" and its future audience, "for the time to come." The cryptic comments about a sealed book in 29:11–12 may function similarly, though the promise in 29:18 that "the deaf" will be able to hear the words of a scroll when it is read to them seems to be of a more general sort, a promise of healing "on that day." The preservation of a "writing" by Hezekiah (38:9) confirms that the book written by Isaiah may include the writing of others, besides the presence of editors who provide third-person descriptions of Isaiah. Finally, the command "Seek and read from the book of the LORD" in 34:16 is probably a reference to the Torah of Moses and specifically to the Noah story, where the animals similar to those in 34:13b–15 occur, "each one with its mate." The understanding of Moses as the one who "writes" the Torah of Moses reflected in these texts informs the role of Isaiah as "author" of the book that bears his name.

As in the Torah, Isaiah is both present and absent as a "writer" within Isaiah 1–39. The modern tendency to discern the origins of most of the traditions in Isaiah 40–66 as post-Isaianic and postexilic causes us to underestimate the similar presence of other prophets in 1–39. Since Isaiah's spouse is explicitly called a "prophetess" (8:3), we can reasonably imagine the two as engaged together in prophetic work. Anthropological literature on ecstatic religion attests to the model of husband-and-wife teams among prophets. We will never know how great a role she played. Similarly, the occurrence of an oracle—Mic. 4:1–5, almost identical to Isa. 2:2–4—might allow us to see Micah as a contributor, rather than a rival, to the Isaiah scroll. Even the borrowing of traditions in chaps. 36–39 from 2 Kings suggests that whoever we think wrote 1–2 Kings could be seen by premodern critics as contributing to the book of Isaiah without endangering the designation of "Isaiah" as the one who "has written" the book. Isaiah appears in the book as the one who has defined the guidelines for the human testimony in this book, but to which later unnamed prophets and editors could also contribute.

The descriptions of Isaiah as the book's designated writer play another important role. Since we hear so much about Moses—as a baby, a liberator, a husband, and a leader of the people—it is no wonder that later Jewish and Christian interpreters speculated about Isaiah's life, especially his birth and death. They could find enough in the sporadic depictions of him and his words to imagine an almost royal figure, highly educated, neither a hostile satirist like Amos nor a soul as sentimental and pathetic as Hosea.

Isaiah, like Moses, is a prophet. But his role as the designated writer entails a function for him not obvious from what we know of pre-exilic prophecy. He now belongs to the "prophets" who wrote Scripture, along with Solomon and David, who are not identified as professional prophets in ancient Israel. Just as Jews could say that Scripture was written by the "prophets," Christians began to describe the Christian Bible as written by the "holy prophets" and "your [or 'the'] apostles" (2 Pet. 3:1–2).

Beyond designating and describing a writer, the name of Isaiah also provides a shorthand title for the entire book. Furthermore, in 12:1–6, the only passage in Isaiah 1–39 that anticipates explicitly God's turn from "anger" to "comfort," there is a play on the Hebrew meaning of the name of Isaiah ("salvation of God" or "God is salvation"). The hymnist declares, "Surely God is my salvation" and immediately takes up the testimony of Isaiah to declare, "I will not be afraid!" This appeal to Isaiah is not strictly historical, but finds in his name a witness coinciding with that of the book of Isaiah. Through Isaiah's name alone, we hear in Isaiah 1–39 an adumbration of a central theme—salvation—also found in Isaiah 40–66. In this way, "Isaiah" is personally linked to his message throughout the entire book.

The Major Parts of Isaiah 1–66

The book begins with a title labeling it as "the vision of Isaiah." The term "vision" reflects pre-exilic language more typical of Southern rather than Northern prophets. As is the case with other prophetic books, such terms for a biblical book vary widely. The language of a biblical book as a prophetic "testimony" or "witness" in Deuteronomy and again in Isaiah (8:16, 18; 30:8) finds no rival here. We may describe this entire scriptural book as "The Testimony of Isaiah." The title also names this prophet in a way that lets his name serve as a short title for the book; it can be called "Isaiah."

In the book's title, the editors also name the kings of Judah in whose reign Isaiah prophesied. Hence, it may surprise us that what follows in 1:2–31 does not mention "Isaiah." Instead, chap. 1 includes both oracles and sayings from different periods to create an introduction. This chapter summarizes "the word of the LORD" and "the Torah of our God" (1:10) in the entire book, using language that occasionally resonates with the last chapter of the book (cf. 1:31; 66:24). Only with 2:1 are we reminded again of "Isaiah" himself, though no particular reign of a king is mentioned to help us locate temporally the prophecies in Isaiah 2–5. The prophecies appear as complete literary expressions, unlike the fragments reemployed in 1:2–31. Isaiah 2–5 provides a book of Isaiah in miniature, anticipating and recapitulating much of what follows. These four chapters establish the distinctive language, themes, and motifs that pervade the entire book.

From 6:1, "in the year King Uzziah died," to the end of Isaiah 39 the editors score the collection with chronological notices; these include the names and circumstances of the kings first mentioned in 1:1 (see 7:1; 14:28; 36:1; 38:1; 39:1). Although Jotham is only mentioned as the father of Ahaz in 7:1, these notices share an interest in dating chaps. 6–39 during periods at the end of kings' lives or when they are near death (cf. 6:1; 14:28; 38:1). Though 39:1–8 describes an event earlier than those depicted in the preceding narratives, it concludes with Hezekiah's description of the last days of his life. He reaffirms the truth of "the word of the LORD that you [Isaiah] have spoken" and concludes, "There will be peace and security in my days." Such chronological notice ensures the importance of human history as the stage upon which the drama of these testimonies has actually taken place. In sum, the first part of the book of Isaiah (chaps. 1–39) has a title, a prologue to the entire book (chap. 1), and a collection of prophetic materials (chaps. 2–39) associated with the prophet's name and life, which may be viewed as Part I of the book.

Isa. 40:1–66:24 comprises Part II of the book. Isa. 40:1–2 resembles minimally the notices in chaps. 6–39. Reference to Cyrus in 44:28 and 45:1 confirms the period defined by 40:1–2. This period extends from near the end of the Judean exile (the second half of the sixth century) into the future, when all nations will turn to Jerusalem to learn more of God's revelation to Israel. Isa. 40:1–2 shifts the chronological focus entirely away from the time *when* Isaiah prophesied to the future time *addressed* by his prophetic testimony. This change is marked by a new transitional introduction, Isa. 40:1–31. Isa. 40:1–31 presents themes and motifs that occur more consistently throughout Isaiah 41–66 than is the case for the introduction in 1:2–31 and its relation to chaps. 2–39. Hence, chaps. 41–66 seems more homogeneous than 2–39. We find lengthy discourses, often beginning with a summons to hear and concluding with plural imperatives encouraging whoever hears to shout for joy.

Isaiah 41–66 is made up of three parts of roughly the same length (41:1–48:22; 49:1–57:21; 58:1–66:34). They are divided by the refrain, "'There is no peace,' says the LORD [or 'my God'], 'for the wicked,'" in 48:22 and 57:21. This clever repetition plays on the last words of Hezekiah (39:8). What Hezekiah will enjoy in his lifetime, exiled Judah will soon enjoy, with the exception of "the wicked" among them. The first two of these segments (41–48 and 49–57) begin identically with an address "to the coastlands" (41:1; 49:1), who will be converted in later days (66:18–21). The third segment opens with one of the most eloquent prophetic messages in Jewish Scripture, addressed here to "my people" (cf. 40:1–2).

Isa. 40:1–2 is also significant because it begins abruptly with repeated plural imperatives, as though a group of leaders or prophets are told by God that they are commissioned to comfort future generations of Israel with the testimony Isaiah has already prepared for them. This unspecified group of persons is here charged with a task that has since ancient times been given to "prophets" or "priests." If we grant that the words of many prophets may be present in chaps. 40–66, then we may wonder if, in fact, the modern reconstruction of "Second" and "Third Isaiah" has failed partly because it could only find two of them. Isaiah 40–66 shows no interest in identifying these prophets who take up the testimony of Isaiah, though their existence as distinct from the eighth-century prophet is not to be denied. If Deuteronomy named Moses' successor, Joshua, who takes up the same word of the Lord as his forebear, Isa. 40:1–2 describes a more distant future, including unnamed prophets from many periods.

The transitional introduction, 40:1–31, emphasizes the prophecies themselves rather than the identity of the prophets. By comparison to this enduring word of God, all nations, sacrifices, rulers, and, one might add, prophets, count for "nothing" (40:14, 17, 23). The transitional introduction portrays the "former" things in later chapters (e.g., 41:21–24) as deriving not just from contemporary or past prophets, but from "the beginning . . . from the foundations of the earth." The word of the Lord has been "understood" from creation. Just as the Torah was with God at creation, long before the Sinai revelation through the prophetic witness of Moses, so Isaiah's testimony points to the word of the Lord heard from the beginning. It will be heard again, long after the time of Isaiah—in a future when God will create a new heaven and a new earth (Isa. 65:17; 66:22). Humans (including prophets) who deliver this word are, by contrast, like "grass" that arises one moment only to wither the next (40:6–8, 24).

In sum, the major divisions of the book are:

1:1, Title
1:2–31, The prologue
2:1–39:8, Part I: The testimony of Isaiah addressed to people from the death of King Uzziah of Judah (6:1) to the end of time
40:1–66:24, Part II: The testimony of Isaiah addressed to people from the end of the Exile (40:1–2) to the end of time
- 40:1–31, A transitional introduction
- 41:1–48:22, "Listen to me in silence, O coastlands!"
- 49:1–57:21, The word to the coastlands
- 58:1–66:24, The Lord's way with this diverse people

Isaiah in Jewish and Christian Scripture

Because Isaiah 1–39 never existed as an independent piece of literature, an awareness of its wider context in

Scripture should inform any commentary upon the entire book. First, the aforementioned relationship of Isaiah 1–39 to 40–66 affects the manner in which the former has meaning as part of the book of Isaiah. Second, the fact that Isaiah 36–39 derives essentially from 2 Kings 18:13–20:19 shows that the book of Isaiah is related to other portions of the Hebrew Bible. In a similar vein, the sentence "the LORD GOD is my strength and salvation" appears in both Isa. 12:2 and Exod. 15:2. Third, a Christian reenvisioning of Isaiah occurs in light of the earliest kerygma (proclamation of the "good news"; → Kerygma) regarding the nature and significance of Jesus Christ and, later, through understanding Isaiah as part of an "Old Testament" alongside the "New." Such change in context introduces a change in the import of the literature. The first of these factors has already been considered, but the last two need further comment.

The book of Isaiah and other books of Scripture share the same subject matter. The central subject matter of the Hebrew Bible is clearly the Torah, manifest most explicitly in Genesis through Deuteronomy—"the book of the Torah" (see Josh. 1:8). In Isaiah 1–39, we find references to *torah* as a way of describing the prophet's teaching (see Isa. 8:16). However, at a later editorial level, another view of the Torah reminiscent of the Torah of Moses has been introduced (see 2:3; 5:24; 8:20; 30:8; 42:4, 21, 24; 51:4, 7). Analogous to the relation between the prophetic word and God's word, the *torah* of the prophet now is identified with God's own revelation of the Torah, known most clearly in the book of Moses. If *torah* in Isa. 1:10 meant simply the teaching of the prophet, it gained new meaning, the complementarity of the revealed Torah given to Moses with that which had been revealed to Isaiah. On the one hand, one can readily understand how Isaiah 1–39 and the book of Isaiah came to be read as commentary on the Torah of Moses. On the other hand, the lack of any explicit harmonization of the Isaianic traditions with the Torah of Moses intensified the demand for interpretation of the book as a part of Scripture.

Besides understanding the book of Isaiah as testimony to God's revelation of the Torah, Jewish interpretation also found in it a source of prophetic promise and judgment, as well as a basis for attaining biblical "wisdom" rivaling that of the Solomonic books. Rabbinic interpretation sought to disclose the law/teaching of God as a guide to the obedient life. The earliest followers of Jesus shared the interpretations of Scripture of their Jewish relatives and neighbors, except that the teachings of Jesus altered their perception of the overarching subject matter of the Bible. For the first Christians, the essential message of the Bible became the gospel of Jesus Christ. The exposition of Isaiah as *torah* ceased being a primary means of biblical interpretation for early Christians (though it remained such in later rabbinic Judaism). In the NT one finds an orientation to Isaiah as wisdom (see James 1:10–11) consonant with the gospel and, above all, as prophetic promise that finds fulfillment in the kerygma of Jesus Christ.

Two sets of texts from Isaiah 1–39 were cited by more than one writer and can be considered representative moments in the Christian appropriation of Isaiah. First, Isa. 6:9–10, which states that God will prevent the revealed word from being understood, provided Christians with an explanation for why Jesus spoke in parables (Matt. 13:14–15; Mark 4:12; Luke 8:10). Only the insiders could understand. In John 12:40, the disbelief of Jesus' own disciples, despite the many signs shown them, could be explained by citing Isa. 53:1 and 6:10. The refusal of Jews in Rome to accept Paul's testimony is explained by the same prophecy (Acts 28:25–27). Finally, in Rom. 11:7–8 these same words explain why Jews generally rejected the gospel and why the gospel is now offered to the Gentiles. Numerous allusions in the NT play upon this popular interpretation. The disappointment among the first Christians when most Jews rejected the new revelation of Jesus Christ made sense once that refusal could be viewed as a fulfillment of Isaiah's own prophecy.

Second, Isa. 28:16, "I lay a foundation stone in Zion," and 8:14, "a stone of stumbling and a rock of offense," were commonly used to explain both the offense and the hidden significance of Jesus. In 1 Pet. 2:6, 8, these verses are cited along with Ps. 118:22, "the stone which the builders rejected." In Psalms as well as in other OT books, God is regularly referred to as a "rock" or as "my rock." In a related metaphor, the term "stone" was thought to belong to this same vocabulary. Jesus represents the rejected stone that now has become the foundation or cornerstone for the house of the elect. It was customary for Christian interpretation of OT symbols for God to include reference to Jesus Christ. Hence, Jesus is the spiritual "rock" (1 Cor. 10:4). To explain how the gospel came to be announced to Gentiles rather than only to Jews, Paul (Rom. 9:33) depends on both Isa. 1:9 and 8:14. The depiction of conditions after the Exile—"a few survivors" (1:9)—could be explained in Christian terms as a consequence of Israel's trying to obey the law through works rather than by faith. Isa. 8:14, then, proves to be a prediction of the later Jewish rejection of Jesus. In this way, an argument regarding how Jews should have obeyed the law (by faith) is followed by a prophetic witness to the Jewish rejection of Jesus, who is "a stone of stumbling and a rock of offense."

Isaiah became one of the most widely cited OT books in Christian preaching about the prophetic significance of Jesus' words and deeds. These examples illustrate that the subject matter of the book of Isaiah in the Christian Bible was ultimately the gospel of Jesus Christ. The differing contexts of this book in two dif-

ferent Scriptures elicited very different ways of making sense of the book within the respective communities of faith.

The Text

Unlike many other prophetic books (e.g., Jeremiah), Isaiah shows a remarkable consistency of manuscript reading from the earliest available manuscripts to the Masoretic texts of the tenth century A.D. The discovery of copies of Isaiah from about 100 B.C. among the Dead Sea Scrolls (esp. 1QIsa), confirmed the pre-Christian stability of the book of Isaiah. The Old Greek translation, preserved as the Septuagint (LXX), and other versions contain only minor differences from the Hebrew text.

COMMENTARY

1:1–31
Title and Prologue

The opening section of Isaiah contains a title and an introduction to the book. The prologue (vv. 2–31) consists of a series of independent prophetic texts (vv. 2–3, 4–9, 10–17, 18–20, 21–26, 27–31) that are loosely linked to each other through key words or themes. Most of this chapter, with the exception of 1:27–31, may have provided an introduction to a smaller collection of prophetic oracles, perhaps 2:1–10:6 or 21:1–32:20. Certainly the last unit, 1:27–31, appears to be a later, postexilic addition that presupposes themes in Isaiah 40–66 and anticipates the final chapter, Isaiah 66. The concluding verse, 1:31, plays upon the last verse of the book (66:24) with the image of a fire "not quenched." Isaiah 66 is similarly concerned with the redemption of Jerusalem as "Zion" (v. 8), along with a variety of related motifs and themes already found in this chapter. Therefore, in its present form, this chapter provides a prologue to the entire book of Isaiah.

1:1, The Title of the Book. Modeled after the same style as the titles in Amos 1:1 and Hos. 1:1, a very brief ascription of the book to Isaiah the prophet prefaces the book. The content of the entire book is described in technical prophetic terminology as a "vision" (cf. 2 Chron. 32:32) "which he saw concerning Judah and Jerusalem." The expression "Judah and Jerusalem" occurs only here and in the subsequent title of 2:1, otherwise the order of these terms is reversed (3:1, 8; 5:3; 22:21). This sequence in the title corresponds to the order in which the nation and city are treated in the introduction that follows (1:2–31): first, judgment against the rebellious people of God; and second, implications of that rebellion for the city of Jerusalem (Zion) and its inhabitants. The preoccupation with Judah, the Southern Kingdom, and its capital city probably accounts for the listing only of the kings of Judah during the time of Isaiah, with no mention of their counterparts in the Northern Kingdom, Israel.

1:2–31, The Prologue. Chap. 1 summarizes and prefigures the content of the book of Isaiah through a scenario of God's purging and redeeming the nation of Judah. The people of Judah, brought up as God's offspring, have forgotten their divinely appointed heritage and grown ignorant of their relationship to God. Their disobedience consists of open rebellion (vv. 2, 28) and sinful acts (vv. 4, 28). Verse 3 epitomizes the prophet's indictment against them: "An ox recognizes its owner; even an ass [knows] its master's crib. [But] Israel does not recognize [anything]; My own people do not understand at all." There is redemption for only a "few survivors" (v. 9), those who "return to her [Zion] by righteousness" (v. 27; 35:10). In this scenario, Jerusalem as "Zion" appears as a central motif. Due to the corruption of its inhabitants, the city is called "Sodom" and "Gomorrah" (v. 10) and "a harlot" (v. 21). However, someday it will again be called "the city of righteousness, the faithful city" (v. 26).

The concept of the redemption and preservation of Zion plays a highly significant role in the composition of Isaiah, especially in chaps. 2–39. Repeatedly the prophet assures the leaders and the people that they must not be afraid. "Zion" is God's special habitation, his "holy mountain," that will not ultimately fall to the enemy. Belief in the "inviolability of Zion" may derive from the eighth-century prophet himself or from a later period, perhaps the reign of Josiah in the seventh century, after the Northern Kingdom had been taken into exile by the Assyrians. Regardless, it now accurately highlights an important, recurring note throughout the presentation of the prophet's message.

The title and the prologue provide a context for interpreting the entire book of Isaiah. On the one hand, the whole book is associated with the eighth-century B.C. prophet Isaiah and his message. Just as the book of Psalms came to be associated with David, despite the presence of later psalms (Ps. 72, "of Solomon"), and just as Proverbs is linked with Solomon, despite later editing (Prov. 25:1), so the unity of the book of Isaiah is asserted by its relationship to the prophet and his message. Anticipating a later distinction between parts of the book in terms of the "former" and "latter things" (chaps. 41–48), 1:27 distinguishes between prophetic claims upon Zion "before" the Exile and those "afterward." On the other hand, the introduction emphasizes the topical import of the prophet's word as a source of the word and law of God. Though the Assyrian siege of Jerusalem in 701 B.C. still shimmers here

and there behind some of the traditions in Isaiah 1, the present context employs them to make a historical generalization regarding God's judgment and redemption of Judah. Biographical dimensions of the prophet himself find no place in this introduction, just as they remain absent in Isaiah 40–66. In the book of Isaiah generally, the message of the prophet takes precedence over interest in the exigencies of the prophet's "life." The introduction itself aims at the enduring implications of that message for future generations by emphasizing a pattern of divine response to the chosen people: God's wrath is a means of purging; it is accompanied by a demand for repentance and right action and is followed by a vision of the full restoration of both the people and the city.

2:1–39:8

Part I: The Testimony of Isaiah from the Death of King Uzziah to the End of Time

2:1–4:6

Promises and Judgments of Zion

In the initial section of prophecies, two promise oracles bracket a collection of judgment oracles. The topical concern in the introduction, God's word to both Judah and Jerusalem, is amply illustrated throughout these prophecies. Their setting suggests a period of relative calm before the storm, of complacency and injustice that the prophet eloquently condemns.

2:1–5

Zion, the City of God's Law and Word

2:1, A Second Title. The title in 2:1, though shorter, is remarkably similar to that in 1:1. It repeats the inverted order of "Judah and Jerusalem" in contrast to the usual expression in the oracles themselves. This title helps to distinguish the introduction from the oracles that follow. The title appropriately corresponds to the section 2:2–4:6, with its threats and promises directed solely to the Southern nation and its capital.

2:2–5, Zion, the City of God's Law and Word. The stress on the law, or Torah, and God's word (v. 3) from Zion, together with the ideal of a permanent end to war (v. 4), suggests that the tradition derives from sometime after the destruction of Jerusalem. As in later apocalyptic literature the description of the city's restoration is here accompanied by cosmic changes "in the latter days" (v. 2). Most of this oracle (vv. 2–4) is identical with Mic. 4:1–3, and the title in 2:1 may also reflect its original association with the prophet Isaiah, rather than Micah.

In most collections of prophetic oracles, judgment oracles precede oracles of promise, instead of the order here. One explanation for this variation may be that the ordering does, in fact, place a promise oracle (2:2–5) immediately after the negative conclusion of the introduction. In addition, 2:2–5 makes an excellent transition by picking up themes from Isaiah 1, and yet, because of the title in 2:1, one is not permitted to confuse it with the introduction itself. It predicts the restoration of Zion and foresees a time when the word and the Torah ("teaching" or "law") of God will be taught to the entire world from Jerusalem.

The term *torah* in 1:10 probably means simply "the teaching" of the prophet Isaiah (cf. 8:16). However, 2:3 appears to interpret this same word in terms of the larger revealed Torah, which came to be associated with the "book of the law" (Genesis–Deuteronomy; see Josh. 1:8). In the formation of Jewish Scripture, the book of Isaiah was edited to reflect its role in a larger collection of books, with the Torah as its central subject matter. As a result, one may appreciate why later Jewish interpretation viewed Isaiah primarily as prophetic commentary on the revealed Torah. Isa. 2:2–5 points to this larger context for the book of Isaiah, but does not take the next step of demonstrating practically how parts of Scripture will be read in the light of each other.

2:6–22

The Proud Made Low

In a peroration of judgment against arrogant and idolatrous leaders, the prophet's message is made memorable by a refrain that describes the humiliation of the proud. By contrast, "God alone will be exalted in that day" (vv. 11, 17). Some of the argument against dependence on soothsayers, diviners, and graven images seems more pertinent to later conditions of apostasy during the Exile and afterward. Nevertheless, the composition follows logically after the preceding unit because of its assurance that God will be exalted, which is similar to the preceding claim that the mountain of God "shall be established as the highest of the mountains" (2:2).

3:1–4:1

Judgment on Judah's Leaders and Zion's Daughters

Continuing the theme of God's wrath against wicked leaders and the immorality of rich landowners, the message points again to a coming social upheaval that will expose their false security.

3:1–12, Misguided Leaders. The prophets describe an impending famine and political anarchy. Children and random survivors suddenly become national leaders. Merely having a mantle becomes grounds for holding

a position of authority, but such candidates will resist the opportunity because there is no food at home. Again, this portrayal recalls the preceding unit, reflecting a catalogue of consequences for those who, in a time of relative prosperity, arrogantly hold high offices and lead the people astray. In the last verses, the righteous have hope of receiving help according to their own deeds, while the wicked will reap what they have sown.

3:13–15, Against the Vineyard's Destroyers. This unit interrupts the consistent theme and style of the tradition in which it now stands. Its reference to God's judgment of "the people" offers a loose bridge to the preceding verse, with its mention of "my people." The sudden mention of "the vineyard," with no explicit explanation of what it symbolizes, presumes some prior knowledge of its usage in Isaiah's oracles. The term occurs rarely in this way, once with an explanation in the "song of the vineyard" (5:1–7) and again in 27:1–7 in a promise of restoration that depends upon elements in 5:1–7. Verses 13–15 may have belonged originally with 5:1–7, perhaps between 5:3 and 5:4, in which case they once would have formed part of a juridical parable. In a juridical parable, the king or audience is asked to judge a case. After the case is decided, the one presenting it as a parable implicates the judge. The ones judging unknowingly judge themselves. Other examples of this type of parable in the Bible include David's confrontation with Nathan in 2 Sam. 12:1–13, as well as his being tricked by the wise woman of Tekoa (2 Sam. 14:4–17). In the context of Isaiah, these verses provide a graphic, summarizing indictment ("It is you!") directed against the leaders in Judah, one that resonates with the more detailed explication of the metaphor in 5:1–7. This vineyard imagery becomes a major way of explaining the rationale and the nature of God's judgment in Isaiah 1–39.

3:16–4:1, Complacent Daughters of Zion. The city's wealthy women are mocked for their self-preoccupation, which is illustrated by an obsession with hairstyles, lavish clothing, and jewelry. Judgment will fall upon them no less than upon the corrupt men who have been the city's leaders.

4:2–6
The Glory of Survivors in Zion

The oracle in 4:2–6 maintains continuity with the oracles immediately preceding it through the theme "the daughters of Zion." Here they emerge "in that day," washed clean of past "bloodstains." Similar to that of 2:2–4, the promise of God involves an end to the judgment of Zion. In this section, only 2:2–4 and 4:5 speak of Zion as a "mountain," though the related depiction of the proud brought down and God being exalted recurs. The oracle secures, from a postexilic perspective, confidence that Zion will be restored and will surpass its former glory. God will carry his chosen people through the worst purging judgment, without ever abandoning the goal of blessing them when they are transformed into an obedient and righteous nation.

5:1–7
The Song of the Vineyard

Verses 1–7 introduce "a song of my beloved," the owner of a cherished vineyard (vv. 1–2). Despite thoughtful planting, loving care, and diligent protection of the fertile field, the vineyard yields worthless, sour grapes. This poetic complaint is suddenly ("and now. . . ," v. 3) transformed into a demand for legal adjudication by the listeners, the inhabitants of Jerusalem and Judah (vv. 3–4). The guilty party, still cast in metaphorical terms, is sentenced by the prophet (vv. 5–6). Then the author deciphers the parable explicitly and provides a summarizing indictment of the people of Jerusalem and Judah (v. 7). The tradition may derive originally from a longer juridical parable (see 3:13–15) and certainly retains the force of an invitation to judge unknowingly oneself. As poetry it depends on an observation about what is natural and unnatural, in a manner typical of wisdom literature (see Prov. 25:19; 26:11; Sir. 27:6). Prophets frequently use the logic of wisdom literature to make their arguments incisive and unavoidable (see, e.g., Amos 3:3–8). In its present context, this song represents one of several key "songs" (see Isa. 12; 26) in Isaiah 1–39 that mark transitions between prophetic subcollections and summarize the import of prophetic traditions, either immediately preceding or following them. As "songs," these traditions contribute to our conception of the message of the book by looking forward to a time when Israel "will have a song in the night" (30:29), and especially "a new song" (42:10).

Finally, distinctive elements occurring in the song of the vineyard have been picked up and used again in other parts of Isaiah 2–39. For example, the expression "briers and thorns" occurs nowhere else in the Hebrew Bible and is applied repeatedly to describe the effect of God's judgment on Judah and other nations, especially Assyria (7:23–25; 9:18; 10:17; 32:13). This unit is significant because, as with the first chapter, it establishes a general pattern of God's response to believers, one that can apply to later generations, long after the specific historical events that the prophet himself addresses.

5:8–30
One Side of a Framework of Judgment Against Ephraim and Judah

Around the testimony of Isaiah, 6:1–9:7, two sets of judgment oracles have been placed to form a double

inclusio, or bracketing frame. The outer framework contains seven woe oracles: six on one side, and one on the other. Within this framework is another *inclusio* composed of judgment oracles punctuated by a refrain, "for all this his anger is not turned away; his hand is stretched out still" (5:25; 9:12, 17, 21). To distinguish the framework from the traditions that follow, the same refrain has been added as a conclusion to the seventh woe oracle (10:4). This editorial arrangement contributes significantly to the way in which these oracles are read together in the book. Addressing similar parties, as did the oracles in 2:6–22 and 3:1–12, the woe oracles on both sides (5:8–23 and 10:1–4) criticize rulers and leaders in Jerusalem. Thus they have the effect of maintaining continuity with the earlier oracles in chaps. 2–3, while placing further emphasis on the responsibility of leaders who, during the events lying behind 6:1–9:7, bring about the destruction of the Northern Kingdom, Israel. The core traditions of the testimony complement the poetry of the framework through narrative descriptions of the prophet Isaiah's encounter with the Judean king Ahaz and other national leaders.

Alongside the woe oracles in this section, the other judgment oracles in the framework are directed against both Judah and Israel. They foresee the defeat of the Northern Kingdom by the Assyrians (5:26–30). The intrigue attested within the testimony centers on this very issue, whether or not Judah should join a coalition with Israel and Syria against the Assyrians around 735 B.C. These events immediately precede Israel's defeat and exile in 722. The refrain associated with these judgment oracles that surround the testimony is employed editorially as a major motif elsewhere in Isaiah 1–39, even finally applied in judgment to the victorious Assyrians (14:24–27).

5:8–24
Six of Seven Woe Oracles

The woe oracles condemn various groups in Jerusalem and Judah, including wealthy landholders, drunkards, arrogant sages, and corrupt judges. The seventh woe oracle (10:1–4a) probably once stood at the beginning of this collection. The first two oracles make the most substantial case against Jerusalem's leaders and now provide an initial heightening of concerns illustrated by the core traditions in the narrative testimony of Isaiah (6:1–7:9). These words of judgment in the woe oracles complement the scenario presented in the preceding song of the vineyard. In both, a promising situation is undone by a variety of self-indulgent actions on the part of those most responsible for the preservation of the Southern city and country.

5:8–14, The First Two Woe Oracles. The first oracle describes the accumulation of property by a few, as well as the undermining of the relationship between families and their land in a farm economy. The victims become sojourners in their own country and have no means to survive. The second of these oracles contrasts the thirst for excessive drink and entertainment with the starvation of persons who should be held in high esteem. The threat in v. 14 recalls the judgment of exile and designates those addressed as Jerusalem's "nobility."

5:15–17, The Proud Made Low. The nobility and throngs of people who will "go down" (v. 14) are linked to the familiar refrain of 2:6–22, in which the proud are "brought low" and "humbled." This echo of an opening section of the book of Isaiah establishes a consistent idiomatic rendering of the divine word of judgment across these prophetic traditions, one applicable to Judah as well as to Assyria (10:33–34).

5:18–24, The Fourth, Fifth, and Sixth Woe Oracles. The prophetically misguided, the morally inverted, those wise in their own eyes, drunkards, and bribe takers are the objects of indictment in the fourth, fifth, and sixth oracles. A threat follows, introduced by a typical "therefore" as in the previous woe oracles (v. 13). In these threats the theme is famine and drought in the land. In v. 24 a number of expressions occur that are similar to the language in the judgment on the vineyard in 5:5–6. There is, however, a new theme struck in the second half of v. 24. The prophetic judgment is identified with the demands of the law, found in Deuteronomy (see Amos 2:4). Here, the interpretation of the book of Isaiah is held together within a larger context of Scripture, including the Torah revealed through Moses. Although the prophetic oracles themselves do not directly cite the book of the Torah, this note assures readers that these books belong together and make sense as Hebrew Scripture.

5:25–30
Judgment Oracles, "His Anger Is Not Turned Back"

The judgment oracle in 5:25 is directed against the Northern Kingdom, in contrast to the preceding woe oracles. It is followed by a graphic description of how God will use Assyria as an agent of his wrath.

5:25, A Sentence of Judgment. As part of a framework around the testimony in 6:1–9:7, this oracle helps to explain the reason for God's eventual destruction of both Israel and Judah. By contrast, the historical events within the testimony depict only the intrigue between prophet and the Judean king just prior to the exile of the Northern Kingdom, more than a century before Judah would suffer a similar fate.

Verse 25 begins abruptly with a hinge word, "therefore," like that introducing the threat following a woe oracle in the immediately preceding verse. One would

normally expect an indictment to precede this threat as part of a single prophetic speech. However, the effect of this unusual use of older traditions heightens the force of the threat and allows the indictment of the preceding woe oracles to justify this threat as well. The threat in v. 25 clearly belongs to a group of invective-threat oracles, distinct from the woe oracles and ending with a familiar refrain: "On account of all this, his anger is not turned away; his hand is stretched out still." These same two lines are repeated verbatim at the end of oracles of the same type (see 9:12, 17, 21) and after the last woe oracle (10:4) on the other side of the testimony. Again this refrain, like "the proud made low" (5:15–17), becomes a way of expressing the enduring nature of God's word, eventually applied even against Assyria (14:24–27).

5:26–30, Assyria as the Agent of God's Wrath. God "whistles" for Assyria, who responds obediently as a trained animal obeys its master. Assyria's attack is compared to that of a lion seizing its prey. The land of Israel is left devastated, appearing as a place of "darkness, distress, light darkened by its cloud." This description is the same as that found in the testimony (8:22), followed by a promise that, after the Exile, those who walked in darkness will "have seen a great light."

6:1–9:7
The Testimony of Isaiah

The collection in the next passages includes prophetic autobiographical reports and narratives about the prophet's interaction with King Ahaz and concludes with promises of God's restoration. The primary historical event behind these various materials is that of the Syro-Ephraimite war (ca. 735 B.C.), which developed in response to the growing military power of Assyria (→ Assyria, Empire of).

In 738, the Assyrian king Tiglath-pileser initiated a campaign from the north into Syria and Palestine. In the reign of Judah's king Ahaz (735–715 B.C.), Israel formed a coalition with Syria against Assyria. Judah, having the benefit of some distance from the direct challenge of Assyria, refused to join that coalition. In an effort to force collaboration, the kings of Syria (Rezin) and Israel (Pekah) sought to replace by force the Judean king. Ahaz had many advisers during this precarious situation, including the prophet Isaiah (→ Ahaz).

The Syro-Ephraimite war inspired Judah to form an alliance with Assyria that led to the defeat of Syria and Israel. The Assyrians exiled all able-bodied Israelites in 722 B.C., the last record of the Northern tribes in human history (→ Exile). More than a century later, Judah faced a similar exile under the Babylonian usurpers of the Assyrian legacy (→ Babylon).

When Isaiah's word was finally rejected by King Ahaz, God instructed the prophet to "bind up the testimony" concerning these events (8:16) as a future "teaching" and a later proof of the prophet's veracity. Much within the traditions of 6:1–8:18 may derive from this specific occasion, though the older material has been expanded to address a future audience. Accordingly, the composition of 6:1–9:7 underscores the abiding significance of Isaiah's prophecies associated with a historical turning point in the life of ancient Israel.

6:1–13
Isaiah's Vocational Justification

Sometimes described as "the call of Isaiah," the autobiographical statement by the prophet in 6:1–13 is properly a report of his commissioning to deliver a particular message of judgment to the people of God. It is dated to the same year as the death of King Uzziah (736/735 B.C.). The king's son, Jotham, died either before his father (perhaps having served as coregent) or shortly after. Ahaz, Jotham's son, was king of Judah when Isaiah sought to carry his divinely appointed commission as a prophet to the Southern Kingdom. The narratives that follow (Isa. 7–8) illustrate the prophet's confrontation with Ahaz during the intrigue of the Syro-Ephraimite war.

The account opens with Isaiah's vision of God in his temple. Immediately the prophet recognizes that he is a human observer of Yahweh's heavenly council. He properly fears for his life, since the realm of the holy can be dangerous to the profane world (→ Holiness). After a purification ritual, Isaiah hears God's request that someone be found to represent the heavenly ones on earth by announcing their decision. A similar scene is described by the prophet Micaiah, son of Imlah, in 1 Kings 22:19–23. In that case, a spirit volunteers to incite the royal prophets to lie to King Zedekiah, leading him to doom. In Isaiah 6, the prophet himself volunteers to be the messenger. However, the message he hears is harsh. Moreover, it is coupled with a command to dull the people's senses so that they are not able, through the hearing of it, to change their actions and be healed or redeemed.

In his prophetic role as intercessor for God's chosen people, Isaiah pleads with God, "LORD, how long?" (cf. Amos 7:2, 5). The answer offers no reassurance: every house will be empty, and the land will be, like the vineyard in 5:1–7, utterly desolate. Only the final line offers the slightest hope—a "holy seed" will survive in the stump of the tree that has been cut down and burned. This possibility hints at a concept, developed less ambiguously later in the book, of a surviving remnant of Judah through which God would restore the nation of Israel.

This commissioning report implies the same fate for Judah as for Israel. The woe oracles against Judean leaders and the judgment oracles against the Northern

Kingdom surrounding the testimony underscore this assumption. The fragile optimism at the end appears as an afterthought, without in any way ameliorating the coming disaster. Only in time, well after a full contemplation of the torturous events of national devastation for both nations, can one detect a faint glimmer of hope in the stump that is left, a glimmer that will someday adumbrate a great light to those who walk in the darkness of exile (9:2).

7:1–8:15
The Prophet, King Ahaz, and the Syro-Ephraimite War

In a series of events associated with the names or naming of three children, Isaiah is depicted in the turmoil of social unrest in Judah (735–733 B.C.). The fulfillment of his commission in chap. 6 moves from direct conversation with Ahaz in chap. 7 to indirect communication with the leaders and the people regarding the word of God. The king's and the people's lack of response to the prophet's message has already been anticipated by the commissioning in chap. 6.

Occasionally, ordinary public activities of prophets could carry extraordinary significance. Besides professing oracles, prophets could dress or behave in ways that symbolized their message. Just as Hosea's marriage constituted a symbolic act of prophecy, so Isaiah's children, by their very names, carried a message throughout their lives. The Immanuel child in 7:14 seems to belong to some unnamed woman, whereas Isaiah's son Maher-shalal-hash-baz is born of "the prophetess," who is surely his wife. Unfortunately, nothing more is said about her, and nothing is known about her contribution, if any, to the message of Isaiah. In the formation of prophetic books, such historical detail becomes increasingly secondary to the message of the prophet. In this respect, a theocentric set of concerns takes the place of an anthropological interest in the phenomenon of prophecy. This tendency in the formation of biblical books coincides with the demise of classical prophecy and the formation of a Scripture in the postexilic period.

7:1–9, Ahaz and Isaiah on the Highway to Fuller's Field. In the period prior to the siege of Jerusalem, God instructs Isaiah to meet King Ahaz at a particular place with a message of hope. The account in vv. 2–9 now has a historical introduction taken from 2 Kings 16:5, reminding us that the larger context of Isaiah includes a collection of other scriptural books. Verse 2 confirms Ahaz's fear about the coalition of Syria and the Northern Kingdom. Isaiah meets the king soon after, accompanied by the prophet's son Shearjashub (Heb., "a remnant shall return"). Isaiah's message is one of comfort and assurance that God will destroy Ephraim and Syria, but with the provision that the king "not fear": the king should not seek alliances with foreign nations instead of trusting in God alone to defend the nation. The ultimatum at the end of v. 9 falls, as the context later confirms, on deaf ears.

7:10–17, Immanuel as an Unwanted Sign. In an effort to convince the frightened king, Isaiah offers to provide any confirming sign Ahaz might be able to imagine. Attempting to conceal his unwillingness to obey the prophetic word, in a gesture of false piety, Ahaz refuses to "test God" (see Deut. 6:16). The prophet retorts with a judgment oracle that repeats not only the claim that Syria and the Northern Kingdom will cease to exist on their land, but that a similar disaster will befall Judah. The time of the destruction of the two northern nations is tied to the birth and early childhood of a boy named "Immanuel" (lit., "God with us"). This name meant that the presence of God can be a source of great comfort to the righteous (Ps. 139) or, at this time, an assurance of certain judgment to those subject to God's wrath (Amos 9:2–4).

Differences in the English translations confirm that a range of problems are raised by Isa. 7:14 for Jewish and Christian interpreters. The Hebrew noun for "young woman" neither requires that she be a virgin nor precludes that possibility. The LXX rendered this noun as "virgin," which was taken in Matt. 1:22–23 to be a promise fulfilled in the birth of Jesus Christ. However, other Greek translations rendered the same noun as simply "young woman." In addition to this controversy, the Hebrew in 7:14 does not specify the tense of the relevant verb. The NJPS reads "a young woman has conceived"; the choice of the future tense, "will conceive," reflects a decision that more aptly favors the NT interpretations of this verse, but is not dictated conclusively by grammar alone.

A distinction needs to be made between a narrowly focused historical interpretation of 7:1–17 and the way in which the context of 7:1–9:7 has affected the original ambiguities of 7:14 and rendered its semantic implications, so that the original oracle now applies to other periods long after the time of the prophet. The historical setting of 7:1–17 seems clear. Because Ahaz refuses to ask for a sign to confirm divine deliverance from the Syro-Ephraimite threat to the north, the prophet rebukes the king and offers the sign anyway. Before a child named "Immanuel" will reach an age sufficient to eat solid food, the northern threat will be removed, but Judah will then face an even greater one. In the original historical setting, "the woman" appears to be a person known to the king and to Isaiah, and the child's life should be contemporaneous with events of the next few years.

Within 7:1–9:7, the original historical situation has been interpreted within a context of future prophecies. Consequently, the import of the child has gained a profundity far exceeding the original political circumstances of 7:1–17. The reference to the child's eating "curds and honey" has been applied to a future

Assyrian attack on Ahaz (7:20–21) and related, by a later editor, to the miraculous feeding of those who are left in the land of Judah after its defeat (7:21–22). The unusual name "Immanuel" (Heb., "God with us") now implies the destruction of Judah as well as that of Syria and Ephraim (8:6–8) and, finally, of the nations that will so threaten Judah (8:9–10). The "child sign" seems to continue in 9:1–7, where the birth of a child (9:6) portends a claim of God's presence with Israel (9:4) in the period after the Exile, when "the people walked in darkness" (9:2). Even though 9:1–7 was once an independent, nonmessianic "royal psalm," its present context in the book invites a "messianic" interpretation. One should not, therefore, be surprised that 7:14 has engendered similar "messianic" expectations among both Jews and Christians.

7:18–24, Future Implications. As a series of interpretations based on the Immanuel prophecy, a set of four "in that day" prophecies follows. The first two concern God's use of Assyria in a manner typical of the prophecy of the eighth-century B.C. prophet. The last two "in that day" oracles (vv. 21–22, 23–25) are more complicated. The first combines an initially negative picture—farms reduced to a few surviving livestock—with the impression that each cow will produce an "abundance of milk." Instead of continuing the immediately preceding references to milk curds and wild honey as a sign of desperate people living off a barren land, one can imagine a land miraculously flowing with milk and honey. The second of these oracles returns to a description of destitution like that in the commission (6:11–12), repeatedly employing the unusual pair of words "briers and thorns" indicative, again, of conditions depicted earlier in the song of the vineyard in 5:1–7.

8:1–4, A Third Child and a Bleak Future. As an additional sign of the impending collapse of Syria and Ephraim, the prophet secured officials to witness a large tablet he had prepared on behalf of his future son, Maher-shalal-hash-baz. Though what was legally accomplished remains unclear—perhaps it was a dedication to his son—the tablet undoubtedly became a matter of public record. By this means, Isaiah confronted everyone with the terrifying name, meaning "spoil speeds, booty hastes." As with Immanuel, a certain moment in the child's development would not be reached before the announced judgment would fall upon the north.

8:5–10, Further Import of Immanuel. In its present context, the prophecy in vv. 5–8 takes up once again threats associated with the Immanuel child (7:17). The metaphors contrast the meager water supply of Shiloah with the abundance of the Tigris in the Mesopotamian valley, home of Assyria. The floodwaters of that great river will rise up to the necks of those who dwell in Judah. However, the next prophecy (vv. 9–10) moves in a very different direction. As in Ps. 2:2, the nations, undoubtedly including Assyria and later Babylon, plot against the people of God. They will be "broken," and the concluding explanation, "for God is with us," plays once more upon the name Immanuel. Here the Immanuel child represents a sign of future hope after the judgment upon Israel.

8:11–15, Fear God, Not the Nations. The same message Isaiah has given to Ahaz is now summarized in a general way. The lesson missed by Ahaz has likewise been forfeited by the people. The entire nation has failed to trust Yahweh for their security, in spite of God's threat that by such disobedience "both houses of Israel" (v. 15) will stumble, become ensnared, and be "broken."

8:16–22
A Written Testimony for the Future

In its present context, this binding and sealing of a "testimony" and "teaching" (Heb. *torah*) pertains to a moment in the life of the prophet when he first began to collect his oracles in written form. The "disciples" are probably students of the prophet or, at least, members of a group aligned with Isaiah the prophet. Some scholars speculate that these disciples could be Isaiah's children.

The written collection of oracles is clearly intended to preserve the enduring message of the prophet up to the time of the collapse of Samaria in 722/721 B.C. Furthermore, vv. 19–22 anticipate its continuing value to still later students of the traditions of Isaiah during the period of the Babylonian exile. Though they will be tempted to consult various alien mediums, they are to remain faithful to the prophetic teaching of Isaiah. The final note about exile echoes the same condition of darkness, distress, and gloom that was forecast by the oracle (5:30) just before the testimony.

9:1–7
A Child of Messianic Hope

The foreboding implications of Isaiah's message during the time of Ahaz are contrasted with promises that indicate a reversal in the historical predicament of Israel. Besides the obvious transition in 9:1, from the "darkness" of 8:22 to the "light" of 9:2–7, the reference to a child being born recalls the earlier use of children as prophetic signs in the book of Isaiah.

If 9:2–7 were treated as an independent unit of tradition, it could be considered an ancient "royal psalm," possibly used in festival celebrations concerned with the enthronement of a king in Judah, perhaps with either Josiah or Hezekiah. Similar remarkable epithets ("Wonderful, Counselor, . . . " v. 6) are found in Egyptian hymnology in praise of the pharaoh and are

typical of exaggerated language employed in ancient Near Eastern royal inscriptions. Nevertheless, just as other royal psalms have been transformed into messianic psalms in the formation of the book of Psalms (e.g., Ps. 2), this hymn in its present context no longer points back eulogistically to a familiar royal figure. Instead, it looks forward eschatologically to a restoration of the promise to David of a kingdom with "no end" (v. 7). In this book, this hymn offers, at a minimum, messianic hope for the period after the Exile (8:21–22). Cyrus came to be viewed in these terms (so Isa. 44–45), though not in a manner that would end interpretation of these messianic texts. Later generations of Jews and Christians would look for yet another future person who could more completely fulfill what is here promised.

9:8–10:4

The Other Side of a Framework of Judgment Against Judah and Ephraim

9:8–20, Judgment Oracles, "His Anger Is Not Turned Back." Three judgment oracles with identical concluding refrains indict the Northern Kingdom for wrongdoing, arrogance, and refusal to trust in Yahweh. Before the last of these oracles, their original audience is made clear by the claim, "Together they are against Judah" (v. 21). Undoubtedly, "they" denotes northern Israel and Syria, as mentioned in the testimony (e.g., 7:1–2).

10:1–4, The Seventh Woe Oracle. The woe oracle in 10:1–4 is the last of an original collection of seven. The rest are clustered together in 5:8–24 as part of the framework around the testimony of Isaiah. This one offers a lengthy attack on corrupt Judean judges who leave the people without any recourse to justice. An editor has added the refrain, familiar in the preceding oracles of judgment, to the end of this woe oracle. This final repetition concludes the subsection (5:8–10:4) by highlighting a recurring theme, the way in which God's "anger" and "hand" address both Israel and Judah.

10:5–11:16

Woe to Assyria and Promise to Judah

Though the opening sections of the book of Isaiah have given most weight to woe, 10:5–11:16 strikes a more positive note. This collection is composed of prophetic judgments against Assyria and future promises to Judah. They often pick up elements from judgment oracles in the previous sections and interpret them in terms of a divine promise that the enemy will be defeated and Judah will be restored.

A key motif that weaves throughout this section and connects it contextually to the previous one is a play upon the term "rod." It first occurs in the testimony (9:4) in a series of metaphorical synonyms, including "yoke" and "staff." Here, the judgment against Assyria begins with its identification as the "rod" and "staff" of God's anger (10:5). Even though Assyria arrogantly assumed its victory really was achieved by means of its own "hand" (10:10, 13, 14), in contrast to the above mentioned refrain, "his [God's] hand is stretched out still" (5:25; 9:12, 17, 21; 10:4). God mocks Assyria's folly by asking if an "ax," "rod," or "staff" really has any power over the one who wields it (10:15). Israel, then, is encouraged not to fear Assyria, which is merely a "rod" and "staff" in God's hand (10:24), and is promised that the "yoke" of Assyria will someday be removed from around Israel's neck (10:27). Finally, a messianic king is to arise as a "shoot of the stump of Jesse" (see 6:13) who will chastise the wicked with the "rod" of his mouth (11:4).

10:5–15, Assyria, the Arrogant Rod of God. This account of God's anger at Assyria turns on a theological principle found elsewhere in the OT. Though God does not have the same relationship with other nations as with Israel, these other nations are instruments of divine activity in the world. Hence, God is concerned about how they will assess the historical experience of Israel. In a similar way, Deut. 32:27 explains that God will turn away from punishing Israel if the other nations begin to say, "Our hand is triumphant; Yahweh did not perform all this."

10:16–19, Assyria, Like a Condemned Vineyard. As Yahweh threatened to burn and devour even the "briers and thorns" of the vineyard (5:1–7), so Assyria confronts divine punishment.

10:20–23, A Remnant Shall Return. The interpretation introduced by the stereotypic phrase "in that day" stands in contrast to the last two lines of the preceding oracle against Assyria. There the "remnant" or "remainder" of trees, which symbolize Assyria, will be so few a child could write on all of them. Here, the few Judahites who survive the Exile will be a symbol of hope (→ Remnant).

10:24–27a, God's Anger Turns Toward Assyria. Encouraging those in Zion not to be afraid, the prophet foresees a time when the anger against Judah will be directed against its present enemy, Assyria (see 14:24–27).

10:27b–32, The Advancing Enemy. An enemy, probably Assyria, traverses the map in its march toward an attack upon Jerusalem.

10:33–34, The Proud Assyrians Made Low. Echoing phrases from 2:6–22 and 5:15–17, what the Assyrians

did to arrogant leaders of Jerusalem and Judah will now be done to them.

11:1–9, A Shoot from the Stump of Jesse. Picking up on the brief note in 6:13b, the next verses continue the messianic promises of 9:1–7 in terms that require a fundamental change in the natural order of animal and human relations (vv. 6–9). The text envisions a time of peace *(shalom)* when everyone in the world will have full knowledge of Yahweh.

11:10–16, A Second Exodus for the Remnant Among the Nations. In a further interpretation of Ephraim and Judah as "the seed" in the stump of Jesse (11:1), a promise oracle identifies Judeans scattered among the nations as a special "ensign." A second time (v. 11), the Diaspora will be drawn together from the nations to form the nation of Israel (→ Diaspora).

12:1–6
Anticipatory Praise

This song expresses confidence in God and praise for God's promised blessings. It stands between the first major collection of Isaiah's oracles and the oracles against the nations (chaps. 13–23). Its most important role in the book is to foreshadow the contribution of Isaiah 40–66. The crucial lines occur in the first verse: "Your anger turned away; you comforted me." This is the only occasion, outside the refrain in the framework around the testimony, that this same noun and verb ("anger," "turned") are found together in the book of Isaiah. Moreover, the second line is the only place in Isaiah 1–39 where an overt statement is made regarding God's "comforting" Judah, the basic theme of the second half of the book. Isa. 40:1 opens accordingly: "Comfort, comfort my people, says your God." The second verse in chap. 12 picks up again the basic message of the prophet to Ahaz (Isa. 7; 8:11–15). The assertion that God's name will be "exalted" echoes the refrain in 2:11, 17; 5:16.

The song casts the traditions of 1–39 within the perspective of the book as a whole. The two basic parts of the book of Isaiah are presented as belonging to two different periods: a time of God's anger against Judah and Jerusalem (Isa. 1–39) and a time of comfort (40–66). Already 1:24–26, in the prologue, hinted at this same temporal distinction between a period of prophetic condemnation followed "afterward" by restoration. In Isaiah 40–55, this same distinction is made between the revelation of "former things," which by implication are found in Isaiah 1–39, and "new" or "latter things" in Isaiah 40–66. Historical events of the eighth century B.C. clearly do surface at many places in Isaiah 1–39, though the wider context of the book transforms the older prophecies into a message addressed to later generations. In Isaiah 12 "the word of God" appears as part of a transhistorical description of the nature of God's activity in the world.

In sum, Isaiah 12 illustrates once more that the book of Isaiah is not primarily an antiquarian record of prophetic activity, but is intended to provide a depiction of the nature of God's relationship to a chosen people and to humanity in general. This organization of ancient traditions in Scripture presumes their value to later generations and, like the psalm in Isaiah 12, addresses future readers in a "present tense." However, this specific orientation to ancient prophetic traditions does not deny that they finally remain a tapestry of human words deriving from different times and places.

13:1–23:18
Oracles Against the Nations

Prophetic books often include oracles, clustered together, against various nations. Similar collections occur in Amos 1:3–2:6, Jeremiah 46–51, and Ezekiel 25–32. The earliest comparable example of oracles against a foreign nation occurs as part of the activity of the Moabite seer Balaam (Num. 22–24). As in that instance, prophecy against other nations is often associated with holy war. The first verses of the oracle directed to Babylon in Isaiah 13 suggest just such an application. However, the scope of God's confrontation with the nations in Isaiah 13–23 far exceeds that of a particular moment of prophetic activity. It extends to the entire world (13:11), involves cosmic changes (13:13), and entails a final reordering of relationships among all the nations. In the most radical terms, God will "in that day" be able to call Egypt "my people" and Assyria "the work of my hands" (19:24–25). A comparison of 13:1–16 with the opening verses of the prophetic promises in Isaiah 24–27 shows that these oracles against the nations are linked closely to an equally radical vision of the restoration of Israel. Just as Judah and Israel experience the wrath of God in response to their disobedience and yet look forward to a promise of divine restoration, so too judgment of nations according to the "purpose" or "plan" of God (see 14:24–27; 19:12, 17; 23:8–9) has beyond it a promise of future world peace.

Other elements within Isaiah 13–23 show how the place of these oracles within the larger composition affects their interpretation. Some expressions within the judgment prophecies against Judah in Isaiah 1–12 recur in these threats against the nations. The imagery of the proud made low (13:11; 14:8–15; 16:6; 17:4) resonates with the refrain in 2:6–22. In 14:24–27 a direct play is made upon the refrain "his hand is stretched out still" in the judgment oracles of 5:25 and 9:8–20. At several places one hears again about the "rod," "staff," or "yoke" of nations that will be broken (14:5, 25, 29) in a manner that clearly recalls the same motifs in the

promises present in 9:4 and throughout 10:1–11:16. This set of repeated words and phrases, which deepens in its religious significance, provides continuity throughout the book.

The depiction of how God uses and relates to other nations precedes a similar concern with God's relation to the Persians in Isaiah 40–66. The appearance of Cyrus is introduced in 41:25 by the expression "I stirred up one from the north," using the same verb as 13:17, "I am stirring up the Medes against them." As with the nations, Cyrus's actions conform to God's "purpose" or "plan" (44:28; cf. 14:26), though he does not realize it (45:5; cf. 5:5–15; 14:5). Likewise, the threat against Babylon (13:17–22) closely parallels similar prophecies in 46:1–4 and 47:1–15. Once again, Isaiah 13–23 is significant because it marks out a specific religious vocabulary, providing transhistorical terms by which a believer can describe the world and the role of nations within it.

13:1–22, Against Babylon. The title (v. 1) sets the segment of traditions in chap. 13 apart from the preceding ones and associates it with the prophet Isaiah in the same style of 2:1. This and many of the prophecies that follow are designated by a technical term that can be translated either "oracle," "load," or "burden" (e.g., 13:1; 14:28; 15:1; 17:1).

13:1–16, A Holy War. The oracle encompasses the principal elements of a holy war, including inducement for national leaders to summon a public lamentation (cf. Joel 1:13–14; 2:15–17). The nature of this battle leads to consideration of the "day of the LORD" and a final cosmic punishment of evil throughout the whole world. Though the title has assigned this threat to Babylon, the elusive nature of the opening lines allows these words against Babylon to be viewed as a typological account of the final victory of God over all the world's unrighteous "in that day."

13:17–22, The Downfall of Babylon. Only here does the imagery identify explicit historical parties. The Medes, longtime allies of the Babylonians, will turn against them. Certainly, in the present context this threat anticipates the rise of the Persians and the defeat of the Babylonians, who were victorious over Judah about a century after the time of Isaiah's prophetic activity. Clearly, this portion of the book presumes the historical context of Isaiah 40–66.

14:1–27, Judah in Contrast to Babylon and Assyria.

14:1–2, The Captors Are Captives. Judah and Israel are promised that those who took them into exile will one day become slaves themselves (see 61:5–7).

14:3–23, Taunt Against Babylon. The proud boasts of Judah's antagonist are portrayed as so pretentious as to be an assault on heaven itself (vv. 13–14). Hence, Babylon faces complete humiliation. In mockery of Babylon's sense of superiority, the dead in that once great nation will be left unburied in the streets.

14:24–27, Israel's Judgment Applied to Assyria. Judah is promised that Assyria will reap the same consequences as did Israel. The refrain in 5:25; 9:12, 17, 21; 10:4, found within the framework around the testimony of Isaiah, is taken up and applied to Assyria (14:26–27). Likewise, the author proclaims a fulfillment of the promise in 9:4 regarding God's breaking of the "yoke" and "burden" that troubles Judah.

14:28–32, Against Philistia. Its title indicates that the date of the oracle in 14:28–32 coincides with the death of Ahaz, even as the commission report in Isaiah 6 is dated to the year Uzziah died. The death of a king represented a momentous and potentially dangerous period in which some word from God might seem timely. As in 10:5, a Mesopotamian power is called a "rod" of God. Philistia will suffer the effects of famine and destruction.

15:1–16:14, Against Moab. Two prophecies of threat occur in 15:1–9 and 16:1–5, followed by a lamentation with an additional prophecy in 16:12–13. Isa. 16:4b–5 provides a messianic promise of the restoration of David's throne about to be fulfilled after the destruction of Moab.

17:1–11, Against Damascus and Israel. The core of the prophecy in 17:1–6 probably derives from the period of the Syro-Ephraimite war (735–733 B.C.). Damascus and Israel, the northern opponents to Judah at that time, provoke God's anger. In expressions familiar already (2:6–22), "the glory of Jacob [Israel] will be brought low" (v. 4). Within this judgment is a promise (vv. 7–8) that "in that day" people will recognize "their Maker" and no longer worship objects of their own making. This concern with idolatry seems typical of conditions in the exilic period. By wedding traditions from different periods, the prophecy gains a topical quality and is no longer interpreted solely in connection with a singular historical event.

17:12–14, Against Assyria. The judgment directed to Damascus and Israel is followed by an oracle against their enemy, Assyria. Though these verbs do not explicitly name the one to be defeated, the expressions chosen hark back to descriptions of Assyria. The "roar of many waters" recalls the imagery in 8:5–8. The "roaring" noise is reminiscent of the description of the Assyrian onslaught in 5:26–30. The sudden terror "at evening time" in v. 14 undoubtedly brings to mind the events of 701 B.C., when Jerusalem was under siege and wondrously rescued by divine intervention (see 37:33–38). The last verse offers a summary and an appraisal of how these events fit into the plan of God, similar to the summary in 14:26–27. In the description of those who "spoil," "rob," or "plunder" echoes the name of Isaiah's child Maher-shalal-hash-baz ("spoil speeds, booty hastes"; see 8:1–4). By not explicitly

naming the enemy, the text asserts a pattern of how God can respond to any who might be temporarily victorious against God's own people.

18:1–7, Against Ethiopia. The mention (v. 1) of ambassadors who arrive on papyrus ships to visit Judah may harbor references to the Ashdod rebellion of 713–711 B.C. or, earlier, to the organization of an anti-Assyrian rebellion by Egypt in 705–701 B.C. In both cases Hezekiah seems to have joined the coalition. All attempts to find security through alien alliances, rather than by reliance on God alone, are doomed. The last verse, like that of 19:24–25, gives a note of promise, pointing to a time when even the Ethiopians will come to worship at Mount Zion, and it anticipates the same hope as found in 45:14.

19:1–15, Against Egypt. Under Hezekiah, Judah often looked to Egypt as an ally in the hope of fending off northern enemies. This oracle offers a general threat against Egypt, prophesying anarchy among those who desperately consult mediums for advice (cf. 8:18–19), drying up of the Nile, and a confusion of the wisdom for which the princes of Zoan (a city in the northeastern delta region of Egypt) had been famous. The last verse contains a direct play on the language of the threat against Israel in 9:14, confirming again the topical character and vitality of these expressions describing divine wrath.

19:16–24, Israel, Egypt, Assyria: "In That Day." A series of five "in that day" oracles provides brief promissory comments that look boldly into the future. The hope expressed is remarkable in its universal breadth, envisioning the complete realization of the promise to Abraham, that through Israel all the nations of the world will someday be "blessed."

20:1–6, Assyria Against Egypt and Ethiopia. An additional comment conveys another divine response to Egypt, and now Ethiopia. The reference in the title to Ashdod suggests the time of the Philistines' revolt of 713–711 B.C., when they were defeated by the Assyrians. Isaiah is presented as performing the symbolic act of walking naked and barefoot for three years as "a sign and a portent" (v. 3). This act signifies that Egypt, and Ethiopia to the south, will both suffer the same fate as a result of their coalition with Judah in revolt against Assyria in 705–701.

21:1–10, Against Babylon. Similar to 13:17–22, the prophecy in 21:1–10 looks to the future of Judah's later antagonist. Babylon will fall to the Elamites and Medes and will be replaced as a major power by the Persians. The lamentation here is comparable to that of Isaiah 47. Again the fortunes of Assyria are made parallel to the later spoiler of Judah, Babylon.

21:11–17, Against Arabia. Dumah (v. 11), Tema (v. 14), and Kedar (v. 16) are probably all provinces of Arabia (Gen. 25:13–15). The underlying events remain obscure, despite a specific time of fulfillment mentioned in v. 16. The LXX emended "Dumah" to read "Idumea" (Edom), which might be suggested by the reference in v. 11 to Seir, a region of Edom. However, the sequence does not require that Seir and Dumah be synonymous, for the second merely describes in poetic terms the location and activity of the prophet. From whatever period these oracles may derive, they proclaim further the universal nature of God's judgment on the nations.

22:1–14, Against the "Valley of Vision." The present context makes clear that Jerusalem (see vv. 8, 10) is the object of the prophecy against the "valley of vision." The LXX unnecessarily emended the word for "vision" to "Zion" to remove any ambiguity in the title. The title is taken from v. 5 and conforms in style to other titles in the oracles against the nations. Moreover, "vision" is a term summarizing the preaching of Isaiah, with its focus on the destiny of Judah and Jerusalem (1:1; cf. 21:2). The oracle contrasts the unreserved celebration of a temporary victory (vv. 1–2) with the impending destruction of the city. One can readily imagine such a response when Judeans claimed dramatic relief from the siege of Jerusalem in 701 B.C. (37:36–38), in contrast to their despair when the Babylonians sacked the city many decades later in 586 B.C.

This tradition, similar to Isaiah 39, overtly anticipates the conditions of Babylonian exile, to which Isaiah 40–66 offers hope. The account is not simply a historical recollection of past events, but is presented as a lesson to be learned regarding what God expects of those who seek salvation in the light of past divine judgment and continuing promises.

22:15–25, Against Hezekiah's Royal Officials Shebna and Eliakim. The officials mentioned in 22:15–25 are also cited in the narratives of Isaiah 36–37 (= 2 Kings 18–19). The reference to Shebna appears to be an editorial addition based on Isa. 36:3 and 37:2. The text announces judgment against two leading officials associated with Hezekiah, just as the king himself looks to future judgment in Isaiah 39. In contrast to the king, whose prayers gain him personal redemption, the other leaders under Hezekiah meet their own fates according to their belief or lack of it. Shebna is portrayed as presumptuous and subject to divine wrath (vv. 15–19), and Eliakim, who bears the weight of the hope symbolized by the house of David, meets defeat in the end.

These elusive accounts about individuals known elsewhere in Scripture solely by their names illustrate God's continuing attention to the obedience and disobedience of specific individuals during a time of national judgment. The last verse warns that the actions

of none of these leaders was exemplary enough or sufficiently effective to avert Babylonian exile.

23:1–18, Against Phoenicia. Any collection of prophetic oracles aimed at the nations of "the whole earth" (see 13:5; 23:17) would seem incomplete without including the mighty sea traders on the northern coasts of Palestine. As in many of the other oracles, the tone is more one of lamentation than of prophecy, but with a clear note of judgment and, finally, promise at the end. Actual historical circumstances are ambiguous, though the destruction of Phoenicia is explicit. Its destiny belongs to the "purpose" of God (vv. 8–9) and, as before, results from God's hand stretched out in anger (v. 11). The once great sea trader is reduced to playing the harlot "among all the kingdoms of the world upon the face of the earth" (v. 17). This note of universality recalls the same tone present at the beginning of the oracles against the nations in 13:5, 13. The final words are a promise to Israel that all the trading goods will "be dedicated to the LORD" and will supply needs for those who remain loyal to God.

24:1–27:13
Promises and Visions of the Future

Regarded by most scholars as one of the latest sections to be included in the book of Isaiah, chaps. 24–27 combine diverse traditions, including lament (26:7–19), thanksgiving (24:14–16a), judgment oracles (24:1–13), and promises cast as songs (26:1–6; 27:2–5) or as standard prophetic oracles (27:6–11). Interspersed throughout this collection are citations from different parts of Isaiah, including a full revision of the song of the vineyard according to a new vision of the future (27:2–5; cf. 5:1–7).

What is contextually significant about this loose collection of traditions is their aim to interpret the earlier oracles against the nations (Isa. 13–23) explicitly in terms of God's future restoration of the world. Just as Babylon appears in 13:1–16 first as an unnamed representative nation, so here in chap. 24 and in 25:1–4, a representative city is the object of divine wrath. This city is described in various ways throughout these chapters: "the city of chaos" (24:10), "the palace of aliens" (25:2), "the lofty city" (26:5), "the fortified city" (27:10). Scholars have speculated without consensus regarding its original historical identity. It seems clear the biblical writers intended that the identification of this city should remain elusive, foreshadowing Israel's antagonists, as yet unnamed, in the final confrontation of God with the world's evil powers. The destruction of this enemy city stands in sharp contrast to the restoration of the city of Jerusalem, "Mount Zion" (25:6–8, 9–12). The respective fates of these two great cities, facing a reversal of their fortunes in the course of God's plan or purpose in history, constitutes a major theme in these chapters. Threats from the enemy city and its arrogant assertions of control in human affairs are interpreted from God's point of view, which looks for "that day." When "that day" comes, the world will be purged through the fire of divine wrath so that all people may live, at last, in peace, justice, and obedience to the laws of God.

Scholars debate how these traditions might form a coherent composition. Chaps. 24–26 seem to interweave (in a liturgical manner similar to Isa. 33) prophetic threats against the enemy with various prayers, including songs of lament, praise, and thanksgiving from the righteous survivors in Judah. The last chapter contains a series of short, additional eschatological judgments, each introduced with the formula "in that day" (27:1, 2, 6, 12).

24:1–26:21
The Purging Judgment of an Evil World and Israel's Praise to God

Chaps. 24–26 alternate prophetic words of judgment against unnamed enemy nations with the prayers of the redeemed in Jerusalem: 24:1–13, prophetic judgment; 24:14–16, description of praise; 24:17–23, judgment; 25:1–5, praise; 25:6–12, promise, praise, judgment; 26:1–6, praise; and 26:7–21, lament and a reassuring divine response. The collection contemplates "that day" and the final defeat of an unnamed enemy city that is a rival to Jerusalem.

24:1–13, Both the Earth and the City of Chaos Will Mourn. The surface of the earth will be catastrophically "twisted" and its inhabitants "scattered" (v. 1). This ultimate judgment of the world occurs because the people have broken the laws of "the everlasting covenant" (24:5). This same expression is used elsewhere in Hebrew Scripture to designate the special covenant God made with Noah and the world surviving the flood in Gen. 9:16. An allusion is probably being made, as well, to legal ordinances regarding land polluted with blood (Num. 35:33). This combination of allusions links the text of Isaiah to the written Torah of Moses (Genesis–Deuteronomy) with its account of covenants of revealed "laws" and "statutes" that postexilic Israel is to obey.

The last verses (vv. 7–13) describe various scenes of devastation among the people of the nations. Their joy, their singing, and their drinking of wine in celebration all come to an end. Only "a few" people survive (v. 6), and the streets of the "city of chaos" (vv. 10–13) are deserted and its gates in ruin.

24:14–16, Songs of Praise, with a Note of Lamentation. Across the promised land, people rejoice and glorify God for what has happened throughout the world. It is logical to assume this voice, though unnamed, rises from those in Judah who have seen their

vindication "on that day." The final verse expresses what may be a cryptic word of warning from the prophet to those who too readily rejoice in the defeat of their enemies. The last expression, dependent on 21:2, produces a mysterious effect, though it may be a text error and is omitted from the LXX.

24:17–23, Enemies Thrown into the Pit. Besides describing God's continuing confrontation with the surface of the planet ("the earth staggers," v. 20), this text reports that those who try to flee from the cities, as well as the disobedient "hosts of heaven," will be as prisoners in the pit. The pit is here a symbol of the dark recesses in which the shades of the dead roam with no escape. The "hosts of heaven" is a parallel expression to "the kings of the earth" and may indicate the stars that were thought to regulate human fate. More likely (and certainly a common assumption within the history of interpretation), these divine beings are to be identified as rebellious angels (Gen. 6:1–4). In the end, a restored Jerusalem, from which God will reign, will arise (v. 23).

25:1–5, Praise to God for the Destruction of the "Palace of Aliens." A prayer glorifies God for doing "wonderful things," including the destruction of "the city" of the enemy, which will never be rebuilt. God himself is Israel's "shelter" in the storm that destroys the alien aggressors.

25:6–12, Promise, Praise, and Judgment Against Moab. Various traditions support the pattern of these verses. God will provide a banquet for the elect, and death will be "swallow[ed] up forever." Verse 8 provides a hint of the comforting words, which occur in the latter half of the book, that God will himself wipe away the tears of those who once suffered. Praise by the people follows in v. 9, language reminiscent of Isaiah 12. The last verses add a searing judgment against Moab, whose pride will be laid low (2:9, 11, 17).

26:1–6, A Song of Zion, a "Strong City." Picking up the central message of Isaiah, the author portrays Jerusalem as a city of "salvation," "perfect peace," and refuge for those who continue to maintain "trust" in God. Conversely, "the lofty city," which offered false security through moral compromise and international alliances, will be "made low, . . . cast . . . down to the dust" (v. 5), recalling again the imagery from 2:6–22.

26:7–21, A Hymn of Lament and an Assuring Divine Response. An extensive song of lamentation is followed by an assurance to the effect that in "a little while" (v. 20) the time of God's judgment of the nations will be complete and the answer to the prayers of Israel's past will be answered. It expresses hope, once more, for a time of peace (v. 12) and a restoration of the nation (v. 15). Within this portrayal is a remarkable affirmation that "your dead will rise" and that divine light will fall on the darkness of the realm of the shades in Sheol (v. 19). Probably, as in Ezek. 37:1–14, the language is a hyperbolic expression of confidence that God will restore the nation of Israel, but without an explicit or developed conception of the resurrection of individuals. This ambiguity leaves open other possibilities for later readers who contemplate a more explicit conception of the restoration of the dead within the religious beliefs of Judaism and Christianity.

27:1–13
"In That Day" and "Those to Come"

In a series of four additional notes, the future is explored as a series of wondrous reversals of the earlier devastations of Judah and Israel.

27:1, Slaying of the Serpent Leviathan. Employing the common ancient Near Eastern symbolism of Leviathan, the monster of chaos, the prophet confirms God's cosmic victory over the forces of evil in the world.

27:2–5, A New Song of the Vineyard, "In That Day." These verses provide the best example in the book of Isaiah of a full recasting of an earlier oracle of judgment (5:1–7) according to a message of promise that allows a reverse interpretation of its imagery. This recasting is significant since the theme of the "vineyard" and motifs within the "song" of Isaiah 5 became constitutive throughout Isaiah 1–39.

Yahweh is presented immediately as the owner of the vineyard and as the one who waters and guards it. The key motif of "briers and thorns," applied repeatedly in Isaiah 1–39 to symbolize the implication of God's wrath (5:6; 7:23–25; 10:17; 32:13), can never invade this vineyard. On the basis of this promise, Israel is twice encouraged to make peace with God.

27:6, "Jacob Shall Take Root." As in the preceding new song of the vineyard, this promise takes up a memorable theme and asserts it in unequivocally positive tones. What was a mere seed in the stump in the commission of Isaiah (6:13b) becomes subject to a promise of new growth (so 4:2; 11:1, 10). The emphasis here is on restored Israel "filling the whole world with fruit," consonant with a theme in this section and in the oracles against the nations regarding God's judgment and renovation of the entire earth.

27:7–11, The Fortified City Lies Desolate. As in the beginning of this section, an unnamed city is deserted, its population decimated. Connected to this bleak picture is the assurance that, through the experience of exile, "the guilt of Jacob" has been removed. The prophet condemns a group of people who remain "without discernment." Perhaps the city of Samaria

and the people later described as "Samaritans," who came to be regarded by many postexilic Jews as a misguided people (→ Samaritans), provide the historical background. Regardless, in the context of Isaiah 25–27, a city represents false centers of power and pretension that can be contrasted with God's chosen people and city of Zion.

27:12–13, The Exiled Return. The section concludes with the remnant of exiled Israel returned to their land and to "the holy mountain" of Jerusalem.

28:1–33:24
Judgments and Promises to Judah

The pattern of judgment followed by promise oracles is basic to the book of Isaiah. Consistent with this pattern, Isaiah 28–35 offers a collection of, essentially, judgment oracles against Judah in chaps. 28–32, followed by a liturgical condemnation of Assyria in Isaiah 33, and then oracles of promise in chaps. 34–35. A closer examination suggests further resemblances between these chapters and other sections of the book. Within Isaiah 1–12, there were seven "woe oracles" against Judah (5:8–24; 10:1–4) around the testimony (6:1–9:7), followed by judgments against Assyria, which were introduced with a woe oracle in 10:5–11. The same pattern may be observed in the organization of Isaiah 28–32. The collection of judgments is introduced and segmented with woe oracles (see 28:1; 29:1, 15; 30:1; 31:1), followed by a liturgical condemnation of Assyria that begins with another woe oracle (see 33:1).

In very general terms, the prophecies in Isaiah 2–9 concentrated on Judah's response during the time of the Syro-Ephraimite war; those in Isaiah 28–32 are primarily related to events associated with Hezekiah's rebellion against Sennacherib (705–701 B.C.), as are the subsequent narratives in Isaiah 36–37. Despite such evidence of different historical periods underlying prophetic oracles in this book, these historical backgrounds play a persistent but limited role. The editors have presented these prophecies consistent with the pattern present in earlier portions of the book. The chapter reinforces the now familiar scenario of God's judgment, followed by the assurance of divine promises, national restoration, and world peace. Throughout the various subcollections, editors have ensured that the language reverberates with certain idioms typical of the message and style of Isaiah.

28:1–29
Woe to Ephraim and to the Rulers in Judah

28:1–6, Proud Ephraim Is Brought Down. The woe oracles in the first section of the book concerned Judah (5:8–24; 10:1–4) and were preoccupied with excessive drinking on the part of leaders as a sign of the fading glory (v. 4) of the nation. Now, with the addressee as Ephraim, the author picks up again the familiar motif of the proud being cast down to the earth (v. 2). The punishment, which seems to assume the exile of the Northern Kingdom, introduces the rest of the judgment oracles in Isaiah 28–32 as focusing on Judah, which remains in the land.

28:7–13, Misguided Priests and Prophets. The prophet indicts those who, like the Ephraimites, remain drunk, resisting the message of Isaiah not to resist. The meaning of the repeated lines (vv. 10, 13) continues to be debated, and they vary greatly from translation to translation. The LXX took the words to mean "affliction upon affliction, hope upon hope." These repetitious monosyllables may be part of a chant used by children in learning the alphabet. Whether the line is a childish ditty or drunken nonsense, it indicates how they misunderstood the word of God and serves as a sign associated with their punishment.

28:14–22, Rulers of Jerusalem Rebuked. The nation's political leaders are portrayed as "scoffers" (vv. 14, 22), who have made a "covenant with death." Foreign alliances again fly in the face of the prophet's message to believe and have no fear; God has made a promise to Zion.

28:23–29, God's Actions Are Like Those of a Wise Farmer. Drawing on common knowledge about the different times and the various planting and harvesting techniques that ensure a successful farm, the prophet provides a parable that explains the diverse ways in which God responds to his people. The wisdom of such a farmer is comparable to the wisdom of God. This analogy answers those who question the counsel of the prophet during the Assyrian crisis.

29:1–14
Woe Ariel, City of David

29:1–8, The City Under Siege. Jerusalem (Ariel) is under siege as a judgment of the Lord, but the siege is suddenly averted by a "visitation" of the Lord (vv. 5–6). The occasion for this saying was probably the wondrous abandonment of the siege by Sennacherib in 701 B.C., as described in 37:33–38.

29:9–12, A Spirit of Deep Sleep. Consistent with God's statement in the commissioning of Isaiah in 6:9–10, the people will be blind to the truth of the prophet's word, though their eyes are wide open. Although the prophet's message is clearly present before them, it is like a sealed book; they cannot appropriate it.

29:13–14, Lip Service in Worship. The same theme of a lack of understanding, despite a verbalization of beliefs, leads God to increase the confusion of the wise in Judah.

29:15–24
Woe to Ones Hiding from God's Counsel

29:15–16, Those Who Turn Things Upside Down. Many of the prophet's earlier oracles mocked the Assyrians for thinking they were more than a mere "rod" of God's wrath (10:15). The unresponsive in Judah are here portrayed as equally foolish, thinking they are the potter when they are only the clay. They falsely assume they can do things in secret that will never be exposed.

29:17–24, A Vision of Promise. This note offers assurance that the deaf will someday hear and those blind to the message in Judah will understand it. These words clearly set the preceding judgments of Isaiah 28–29 within the context of a divine plan in which the destruction is intended to purge the nation of disobedience and lead to a time of discernment and restoration.

30:1–33
Woe to the Rebellious Children

30:1–5, "A Plan, but Not Mine." The prophet warns those who, as did Hezekiah, seek alliances with Egypt as a way to hold off the enemy. All these efforts lack God's counsel and will end in public shame.

30:6–7, Egypt's Worthless Help. These obscure words appear to describe the dangerous route of emissaries from Judah who seek Egypt's help. The reference to Rahab, a mythical monster of chaos, makes mockery of the great images of gods in Egypt, which are intimidating in appearance but powerless to move.

30:8–17, A Book of Divine Instruction Despised. As in the testimony (6:1–9:7), the prophet is once more presented as making a public record of his message, which the officials have refused to hear or acknowledge. As in the commissioning of Isaiah (6:9–10), the leaders of Judah actively seek to be ignorant of the prophet's message, even encouraging prophets to lie so that the oracles may be heard as they wish them to be. An indictment and threat follows (vv. 12–14); it finds vivid analogy to Judah's ruin with a break in a wall and a shattered vessel. Finally, the oracle repeats what has been heard before, namely, that Judah has rejected the central message of Isaiah (v. 15) and will, therefore, fall victim to its enemies.

30:18–26, A Wondrous Restoration. As in 29:17–24, promise is juxtaposed with the announcement of divine wrath to clarify the purpose and goal of the chastisement of God's chosen people. In terms like those of Isaiah 24–27, the graciousness of God will conclude the period of punishment by establishing something new for Zion. The blindness and dumbness that have plagued Judah will disappear. Idolatry will be abandoned; the natural order will be transformed so that rain will be unusually abundant; and the moon will be as bright as the sun. God will completely heal "the wounds inflicted by his blow."

30:27–33, The Fall of the Assyrians. Consistent with the preceding assurance is a statement that anticipates the sacking of Nineveh, the capital city of Assyria, in 612 B.C. After abandoning the siege of Jerusalem in the time of Hezekiah, the Assyrian king confronts the full retribution of God, and Judah exults in the triumph of God over the long-familiar adversary.

31:1–32:20
Woe to Those Who Go Down to Egypt

The prophet explores a theme familiar within this section of the book by continuing to denounce those who seek security in an alliance with Egypt.

31:1–3, Egypt Instead of the Holy One of Israel. In a poignant reminder that horses and chariots should not be compared to the power of God, Judah is warned, once more, against making foreign alliances. Judah's dependence on such alliances entails a political compromise that explicitly rejects the counsel of Yahweh.

31:4–9, Yahweh as a Lion. The description of God as a wild beast in pursuit of prey recalls the imagery of Assyria's attack upon Judah (5:29–30). God, like a hovering bird, will protect Jerusalem.

32:1–8, Eyes Shall See, Ears Shall Hear. As in other Isaianic prophecies of promise, there will be an ideal king who will "rule in justice." Accompanying this event will be a reversal of the responses by the people listed in the commission of the prophet (6:9–10). They will, at last, "see" and "hear"; their minds will become rational; and they will be able to speak clearly (v. 4). Verses 6–8 probably derive from later, postexilic interpretation cast in language typical of wisdom literature. A series of proverbial sayings contrasts the actions of the "fool" and the "scoundrel." The writer seems to assume that when the people can hear and see normally again, then the logic of wisdom will function as it should. This passage illustrates well both the independence and complementarity of wisdom and prophecy.

32:9–14, Women Who Are at Ease. In a threat against wealthy women, similar to that of 3:16–17, the prophet

summons them to mourn (vv. 9–12) over the destruction to come "in little more than a year." The description of the destruction of the city plays directly upon the language of the song of the vineyard in 5:1–7. In place of a fruitful economy, there will be "thorns and briars"; the once "joyful city" will be deserted, and its "watchtower" will be inhabited by wild animals.

32:15–20, Justice as a Future Promise. A fitting positive conclusion to all that has preceded in Isaiah 2–32 looks toward the time when all the promises given will be fulfilled. The final wisdom saying, "Happy are those . . . " (v. 20) provides comfort for those who will live in the time of "peace." Such will be the reward for those who obey the prophetic instruction to seek "righteousness, quietness, and trust forever" (v. 17). By so referring to the essence of the prophet's message to troubled eighth-century B.C. Judah, the earlier sections in the book are brought to a crescendo and applied to later readers. These verses may once have belonged to the conclusion of an edition of Isaiah's oracles completed during the reign of Josiah, an edition that included much of 2:5–32:14.

33:1–24
Woe to the Destroyer

A summary of the prophet's message is accompanied by an appropriate response by the people. Chap. 33 is made up of once independent units or fragments of tradition. It may once have been a prophetic liturgy that expressed, in a later period, the people's recognition of Isaiah's prophecies and their desire for God's salvation. Performed with antiphonal responses, this impressive oral tradition contains the laments of the people and a challenge to them to be righteous, as well as a vivid denunciation of their enemy. The different traditions have not been harmonized and are, therefore, readily discernible: vv. 1–6, a prophetic threat against "the destroyer"; vv. 7–9, a lamentation of the people; vv. 10–13, another threat against the enemy; vv. 14–16, a Torah interrogation like that found in Pss. 15; 24:3–6; vv. 17–19, a promise oracle; vv. 20–22, a hymn of confidence like that of Psalm 23; v. 23, another threat; and v. 24, a prophetic promise to Judah. Whether or not the unnamed enemy was Babylon, as seems plausible, this chapter may now be applied to future times when foes rise up against those who look to the words of Isaiah and hope for a messianic age of peace.

34:1–35:10
The Future of Zion

Much like those in the preceding chapter, the traditions in chaps. 34–35 are editorial compositions that recall the earlier traditions in Isaiah 2–32 and anticipate those found in Isaiah 40–66. Whoever composed them had traditions from both these parts of the book of Isaiah at hand. Chaps. 34–35, a learned transition between these differing sets of traditions, weave them together thematically. The subtle relationships between these two chapters suggest that they were originally composed together. They build on a familiar pattern of judgment against the nations (34:1–17) and promises of deliverance to Judah (35:1–10).

34:1–17
Judgment Against the Nations

Continuing important themes found in the oracles against the nations (Isa. 13–23), chap. 34 addresses a prophetic judgment to all the people of the earth, expressing the rage of God "against all the nations" (v. 2). In a melange of poetic descriptions, the prophet paints a picture of bloody consequences, deserted strongholds, and the ruins of once famous cities overtaken by nature. The perspective is cosmic—"the skies will roll up like a scroll" (v. 4)—and depicts a final confrontation between God and all the nations of the earth. A prime example is made of Edom, whose name will be changed to "No Kingdom." An unusual note is the command that one should "seek and read from the book of the LORD" (v. 16). This admonition presumes the existence of some authoritative "book" of prophecy. In theory, this phrase once could have referred to some unknown collection of oracles, perhaps either an earlier collection of Isaiah's prophecies or oracles against the nations. Nonetheless, in its present context, this authoritative book seems to refer to the book of Isaiah as a whole. These chapters belong to the latest stages in the formation of the book and present an admonition to its future readers. Cast in the voice of the prophet Isaiah, this admonition is comparable to that of Moses in Deut. 31:26–29.

35:1–10
A Summary of God's Promises

Resembling 32:15–20, chap. 35 brings the oracular prophecies in the first part of the book to a rapturous crescendo. The wilderness left in the wake of Judah's destruction will blossom; the weak will be made strong; waters will flow in the desert; and wild animals will no longer roam the ruins of the city. This great reversal of earlier misfortunes will be greeted by the people as they march to Zion with joyful songs. As is the case here, songs have punctuated the book of Isaiah (5:1–7, 12), offering guides to interpretation of the prophecies within it.

Many of the expressions in 35:1–10 cite directly or allude to the oracles in Isaiah 40–55. At the same time, the passage contains numerous references to the preceding literature. In v. 4, Isaiah's central message, "Be

strong, fear not," is reaffirmed. In vv. 5–6, the blindness and deafness of those who have heard the word of God through the prophet recall the report of the commission of the prophet in 6:9–10. The depiction of a "highway" echoes similar accounts in 19:19–25; 27:12–14. Such references provide readers with an epitome of the promises of God throughout the book of Isaiah. The portrayal of restoration far exceeds the historical experience of Judah after the return from Babylonian. Its horizon lies in the ultimate renovation of the entire world and, consequently, in the hope of future readers of this prophetic book.

36:1–39:8
Jerusalem and Further Intrigue with the Assyrians and the Babylonians

With the exception of the long prayer of Hezekiah in 38:9–20, chaps. 36–39 are taken verbatim from 2 Kings 18:3–20:19. The first two chapters concern the siege of Jerusalem in 705–701 B.C. by the Assyrian king Sennacherib and God's wondrous deliverance. The last chapter finds, in the visit of a Babylonian king, a prediction of Judah's later devastation and exile under the Babylonians in 586 B.C.

The change in the context of these traditions, from their former place within the books of 1 and 2 Kings to their use in the book of Isaiah, entails a natural shift in their interpretation. Concern with the city of Jerusalem remains prominent in these chapters. The prayer of Hezekiah paradigmatically shows how one should respond to Isaiah's message and, by analogy, summons a similar response from postexilic Jewish believers. Hezekiah's illness, like Judah's exile, is perhaps something God "has done" (38:15); the king's prayer to be restored to health and to be allowed to live (v. 16) corresponds to the national hope of Judah. There is a resonance between personal and communal experience in this text. Such resonance is reinforced by God's response to Hezekiah, which includes a defense of Jerusalem from further attacks by the Assyrian king (38:6).

Finally, Isaiah 39 shifts readers' attention away from the events around the Assyrian threat in the eighth century B.C. to later Babylonian destructions in the sixth. Moreover, it prepares readers for the "comfort" given to those in exile (Isa. 40–66). In 40:2 this focus on the fate of Jerusalem is expressed again, as it is throughout the book of Isaiah generally (see Isa. 1).

36:1–37:38
God's Deliverance of Jerusalem from Sennacherib

The siege of Jerusalem in 701 B.C. and the city's sudden deliverance occasioned a wide variety of responses, both as a subject in the oracles of the prophet and in these narrative accounts. Elsewhere in Scripture additional narrative reports are provided in 2 Kings 18:13–16 and 2 Chron. 32:1–23. There is even an account in the annals of Sennacherib that makes reference to Hezekiah and to the siege of Jerusalem, though without mention of a sudden departure by the Assyrians. The relation between the historical events and these differing traditions remains a perennial topic of scholarly debate. The biblical traditions obviously are written with a purpose in mind other than chronological reporting of historical events. The overall structure and selectivity of these reports reflect the same perspective. A scenario of similar events is repeated in both 36:1–37:9a and 37:9b–39. Each narrative includes an Assyrian threat to Hezekiah, Hezekiah's response, Isaiah's prophetic word of assurance, and deliverance as fulfillment of the word of the prophet. In both accounts, there is an escalation of the threat and of the tension felt by the king. In the first, the king assumes mourning dress and goes to the Temple to pray (37:1); in the second, his lengthy prayer forms part of the report (37:16–20). In the first, Isaiah sends a brief message of promise to the king (37:6–7); in the second, the prophet's oracle starts a long denunciation of the enemy (37:22–29). In the first, the Assyrian king is diverted by a false rumor (37:8–9a); in the second, an army of the heavenly hosts directly intervenes and slays 185,000 Assyrian soldiers while they sleep (37:36). These accounts appear remarkably suitable to the larger purpose of the book of Isaiah, with its concern for the restoration of Jerusalem. They explore the way in which human responses move God to provide blessing when one might expect only a curse.

36:1–37:9a, Rescued by a False Rumor. The first scenario of events gives greatest weight to the intimidation by and verbal abuse of the Rabshakeh to the inhabitants of Jerusalem. "Rabshakeh" is a title, perhaps meaning "chief cupbearer." The position of this person may have been similar to that of Eliakim, the steward of Hezekiah's palace. Addressing Hezekiah by name, the Rabshakeh publicly denounces the confidence of Hezekiah and the people that God will save them from the Assyrian king. The effect of this caustic speech is heightened by the Jerusalem officials' interruption of it and their request that the emissary speak in Aramaic rather than in Hebrew, which the city's inhabitants could understand. Refusing this request, the Rabshakeh intensifies his denunciation and in a lengthy argument encourages the people of Jerusalem to defect before it is too late (36:13–20). The author creates suspense through the details describing the officials rending their garments while bearing the news to the king of Jerusalem. The king rushes to the Temple to pray and sends for Isaiah, who can give a fresh word from God. According to the word of God, the Assyrians take seriously a false rumor and abandon the siege.

A common human experience, falling prey to a false rumor, is here presented as an act of divine intervention.

37:9b–38, A Wondrous Deliverance. The text narrates a further confrontation between the king of Assyria and Hezekiah. This time the Assyrian message is brief and focused on discrediting Yahweh as powerless against the Assyrian deities. Hezekiah takes the letter to the Temple and offers an extensive prayer that expresses his confidence in God and the need to show the world of nations that "you alone are the LORD" (v. 20). The word of God delivered by Isaiah recalls common themes in chaps. 2–35; e.g., the lofty will fall (v. 29); God will bring things to pass according to a divine plan (v. 26); and God has intimate knowledge of the nations regardless of their acknowledging God (v. 28). This word is accompanied by a divine promise regarding the remnant of Judah that will take root and grow from "out of Jerusalem." The assurance by God, that "I will defend this city" for the sake of David (v. 35), points again to a view of Zion's inviolability, which is affirmed throughout Isaiah 1–39. The deliverance is tersely described and expanded by an account of the death of the Assyrian king in a coup carried out by his sons while he was worshiping his gods. Yahweh's willingness to save Jerusalem has been illustrated graphically here and prepares readers of this book for the hope expressed in Isaiah 40–66, namely, that through mighty acts of God the city will be rebuilt out of the rubble of Babylonian destruction.

38:1–22
Hezekiah's Recovery from Illness

Within the context of internationally significant events attested in Isaiah 36–37; 39, the story of Hezekiah's recovery may seem incidental and very personal. Hezekiah has been ill and is near death. Isaiah brings word to the king that he will soon die. Rather than acquiescing to this oracle, King Hezekiah asks God to remember that he has acted consistently as a righteous king. Isaiah then proclaims that fifteen more years will be added to the king's life, that Assyria will not conquer Jerusalem during this period, and that the sundial will reverse itself as a sign (vv. 5–8; cf. 7:11) of God's will to do these things. A lengthy prayer of Hezekiah has been subsequently inserted (vv. 9–20). The story concludes with a note regarding the way in which Hezekiah was healed.

This story is significant since it presents Hezekiah as an exemplary religious person and illustrates how prayers of the righteous can change God's response. The last two verses are out of place because the question in v. 22 has already been answered by vv. 7–8, as in an earlier version of the same story (2 Kings 20:8–11). The sequence of elements in the original story has been disturbed by the addition of the prayer (vv. 9–20), so that Hezekiah now appears to offer two prayers. The former may be considered a summary of its later written counterpart. The first, as found also in 2 Kings 20, simply asserts his innocence; the second account (Isa. 38:9–20) consists of a complaint, reminiscent of laments in Psalms, that ends with communal praise: "We will sing . . . at the house of the LORD" (v. 20). The similarity to the psalms of David is conspicuous. This presentation has the effect of illustrating how the psalms offer models of prayers to be offered by individuals in times of stress and calamity.

39:1–8
Jerusalem and the Future Babylonian Threat

The account in chap. 39 corrects any impression gained from the preceding account that might seem to preclude the possibility of the capture of Jerusalem at a later time. The king of Babylon, a minor kingdom during the time of the mighty Assyrians, pays a visit to Jerusalem and to King Hezekiah. Hezekiah proudly displays all the national treasures. After the visit, Isaiah asks the king of Judah what he showed to the Babylonian king. When the prophet hears that it was everything of value, he delivers an oracle of judgment. The Babylonians will someday return with a great army to rob Judah of all that Hezekiah has proudly shown. The only compensation to Hezekiah, presumably because of his obedience to God (38:3), is that the calamity will not occur in his generation. Hezekiah responds with thankfulness that, at least in his days, there will be "peace and truth." Ironically, the same king who saw the most dramatic deliverance of Jerusalem is the first to hear of a distant threat against the city from the Babylonians.

The placement of this story appears intentional, especially since the historical events in it occur prior to those attested in Isaiah 36–37. Chap. 39 brings a fitting conclusion to Isaiah 1–39, for it predicts the Babylonian exile, which the oracles in Isaiah 40–66 turn to address. The opening words of Isaiah 40 replace words of judgment with comfort, both to the people in Babylonian exile and to the city of Jerusalem. The unjust city that now lies in ruins will be fully restored to become the righteous city that God had purposed it to be from its beginning (Isa. 1; 66).

40:1–66:24
Part II: The Testimony of Isaiah from the End of the Exile to the End of Time

40:1–31
Transitional Introduction

40:1–11
The Word of Our God Shall Stand

The association of the prophet Isaiah with the word of God in Isaiah 1–39 demonstrates that the words of Scripture are *human* words, spoken by prophets and testifying to God's own revelation. As human words, they reflect the specific strengths and weakness of a particular prophet, as well as the climate of opinion, political circumstances, and general context within which a prophet lived. By understanding to whom and when a prophet prophesied, we can recognize certain prophecies that seemed fulfilled in a single event, but it is possible to let that fulfillment be forgotten and to recognize that the same words may be fulfilled at a later time. So, the prophetic word given by Isaiah to Ahab, as recorded in 8:4–9, announced the defeat of the coalition of Israel and Syria against the king of Judah. The prophecy seems so entirely absorbed and expended in "these former troubles" that we do not need to remember these "former things" as speaking about still future fulfillments, perhaps in the lifetime of one who later hears a reading of this scroll (cf. 65:16–17). However, *biblical* prophecy presupposes a capacity to address generations yet unborn with a present tense, even if partially fulfilled in an earlier time (see the commentary above on 7:10–17, esp. 7:14). Texts at the end of the five-book Torah attest to this typical feature of scriptural prophecy (Deut. 29:14 [13]; 31:24–29), as does their recollection in Isa. 59:21 (cf. 51:16). At a minimum, such a "period-piece prophecy" points to God's "universal history." Also, a prophecy may, as in the case of 7:14, have a semantic density that lends itself to multiple fulfillments, so the same words may be reapplied to new situations (see, e.g., 1 Kings 14:11; 16:4; 21:19, 24; 22:38; 2 Kings 9:10). These capacities of prophetic Scripture, which must be distinguished from prophetic experience in the history of ancient Israel, are attested both explicitly and implicitly in the closing chapters of the five-book Torah, which was created prior to the final composition of Isaiah.

The second part of the book of Isaiah (chaps. 40–66) counts upon the evidence of the first part to show that biblical prophecy takes the form of human words, but trades upon the other side of biblical prophecy, namely, the persistent conviction throughout all of Scripture that "the [same] word of our God" (40:8) that addressed humanity at the beginning of creation itself addresses the present audience and will speak to untold future generations. Therefore, it presumes to testify to a revelation of reality not confined to a single moment in human history. The prophet as a historical person fades into the background while the enduring Word of God itself occupies the foreground. In sum, the inner logic of Isaiah 1–39 could never provide an answer to a modern question of which oracles the eighth-century B.C. prophet "authored," but aims instead to help us determine that we ought to hear these prophecies for ourselves. Some pertain to certain events in Isaiah's own lifetime. Other prophecies, the vast majority of them, have gained a life of their own, which is even more in evidence in Isaiah 40–66 than in 1–39. We find later traditions and editorial activity within Isaiah 1–39 and we find a few oracles in 40–66 that could derive from pre-exilic prophets, perhaps even from Isaiah himself. For example, in parts of 51:9–52:15 and 59:1–22, prophets seems to address pre-exilic conditions, but with postexilic perspectives and conclusions.

Since Isaiah 36–39 borrows from 2 Kings, we may infer that the scribes who edited the book of Isaiah probably knew that it belonged to a larger collection, "the Prophets," which included Kings as parts of the former prophets. The final editors of Isaiah were apparently interested in relating their book to the Deuteronomistic History (Joshua through 2 Kings).

Isa. 40:1–11 introduces the second part of the book of Isaiah. In contrast to 1–39, Isaiah 40–66 lacks any formal editorial notations regarding the date of the prophetic speeches. Since the same editors had a hand in both parts of this book, that feature should be seen as intentional, offering a key to understanding this scroll as a whole. Isa. 40:1–11 offers a transition between the two parts of the book. Isa. 40:1–2 is the only place in Isaiah 40–66 where the explicit chronology from 1–39 is retained. We learn in 40:1–2 that the exile prophesied by Isaiah to Hezekiah in the preceding chapter has now come to an end. With that modest concession to history, 40:3–11 moves immediately to promises in the distant future. The reordering of the mountains and valleys to allow the nations to journey easily to Jerusalem recollects promises of a sort that appear in 2:2–4. The imperative, "Do not fear," picks up a familiar formulation in Isaiah 1–39, and one that continues prominently throughout 40–66. The new ideas of 40:2–11 anticipate 40:12–55:13, but especially chaps. 56–66.

40:1–2, "Comfort My People!" The words "my people" and "your God" reflect the intimacy of the relationship addressed here. The historical circumstances are clear enough. These words speak to people both at the end and beyond the end of the Judean exile in Babylon. The imperative verb "comfort" occurs as a plural form, so the most important question concerns what group of leaders is being given this command by God or by God through a prophet.

The middle phrase of 40:2 is difficult to translate, but probably means "her warfare or hard servitude is complete for her iniquity is made acceptable or paid off."

"The LORD's hand" in v. 2 has been raised in judgment against Israel and Judah repeatedly in Isaiah 1–39 (see the refrain in 5:25; 9:12, 17, 21; 10:4; 14:27). In 40:1–11, this threatening imagery of a judging "hand" is

accompanied at the end of this passage by the symbolism of the Lord's ruling "arm" and the anticipation that God will gather the survivors "into his arms," like a shepherd who collects the scattered lambs from an open field in order to carry them to a safer place. Except for 30:30, the motif of God's arm only occurs in chaps. 40–66 (40:10, 11; 48:14; 51:5, 9; 52:10; 53:1; 59:16; 62:8; 63:5, 12).

The words of the eighth-century Isaiah offering the promise of comfort to Judah "in that day" now come to pass. Within Isaiah 40–66, the Lord himself gives "comfort" in 49:13; 51:3, 12; 52:9, and especially in 66:13, near the end of the book. Isa. 40:2 and 66:13 clearly demarcate a frame involving comfort around Isaiah 40–66. The word "comfort" is repeated for emphasis only in 40:2 (two times) and 66:3 (three times). At another place an unnamed person has the specific task "to comfort all who mourn" (61:2).

40:3–5, Voices Heard Deliberating Within the Divine Council. Suddenly we hear mysterious voices from within the assembly in heaven, much as did Isaiah earlier in chap. 6. But neither Isaiah nor a Second Isaiah is present! The heavenly assembly considers the word of God and who will deliver it (cf. 1 Kings 22:19–23). (Humans do not normally participate in such a meeting [cf. Isa. 6:5; Jer. 23:18].) Although it is possible that a prophet, even Second Isaiah, received a commission to deliver that word, this text does not identify a particular prophet. The only agent specified to bring God's words of salvation is a "herald of good tidings." Although the Hebrew is ambiguous and allows us the possibility of treating herald as identical with "Zion" and "Jerusalem," we can more reasonably interpret this herald as bringing the word "to Zion" and "to Jerusalem," even as the same herald also brings the word to "the cities of Judah" (v. 9).

One of the mysterious "voices" of the heavenly hosts issues a command to renovate the earth at the end of time. The voice gives a command (plural), as in 40:1–2, "Prepare the way." Whether only the heavenly hosts will hear and obey this imperative or certain human agents also will declare it on earth remains uncertain. God describes divine blueprints for a straight highway on which "all people" will be able to travel to Jerusalem and to see God's glory for themselves at the end of time. This change in topography does not fit well the return from Babylon around the desert, but recalls the Exodus, envisioning an event far more spectacular than a straightforward return of exiles to Jerusalem. These verses do not simply present a timely word of consolation, spoken and exhausted by the situation at the Exile, but address later audiences well beyond those in Babylon who longed to return home to Judah.

40:6–8, Voices Speak to Each Other. Another voice commands, "Cry out!" A voice then responds ("he said," not, "and I said"; cf. 6:3), "What shall I cry?" What we overhear is at first nothing new, for we are reminded that all "flesh" is fragile and as perishable as uncultivated "grass." When the breath of God touches people, they wither in the heat of God's wrath against injustice, just as the grass withers under the blast of a noonday sun and just as the blooms of a wildflower fade shortly after the cool morning hours. This vivid description occurs frequently in Scripture (37:27; 51:12; Ps. 90:5) and may recall the imagery of the introduction to the book (Isa. 1:30). In Ps. 103:15–16 the same metaphor for human frailty is contrasted with God's timeless "love," just as here the mortality of human life is contrasted with the enduring Word of God.

The expression "the word of our God" does not occur elsewhere in Scripture, although a similar formula, "the word of the LORD," usually refers to prophetic speech. "The word of the LORD" can be found in Isaiah 1–39 and elsewhere only in 66:5. The formulation "the word of our God" puts peculiar emphasis on a community that views God as having chosen and instructed them. If these verses come from the book's final editors, then they become a Scripture-conscious marker, perhaps similar to "a *torah* and testimony" (8:19–22), indicating that the exiles ought to be consulted in the aftermath of the Babylonian destruction of Judah in the sixth century B.C. "The word of our God" here functions exactly the same way as does "the *torah* of our God" in 1:10. Both name the subject matter of revelation to which all Jewish Scripture bears witness.

40:9–11, "Here Is Your God!" Another voice from within the heavenly counsel summons an unnamed "herald of good tidings." The opening verse can be translated either with Zion and Jerusalem personified—"O Zion, herald of good tidings"—or these cities may be addressed by an unnamed herald of good tidings. The second possibility finds strong support in the command later in the verse that the herald should speak "to the cities in Judah." Zion is personified in this book and elsewhere in Scripture (Isa. 52:1–2; Ps. 147:12; Lam. 2:18; Mic. 4:10, 13; Zeph. 3:14, 16; Zech. 2:7, 10; 9:9) but Zion never is directed to "go up a high mountain," as here, to proclaim something to Judah. In fact, Zion is commonly called "Mount Zion" (e.g., Isa. 4:5; 8:18; 18:7; 24:23; 29:8; 31:4; 37:32). Although Zion may be summoned, like other mountains, to praise God, to writhe in pain, to look for salvation, or even be told "Do not fear" (Isa. 52:1–2; Ps. 48:11[12]; 147:12; Lam. 2:18; Mic. 4:10, 13; Zeph. 3:14, 16; Zech. 2:10; 9:9), Zion is not a messenger. Consonant with Isa. 40:1–2, Zion is repeatedly described in this second part of the book of Isaiah as the one who receives a message from God or God's prophets (41:27; 51:3; 16; 62:11–12).

The herald, whether a heavenly creature or a prophet, must go to the top of a mountain so all the cities of Judah can hear the announcement, "Here is

your God!" God will gather up all the remnants of "my people" (40:1) in his "arms," much as a shepherd carries lambs back to the safety of the fold. This command given to a herald of good tidings anticipates a restoration of Judah and addresses all future Israelites. Similarly, 41:27 speaks of a herald of good tidings through whom God "first" foretold that a hero on behalf of the exiled Judeans would be "stirred up . . . from the north." This statement confirms the fulfillment of a prediction in 13:17 that God would "stir up the Medes."

Any prophet who might play this role of announcing God's appearance to all the world will antagonize public proprieties. Hence God assures the herald, "Do not fear" (v. 10). Within Isaiah 1–39, this same admonition is given by God on different historical occasions to King Ahaz (7:4), to the prophet Isaiah himself (8:12), and to King Hezekiah (37:6). In 61:1–4 the herald of good tidings again reiterates many of these same themes, though here the individual is "anointed" by God and, therefore, potentially "messiah," someone who is anointed. The herald of good tidings, someone who carries the message of God's salvation, plays the same role as did many prophets. This imagery either quotes or paraphrases Ps. 78:52–53, which describes the Exodus. While 40:1–2 points to the release of captives from Babylon, the promises in 40:3–11 look forward to an eschatological event.

40:12–31
The Author of These Words

Isaiah 40:1–11 leaves readers with many unanswered questions. Who is the unnamed "herald of good tiding" appointed to bring a message of restoration? Are we hearing words delivered by a prophet, perhaps a "Second Isaiah," who declares this timely good news to the survivors in Babylon more than a century after eighth-century Isaiah has died?

The Targum of Isaiah correctly recognized the most important question raised by 40:1–11 and inserts bluntly before a paraphrase of 40:12–31, "Who says these things?" We may reformulate this question to be, "Who is the author of these promises in 40:1–11?" The answer here may remind us of God's response after Job became too presumptively verbose and antagonistic with God: "Where were you when I laid the foundation of the earth?" (Job 38:4).

40:12–26, Creation of the Word. The answer to this question of who can make the promises cited in 40:1–11 occurs as a lengthy and resounding description of God as the Creator, with whom no one may be compared (vv. 18, 25) and whose competitors are "nothing," even though they appear to be powerful nations (v. 17) or mighty rulers (v. 23). This section begins with a question: who besides God could have been privy to the creation of the world? This query is related to 40:21, "Was it not made known to you, did you not hear, was it not declared to you from the beginning [or 'from the very first']?" The issue involves the identity of the creator. Verses 25–26 portray the strength of God in terms of a celestial procession or army, probably including the stars, which God can call individually by name.

40:27–31, Does God Not Know? God calls Israel into question on the basis of God's own *curriculum vitae* as the Creator of the universe. Israel is quoted as saying that God is unaware of the devastating path that the nation has taken, including its exile in Babylon, and the abnegation of its "just rights." As in 40:21, God chides the people for failing to "know" and "hear" what God the Creator has revealed to them. Likewise, since God alone has the power to create the world, only God can assure Israel that the nation will survive or even flourish. On the basis of that same power, Israel at a future time will be able to look to God for all the strength it will need to face comparable challenges. When it feels like fainting, it will discover that it can, instead, run with strength like that of an eagle's wings.

41:1–48:22
"Listen to Me in Silence, O Coastlands!"

41:1–42:13
God Debates the Gods

In 41:1, the coastlands were summoned to hear a public debate, on the order of an international trial, between God and the gods. However, the original form of this tradition would have required an entirely different audience. It probably involved a public conflict between an unnamed exilic Israelite prophet, whom modern critics call "Second Isaiah," and prophets who speak for other gods. In that context, "Second Isaiah" makes a mockery of the false prophets as impostors, claiming that they serve gods who are really "nothing." Second Isaiah has proven his own authenticity by speaking "former things," or prophecies, before they come to pass. Now, the appearance and activity of King Cyrus have fulfilled the former things. On the basis of that proof, Second Isaiah will begin to announce "latter things," which include Cyrus's role in sending the Jewish exiles back to their land. Second Isaiah chides the other prophets and dares them to prophesy an event before it comes to pass (41:21–24; 41:28–29; 43:9; 44:7). Their inability to do this should prove the power of God to the Jewish exiles who might be tempted to listen to pretenders rather than to the true prophet of God. These prophecies, which are not recollected here, might have been prophecies of sixth-century Jeremiah or prophecies by Second Isaiah himself that have been lost. The audience of the original trial speeches could

not logically be the distant coastlands in the far western provinces of the Mediterranean, but must have been the Jewish exiles themselves and the false prophets who stood before Second Isaiah as pretenders who preyed upon the shattered faith of the exiles from Judah.

The "former things" occur in the preceding chapter as the word of God that has been announced not just in the recent past, but "from the beginning . . . from the foundations of the earth" (40:21)—even long before eighth-century Isaiah! Furthermore, the original conflict between prophets has been distilled to a conflict between God and the gods; it is no longer a debate between Second Isaiah and a few other prophets. God now speaks directly to the gods or idols, "Tell us what is to come . . . that we may know you are gods" (41:23). Finally, a passage that seems to reflect an individual prophet, a Second Isaiah (42:1–4), now belongs to a context in which Israel is collectively described as God's "servant," as "chosen" by God, and as capable of being a threshing sledge that will decimate the mountains and hills of the enemy nations (41:15), comparable to the way the servant will bring justice to the world (42:1–4). The clause about "the coastlands wait[ing] for his teaching/*torah*" (v. 4) seems utterly foreign to the original debate of Second Isaiah. The reference to "his *torah*" resonates with 51:4, where a "teaching/*torah*" comes directly from God and becomes a word of his servant, Israel (44:26), rather than a teaching of Second Isaiah. According to 48:17, God alone "teaches you for your own good" and bemoans the failure of Israel to have obeyed "my commandments." The original prophetic conflict has been placed on a grander scale. We now hear an address to the entire world. All are to recognize the Torah that God has given Israel. That Torah, originally the Mosaic Torah read by Ezra, invites the world to hear "the word of God" that will stand forever (40:8).

Some of the former things have come to pass, prophecies given by the Lord, demonstrating that "the word of God" (40:8) itself is "true" (43:9). The recent activity of Cyrus is a case in point, since he has just fulfilled one of the former things by setting God's chosen servant, Jacob/Israel, free from captivity. On the basis of these fulfilled promises, God invites the coastlands to hear "latter" and "new" things. According to these promises, Cyrus will provide support for the exiles to return home and to rebuild the Temple, the capital city, Jerusalem, and the nation of Israel itself. In the references to the need for God's servant, Israel, to obey "the commandments" (48:18) and to rely on promises stemming "from the beginning" of creation itself, we may hear reference to the public reading of the Torah. The coastlands can, in theory, overhear this reading of the Torah. The trial speeches in Isaiah 41–48 invite the coastlands to be impartial judges who can confirm the veracity of Israel's "witnesses" (43:10, 12; 44:8) to the Word of God.

Jewish and Christian scholars have long observed that the identity of the "servant" in this and other poems (42:1–4; 42:5–9; 49:1–6; 49:7–13; 50:4–9; 50:10–11; 52:13–53:12) is ambiguous. Modern scholars have often treated these poems, sometimes termed servant "songs," as a separate collection. Most scholars think Second Isaiah or his disciples composed them.

All of the servant poems occur in the first two of the three subdivisions of Isaiah 41–66, in 41–48 and 49–57, but not in 58–66. Second, the poems that occur in the first subdivision, 41–48, belong to a context in which Israel is regularly called "my servant," a collective entity. This feature of the first subsection influences how we hear the servant poems, i.e., as referring to a group. The next subsection begins immediately by describing a servant who must be an individual. Throughout this section, the singular, "servant," consistently signifies an individual prophet, while Israel is given a new designation, "servants," using only the plural noun (54:17; 56:6; 63:17; 65:8, 9, 13 [three times], 14, 15; 66:14). This usage in the last two subsections of Isaiah 41–66 is consistent with the book of Isaiah as a whole, since in Isaiah 1–39 the singular "servant," as here, signifies an individual prophet: "my servant, Isaiah" (20:3).

41:1–7, God's Appeal to the Other Nations. God asks the "coastlands" and other "peoples" (i.e., "nations") to deliberate with him in order to decide a matter of justice according to the shared criteria of international wisdom and jurisprudence. It is less a trial speech than a formal consultation with the goal of establishing international justice and peace. "Coastlands" were the distant countries bordering the Mediterranean, who would be neighbors to the west once the Judean exiles returned home. Here and in other relatively late traditions (13:22; 24:15; 40:15; 42:4, 10, 12; 49:1; 51:5; 59:18; 60:9; 66:19), the coastlands become a favored impartial group of nations who will eventually see that God alone is "right." They will, then, wait for the Torah (42:4) and give glory to God. This optimism, retained from the traditions of Second Isaiah, becomes a major theme for the book's editors (see 66:18–19). The last two verses may be an addition satirizing the effort to make "good" idols.

The mighty "victor" is unnamed here, though Cyrus is clearly in mind (44:28–45:1). The relation of this "victor" to "the herald of good tidings" in 40:9; 41:27; 52:7 is unclear.

41:8–16, Israel, My Servant. Though the nations have good reason to be afraid (41:5), not so Israel, God's "servant." God repeatedly tells Israel, "Do not fear" (vv. 10, 13, 14), a motif present throughout the entire book of Isaiah. The "fear" of Israel in these circumstances arises not because the message is threatening. God tries to assuage Israel's fear in several ways—by assuring Israel that God will be "with you" (see "Im-

manuel" in 7:14; 8:8, 10), by giving renewed strength, and by claiming that current events stem from the power of the same "victorious right hand" that brought about the events attested in Isaiah 1–39 and elsewhere (cf. 40:2). With God's "help," Israel will overpower its enemies just as a farmer with a sharpened threshing sledge can harvest grain and winnow it to obtain what remains worth keeping.

41:17–20, God Will Answer the Prayer of Needy Israel. The condition of being poor and needy characterizes those in exile. As in Psalms, ordinary requests by those in need may evoke an extraordinary response by God. Trees that normally do not belong in the wilderness begin to flourish. Everyone will "see and know" that it has been accomplished by "the hand of the LORD." The last word, "[God] created it," sustains the theme in 40:12–26 of God as the Creator who alone authorizes future promises and fulfillments.

41:21–24, Set Forth Your Case. Perhaps no text has played a greater role in suggesting that a Second Isaiah challenges the prophets of other gods to announce a "former thing" before the prediction is fulfilled by historical events. Without disagreeing with that historical reconstruction, we ought to notice that what remains of that dispute is no longer presented as a prophetic conflict, but God's own direct controversy with the alleged deities. At stake is not really monotheism, but the assumption that gods other than the Lord have some degree of power over history.

When the Persians defeated the Babylonians, they developed a foreign policy far more congenial to the cultural life of nations who paid tribute to them than had the Assyrians and Babylonians. In general the Persians allowed a vassal people to remain or to return to their lands and exercise a publicly known religious law in exchange for obedience to Persian civil and international law. If the way of Torah reflected one legal system, Persian civil and international laws involved another.

The legal rhetoric in 41:21–24 probably reflects an international mode of reasoning familiar in the biblical wisdom literature, especially in the disputation language of Proverbs and in the court disputation language of Job's friends and near the end of the dialogues in the mouth of Job himself. The legal case here would have been intelligible to the gods of the nations, including the Persians. God asks the gods to predict something or to do anything, harmful or good, so that "we may know that you are gods." At the end of this challenge, God concludes, "You are nothing," and, as a logical consequence, God observes that any reliance on these gods is morally irresponsible, an "abomination," a term at home in international wisdom like that found in Proverbs, rather than in the covenant laws in Deuteronomy.

41:25–29, Conversely, God Proves His Power over History. The former things have been fulfilled, when God called "one from the north" to defeat the enemies of Israel. "The herald of good tidings" cannot be Cyrus and may have been a prophet. In later texts, when God asks the gods if they also proclaimed something, they offer no response (v. 26). The conclusion is self-evident. These gods are "nothing"; the idols have no more power over history than "empty wind."

42:1–9, The Servant's Mission to the Nations. Though Isaiah 40–66 lacks the precise editorial divisions evident in Isaiah 1–39, the "song" in 42:10–12 may close this segment of the book. This statement about Israel as God's "servant" along with the positive response of "coastlands" recalls special concern with the nations at the beginning of this section in 41:1.

The identity of the servant is ambiguous, though the LXX resolves it by inserting "Israel" after "my servant" and "Jaro" after "my chosen" (42:1). The "servant" as "Israel" prevails in chaps. 41–48 (41:8 establishes the precedent clearly), while the "servant" in 49–57 is consistently an unnamed figure, probably a prophetic or messianic figure.

As the servant of God, Israel could fulfill the promises to Abraham such that all the nations will be blessed through him and his offspring (cf. Gen. 12:3). When the coastlands realize that God is employing his chosen people to establish "justice" through the entire world (42:1, 4), they will respond in gratitude and want to learn more about the teaching (Torah) God has given to Israel. To accomplish this purpose, God gives Israel the power of his own spirit and promises to announce "new things" in the place of the former things that have already come to pass (42:9).

42:10–13, Sing a New Song. The coastlands, as impartial observers, enjoy the blessing of liberation and justice throughout the world. They and other nations burst into songs praising and giving glory to the Lord (42:12). The Lord makes his might visible as a liberating "warrior" who defeats "his foes" who support injustice. "Justice" reflects an international sense of wisdom with which any nation should be familiar, including advocacy for human rights, help for the poor, deliverance of the oppressed, and the promotion of equity and fairness in society.

42:14–44:23
"You Are My Witnesses!"

The soaring optimism of the hymn closing the preceding section is followed immediately by the voice of a lamenting God. Exasperated with prayers uninformed by revelation and alarmed by Israel's disobedience of the Torah, God "cries out like a woman in labor." As Abraham Heschel observed, the Lord's wrath is expressed as empathetic suffering in the course of God's

giving birth to his servant, Jacob/Israel. Like a mother who bonds with her newborn, God sees Israel as "precious" and declares passionately, "I love you" (43:4) and "I am with you" (43:5), recalling the name of "Immanuel" and its interpretation in 7:14–8:10. God poignantly reminds his people of their mission in the world as "witnesses" to God's revelation, including the Torah (42:4, 21, 24). Three times Israel is reminded, "You are witnesses" (43:10, 12; 44:8), employing the same solemn words used by Joshua (Josh. 24:22). In spite of Israel's misdeeds, God's own empathetic suffering and covenant love for Israel tip the scales in favor of mercy. Like the tearful embrace by a mother of a delinquent child, God "sweeps away" the sins of an unrepentant Israel. In words suited to a brokenhearted parent speaking to a wayward child, God pleads, "Return to me." Finally, Israel breaks forth in praise to God. We hear only a single verse of such praise, when Israel urges all nature—including each tree—to join in, with rapturous shouts and singing (44:23).

Originally independent units of tradition (perhaps, 42:14–17, 18–25; 43:1–7, 8–15, 16–21, 22–28; 44:1–5, 6–8 [+ vv. 21–22], 9–20, 23) have been carefully integrated. They resonate internally in a manner similar to the strategic juxtaposition of certain psalms (e.g., Pss. 1–2; 90–91; 105–106; 111–112). With great poetic power, these resonances enrich our sense of the density and depth of theological issues, such as the mysterious interplay between God's wrath and mercy.

42:14–17, God's Reluctant Response. After waiting "a long time" to find signs of Israel's knowledge, justice, and faithfulness, God writhes in suffering, like a woman in birth pangs, and then does precisely the opposite (v. 15) as an answer to the sincere prayers of the poor and needy in 41:17–20. Instead of putting a pool in the wilderness, he will dry up the rivers and ponds, places where we might expect to find them. By this means God will humble them, leading them down paths rather than forsaking them. A heretical confession about idols illustrates Israel's apostasy.

The "darkness, all that the blind servant can see," will be replaced by "light" (v. 16; cf. 9:2), and the land will be made level for their journey (cf. 40:4), an idea expressed in terms that point beyond the return from exile.

42:18–25, The Deaf and Blind Servant. Underlying these difficult verses may be a prophet's recollection of a divine indictment (vv. 18–24) followed by a threat (v. 25). Perhaps the indirection of the verses explains why it attracted so many additions to make explicit what was thought to be implicit in it. The Qumran scroll of Isaiah, unlike the Masoretic text, makes a paragraph break after v. 20, a division that puts more focus on the final verses. In them, we hear a brief confession from those addressed in v. 24, "We have sinned." Verses 21 and 24, which seem to refer to the pentateuchal Torah, may be additions from the final editors of the scroll. We hear a key question that reaches far beyond the Exile: "Who among you will hear this, listen, and obey the things to come?" (or "latter things," v. 23).

43:1–28, God's Witnesses. This section begins with an explanation for why God could not announce the "new things" earlier. Prior to this time, Israel had remained blind. God responded, "I have held my peace . . . and restrained myself." God's patience had been tested for centuries when Israel, "my servant," would look but not see, hear but not understand (42:20). Now, "for the sake of the righteous," God will make "his Torah" easier to hear and see (NRSV: "magnify") and give it a public hearing (NRSV: "glorify"; 42:21). With the Torah before them, God asks Israel a key question, "Who among you will hear this, really listen, and obey?" (42:23; cf. 32:3). God interrogates the Israelite exiles, many of whom are still tempted to rely on idols and disobey the Torah they now hear (42:21, 24). They act as if they are unable even to see what lies right in front of their eyes (42:16–20). On the one hand, the "former things" have actually been fulfilled, which ought to allow the people, without fear, to look forward to the fulfillment of the "new things" God now promises and will do. On the other hand, the former things came from the mouth of God, giver of the Torah to Israel, so their response entails either accepting or rejecting the "witness" of the Torah itself. The nations are chided for not being able to bring forward their own comparable "witnesses" to promises prior to their fulfillment in order to prove what they falsely claim "is true" (43:9). God recalls the words of Joshua, who at the renewal of the covenant warned the people about relying on foreign gods and solemnly says to these Israelites who have heard the reading of the Torah, "You are witnesses" (Josh. 24:22). Now, many centuries later, the same ominous words, "You are my witnesses!" (Isa. 43:10, 12) are pronounced by God to a new generation of Israelites whose release from captivity confirms the truth of the Torah of Moses and of the promises, as former things, implicitly present at creation and explicitly given by God to Abraham, "my friend" (41:8). Within the Torah, Abraham is, in fact, the first person to be described as "a prophet" (Gen. 20:7) and he therefore testifies prophetically in the Torah, as does Moses, to the future redemption and restoration of Israel.

The declaration "You are my witnesses" indicates that the Israelites addressed in the scroll of Isaiah, like those addressed earlier in the traditions of Joshua 24, have been asked to respond to the reading of Torah. The affirmation in Joshua 24, "We are witnesses" (Josh. 24:22), states their commitment to the terms of the covenant as given in the Torah of Moses. The writ-

ten scroll of the Torah is, therefore, "a witness against us" (Josh. 24:26–27); the people can no longer claim lack of knowledge about it. For that reason, God dares the nations to produce any comparable "witnesses" to demonstrate that the teaching of their alleged gods and idolatry "is true" (Isa. 43:9).

The book of Isaiah sets the "former things" in relation to "the word of our God," which was with God at the dawn of creation (40:21). The same promises were given to Abraham and his offspring, Israel and Jacob, whom God chose as his "servants" (cf. 41:8). Of course, creation and Abraham appear in Genesis, part of the Mosaic Torah. According to Isa. 41:10, God gave Abraham and his progeny the same instructions repeated in the book of Isaiah to exiled Israelites returning to their land, "Fear not, for I am with you." This section, prior to the hymnic imperatives of 44:21, makes this point emphatically, "Remember these [things, words, events, prophecies]!"

44:1–22, The Servant as God's Creation. This chapter offers an amalgam of prophetic traditions. It alludes to the previous chapter, "Do not fear!" (43:1; 44:2, 8); "you are my witnesses" (43:10, 12; 44:8), even as chap. 44 reassures the people that, despite the charges leveled at the end of the previous chapter (43:22–28), God will remain loyal to the people.

The motif of the servant remains prominent. The language of being formed in the womb (vv. 1, 21) recalls the commissioning narrative of Jeremiah, which also includes the phrase "Do not fear." The prophet speaks about God's care for the people (v. 3) using the verb "to pour," which here alludes to the provision of water and spirit. Both will engender fertility and growth in the land and among the people. The prominence of names that symbolize God's relationship to the people (v. 5) recalls the use of symbolic names earlier in this book and in Hosea. Verses 21–22 continue this general theme of reassurance.

Two sayings (vv. 6–8, 9–20) are embedded in this rhetoric of reassurance. The first (vv. 6–8) harks back to earlier speeches expressing the incomparability of the Lord (cf. 41:21–24). Even in such a polemical speech, the deity offers comfort to the people (v. 8). The second saying is couched in prose, which is relatively infrequent in Part II of Isaiah. Verses 9–20 level a sharp critique not only of idols, but also of those who make them. The prophet is incredulous that someone who uses a tree both for fuel and for an idol will worship an idol made out of that tree. The saying seems to reflect knowledge about the fabrication of such images. The prophet here has moved from a critique of idols and those who venerate them to a critique of those who actually make them.

44:23, Nature's Praise. Even the natural world sees and hears that God has redeemed Israel/Jacob. Based on Israel's own protracted praise of God, we hear this aside to nature itself, which is urged to join the crescendo of Israel's giving glory to God.

44:24–45:19
The Lord's Anointed

God interprets the importance of Cyrus, the Persian king, using Israelite tradition. The repeated formula "Thus says the LORD" presents these perspectives as mediated by prophets. This well-organized text includes a dramatic imperative in which God commands the heavens and sky to "rain down righteousness" (45:8).

44:24–45:7, Cyrus and God's Plan. The opening words (similar to those of 45:5–6) are unusual because they portray God praising himself for the deeds he has done, much as do the speeches of gods and goddesses who rival each other. Employing motifs from these speeches, the Lord self-identifies as the Creator of all things, the Master of history, and the Author behind the words of Israel's prophets. The terse recollection of promises (44:26–28) does not consist of quotations, but poetically provocative generalizations that confirm two related but different things: "the word of his servant" and "the predictions of his messengers" (v. 26). The latter clearly refers to prophets, both prior historical figures and those recorded in Scripture. Significantly, the plural, "messengers," states that the prophecies fulfilled by Cyrus are not attributed to either eighth-century Isaiah or a Second Isaiah.

The first phrase, "the word of his servant," occurs only here in Jewish Scripture. "His servant" cannot be Cyrus, but must be Jacob/Israel (45:4). Similarly Ps. 119:49 exhorts us, "Remember your word to your servant." The term "word" is one of several synonyms in Psalm 119 (cf. vv. 38, 67, 76) for the pentateuchal Torah of Moses, as is "this word" in Ezra 10:3–5 and "the word that you commanded your servant Moses" in Neh. 1:8.

This text probably reflects a refutation of other prophets by a particular prophet, often called "Second Isaiah," who challenged prophets of other gods to make "[their] case" (41:21–24) to prove their power. Later editors interpreted these traditions to be part of a larger prophetic legacy to which Jeremiah, Nahum, and Isaiah, among others, belong. Such a reading moved these older historical disputes about competing prophets to an entirely new level, attesting to the validity and efficacy of Jewish Scripture itself.

45:8–10, The Rain of Righteousness. Although v. 8 seems superfluous to many modern commentators, it is consistent with the imperative verbs that play a rhetorically provocative and crucial role throughout Isaiah 40–66. The absence of any explicit historical anchor suggests that we hear this mandate refer to

various times—past, present, and future. The two woe oracles in vv. 9–10 provide an impressive transition back to historical specificity by clothing proverbial wisdom in prophetic garb pertinent to the argument that follows.

45:11–19, Oracles About Cyrus and Other Things. The three oracles presented here each begin with the same standard formula announcing prophetic speech (vv. 11, 14, 18). The first repeats God's promise to use Cyrus to rebuild Jerusalem and to enable the exiles to return home (v. 13). The second looks to a future horizon when other nations will "follow" Israel and confess that the Lord is the only God. The third returns to the theme of creation (cf. 44:24; 45:7), but makes a new assertion that God did not speak in secret or in a land shrouded in "darkness" or mystery. What God says is "truth" and "right things."

45:20–48:22
Israel and the Nations

This section, and most of what follows in the book of Isaiah, lacks the familiar signs of older units of tradition. Instead, the poetry is made up of lengthy speeches, perhaps based on the prophetic legacy of Israel, including that of eighth-century Isaiah. Speeches alternate between addresses to nations (45:20; 47:1), including a defeated Babylon, and addresses to Judah (46:3; 48:1). Prior themes and motifs recur, with various expressions of contempt spoken directly to the fallen "virgin," Babylon.

45:20–46:2, The Survivors of the Nations. God's invitation to non-Israelites presupposes that postexilic Israel will triumph "in the LORD" over future adversaries (45:25; cf. 41:11; 42:13). The last two verses satirize Babylonians who, having survived the Persian victory, try to move their heavy idols to safety.

When the remaining ambiguity of the invitation to the nations, "Turn and be saved," is heard within Jewish Scripture, these words become commentary on the Torah, so that Israel's obedience brings blessings to its nonobservant foreign friends (Gen. 12:3). In the last days, the ground will be leveled so a Gentile can easily travel to Jerusalem to study Torah (Isa. 2:3; 40:4–5). Christians emphasize these verses as fulfilled by the offering of the gospel of Jesus Christ to Jews and Gentiles alike.

46:3–13, The Promise of Salvation. Former prophetic words have now come to pass with God's use of Cyrus to fulfill God's purpose. God will "carry" (cf. 40:11) the exiled Judeans as part of his plan of salvation for them.

47:1–15, The Humiliation of Babylon. In contrast with God's response to Zion, lamenting that her children may be lost (49:14–18), Babylon appears here as a naively arrogant young woman, able to give birth and a candidate to be married. She is stripped naked in public, like a woman caught in adultery. No one tries to save her.

48:1–19, God's Future for Israel. God declared former things long ago, from the beginning (v. 5, 8, 16), which seems now to include the Torah itself. God announces "new things," pertinent to future generations long after the time of Judah's liberation from exile. If Israel had obeyed the former things, they would have already enjoyed all the rewards God had promised to Abraham (v. 19).

48:20–21, The Joyous Proclamation. This section closes with a command to shout, along with the words to be shouted, just as occurs in Psalms when someone in the midst of a prayer tells others to shout along with the words they should say (e.g., Pss. 47:1; 35:27; 40:16).

48:22, No Peace for the Wicked. The last sentence is an editorial addition that repeats the last verse of 57:15–21, where it originated, but changes "my God" to "the LORD" (48:17, 20; 49:1, 4). This repetition of a verse to mark sections of a scroll belongs to a repertoire of devices employed in the craft of editing. Its aesthetic effect, beyond its modest semantic contribution, is part of its genius. Other editors would know where to look in the scroll of Isaiah to understand the editorial process. We should recall the words at the end of Isaiah 1–39: "There will be peace and security in my days." Hezekiah was pleased because he himself would not experience God's use of the Babylonians to defeat Judah and to take them into exile in the far north. Moreover, Hezekiah would not live to see the comfort that would come to Judah after its punishment.

By repeating 57:21 in 48:22, the editors divided the second part of Isaiah roughly into thirds. These refrains play upon the end of Isaiah 39, which marks the major division of the book as a whole. Also, this refrain emphasizes that the peace realized among those who return from exile will not belong to those among them who were wicked. Isa. 48:22 is a clever place to put the refrain, since it occurs at the end of a unit of tradition with what is probably an editorial addition in 48:18, linking Israel's "peace/prosperity" to obedience of God's "commandments" as found in the Torah. Likewise, 66:12 belongs to a cluster of retrospective notes in the last verse of this scroll and recalls, almost verbatim, 48:18. Unlike 48:18, which is an indictment for disobeying the Torah, these same words explicate the "comfort" God will freely give to Israel. Finally, we should note that in chaps. 40–48 no group is identified as "the wicked," who become an important category of people in 49–66 (see 53:9; 55:7; 57:20, 21; 58:4, 6).

Because 48:22 stands out from its context as an unexpected but pungent generalization, it works well to

conclude a section, allows the repetition in 57:21 to mark a transition, and announces a new topic regarding differences between the righteous and the wicked among the exiles who return to Israel. Moreover, 39:8; 48:22; and 57:21 are all conclusions that highlight the hope for peace/prosperity (Heb. *shalom*) and divide Part II of the scroll, after the transitional introduction in Isaiah 40, into three large blocks of tradition (chaps. 41–48, 49–57, 58–66, each roughly the same size). The first two blocks (41–48 and 49–57) each begin with a similar address: "Listen/Be silent, O coastlands."

49:1–57:21
The Word to the Coastlands

This second of the three major subsections of Isaiah 41–66 is marked off by the refrain repeated in 48:22 and 57:21. It begins just as did the previous subsection (chaps. 41–48), by demanding the attention of the distant "coastlands." However, this similarity should inspire us to look for differences between these two segments. Earlier the coastlands had been summoned to judge for themselves, according to international wisdom, the power of the Lord and the veracity of the word of God, or the "testimony" of Israel, God's servant, to the Torah. But here in 49:1 the coastlands, along with other "peoples far away," are asked to hear an entirely different voice. Concurrently, other major topics of Isa. 41–48—the "former" and "latter things," Israel as God's "servant" (in the singular)—fall entirely away. Instead, these distant nations are summoned to listen to a poignant complaint, a fragment of a prayer to God by an unnamed prophet.

How can the "coastlands" and other nations hear a personal prayer of complaint to the Lord? And, *why* should they be allowed to make any judgment about its content or God's responses to it? Assuming that a postexilic audience hears this scroll read to them, how we answer these questions regarding the distant nations must hold a clue to how we can understand this part of the scroll.

A compelling answer to these questions can be found if we remember that almost all ancient prayers were spoken out loud, meant to be overheard by other people, especially in the Temple, "a house of prayer" (57:7). That function is illustrated well by the superscription to Psalm 52. So there is nothing unusual about the "coastlands" overhearing this complaint. We are left only with the question of why they are urged to do so.

Earlier references to Cyrus hint at a more complex political arrangement by which Judean leaders agreed to codify their religious traditions and laws and to read them in public, thereby making their content known to the Persians. The Persians would allow that Torah to be the religious law of the nation if these same Jewish exiles would agree to obey Persian civil and international law. Although the idea of international laws had always been implicit (e.g., the law of hospitality to strangers), the Persian kings made certain laws much more explicit (e.g., standard weights and measures and fixed boundary stones) and insisted that idiosyncratic religious laws of their subject nations would be open to public review.

A prayer, such as this complaint by an unnamed prophet (49:1–4), was meant to be overheard by Jews and, potentially, by Gentiles when it was prayed. It would definitely be overheard when read in public. We might recall here language present in the Psalms, to "teach" others God's ways (e.g., 34:11; 51:31), which is something partly achieved by any prayer spoken out loud. Therefore, this publicly overheard complaint to God in 49:1–5 invites an assessment on two levels: first, at the level of impartial nations according to international norms of wisdom, and second, at the level of Jews and Christians, who seek to hear in this complaint a testimony to God's special revelation to Israel.

According to its final editors, the book of Isaiah summons Israel to support the reforms of Ezra and Nehemiah and to accept as binding the pentateuchal Torah of Moses, which Ezra read in public during the final decades of the fifth century. What becomes a new element only in the last verse of the preceding subsection (48:22) and here in the next subsection of Isaiah 49–57, but nowhere else in chaps. 40–66, is a group within postexilic Israel, "the wicked." That group is introduced by the refrain in 48:22; all other references belong to the subsection that follows (48:22; 53:9; 55:7; 57:20, 21). The refrain itself, "There is no peace for the wicked," sounds very much like Psalm 1, with its sapiential distinction between the righteous and wicked. The wicked reject the Torah in contrast to those who "follow after righteousness" (51:1; cf. 51:5, 7, 8; 54:14, 17; 56:7). This distinction reflects well the situation confronted by Ezra and Nehemiah. Despite the rebuilding of the Temple in 520–515 B.C., when Nehemiah arrived in Jerusalem around 445, most of the exiles who returned had abandoned the city and Temple because of inadequate protection. With Persian support, Nehemiah established a more efficient administration of the city and the Temple as well as a military force able to ensure a reasonable security in the city. Ezra arrived later in the same century and read the Mosaic Torah. Not everyone responded positively to this Torah and its implications for the levitical priesthood who would preside at the Temple. These historical circumstances provide the background for some parts of the book of Isaiah. Even those traditions that originated in the political situation of the fifth century now address people on a more distant historical horizon, one stretching to the time when "my salvation may reach to the end of the earth" (49:6) and in anticipation of a time when "kings" and "queens" will "bow down to you" and become foster parents to Israel's children (49:23). The "coastlands" are told that in this future they will "wait

for" the Lord and their own salvation, as does Israel (51:5). As a part of that distant time, "the wicked are like the tossing sea that cannot keep still" (57:20); they will reappear among later generations who hear Isaiah read to them for the first time.

In this section, the coastlands are summoned to hear the first of several servant poems describing an individual servant or prophet, instead of the "servant" as a collective designation of Israel in the preceding subsection. Israel is called the "servants," always a plural, a feature that continues until the end of the book.

The initial verses set the stage for what follows in three remarkable ways. First, they play directly upon numerous words and themes found in 40:1–11 (for details, see commentary below), in contrast to what we find in chaps. 41–48. As a significant example, we will find here and in the last subsection, but nowhere in 41–48, recollections of God's promise in 40:1–2 to "comfort" Zion and Jerusalem (49:13; 51:3, 12, 19; 52:9; 54:11; 61:2; 66:13 [three times]; cf. 12:1; 22:4). This evidence suggests that the transitional introduction itself probably belongs to the last editors of the book and to their editing of chaps. 1–39 as well.

Second, we find in these last two subsections, unlike the first in chaps. 41–48, far more overt citations or allusions to other biblical scrolls, certainly to the Torah and to Psalms, but also to what we might call the scriptural preservation of a normative prophetic legacy, including especially Jeremiah, Nahum, and perhaps Hosea. This feature is present right at the beginning of this section. The call report of a prophet in 49:1–3 agrees almost verbatim with the call of Jeremiah in Jer. 1:5, as does the later assignment of the prophet to be "a light unto the nations" (v. 6).

Third, the opening poem, 49:1–6, comes the closest of any tradition in Isaiah 40–66 to containing at least a fragment of a call report by a prophet embedded in an individual lament to God. Along those lines, it invites comparison with the call reports of both Isaiah (6:1–13) in the same scroll and Jeremiah (Jer. 1:1–10). This unnamed prophet, who sounds like Jeremiah (Isa. 49:1), proves not to be Jeremiah because his role of being "a light unto the nations" does not belong to his original call as it did for Jeremiah. Instead, this prophet is simply "to bring Israel back" to God (49:5), a task that corresponds to that of pre-exilic prophets, like Isaiah.

In an answer to the prophet's prayer, God chides the prophet—"Is it too light a thing?"—for not valuing as much as the former commission his new assignment, namely, to announce God's determination to resurrect "the tribes of Jacob" and "restore the survivors." In his lament, this prophet has only cited his original mission and his despair over it, and consequently concedes his doubt that this new mission to the exiles will fare any better. God responds by restating his new commission and enhancing it with a startling addition—the prophet will also be "a light unto the nations," which is exactly the same assignment that Jeremiah had originally been given (Jer. 1:5). In sum, this prophet models the normative legacy of pre-exilic prophets, like Isaiah, and the transition to a new mission by exilic prophets like Jeremiah.

What does this text achieve within the book of Isaiah and in relation to other scriptural books? First, it goes beyond the concern in the preceding subsection with "former" and "latter" prophecies to focus now on how we should interpret the prophets themselves.

Second, this statement of the prophet's last commission—a light unto the nations—differs from the call reports of both Isaiah and Jeremiah, because it finds its fulfillment only when God's "salvation" extends to "the ends of the earth" (49:6). In this way, the prophecies of Scripture are given a relevance that perdures by Israel's "children's children" (59:21) in the distant future.

Third, we are told here that the prophet is a person "in whom [God] will be glorified" (49:3). Normally we would expect the prophet to give all glory to God and not to presume himself to be an exhibit of God's glory. Even the prophet's claim to "hide in the shadow of God's hand" (49:2) portrays him as one who has understood the introduction to the Psalms (Pss. 1–2) appropriately.

In sum, the purpose of this servant poem is not primarily to preserve a historical record of a Second Isaiah or his "theology." Rather, we learn something that the editors regard as far more important, how to read the Prophets from a scriptural perspective, including Isaiah 1–39, which is also permeated by these same traditions. We are invited to hear a larger collection of scriptural books, including the Mosaic Torah, as testimonies to the "word of our God" that "will stand forever" (40:8).

By inviting the distant coastlands to listen to this prayer by a prophet, Jews are reminded that Scripture is a public testimony that will be heard by foreigners far and wide. These foreigners should know that the restoration of Judah reestablishes a people whom God has chosen to bring "light" and "salvation," rather than to become a military threat, to other nations in the world. Likewise, only in this subsection do we begin to hear about "foreigners" (56:3, 6; 60:10; 61:5) who find a generous reception within the community of faith.

49:1–13
Confirmation of the Servant's Mission

In this section there is an exchange between a prophet called to be "the servant" and the Lord, who called him. The prophet laments in frustration over his unproductive service. He is answered by a confirmation of his call and a supporting divine promise.

49:1–4, The Servant's Complaint to God. From this subsection until the end of the book, the "servant" refers to an individual prophet, whereas Israel is simply called "Jacob" and "Israel" (vv. 5, 6, 7), "the people" (v. 8), "his people" or "his suffering ones" (v. 13), and, from 54:17 on, "servants" in the plural. An unnamed prophet reiterates his commission to "gather" (49:5; cf. 40:11) Jacob/Israel back to God. He then complains that efforts to fulfill this commission have been "in vain." His despair is, nonetheless, blunted by his confidence that his "reward is with my God," recalling the same language and expression as in 40:10.

49:5–12, God's Answer. The complaint of the servant elicits God's answer in a series of oracular responses (vv. 5, 6, 7, 8–12). God offers no comfort to the servant, beyond repeating his later commission to minister to the exiles. To that assignment he adds something new, the role of being "a light unto the nations."

This unnamed prophet himself will embody "a covenant [with God] to establish the land" (49:8). From the perspective of the coastlands and other nations, this Jew has a mission to bring "light" to all foreigners, near and far, and is willing to suffer reproach for doing so.

49:13, A Hymn of Comfort. Nature, which overhears the scroll of Isaiah being read aloud, is invited to show its approval by shouting for joy. To this hymnic interjection, a paraphrase of 40:1–2 has been added to explain why nature will erupt into songs of thanksgiving.

49:14–52:10
The Answer to Zion's Lament

The preceding text (49:1–13) began with the lament of God's "servant," a prophet, but this segment begins with the lament of Zion, with the accusation that God has "forgotten" her. The lament evokes responses from God, then God's "servant," and once more from God, perhaps as prophecies of the servant. In the initial oracular responses, God employs the analogy of a mother's inability to forget her children in order to refute what Zion fears (49:15–50:3).

After the initial oracles in answer to Zion's lament, we hear a response from God's servant, which helps to clarify his role in relation to Zion (50:4–51:3). The servant identifies his role both as a teacher to Zion and as a comforter who uses his words to strengthen "the weary" (50:4). Unlike the deaf audience whom Isaiah originally addressed in pre-exilic Israel (6:10), this servant's ear has been opened so he understands and obeys the prophesies of Isaiah and, by implication, of other pre-exilic prophets (50:5). The servant can now teach the message of Isaiah along with other prophetic tradition to the Judean survivors who walk in the darkness of exile. Their obedience to the "voice" of this servant is tantamount to fearing the Lord (50:10). Conversely, disobedient Jews are like people who try to illumine the present "darkness" by carrying firebrands, unaware that their firebrands will burn together like the fodder of a great bonfire into which they themselves will painfully walk (50:11).

In a speech the boundaries of which are hard to define (probably in 51:4–52:7), we hear prophecies, probably from the servant, by which God addresses Zion's lament. The *torah*/teaching (50:4) of the servant interprets or coincides with the "Torah/teaching" of God (51:4, 7) much as the "*torah* and testimony" (8:16) of pre-exilic prophet Isaiah becomes identified with the enduring "Torah and testimony" (8:20) that God delivered to Moses and the prophets to give "light" to the darkness of exilic and postexilic Israel. On the basis of this Torah, Israelites can both "pursue" and "know righteousness" because their ears are open and the Torah is now in their hearts (51:4, 7). Finally, God demands that Zion rapidly change her mood from lamentation to praise, typical of the Psalms, when the lamenters suddenly break into anticipatory praise for God's answer to their prayers. God commands Jerusalem and Zion to awaken, to stand up, to put on strength, to loosen the bonds of captivity, and to be redeemed "without money" (51:9–52:6). A herald of good tidings, perhaps the servant, announces "peace," "good news," and "salvation," declaring in the finale, "Your God reigns!" (52:7). In hearing this good news, the sentinels of Zion rejoice. Even the ruins of Jerusalem cannot contain their excitement, so they are also commanded to break into songs of joy (52:8–10).

Again, as in the last segment, many words and themes play upon 40:1–11 (e.g., "comfort" to Zion and Jerusalem, 49:15; 51:3, 12; 52:9; "sins" as reason for exile, 50:1; mortals who fade like grass, 51:12; "all flesh" who will see or know, 49:27; 52:9; God's "arm," 51:5, 9; 52:9, which will "gather," "carry," and "bring them . . . in their bosom" back to the land, 51:18; 49:22). The reuse of phrases from Nah. 1:15 (Heb.: 2:1) in 52:7 confirms the assumption of a normative prophetic legacy which the "servant" appeals to and enhances with new words. Certain motifs weave their way through this extended discourse, e.g., appeal to garments that wear out in time (50:9; 51:6, 8, 9). Likewise the sheer power of God over the natural orders of creation confirms the Lord's ability to do what he has promised to Zion and Jerusalem, much as in 40:12–26 (see 51:9–10, 13, 15–16).

49:14, Zion's Lament. This segment begins with a brief city lament, a genre familiar both in extrabiblical Near Eastern texts and especially in the book of Lamentations (cf. Lam. 1:17; 5:20). The two lines assert an escalated sense of abandonment—it is one thing for God to "forsake" Zion temporarily, a charge that God admits as true in 54:7; it is another to "forget" her entirely. The Psalms often contain the same complaint,

as here, that God has forgotten the supplicants (Pss. 13:1; 45:10; 74:19, 23). Though this lament has not occurred earlier in the book of Isaiah, it now becomes an important topic, which finds answers formulated on the basis of the broader scriptural context (cf. 54:6–7; 60:15; 62:4, 12).

49:15–50:3, God Answers Zion's Lament. The Lord exposes the complaint as illogical. We would expect "the coastlands" (49:1) who overhear this exchange to agree. The analogies of a mother and child, however, pale when one considers the powers of God, the Creator, who can do what seems impossible and restore Judah and Jerusalem. That event will startle the entire world and cause all the nations to know the Lord as the Savior, the Redeemer, and the Mighty One of Jacob (v. 26).

In 49:15–23 the divine response repeatedly plays on a mother's experience with the birth and loss of children. To Zion's complaint about being forgotten, God responds like a sage, with a question whose answer should be obvious: can a mother forget her nursing child, or not have compassion for the unborn child in her womb? God states flatly, "I will not forget you." The rebuilding of Jerusalem will be amazing, faster than its destruction (v. 17). Like the extraordinary proliferation of Hebrew slave children in Egypt, barren mothers will see so many children that they will wonder who could have possibly borne and nursed them. Royalty from other nations will be recruited to serve as foster parents to the surplus of infants who will constitute the future Israel.

If one asks how helpless captives of war could ever really be rescued (v. 24), the Lord simply declares it will happen and, like a passionate mother, states against all odds, "I will save my children" (v. 25). "All flesh" will know God has done these things, as stated in 40:6. If the exiles think they lost their mother due to a divorce or that the parent had to sell them to pay debts, they will find no papers to confirm it. The real reason for their exile lies in their own "sins," as stated in 40:2. When God had called to them, they had not answered.

50:4–51:3, A Prayer of Confidence by an Abused Prophet. This person, not called explicitly a servant, must be a prophet. He claims twice in v. 4 to be among those "who have been taught," using the very same expression as found in 8:16. This prophet describes himself as standing within the Isaianic legacy, but with the advantage that God has permitted him to teach those ready to learn, in contrast to the deafness of Isaiah's audience in the eighth century (6:9–10). Moreover, he clearly alludes to the words of other prophets, including both Moses, as implied by his recalling traditions about "Abraham your father" and "Sarah who bore you" (51:2), and Jeremiah, whose language of complaint and confidence most closely resembles what we find here.

The prophet acknowledges that he has suffered from the abuse of others, perhaps both Jews and Babylonians, and might face a legal trial (50:8–9). He expresses confidence that God will vindicate him, and in this prayer also elicits supports from those who overhear it ("Let us stand together," 50:8). He compares his enemies to people who will accidentally be consumed by the very firebrands they hope to use for light. Finally, he concludes his prayer with instruction to those who overhear what he is saying (51:1–3) in a manner typical of Psalms. Whether or not v. 3 is an addition to the original prayer, it now portrays the prophet as looking beyond his own circumstances to give a double assurance that God will comfort Zion (cf. 40:1) and declare that the Judean desert will blossom like a garden, vibrant with joy and thanksgiving.

51:4–52:7, Further Oracles of God. This part is unusually difficult, as if the prophet's prayer in 50:4–51:3 drifts from a recollection of God's comfort into prophecies inaugurated with the promise that the desert will bloom (51:3). The confident suffering of the prophet gives way to God's comfort for the suffering and fears of his people (51:7, 12–13, 22–23). The Torah of God will soon "go out," or, more specifically, be codified, published, and read to the people for all the world to overhear (51:4). In a statement suggesting direct dependence on Jer. 31:31–34, the people will know righteousness because the Torah will be "in your hearts." Zion, who began this subsection with a lament (49:4), is prodded by God to awaken and to rise up in confidence that God will vindicate it (51:14; 52:3), in the same way the prophet also knows God will vindicate him (50:8).

Isa. 51:4–5 paraphrases the promise in Isa. 2:2–4 (= Mic. 4:1–4), with its emphasis on a "Torah/teaching" that will go out from God and from Zion as a "light to the nations" (60:1–7 takes up many of these same themes). However, new words not found in 2:2–4 appear in 51:3–5. They resonate with important terms in chap. 40 ("Comfort [repeated twice] to Zion/Jerusalem," 40:1; cf. 51:3; God's "arm rules for him," 40:10–11; cf. 51:5). Also, "the coastlands," not mentioned in Isa. 2:2–4, are a primary audience in this part of Isaiah (41:1; 49:1); they are to "wait for me, and for my arms they hope" (51:5). If we compare 51:3–5 and 60:1–7 with 2:2–4, two other important differences should be noted. First, the features of 51:3–5 that resonate with the introduction in 40:1–11 show how well this part of the book develops certain specific themes mentioned only briefly in chaps. 1–39 (cf. 2:2–4; 12:2). Isaiah 40–66 enhances the *torah*/teaching of the prophet Isaiah according to God's revelation to both earlier (e.g., Moses [the Torah] and Micah) and later prophets (e.g., Jeremiah). Second, in 2:2–4, "the mountain of the LORD's house/temple" will be elevated above all other mountains, while in 51:4–5 the Torah simply comes from God and from the teaching of God's servant (50:4), with no reference to the Temple.

A minor topic of Isaiah 1–39 becomes a major theme in Isaiah 40–66. The texts just considered share an emphasis on Torah, which will be made publicly available to both Jews and Gentiles from Zion. The "light" cast on the darkness of exile by a messianic king promised in 9:2–7 (Heb.: 8:23–9:5) may be compared (51:3–5) to the function of the Torah as a "light to the nations" and to the glory of God within Israel that provides "light" to the Gentiles in 60:1–7.

52:8–10, A Song for Destroyed Jerusalem. As with other segments of Isaiah 41–66, we find in 52:8–10 a familiar ending with a hymnic imperative to which a summary explanation has been appended. These verses recall key words and themes from 40:1–11.

52:11–54:1
The Righteous Servant

52:11–12, A Summons to Exodus. The beginning of this subsection presupposes the efficacy of God's command to leaders, perhaps prophets, to announce comfort to the people and to Jerusalem. The repeated imperatives express the need to turn away from evil and from impurity (cf. 1:16; 58:9; 59:15), unlike the following command, using a different verb, "to depart" from a place. The mighty "God of Israel" will lead them, in front and behind, just as he did in the Exodus from Egypt. By contrast to the Exodus, this departure should not be pursued "in haste" (cf. Exod. 12:11; Deut. 16:3). These commands exceed the expediencies of the return from Babylon, for they view the Exodus as a paradigmatic promise open to multiple fulfillments, each suited specifically to the needs of Israel in the future.

52:13–53:12, The Suffering That Atones. This text offers one of the most controversial and exciting moments in the book of Isaiah. It begins with a speech from God about "my servant" in 52:13–15, to which this tradition returns at the end, 53:11b–12. In the middle we find a third-person description of someone who is never called a "servant." The core description, 53:1–11a, sounds like the sort of "complaint" typically found in a prayer of lamentation. We may think of it as similar to Psalm 91, in which God gives an extraordinary answer to the prayers of lamentation in Psalms 3–89, immediately after Moses' intercession on Israel's behalf in Psalm 90.

Critics have usually identified the "servant" with a particular prophet, "Second Isaiah." This proposal faces its own difficulties. Isa. 52:13 introduces the servant as someone "extremely exalted," language more appropriate for God (cf. 6:1; 57:15) than for a prophet. One way out of this problem is to view the introduction in 52:13–15 as a "secondary" addition by an editor who may have modeled it after the earlier poem of 42:1–4. The language about the exaltation of the servant in 52:13 might be assessed as exaggerated expressions of what is claimed in 42:1, "Here is my servant whom I upheld" (42:1). If we separate 52:13–15 from 53:1–12, then "my servant" in 52:13–15 could be a collective noun referring to "Israel," who participates in God's glory, while "my servant" in 53:11 could be a singular, nonmessianic person, "Second Isaiah." Still, the repeated statements in Isaiah 53 about the servant's untimely demise seem to be sustained by references to "his grave" and "his tomb" (53:9) and the claim that "he handed over his soul to death" (v. 12). Yet most critics understand Isaiah 53 to be describing his suffering as a past event, which he survived. One solution is to take the language about his death as intentionally hyperbolic or superlative. What Second Isaiah really wants to tell us is that he felt as though he was "as good as dead."

This commentary on 52:13–53:12 must consider the scriptural context rather than focus on solving problems at a prebiblical level of tradition. Isa. 53:1–11a may have once been a prebiblical tradition belonging to a Second Isaiah, to which the statements by God in 52:13–15 and 53:11b–12 have been added. Certainly the occurrence in Hebrew of "you" instead of "him" in 52:14 supports that view. (Most modern translators, Jewish and Christian, change it to "him.")

Isa. 53:1 begins with the ominous question, "Who can believe what we have heard?" If that question was once addressed by a Second Isaiah to the Judean exiles, the verse that now precedes it, 52:15, contains an explanation that puts all of 53:1–12 on a world stage. The servant's role as "a light unto the nations" illumines a shocking enigma. The disfigured (52:14) and suffering servant is exalted by means of metaphors comparable to God's transcendence (52:1). The activity of this single servant will bring righteousness to "the many" (53:11b).

54:1, Song for a Childless Woman. The Isaiah scroll from Qumran treats this verse as a single unit, which would suit well its function as a hymnic imperative at the end of a subsection in the book. The listeners who hear it read are invited to express their response to God's word in holy shouts and songs. The command for a barren woman to sing and shout for joy is cruel unless God has clearly answered her prayer for children. The imagery of a grieving, barren woman who suddenly shouts for joy is no less shocking than is the servant, beaten to death by his persecutors, who is to be exalted as an agent of God's mercy, healing, and forgiveness.

54:2–57:21
The Promise and Demands of *Shalom*

This entire subsection contains an unusual number of imperatives addressed by the Lord to postexilic Israel. God's demands, coming from all directions and

addressing the past, present, and future people of God, including God-fearing foreigners, jostle Israel as though the entire nation has fallen asleep or into a coma. Perhaps their eyes will suddenly open when they hear the sound of some favorite prophetic words of promise ("comfort," "prepare the way"), or the echo of the familiar story of Noah, or an appeal to the nation's deepest desire for "peace and security" (cf. 39:8).

No other part of Isaiah is more preoccupied with the Hebrew term *shalom* ("peace," "wholeness," "safety"). It occurs in the opening unit or paragraph, in God's promise of an everlasting "covenant of peace" (54:10), and concludes with a triple repetition of the same term in the last two verses (57:19–20). We should remember how chaps. 1–39 ended, the last words of Hezekiah, "There will be peace and security in my days" (39:8). The same theme occurs in the two refrains in 48:22 and 57:21 ("There is no peace . . . for the wicked"), which divide Isaiah 40–66 into three subsections of roughly the same length. Only with the second repetition of the refrain, in 57:15–21, does *shalom* gain a more elaborated interpretation. There we find that "peace" will be denied to "the wicked" (55:7; 57:19, 20) and reserved for "the righteous" (57:1) within Israel. The distinction between the righteous and the wicked among the people God has chosen is presented as an old and continuing problem. To address it, the editors employ a collection of pre-exilic oracles in 56:9–57:13.

How the pre-exilic oracles function in this context of Isaiah 40–66 raises several issues. First, their relevance to the postexilic situation does not require any substantial editorial contrivances. Second, the Scripture-conscious editors do not need to assign these pre-exilic oracles to a time in Isaiah's life because it would add nothing to their use here. It is enough to say that Isaiah is the only designated writer for this book, while God is its true "author." Third, this use of pre-exilic oracles illustrates how the pre-exilic oracles elsewhere in Isaiah 1–39 and in other biblical books can function scripturally. They invite a topical usage, analogous to how Scripture interprets Scripture, so their references to "the righteous" testify to a revelation regarding "the righteous" in any age. The link made between the righteous and the promise that they will "enter into *shalom* [security or peace]" in 57:1 reasserts a revelation found elsewhere in Isaiah. Isaiah 33:7 states the same, "the effect of righteousness will be peace." Within the book of Isaiah, we may recall the emphatic first references to *shalom* in 9:6–7 (Heb.: 9:5–6) with its promise of a child called "the Prince of Peace" and the assurance of "endless peace" for David and his kingdom. Alongside this messianic hope, we find in 55:3–5 further insurance on the promise of God to David, because it is assigned, in part or in whole, to postexilic Israelites themselves. They themselves will be given the same everlasting covenant of David and be witnesses to the nations (55:4), like David, like Isaiah, and like the unnamed herald of good tidings. These new circumstances help us understand the significance of God's "covenant of peace" granted unilaterally here to Israel in 54:10, which is directly analogous to the perpetual covenant God made with Noah after the Flood (54:9–10). This realization of the former promises of God to individuals by "the many" (cf. Isa. 53) in Israel does not involve pious nationalism, because "the wicked"—whose presence is as predictable and perpetual as the waves in the sea (57:20)—will have "no peace" (57:21). The promise of "peace, peace, far and near" (57:19) is offered unconditionally to the people of God, but no individual's status within that community of faith can be taken for granted.

Readers may observe some unusual redactional links between key terms in the transitional introduction of Isaiah 40 and the collection of pre-exilic oracles in 56:9–57:13. The imagery in 40:11 of God who "gathers" the exiles, as does a shepherd who rescues his flock, occurs four times right at the beginning of the collection (54:7; 56:8 [three times]). God's work of "gathering" is contrasted in the pre-exilic oracles with "shepherds" or leaders within Israel who "have no understanding" (56:11). The pre-exilic oracles describe how these profligate leaders misguide the people, then drink themselves to sleep (56:9–12). They do not even notice that "the righteous perish" (57:1). Immediately at the end of the collection, a promise recurs (40:3–4): God will "prepare" the way to Jerusalem, just as in 40:3–4. Other plays on the introduction include references to God's compassion or comfort expressed in 40:1–2; 54:7, 8, 10; 57:18, as well as God's declaration in 55:11 that "my word" will accomplish its purpose and not return in vain, like a messenger who has been unable to fulfill his mission (cf. 40:8).

Finally, twice in this subsection God speaks of another hope of Israel, much more mysterious than the various covenant promises. It concerns God's empathy with humanity and, more specifically, the people of Israel whom God has chosen for a peculiar purpose in the world. In 54:7; 57:16–18, we hear "excuses" for why God acts in mercy toward Israel when the repercussions of its injustice ought to take their toll. In 54:7, "the Holy One of Israel" speaks as does a husband whose passionate love for his wife can allow his anger only momentary expression. In 57:17 the anger of God, which should logically and legally be as perpetual as Israel's sins, must be limited in time, lest the human spirit not be able to withstand it.

54:2–10, Forsaken No Longer. Tents could be very large, with compartments. Such dwellings could naturally be expanded to meet the needs of a growing family. The metaphor of the tent becomes a metaphor for Israel's repossession of the land that God had given the liberated Hebrew slaves after the Exodus (v. 3). "The covenant of peace" (cf. Num. 25:12; Ezek. 34:25; 37:26) is a unilateral contract and similar to ancient Near Eastern texts whereby a king gives a grant of land to a

loyal supporter. It is unconditional, like the covenant of God with Noah.

Israel is like a young unfaithful wife who is forsaken by her husband before she has borne any children. God, the husband, unexpectedly announces that he will return to her. With everlasting love (v. 8), God will embrace her, remove all shame and fear, and meet her desires to bear many children within a happy marriage and family. The children in this home will multiply wondrously, comparable to the abnormal increase of children among the Hebrew slaves.

54:11–17, The Vindication of God's Servants. The name "Not Comforted" plays upon the key theme of comfort (40:1–2). This name, alongside the account of a husband's love for an unfaithful wife, may allude to similar depictions in Hosea 1–3, where a daughter is named "Not Pitied." God responds, describing an opulent restored Jerusalem, surpassing the extraordinary beauty of Babylon. The description moves beyond the realistic hopes of the exiles, as does the assurance that all their children will be "disciples" (lit., "ones who have been taught") of the Lord, like those claimed by an unnamed figure in 50:4, recalling Isaiah's own children or students in 8:16. These persons, both in 50:4 and here, do not claim to be disciples of Isaiah, as though they are content to be "Second Isaiahs," but claim to be disciples of God.

Here in 54:17, Israel is called, for the first time in Isaiah 40–66, God's "servants." The singular, "servant," which had been used for Israel in Isaiah 41–48, seems to have been reserved here for a mysterious figure who participates in the redemption that God brings to Israel.

55:1–5, A Covenant Like David's for Israel. It is likely that Isaiah 55, especially 55:6–13, may have once been the conclusion or epilogue to a collection of traditions that scholars usually assign to a Second Isaiah. If so, that is no longer the case. For one thing, Isaiah 40 now introduces all of chaps. 41–66, as is evident by recollections of it throughout those later chapters.

If 55:6–13 provided the conclusion to a prebiblical collection of Second Isaiah's oracles, we would expect, as in the preceding subsections, to hear hymnic imperatives in 55:12. Though the language in 55:12 is similar to that of the earlier hymnic elements, it is presented here as a prophetic salvation oracle, expanded by 55:13. Perhaps the original conclusion was reworked at the time when these traditions were incorporated into the book of Isaiah. What might have once been a conclusion has become a promise that encourages us to move from the one imperative in 55:6, "Seek the LORD!" to the complementary imperative of 56:1, "Maintain justice!"

This speech opens with an invocation similar to 54:1 and 54:11. It (vv. 1–3a) resembles at first glance Wisdom's summons to purchase education with "life" as one of its benefits (Prov. 8:32–36; cf. Isa. 55:3a). Unlike the speeches of Wisdom in Proverbs, God invites the people to "buy . . . without money" all the food and drink they need. By contrast, they have been wasting their meager resources on things that are unnecessary and cannot satisfy. The references to this purchase of "bread" anticipate similar ideas in the next passage about the "word" of God. The word "achieves" its purpose, like rain falling from heaven, which does not return until it effects a change on earth, making the sower's seed produce bread to eat (55:10).

Next, God does something else equally amazing for the people who hear this scripture ("you," v. 3). He will make with all of Israel an "everlasting covenant" identical to the covenant God made with David. This change in the covenant, from an individual to the nation, is consistent with the ambiguity concerning the "servant," whether an individual person or a collective noun signifying the entire nation. A precedent for this application of David's covenant to the nation occurred a few verses earlier in 54:9–10, when God gives to Israel ("you") after the Exile the same unconditional "covenant of peace" that had been given to Noah after the Flood. The terms here of "everlasting covenant" and "steadfast love" recall the same expressions in the accounts about David's covenant in 2 Sam. 7:8–16; 23:5; 1 Kings 8:23–26; Ps. 89:27–37 (Heb.: 89:28–38), recollected by other related terms in Ps. 2:7–8. This assignment of David's covenant to the people might explain how God would fulfill the promises to David through the people of Israel themselves rather than by the future appearance of a messianic figure who belongs to the lineage of David.

Equally as important is the description here of David as "a witness to the peoples." God tells Israel that "nations you do not know will run to you" (v. 5), using the same expression found in David's self-description in Ps. 18:43–45 (Heb.: 18:44–46), "people whom I had not known served me and . . . foreigners came trembling to me." The double reference to "foreigners" in Psalm 18 also corresponds well with the appearance of God-fearing "foreigners" who attach themselves to Israel in 56:3–6. Therefore, "you" who are here addressed will, like David, also share his role of being a "witness to the peoples."

To what sort of witness does this text refer? Here we need look no further than to passages in Isaiah 41–48 (43:10, 12; 44:8). We find the same declaration, "You are my witnesses!" These statements recall Joshua's same admonition to the people at the covenant renewal in Josh. 24:22, when a large stone "heard" the same word of the Torah and is called by Joshua "a witness against you." If Israel claims not to have heard, the stone will cry out; just as in the hymnic imperatives mountains burst into song.

55:6–13, Exhortation and Promise. "The wicked" are summoned to turn and receive God's mercy and

abundant forgiveness. Next we are given an explanation of how God can justify such forgiveness even when it flies in the face of justice according to worldly wisdom. The explanation in 55:8–11 attacks any naive view of God. It contrasts human thoughts and ways with God's, heaven's logic with that of the earth—illustrated by the rain and the snow, which do not return to God until they inundate the earth, nurturing the transformations from "seed, to sower; to bread, to eater" (v. 10). So the word from the mouth of God will not return until it has accomplished its purpose. This statement helps us understand the preceding offer by God in 55:1–5 to give the people water, bread, wine, and even richer food "for no money."

If 55:12–13 once served as the conclusion to a collection of oracles by a "Second Isaiah," it no longer has that function. Instead of the hymnic imperatives we might expect, we find instead a prophetic promise. The first verse dovetails with what preceded it in 55:6–13. As God's word "goes forth" and does not return to God in vain, "you shall go forth in joy" and "be led back [home] in peace." This restoration of the land of Israel will be spectacular; instead of the thorn, you will find a cypress, and instead of the brier, a myrtle tree, as an "everlasting sign" of God's promises (cf. 55:3). The "briers" and "thorns" recall the extensive use of this imagery in Isaiah 1–39 to express God's judgment against Israel, Judah, and even Assyria (cf., e.g., 5:1–7; 10:17).

56:1–2, Command and Beatitude. The opening imperative resonates with the preceding one (55:6), "Seek justice," and shares with 55:1–5 a play upon worldly wisdom's logic. The first half of 56:2 sounds like a proverb. However, the second half of 56:2 associates Sabbath observance with the efforts to refrain "from evil."

Why did the Sabbath play such a key role? Two reasons stand out. First, in Exod. 31:17 and later in Ezek. 20:11–24, it is a "sign forever" of Israel's special relationship to God. Second, Sabbath observance, more than any other ritual, held justice and holiness together. It required that everyone in the home, including slaves, foreigners, and livestock, be given a day of rest to celebrate God's work at creation (Exod. 20:11) and the people's deliverance from slavery in Egypt (Deut. 5:15).

56:3–8, Include the Outsiders. This literature offers evidence for the reuse of prebiblical traditions. In 56:3–8, the laments of the foreigners and eunuchs, which almost certainly derive from the exilic period, receive an oracular answer.

We might ask why the foreigner and eunuch would fear that God might "separate me from his people." One answer comes from the Torah itself. Deut. 23:1–8 (Heb.: 23:2–9) bans eunuchs (Israelites or not) and certain foreigners from full participation in worship at the Temple. Although only Levites could officiate at sacrifices (Num. 18) and foreigners had always been allowed to bring offerings to the Temple (Num. 15:14–16; Lev. 22:18–25), the concern here is whether the rules like those in Deuteronomy 23 will prevent observant eunuchs and foreigners from full participation in worship at the Temple.

Isa. 56:3–8 begins with an injunction, perhaps to priests or singers in the Temple. What follows in 56:4–8 is a startling oracle of promise that looks far beyond the sobriety of juridical deliberations.

As a sign of God's abundant love and mercy, the foreigner and eunuch hear that if they "keep the Sabbaths" and "hold fast my covenant," they will be comforted to know that, in the future, eunuchs will be "better than" the children they might have produced and foreigners who face restrictions will be able to offer sacrifices like any Israelite. God promises that in the future all Israelites and converted foreigners will be like Levites in the Temple. The point that eunuchs and foreigners will be able to pray in the Temple is underscored twice by calling the Temple "a house of prayer." This description elevates prayer over sacrifice.

In sum, God has heard the laments of eunuchs and foreigners who are prevented from participating fully in worship at the Temple. If the present time requires acceptance of certain restrictions, in the future all these restrictions will be removed. All Israelites and converts will be as Levites and, as Joel 2:28 (Heb.: 3:1) states, "all flesh" (cf. Isa. 40:5; and see Isa. 14:1; Zech. 2:11) and all your sons and daughters will be as prophets.

56:9–57:21, The Wicked and the Humble. Isa. 56:9–57:13a is a collection of pre-exilic oracles: 56:9–12; 57:1–2; 57:3–6; 57:7–13a. Together they offer a poetic denunciation of "watchmen" (prophets) and "shepherds" (leaders) who would rather drink wine than protect the people.

After an indictment of the leaders, 57:1a offers a lament over "the righteous" and "faithful persons" who implicitly speak these prayers out loud to God. This lament, similar in content to Ps. 12:1 (Heb.: 12:2) and Mic. 7:2, ought to be heard just like the laments of the foreigners and eunuchs (56:3). The answer to this outspoken prayer is again an oracle, not of promise but of judgment—against those people about whom the lamenter complains. The oracle (57:3–6) has a juridical style, as if the accused is summoned before the judge to be sentenced. After the summons to the accused (v. 3), the charges are restated (vv. 4–5), and the sentence is given (v. 6).

Next, an invective-threat oracle (57:7–13a), reminiscent of Hosea, extends the indictment beyond the leaders to the people at large. They are adulterous and idolatrous, more ready to remember to buy their fa-

vorite perfume than to recall their relation to God, to whom they give not a thought (v. 11). A few righteous acts cannot compensate now; their own outspoken words of lament drift off in the breeze (v. 12–13a).

At this point, the tone changes completely. The very last phrase of 57:13 bluntly states an alternative, in a terse admonition: "Whoever seeks refuge in me shall inherit the land and that one will possess my holy mountain." The Qumran scroll of Isaiah sets it off as a small paragraph-like statement, what we might call today "a sound bite," for the reading of the scroll in public. This editorial addition clearly comes from the Psalms and, even more significantly, from the thematizing phrase at the end of the introduction of Psalms 1–2 in 2:11b, "Happy are all who take refuge in him." The term "refuge" occurs periodically in the incipits in the psalms that follow; it is used three times in an oracle of salvation in Psalm 91.

Isa. 57:14 provides a singular note, immediately recalling this key topic ("prepare the way") in 40:3–4 and elsewhere. Here the promise of 40:3–4 illustrates the nature of scriptural prophecy, which can be heard as both announcing a future event for the nation, a paving of the way to Zion, and also indicating the lengths to which God will go to hear the prayer of the contrite and humble (57:15).

The salvation oracle in 57:14–19 ought to be compared with the similar salvation oracles in 54:2–10. Both explain God's limited wrath in the human situation. Both speak of God's empathetic care: God's "pity" and "steadfast love" in 54:7–8 and God's healing "comfort" in 57:18. Both emphasize his name as "Holy" (54:5; 57:15). At the end of the salvation oracle in 54:2–10, we hear about God's "covenant of peace." After the salvation oracles we hear, in what may be an editorial addition, "'Peace, peace, far and near!' says the LORD" (57:19).

The refrain in 57:21 essentially repeats the earlier one in 48:22, with one minor change—instead of "says the LORD," in 48:22, it has "says my God," which makes it sound here more like an affirmation by the people. The editors have made it more consistent with the topic of "the wicked" than it was in 48:22. Isa. 57:21 provides a particularly impressive conclusion to the second of the three major divisions of Isaiah 40–66.

58:1–66:24
The Lord's Way with This Diverse People

The third major portion of Isaiah 41–66 opens with two discourses, Isaiah 58 and 59. This section begins with God's wrath against a people who superficially claim to have actually heard and to have responded to the invocations that punctuate the first and second sections of 41–66. The question in the second section from God's side engages, at the beginning of the third section, the question from the side of the people and God's response to it in Isaiah 58 and 59.

58:1–59:21
The Problem of God's Silence

These two discourses at the beginning of the third part of Isaiah 40–66 belong together. In both, people question God's silence despite their prayers. The key question they ask is paraphrased in the title (58:3). The verb in the second part of the question signifies a "humbling of our spirits/souls/vitality." The NJPS conveys this sense tersely, "starve ourselves," since the following noun (Heb. *nephesh*) signifies "spirit" or vitality. The question in 59:1 moves in a similar direction only to reproach God to show his "hand," a common metaphor for the "strength" and the "power" of God reasserted in response in 59:1. Isa. 58:2 explains that people "seek" God. The verb here is a technical term for consulting God through prayer, prophecy, or divination.

These two chapters appeal to a situation in which the people "seek daily" to hear a fresh word from God. In response to their question in 58:3, God ignores all other questions, addressing only this one reproachful query. Moreover, God compares the observance of "your fast days" (v. 3) with "the holy day of the LORD," the Sabbath, which they ignore because of "[their] own self-interests" (v. 13).

Isaiah 59 addresses the same question. Then we hear another reason why God refuses to hear and to answer their prayers. The people themselves have erected "barriers" with their sins that "hide" God's "face" from them. Hence, the "peace" sought so clearly at the end of the second part of Isaiah 41-66 (57:20–21) completely eludes them (59:8). In Isaiah 59, unlike 58, the people offer a torrential confession of sin (59:9–15a), which involves hope for the very same "peace" (59:8) and "truth/security" (59:15) that Hezekiah enjoys in his own lifetime (39:8). Finally, God appears as the divine warrior against injustice (59:15b–19), a theophany followed by a brief word of salvation to those who repent (59:20) along with a recollection of God's special covenant with Israel (59:21).

58:1–14, A Call for a Fast of Doing Justice. This third part of Isaiah 40–66 begins with an imperative, more like 40:1 than the invocations of the coastlands at the beginning of the first and second parts (41:1; 49:1). Unlike 40:1, the command occurs in the singular, not the plural, as if only one prophet is told to declare this message. Instead of admonishing "comfort," it indicts "their rebellion or transgression" and "their sins." Isa. 58:2 shifts immediately away to a general description of the nation "seeking" God "day by day" in prayer and fasting. The answer from God follows immediately after their question in v. 5. It begins by addressing the nation, with "you" (plural), moves beautifully to a

collective singular, as is typical of case law ("Do I desire a day for a man . . . "), and finally offers admonitions in the rest of what follows in the singular, direct, and personal "you." This text affirms that ritual activity is worthless unless it is accompanied by the personal and social pursuit of justice.

Isa. 58:8b repeats a phrase also found in 52:12, a promise that God will both lead and be the rear guard along the way. This promise of God's presence ahead of and behind the nation is also present in 58:8b, a promise pertinent to each individual's daily journey of faith. The protection of God in the daily walk of Israelites belongs to the hope of a national restoration in the land God has given them.

Isa. 58:13–14 would, by itself, convey a highly spiritualized view of the Sabbath. No mention is made of rest for workers and animals, and no comment is made about refraining from evil as in 56:1–2. However, this text is obviously not meant to stand on its own. It is similar to 56:1–2, which begins with the admonition, "Maintain justice!" The impressive admonition in Isaiah 58 testifies to the same revelation as the scriptural Torah of Moses.

Isa. 58:10 uses two words together, "darkness" and "gloom," for the state that will be eliminated by "your light," which rises as at noon whenever "you" satisfy the hunger and need of others. Elsewhere in Scripture, the same combination describes the utter darkness of a prison (42:7; 49:9), death (Job 10:21), a deep sleep (Job 24:7), the lack of light in a cavern or mine (Job 28:3) and the bleakest darkness of night (Ps. 139:12).

This combination occurs more frequently in Isaiah than in any other scriptural book: 8:22; 29:18; 58:10; 59:9; 60:1–3. In 8:22 it describes the circumstances of exile, into which light from a messianic king will shine (9:1–6). According to 58:10, the light created by any individual causes the darkness to flee whenever that person shows kindness and mercy to others. A lament in 59:9 plays on the same idea expressed a few verses before (in 58:10) by complaining that "we wait for justice" (59:10) to remove the darkness of our lives. Finally, 60:1–3 commands everyone in Israel, "Arise and shine! For your light has come." Here the darkness of the entire world meets the light from the glory of the Lord. The deity causes Israel to be a light to all the nations, who, in turn, "will come to your light" (60:3), perhaps to study Torah and to fight no more in Jerusalem.

59:1–21, The Power of God and the People's Sin. This section is convoluted because it redeploys older pre-exilic sayings to a later situation and because we have no access to the context from which the sayings derive. We hear language from the Psalms and other parts of Scripture. The chapter begins with the prophet's (or priest's) answer from God as an indictment (vv. 1–3), which is expanded into a third-person description (vv. 4–8) of "them." The change in person suits the rhetoric of a prophet separate from the people, replete with exaggerated descriptions of their zeal for evil, soon after announcing at the outset that "barriers" now stand between "you" (plural) and God (cf. v. 2). The people surely hoped for the prophet to intercede on their behalf, as in the later prayer in which someone reminiscent of Moses pleads, "Do not be extremely angry, O LORD . . . we are your people" (64:9 [Heb.: 64:8]; cf. Exod. 32:11–13; Num. 14:13–19; Ps. 90).

We hear the people lament the consequences of their behavior (vv. 9–11) and then confess their sins, using different terms for transgression: "apostasies," "sins," "transgression," "denying God," "lies," "revolt," and "deceit" (vv. 12–13). We encounter a short summary of violations of the Torah, collected here with rhetorical restraint unlike the prophet's description of their evil actions in vv. 4–8.

In vv. 15b–20, there follows a description from God's side of the "barriers" that have separated Israel from God. As with Sodom, God cannot find a single person who pursues justice (v. 16). But here God responds by preparing himself for battle, clothed in heaven with armor representing the very things he cannot find in Israel on earth. As divine warrior, he descends to take revenge, which in the end will redeem Zion and turn Israel away from apostasy. This extraordinary depiction invited eschatological speculation, e.g., Rom. 11:26–27.

60:1–62:12
Prophecies of Salvation

This collection offers more coherence than do those surrounding it. Some scholars regard it as the epitome of a Third Isaiah, though we clearly have in this part of the book a variety of prophets following in the legacy of Isaiah. The message of salvation, unrelenting in its exuberance and contagious in its enthusiasm, rings like a clarion call throughout these chapters. Similar visions regarding a restored Israel and a world of nations who "see" Israel's vindication and glory appear earlier in 1–39 (esp. 24–27) and, then, at the end of the book (65:17–25; 66:7–9; 66:18–23).

60:1–22, The Light of the Lord. The "light" the people seek in 59:9–10 and especially "your light," which is promised in 58:8, 10, becomes the topical framework for this entire passage, both at the beginning (vv. 1–3) and the end (vv. 19–20). Instead of the summons in the second section of Isaiah 41–66 to "depart" from Babylon and "return" to Jerusalem, the people are commanded here, "Arise, shine, for your light has come!"

The flood of good news should be enough to cause "your heart [to] thrill and rejoice" (v. 5a). This text presumes the rebuilt Temple, either at present or in the future (vv. 7, 13) and that all nations will worship the Lord (v. 6). Those who have "waited for God" (v. 9) will

bring their riches to Israel; foreign kings will volunteer to build and serve (v. 10); everything in Israel will be renamed ("City of the LORD," "Peace," Righteousness," "Salvation," and "Praise," vv. 14, 17–18). This future situation will completely realize God's promises (v. 16, cf. 59:20). Isaiah 60 is replete with allusions to other parts of Isaiah. Resonances with the transitional introduction include: vv. 4, 9 (40:10–11); vv. 6, 9 (40:5). From Isaiah 40–48, see v. 4a (49:18a), vv. 3–7, 14, 16 (49:22–23), v. 15a (54:6), v. 16b (49:26b). From Isaiah 1–39, note v. 21b and the vineyard imagery (e.g., 3:13–15; 5:1–7; 27:2–5).

61:1–9, Good News for the Oppressed. The first two and a half verses provide a first-person report of someone's claim to have been given a commission by God. Many features recall the servant songs (42:1–4; 49:1–6). God's act of putting "the spirit of the LORD *upon*" (v. 1) someone is a typical credential of both pre-exilic prophets and the messianic king (see Mic. 3:8; cf. Isa. 11:2; 42:1). The idea that God "sent" this person to be a herald of good tiding recasts language found in 40:9; 41:27; and 52:7. There it described a messenger who announces something good that has already taken place. If the person here is Third Isaiah, then the prophet has combined the role of the "herald" with that of the "servant" in an unanticipated way. If so, we can give more definition to the rather vague tasks of this prophet. For example, once the return from exile had begun, "release to the captives" could imply a Jubilee-like dismissal of all debt—to free exiled Judeans who had been forced into debtors' slavery. The verb "release" is elsewhere used exclusively for the Jubilee freeing of slaves (cf. Isa. 58:6; Lev. 25:10; Jer. 34:8, 15, 17; Ezek. 46:17). The next phrase actually lacks a Hebrew word for "prison" and can be taken either as a single word "opening," implying sight for the blind as in the Qumran Isaiah scroll, the LXX, and the citation in Luke 4:18, or as two words, "opening the bound" as in the Targum, "liberty . . . to those who are bound." This verb elsewhere refers only to the opening of blind eyes. If the promise here is to heal the blind, then it exceeds the actions expected either by a herald or the servant (cf. 58:6–8; 61:1–3). The aim "to comfort all mourners" may seem to clash with the prophetic promises that follow in 61:4–9 because they, like 60:20, announce an end for the need to mourn; they even involve "everlasting joy" (v. 7).

Isa. 61:1–3 belongs in a context replete with extraordinary promises of salvation. In Isaiah 60, the light of the sun and moon is replaced with the Lord's everlasting light (60:19). "All" Israel will be "righteous" (60:21). No one will "mourn" again (60:20); the children of Israel's old "oppressors" will travel to Zion to do obeisance and to rename the people of Israel the "City of the LORD" (60:14). "Its time," when these events take place, is left intentionally unspecific and, therefore, resonates well with an open-ended promise by the person in 61:1–3. This individual brings absolute relief for the oppressed, the brokenhearted, captives, and blind persons, "a year of the LORD's favor," and a single "day of our God's vengeance."

There is no clear break between 61:1–3a and what follows in vv. 3b–9. These verses describe concretely some implications of the declaration in 61:1–3a. Israel will be fully restored (v. 4); foreigners will tend the flocks of Israel (61:5) and bring their wealth to Israel (v. 6). God's people will know "everlasting joy" (v. 7) commensurate with God's "everlasting covenant" (v. 8). The blessings promised to Abraham will be fully realized by Israel and all the nations as well (v. 9).

Isa. 61:1–9, like Isaiah 60, resonates with many other texts in the book. One may cite God's use of the nations to "feed" Israel (v. 5; cf. 40:11) and, possibly, the double portion of joy (v. 7; cf. 40:1–2). Elsewhere in Isaiah: on "the spirit of the LORD on me" in v. 1, see 42:1; for release from prison in v. 1, see 49:9a; for those who are "bound" in v. 1, see 49:9; for "day of vengeance" in v. 2, see 34:8 and 63:4; for "the planting of the LORD" in v. 3, see 60:21b; for v. 4, see 49:6 and 58:12; and for "an everlasting covenant" in v. 8, see 55:3. These final chapters clearly emphasize the rebuilding of Israel (58:12; 60:10; 61:4; 65:21, 23; 66:1), rather than the exiles "departing" or "going out" from Babylon to "return" the land (Isa. 41–48; 49–57).

61:10–62:9, Joy in the Lord. A thanksgiving hymn of an individual occurs in 61:10–11. It clearly responds to salvation oracles that precede and follow it. The hymn anticipates a time when every Israelite will wear special clothing, which publicly testifies to and celebrates the full realization on earth of God's "salvation" and "righteousness." We may compare these garments with the clothes worn by God, the divine warrior; see 59:15b–17; 63:1–9. Only God wears "garments of vengeance for clothing" (59:17) or robes soaked "red" with the blood of enemies who have been slaughtered by God's "own arm" (63:2, 5).

Isa. 62:1–9 points, as do many other texts (cf. 48:9; 54:7–8; 57:16; 60:10), to the empathetic struggle God has between upholding justice and acting with mercy. These verses express God's side of the dilemma, utilizing complaints drawn from the Psalms about God's "silence," which also recurs in 64:12 (Heb.: 64:11) at the end of a long intercessory prayer and again in 65:6 (cf. Ps. 83:1 [Heb.: 83:2]; 28:1). Here it speaks directly to the earlier complaint in 58:3, though now with a word of salvation.

Isa. 62:4 offers the promise that God will rename the city and the people (cf. 61:2b). This promise that the restoration will entail a change so great that it evokes a renaming of Jerusalem is announced in the introduction of this scroll (1:26). According to 1:25, "the hand" of God has been against them. However, after the refining fire of judgment, God will restore their judges and counselors and Jerusalem will be

called the "city of righteousness" and the "faithful city." The use of passive verbs in 62:4 creates an ambiguity, suggesting the new names correspond both to what the other nations "see" (62:2) and to what is actually effected by God for the exiles. As in 1:26 and throughout Isaiah, the "hand" of the Lord is often raised in judgment; now, however, it holds a royal crown for Israel (62:3). The joy shared by God and Israel recalls the celebration of a wedding (v. 5).

62:10–12, The Redeemed of the Lord. The words in vv. 10–11 appear to be a pastiche of phrases, echoes, or reminiscences from earlier parts of the scroll (cf., in order, 52:11; 57:14 [cf. esp. 40:3]; 49:22; 48:20; 40:10–11; 52:11; 62:4). Rather than an anthological midrash based on Scripture, such as is found later in Sirach or Baruch, they derive from a legacy of prophetic sayings.

These verses help set Isaiah 60–62 within the larger orbit of chaps. 40–66, employing learned esoteric scribal rules. The most important plays are on Isaiah 1 and 40. For v. 10, see 40:3–4; for v. 11, see 40:10; and for v. 12, see 62:4 and especially 1:26b, where the same formulation of three words occurs both here and in 62:4. This last verse assigns two names to Zion comparable to those given the people of Israel. "Not Forsaken" recalls 62:4, and earlier statements about Jerusalem's demise (e.g., 49:14). The other name for the city can mean both "Cared For" or "Inquired of" (or "Consulted"), a technical term for divination. One may compare the usage in Jer. 30:17, "It is Zion; no one cares for her!" Similarly, in Deut. 11:12, the same verb conveys the idea that God "looks after the land."

63:1–6
The Divine Warrior

Someone asks a question of a nearby crowd about a stranger who is approaching. The question is not "Who are you?" as an unbiased sentinel might ask of that stranger, but rather, "Who is this?" We are told the stranger comes from Bozrah, the capital of Edom, and that he swaggers, clothed in a precious robe ruined by crimson stains. We know that Edom is an archetypal enemy of Israel. Isa. 11:14 looks to a time when a reunited nation of Israel will plunder the surrounding enemies, including Edom. Even closer to these verses is the imagery of God's wrath against the nations in 34:1–15, with corpses left unburied and rivers of blood flowing down the mountainside. The sword of the Lord "in a day of vengeance" (34:8, as here in 63:4; cf. 35:4) is washed in blood due to God's sacrifice in "Edom" and specifically at "Bozrah" (34:5–15, as in 63:1–6).

The response of the stranger partially answers the question, "Who is this?" By stating, "[It is] I!" we may assume we meet a familiar figure, whose identity as the Lord is unmistakable; "It is I, speaking in righteousness, [powerful] enough to save!" We hear once more the partial revelation of God's unrelenting defense of truth and justice. In theory, this person could be either God or God's anointed one ("messiah"; cf. 9:7 [Heb.: 9:6]; 11:3–5). The depiction of bloodshed and unburied bodies is similar to other texts in this book (25:10; 26:6, 20–21; 27:7–11). The scale of this judgment is cosmic, a battle of the Lord with the mythological serpent, Leviathan, who symbolizes the power of the sea that threatens to destroy any justice (right order, truth) in the world (27:1). Both the last verse of the introduction, 1:31, and the last verse of this scroll stand as signposts, reminding us of the purging, unquenchable fire of God's wrath against all injustice, whether of the nations or in Israel.

The clothing of this figure, the divine warrior, has been previously mentioned in different ways, especially in 59:16–17. Even when Israel is a victim of a ruthless oppressor, the crimes of victims upon victims will not be overlooked by God, who will "alone" (63:3, 5) uphold justice. God utters a complaint, "If favor is shown to the wicked, they do not learn righteousness" (27:10; cf. 61:8–9; 62:10). On an international scale of wisdom, "righteousness" here should be heard as close to an appeal for what we might call "human rights." Such a norm is a natural revelation by God, like "the Noahic covenant" of later rabbinic teaching. This revelation causes one to live by faith, even if insufficient to support a "natural theology." God hopes that the nations will "see" and "understand" (62:2) the appropriateness of pursuing a just peace among all peoples. The horrible testimony of 63:1–6 reminds us of the alternative, just as does the last verse of the introduction, 1:31, and the last verse of the entire scroll, 66:24.

63:7–65:16
God's Salvation and Human Injustice

Scholars have had difficulty in reaching agreement over what parts in this section could be from a Third Isaiah. Except for 63:18 and 64:10–11 (Heb.: 64:9–10), the prayer in 63:7–64:12 (Heb.: 63:7–64:11) could be heard as pre-exilic. The response to it in 65:1–16a has many features that are more compatible with pre-exilic adoption of Canaanite practices than we imagine for postexilic apostasies (e.g., 65:11). The chapters that follow include a quotation from 11:6–9 (in 65:25) and other traditions not belonging to what we can postulate for a Third Isaiah. For these reasons, we are probably wiser to allow for various prophetic voices in the last part of the scroll.

How the history of the human abuses of power and infidelities will still allow Israel and the nations to hope in God's salvation is addressed at many points in this part of Isaiah. Here, again, the dilemma is viewed from two sides: from the side of the prophet's intercession to God on behalf of "your [God's] servants" or

"your people," and, then, from the side of God, who answers only in vague references to "a people" rather than as in oracles that follow, to "my people" (e.g., 65:19) or to "my servants" (e.g., 65:8). Both witnesses confirm that God's salvation must remain utterly intolerant of injustice.

63:7–64:12 (Heb.: 63:7–64:11), Longing for God's Intervention. This prayer is a communal lament, which begins in a way similar to Psalms 44 and 89, with a recounting of God's acts of benevolence toward the community (63:7–14). The opening act, presented only in a very general way, is God's claim of "my people" who as "children" are expected to act rightly. That they did not act justly is attested in the opening words of the scroll (1:2–3). Yet God heard their distress and in "love" and "pity" rescued them and "carried" them (63:9; cf. 40:11) to safety. When they "rebelled," God became temporarily their "enemy" (63:10); then they recalled "the days of old," specifically how God used his servant Moses to lead "his flock" (cf. 40:11) through divided waters and to give them "rest" elsewhere (63:11–14).

At this point (63:15) the lament proper begins. The formal elements of lamentation familiar from the psalms—complaint, confession of sin, expressions of confidence, petition, inducements for God to intervene—all occur here, but in an irregular and repetitive fashion, like the efforts of a desperate intercessor who no longer knows what will convince God or the community. Clearly, the prayer presumes the destruction of the Solomonic Temple, of Jerusalem, and other cities of Judah in 587 B.C. (63:18; 64:10–11 [Heb.: 64:9–10]). The "adversaries" whom God is asked to oppose so that they may know the Lord's "name" would logically be the Babylonians. Hence the prayer may be dated to a time early in the Exile, before Persia conquered Babylon. Several motifs are similar to those in Deuteronomy 32. The confession of sin in 64:5b–6 (Heb.: 64:4b–5) is particularly intense, reminiscent of Psalm 51, and it closes with a complaint, "You have hidden your face from us." The last verse of this lament concludes with a related question, "Will you keep silent, and punish us severely?"

Two essential requirements for Israel—"waiting" and "hurrying"—are neatly summarized in 64:4–5 (Heb.: 64:3–4). God "shall act for those who wait for him," but Israel must hurry to "do justice" as God's servants in the world.

Here, prayer is the people's way of expressing disappointment with God's actions and appealing for a change, literally, for God to "turn around," or "repent," in that forensic sense. The supplicant can, as here, seek to persuade the Lord by appeal to past blessings (63:7, 14), to God's own "compassion" (63:15; cf. 40:1), by confession of sins (64:5–6 (Heb.: 64:4–5]), and to God's special relationship with "your servants," Israel (63:8, 16–17; 64:8–12 [Heb.: 64:7–11]). An intercessor can also invoke God to act in order to cause "the adversaries" and other nations "to know your name" (64:2 [Heb.: 64:1]). Just as in Deut. 32:27, God cannot allow the enemies utterly to destroy Israel because they will "misunderstand" and think, "Our hand is triumphant; it was not the LORD who did all this" (cf. Num. 14:11–16).

65:1–7, God's Answer to His People's Wickedness. The first verse is curious because it describes God being "inquired of" or consulted for revelation by those who did not "ask," even "being found" by those who did not "seek." The Lord had said, "Here am I, Here am I," which one might expect as response to an Israelite prayer, but it comes here to "a nation who did not call upon my name."

In Isaiah, this statement as a description of Israel seems at odds with 1:15 and 40:27–31, as well as with 58:2, which describes "my people" who daily "inquire of me" in pious fasts and holy days that God despises. In the next section, "my people" are distinguished from "you," the wicked, who receive blessings because they "have inquired of me" (65:10). Here we hear that the nations will respond in "righteousness" and "praise" (61:11), even if they, like the "coastlands," "have not heard of my fame or seen my glory" (66:19). Perhaps Israel had lost knowledge of God enough to realize it was no longer seeking God. Isaiah 66:11 appears to describe worship of Canaanite deities. God accuses people of "following their own imagination" instead of taking a true path (v. 2). They have rebelled and provoked God, "continually right to my face" (v. 3). The criticism about "sacrificing in gardens" is an issue implicitly mentioned in the introduction, 1:29, and again near the very end of the book, 66:17.

Within Scripture prayer as "inquiry" and God's word as "answer," "Here I am," are regularly portrayed as two-sided. The people may think they seek God, but do so in ways that ignore God's own self-revelation. The Psalms, Torah, and Prophets show that the people can *learn* to pray well. Without such learning, however, they might pray naively, innocently, or inappropriately. From God's side, they must also learn to *listen* as well as to "inquire" of God. So, here in v. 12, and again in 66:4, one hears the complaint that "you" neither "answer" nor even "listen" when God calls!

The prophet cites a judgment from a heavenly book "written in my presence" (v. 6; cf. Exod. 32:32; Isa. 4:3; Mal. 3:6; Dan. 7:10). The judgment involves retribution for both present sins and those of their forefathers. According to this record, God has declared, "I will not keep silent!" God's "silence" is similar to the end of the preceding prayer (64:12 [Heb.: 64:11]). Such silence is a sign of God's restraint, as in 42:14, and not the silence of rejection, as in 62:1–5. This combination of invectives against the entire nation in 65:1–5,

followed by a general threat to "repay" the people in vv. 6–7, is familiar from pre-exilic oracles.

65:8–16, Servants and Apostates. These two sections, vv. 8–12 and 13–16, divide those who hear this scroll into two groups, typical of the way in which Israel is described in the early postexilic period. "My people" and "my servants" designate the faithful. However, the ones directly addressed "you" are those involved with Canaanite religion (65:11). They refuse to hear God's call to them (65:12). To these, God will fulfill none of the promises in this scripture, while for the faithful "the former troubles" will not be repeated; for them the Exile will not happen again (cf. 54:9). Isa. 65:12 accuses "you" of pursuing the gods of fortune, Gad and Meni. For the Syrian deity Gad, see Josh. 11:17, 15:37. Meni is apparently the god Manat, mentioned in inscriptions from Phoenicia and Palmyra.

65:17–66:24
An Unscientific Postscript for Those Who Tremble at God's Word

Like the end to a great play or chorus, the last verses of the scroll recall key themes. The creation of a new heaven and earth (65:17; 66:22) refers to God as the one who "creates" new things, past and present. The same emphasis occurs at the end of chap. 40 and especially in Isaiah 41–48. Except for 54:16 (two times) and 57:19, only there and here again at the end of the book does this use of the verb "create" play such a major role (66:17, 18 [two times]). Instead of God's refusal to answer prayer (64:12; cf. 1:15; 40:27), God's answering those who do not ask (65:1), or God's call to a people who do not answer or even listen (65:12; 66:4), we now hear that within the new heaven and earth, God will answer (65:24) even before people can finish a prayer!

Many resonances with other Isaianic texts can be found in this collection of sayings. Citations from 11:6–9 remind us of messianic hope. Many elements recall chap. 40, including the wealth of the nations brought to Israel (66:12; cf. 40:10–11), "comfort" to "you" (66:13; cf. 40:1–2); the exiles will flourish like grass (66:14; cf. 66:7–9; 40:7); and "all flesh" will worship the Lord (66:23; cf. 40:5).

This last chapter returns to the topic of the coastlands with shocking words of salvation. Their role within Isaiah becomes explicit, as a people in the distant west who have never heard of God's "fame" and "glory" (66:19). They play a major role in this book, for they are the ones directly summoned to hear the scroll (41:1; 49:1, "O peoples far away!"). In 66:10–11 we again find hymnic imperatives, like those we heard earlier. Those addressed include anyone who is "glad for" Jerusalem and all those who "love her" (v. 10). They will nurse from her breasts (v. 11; cf. 2:3–4). Survivors will testify to the coastlands (66:19) who will, in turn, "see" God's glory and travel as converts to Jerusalem (66:20). God will appoint some of them as "priests and Levites" in the temple of the new heaven and new earth, when all nations will worship God (66:21–23).

Isa. 66:1–4 offers a judgment against apostasies (cf. 65:1–7), with special concern for "those who tremble at my word" (vv. 2, 5). The verb "tremble" is used in various ways: fear for one's life, reaction of birds who are frightened away, the dismay felt by Jacob when he realized he had been deceived (Gen. 27:33), and the anxiety felt when Boaz notices Ruth sleeping at his feet (Ruth 3:8). Both Jeremiah and Ezekiel use the term to assure Judeans that, due to God's mercy, they will no longer need to "tremble" in fear (Jer. 30:1, 46:27; Ezek. 34:28, 39:26).

The verb may, however, have more positive uses. Both fear and religious ecstasy combine, for example, in the people's trembling at the theophany on Mount Sinai (Exod. 19:16); even the mountain itself trembles (cf. Exod. 19:18), though surely not out of "fear." In 1 Sam. 4:13, Eli's "heart trembled" in his devotion and anxiety about the Ark of God brought to the battle. After Ezra hears that returned exiles, including priests and Levites, had not separated from foreigners and had actually married their daughters (9:1–2), he tore his garments and those "who trembled at the words of the God of Israel" joined him until the time of the evening sacrifice (9:4). Later, Ezra's prayer, confession, weeping, and gestures of intense grief and devotion convince some of these same people that they should call for a dissolution of these marriages according to "the counsel" of the Lord and "of those who tremble at the commandment of our God" (10:3). Here the issue is not simply a negative "fear," but a response to the presence of God through hearing the testimony of Scripture. This same sense of the mysterious presence of God occurs outside of Ezra only here in Isaiah. Although 64:2 (Heb.: 64:1) uses the term in the more common sense of "fear," the other occurrences (66:2; 66:5) stress an involuntary response to God's "word." All these prophecies in the book of Isaiah function like the words of the Torah—as testimonies to a revelation from God. This book challenges Judeans to hear God's own "call" (cf. 65:12, 24; 66:4) and to hear in the public reading of Scripture the "voice [of the LORD] from the city . . . and from the temple" (66:6). Likewise, the people are to "see" through the lens of God's own revelation, which elicits in Israel great rejoicing (66:14), the conversion of "the coastlands" (66:18–19), and the appearance in Jerusalem of "all flesh . . . to worship before me" (66:23).

Bibliography

Childs, B. *The Book of Isaiah: A Critical, Theological Commentary*. Old Testament Library. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 2000.

Clifford, R. *Fair Spoke and Persuading: An Interpretation*

of Second Isaiah. Theological Inquiries. New York: Paulist, 1984.

Muilenburg, J. "Chapters 40–66." In *The Interpreter's Bible*. Edited by G. Buttrick, et al. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1956. Vol. 5, pp. 381–773.

Seitz, C. *Isaiah 1–39*. Interpretation. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1993.

Sweeney, M. *Isaiah 1–4 and the Post-Exilic Understanding of the Isaianic Tradition*. Beiheft zur Zeitschrift für die alttestamentliche Wissenschaft, 171. Berlin: de Gruyter, 1988.

———. *Isaiah 1–39: With an Introduction to Prophetic Literature*. Forms of the Old Testament Literature, 16. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1996.

Westermann, C. *Isaiah 40–66*. Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1969.

Jeremiah

THOMAS W. OVERHOLT

INTRODUCTION

The first two sentences of the book of Jeremiah summarize its contents—the "words of Jeremiah"—and assign it a date—the reigns of the last four kings of Judah (1:1–3). One soon discovers, however, that the book is neither a straightforward chronicle of that historical period nor simply a verbatim collection of the prophet's utterances.

Even casual readers of the book of Jeremiah will observe three things, the first of which is that its content is diverse and loosely organized. There is no narrative, plot line, or any other principle of organization (e.g., chronological order or arrangement by topic) that encompasses the book as a whole. Instead, one finds a variety of literary forms in both poetry (e.g., oracles of judgment and of salvation, individual laments) and prose (e.g., biographical narratives, sermons, a letter). Sometimes these forms occur in homogeneous units (2:1–3:5, oracles of judgment; chaps. 37–44, biographical prose); sometimes they are widely dispersed (the individual laments are scattered through chaps. 11–20). A number of different audiences (kings, nobles, priests, other prophets, the general populace, foreign nations) and problems (the threat of war, drought, contemptible behavior) are addressed, and a variety of metaphors employed (see, e.g., 2:1–4:4; 12:7–13). Whole verses, or passages, may even be repeated (6:12–15 and 8:10–12; 10:12–16 and 51:15–19).

A second observation is that some sections of the book seem to have a special biographical interest. Though the oracles of judgment reveal little about the prophet himself, the opposite is the case for the narratives of chaps. 26–29 and 36–44, which report his activity in the framework of datable historical circumstances. Third, one observes that Jeremiah seems to have been embroiled in controversy with officials of the state (chaps. 26; 36–37), priests (20:1–6), and other prophets (chaps. 28–29).

These observations give rise to a like number of questions to which we must turn before beginning the commentary: what types of literary material are found in Jeremiah, and how are we to understand the way these were combined to form the present book? To what extent does the book provide us with biographical information about the prophet? What was the importance of the prophet and the traditions about him in the context of the social, political, and religious settings of the period during which the book of Jeremiah came into existence?

Literary Form and Composition

The book of Jeremiah contains both poetry and prose. Materials of these two types tend to be gathered into different sections of the book, although intermixing of types is frequent (→ Poetry).

The poetry consists of prophetic utterances of several types, concentrated in chaps. 1–25 and 46–51. The most common form is the oracle. The use of direct address couched in the first person (the "I" is God, not the prophet; see 2:1–3) shows that these were thought of as God's words delivered through the prophet to a specific audience. They tend to be brief and composed in one basic pattern (e.g., 5:10–14). This pattern contains an introduction (v. 10), an accusation (vv. 11–13), a formula signifying that the message is from God (v. 14a), and an announcement of God's judgment against the people (v. 14b). These elements and this order are not, however, invariable. Thus, in the complaint (or "lawsuit") form of the oracles, the prophet states on God's behalf a grievance against the people (e.g., 2:5–9), but there is no announcement of judgment.

Oracles like these are common to prophets both in the OT and elsewhere (→ Prophet). Beside the specific content of what he says, Jeremiah's uniqueness is sometimes evident in stylistic variations on the form. One of these is his use of rhetorical questions, which often set the stage for an accusation directed against his audience (e.g., 2:11–12, 32; 3:1–5). Like any effective speaker, Jeremiah made use of forms he and his audience were familiar with, but modified them to suit his own purposes.

Another type of poetry important in the book of Jeremiah and occurring in no other prophetic book is the personal complaint, or lament (see 11:18–12:6; 15:10–21; 17:14–18; 18:18–23; 20:7–18). These complaints share certain formal characteristics with the individual lamentations in the Psalms. Since the latter are usually understood to have been used in a ritual context and by a variety of different persons, the question

of the extent to which these complaints give us useful information about Jeremiah himself has been hotly debated.

The major prose passages in Jeremiah may be classified into two types, biography and prose sermons. The former are narratives that speak about Jeremiah in the third person, reporting things he did and said and placing them within a social and historical context (see 19:1–20:6; 26; 28–29; 36; 37–45; 51:59–64). The prose sermons, in which Jeremiah sometimes refers to himself in the first person (e.g., 11:6, 9; 16:1), are reports of speeches the prophet is said to have delivered (see 7:1–8:3; 11:1–14; 16:1–13; 17:19–27; 18:1–12; 21:1–10; 25:1–14; 35:1–19). Occasionally, the same incident will be reported in both types of prose (e.g., cf. 7:1–15; 26; 25:1–11; 36).

Authorship of the "biographical" passages has often been attributed to Baruch, a scribe associated with Jeremiah, who on two occasions wrote down a collection of the prophet's utterances (36:4, 32). However, such attribution of authorship cannot be verified (→ Baruch). Though these passages are somewhat scattered, their arrangement is roughly chronological. They do not, however, constitute a connected biography in the modern sense of the term.

Besides being couched in the first person, the prose sermons have two other formal characteristics: most begin with a special heading ("the word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD"), and several display a three-part structure that includes a summons to repentance (e.g., 7:3–7; 11:3–7; 17:21–22), a description of the people's lack of repentance (7:8–11; 11:8–10; 17:23), and an announcement of the punishment that will inevitably come to them (7:12–15; 11:11–17; 17:27). The sermons also contain a large number of stock words and phrases (e.g., "rising up early and sending/speaking" [NRSV: sending/speaking "persistently"] in 7:13, 25; 11:7; 25:3–4; 35:14–15; "turn every man from his evil way" in 18:11; 25:5; 35:15; "other gods" in 7:6, 9, 18; 11:10; 16:11, 13; 35:15). Examples of this stereotypic language can be found in other portions of the book, both poetry (cf. 23:22) and prose (cf. 26:3; 36:3, 7), as well as in Deuteronomistic writings (cf. Deut. 6:14; 2 Kings 22:17). The latter fact has led to the view that these sermons are a Deuteronomistic reworking of the prophet's message (→ Deuteronomist).

The case for a Deuteronomistic revision of the prose sermons is not conclusive, however. Some of the stereotypic language found in them (e.g., the first of the examples cited in the preceding paragraph) is unique to Jeremiah, and this may suggest that both Jeremiah and the Deuteronomists were influenced by a style of expression used in Judah (or among a specific group of Judeans) during the late seventh century B.C. There are similarities between the point of view of the prose sermons and that of the Deuteronomistic writings—for example, the idea that Judah's downfall could be attributed to its having rejected the word of God sent via the prophets (cf. Jer. 7:25–34; 25:4–11; 26:4–6; 29:17–19; 35:15–17; 36:1–31; 44:4–6; 2 Kings 17:13–18; the Deuteronomists' belief in the authority of the prophetic word is stated in Deut. 18:15–19). Often, however, these ideas can be found in the pre-exilic edition of the Deuteronomistic History, so there is no need to explain their presence in Jeremiah as the result of an exilic revision of his words.

It is also important to note that Jeremiah's religious viewpoint was not in complete harmony with the Deuteronomists'. For example, whereas they take a positive interest in the Jerusalem Temple and make it the central institution in Judah's religious life, Jer. 7:1–15 (cf. chap. 26) condemns the people's excessive trust in the Temple and its rituals. Therefore, though they are in important respects similar, it seems best not to think of the Jeremian traditions as having undergone a systematic Deuteronomistic revision. We will return to this point below.

Composition. We have seen that the book of Jeremiah contains material of several distinct literary forms and that these are sometimes found in relatively homogeneous blocks, but we should not infer from this that there were corresponding written sources from which an editor or editors constructed the book in its present form. The relationships among the types of material are more complicated than that. We have already noted, for example, that the larger sections of the book contain a mixture of literary forms (e.g., chaps. 1–25 are composed largely of poetic oracles but also contain examples of both biographical prose and sermons). In addition, language characteristic of the prose is also found in the poetic oracles (e.g., the phrase mentioned above, "turn every man from his evil way," appears in 23:14, 22).

Despite the intermixing of literary forms, several major blocks of material can be identified within the book of Jeremiah. Chaps. 1–25 seem to constitute a unit composed largely of poetic oracles and prose sermons. This block begins with an account of how Jeremiah was commissioned to be a prophet (1:4–19) and ends with a reference to a "book" in which the prophet's utterances were recorded (25:13). Much of the material in chaps. 26–45 is more "biographical" in nature, and what is not, chaps. 30–31, makes up a block the content of which shows a preoccupation with prophecies of hope for the people's future. Chaps. 46–51 are a collection of oracles directed against Judah's traditional enemies among the surrounding nations.

Within these larger blocks one can find smaller groupings united by such things as a common theme (e.g., 2:1–3:5, Judah's unfaithfulness to its God; 21:11–23:8, criticism of Judean kings; 23:9–40, Jeremiah's prophetic opponents) or by their relationship to a specific historical situation (e.g., chaps. 27–29 reflect disputes over foreign policy during the reign of

Zedekiah). That chaps. 27–29 have to be seen as a separate block of tradition is evident not only from their content, but also from several stylistic features of the Hebrew text that set them off from other material in the book: the name of the Babylonian king appears there as "Nebuchadnezzar," whereas elsewhere the spelling is "Nebuchadrezzar"; proper names compounded with God's name, Yahweh, tend to appear in their shortened form (Heb. *Yirmeyah,* "Jeremiah") rather than their full form *(Yirmeyahu);* and Jeremiah (as well as his opponent Hananiah) is referred to by the title "the prophet."

A basic datum about the book, then, is that it contains texts that from the standpoints of literary form, style, and content are to some extent different from each other. The question is, how are we to interpret this fact? Does such diversity reflect the history of the book's composition? For example, some have held that, in its original form, prophetic speech was poetic and that, therefore, only the poetic oracles found in the book could be considered the original and authentic words of Jeremiah. But it would seem that there is no way to be certain either that the prophet spoke (or wrote) only poetry or that all the book's poetry stems originally from him. In fact, there is general agreement between the message contained in the prose sermons and that in the oracles, and some have held the view that both derive ultimately from the prophet.

So we are faced with something of a paradox: the present form of the book of Jeremiah is both difficult and easy to understand. On the one hand, the difficulties stem largely from the variety of literary forms it contains and the fact that there appears to be no completely satisfactory way to explain their distribution. In addition, the specific historical setting of many individual passages is unclear. The identity of the "enemy from the north" mentioned in chaps. 4–6 has been debated for years, but no consensus has emerged. Even where reasonably firm dates are given (e.g., 1:2, 626 B.C.), reasons have been found to doubt their accuracy.

On the other hand, it is easy enough to grasp the book's broad thematic unity, namely, a concern to interpret Judah's present historical circumstances in terms of the people's past behavior and to make projections about its future. This is a concern that the prophet would have shared with many others, and one that could have motivated both the preservation of and reflection on his words.

What seems clear is that the prophet himself began the process by which his utterances were, from time to time, reinterpreted in the light of current events and written down. The incident reported in chap. 36 provides an illustration. According to the narrative, in the year 605 B.C. Yahweh instructed Jeremiah to make a written collection of oracles he had uttered over a period of two decades (assuming the traditional date for the beginning of his activity [1:2]). Verse 29 indicates that a dominant theme of this collection was the threat that Judah would be conquered by "the king of Babylon."

Now, a number of oracles in chaps. 4–6 and 8–10 speak of an attack by an unspecified enemy from "the north," though in the early days of his activity the Babylonians were not yet a power to be reckoned with. By 605 B.C., however, they were the dominant nation in the region, and it seems plausible to assume that, when he gathered together his oracles of judgment against the people of Judah, he specifically designated Babylon as the agent through whom God would punish them. Behind this reinterpretation of his earlier oracles lies the assumption that they were as relevant in 605 as they were when they were uttered—indeed, that their predictions were just then on the verge of being fulfilled.

Seven years later, in 597, the Babylonians did overrun Judah and Jerusalem and carry the king and some of Jeremiah's countrymen into exile (2 Kings 24:8–17). Since Nebuchadnezzar installed a new king on the throne and Judah retained its identity as a nation, the question would have arisen whether these events could be considered the complete fulfillment of the prophet's predictions. Chaps. 27–28 show that Jeremiah faced this issue by incorporating Nebuchadnezzar's activity into his conception of God's plan for the nation and by opposing those who believed that Judah had been sufficiently punished and that soon its fortunes would be restored.

Nor was it the prophet alone who engaged in the reinterpretation of earlier predictions of national disaster (see commentary below on 4:5–6:30). Not even the poetic oracles were immune to alteration in response to the catastrophe of the nation's collapse. Thus, in 15:2, the triad of terms "sword, famine, and pestilence," which occurs frequently in Jeremiah (seventeen times, with occasional variations in order; see, e.g., 14:12; 21:9; 24:10; 27:8, 13), is altered to include a fourth, "captivity." The latter term refers obviously to the Exile.

But chap. 36 also illustrates the difficulty that attends any attempt to construct a series of steps in the composition of the book of Jeremiah as we have it. The narrative itself is clear enough: during the years 605–604 B.C. the prophet is said to have twice dictated to Baruch a collection of his utterances spanning the whole period of his activity. The second scroll was dictated after the king destroyed the first. It contained "all the words" of the first scroll, as well as "many words like them" (36:32). If we assume that the second edition of the scroll formed the nucleus for the subsequent collection of materials associated with Jeremiah, then we should be able to find that scroll in the present book, as well as evidence of the contents of its predecessor. But we cannot, at least not with any certainty. Over the years a variety of hypotheses about the con-

tents of the scroll have been offered, some of them quite complicated. Even a brief sampling of opinion—it has been claimed that the scroll is to be found in chaps. 1–6, or in 1:4–9 plus chaps. 46–47 plus 4:5–6:26 plus 14:1–15:3, or in chaps. 1–11, or in the prose sermons—indicates both the variety of hypotheses that have been proposed and the lack of consensus on the matter.

Behind the discussion of the book's composition lies the problem of how one is to judge the authenticity of the various materials that form its content (a saying is "authentic" if the words can be understood to have come from the prophet himself). Among those who sought to identify the prophet's "original" words, there was for many years a bias in favor of the poetic oracles, but this view has increasingly been challenged. Some have argued that certain prose passages (e.g., chap. 27) should be understood as containing "genuine" words of the prophet. Others contend that at the very least the prose, especially the sermons, preserves the gist of what Jeremiah said. But we may note again that there is no consensus on an inventory of authentic Jeremiah utterances, and it may well be that this search is flawed by an overemphasis on tying the contents of the book exclusively to the prophet's life and activity.

This judgment is not to deny that the prophet's life is important for understanding the present shape of his book. Other things, however, are also important. Above all, we need to ask *who* was responsible for collecting and preserving his words and *why* they felt it important to do so. As we shall see, the community must have played an important role in Jeremiah's actual prophetic activity. The community or groups within it also had a stake in preserving traditions about Jeremiah's activity.

It is possible, for example, that in its present form the prose of the book has been shaped by the need of Judeans living in exile in Babylon to provide themselves with a reasonable interpretation of the events of their recent past. The fall of Jerusalem (597 B.C.) and ultimately of the nation (587) were social and political disasters that precipitated a crisis in Judean religion. People now asked whether God had abandoned his people and whether the promise that a member of David's house would always sit on the throne in Jerusalem (see 2 Sam. 7; Ps. 132) was defunct. In an attempt to answer such questions, the Judeans in exile (re)interpreted traditions about the prophet. But in doing this they were only continuing a process begun by Jeremiah, who, as we have already seen, on at least one occasion set a collection of his older oracles in the context of an emerging national crisis. In the final analysis, we should take a rather broad view of the "authenticity" of materials in the book. Both the prophet and those who preserved the traditions of what he did and said felt free, as occasion demanded, to reapply words they understood to be those from God to situations different from those in which they were first uttered.

We have several times mentioned the lack of any apparent principle of organization in the book of Jeremiah. This trait, shared with other prophetic books, has sometimes been attributed to the theory that, in their present written form, they represent loose assemblages of sayings and stories that at first circulated orally. In the case of Jeremiah, this explanation is not sufficient, since we know that the process of committing his prophecies to writing began with the prophet himself (chap. 36). Still, studies of oral performance and transmission in modern cultures suggest a way of understanding how the reinterpretation of the prophetic traditions may have proceeded. What such studies reveal above all is the influence of the audience upon narrators, who shape their material in response to the audience's makeup and concerns.

It was Judeans in and after the Exile who were the primary audience for the emerging written compilation of Jeremian materials. It is safe to assume that those who had not given up their religious beliefs would have been intensely interested in discovering both a reason for their fate and some prospects for their future compatible with traditional notions about the relationship between God and his people. This quest for understanding, at the hands of exilic editors of the Jeremian materials, would account both for their being preserved and for the form in which they have come down to us.

This understanding of how the tradition developed raises another question about the book's composition: was the Jeremian tradition reworked into a "Deuteronomistic edition" sometime during or after the Exile? The presence of prose sermons that in content closely agree with the Deuteronomistic interpretation of the nation's history has led some to suggest that it was. But the evidence is ambiguous. Note, for example, that both Jeremiah and Deuteronomy stress the necessity for the people to be obedient to the stipulations of God's law (e.g., Jer. 6:16–21; 7:1–15; 11:1–13; 22:9; 34:8–22; Deut. 5; 7:12–16). Both aim to guide the people's actions so as to safeguard their possession of the land (e.g., Jer. 7:3, 7; 25:5; 35:15; Deut. 11:8–22; 12:1; 16:20; 19:8–9; 23:20; 25:15), and in both the message is couched in essentially conditional terms (e.g., Jer. 4:1–4; 5:7–17; 26:1–6; Deut. 11).

Such similarities, which are not confined to the prose sermons, may represent basic agreement between Jeremiah and the Deuteronomists (the first edition of whose history dates from the time of Josiah, the late seventh century B.C.) on the interpretation of current events. Furthermore, it is difficult to see how conscious editing of Jeremiah could have resulted in such compositional disarray.

Alternatively, we can envision a communal attempt to find relevance in the traditions about what

the prophet did and said that proceeded in a much more varied, piecemeal, and gradual way (see, e.g., commentary below on 2:1–4:4 and 8:4–10:25). The quest for understanding, not compositional coherence, guided the formation of the book. In fact, much of the sense of coherence one feels when reading the book of Jeremiah derives from a consistent interpretation of the nation's fate: disasters came because of the people's unfaithfulness to Yahweh. This viewpoint is evident not only in the prose "Temple sermon" (7:1–15) and the "Deuteronomistic" reflections on the covenant (11:1–14), but in shorter prose insertions like 3:24–25 and in 17:19–27, both of which share the point of view of the prose sermons.

If this is the way the tradition grew, perhaps all we can say about the final form of the book is that it represents a loosely structured compilation of the Jeremian materials available at the time when the text as we have it was written down.

Text. The original language of the book of Jeremiah is Hebrew, but there is an important Greek version dating from about the third century B.C., the Septuagint (LXX; → Septuagint). A special problem arises for interpreters of Jeremiah because of two significant differences between the LXX and the Hebrew Masoretic Text (MT), upon which English translations are based (→ Masorah): the LXX of Jeremiah is approximately one-eighth shorter than the MT, and in it the "oracles against the nations" appear following 25:13 (in the MT they form chaps. 46–51).

Studies of manuscripts from the Essene library at Qumran (→ Scrolls, The Dead Sea) have revealed that by the first century B.C. two different Hebrew traditions of the book of Jeremiah existed, one apparently identical to the MT, and the other closely resembling the LXX. Since the longer version frequently repeats verses and adds details to the narrative, but seldom offers any change in basic content, the most likely explanation is that the MT represents an expansion of an earlier Hebrew text corresponding to the LXX.

The text of Jeremiah 27–29 can serve as a case in point. The MT contains a number of verbal embellishments: it is fond of titles (e.g., "the prophet"; cf. 28:5; 29:29), and it continually identifies the king of Babylon as Nebuchadnezzar (27:8, 20; 28:3, 11, 14; 29:1–3). The LXX identifies Nebuchadnezzar the first time he is mentioned, in 27:6, but omits his title thereafter. Moreover, the LXX expands the so-called messenger formula ("Thus says the LORD") by adding "of hosts, the God of Israel" (27:21; 28:2, 14; 29:8, 25). In addition to these differences, there are a number of shorter expansions in the MT, like the phrases "the people, and the cattle which are on the face of the earth" (27:5) and "and I will scatter you, and you will perish" (27:10).

There are, finally, a number of expansions in the MT a verse or more in length, e.g., 27:7, 12b–14a, 17, 21; 29:14. One of these, 29:16–19, clearly disrupts the context in which it occurs. But despite these considerable differences between the two versions of the text, the important observation is that the narrative is, in all its essentials, the same. The expansions in the MT are, for the most part, simply expansions of ideas or actions already present in the shorter text.

The Prophet in His Book

Like other prophetic books, Jeremiah begins with a superscription (1:1–3) that locates the prophet in a specific historical setting. Here we learn that he was born to a priestly family of the village of Anathoth (approximately three miles northeast of Jerusalem) and that his prophetic activity began in the thirteenth year of King Josiah's reign (626 B.C.) and continued until the second conquest of Jerusalem in 587.

The book of Jeremiah is unique, however, in the amount of additional information it seems to supply us about its prophet. The prose sections sometimes give detailed descriptions of Jeremiah's interaction with his fellow Judeans (king, princes, priests, prophets, and the general populace; e.g., chaps. 26; 27–29) and, sometimes, even with foreign emissaries (27:1–11; 39:11–14). Chaps. 21–45 contain a great many specific dates (e.g., 25:1; 36:1; 39:1–2), as well as references to events that can be easily dated (e.g., 21:1–2; 24:1; 34:1, 6–7), and chaps. 37–44 focus on the prophet's activity at the time of Nebuchadnezzar's second conquest of Jerusalem.

We also appear to have information of a more personal nature about the prophet. Though the narratives tell us that audience reaction to his message was often hostile (e.g., 26:7–9; 43:1–4) and that he sometimes was abused as a result of what he said (e.g., 20:1–6; 37:15; 38:1–6), the laments seem to reveal Jeremiah's own feelings about the difficulty of his task and the hardships he was forced to endure in its performance (e.g., 11:18–20; 15:10, 15–18; 20:7–12, 14–18). We are even told he was forbidden to take a wife (16:1–4). Nevertheless, we have no information about his age, personal appearance, means of support, and the like, and we do not know the date of his death, though he is often assumed to have died in Egypt (chap. 44).

For this sort of information we depend largely upon the "biographical" prose and the poetry of lamentation. However, there are critical problems associated with each of these bodies of material. It has sometimes been argued that the biographical prose was written by Baruch, a trained scribe closely associated with Jeremiah (32:12–16; 26:4–19, 27–32; 43:3). There is no firm evidence for this supposition, however, and since much of the material is scattered through chaps. 19–36 and has affinities with the Deuteronomistic understanding of the nation's fate, the

assumption that we are dealing with a "biography" of the prophet is questionable. As regards the laments, the form and language are to some extent stereotypic, reflecting lamentations in the book of Psalms, which should make us wary of taking at face value all the apparent individual references in the Jeremian laments. Still, it is hard to deny the impression that these lamentations contain elements that are specific to Jeremiah's situation.

Date of Jeremiah's Call. Questions about the accuracy of the traditional date for the beginning of Jeremiah's prophetic activity (the "thirteenth year of Josiah" is 626 B.C.; so 1:2; 25:3) may serve as an example of the difficulties that attend any attempt to construct an accurate "biography" of Jeremiah. First, though there are references to later kings Jehoiakim and Zedekiah, there are no accounts of Jeremiah interacting with Josiah, and it is even difficult to locate any of the book's contents specifically in that king's reign (3:6–10, the only passage so dated, may be a later addition). Jer. 2:18 seems to assume that Assyria is still a viable power, thus presupposing a date prior to about 614. Apart from these texts, the most one can do is argue that the religious situation in Judah prior to Josiah's reform (621 B.C.; see 2 Kings 22:1–23:25) would have provided appropriate occasion for delivering the oracles of chaps. 2–3.

There is a second problem. Apparently, from the very beginning of his career, Jeremiah expected that Judah would suffer military defeat at the hands of an unnamed enemy from "the north" (1:13–16). Oracles announcing this threat are found in chaps. 4–6 and 8–10 (see 4:6; 6:1, 22; 10:22). But in the years following 626 B.C. such an attack did not materialize, and it is not even clear whom the prophet identified as the foe. A common suggestion has been the Scythians, a nomadic people from the north whose unsuccessful attack on Egypt was described by the Greek historian Herodotus, but the lack of direct evidence makes this hypothesis unlikely (→ Scythians).

This historical problem is complicated by the fact that two passages dated to the period 605–604 B.C. specifically identify the Babylonian king, Nebuchadnezzar, as the agent of imminent destruction (25:1, 8–9; 36:9, 29). Are we to infer from this that the prophet was wrong in his first prediction, and that two decades later he suggested a new identity for the invaders? Some have been reluctant to accept this conclusion on the grounds that as a true prophet Jeremiah could never have been wrong or have changed his mind about such a serious matter. Such a view, however, fails to allow for an ongoing process of reinterpretation of earlier utterances by the prophet himself and his successors, and thus represents an overly static notion about how prophecy operates.

A third problem involves the relationship of Jeremiah to Josiah's reform of the nation's religious establishment and to the document important for that reform (2 Kings 22:8–13), generally believed to be an early version of the book of Deuteronomy. Again, the evidence is ambiguous. Some have seen in the sermon on the covenant (Jer. 11:1–13) explicit reference to the reform (cf. 2 Kings 23:1–3) and an indication that Jeremiah supported it. However, the "Deuteronomistic" character of these verses makes confidence in such a view difficult (see commentary below on 11:1–17). Jer. 6:19 is not so open to the latter criticism, but the exact referent of "my law" is uncertain. The Temple sermon, 7:1–15 and 26:1–24, might suggest that Jeremiah opposed the Jerusalem Temple establishment and must therefore have opposed a reform that had as its centerpiece a religion purified and centralized in that location. On the other hand, in 3:1 and 34:8–22 he apparently draws upon Deuteronomy's formulation of the law mandating centralization (cf. Deut. 24:1–4; 15:1, 12–18).

Perhaps, as some have suggested, Jeremiah ceased to act as a prophet for a time during the heyday of Josiah's reform. The oracles in chaps. 1–25 contain few indications of date, so this hypothesis cannot be proven, though there is precedent for such a period of withdrawal in Isa. 8:16–17.

One way to solve these problems is to argue that the traditional date for the call of Jeremiah is inaccurate. This can be done in several ways. One can emend the text of 1:2 and 25:3 on the grounds that they originally read "twenty-third year," i.e., 616 B.C. One can eliminate these chronological references altogether as later additions, or one can understand "thirteenth year" as the date of the prophet's birth rather than his call. But to adopt any of these proposals involves one both in an argument from silence (assuming that since Jeremiah did not come right out and *say* things that allow us to link his utterances to the reign of Josiah, he was not active then) and a willingness to overlook or explain away the specific evidence of the text (the references to the "days of Josiah" in 3:6 and 36:2, to "Assyria" in 2:18, and to the beginning of his prophecy in the "thirteenth year of Josiah").

"Biography" in the Service of Community. We have seen that there is little biographical information about the prophet to be found in the poetic oracles and that we must be careful about accepting at face value what we encounter in other materials. The search for the "historical Jeremiah" is an intriguing one, precisely because, by comparison with other prophetic books, in Jeremiah we seem to have so much information at our disposal. But we must also ask how much accurate data about the prophet's life we can expect to derive from material so preoccupied with interpreting the historical experiences of a nation.

The broader question is this: in what sense can the

book of Jeremiah be considered the prophet's biography? And to the extent that it is, what is the relationship between "biography" and community? Egyptian tomb inscriptions written centuries before the emergence of the Israelite state in Canaan reveal the existence of a literary form that has been called "biography" or "autobiography." These inscriptions often contain a report of the person's installation in office by the pharaoh, a description of his assignment and his conduct in it, narratives about his birth and death, and the like. These are some of the very elements found in the book of Jeremiah. It is important to note, however, that these biographies present their subjects as the performers of a public function and give an account—to the gods and to the public—of the person's conduct in office. Contrary to modern expectations, these documents do not focus on the development of individual traits of character and personality. Where these appear at all, they are subservient to the person's performance of his public role.

One might well ask whether it is not a necessary feature of a biography that it be centrally interested in its subject. If the so-called biographical prose in Jeremiah (e.g., chap. 26) seems more concerned with depicting the people's rejection of God's message to them and the ultimate consequences of that than the life of the prophet, then perhaps we should not speak of "biography" at all. Still, it is obviously not the case that such passages as chap. 26 lack all interest in the prophet's personal history.

What we appear to have in Jeremiah is biography employed as a vehicle for addressing topics of larger than individual concern. The crucial question is not *whether* the narratives refer to historical traditions about the prophet. We assume that to some extent they do, since the descriptions are often extremely concrete (with dates, names, and events corresponding to those found in 2 Kings and in extrabiblical sources), and the laments contain convincingly personal references. Furthermore, prophecy is a social phenomenon. Intense emotional dialogue is basic to the functioning of an intermediary. Judging from comparative studies of prophets and similar intermediaries, the social dynamics of prophetic behavior depicted in these Jeremian texts seem realistic. The question is, rather, *how* the overall purpose of the narrative affected the use of these historical traditions.

The Book in Its Contexts

The book of Jeremiah is not the product of a single person operating in a closely circumscribed time and place. To understand it, therefore, we must be aware not only of the contexts in which the prophet worked, but also those contexts in which traditions about his work were known, appreciated, and preserved, culminating in the book as it has come down to us. The time during which this development took place can be divided into two distinct periods, before the Exile and after the demise of Judah.

Judah Before the Exile

Politics. According to the traditional date, Jeremiah's prophetic activity spanned the last four decades of Judah's existence as a nation (626–587 B.C.; 1:1–3). This period was a time of increasing internal factionalism and shifting foreign alliances.

The beginning seemed auspicious enough. Perhaps as early as 629, King Josiah (640–609) took advantage of Assyria's increasing weakness to reestablish Judah's independence and in the process brought under his control former Israelite lands to the north. As part of this effort, he undertook a major reform of the nation's religious establishment (2 Chron. 34:1–8; → Josiah).

For Judah, however, the growing weakness of Assyria was in the long run a mixed blessing, since such weakness both permitted and was hastened by the rise of the Neo-Babylonian Empire. In the years 614–609 the Babylonians and their sometime allies, the Medes, inflicted a series of defeats upon the Assyrians that brought that empire to an end. Egypt, looking out for its own interests, had by this time become an ally of Assyria, and in 609 Pharaoh Neco marched north through Palestine to join in the attempt to recapture the city of Haran. Josiah moved to intercept him, but was killed by the Egyptians in battle at Megiddo.

The death of Josiah was an important turning point, and a profound embarrassment. In retrospect we can see that the notion that Judah could exist as an independent nation, controlling Palestine as it had in the days of David and Solomon, was an illusion. It is symbolic of Judah's fate that two of its last four kings were installed by foreign powers (2 Kings 23:34; 24:17).

Still, not all of Jeremiah's contemporaries had such insight into their situation, and continuing hopes for national independence remained a source of internal tension until the very end. Probably, they did not share the embarrassment of the later writer of 2 Kings, who was left virtually speechless: Josiah, to whose life so many words had been devoted (2 Kings 22:1–23:25), was in death accorded a single verse (23:29). Josiah's fate falsified the assumption of Deuteronomists and prophets alike that the righteous and God-fearing person and nation will prosper.

After Josiah's death, Neco continued toward Syria, and the Judean "people of the land" installed Josiah's second-oldest son, Jehoahaz, as the new king. This selection, which violated the normal order of succession, suggests that Jehoahaz, like Josiah, pursued an "anti-Egyptian" foreign policy. This would explain why, on his return from the north three months later, Neco deposed Jehoahaz and replaced him with his elder brother, Jehoiakim (2 Kings 23:30–35), who proved to

be a friend of Egypt in its struggles against Babylonia.

During Jehoiakim's reign, Babylonian power continued to increase. In 605 Nebuchadnezzar decisively defeated the Egyptians at the northern Syrian city of Carchemish, and in 604 he captured the Philistine city of Ashkelon, a close neighbor of Judah. About the year 603 Jehoiakim formally became a vassal of the Babylonian king, but after three years he revolted (2 Kings 24:1). Nebuchadnezzar was occupied elsewhere for several years, but in the spring of 597 he mounted a siege against Jerusalem, which fell on March 16 of that year.

Three months before the city's fall, Jehoiakim died (it is possible he was assassinated) and was succeeded by his son, Jehoiachin. The latter survived the siege, but was among those persons and objects of booty carried off by Nebuchadnezzar into exile in Babylon (2 Kings 24:8–20). He was replaced by Zedekiah, the third son of Josiah to become king in Jerusalem in a decade.

Zedekiah's situation was not an easy one. Although Judah had been decisively defeated and was again a vassal of Babylon, the voices of nationalism were still heard. Even among those who understood the defeat as God's punishment were some who felt that their chastisement was now complete and that restoration would soon follow (see commentary below on 27:1–29:32). The fact that the previous king, Jehoiachin, continued to live in captivity in Babylon, where he was recognized as king by his captors and was able to exercise some measure of control over royal properties in Judah (2 Kings 25:27–30; → Jehoiachin), further complicated Zedekiah's situation. Early in his reign it appears that Judah and some of its neighbors began to plot a revolt against Babylon (see chap. 27), but nothing came of this. Later, Zedekiah did rebel. In January 588 Nebuchadnezzar began a siege of Jerusalem, which continued with one short respite until the walls were breached in July 587. Judeans were again carried into exile, but this time the city and its Temple were completely destroyed (2 Kings 25:1–21).

The Babylonians appointed a Judean nobleman, Gedaliah, to be governor over what remained of the former Judean state, but by 582 he was dead at the hands of a political rival. Fearing Babylonian reprisals, some of his followers fled to Egypt (2 Kings 25:22–26). Tradition has it that they carried the prophet Jeremiah with them against his will (Jer. 43–44).

Beginning in chap. 21, the book of Jeremiah contains many passages that either mention specific dates or refer to events that can be dated from other sources (e.g., 21:1–2; 25:1; 27:1; 34:1–2; 36:1; 37:1; 39:1–2). Since the prose narratives are concentrated in this part of the book, it is not surprising that many dates should appear here. What is particularly interesting is that the majority of these refer to two particular moments: 605 (the fourth year of Jehoiakim, and the year that Nebuchadnezzar defeated the Egyptians at Carchemish and became king of Babylon; e.g., 25:1; 26:1) and 597–587 (the reign of Zedekiah). The political fate of the nation dominates the book.

One of the notable features of Judean politics during the last decades before 587 was the division of the leaders into factions, or parties. The book gives these groups no names, but they can be identified by their views on foreign policy. One group, comprising kings Jehoiakim and Zedekiah and many of the nobles and religious leaders, was committed to Judean political autonomy. As a practical matter, this group generally favored alliance with Egypt and other steps designed to preserve, or (during most of the period) regain, independence from Babylon. The other, made up of a smaller group of nobles and their supporters among religious functionaries, believed that in the present circumstances it was necessary to submit to the suzerainty of Babylon. Both were able to rationalize their position on the basis of the religious tradition. Jeremiah sided with the latter group, and something of the bitterness of the dispute can be gathered from chaps. 27–29.

Among Jeremiah's consistent supporters in his confrontations with various kings were members of a particular noble family, the house of Shaphan. Shaphan himself had been Josiah's secretary and had had a prominent role in that king's religious reform (2 Kings 22:3–20). Shaphan had three sons: Ahikam, who was also involved in Josiah's reform and who later defended Jeremiah from an attempt to condemn him to death for treason (2 Kings 22:12–13; Jer. 26:24); Elasah, who once served as a messenger for both King Zedekiah and Jeremiah (29:3); and Gemariah, who supported the prophet in the face of King Jehoiakim's hostility (36:10, 12, 25). On the latter occasion, Jeremiah's position was also supported by Gemariah's son, Micaiah (36:11–13). One other member of the family is known: Gedaliah, son of Ahikam, whose politics can be inferred from the fact that Nebuchadnezzar appointed him governor after 587 and, according to tradition, put Jeremiah under his care (39:14). This connection of the prophet with the house of Shaphan allows us to trace the pedigree of what some have called the "pro-Babylonian" party back to the time of Josiah's reform.

Religion. As in politics, the official religion of Judah during the decades before the Exile was dominated by the legacy of Josiah, who relatively early in his reign carried out a thoroughgoing institutional reform. 2 Kings 22 and 2 Chronicles 34 differ in their reports on the chronology of his activity, but the latter account, which sees it as extending from approximately 628 to 621, is the more probable. The reform's main features, removal of foreign religious practices from both Jerusalem and its environs and from regions farther to the north (2 Kings 23:4–5, 15, 19–20) and centralization of worship in the Temple at Jerusalem (2 Kings 23:8–9; see Deut. 12:1–14), fit well with

Josiah's political program of gaining independence from Assyria and reasserting Judean control over formerly Israelite territories to the north. A law book found in the Temple after the reform was already in progress (2 Kings 22:3–13; in all probability some portion of the present book of Deuteronomy) gave the activity additional impetus and occasioned a ceremony in which king and people formally renewed their covenant with God, pledging to keep his commandments (2 Kings 23:1–3).

From Jer. 44:15–19 we can infer that the reform was generally effective in bringing communal worship of other gods under control. But the enhanced position of the Jerusalem Temple and its priesthood also had the effect of providing a conceptual justification for foreign policy decisions that Jeremiah felt compelled to oppose (see 7:1–15; chaps. 27–28). The last decades before 587 were thus a period of intense politico-religious conflict between two groups of the nation's elite, each containing both prophets and members of the ruling aristocracy.

Reading through the book of Jeremiah gives one the impression that widespread apostasy among his countrymen was the feature of Judean society that disturbed the prophet most. Jer. 2:1–4:4, for example, is concerned entirely with that topic. The people are accused of forsaking their God, indeed, of trading him for other, less effective gods (2:9–13). In some of these oracles, apostasy appears to be both a religious and a political issue. In the prophet's view the adopting of new gods had diminished rather than enhanced the chances for national survival (2:14–19, 26–28, 36–37). It is not surprising that the nation's leaders (kings, princes, priests, and prophets, 2:8, 26–28) are singled out for special blame.

If Josiah's reforms were successful, how can we account for this emphasis? The oracles of chap. 2 have often been considered among the oldest in the book, and the situation mirrored in them might be the one that existed at the beginning of the reform. Moreover, although Josiah effected changes in public practices, private religious preferences of long standing may well have persisted. Another factor seems of greater importance. The Jeremian traditions begin with the prophet, but were brought to completion by a community that survived the nation's collapse and the prophet's death. The book both predicts and reflects upon Judah's end. And how could such a dire fate be explained? Already during Jeremiah's lifetime, one explanation, applied to the fall of the Northern Kingdom, Israel, was gaining acceptance, namely the Deuteronomistic notion that the nation fell because it had abandoned its God (2 Kings 17:7–18). It is, therefore, not so important to assess the actual level of apostasy during various stages of Jeremiah's career as to recognize that many of the passages of the book that take up this theme do so explicitly in the framework of reflection on the cause of the nation's demise (e.g., 7:16–20; 9:12–16; 11:9–13, 17; 13:1–11; 16:10–13; 22:8–9).

It is not always easy to discern precisely what Jeremiah intended in his accusations relating to the people's religious practices. The criticisms of his prophetic opponents, for example, can be quite general and vague (23:10–11, 14, 15b, 22b). Perhaps we can say that his central concern was with what he perceived to be the leaders' unwillingness to take God and his demands seriously (5:12–13, 20–25; 6:10; 7:21–26; 8:4–7; 15:5–9; 17:5; 22:21). But of course that is a judgment that can only be made on the basis of a particular point of view. It will become apparent that Jeremiah's opponents may reasonably have assessed their own religious position quite differently.

Society. Jeremiah seems little concerned with details of the nation's socioeconomic life. There are several references to oppression of the powerless by the powerful (2:34; 5:26–29) as well as a standard catalog of offenses reminiscent of the Decalogue: stealing, murder, adultery, and false swearing (7:9; cf. 5:2, 7b–8). The latter is part of a prose sermon that sets out the terms for the people's continued existence in the land and, in the process, elaborates a conceptual framework for understanding Judah's demise. One passage alludes to the potential for social chaos in a general pattern of deception and slander in personal relations (9:4–6, 8); another pictures the prophet as embroiled in an actual dispute concerning the manumission of slaves during the period of the final siege of Jerusalem in 587 (34:8–22). There are several references to breaking God's "law" (26:4; 44:10) as well as to the "covenant" (11:1–13; 22:9), all of which can be understood in the context of reflection on the nation's fall.

By contrasting to the much shorter book of Amos (see, e.g., Amos 2:4–8; 4:1–3; 6:4–7; 8:4–7), Jeremiah's lack of emphasis on socioeconomic conditions in Judah may seem surprising. Though it would be wrong to conclude that such matters were of little importance to Jeremiah and to those who transmitted the traditions about him, it does indicate that in their day it was actions in the political arena that were perceived as most critical for determining the nation's future. What was at stake was national survival, and it was clear that the really important decisions affecting this lay in the realm of foreign policy.

In retrospect, Josiah's legacy proved to be uncertain. His reform of religious institutions, certainly a move that many considered exemplary, was part of a larger effort to make Judah independent from Assyria and establish it as a sovereign power governing an expanded territory. Whatever the fate of the reform, it is clear that in subsequent decades decisions to strive for such national autonomy led inexorably to the disasters that dashed all such hopes.

We can assume that both parties to the dispute anticipated Judah's survival. Kings Jehoiakim and

Zedekiah, along with their supporters in the political and religious establishments, interpreted survival in terms of autonomy from the dominant regional power, Babylon. The group to which Jeremiah belonged hoped for a cultural and religious survival that did not depend upon political independence. Therefore, the insistence upon autonomy in the face of Babylon's overwhelming military power seemed to them suicidal. To make things more difficult, each side was convinced that its position corresponded to God's plan for his people.

Pre-exilic Judean society provided the context for Jeremiah's prophetic activity not just in the sense that it gave him something to talk *about;* it was also the context *within* which he worked. It is obvious that the prophet's oracles imply an audience, but the dynamics of his relationship to it were more complicated than the simple utterances of a message.

The book of Jeremiah contains many instances of social interaction between the prophet and others. There are references to his acting as an intercessor with God on the people's behalf; 42:2–6 seems to represent an "ideal" instance of such activity (see also 15:11; the thrice-repeated prohibition of intercession—7:16; 11:14; 14:11—implies that such activity was common). The fact that even his opponents continued to consult him (21:2; 37:3, 16–17; 38:14; 42:1–3) indicates a public acknowledgment of this aspect of the prophetic role.

But we learn most about disputes between the prophet and members of his audience. Some of the references to opponents are general in nature (1:17–19; 15:19–20; 17:14–18; 18:20; 20:8, 18), but others are more specific. Jer. 20:1–6 describes a public dispute with a high-ranking priest of the Temple, and this is only one of the attempts made by persons in positions of power to control the prophet's activity (cf. 11:21; 26:7–9; 29:26–28; 32:2–5; 37:13–15, 20–21; 38:15–16, 24–28). In the first instance Jeremiah was publicly punished (20:2). Evidently, a prophet could be both consulted and controlled.

Over time Jeremiah's activities aroused such feelings of hostility that opponents plotted actively against him (11:18–19; 18:18, 22–23; 20:10; see the general references to "persecution" in 15:15; 17:18). Still, there is evidence of a certain reluctance to deal too harshly with him (38:1–13).

Among the important opponents that Jeremiah had to face were other prophets, who appeared to him to be mere supporters of the social and political status quo (23:14, 16–17; 27–29). Jer. 26:7–19 indicates that it was not easy for Judeans to pass judgment on the validity of competing prophetic claims. Some made the acceptability of the message itself their criterion (v. 11b; see 37:13–15), but for others overt behavior was the critical concern (v. 16). In a culture that assumed the existence of prophets, one apparently had to give the benefit of the doubt to those who displayed recognizable prophetic behavior (hence Jeremiah's reaction to the prophet Hananiah, 28:11b).

All this took place within the framework of partisan dispute that we have already identified. That Jeremiah had defenders in high places in the government seems to have been an important factor in his survival (26:24; cf. 39:11–14).

Communities After the Fall of Judah. The Exile began with a deportation of Judeans after the fall of Jerusalem in 597 B.C. For the next decade there were two communities and two living kings of Judah, and they faced a double task of accounting for the nation's fall and deciding on a course of action for the future. Their religious tradition made it easy enough to understand the disaster as God's punishment. The question now became whether the punishment could be considered complete and a restoration of fortunes expected. Some apparently held such a view (see chaps. 28–29). But Zedekiah's revolt against Nebuchadnezzar and the subsequent capture and destruction of Jerusalem made the question moot. Additional Judeans were deported to Babylon in 587, and again in about 582. Jer. 52:28–30 sets the total number of deportees at 4,600, though the discrepancy with 2 Kings 24:10–17 suggests that, if this number is accurate, it must refer only to adult males. We know that the exiles were the select of Judean society: royalty, nobility, soldiers, craftsmen, and religious leaders. According to 2 Kings 25:12, only the poorest remained in the land.

Not much is known about the life of the exiles in Babylon. There are indications that they built houses, raised families, and pursued livelihoods (Jer. 29:5–6; Isa. 55:1–2; → Exile). We are plagued with a similar lack of information about the other post–587 Yahwistic communities. Apparently, some who had fled the war and taken refuge in surrounding countries returned to the devastated homeland (40:11–12), but if Lam. 5:1–18 is any indication, life in Judah was difficult. When civil strife in the remnant community resulted in the death of the Babylonian-appointed governor, Gedaliah, some of those Judeans fled to Egypt (2 Kings 25:22–26; Jer. 41–43). Nothing is known about this group, though there is evidence of a continuing Jewish community at Elephantine on Egypt's southern border during the Persian period (→ Syene).

From the religious point of view, the main problem posed by the Exile was to understand why it had happened and what its implications were for the continued existence of God's people. The distinctive emphases in the book of Jeremiah as a whole derive from such a need to understand. This concern would have been shared by both the prophet and those who transmitted and developed the traditions about him. The goal of the book they produced was not simply to preserve Jeremiah's words; it was to understand Judah's fall and the people's future.

This shaping of the tradition probably took place during the early decades of the Exile. Some passages show a certain bias in favor of the exilic community, identified as the "good figs" by comparison to the "rotten figs" who were left behind (chap. 24). Speculation about the length of the Exile was important to them (25:11; 29:1–14). We might even imagine the curiously anachronistic Sabbath regulation of 17:19–27 as deriving from attempts during the Exile to codify laws concerning religious practice.

The fact that there are many promises of eventual restoration of the people to their land is also in harmony with the hypothesis of an exilic setting (e.g., 3:14–18; 23:1–4, 7–8; 24:5–7; 27:22; 29:10–14, 32; 30:1–3; 46:27–28; 50:4–5, 19–20). Many of these passages occur in prose; many mention both Judah and northern Israel in a comprehensive promise of restoration. The "Deuteronomistic" explanation of the collapse of Israel and Judah as God's punishment for their wrongdoing allowed the people to believe that their defeat signaled neither that God was powerless to defend them nor that he had completely and finally abandoned them. There was hope for the future.

Point of View

The book of Jeremiah is a long and complex work. Though not, strictly speaking, a summary, the following sketch of the point of view toward it that has been developed in the preceding sections is offered for readers who wish to begin with an overview of the book's contexts and purpose.

Where did the material in the book of Jeremiah come from, and why was it preserved in its present form? There can be no single answer to this question. Rather, we must take into consideration the differing circumstances of the individuals and communities responsible for the preservation and development of Jeremian traditions.

There are indications that the prophet himself made the first move to preserve formally his utterances in writing (see chap. 36). He did this after two decades of activity (1:1–3; 25:3; 36:2). It appears that the scroll he dictated was not simply a compilation of his earlier oracles, but an interpretation of them in light of a new political situation (the unnamed enemy from the north of 1:13–16 and chaps. 4–6 was now specifically identified with the Babylonians; see 25:8–9; 36:29).

The purpose of dictating the scroll was not simply to preserve his writings, however. Under the circumstances (36:4–8), the scroll was a necessary alternative way of delivering his message to its intended audience, the Judean people and their rulers.

The scroll had another function as well. Jeremiah was not the only Judean prophet of his day; he was often in competition with others performing that role (see 6:13–15; 23:9–22; chaps. 27–29). Since they were all Judean prophets, they shared common patterns of behavior. Both Jeremiah and Hananiah, for example, spoke in the name of Yahweh and performed symbolic actions to augment the force of their utterances (see chaps. 27–28). They contradicted each other in their views of the political future of Judah and called upon their contemporaries to make important decisions. Without the benefit of hindsight, as provided by a record of Jeremiah's words, it was not easy for those who heard them to distinguish "true" prophets from "false."

The simple claim to be a prophet was not always sufficient to win acceptance. Throughout his career, Jeremiah (like the others) needed to establish his own credibility, to gain a following so that he could influence behavior. He attempted to do this by the claims he made (see 26:12–15; 1:4–10), the message he proclaimed, the actions he performed (see 19:1–20:6), and by direct attacks on his opponents (e.g., 6:13–15; 37:19). Making a collection of his earlier oracles and claiming that they referred to the present, looming Babylonian threat would have been one way of arguing for his legitimacy, especially in view of the criticism that was leveled against him, that his prophecies had not been fulfilled (so 17:15; 20:7–8). At this stage, preserving the words was but one of a repertoire of rhetorical strategies utilized in his performance of his prophetic role. The situation of the exiles was different. They did not have to argue for the legitimacy of Jeremiah's message, since history had already vindicated it; they could simply assume that he had been a true prophet. Their main problem was to make sense out of their current situation. In this effort they found Jeremiah's interpretation of Judah's fate (see, e.g., 4:13–18; 26:1–6) made-to-order and used it. In the process they shaped many of the traditions that had come down to them in the light of their own concerns (note how the conditional message of 26:1–6 is altered in 7:8–15; see also 7:16–8:3; 11:1–17; 15:2). Some of these developments produced statements with which Jeremiah probably would not have agreed (see chap. 24).

It is difficult to be certain when this process of reinterpretation and growth came to an end. The circumstances reflected in 17:19–27 and 22:24–30 may indicate that it continued into the postexilic period. In addition, for many years the book seems to have circulated in two written forms, identifiable in the texts we now refer to as the MT and the LXX. Everything that came to be included in the book of Jeremiah shared the authority of the prophet. Neither Jeremiah nor those who followed him seem to have believed that the significance of Yahweh's words was exhausted in the context during which they were first uttered.

The narrative of chap. 36 seems to promise that of all prophetic books Jeremiah will most easily yield to our view the authentic, original words of the prophet himself. We have already seen, however, that this promise remains unfulfilled, for the "original" scroll

cannot be identified with confidence. The reason is by this time clear: the traditions in the book of Jeremiah were preserved as the result of separate actions over several generations, each of which was in response to a particular and immediate need. These needs shaped the collections. And it is understandable that, occupied with their own concerns, the exilic editors obscured the boundaries of the earlier collections. It is for this reason, therefore, that the following commentary does not make a systematic effort to isolate Jeremiah's "genuine" words.

COMMENTARY

1:1–25:38
Confronting the People with Words and Deeds

1:1–3
Superscription

The superscription is a statement in the third person giving information about the prophet Jeremiah and his activity. Such prefixes are a standard feature of most prophetic books in the OT.

The superscription contains four elements. It begins with a phrase that serves as the title of the collection ("The words of Jeremiah"). This is followed by biographical information ("the son of Hilkiah, of the priests who were in Anathoth in the land of Benjamin"), a statement about the basis of his prophetic authority ("to whom the word of the LORD came"), and a chronological reference fixing the dates of prophetic activity ("in the days of Josiah . . . [and] until the captivity of Jerusalem in the fifth month"). The first and third of these elements are always present in superscriptions to prophetic books, though frequently a single phrase serves for both (Hos. 1:1; Obad. 1:1). The second and fourth are sometimes absent. This suggests that the purpose of the superscription is to make two claims about the collection that follows: that it stems from a single, known individual and that, since this individual spoke at the command of Yahweh, the collection as a whole is to be viewed as containing Yahweh's words. The superscription asserts the authority of the prophet to legitimate the authority of the collection of traditions associated with him.

It seems unlikely that the author of the superscription believed that all the material in the collection represented Jeremiah's words (e.g., the extensive biographical narratives are obviously *about* his activity, but not written by him). What is evident in the superscription and in the collection it introduces is the assumption that the activities of Jeremiah shed light on the relationship between Yahweh and his people.

The Jeremian superscription has several peculiarities. For one thing, it contains more biographical detail than most. This element is in character with the book as a whole and adds a poignant dimension to the prophet's complaint about persecution at the hands of the "men of Anathoth" (11:18–21). A second peculiarity is the precision in dating, specifying the exact beginning and end of Jeremiah's activity. However, the latter date (July 587 B.C.) contradicts reports in the collection of Jeremiah's activity subsequent to the fall of Jerusalem (40:1; 42:7; 43:8; 44:1, 24–25).

1:4–19
Jeremiah's Call

This passage contains an account of how Jeremiah came to be a prophet (1:4–10), plus a report of two visions. The first vision stresses Yahweh's determination to bring his words, uttered by the prophet, to fulfillment (1:11–12); the second sketches the content of those words: Judah will be destroyed by an enemy attacking from the north as punishment for its unfaithfulness to Yahweh (1:13–16). Verses 17–19 reiterate vv. 7–9. The passage thus makes the claim that Jeremiah was a prophet designated by Yahweh, ties the general content of his message to this commission, and addresses two problems that emerged during the course of his subsequent activity: the delay in the fulfillment of his prophecies, which tended to undermine his authority as a prophet (cf. 20:7–8), and the opposition that he encountered from people who rejected his message (cf. 11:18–12:6).

1:4–10, The Call. Jeremiah's call is described as a confrontation and dialogue with Yahweh that proceeds through four stages: commissioning, objection, reassurance, and sign. Since this is the same general pattern one finds in reports of the commissioning of Moses (Exod. 3), Gideon (Judg. 6:11–24), and Isaiah (Isa. 6), the account forges a link between Jeremiah and these great figures from the people's past. The language itself is sometimes stereotypic (e.g., the "Ah, Yahweh God" of Jer. 1:6 reflects the vocabulary of lamentation; cf. 4:10; 14:13; 32:17; Josh. 7:7; Judg. 6:22). However, the entire report is presented as something the prophet actually experienced.

Such a call report is appropriate for someone thought to stand in special relationship to a god. Not just in ancient Judah, but in many cultures, the deity is understood to take the initiative in appointing persons to function in the role of intermediary. Call narratives make a formal claim that dialogue with the deity has occurred. In doing so they refer to a part of the prophet's experience that, because of its private character, would otherwise be unavailable to others. But though there is every reason to believe that they are based upon real experiences, the purpose of call narratives is not primarily (auto)biographical. Rather, their main function is rhetorical—to assert a claim to

authority that is prior to and legitimates the claim made every time the prophet addresses an audience with a specific message from the god.

Of course, the authority of an intermediary is not established by a call narrative alone. It is primarily the prophet's behavior—both words and actions—that, when deemed appropriate by some portion of the audience, leads to a public affirmation of the prophet's authority. The call narrative can thus be viewed as a theoretical explanation of the cause of that behavior, which shifts the responsibility for it to the deity.

It is probable that the narrative as it stands reveals traces of other uses to which the tradition about Jeremiah's call experience was put. For one thing, intermediaries typically stand between specific peoples and their deities. Jeremiah was no exception; with great consistency he conveyed the rebukes of Yahweh to his Judean compatriots. Yet the narrative refers to him as a "prophet to the nations." Though chap. 27 records an instance in which Jeremiah spoke to foreign emissaries who had assembled in Jerusalem, the focus of his activity was national, not international. The phrase therefore may represent an interpretation by the exilic preservers of the tradition: since Jeremiah's activity had placed him directly in the middle of an important foreign policy dispute (see commentary below on 27:1–29:32), his original call was presumed to have mentioned international responsibilities.

Similarly, the claim that part of Jeremiah's task was "to build and to plant" (v. 10) does not correspond well with what we know about his activity. The phraseology of v. 10 has parallels elsewhere in the book. Once it describes Yahweh's options in dealing with his people (18:7–10), and once his punishment of them (45:4). Otherwise, the reference is to the possibility of political restoration after the long period of Babylonian dominance (24:6; 31:27–28; 42:10; cf. 12:14–17). It seems likely that the reference to building and planting represents a drawing out of the implications of Jeremiah's words in the period after the judgment he proclaimed had become reality.

1:11–19, Two Visions. There are close parallels to these patterned vision reports in Jer. 24:1–3 and Amos 7:7–9; 8:1–3, but it is not necessary to conclude from this that they are merely literary constructions. Comparative studies show that highly stereotypic vision experiences are nonetheless real to those who have them. A vision report constitutes a claim to have received a revelation from the deity and legitimizes subsequent behavior (cf. 1 Kings 22:17–23; 3:5–15). Visions both convey a message and authorize its delivery. They are a vital component of the prophetic process.

It is another question, however, how much the present account was shaped by subsequent events. The reference to invasion by a northern enemy could encompass both the rather general pronouncements on that theme in chaps. 4–6 and the later references to the Babylonians in 25:8–9 and 36:29 (cf. 21:1–10), and v. 15 appears to mirror 39:3.

On what occasions would the prophet himself have related the account of his commissioning? Comparative studies show that intermediaries sometimes recite their visions as part of a specific public act, and such a possibility cannot be ruled out. In 26:12 we see, however, that during a conflict, when his authority was challenged, a much simpler statement could suffice. Amos 7:10–17 provides an example of a prophet's appeal to his commission in response to a challenge to his authority. The fact that this is a narrative in the third person shows that others could utilize this appeal for the same purpose, namely, to establish the authority of Amos's words. In any case it is clear that the position of the account of Jeremiah's call at the head of the entire collection provides the underpinning for all the material that follows.

In fact the need to assert the legitimacy of Jeremiah's activity would have recurred, both during the period of his activity and subsequently, when people appealed to his words as authoritative. Whether or not the call narrative in its present form stems from the prophet himself, the claim it makes is crucial to his acceptance by the people. Prophets cannot function unless their claims to authority are acknowledged by at least some members of their audience.

2:1–4:4
Accusations and Exhortations

The tone of this section is accusatory. The crime is apostasy, the people's abandonment of their God. The language is hyperbolic. It seems unlikely that the Judeans had abandoned their traditional god, Yahweh, altogether (as 2:11 suggests). What Jeremiah represents and forcefully states is the point of view of those Judeans who condemned any deviation from the ideal of exclusive loyalty to Yahweh.

In chap. 3 the idea of the people's "return" to Yahweh emerges as a theme. We learn that there are prior conditions for such a return (3:1) and that the people have refused to turn back to God (3:7, 10). Nevertheless, they continue to be invited to do so (3:12, 14, 22; 4:1). It is this content that sets the passage off from the preceding and following units (the call, and a series of oracles about an enemy from the north). The chapters are rich in the use of figurative language, especially metaphor. Such language is nonliteral. It proposes identifications we know are not exact, making comparisons on the basis of presumed common qualities.

By far the greatest number of metaphors and similes are drawn from the realm of love and sexuality: the happy marriage (2:2), adultery (3:8, 20), prostitution (2:20, 33; 3:1–3, 6, 8), and even animal sexuality (2:23–24). Figures of speech are also drawn from agri-

culture (2:3, 20, 21), physical geography (2:31), social and economic life (2:11, 13, 14, 26, 32), and religious law (4:4). In most cases, they refer negatively to the people's behavior.

Metaphors are suggestive and open-ended. By using an analogy that invites reflection, the prophet adds force to his accusation. We can imagine members of his audience asking, "Have our actions toward Yahweh really been like those of an unfaithful spouse? Must we then take them as seriously as we would behavior that disrupts a marriage? If we ourselves would be angry and prone to strike back when confronted by such behavior, why should Yahweh act any differently?"

The passage focuses on the past, but the historical allusions are rather general and vague (e.g., 2:7b, 14–16, 20). In particular there is an ambiguity in the use of the term "Israel," which sometimes refers to the whole people in the period before the monarchy (2:3), sometimes to the Northern Kingdom (3:6, 8, 11, 18), and sometimes to Judah (2:26–28). This ambiguity, as well as the fact that we have here a mixture of poetry and prose (3:6–10, 15–18, 24–25), raises the question of why the separate units within this section occur in their present order. An obvious suggestion is that some units were originally composed as comments on others. In particular, the units woven together in 3:6–4:4 form a complex fabric of elaborations and clarifications. Since 2:1–3:5 plus 3:19–20 seem to be the verses that elicited the comments, they are probably the oldest. Still, it is difficult to be confident that even here everything originated with Jeremiah. It is possible, for example, that 2:20–28 owes its present shape to an attempt to explain why Judah fell to the Babylonians.

The whole section 2:1–4:4 provides a good example of the complex way in which the Jeremian tradition grew. Far from being concerned to preserve only the actual words of the prophet, the transmitters, motivated by an overriding interest in understanding the implications of those words for their current situation, willingly incorporated commentary into the text.

2:1–3:5, Inexcusable Sin and Yahweh's Judgment. In 2:14–19 there is an allusion to a sequence of historical events. First "Israel" (the Northern Kingdom) was destroyed (by Assyria in 722 B.C.). Then the Judeans (note the shift to the pronoun "you" in v. 16) suffered a blow at the hands of Egypt, presumably the death of Josiah in 609 B.C. (see 2 Kings 23:28–30). Verse 17 offers an interpretation applicable to both these disasters. Yet despite the warnings of history, Judean officials ("you," v. 18) continue to seek national security in the form of alliances with foreign governments. To the prophet these overtures are tantamount to forsaking God. Verses 29–30 make essentially the same point—that the people have failed to learn the lessons implicit in their past misfortunes—but without alluding to any specific event. Such statements clearly rest on the theological assumption that Yahweh is in control of historical occurrences, which he manipulates according to his own purposes, in this case punishment and instruction.

3:6–10, Israel and Judah's Harlotry. These verses can be thought of as an attempt to clarify the potentially ambiguous reference to "Israel" in 2:14–15. The distinction between the Northern Kingdom (Israel) and Judah is made explicit, and the latter is criticized for not having heeded the warning implicit in the destruction of the former.

3:11–14, Judah Worse Than Israel. There now comes an elaboration in which the unfortunate Northern Kingdom is viewed more favorably than Judah (v. 11). The grounds for this comparison are not stated explicitly, but can be inferred from v. 10: Judah failed to heed the warning implicit in Israel's defeat. The contrast between the two is heightened by the allusion to 3:5. The same presumed willingness of Yahweh not to be "angry for ever," which gave the Judeans a false sense of confidence in their own future security, is offered as the basis of Israel's hope of restoration. The conditions for this restoration are that they acknowledge the cause of the nation's downfall—as interpreted by the prophet—and make whatever changes in behavior are required for a "return" to Yahweh. Again, there is a contrast with the Judeans, whose statements of confidence had no effect upon their behavior (3:5b). There is, however, a significant Judean modification in this pro-Israelite statement: Israel's restoration will not be as an independent nation, but as part of a group based in Jerusalem (v. 14).

The contrast set up in these verses is reminiscent of chap. 24, where the Judean exiles are designated "good figs" and their compatriots who remained behind after the Babylonian victory in 597 B.C. are the "bad figs." Historical adversity is interpreted as punishment, and wrongdoers who have been punished are elevated in status over those who have not. Ezek. 16:51–52 may indicate that this theme was a topic of speculation during the Exile, which is probably when the reflections contained in Jer. 3:11–14 originated.

3:15–18, Return and Restoration. This unit clarifies the idea of a restoration to Zion introduced in v. 14. The point of view is clearly exilic: the Ark, and presumably the Temple in which it was housed, no longer exists, and the people of both Israel and Judah are assumed to live to the north of their original homeland. Jerusalem will become the focal point of a new order, which will incorporate other nations as well.

3:19–20, God's Children. These verses return to the theme of 2:1–3:5 and may originally have been contiguous with them.

3:21–25, Return and Healing. Appropriating from vv. 11–14 the theme of Israel's "return," vv. 21–23 add a positive response. The latter motif is further elaborated in the prose unit, vv. 24–25.

4:1–2, Return and Blessing. These verses set out the conditions for some future act of "return" to Yahweh, which will have benefits for other nations as well (cf. 3:17). The term "Israel" is ambiguous, but the allusion to 3:15–18 suggests a reference to the people assembled in the coming restoration.

4:3–4, Admonition and Threat. Prefaced by a new heading, addressed to the "men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem," the subject (warning) and figure of speech (circumcision) change. At first glance, we seem to have a warning that suggests a way to avert a coming disaster, but its position at the end of the larger section suggests that it may have been placed here as a further interpretation of Judah's downfall.

4:5–6:30
An Enemy from the North

The focus of the unit 4:5–6:30 is on the threat of an invasion from the north (4:6; 6:1, 22), a theme introduced in 1:13–15. Though this threat is referred to in several other passages (10:22; 13:20; 15:12), the enemy is not identified until 25:9, where the Babylonian king, Nebuchadnezzar, is named. The unit combines descriptions of an enemy attack with oracles of judgment, interspersing interpretations of the calamity's cause.

The "attacking enemy" passages (4:5–8, 13–17, 19–22, 23–28, 29–31; 6:1–5, 22–26) picture Judah, especially Jerusalem (4:6, 14, 16, 31; 6:2, 6, 23), invaded by a nation that, though anonymous, is clearly a great international power (4:7). Stereotypic language of attack is employed (cf. Isa. 5:26–30). In addition, the derogatory reference to Judah's dependence upon foreign alliances (4:30) echoes 2:18. One has the impression that the attack is impending, if not already in progress (4:15–17, 19–21, 29; 6:24–25). There are calls to flee (4:5–6a; 6:1), references to destruction (4:6b–7, 20, 23–26, 29; 6:2–8), and lamentations (4:8, 13, 19, 31b; 6:24, 26).

The oracles of judgment (5:1–9, 10–17, 20–29, 30–31; 6:9–12, 13–15, 16–21) are somewhat loose in form; for example, one incorporates elements of dialogue (5:1–6), another rhetorical questions (5:22, 29). They are addressed to the Judeans (5:1, 11, 20), against whom they level, in rather general terms, a variety of accusations: they have violated Yahweh's law (5:1–2, 4–5, 25–26; 6:19), refused to take him seriously (5:11–13; 6:10, 17), and worshiped other gods (5:6–8, 23–24; cf. 2:11, 20); their officials are corrupt (5:30–31; 6:13–15a; cf. 2:8). As a consequence, Yahweh is about to intervene to destroy them (5:6, 14–17; 6:11–12, 15b, 21). One senses an echo of 2:30, namely, the idea that the people have refused to be instructed by their past misfortune (5:3).

The interpretations included in 4:5–6:30 make it clear that the disaster is not just a random event, but an act of judgment by Yahweh in response to the Judeans' own behavior (4:8, 12, 17–18, 22, 26b, 28; 5:19; 6:6–7, 27–30). The accusations contained in the judgment oracles underscore the same point. This explanation is timeless in the sense that it could be applied to any disaster that befell the nation (that is the implication of 2:30 and 5:3). Though the unit contains no unambiguous historical allusions that would allow us to date the attack or identify the enemy, it is clear that those who collected these traditions viewed them from the perspective of the Babylonian exile. The few prose sections that occur here point to the destruction of Jerusalem as Yahweh's act of judgment against Judean apostasy (4:11–12, 27; 5:18–19), but they contain an expression of hope as well: Yahweh will not "make a full end" of the people (4:27; 5:18). Those in exile were conscious of being that remnant (see commentary above on 3:11–14).

Jer. 5:18–19, a straightforward attempt to explain the Exile, has close parallels in 9:12–16; 16:10–13; 22:8–9; Deut. 29:22–28; and 1 Kings 9:8–9. These passages tend to follow a common outline: after a narrative introduction, the question of why Yahweh has destroyed his people is posed. The answer is invariably apostasy, and the punishment exile. If not the mark of a Deuteronomistic "edition" of the book of Jeremiah, these passages at least agree with the viewpoint of the Deuteronomists.

Within the unit several different attitudes toward the prophets are displayed. Apparently, those who announced misfortune were ignored (5:13; cf. 2:30, which suggests persecution), whereas those who prophesied "peace" received a favorable response (5:31; 6:13–15). This implies the importance of the audience in prophetic activity. The comment in 4:10 that Yahweh had "deceived" his people points in another direction. The deception referred to seems to be the conviction—dashed by the Exile—that Yahweh would guarantee Judah's security, precisely the message of the prophets whom Jeremiah considered false (6:13–15). The writer held Yahweh responsible for this conviction, presumably because he sent the prophets who reinforced it. The uncritical attitude about prophecy reflected here (i.e., everyone who claims to be a prophet is one) differs from Jeremiah's willingness to make judgments between competing prophetic claims.

Among the prophets, Jeremiah was not alone in having to combat an assumption on the part of his audience that the nation was secure from the threat of military defeat (5:12; 12:4; 21:13; cf. Amos 9:10; Isa. 5:18–23; Mic. 2:6; 3:11). Mic. 3:11 specifically links this confidence to the presence of Yahweh in their midst, as does Jeremiah in his Temple sermon.

7:1–15
Jeremiah's Temple Sermon

Two passages, 7:1–15 and 26:1–24, refer to the same event, an occasion on which Jeremiah stood in the Temple and addressed those who entered with the message that unless they changed their behavior Yahweh would certainly destroy Jerusalem and its sanctuary. What differentiates them is their points of view on this event. Jer. 7:1–15 is a "prose sermon" and concentrates on the prophet's words; chap. 26 is "biography" and gives more details about the interaction between Jeremiah and his audience.

The confrontation occurred in 609 B.C., a time of political upheaval in Judah and the region. King Josiah had been killed in battle by the Egyptians, who later deposed his son Jehoahaz after only three months' reign and replaced him with a more trustworthy ally, Jehoiakim. A struggle between Egypt and Babylon for the control of Palestine was under way, and in Judah questions of national security and prosperity were paramount.

Jeremiah's message seems to have attracted considerable attention, since a group consisting of priests and prophets instituted a legal proceeding against him. They accused him of prophesying the destruction of Temple and city and sought to have him executed (26:8–9, 11).

Deuteronomy's legislation assumes that Israel had both an interest in and a right to exercise control over the activity of prophets, and it provides two instances in which a sentence of death might be handed down: if the prophet spoke in the name of some god other than Yahweh or if the message spoken was not commanded by Yahweh (Deut. 13:1–5; 18:20). Both the fact that Jeremiah spoke in Yahweh's name and the nature of his defense (26:12b, 15b) indicate that the latter was the substance of the charge against him.

As a guide to adjudicating such a case, Deut. 18:21–22 sets forth the criterion of fulfillment of prophecy—if the specific prophecies do not come to pass, then Yahweh has not sent the prophet. By this criterion, Judah's current political situation might seem to confirm the message of peace uttered by Jeremiah's prophetic opponents (cf. 6:13–15) and to discredit his message of doom (20:7–8 shows that the failure of prophesied events to occur was a major problem for Jeremiah). But such a criterion is difficult to apply satisfactorily.

The princes, before whom the case was argued, acquitted Jeremiah, but not, as we might expect, by affirming their conviction that Yahweh had in fact sent him with a message of doom. To the contrary, it was sufficient that he had come forward and spoken in Yahweh's name. When the elders then cited the precedent of Micah (whose century-old prophecies of doom still awaited fulfillment, 26:17–19), they explicitly rejected content of a certain type—threats by Yahweh against his own people—as a criterion for acceptable prophecy. The implication of the whole proceeding is that persons who manifest a certain kind of behavior recognizable as "prophetic" are to be given the benefit of the doubt and considered prophets.

The Uriah episode (26:20–23) shows that other factors could enter into such decisions. Like Jeremiah, Uriah prophesied in the name of Yahweh that the nation would be destroyed. But in his case, the king and princes wished to put him to death and succeeded in doing so. Since such a message would seem to undermine national security, their action is not very surprising.

It would appear that the behavior of Jeremiah and Uriah was essentially the same. The crucial difference in their situations seems to have been that Jeremiah had strong supporters among the princes (26:24). It is difficult to know why he had such a following (religious-political affiliation? family ties?) while Uriah did not, but the narrative clearly illustrates the importance of a group of supporters for prophetic activity.

At the core of the dispute mirrored in the Temple sermon incident is a difference of judgment about the nation's fate. Jeremiah's accusations and threat of disaster were opposed, especially by members of the political and religious establishment, though they knew that his was not a new view about the people's fate (26:18). The basis of their confidence was not just wishful thinking, but a religious conviction reflected in the words, "This is the temple of Yahweh. . . . We are delivered!" (7:4, 10). This conviction was anchored in the royal ideology: Yahweh had chosen Jerusalem to be his habitation, had founded David's house as the royal line in it, and had established both forever (2 Sam. 7; Pss. 89; 132; Isa. 29:1–8). It was strengthened by historical experience: by Jeremiah's time both dynasty and Temple had endured for nearly four centuries.

Jeremiah's interpretation of Judah's fate, shared by the Deuteronomists and many in exile who wanted to understand the reasons for the nation's fall, was based on the conviction that the covenant between Yahweh and his people was conditional. He described the confidence of the Judeans in the worst possible light—it was based on a "falsehood" that had allowed them to think that they could break Yahweh's law with impunity—and countered their belief with a reference to the fate of Shiloh. The analogy between the two cities is close. In the days before the monarchy, Shiloh had been the resting place of Yahweh's Ark and the only known location apart from Jerusalem of a "temple" of Yahweh (1 Sam. 1:9; 3:3). Furthermore, one may observe a similar view of the security afforded by Yahweh's presence during times of crisis in the Israelites' manipulation of the Ark at the time of the Philistine wars (1 Sam. 4:3). Nonetheless, Shiloh had been destroyed, according to Jeremiah, because of the people's "wickedness." The same could happen to Jerusalem.

This was not simply a theological dispute. Ideology and foreign policy were intermeshed, and we know that Jeremiah did not hesitate to draw specifically political inferences from his convictions (see chaps. 27–29). The fact that the book contains two accounts of the Temple sermon suggests both that some such occurrence was an important skirmish in Jeremiah's ongoing confrontation with Judah's rulers and that it provided significant material for exilic collectors of the Jeremian tradition. There is, in fact, evidence that the account in 7:1–15 is a product of the community of exiles: though the tone of Jeremiah's message seems to be conditional—if you mend your ways you will be spared (vv. 3–7; cf. 26:2–6)—the treatment of the Shiloh analogy in vv. 8–15 implies that the nation's fate is already sealed. The tradition has been preserved for us in such a way as to acknowledge and explain the nation's fall.

7:16–8:3
Supplements to the Temple Sermon

Jer. 7:16–8:3 is not part of the Temple sermon, but a separate unit made up of three sections that loosely approximate the oracle form (accusation, followed by an announcement of Yahweh's intervention). The accusations focus on religious practices, especially the worship of gods other than Yahweh and the offering of sacrifices. Because of these acts, Yahweh "has rejected and forsaken the generation of his wrath" (7:29) and will destroy their land.

The passage contains phrases characteristic of the prose sermons. Some of these it shares with the Deuteronomist (e.g., "provoke me to anger," 7:18 [cf. 1 Kings 14:9]; "obey the voice of Yahweh," 7:28); others are peculiar to the Jeremian prose (e.g., "cities of Judah and streets of Jerusalem," 7:17, 34; "I have persistently sent," 7:25).

The unit is not really a sermon, however, for it takes the form of Yahweh speaking to Jeremiah (7:16, 27–28) about Judah. Nor does it present an entirely accurate picture of the prophet's activity, since the prohibition recorded in v. 16 does not jibe with accounts of Jeremiah's intercessions, some coming from late in his career (18:20; 21:1–2; 37:1–10; 42:1–22; for a parallel to 7:17–20, see 44:15–19).

It is best to see the unit as an exilic comment on the cause of Judah's destruction, an event mirrored in 8:3. The prohibition against intercession serves to strengthen the judgment about the seriousness of the people's actions and perhaps also to protect Jeremiah's reputation as a prophet by heading off the charge that his intercessions had been powerless to prevent the nation's fall. The same prohibition occurs in two other prose passages devoted to elucidating the cause of exile (11:14; 14:11). The unit is located where it is in the book probably because, like 7:1–15, it focuses on unacceptable religious practices and is concerned to reflect upon the causes of exile.

8:4–10:25
Coping with Catastrophe

Jer. 8:4–10:25 has ties to the "enemy from the north" oracles of 4:5–6:30, though in general its component sections differ from these in form. Oracles of judgment are infrequent (8:4–13; 9:2–9). Instead, one finds cries of lament and mourning (8:18–9:1; 9:10, 17–22; 10:19–21), a "dialogue" (8:18–9:1) in which the speakers change with confusing rapidity (Jeremiah, 8:18–19a; the people, 8:19b, Yahweh, 8:19c; the people, 8:20; Jeremiah, 8:21–9:1), and a polemic against idols that contains a hymn of praise to Yahweh (10:1–16).

Twice an attack from the north is mentioned (8:16–17; 10:22; cf. 4:13), drawing a specific connection to chaps. 4–6, though now the invasion is viewed as unstoppable (8:17). There are additional reflections of the immediately preceding chapters in 8:8–13 (against the Judean leaders; cf. 5:30–31; 6:13–15, which is repeated almost verbatim), 8:18–19a and 8:21–9:1 (Jeremiah's personal reaction to the people's fate; cf. 4:19–21), 8:19b (on Zion's security; cf. 7:4, 10), 9:7 ("refine" and "test"; cf. 6:27), 9:9 (cf. 5:9, 29), and 8:19 and 10:1–16 (polemic against idols; cf. 7:17–18, 30).

The dominant theme of the unit involves coping with disaster. No hope is expressed that, if the people repent, they can avoid catastrophe. Rather, the nation's downfall seems already to have occurred, though perhaps in the not too distant past. In all likelihood, the poetry of these chapters reflects the Exile, but has not yet developed elaborate rationalizations of it, which is evident from the relatively large number of poetic passages in which either the people or the prophet are pictured as struggling with a disaster that seems at the very least to be virtually complete (8:14–15; 8:18–9:1; 9:10, 17–22; 10:19–21). The mood is typified by the wailing of the people: "How we are ruined! We are utterly shamed, because we have left the land, because they have cast down our dwellings" (9:19, NRSV). By contrast, the prose of 9:12–16 is much more dispassionate in its attempt to explain the disaster (cf. 5:18–19).

This unit, then, does not simply repeat the warnings of chaps. 4–6. Though it takes up the same theme of attack from the north, it presupposes a later time. This recognition allows us to surmise why it came to be placed here. The Temple sermon (7:1–15) and its supplement (7:16–8:3) may be considered the pivot of a larger section of the book, chaps 4–10. Following the warnings of a possible invasion from the north (chaps. 4–6), the Temple sermon establishes that the punishment such a disaster would represent is irrevocable. Chaps. 8–10 indicate that this judgment has been executed. Since this organization would have been motivated by reflection on the events of 587 B.C., the overall

organization of the passage illustrates the concerns of the exilic community. Along these lines we can note that in the Temple sermon there is a tension, if not a contradiction, between the open-ended warning that allows for the possibility of repentance and escape (7:5–7) and the announcement that punishment is inevitable (7:13–16). The parallel account of the sermon in 26:4–6 agrees with the former, not the latter, sentiment.

11:1–17
The Broken Covenant

Both the opening formula ("The word that came to Jeremiah from Yahweh") and its general contents identify 11:1–17 as a prose sermon. The parallel to 7:1–20 is especially close: both begin with a statement of what is required of the people (7:3–7; 11:2–5), followed by a declaration that they have actually been disobedient (7:8–11; 11:6–10), an announcement that Yahweh will intervene to punish them (7:12–15; 11:11–13), and a prohibition—because of their apostasy—against the prophet's interceding on their behalf (7:16–20; 11:14–17).

Because it is prose, this unit is better described as a "sermon" than an "oracle," though it contains the elements of a traditional oracle of judgment. Addressed to "the men of Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem," it accuses them of having failed to obey Yahweh's commands (11:8a, 9–10, 13) and announces the punishment that Yahweh will levy against them (v. 11). Verses 12–13 mirror the language of the oracles (cf. 2:26–28).

This unit is striking because it develops the theme of the covenant relationship between Yahweh and his people. The presence of this issue, plus the fact that the passage contains no date or datable allusion, has led to considerable debate over its setting and reference. There are three main options.

First, Jeremiah might be referring to the covenant made at the time of Josiah's reform (cf. 2 Kings 23:1–3; note that the same participants—men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem—are mentioned in both). This reference is an appealing interpretation because it would provide us with at least one clear indication of the prophet's attitude toward the reform, but it cannot be proven.

Second, Jeremiah might be referring, in a general way, to the Sinai covenant (rather than to Josiah's specific renewal of it) to provide a context for his condemnation of the people's behavior. Though specific mention of this covenant is somewhat rare in the prophetic books, precedents are available (e.g., Hos. 8:1–3).

Third, many have seen this unit as an example of Deuteronomistic editorial activity. Especially in vv. 3–5, the language corresponds closely to Deuteronomy (cf. v. 3 with Deut. 27:14–26, v. 4 with Deut. 4:20, v. 5 with Deut. 8:18 and 31:20, and vv. 4–5 with Deut. 26:8–9), and, like the Deuteronomistic History, the passage displays a well-developed covenant theology. (On the matter of a "Deuteronomistic edition" of Jeremiah, see Introduction.)

The term "covenant" presents a problem. The word occurs almost exclusively in prose sections, which are either exilic in date or do not refer to the relationship between Yahweh and his people. The topic in chap. 34 is an agreement on the part of the king and the people of Jerusalem to free their Hebrew slaves (34:8, 10, 13, 15, 18). The context of the occurrence in 22:9 is an exilic interpretation of the causes of the nation's collapse, and in 31:31–34 it is a description of a "new covenant." The remaining occurrences outside of chap. 11 are in passages that refer to the eventual restoration of the people to their land and seem to be products of exilic reflection and hope (3:16; 32:40; 33:20–21, 25; 50:5). The only occurrence in the poetry (14:21) is in a communal lamentation in which the people, anxious to influence Yahweh to act on their behalf, remind him of their long-standing relationship with him.

The fact that the exilic community elaborated the idea of covenant does not require one to view 11:1–13 as purely a product of the Exile. Jer. 7:1–15, and its parallel in chap. 26, show that the prose sermons may derive ultimately from Jeremiah's speeches. As we have seen, the theme in chap. 11 mirrors that of chap. 2, and if we understand v. 8b to refer to the collapse of Israel in 721 B.C. (see commentary above on 2:1–3:5), v. 11 can be taken to refer to the impending fate of Judah. The sermon proper ends at v. 13. The following prohibition against intercession (vv. 14–17) no longer speaks of the covenant, and probably represents an editorial addition after the fashion of 7:16–8:3.

Though it is likely that the wording of this sermon on the covenant is exilic, it is possible that, in its essentials, it goes back to Jeremiah. One might object that even if it contains no explicit reflections on the catastrophe of 587 B.C., thematically it is quite similar to them. However, such an interpretation of the people's history was in the air during the decades before the Exile. We see it reflected in the pre-exilic Deuteronomists' view of the fall of Israel (2 Kings 17:1–18), as well as in Jeremiah's oracles (e.g., chap. 2; 4:16–18). When Judah and Jerusalem were finally destroyed by the Babylonians, the prophet's analysis was ready to hand as a tool for interpreting what was now past.

11:18–12:6
Jeremiah's First Complaints

In two pairs of speeches, words of Jeremiah are followed by words of Yahweh. The first pair (11:18–23) loosely resembles an oracle of judgment; the second (12:1–6) has the form of a dialogue.

Jeremiah's speech in 11:18–20 begins as a narrative

describing how Yahweh revealed to him the plotting of his enemies and ends as a prayer for vengeance against them. This is followed by a speech of Yahweh addressed specifically to "the men of Anathoth," which includes both an accusation against them (11:21) and an announcement that Yahweh will send against them, as punishment for their deeds, an attacking army that none will escape (vv. 22–23). In contrast, 12:1–4 finds Jeremiah speaking directly to Yahweh, complaining about his opponents (even accusing Yahweh of having strengthened them, v. 2a), justifying himself (v. 3a), and requesting vengeance upon them (v. 3b). Yahweh's response is in two parts: a rebuke of the prophet (v. 5) and words of comfort for him in the face of his enemies' attack.

The accusation leveled against the opponents differs in the two sections. In the first there is specific mention of a plot to murder Jeremiah (11:19b), as well as reference to the attempt by the men of Anathoth to use death threats to control his activity as a prophet (v. 21b). In the second the primary reference is not to actions against Jeremiah, but to the people's false sense of security: they do as they please in the confidence that Yahweh will not "see" (which assumes he will not bring about) their "end" (v. 4).

Several difficulties arise if one tries to read these two pairs of speeches as a single unit. One is the difference in the accusations against the prophet's enemies. Another is the tone of warning in 12:6, which seems out of place after the earlier revelations to Jeremiah about his enemies' activity (11:18–19). It is therefore best to assume that they were originally two separate units. Each is a complete communication, with the enemies the focus of the first and the prophet himself the focus of the second.

There are strong echoes of the psalms of lamentation in these complaints. Compare, for example, 11:18–19 with Ps. 56:5; the cries for vengeance in 11:20a and 12:3a with Ps. 26:1–3; 12:1b with Ps. 10:1–4; and 12:4b with Ps. 10:13b. This does not mean that Jeremiah could not have spoken these words, but it does suggest that we cannot assume uncritically that he did.

Furthermore, it is impossible to identify specific settings for these two units. The first alludes to an attempt (or series of attempts) by the men of Anathoth to control Jeremiah's activity as a prophet. The second reflects a negative response by his audience to his message that their overconfidence in Yahweh's protection has set them up for disaster.

Given this uncertainty about historical setting and the use within them of stereotypic language, what can one learn from these units about Jeremiah himself? In particular two things seem clear: that in the exercise of his prophetic function he encountered serious opposition and that as a result he sought help from Yahweh.

It is interesting that the source of opposition is specified as the "men of Anathoth" (11:21, 23) and kinsmen (12:6). There is a strong tradition that Anathoth, about three miles northeast of Jerusalem, was a residence of priests (Josh. 21:18; 1 Kings 2:26) and the home village of Jeremiah, himself a member of a priestly family (1:1; 29:27). Chap. 32 shows that not all the prophet's relationships with citizens of Anathoth were strained. What, then, can one make of this opposition? One obvious point is that priests, together with prophets, were prominent among Jeremiah's opponents (see 26:7–9, 11). The probable reason for their hostility was his condemnation of the doctrine of national security based on the royal ideology and his prediction of the destruction of Temple and city. He attacked their vested interests, and their negative response was predictable.

What is most clearly reflected in these units is the process of intermediation, seen from the prophet's point of view. Jeremiah felt himself a man caught in the middle, under attack from both sides. Compelled to function as a prophet, he understood himself to be criticized by Yahweh for lack of proper performance (12:5). Yet he could not perform his function effectively in the face of strong opposition to his legitimacy, for that is the thrust of his opponents' attack: their attempt to silence him with a threat (11:21b) presumes their judgment that he was not a valid prophet and that, as an impostor, he must die (see Deut. 18:20; Jer. 26).

12:7–17
Yahweh's Response to Disaster

The unit 12:7–17 has two parts, vv. 7–13 and 14–17. The first may be considered a lament, not because of the language it uses (in contrast to Jeremiah's complaints), but on the basis of the underlying sympathy expressed in v. 7 and in the repeated phrase "my heritage" (vv. 7, 8, 9). We learn at the beginning of the lament both that Yahweh has abandoned his heritage (v. 7) and his reason for doing so, namely, the people have displayed hostility toward him analogous to that of a wild beast (v. 8). What follows is essentially an elaboration on the first issue, which uses a series of metaphors and describes the enemies as wild beasts (v. 9, accepting Holladay's translation of the first phrase: "Does the hyena look greedily on my possession for me?") and as shepherds (= kings; see 2:8; 23:1–4). These have brought destruction upon the land of Judah (vv. 10–11a, 12). The account seems to assume that this devastation has already occurred. In addition, reference to those who have not learned the proper lesson from the events (v. 11b) suggests that the catastrophe referred to may have been the military harassment of Judah that culminated in Nebuchadnezzar's first conquest of Jerusalem (597 B.C.; see 2 Kings 24:1–2, 10–16). Verse 13 may refer to drought.

In the second section, 12:14–17, there is a change from poetry to prose and from reflection on Judah's fall to an address directed at its neighbors. The theme

is the restoration of Judah and, after suitable punishment ("plucked them up," vv. 14–15), of its former enemies as well. The "plucking up" recalls 1:10, though as applied to Judah in v. 14, its meaning is reversed: that nation will be rescued from captivity. This restoration of Judah's enemies is conditional, depending upon their conversion to the religion of Yahweh (vv. 16–17). The latter is symbolized by the swearing of oaths in Yahweh's name. Such oaths seem to have been common (see 1 Kings 1:29; 2:24), and the assumption here is that the specific god mentioned in them could be taken as an indication of where one's religious loyalties lay. The passage is connected thematically with vv. 7–13 (note the word "inheritance" in vv. 14–15), but the viewpoint is clearly exilic. Judah's punishment had been accomplished. Hope for restoration was the logical sequel to preceding laments.

13:1–11
A Vision of Destruction

Jeremiah is instructed by Yahweh to purchase and wear a linen undergarment and, subsequently, to make two trips, one for the purpose of burying it and the other for the purpose of retrieving it. The unit concludes with an interpretation of this series of actions (vv. 8–11). The description is highly pictorial and is often considered to be an account either of a symbolic action or of a vision.

The plausibility of the former view depends in part on the location of the place to which the prophet was sent. The text reads "Euphrates," but a round trip from Jerusalem to that river would involve a journey of approximately seven hundred miles. To circumvent this problem, it has been suggested by some scholars that the reference is to "Parah," a spring some six and a half miles northeast of Jerusalem, a manageable journey. But "Euphrates" may be the better reading, since there is another reason to believe that we should not consider this text to represent a symbolic action: the account has the form of a dialogue between Jeremiah and Yahweh; nowhere does it mention an audience before whom the actions were performed and to whom the accompanying words were addressed.

It is best to see this passage as a vision report. The dialogue provides the key to this understanding (cf. 1:11–12, 13–16; Amos 7:1–9; 8:1–4). No audience is necessary. The vision communicates to the prophet Yahweh's attitude about the current situation, which can then be taken up into the proclamations he delivers to the people. The message is clear enough. The undergarment—purchased and worn, hidden away and spoiled—is a metaphor for the intimate relationship that existed between Yahweh and Judah, which the latter's rebellious actions have brought to ruin (v. 11). Indeed, there is a double sense in the picture of the garment's being "spoiled": the former intimacy is no longer possible, and the nation will be made to suffer as a result (v. 9). Mention of the Euphrates in this connection is entirely appropriate and calls to mind the earlier oracles concerning a foe from that northern region who would despoil (or had already) the Judean countryside. One may observe that the action depicted preserves the main parts of an oracle of judgment, an accusation and an announcement of punishment.

13:12–27
More About Judah's Fate

This unit contains four short sections on the theme of Judah's fate. The first, vv. 12–14, opens with the prophet quoting a proverb that seems to suggest that prosperity and good times are the norm. The anticipated response of the people implies that this saying expresses their conviction. But Jeremiah reinterprets the proverb by transferring it to a different context—from social drinking, symbolizing the good life, to drunkenness, providing a metaphor for the disaster that will befall Judah (cf. 25:15–29; also Ezek. 23:33, where an explicit reference is made to the fall of Samaria).

Jer. 13:15–17 contains a general call for the people to respond to Yahweh's words, followed by a threat about the dire consequences of not doing so. Failure to respond will cause the prophet to weep, since "Yahweh's flock is taken captive." The latter phrase suggests a date after 597 B.C.

There follows an address to the "queen mother" (vv. 18–19), who might be either the senior wife of a ruling king (beyond childbearing age and perhaps no longer an active conjugal partner; e.g., Bathsheba in her later years) or a widow and the mother of the ruling king. The queen mother, a person of importance in Judean society, seems to have functioned mainly as a counselor (see 1 Kings 1:11–40). The oracle assumes that a deportation has already occurred, perhaps that of 597 B.C. 2 Kings 24:12 specifically mentions the queen mother among the exiles.

The longest section, vv. 20–27, returns to the theme of the enemy from the north. The dispersal of the "flock" (v. 20; two Hebrew words for "flock" are used) may contain a double entendre, suggesting the scattering both of the Judean army (cf. the reference to the strength of the attacking "shepherds" and "flocks" in 6:3) and of the population (see 23:1–3) as well as the loss of countryside and livestock (cf. 5:17). Use of birth pangs as a figure for acute distress suffered in the face of impending attack recalls 6:24. The question "Why?" (v. 22) sounds like an attempt to explain the Exile, but this interrogation could be a device for presenting an accusation against the people. Certainly the answer to this question, that they have "forgotten" Yahweh and "trusted in a lie" (25b), corresponds to a main theme of Jeremiah's proclamation. It also provides a plausible conceptual framework for the attitude of the people reflected in vv. 12–14. The accusation of "harlotry" recalls 3:2, 9.

It is difficult to discern the original setting for these sections. The last may come from the period before the first deportation of Judeans to Babylon, but it is improbable that the others do. Together they form part of a rather loose assemblage of oracles and interpretations that begins in 12:7.

14:1–15:9
Reflections on the People's Lamentations

The heading of this passage (14:1) announces that the topic is a drought. The first sections may in fact reflect a real drought, but later in the unit the people's fate is described in terms of military defeat. However, both drought and warfare result in the destruction of the people, and both are susceptible to the same interpretation.

The unit begins with a description of the effects of a drought (14:2–6), which is followed by a confession and plea addressed to Yahweh by the people (vv. 7–9) and his response to them (v. 10). The focus then shifts to Jeremiah; vv. 11–16 record (in prose) a dialogue between him and Yahweh and vv. 17–18 his lamentation over what has happened to his people. Following another segment of communal lamentation (vv. 19–22), Yahweh comments to Jeremiah on the futility of interceding for such a people (15:1–4). The final section is reminiscent of an oracle of judgment (vv. 5–9). From 14:11 on, references to the nation's fate are dominated by images of war: the standard pair "sword/famine," or a variation on it, occurs six times (14:12, 15, 16, 18; 15:2; cf. 15:3, 9); 14:18a suggests a city under siege; 14:19b (= 8:15) and 15:6b–9 mirror a military attack. Only 14:22a mentions drought.

Though it can be segmented into smaller sections that differ in style and content, there are also indications that this passage should be treated as a single unit. First, Jerusalem is the focus of attention (14:2; 15:5; cf. 14:17). Second, the tone of lamentation is pervasive. Taken together, 14:2–6 and 7–9 display the standard form of a psalm of lamentation (description of distress, vv. 2–6; confession, v. 7; plea for help, vv. 8–9a; expression of confidence, v. 9b), and vv. 19–22 have the same elements in identical order. Verse 7, especially, mirrors the language of the Psalms (cf. Pss. 25:11; 32:5; 38:18; 79:9; 109:21; 143:11). Jer. 14:17–18 and 15:5 also echo the language of lamentation. Third, the problems of intercession on behalf of the people (14:11–12; 15:1) and false prophets are each dealt with twice. This observation may offer a clue as to why several of the smaller units were combined into the larger text.

The lamentations were occasioned by disasters—drought and war—that the text views as past occurrences. The responsibility for these events is placed directly on the people (14:10, 14–16, 18b; 15:4, 6), who themselves are pictured as acknowledging it (in the "confession" section of their laments, 14:7, 20). The fact that the people engage in pleas to Yahweh for assistance, however, indicates that they did not view the breach between themselves and Yahweh as pessimistically as the prophet did (cf. 14:11–12; 15:1).

One can only speculate about the precise setting of the original segments. On the one hand, the condemnation of Jeremiah's prophetic opponents (14:13–16) would fit the intensity of the prophetic struggle that characterized the years 597–587 B.C. (see chaps. 27–29). Jer. 14:13 may even represent an attempt by Jeremiah to excuse the people's behavior by laying the blame for it at the feet of his prophetic opponents. On the other hand, the text may derive from the Exile. The expansion of the standard list, "sword, famine, and pestilence," to include "captivity" (15:2) and the reference to the sins of King Manasseh (15:4; a theme of the exilic Deuteronomists, see 2 Kings 23:26–27) suggest exilic reflections on the fall of Judah. If 14:18a refers to a siege of Jerusalem, that of 588–587 is the most likely candidate (it lasted about eighteen months, and during it there was famine in the city, 2 Kings 25:3). Such a reference would provide another indication of an exilic date for this text.

Taken as a whole, this unit should be viewed as a literary construction, a small, independent collection of Jeremian traditions. That it is not a ritual text utilized on the occasion of a national fast for seeking aid in the face of drought or enemy attack is indicated by the form of the first lament (the description of distress in 14:2–6 is in the third person, not the first, as we would expect in a prayer), by the dialogue between the prophet and Yahweh that appears parenthetically in the middle of it, and by the exilic interpretations it contains. Its presence at this particular point in the book of Jeremiah is perhaps best explained by the proximity of other lamentations, the prophet's own complaints found in 11:18–12:6; 15:10–21.

15:10–17:27
Complaints and Interpretations

At the beginning and near the end of the unit 15:10–17:27, one finds additional examples of Jeremiah's complaints to Yahweh (15:10–21; 17:14–18). Their theme is persecution, the result of the people's hostile reaction to his prophetic message (15:15b–17; 17:15–16; cf. 11:21). These complaints bracket a miscellaneous collection of materials that focus on that message, justifying it both theoretically and by reference to the actual destruction of the nation. At the end there is a section on the Sabbath, which may be understood as a priestly application of the lesson of the Exile to the postexilic situation (17:19–27).

15:10–21, Two Complaints. This unit consists of two complaints (vv. 10–14, 15–21) cast in the form of dialogues. Verses 10–14 present special difficulties. First,

Jeremiah laments his birth because everyone makes light of (or curses) him. Yet the reason given for this reaction, that he has been neither a lender nor a borrower, sounds curiously weak by comparison to the rationale for opposition supplied in vv. 15b–17; 17:15–16; 20:7–10. Second, vv. 11–12 are difficult to translate. The Hebrew text makes it clear that the speaker is Yahweh (v. 11 begins, "Yahweh said"), and the gist of what follows is that he has (or will) protect Jeremiah in times of distress (cf. NEB; the NRSV conveys a somewhat different sense). Third, in vv. 13–14 the addressee shifts abruptly, as Yahweh utters a threat against the people. In the earlier complaints, there were responses both to the prophet (12:5–6) and to the people (11:21–23), but these were not directly connected. Since Yahweh's response to the prophet's complaint (vv. 11–12) completes the dialogue, it seems likely that the following threat, mirroring as it does the destruction of Jerusalem, conveys exilic interpretation, the purpose of which is to vindicate the prophet's earlier message.

In the speech that begins the second dialogue, Jeremiah laments the fact that he is persecuted and protests his own righteousness (vv. 15–17), claiming that his dedication to Yahweh's word has made him a social outcast. He ends with the accusation that (contrary to vv. 11–12) Yahweh has not protected him (v. 18). Yahweh's response combines insistence that Jeremiah "return" to his task (v. 19) with an assurance of protection (vv. 20–21) in language reminiscent of 1:18–19. This second complaint has close affinities with some of the psalms. Like the earlier complaints, it seems to reveal a prophet caught, by the nature of his task, between an insistent God and a hostile audience.

16:1–13, Symbolic Actions. This section contains reports of three symbolic actions, followed by an interpretation that places them in the context of the Exile. In the first (vv. 1–4), the prophet is instructed to remain unmarried and childless, since the coming warfare will be utterly destructive of families ("sword," "famine"). In the second (vv. 5–7), he is told not to participate in mourning rites. The rationale for this prohibition is that Yahweh intends to remove his "peace" from the land, with the result that death (in war) will become so widespread as to undermine normal mourning customs. The third (vv. 8–9) incorporates a prohibition against participation in festive social gatherings, since Yahweh is about to bring "mirth" and "gladness" in the land to an end (elsewhere in the book this language is associated with the fall of Judah to the Babylonians; cf. 7:34; 25:10).

What follows by way of interpretation of these actions (vv. 10–13) is a standard piece of exilic reflection on the causes of the nation's demise. These verses assume that that national catastrophe has already occurred. In addition, they provide an explanation for it that justifies the suffering Yahweh inflicted on his people. These verses may have been included at precisely this location in the book because of their thematic connection with the preceding complaint (15:17).

16:14–17:4, Hope and Doom. Parts of this section alternate between words of hope and of doom in a manner reminiscent of Isaiah 9–11. Jer. 16:14–15, a repetition of 23:7–8, voices the exiles' hope for restoration to the homeland. Verses 16–18 evoke an image of the totality of the people's defeat and give the standard reason for it, apostasy. The chapter's only poetic verses, 19–20, take up a theme of thanksgiving (v. 19a; cf. 2 Sam. 22:3; Ps. 18:2) and deal with rival gods in a fashion similar to 10:1–16 and 14:22. Jer. 16:21 and 17:1–4 are threats, the first quite general and the second mentioning apostasy (v. 2; cf. 2:20) and apparently assuming the Exile (v. 4; cf. 16:13). Thus, this section is dominated by two of the main concerns of the exilic community: to identify the cause of its present situation and to contemplate a more favorable future.

17:5–13, Wisdom Poetry. This section, a collection of wisdom psalms, comes as a surprise. There is a remarkable similarity between vv. 5–8 and Psalm 1, and vv. 9–10 have parallels in Ps. 26:1–3 and Jer. 11:20a and 12:3a. Verse 11 is a proverb on the theme of the impermanence of unjustly acquired wealth, and vv. 12–13 pair praise of Yahweh with the observation that all who forsake him, "the fountain of living water" (cf. 2:13), will perish. The underlying theme is that evil will inevitably be punished and good rewarded. We can thus think of these fragments as expressing an explanation of the nation's demise. This and the presence of the key word "heart" (vv. 1, 5, 9, 10) may account for the inclusion and the present location of this collection in the book.

17:14–18, Complaint. Like other complaints, this one contains an appeal to Yahweh for help (vv. 14, 17–18), a description of the adversaries' behavior (v. 15), and a self-justification (v. 16). This time, however, there is no response from Yahweh. The opponents' hostile derision centers on the fact that the words Jeremiah has uttered against the nation have not come to pass (Ezek. 12:21–28 echoes a similar problem), suggesting a date sometime before 597 B.C. At least some of Jeremiah's audience was no longer willing to take him seriously, to acknowledge his authority as a prophet of Yahweh, which would have made his social position precarious indeed, and it is easy to conceive of such a social setting giving rise to a complaint like this one. It is worth noting that by way of self-justification Jeremiah denies responsibility for the offensive content of his message (v. 16). He was, again, a man caught in the middle.

17:19–27, Sabbath Admonition. This extended reflection on keeping the Sabbath is an anomaly in the

prophetic literature. It begins with an accusation that the people have failed to heed the warning to keep the Sabbath (vv. 20–23). A conditional statement then follows to the effect that, if the people again observe the Sabbath, the Davidic dynasty will be perpetuated, Jerusalem will remain inhabited, and the broader Judean population will continue to worship in the Jerusalem Temple. Infraction of the Sabbath ordinance, however, will lead to the destruction of Jerusalem. Some of the language is characteristic of the Jeremian tradition (vv. 20, 25: "men of Judah, inhabitants of Jerusalem" occurs fourteen times in Jeremiah; see 11:2, 9), and some is reminiscent of Amos (v. 27: the kindling of a devouring fire; cf. Amos 1:4, 7, 10, 12, 14; 2:2).

The institution of the Sabbath seems to have existed in Israel from a comparatively early date (→ Sabbath). There are laws requiring its observance (e.g., Exod. 20:8–11; 23:12), and it is mentioned in historical narratives (2 Kings 4:23) and prophecy (Amos 8:5; Isa. 1:13). But this particular interpretation of the Sabbath's importance appears to be postexilic (cf. Neh. 13:15–18). The passage thus appears to be a rather late Priestly attempt to defend current religious and political practice by linking failure to observe the Sabbath to the national catastrophe of 587 B.C. and by justifying the absence of a king in postexilic Israel.

This entire unit (15:10–17:27) is, then, a mixed collection of prophetic complaints and reflections on the prophet's and the nation's fate. The materials come from a variety of times and historical contexts, from before the Exile until after the restoration of the people to their land. What the various sections have in common is their struggle to understand events.

18:1–20:18
Narratives and Complaints

18:1–12, The Potter. The heading identifies this narrative, in which Jeremiah draws an analogy between a potter's activity and Yahweh's, as one of the prose sermons. The description of the potter at work (vv. 1–4) demonstrates that the artisan has total control over the clay with which he works, and that is the point of the analogy: Yahweh has the power to do as he wishes with his people (vv. 5–6). In vv. 7–10, however, the focus changes abruptly. Instead of the "house of Israel," the subject is any "nation," and Yahweh's power to build is explicitly paired with his ability to destroy (see 1:10). Verse 11 returns to the original train of thought. Its threat of punishment directed against Judah can be viewed as an application of the general principle stated in v. 6, and this is followed by a call to repentance (cf. 7:5–7). The people's response (v. 12) occurs in the form of a quotation. The language is self-incriminatory, suggesting an exilic interpretation, the intent of which is to blame the nation's collapse on the behavior of its citizens.

Thus, the narrative contains several layers of interpretation. There is the original prose sermon (vv. 1–6, 11), which seems to preserve the gist of one of Jeremiah's public addresses (see commentary above on 11:1–17). The "quotation" is probably exilic and has the effect of absolving both Yahweh and Jeremiah of responsibility for Judah's fall to the Babylonians. As for vv. 7–10, concern with the conversion of other nations seems more appropriate to the late exilic or the postexilic periods (cf. Isa. 42:6; Zech. 2:10–12); the verses are clearly not Deuteronomistic (cf. Deut. 4:19–20).

18:13–17, Israel's Apostasy. The condemnation of "the virgin Israel" expressed in these verses develops the rather vague self-incrimination of v. 12. The basic accusation is apostasy. Rhetorical questions, which expect the answer no, contrast the constancy of nature with the inconsistency of the people. Together with the reference to exchanging Yahweh for other gods (vv. 13–15a), they are reminiscent of oracles earlier in the book (cf. 2:9–13, 32; 3:21), as is v. 16a (cf. 4:7). However, though in 4:7 it is an attacking enemy that makes the land desolate, v. 16a holds the people responsible. This and the fact that v. 16b expresses the same sentiment as Lam. 2:15–16 (post–587 B.C.) and v. 17a mirrors the prose of 4:11 suggest that 18:13–17 may be a product of exilic interpretive activity.

18:18–23, Complaint. These verses make up another of Jeremiah's complaints. Verse 18, quoting an anonymous "they," describes the behavior of his adversaries that motivated the complaint: angered by his announcement that the activity of certain elite groups in Judean society (priests, wise men, prophets) would come to an end, they were plotting against him. Since the downfall of the nation is the most obvious context in which such an end could come about, we may infer that the message to which they were reacting spoke of Judah's destruction.

The other parts of a traditional lamentation follow in rapid succession. Verse 19a is an appeal for aid. Verses 19b–20a—"Hearken to the voice of my adversaries, 'Will evil be repaid for good?' For they dug a pit for my life"—describe the adversaries' behavior, and v. 20b is a self-justification. Verses 21–22a are another appeal for aid, this time in the form of a call for the destruction of his opponents' families. The siege imagery employed is a variation of a favorite triad, "sword, famine, and pestilence" (occurring in some combination twenty-nine times in Jeremiah). There are echoes here of an earlier accusation against the people that they had spoken falsely by claiming that Yahweh would "do nothing" and that, therefore, they would not "see sword or famine" (5:12), as well as echoes of Yahweh's answer to the first complaint: he will punish the prophet's enemies by giving their young men to the sword and their children to famine. Verse 22b repeats

v. 20a, and the complaint ends with yet another appeal for aid: Yahweh knows of their plots against Jeremiah and therefore should overthrow, not forgive, them.

Following an introduction in narrative prose (v. 18), the complaint focuses on the adversaries' behavior and the appeal for Yahweh's action against them. There is little by way of self-justification. The claim that Jeremiah's enemies are plotting to kill him (vv. 18a, 23a) picks up the theme of the first complaint (11:19, 21) and is in harmony with more general references to persecution in 15:15 and 17:18.

What lies behind such extreme behavior? We can infer from the "quotation" (v. 20a) that Jeremiah's adversaries were convinced of the correctness of their own position and actions, which they believed were in the best interests of national security and destined for success (cf. 5:12). Jeremiah's attack, alluded to in v. 18, denied both contentions. In their view, his attack was treasonous. They were angered by what he said (11:21) and were convinced it was false prophecy (17:15). This was not simply a religious dispute, but a political one as well. In the last decades before the catastrophe of 587 B.C., there were two identifiable political factions in Judah, and the prophet identified himself with one of them (see commentary below on 27:1–29:32). The plots against the prophet can be easily explained in the context of the ongoing dispute between these factions. Thus though the complaint is grounded in episodes of the prophet's life, it also offers more clues about prophecy as a social process than it does specific biographical information.

19:1–20:6, Symbolic Action and Persecution. This biographical narrative describes one of the prophet's symbolic actions and an official response to it. Though it is presented in the form of instructions from Yahweh to Jeremiah, 19:14 implies that the action was carried out.

Jeremiah was told to buy a ceramic pot, assemble a group composed of elders of the people and senior priests, go with them to a valley south of Jerusalem (→ Hinnom, Valley of), and proclaim there a specific message addressed to the "kings of Judah and the inhabitants of Judah." The latter contains a general threat of impending disaster (v. 3), an accusation that the people have been guilty of apostasy and of offering child sacrifices (vv. 4–5; → Topheth), and a more specific threat that "this place" (the valley, but by extension the city as well) will be attacked and, after experiencing the horrors of a siege, defeated (vv. 6–9). The comment that this defeat will make void the plans of Judah and Jerusalem can be seen as a reference to the foreign policy of Jeremiah's opponents. The symbolic action itself follows. Jeremiah breaks the pot and announces that "this people and this city" will be irreparably broken because of their apostasy. The idea that the city will be made "like Topheth" harks back to the destruction and burial mentioned earlier (vv. 7–9, 11) and also to the defiling of the religious site itself during Josiah's reform (2 Kings 23:10).

The reference to child sacrifice (vv. 4–5) is puzzling. It could indicate that such offerings, attested in the time of Manasseh (2 Kings 21:6), had resumed after the death of Josiah. This is uncertain, however. Jer. 44:16–18 suggests that Josiah's reforms of worship persisted after his death, and the force of vv. 12–13 seems to rely on Topheth's still being defiled. It is conceivable that vv. 2b–9 are an exilic interpretation elaborating on the accusation and threat from the vantage point of what had already happened. Support for this view is provided by the close correspondence between vv. 4–5 and 2 Kings 24:3–4—the exilic Deuteronomists' description of Manasseh's sins.

Following this incident, Jeremiah went to the court of the Temple and delivered a summary of his threat before a wider audience (vv. 14–15). This occasioned a response by Pashhur, a Temple priest and administrator, who beat Jeremiah, placed him in stocks, and put him on public display (20:1–2). The prophet's response was to rename the priest "Terror on every side" (v. 3; cf. 6:25, where this phrase describes the people's response to an invasion from the north, and 20:10, where it describes Jeremiah's response to his enemies' actions). The name symbolizes the fact that Pashhur will be a "terror" both to himself and to his friends: they and the whole land will suffer death, plundering, and exile at the hands of the Babylonians (vv. 4–6). The assertion that Pashhur has misled his friends (v. 6b) is the key to this condemnation. His reaction to Jeremiah's message was based on a partisan political position, supported, of course, by an appropriate religious ideology. From his own standpoint Jeremiah was convinced that this position would lead to disaster.

20:7–18, Complaints. These verses contain the last two of Jeremiah's complaints. The first (vv. 7–13) begins with a self-justification (vv. 7–9), followed by a description of the adversaries' behavior (v. 10), an expression of confidence (v. 11) and appeal for aid (v. 12; 11:20 is a close parallel), and a closing expression of confidence (v. 13). The latter has seemed to some to be too optimistic to stem from the prophet himself, but, given v. 11, it makes more sense to attribute it to him than to an exilic editor. Such a person, after all, would have known that neither Jeremiah nor the nation had been delivered.

What may one know about the dynamics underlying and giving rise to this complaint? Jeremiah accuses Yahweh of forcing him into a position where he is a laughingstock and an object of mockery (v. 7); Yahweh is requiring him to deliver a message of doom (cf. 17:16) that events of history have so far failed to confirm. The reaction of his audience to that message is stated somewhat more generally than in other complaints, but it fits the picture gained from the earlier ones (see commentary above on 18:18–23): they wish to

eliminate him and his rival message about the nation's future. Both Jeremiah (along with his allies, for we may view him as a spokesman for his party) and his opponents were confronting the question of how the nation's future might best be secured. The rival positions had political and military implications, and the intensity of the conflict reflects the seriousness of the stakes.

The Pashhur event seems not to have occasioned this complaint. These two episodes may have been placed in close proximity because they share a key phrase, "terror on every side" (20:3, 10).

Self-curses like the one that follows (vv. 14–18) are not, strictly speaking, part of the lamentation form, but they certainly represent a "complaint" in the broad sense. Its obvious difference from the preceding complaint is the tone of abject despair, and its inclusion here has the effect of turning confidence into gloom. The most obvious interpretation of the curse is psychological. In this case, v. 18 would refer back to vv. 7–13 (and even to 1:5): Jeremiah's despair was the result of his impossible task. At the same time, v. 16 may suggest rage over the fate of the nation and thus hint at a social element in the curse.

Those who collected and preserved the Jeremian traditions knew, of course, of the nation's demise. They were in a position to understand the sufferings of the prophet in a broader historical context. That they set this gloomy outburst at the end of the entire series of his complaints can scarcely have been an accident.

21:1–23:8
The Fate of Kings and of the Monarchy

The unit 21:1–23:8 is held together by a common subject, the kings of Judah, and a common theme, the royal ideal of justice and righteousness (21:12; 22:3, 13–17; 23:5–6; cf. Ps. 72). At its core is an orderly sequence of oracles, which begins with a general condemnation addressed to the "house of David" (21:11–22:9), progresses through utterances directed at specific kings (the arrangement is chronological—22:10–12, Jehoahaz; 22:13–19, Jehoiakim; 22:24–30, Jehoiachin), and ends with a general cry of "woe" concerning the deeds of the "shepherds" (kings) that becomes a promise of restoration for the nation (23:1–8).

The narrative about Zedekiah with which the unit begins is out of chronological sequence, but given the point of view of the exilic collectors and arrangers of the Jeremian tradition, its position is logical. For them, the downfall of the nation and its last king was the decisive event to be recalled and understood, and they gave it pride of place in this collection dealing with the fate of the monarchy. It is worth noting that the sequence of kings addressed begins with Jehoahaz (609 B.C.). Josiah (640–609) is referred to as an exemplar of the royal ideal (22:15–16), but not addressed.

21:1–10, Jeremiah Responds to Zedekiah. This prose sermon has striking similarities with the biographical narrative in chaps. 37–38. In both, Zedekiah sends emissaries to Jeremiah (one, a priest named Zephaniah, appears in both accounts) to ask him to intercede with Yahweh, and, in both, his reply makes it clear that Jerusalem is doomed (it will be "burned with fire," 21:10; 37:10). The counsel to citizens to flee the city (21:8–10) appears almost verbatim in 38:2–3. There are some differences in detail. Jer. 21:2, 4 presupposes that a Babylonian siege of the city is in progress, whereas 37:5, 11 speaks of the siege having been lifted. In addition, the specific attention given to Zedekiah's fate (21:7) does not appear in chaps. 37–38. The setting of 21:1–10 must, therefore, be the period either just before or just after the temporary interruption in the Babylon siege of Jerusalem occasioned by Nebuchadnezzar's response to an Egyptian military challenge in the winter and spring of 587 B.C.

Jeremiah's reply to Zedekiah (vv. 3–7) was brutal: the city would be captured and he and the other survivors killed, for Yahweh himself was taking up arms against them. This prophecy seems not to have been literally fulfilled; Zedekiah was humiliated, blinded, and led away into captivity (cf. 2 Kings 25:4–7; Jer. 39:4–7). According to Jer. 52:11, he died there. This, plus the fact that the section is pure judgment with no accusation at all (as one might expect if the intent were to explain the nation's fall), suggests that the book here presents the essentials of a message addressed to Zedekiah, a logical extension of Jeremiah's straightforward statement on foreign policy reported in chap. 27.

The prophet's encouragement for the people to defect (vv. 8–10) recalls his own attempt to leave the city and undermines the credibility of his protestation to his captor that he was not deserting to the Babylonians (cf. 37:11–15).

21:11–22:9, Kingship. This general condemnation of Judean kings is composed of a matched pair of statements, the second of which (in prose) is longer and more elaborate than the first. Each begins with an address to the king (21:11; 22:1–2 adds his servants and subjects), followed by an exhortation for him to live up to the ideal of righteous rule familiar from Psalm 72 (21:12a; 22:3, developed after the pattern of 7:6). Both threaten destruction if the king fails to respond (21:12b, 14; 22:5–7).

Each has a unique feature. The first contains an explicit condemnation of those who hold to the belief that Yahweh will not allow his nation and city to fall (21:13; on this false sense of security, see 7:1–15). The second ends with a Deuteronomistic interpretation of the nation's fate (cf. 5:18–19), which moves the focus of attention from the king to the people.

22:10–12, Jehoahaz. This brief call to mourning reflects the fate of Jehoahaz, who was deposed by

Pharaoh Neco after a reign of only three months and carried away captive to Egypt, where tradition says he died (cf. 2 Kings 23:31–34).

22:13–19, Jehoiakim. Jehoiakim is condemned for his failure to live up to the kingship ideal (vv. 13–15a, 17; cf. 21:12; 22:3), and his actions are contrasted with those of his father, Josiah, who did (vv. 15b–16). The announcement of the fact and form of his death (vv. 18–19) is apparently not historically accurate (the account of Jehoiakim's death three months before the fall of Jerusalem contains no indications of violence and is silent on the matter of his burial; see 2 Kings 24:6), which seems to indicate that this oracle was delivered while he was still alive.

22:20–23, Concerning Lebanon. These verses interrupt the sequence of oracles against kings. The identities of both the addressee (presumably an "inhabitant of Lebanon," v. 23) and the "enemies" (who have already been destroyed, but whose captivity lies in the future, vv. 20, 22) are unclear. Verse 21 is the kind of accusation that is elsewhere made against Judah (cf. 2:20–25), and v. 23b recalls 6:24. Their inclusion here may be due to the reference to the scattering of the "shepherds" (i.e., kings; cf. 23:1–4) in v. 22.

22:24–30, Jehoiachin. The poetic portion of the oracle against Jehoiachin (vv. 28–30) raises, but does not answer, the question of why he and his children were carried into exile. The focus is rather on the announcement that he will have no successor on the throne. In the first instance, this would refer to the transfer of the succession to Zedekiah's lineage, but from the point of view of the exiles, it could be understood to refer to the end of the Davidic dynasty. Immediately after the Exile, a grandson of Jehoiachin, Zerubbabel, was appointed by the Persians to be governor of Judah. Some seem to have hoped that he would reestablish the Davidic dynasty of kings (see Hag. 2:20–23; → Zerubbabel). Those who opposed such a move may have made use of—may even have created—these verses. The prose introduction, which specifically mentions Nebuchadnezzar and says that nothing can stand in the way of the permanent exiling of Jehoiachin and the queen mother (note that the children are not mentioned), is an exilic clarification (before 587 B.C. the hope remained alive that Jehoiachin would be returned to his throne; see 28:1–4), which may postdate the king's death in captivity sometime after 560 B.C. (2 Kings 25:27–30).

23:1–8, Restoration. This concluding section, which speaks of the return from exile and the restoration of the monarchy, is exilic in origin. The earlier kings are held responsible for the Exile (vv. 1–2), but the text's real interest is in the restoration of the exiles to their native land and in a reformed monarchy (vv. 3–4). The following verses elaborate these points, but in reverse order. The restored monarch will continue the Davidic line. He will conform to the kingship ideal (cf. 21:12; 22:3; 33:14–16), and under him both Judah and Israel will dwell securely (cf. 21:13). The ingathering of the exiles (cf. 3:18) will supplant the Exodus from Egypt as the paradigm for God's deliverance of his people from captivity (vv. 7–8 = 16:14–15).

23:9–40
Against the Prophets

The heading "concerning the prophets" (v. 9a) sets off the unit 23:9–40 from the preceding one devoted to kingship. Two oracles of judgment follow.

23:9–15, Judgment on Prophets. In the first oracle of judgment (vv. 9–12), the focus is not yet exclusively on the prophets. Jeremiah's reference to his own emotional state (v. 9) is, as in 4:19, ambiguous. It seems probable that these verses provide us with clues about the psychology of revelation, though it is possible that the outbursts reflect an emotional reaction to conditions that the prophet observed among the people (cf. 4:20; 23:10). The accusation (vv. 10–11), directed against "both prophet and priest" (cf. 5:30–31; 6:13–15; 14:18), employs the language of drought. Both it and the following threat (v. 12) are quite general. The second oracle of judgment (vv. 13–15) compares the prophets of Israel with those of Judah. The point is not to weigh the offenses of each group, but to show that Judah is as guilty as Israel was and can, therefore, expect a comparable punishment (cf. the Jerusalem-Shiloh analogy of the Temple sermon, 7:12–15). The accusation against the Judean prophets (vv. 14, 15b) is, again, somewhat vague. One may infer from the reference to "falsehood" (v. 14) that they were "peace" prophets. The threat (v. 15a) is stated in general terms. In fact, there is nothing in these two oracles to suggest a date of composition after the fall of Jerusalem.

23:16–22, True and False Prophets. This section contains variations on the theme "I did not speak to the prophets, yet they prophesied." The application of the term "prophet" to these (from Jeremiah's point of view) inauthentic speakers raises the issue of how one is to distinguish "true" from "false" prophets.

The prose section 23:16–17 clearly identifies these prophets with the message of assured national security that Jeremiah strongly opposed (see 6:14 = 8:11; 7:1–15). Their message is not from Yahweh, but is "a vision of their own mind."

Against such activity, 23:18–22 proposes a norm for the reception of authentic messages, which seems to presuppose some type of visionary experience, namely, standing "in the council of Yahweh" (vv. 18, 22). It is clear what one will hear in such a council: unless the people repent (v. 22b), they will be punished

(vv. 19–20 = 30:23–24). Since the prophets were not commissioned by Yahweh (v. 21), we may infer that they had not stood in his council and were guilty of uttering a message that contradicted what was spoken there. The irony of this oracle is that Jeremiah criticizes his opponents for a failure that, in retrospect, he apparently shared (v. 22; cf. 25:3–5).

23:23–32, Prophesying Lies. This prose passage continues the theme of prophetic conflict. The problem here is that the author seems to disparage dreams (vv. 28–29), though in Israel they were considered, at least by some, a legitimate source of revelation (cf. Gen. 20:6; 28:12; 31:10; Num. 12:6; Deut. 13:1–5). Furthermore, it is not common in Jeremiah to find opposition to prophets couched in terms of "dreams." In 27:9 the prophet enumerates various intermediaries, including dreamers, but reverts to referring only to prophets when he addresses Judeans (27:14–15, 16–18; 29:8–9 is very similar to 27:9–10). The focus of 23:23–32 is actually on the content of the prophets' message. They justify this message by claiming it to be revelation ("I have dreamed," v. 25; "says [Yahweh]," v. 31), but (according to the author) they have really received it from each other (vv. 27, 30). That their message is characterized as "falsehood" (vv. 25–26, 32) indicates that the topic is still the peace prophets.

The criterion by which these prophets were judged false probably differed within various contexts. For Jeremiah himself, it would have been a matter of his conviction about the validity of his own message. He would have considered those with whom he differed fundamentally to be wrong. But from the point of view of the exilic preservers of the tradition, Jeremiah's view had been vindicated by the events of history. In fact it seems best to consider vv. 16–17 and 23–32 to be exilic elaborations on vv. 18–22. The sheer quantity of this interpretation (twelve verses commenting on an original five) may be due to the fact that, for the exiles, the existence of contention among Yahweh prophets in the pre-exilic period was a well-known scandal. It is this retrospective stance that justifies the otherwise virtually incredible condemnation of Yahweh prophets for engaging in standard prophetic behavior (v. 31). One may also note that what appears to be the ultimate criterion for judging the prophets "false," that their message did not "profit" the people (v. 32b), could not have been effectively used by their contemporaries. Indeed, neither the prophets of "peace" nor those, like Jeremiah, of "doom" had been able to save Judah.

23:33–40, "The Burden." This passage abandons the theme of the preceding sections. It reflects antagonism between Jeremiah and his audience, though its sense is somewhat obscure. Verse 33 is a wordplay on the Hebrew homonyms of *massa'*, meaning "utterance" and "burden." The question, "What is the *massa'* [utterance] of Yahweh?" receives the reply (following the LXX), "You are the *massa'* [burden]." The question seems a sarcastic pun, implying that any "utterance" from Jeremiah, a well-known prophet of doom, will be a "burden" on the people. The reply reverses the judgment: it is the questioners who are the real "burden." Thus, this text seems to reflect the familiar sphere of conflict with the prophets of peace.

Verses 34–40 are probably an exilic elaboration of the prophetic conflict issue. They threaten punishment for individuals who take up such derision of Jeremiah's position (v. 34), continuing the wordplay of v. 33 (vv. 36–38). One may continue to inquire after Yahweh's word (vv. 35, 37), but now the criterion for judging authenticity is clear: Jeremiah's position has been vindicated by the events of history, and the Exile has become a perpetual source of shame for the people (vv. 39–40).

24:1–10
A Vision of Figs

The setting of the narrative in chap. 24 is the period following Nebuchadnezzar's first conquest of Jerusalem. The dialogue format of the vision report recalls 1:11–12, 13–16 and, even more precisely, Amos 7:7–9 and 8:1–3.

The interpretation of what was seen, two baskets of figs, suggests a straightforward comparison of the exiles of 597 B.C. (the good figs) with King Zedekiah and the others who remained behind in Jerusalem (the bad figs). The former may look forward to restoration in their homeland; Yahweh will "build them up" and "plant them" (v. 6; cf. 1:10) and will "give them a heart to know" him (v. 7; cf. 31:33). The latter will be destroyed. The inclusion among the "bad figs" of "those dwelling in the land of Egypt" (v. 8) may stem from an exilic editor, since the only flight of Judeans to Egypt we know about came after 587 B.C. (see chaps. 42–44). The book of Jeremiah contains a number of prose narratives about the reign of Zedekiah. In general, these display one of two points of view. The majority are in agreement with the present chapter in looking favorably upon the exiles and opposing Zedekiah and those who remained in the land after 597 (cf. 21:1–10; 29:1–32; 37:1–38:13; 38:24–39:18). In others, however, Jeremiah acts to enlist Zedekiah's aid in forestalling complete disaster. To this end he advocates submission to Babylonian rule (cf. 27:1–28:17; 38:14–23).

As it happens, the last major unit of the book's first part (chaps. 1–25) contains two such narratives, 21:1–10 and 24:1–10. These narratives frame two smaller collections of material, one concerning Judean kings (21:11–23:8) and the other, prophets (23:9–40). The narratives do not fit smoothly into this context. Although 21:1–10 does deal with a king, it is out of har-

mony with the chronological sequence of the oracles against the kings that follow, and 24:1–10 introduces an altogether new topic, namely, an apology for the community of exiles. However, the two narratives complement each other rather well. Both have as their subject Zedekiah, Jerusalem, and the fate of the exiles (21:8–9 advocates surrender, a voluntary joining of those in exile whom 24:4–7 identifies as "good figs"). The focus of attention in the former is the fall of the nation and in the latter the restoration of the exiles (note the contrasting tone of 22:24–30). Between these narratives stand two small collections directed against the leaders responsible for the national catastrophe (see 21:12; 22:5; 23:1–2, 21–22).

It would, therefore, appear that the present arrangement of chaps. 21–24 is the result of an ongoing process of reflection by Judeans living in Babylon after 587 B.C. on the causes of the nation's collapse and on the position of their own community of survivors (in relation to those who remained in Palestine after 587, see 39:10; 40:7–12).

25:1–14
Confronting the People: A Summary

The narrative in 25:1–14 is dated 605 B.C., and a cross-reference is made to Nebuchadnezzar, who that year emerged as a power in the Near East by defeating the Egyptian army (→ Carchemish) and assuming the throne in Babylon. Chap. 36, an account of how Jeremiah dictated two versions of a scroll containing all the words he had spoken since the beginning of his prophetic career, carries the same date (see 25:1; 36:1). From 36:3, 29, one can infer that the content of those scrolls corresponds to the message given in summary form here (v. 3). Thus, as in the case of the Temple sermon, the book provides a prose sermon and a biographical narrative that grow out of the same event. We can also infer that what remains of these two scrolls may be found in chaps. 1–25, though there is no consensus on the identification of this material (see Introduction).

The structure characteristic of the prose sermons is evident here: a summons to repentance (vv. 3–6), followed by a description of the people's unrepentance (v. 7) and an announcement of punishment (vv. 8–11a). The stereotypic language of Jeremian prose predominates, e.g., "his servants the prophets" (v. 4; cf. 7:25; 26:5; 29:19; 35:15; 44:4), "other gods" (v. 6; over a dozen occurrences, including 7:6, 9, 18; 11:10), and "the voice of mirth" (v. 10; cf. 7:34; 16:9).

The passage has two distinctive features. First, it makes an explicit connection between the enemy from the north and Nebuchadnezzar (v. 9). It is not a matter of great importance that the tradition, as it has come down, makes it impossible to establish the identity of the enemy Jeremiah was referring to in the earlier oracles and visions (see 1:13–16; 4:5–6:30). By 605 the identification with the Babylonian king would have been obvious, and it is reasonable to assume that Jeremiah himself reapplied older oracles to the new situation.

Second, there is a section on the punishment of Babylon "after seventy years" (vv. 11b–14), a reference that is repeaed in 29:10. The sentiment echoed here is like that in Isa. 10:12–19, but the dates do not make sense: beginning with the conquest of Babylon by the Persians (538 B.C.) and adding seventy years yields 608 B.C., three years before the time of the narrative, whereas starting from the captivities of Judeans in 597 and 587 yields dates for the fall of Babylon at 527 or 517. Other computations (from the fall of Nineveh in 612 until that of Babylon, or from Nebuchadnezzar's accession in 605 until the fall of Babylon) are equally inexact. Whatever the arithmetic, it is clear that the people's crimes have been serious and the period of their punishment will be lengthy. Perhaps it is best, therefore, to see the number seventy as a way of indicating passage of two (or more?) generations. Whether the figure was originally suggested by Jeremiah is difficult to judge, though the reference to him by name in v. 13 suggests that the section as it now stands is an exilic reapplication of Jeremiah's own reapplication of his earlier oracles.

25:15–38
Yahweh's Wrath Against the Nations

The unit 25:15–38 contains two general oracles against Judah's traditional enemies. Unlike regular oracles of judgment, these make no accusations, but contain only threats of punishment. Beginning at this point, there is a major difference between the order of the Hebrew and the Greek texts (see Introduction): the LXX omits v. 14 and inserts the oracles against the nations found in chaps. 46–51 (MT) between vv. 13 and 15, though in a slightly different sequence. This difference, plus the fact that a new topic (the cup of Yahweh's wrath against the nations) is introduced in v. 15, suggests that the inclusion of vv. 15–38 at this point is the work of exilic editors (see v. 18b, which refers back to the catastrophe of 587 B.C.). The list of kings to whom the cup is to be delivered (vv. 18–26) occurs in roughly the same order as the more extensive oracles against the nations (chaps. 46–51), but is more inclusive.

It is possible that the mention of "nations" in vv. 13–14 provided a convenient key for the attachment of these oracles. One may also note that v. 29 expresses a reaction that would be quite understandable on the part of the exiles (cf. Ps. 137), and, from their perspective, it is perfectly appropriate that the list of nations that Yahweh will punish (vv. 18–26) should begin with Judah and end with Babylon.

Verse 30 introduces a separate, though related, oracle that elaborates the themes of Amos 1:2 (Yahweh

"roars" like a lion, threatens the "shepherds," i.e., the leaders of the nations). In Amos, this verse serves as an introduction to a collection of oracles against the nations (Amos 1:3–2:16), but it might just as well be a conclusion. Considering its location in the LXX, that may have been its original function in the book of Jeremiah.

26:1–45:5
Narratives Concerning the Nation's Fate

26:1–24
Jeremiah's Temple Sermon

Chapter 26 contains the narrative account of what happened on an occasion when Jeremiah delivered a message in the Temple, precipitating an open controversy with and among members of his audience. (See commentary above on 7:1–15 for a discussion.)

27:1–29:32
Prophecy and Politics

These prose narratives deal with events that occurred during the year 594 B.C. Chap. 27 and 29:1–23 have been considered prose sermons, chap. 28 and 29:24–32 biographical prose. Such labeling shows just how problematic strict distinctions in the Jeremian prose can be, since in structure and theme the passage forms a single unit.

These chapters are distinguished stylistically from the remainder of the book by the presence of both long and short spellings of Hebrew proper names like Jeremiah, Zedekiah, Jeconiah, and Hananiah (e.g., *Yirmeyah,* here 9 times, including 28:5–6, but absent elsewhere in the book; *Yirmeyahu,* here only in 29:27–30, but 110 times elsewhere). In other parts of the book, the longer spellings predominate. Furthermore, except in 29:21, "Nebuchadnezzar" is spelled with an *n,* rather than with the more usual *r* ("Nebuchadrezzar" occurs 28 times elsewhere in Jeremiah), and there is a tendency to use formal titles like "the prophet" with prophets' names (see 28:5–6). (On the differences between the MT and the LXX in these chapters, see Introduction.)

The narrative flows continuously and proceeds chronologically. This feature is especially evident in the episodes described in chaps. 27–28 and is probable for chap. 29, which presupposes an interval after 597 during which the Babylonian exiles could begin to settle down and which, in the MT, is connected by a conjunction to the preceding narratives ("*And* these are the words of the letter . . . ").

These narratives also share a theme: they are preoccupied with the problem of the duration of Babylonian rule (27:6, 9–10, 14–15, 16–17; 28:2–4, 12–14; 29:4–9, 24–28). Here one sees Jeremiah dealing with the problem of the day: how to understand the significance of the capture of Jerusalem in 597 and the subsequent exiling of King Jehoiachin and others to Babylon (see 2 Kings 24:8–17). The fact that the city and nation were not completely destroyed rendered the meaning of the events ambiguous, leaving open the question of how long the submission to Babylonian authority would continue.

There was a basic difference of opinion on this matter. The faction to which Jeremiah belonged believed that Yahweh had granted Nebuchadnezzar a lengthy hegemony in the region—the exact duration is somewhat vague, but approximates three generations (27:7; 29:6, 10; cf. 25:12). An opposing faction was convinced that, after a short period (28:2–4 says two years), the power of the Babylonians would be broken.

The narratives offer a religious interpretation of the political events. Jeremiah believed that Yahweh had established Nebuchadnezzar's power in the region (chap. 27). His opponents, on the other hand, presumably accepted defeat and exile as Yahweh's doing, but thought of them as sufficient punishment for the people's behavior. They believed that Yahweh would now restore the nation (so chap. 28), and they set themselves in opposition to Jeremiah's interpretation.

It is important to note that there is adequate theological justification in the Judean religious tradition for both these positions. Jeremiah's viewpoint mirrors the Sinai covenant, in which national security and prosperity are contingent upon obedience to Yahweh's commandments. His opponents' position reflects the ideology of the royal covenant, according to which the nation may be punished by Yahweh, but will not be finally abandoned by him (→ Covenant).

But this was not simply a dispute over points of doctrine. It was a struggle between two political parties, each seeking support for its position on the prime foreign policy issue of the day: the relationship of Judah to the dominant power in the region, Babylon. One may infer from the narrative in chaps. 27–28 that the specific dispute involved a proposal being entertained by Judah and its allies to revolt against their Babylonian suzerain. Presumably, they had found encouragement in a rebellion within Babylon during the year 595–594 (according to 28:1, the consultation of envoys and anti-Babylonian agitation took place in 594–593).

The stakes were high. For Jeremiah and his group (they might be called the "pro-Babylonian" party) the survival of those Judeans who remained in the land after 597 depended upon continued submission to Babylonian rule. (Jer. 27:13 shows that Jeremiah still believed survival was possible; but 24:8–10, which is the product of reflection among the exiles in Babylon after 587, stands in contrast.) For their opponents

(whose nationalism prompted them to resist Babylonian domination and to seek support from the greatest of Babylon's rivals, Egypt) the issue was the political independence of Judah.

From the narrative, one infers that Jeremiah was a public spokesman for one of these parties and Hananiah for the other. That the public utterances of such prophets played an important part in the struggle between competing ideologies is indicated by Jeremiah's attacks on the prophets associated with the rival party (27:9–10, 14, 16; 28:1–17; 29:8–9, 15, 20–32). Apparently, Jeremiah feared the prophets for their ability to influence opinion and action in the direction of aggressive nationalism.

These chapters contain parallel accounts of how Jeremiah confronted the problem of false prophecy, first at home and then among the exiles. The outline of the accounts is the same: there is a message (submission to Babylonian rule, chap. 27; defining the length of the Exile, 29:4–9), a negative response to that message by a prophet or prophets (28:1–4, 10–11; 29:15, 21–23, 26–28), and a resolution (a curse against the opposing prophet, 28:15–17; 29:21–23, 30–32). In chap. 27, this message is addressed in sequence to three different audiences (foreign emissaries, the Judean king, and the priests and people of Judah), and the accounts of these occasions are parallel in structure and vocabulary. Jer. 27:19–22 appears to be an exilic interpretation reflecting the final catastrophe of 587.

The narratives make it clear that, in the decade following the national catastrophe of 597, the people were confronted with a choice between two diametrically opposed positions. Each had concrete policy implications, and each was supported by one or more persons who, through their behavior, claimed to be prophets of Yahweh (both Jeremiah and Hananiah performed symbolic actions and prefaced their utterances with the formula "Thus says Yahweh"). The choice the audiences of the day were confronted with was both practical (what course of action will be most likely to ensure the nation's survival?) and theoretical (how can "false" prophecy be distinguished from "true"?).

That there were no easy, foolproof criteria for making the latter judgment is demonstrated by Jeremiah's reaction to Hananiah. According to the narrative, he initially proposed the criterion of fulfillment as the critical test of validity (28:6–10; cf. Deut. 18:22), and Hananiah's prophecy would seem a perfect opportunity to use such a rule, since his prediction was specific enough to be tested by future events (28:3–4, 11). But Jeremiah apparently did not wait for two years to pass. When he later condemned Hananiah, he made no mention of the prophecy not being fulfilled, but instead reverted to the general charge that Yahweh had not commissioned him. In effect, Jeremiah could only reassert his former claim that Yahweh had willed the present international situation and that, therefore, the only hope for national survival lay in submission to the Babylonian king (28:13–14; 27:11–12; cf. 21:8–10, where this message is applied to a later, more desperate situation).

The message to the exiles is the same: their future prosperity depends upon settling in and making the most of a long captivity (29:4–6). Here, too, there is an elaborate refutation of his prophetic opponents' assertions about the duration of exile. Though v. 23 seems to introduce personal immorality as a criterion for judgment in the case of Ahab and Zedekiah, the main issue is clearly political. Since Nebuchadnezzar executed these two prophets (vv. 21–22), it is reasonable to assume that he considered their activities a threat. It is likely that they expressed views on the length of his reign that were perceived as spreading unrest among the Judean captives.

Verses 24–28, which report a letter from one of these prophets to a priest in Jerusalem reprimanding him for not exercising his responsibility to control the prophet Jeremiah, are reminiscent of 20:1–6. Jer. 29:16–19, absent in the LXX, has nothing to do with the prophets. It is an exilic tirade after the fashion of chap. 24.

30:1–31:40
The Book of Consolation

Chaps. 30–31 form an independent unit preoccupied with the restoration of the people rather than the more usual condemnations of their behavior. Because of their content, they have come to be referred to as the "Book of Consolation."

The fact that 29:10–14 speaks of the future restoration of Judeans to their land (after "seventy years"; cf. 25:1–14) may have motivated the inclusion of these oracles at this point in the book. The theme of hope is continued in the narratives of chaps. 32–33, and it is also possible that the placing of such material at the beginning of the account of Judah's last days (chaps. 32–35; 37–44) was intended to make their proclamation about the people's future seem less an afterthought and more directly a part of Yahweh's plan. Thus, the position of the unit in the book itself might be viewed as part of an effort to console the exiles.

The core of the Book of Consolation is 30:5–31:22. Apart from some apparent supplements, it is a prophecy of the restoration of the old Northern Kingdom, overrun a century earlier by the Assyrians, who dispersed its population (721 B.C.; 2 Kings 17:1–6). The nouns of address (Jacob, 30:10, 18; 31:11; Israel, 30:10; 31:2, 4, 7, 21; Ephraim, 31:6, 9, 18, 20; Rachel, 31:15; note also the mention of Samaria in 31:5) clearly indicate this interest in northern Israel. Where the larger framework of the passage mentions Judah, it tends to do so in connection with Israel (30:3–4; 31:27, 31; the exception is 31:23–25).

This unit displays a logical sequence of thought. Though there is a note of hope in 30:7, 17, the focus is on the distress of the nation, whose ruin the prophet justifies as Yahweh's punishment of the people's sins. There follows in 30:18–22 and 31:2–6 an account of the restoration of northern Israel's land and cities, the multiplication of its population, and the return of prosperity and festivities, culminating in a pilgrimage to Zion (31:6). To this point no mention has been made of the Israelites deported by Assyria, and 31:15–20 begins with Rachel weeping for these, her lost children. In response, Yahweh promises to bring about their return, a change of heart made possible by their repentance (vv. 18–19). The unit concludes with a summons to the dispersed Israelites to return (31:21–22). The reversal of fortune is portrayed in a striking way: the "strong man" who a century earlier had quaked before the attackers like a woman in the pangs of labor (30:6) will now be sheltered (31:22).

Several verses in this unit should be considered later supplements. Jer. 30:8–9 is prose and takes up the image of the "yoke," which is central to chaps. 27–28, suggesting that it comes from the time of the Exile. Jer. 30:10–11 is a virtual doublet of 46:27–28, though the latter would seem to preserve a form closer to original (note the repetition of the phrase "fear not" at the beginning of the second verse). The idea that Yahweh will not make a "full end" of his people (see 4:27; 5:10, 18) is repeated, and is also transformed into a general threat against the people's enemies. Jer. 30:16–17 calls for vengeance against those who destroyed Jerusalem, and despite the conjunction "therefore" does not follow logically from vv. 12–15 (how can "great" sin be the cause of vindication?). It is not clear to what 30:23–24 refers. These verses appear again in 23:19–20 and fit that context better. Finally, 31:7–14 contains striking parallels to the language of what biblical scholars call Second Isaiah, i.e., Isaiah 40–55 (cf. Isa. 40:3–5; 43:1–7; 48:20–21; 49:9–13; the idea that Yahweh has "redeemed" his people, v. 11, mirrors an important theme in Second Isaiah; cf. Isa. 41:14; 43:1, 14; 44:22–24). These verses seem to anticipate a restoration of the exiles to a Judean homeland (Zion, v. 12), something quite different from the pilgrimage from their own land to Zion envisioned in v. 6.

Is it possible that Jeremiah could actually have addressed the Northern Kingdom, Israel, over a century after its fall? The key to this question is found in the fact that these words about restoration end with a summons (31:21–22). Beginning in the 620s, King Josiah of Judah apparently made attempts to extend the boundaries of his kingdom into the northern Israelite region, which for a century had been controlled by Assyria. 2 Kings 23:4, 15 reports that his religious reform extended to Bethel (see also 2 Chron. 34:6–7), and since he was killed in a battle against Pharaoh Neco near the city of Megiddo (2 Kings 23:29–30; cf. 2 Chron. 35:20–24), one may infer that he had extended his influence at least that far north. Though the exact extent of Josiah's expansion is unknown, there is also archaeological evidence to suggest that he fortified towns in Judah and controlled territory on the Philistine coast. All this activity was possible because of increasing Assyrian weakness after the death of Ashurbanipal in 627 B.C.

Viewed in this context, the poem can be interpreted as a propaganda piece for Josiah's political and religious program, and it may be among Jeremiah's earliest utterances. Northern Israel would again be incorporated into Yahweh's realm, and would again be ruled by its own king, Josiah (30:21). Zion would again be the religious center to which Northerners made pilgrimages, a practice that had been stopped by the first Israelite king, Jeroboam (1 Kings 12:26–33), but had reappeared by Jeremiah's day (41:4–5).

However, Josiah's hope failed, and eventually Judah fell as well. During the Exile, one had to envision the restoration of both northern Israel and Judah. By means of supplements and an editorial framework, the exilic assemblers of this little "book" (30:2) offered "consolation" to both north and south.

Jer. 30:1–4 and 31:23–26 provide the framework for the core unit. It begins with the usual formula of the prose sermons and announces that Yahweh will "restore the fortunes" of his people, mentioning first Israel and Judah (30:3; necessary to make connection with the content of what follows) and then Judah alone (31:23–25; necessary for the exilic situation).

The "book" ends with a supplementary group of three prose oracles, each beginning with the same introduction: "Behold, the days are coming, says Yahweh" (31:27, 31, 38). The first two of these mention both Israel and Judah, the last Judah alone. Verses 27–30 focus on a "proverb" (cf. Ezek. 18:2) to explain the hardships encountered by the survivors of Judah's fall as a result of the previous generation's sins (cf. 32:18; Deut. 5:9–10; Lam. 5:7). It is possible that the term "fathers" is intended to refer to the pre-exilic Judean rulers. The hope is expressed in terms reminiscent of 1:10. The second oracle pursues a line of thought similar to that of the core unit (cf. 31:22), but does so in terms of a different category, the "new covenant." Since the old one had not worked (cf. 2:22, 13:23), a new basis for the relationship between Yahweh and the people was necessary. What is new is the God-given ability to obey, an echo of which can be heard in 24:7. The third oracle (vv. 38–40) announces the restoration—for all time—of Jerusalem. Verses 35–37 comprise a poetic oracle assuring that Yahweh's relationship with the "descendants of Israel" (the context makes it unlikely that northern Israel alone is meant) will be perpetual. The same imagery is used in 33:19–26 with reference to the Davidic dynasty and levitical priesthood.

32:1–35:19
Tales of Life Under Siege

Chaps. 32–35 display a loose thematic unity: the events they narrate all took place in Jerusalem during periods of siege by the Babylonians. Chaps. 32–34, set in 588 B.C., form a subunit in which the introduction (32:1–5) provides an abbreviated account of the final narrative (34:1–22). These three chapters are similar in content to chaps. 21, 24, and 37–38, but unlike them say a great deal about hope for the future. Chap. 35, set in 597, which speaks of the reason for the coming destruction of the nation but has nothing to say of hope, is the link that joins these siege passages to chap. 36.

Jer. 32:1–5 serves as an introduction to this little collection of narratives. It is 588, Jerusalem is under siege, and Zedekiah (cf. 37:15; 38:1–6) has imprisoned Jeremiah for prophesying, first, that Yahweh will deliver Jerusalem to Nebuchadnezzar; second, that Zedekiah will not escape but will be given into the hand of the king of Babylon, brought before him, and taken to Babylon, where he will remain until Yahweh "visits" him; and third, that fighting against the Babylonians will not be successful.

The reference in v. 5 to Yahweh "visiting" the captive king in Babylon is ambiguous. The term usually connotes punishment, either of the nation (e.g., 5:9) or of an individual (e.g., 25:12; 29:32; 36:31). Jer. 27:22 and 29:10, however, report that Yahweh will "visit" his people in exile for the purpose of restoring them to their land. Since the parallel passage (34:5) is unique in its prediction of relatively peaceful circumstances surrounding Zedekiah's death, and since being carried off into captivity would in itself constitute harsh punishment, one should probably see this reference to Yahweh's "visitation" as offering solace to the doomed king. Such optimism would be appropriate to these chapters.

Jer. 32:6–15 reports a symbolic action. The narrative begins with Yahweh announcing that Jeremiah's cousin Hanamel would soon arrive and offer the prophet an opportunity to redeem a field in Anathoth, which was part of the family landholdings (for the legal background, see Lev. 25:25). Hanamel arrived, the purchase was made (the act was deliberately public, v. 12), and Baruch was charged with preserving the deed. An interpretation of the act follows: a time is coming when real estate holdings will again be secure in Judah. There is hope for the land.

Symbolic actions such as this one enhanced the power of a prophet's utterances. It is also worth noting that when Hanamel arrived, Jeremiah invoked the criterion of fulfillment ("then I knew that this was the word of Yahweh," v. 8). During a siege, when his message of hope might not have seemed credible, he needed all the persuasive power he could muster.

The prayer (vv. 16–25) and Yahweh's answer (vv. 26–44), which follow the symbolic action, contain one of the largest concentrations of stereotypic language in the book—some of it shared with the Deuteronomists ("bring . . . out of the land of Egypt," "land flowing with milk and honey," "other gods," "provoke me to anger"). Both prayer and answer are heavily overlaid with interpretation. The basic prayer (vv. 16–17a, 24–25) highlights the siege and the symbolic action and takes the form of a lamentation (so the vocabulary: "Ah, Lord Yahweh," v. 17; cf. 1:6, 4:10; Josh. 7:7; Judg. 6:22; "Behold, thou seest," Jer. 32:24; cf. Lam. 3:59–60). Uttered in public and containing another evocation of the criterion of fulfillment, it adds rhetorical force to the prophet's speech. Verses 17b–23 contain a standard exilic period interpretation for the cause of exile.

The stereotypic language in Yahweh's answer occurs mainly in vv. 28–35, which repeat the idea that the city's fall in 597 was the result of the people's apostasy, committed despite persistent warnings by the prophets. Following the new heading in v. 36, one finds Yahweh's words of hope for a restoration from exile, addressed to the city of which Jeremiah had said "it is given" to the Babylonians. These words speak first of a renewal of the people's election (v. 38) and a new covenant relationship with Yahweh (vv. 39–41; cf. 31:31–34), and then return to the real estate theme of the symbolic action (vv. 42–44). The focus is on life in the Palestinian homeland.

Jer. 33:1 ties the next narrative unit to the date (588) already established in 32:2. The chapter contains a collection of prose oracles (note the new headings in vv. 4, 10, 12, 14, 19, 23), and v. 3 provides the key to its intention: "Call on me and I will answer you and report to you great and inaccessible things you have not known." What are these things? Clearly, they are not explanations of the causes of the nation's collapse (vv. 4–5), since such were well known. The "great things," rendered conceptually inaccessible by the disaster of 587, are rather Yahweh's promise to cleanse his people of their past sins and to restore their fortunes (vv. 6–13). Because vv. 10, 12 presuppose the destruction of Jerusalem and v. 3 echoes a way of thinking about the people's future found also in Second Isaiah (cf. Isa. 48:6), one may assume that the compiler lived during the Exile. The question of the people's future, still open, is here addressed in terms of restoration to the homeland.

Although 33:14–26 (absent in the LXX) continues to speak of restoration, the subject changes to the Davidic dynasty. Verses 14–16 parallel 23:5–6, but also mention Yahweh's promise to Israel and Judah (presumably that recorded in 2 Sam. 7:11–16) and emphasize the security of Judah and Jerusalem in those coming days. Verses 17–18 promise that there will always be both a descendant of David to sit upon the "throne of the house of Israel" and levitical priests

offering sacrifices in the Temple. Verses 19–22 expand upon this theme by likening the permanence of the "covenant" with David to that of the regular alternation of day and night (cf. 31:35–37) and by promising to multiply greatly descendants of David and the levitical priests. Connected historically with David's priest, Abiathar, and Jeremiah's home village of Anathoth (see 1 Kings 2:26–27), the Levites were of special interest to the Deuteronomists, another indication of the exilic provenience of this section (→ Levites). A final elaboration in vv. 23–26 employs both the regularities of nature and the idea of Yahweh's election of his people to underscore the hope for future restoration.

At the beginning of chap. 34, Jerusalem is depicted as under siege and the surrounding Judean countryside as, for the most part, in the hands of the invading Babylonians, but Jeremiah is not yet in prison (vv. 1–2, 6–7). It is, therefore, chronologically prior to chaps. 32–33, though the oracle with which it begins (vv. 2–5) was adapted by the compiler as an introduction to these chapters (32:1–5). The version given in this chapter lacks the final note about the futility of fighting the Babylonians (32:5) and adds a reference to Zedekiah's peaceful death in Babylon (cf. 52:11; 2 Kings 25:7 makes no mention of his death).

The bulk of the chapter (vv. 8–22) is devoted to a narrative about the treatment of Hebrew slaves, which is set during the temporary lifting of the Babylonian siege of Jerusalem (vv. 21–22; cf. 37:5). Verses 8–11 provide the background: after years of neglect (see v. 14b), owners had released their Hebrew slaves in accordance with the law (Deut. 15:1, 12–18). Their motives for doing so were perhaps a mixture of religious (repentance, v. 16; demonstrations of faithfulness to Yahweh's law in a time when it was necessary to call upon him for assistance against attack by aliens) and practical considerations (during a siege it might be difficult to feed slaves, and there would be no agricultural work for them to do; it might also be assumed that free persons would fight harder in defense of their city). In the prose oracle that follows, one learns from the accusation (vv. 12–16) that subsequently (perhaps after the siege was lifted) the owners reneged on their agreement and reclaimed their former slaves. Because of this action, Yahweh would deliver them into the hands of their enemies, causing the Babylonians to return and destroy the city and countryside (vv. 17–22; cf. 21:7; 32:4).

Jer. 35:1 gives only a general date for the final narrative in this section ("the days of Jehoiakim"), but v. 11 allows us to locate the event more specifically in 597, during the siege preceding the first conquest of Jerusalem.

The chapter describes a symbolic action that begins with an account of Yahweh's instructions to Jeremiah to take a group of Rechabites to the Temple and publicly offer them wine to drink and of the prophet's compliance to act in this way. The response of the Rechabites is of central importance: they refuse to drink wine on the grounds that, since the days of "Jonadab the son of Rechab our father" (ca. 842 B.C.), they have faithfully kept the latter's command that they not drink wine, build houses (they had to live in tents), or engage in farming.

Jeremiah's interpretation of this action takes the form of an oracle of judgment (vv. 12–17). The accusation compares the Rechabites, who had been faithful to the commands given them, with the people, who had not obeyed Yahweh, but had ignored the prophets and continued in apostasy. The announcement of judgment is quite general: Yahweh will bring "evil" upon Judah and Jerusalem (v. 17a).

The narrative closes with an oracle of salvation directed to the Rechabites (vv. 18–19). Because they have kept their father's commands, their line will continue forever. The terminology ("never lack a man"; cf. 33:17–18) recalls the royal ideology, but in this context it is clear that permanence depends upon obedience. The passage thus agrees with and offers yet another statement of the prophetic and Deuteronomistic views of the people's history.

The identity of the Rechabites is unclear. Some have seen in them a guild of metalworkers and have interpreted the commands as guild restrictions and not indications of cultural conservatism (holding to a supposed "nomadic ideal"). In any case, Jeremiah points not to their social location, but to their faithfulness to religious tradition. The symbolic action in which they cooperated was a demonstration of the importance of faithfulness to commandments that were the basis of a group's existence.

36:1–32
The Beginnings of the Book of Jeremiah

Chap. 36 provides a narrative account of how, in 605 B.C. (v. 1), Jeremiah undertook to collect all the prophecies he had uttered from the beginning of his career and to bring them to the attention of his countrymen, especially their leaders. It seems likely that the prose sermon of 25:1–14 refers to the same events, focusing on the prophet's words. Both chapters make reference to a "scroll" (25:13; 36:2, 28), and there is general agreement by interpreters as to the content of the message (cf. 25:5–6, 8–11; 36:3, 29). The narrative is composed of three episodes with identical structure, but of differing length.

Verses 1–4 describe the way in which Jeremiah's prophecies were committed to writing. The prophet is instructed by Yahweh to write on a scroll all the words he has spoken to him about "Jerusalem [reading with the LXX] and Judah and all the nations" from the "days of Josiah" until the present. Jeremiah follows this in-

struction by dictating these words to his scribe, Baruch.

Verses 5–26 recount the public reading of these prophecies. Jeremiah instructed Baruch to go to the Temple on a fast day (vv. 5–6, 9; we are not told why the prophet could not go himself or what the specific occasion for fasting was) and there read the scroll aloud. The goal of this action was to stimulate a change in the people's behavior (v. 7). Verse 8 states in a general way that Baruch executed these instructions.

Verses 8–26 give a more detailed picture of what happened. Approximately one year after the scroll was dictated (vv. 9, 22), Baruch took it to the Temple, where it was read three times during the course of a day, twice by Baruch himself (to "all the people," v. 10, and "all the princes," v. 12) and once by Jehudi, a servant of the court (to King Jehoiakim and the assembled princes, v. 21). For each occasion the narrator records a response. The first reading caught the attention of the princes (vv. 11–12). The second aroused fear among the assembled princes (v. 16), who first established the authority of the scroll (by determining that it had in fact originated with Jeremiah, vv. 17–18) and then sent Baruch (and Jeremiah) into hiding (v. 19). The king's response was quite different (vv. 22–26): he showed no fear, but cut the scroll in strips, burned it in a warming fire, and ordered the arrest of Baruch and Jeremiah.

Finally, 36:27–32 tells that Jeremiah was instructed to write a second scroll, a command he again executed by dictating to Baruch. In addition to all the words that had been on the first one, the new scroll contained an oracle that condemned Jehoiakim for burning the first scroll (vv. 29–31) and "many" additional prophecies (v. 32). The prediction of Jehoiakim's death (vv. 30–31) seems to agree roughly with 22:18–19, but not with 2 Kings 24:1–7.

There is a noticeable relationship between the account in 2 Kings of Josiah's response to the "scroll of the law" found in the Temple (2 Kings 22:3–23:24) and Jehoiakim's to the scroll containing Jeremiah's prophecies: Josiah tore his clothes, sought prophetic guidance (2 Kings 22:11–14), and burned the offending ritual objects; whereas Jehoiakim, showing no fear, tore and burned only the scroll (Jer. 36:22–26). The two kings' responses differ even though the menacing content of the two scrolls was essentially the same (2 Kings 22:14, 16; Jer. 36:3, 29). From the standpoint of Jeremiah and those in exile who agreed with him, this comparison is highly unfavorable to Jehoiakim. The narrative of Jeremiah 36 may have been patterned after the Deuteronomistic account of Josiah's reaction to the scroll.

Again, in this narrative, one finds the family of Shaphan singled out from among the princes as staunch supporters of Jeremiah. The first public reading of the scroll was at the chamber of Gemariah (v. 10), where Micaiah took an interest in it and reported what he heard to the princes (vv. 11–12). Gemariah was among those who urged King Jehoiakim to attend to the scroll's words (v. 25). Several years earlier, it was apparently the support and influence of another member of that family, Ahikam, that was crucial in saving the prophet's life (26:1, 24). The political dispute that divided the Judean leadership is clearly in evidence here (see Introduction).

37:1–44:30
The Fall of Judah and Its Aftermath in Palestine

The book of Jeremiah contains two accounts of the fall of Jerusalem. One (chap. 52) is virtually identical with 2 Kings 25 and does not mention the prophet at all. The other (chaps. 37–44) features Jeremiah as an important actor in these events and offers an explicit interpretation of their cause.

37:1–2, Zedekiah's Disobedience. The first two verses in chap. 37 set the stage for the entire narrative by stressing two aspects of the situation: Judah's king, Zedekiah, was a vassal of the Babylonian king, Nebuchadnezzar; and Zedekiah and the majority of Judeans did not respond positively to the words of Jeremiah. The descriptions that follow, of conflicts between Jeremiah and various opponents, can best be seen in the context of the struggle between parties that characterized Judah's last decades.

37:3–38:28, Zedekiah Consults Jeremiah. The events reported in these chapters occurred during the period 588–587 B.C. After a temporary lifting of the siege in either summer 588 or early winter 587 (vv. 5, 11), the Babylonian armies returned to Jerusalem, and the city fell in July 587. Three consultations between Zedekiah and Jeremiah provide the structure of the passage. These consultations are separated by accounts of confrontations between the prophet and the Judean princes.

In the first consultation (37:3–10), Zedekiah sent messengers to the prophet, requesting that he "pray for us." Presumably, the intention was to try to secure permanent deliverance for the city. Jeremiah responded with an oracle of doom against the city (vv. 7–8, explicitly contradicting the hope that must have arisen following the lifting of the siege). The episode is reminiscent of 21:1–7, which suggests another instance of the same occurrence being recorded in both prose sermon and biographical narrative forms (see chaps. 7 and 26; 25:1–14 and 36:1–32; 21:8–10 and 38:2–3). Verse 4 anticipates the reaction to this message: the imprisonment of the prophet.

Verses 11–15 reveal that, during the interlude in hostilities, Jeremiah tried to leave the city. The author does not report what motivated this action, though an

errand in connection with a purchase of real estate (chap. 32) is a possibility. As he reached one of the city gates, he was arrested as a deserter. Though he protested to the contrary, the fact that he had given advice to others to desert (21:8–10; 38:2–3, 17–18) and that some Judeans had already done so (38:19) makes the charge seem reasonable. The princes punished him with a beating and imprisonment.

Verses 16–21 record the second consultation. This time Zedekiah himself sent for the prophet and, when he had been brought from prison, asked him, "Is there a word from Yahweh?" Jeremiah's response was a short oracle of doom against the king, followed by a protestation of his own innocence (v. 18 is reminiscent of 26:15) and a plea that he be transferred out of the control of the princes and placed under the king's own guard.

It is worth noting that, according to the narrative, Jeremiah used the criterion of fulfillment of prophecy against his opponents (v. 19). Apparently, it was a handy argument, when the circumstances permitted its use (cf. chap. 28): Jerusalem had already fallen once (597) and had again come under serious attack, so who now could believe in prophecies of peace? This point raises an interesting question. Jeremiah had been persecuted both because his message was unpopular and because for so long the doom he predicted did not come to pass (e.g., 17:14–18; 20:7–12). Then came the national disaster of 597 and the siege of 587, apparent fulfillments of his prophecies. Yet the present narrative shows that his status among important segments of his audience changed, if at all, only for the worse. In addition the activity of Hananiah a decade earlier (chap. 28) demonstrates, and 37:19 implies, that the "peace" prophets continued to be influential. Matching predictions with occurrences seems not to have been a very powerful tool for judging among prophets.

In the second conflict episode (38:1–13), the princes accuse Jeremiah of treason, saying that he has urged people to desert to the Babylonians, thereby weakening the city's defense. They demand his death, but when Zedekiah hands him over to them, they arrange the execution in a strange and ineffectual manner (vv. 5–6). Soon, with the king's blessing, he is rescued.

The third consultation (38:14–28) involved some curious negotiations between Zedekiah and the prophet. The king wished to ask a question, but the prophet was afraid of two things: that he would be put to death, and that what he said would not be heeded (v. 15). After receiving Zedekiah's assurances regarding the former matter, Jeremiah delivered the message that only surrender to the Babylonians could now avert complete disaster. The king suggested that, if he wished to live, he should not let the princes know the content of this message. So when they asked, he lied and was returned to prison until the city's fall.

This, then, is what the final stages of the party conflict in pre-exilic Judah had come to: counsels of desertion and imprisonment for the prophet who uttered them. Especially in the face of Jeremiah's obvious lack of success in gaining support for his position (37:2; 38:15), desertion can be seen as the logical extension of the "pro-Babylonian" party's foreign policy. What he sought was a way to remain in the land (see chap. 27; this idea seems to underlie the oracle in 38:17–20 and is evident in chaps. 39–43), though events brought this hope to nothing. It is probable that the exilic shapers of these narratives, who knew of this dashed hope, are responsible for the harsher tone of the oracle in 37:6–10.

Jer. 38:4 gives a clear indication of what the powerful elements in Judean society expected of their prophets: they should be upholders of the status quo (see 26:7–9). Jeremiah's activity was perceived to be detrimental to the national welfare, and so he was imprisoned. In the end he could no longer proclaim his words publicly lest he be killed (38:24–28). He took himself out of action: a prophet who does not operate publicly is no threat because he is no prophet.

39:1–43:13, Defeat, Exile, and Prophetic Response. Though these chapters tell a tale of destruction and exile, they continue to reveal the prophet's positive attitude toward the land of Palestine. Thus, after the fall of Jerusalem, Jeremiah chose to remain in the land rather than join the large community of Judeans in Babylon (39:11–14; 40:1–6). For a brief time the remnant in Palestine prospered (40:10–12), and even after the assassination of Gedaliah the prophet counseled his companions to stay rather than flee to Egypt (42:10–12). The narratives of chaps. 39–43 allow one to sense an element of hope that was dashed by events. Such hope is not present in the other account of Jerusalem's fall (Jer. 52; 2 Kings 25).

Jer. 39:1–10 is a summary of Babylon's actions against Jerusalem and its inhabitants after the fall of the city and is essentially the same as that found in 52:4–16 and 2 Kings 25:1–12.

Jer. 39:11–14 contains the surprising claim that Jeremiah counted among his defenders in high places Nebuchadnezzar himself. At first glance this seems implausible. Yet he had tried to leave the city during a temporary lull in the siege (37:11–13), and he had a history of preaching submission to Nebuchadnezzar (chaps. 27–29; 38:17–23) and even of suggesting defection (21:8–10; 38:2–3). Since there were Jewish deserters among the Babylonians (38:19), it is not unreasonable to assume that Nebuchadnezzar had been made aware of all this. Furthermore, we can infer that Nebuchadnezzar had knowledge of local events from the fact that Gedaliah, whom he appointed governor of Judah (40:5; 2 Kings 25:22) and to whom Jeremiah was entrusted, was of the house of Shaphan, one of the mainstays of the "pro-Babylonian" party.

Verses 15–18, an oracle to Jeremiah's rescuer, Ebedmelech, was uttered during the siege (v. 15) and is out of place here.

The point of view of the narrative is clear in 40:1–6, an expanded account of Jeremiah's release. Here the prophet is given a choice about where he will reside. Moreover, the Babylonian officer in charge gives an interpretation of the causes of the city's fall—essentially irrelevant to the narrative—that reflects the sentiments of the Judean community in exile.

The Judeans who remained in Palestine rallied around Gedaliah, who as governor stood for a policy of obedience to Babylon, and prospered (40:9–12). But their prospects were undermined by his assassination (40:13–41:18). Especially because Babylonian soldiers were among those slain, this act had the appearance of a rebellion. It caused consternation among the survivors because of the reaction they expected from the Babylonians (40:15; 41:2–3, 17–18; 43:3).

What motivated the assassination? The perpetrator, Ishmael, was a member of the Judean royal house (41:1) and during the war had been a freedom fighter (head of a military unit, 40:7–8; 2 Kings 25:23; on "captain of the forces," see 2 Sam. 24:2; 1 Kings 15:20). Thus, it is possible that this act was a last gasp of the old party struggle. Given the magnitude of Judah's defeat in 587, this was less likely an attempt to assume leadership than an act of revenge. From one point of view, Gedaliah, like Jeremiah, could be considered a traitor.

Chap. 42 presents a textbook case of intercession. Inclined to flee Egypt (41:17–18) but uncertain about what they ought to do, the people and their leaders went to Jeremiah (as in divination, the initiative lay with them, not the prophet) and requested that he consult Yahweh on their behalf, swearing to obey whatever he might command. After a ten-day wait, Jeremiah received a message from Yahweh and transmitted it to them: they were to remain in the land. Furthermore, they had no need to fear Nebuchadnezzar, since Yahweh would cause him to be favorably disposed toward them (vv. 10–13). They were forbidden to go to Egypt, though their motivation for doing so (v. 14) seems quite reasonable.

Jer. 42:18–22 begins with a new formula (see v. 9) and contains a brief recapitulation of Jeremiah's message and the request that occasioned it. However, there is a new element here, the prophet's reference to his own history of being rejected by the people to whom he spoke (v. 21). The gloomy pessimism that results would have been appropriate for Jeremiah, but would also fit the views of exilic interpreters who knew what had happened and who must have understood the flight to Egypt as yet another in a series of self-destructive acts by those who had been left behind after the first deportation to Babylon.

The message was in fact unacceptable and was branded a "lie" (43:1–3), the very charge that Jeremiah had leveled against his prophetic opponents. The people quit the land and went to Egypt (vv. 4–7), carrying Jeremiah with them. There the prophet is said to have performed a symbolic action, predicting a Babylonian invasion of the land in which they had taken refuge (vv. 8–13). These latter verses are probably the work of an exilic interpreter who knew of Nebuchadnezzar's campaign against Egypt in 568 B.C.

44:1–30, Jeremiah and Other Judeans in Egypt. Broadly speaking, the narrative of chap. 44 takes the form of a dialogue between Jeremiah and the Judeans who had come to Egypt. The prophet speaks twice, the people once. In each case the speech is prefaced by a historical review. The theme is the cause of the nation's misfortune and the lessons that are to be learned from it.

Jeremiah's first speech begins with a review of the 587 disaster, which he attributes to the people's failure, despite the warnings of the prophets, to cease worshiping other gods (44:2–6). This speech is followed by an oracle of judgment, which accuses his audience of having forgotten the lessons of their past wickedness (they have continued in Egypt to serve other gods and have not walked in Yahweh's "law" and "statutes," (vv. 7–10) and threatens that Yahweh will, but for a few fugitives, utterly destroy them (vv. 11–14).

The people refuse to accept these words and respond with a historical retrospective of their own: in the past, when they freely worshiped the "queen of heaven" (the reference may be to the long and apparently prosperous reign of Manasseh; cf. 2 Kings 21:1–18), they prospered; only after stopping such worship (i.e., after the reform of Josiah in 621) did they fall on hard times (vv. 15–19). The description of idolatry focusing on the "queen of heaven" takes up a theme already encountered in 7:16–20, a passage that derives from the exilic community.

The content of Jeremiah's response to this argument essentially repeats his first review and oracle (vv. 20–30). In addition the criterion of fulfillment of prophecy is again mentioned (v. 28; cf. 37:19): the remnant that escapes Yahweh's destruction of the Judeans in Egypt will know that the prophet had been correct. And as a sign that this punishment is coming, Yahweh will give Pharaoh Hophra to his enemies as he had Zedekiah (vv. 29–30). One has the impression that the author of this passage knew of the death of Apries (Hophra) ca. 569 at the hands of a usurper, as well as of whatever misfortune overtook the Judeans in Egypt.

The chapter, then, accounts (yet again) for the fall of Judah and Jerusalem in 587 and also for the disappearance from the historical scene of the Judeans who had remained behind in the land after the second deportation. What hope remained for the Judeans must now rest solely with the community in Babylonia (see chaps. 24, 29). This assessment, the interpretive

capstone of chaps. 37–44, must reflect the thinking of some within the exilic community.

45:1–5
An Oracle to Baruch

The opening verse of chap. 45 dates the oracle to 605 B.C. and connects it specifically to the narrative of chap. 36. The oracle of judgment against the nation (v. 4) reflects 1:10 and 36:29. The oracle of deliverance addressed to Baruch (v. 5) echoes 39:18 and is "fulfilled" by the event reported in 43:6.

Why should this short oracle have been placed here, out of chronological sequence and separated from the narrative to which it belongs? The answer may well be that here it served the needs of the exilic interpreters, whose reflections on the people's destiny can be discerned both in additions made to the traditions and in the order in which these traditions are arranged. Chaps. 37–44 in fact narrate how the prophecies compiled by Jeremiah in 605 were fulfilled. Since they are enclosed by two chapters that speak of the collection and utterance of these prophecies (36 and 44), readers can hardly miss the point. Yahweh had indeed been behind these events. The results had been painful, but at least they were intelligible.

46:1–51:64
Oracles Against the Nations

Oracles against foreign nations are a distinct and relatively common genre of prophetic literature. Collections like the one in these chapters may be found in Amos 1–2, Isaiah 13–23, and Ezekiel 25–32 (cf. also Nahum, Obadiah, Zeph. 2). That chaps. 46–51 of Jeremiah were collected and at first transmitted separately is indicated by the fact that their position in the MT differs from that in the LXX, where they follow 25:13. The latter position is more like that of the collections in Amos, Isaiah, and Ezekiel, but the position in the MT does provide a more dramatic ending for the book: an announcement of the destruction of Babylon, the enemy that had destroyed Judah and carried its inhabitants into exile.

Though we do not know exactly how oracles of this type were used, the genre appears to be quite old. Prophets at Mari spoke against foreign kings, and Jer. 28:8 indicates that Israelite prophets had performed in a similar fashion "from ancient times." It is possible that such oracles were directed against specific enemies in times of war.

In contrast to the oracles of judgment against Judah and the reflections on the people's fate so common in the rest of the book, this collection displays a certain kinship to chaps. 30–33: by announcing the downfall of their enemies, it sets the stage for a restoration of the people's fortunes. The defeat of the foreign nations is generally seen as Yahweh's doing, and sometimes it is specifically said that his motivation is vengeance for what they have done against his people (e.g., 46:10; 50:15, 28). In fact, it is possible to see a contradiction between Jeremiah's insistence that Judeans must submit to Nebuchadnezzar's rule (chaps. 27–29) and the announcements of Babylon's pending destruction (chaps. 50–51), texts that the editors present as contemporaneous (cf. 27:1; 28:1; 51:59). In the first, the Babylonian king is represented as Yahweh's "servant" (27:6), in the second as "monster" (51:34).

46:1
Heading

The heading in 46:1 clearly announces this new major section of the book as oracles against the nations.

46:2–28
Against Egypt

The chapter contains two oracles, each with a prose heading giving its date. The first, vv. 2–12, is set in 605 B.C. (v. 2). It looks back on Egypt's defeat at Carchemish (vv. 6, 12), which it interprets as an act of Yahweh's "vengeance" (v. 10)—presumably, for the death of Josiah at the hands of the pharaoh in 609. The term "vengeance" appears more frequently in Jeremiah than in other prophetic books. Sometimes it refers to Yahweh's actions against his own people (5:9, 29; 9:9) or against Jeremiah's enemies (11:20; 15:15; 20:12), but most often to those against Egypt or Babylon (46:10; 50:15, 28; 51:6, 11, 36).

Verses 13–24 are set in the time of Nebuchadnezzar's campaign against Egypt ca. 568 B.C. (v. 13). The Babylonian attack is in progress (vv. 16, 20–21, 22–24), and victory is anticipated (vv. 14, 19). Egypt's downfall is interpreted as Yahweh's "punishment" (vv. 21, 25; for similar statements against other nations, cf. 48:44; 49:8; 50:18, 27, 31; 51:18, 44, 47, 52). Though these verses are addressed to lower Egypt (v. 14, Memphis), the prose supplement to the oracle is directed to upper Egypt (vv. 25–26, Thebes). The oracle ends with a word of assurance to Israel (vv. 27–28 = 30:10–11), although v. 28b harks back to its own punishment, showing the double need of those in exile to understand the reason for their captivity and to see hope for the future.

Several stages of growth can be discerned in this section about Egypt. The first of the oracles is appropriate to the situation after Egypt's defeat at Carchemish in 605 (vv. 3–12), and the second (vv. 14–24) to the period around 568. Behind the latter we can imagine members of the exilic community gloating that Egypt, the failed ally of the old nationalist party, was itself now succumbing to the Babylonians (cf. 37:3–10). Verses 27–28 express a hope for restoration to the land, along with yet another statement about the meaning of the Exile. The entire collection, held together by a

prose framework (vv. 2, 13, 25–26), probably comes from the late exilic period.

47:1–7
Against the Philistines

Though the prose introduction to chap. 47 specifies a date for this oracle (v. 1), a specific historical allusion is uncertain. The contents are quite general, but it is clear that from the author's perspective the disaster coming to the Philistines is Yahweh's doing (vv. 4b, 6–7).

48:1–47
Against Moab

The little collection in chap. 48 begins with four general oracles concerning Moab's destruction (vv. 1–9, 11–12, 14–20, 28–33), each of which is followed by a prose supplement expanding on the main theme of the preceding oracle (v. 10, warfare; vv. 12–13, vessels; vv. 21–25; vv. 34–36, cities under attack). Two of the prose passages are themselves expanded with statements to the effect that Yahweh is responsible for Moab's demise (vv. 26–27, 38–39). Though Yahweh is twice mentioned as speaker in the oracles (vv. 15, 30), his role in Moab's troubles is not specified (v. 33b may be an allusion to it).

The statement that, because of the defeat, the Moabite god, priests, and princes will be carried into exile (v. 7; cf. 11) is echoed in the following oracle against Ammon (49:3) and in Amos's oracles against the nations (Amos 1:5, 6, 15).

Verses 40–46 explain Moab's destruction as punishment for having "made himself great" against Yahweh (vv. 42, 44; cf. 46:13–24). Moab and Judah were traditional enemies, and there are no allusions that allow us to locate this accusation in a specific historical setting. It is possible, however, that the author had in mind the role of the Moabites as Babylon's allies prior to 597 (cf. 2 Kings 24:2). Finally, v. 47 speaks of a future restoration of Moab's fortunes (cf. 46:26b; 49:6, 39).

49:1–39
Against Ammon, Edom, Damascus, Kedar, Hazor, and Elam

49:1–6, Ammon. The oracle against Ammon is quite general in content (on v. 3, see 48:7). Again, the destruction is interpreted as retaliation for oppression of Yahweh's people (vv. 1–2; for a possible historical setting, see 41:15 and commentary above on 48:1–47 [vv. 40–46]). It concludes with a promise of restoration (cf. 46:26b; 48:47; 49:39).

49:7–22, Edom. The poetic portions of the oracle (vv. 7–11, 14–16) interpret Edom's fate as Yahweh's punishment (v. 8), though the cause of his action is not specified. The prose of vv. 12–13 contains a confusing reference to drinking from a cup reminiscent of 25:15–29. Verses 17–22, also prose, are dominated by two images: Edom will become like Sodom and Gomorrah, and Yahweh will act like the devouring lion. The latter motif is repeated in the oracle against Babylon (50:44–46).

49:23–39, Damascus, Kedar, Hazor, and Elam. The last three oracles are quite general and do not speak of Yahweh's punishment or vengeance. The only link of the pronouncement against Damascus to Yahweh's action is the stereotypic formula in v. 27 (cf. Amos 1:4). The oracle concerning "Kedar and the kingdoms of Hazor" apparently refers to desert dwellers in the region between Judah and Babylon. Nebuchadnezzar is identified as the destroyer in both the editorial introduction (v. 28a) and the body of the oracle (v. 30b, which may be a later addition). The introduction (v. 34) to the oracle against Elam, a kingdom to the east of Babylon, provides the date 597, and the two nations may have been in conflict about that time. Elam's destruction is attributed to Yahweh, but no motivation for it is mentioned. Again, there is a concluding promise of restoration (cf. 46:26b; 48:47; 49:6).

50:1–51:64
Against Babylon

The collection in chaps. 50–51 begins with a general oracle of destruction (50:2), followed by prose supplements that speak of an attack against Babylon by a nation from the north (vv. 3, 8–10; cf. 50:41–43), the restoration of Israel and Judah (vv. 4–5), and yet another reflection on the cause of the Exile (vv. 6–7). Evidently, questions raised by the great national disaster of 587 could not be laid to rest once and for all, and explanations of it bore repeating (cf. 46:27–28).

In 50:11–16, a general oracle of destruction that specifies Yahweh's motivation as vengeance is followed by a prose elaboration that interprets the event as his restoration of Israel and Judah to their land (vv. 17–20). In the remainder of the chapter, oracles and prose alternate. The former speak of Yahweh's motivation (v. 24b) and interpret Babylon's downfall as punishment (v. 31). The latter elaborate these themes: the vengeance occurs because of the destruction of the Temple (v. 28) and because Babylon has magnified itself against Yahweh (vv. 28–30); Babylon's desolation will be like that of Sodom and Gomorrah (vv. 39–40; cf. 49:18); Yahweh will attack Babylon like a savage lion (vv. 44–46, mirroring 49:19–21). In a language reminiscent of Second Isaiah, vv. 33–34 speak of Yahweh as the redeemer of Israel and Judah.

The oracle of 50:41–43 speaks in vague terms about an attack by an enemy from the north (cf. vv. 3, 8–10; 51:48). Later, the enemy is specifically identified with the Medes (51:27–28). Such use of enemy language

parallels earlier portions of the book, where Judah's northern enemy is first unspecified and then identified with the Babylonians (see commentary above on 25:1–14).

The passage 51:1–33, 38–44 depicts an attack on Babylon in which the countryside has already been taken (vv. 30–33, 38–43) and its captives are about to be liberated (v. 44). In the midst of this description comes Jerusalem's curse against Babylon and Yahweh's response that he will take vengeance upon Babylon (vv. 34–37). Verses 45–58 are general oracles proclaiming Yahweh's punishment of Babylon. Indeed, the theme of 51:1–58, including its two short prose elaborations (vv. 11b, 24), is that Babylon's destruction should be seen as Yahweh's retribution (vv. 5, 6, 10, 11, 24, 34–37, 44, 47–53, 56).

Jer. 51:59–64a reports a symbolic action. Jeremiah sends a "book" of oracles against Babylon to Babylon with Baruch's brother in about 594. These are to be read publicly and then tied to a stone and cast into the Euphrates, symbolizing Babylon's fate. Taken at face value, this judgment would contradict the favorable interpretation of Babylonian hegemony that Jeremiah espoused during the reign of Zedekiah (see chaps. 27–29). It has been suggested that the original intention of Jeremiah's action was to rebut the prophecies of Ahab and Zedekiah to the effect that the Exile would be short (see 29:4–9, 20–23). On this interpretation, reading and then destroying a set of anti-Babylonian prophecies would have the effect of stressing Jeremiah's rejection of this optimistic view. The editors who placed this story at the end of the oracles against Babylon had a different purpose in mind, however. With it they claimed that Jeremiah had uttered these prophecies and even delivered them to Babylon long before the events to which they allude.

The short notice in v. 64b marks the end of the book of Jeremiah proper.

52:1–34
Historical Appendix

The narrative of chap. 52 is a close parallel to 2 Kings 24:18–25:30. The only major differences between the two are that this chapter omits the story of Gedaliah (2 Kings 25:22–26; but this story is told in detail in Jer. 40–41) and adds an accounting of the number of persons exiled on the three separate occasions when the Babylonians carried away Judean captives (vv. 28–30). The latter element is absent in the LXX of Jeremiah 52.

Bibliography

Brueggemann, W. *A Commentary on Jeremiah: Exile and Homecoming.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1996.

Clements, R. *Jeremiah.* Interpretation. Atlanta: John Knox, 1988.

Holladay, W. *Jeremiah 1, 2.* Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1986, 1989.

McKane, W. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on Jeremiah.* 2 vols. The International Critical Commentary. Edinburgh: Clark, 1986, 1996.

Overholt, T. *Channels of Prophecy: The Social Dynamics of Prophetic Activity.* Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1989.

Perdue, L., and B. Kovacs, eds. *A Prophet to the Nations: Essays in Jeremiah Studies.* Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1984.

Lamentations

NORMAN K. GOTTWALD

INTRODUCTION

Literary Analysis

Lamentations consists of five closely structured poetic compositions on the topic of the destruction of Jerusalem, poems that both evoke the scenes of catastrophe and articulate the psychic and religious trauma of the survivors (→ Jerusalem). It shares a pervasive lament idiom with Psalms, Job, and the prophetic books of Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and Second Isaiah (Isa. 40–55).

All of the laments use an acrostic contrivance that distributes the entire Hebrew alphabet of twenty-two letters in sequence throughout each of the first four chapters and then, in the final chapter, echoes this device through the use of exactly twenty-two short verses. In chaps. 1–2, each three-line strophe opens with a word starting with one of the letters in alphabetic sequence, yielding sixty-six lines in all. Chap. 3, also sixty-six lines long, achieves a denser acrostic form by beginning every line with an acrostic word. Chap. 4 reverts to a single use of each acrostic letter, but differs in having only two-line strophes, yielding forty-four lines. The combined line count of sixty-six in the last two laments equals the length of each of the first three laments.

The acrostic structure constrains vocabulary and word order and also breaks the flow of chaps. 1, 2, 4, and 5 into twenty-two subunits. Hence, Lamentations presents discrete laments, brief cameos of description, and terseness of speech. This concision is augmented by the decision to give each strophe only three (or two) lines (Ps. 119 devotes eight lines to each acrostic letter). Compactness of form channels and reinforces strongly expressed emotions while guarding against bombast and mawkishness.

Aptness of expression in the first four poems is enhanced by the disproportion in length between the two parts that form each line or sentence; the second part is generally shorter than the first. Such imbalance produces a falling rhythm that is said to "limp," "choke," or "sob" in sympathy with the mournful contents. The final lament, by contrast, maintains an even length between the two sentence elements.

The tendency for the acrostic artifice to break the compositions into fragments is countered by skillful shifts in speaker and point of view, creating continuities of description, feeling, and thought that span several acrostic strophes in pleasingly varied ways. The shifts in speaking voice correspond closely to the conventions of the funeral song, the individual lament, and the communal lament.

Influence of the funeral song (cf. 2 Sam. 1:17–27) shapes the speeches by the poet in 1:1–11, 17; 2:1–12; 3:48–51; and 4:1–6, in which he bewails the fall of Fair Zion (or Daughter of My People) as a personified city (→ Zion). No typical funeral is in view, however. Although Zion is likened to a widow and bereaved mother, her "husband" is not dead (only remote and hostile); nor are all her "children" dead since some have survived to remember and ponder what has happened by composing and reciting these very laments. The speech of the poet takes on a dialogic character and addresses Fair Zion in a chiding and consolatory manner, inciting her to cry out to Yahweh for deliverance (2:13–18). This same voice declaims a prophetic oracle announcing punishment on Edom and the end of guilt and exile for Judah (4:21–22).

Contours of the individual lament are adopted when personified Jerusalem speaks as a suffering woman (1:12–16, 18–22; 2:20–22). "Mother" Zion incorporates all the pain and anger of her Judahite "children," confessing their collective sins and calling upon God to mitigate or terminate the horrible and extreme suffering. We are made acutely aware that this woman is an imaginative figure who both embodies and stands off from particular Judahites whose condition she reports and bewails. This personification admirably succeeds in infusing mass suffering with the personal meaning that only a specific human sufferer can give it.

The individual laments of chap. 3 are not framed or marked as personifications; they derive their collective reference in part by association with surrounding chapters and more directly from their juxtaposition with an enclosed communal lament (vv. 40–47). Read by themselves, the cries of the unnamed "man" (vv. 1–24) and a subsequent "I" speaker without specified gender (vv. 52–66) are typical individual laments of anonymous sufferers so plentiful in the Psalms. In context, the elusive and ambiguous identity of the speakers in chap. 3 may be entirely purposeful. Chap. 5 stands apart as a communal lament without the separate speaking voice of the poet or any personification

of city or people. Judah speaks in a united voice that erases many earlier ambiguities and brings dramatic closure to the troubled book.

Composition

Lamentations was almost certainly written in the sixth century B.C. to commemorate the destruction of Jerusalem by the Neo-Babylonians in 587. The stock of lament language was, by this time, already richly developed in Israelite religion. Moreover, the genre of lament over a destroyed city probably owes much to ancient Mesopotamian tradition and practice, which continued unabated until late biblical times.

The first four laments share vocabulary and stylistic devices, modulation of speaking voice, formal features, and the acrostic scheme. These similarities imply, if not a single author, at least a group or "school" of lament traditionists. On the other hand, each lament is self-contained, displaying marked individuality. Since there are no conspicuous signs that the laments were written "from scratch" as parts of a single work, one may argue for their independent composition, followed by later redaction (compilation). It is possible that the redactor was author of one or more of the laments (chap. 5?) and that minor modifications were made in the text during the course of the book's composition.

The separate laments may have been created for recitation at annual fast days observed at the site of the ruined Temple during the Exile (Zech. 7:1–7; 8:19). Apparently some form of ritual practice continued at the Temple site throughout the Exile (Jer. 41:5;→ Exile). Other communal laments suitable for these commemorative fasts are Psalms 44; 60; 74; 79; 83; 123; 137. By comparison with the latter, Lamentations displays a high level of artistic complexity, subtlety, and cohesion.

The aim of the acrostic-building poet(s) seems to have been to foster a comprehensive catharsis of grief and confession linked to an inculcation of faith and hope, to be accomplished literally by covering the subject "from A to Z." This explanation of the acrostic form is more satisfying than other theories about the magical power of letters, instructional techniques for scribes, or aids to memory. The impulse to explore the trauma until the topic is "exhausted" is both realized and held in check by the acrostic principle, which imposes economy of expression on otherwise boundless grief and shock. Collection of the individual laments may have been occasioned by a notable event such as the release from exile and anticipation of rebuilding the Temple. This notion has been questioned by some interpreters because there are no traces of release from exile or Temple rebuilding in Lamentations. Nevertheless, the Mesopotamian practice of using just such bleak laments on the occasion of cleansing and rebuilding a temple site suggests that the somberness and restrained hope of the exilic compositions might have been retained as a deliberate reminder of dark days, even after the redactor was aware that the situation had changed for the better. Although the process of composition remains a matter of dispute, recent studies of Lamentations have tended to cluster around two other sets of issues. One front has been devoted to close readings of the intricate literary techniques that contribute to the poems' aesthetic impact. The other front, recasting older questions about the book's theology, has explored Lamentations' strategies for coping with catastrophe when viewed from diverse perspectives such as grief therapy, cognitive anthropology, and postmodern ambiguity.

Amid the rich details of the five laments, the strongest statement of faith and hope, underscored by the triple acrostic and even by repetitions of the same acrostic word (note the threefold "good" as the acrostic term in 3:25–27), is positioned at the center of the work. By contrast, some scholars have argued for the presence of chiastic structure, namely, for the correspondence of chaps. 1 and 5 (general "distanced" descriptions) and chaps. 2 and 4 (detailed "emotionally involved" descriptions). However, this pairing of the laments oversimplifies the evidence, since chaps. 1 and 2 form the closest pair in terms of the speaking voices and chaps. 4 and 5 are most similar in their inventories of population groups. Although there is no unequivocal progression of thought in the compilation, readers may discern Judah's increasingly profound understanding of its traumatic situation as they move through the book.

Function as Scripture

It is likely that, by the time of Second Isaiah (Isa. 40–55), the idioms and concepts of the Lamentations "school of thought" had reached Babylonian Jews (cf. Isa. 47; 51:17–23; 54:1–8). The notion of the "satisfaction" of Judah's sin and guilt through prolonged exile is shared by Lam. 4:22 and Isa. 40:2. Moreover, Second Isaiah's use of liturgical genres to communicate its message may owe something to the proven appeal and endurance of communal lament practice based in exilic Jerusalem and demonstrated in Lamentations. Familiarity with Lamentations is also evident in Third Isaiah (Isa. 56–66), 2 Chronicles, Sirach, and Baruch, the latter modeled in part on Lamentations itself.

Following the destruction of Jerusalem in A.D. 70, the reading of Lamentations on the ninth of the month of Ab became part of the festal calendar of postbiblical Judaism. *Lamentations Rabbah*, a Jewish midrash redacted at the end of the fifth century A.D., interprets the biblical text verse by verse and contains a large collection of sayings, stories, and homilies. The tradition of Jeremian authorship for the book, aided

by an erroneous understanding of 2 Chron. 35:25, has contributed to a popular view of Jeremiah as the weeping or sorrowful prophet. Christian liturgies have included Lamentations in readings for Holy Week, thereby referring its descriptions to the sufferings of Christ. Over the centuries, Lamentations often has been set to music, from Gregorian chants through the work of major composers beginning with the Renaissance. Its subject has frequently been applied to later national calamities (e.g., in Polish history and the Jewish Holocaust) and to the fall of other great cities (e.g., Constantinople).

In the Hebrew Bible, Lamentations is reckoned as one of the five Megilloth, or "Scrolls," read at major festivals (the others are Song of Songs, Ruth, Ecclesiastes, and Esther). English versions, following the Septuagint and the Vulgate, place Lamentations after Jeremiah. Some have proposed that the Hebrew title *'ekah* (also the first word of chaps. 1, 2, and 4), usually translated as an exclamatory "O how!" should rather be construed as an astonished query, "O how can it be?" If so, Lamentations would be the only book in the Hebrew Bible whose title is interrogative instead of indicative.

In its original setting, Lamentations performed a basic task of historical "grief work." It bridged the gap between primal grief and outrage at the fall of Jerusalem and the ethics and theology by which Jews interpreted the events and oriented their lives. By linking the idioms and concepts of lament to a major historical crisis, Lamentations provided a paradigm according to which Jews and Christians might struggle with the meanings of calamity and work out strategies for living through world-shaking catastrophes, reaching to the wars and massacres of the twentieth century.

Authorship and Setting

To what traditions and to which spokespersons in Judah can we attribute Lamentations? In past interpretation, there has been an overly simple search for a single source. In place of the claim for Jeremian authorship, now almost universally dismissed, scholars have sought to identify sources for the book in the following streams of tradition: prophecy, Deuteronomistic thought, kingship (Davidic-Zion) traditions, Priestly theology, or wisdom teaching. In truth, no one such tradition adequately accounts for the book, since, in the riptide of national collapse, the streams were mingling and forcing new channels of thought and action.

Lamentations shares with prophetic and Deuteronomistic thought the firm belief that Judah's "sins" precipitated the catastrophe. This belief is dressed out in the prophetic image of the people as a faithless defiled woman (1:8–9, 17–18, 20; 4:6). In accord with critical prophets, Lamentations condemns the superficial assurances of "false" patriotic prophets who also joined corrupt priests in murdering innocents (2:14; 4:13). The prophetic belief in judgment on the nations as well as on Judah is firmly attested in Lamentations (1:21–22; 4:21–22, cf. 3:58–66), as is the necessity of contrite confession and wholehearted conversion (1:18, 20; 3:39–42; 5:7, 16, 21).

Wisdom affinities with Lamentations show up prominently in 3:25–39, a text in which the transcendent mystery of God is declared, suffering is seen as disciplinary as well as retributive, the long-range justice of God is affirmed, and patient waiting on and hope in God is inculcated.

Royal traditions, namely, those associated with the Davidic line and with Zion, are most evident in the astonished outcries of passersby who thought Jerusalem to be impregnable (2:15–16; 4:12) and in the communal lament of those who trusted totally in their king as "the anointed of Yahweh" (4:20). The poet joins the personified Zion in expressing shocked disbelief at the enemy's violation of the sacred Temple (1:10; 2:6–7, 20). These texts suggest that all the special privileges of David and Zion, which depended on the faithfulness of Judah, have now been justly canceled. It is true that Judah's political leaders are not unambiguously condemned. Nevertheless, the censure of priestly and prophetic complicity with civil rulers presupposes censure of the latter. Moreover, "our fathers sinned and are not" (5:7; cf. 2:9) may refer to the political leadership swept away by death and exile. The focus of Lamentations on faulty religious leadership may be due to the postdestruction reality in which the political leadership is no longer in power. In addition, "old-style" priests and prophets may still be vying for control of the reconstituted religious life in Jerusalem and, thus, threatening the status and credibility of the Lamentations traditionists.

In sum, anyone adhering rigidly to the conventions of a single theological tradition could hardly have woven the web of poetic argument in Lamentations. Strict prophetic and Deuteronomistic adherents viewed the covenant with God as irrevocably broken. Followers of traditional wisdom tenets had little precedent for grappling with the sociopolitical and religious ramifications of the city's fall. Ardent Davidic-Zion loyalists could not abide the breach of the unconditional promises to the holy city, its Temple, and king. Those who thought that Judah's regime and society were just (or at least) as good or better than those of other nations would not have understood or sympathized with the notion that "sins" explained Judah's sad end.

The ritual setting for Lamentations was the ruined Temple site, at which place fasting, prayer, and sacrifice were carried on with the apparent permission of the Babylonian overlords. The poets of Lamentations were "priests" in the sense that they were religious personnel. Since, however, the priestly establishment had

been shattered with the city's fall, these postdestruction religious leaders may have been former prophets, scribes, political or private laity, or even lower order or non-Jerusalemite priests; their positions were probably without stipend. Lamentations, in its final form, exhibits a striking and innovative amalgam of prophetic, Deuteronomistic, and wisdom notions that subordinates and neutralizes Davidic-Zion traditions without rejecting them outright. This theology of active engagement with national crisis is the work of poets and pastoral leaders who communicated directly and concretely with the demoralized survivors of 586 B.C.

COMMENTARY

1:1–22, First Lament of Poet and Zion. The chapter is divided equally between a lament of the poet (vv. 1–11) and a lament of the personified city, Fair Zion, who, as the object of suffering, becomes through her speaking an independent character (vv. 12–22). The two laments are bound together in a pattern of anticipation and recall by introducing two short cries of Zion into the poet's speech (vv. 9c; 11c) and by inserting a comment by the poet within Zion's speech (v. 17). Verse 7 is overloaded with four lines (NEB gives a likely correction, as also in 2:19).

The note struck by the poet and confirmed by Zion is that the city is bereft of comfort from any source. Her plight is described in lurid fashion: subjection to conquerors and betrayal by former allies, contempt and gloating by her enemies, decimation of her populace by death and exile, profanation of the Temple by the enemy and cessation of festivals, and a dire shortage of food.

Zion takes up her lament by voicing the incomparability of her pain and picturing the angry assault of Yahweh in the metaphors of individual lament. An ironic disintegration of established religious language occurs when God's murder of his people is called "a festival" and a grape-treading harvest (v. 15). Although confessing fully her rebellion, Zion cites mitigating factors in her punishment that merit Yahweh's reconsideration, at least in providing for punishment of Zion's destroyers (vv. 21–22) as well. Uniquely in the OT, Lamentations identifies a past event with the Day of Yahweh as the time of his judgment (v. 12;→ Judgment, Day of), and Zion pleads that this recently enacted Day of Yahweh be extended to fall upon the arrogant enemy (by inference Babylonia, whose ally Edom is named in 4:21–22).

2:1–22, Second Lament of Poet and Zion. When compared to chap. 1, the proportions and contents of the speeches by poet and Zion in chap. 2 undergo considerable change. Although Zion has much less to say, the poet grows more articulate and reflective, directly addressing Zion and struggling with her to grasp the enormity of the events she has experienced. Again, the Day of Yahweh as judgment is stressed, though this time as a demonic festival at the Temple site, a place at which praise of deity is reversed by God's terrible destruction of his own religious center (vv. 5–7, 22).

The poet moves into close emotional and ideological sympathy with Zion. In line with Zion's speech in chap. 1, he depicts Yahweh as the direct destroyer of the city's fortifications, palaces, and Temple by using a variety of descriptive statements and personifying metaphors. He is overcome by the sight of famished infants dying in their mothers' laps (vv. 11–12). Moreover, consistent with Zion's very first words (1:12), the poet's initial words to Zion bemoan the incomparability and boundlessness of her plight, "for great as the sea is your ruin" (2:13). He deplores the fact that Zion was misled by prophets who gave "slick" oracles of cheap optimism that were out of touch with reality (v. 14). To be sure, Yahweh's decree of judgment remains defensible; nonetheless, the means chosen to punish are bitter and hard for the poet to accept, especially the abrasive taunts of the enemy and the death of children by famine (vv. 17–19).

In her brief lament, Zion enlarges on the poet's disgust and outrage at the gross extremities of the punishment (vv. 20–22). Unlike her speech in chap. 1, she mentions neither her own sins nor the sins of the enemy deserving punishment. Her stress is on the utter unnaturalness of women cannibalizing their own children and of priests and prophets cut down in the sacred Temple precincts. Zion's outcries are grief-stricken and horror-driven reflexes: Look at what you have done, Yahweh! Look at those to whom you have done it, the dying children!

3:1–66, An Individual Laments. The central lament of the collection uses different literary conventions. However, the central theological problem is implicit in the raging grief, guilt, and horror of chaps. 1–2, namely, how are we to understand and live with a merited punishment that has produced such shocking and excessive results, one that creates new injustices?

The stark and solemn intonation of the initial verse, "I am the man who has seen affliction by the rod of his wrath," breaks sharply with the previous personification of Fair Zion. Nonetheless, this new language operates on a similar "wavelength" in expressing the enervating burden of suffering at God's hand.

The major difficulty in interpreting this chapter is the veiled identity of the speakers. This problem may not have existed when the lament was recited in worship, since intonations in delivery, explanatory rubrics, or even different speaking voices may have

clarified the issue. The shift to a written text created a new context of meaning, less immediate and more dependent on the eye and experience of readers. The redactor may have left the speakers in anonymity as an artifice to deepen readers' involvement in the engagement with suffering: what do we learn about national suffering when we see it through the lens of individual sufferers who have attained hope and meaning amid all their adversities? The precise identity of speakers may not be as crucial for understanding the argument as commentators have usually thought. Nevertheless, any careful reading of this chapter requires some tentative conclusions about who speaks to whom and with what import. Many options have been proposed, yielding a rich variety of nuances to the function of chap. 3 within the book.

Is the "man" of vv. 1–24 Jeremiah, Zedekiah, the poet, an anonymous sufferer, or a masculine personification of the people? Second Isaiah uses both the feminine Zion and masculine Servant personifications for the people. Traces of the same practice occur in the Jacob references of Lam. 1:17; 2:2–3. And who declaims the lofty theological truths of 3:25–39? Is this still the voice of the "man" who has now found answer to his lament? Or is this the voice of the poet, expounding and enlarging on the more tentative "hope" of the "man" in vv. 21–24? Last, whose is the "I" voice (or voices) of vv. 48–66? Verses 48–51 read like an interjection of the agitated poet. However, is the speaker once again the "man," or is it Fair Zion (cf. v. 48), or yet another voice, or even, as some have thought, the solo voice of the liturgical leader in a communal lament?

In the midst of these speeches by individuals, an unmistakable communal lament, which seems at first wholly out of place (vv. 40–47), breaks forth. It lacks both the confident insight and faith that precedes it and the certainty of hearing and deliverance that follows. Although this national lament is premised on complete sincerity ("Let us lift up our hearts, not our hands, to God in the heavens!" v. 41), it is otherwise "stuck" at a level of frustrated religious traditionalism in which faith and hope are not yet internalized and integrated with grief and contrition.

By enfolding the frustrated communal lament within faith-affirming and hope-engendering individual laments and meditations; the author (confirmed in his intent by the redactor) points toward a life-giving way that has been found by sufferers whose discoveries increasingly inform the outlook of the people on their road to new life.

4:1–22, Third Lament of Poet and City. This lament, teeming with vivid scenes of hardship and disgrace among the survivors in Jerusalem, is divided, like chaps. 1 and 2, between two speakers. Striking, however, is the minimal presence of Fair Zion (only in vv. 3, 6, with a trace in v. 10), until she emerges in prophetic proclamation at the end (vv. 21–22). In place of the Fair Zion speeches in chaps. 1 and 2, the city expresses itself in a communal lament (vv. 17–20). The individualized presentation of Judah's suffering, characteristic of chaps. 1–3, gives way here and in chap. 5 to overt communal discourse by the collective body of sufferers.

The lament as a whole lays bare the physical, sociopolitical, and moral fragility of the upper classes. Political and religious leaders failed equally. Perfidious prophets and priests are rejected as though they are lepers (vv. 13–16). The lamenting people acknowledge their misplaced trust in allies and in their own king (vv. 17–19). The prophetic announcement of the end to Zion's punishment vindicates the hope expressed in chap. 3 and is to be read not as jingoism, but as Judah's renunciation of all false hopes.

5:1–22, The Community Laments. In this communal lament, the author introduces perspectives of economic hardship, social disorder, and political restrictions among the inhabitants of the Babylonian subprovince of Judah. Such a description of Judah's reproachful situation is designed to elicit divine intervention.

Significantly, the lament holds to the paradox disclosed in chap. 3 and sustained by the poet in chap. 4, namely, that Judah has both sinned and been sinned against. This time, however, the insight is internalized and expressed by the whole community. Judah's ambivalence and schizophrenia about the tension between deserved and undeserved suffering is resolved. The people are now enabled to own up to their sins (vv. 7, 16) at the very same time they appeal for their disgrace and oppression to be relieved (vv. 1, 17–20). The lament focuses on this new maturity. In a closing appeal to Yahweh, the people seek a restored relationship with their God (v. 21).

There is a critical caveat, however, expressed in the final troubled question, "Or have you utterly rejected us? Are you angry with us beyond recall?" (v. 22). Has Judah learned her lesson too late? Does God still honor a covenant with the Judahites or has he broken off his relationship with them irrevocably? The unclouded confidence of 3:25–39, 52–66 is not yet firmly within the people's collective grasp. Even so, the overarching sense of the book is that the enduring trust situated at the center of the collection in chap. 3 will in time prevail among those who mourn Jerusalem by praying to Yahweh.

Bibliography

Dobbs-Allsopp, F. W. *Weep, O Daughter of Zion: A Study of the City-Lament Genre in the Hebrew Bible.* Rome: Pontifical Biblical Institute, 1993.

Gottwald, N. K. *Studies in the Book of Lamentations.* 2d rev. ed. London: SCM, 1962.

Hillers, D. R. *Lamentations.* 2d rev. ed. Anchor Bible, 7A. New York: Doubleday, 1992.

Hunter, J. *Faces of a Lamenting City: The Development and Coherence of the Book of Lamentations.* New York: Lang, 1996.

Linafelt, T. "Surviving Lamentations." *Horizons in Biblical Theology* 17 (1995): 45–61.

Provan, I. W. *Lamentations.* New Century Bible Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1991.

Westermann, C. *Lamentations. Issues and Interpretation.* Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1994.

Ezekiel

ROBERT R. WILSON

INTRODUCTION

The book of Ezekiel has always been difficult to understand. Since antiquity, ordinary readers have found the book's language, images, and theology puzzling, while scholars have often been embarrassed both by the contents of the book and by their own inability to produce an adequate commentary on it. In the history of Christian biblical scholarship, the interpretive difficulties associated with the book were already apparent as early as Jerome (ca. A.D. 340–420), whose commentaries are filled with apologies for his inability to clarify obscure passages. Other early church fathers resorted to numerological interpretation to squeeze theological meaning from the text, and their more modern counterparts have sometimes employed textual emendation or radical surgery to solve the book's problems.

In Jewish tradition the interpretation of Ezekiel has been particularly difficult because some of the legal material contained in chaps. 40–48 contradicts the laws of the Torah. The Babylonian Talmud reports that this fact caused some rabbis to advocate withdrawing the book from circulation, a fate that was avoided only through the extraordinary efforts of Hananiah son of Hezekiah, who successfully reconciled the contradictions (*b. Shabb.* 13b; *b. Chag.* 13a; *b. Menach.* 45a). Equally troublesome to the rabbis was the vision of God's glory described in Ezekiel 1, a passage that they feared might lead to dangerous mystical speculations or even destroy the interpreter who probed too deeply into its mysteries. According to the Talmud, Hananiah son of Hezekiah was again able to persuade his colleagues not to withdraw Ezekiel, although Jerome reports that some rabbis prohibited the reading of the beginning and end of the book by anyone under the age of thirty (*b. Chag.* 13a).

In spite of the interpretive problems associated with Ezekiel and the occasional efforts to withdraw it from circulation, there is no indication that early Jewish or Christian interpreters ever questioned the canonicity or divine inspiration of the book. In most biblical manuscripts it appears after the books of Isaiah and Jeremiah as the third of the major prophets, an order that more or less accurately reflects the historical sequence in which the books were composed. However, the Babylonian Talmud (*b. B. Bat.* 14b) also knows of a tradition that places Ezekiel after Jeremiah but before Isaiah. This arrangement is based on the contents of the books, rather than on the chronology of their creation, and is reflected in some biblical manuscripts.

Even a brief survey of the history of the study of the book of Ezekiel suggests that scholars are not ever likely to agree on a definitive interpretation of this complex and puzzling book. However, many of the difficulties associated with understanding the book can be minimized by bearing in mind the historical, sociological, and religious settings in which the book was produced and by cultivating a sensitivity to the book's structure and peculiar literary style.

The Prophet and His Times

Unlike many of the prophetic books, which are difficult to date precisely and which contain oracles that have been lifted from their original historical contexts, the book of Ezekiel often assigns very precise dates to the oracles and visions it contains and to the events it records (1:1–3; 3:16; 8:1; 20:1; 24:1; 26:1; 29:1, 17; 30:20; 31:1; 32:1, 17; 33:21; 40:1). These dates root the book in a specific historical context and suggest that an understanding of that context is necessary for a proper understanding of Ezekiel's prophecies.

The Exile and Its Theological Implications. The book's own chronology places Ezekiel's prophetic call in Babylon during the fifth year of the exile of King Jehoiachin of Judah (1:2), and the latest dated oracle in the book is assigned to the twenty-seventh year of the Exile (29:17). The prophet was thus active at least between July 593 B.C. and April 571 B.C., although the bulk of his oracles are dated to the relatively brief period between his call and the arrival of the first Jewish exiles in Babylon (January 585 B.C.), not long after the Babylonians destroyed Jerusalem (33:21). Ezekiel's prophetic activities thus partially overlapped those of Jeremiah and must be seen against the chaotic background of the last years of the Judean state.

The Political Situation. The political crisis that led to the fall of Jerusalem had been developing for a number of years before Ezekiel began to prophesy. After the death of the Assyrian king Ashurbanipal (627 B.C.), the widespread empire that he had ruled began to break

apart. With this political instability came a rebirth of nationalism on the periphery of the empire, especially in Babylon, Egypt, and Palestine. In Judah King Josiah was able to establish a kingdom that was relatively free from Assyrian control, and he moved to reclaim Assyrian territory that had historically been part of the Northern Kingdom, Israel. In connection with his political expansion, he also instituted a religious reform that restored the worship of Yahweh to the land (2 Kings 22–23; 2 Chron. 34–35). However, this period of Judean independence was relatively brief. Even as Josiah was rebuilding his state, Egypt and Babylon were beginning to struggle with each other for control of the old Assyrian Empire. During this struggle Josiah was killed by Pharaoh Neco II (609 B.C.).

At Josiah's death, his son Jehoahaz became king, but after only three months Pharaoh Neco came to Judah, deposed Jehoahaz, and installed another son of Josiah, Jehoiakim, as king. Judah became an Egyptian vassal, and Jehoiakim levied heavy taxes on the people in order to pay the required tribute (2 Kings 23:31–35). This move caused great dissatisfaction in the land and encouraged some political groups to oppose the king's pro-Egyptian policy. During this period of unrest, the power of Babylon gradually grew, and by 603 B.C. Jehoiakim was forced to become subject to the Babylonians. This shift of allegiance gave rise to further political disputes in Judah, with some factions advocating a pro-Babylonian foreign policy, others counseling a return to reliance on Egypt, and still others arguing for the restoration of a politically independent Judean state.

Thinking that the power of the Babylonian king, Nebuchadnezzar II, was declining, Jehoiakim rebelled in 601 B.C. and again threw in his lot with Egypt. This was a serious miscalculation, which the Babylonian king eventually punished. Late in 598 B.C., the Babylonian army moved against Judah and laid siege to Jerusalem. Sometime during this period Jehoiakim died or was killed, and his son, Jehoiachin, was placed on the throne. In March 597 B.C., the new king surrendered Jerusalem to the Babylonians. Jehoiachin was deported to Babylon, along with a number of palace and Temple officials and craftsmen, including the prophet Ezekiel (2 Kings 24:14–16; Ezek. 1:1–3). The Temple and royal treasuries were drained, and some of the Temple vessels were either destroyed (2 Kings 24:13) or taken to Babylon (Jer. 27).

For Ezekiel and his fellow exiles, the events of 597 marked the beginning of the Exile. However, for those left in Jerusalem, life continued on its normal course. Nebuchadnezzar installed Jehoiachin's uncle, Zedekiah, on the throne, but continued to use the title "king" to refer to the exiled Jehoiachin. This move added to Judah's instability by encouraging disputes over the legitimacy of Zedekiah. Many people left in Judah apparently accepted his authority (2 Kings 24:18–20; Jer. 22:24–30), while at least some of the exiles continued to recognize Jehoiachin as king (Ezek. 1:2). Nevertheless, during the first years of his reign, Zedekiah managed to maintain a stable foreign policy and remained a faithful vassal of Babylon, in spite of the continued presence of groups advocating pro-Egyptian and nationalistic positions. However, in the end he was unable to resist his pro-Egyptian advisers, and he joined with other nearby rulers in an attempt to break away from Babylonian control (Jer. 27–28). This conspiracy, which was probably encouraged by Pharaoh Psammetichus II, was not successful, and Zedekiah was forced to reaffirm his loyalty to Nebuchadnezzar (Jer. 29:3; 51:59).

In spite of the inability of Zedekiah and his fellow rulers to remove the Babylonian yoke, popular pressure for revolt continued in Judah. Although Zedekiah apparently had some misgivings about further provoking Babylon (Jer. 21:1–7; 37:3–10, 17; 38:14–23), he eventually gave in to pressure from some of his own advisers and rebelled, probably with assurances of aid from Pharaoh Hophra, Psammetichus's successor. This time Nebuchadnezzar acted more quickly and decisively. In 588 B.C. he invaded Judah, destroying a number of cities, and laid siege to Jerusalem. The city finally fell in the summer of 586 B.C. (Some scholars date the fall to the summer of 587.) Zedekiah and some of the royal court attempted to flee the country, but were captured by the Babylonians. The king's sons were killed, and he himself was blinded and taken captive to Babylon. Jerusalem was destroyed, most of its inhabitants were deported to Babylon, and the Temple was burned. Nebuchadnezzar attempted to restore some political stability by appointing a Judean noble, Gedaliah, to be governor over the "poor of the land" who still remained in Judah. However, Gedaliah was soon murdered, and the land again became politically unstable. The Babylonian response to these events probably included another deportation (582 B.C.) and the incorporation of Judah into the Babylonian province of Samaria, but the available historical sources provide no further information.

The Religious Situation. The political chaos that eventually led to the fall of Jerusalem triggered a number of theological problems, both for the exiles in Babylon and for the people who remained in Judah. These problems began with the first deportation (597 B.C.), when Israel's religious leadership was split between Jerusalem and Babylon. Both groups naturally attempted to provide theological interpretations of the events that had just occurred, but these interpretations did not always agree, and the result was a growing religious controversy that reached crisis proportions after the final destruction of the city and the Temple. Several important theological issues were involved. First, there were debates over the meaning of the first deportation. Some Israelite religious leaders, principally the authors of the books of Kings and the

prophet Jeremiah, had for some time been warning the people that the sins of Judah and its kings would eventually be punished by God (2 Kings 21:8–9, 14–15; 23:26–27, 32, 37; 24:1–9; Jer. 14:1–15:4; 36). Therefore, when the first deportation occurred, there was general agreement, even among the exiles, that the prophecies of judgment had come true. However, there were disputes about the completeness of the judgment. Did God's exile of Jehoiachin and his officials represent a final word of divine judgment, or were the people who remained in Jerusalem still in danger of additional punishment if they did not change their ways?

Second, there were debates about the length of the Exile and the possibility of return to the land. These debates initially arose after the first deportation and intensified after the second one. Jeremiah and the writers of Kings sometimes speak as if the deportations represent God's complete and final rejection of Israel (2 Kings 21:10–15; 24:3; Jer. 14:1–15:14; 17:1–4). But Jeremiah's ultimate word on the subject was to prophesy a return after a long but limited exile. Other prophets, however, disagreed and soon after the first deportation began to speak of a rapid return of the exiles and a restoration of normal worship in the Temple (Jer. 27–32).

Third, there were debates about the status of the exiles in Babylon after the first deportation. Did the fact that they had been removed from God's chosen city mean that they had been rejected and were no longer part of the true Israel? This issue was obviously of great concern to the exiles, who were anxious to clarify their religious status (Ezek. 11:14–21). Furthermore, the theological status of those in exile had a direct bearing upon their religious life in Babylon. Did the fact that the exiles were separated from the land of Israel mean that they could no longer worship God? If they were free to worship, then what form should that worship take? These questions took on new urgency after the second deportation, when Israel was geographically scattered in Babylon, Israel, and Egypt. Disputes over the identity of the true Israel continued to be a feature of religious life until the issue was finally resolved in favor of the Babylonian exiles.

Fourth, between 597 and 586 B.C. there were increasingly heated debates among prophets reflecting differing points of view. These debates can be seen most clearly in the book of Jeremiah, where Jeremiah is often portrayed in conflict with his fellow prophets. While he warned of the imminent destruction of Jerusalem by the Babylonians, other prophets were confidently predicting that the city would be spared (Jer. 6:14–15; 14:13–14; 23:13–40). While Jeremiah was speaking of a long exile, the prophet Hananiah was telling Jerusalemites that the Exile was almost over (Jer. 27–28). While Jeremiah was advocating surrender to the Babylonians, exiled Judean prophets in Babylon were counseling revolt (Jer. 29:15–32). Although it is easy in retrospect to determine which prophets were speaking truly and which were not, the people who lived at the time had a great deal of difficulty adjudicating these conflicting prophetic claims. People finally came to be suspicious of all prophets, and even major prophets like Jeremiah and Ezekiel had to defend their prophetic authority at every turn. The words of Ezekiel were particularly open to question because he prophesied in Babylon, and many Israelites apparently doubted that true prophecy could exist outside the land of Israel.

Finally, the destruction of Jerusalem and the Temple in 586 B.C. provoked intense debate about the nature of God's relationship to the city. An important element of the royal theology of Jerusalem was the belief that God had elected David and his descendants to be the eternal rulers of Israel (2 Sam. 7). Furthermore, at the same time God had elected the city as the divine dwelling place forever. Once Solomon built the Temple, God took up residence there and was enthroned above the cherubim in the Holy of Holies. Because of God's eternal presence in the Temple, both the city and the Temple were inviolable. This belief in the eternal election and invulnerability of Jerusalem was celebrated in Israel's worship (Pss. 2; 42; 46; 78; 110; 132) and was accepted, at least in modified form, by some of Israel's prophets. Isaiah, for example, held that God might punish the city, but would not finally destroy it. There would always be a remnant after the judgment, and a Davidic king would always remain on the throne (Isa. 7:10–25; 8:1–10; 28:1–22; 29:1–24; 30:15–28; 33:1–24). Even during the last days of the siege, the prophetic opponents of Jeremiah continued to proclaim that the city was inviolable because of God's eternal dwelling in it.

However, when the city finally fell, serious questions had to be raised about this theology. Did the destruction of the city and the Temple mean that God had broken the divine promise and rejected Jerusalem and David's line? Or, even worse, had God lacked the power to defend the city against the Babylonians? These questions had a particular urgency for the Babylonian exiles, most of whom, like Ezekiel, were former officials in Jerusalem and participants in rituals that celebrated God's eternal presence. Clearly it was necessary for the exiles to find some satisfactory theological explanation for the situation in which they found themselves if they were to retain their ancestral faith.

The Person of the Prophet. Unlike Jeremiah, whose book contains a number of biographical narratives, Ezekiel is a dark and enigmatic figure in the history of prophecy. Very little is known of his personal life. He was the son of Buzi, who is otherwise unknown, and came from a priestly family. Presumably Ezekiel functioned as a priest himself until his deportation to Babylon in 597 B.C. (1:3). There he was settled near Nippur at Tel-abib (3:15), a site whose name suggests that it was an ancient ruin pressed into service as a

settlement for the exiles. He was married, although his wife suddenly died just before the fall of Jerusalem (24:15–18). Nothing is known of his fate after his last dated oracle. Postbiblical sources do supply accounts of his death, but these are usually considered unreliable.

Even though the book of Ezekiel contains little biographical information, it does shed a great deal of light on the prophet's behavior, much of which appears bizarre to modern readers. As a prophet he was the recipient of elaborate visions (chaps. 1–3, 8–11, 40–48) in which he was sometimes transported from one place to another. He is said to have performed strange symbolic acts (chaps. 4–5), some of which appear to be physically impossible. In some of his oracles (e.g., chap. 7), his words appear irrational, and he seems to have lost all self-control. When God commands the prophet to act, he seems unable to do so until he has been energized by the spirit (2:2). Finally, from his call until the fall of Jerusalem he claims to have been bound, confined to his house, and struck dumb (3:22–27; 33:21–22).

To many modern commentators, Ezekiel's strange behavior appears pathological, and there have been a number of attempts to discover the specific psychological and physiological diseases from which he suffered. Such procedures are always risky when ancient texts are involved and, in addition, overlook the probability that the entire book is a literary creation. However, to say this is not to imply that the book is a work of fiction. It is likely that the behavior and experiences described had a basis in reality. But it is also likely that they have been elaborated in writing for the benefit of the exilic audience. If so, then the narratives might yield information about the prophet's actual behavior, but they are better interpreted literarily for the light that they might shed on his overall message, the communication of which was the prophet's goal from the beginning.

The Original Audience. The book provides overwhelming evidence that Ezekiel prophesied only in Babylon, where his audience would have consisted of his fellow exiles. He presumably also had a small band of disciples that accepted his prophetic authority, revered his message, and preserved his words for later generations. His primary audience would therefore have been the former elite of Jerusalem, including a number of government officials, scribes, and priests. This would have been a relatively well-educated audience, one well versed in the religious traditions of Jerusalem.

The fact that Ezekiel sometimes directs his oracles to the people in Jerusalem rather than to the Babylonian exiles has led some scholars to argue that he, in fact, traveled back and forth between the two locations. To support this line of reasoning they point to the prophet's detailed knowledge of events in the Temple (chaps. 8–11) and to the resemblances between his oracles and those of his Jerusalemite contemporary, Jeremiah. However, prophets often address oracles to people who are not present, and there is no reason to suppose that Ezekiel felt constrained to be in the actual presence of the people to whom he was speaking. As for his knowledge of events in Jerusalem, including the oracles of Jeremiah, the book of Jeremiah itself indicates that there was a lively exchange of correspondence between the community in Jerusalem and the exiles. Jeremiah wrote letters to some of the exiles, and in turn exiled religious leaders wrote to Jerusalem to complain about Jeremiah's prophecies, of which they obviously knew (Jer. 29). There is therefore no reason to suppose that Ezekiel ever prophesied outside of Babylon. He returned to Jerusalem only in his visions, but he very likely kept in touch with events in Jerusalem, about which he and all the rest of the exiles would have been greatly concerned.

Ezekiel as a Literary Work

Many of the interpretive problems connected with the book of Ezekiel stem from its unusual character as a literary composition. On the one hand, the book gives an overall impression of structural unity. On the other hand, the individual oracles are quite unlike those in earlier prophetic books. Where the oracles of earlier prophets are usually relatively brief and coherent, those of Ezekiel are often long, highly ornamented, repetitious, convoluted, and sometimes obscure. An understanding of the book's message must be based on a thorough understanding of how the book came to be in its present literary form.

Structure and Contents. Three major structural devices give coherent shape to the book of Ezekiel. First, the book makes extensive use of dates to mark important events and oracles, and these dates indicate that the book is organized chronologically. The book opens with the earliest event (ca. 593 B.C.), the prophet's call (1:1–3; 3:16). The next dated event (592 B.C.) is the great Temple vision, which definitively explains to the prophet the fate of Jerusalem (8:1). The prophet's important account of the history of Israel's sin (chap. 20) is dated to 591 B.C. The beginning of Jerusalem's siege (24:1) is dated in 588 B.C., while the various oracles against foreign nations (chaps. 25–32) bear dates between 587 and 585. News of Jerusalem's fall (33:21) is said to have reached Babylon in 585, and the eschatological vision of the restored Temple (chaps. 40–48) is assigned a date of 573. This neat chronological arrangement is disturbed only by the later revision of an oracle against Tyre (29:17), which bears the date of 571.

The chronological ordering of material in the book is reinforced by a second structuring device, the

arrangement of oracles and visions according to content. Thus chaps. 1–24 contain primarily words of judgment against Judah and Jerusalem, while chaps. 34–48 record primarily words of promise to the exiles. This last section is immediately preceded by the pivotal chap. 33, which repeats the prophet's call and records the news of Jerusalem's fall. Between these two large units containing words of doom and salvation, respectively, the prophet has inserted a collection of oracles against foreign nations (chaps. 25–32). These chapters serve as a transition between the oracles of judgment (chaps. 1–24) and the oracles of promise (chaps. 34–48) by sharing the character of both their neighbors. On the one hand, the oracles against foreign nations contain words of judgment directed at Israel's enemies just as the preceding chapters speak of judgment against Israel. On the other hand, the announcement of disaster to Israel's foes functions obliquely as a promise to Israel, just as the following chapters contain explicit promises to Israel.

This organization of the book according to content is not perfect. There are a few words of promise mixed in with the oracles of judgment in the first part of the book (11:14–21; 16:60–62; 17:22–24), and this section also contains calls for the people to repent (14:6; 18:30–32). Similarly, the words of promise in the latter part of the book are occasionally mixed with references to judgment (e.g., 34:1–10; 36:16–32). Nevertheless, readers are left with the overall impression that, up to the time of the fall of Jerusalem, Ezekiel spoke mainly words of judgment and that after the fall he switched to words of promise. The organization of the book thus reinforces two of the most prominent themes found in the individual oracles. First, Jerusalem is destined to be destroyed for its sin, and nothing can be done to save it. There can be no talk of salvation until after the judgment has occurred. Second, after Israel has been punished, God will be faithful to the promises made to David and will restore Jerusalem's status as the eternal divine dwelling place. In spite of their severe punishment, both the people and the city remain God's elect.

Finally, a measure of literary structure is achieved in the book through the use of repetitive images and words. This device is used on many levels, but the most obvious example is the verbatim repetition of part of the prophet's call narrative (3:16–21; 33:1–9), the second occurrence of which marks a crucial shift in the prophet's message. Connected with this example are the narratives of the onset and removal of the prophet's dumbness (3:22–27; 33:21–22), which are also correlated with the two reports of the prophet's call and with the fall of Jerusalem. Equally important from a theological standpoint are the three long vision reports, which are closely linked linguistically and thematically. The first vision describes the appearance of God's glory in Babylon and provides the occasion for the prophet's call (chaps. 1–3). The second vision graphically portrays the judgment on Jerusalem and the Temple and the movement of the divine glory out of the sinful city (chaps. 8–11). This vision serves as the introduction to the longest and most complex of Ezekiel's oracles of judgment. Finally, the third vision (chaps. 40–48) summarizes the oracles of promise and describes the return of the divine glory to a rebuilt and reconsecrated Temple.

Process of Composition. Given the overall impression of unity that the book of Ezekiel makes on readers, it is not surprising that since antiquity interpreters have treated the book as the work of a single author. Even with the rise of modern critical scholarship in the middle of the nineteenth century, the book managed to escape scholarly dissection. When critics gradually came to believe that Israelite prophets originally gave their oracles orally and that oral prophecies were by necessity brief and compact, it was clear that Ezekiel did not fit this typical pattern. Scholars therefore concluded that Ezekiel must have composed his oracles originally in writing, intending them to be read and studied rather than heard. To be sure, some scholars believed that the present Masoretic Text (MT) of Ezekiel had been corrupted, or damaged, during the process of transmission, and they therefore sought to restore the original text, usually on the basis of the Septuagint (LXX). However, they did not challenge the basic consensus that Ezekiel was the product of a single authorial mind.

When the challenge finally came, it came not on literary grounds, but on religious grounds. Some scholars began to believe that ecstasy was a basic part of the prophetic experience and that literature created while the prophet was in an ecstatic state must necessarily be poetic. This romantic notion led scholars to be suspicious of prosaic passages in prophetic books and encouraged the elimination of such passages as later additions. When these critics looked at Ezekiel in this light, they saw clear signs of ecstasy coupled with long, repetitious, and very unpoetic oracles. The conclusion to be drawn was clear. The prosaic passages in the book must be the work of the prophet's disciples or later editors, and an attempt must be made to remove these editorial layers to recapture Ezekiel's original words. With some variations, this approach to the book has dominated biblical scholarship in the twentieth century and is best represented in the mammoth commentary of Walther Zimmerli.

However, there are several problems with this sort of approach to the book. First, the various applications of this form of research have produced little agreement on what in the book is original to the prophet and what is the work of the disciples. Although this fact in and of itself does not invalidate the method of research being used, it does prompt the interpreter to despair of ever achieving definitive results. Second, the theory that the book consists of a collection of original

oracles augmented sporadically by later editors conflicts with the book's rather cohesive literary structure. On the whole, the book does not appear to be the product of random editing. Finally, there are no good reasons for thinking that the oracles in the book were originally delivered in oral form and at least three good reasons for suspecting that Ezekiel was a written composition from the beginning.

The first reason for treating Ezekiel as an original written composition is that although the prophet is often told to deliver oracles to the people, he is rarely portrayed as doing so. Instead, he is pictured sitting in his house and restricting his activities among the people. This point cannot be pressed too far, but this description of the prophet may be indicative of a shift away from earlier modes of prophetic activity. Second, the assumption that Ezekiel was written from the beginning can easily account for the complex oracles and symbolic acts the book contains. Although complex prophecies are difficult to deliver orally and hard for hearers to understand, written prophecies are easily elaborated and invite careful and repeated study. Finally, the physical limitations that the Exile placed on prophets like Ezekiel and Second Isaiah (Isa. 40–55) would have encouraged the production of written prophecy. Before the Exile, prophets could go to the nation's capital or to a major shrine and deliver oral prophecies addressed to the whole nation. During the Exile, however, the Israelites were scattered throughout Israel, Egypt, and Babylon. Communication would have been impossible or at least severely hampered without writing. The geographic dispersion of Israel would probably have encouraged prophets to write down their oracles and distribute them to the widely separated Israelite communities rather than try to rely on traditional oral methods of delivery.

Considerations such as these have led some scholars in recent years to revive the older theory that Ezekiel was first written by the prophet during the period indicated by the dates in the book. This approach has been applied most successfully in the commentary of Moshe Greenberg and will be adopted in the commentary that follows. It will be assumed that Ezekiel initially created his prophecies in written form, although he or his disciples may have subsequently revised them in the light of changing conditions or later revelations. For the most part such later editorial activity is difficult to detect, and no systematic attempt will be made to treat any but the most obvious cases. The period of composition is assumed to be that delineated by the book itself, although there are a few examples of much later material.

Literary Style: Prophecy in Search of Form. It is not clear precisely when the transition took place in Israel between prophecy that was originally oral and prophecy that was originally written. Early prophetic books, such as Amos, still show signs of oral composition, while the latest ones, such as Haggai, Zechariah, and Malachi, were clearly produced first in writing. Precisely where Ezekiel fits in this spectrum is uncertain, but it is likely that Ezekiel himself was a major transitional figure. As the first exilic prophet, he had to come to grips with both the limitations and the possibilities that writing offers. On the negative side, writing prophecy down makes it less malleable and less able to respond quickly to new situations and new audiences. After a certain point, written prophecies tend not to be altered but rather to be interpreted. On the positive side, writing permits a more detailed elaboration of the material and opens up the possibility of creating new literary forms. The result is a powerful and effective means of communicating the prophet's message.

As one of the first to produce written prophecy, Ezekiel had few models to guide him in his search for forms appropriate to the new medium. To be sure, there were the traditional patterns that prophets had followed in creating spoken oracles, and he could and did develop those. But he also experimented with new forms, some of which influenced later prophetic writings and some of which left little trace in later literature.

Autobiographical Narrative. Among the biblical prophets who left books, Amos was the first to try to communicate the divine word by recounting his own experiences with God. In the prophet's vision reports (Amos 7–9), he described to his hearers his encounters with God and embedded his oracles in this narrative context. Similarly, Hosea used an account of his marriage to portray to his audience the relationship between Israel and God (Hos. 3:1–5), and Jeremiah used autobiography to report his reactions to his prophetic task (e.g., Jer. 11:18–12:13). However, in all three of these cases biographical narratives are also employed, and in the case of Jeremiah they dominate a large portion of the book (Amos 7:10–15; Hos. 1:2–11; Jer. 20–52). However, Ezekiel develops the autobiographical approach in a massive way. With the exception of 1:2–3, the entire book takes the form of a first-person narrative. No one else talks about the prophet; rather, he tells his own story. Furthermore, in his extensive vision reports, he leads his readers through the vision as he himself experienced it. Even though he may understand in retrospect the significance of what he saw, he resists the temptation to summarize or interpret for members of his audience. Rather, he allows an awareness to dawn on them just as it had dawned on him. By using this method, the prophet is better able to convince his readers of the truth of his message.

In addition to using the autobiographical narrative literally, Ezekiel sometimes uses it symbolically. His life and behavior become signs that his readers must

interpret just as they must interpret his words. This phenomenon is particularly noticeable in his prophetic actions (e.g., chaps. 4–5), where everything the prophet does takes on a larger significance. These acts are sometimes highly developed literarily, with the result that Ezekiel describes his actions as if he were a character in a surrealistic drama. Even the prophet's "normal" behavior at times has a symbolic quality to it that invites study and analysis.

Older Prophetic Traditions. Ezekiel was, of course, heir to Israel's prophetic traditions and drew from them literary and thematic material, which he then transformed. His prophetic roots are particularly clear at the literary level. Thus, for example, he introduces his oracles with a standard prophetic formula, modified slightly to fit his autobiographical format: "Thus said the LORD [to me]." He adopts from earlier prophecy the divine oath ("as I live said/says the LORD") and often uses it to reinforce the truth of a prophecy. Ezekiel takes over the vision report, which was employed sparingly in earlier prophetic traditions, and uses it to compose a major part of his book (chaps. 1–3; 8–11; 40–48). In chaps. 8–11 and 40–48 he also introduces the figure of a heavenly guide who leads the prophet through the vision and supplies necessary interpretation. Such guides eventually became a routine part of vision reports, appearing in Zechariah, Daniel, and a number of postbiblical apocalypses. Ezekiel makes considerable use of accounts of symbolic prophetic acts. Such acts had appeared occasionally in earlier prophecy, but Ezekiel's descriptions are much more highly elaborated than those of his predecessors (cf. chaps. 4–5). Finally, he continues to use the old prophetic literary pattern usually called the "announcement of judgment to the individual." Oracles of this sort usually begin with a description of the addressee's crime, often using verbs in participial form, and then move on to an announcement of the penalty, typically introduced by the messenger formula ("thus said/says the LORD"). Lying behind some of the prophet's most complex oracles is this simple pattern, which was a basic part of prophetic speech at least as early as Amos.

In addition to developing older prophetic speech patterns, Ezekiel also drew on the prophetic traditions themselves. One of the models that shaped his work was certainly the prophetic story, a number of which may be found in the books of Samuel and Kings. The fact that these stories were already in written form when Ezekiel used them made their appropriation relatively simple, and as a result there are numerous thematic and linguistic links between Ezekiel and the earlier prophetic narratives. Similarly Ezekiel seems to have known of the work of Hosea and Jeremiah, two prophets outside of Ezekiel's own theological tradition. From them, as well as from the books of Samuel and Kings, he drew their characteristic emphasis on the covenant, as well as the notion that God's promises to Jerusalem were contingent on the behavior of the people.

New Literary Forms. In addition to elaborating older prophetic literary forms, Ezekiel also developed new ones. Earlier prophets had used a number of vivid literary images and figures of speech to help communicate their messages, but Ezekiel enormously extended the range and complexity of the images that he used. He created a highly metaphorical type of discourse that closely resembles what modern readers would recognize as allegory (e.g., chaps. 16–17). These "allegories" are so complex that they are sometimes difficult to interpret, and the situation is not helped by the prophet's tendency to lose control of his images by allowing the underlying historical reality or the prophet's own theological perspective to skew them beyond recognition. Yet even though the prophet seems not to have completely mastered this new form, his work influenced later biblical writings (e.g., Dan. 2, 7–12).

Ezekiel also seems to have been the originator of the "disputation oracle." Such oracles usually begin with the quotation of a saying current in the community the prophet is addressing. The common wisdom expressed in the saying is then vigorously refuted, sometimes by the citation of cases expressed in legal form (e.g., 12:21–28; 18:1–32; 33:10–20).

One of the most characteristic inventions of Ezekiel is the "proof saying," the components of which he took from older traditions and applied to prophetic oracles. The proof saying is marked by the use of the formula "and you will know that I am Yahweh," which is attached to God's first-person account of a divine action. It is employed frequently in judgment oracles, where God concludes the announcement of judgment by announcing that the promised disaster will reveal God to the people. The people are assured that they will encounter God in judgment, which cannot be interpreted as the result of impersonal natural forces.

Priestly Tradition. Because of his priestly background, Ezekiel was thoroughly familiar with ritual language and with priestly law, so it is not surprising that he used this language in formulating his oracles. In addition, many members of his audience must have originally had connections with the Temple, so the prophet's use of priestly terminology would have been a particularly effective means of communication. Priestly vocabulary abounds in the book, and there are particularly close ties with the priestly law code known as the "Holiness Code" (Lev. 18–26). The links here are so strong that some scholars have suggested that Ezekiel was actually the author of the code. However, it is more likely that both the prophet and the code have

been strongly influenced by ancient priestly legal traditions.

Literary Elaboration. Throughout this discussion of Ezekiel's literary style, it has often been noted that he tended to elaborate any literary form he used. This elaboration is so characteristic of the prophet that it deserves comment in its own right. Ezekiel's writing is baroque. It is thoroughly ornamented, filled with detail, convoluted, and often repetitious. His arguments, descriptions, and allegories are easily diverted from their course, with the result that they sometimes appear to ramble and to be logically inconsistent. These characteristics have often been traced to crude editorial work by Ezekiel's disciples or to textual damage introduced by later scribes. However, it is more likely that the text simply reflects the way that the prophet wrote. His peculiar, ornate style must always be kept in mind whenever an attempt is made to interpret his oracles.

The Text of the Book. The Hebrew text of Ezekiel is often thought to be poorly preserved, although this judgment is usually made without taking into account the prophet's peculiar literary style. The Greek translation (LXX) is often more compact than the MT and frequently omits duplicated material and ornamentation. In the LXX the prophet's arguments are often clearer, and apparent inconsistencies are removed. This fact has led many scholars to assume that the LXX is based on a Hebrew text that lacked the corruptions of the present MT, and they have therefore used the Greek to reconstruct the original Hebrew.

However, it is also possible that the translators of the LXX were simply doing the best that they could with a difficult Hebrew text. The differences between the two versions may simply reflect the efforts of later communities to present a coherent translation. In short, the LXX may represent an attempt at communication and interpretation rather than a more original text. It is not currently possible to decide between these two alternatives, and for this reason the commentary that follows uses the MT as its base.

Ezekiel's Message and the Exilic Crisis

Despite the complexity of the book of Ezekiel, the prophet's message is relatively simple and can be easily summarized. The city of Jerusalem and the people of Judah would inevitably be punished because of their sins, which were both religious and social. Not only was the current generation sinful and deserving of punishment, but the entire history of Israel had been a history of disobedience and rebellion against God (chap. 20). Repentance might still save individuals who led a righteous life (chap. 18), but the righteous few, if they existed at all, could not save the rest of the nation. This message applied both to the deportees of 597 B.C. and to the people who remained in the land.

Yet, in spite of this unequivocal message of doom, Ezekiel also prophesied that after the city had been destroyed and the people punished, God would bring the exiles back to the land, and the Temple would be restored according to a divine plan (chaps. 40–48). However, the return will be a pure act of grace. God will bring the people back in order not to profane the divine name (36:16–32). In contrast to Jeremiah, who believed that the Exile would cause Israel to recognize its sins and repent and that because of this repentance God would restore the people to the land (Jer. 31:16–22), Ezekiel was pessimistic about the long-range religious effects of the Exile. Although there might be a few, including some in the prophet's own community, who might remain righteous, the bulk of the exiles did not pay attention to the prophet's message. Therefore, in Ezekiel's scenario for the return, God will first restore the people to the land to preserve the holiness of the divine name. The people will then realize what God has done. They will repent and live faithfully in the land, newly purified from their sin.

Ezekiel's general message also contains some explicit answers to the practical theological questions that were raised by the fall of Jerusalem and the Exile. First, the fall of the city did not mean that God was powerless to defend it. Rather, God had deliberately deserted the Temple so that it could be captured by the Babylonians (chaps. 8–11). Ultimately this disaster was the direct act of God and not simply the result of shifting political fortunes in the ancient Near East. At the same time, God's fidelity to Jerusalem had not been diminished. The departure of the divine glory from the city was only temporary, and God would in due time take up residence in a rebuilt and resanctified Temple.

Second, from Ezekiel's perspective the people in Babylonian exile are the true Israel, and they will be the ones to return to the land and rebuild the nation (11:14–21). Other Israelites in exile and those left in the land after the fall have been cut off from the community of faith and have no role to play in the future. This narrow view of the identity of the true Israel will be shared by many of the exiles who finally do return and will be one of the sources of the theological debates of the postexilic period.

Finally, in the face of conflicting prophetic words immediately before the fall of the city, Ezekiel lays claim to absolute prophetic authority. Throughout the book a number of literary devices are employed to support the notion that Ezekiel always speaks with divine authority. His word is in fact the direct word of God, which is delivered to his audience without human interference or interpretation. Ezekiel's prophecies are therefore a safe guide for surviving the Exile. When the exiles hear an oracle from Ezekiel, they truly know that a prophet has been among them (33:33).

COMMENTARY

1:1–3:27
Introduction to the Prophet and Prophecy

The introduction to the book of Ezekiel places the prophet in his historical context (1:1–3) and describes in extraordinary detail his initial call to prophesy (1:4–3:27). However, both the contents and literary structure of these verses also introduce some of the major themes of the prophet's message, so the call narrative can be seen as an introduction to the book as well as to the personal experiences of the prophet.

Because of the unusual length, complexity, and apparent repetitiousness of this introductory material, scholars have often seen the book's first three chapters as the work of several editors and have tried by various methods to reconstruct Ezekiel's original account of his experiences. In particular, the watchman's call (3:16–21) and the story of the prophet's dumbness (3:22–27) are usually thought to be editorial additions, because material from these verses is repeated, sometimes verbatim, in chap. 33. However, there is no scholarly agreement on the original form of these chapters, and Ezekiel's normally complex and repetitious literary style should caution readers against performing radical surgery on the text. It is also likely that even clear editorial additions have a role to play in shaping the overall message of the text.

1:1–3
The Superscription

The book of Ezekiel begins with a brief autobiographical statement (v. 1) followed by an editorial comment (vv. 2–3). Together they describe the background of the prophet and the date and location of his activities. He dates his initial call to "the thirtieth year," although the precise meaning of this date is obscure. Some scholars have suggested that it refers to the age of the prophet when he received his call, although the Hebrew idiom used here is not the standard one for expressing age. Others have suggested that, like the other dates in the book, "the thirtieth year" refers to the year of King Jehoiachin's exile. If so, then it would contradict the explanation of the date given in v. 2. Furthermore, the date in v. 1 would represent the latest date in the book rather than the earliest and would place the prophet's call after his other dated oracles. This odd situation can be avoided by assuming that "the thirtieth year" refers to the date of the book's composition rather than to the prophet's call, but such an interpretation is not in harmony with the text, which clearly connects the date to the prophet's initial vision.

The Targum (a translation of the Hebrew text into Aramaic, often with accompanying interpretation) was the first to suggest that Ezekiel's call occurred thirty years after Josiah's religious reform (2 Kings 22:3). Although this calculation is accurate if the explanation of v. 2 is accepted, there is no biblical evidence to suggest that Josiah's reform was used by other authors for dating important religious events. Whatever the meaning of "the thirtieth year," an editorial comment equates it with the fifth year of Jehoiachin's exile and thus places the prophet's call in July 593 B.C.

Ezekiel is identified as one of the officials exiled to Babylon during the first deportation (597 B.C.). He was a priest, presumably of Zadokite descent, and would probably have served in the Temple before his exile. His initial vision occurred beside the Chebar Canal, near the Babylonian city of Nippur, in the vicinity of which some of the exiles had been settled. The prophet further specifies the location as Tel-abib ("mound [deserted since the time] of the flood"), a site that also must have been in the neighborhood of Nippur (3:15). By the fifth century B.C. there was at Nippur a flourishing Jewish community that traced its origins to the exiles of Ezekiel's time.

The bank of a stream may have been a traditional place of worship and divine revelation during the latter part of the Exile (cf. Dan. 10:4; Ps. 137:1), but in Ezekiel's time some Israelites doubted that genuine prophecy could occur outside of Israel. Ezekiel is therefore careful to stress a theme that will recur throughout the book. His vision was clearly of divine origin and took place when God seized or possessed him. God's "hand" came upon the prophet and exercised divine control over him (cf. 1 Kings 18:46). Elsewhere in Ezekiel God's hand or Spirit will energize the prophet and leave no doubt that his words and deeds are not his own, but come directly from God (3:22; 8:1; 37:1; 40:1). Ezekiel is a human agent compelled to do God's will.

1:4–3:21
The Call of the Prophet

Israelite prophets did not always record their initial encounter with God, and when they did do so they tended to be relatively brief (cf. Amos 7:14–15; Isa. 6:1–13; Jer. 1:1–10). In contrast, Ezekiel devotes the better part of three chapters to describing his call. Although some of this extensive description may be the result of later reflection and elaboration on the meaning of his initial experience, challenges to the prophet's authority may also have prompted him to give an unusually detailed account. Ezekiel's words would have lacked credibility not only because he was prophesying on foreign soil, but also because his prophetic message challenged many of the fundamental beliefs of his audience.

Ezekiel's call seems to have taken place in two stages. During the first stage the prophet saw his initial vision (1:4–28), was commissioned to be a prophet to Israel, and was given an indication of the contents of

his message (2:1–3:15). In the second stage, which followed the first by seven days, he was called to be a watchman for the house of Israel (3:16–21).

1:4–28, The Throne Vision. The MT of the prophet's initial vision is occasionally repetitious and contains what appear to be dislocated phrases. For this reason, most scholars assume that the account has been secondarily elaborated, either by Ezekiel himself or by later editors. However, there is no scholarly agreement about the nature or even the location of these elaborations, so it is best simply to follow the text as it now stands. In spite of occasional roughness in the MT, the general outline of the vision is clear, and there can be no doubt about what the prophet saw. In the vision he came face to face with God's glory, the overwhelming radiance that surrounds the deity (→ Glory).

As he does in his other major visions (cf. 8:2–11:25; 40:1–48:35), Ezekiel here recreates the experience as it occurred rather than first summarizing or interpreting it. He thus forces readers to repeat the prophetic experience and to share the prophet's growing comprehension of the vision's significance.

At first the prophet saw only a glowing storm cloud being blown by a strong north wind. As the cloud drew nearer, however, he realized that the glow was in fact a cloud of fire, in the midst of which he gradually perceived four strange creatures. Each of them had a vaguely human form, but they each also had four wings and four different faces. Their feet were bovine, and they had human hands under their wings. They were arranged in a square, with their wing tips touching, and as a result they could face all of the cardinal points at the same time and could move in any direction without turning. In the midst of the creatures was an awesome brightness that flashed like lightning. Beneath the creatures were sparkling wheels that touched the earth. Each wheel contained all-seeing eyes and was composed of a "wheel within a wheel," either two different sized wheels in the same plane like the hub and rim of a wagon wheel or, more likely, two identical wheels at right angles to each other to facilitate movement in all directions. As the creatures drew nearer, Ezekiel was able for the first time to hear the roar of their wings and to see above them a crystalline expanse on which rested the likeness of a throne (→ Firmament; Throne). On the throne was the glowing likeness of a human form, and the prophet then knew that he was seeing "the appearance of the likeness of the glory of God." When Ezekiel realized what he was seeing, he fell on his face to the ground.

Scholars have made a number of attempts to probe beyond the prophet's description to uncover its underlying reality. Some have claimed that he saw only an electrical storm and then elaborated what he saw with his own imaginative details. Other scholars have pointed to artistic representations of fantastic animals and chariots that bore the images of some ancient Near Eastern deities. More specifically, scholars have argued that Ezekiel had in mind the Temple cherubim, the winged creatures flanking the Ark above which God was enthroned (cf. 1 Sam. 4:4; 2 Sam. 6:2; 1 Kings 6:27; Pss. 80:1; 99:1) (→ Ark; Cherub).

To be sure, Ezekiel's vision was shaped by motifs from Israelite tradition and was deeply rooted in his own priestly background. Fire, storm, and wind are often said to accompany God's appearance (cf. Exod. 19; Deut. 33:2; Judg. 5:4–5; Pss. 18:7–15; 68:7–10), and the prophet's knowledge of the Temple cherubim helped him to recognize what he was seeing in his vision. However, the description in the vision cannot be taken too literally, for the prophet constantly reminds his readers that the images used to describe the vision only approximate what he actually saw. He often uses the terms "appearance" and "likeness" to remind his audience that his description is not exact, and he employs in his description a number of evocative but incorporeal words having to do with brightness and fire. Like his Jerusalemite predecessor Isaiah, who saw the Temple cherubim transformed into flaming seraphim (Isa. 6), Ezekiel sees natural objects that have taken on supernatural dimensions. The visionary combination of vague, evocative images with concrete but fantastic objects helps the prophet to describe the divine reality that he saw but that cannot ultimately be described.

The theological significance of the vision is not elaborated until Ezekiel's later vision of Jerusalem's destruction (Ezek. 8–11). However, Ezekiel's original readers could not have failed to recognize that he had seen God's divine throne, normally located in Jerusalem, come to rest on Babylonian soil. For a Zadokite priest, who believed in God's eternal presence in Jerusalem, this would have been a shocking idea and one that would require additional explanation. However, at this point in the book it is not clear whether God's appearance has positive or negative implications for the exiles. That question will ultimately be answered only as the book progresses, but a partial answer is given in the divine word that follows the initial vision.

2:1–3:15, The Prophet's Commission. After Ezekiel recognizes the significance of his vision, he hears God's voice for the first time (1:28–2:1). Having fallen to the earth at the conclusion of the vision, the prophet is now commanded to rise. He is addressed, as he is throughout the book, with a title often translated literally "son of man." In Ezekiel's time this title had none of the theological overtones it was later to acquire and simply means "one who is a member of the human species." The address thus emphasizes the contrast between the human prophet and the divine glory. However, in spite of the divine command to rise, Ezekiel is unable to do so until the Spirit sets him on his feet (2:2). The motif of the enabling Spirit is found throughout the book and gives rise to the curious picture of a prophet who seems incapable of carrying out

his prophetic tasks without divine aid. He speaks only the divine word that is put in his mouth and does only what the Spirit enables him to do (cf. 3:27). By portraying Ezekiel in this way, the book underlines the point that he has no control over his prophetic activities. Everything that he does or says comes directly from God, and the prophet does not interfere with the divine message in any way. Unlike the illegitimate prophets of whom Jeremiah speaks (Jer. 23:30), Ezekiel cannot be accused of stealing other prophets' words or giving his own interpretation of what God said. Ezekiel's readers know from the beginning of the book that they are reading only the word of God.

The content of the divine message is clear as soon as the prophet receives his commission. After being told to prophesy to the rebellious house of Israel, both to the people in exile and to those who remain in the land, the prophet is commanded to eat a scroll, which is filled with words of mourning, lamentation, and woe. He does so and reports that the scroll tastes sweet, in spite of its devastating contents (2:10–3:3). This striking episode seems to be the literary reflection of a statement made by Jeremiah in one of his complaints: "Your words were found, and I ate them, and your words became to me a joy and the delight of my heart" (Jer. 15:16). Although Jeremiah's original statement expressed his own prophetic experience and explained why he was willing to continue to act as God's prophet (Jer. 15:15, 17–18), Ezekiel's literary development of the statement has an entirely different function. By speaking of eating the scroll, Ezekiel again indicates that his announcements of coming disaster are not his own, but are dictated by God, who has literally put the divine words into the prophet. Because the divine word is in written form, the image also implies that the entirety of the writing of Ezekiel, that is, the whole book, is of divine origin. Just as Jeremiah delivered a scroll of his oracles to the king of Judah to see whether God's word would be accepted or rejected (Jer. 36), so also Ezekiel delivers to the exiles and to other Israelite communities a prophetic book to which they must respond.

The remainder of the commissioning narrative in fact concentrates not on the dismal contents of the prophet's message, but on the people's reaction to it. God's initial address to the prophet characterizes the people who will read or hear his words as rebels, and this description is repeated throughout the remainder of the narrative. The phrase "for they are a rebellious house" echoes like a refrain in these verses (2:5, 7; 3:9) and clearly implies that the success of Ezekiel's work is in doubt. God is giving the people one more chance to hear the announcement of certain destruction and to save themselves by repenting, but God also has little hope that the people will listen. Instead, it is likely that the people will actively oppose Ezekiel and will thereby seal their own fate, making divine judgment inevitable. For this reason God warns the prophet to resist popular opposition and promises to strengthen and protect him during the ordeal that lies ahead.

The reasons for opposition to Ezekiel's message of judgment are easily understood, for he addressed his words both to his fellow exiles in Babylon and to the people who remained in Jerusalem. The former group may well have felt that it had already experienced God's judgment and should now be forgiven and brought back to the land (cf. 18:1–32). The latter group agreed that the exiles had been punished, but also felt that they had been spared and could now claim special status as God's elect (cf. 11:15). In contrast to these two views, Ezekiel prophesied that both groups were still rebels, and both were required to repent to save themselves. The ultimate failure of the prophet's mission thus seems to have been assured from the start.

3:16–21, The Watchman's Call. Many scholars feel that the narrative of Ezekiel's second call is redundant after the initial call vision (1:4–3:15). In addition, these verses are repeated in a more elaborate and sometimes clearer form in 33:1–9, where they seem to mark a new phase in the prophet's career following the fall of Jerusalem. For this reason scholars tend to see the watchman's call as a secondary addition based on material found in chaps. 18 and 33. However, even if these verses are accepted as a later editorial expansion, it is still necessary to try to understand why they were inserted in their present location and how they modify the narrative they follow.

According to the book's own chronology, Ezekiel was overwhelmed by his initial vision for a period of seven days (3:15). At the end of that time, God again spoke to the prophet and appointed him to be a watchman for the house of Israel. The image of the watchman is used elsewhere of the prophetic office (Jer. 6:16–21), and its meaning in such contexts is clear. Like a watchman on a city wall, the prophet is to warn the people of an approaching enemy (2 Sam. 18:24–27; 2 Kings 9:17–20). However, a curious feature of the use of the image in Ezekiel is that God is both the one who appoints the protective watchman and the one against whom the people must be protected.

This unusual situation immediately becomes apparent when God gives Ezekiel examples of a prophetic watchman at work. These examples are framed in legal language, presumably drawn from Ezekiel's priestly tradition, and describe the various situations that might occur when God pronounces a formal death sentence against an individual. Four cases are considered: first, the wicked person who does not repent because the prophet has not issued a warning; second, the wicked person who does not repent even though the prophet has issued a warning; third, the righteous person who turns away from righteousness and does not repent because the prophet has not issued a warning; and fourth, the righteous person who remains righteous because the prophet has issued a

warning. The case of the wicked person who repents after hearing the watchman's warning is omitted, possibly an indication that Ezekiel did not really expect this case to occur.

These cases are unusual in that they do not emphasize the watchman's success or failure in bringing about repentance. Rather, they are concerned with whether or not the watchman actually issues a prophetic warning. The prophet who issues such a warning saves his own life, while the prophet who does not issue a warning bears the responsibility for the death of the wicked. The call narrative thus sharply emphasizes the warnings against prophetic rebellion that were present in the initial call vision (2:8) and underlines the importance of the prophet's persistence in his task, even though he sees no apparent results. In this way the narrative further stresses the initial call vision's doubts about the effectiveness of the prophet's mission. As chap. 4 makes clear, God has issued a sentence of death against the city of Jerusalem, and Ezekiel must warn the people of the danger. However, there seems to be little hope of saving the city.

3:22–27
The Prophet's Dumbness

Of all of the difficult passages in Ezekiel, the narratives of the onset and removal of the prophet's dumbness have provoked the widest range of interpretations, none of which is totally satisfactory. The sources of the difficulty are readily apparent. According to Ezekiel's own account, immediately after his second call he was possessed by God and told to go to "the valley." There the divine glory appeared to the prophet, as it had in chap. 1, and he responded in his typical fashion by falling stunned to the ground. After being raised by the Spirit (cf. 1:28–2:2), Ezekiel was commanded to shut himself up in his house. He was then told that he would be bound so that he could not go out among the people and that he would be struck dumb so that he could not act as a "reprover" to them. However, God promised that Ezekiel's mouth would be opened when there was a divine word to be given to the people (3:22–27). According to the book's own chronology, this dumbness lasted until the fall of Jerusalem, a period of more than seven years. The removal of the dumbness is narrated in the context of a repetition of the prophet's call to be a watchman, so that both the call and the opening of the prophet's mouth are clearly correlated with the city's destruction (33:21–22; cf. 24:26–27).

The immediate literary context makes it difficult to understand the dumbness literally, for in chap. 4 the prophet begins a series of oracles against the people and against Jerusalem, reproving both for their sins. Later in the book he issues calls to repent (14:6; 18:21, 30–32; 33:11), a fact that indicates that his speech consisted of more than the delivery of announcements of doom. This has led many scholars to assume that the dumbness was somehow symbolic or that it lasted only a few hours or days, perhaps being brought on by the sudden death of the prophet's wife and the traumatic events surrounding Jerusalem's fall (24:15–27). Others have suggested that Ezekiel actually suffered from some physiological or psychological malady. However, none of these explanations helps to interpret the narrative in its present location in chap. 3.

Like other problematic passages in Ezekiel, this one is perhaps best interpreted as a literary expression of a prophetic experience that caused the prophet to have a new understanding of his call. The prophet's confinement to his house may reflect the fact that he did not deliver his oracles orally in public as did earlier prophets, but produced them first in writing (cf. 8:1; 14:1; 20:1). The dumbness may indicate that from his call until the fall of Jerusalem Ezekiel spoke only words of judgment against the city and reserved his calls to repent for the exiles. This interpretation would generally be in keeping with the present literary organization of the book, which places most of the judgment oracles before the narrative of the fall of Jerusalem in chap. 33 and locates most of the oracles of promise after this point. In addition, the dumbness may indicate that, for this period of time, the prophet did not exercise one of his normal prophetic functions, that of interceding on behalf of the city and the people. Later in the book he is explicitly forbidden to intercede for the people (14:3–5; 20:3), and they are again allowed to approach God through the prophet only after the city falls (36:37).

4:1–24:27
Prophecies of Judgment Against Judah and Jerusalem

After the introduction of the prophet and his message, the next section of the book concentrates on announcements of the disasters that are about to happen to Jerusalem, to the rest of the people in Judah, and to the people already in exile. Although there are occasional promises in these chapters, there is a pervasive feeling of impending doom. From the beginning it is clear that the destruction of Jerusalem is inevitable, and nothing the people can do will alter this situation.

4:1–5:17
Symbolic Acts of Judgment

The announcement of Jerusalem's fate is introduced by narratives of several symbolic actions performed by the prophet. However, unlike the symbolic acts of earlier prophets, which were brief, pointed, and designed to have an immediate impact on the audience (cf. Isa.

20:1–6; Jer. 13:1–11; 19:1–13; 27:1–11), Ezekiel's symbolic acts are literary representations of the originals. As literary representations, they tend to be highly complex and well developed. They are meant to be read and studied, and the point they make is not always immediately clear. Their complexity also invites later reinterpretation by the prophet, his disciples, and later generations of readers.

4:1–17, Symbols of Siege and Exile. The major theme, Ezekiel's announcement of judgment, is clearly stated by his first symbolic act, which portrays in miniature the coming siege against Jerusalem (4:1–3). From this point, he repeatedly assures his readers that the city and its inhabitants can in no way escape the wrath of the Babylonians. As a Babylonian architect or military commander might do, the prophet draws the city on a sun-dried brick and then sketches in mounds, ramps, and battering rams—the military installations and machines designed to seal off the city from outside relief and eventually to breach its walls (→ Battering Ram; Siege). The symbolism of the act then shifts as the prophet is told to take a more personal role and to act out the enemy attack against the city. He is to place an iron plate between himself and the city and to press the siege against it. The plate is a symbol of separation and in this instance represents a barrier that exists between God and the people in Jerusalem. The inhabitants of the doomed city are to be cut off from God until the destruction is complete. The prophet's direct participation in the siege also implies that God is actively involved in the attack on the city.

In 4:4–8 Ezekiel is made to bear symbolically the punishment that is to be laid on the people. First he is commanded to lie on his left side for 390 days to represent the number of years that the house of Israel, namely, the Northern Kingdom, must be punished (vv. 4–5). The interpretation of these verses is problematic, and the number has puzzled interpreters since antiquity. The sudden use of the name "Israel" in its narrow sense as a reference to the Northern Kingdom, destroyed by the Assyrians in 722–721 B.C., is unexpected, since the remainder of the unit concentrates on the imminent siege and exile of Judah, the Southern Kingdom. The period of 390 years is not susceptible to any satisfactory interpretation. The LXX contains entirely different figures. Their significance is easier to understand, but they are suspect for that very reason, and it is likely that the numbers in the MT are original, whatever their meaning. If 390 years are calculated backwards from the prophet's own time, then the period of punishment would have begun about the time the Temple was built by Solomon. Thus the whole history of the North would have to be seen as a period of punishment, a proposition that makes no sense. If the 390 years are calculated from the fall of Samaria in 722/721 B.C., then the prophet would be indicating a period of punishment that would end much later than the one projected for Judah. However, he explicitly rejects this interpretation elsewhere and predicts that Ephraim (Israel) and Judah will be restored to the land at the same time (cf. 37:15–23).

Easier to understand is the second part of the act, which involves the prophet's lying on his right side for forty days to portray forty years of punishment and exile for Judah (vv. 6–17). This figure differs from Jeremiah's prediction of a seventy-year exile (Jer. 25:11; 29:10), but at least gives the act a plausible interpretation. The prophet is to persist in his odd and lengthy action without deviation, just as he was bound at his call to speak only the word that God gave him (cf. 3:25–26).

In 4:9–16 Ezekiel adds additional details to his portrayal of a people suffering a siege. During his symbolic act he is to eat bread composed of a mixture of grains, there being no single grain available in sufficient quantity to make up a loaf. The prophet may drink each day only a measured quantity of water, about two-thirds of a quart. Although the scarcity of food and water refers particularly to conditions in Jerusalem during the expected siege, the symbolic action has been broadened to include references to the lives of the exiles, both those who will be driven from the city and those who are already in Babylon. They are to eat ritually unclean food outside of the land. The prophet's resistance to eating bread baked on human dung was apparently a futile effort, for he was still required to eat unclean food to demonstrate the conditions of exile, something that would have been a particular violation of priestly regulations.

5:1–17, Symbols of Jerusalem's Fate. Ezekiel's symbolic description of the fate of Jerusalem continues in a complex action (5:1–4), which is then interpreted at length for readers (5:5–17). The prophet is to cut off his hair, an act that itself represents the loss of personal identity associated with exile (cf. Isa. 7:20), and then is to divide the hair into three portions. A third he is to burn in the midst of the city that he has portrayed on the brick (4:1–2), a third he is to strike with a sword, and a third he is to scatter to the wind. From the latter portion he is to take a few hairs—presumably representing an exiled remnant such as the members of the prophet's own community—and is to preserve them, although even some of these will be burned.

The interpretation of the act is clear. The treatment of the hair represents the fate of the people in the besieged city (v. 5). Because the people have rebelled against God, there will be a divine judgment against them. The city will endure the horrors of a protracted siege (v. 10), and God will this time have no pity on the people (v. 11). A third of them will die by fire during the siege, and a third will be killed by the sword. The remainder will be scattered in exile. Even there they will

have no rest, for God will make them desolate and a reproach among the nations. The destructive divine fire will reach even to the remnant, which will continue to be punished as God harries the exiles with famine, disease, and bloodshed. Of the remnant of the city driven into exile, only a smaller remnant will survive (vv. 3, 13–17). However, there may be a slight hint in the passage that the fire that burns the remnant is redemptive for the rest of Israel (v. 4).

6:1–7:27
Oracles Against Land and People

From symbolic representations of Judah's coming destruction, Ezekiel turns to prophetic words directed against the land, the people, and the city. Like the earlier prophetic actions, these words help to actualize the events of which they speak.

6:1–14, Prophecy Against the Mountains. Up to this point, the prophet has concentrated on the fate of Jerusalem and the exiles already on foreign soil. Now he is commanded to set his face toward the mountains of Israel and thus to focus his attention on the entire country—the mountains, hills, ravines, and valleys. The message for the rest of the land is identical to that delivered to Jerusalem, and the people outside the city will not be able to escape from the coming judgment. Ezekiel is to prophesy that all of the land of Israel will be devastated, a prophecy that was in fact fulfilled as the Babylonian armies advanced on Jerusalem in 587–586 B.C.

It is noteworthy that the prophet does not elaborate on the destruction of the cities themselves, but concentrates instead on the destruction of the illegitimate religious installations that are the symbols of Israel's sin. He particularly singles out the platforms or high places, which were often located on hills near towns and which perhaps were used for the worship of underworld deities and deified ancestors (→ High Place). The people who in life worshiped other gods at incense altars will now be slain before those same altars, and their bones will defile Israel's illegitimate places of worship. The people have not been willing to know God through appropriate worship in the Temple or through obedience in response to God's great acts of deliverance (cf. Exod. 7:5; 14:4, 18). Therefore the people are condemned to know God only through divine punishment and destruction. God is known through the revelation of the divine name, but that revelation now leads to judgment rather than salvation (vv. 1–7; cf. Exod. 3:13–22; 20:2; → Knowledge).

However, just as there will be refugees from Jerusalem, so there will also be a few who survive the devastation of the land. In exile they will understand what they have done and will witness to future generations that God does indeed punish rebellion (6:8–10). For their benefit Ezekiel is to portray God's delight in destroying sinful Israel and the abominable ritual practices that the people have instituted (6:11–14).

7:1–27, Prophecy of the End. Ezekiel's announcement of judgment to the mountains of Israel is followed by a horrifying oracle directed at all of the inhabitants of the land. The literary structure of the oracle vividly reproduces the words of a prophet so thoroughly possessed by the divine spirit that he no longer has any control over his words or actions. He is obsessed by the judgment he must announce. The oracle regains a degree of rationality briefly in v. 23, when God gives the reason for the destruction of the people. However, the remainder of the oracle generates its impact through the seemingly endless repetition of key words and images. The piling up of phrases gives the oracle a breathless quality as it rushes toward its crushing climax. Over and over the prophet repeats his devastating message until his words pound readers like a hammer. Disaster approaches. An end has come upon the land. Doom is near. God will not spare any of the people and will not pity them. The people are helpless against the approaching enemy. Prophets, priests, elders, and king are terrified and can do nothing. God will be known to Israel only in the irreversible judgment that will repay the people for their sins.

The passage has roots in a number of prophetic traditions, particularly those dealing with the "day of the LORD," the time when God would confront Israel for good or ill. This concept seems to have been well known as early as the eighth century B.C., but the prophet Amos first gave it the strongly negative overtones it retains in most of the prophetic literature (Amos 5:18–20; 8:1–14). The disciples of Isaiah further developed the idea (Isa. 13), and the work of both prophets may have influenced Ezekiel's choice of words and images. For Ezekiel, the "day of the LORD" certainly refers to the imminent Babylonian attack on Jerusalem and not to some more distant eschatological appearance of God (→ Eschatology; Judgment, Day of).

8:1–11:25
Vision of Jerusalem

In September of 592 B.C., Ezekiel traveled through visionary transport to Jerusalem, where he witnessed activities in the Temple. More important, he also saw how God and the other inhabitants of the heavenly world were reacting to human events there. The vision thus becomes an ominous portent of the judgment that is to come on the city and the Temple and demonstrates that behind historical events is a spiritual reality that gives them theological significance. The prophet here dramatizes for his readers God's direct involvement in Jerusalem's destruction and forestalls

any interpretation of this event that would simply ascribe it to the shifting winds of ancient Near Eastern politics.

The Temple vision is closely related to the prophet's initial call vision, both literarily and theologically. The Temple vision picks up and elaborates the description of the divine glory in chap. 1 and also provides a theological explanation for the glory's presence in Babylon. The general sequence of events in the Temple vision is relatively clear, although some of its elements seem obscure or out of place. This is particularly true for the progress of the cherubim and the glory out of the Temple, and it is possible that at some points the prophet or his disciples have added material or elaborated the original text in the light of later events and traditions. However, it is also important to remember that the Temple vision, like the call vision, has a dreamlike quality to it. Objects and events sometimes blur and do not always have the sharp outlines that would be expected in the ordinary world. Ezekiel preserves this dreamlike quality, leading his readers through the vision as he himself experienced it. He provides minimal interpretation of what he saw and expects his readers to understand the significance of what is being described.

8:1–18, The Abominations in the Temple. The Temple vision begins with a description of Ezekiel sitting in his house in Babylon (cf. 3:24). The elders of Judah are sitting in front of him, although the purpose of their visit is not clear. Presumably these leaders of the exilic community have come to seek a prophetic oracle concerning Jerusalem's fate. They may also have hoped that the prophet would intercede with God on their behalf in order to prevent the city's destruction. If so, the prophet's response was quite different from what they expected. As in similar situations later in the book (14:1; 20:1), Ezekiel does not provide the oracle that the elders seek, but instead describes a visionary trip to Jerusalem that underlines the hopelessness of the city's plight.

Ezekiel reports that, as the elders were waiting for a response, he was possessed by God. When the prophet went into a trance, he saw a fiery humanoid figure resembling the one he had seen at the conclusion of his call vision (cf. 1:26–28). The figure is clearly intended to represent God's glory; and God, through the agency of the Spirit, lifts the prophet into the heavenly realm and transports him to Jerusalem, where he is placed at an entrance to the Temple (8:1–4; for a diagram of the Temple, → Temple, The). From this point on God continues to speak to Ezekiel and to guide him through the Temple, but God in the form of the divine glory is also a visible participant in the events the prophet describes.

The visionary tour of the Temple begins at the northern entrance to the inner court, where the people had set up a statue, perhaps a representation of the Canaanite goddess Asherah, but in any case an image that had no rightful place in orthodox Israelite worship (vv. 5–6). To continue the tour, the prophet burrowed through a wall to enter a secret inner room, the walls of which were decorated with carvings of fantastic animals that were probably connected with a non-Israelite cult. There he saw seventy representative elders of Israel conducting some sort of priestly rite. Among them was one Jaazaniah, who is otherwise unknown but who is, ironically, said to have been a son of Shaphan, the scribe who was intimately involved with Josiah's religious reform (2 Kings 22) and whose family protected Jeremiah during the final chaotic days of the siege (Jer. 26:1–24; 36:1–32). Clearly religious corruption had reached to the highest levels, and now representatives of the most important and faithful families in the land were secretly performing illegitimate rituals, thus destroying the sanctity of God's house (Ezek. 8:7–13).

This picture of aberrant worship is reinforced when the prophet is shown women participating in mourning rites for Tammuz, the ancient dying and rising fertility god of Mesopotamia, whose yearly trip to the underworld was the occasion for wailing among his devotees. Elsewhere Ezekiel is shown men symbolically turning their backs on the Temple so that they could face the east to worship the sun (vv. 14–16). Up to this point in the vision, God has concentrated on showing Ezekiel aspects of Israel's religious sins, something that surely would have been a major concern for the prophet, who functioned as a priest before his deportation. However, the first part of the vision ends with God pointing out that the people have compounded their ritual sins by filling the land with violence. Violations of the social order are also an important part of Israel's sin, even though Ezekiel tends not to emphasize them as much as did his contemporary, Jeremiah. Both Israel's religious and social abuses are a direct insult to God and provide the motivation for the divine destruction of the people. In the very heart of the Temple, where God was supposed to be the most accessible, the prophet is told that God will not pity the people and will not hear them when they beg for mercy. The Temple has ceased to be a place where God and Israel can meet and communicate, and in this sense the Temple has lost its appropriate function (vv. 17–18).

Interpreters sometimes feel that Ezekiel's description of abominations in the Temple is exaggerated, given the fact that Josiah had recently purified Judah's religion and removed from the Temple a number of pagan ritual objects, including some belonging to religious activities described by Ezekiel (2 Kings 23:4–14). However, it is worth noting that Hezekiah had also reformed Temple worship, only to have the same aberrant practices reintroduced by his successor Manasseh

(2 Kings 18:4–8; 21:1–16). It is probably safe to conclude that Israel's appetite for Canaanite and Mesopotamian rituals was stronger than its interest in sustaining religious reform and that Josiah's reforms were therefore short-lived.

9:1–11, The Slaughter of the Idolaters. After hearing God's final word of judgment against the city, the prophet is shown the beginning of the judgment itself. Although there is no doubt in Ezekiel's mind that the Temple will actually be destroyed by the Babylonian army, the vision makes clear that God is the real destroyer of the Temple and the people. Once God has acted, all hope for the city is gone.

The divine judgment begins when God summons six armed executioners of the city, who approach the Temple from the north, the traditional invasion route of enemy armies and the direction from which divine judgment was usually thought to come (Jer. 1:13–16; 4:5–31; 5:15–17; 6:1–5, 22–26). They are accompanied by a scribe clothed in linen, the traditional garb of priests (Exod. 28:29–42) and angels (Dan. 10:5; 12:6–13). The seven appear to be a contingent from an enemy army, but in fact are God's agents, members of the heavenly court (cf. 1 Kings 22:19–23). As they approach, the divine glory, since the time of Solomon enthroned above the cherubim-flanked Ark (1 Kings 8), begins its slow journey out of the Temple. God instructs the scribe to mark with the Hebrew letter *taw* the foreheads of those in the city who have grieved over the religious and social abominations committed in it and then commands the executioners to slay the rest, sparing no one and beginning with the elders before the Temple. As the slaughter is carried out, the prophet is shocked by its completeness. Apparently few, if any, were worthy of bearing the mark, a situation that goads the prophet into making an objection, one of the few personal responses he makes in the book. The Temple, a traditional place of sanctuary, has not provided protection for people in the city. The prophet therefore wants to know if there is any salvation from the divine wrath (v. 8). God's response indicates that the sin of Jerusalem is so great that no escape is possible, but this statement does not comment on the fate of those already in exile.

10:1–22, The Departure of God's Glory. The religious abominations and social injustices described in chap. 8 have defiled the Temple and robbed it of its sanctity so that it could no longer serve as a place of sanctuary. As a result, the Temple could not protect the people from God's wrath, and in chap. 9 the prophet witnessed God's further desecration of the sanctuary through the slaughter of the elders. In chap. 10 Ezekiel describes the completion of a process already begun (9:3). Because the Temple has been desecrated, it is no longer a fit dwelling place for the Holy One of Israel, and the prophet traces the slow departure of the divine glory as it leaves the Temple and the city. As Ezekiel watches, the Ark and the Temple cherubim are transformed into the divine throne borne by the heavenly cherubim, and God's glory leaves the Holy of Holies, the inner sanctum of the Temple, and migrates to the threshold of the house (vv. 1, 3–5). God then commands the scribe to take coals from beneath the cherubim and to scatter them over the city to destroy it (v. 2). Before he can do so, however, one of the cherubim hands him the coals, and God thus directly provides the supernatural fire that will destroy the city (vv. 6–8).

It is at this point in the vision that the prophet recognizes the connection between what he is seeing and what he saw in Babylon during his call vision. He therefore describes the divine throne and the attendant cherubim in great detail, repeating much of what was said in chap. 1, but varying a few details. At the end of this description he narrates the further movement of the glory to the east gate of the Temple (vv. 9–22).

11:1–25. Oracles of Judgment and Hope. As the prophet accompanies the divine glory out of the city, at the east gate he sees twenty-five men, several of whom are mentioned by name (11:1). These men are sometimes identified with the twenty-five sun worshipers of 8:16, although in that passage no specific names appear. In any case, in chap. 11 the men are indicted by God, and the prophet is told to deliver a judgment oracle against them. The precise nature of their crimes is unclear. They are accused of devising iniquity and giving wicked counsel to the city, a charge that may be related to the conflicting political advice being given to King Zedekiah by his advisers. They are then quoted as saying that there is no need to build houses, because "it [the city] is the pot and we are the flesh" (v. 3). The latter part of this statement is a reference to Jerusalem under siege, and Ezekiel develops this image in great detail in 24:1–14. The meaning of the first part of the statement is uncertain, but it may be that the accused were advising pouring all of the city's resources into defense rather than into building homes for those dispossessed by the previous Babylonian invasion.

The judgment oracle the prophet delivers to the men elaborates somewhat on their crimes and prescribes a very specific punishment (11:5–12). They are accused of increasing the number of those slain in the city, a possible reference to the results of the men's political advice or to the results of their defense-centered economic policies. They have acted out of fear of foreign attack, and their judgment will therefore take the form of making that fear into a reality. They will be taken out of the city and slain by foreigners at the border of Israel. This specific description of the judgment is sometimes thought to be a reference to the capture and killing of members of the royal court who fled from Jerusalem as the Babylonians captured it in 586 B.C. (2 Kings 25:4–7). Such an interpretation is possible

but cannot be considered certain. A foretaste of the judgment occurs immediately when one of the men, Pelatiah, dies as Ezekiel is prophesying, thus provoking another of the prophet's anguished objections (cf. 9:8). Pelatiah's sudden death indicates the truth of the prophecy and suggests that the remainder of the men will be killed in due time (11:13).

Following the judgment oracle against the twenty-five men, God levels a charge against all of the inhabitants of Jerusalem (vv. 14–21). Those who were left in the city after the first deportation (597 B.C.) had apparently interpreted that event as divine judgment on the deportees and concluded that they had now been totally cut off from God and from the nation of Israel. Those who remained in the city therefore not only felt that they were the rightful heirs to the positions of leadership that had been vacated by the exiles, but also claimed to be the heirs to the land of Israel and to the special divine promises that went with it. In short, those still in the land claimed to be the true Israel and sought to exclude the exiles from the religious community.

God's judgment oracle against the inhabitants of Jerusalem rejects this claim both obliquely and directly. In telling Ezekiel what the Jerusalemites are saying, God refers to the exiles as "your brothers . . . the whole house of Israel" (v. 15). By referring to the prophet's companions in this way, God implies that the exiles, and not those left in Jerusalem, are in fact the true Israel. This notion is made explicit in the judgment oracle itself, in which God admits to having scattered the exiles, but at the same time claims to have been a "small sanctuary" to them in the nations where they now live (v. 16). When this statement is set in the context of what Ezekiel has seen earlier in his vision, its meaning becomes clear. God has rejected Jerusalem and the Temple, thus dooming the people who still dwell there, and is even now in the process of leaving the city. At the same time, the divine glory is present among the exiles in Babylon. Where God dwells, there is the true Israel, and the exiles have access to God, even though they live on foreign soil. This is the significance of Ezekiel's initial vision. God has temporarily taken up residence among the exiles and has rejected the Temple and the city.

At the same time, God's presence in Babylon is only a pale copy of the divine presence that formerly dwelled in Jerusalem, and that presence must be restored if the people are to live as the true Israel. The judgment oracle against the inhabitants of Jerusalem is therefore followed by a promise to the exiles (vv. 17–21), one of the few that Ezekiel will give before the fall of the city (chap. 33). God promises to return the exiles to the land of Israel and to give them that land as a possession. There the former exiles will remove the abominable religious objects that were left in Jerusalem when it was destroyed, and God will institute a new social and religious order to ensure that the sins of the past will not be repeated. The people will be given a new heart and spirit so that their loyalty will no longer be divided among various gods, but will be single-mindedly devoted to God (cf. Jer. 32:39). The stony hearts that made the people insensitive to God's word will be removed and replaced with human hearts that will enable Israel to follow God's laws. Then the covenant relationship between God and the people will be restored to its original state.

Following this promise, Ezekiel reports that the divine glory with its attendant cherubim left Jerusalem, pausing briefly on the mountain east of the city. The Spirit then transported the prophet back to Babylon, where he reported his vision to the exiles (11:22–25).

Ezekiel's Temple vision would have had a major theological impact on his exilic audience, which was composed primarily of Jerusalemite officials, people who believed in the eternal election of Jerusalem and the Davidic house, the eternal presence of God in the Temple, and the inviolability of the city. To them the prophet's message would have come as a shock. God had in fact rejected the elect city and had migrated temporarily to Babylon. The removal of the divine presence allowed the city to be destroyed by the Babylonians, but God had already begun the process of destruction by pouring divine fire over the city and its inhabitants. However, God would ultimately return to Jerusalem to create a new Israel that would be totally responsive to the divine word. Ezekiel thus left most of the old Jerusalemite royal theology intact, but transformed it in a way that would have made it difficult for his readers to accept. God's eternal election of the city became in a sense contingent on the obedience of the people, a notion that cut at the very heart of the theology of Ezekiel's readers.

12:1–20
Symbols and Oracles of Exile

The first part of chap. 12 contains accounts of two symbolic actions by the prophet, together with their interpretations. Unlike the prophetic actions in chaps. 4–5, the ones here are relatively simple and easily interpreted.

In the first account (12:1–16), the prophet is told to prepare during the day an exile's pack, which probably would have consisted of essential clothing and household goods that could have been gathered quickly and carried easily. Then at night the prophet is to dig through the wall, as a would-be exile might do to escape from a besieged city. The departure would be under cover of darkness in order to mask the escapee's actions, and the unexpected exit through the wall could perhaps be interpreted as an attempt to avoid being seen by the enemy, who would have been watching the gates. The prophet is then to shoulder his pack and go into exile while covering his face so that he cannot see the land. The point of this last act is not clear,

but it may be intended to dramatize the exile's grief at leaving the land.

Although the general symbolism of this act seems quite straightforward, God repeatedly warns the prophet that the people are rebellious and will deliberately refuse to understand the significance of what the prophet is doing (vv. 1–6). This warning about the rebelliousness of the people echoes the warning given at the prophet's call (2:1–3:15) and prepares him for the failure of his mission. After Ezekiel performs his symbolic act (12:7), God tells the prophet that his audience has refused to understand what is happening and that an interpretation must be supplied. The obvious meaning of the act is that the people in the besieged city of Jerusalem will be forced to go into exile, a fate that Ezekiel's audience may have hoped could be avoided. However, when the interpretation is actually given (vv. 10–16), it is much more specific. The Exile is associated with the prince, Zedekiah, who together with his court will be forced to abandon Jerusalem by night. (Ezekiel uses the title "prince" to refer to Zedekiah and reserves the title "king" for the exiled Jehoiachin.) The prince will have to carry his own baggage and dig through the wall in an attempt to escape. However, God will trap the prince and his retinue and bring him to Babylon, but he will not see the land. His courtiers will be scattered, although a few will escape to testify to the abominations committed in Jerusalem.

The interpretation's description of the fate of the prince closely resembles the actual events connected with Jerusalem's fall in 586 B.C. When the Babylonians breached the walls of the city, Zedekiah tried to escape with his court by leaving the city through a gate near the king's garden. The escape was not successful. The Babylonians captured Zedekiah on the plains of Jericho and brought him to Nebuchadnezzar at Riblah. There Zedekiah's sons were slain, and he himself was blinded before being taken to Babylon in chains (2 Kings 25:4–7; Jer. 52:4–11). The close correspondence of these events with Ezekiel's prediction concerning the fate of the prince has led many scholars to assume that the interpretation in 12:10–16 is in fact "prophecy after the fact." Although this is certainly a possibility, it is worth noting that Ezekiel's prince and the historical Zedekiah escaped from the city in slightly different ways. Furthermore, Ezekiel's description contains a number of motifs commonly found in narratives dealing with exile. It is therefore likely that Ezekiel's original description of the fate of the prince was a bit more general than it is in the present text and that the actual historical events of the siege have influenced the shaping of the narrative after the fact. However, the extent of that shaping cannot be determined.

The second symbolic act (12:17–20) is much more direct than the first. Ezekiel is told to tremble while eating bread and drinking water. This display of fear is immediately interpreted as a reference to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, who continually live in fear, knowing that they are about to be punished for the violence that they have committed in the land. Destruction will soon come upon them and cannot be escaped.

12:21–14:11
Oracles on Prophets and Prophecy

The events leading up to the fall of Jerusalem were accompanied by a major crisis in the prophetic office. As frequently is the case in chaotic times, prophets responded to events by giving conflicting messages concerning the way people should react and by predicting different courses for future events (cf. Jer. 23; 27–29). In times of prophetic conflict, people are likely to question prophetic authority, and prophets often respond to this situation by undergirding their own authority in various ways and by undermining the authority of their prophetic rivals. An interest in strengthening Ezekiel's prophetic authority played a major role in shaping the accounts of his call, and in 12:21–14:11 additional attention is given to problems connected with the prophet's own oracles and to the activities of other prophets.

12:21–28, The Fulfillment of Prophecy. The end of chap. 12 contains two oracles dealing with the same theme: the apparent nonfulfillment of prophecies of judgment. Both oracles have the same basic form. A saying of the people is quoted, and God then responds by showing the falsity of the people's words. In the first case (vv. 21–25), God complains that people are saying that prophecies concerning the land of Israel have been so long delayed that they have lost their validity. In this period such an attitude would cause people to ignore not only the judgment oracles of Ezekiel, but also those of his contemporary Jeremiah, who was likewise predicting Jerusalem's destruction. In response to this proverb God assures both Ezekiel and the exiles that the fulfillment of the judgment oracles is at hand. The prophets predicting salvation will no longer have any credibility, for God will bring about the predicted disaster during the lifetime of Ezekiel's audience (cf. Jer. 23:9–32).

In the second oracle (12:26–28), the people are apparently willing to believe that the prophetic announcement of disaster will become a reality, but they are saying that judgment will take place only in the distant future. Again God assures Ezekiel and the people that the judgment will no longer be delayed, but will take place immediately.

13:1–23, Condemnation of False Prophets and Diviners. Having dealt with the problems associated with judgment oracles, Ezekiel now records two oracles directed against prophets of salvation (13:1–16) and against diviners (13:17–23). Both of these oracles have roughly the same form, that of the classic prophetic announcement of disaster. They begin with an

instruction to Ezekiel to prophesy (vv. 2, 17) and then move on to a woe oracle describing the crimes that the addressees have committed (vv. 3–7, 18–19). This description leads logically to an announcement of disaster, introduced with the formula "thus says the LORD" and sometimes containing additional references to the reasons for the judgment (vv. 8–16, 20–23).

The first judgment oracle is aimed at prophets in Jerusalem, who are predicting that the city will miraculously escape destruction, as it did in Hezekiah's time (2 Kings 19:35–37). Because of this misleading advice, the people in the city do not realize that they are in danger and therefore do nothing to save themselves. The activities of these prophets are well known from the book of Jeremiah, where they are portrayed as a persistent hindrance to Jeremiah's activities (Jer. 6:14; 8:11; 14:13–16). Although their point of view is deeply rooted in orthodox Jerusalemite theology, Jeremiah feels that their message during the final days of the siege is simply wrong, and he accuses them of lying and misrepresenting God's word (Jer. 23:9–32). This indictment of the peace prophets contains a number of phrases and motifs that are also present in Ezek. 13:1–16, and it is likely that the latter passage has been influenced by Jeremiah's at some stage in its formation. There is also some evidence of editing after the fall of Jerusalem, especially in 13:9, where the focus of the oracle suddenly shifts from Jerusalemite prophets to prophets in exile, who will not be allowed to reenter the land of Israel along with the rest of the returnees. This later editorial activity may also help to account for some of the repetitions in the passage, although it must always be remembered that Ezekiel's literary style is normally convoluted and highly ornamented.

The oracle against the peace prophets begins when God indicts them for inventing their prophetic message (13:1–7). They are accused of prophesying from their own minds (lit., "hearts") and then introducing these fabrications with formulas identifying them as divine oracles. Like jackals they inhabit ruins and feed on the dying and the dead. Furthermore, they have not built a wall to protect the people against their enemies and have not climbed high on the wall to fill the breaches made by the enemy battering rams (v. 5). The building of the wall refers to the prophet's responsibility to warn the people of approaching danger so that they may repent and save their lives. Unlike Ezekiel, who was specifically commissioned as a prophetic watchman to warn Israel to repent (3:16–21), the peace prophets speak of no danger, issue no warning, and thus leave the people unprotected. In addition, these prophets neglect a genuine prophet's second major duty, that of protecting the people by interceding with God on their behalf. This intercessory function of the prophet is elsewhere traced to Moses, who in the wilderness stood in the breach and protected Israel from God's wrath (Ps. 106:23).

Because of the damage that the peace prophets have done to Israel, God's hand will now be upon them, not as a sign that they are genuine prophets, but as a sign of judgment (13:9). The prophets have misled the people and built for them a wall held together with whitewash rather than mortar, a wall that appears to be solid but that will crumble in the face of God's stormy judgment (vv. 10–11). The divine judgment will now destroy the wall, the people, and the prophets who mislead them by building the insubstantial wall based on false hopes of peace (vv. 12–16).

The oracle against the prophetesses (13:17–23) also condemns them for inventing prophetic words and attributing them to God, but it concentrates on the prophetesses' work as diviners. The precise nature of their activities is unclear, but they apparently involved the making of articles of clothing to serve as amulets or to aid in divination (→ Amulet; Magic and Divination). The prophetesses may have also used barley as a means of divination, although the reference to grain and bread in v. 19 may be to the form of payment for their services rather than to the materials used in the process. Divinatory activities of this sort were condemned by Israelite law (Deut. 18:9–14), and God therefore accuses the diviners of profaning the divine name and destroying the people. Because of their crimes, the diviners' paraphernalia will be destroyed and their perverted oracles will no longer be allowed to ensnare the innocent.

14:1–11, A Warning to God's Prophets. Although Ezekiel's primary concern in these chapters is with false prophets and false interpretation of prophecy, he is reminded sharply in 14:1–11 that even God's genuine prophets must constantly be on guard against violating the divine will. At his call Ezekiel was warned not to rebel against the divine word that he would be given (2:8), and he is now cautioned against being overly influenced by the people in his audience.

The warning is triggered by a visit from some of the exiled elders (14:1). The purpose of their visit is not made clear, however, until God reacts to their presence by denouncing their reason for coming (v. 3). They have come to inquire of God. Inquiries of this sort required the prophet to serve as an intermediary between the human and divine worlds. The people would come to the prophet and present questions and requests directed to the deity. The prophet would mediate those requests to God and then would return to the people the divine response. Such a procedure was a normal part of religious life and was the preferred method of communicating with God. In Israel, inquiring of the prophet rather than the diviner was thought to be the proper method of determining God's will.

God's angry response therefore comes as a shock. These people have worshiped idols, and their sins now make God unwilling to listen to their requests (v. 4). Instead, God will respond to them directly in judg-

ment and destroy them from the midst of Israel (vv. 4–5, 7–8). The prophet is not to mediate their requests, but is allowed only to urge them to repent and reject their idols (v. 6). Furthermore, any prophet who is deceived by the people and who, as a result, presents their requests to God will share the fate of the sinners. Both will be cut off from the land and destroyed. In this way God will purge the evil that exists in Israel (vv. 9–11). The right to approach God through the prophet is not absolute, but depends on the obedience of the people. When they deliberately sin, access to God can be denied as part of the divine judgment.

14:12–23
Individual Salvation and God's Justice

Up to this point the book of Ezekiel has given the clear impression that no one in Jerusalem is without sin and that this fact will make the judgment on the city total and inevitable. Ezekiel has also spoken of the Israelites already in exile as rebels and prophesied that they too will be subject to further destruction. There have been a few references to a remnant that will return to the land (5:3–4; 11:14–21), but for the most part the fate of the exiles is bleak. However, even the brief references to a remnant would have raised a question in the minds of Ezekiel's audience about the mechanisms through which one might survive the Exile and become part of the restored community. A partial answer to this question can be deduced from 14:12–23, although the main point of the passage lies elsewhere.

Ezek. 14:12–23 consists of four hypothetical cases (vv. 12–20) and an application of these cases to the situation of Jerusalem (vv. 21–23). The four cases are given in typical legal form and deal with God's reaction to a hypothetical nation's sin, specifically the sin of trespass, an offense against something holy or the violation of a sacred oath (cf. Lev. 6:2–3). In each of the four cases, God sends a different punishment on the land: famine (v. 13), devastation by wild animals (v. 15), slaughter by the sword (v. 17), and pestilence (v. 19). The same point is then made in all four cases. God punishes everyone who is guilty. Even if three legendary examples of virtue, Noah, Daniel, and Job, lived in the land, their righteousness would save only their own lives and could not be transferred to their children in order to save them (vv. 14, 16, 18, 20).

The three examples mentioned are traditional, ancient Near Eastern figures who were renowned for their patience and goodness. Noah was, of course, the hero of the Flood story, who survived because in his generation he alone was righteous (Gen. 6:9). In this case he was even able to save his family. Job's patience and faithfulness were proverbial even in antiquity, and the old folktale of Job's trials became the starting point for the biblical book of Job (Job 1). Daniel cannot be the hero of the book of Daniel (the names are spelled differently in Hebrew), but is probably the legendary king Danel, the good and wise ruler who is the subject of the Ugaritic tale of Aqhat. The fact that Ezekiel uses three non-Israelite examples of righteousness to illustrate the principle that personal righteousness leads to individual salvation may hint that he considered this principle to be a universal one. He certainly develops it in great detail in chap. 18, where he applies it to the exilic community. However, the point of the examples in 14:12–20 is not to develop a doctrine of individual salvation, but to illustrate God's absolute justice. Only the guilty are destroyed; only the righteous are saved.

That this is the proper interpretation of vv. 12–20 becomes clear when Ezekiel applies the examples to Jerusalem (vv. 21–23). In keeping with what has been said in the book up to this point, the sin of Jerusalem is assumed, and the city is visited with all four of the previously mentioned acts of judgment: sword, famine, wild animals, and pestilence. Technically speaking, no one in the city is saved, as the righteous were in the hypothetical examples. The word "save" is not used in the application. Nevertheless, some people in the city, perhaps including some of the children of Ezekiel's exilic audience, do escape. However, their survival is not intended to indicate that they are righteous. Rather, they have been allowed to escape so that they can be living examples of the evil that provoked God to destroy the city. When Ezekiel's audience sees the evil in their own children, then the exiles will recognize that God acted justly in judging Jerusalem (vv. 22–23).

15:1–8
Meditation on the Vine

Ezekiel's oracle of the vine can be broken easily into two parts. The first part consists of a series of rhetorical questions concerning the vine (vv. 1–5), and the second part compares the vine to Israel (vv. 6–8). The meaning of the first question is uncertain, but probably has to do with the ultimate uses of the vine when compared with the other trees of the forest. Assuming that, in a poor land like Israel, everything that is given living space must in some way be utilitarian, God asks whether anything useful can be made from the vine. The answer is obviously no, since the vine contains too little usable wood, and its fibers are so flexible that it cannot even be made into an efficient peg (v. 3). Therefore the vine can only be used as a fuel. After it has been charred and partially burned, it is even less useful than it was originally. It is now only fit for further use as fuel, and it will therefore be consigned to the flames again (vv. 4–5).

The comparison between the uses of the vine and the fate of Jerusalem is clear. Like the vine, Jerusalem is worthless for any purpose except burning. God will therefore give up the city to destruction. If some escape the burning, as did the people who were left in the

city after the first deportation of 597 B.C., they will be burned again until the city is totally consumed (vv. 6–8).

16:1–63
Allegory of the Adulterous Wife

Ezekiel's long oracle comparing Israel to an adulterous wife is composed of three major parts: an extended metaphor of Jerusalem as an adulteress (vv. 1–43a), an uncomplimentary comparison between Judah and her sisters Samaria and Sodom (vv. 43b–58), and a promise of God's fidelity (vv. 59–63). The whole oracle is held together by the image of the adulterous wife, but there is no logical progression from one part to another.

16:1–43a, Jerusalem as Adulteress. The bulk of the oracle is devoted to developing an extended metaphor of Jerusalem as an adulterous wife. The idea of comparing Israel's relationship with God to the relationship between a faithless wife and her husband seems to have originated with Hosea, whose broken marriage became a symbol of the estrangement between God and Israel (Hos. 1–3). The image was further developed by Jeremiah, who compared the worship of other gods and the making of foreign alliances to adultery (Jer. 2–3). Ezekiel develops both of these themes, but sets them in the context of Israel's earlier history by giving a biography of God's eventual bride.

Throughout the metaphor the language of sexuality is explicit, and at times it appears crude to modern readers. Even in antiquity, the images were shocking, intended to make an instant impression on the prophet's readers. The images were also dangerous, for they were closely related to the themes of the fertility cults and were easily open to misinterpretation by Ezekiel's audience. Although the image of the adulterous wife is highly developed, the underlying historical reality is never completely hidden and sometimes intrudes into the metaphor, warping it slightly.

The extended metaphor is set within the classic prophetic form of an announcement of judgment to an individual. The faithless wife is confronted with a detailed indictment describing her crimes (16:1–34), and then judgment upon her is announced (vv. 35–43). The indictment begins with a reminder of Jerusalem's origins: her father was an Amorite and her mother a Hittite (v. 3). This statement reflects the actual background of the city. Before David captured it and made it his capital, Jerusalem was a Jebusite city closely related to the Hittites, and before that it was in Amorite hands. However, in the metaphor the young woman who is Jerusalem represents not only the pagan city that became Israel's religious and political center, but she also represents the nation of Israel as a whole. When the prophet begins to describe the young woman's life, it is the history of Israel that underlies the metaphor, not the actual history of the city. The actual history of the city does not concern Ezekiel again until vv. 40–42, when the reality of the impending siege of Jerusalem intrudes into the metaphor.

The young woman was rejected by her parents, and the proper birth rituals were not performed for her. Like many unwanted children in antiquity, she was left in an open field to die. However, God saw her in this pitiful condition and ordered her to live. When she grew to sexual maturity, God married her and made a covenant with her (v. 8), a reference to the covenant at Sinai where God and Israel entered into a special relationship (→ Covenant). As an attentive husband, God then gave to Israel all of the things that had been denied by her parents. She was bathed, anointed with oil, and clothed with fine garments, with the result that she became famous for her beauty (vv. 9–14). Lying behind this description may be a remembrance of the glorious days of the old Solomonic empire, but it is equally likely that Ezekiel here refers to no particular historical period.

Jerusalem was both the religious and the political capital of Israel, and Ezekiel therefore appropriately describes Israel's sins in both of these areas, tying the two together with images of prostitution and harlotry. The prophet apparently has no particular period of Israelite history in mind, for he elsewhere portrays Israel as sinful from the very beginning of its life as a nation (chap. 20).

Turning first to Israel's religious sins, God accuses the nation of committing adultery with other gods. The clothes that God had given her she used to make tent-shrines. Like the Israelites at Sinai, who melted down their jewelry to make an idolatrous golden calf (Exod. 32:1–10), so later Israel used God's gold and silver to make forbidden images in human form and then worshiped them with the clothing and food that God had provided (vv. 15–19). Included in the offerings were the children that Israel had born to God (vv. 20–21), a reference to a religious practice that existed in monarchical times outside of Jerusalem in the Valley of Hinnom, where children were sacrificed by fire to the underworld deity Molech (→ Molech).

However, Israel's sins were not only religious. She also committed adultery by making political covenants and treaties with other nations, thus violating her covenant with God and showing a lack of trust in God as Israel's sole protector and defender. These political arrangements were usually unfavorable to Israel, often resulting in the loss of Israelite territory (v. 27), but the nation continued to engage in them, even during the final years of its existence, when King Zedekiah vacillated between pro-Babylonian and pro-Egyptian foreign policies. Concluding treaties with foreign nations inevitably involved Israel's paying heavy tribute in return for political stability, a practice that Ezekiel sarcastically likens to a prostitute paying

her customers in her eagerness to commit adultery with them (vv. 23–34).

The judgment that God announces upon Israel is appropriate for the crime (vv. 35–43). In Israelite law adultery was punished by stoning the offender (Lev. 20:10; Deut. 22:23–29), a punishment in which the whole community participated to restore wholeness to the society. In this case, the agents of divine punishment will be the other nations, the very lovers whom Israel had desired. Specifically, the Babylonians will destroy Jerusalem, tearing down its altars, burning its houses, and slaughtering its inhabitants.

16:43b–58, Jerusalem and Her Sisters. Returning to his original image of Jerusalem as the child of pagan parents (v. 3), Ezekiel compares the city's conduct to that of her mother (vv. 43b–45). Just as Jerusalem's mother had neglected and rejected her, so Jerusalem has rejected her children by offering them as sacrifices to other deities (vv. 20–22). Furthermore, when compared to her "sisters," Samaria, the capital of the Northern Kingdom, and Sodom, the notoriously sinful city of antiquity, Jerusalem's sin appears even more blatant. Samaria and Sodom had both neglected the poor and committed all sorts of religious abominations (Gen. 18–19; 2 Kings 17), and God had therefore destroyed them. But the terrible sins of Jerusalem make these two proverbial sinners appear righteous. The conclusion to be drawn from the comparison is obvious. God destroyed Samaria and Sodom because of their sins, and Jerusalem's even greater sins will surely provoke a similar punishment (vv. 46–52).

After announcing judgment on Jerusalem, God unexpectedly promises that the city will be restored (vv. 53–58). However, the reinstated capital will not enjoy a preeminent status among the other nations (cf. Isa. 2:2–4). Rather, it will be restored only after Sodom and Samaria have been restored. Like her sisters, Jerusalem has become a proverbially wicked city, and she will continue to be compared with them even after the fortunes of all three have been changed. This comparison will shame Jerusalem, which will continue to be disgraced for what she has done.

16:59–63, God's Fidelity. The long and convoluted oracle of judgment ends with a surprising word of promise. Given the sharply negative tone of the first thirty-three chapters of Ezekiel, this promise seems out of place, and most scholars consider it a later addition. However, although the promise is at odds with the book's final literary shape, there is no reason to conclude that Ezekiel could not have delivered occasional promises before the fall of the city. Even though Jerusalem/Israel has been unfaithful to the marriage agreement with God and has committed adultery, God remains faithful to the covenant with Israel. This covenant is eternal, in spite of historical evidence to the contrary. Reversing the situation described in vv. 53–58, God now promises to forgive Jerusalem and restore its former preeminent status. Israel will truly know God in this act of grace and will never again rebel.

17:1–24
Allegory of the Eagles

Ezekiel's tale of the two eagles is called both a riddle (Heb. *chidah*) and an allegory *(mashal)*. The former term refers to an enigmatic saying that requires interpretation, while the latter refers to a comparison between two things. In the allegory, the kings of Judah are being compared to cedars and vines, and the kings of Babylon and Egypt are being compared to eagles. To understand the riddle, it is necessary to have some knowledge of political events in Jerusalem between the first deportation in 597 B.C. and the fall of the city in 586 B.C. (see Introduction above for historical details).

17:1–10, The Allegory. Although at first glance the tale of the eagles seems to resemble a fable in which animals or plants engage in actions appropriate to humans (cf. Judg. 9:7–15), the opening of the story indicates that it operates on a more symbolic level. A large eagle, traditionally considered a royal bird of great power, takes the top of a Lebanese cedar and plants it in a "land of trade." The cedars of Lebanon were famous in antiquity because of their size and strength and, consequently, were used throughout the ancient Near East as a building material, particularly in monumental royal construction projects. When Solomon built his royal residence and the Temple in Jerusalem, he imported large quantities of Lebanese cedar, and indeed one of his buildings contained so much of this wood that it was called "The House of the Forest of Lebanon" (1 Kings 7:2). Jerusalem, which is located on a mountain, is therefore appropriately symbolized in the allegory by Lebanon and the Davidic king by the cedar. The identity of the "land of trade" and the "city of merchants" (v. 4) is ambiguous at this point in the allegory. The reference becomes intelligible only against the historical background of the first deportation. After planting the cedar shoot in the foreign land, the eagle takes some of the "seed of the land," presumably the seed of "Lebanon," and plants it in fertile soil, where it flourishes. However, the cedar vine, for no apparent reason, reaches out toward another eagle, which transplants it to equally fertile soil (vv. 3–8).

At the end of the tale, God addresses Ezekiel in a new oracle, asking whether or not the vine will survive (vv. 9–10). The answer to this question is not obvious unless readers already understand the meaning of the allegory. Moreover, the divine replies that follow are equally puzzling. God supplies a negative answer to the initial question, suggesting that the first eagle will

pull up the vine without much effort (v. 9). In addition, the cedar is not deeply rooted enough to withstand the east wind, a natural force elsewhere associated with God's powerful acts in the world (Exod. 10:13; 14:21).

17:11–21, The Interpretation. Although Ezekiel's original audience would have immediately understood the allegory, God nevertheless provides an oracular interpretation of it. The first eagle is Nebuchadnezzar, who deported the Israelite king Jehoiachin and Ezekiel's fellow exiles to Babylon in 597 B.C. Nebuchadnezzar then placed the Davidide Zedekiah on the throne in Jerusalem and made a treaty with him, thus providing all the conditions necessary for political stability in the land. However, Zedekiah rebelled and sought military support for his revolt from the Egyptian pharaoh Psammetichus II, the second eagle of the allegory (vv. 11–15). Ezekiel, like Jeremiah (Jer. 27:4–15), considered this move not only a political blunder, but also a violation of God's will. Therefore the judgment will take place on two levels. On the human level, Nebuchadnezzar will besiege Jerusalem and deport Zedekiah to Babylon, where he will die. On the divine level, God will trap Zedekiah and judge him by taking him to Babylon, destroying his army in the process (vv. 16–21).

The interpretation of the allegory is straightforward and, for the most part, does not appear to have been crafted after the fall of Jerusalem. In fact Nebuchadnezzar was not able to capture Jerusalem easily (cf. v. 9), and the description of Zedekiah's fate (vv. 16, 17–21) does not reflect the actual events surrounding the fall of the city. Only in v. 17 has a later editor reinterpreted v. 9 as a reference to the fact that the Egyptian pharaoh did not come to the aid of the besieged Jerusalem.

17:22–24, An Oracle of Restoration. After the description of the certainty of judgment in the preceding verses, the announcement of restoration (vv. 22–24) comes as a surprise. God promises to select a Davidide from among the Babylonian exiles and restore him to the throne in Jerusalem. The monarchy will again flourish after the fall of the city. This oracle is not an interpretation of anything in the earlier allegory and is related to it only through the use of the same literary images. It is therefore likely that the promise was added to Ezekiel's original oracle after the fall of the city.

18:1–32
Questions About God's Justice

Like 12:21–28 and 33:10–20, 18:1–32 is essentially a disputation oracle that states a popular saying and then argues against it. The overall unit is composed of three parts: first, the statement of a proverb concerning intergenerational retribution and the arguments against it (vv. 1–20); second, the application of the principle lying behind the refutation to the stages of an individual's life (vv. 21–29); and third, a call to repent (vv. 30–32).

18:1–20, Intergenerational Sin and Punishment. The disputation oracle begins by quoting a proverb that was current in Jerusalem and probably also among the exiles: "The parents have eaten unripe grapes, and the children's teeth are set on edge." The meaning of the proverb is clear. One generation is suffering the consequences of a prior generation's actions. In the context of Ezekiel's historical situation, just after the first deportation, the use of the proverb implies that the exiles are being punished for the sins of their ancestors. This point of view was widely accepted by people in the prophet's own time and is represented to some degree by the book of Kings, which attributes the Exile primarily to the evils committed during the reign of Manasseh rather than solely to the deeds of the people living at the time of the fall of Jerusalem (2 Kings 21). Jeremiah also accepted this explanation, at least in part, and prophesied that the proverb will cease to be true only after God has brought the exiles back from Babylon (Jer. 31:29). In Ezekiel's oracle, however, God orders the people to stop using the proverb immediately. As the one who controls the lives of all humans, God decrees that children shall not die for their parents' sin. Only the individual who sins shall die (v. 4).

This principle by which God actually assigns punishment is then illustrated by three cases stated in legal form. In the first case (vv. 5–9), a righteous father lives because he has not committed iniquity, even though he may have a son who is not righteous. In the second case (vv. 10–13), the wicked son of a righteous father dies and bears the legal responsibility for his own death. The righteousness of the father cannot benefit the son. In the third case (vv. 14–18), the son of a wicked father sees the sins of his father and avoids them. The son lives and is not made to suffer for his father's sins.

In each of these three cases, Ezekiel defines righteous or unrighteous conduct by citing specific examples of righteousness or wickedness. As one might expect, Ezekiel's priestly background leads him to choose examples from the priestly laws, particularly from the Holiness Code (Lev. 17–26). Thus, the righteous person is one who does what is just and right, does not participate in ritual meals at mountain sanctuaries, does not worship idols (Lev. 19:4), does not commit adultery (Exod. 20:14), does not approach a menstruous woman (Lev. 18:19), does not violate the laws governing business practices (Exod. 22:25; Lev. 6:2, 4; 19:13; 25:14, 17, 36–37), feeds the hungry, clothes

the naked, and judges justly (Lev. 19:35). Conversely, the unrighteous person violates these prescriptions.

After giving specific examples, God summarizes the basic principle again. When the people ask why the righteous son did not die for the sins of his father, God replies that the son did what was right, and because of this he lived. Only the person who sins shall die (vv. 19–20).

Ezekiel did not create the principle of retribution illustrated in these verses. Deut. 24:16 already enunciates it clearly. Parents are not to be put to death for the crimes of their children, nor are children to be punished for the crimes of their parents. This law was intended to counter the practice of punishing all of the members of a criminal's family, even if they had no part in the crime (cf. Exod. 20:5; Deut. 5:9; Josh. 7:24–25; 1 Sam. 22:19; 2 Kings 10:1–11; 25:7). However, Ezekiel stresses a direct correspondence between sin and punishment more strongly than did his predecessors, and he does so for a very specific reason. Ezekiel seeks to emphasize the notion that the exiles and those who remain in the land are suffering for their own sins and not for the sins of prior generations. The people using the proverb imply that they are being punished without cause and that their present state is due to someone else's actions. Therefore the proverb must be rejected, and the exiles must admit their guilt.

18:21–29, Individual Sin and Punishment. After arguing against the popular proverb on the grounds that only the individual that sins shall die, Ezekiel extends the principle to successive stages in the life of a single individual. In this case two examples cast in legal form are provided. In the first case, a wicked person repents and thereafter lives a righteous life. As a result, his past sins are not remembered, and he lives (vv. 21–23). In contrast, the righteous person who commits iniquity dies for his sins, and none of his previous righteous deeds have any bearing on his fate (v. 24).

In contrast to the wicked people who are questioning divine justice, God in fact distributes rewards and punishments according to a clear and just principle. Only the righteous are rewarded, and only the wicked are punished.

18:30–32, A Call to Repent. In spite of the gloom that pervades most of the book of Ezekiel, the prophet's oracles on individual reward and punishment imply that some of the exiles may in fact escape destruction and may even live to return to the land. However, this goal can only be achieved by individual repentance and persistence in the righteous life. The oracle therefore ends with a call for the people to repent. Even though God is determined to punish the guilty, the deity takes no divine pleasure in the death of the wicked. God sincerely desires repentance, even though the possibility of its occurring is remote (vv. 30–32).

19:1–14
Laments over the Monarchy

Ezekiel's lament over the monarchy is divided into two parts. In the first part (vv. 1–9), he develops an allegory concerning a lioness and compares the fates of two of her cubs (vv. 1–4, 5–9). In the second part of the lament (vv. 10–14), the prophet shifts the images in the allegory and speaks of the fate of a maternal vine and her offshoots. Both parts make use of the poetic structure that is typical of Hebrew dirges. Each pair of lines in the dirge consists of a triply accented line followed by a shorter, doubly accented line. Dirges are normally addressed to the person or thing being lamented, and they usually emphasize the contrast between the addressee's present pitiful state and former glory.

19:1–9, Allegory of the Lioness. In the first allegory, a lioness raises a cub and teaches it to hunt, but when the young lion grows strong, it becomes a man-eater. The surrounding nations are alarmed and capture the young lion, taking it in shackles to Egypt (vv. 1–4). When the lioness sees that the cub will not return, she raises another cub. This one too becomes a man-eater, making cities desolate and terrifying their populations. Again the nations trap the young lion, and this time bring it in shackles and neckstock to Babylon so that it can never return to its land (vv. 5–9).

The historical reality lying behind the allegory is far from clear. Scholars agree that the first cub must refer to King Jehoahaz of Judah, who was the son of Josiah and Hamutal. After Josiah's sudden death, Jehoahaz reigned briefly until he was deposed by Pharaoh Neco and deported to Egypt, where he died (2 Kings 23:30–34). Even so, Jehoahaz was far from being the international threat pictured in the allegory, and it must be assumed that Ezekiel has inflated the power of the Judean monarchy for dramatic effect. The second cub could allude to either Jehoiachin, who had in fact already been deported to Babylon when Ezekiel wrote, or Zedekiah, the reigning monarch. The latter interpretation is attractive, because he too was a son of Josiah and Hamutal (2 Kings 24:18), a fact that would allow the dirge to be read narrowly as a comparison between the two sons of Hamutal who later became kings. Hamutal herself would then be the lioness of the allegory, and the dirge would have to be read as an anticipation of the deportation of Zedekiah to Babylon in 586 B.C. However, this narrow interpretation is undercut by the second allegory (19:10–14), where the mother seems to represent a corporate entity such as Jerusalem or the nation as a whole rather than a specific individual. It is therefore preferable to identify the lioness as Jerusalem, the royal house, the nation of Israel, or the tribe of Judah. Of these possibilities, the last has the advantage of accounting for the major images used in the allegory. The tribe of Judah

was traditionally symbolized by a lion (Gen. 49:9) and was the tribe from which the Davidic dynasty came.

19:10–14, Allegory of the Vine. In the second allegory the mother is compared to a vine that grew luxuriantly because of its favorable surroundings. Its strongest branches became scepters for rulers, and its height made it clearly visible from a distance. Then the vine was uprooted, and the east wind made it wither. The vine was burned and transplanted to a wilderness, where it will die in drought. Nothing will be left from which to make a ruler's staff.

The language of the allegory closely resembles that of chap. 17, and it is likely that the general subject matter is the same. However, the allegory is very general, and it is difficult to identify any of the symbols with certainty. The maternal vine is presumably Jerusalem, the royal house, or the tribe of Judah (as in vv. 1–9), and the strong branches represent the various great kings that arose during Israel's history, although no specific king can be readily identified. Rather, the allegory concentrates on the vine as a whole and deals with the fate of the Davidic royal house. In the allegory the vine is destroyed many times over, and it is likely that here, as elsewhere, Ezekiel's description has been colored by the traumatic events surrounding the siege of Jerusalem. Nevertheless, the main point of the allegory is clear. The Davidic dynasty can no longer flourish and will be utterly destroyed. Verse 14 seems to imply that, after its destruction, the Davidic line will not be restored, an idea that Ezekiel elsewhere rejects (37:24–28).

20:1–44
The History of Rebellious Israel

Ezekiel's judgmental account of Israel's history is highly complex and full of interpretive difficulties. The first part of the account follows a regular pattern (vv. 1–26), but later there are breaks in literary continuity that lead many scholars to suspect that Ezekiel or his disciples have elaborated the original text and introduced some confusion into the overall argument. At the same time, there is no scholarly agreement concerning the location of these editorial additions.

The whole chapter contains an uncharacteristically large amount of Deuteronomistic language and theology, a fact that seems to indicate that the prophet knew of and was influenced by the Deuteronomistic tradition. At the same time, the basic theology of the chapter is peculiar to Ezekiel. The same is true of some of the historical events mentioned. In such cases, it is necessary to conclude either that Ezekiel has remembered events that have left no other traces in the biblical record or that he is presenting a history that is already deeply colored by his own theological interpretation of Israel's past. Of these two possibilities, the latter is more likely.

20:1–4, Inquiring of God. The oracle is dated to August of 591 B.C. As in 8:1 and 14:1, the entire unit is presented as God's response to exilic elders who have approached Ezekiel to inquire of God. The subject of their inquiry is not specified, although it presumably had to do with the city of Jerusalem and its fate. However, as in 14:1, their attempts to communicate with God are cut short. Their sins have made such communication impossible, and God refuses to listen to their requests. Instead, Ezekiel is commanded to present an account of their past crimes, a task that he performs by giving his own version of Israel's early history.

20:5–26, From Egypt to Exile. Ezekiel's primary account of Israel's history consists of three episodes, all of which have the same basic structure. In each case God acts graciously toward Israel, but Israel responds by disobeying God's laws and by worshiping other gods. Because of the people's sins, God is determined to destroy them, but does not do so in order to protect the sanctity of the divine name.

Following this pattern, Ezekiel begins his account with the Israelites in Egypt before the Exodus (vv. 5–9). In Egypt God revealed the divine name to Israel and swore to bring the people out of Egypt and to give them a glorious land (cf. Exod. 6:2–8). In return, God required that the people reject the idols that they had worshiped, a requirement that is not recorded in the Exodus narratives in their present form (but note Josh. 24:14). However, the people did not listen, but continued to worship other gods. God therefore contemplated destroying them in Egypt, but finally did not do so in order not to profane the divine name. Such a decision is not recorded in the existing biblical accounts of the Exodus, but the stories of Israel in the wilderness do tell of two occasions when Moses saved the people by appealing to the necessity of preserving the sanctity of the divine name. After Israel created and worshiped the golden calf (Exod. 32:1–6) and after the people rejected the land that God had given them (Num. 14:13–19; Deut. 9:28), God threatened to destroy Israel, but was prevented from doing so by Moses, who successfully argued that such an act would dishonor the divine name by making it appear to the nations that God was unable to fulfill the promise of deliverance that had been made to Israel in Egypt. Ezekiel has apparently taken this motif and applied it throughout Israel's early history.

After the Exodus, the same basic pattern is repeated during the time of the first wilderness generation (vv. 10–17). From Egypt God led the people to Sinai, where they were given life-giving laws, including the distinctive law of the Sabbath (Exod. 20–40). However, Israel again rebelled and refused to obey the laws,

violating the Sabbath and worshiping other gods (cf. Exod. 16; 32). God again considered destroying the people in the wilderness, but did not do so in order to preserve the sanctity of the divine name. In this case too Ezekiel has generalized on isolated incidents that occurred during Israel's wilderness wanderings, but has overlooked the main historical point. God did in fact condemn to death all of the wilderness generation because of their refusal to accept the land (Num. 14:13–19).

God then turned to the children of the wilderness generation (vv. 18–26) and warned them not to follow in the ways of their ancestors. The second wilderness generation, however, was just as wicked as the first. God therefore determined to destroy them in the wilderness, but did not do so to protect the sanctity of the divine name. Instead, God swore to scatter the people among the nations (v. 23). Thus, according to Ezekiel, the Exile was decreed as punishment for Israel's sins even before the people entered the land (cf. Ps. 106:26–27). However, at the same time the prophet indicates that the Exile is not to be equated with the destruction of Israel. This refusal to interpret the Exile as the equivalent of the destruction of the nation provides an oblique note of hope in an otherwise dismal oracle.

This third example of Israel's rebellion is noteworthy not only because it was the occasion on which God decided to exile the people, but also because after this event God made it virtually impossible for Israel to improve its conduct. As punishment for their sins, God gave the people bad laws that would lead them to defile themselves by offering their children as sacrifices (v. 26). The reference here is to the law requiring the dedication of firstborn children to God (Exod. 22:29), a law whose ambiguity was later clarified by stipulations allowing firstborn children to be redeemed through animal sacrifice (Exod. 13:11–13; 34:20). It is likely that in Ezekiel's day people appealed to this law to justify their participation in the cult of Molech in the Valley of Hinnom outside of Jerusalem, where children were sacrificed to the deities of the underworld.

20:27–29, Israel in the Land. Ezekiel's treatment of Israel's life after it entered the land is strikingly brief and appears to be an intrusion into the flow of the argument. The prophet summarizes the people's behavior by saying that they worshiped other gods as their ancestors had done. This comment is anticlimactic after the preceding history leading from Egypt to the promise of exile.

20:30–44, Implications for the Future. At the end of his history of Israel's apostasy, Ezekiel is told to address the elders again concerning both the present and the future. Speaking to the present, God repeats the point of vv. 1–4. The elders have repeated the sins of their ancestors and therefore may not inquire of God through the prophet (vv. 30–31). At the same time, this refusal of the elders' inquiry does not mean that exilic Israel is doomed to a future without God. The people will not become like the rest of the nations, which worship idols (v. 32). Instead, God promises the people a new exodus, which will involve a purifying return to the wilderness (vv. 33–38). In the future the exiles will be gathered from the places where they have been scattered, and they will be led into a wilderness where God will impose divine kingship on them. Like a shepherd who counts sheep for sacrifice by making them pass under a rod, so God will examine the individual exiles and remove the rebels from them. The new wilderness will be a time of judgment, and the survivors will be obliged to obey the covenant (v. 37). Even though the exiles continue to rebel, they cannot cease to be God's people, and God will not finally reject them.

After this involuntary period of judgment and purification, God promises to bring the remnant back to the land and to reestablish worship. No longer will God refuse the people's request for an audience, but their offerings will again be accepted. The divine presence will return to the land, and the proper relationship between God and people will be restored. When the people witness these events, they will know God through acts of restoration rather than through acts of judgment, and then they will recognize their sins. In the end God will restore the people for the sake of the divine name and will not give them what they actually deserve (vv. 40–44).

20:45–21:32
Oracles of the Sword

In this section Ezekiel or his disciples have woven together several oracles that may have originally been written on different occasions. The collection opens with an allegory dealing with the southern forests (20:45–49). This initial unit is then linked to an oracle concerning the divine sword (21:1–7); this second oracle is presented as the interpretation of the opening allegory. The reference to the sword is the occasion for including two additional oracles dealing with swords: the song of the sword (21:8–17) and a description of the sword of the king of Babylon (21:18–32). By use of these thematic links the entire section coheres.

20:45–49, Allegory of the Forest. In this oracle Ezekiel is told to prophesy against the south, specifically the forest land of the Negeb. The divine message is that all of the trees of the forest, the green ones as well as the dry ones, are to be burned. The total burning will be a sign to everyone that God is the agent of the destruction. The symbolism of the allegory is unclear. Presumably the fire represents God's judgment, as it does elsewhere in Ezekiel, but the identity of the area to be burned is obscure. It is impossible to understand

the oracle literally, since the Negeb was a dry, desolate area of southern Judah that contained little vegetation of any sort and certainly no forests (→ Negeb, The). It is likely, therefore, that the prophet here refers simply to Judah as a whole. The references to the south would be appropriate if Ezekiel is thinking of Judah as the Southern Kingdom in contrast to the Northern Kingdom, Israel.

The vagueness of the allegory also impressed the prophet, who apparently did not understand what was being communicated. He therefore complained that his audience was accusing him of speaking only in figurative speech. Apparently in response to this complaint, God then provided the interpretation contained in the following oracle.

21:1–7, Unsheathing God's Sword. The interpretation supplied for the preceding allegory clearly identifies the object of God's wrath as Jerusalem and its sanctuaries. However, in the interpretation the prophet changes the agent of destruction from fire to sword. The reason for this shift is not clear, since both images are appropriate in descriptions of the Babylonian conquest of the city. As is true throughout Ezekiel, it is clear here that God is the actual destroyer of Jerusalem. It is a divine sword that will rage through the city, destroying both the righteous and the wicked together (vv. 1–5).

To dramatize the devastation foretold in the oracle, Ezekiel is commanded again to become a sign for the exiles (cf. 12:1–7, 17–20). He is to wail and mourn to indicate the seriousness of the loss of the city and the destruction of its inhabitants. When people ask the reason for his behavior, he is to respond by describing the terror that will inevitably come on the Jerusalemites as they anticipate their destruction (21:6–7).

21:8–17, The Song of the Sword. In the poem describing God's sword, the prophet communicates his dreadful message by using repetition and by piling up evocative images (cf. chap. 7). The result is a passionate, urgent song that fully captures Ezekiel's horror as he watches the divine sword do its deadly work. The poem begins with an ominous description of the sword's construction. It is sharpened and polished so that it can be an efficient instrument of destruction (21:8–11). With the preparation of the sword completed, the prophet's attention is drawn to the sword's purpose: the slaughter of God's people. The prophet is told to cry and wail when he realizes that Jerusalem cannot escape destruction. God will no longer use the sword simply to test the city's willingness to obey, but will use the blade only for slaughter (vv. 12–13).

After seeing the use to which the sword will be put, the prophet is himself drawn into the action. He is to clap his hands, and that act will make the sword fall on the people. God then joins the prophet's action, whereupon it becomes clear that the real agent of Jerusalem's destruction is God acting through the prophet (vv. 14–17).

21:18–32, The Sword of the King of Babylon. From the divine agent of Israel's destruction Ezekiel turns to the human agent, the king of Babylon. Just as the prophet was earlier told to dramatize the siege by drawing Jerusalem surrounded by the enemy (4:1–3), so now he is commanded to sketch the invasion route by which Nebuchadnezzar will come to Jerusalem. Ezekiel dramatically draws a fork in the road leading from Babylon. One of the road's branches leads to Jerusalem; the other leads to Rabbah, the capital of the Ammonites. The oracle then graphically describes the Babylonian king standing at the fork in the road and consulting various types of omens to determine which road to take. The omens all point to the road to Jerusalem, and the city's fate is sealed (21:18–23).

The significance of Ezekiel's oracle is immediately made clear. God has not forgotten Israel's sins. Therefore Jerusalem will be destroyed, and Zedekiah will be stripped of his royal robes and removed from the throne (vv. 24–27).

As an afterthought, Ezekiel or his disciples have added an oracle against the Ammonites (vv. 28–32). Although Ammon originally escaped when the Babylonian oracles directed the king toward Jerusalem, the Ammonites too will feel God's wrath. Against them will be turned the divine sword that had been prepared for use on Jerusalem.

22:1–31
Oracles Against the Uncleanness of Jerusalem

In this section Ezekiel or his disciples have assembled three oracles dealing with the impurity of Jerusalem and its inhabitants. The individual units may well have originated at different times, and the prophet has only loosely woven them together into a larger literary unit.

22:1–16, A City of Blood. The first oracle in the section fits the standard prophetic pattern of an announcement of judgment. The unit begins with a general indictment of Jerusalem for its crimes. The offenses of the city are of two general sorts: bloodshed and idolatry, i.e., crimes against people and crimes against God. Both types of crimes have made Jerusalem notorious among the nations and brought it to the brink of judgment (vv. 1–5).

The general indictment of the city and its inhabitants is then made specific by citing a representative list of sins (vv. 6–12). Some of these crimes are included in indictments elsewhere in Ezekiel (see esp. chap. 18). Many of the offenses are violations of priestly law as set out in the Holiness Code (Lev. 17–26). Included are mistreatment of parents (Exod. 21:17; Lev. 20:9); oppression of aliens, widows, and

orphans (Exod. 22:21–22; Deut. 14:29); desecration of holy things and Sabbaths (Lev. 19:30); slander (Lev. 19:16); eating ritual meals at pagan shrines; a variety of sexual offenses (Lev. 18; 20); and improper business practices.

On the basis of this indictment, God announces a judgment (vv. 13–16). Israel will be scattered in exile among the nations, and everything in Jerusalem that is impure will be destroyed.

22:17–22, The Smelting of the City. The image of God refining Jerusalem to remove its impurities is already present in Isa. 1:22, 25. Ezekiel here may be giving his own interpretation of Isaiah's earlier oracle. Both prophets refer to the ancient process by which silver was extracted from the ore in which it was embedded. During the first stage of refining silver, minerals were added to the silver ore, and the whole mixture was heated in a smelting furnace. The intense heat melted the ore and caused the metals mixed with the silver to form sulfides. At this point the smelters removed the metal sulfides (dross or slag) and discarded them. Then the silver, still mixed with some lead, was further refined.

In Isaiah's original oracle, the smelting image was used to describe the process by which God would purify the city until all of the wicked (the dross) were collected and discarded and only the remnant (the silver) remained. As is frequently the case, however, Ezekiel changed Isaiah's image dramatically. In Ezekiel's oracle, God begins by announcing in advance the results of the smelting process. Before the work even begins, God tells the prophet that all of Israel has become dross, which is fit only to be discarded. The people have become the bronze, tin, iron, and lead that are removed as slag. There is no silver, no one worth saving, among them (vv. 17–18; cf. Jer. 6:27–30). Because God has reached this conclusion, the prophet is to announce the people's punishment, which will take the form of burning them in the smelting furnace of Jerusalem. However, because there is no silver in this ore, nothing good comes from the smelting process. The furnace of God's wrath only melts the dross, which is then discarded (vv. 19–22).

22:23–31, An Indictment of Jerusalem's Inhabitants. In the last oracle in this section, the prophet addresses Jerusalem and condemns various leaders who should have tried to prevent the city's destruction but did not (cf. Zech. 3:1–8). It is important to remember that Ezekiel's audience in Babylon also contained some of Jerusalem's leaders, so the oracle pertains to them as well. Because of the actions of the leaders, Jerusalem remains impure. The leaders have taken treasure and destroyed people in the city. The priests, who should have been concerned with the purity of the city, have violated God's law, desecrated holy objects, and failed to distinguish the holy and the unholy, the clean and the unclean. The princes, who should have guaranteed justice, have murdered for unjust gain. The prophets speaking in God's name have lied to the people. The landowners ("people of the land") have committed robbery and extortion against the poor. When God looked for a prophet to protect the people from the divine wrath, no one could be found (cf. chap. 13). Therefore God has already poured out judgment on the leaders.

The way in which Ezekiel refers to the judgment as already having taken place (22:31) suggests that he is referring here to the judgment that occurred in 597 B.C., when the leaders in Ezekiel's audience were deported to Babylon. In this case the message is intended for the exiles, even though the oracle itself is addressed to Jerusalem. Alternatively, it is possible to interpret the entire oracle as a retrospective statement of the reasons for Jerusalem's fall. In this case the oracle would have been written after 586 B.C. by Ezekiel or his disciples.

23:1–49
Allegory of the Two Sisters

Chap. 23 contains an expanded allegory dealing with two adulterous sisters, Jerusalem and Samaria. Ezekiel first used this literary image in 16:43–63, and it is likely that chaps. 23 and 16 have influenced each other at various points in their compositional history. In addition, chap. 23 has undergone several later expansions at the hands of Ezekiel or his disciples, with the result that there are breaks in the continuity of the argument during the latter part of the chapter (vv. 35–49).

As he did in chap. 16, Ezekiel bases the allegory in chap. 23 on Hosea's image of God and Israel related to each other as husband and wife (cf. Jer. 2–3). Again Ezekiel develops this image in great detail, using graphic, crude, and explicit sexual language to portray Israel's adulteries. As in chap. 16, the prophet intends to shock his readers into realizing how drastically they have violated their covenant relationship with God.

23:1–34, The Judgment of the Sisters. In chap. 16 Ezekiel compared Jerusalem with her "sisters," the proverbially wicked cities of Samaria and Sodom, to dramatize Jerusalem's depravity. In chap. 23 the prophet uses the image in a more strictly historical way. He first tells allegorically the story of Samaria, the capital of the Northern Kingdom (Israel) after the political division of Ephraim and Judah following the death of Solomon. Samaria's history, which culminated in the city's destruction at the hands of the Assyrians, should have been an object lesson for Jerusalem, the capital of the Southern Kingdom (Judah), but Jerusalem did not learn from her "older"

sister (cf. Jer. 3:6–10). Therefore Jerusalem is condemned to share the same fate as Samaria. In developing the allegory, Ezekiel sometimes distorts or emphasizes too strongly the actual events of Israel's history, but in general the course of the allegory can easily be followed. The tale begins with two sisters who were the daughters of the same mother, a reflection of the fact that, until Solomon's death, Judah and Israel were both part of the larger nation of Israel. Ezekiel assigns the names Oholah and Oholibah to Samaria and Jerusalem, respectively, although the specific meaning of these names is not clear. Both are based on the Hebrew word meaning "tent," and the prophet may intend the names to evoke the preconquest period, when Israel lived in tents, or to refer to the tent of meeting, the portable shrine that housed God's presence until a permanent Temple was built by Solomon (→ Tabernacle). Some scholars have suggested more specific meanings for the names, although there is still much debate on this issue. It is possible that the prophet simply wanted to use two different names that resembled each other.

According to the allegory, the harlotries of the two sisters began in Egypt. Knowing that they were harlots, God nevertheless married them and had children by them (vv. 1–4). This picture of Israel's early relations with God closely follows the symbolic actions in Hosea 1 and 3 and may reflect the belief that Israel worshiped other gods while it was enslaved by the Egyptians, before the covenant ("marriage") with God was made at Sinai.

After this brief introduction to the history of the sisters while they were still together in Egypt, Ezekiel jumps to the time of the division of the Northern and Southern Kingdoms and traces their separate stories. In both stories he uses the adultery image primarily to refer to the practice of making political alliances with other nations, a practice he viewed as the equivalent of rejecting God's sovereignty (cf. 16:23–34; Hos. 8:9–10; Isa. 7:1–9). Thus Oholah played the harlot with the Assyrians, a reference to the Northern Kingdom's various treaties with Assyrian kings (2 Kings 15:19–22; 17:1–6). As a punishment for this crime, God gave Israel into the power of the Assyrians, her former lovers (Ezek. 23:5–10; cf. 16:35–42). Samaria was destroyed, and the Northern Kingdom ceased to exist (722/721 B.C.).

The story of Oholah/Samaria should have been a warning to Oholibah/Jerusalem and should have led her to change her ways, but this was not the case. She too committed adultery with the Assyrians and compounded that sin by inviting the Babylonians to commit adultery with her, even while she was still seeing her Egyptian lovers (23:11–21). Lying behind this indictment is Judah's long history of political alliances with Assyria (2 Kings 16:7–9; 18:1–36) and later with Babylon (2 Kings 20:12–21). This history continued up to Ezekiel's own time and culminated in Zedekiah's vacillating foreign policy that included leagues with both Babylon and Egypt (see Introduction above).

The description of Jerusalem's crimes leads directly to a graphic picture of her punishment (vv. 22–31). God will punish the adulteress by leaving her to the mercy of her former lovers, the Babylonians and all of their allies (v. 23; cf. 16:35–42). Now rejected by God, the adulterous wife is no longer under the protection of God's law, which mandated death by stoning as the penalty for adultery (Lev. 20:10; Deut. 22:22–24). The laws of other nations were not so kind. The Babylonians will mutilate the adulteress, strip her, and leave her to the mercy of her enemies. Her children will be killed and burned. Jerusalem will be exposed to the horrors of siege, capture, and exile. She will drink from the same cup as her sister, Samaria, and will share the same fate.

The reference to the two sisters sharing the same cup (v. 31) provides the occasion for the inclusion of a brief song that develops this image (vv. 32–34). The song, which may have been part of the original oracle or may have been added later, reinforces the point that Jerusalem will have to suffer all of the torments that Samaria suffered.

23:35–49, Supplementary Indictments. The remainder of chap. 23 contains several new indictments and announcements of judgment against Jerusalem. Much of this material seems to have been influenced by the contents of chap. 16 and may have been added to chap. 23 after the initial allegory was composed. The additional charges amplify the earlier oracle, but do so in a way that is anticlimactic after the allegory's horrifying description of judgment.

After a summary of the preceding oracle (v. 35), the prophet includes a new indictment of both sisters (vv. 36–42). Again the charge is adultery, but this time the adultery image clearly refers to the worship of other gods rather than to the making of foreign alliances (cf. 16:15–22). The people have profaned God's sanctuary and Sabbaths and have offered their children as sacrifices to the underworld deities (see commentary above on 16:1–43a [vv. 15–22]; 20:5–26 [v. 26]). They have invited foreign lovers to the Temple, presumably a reference to the introduction of foreign practices into Israelite worship (cf. 8:5–18; 13:17–23).

The importation of other gods is the equivalent of adultery (23:43–44). Therefore the sisters will be judged by "righteous men," who will impose the penalty for adultery (v. 45). The identity of these righteous people is uncertain. If the reference is to the Babylonians as the agents of God's punishment, which is the case in the rest of the chapter, then the prophet is clearly being ironic or else implying that the Babylonians are righteous when contrasted with Jerusalem. On the other hand, the reference may be to those in exile who have been able to repent and keep themselves

righteous (cf. 18:14–17). If so, then the prophet envisions a situation in which the righteous remnant of the exiles will participate in the judgment of the rest of Israel.

The penalty for adultery is referred to explicitly in 23:46–49, where God commands the prophet to call up the enemy army that will punish Israel. As is true elsewhere in Ezekiel's allegories, the literary image is invaded by the historical reality of the siege of Jerusalem. The adulterous Jerusalem will be stoned and killed by the sword. The survivors will be killed and the houses of the city torn down. The fate of Jerusalem will serve as a warning to the rest of the nations, and in the judgment Israel will come to know God.

24:1–14
Allegory of the Pot

Ezekiel's allegory of the pot takes the form of a brief song about preparing a pot and its contents for cooking (vv. 3–5). The allegory is then extended and obliquely interpreted (vv. 9–14), and this interpretation has in turn been expanded by a later addition (vv. 6–8). The result is an image that contains some inconsistencies, but the overall meaning of the allegory remains clear.

At the beginning of the allegory, God tells Ezekiel to record in writing the precise day on which the oracle is given. It is January 588 B.C., the beginning of the Babylonian siege of Jerusalem (vv. 1–2). The exiles, of course, will not receive word of the siege until later, and when they do they will then be able to recognize the truth of the prophet's earlier oracle.

Following the instructions concerning the date, God gives the allegory that the prophet is to utter. It is in the form of a song, instructing someone to fill a pot with water and fill it with pieces of prime meat and bones. The pot is then to be put on the fire and the meat cooked. Taken by itself, the song is innocuous, and if it were to be heard in isolation from its present context it might even be understood as a positive image of the preparation of a bountiful feast. However, the introductory note on the date of the allegory forces readers to give the image a more negative interpretation. It must now be connected with the Jerusalemites' earlier statement about Jerusalem: "This city is the cauldron, and we are the flesh" (11:3).

The first of the two expansions and interpretations of the allegory immediately develops this negative note (vv. 6–8). However, instead of focusing on the contents of the pot, as one might expect, this interpretation focuses on the pot itself. The bloody city of Jerusalem is likened to a corroded kettle, which contaminates everything in it. The contamination of the city stems from innocent blood that has been spilled within its walls, a reference perhaps to the oppression of the poor or to the deaths caused by the kings' foreign policies. No attempt has been made to atone for the blood or cover it, so God will now expose the blood and make atonement impossible. The pot will be emptied and purified (v. 6). If this reference is to be interpreted as part of the allegory, it may refer to the exiles of 597 B.C., who were removed from the city before its burning and purification in 587–586.

After this reflection on Jerusalem's sin, which appears to be a digression, there is a second interpretation that better fits the original allegory (vv. 9–14). The bloody city of Jerusalem and its inhabitants will be burned until people (the contents of the pot) are thoroughly cooked and charred. Then the city itself (the pot) will be burned until its impurities are removed. God will not spare the city again, but will burn it until it is pure.

24:15–27
The Death of Ezekiel's Wife

In 24:15–27 the prophet is again told to act as a sign for the exiles to dramatize for them what their own future will be. As is often the case, Ezekiel reports the sign as he experienced it and does not supply an interpretation until the meaning of the sign is actually revealed to him.

The symbolic act begins when God tells the prophet that "the delight of [his] eyes" will be taken away from him with a single stroke. In response to this event the prophet is not to weep, sigh aloud, or wear the clothes of mourners. He is to do nothing to make his grief public. This prophecy is immediately reported to the exiles, but its meaning is not immediately clear. To what does the phrase "delight of your eyes" (v. 16) refer? Is it a human being? If so, who is it? In the context of the beginning of the siege of Jerusalem, does it perhaps refer to the city itself? The ambiguity is not resolved until Ezekiel's wife dies on the evening of the day that the prophecy was reported to the people. Then the prophet responds as he was directed (vv. 17–18).

When the exiles inquire about Ezekiel's peculiar response to his wife's death, he interprets the sign for them (vv. 19–24). In this interpretation, the phrase "delight of your eyes" is given a double meaning. It refers to the Temple, which symbolizes God's presence in Jerusalem, and it also refers to the children whom the exiles were forced to leave behind in the city when they were deported in 597. God will desecrate the Temple, and the sons and daughters of the exiles will be slaughtered (v. 21). In response to these two events, the exiles are not to mourn publicly, presumably because the destruction was deserved in both cases.

At the end of the symbolic act, Ezekiel receives an additional divine word concerning the fatal day of the Temple's destruction. When the judgment actually takes place, a fugitive from the city will report the

news, and the prophet's dumbness will then be removed (vv. 25–27). This prophecy is finally fulfilled in 33:21–22.

25:1–32:32
Oracles Against Foreign Nations

After the last of the major judgment oracles against Jerusalem and Judah, Ezekiel has inserted a collection of judgment oracles against foreign nations. Similar collections appear in other prophetic books as well (Amos 1–2; Isa. 13–23; Jer. 46–51), and it may be that certain types of Israelite prophets were expected to deliver such prophecies as a form of protection or retaliation against the nation's enemies. For this reason judgment oracles against foreign nations are often considered the equivalent of promise oracles for Israel. By destroying Israel's enemies, God is in fact bringing salvation to Israel.

Although this view of the oracles may help to explain why Ezekiel placed them between oracles of judgment against Israel (chaps. 1–24) and oracles of promise (chaps. 34–48), it does not explain the purpose of the oracles. If the oracles were intended simply to predict divine vengeance against Israel's enemies and to reassure the besieged Jerusalemites, then one would certainly expect Ezekiel to have included oracles against Babylon in the collection. However, anti-Babylonian oracles do not appear. Rather, all of the nations condemned in the oracles either played some role in the events surrounding the destruction of Jerusalem or were active in trying to prevent Babylonian rule from being established in Palestine. Throughout the book Ezekiel's theological view of Babylon is that God, who is the true ruler of all nations, has chosen Nebuchadnezzar as a divine instrument to punish Israel for its sins. Therefore anyone who interferes with Nebuchadnezzar's actions is opposing the will of God and deserves to be punished.

The oracles in the collection contain an unusually large number of specific dates, although the arrangement of the oracles is not strictly chronological. The dates serve two functions. First, they anchor most of the prophecies in the period between the beginning of the siege of Jerusalem and its completion. The siege was a time of intense political activity in Israel, and many of the nations condemned in the oracles were involved in this activity in various ways. Their interaction with Jerusalem probably prompted the oracles dealing with their fate. Second, the dates are designed to guarantee the truth of the oracles by showing that they were actually delivered before the events they describe.

Although oracles against foreign nations are sometimes thought to be the work of exilic or postexilic disciples of the prophets, there is no reason to doubt that Ezekiel composed the oracles contained in chaps. 25–32. However, some of the oracles appear to have been heavily edited, either by Ezekiel himself or by his disciples.

25:1–17
Oracles Against Israel's Neighbors

The collection of prophecies against foreign nations opens with a set of oracles against four of Israel's nearest neighbors: Ammon (vv. 1–7), Moab (vv. 8–11), Edom (vv. 12–14), and the Philistines (vv. 15–17). All of these nations had a long history of contentious relations with Judah, but most of the indictments are rather general in character. When specific charges are made against a particular nation, they usually reflect events occurring after the fall of Jerusalem in 586 B.C. Although the indictments are not dated, the references to Jerusalem's fall suggest that most, if not all, of the oracles were produced after the city was destroyed. All of the oracles follow the same general literary pattern, that of the classic prophetic announcement of judgment. The indictment of the nation is introduced with the word "because," and the description of the crime is followed by an announcement of punishment, introduced by the word "therefore," often followed by the formula "thus says the LORD."

25:1–7, Against Ammon. Ezekiel records two oracles against Ammon. In the first (vv. 2–5), the Ammonites are condemned because they mocked Judah when the Temple was destroyed by the Babylonians. For this reason, Ammon is to be invaded by an unnamed people from the east, presumably the Babylonians or their successors. In the second oracle (vv. 6–7), Ammon is accused of rejoicing over Israel's destruction. As a punishment, Ammon will have to share Israel's fate.

25:8–11, Against Moab. Although there were long-standing political tensions between Judah and Moab, the Moabites are charged only with denying the special religious status of Judah and comparing the Judahites to the rest of the nations. Because Moab did not recognize Judah's privileged position as God's elect, Moabite cities will be invaded and given into the power of people from the east (cf. v. 4).

25:12–14, Against Edom. In contrast to the two preceding oracles, which treat theological themes, the oracle against Edom is purely political. Relations between Judah and Edom had been acrimonious for years before Jerusalem fell, but the Edomites earned the undying hatred of the late biblical writers by invading southern Judah after the Babylonians had destroyed Jerusalem (cf. Jer. 49:7–22; Obad. 1–14). It is not surprising that Ezekiel condemns the Edomites for this vengeful, opportunistic act. Because of their

crime, God will completely destroy them and leave their country a wasteland.

25:15–17, Against the Philistines. The indictment against the Philistines is also politically oriented. Like the Edomites, they too are charged with taking vengeance on Judah, although the precise events to which the prophet refers are unknown. It is possible that Nebuchadnezzar gave Judahite territory to the Philistines. Because of their crimes the Philistines will be destroyed by God.

26:1–28:26
Oracles Against Phoenicia

Ezekiel's oracles against Phoenicia focus on the island city-state of Tyre, which, along with Egypt, Babylon, and Assyria, was one of the major political powers in the ancient world. The island location of the city provided good protection from outside attack and allowed Tyre to participate in Near Eastern political intrigues with relatively little risk. At various points in its history Tyre paid tribute to Assyria and Babylon, but the Tyrian homeland was not successfully invaded until the time of Alexander the Great. Tyre's economy was always oriented toward the sea, and the city became immensely wealthy through an extensive network of trading relationships. In Ezekiel's own time Tyre was one of the nations that joined with Judah in an attempt to stop the Babylonian advance to the west (Jer. 27).

Ezekiel's opposition to Tyre is presumably grounded in its anti-Babylonian policies. Because he saw Babylon as God's chosen agent for the punishment of Jerusalem, the prophet interpreted Tyre's anti-Babylonian activities as a violation of God's will. In addition, Ezekiel may have traced some of the abominable religious practices in the Temple to Tyrian influence.

26:1–21, The Destruction of Tyre. Ezekiel's first oracle against Tyre is dated in March/April of 587/586 B.C. The actual date is uncertain because of textual variants, but the oracle is probably to be related to Nebuchadnezzar's siege of Tyre, which began shortly after the fall of Jerusalem. The siege lasted thirteen years and finally ended with the negotiation of a treaty between the two parties. The oracle as a whole consists of four sections. In the first section (vv. 1–6), God condemns the city for exulting over the additional trade that it will enjoy by virtue of Jerusalem's destruction. Because of Tyre's heartless reaction to Judah's suffering, the island kingdom will be engulfed by the surrounding nations, which will obliterate all signs of Tyrian occupation and reduce the island to bare rock. In the second section of the oracle (vv. 7–14), the general threat of punishment by the nations (v. 3) is made much more specific by describing in graphic detail the successful siege Nebuchadnezzar will mount against Tyre. This amplification of the earlier judgment oracle (vv. 1–6) was probably inspired by the beginning of the actual Babylonian siege, although vv. 7–14 must have been added to the chapter before the end of the siege, since Ezekiel's prediction of the Babylonian destruction of the city was never realized.

In the third section of the oracle (vv. 15–18), Ezekiel anticipates the reaction of the surrounding nations to Tyre's dramatic fall. Addressing the city directly, the prophet describes the way in which its death cries will shake the entire Palestinian coast and terrify the kings who were once Tyre's trading partners. They will put on mourning garments and lament the vanquished city. As in all laments (cf. chap. 19), the dirge of Tyre's neighbors contrasts the city's former glory with its present miserable state. The powerful, renowned city that once terrorized the entire coast has now disappeared entirely (vv. 17–18).

The final section of the oracle (vv. 19–21) expresses the significance of Tyre's destruction in theological terms. Although Nebuchadnezzar may be the direct cause of the city's demise, God is actually the one who causes Tyre to be engulfed in the waters of the cosmic sea, the primeval deep that lies beneath the earth. God will then consign the city to the underworld, the realm of the dead, where all life ceases. Ezekiel uses the image of a descent into the underworld elsewhere in his oracles against foreign nations (cf. 28:8; 31:14–18), and it is extraordinarily well developed in his oracles against Egypt (32:17–32). The latter passage in particular has probably influenced his description of Tyre's fate.

27:1–36, A Lament for the Ship of Tyre. In this long and beautifully crafted oracle, Ezekiel laments the anticipated destruction of Tyre at the hands of the Babylonians. Like his other laments (cf. chap. 19), this one describes first the previous glorious state of Tyre (vv. 3b–25a) and then its present grievous condition (vv. 25b–36). However, rather than describing the city's downfall literally, the prophet does so allegorically. Quoting Tyre's boast of its perfect beauty, Ezekiel compares the proud island to a beautiful, stately ship. The prophet first describes the beauty of the ship's construction (vv. 3b–7). The materials in the ship, like the wealth of Tyre itself, came from countries throughout the Mediterranean basin and represented the finest quality that the ancient world had to offer: fir from Senir, cedar from Lebanon, oaks from Bashan, pines from Cyprus, linen from Egypt, and purple goods from Cyprus (Elishah). The crew that operated the ship and made possible Tyre's extensive trading activities likewise came from a wide variety of locations (vv. 8–11).

After dealing with the ship and its crew, Ezekiel turns to the merchandise that the ship carried. Tyre

derived its income from transporting cargo from one city to another along the Mediterranean coast, so the prophet provides a detailed account of the sorts of goods that would be loaded at each port (vv. 12–25a).

At the end of its rounds, the heavily loaded ship headed into deep water, where it met disaster. A strong east wind wrecked the ship, and all its crew and cargo sank into the sea (vv. 25b–27). The wind in this case probably represents the Babylonian army, which Ezekiel had already predicted would destroy Tyre (26:7–14).

All of Tyre's trading partners then mourn for the destroyed ship (vv. 28–31) and raise their own lament (v. 32). They describe Tyre's former trading activities, which enriched both the city and the entire region (v. 33), and then they record their horror at Tyre's disappearance (vv. 34–36).

28:1–19, Oracles Against the Rulers of Tyre. In chap. 28 Ezekiel records two prophecies against the rulers of Tyre (vv. 1–10, 11–19). Both of these oracles share a similar theme, although they are quite different in form. In both cases the prophet condemns the ruler for his pride and speaks of his downfall in mythological terms. Because of this mythological dimension, many scholars see behind the oracles a Mesopotamian or Canaanite myth in which a primeval figure, who lived in a fruitful garden on a cosmic mountain, was deposed and sent into the underworld as punishment for a sin he had committed. Traces of such a myth are alleged to exist in Genesis 2–3 and Isa. 14:12–20, but to date no myth resembling the scholarly reconstruction has been found in extrabiblical sources.

In the first prophecy (vv. 1–10), Ezekiel delivers a standard announcement of judgment against the prince of Tyre. In the initial indictment (vv. 2–5), the prophet amplifies a prominent theme of chap. 27, Tyre's pride in its immense wealth and power. Ezekiel accuses the prince of actually claiming to be God or at least of claiming divine wisdom. Like the legendary Danel (see commentary above on 14:12–23), the prince was indeed wise and used his wisdom to amass enormous wealth, but his wisdom also led him to claim equality with God. Because of the ruler's pride, he will be the target of divine judgment (vv. 6–10). God will bring strangers (presumably the Babylonians) against him and will destroy his wealth and power. They will kill him, forcing him into the underworld, the realm of the dead. There the once proud prince will become vividly aware that he is only human.

In the second prophecy (vv. 11–19), Ezekiel raises a lament over the ruler of Tyre and describes his downfall in mythological terms. The prince was once perfect in wisdom and beauty and lived in Eden, the garden of God (cf. Gen. 2–3). In the garden the ruler was dressed in garments covered with precious stones and was accompanied by a guardian cherub. The ruler was in fact perfect, until he committed an unnamed sin. Because of this sin, God cast the ruler from his mountain abode, and the cherub drove him from the garden. The ruler will be exposed before the nations and consumed by divine fire because he defiled his sanctuaries (v. 18); all people will be appalled because of his dreadful fate.

Although it is certainly possible to interpret the oracle as it stands as a description of the anticipated destruction of Tyre at the hands of the Babylonians, there are several features of the prophecy that suggest Ezekiel may be likening the fate of the prince to the fate of the Zadokite high priest in Jerusalem, who in Ezekiel's view defiled the sanctuary there (cf. chap. 8). In v. 13, the list of precious stones that adorned the Tyrian prince is identical to the list of stones on the breastplate of the Israelite high priest (Exod. 28:17–20; 39:10–13). In v. 14, the cherub is reminiscent of the cherubs that flanked the Ark in the Holy of Holies of the Jerusalem Temple, while the fire stones may recall the glowing coals on the Temple altar. The cherub's expulsion of the ruler resembles Ezekiel's description of the cherub that provides the fire to destroy Jerusalem (10:1–8). Finally, the description of the ruler's fate resembles the descriptions that Ezekiel provides throughout the book when he describes Israel in exile. If these references to Israel in 28:11–19 are intentional, then the oracle may have a dual function. In its present context it is certainly a condemnation of the pride and power of Tyre and expresses the prophet's hope for that city's destruction. But Ezekiel's readers could hardly have missed seeing in the oracle reminders of their own sin, which led to their expulsion from Jerusalem. In reading this oracle they were confronted again with the prophet's sharp message of judgment. They were in exile because of their own crimes and were no better in that respect than their pagan neighbor.

28:20–23, Oracle Against Sidon. To the collection of Tyrian oracles, Ezekiel has appended a short oracle against Sidon, another Phoenician coastal city that depended on trade for its livelihood. The judgment is described in very general terms, and no reason for God's anger is given. In Ezekiel's day Sidon had ceased to be a major political power and was probably already under Babylonian control. The city regained some of its former importance from about 586 to 573 B.C., and it is possible that the oracle is a late addition to the book.

28:24–26, A Promise to Israel. At the end of this large collection of judgment oracles against Israel's neighbors, Ezekiel has added a promise oracle to Israel. At first this oracle appears to be out of place, but it must be remembered that prophecies of judgment against Israel's enemies can also be considered oracles of reassurance to Israel. This interpretation of the preceding collection has apparently prompted the

prophet to make the implied reassurance explicit. The oracle proclaims that in the future Israel's neighbors will be able to do no harm to God's people. Israel will be gathered from exile and brought back to dwell securely in the land. God will be faithful to the divine promises to Jerusalem, and when the nations see this faithfulness, both Israel and the other nations will recognize God's power.

29:1–32:32
Oracles Against Egypt

Ezekiel's seven oracles against Egypt make up the book's largest collection of prophecies against foreign nations. The reason for the prophet's extraordinary concern with Egypt is clear. Egypt was normally viewed as Israel's traditional enemy, the nation that had originally enslaved the Israelites, thus prompting God's great act of deliverance in the Exodus (cf. 20:5–7). After the Exodus, the two nations continued to interact politically, and on a number of occasions Israel and Judah looked to Egypt for help in resisting the power of the Assyrians and the Babylonians. However, this sort of reliance on Egypt almost always turned out badly for Israel. In Ezekiel's own time, Egypt's promise of aid had led Zedekiah to rebel against Nebuchadnezzar, an act that the prophet predicted would lead to Jerusalem's destruction (chap. 17). In fact Pharaoh Hophra did make an attempt to relieve the city during the Babylonian siege, but he was not successful. Thus in Ezekiel's eyes Egypt was not only a traditional enemy and an unreliable ally, but was also the nation most fully devoted to opposing God's plan to use Nebuchadnezzar to punish Jerusalem. For all these reasons, the prophet's anti-Egyptian oracles are particularly harsh.

29:1–16, Oracle Against the Pharaoh. Ezekiel's first oracle against Egypt is dated January 587 B.C. and was probably prompted by Pharaoh Hophra's unsuccessful attempt to raise the Babylonian siege of Jerusalem. The oracle consists of three parts. In the first part (vv. 3–6a), the pharaoh is compared to a sea monster dwelling in the Nile. God, however, will subdue the monster, catching it with a hook as one catches a fish and throwing it into the desert as food for scavengers.

This initial image of judgment is expanded in the second part of the oracle (vv. 6b–9a), which also gives the reasons for the pharaoh's punishment. Egypt has been an unreliable ally, a weak reed that breaks and injures anyone who leans on it for support (cf. Isa. 36:6). For this reason God will completely destroy Egypt with the sword and will make the country a wasteland. The final portion of the oracle (vv. 9b–16) amplifies the judgment still further and describes Egypt's fate in terms that closely resemble those that the prophet used earlier to describe the judgment on Judah (cf. 4:4–8; 20:32–38). God will desolate Egypt from one end to the other so that the land cannot be inhabited for forty years. The people will be scattered in exile among the nations, but at the end of forty years God will gather the Egyptians again and return them to their land. However, the restored Egypt will have only a shadow of its former power.

29:17–21, The Substitution of Egypt for Tyre. This oracle, the latest dated oracle in the book, is set in April of 571 B.C., shortly after the end of Nebuchadnezzar's unsuccessful siege of Tyre. The prophet or his disciples were apparently worried that the earlier prophecies against Tyre had not been fulfilled. To explain this situation, God tells Ezekiel that Egypt is to be given to Nebuchadnezzar as compensation for the effort he expended trying to capture Tyre. When Babylon finally plunders Egypt, Israel's own monarchy will be restored (v. 21). As later events developed, Ezekiel's substitute prophecy against Egypt was not fulfilled either. Nebuchadnezzar apparently did campaign in Egypt and may have even exacted tribute from the pharaoh, but the country was not destroyed in the way that the prophet predicted.

30:1–19, Prophecies Against Egypt. This collection of oracles contains three undated prophecies against Egypt. The first (vv. 2–9) predicts the coming of the day of God's judgment on Egypt. The precise nature of the judgment is unclear, but the evocative language used to describe it is reminiscent of that used in earlier prophecy to describe God's judgment of Israel (cf. Amos 5:18–20; Ezek. 7:10–13). The second oracle (vv. 10–12) makes the agent of judgment clear. Nebuchadnezzar will ravage Egypt just as he destroyed Israel. The Nile, Egypt's reliable source of life-giving water, will dry up, and the land will become desolate. The third oracle (vv. 13–19) elaborates further on the extent of the destruction by mentioning specific cities (mostly in the delta) that are to be destroyed.

30:20–26, The Pharaoh's Broken Arm. In April of 587 B.C., shortly before Jerusalem's fall, Ezekiel received an oracle in which God claimed to have already broken the arm of the pharaoh so that he could no longer wield a sword. The oracle is repetitious, but its point is clear. God will strengthen the power of Nebuchadnezzar against Egypt, and the Egyptians will not be able to defend themselves. As a result they will be scattered in exile among the nations.

31:1–18, Allegory of the Cedar. This allegory comparing the pharaoh to a Lebanese cedar came to Ezekiel in June of 587 B.C. In it God likens the Egyptian to a great cedar, which in fact is the mythological world tree. Its top reaches the clouds and its roots grow down

into the underworld, where the subterranean waters of the great deep nourish the tree so that it flourishes and provides shade and shelter for animals and nations. Even the trees in the garden of Eden are not its equal (vv. 1–9).

In the interpretation of the allegory (vv. 10–14), the great height of the tree, which seems to be a positive image in the allegory, is interpreted negatively as a symbol of the pharaoh's pride in his great power. Because of his pride, he will be cut down like a tree and be sent into the underworld. There the pharaoh, who, like all Egyptian rulers, claimed to be divine, will discover that he is mortal like all humans. When the pharaonic tree is felled and sent to Sheol, the realm of the dead, the other trees that depended on the great tree will also be cast down into the netherworld. Egypt's allies will share its fate when the nation falls (vv. 15–18).

32:1–16, Lament over the Pharaoh. In March of 585 B.C. (MT) or 586 (LXX), after the fall of Jerusalem, Ezekiel was commanded to deliver a lament over the pharaoh. However, the lament departs from the usual pattern in a significant way. Although a lament normally contrasts the addressee's former glory and present ignominious condition (cf. chap. 19), here the description of the pharaoh's present condition is replaced by an announcement of coming judgment. The lament is anticipatory and looks forward to what can be said of the pharaoh when God finally punishes Egypt for its pride. The account of the coming judgment is given in very general terms, some of which recall earlier anti-Egyptian oracles. The pharaoh, who considers himself a proud and powerful lion, is in fact a sea monster (cf. 29:3–5), which God will capture and expose as carrion in the open field. When Egypt is destroyed, the heavens themselves will grow dark, just as they did when God plagued Egypt before the Exodus (32:2–8; cf. Exod. 10:21–23).

The general images used in the lament are made specific when God reveals that the cause of the pharaoh's downfall will be the king of Babylon, through whom God will act to destroy Egypt (vv. 9–16). Other nations will be appalled at Egypt's degradation. All of its people will be slaughtered, and the land will be uninhabited.

32:17–32, Egypt in the Underworld. In April 586 B.C. or 585 B.C., Ezekiel was again told to utter a lament against all the people of Egypt. This time the dirge takes the unusual form of a trip through the underworld. The Egyptians, who once boasted of their power and beauty, are made to share the fate of those who are murdered and thus die unnaturally. They go down into Sheol, where they meet other murderers, who were themselves slain. Assyria, Elam, Meshech, Tubal, Edom, and Sidon all preceded Egypt into the underworld, but the anticipatory lament is also an assurance that Egypt will soon join them and share their common fate.

33:1–33
The Fall of Jerusalem

In chap. 33 the long anticipated report of the fall of Jerusalem marks the turning point of the book (vv. 21–22). After this climactic event, Ezekiel turns from announcing Israel's judgment to delivering oracles of salvation. Before making this shift, however, the prophet inserts several prophecies that seem simply to repeat earlier material in the book. It is important to recognize that these repetitions are not redundant, but are an important part of Ezekiel's message at this crucial point in Israel's history.

33:1–9, The Watchman's Call. The account of the fall of Jerusalem is prefaced by a repetition of Ezekiel's call to be a prophetic watchman (vv. 1–9). The description of the watchman's task is first given in general terms (vv. 2–6), and then Ezekiel is again commissioned (vv. 7–9). The prophet's call repeats virtually verbatim much of the call narrative in 3:16–21, and the basic point of the address is the same (see commentary above on 3:16–21). God cautions the prophet that he must issue the prophetic warning to the people or forfeit his own life. Although the fall of Jerusalem is a turning point in the history of Israel, the prophet's task remains the same after the fall as it was before. The destruction of the city has done nothing to change the fact that the people are still sinful. They must therefore be given the prophetic warning if even greater judgment is to be prevented from occurring in the future.

33:10–20, Individual Punishment and Reward. After recommissioning Ezekiel, God repeats the message of 18:21–32 as an indication of what the prophet must say to the people (see commentary above on 18:21–32). The people who survive the destruction of Jerusalem, whether they live in Judah or in Babylon, are not to interpret their survival as a sign of their righteousness. They are still rebels, and the basic principle of chap. 18 still applies to them. If they repent of their wicked ways and remain righteous, they will live. This is what God intends (v. 11). However, if they refuse to repent or if they turn away from righteousness, then they will die for their sins.

33:21–22, The Fall of Jerusalem. Given the way in which Ezekiel has caused his readers to anticipate the fall of Jerusalem, the actual account of the event is surprisingly brief. Word of the city's defeat arrived in Babylon in January of 585 B.C., roughly six months after the actual event. At this moment the prophet's

dumbness was removed, and he entered a new phase of his work (see commentary above on 3:22–27).

33:23–29, The Fate of the Survivors. Immediately after the fall of Jerusalem, Ezekiel delivered an oracle to survivors of the siege who were still living in Judah. They had apparently interpreted their survival as an indication of God's favor and were now laying claim to the land and were thus also claiming to be the true Israel (v. 24; cf. 11:14–21). In the oracle God emphatically rejects the refugees' claim, pointing out that they still worship idols and commit all sorts of social abuses. God indicates that they too will be destroyed, with the result that the land will be uninhabited. When this devastation occurs, the only hope for Israel's restoration will lie with the exiles in Babylon.

33:30–33, Israel in Babylon. Although Israel's last hope depends upon the exilic community in Babylon, the chapter closes on an ominous note. The Babylonian exiles can live and be restored to the land only if they admit their sins and heed the prophetic warning to repent (vv. 10–20). However, God reminds Ezekiel that the people do not understand what he is saying. They come for oracles, but to them his words are no more than songs that entertain rather than edify. If this situation continues, an additional judgment on the exiles cannot be avoided.

34:1–39:29
Oracles of Hope and Restoration

After the fall of Jerusalem, Ezekiel could concentrate on delivering words of salvation to Israel, although these words are sometimes still associated with judgment. As a class, the prophecies of salvation do not have the consistency of theme that pervades the judgment oracles in the first part of the book, and it is likely that the prophet's views on the future went through several stages of development in the early years of the Exile.

34:1–31
Israel and Its Leaders

In chap. 34 Ezekiel has collected several oracles dealing with Israel's leaders. He expresses their relationship to Israel by using the image of the shepherd, an old Near Eastern image that was usually used to describe the role of the king, but that could be employed to characterize other leaders as well.

34:1–10, Against the Shepherds. Like Jeremiah (Jer. 2:8; 10:21; 22:22; 23:1–8; 25:34–37; 50:6), Ezekiel believed that many of Israel's problems could be traced to the fact that the people had been misled by their leaders, particularly by their kings. In 34:1–10 God presents an indictment against Israel's shepherds, who have destroyed sheep for their own gain and have not taken proper care of the weak and sick. As a result, the sheep have been scattered (vv. 2–6). This indictment seems to attribute the Exile to the failings of Israel's leaders, rather than to the sins of individual Israelites, and is thus a slightly different perspective on the Exile than the one that the prophet usually gives. Speaking not only to the past but also to the present leaders of the exilic community, God warns that the leaders will be held directly responsible for the people in their charge (vv. 7–10).

34:11–16, God as Israel's Shepherd. In place of the corrupt shepherds, God promises to take personal responsibility for the exiles in the future. As the shepherd who will gather the sheep that have been scattered, God will reassemble the exiles and restore them to the land of Israel, where God will care for the sick and the weak.

34:17–24, Judgment of the Sheep. From oracles against Israel's leaders, Ezekiel turns to the people themselves. Continuing to use the image of sheep and shepherd, God warns that there are sheep that are taking all of the good pasture and even fouling the drinking water so that the rest of the sheep cannot drink (vv. 17–19). These fat sheep, which push the weaker sheep away from water and food, will be separated from the flock, although the precise nature of their fate is unclear. God will then give the remaining sheep a new shepherd, David, who will again rule over them.

The precise meaning of this allegory is not clear, although it certainly implies that some of the exiles are making it difficult for the rest to survive. Ezekiel may be identifying the leaders of the exilic community as the fat sheep, or he may be thinking of the wicked who have refused to heed the prophetic warning to repent. In any case, the oracle suggests that there were conflicts among groups of exiles and that only some of the exiles, perhaps the members of the prophet's own community, would be brought back to the land, where the Davidic monarchy would be restored.

34:25–31, The Covenant of Peace. When the weak sheep have been restored to the land and the Davidic dynasty reestablished, God promises to make a new covenant with Israel (cf. Jer. 31:31–34). This covenant will be a covenant of peace, which will restore proper and harmonious relationships of all sorts in the land. Israel will again know God not in acts of judgment, but in an act of restoration. The people's shame will be removed, and they will be made to dwell securely in their own land. As a symbol of this renewed relationship with God, the land itself will no longer be an enemy of its inhabitants, but will willingly yield its fruit to sustain them (cf. Gen. 3:17–19).

35:1–36:15
Edom and Israel

Returning to the theme of 25:12–14, Ezekiel delivers a sharp oracle of judgment against Mount Seir, the home of the Edomites (35:1–15). This oracle and the one that follows it (36:1–15) are somewhat convoluted and appear to have been subject to several editorial expansions, an indication of the hatred that later writers continued to have for Edom. Lying behind the oracles are the Edomite attempts to occupy Judahite territory after the fall of Jerusalem, and it is even possible that Edom aided the Babylonians in the final battle against the city.

In the indictment against Mount Seir, God recalls the long history of enmity between Edom and Israel and alludes to Edom's unreliability as an ally (35:5). Because of this, Mount Seir will be made a wasteland, and its inhabitants will be held responsible for the Israelite blood that they have shed (vv. 3–4, 6–9). Referring to Edom's boast that it could now take Judahite territory unhindered (vv. 10, 12), God swears to desolate Mount Seir and to destroy Edom for its anger and envy (vv. 14–15).

After delivering an announcement of judgment to Mount Seir, God turns to announce restoration to the mountains of Israel (36:1–15). Although in the past God had decreed judgment against these same mountains (chap. 6), they will now be inhabited. Furthermore, God supplies a reason for giving this promise to Israel, something that is fairly unusual in biblical prophecy, which rarely mentions God's motives for bringing salvation. Because the Edomites have laid claim to God's land and have helped to destroy the mountains of Israel, which have become an object of reproach among the nations, God will make the mountains fruitful again and will repopulate them with the returned exiles. The mountains will now sustain the Israelites and will no longer be an object of reproach.

36:16–38
The Vindication of God's Holiness

After the prophecy of the restoration of the mountains of Israel, Ezekiel has inserted a remarkable oracle that signals a radical shift in his views on salvation. Up to this point the prophet has stressed the necessity for the exiles to repent and to remain righteous if they were to return to the land (chaps. 18, 33). However, in this oracle God reveals that the exiles will be brought back even though they are still wicked.

The oracle begins with a brief introduction (vv. 16–21), which rehearses Israel's history and the reasons for the Exile. When the people were still in the land, they defiled it by worshiping idols and committing crimes against each other. Therefore God sent Israel into exile (cf. chaps. 16, 20, 23). However, even in exile they profaned the divine name, because their presence implied that God was not capable of maintaining them in the land as a holy people (see commentary above on 20:1–44).

To protect the divine name, which in this oracle almost assumes the status of an independent entity (cf. Deut. 12), God promises to gather the Israelites from exile and bring them back to the land. There God will purify them and remove the idols that they continue to worship. God will give the people a new heart of flesh so that they will again be sensitive to the divine word (cf. 11:19; Jer. 31:31–34). Filled with God's spirit, Israel will now be able to observe the laws that they could not obey previously. Because of God's gracious acts, the people will finally recognize their sinful past and will remain obedient with the help of the Spirit (vv. 22–32).

At the conclusion of the oracle, the general promises of vv. 22–32 are made specific. The deserted cities of Israel will be repopulated, and the land will again be tilled. When the land again becomes fruitful, the surrounding nations will recognize God's hand at work (vv. 33–36). The nation will prosper and increase, and God will again be responsive to Israel's requests. The divine-human relationship that had been broken before the Exile will finally be restored (vv. 37–38).

37:1–28
Israel's Restoration

Further details concerning Israel's restoration are presented in chap. 37, which consists of an allegorical vision (vv. 1–14) and an oracle on the nature of the restored community (vv. 15–28).

37:1–14, The Valley of Dry Bones. Ezekiel's dramatic vision of the valley filled with dry bones is undated, but it must have been received after the Exile had been under way long enough for the people to have lost their hope of ever returning to the land. Unlike the prophet's earlier visions (1:1–3:15; chaps. 8–11), this one is allegorical. However, the prophet still follows his usual practice of leading his readers through the vision as he experienced it (vv. 1–10). Only after the vision has been described in all of its complexity does he provide an interpretation (vv. 11–14).

The vision begins when God transports the prophet by means of the Spirit (cf. 3:12–15; 8:3) and brings him to a valley or plain, presumably the same plain where Ezekiel saw his initial vision of God's presence in Babylon (1:1–3:15). The valley is full of bones, which have lain on the ground long enough to be stripped of their flesh and dried by the sun. God leads the prophet on a tour through the valley, and the prophet is impressed by the number and dry condition of the bones. God then asks the prophet if the bones can be made to live again. The prophet seems genuinely surprised at the question, since the reanimation of such old bones seems out of the question, and he

replies that only God can answer that question. By way of response to the prophet, God invites Ezekiel to participate directly in the vision rather than simply observing it. He is to prophesy to the bones and command them to reassemble themselves and clothe themselves with flesh. When the prophet does what God commands, the bones begin to arrange themselves in their proper order with a noise that shakes the valley, and then they array themselves with flesh. The prophet is then ordered to prophesy to the wind, which enters the bones and supplies the life-breath that reanimates them (vv. 1–10; cf. Gen. 2:7). Just as in an earlier vision Ezekiel's prophetic word began the judgment and death of the people (11:13), so now his word helps to restore the nation. In the history of Israel, God speaking through the prophet is the one who kills and the one who gives life.

Scholars have sometimes assumed that Ezekiel's striking image of the dry bones was drawn from his actual observation of battlefields, but the real source of the image is to be found in the interpretation of the allegory (vv. 11–14). The exiles, who feel that they have been cut off from God, have been lamenting that their bones have dried up and their hope for restoration has been destroyed (cf. Ps. 31:10; Prov. 17:22). Without God's presence they consider themselves virtually dead. However, God promises to open the graves of the exiles, to reanimate them with the divine Spirit, and to return them to their land.

Although the interpretation in vv. 11–14 seems to have originally understood the opening of Israel's graves as yet another literary image describing God's restoration of the exiles, later Jewish and Christian interpreters understood the image literally and saw in the passage a reference to the actual resurrection of the dead. The language of vv. 12–13 is vague enough to support both interpretations, and the more literal interpretation may even have been in the mind of Ezekiel and his disciples (see commentary below on 37:15–28).

37:15–28, Oracle of the Two Sticks. Immediately after Ezekiel's great vision of restoration, he is told to perform a symbolic action for the exiles. He is to take two pieces of wood, symbolic perhaps of royal scepters, and to inscribe on them the names "Joseph" and "Judah," the names given to the Northern and Southern Kingdoms, Israel and Judah. The prophet is then to hold these two pieces of wood together in his hand (vv. 15–17). When the exiles ask the meaning of this act, Ezekiel is to deliver to them an oracle in which God promises to reunite the Northern and Southern Kingdoms, which shall again become one nation (vv. 18–19). In additional elaborations of the sign, Ezekiel prophesies the gathering of the exiles and their purification in the land of Israel (vv. 20–23). Furthermore, God promises to restore the Davidic dynasty to rule the reunited Israel. God's covenant with Israel and the Davidic house is indeed eternal, and the people are not to conclude from the Exile that God has rejected them (cf. 16:60; Isa. 55:3; 61:8). God will again take up residence in Jerusalem and will dwell eternally in the Temple (vv. 24–28).

Ezekiel's prophecy of restoration for Ephraim and Judah involves considerably more than a return of the exiles currently living in Babylon. The Northern Kingdom, destroyed by the Assyrians in 722–721 B.C., had not existed for many years, and its restoration would require radical divine activity (cf. 4:4–8). Ezekiel's placement of this oracle between his vision of the dry bones and the account of the apocalyptic battle between Gog and Gog (chaps. 38–39) may indicate that the prophet himself expected a literal resurrection of dead Israelites (37:12–13) and that he looked for this salvation to be accomplished as a result of divine activity on a cosmic scale.

38:1–39:29
Oracles Against Gog

Ezekiel's oracles against Gog and his allies seem to have had a long and complex literary history. Many of the images and motifs in the prophecies are drawn from Jeremiah's ominous predictions of the coming of an unnamed foe from the north, often identified retrospectively with the Babylonians (Jer. 1:14; 4:6; 6:1, 22; 10:22; 13:20), while the notion of defeating God's enemies on the mountains of Israel appears to have been inspired by Isaiah's oracles against Assyria (Isa. 14:24–25; 17:12–14; 31:8–9). The name Gog itself may refer to Gyges, who ruled Lydia in the seventh century B.C., and the names associated with Gog (Magog, Meshech, Tubal, Gomer, Beth-togarmah [38:2, 6; 39:1]) appear in Gen. 10:2–5 as peoples and nations in Asia Minor. All of this suggests that Ezekiel's original oracle was directed against a foe from Anatolia to whom the prophet assigned the name Gog. After Israel's return to the land, Ezekiel apparently expected an attack by this northern enemy and his allies, but the prophet also believed that God would defeat the enemy and allow Israel to continue to dwell securely in its own land. However, not long after the original oracle was recorded, perhaps even during Ezekiel's own lifetime, Gog began to be interpreted as a symbol of all of Israel's enemies, past, present, and future. Then God's defeat of Gog was increasingly seen as a cosmic battle at the end of time. When these shifts in interpretation occurred, explanatory additions were made to the original oracle, thus making it convoluted and difficult to follow.

38:1–13, Prophecy Against Gog. The initial prophecy against Gog begins with an announcement of God's judgment. God will lead Gog and his allied hordes from the north and bring them against the mountains of Israel, where the returned exiles are dwelling securely (vv. 2–9). Gog will not be aware of this divine

leadership and will assume that he is following his own desires to attack the defenseless Israelites and seize their possessions (vv. 10–13; cf. Isa. 10:5–19).

38:14–23, Elaboration of the Judgment. The first section of this second prophecy against Gog summarizes the beginning of the first prophecy (38:2–9). At some indefinite future time, after Israel has returned to its land, Gog will gather his allies and attack Israel (vv. 14–16). God then makes the real purpose of the attack clear. Gog is the enemy of whom the earlier prophets Jeremiah and Isaiah had spoken, and God will now destroy Gog in a cosmic battle that will shake the very foundations of the earth. God has in fact led Gog to Israel for this very purpose. When the nations see God's victory, then they will recognize the divine power at work on Israel's behalf (vv. 17–29).

39:1–16, The Results of the Battle. Ezekiel's third oracle against Gog repeats again the basic scenario of God's victory. God will bring Gog from the north to attack Israel, but he and his allies will be defeated through God's direct intervention (vv. 1–6). This victory will demonstrate the holiness of the divine name to all the nations (vv. 7–8).

After describing God's victory, Ezekiel turns to the very practical matter of purifying the land after the battle. The purity of the land was an important issue for the Zadokite priesthood of which Ezekiel was a part, and he wanted to be sure that the dead bodies of Gog and his horde would not contaminate Jerusalem and render it unfit for ritual purposes. The Israelites are to collect the enemy's weapons and burn them, a process that will last for seven years. Then for seven months the people will bury the bodies in the Valley of Hinnom (the Valley of the "Travelers" [v. 11], the Valley of Those Who Have "Passed On") and that famous place of pagan worship will be appropriately renamed "Valley of Gog's Horde" (v. 15). At the conclusion of all of this work, the land will finally be purified (vv. 11–16).

39:17–29, The Eschatological Feast. If one assumes that chap. 39 is arranged in some sort of historical sequence, then vv. 17–29 are clearly out of place, since Gog was killed and buried in the third oracle and cannot now appear as the main course in the eschatological banquet. It is therefore best to understand 39:17–29 as a prediction of events that were to occur as part of the judgment described earlier and not as a sequel to Gog's burial.

As part of the judgment against Gog, God will summon the birds and beasts of the land to feast on the sacrificial meal that God has prepared from the remains of Gog and his horde (vv. 17–20). This dramatic end to Gog will demonstrate to the nations God's glory (vv. 21–22).

At the end of the prophecies against Gog, Ezekiel has inserted a summary of the divine plan for Israel's salvation (vv. 25–29). God will restore the people to preserve the sanctity of the divine name. When Israel has returned to its land, then the people will recognize their past sin and will repent, living a righteous life with the help of the Spirit.

The apocalyptic motifs that have entered chaps. 38–39 suggest that Israelites in exile began to fear that the promises in chaps. 34–37 were not going to be realized (→ Apocalyptic Literature). As Ezekiel and his disciples continued to read these prophecies, they increasingly began to see them being fulfilled only at the end of time as part of a great cosmic act of divine salvation. The present placement of chaps. 38–39 in the overall structure of the book encourages an apocalyptic reading of the promise oracles and also suggests that the following material, the great concluding Temple vision, is also to be read eschatologically, as an event that will occur only at the end of time.

40:1–48:35
Vision of the Restored Jerusalem

In April or October 573 B.C., Ezekiel received a vision of the restored Temple in Jerusalem. The vision contains explicit details of the Temple complex and the laws that are to govern it. As a result, it is likely that the prophet intended his words to be a blueprint to be followed by the returned exiles. Where his vision differs from analogous laws in the Pentateuch, it can probably be assumed that he wanted to reform existing priestly practice. The Temple plan was likely to have been the most important part of the book for the prophet and his community, for it dealt with the building and resanctification of the Temple that were necessary before God could return to the city and before sacrifices could again resume. Ezekiel's Temple was not, however, the model actually used by the returning exiles, and this fact encouraged the prophet's disciples to interpret the vision eschatologically. This interpretive shift was encouraged by the present position of chaps. 38–39 and caused the Temple plans finally to be interpreted as a temple that God would cause to be built at the end of time. It is likely that this shift in interpretation also encouraged additions to be made to Ezekiel's original work, although the prophet's normal lack of stylistic uniformity makes such additions difficult to detect.

40:1–43:12, Vision of the Restored Temple. Ezekiel's vision began when God transported him in visions to the Temple Mount in Jerusalem, now exalted greatly as Isaiah had predicted (Isa. 2:2). A heavenly intermediary then guided Ezekiel through the Temple precincts, moving generally from the perimeter toward the interior and taking specific measurements as they went (40:1–4). After giving the details of the outside wall, they moved to the exterior gatehouse and rooms, the

outer court, the gatehouses of the inner court, the porch, the sanctuary (nave), the Holy of Holies of the Temple proper, and the side chambers to be used by the priests (40:5–42:14). The prophet and his companion then returned to the outer wall. The concern throughout the tour is to mark the boundaries that will separate the sacred from the profane and thus to protect God's holiness from contamination. Once this has been done, God can return to the Temple, and in fact in 43:1–12 Ezekiel describes the return of the divine glory, whose departure the prophet had witnessed in chaps. 8–11.

43:13–46:24, Regulations Governing Temple Activity. With the boundaries between the sacred and the profane established and the divine glory once again in the Holy of Holies, it is possible for Temple worship to begin again. Ezekiel therefore turns to a description of the altar of burnt offerings, which is to be properly purified by the Levites and Zadokite priests before it is used (43:13–27). After the altar is in place, the prophet deals with the laws governing access and worship. Non-Israelites are not to be permitted to enter, as they were previously, and the sanctity of the Temple is to be guarded by the Levites, who are to act as gatekeepers. However, because of the Levites' past sins, only the Zadokite priests are actually allowed to perform sacrifices. The Zadokites themselves are to be subject to stringent ritual laws (44:1–31). The sanctity of the city of Jerusalem is to be protected by surrounding it with land taken from the allotments of the various tribes, and the scope of the prince's participation in Temple worship is strictly defined (45:1–17).

The prophet then turns to the subject of worship and describes the religious calendar. First, the provisions for the annual sacrifices are given (45:18–25), and these are followed by the regulations for repeated sacrifices (46:1–15). Additional restrictions on the prince are set in place, and additional provisions are made for isolating the offerings because of their holiness (46:16–24).

47:1–12, The Stream of Life-giving Water. After discussing religious regulations, the heavenly intermediary leads the prophet back to the door of the Temple, where the prophet observes water flowing from the sanctuary. The water becomes deeper as it moves away from its source and gives life to the plants near it, eventually sweetening the salty water of the Dead Sea. The water may possibly represent the cosmic river that flows from the Temple, here conceived as the center of the world. At the very least, the river is a vivid symbol of the life-giving powers of the Temple.

47:13–48:35, The Allocation of the Land. Now that the Temple has been constructed and staffed and sacrifices have begun, the land may again be inhabited. Ezekiel therefore turns to an account of tribal boundaries. In general the borders follow those described in Num. 34:2–12, but all of the tribes are given equal allotments. As in 37:15–28, Ezekiel assumes that all of the twelve original tribes will be reconstituted. In addition, land is set aside for God, and within this holy sector special allotments are given to the Zadokite priests, the Levites, and the Temple. What is left within the sacred portion of land is given to the prince (47:13–48:29). Finally, the prophet describes Jerusalem and its gates, one gate being assigned to each of the tribes (48:30–34). With all of the boundaries properly drawn and the country reinhabited, life will exist in an ideal state. God's continuing faithfulness to Jerusalem will be symbolized by the new name that will be given to the city: Yahweh is there.

Bibliography

Blenkinsopp, J. *Ezekiel.* Interpretation. Louisville, KY: John Knox, 1990.

Block, D. I. *The Book of Ezekiel.* 2 vols. New International Commentary on the Old Testament. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1997, 1998.

Clements, R. E. *Ezekiel.* Westminster Bible Companion. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1996.

Greenberg, M. *Ezekiel, 1–20.* Anchor Bible, 22. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1983.

———. *Ezekiel, 21–37.* Anchor Bible, 22A. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1997.

Wevers, J. W. *Ezekiel.* New Century Bible Commentary. London: Nelson, 1969.

Zimmerli, W. *Ezekiel.* 2 vols. Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1979, 1983.

Daniel

W. SIBLEY TOWNER

INTRODUCTION

Daniel was a figure well known in biblical and extrabiblical tradition long before the book of Daniel itself was composed. In the Canaanite texts of the fourteenth century B.C. found at the ancient Syrian coastal city of Ugarit (modern Ras-Shamra), mention is made of a righteous hero, Dnil, who was noted for his fairness as a judge. In Ezek. 14:14, 20, one Daniel is mentioned alongside two non-Jewish heroes of the OT, Noah and Job, as one of the most righteous men in memory. The Canaanite past of Daniel is reinforced by another reference (Ezek. 28:3) in which Daniel and the king of Tyre are compared for their wisdom. This prehistory devolves upon the book of Daniel to the extent that Daniel continues to be notably wise, notably righteous, and, because of these virtues, a man capable of receiving divine communication through the intermediation of angels regarding the future destiny of the world.

Structure and Content

The structure of the book of Daniel can be schematized as follows:

1:1–6:28, The public history: Tales about Daniel and his three friends
- 1:1–21, Four Jewish heroes do well in Babylon
- 2:1–49, Daniel, the dream interpreter
- 3:1–30, The three young men in the fiery furnace
- 4:1–37, Daniel, spiritual counselor to a mad king
- 5:1–31, The handwriting on the wall
- 6:1–28, Daniel's passion in the lions' den

7:1–12:13, The private history: Dreams and visions recounted by Daniel
- 7:1–28, The vision of "one like a son of man"
- 8:1–27, The vision of the ram and the he-goat
- 9:1–27, The meaning of the seventy years
- 10:1–12:13, The great apocalypse of Daniel

The dates given internally suggest that the two parts of the book overlap. The entire story is said to begin in 606 B.C., the third year of Jehoiakim, king of Judah (1:1), and to conclude seventy years later in 536, "in the third year of Cyrus, king of Persia" (10:1). Such a span of time would imply that Daniel, who was taken as a lad to serve in the Babylonian court, completed his career at a ripe age of more than eighty years.

The Crucible of Composition

The first six chapters of Daniel surely have roots in the wisdom tradition of Israel. They present Daniel and his friends as wise men, dream interpreters, and ideal courtiers who, though observant Jews and unwilling to compromise with idolatry, were nonetheless able to win their way in the foreign courts of Babylon and Persia. The function of these stories is pedagogical. It is to provide role models for the people of the *chasidim* (Heb., "devout ones") who wrote the book of Daniel. The second half of Daniel, on the other hand, has as its basic function the foretelling of the future, a function that we often associate with OT prophecy. This section of the book deals with the crisis of history's culmination. Such concern descends from the earlier tradition of prophetic eschatology. Beginning with Amos, the prophets had spoken of the Day of Yahweh as a day of crisis initiating the onset of a new age. Their vision had remained this-worldly, however. Even as late as Isa. 65:17–25 (probably written in the early postexilic era), the renewed and perfected world beyond the day of crisis was still the familiar world of houses and vineyards, wolves and lambs. Apocalyptic eschatology, by contrast, comes to view the Day of the Lord as a great divide, a point of radical disjunction between this world and the fundamentally altered world of the new age. The scope is cosmic. Themes of creation myth—divine struggle against evil, world catastrophe, new Eden and new Adam—all appear in the apocalyptic vision of the new age. The new world that lies beyond history is a recapitulation of the Eden that existed before history began. Although the apocalyptic scheme is not yet fully visible in Daniel, the book stands in a trajectory that links the realistic eschatology of the prophets with the mature, cosmic apocalyptic eschatology of *Enoch*, 2 Esdras, and the NT book of Revelation.

Students of Daniel inevitably question where author and audience would have been situated in order to draw upon such diverse strands of tradition and to

weave together the complex book that stands before us. In *The Dawn of Apocalyptic,* P. D. Hanson looks back early in the postexilic period to find conflict between the remnants of the prophetic movement and the triumphant priestly rulers. With Persian sponsorship of priestly restoration and the reconstruction of the Temple in 520–515 B.C., a stable order emerged that sought to guarantee a right relationship between God and God's people, Israel. Central to this right relationship was the Temple itself, with its order of sacrifices and its priestly staff. The priestly circles extended the divine covenant of order out into every aspect of Israelite life, including worship, relations with foreign peoples, ritual cleanliness, and even diet. Arrayed against this stable and dominant group, in the opinion of Hanson, were visionaries who, because of the eschatological promises of the prophets (particularly Isaiah of the Exile, Isa. 40–55), had expected more from this age of restoration than they found to be possible under the aegis of the priests. In their disaffection with the unshakable status quo, they began to express their hope for a better order in increasingly radical, even sectarian, terms. This dissident apocalyptic tradition never enjoyed public success through the centuries of the Persian Empire, but it achieved a kind of fruition under the impact of persecution by the Hellenistic tyrant Antiochus IV Epiphanes (175–163 B.C.). In that era, the devout and steadfast *chasidim,* or saints, who are both the authors and the audience, make public through the book of Daniel the visionary hope for the future cherished through the centuries by those who claimed the prophets as their ancestors. In it they also reveal their willingness to draw upon the legendary traditions of their people to set forth the heroes of the faith in all of their integrity.

Language

From 2:4b through the end of chap. 7, Daniel is written in Aramaic, found elsewhere in the OT primarily in Ezra 4:8–6:18 and 7:2–26. Otherwise the book is written in Hebrew. No one knows why this is the case. Were one of the two languages neatly confined to the narrative section of Daniel, chaps. 1–6, and the other to the apocalyptic vision, chaps. 7–12, one could simply postulate dual authorship. But as is obvious, the Aramaic portion of Daniel overlaps the narrative and the apocalyptic portions of the book. That its present bilingual character goes back to its beginnings is attested by the fact that in the fragments of the text of Daniel found at Qumran, written not much more than a century after the book itself, the same transition points between Hebrew and Aramaic occur. Perhaps the most widely accepted explanation for the bilingualism of the book is that Daniel was originally written in Aramaic and that the beginning and the end of the book were later translated into late biblical Hebrew (rife with Aramaisms) to make the book more acceptable to the devout and observant Jewish audience that treasured it. By the time Daniel was written, Aramaic would have been the more likely language of choice of the author, since Aramaic had long since become the lingua franca of the Middle East and had largely displaced Hebrew as the language of Palestine. At the same time, the issue that confronted the authors of the book most dramatically was how to survive as Jews and how to maintain Jewish lore and tradition at the necessary high level of consciousness. To these ends, the use of at least some Hebrew might have been signally important.

Date

Daniel is one of the few OT books that can be given a fairly firm date. It is not the ostensible sixth century B.C. offered by the book itself (cf. Dan. 1:1; 10:1). Rather, in the form in which we have it (perhaps without the additions of 12:11–12), the book must have been given its final form some time in the years 167–164 B.C. This dating is based upon two assumptions: first, that the authors lived at the latter end of the historical surveys in Daniel 7–12; and second, that prophecy is accurate only when it is given after the fact, whereas predictions about the future tend to run astray. Based upon these assumptions, the references to the desecration of the Temple and the "abomination that makes desolate" in 8:9–13; 9:27; 11:31 must refer to events known to the author. The best candidates for the historical referents of these events are the desecration of the Temple in Jerusalem and the erection in it of a pagan altar during the autumn of 167 B.C. by Antiochus IV Epiphanes. The inaccurate description of the end of Antiochus's reign and his death in 11:40–45, on the other hand, suggests that the author did not know of those events, which occurred late in 164 or early in 163 B.C. The roots of the hagiographa (idealizing stories) about Daniel and his friends in chaps. 1–6 may date to an earlier time, but the apocalypses and the final form of the book probably emerged only in mid-164 B.C.

Significance in the Biblical Tradition

In our English Bibles, Daniel is placed among the Major Prophets, following the tradition of the Greek OT. In the Hebrew Bible, Daniel stands in the third part of the canon, among the so-called Writings, or wisdom books. Is Daniel a seer or a sage? In the Greek-speaking Jewish community and in the Christian tradition generally, Daniel was seen primarily as a prophet whose chief function was to lay out the outlines of the future. However, in the Palestinian community that produced the Hebrew Bible, Daniel was understood fundamentally to be a wise man and dream interpreter.

Moreover, the ancient writers knew more about Daniel than canonical Scripture preserves. A number of Aramaic texts found among the Dead Sea Scrolls either allude to Daniel or, in the case of the so-called Prayer of Nabonidus (1QPrNab), tell a previously unknown story of a Babylonian king healed by a Jewish exorcist (see Dan. 4). In two ancient versions the book of Daniel is amplified with the story of Susanna and the Elders, the story of Bel and the Dragon, and additions to chap. 3 called "The Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Youths." One is Theodotion, the more literal Greek translation of Daniel (ca. A.D. 180). The second is the Septuagint (LXX), the older Greek translation (ca. 100 B.C.). In the case of the book of Daniel alone, the Theodotion text supplants the usual LXX in the Greek OT. The Prayer reports what the three Jewish heroes said while they were strolling in the fiery furnace; the other two stories present additional material about Daniel, stressing his ability to act as a wise judge in the case of Susanna and, in Bel and the Dragon, his power over the pagan deities of Babylon. Of course, Daniel is known by the NT writers and forms a significant part of the background of the NT apocalypse (cf., e.g., Dan. 7; Rev. 20).

Beyond this evidence of the book's ability to stimulate the imagination of the late biblical writers, Daniel has had an enduring theological impact. The stories of the saints in chaps. 1–6 have contributed to the determination of Jews and Christians to lead personal lives of courage and collective lives of obedience, trusting that the cause of justice will prevail in the end. Although, like all efforts of its kind, it fails to name correctly the day and the hour of the turning of the ages, the vision of the overthrow of the little horn on the terrible fourth beast (7:8–12) has been an abiding inspiration to those who have had to face the power of tyrants while remaining confident that God supports the endurance and survival of the righteous. And finally, the gift of the kingdoms of the earth to "one like a son of man" (7:13)—identified with the people who wrote the book of Daniel in the first place, the saints of the Most High (7:18)—has encouraged believers to hope that the kingdoms of the world would one day become the kingdom of God and of God's people.

COMMENTARY

1:1–6:28
Tales from the Diaspora

1:1–21
Four Jewish Heroes Do Well in Babylon

The first story of the book of Daniel is set in the court of Nebuchadnezzar, a great Neo-Babylonian monarch who ruled 605–562 B.C. Twice in his early years—once in 597 and again in 587—this king had to besiege and capture Jerusalem to put down revolts by his Judean vassals. However, neither of these incursions occurred in the third year of Jehoiakim's reign (606 B.C.; cf. 1:1). In fact, as the more contemporary and therefore more accurate account in 2 Kings 24:1–16 shows, the Judean king who was besieged in Jerusalem was Jehoiachin, not his father Jehoiakim. Evidently such details mattered little to the storyteller: the point was to place the four noble and unblemished Jewish captives, Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah, who were renamed Belteshazzar, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, respectively (v. 7), in the royal household in Babylon, at the very epicenter of the action.

The ensuing narrative unfolds in three parts. In vv. 1–7 the Jewish lads are put into a three-year instructional program in the curriculum of courtly wisdom (v. 4) under the tutelage of Ashpenaz, the "chief eunuch" (an administrative title rather than a clinical diagnosis). Not only are they to learn the "literature and language of the Babylonians" (v. 4) so that they would be competent to serve as courtiers, but they were to enjoy daily rations of the "king's delicacies and wine from his own stock" (v. 5).

To modern readers the terms sound reasonable enough, but not to the narrator and the audience of that time. The next episode of the story, vv. 8–16, makes clear that although the food and wine may have been fit for a king, they were not appropriate for devout Jewish youths who are being presented as role models. Were the food and drink bad because they were mixed with categories of foods forbidden in the Torah—blood (Gen. 9:4; Deut. 12:23), the flesh of the unclean animals such as swine (Deut. 14:3–20), an animal that had died of itself (Deut. 14:21), or wine or meat originally offered to idols (Exod. 34:15)? Were they unacceptable because they had not been prepared according to the dietary practices that came to be hallmarks of later Pharisaic Judaism? Or was Daniel simply afraid of moral defilement, of owing the king too much? The text does not say; all we know is that Daniel declines to accept the dishes from the royal table for fear of defilement. Even though the captive Judean king Jehoiachin is pictured elsewhere as readily accepting rations from the same source (2 Kings 25:29–30), Daniel and his friends challenge their captors to feed them nothing but vegetables and water (1:12). If at the end of ten days their condition is deemed to be worse than that of the noble non-Jewish youths in the royal academy of wisdom, they will be willing to accept the consequences. The challenge is accepted and the lads win the right to eat only the nondefiling food.

The final scene of the story (vv. 17–21) shows Nebuchadnezzar's great satisfaction with the four Jewish youths, not on account of their healthy appearance (apparently he knew nothing of the dietary crisis and its happy resolution), but because of their superior ex-

position of "every matter of wisdom and insight which the king elicited from them" (v. 20). Readers learn that this superior wisdom was a gift of God (v. 17).

Ritual defilement and kosher cooking remain ambiguous aspects of the story, but this much of its moral seems clear: God can be trusted. With the gifts of good health and outstanding skill spread on record, the original audience of the book of Daniel could rest assured that God gives power to those who dare to live vigorously in the world even while they dare to maintain their sharp identity as followers of the one true God.

2:1–49
Daniel, the Dream Interpreter

In the second tale of the book, Daniel and his three friends continue to demonstrate the vitality of lives that are lived in the trust that God will vindicate courage and righteousness in the coming culmination. Classified by commentators as "a court tale of contest," this story pits Daniel against the second-rate astrologers and wizards of the Babylonian court with predictable results. After all, the latter learned their charms and tricks from their guild; in contrast, as was demonstrated in chap. 1, Daniel got his skill from God. He is a new Joseph, dream interpreter to a foreign king.

The first scene, vv. 1–16, establishes the problem of the story and the plot quickly thickens. In Hebrew Nebuchadnezzar cries, "I had a dream" (v. 3); in Aramaic his staff reply, "Tell your servants the dream and we will make [its] import known." But their confidence fades, for, as it turns out, the king has forgotten the dream. They are being commanded—on pain of death (v. 5)—to produce an interpretation of something that they must first reproduce! Miserably they admit defeat, and the enraged king orders a purge of all the wise men of Babylon. When Daniel and his friends also are threatened with the mass slaughter, Daniel takes the risk of asking for an appointment with the king "in order that he might make known the import [of the dream] to the king" (v. 16).

In this second scene of the story, Daniel and the friends huddle together in prayer to God in the hope that their lives might be spared. Their prayer is answered; the "mystery" (vv. 18–19, 27–30, 47; 4:9) is revealed. The Aramaic term *raz,* which underlies the English word "mystery," signifies eschatological secrets the meaning of which God alone can reveal. And God does solve this mystery for Daniel, who proceeds to describe to Nebuchadnezzar the king's own dream: he saw before him a shining colossus with body parts arranged in descending order of value: a golden head, followed by a silver chest, bronze belly and thighs, and legs of iron with feet mixed with clay. This four-part statue is suddenly struck by a stone that "detached itself without the aid of any hand and struck the statue at its feet of iron and ceramic and pulverized them" (v. 34; see Lacocque, p. 45).

As was the case with Pharaoh's dreams, the meaning of the dream as now set forth by the Jewish sage (vv. 36–49) is favorable to the king and yet is not without its ambiguities. The dream of the colossus proves to be an allegory of world history. This was a literary device well known to ancient readers and also one that anticipates the first apocalypse in Daniel (7:2–8). The history is of imperialism in continuous decline, one culminating in human disaster. For his part, however, Nebuchadnezzar is safe. He is, as Daniel assures him, the golden head. Which empires are represented by the other three parts of the colossus is not made clear by Daniel's interpretation. If the silver chest is the historically insignificant "Median Empire," then the bronze torso would be the Persian Empire, which eventually succeeded it. The legs of iron with feet mixed with ceramic would be the Macedonian Empire in the Middle East, which began with Alexander the Great (who completed his conquest of the Middle East in 331 B.C.) and, after his death in 323, divided into four successor kingdoms ruled by Alexander's generals.

Of particular interest to the readers of Daniel would be the Ptolemaic kingdom in Egypt and the Seleucid dynasty of Antioch in Syria, which took turns dominating Judah during the ensuing centuries. These, the interpretation suggests, will find themselves on shaky footings. If the dream interpretation is written from a perspective later than 252 B.C., when an abortive marriage between the Egyptian and Antiochene ruling houses qualified as "iron mixed with ceramic made from clay" (v. 43; see Lacocque, p. 46), the message to readers would be clear: when these things take place you are near the time when "the God of heaven will establish his kingdom which will never be destroyed, and the rule of which will never be left to another people" (v. 44). Then they, the wretched of the earth, the persecuted *chasidim,* which include the writer and the readers, will inherit the earth.

The chapter concludes with the remarkable dignification of all parties. Nebuchadnezzar accepts with grace the judgment of Daniel upon his dream and renders a brief but devout prayer to the "God of gods and Lord of kings" (v. 47). Daniel and his friends also receive new authority and stature. Above all, God is dignified by Jew and Gentile alike. Perhaps this theme comes closest to the central affirmation of the chapter—that through the faithfulness of his Jewish servants, God will one day be universally praised as the sole sovereign of the world.

3:1–30
The Three Young Men in the Fiery Furnace

The Nebuchadnezzar who was so benign and positive at the end of chap. 2 becomes in chap. 3 a tyrant in the

classic sense. He is also a fool, for in the first scene of the story (vv. 1–7), he sets up a golden image (perhaps of himself) and orders everyone to worship it whenever the maestro strikes up the band (v. 5). When nearly all the people show themselves pleased to prostrate themselves in such manner, the stage is set for conflict with the one group that is not likely to heed such demands, the obedient, God-fearing Jews.

Those who hung around the court as enforcers learn about the recalcitrance of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego (Daniel does not appear in this story), and they inform on the Jews to the king (vv. 8–12). Nebuchadnezzar, in a rage, calls the lads before him, threatens them with death in a crematorium, and puts to them the burning, if rhetorical, question (v. 15): "Who is the God who can deliver you from my hand?" The three young Jews make a daring reply, somewhat weakened in translation: "If the God whom we serve is able to save us from the burning fiery furnace and from your hand, O king, he will do so; but [even] if not, let it be known to you, O king, that we will not serve your gods" (vv. 17–18). The Jews' reply suggests that they were more certain of God's absolute opposition to idolatry than they were of God's power to snatch them from the oven. But they were still willing to put fidelity to God's law ahead of their own salvation from the fire. The kind of faith that sent the early Christian martyrs to the lions in the arena, that sustained the Jewish heroes of the Spanish Inquisition, that drove the Puritans across the sea and enabled the Quakers to stand straight with their hats on before the magistrate, is prefigured in the consistency of these three lads.

In the next episode (vv. 19–25) the three young men are thrown into a fire so hot that it slays the very men who cast them into it. But they get up and walk around in the company of a fourth man, whose appearance was "like a son of the gods" (v. 25). This enigmatic fourth figure was understood by early Christian interpreters to be none other than the second person of the Trinity and is depicted as such in early and medieval Christian paintings. Actually, this "one like a son of the gods" is an angelic figure, for angels play an important role in the book of Daniel, even to the point of appearing with proper names for the first time in biblical literature. They are never very far away from the earthly career of the saints, who in chap. 7 are known as "the saints of the Most High ones" (7:18).

The climax of the miracle story and the royal testimony follow in 3:26–30. Nebuchadnezzar summons the three young men out of the fiery hell in which they should surely have died (v. 26). At that climactic moment they emerge and are inspected by all the functionaries who had gathered around to watch. They are found not only to be unharmed, but even to lack any smell of fire upon them. The vindication of the God of Israel is completed in the words of the pagan king Nebuchadnezzar, who in a final edict acknowledges that "there is no other god who is able to rescue like this." At the very least, this story enshrines the hope of the authors that the religion of the Jews would be tolerated in the context of foreign domination, including that of Antiochus IV Epiphanes. At the most, this story anticipates the day when God's authority will be universally accepted, even by the kings of hated enemy empires.

4:1–37
A Mad King and His Spiritual Adviser

The next story is another court tale, but hardly one of contest between Daniel and the failed wise men of Babylon (vv. 6–7). Daniel is recognized as competent to a degree beyond all others at the court. Nebuchadnezzar terms Daniel the one "in whom is the spirit of the holy gods" (vv. 8, 9) and the one "for whom no mystery [Aramaic *raz*] is difficult." But Daniel's role is minimal in this story. This is a story of two kings, one surrounded by earthly pomp and power, the other invisible but possessing true heavenly power. As vv. 17, 25, and 32 show, earthly power is derivative and is simply awarded by God to those whom God chooses. In this story of two kings, the role of Daniel is to give significance to the entire experience. After his initial hymn of praise to God (vv. 1–3), Nebuchadnezzar reports to Daniel a strange dream (vv. 4–18). With some trepidation, appropriate to one who brings evil tidings to the mightiest monarch of the world (v. 19), Daniel announces the bad news and the good news that goes with it (vv. 19–27). Readers are not surprised when the entire drama of the dream comes to pass (vv. 28–33).

The king's dream begins with a picture of a marvelous tree in the midst of the earth, the world tree, which provides food for all flesh (a motif well known in ancient literature and found elsewhere in the OT; see Ezek. 17:22–24; 31:1–9; → Tree of Life, The). This signally important tree is hewn down by the order of a "watcher." To cut down the world tree is an obvious world disaster, for it eliminates the sources of nourishment and order in the midst of the earth. And yet the story remains focused on the tree itself, which appears as a banded stump and suddenly turns into a man whose mind has become that of a beast (vv. 15–16). For seven times, doubtless seven years, this tragic state is to persist.

Daniel, the interpreter of the "mystery," simply identifies the great tree with Nebuchadnezzar in his flourishing heyday and the stump and the beastly minded man with the Nebuchadnezzar of the future. This terrible judgment against the king can be eased, he says, by works of righteousness. By showing mercy to the oppressed, the king is promised that his "prosperity may be prolonged" (v. 27, NRSV). Everything happens as Daniel predicts. Nebuchadnezzar, the

earthly king, affirms his sovereignty in a reasonably mild exclamation: "Is this not the great Babylon which I built for a seat of government by my mighty power and for my majestic glory?" The heavenly voice announces that this arrogation of glory has triggered the sentence of God, whereupon Nebuchadnezzar becomes the pitiful grass-eating and claw-bearing beast (v. 33) that the dream had anticipated. At the end of the predicted seven-year period, Nebuchadnezzar reverses his own self-glorification, lifts up his eyes, and, in the first flash of reason following his madness, affirms the sovereignty of the most high God (vv. 34–35) and is restored to a glory even greater than what he formerly possessed.

Readers are left with an impression that the final line of the story provides a moral: God's ways are just, and "those who walk in arrogance he is able to bring down." However, this theme is nuanced by a note sounded in the dream itself: "The Most High rules the kingdom of men, and gives it to whom he will, and sets over it the lowliest of men" (v. 17, RSV; see also v. 25). How is Nebuchadnezzar an illustration of that point, since his lowliness is only a temporary phenomenon? Perhaps we hear in these phrases the voice of the author and the author's community, those lowly saints of the Most High (7:18) who look with eager anticipation to the coming eschatological age of righteousness in which they will bear rule. Perhaps this voice intends to sound the oft-repeated theme of Scripture that God "has put down the mighty from their thrones, and exalted those of low degree; he has filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he has sent empty away" (Luke 1:52–53, RSV).

5:1–31
The Handwriting on the Wall

The contest between Daniel and the wise men of Babylon resumes with unabated vigor in the book's fifth tale. Once again cryptic symbols and their proper interpretation are at issue; and once again only Daniel, in whom—as King Belshazzar himself acknowledges—"the spirit of the holy gods" (v. 14) resides, can interpret the symbols. The stakes are high this time too, for, as it happens, the king is brought under judgment of death by the mysterious text written upon the wall by the ghostly hand (v. 30).

The scene is set by vv. 1–4, which introduce the bawdy Belshazzar, arrogant with his thousand lords, his wives, and his concubines. To the horror of the readers, he orders his servants to bring out the sacred vessels stolen by Nebuchadnezzar, "his father," from the Temple in Jerusalem; with them he and his lords toast the diverse idols of Babylon (v. 4; → Belshazzar).

The plot of the story begins to develop in vv. 5–9, when "the fingers of a man's hand appeared" and began to write mysterious graffiti on the wall. The terrified king summons his incompetent sages to help interpret the puzzle and in the process the "queen" is introduced. Because of her long memory (v. 11), one feels that she is supposed to be Belshazzar's mother or grandmother and possibly the widow of Nebuchadnezzar, rather than Belshazzar's own wife. In any case, this queen's knowledge of Daniel's interpretive skills leads to his warm welcome by the king.

Daniel unfavorably contrasts Belshazzar's arrogance and idolatry with Nebuchadnezzar's hard-won acknowledgment of the sovereignty of God (vv. 17–23) and then proceeds to threaten his very existence by reading and interpreting the four words on the wall (vv. 24–31). Modern scholars tend to see the mysterious Aramaic words as a series of coins whose relative values are determined by weight (*mene* = *mena*, value: 60; *tekel* = *shekel*, value: 1; *parsin* = half *mena*, value: 30). Some even push beyond this interpretation to find in the series an evaluation of the Neo-Babylonian monarchs after Nebuchadnezzar. But all of this is background; in the foreground of his interpretation (vv. 25–28) Daniel resorts to wordplay. He treats the three different words as passive verbs related to the following verbs: *m-n-h*, "numbered"; *t-q-l*, "weighed"; and *p-r-s*, "divided"; the final word is illumined by an additional pun, *paras*, "Persia." Under Daniel's terrible, light touch, the mystery of the divine sentence is disclosed. In the reading of the inscription and in the events that follow, the faith of the writer of Daniel and his community is driven home once again: God's sovereignty over all arrogant, human sovereignties is absolute and unchallenged. God can use lowly but faithful captives among the Jewish people to assist in the overthrow of the mightiest monarchs.

6:1–28
Daniel's Passion in the Lions' Den

The culminating tale of the first half of the book of Daniel involves not only a conflict between the ideal Jew of the Diaspora and his rivals and enemies at the court, but also a contest between principles—the irrevocable "law of the Medes and the Persians" (vv. 8, 15) and the law of God. The story culminates in the usual way with the pagan king acknowledging the universal sovereignty of the God of Israel as if in anticipation of the universal rule of the kingdom of heaven at the end of history. Since history records no "Darius the Mede," the story may refer to Darius I Hystaspes (522–486 B.C.), the Persian king who is said by the historians Herodotus and Josephus to have divided his empire into satrapies (see 6:1–2).

This tale exhibits a chiastic, or X-like, structure in which the second part reverses the order of the first. This outline may be schematized as follows:

Daniel prospers over other satraps, vv. 1–3.
His jealous enemies set a trap, vv. 4–9.

Darius makes a tragic decree, vv. 10–15.
Daniel imprisoned in lions' den, vv. 16–18.
Daniel delivered, vv. 19–22.
Daniel released, v. 23.
Darius traps the accusers, v. 24.
Darius makes a decree for good, vv. 25–27.
Daniel prospers, v. 28.

The story unfolds inexorably. Daniel's piety proves to be both his danger (v. 5) and his salvation (v. 23). Rival officials swarm to the king with a single idea in mind: to create an intolerable conflict of interest for Daniel, who can neither disobey the law of his God nor escape the inexorable law of the royal decree of the king of the Medes and the Persians. They persuade the king—who appears here as a doddering victim of their manipulations—to make a decree that no one may beseech favor from any god or any person for thirty days except himself, Darius. And, as they anticipated, Daniel continues to pray to the God of Israel (vv. 10–13). Against his better judgment, but trapped by his own edict, the king is obliged to sentence Daniel to death by lions (v. 16).

In many respects the conclusion of this story can be described as a passion narrative hauntingly similar to the great passion account of Jesus in the synoptic Gospels. The king, like Pilate, is uneasy about condemning this man to death because he is blameless (v. 22). However, the crowd of learned doctors and important people demands that the law of the empire be followed, and the hero is condemned to death. Nonetheless, the king's conscience remains guilty about the matter. Daniel is put in the place of death, and then after a time (in his case one day, not three) he emerges alive from the pit of death because he trusted God (v. 23). A major difference, of course, is that Daniel did not die because "God sent his angel and shut the lions' mouths" (v. 22, NRSV).

7:1–12:13
Dreams and Visions Recounted by Daniel

7:1–28
The Vision of "One Like a Son of Man"

7:1–8, Four Beasts from the Sea. No reader can fail to sense the radical shift that takes place as one moves from the six edifying tales of righteous Jews at work to the dream visions of the end of history that make up the second half of the book of Daniel. Chap. 7 itself marks the move from the third-person narrations of the external history of Daniel to the first-person account of Daniel's inner life as visionary and seer. It is the most important chapter of the entire book, the fulcrum on which all the rest balances. Here the long awaited link between the obedient behavior of the saints exemplified in the first six chapters of the book and the destiny of the faithful ones in the coming kingdom of heaven on earth is made clear.

The structure of chap. 7 may be easily recognized. Verses 1–8 contain a dream vision of four beasts that emerge out of the sea (v. 3). This vision culminates in the appearance of an eleventh horn on the head of the fourth beast. Then, the second portion of the chapter, vv. 9–14, depicts the Day of Judgment itself and identifies the parties found wanting at this great assembly as well as those who will inherit the kingdom that shall not be destroyed (v. 14). The final scene includes an interpretation of the initial vision presented to the seer Daniel by an angel (vv. 15–28).

The dream of four great beasts arising from the sea may have its roots in cosmogonic myth, e.g., the chaos monsters Rahab (Job 26:12–13; Ps. 89:9–11; Isa. 51:9–10) and Leviathan (Ps. 74:13–17; Isa. 27:1). But myth has faded from its purest form here, because the beasts are historicized in Daniel's vision. The angel makes this clear in 7:17, "these four great beasts are four kings who shall arise out of the earth" (RSV). The sequence is very reminiscent of Nebuchadnezzar's dream of the statue in chap. 2, except that the beasts are arranged in order of relative danger rather than in order of intrinsic worth. Both in ancient and modern times, commentators have understood this sequence to be as follows: the lion with eagle's wings (v. 4) represents the Babylonian Empire; the bear with three ribs in its mouth (v. 5) represents the "Median Empire"; the leopard with the wings of a bird and four heads (v. 6) is Persia; and finally the dreadful beast with no name but with great iron teeth and ten horns is the Hellenistic kingdom of Alexander the Great. Among the ten horns, an eleventh springs up that destroys others; it has eyes like those of a man and a mouth speaking "enormities" (see Lacocque, p. 135). This figure is taken by many modern commentators to be Antiochus IV Epiphanes, 175–163 B.C., the king during whose reign, in the view of the community of Daniel, the culmination of history would take place.

Early on, Jewish and Christian interpreters read the sequence as follows: the lion is Babylon; the bear is Persia; the leopard with four heads is the Hellenistic empire of Alexander and its four successor kingdoms; the dreadful beast with iron teeth is Rome. The community that brought the book of Daniel into the canon of the Hebrew Scriptures may already have made this fundamental shift in their interpretation of the animal allegory, for they surely would have known that the end of the age had failed to materialize during the reign of Antiochus IV Epiphanes. Certainly by NT times the shift had been made, for the beast in Revelation 13 is clearly a composite portrait of the four animals of Daniel 7 and its wounded head probably signified the emperor Nero (Rev. 13:3). Contemporary Jewish application of the fourth beast to the Roman Empire was known as well, as 2 Esdras 11:39–46 and 12:10–34 make clear. In his late fourth-century A.D.

commentary on Daniel, Jerome argues for Rome as the fearsome fourth beast and pours opposition and hostility on the opposing position of the Neoplatonist philosopher Porphyry, whose views on Daniel are identical with those of modern commentators.

Two things are at stake in this issue. First, if the fourth beast is Rome, then it might be possible for an interpreter to identify its various horns as kings and archfiends throughout the history of the Roman Empire and its successors, even down to modern times. One might make the eleventh horn into Charles Stuart, as his seventeenth-century English Puritan opponents did, or Adolf Hitler, or some yet unborn dictator of our own time. Second, if the fourth beast represents Rome, then the writer of Daniel 7 was truly attempting to be a prophet for the long range, for he and his community could not yet have known Rome as a real power in the Middle East of the second century B.C. (much less the sixth century B.C.!). The events of the ensuing verses in the chapter would then become events of the distant future and not events that lie close at hand, within three and a half years (v. 25) of the time of the writing of the book. The book of Daniel would then cease to be an interpretation of a current crisis as well as a call for courage in the face of an existing persecution and would be disconnected from real history. The current scholarly consensus holds that such an approach is fundamentally atypical of biblical writers, and that, whether prophets or apocalyptists, their primary task was always to try to make sense of the events facing them during their own time. Subsequent interpreters may loosen the knot that binds the text to the history in the midst of which it was written, but the writers of Daniel intended to give readers some way of making sense of the oppression and the tragedy of their own period.

7:9–14, The Judgment Scene. This passage lies at the very heart of the book of Daniel, and is probably the most important scene in the entire work in terms of its impact upon subsequent Jewish and Christian thought. In his vision, Daniel watches as "an Ancient One" (NRSV) takes his place on a throne of judgment. The throne itself is apparently a chariot with burning wheels that looked like God's earthly throne, the Ark of the covenant, seen by Ezekiel in his inaugural vision (Ezek. 1:15–28). The great heavenly books are opened and the four beasts are judged. The fourth beast, including the little horn, is slain, and the rest are held in captivity after having been stripped of their dominion. The vision of judgment concludes with an introduction of the ruler of the new age: "Behold, with clouds of heaven there came one like a son of man" (7:13, RSV). The two Greek versions of Daniel differ on how to understand the preposition "with." As the LXX seems to understand it, the one like a son of man descends from heaven *on* the clouds, as if he were an angelic figure borne down from the heavenly realm to assume rule in the world. On the other hand, Theodotion translates the phrase as if the one like a son of man were coming *together with* the clouds, the implication being that he is a human being who rides up from the earth as clouds rise up from the horizon. The issue dividing these two translations is whether this king of the new age will be a deity ruling a community of deities or whether he and other humans will be exalted to play a role in the divine economy. A similar ambiguity lingers around the son of man figure elsewhere in Jewish tradition. Perhaps his distant ancestor is the Canaanite figure of young Baal who rides on the storm clouds (→ Baal). A distinctly preexistent and evidently well-known heavenly son of man is a striking character in the Jewish apocalypses *1 Enoch* (see particularly 46:1–8; 48:1–10; 62:9–14) and 2 Esdras (see 11:39–40, 43–46; 12:10–11, 31–34; 13:1–3). Indeed, this preexistent heavenly figure of Jewish tradition may be the one of whom Jesus speaks in such passages as Matt. 10:23; 16:27–28; Mark 8:38; and 13:26, in which he seems to be referring to some heavenly figure who will come on clouds as the judge of the Last Day (→ Son of Man).

7:15–28, The Angelic Interpretation of the Vision. Whatever the history of the "one like the son of man" as an independent heavenly figure of Jewish apocalyptic expectation, it seems clear here that the one to whom "was given dominion and glory and kingdom . . . and his kingdom one that shall not be destroyed" (7:14, RSV) is a human being. Indeed, he is a collective human being, namely, the saints of the Most High (vv. 18, 22, 27). That identification emerges in the exposition of the dream that Daniel receives from one of the heavenly court. Though some interpreters prefer to view the "saints" or "holy ones" as members of a category of angels called the "most high ones," a more likely identification is with a human community, namely, the community that wrote and preserved this book of Daniel. The interpreter assures this community through the writer of the book of Daniel that in a very short time—a time, two times, and half a time (v. 25)—the dominion would be taken from the hands of the tyrant and given to the saints to rule forever and ever. In short, these people are the wave of the future, and that future is at hand.

8:1–27
The Vision of the Ram and the He-Goat

The second eschatological vision (not a dream in this case) in the book of Daniel is dated two years after the first; it transports the seer to Susa, the capital of Elam, now the province of Khuzistan in Iran. There Daniel sees a wild, irresistibly powerful two-horned ram charging about (vv. 3–4) until it is bested by a unicorn-

like he-goat (vv. 5–7). The great horn of this triumphant he-goat is broken off (v. 8) but replaced by four horns and then a fifth. The latter horn, though initially small, grows up to the "host of heaven" (vv. 9–10)—possibly the stars, or even toward the angelic army. The "prince of the host" (v. 11) is accosted by the arrogant horn and loses the worship due to him, his sanctuary, and even his "host" (v. 12). The desecration of the sanctuary, accompanied by a dread event called "the transgression that makes desolate" (v. 13, RSV, NRSV), must endure for 2300 evenings and mornings, i.e., 1150 days (v. 14).

In vv. 15–27, the meaning of all this is made clear to Daniel by the angel Gabriel. His speech, given at the command of a disembodied voice (v. 16) and bracketed by severe but understandable emotional reactions on Daniel's part (vv. 17, 27), is the first anywhere in the Bible to be communicated to a mortal by an angel with a proper name. Interest in angels becomes a hallmark of Jewish apocalyptic literature in its later development (see, e.g., *1 Enoch* 6–9); it is perhaps surprising that of named angels we hear in Daniel only of Gabriel (here and in 9:21) and Michael (10:13; 12:1), though hosts of heavenly beings adorn the visionary scenes, and other divine interlocutors revealed truth to Daniel as well (see, e.g., all of chap. 10). Nevertheless, the appearance of angels here as independent figures marks a considerable development beyond those earlier "angels" who spoke with Moses (Exod. 3:1–6), Gideon (Judg. 6:1–24), and the parents of Samson (Judg. 13:1–20)—all of whom proved to be God himself, intervening directly in human affairs (→ Angel).

In the interpretive portion of this vision account (8:19–26), the angel makes specific identifications. Again, the beasts become an allegory of world history—the two-horned ram is Media-Persia, and the he-goat is Alexander the Great (v. 21). The imagery of swiftness and power attests to Alexander's conquest of the Near East. From the siege and conquest of Tyre in 332 B.C. to Alexander's death in 323, only a decade passed. However, even though more than a century and a half passed from the death of Alexander (v. 8) to the persecution of the Jews by Antiochus IV Epiphanes, known cryptically as the little horn (v. 9) and the one "skilled in intrigue" (v. 23, NRSV), the angel leaps over the years to the time that really matters. That time is the 1150 days, which is the three-plus years (vv. 14, 26) through which Daniel and his community were passing.

The Temple is the central focus of the abominations of "the time of the end" (v. 17); the king who pits himself against God's house and God's truth will "by no human hand . . . be broken." Antiochus did, of course, die, possibly late in 164 B.C., certainly by early 163 B.C. while campaigning in Persia (see 1 Macc. 6:1–16, 2 Macc. 9:1–28, both of which understand the death to be at least an indirect act of God). And the "sanctuary was restored to its rightful state" (v. 14) almost right on the 1150-day schedule. True, the ultimate solution to the evil of history did not occur, and the saints did not receive the kingdom. But a profound faith is kindled here that has always drawn Jews and Christians into the future: God will make a full end to tyranny.

9:1–27
The Meaning of the Seventy Years

Almost an extension of chap. 8, the dialogue between Daniel and Gabriel about the meaning of the passage of the years—now interlaced with an interpretation of the seventy years of the "desolations of Jerusalem" foreseen by the prophet Jeremiah (v. 2)—continues. But the dialogue must wait until Daniel has uttered a great prose prayer of penitence on behalf of his people (vv. 13–19).

This prayer, with its elements of ascription, confession, and petition, most closely resembles three other long prose prayers, Ezra 9:6–15; Neh. 1:5–11; and 9:6–37. As a group, these three may reflect the practice of penitential prayer in the Jewish community late in the OT period. The formulas of such prayers are familiar from as early as Solomon's great prayer at the dedication of the Temple (1 Kings 8:22–53). In desperate straits, the people beseech God to forgive their sins for the sake of God's own name and loving-kindness. A prophetic-like voice speaks (9:11), identifying the tragic circumstances of the age as nothing other than the curse, the punishment for national covenant breaking (cf. Lev. 26:14–45; Deut. 28:15–68; 29:18–28). Babylonian captivity or Antiochene persecution are thus interpreted as divine retribution for sin (9:12–13). And the people have failed to take the obvious and necessary next step: They have not mollified the Lord. However, the means of that mollification are at hand. They are precisely such prayers of penitence. And the great Deuteronomistic tradition of restoration and renewal following repentance (see 1 Kings 8:46–53) assures that God will show mercy upon the desolate sanctuary (9:17), especially for the sake of God's own name (v. 19; → Deuteronomist).

But now a pressing theological question asserts itself. Does the writer of Daniel think God's purpose in bringing history to its end can be changed merely by uttering human prayers? The text before us would seem to disconnect the penitential prayer from the angel's announcement of the desolator's ultimate end (v. 27), because the God-given word of interpretation went forth at the beginning of Daniel's supplication (v. 23). In no way does the divine word respond to the issues raised by the prayer. Perhaps the prayer should be viewed not as an effort to change God's mind and to hasten the divine intervention that will bring history to its climactic end, but more simply as an act of piety

performed for its own sake, like a sacrifice in the Temple. Perhaps the prayer relies on the faith that, as in times past, present trouble and future renewal alike are manifestations of the free but righteous will of Yahweh.

The angel Gabriel, the first angel in the Bible to be described as arriving by wings (v. 21), effortlessly expands Jeremiah's 70 years of captivity (Jer. 25:11–14) to 70 weeks of years or $70 \times 70 = 490$ years. The angel subdivides the 490 years to make this passage of history—which otherwise would, from an apocalyptic point of view, have been essentially meaningless—into a significant periodization of time. The 7-week or 49-year period of v. 25 refers, quite accurately, to the Babylonian exile of the Jews (587–538 B.C.). Perhaps the "anointed one" alluded to in v. 25 is Zerubbabel, the last legitimate descendant of the Davidic house (see Hag. 1:1–14; Zech. 6:9–14). Then, 62 weeks of 9:26 represent the 434 years of the Persian and Hellenistic periods. At the end of this period is a final week of 7 years. Verse 26 describes the beginning of that week with the cutting off of the last anointed one—a reference to Antiochus's deposition of the legitimate high priest Onias III in favor of his brother Jason in 175 B.C. (2 Macc. 4:8). The desolator of 9:27 is surely Antiochus, who, in Jewish eyes, "destroy[ed] the city and the sanctuary" by profaning them. The final three and a half years of history are marked by the dominance of "the desolator," but for that one the end comes on schedule at the end of the second half of the last week. Does this mean that the writer of chap. 9 knew about the cleansing of the Temple on Kislev 25, 164 B.C. (1 Macc. 4:52–58), an event which occurred just a little more than three years after its desolation on Kislev 15, 167? Does he know about Antiochus's death shortly after that event? Perhaps so. Perhaps this standard three-and-a-half-year sequence is only a visionary guess. History may have proved to be more complicated than the writer of Daniel 9 thought. But, for the writer, Daniel's posture is the right one, nonetheless. Penitence, courage, and trust in God's ability to complete the divine purpose of redemption are the themes of the great penitential prayer of Daniel 9 through which the prophet demonstrates how to think and speak while the periods of the ages roll round.

10:1–12:13
The Great Apocalypse of Daniel

10:1–11:1, The Onset of the Vision. The location and length of this final vision in the book of Daniel, together with the lengthy preparations and ecstatic experiences that take up all of chap. 10, suggest that it is intended to be the climactic experience of the book. The scope of the vision is cosmic, including even the heavenly realm in which angels carry on their own combat (10:13, 20). The vast historical sweep in this vision comprises a history that, in the view of the writer, is not a meaningless ebb and flow of events, but is a great drama of good and evil played out according to a script written in advance by God in the divine book of destiny (10:21). This ancient and, for us, difficult notion of the predetermination of history is reiterated throughout this final vision (10:14; 11:27, 35, 39). Such a concept does not seem very useful for us today who know that history is a clash of conflicting pressures and forces and includes totally unexpected developments; however, it underscores the profound conviction that God has the power to complete the divine redemptive purpose in the world and that the end of history is firmly in God's hands.

11:2–39, A Visionary Review of History. The history that the angel now recounts to Daniel, as a means of assuring him that God will not be mocked, mentions no personal names; yet, up to a certain point, it faithfully parallels certain events that transpired. The first part of the vision takes Daniel from the beginning of the Persian Empire (v. 2) up through the appearance of Alexander the Great in the east (v. 3), his death in 323 B.C., and the division of the empire into four Hellenistic dynasties (11:4). The focus quickly falls on the Ptolemies of Egypt, known here as the kings of the south, and the Seleucids of Antioch in Syria, known as the kings of the north; and it culminates in an account of the reign of Antiochus III the Great (vv. 10–19).

The second part of the review of history, vv. 20–39, is devoted entirely to the reign of Antiochus IV Epiphanes, 175–163 B.C. The command of detail in this portion of the vision underscores general scholarly agreement that the author lived during these years. The writer acknowledges the initial successes of Antiochus (v. 22) and goes on to describe his two campaigns against Egypt. The first campaign (vv. 25–28; cf. 1 Macc. 1:16–19) led, according to 2 Macc. 5:5–21, to the looting of the Temple. Perhaps this event accounts for the remark in Dan. 11:28, "but his disposition toward the holy covenant will be hostile." The second campaign is described in 11:29–39. Not only did it fail in its objective of Egyptian conquest, it led to full-scale political repression of Jewish religion and ethnic identity (cf. 1 Macc. 1:30–32). Other sources suggest that Antiochus installed a Syrian garrison in Jerusalem at this time, 167 B.C. Such action in turn led directly to the reconstitution of Jerusalem as a Greco-Syrian city and the use of the Temple as a place for worship of Baal Shamen, "lord of heaven," known in his polite guise as "the Olympian Zeus" (2 Macc. 6:2). This horrible development is described in Dan. 11:31, embedded in which is the cryptic allusion to the "abomination that makes desolate" (see also 8:13; 9:27; 12:11; 1 Macc. 1:54)—perhaps an altar devoted to the sacrifice of swine, the animal most pleasing to Baal.

The text goes on to acknowledge that some resis-

tance by "the people who know their God" developed (11:32). This "people" is surely the community for and by whom the book of Daniel was written. They are presented here as pious and wise but also as victims of sword and flame, captivity and plunder (v. 33). The writer acknowledges that these saints "receive a little help" (v. 34). This cryptic allusion has occasioned much debate. Many hold the opinion that the "little help" refers to the heroes of 1 and 2 Maccabees, the freedom fighters led by Judah the Maccabee (in Greek, Judas Maccabeus) and his brothers. And, if the "Hasideans, mighty warriors of Israel, every one who offered himself willingly for the law" (1 Macc. 2:42), are the same observant community whose members wrote and read the book of Daniel, then they are perceived as sober allies by the zealous rebels. For their part, the *chasidim* must have viewed the political activists as champions of the right. And yet they remain only "a little help," perhaps because they went too far in their efforts to usher in a new order of justice and equity, one only God could bring about.

This section of the great vision concludes in 11:36–39 with a simple portrait of a tyrant, possibly even a mad one, willing and able to work his designs without being challenged even by the gods (v. 37) and yet unaware that his ultimate doom has been sealed in secret by the God who is the master of all of history and whose word is the last as well as the first.

11:40–12:4, A Prophecy of the Future. Up to this point, everything has taken place as "predicted"; readers therefore have confidence that the balance of the vision will also transpire. In fact, however, it does not. Verses 40–45 present Antiochus as meeting his final doom in the aftermath of a historically unknown victory over Egypt. He is pictured as dying between Jerusalem, "the glorious holy mountain" (v. 45), and the sea, when, in fact, extrabiblical records attest that Antiochus died while campaigning in Persia. We can assume, therefore, that the writer was actually living between vv. 39 and 40, namely, after the desolation of the Temple on Kislev 15, 167 B.C., but before its restoration on Kislev 25, 164 B.C., and before the death of Antiochus, which must have taken place somewhat after that latter event, hence early in 163 B.C. As is always the case, the prophecy of the end was in error, its timing considerably off. But the Jewish and Christian communities acknowledged that fact when they admitted the book of Daniel to their canon of sacred Scripture. The canonizers knew that the end had not come on time, but they allowed the vision to remain as testimony to what they held to be fundamentally and perpetually true, namely, that God is the victor in the struggle of history.

In this process, they preserved the most important innovation contained in the book of Daniel, the notion of resurrection in 12:1–3: "and many of those who sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt" (12:2, RSV). Isa. 26:19 may allude to the possibility of the resurrection of the dead, but if so, it is the only other instance of the concept in the OT. "Those who are wise" (12:3) may well refer to the *chasidim* of which the writer of Daniel is a part. Whether they pass over into the realm of the holy ones of God, the host of angels, is not entirely clear, though the notion that they will shine "like the stars forever and ever" might support the idea. In any case, the writer of Daniel has dared here to go further than any theological predecessor in Israel, since he suggests that beyond the culmination of human history and God's victory on behalf of righteousness is a world populated by the saints themselves.

12:5–13, Conclusion. The great vision of the culmination of history is over, but the persistent question remains: "How long?" (v. 6). The traditional answer is given: "A time, two times, and half a time" (see 7:25, 9:27; the three years, two-and-a-third months [by lunar reckoning] of 8:14 is a deviation from this stereotypical response). This oblique sequence allows the author to say that by the time the Temple is desolated, the end is imminent. No more need be said (v. 9). In the meantime, those who are righteous will be "purified, cleansed, and refined" (v. 10, NRSV).

The book concludes with what may well be two additions composed by the writer himself or by some later editor. These glosses (vv. 11–12) lengthen the time before the culmination to 1290 days and 1335 days, respectively. Perhaps they display an anxious adjustment by someone who did not experience the end on its proper timetable. Had the writer lived through the expected three-and-a-half-year period, we might assume that he would have known about the cleansing of the Temple on Kislev 25, 164 B.C. (1 Macc. 4:52), because that event would have occurred in just a little over three years from the time of its profanation. He might even have known about the death of Antiochus, which must have occurred soon after the latter date. It is odd that he made no mention of these great events! Perhaps the writer realized that the ultimate culmination of God's saving purpose, including the glorious resurrection of the righteous dead, did not belong to the simple turning of political fortune, but that it, in time and significance, lay well beyond the vicissitudes of Jewish history during the second century B.C.

Bibliography

Collins, J. J. *Daniel.* Forms of the Old Testament Literature. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1984.

Collins, J. J. *Daniel.* Hermeneia. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress Press, 1993.

Hanson, P. D. *The Dawn of Apocalyptic.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1975.

Hartman, L. F., and A. DiLella. *The Book of Daniel.* Anchor Bible, 23. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1978.

Lacocque, A. *The Book of Daniel.* Translated by D. Pellauer. Atlanta, GA: Knox, 1979.

Towner, W. S. *Daniel.* Interpretation: A Bible Commentary for Preaching and Teaching. Atlanta, GA: Knox, 1984.

Hosea

GENE M. TUCKER

INTRODUCTION

The book of Hosea is one of the most appealing and most difficult books of the Hebrew Bible. Its powerful language, rich in evocative images and metaphors, has grasped the attention of readers from the earliest times to the present. In compelling ways the prophet employs the language and the realities of family life—husband and wife, parents and children—to communicate an understanding of the relationships past, present, and future between Yahweh and the people of Israel. Christian commentators of the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, in particular, considered Hosea's thought one of the high points of the OT, noting especially his stress on the love of God and the deep connections he drew between faithfulness to God and morality.

But as readers begin to explore this book, they discover that understanding Hosea requires serious work. Among its difficulties are problems of text and language that occasionally make the received text virtually unreadable. The style of speech or writing sometimes appears erratic, including shifts of speaker and addressee without introduction as well as abrupt changes of mood, tone, and subject matter. Clear markers between individual units are rare. It is not even clear if Hosea's speeches generally were short, like those in Amos, or long, like those in Jeremiah. Some of the units are doubtless dialogues between the prophet and his audience and, in some cases, he must be quoting the words of the people or other individuals, but in such instances one determines the speaker only with difficulty, if at all.

Nevertheless, neither translators, commentators, nor serious readers have the luxury of perpetually withholding judgment on the meaning of difficult lines. They need to be read and interpreted. Examination of the prophet's historical and cultural context, the literary characteristics of the book, and its message will provide a framework for addressing most of the book's difficulties.

Historical and Cultural Context

Both the general period of the prophet's activity and a number of his speeches can be dated with some precision. The book's superscription (1:1) locates Hosea in the reigns of certain kings of the eighth century B.C. Moreover, the book contains allusions to international affairs, some of which can be identified with events known from extrabiblical sources. Other such allusions remain obscure because the names of kings are not given. Hosea clearly began his work while the dynasty of Jehu was still on the throne, that is, before the death of Jeroboam II (786–746 B.C.). Consequently, he emerged about 750 B.C. and was active right up to the fall of Samaria in 721 B.C. (→ Samaria, City of). One of his latest speeches (13:16) anticipates, but does not attest to, the fall of the city at the hands of an Assyrian army (→ Assyria, Empire of).

Other possible historical allusions include 8:4, which mentions a succession of kings; 7:3–7, which seems to refer to the assassination of an Israelite monarch; 5:8–14, which probably alludes to the Syro-Ephraimite war of 735–733 B.C.; and 13:10–11, in which the prophet attacks the way one king gained the throne.

Hosea was active, then, during the last, turbulent decades of the Northern Kingdom, Israel. During this period, the little state lived under the constant threat of invasion by Assyria and of conflicts with its neighbors, including Judah, the Southern Kingdom. Internally, the situation was chaotic. Following the long and relatively prosperous reign of Jeroboam II, there were constant struggles for the throne. In three decades (750–721 B.C.), Hosea would have seen no less than seven monarchs come and go.

The cultural context is just as important as the political history for understanding Hosea. He was a prophet of the Northern Kingdom, the only one whose words have come down to us in a separate book. In contrast to Judah, with its relatively stable Davidic dynasty, Israel's traditions concerning kingship involved designation by Yahweh's spirit, not just hereditary descent, and even allowed for revolt in the name of Yahweh. Moreover, geography influenced culture. Judah in the south was relatively isolated; Israel was more open to foreign trade and other contacts and thus more cosmopolitan. Israel's land was more fertile than the hill country of Judah.

In such an environment, the cults of the Canaanite gods throve (→ Canaan; Canaanites). The earlier Northern prophets Elijah and Elisha opposed the prophets and priests of Baal (→ Baal). At the heart of

the conflict were two questions: Who makes the land fertile, Yahweh or Baal? Is it possible to give allegiance to more than one deity? On these questions, the earlier prophets had been unambiguous, insisting on singleness of devotion to Yahweh, who alone makes the land fertile. In spite of the apparent victory of those earlier prophets, Canaanite religion was alive in both subtle and explicit ways in Israel a century later, constituting one of the main problems that Hosea addressed.

Literary Characteristics

The book of Hosea consists of two quite distinct parts, accounts and speeches concerning the family life of the prophet (chaps. 1–3) and a series of prophetic speeches (chaps. 4–14). Each chapter concerning the prophet's family is quite distinct. Chap. 1 is a third-person report of the Lord's command to Hosea to take a "wife of whoredom" and have "children of whoredom" (NRSV) and of the prophet's fulfillment of the command. Chap. 2, which is connected to chap. 1 by the names of the children, provides a poetic version of a lawsuit against an unfaithful wife. Chap. 3 is the prophet's first-person account of the Lord's command to love a promiscuous woman.

The speeches in chaps. 4–6 are primarily indictments or sentences directed against the people of Israel or specific groups (such as the priests), although there are some prophecies of salvation as well. In most of these speeches, Hosea, like other OT prophets, communicates the word of the Lord, either in direct or indirect address. More than one principle of composition seems to have been at work in the organization of this collection. On the one hand, there is a rough chronological order and, on the other hand, a theological scheme. First in chaps. 4–11 and then in chaps. 12–14 there is a move from indictment to prophecy of judgment and then to announcement of salvation.

History of Composition

The words of Hosea have come down to us in the form of written word and in a self-contained book, but they doubtless did not originate that way. Hosea, like all the other early prophets of Israel, proclaimed his message orally on a series of occasions over a period of years. Others, initially disciples or supporters who had heard him and then members of later generations, committed the oral words to writing and passed them on. During this process, particularly as God's word announced by Hosea was applied to later situations, other words were added. There is not sufficient evidence to determine whether Hosea himself was involved in the process of recording what he had said, like, for example, Jeremiah, who dictated his speeches to Baruch the scribe (Jer. 36). In fact, when compared with other prophetic books, Hosea provides relatively little evidence for reconstructing the stages of its history of transmission and composition.

An earlier critical view resolved some of the complexities of the book by relegating all of the positive announcements and expectations to later authors or editors. That view has, by and large, been rejected, but some concerns about the history of the book's composition can be resolved by appeals to diverse authorship. The first and last verses of the book were not written by Hosea; both 1:1 and 14:9 presume the existence of a written work and would have been added long after the time of Hosea. Likewise the third-person report *about* the prophet (1:2–9), although representing authentic tradition, does not present itself as a composition written by Hosea. There are a few other additions, including some reflecting Judean perspectives (e.g., 1:7), but most of the book stems from an early tradition about the words of Hosea.

The initial stages in the composition of the book took place amid the troubled circumstances leading to the fall of Israel. After this time, the Hosea tradition would have been transmitted in Judah. Some of the difficulties that beset readers probably stem from the differences in dialect between the Hebrew of the North and that of the South. Thus, it is not only modern interpreters who cannot understand Hosea's language fully, but possibly even early Judeans as well.

Message and Significance

Finally, the book of Hosea is complex essentially because of the subtlety, depth, and passion of the prophet's thought. He is so deeply involved in his message that his style often lacks restraint. Unlike Amos, whose message is the almost unqualified proclamation of judgment, Hosea hears the Lord promising both disaster and salvation and even having a change of heart (11:8–9).

At the heart of Hosea's message stands his concern with the relationship between Yahweh and Israel. Depending heavily on the ancient traditions of Israel's salvation and election through the Exodus, he recalls the Lord's past and present faithfulness to the chosen people. He accuses and indicts the people not so much for specific sins, though those are noted, but for unfaithfulness. The specific form of this breach of faith is apostasy, the acceptance of other gods. From this sin all others follow, including ritual, political, and social abuses.

The unfaithfulness of Israel justifies the announcement of judgment in the form of military defeat and destruction. Although that judgment is just and seems absolute, Yahweh struggles within himself and then renounces the punishment of Israel (11:5–9). At points the punishment seems designed to correct Israel's ways, to reestablish the relationship with Yahweh. In

this context, whether before, during, or after the punishment is renounced, Hosea proclaims Yahweh's courtship of unfaithful Israel and announces salvation. The book's last word is one of salvation. However, it would be a mistake to hear that message apart from the others of accusation, judgment, and divine struggle.

The book of Hosea is significant, first, as the only literary product of a prophet from the Northern Kingdom. It thus provides one of the major sources for understanding that nation's theology and religion. Second, both the traditions Hosea assumes and the ideas he expresses influenced later Israelite thought in decisive ways. Specifically, Hosea stands in a line that leads to the Deuteronomistic thinkers responsible for the book of Deuteronomy and the Deuteronomistic History work (Deuteronomy through 2 Kings; → Deuteronomist; Deuteronomistic Historian). Jeremiah is another successor to Hosea. Specific themes linking these two prophets include the emphasis on the covenant relationship between Yahweh and Israel and on the love of God. With respect to his emphasis on the love of God, it is remarkable that Hosea, though attacking Canaanite religion, introduced into biblical thought some of that religion's language and symbolism. Through his own book and through the just mentioned lines of tradition, Hosea has introduced the imagery of a God who is like a faithful husband to a people who are like a prostitute, a God who struggles over that people's future like a parent agonizing over a wayward child.

COMMENTARY

1:1–3:5
Wife and Children as Signs

In addition to the book's superscription (1:1), these chapters contain five relatively distinct units, recognizable in both form and content. The first (1:2–9) and last (3:1–5) are narratives; the others are speeches of Yahweh or of the prophet on Yahweh's behalf. The central discourse (2:2–15) follows the pattern of a husband's legal case against an unfaithful wife. Much in these chapters pertains to Hosea's family life, but the fundamental message concerns the relationship between Yahweh and his unfaithful people.

In large measure because of the initial report that Yahweh commanded Hosea to "take a wife of whoredom and have children of whoredom" (1:2, NRSV), these chapters have presented serious problems for interpreters and have evoked a wide range of explanations. Some early Christian and Jewish commentators took the references to Hosea's marriage and family as allegorical, thus avoiding the embarrassment that God would actually command an immoral act. Others argued that Hosea merely reports a dream or vision. Neither interpretation seems reasonable, because the accounts are written as direct reports of events. Many modern commentators view all three chapters as biographical or autobiographical, namely, accounts of how the prophet learned the love of God through his own painful marriage. "Wife of whoredom" (1:2) is taken to mean that Gomer was not a whore when Hosea married her, but had such tendencies. Eventually she took a lover or lovers, but the prophet found her and bought her back (3:1–5). This reconstruction assumes that the woman of chap. 3 is the Gomer of chap. 1 and that the order of the chapters corresponds to the chronology of Hosea's life. Such may be the case, but the text itself is not so explicit. These chapters, more likely, contain reports of symbolic actions by the prophet, actual events performed to bring the word of God to life. Hos. 1:2 suggests the prophet knew the word of God before his marriage and before he gave his children their symbolic names. Reports of symbolic actions by prophets are quite common (2 Kings 13:14–19; Isa. 7:14; 8:1–4; Jer. 19; 32).

Hosea's marriage and family life result from his understanding of God's word and do not provide experiences that taught him what to believe or say. Gomer, as a "wife of whoredom," represented unfaithful Israel and, like most other Israelites, had participated in the Canaanite fertility cult. Hosea's message is not that his wife and family are so unusual, but, to the contrary, all Israel has prostituted itself to false gods.

The order of the narratives and speeches in these chapters suggests, but does not actually specify, a theological as well as a chronological development. Thematically, the movement is from sin and accusation, to indictment and announcement of judgment, to renewal through purchase and purging, to announcement of salvation. That progression expressed the theology of the final editors of the section; whether Hosea himself saw history unfolding in such an order is unclear.

1:1, Superscription. Like the initial verses of most other prophetic books, this one serves several purposes. It identifies the prophet and locates him in a particular time, thus stressing the historical concreteness of God's word. The title of the book, "the word of the LORD that came to Hosea," makes a theological claim on behalf of the written work, namely, that it has the authority of divine revelation.

1:2–9, Wife and Children. This third-person narrative reports Yahweh's command to Hosea and the prophet's fulfillment of it. The general instruction (v. 2) includes a reason, "for the land commits great harlotry by forsaking the LORD" (RSV). The account of the command's execution occurs in three parts corresponding to the births of the three children, each of

whom is given a symbolic name. Although the birth and naming of each child presents a complete message, the unit as a whole develops from accusation and threat of punishment (vv. 4–5), to the Lord's withdrawal of forgiveness (v. 6), then to the radical proclamation that the ancient covenant between Yahweh and Israel is terminated (vv. 8–9). Except for the relatively early Judean editorial addition in v. 7, the passage announces unqualified punishment upon Israel.

1:10–2:1, From Judgment to Salvation. This unit has no clear beginning or conclusion. It provides comment on the previous one, mentioning or alluding to the names of all three children and turning them from signs of judgment to symbols of hope (cf. 2:21–23). The anticipated future includes a great population in Israel (v. 10a), renewal and recognition of the covenant with Yahweh (v. 10b), the reunification of Israel and Judah under a single ruler (v. 11a), possession of the land (v. 11b), and the Lord's compassion for the people (2:1). Though standing in sharp contrast to the mood and message of 1:2–9, this unit does not deny the announcement of judgment, but looks beyond it.

Certainly Hosea was capable of such a message, but it remains possible that the passage is a later addition. Hos. 1:10–2:1 presumes the completion of 1:2–9; its impersonal style is unlike that found elsewhere in the book; and the expectations are similar to those found in exilic texts.

2:2–15, Yahweh's Wife on Trial. Thematically as well as verbally, this passage is directly related to 1:2–9. On the surface, and especially at the outset, the prophet accuses his wife of unfaithfulness. Generally, the unit follows the pattern of the legal process, moving from indictment (vv. 2, 4b–5; cf. also vv. 8, 13) to announcement of the punishment (vv. 6–13). In this process the children are called upon to argue the case (v. 2). However, the prophet in court against his wife comprises a thinly disguised metaphor for Yahweh's trial against Israel, paralleling the symbolic actions of 1:2–9. That such is the case becomes more obvious toward the end, as the "wife" is said to use her wealth for Baal (v. 8), as the accuser threatens to turn her land from rich farmland to a barren waste (v. 12), and as the hoped for renewal of the relationship is likened to the time of the Exodus (v. 15). By v. 13 ("says the LORD"), the voice of the prophet has clearly become the voice of Yahweh.

The wife (Israel) is accused literally and figuratively of prostitution (vv. 2, 4, 7, 10, 13) and, more specifically, unfaithfulness to Yahweh by participating in the cult of Baal (vv. 8, 12–13) and forgetting Yahweh (v. 13). This prostitution included the failure to "know" that it was Yahweh who provided all good things (vv. 5, 8, 12). The punishment includes public ridicule (vv. 3, 10), the end of all religious practices and celebrations (v. 11), the withdrawal of grain, wine, wool, and flax (v. 9), and the destruction of vineyards and orchards (v. 12).

Nevertheless, the unit concludes on a strong note of hope, for Yahweh vows to court Israel as in the early days of their relationship (vv. 14–15). Using the warmest language of affection and alluding to the Exodus traditions, Yahweh promises to take her into the wilderness again and make a new beginning so that Israel will be as responsive as she was at the first.

2:16–23, A New Covenant. Each of the two parts of this section is introduced by the same formula, "On that day, says the LORD" (vv. 16, 21). The prophet speaks throughout on behalf of Yahweh, sometimes directly to Israel and elsewhere about Israel in the third person. Both parts express the unqualified good news of a renewal of God's covenant with Israel. Yahweh himself takes the initiative, and no prerequisites for the relationship are stated.

In the first unit (vv. 16–20), the prophet employs the intimate metaphor of betrothal and marriage to characterize the covenant. It is quite remarkable for the prophet to refer to the Lord as the "husband" of Israel, resorting to human experience as a way of describing the depth and intimacy of the love between God and people. But such language also includes polemic: Israel will call Yahweh "my husband" *('ishi)* and not "My Baal" *(ba'li)*, which also can mean "my husband." Obviously the prophet rejects the latter expression because it may also be read as the name of the Canaanite deity. This new covenant will include all living things, thought by many of Hosea's contemporaries to be under the control of fertility deities. The relationship between God and people will be characterized by depth of righteousness, justice, steadfast love, mercy, and faithfulness and will endure forever. The expression that Israel "shall know the LORD" (v. 20) sums up the relationship between God and Israel.

In the second unit (vv. 21–23), Hosea again refers to the natural order to describe the mutual responsiveness in the renewed relationship between Yahweh and people. However, the names of children (1:2–9) provide the dominant metaphors. Each name is, in turn, reversed from its initial meaning as announcement of judgment to proclamation of salvation. Just as the name of the third child, "Not my people," had entailed an abrogation of the covenant, so the covenant will be renewed by using formulas of mutual loyalty, "You are my people . . . you are my God" (v. 23).

3:1–5, Yahweh's Forgiving Love. This complete and self-contained unit—only the "again" of v. 1 integrates it into the sequence of chaps. 1–3—is a prophetic symbolic action report written in the first person. The story of Hosea's purchase of an adulteress is not autobiography, but prophetic proclamation. Generally, it

proceeds according to the traditional three movements of such reports: divine instructions for the action (v. 1), fulfillment of the instructions (vv. 2–3), and interpretation of the action's meaning (vv. 4–5). However, the pattern is not followed rigidly, for the instructions already give an initial interpretation of the deed ("just as Yahweh loves the people of Israel"). Moreover, the action goes further than the divine command, for once Hosea purchases the woman he places her in isolation from all sexual contact. The interpretation (vv. 4–5) develops this particular point by arguing that the Lord will deprive the people of leaders and religious practices so that they will eventually return to their God.

The woman is not named. She may or may not be the Gomer of 1:3. Hos. 3:1–5 could be a parallel account of the initial marriage or a later event in Hosea's troubled life with his "wife of whoredom." The meaning of the symbolic action report, however, though subtle, is clear and concrete. Although Israel acts unfaithfully, Yahweh continues to love her so much that he will buy her away from her other lovers. God's love includes discipline, for the deity will withdraw government and religion, in effect removing the structures of civilization from the land. As a result, Israel will eventually return and seek its God directly. The concluding lines concerning "David their king" (v. 5b¶ probably stem from a later Judean editor.

4:1–14:9
Prophecies of Judgment and Salvation

Virtually all the material in these chapters is presented as the written form of prophetic speeches. Some, such as 4:1–3, are short and self-contained, probably corresponding, more or less, to their original oral delivery. Other units, such as 4:4–19 and 5:8–7:16, seem to have been created by those who collected and edited the words of Hosea, as they sometimes combined individual sayings into small collections or longer discourses. These chapters are by no means randomly ordered, however. First chaps. 4–11 and then chaps. 12–14 proceed from accusation and announcement of judgment to announcement of salvation.

4:1–3, Yahweh's Lawsuit. This passage, with its summons to hear and its comprehensive indictment of Israel, provides a fitting introduction to the collection of speeches in Hosea 4–14. Even more concretely than in the lawsuit against the unfaithful wife in chap. 2, this section follows the pattern of a trial. The word translated "indictment" (v. 1, NRSV) is a technical term for a lawsuit. Whether the prophet is following a ritual pattern for a trial against those who break the covenant or simply using the language of ordinary courtroom procedure is not certain. After the summons, the prophet presents first a general (v. 1b) and then a specific (v. 2) indictment. The general indictment states Israel's failures; there is no "faithfulness," "loyalty," or "knowledge of God," characteristics of the future covenant announced in 2:19–20. The specific indictment lists five crimes that correspond to half of the commandments in the Decalogue (Exod. 20:2–17; Deut. 5:6–21). Though there is exact verbal correspondence to the Decalogue in only the last three violations, it is clear that behind this list stands a tradition of law and covenant known to both Hosea and his Israelite audience.

Because of the ambiguity inherent in the Hebrew verb tenses, v. 3 can be read either as referring to the future, "the land shall mourn," or to the present, "the land mourns." If one accepts the former option, the speech concludes with an announcement of judgment; if the latter, the prophet is describing the effects of the people's sins. In either case, failure of the covenant relationship (v. 1b) leads to crimes against persons (v. 2), which in turn lead to the destruction and suffering of the natural order itself, including land, air, and sea and their inhabitants (v. 3).

4:4–10, Against Unfaithful Priests. This passage is the first in a series of speeches (4:4–19) on the theme of corrupt worship and its effects. The language of the courtroom continues ("contend," v. 4), but now Yahweh, through the prophet, turns from the inhabitants of the land to address the priests. Such a shift of address indicates the beginning of a new unit.

Yahweh acts as both plaintiff or prosecutor and judge, moving back and forth from accusations to announcements of judgment. The priests have failed in one of their central responsibilities, teaching the law to the laity (v. 6); thus they bear responsibility for the destruction of the people. "Knowledge," a major theological term for Hosea (cf. 2:20; 4:1; 6:3), in this context refers to teaching and learning the content of the law. That the priests "feed on the sin [or sin offering] of my people" (v. 8) means they are using the corrupt sacrificial worship to satisfy themselves. In short, the priests are guilty of prostitution, namely, forsaking Yahweh (v. 10). Their punishment will fit their crimes (v. 9), including rejection by Yahweh (v. 6), destruction of their families (vv. 5b, 6b, 10a), and shame (v. 7).

4:11–14, Corrupt Worship. There is a "spirit of whoredom" (v. 12) in Israel. It is not, however, simply a matter of belief or feeling or even apathy toward God, but entails certain specific actions. So "consult" (v. 12) is a technical term for acts of divination, the consultation of idols or other pagan cult objects to discover the future. The people sacrifice at places usually identified with Canaanite gods such as Baal (v. 13), and they participate in cultic prostitution (v. 14). Most of the passage identifies such sins, but it concludes with an

announcement of judgment using proverbial language (v. 14b).

"Harlotry" (or "whoredom") and "to play the harlot," common terms here and throughout Hosea, do not refer to ordinary prostitution, the sale of sexual favors. Rather, they symbolize Israel's apostasy (v. 12). Verse 14 refers quite specifically to cultic prostitution, sexual acts performed as a part of the fertility cult and, therefore, constituting one form of apostasy. Cultic prostitution, like other forms of Canaanite worship, may have been a real alternative for Hosea's contemporaries. According to Deut. 23:17–18, cultic prostitution was illegal, and money earned by such prostitutes was not allowed in the Temple.

4:15–19, Shameful Worship. As the indictments of Israelite worship continue, the prophet urges Judah not to follow the example of the Northern Kingdom (v. 15). Israelites have taken up pagan practices at Canaanite places of worship (v. 13) and have corrupted rituals at the major Yahwistic centers such as Gilgal and Beth-aven (v. 15; cf. Amos 5:5). Although vv. 18–19 present major textual problems, they appear to link drunkenness with prostitution, and both with false worship.

5:1–7, Against the Leaders. This section could very well result from the combination of two originally independent prophetic addresses, vv. 1–2 and 3–7. The first part begins with Yahweh's threefold call to hear, addressed to the priests, the house of Israel—probably a group of leaders—and the king. Then comes a threefold statement of reasons for punishment, each using a hunting metaphor (vv. 1b–2a), followed by a general announcement of judgment (2b).

Verses 3–7 likewise move from accusation or reasons for punishment (vv. 3–5) to the announcement of punishment (vv. 6–7), addressed to the nation as a whole. The speaker must be the prophet, for he refers to Yahweh in the third person throughout. The reasons are the familiar indictment that Israel is guilty of prostitution and does not know Yahweh, who knows her. "To know" (vv. 3, 4) involves more than cognition; this verb characterizes the covenant relationship between God and people. Consequently, when the people do decide to seek Yahweh, they will find that he has withdrawn from them, in effect abrogating the covenant and leaving only disaster.

5:8–6:6, The Folly of War Between Israel and Judah. The historical background of this passage, which alludes to border conflicts between Israel and Judah as well as alliances with Assyria, probably is the Syro-Ephraimite war of 734 B.C. (cf. Isa. 7:1–2; 2 Kings 15:27–30). As the Assyrian army under Tiglath-pileser III began to move into Syro-Palestine, Israel and other states in the region formed an alliance against the invaders, but Judah refused to join. Israel then mounted a campaign to force Judah to join the revolt, and Judah successfully resisted.

Hosea is critical of both Judah and Israel, announcing judgment on both houses in the form of military defeat. The address begins with cries of alarm followed by an announcement of disaster against the Northern Kingdom (5:8–9). As the prophecy of punishment continues against Israel and Judah (5:10–14), Hosea alludes to the crimes of each nation: Judah's is the appropriation of Israelite territory (5:10a), and Israel's is its entangling alliances (5:13).

In 5:15 the Lord's speech continues, but now as a declaration that he will withdraw and wait for the people to turn to him in penitence. The penitential song of the people (6:1–3) uses the imagery of judgment from 5:11–14, and then, in 6:4–6, Yahweh speaks again, responding to the song. Is the people's repentance and approach to Yahweh sincere or shallow? If one allows 6:4–6 to interpret the song of the people, it appears that their repentance is superficial, "like the dew that goes away early" (v. 4). The key to the passage, and to the question of true repentance, is 6:6. It is not in acts of worship ("sacrifice" and "burnt offerings") that true faith is recognized, but in "steadfast love" and "the knowledge of God."

6:7–7:7, Sin Throughout the Land and in High Places. In this section, which probably comes from the same era as the previous one, Yahweh accuses and indicts first the nation in general, including its priests (6:7–7:2), and then its leadership in particular (7:3–7). There is no prophecy of punishment as such. Except for the allegation of murder (6:9), the accusations against the people are quite general and are organized geographically by a listing of major Israelite cities ("Adam" in 6:7 is a location, not a person). Although the accusations against the leaders do not include the pronouncement of judgment, there is a description of the disasters that accompany political treachery. Hosea implies, but does not state, that the monarchy is doomed. The most fundamental sin is that, although kings fall, not one of them cries to the Lord (7:7).

7:8–16, Rebellious Israel. The first of these addresses (vv. 8–13) continues one of the themes of 5:8–6:6, the foolishness of the Israelites' reliance on foreign alliances instead of on Yahweh, who waits in vain for acts of loyalty and repentance so that he can "redeem" them (v. 13). The expressions "return," "seek," "call," and "cry" refer not only to a change of heart or feeling toward the Lord, but also to specific actions, including public worship, prayer, and formal inquiry concerning the will of God. Because Israel turns in the wrong direction—to foreign nations rather than to Yahweh—destruction will come. According to 7:14–16, the rebellion includes relying on other gods and participating in the bloody rituals of the fertility cult (v. 14; cf. 1 Kings 18; Deut. 14:1; Lev. 19:28).

8:1–14, Israel Rejects the Good and Pays the Price. Although this chapter is probably an edited collection of originally independent units, it presents a clear and coherent summary of Hosea's accusations against Israel. It begins and ends with general and comprehensive statements of Israel's sins. The nation has broken the covenant and violated the law (v. 1). Certainly the prophet has in view the tradition of the covenant at Sinai and the laws accepted by Israel, to which he alludes frequently (cf. 2:18, 23; 4:2; 12:9; 13:4). That Israel has forgotten its maker (v. 14) is another way of saying the people have broken the covenant. This rebellion involves both political and religious activity. Israel set up kings and princes without Yahweh's approval (vv. 4a, 10b; cf. 7:3, 7; 8:10; 9:15; 10:3, 7, 15; 13:10) and tried to buy security with foreign alliances (vv. 9–10a). Religious violations include making idols (v. 4b), including the golden calf in Samaria (vv. 5–6; cf. 1 Kings 12:26–33 on such images in Dan and Bethel). Altars and sacrifices are scorned (vv. 11, 13), either because the worship itself is corrupt or because the people rely on ritual instead of covenant faithfulness. Such activities can lead only to disaster, stated here both as predictable effects in the worlds of nature and of international affairs (vv. 7–8) and as God's direct intervention to destroy (vv. 5, 6, 10, 13–14).

9:1–9, Judgment on Festivals. The presence of direct address and references to specific rituals in vv. 1–6 suggest that Hosea delivered this speech to people assembled for a particular religious festival. Such a joyful festival would have involved thanksgiving and celebration of the renewal of life. There is no reason to think that the songs, prayers, libations, and sacrifices were not directed to Yahweh. Hosea, however, begins by prohibiting the celebration, accusing the people of playing the whore, of forsaking their God (v. 1), and of self-serving ceremonies (v. 4). He then brings the bitter news that all such celebrations will end and Israel will go into exile to Egypt (vv. 2–3, 6).

It is not surprising that the bearer of such words encountered "great hostility" (v. 7), not only from the people in general, but also from the religious leaders (v. 8). "The prophet is a fool, the man of the spirit is mad" is probably a quotation of Hosea's opponents. Like other prophets, he was able to endure such animosity because he saw himself as a "sentinel" (cf. Jer. 6:17; Ezek. 3:16–21; 33:7–9) called by God to sound the necessary warnings.

9:10–17, A Sinful Past and a Barren Future. The discourse shifts from prophetic address to a speech of Yahweh that recalls the history of Israel's unfaithfulness and announces harsh judgment. Although Yahweh cared for the people in the wilderness, even there, at Baal-peor (Num. 25:1–8), they dedicated themselves to Baal. Because they turned to this fertility god, all fertility and progeny will, ironically, be taken away (vv. 11–14, 16). The reference to evil in Gilgal (v. 15) may recall the importance of that place during the period of the settlement (Josh. 5:9–10), but more likely it is a condemnation of monarchy, for Saul's kingship began there (1 Sam. 11:14–15). Consequently, Yahweh will abandon Israel and turn it out of the land (v. 17).

10:1–8, Kingship and Idolatry. This passage is a summary of Israel's past, present, and future in which the sin of idolatry is linked to the monarchy (cf. 8:4–14). Mistaking the source of its prosperity, Israel expanded and depended upon its corrupt cult (10:1, 5). Even if the people reject the monarchy and profess to rely upon Yahweh, they cannot be trusted (vv. 3–4). Therefore the Lord will destroy all the places and fixtures of worship, and the king will die.

10:9–12, A Call to Repent. This is one of the few speeches in which Hosea explicitly calls for Israel to change its ways so that the people may be saved from destruction. He accuses the nation of a history of sin (v. 9), announces punishment as a means to discipline the wayward people (vv. 10–11), and appeals for acts of righteousness and repentance that will lead to salvation (v. 12).

10:13–15, Trust in Weapons Leads to War. Commencing with proverbial sayings on the inevitability of cause and effect, the prophet announces that horrible warfare will come because the people relied upon weapons, rather than, presumably, Yahweh.

11:1–11, "I Am God, Not a Human Being." In one of the most remarkable passages in all of Scripture, Yahweh meditates on his relationship to Israel and arrives at an astounding conclusion. Except for v. 10, a secondary addition, Yahweh is the speaker throughout. Although the soliloquy contains dramatic shifts in mood, tone, and contents, it is a single speech. God is pictured as ambivalent, undecided about what to do.

Beginning with the compelling metaphor of God as parent and Israel as son, vv. 1–7 proceed as a prophecy of punishment. Yahweh recalls the history of his relationship with Israel, establishing the grounds for judgment by contrasting his loving care for the people (vv. 1, 2–3) with their unfaithfulness (v. 2). Then follows the expected announcement of punishment (vv. 5–7) in the form of military defeat, exile to Egypt and Assyria, and slavery.

However, the metaphors of parent and son at the beginning have already established the basis for a different outcome. In vv. 8–9 Yahweh is heard to express doubts, to question his decision, and even to have a change of heart, deciding not to act on the basis of his legitimate anger. Yahweh's care for Israel has always been like that of a parent for a child, and his compassion goes beyond even that. Verse 9 is the heart of the soliloquy and the center of the prophet's thought.

Hosea takes human metaphors for God's love as far as they will go and then stresses that the difference between God and human beings involves his capacity for radical, forgiving love. Once the decision against judgment has been made, the announcement of salvation in vv. 10–11 appears almost anticlimactic. Verse 10 seems to be a comment on v. 11, which proclaims the return of God's people from Egypt and Assyria, reversing the announcement of v. 5.

11:12–12:14, Israel's Treachery. With accusations of betrayal and announcements of punishment, this section proceeds as if the words of chap. 11 had never been spoken. The passage is not a single speech, but a collection of sayings on the themes of Israel's deceptive behavior from the beginning of its existence and the authority of the prophetic word. The accusations are argued in some detail; the announcements of judgment are quite general.

Ephraim, a designation for the Northern Kingdom deriving from the name of a prominent Israelite tribe, is accused of lies and deceit, specifically by establishing alliances with Assyria and Egypt (11:12–12:1). The concluding lines of 11:12 probably come from a Judean editor. As in 4:1–3 and 4:4–10, Yahweh initiates a lawsuit against his people (12:2–6). The indictment reaches into antiquity, citing the traditions about Israel's ancestor, Jacob. Hosea presumes that his hearers know the story of the birth of Jacob and his brother, Esau (Gen. 25:21–26), his nocturnal struggle with God at the Jabbok, at which time he received the name Israel (Gen. 32:22–32), and his dream at Bethel (Gen. 28:11–17). Surprisingly, the lawsuit includes admonitions to return to God (12:6). Verses 7–9 accuse Israel of two violations, crooked business practices and arrogance. Yahweh recalls the Exodus and threatens to return Israel to its status before it occupied the land (v. 9).

If Yahweh defends the authority of the prophetic word (vv. 10–14), Hosea's audience must have questioned it. Yahweh, not human opinion, stands behind the prophetic word and vision; even Moses was a prophet by whom the Lord brought Israel out of Egypt (v. 13). Consequently, harsh prophetic accusations against false worship cannot be challenged.

13:1–16, Death Sentence for Israel. In four loosely connected discourses, Hosea announces the end of the history of salvation because of Israel's rebellion against Yahweh. The first (vv. 1–3), a clearly structured prophecy of punishment, gives idolatry as the reason for judgment (vv. 1–2), a punishment graphically described as Israel's disappearance like a "mist" or smoke (v. 3). The second (vv. 4–8), another prophecy of punishment, indicts Israel by contrasting Yahweh's graceful care with the people's failure to remember (vv. 4–6). In a single verse (v. 4), the Lord reminds Israel of the Exodus, the covenant, and the law. The judgment will be brutal, for the same Lord who is like a husband or a parent will fall on Israel like a wild animal (vv. 7–8). The third discourse (vv. 9–11), a disputation between Yahweh and the people, attacks the institution of kingship. The final unit (vv. 12–16) is the harshest announcement of punishment in the book. Hosea alludes only to those sins that have led to such a divine intervention (vv. 12–13, 16a), and Yahweh questions whether or not he should turn the people over to the power of death (v. 14). But this divine deliberation does not end like the one in 11:8–9. Rejecting compassion, Yahweh proclaims the end of Israel through military catastrophe, including the death of little children and pregnant women.

14:1–8, A Call to Return and a Promise of Renewal. Mood and message shift dramatically in the book's final prophetic speeches. There are two distinct addresses, their contents and their juxtaposition reminiscent of a penitential liturgy. First the prophet himself speaks, calling Israel to return to its God (vv. 1–3). The prayer he teaches them to speak includes petitions for forgiveness, confessions of sin, and vows to reject foreign alliances and handmade gods. It concludes with an affirmation of confidence in God. Second, Yahweh himself speaks (vv. 4–8), just as the priest in such liturgies conveyed the oracle of salvation. Yahweh promises to heal the people with love and to ensure that they prosper and flourish. The concluding verse (v. 8) is a reminder that Yahweh is the one who cares for Israel.

14:9, Postscript. The style and point of view of this scribal addition to the book are similar to those of the book of Proverbs and other wisdom literature. A pious scribe recommends study of the book of Hosea to all those who are wise and would learn "the ways of the LORD." By the time this verse was added, the influence of the book of Hosea had reached far beyond eighth-century B.C. Israel.

Bibliography

Andersen, F. I., and D. N. Freedman. *Hosea: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary.* Anchor Bible, 24. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1980.

Macintosh, A. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on Hosea.* International Critical Commentary. Edinburgh: Clark, 1997.

Mays, J. L. *Hosea.* Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1969.

Ward, J. M. *Hosea: A Theological Commentary.* New York: Harper & Row, 1966.

Wolff, H. W. *Hosea.* Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1974.

Joel

KATHLEEN M. O'CONNOR

INTRODUCTION

The book of Joel is both vivid and enigmatic. Its name derives from the superscription, or opening line, which declares the book to be "the word of Joel son of Pethuel" (1:1). "Joel" in Hebrew means "Yhwh is God" and, thus, the name affirms a major theological theme of the book. Although many of the book's literary features create interpretive problems, its major movements are clear. The book urges a community in calamitous circumstances to lament and fast in hopes of a reprieve from further disaster. God, in turn, promises hope, safety, and a renewed future.

Joel's puzzling features include overlapping images of multiple disasters, compressed references to time, interweaving of speaking voices, abrupt movement from disaster to hope, and lack of firm historical detail. The tragedy from which the book emerged appears to have been a locust invasion that destroyed land and economy and threatened the community's survival. To describe the locust attack, however, the book uses terms for an invading army, mixing together language used of insects with that used of warriors. The blurring of these images makes it difficult to determine if the disaster is entomological, military, or both.

Further imagery of calamity appears in Joel's use of the notion "the day of Yhwh," a phrase that unifies the book (1:15; 2:1–11; 2:32–3:16; → Judgment, Day of). In Israel's traditions, "the day of Yhwh" originally expressed the hope that God would judge Israel's enemies in the future and defeat them in a military battle. Joel and other prophets, however, turn the tradition on its head by making Israel itself the target of divine judgment and attack (Joel 2:15–3:11; Hos. 9:5; Amos 5:18–20; Obad. 15; Mic. 2:4; Hab. 3:16; → Judgment, Day of). Joel combined Day of Yhwh motifs with images of swarming locusts and invading armies, thereby creating a rhetoric of terror. Images of destruction overlap and interpret one another to become more frightening by the blurring of distinctions among them. Joel's fearsome language underscores the urgent need for repentance.

Past, present, and future also blend together artistically in this book. The locust attack seems to have occurred already, but the Day of Yhwh (1:15) and the army's onslaught (2:1–11) appear as present or impending threats. This compression of time means that past and future events are alive in and affect present reality. In a further blurring of boundaries, the book weaves the words of Joel and God so closely together that it is often difficult to distinguish them. As in many prophetic books, God and Joel speak as one. In this book, Joel acts as a master of ceremonies or a presider at a liturgy, calling repeatedly for human response (1:5–14; 2:1, 13–17; 3:9–13).

Midway through the book (2:18), the subject turns abruptly and surprisingly from calamity to assurance, without indicating that the people obeyed the prophet's calls. This lacuna may imply communal repentance or the loss of passages during the book's transmission, yet the absence of explicit communal prayer is theologically evocative. It may indicate that divine mercy originates in God, who does not have to await human initiative.

Another curious omission in Joel involves the absence of historical information. A dearth of historical detail makes dating the book extremely difficult. Unlike other prophetic books, Joel lacks names of kings or other chronologically helpful details (cf. Jer. 1:1–3; Hos. 1:1; Amos 1:1). Interpreters use circumstantial evidence to place the book in the postexilic period sometime after 500 B.C. Joel expresses no concern for the monarchy and ignores Israel's traditional enemies and conquerors, Assyria and Babylon (→ Assyria, Empire of; Babylon). Furthermore, Joel's attention to worship practices in the Temple, "the house of the LORD" (1:9, 14), and to Zion, a symbolic name for Jerusalem (→ Zion), suggests it may come from a time when priests exerted considerable authority, such as the Second Temple period (after 520 B.C.).

Adding further historical uncertainty to the book's interpretation is lack of information about the prophet. Although Joel is a common name in the Hebrew Bible (1 Sam. 8:2; 1 Chron. 5:4, 8; 15:7, 11; Ezra 10:43; Neh. 11:9), the prophet Joel is otherwise unknown. The book contains no biographical material to provide a portrait such as is found in other prophetic books (Hos. 1; Amos 7; Isa. 6; Jer. 1, 37–44). A close association between Joel and Temple worship in Jerusalem is evident in the book and suggests to some interpreters that Joel was a priest.

The book divides easily into two major sections:

disasters and calls to action (1:2–2:17) and assurances concerning the future (2:18–3:21). The first section issues urgent invitations to lament, to pray, and to fast in the face of dire disasters, past as well as future. Both an invasion of insects and an attacking army destroy the land and the economy, putting the survival of community in serious doubt. The Day of Yhwh is at hand, bringing unendurable terror. Joel seeks to arouse the people to the true realities facing them and urges them to respond by engaging in liturgical actions.

Although the prophet himself laments (1:19–20), the book reports no such activity by the people. Without any indication that the people follow the prophet's urgings, Yhwh extends mercy in the second section of the book (2:18–3:8). The prophet utters further prophetic oracles, but instead of summoning the people of Judah, he addresses the nations, and instead of calling them to worship, he urges them to prepare for war (3:9–16). God's speech (3:17–21) closes the book with promises for a rich future for Jerusalem and vengeance against the traditional enemies of Israel, Egypt and Edom.

The process of the book's composition is not clear. In the past, scholars understood Joel as a collection of previously existing poems because the book contains multiple literary forms, such as elements of the lament, oracles of judgment, and oracles of salvation. Despite its variety of form and imagery, however, Joel possesses a high degree of literary coherence. Disasters of the book's first half are reversed in the promises of the second half. Language and imagery of the first half reappear in the second half, and the immanence of the Day of Yhwh links the two sections. Finally, both halves of the book quote extensively and allude to words of other prophets (e.g., cf. 3:10 with Isa. 2:4; Mic. 4:3; 3:16 with Amos 1:2). The book's reuse of prophetic speech represents a deliberate literary strategy that draws upon past tradition to interpret present crises.

Joel's place in the canon differs slightly in the Hebrew and Greek texts. Both include Joel in the scroll of the twelve Minor Prophets, called the "book of the Twelve." In the Hebrew canon, Joel comes second, following Hosea and preceding Amos. The Septuagint, or Greek translation of the Hebrew Bible, places Joel fourth, following Hosea, Amos, and Micah, and preceding Obadiah. Joel may appear in the Hebrew canon with eighth-century prophets because he imitates the form and language of those earlier books. A proposed thematic connection between Joel and Hosea and Amos is their shared emphasis on God's judgment of Israel, but that view accounts only for the first half of the book of Joel, since the second half offers a different message.

Joel's religious influence among Christians has been enormous, largely because the NT (Acts 2:17–21) quotes Joel's prophecy about the pouring out of God's spirit upon the whole community (Joel 2:28–29). Acts interprets the Spirit's descent upon Jesus' disciples at Pentecost as the fulfillment of Joel's prophecy and the inauguration of the new age of the Spirit.

COMMENTARY

1:1–2:17
Disasters and Calls to Action

1:1–4, Locusts Attack. Following the superscription that names the book as the words of Joel (1:1), the prophet issues to the elders and inhabitants of the land a dramatic call for attention, "Hear this" (1:2). A rhetorical question further increases dramatic tension and highlights the uniqueness of an unnamed event, "Has such a thing happened in your days?" (1:3). The shocking occurrence is so remarkable that it must be told to future generations. To announce and mimic the event, Joel uses language that moves and swirls. An invasion of locusts cuts, swarms, hops, and destroys, eating everything and leaving only when nothing remains (1:4). A locust attack not only horrifies and bewilders, but will also destroy food and life itself.

1:5–14, Do Something. With imperative verbs, Joel commands the audience to respond to the invasion in five ways: "wake up," "lament," "be dismayed," "put on sackcloth," and "sanctify a fast." He calls them "drunkards" who must wake up and weep, for "a nation has invaded by land" (1:5–6). That nation, with sharp teeth, fangs of a lioness, is terrifying and destroys the trees and the vines. But the locust invasion (1:4) blurs into a military attack by an invading nation (1:6). Is Joel using dramatic language for locusts who destroy like an army, or is a foreign army cutting and destroying like a swarm of locusts? Readers cannot offer an easy answer.

These dire circumstances call for lament. A lament is a prayer of complaint that names the community's predicament and asks for divine assistance. Joel commands the people to "lament" like a virgin who loses her future husband, because there is no food for Temple offerings (1:8–9). The priests themselves recognize their predicament. They mourn because without proper worship creation turns topsy-turvy and the land is devastated (1:9–10). Joel commands the farmers and the vinedressers to "be dismayed," for the land's rich abundance withers, dries, and droops, and with it the joy of the people (1:11–12).

In view of the mounting threats, the people must "wake up" to the true precariousness of their circumstances, and they must lament. Joel commands the

priests, however, to inaugurate ritual action. They are to wear sackcloth, a symbol of mourning, call for a fast, and gather the elders and inhabitants (cf. 1:2) in assembly where all will "cry out" to Yhwh (1:14). By urging the people to face their predicament and to lament, Joel and his book assume a priestly role, one embedded in the sorts of activities that occur at the Temple.

1:15–18, The Day of Yhwh Approaches. What follows is not a lament, however, but another alarming announcement and rhetorical question (1:15–16). Joel emphasizes his proclamation by repeating the word "day." "Alas for the day! For the day of the LORD is near" (1:15). That the day looms is apparent from the end of sacrifice and joy in the Temple. "Is not the food cut off . . . and joy and gladness?" (1:16). Devastation now extends beyond the loss of the present harvest (1:11–12) to the destruction of seed for future harvests and to the dying of animals (1:17–18).

1:19–20, Cry of Lament. Finally, Joel himself bursts out in an urgent lament. "To you, I cry," because fire has destroyed the land and even the animals lament. "Fire" and related terms suggest military invasion or even drought more than they do locust infestation. What is certain is that the destruction of land and animals portends peril for human life and for the worshiping life of the community. Joel's cry simply calls upon God without specifying what God might do, as if divine attention were all that was needed to improve the situation.

2:1–11, An Army Invades. A third announcement (1:1–4 and 1:15–18 are the previous ones) further escalates terror and continues to blend military and insect language. Joel calls for the blowing of a trumpet in Zion. What is shocking about this announcement is the terrifying news not only that war approaches, but that it will happen in Zion, God's dwelling place. The Day of Yhwh is coming soon. It will be a day of judgment, cosmic darkness, and invasion "by a great and powerful army" (2:2). Like the locust attack (1:2), the army's terrifying advance is beyond the audience's experience (2:2). Fire marks their movements and the land, once a paradisal garden, becomes a desolate wilderness (2:3). Joel reverts to language of the locust attack to describe the military onslaught. The invaders are not an army, but Joel creates military similes: "like the appearance of warhorses," "like the crackling of flame," "like a powerful army" (2:4–5), "like warriors," "like soldiers" (2:7).

Joel uses active verbs to describe their advance. They "charge," "scale," "burst," "leap," "run," "climb," and "enter through the windows like thieves" (2:7–9). The invasion is overwhelming, uncontrollable, and inescapable, and its effects are cosmic. The earth shakes and darkness descends (2:10). Joel's announcement of the approaching attack concludes with the riveting claim that the commander of this vast, obedient army is God. Who can possibly endure such terror? (2:11).

2:12–17, The Unfathomable God. Paradoxically, the God whose voice has just uttered destruction (2:11) "even now" urges conversion: "Return to me" (2:12). The Hebrew for "return" means to "repent," to "turn around," to "return to right relationship." God endorses worship practices as a way for the people to express their act of "turning around." They should fast, weep, mourn, and rend their hearts (2:12). To encourage his audience, Joel describes God's character. The terrifying commander of the army is also "gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and abounding in steadfast love and relents from punishing" (2:13). "Who knows?" Joel asks, maybe God will "turn" (2:14). Even though the Day of Judgment is approaching, there may still be a change in the divine decision to bring judgment upon them. The Lord's decision may change.

Joel emphasizes the urgency of immediate repentance by commanding that the trumpet be blown a second time (2:15; cf. 1:14). This alarm, usually a call to war or to defend against invasion, is here a call to worship by corporate fasting in solemn assembly. All must drop their activities, even of the bridal bed, to join the worshiping community. Joel commands the priests to cry to God on their behalf, just as he cried out to God over the destruction of the land (1:19). Joel provides the priests with the words to pray. "Spare your people, O LORD" (2:17b). He even suggests ways to motivate God to relent since divine honor is at stake; if Israel were destroyed, the nations might ask, "Where is their God?" (2:17).

2:18–3:21
The Future

In the second half of the book, God responds to the people as if they had obeyed the call to "return" and the demands for fasting, lamentation, and worship. The juxtaposition of God's promises in the book's second half with the calls to "do something" in the first half may indicate that humans complied with these requests. Or perhaps God determines to have "pity" on them no matter their behavior. The absence of human response suggests that God acts on divine initiative alone. God promises to reverse their circumstances in three ways: by giving them peace and fertility (2:18–20, 25–26), by sending the spirit (2:27–29), and by bringing the Day of Judgment against the nations (2:30–3:8). Joel's voice interrupts God's to add words of comfort and gladness (2:21–24).

2:18–20, Divine Pity. Past, present, and future events appear as if interchangeable in these poems. In the past tense, Joel proclaims that God already "became jealous" for the land, "had pity" on the people, and made promises about the future (2:18–19a). At this very moment a new future is under way, for God "is sending" what the people need for survival and more. In the future, they will have "grain, wine, and oil" (cf. 1:10) and "be satisfied." No longer will their desperate circumstances make them a "mockery among the nations" (2:19). God will remove the "northern army" and destroy it (2:20). The army's northern origins may be related to the superhuman military force called "the foe from the north" (Jer. 1:13; 4:6).

2:21–24, Live in Joy. Joel interrupts God's promises with imperative speech. As if to lead a chorus of praise, he commands the soil, the animals, the growing things, to "be glad," "rejoice," and "put aside fear." The whole of the created world is to celebrate, and "the children of Zion," in particular, are to rejoice, for God promises to return fertility to the earth and abundant food to its inhabitants.

2:25–27, Security. God offers solace by promising to repay the people for the years of suffering caused by the "great army" of locusts God sent against them (2:25). Harmony will return to the community, for they will eat plenty, praise God's name, and be secure from shame. Above all, their relationship with God will be firm, for they will "know" God's presence (2:27).

2:28–29, Gift of the Spirit. There will be yet another gift, highlighted in the text by a new introductory clause, "then afterward" (2:28a). After they are fed and secure, God "will pour out" the divine spirit upon "all flesh" (2:28–29). This remarkable promise concerns the entire community, but the text specifies the recipients as the least likely bearers of divine gifts—the young and the old, the females and the slaves. God's spirit will be so abundantly manifest, so generously poured out, so present and alive in the community that revelation will overflow institutional channels. Not only priests and prophets but everyone "shall know" God and be potential revealers of God (2:27).

2:30–3:8, God Judges the Nations. Prose replaces poetry; scenes of disaster replace joy and harmony, for the Day of Yhwh is still to come. God will cause cosmic upheaval, turning the sun to darkness and the moon to blood (2:30–31). Yet these frightening words are words of comfort for those in Jerusalem who call upon God's name. They will survive the coming terror (2:32). "In those days," God promises to restore the fortunes of Judah and Jerusalem, but God will judge the nations for their sins against God's people. In the Valley of Jehosaphat, that is, the valley where "God judges," God will gather peoples, not to lament and fast (1:14), but to receive punishment (→ Jehosaphat, Valley of). Nations have "scattered" God's people, divided up the land, "cast lots" for them, and made slaves and prostitutes of the young (3:1–3). The nations' crimes are crimes of war and occupation. The Day of Judgment, therefore, will bring rescue and vindication to the people of Judah.

In a trial scene (3:4–8), God accuses Tyre, Sidon, and Philistia, traditional enemies of Israel, of attacking Judah and Jerusalem to retaliate against God. Offense against God's people is a personal attack on God. In a great reversal Judah will sell them to a foreign nation.

3:9–16, Call to War. Joel calls the nations to prepare for the Day of Judgment as for a military attack (3:9–10). In poetry that reverses Isaiah's famous call to turn swords into plowshares (Isa. 2:4; Mic. 4:3), Joel urges the nations to convert instruments for harvest into weapons of war (3:10). He prods them to come quickly to the Valley of Jehosaphat, and he implores God to bring warriors for a great trial in which Yhwh will sit in judgment (3:11–12). The nations' wickedness is like a harvest, overflowing and ripe, ready for cutting and treading (3:13). Dramatically Joel brings the scene alive. He observes "multitudes" awaiting judgment and sees cosmic signs in the darkening heavens. The judgment itself is never described in this poem, but its sound is terrifying. "The LORD roars from Zion and utters his voice from Jerusalem" (3:16; cf. 2:11).

3:17–21, God Dwells in Zion. The book closes with an oracle proclaiming a two-pronged promise of safety and well-being for the people of Judah and punishment for Judah's enemies. God assures them that they "shall know that I the LORD your God dwell in Zion, my holy mountain" (3:17). The Hebrew verb "to know" means to "have intimate experience of." The city itself will be holy, that is, set apart for God, and the divine presence will make the city safe from further invasion (→ Zion). God offers an idyllic future in keeping with the symbolic world of Zion theology. The divine presence will cause the earth itself to be fruitful and overflowing, dripping wine, flowing with milk, and producing water to nourish and sustain life (3:18).

By contrast, Israel's traditional enemies—Egypt and Edom—will suffer desolation and barrenness because of the violence they have committed against Judah (3:19). Judah and Jerusalem will be inhabited, receive divine protection, and be avenged against their enemies because God dwells in Zion (3:20–21).

The book concludes by reversing the life-threatening conditions described at its beginning. The earth is now fertile, military invasion no longer looms, and safety is assured because God dwells on the holy mountain. The divine presence transforms the earth and makes

human flourishing possible. God protects the downtrodden and exacts justice from the guilty (3:21).

Bibliography

Birch, B. C. *Hosea, Joel, and Amos.* Westminster Bible Commentary. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1997.

Limburg, J. *Hosea to Micah.* Interpretation. Atlanta, GA: John Knox, 1988.

Ogden, G. S., and R. R. Deutsch, *Joel and Malachi.* International Theological Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1987.

Petersen, D. L. "The Book of the Twelve/The Minor Prophets." In *The Hebrew Bible Today: An Introduction to Critical Issues.* Edited by S. L. McKenzie and M. P. Graham. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1998. Pp. 95–128.

Wolff, H. W. *Joel and Amos.* Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1977.

Amos

JULIA MYERS O'BRIEN

INTRODUCTION

"Let justice roll down like waters and righteousness like a mighty stream." These stirring words are but one of the many rousing calls to social justice in the book of Amos. Modern advocates of human liberation have found a kindred spirit in this book, which repeatedly insists that physical and economic oppression are as abhorrent to God as improper worship. Amos, however, is less a call to repentance than an announcement of judgment. With only a few exceptions, it announces that the punishment Israel deserves is inevitable; for its mistreatment of the poor, Israel will be destroyed.

The book's short superscription identifies the historical setting of this harsh prophecy. The superscription invites readers to understand Amos within the context of the Divided Kingdom, when Uzziah (783–743 B.C.) ruled the Southern Kingdom, Judah, and Jeroboam II (786–746 B.C.) ruled the Northern Kingdom, Israel. The prevalence of Northern placenames in the book suggests that Amos's primary concern was with Israel.

Little information beyond the book itself is available for reconstructing the actual social and economic conditions of Jeroboam's reign. The book is addressed to a sharply stratified society with a large economic gap between rich and poor, a situation that could have prevailed either during a time of economic prosperity or in a period of gradual economic decline, which would have hurt most those with least resources.

During the reigns of Jeroboam and Uzziah, foreign nations threatened these two small kingdoms. The Neo-Assyrian Empire, widely known for its thirst for land and resources, continued to grow in size and strength. Although the book never mentions Assyria by name, later generations likely understood Amos's prediction of exile to have been fulfilled by the Assyrian destruction of the Northern Kingdom in 722/721 B.C. When read within the frame of the superscription, then, Amos would have been one of the earliest classical prophets, roughly contemporaneous with the prophet Hosea (→ Assyria, Empire of).

What the book intends us to conclude about the prophet's own economic status is unclear. The superscription gives his location as Tekoa, a location in Judah not far from Jerusalem, and indicates that he was among the "shepherds." This latter word appears elsewhere in the Hebrew Bible only in 2 Kings 3:4, where it apparently refers to a position of some status. In chap. 7, however, Amos maintains that he was a "herder" (a more common word for a keeper of animals) as well as a dresser of sycamore trees (likely the work of an migrant laborer). In critiquing the wealthy of Israel, then, Amos of Tekoa was clearly a geographical outsider and likely a social outsider as well.

Scholars are divided, however, on how much of the book actually preserves the words of an eighth-century prophet. The book bears clear marks of materials from a later period: 1:2 must have been written after the earthquake it describes and hence at least two years after Amos began to speak, and the occasional passages favoring the Southern Kingdom and Davidic kingship in Jerusalem do not fit neatly into a book focused on the inevitable destruction of the Northern Kingdom. Scholars in the early twentieth century, envisioning prophets as preachers who delivered short, oral speeches that were later edited by their disciples into books, attempted to separate the original words of the prophet from the contributions of later editors. The call experience of 7:14–15, the visions in chaps. 7–8, and the theme of inevitable doom were deemed original to Amos, while the pro-Jerusalem portions, the oracles against Judah, Edom, and Tyre, the superscription, and the optimistic ending of the book (9:11–15) were considered contributions of later editors.

More recent study, however, has focused on the book's final form, recognizing that as a whole the book may be as late as the Persian period (sixth to fourth centuries B.C.), a period of great literary activity sparked by Persian imperial interests and Judean attempts to establish identity in a resettled land. If the book is the product of a later age, then it may be using a revered prophetic figure from the past to make a point about contemporary problems, leading Persian-period readers to conclude that if the Northern Kingdom was destroyed because of the oppression of the poor, then the social and economic stratification of the postexilic community falls under divine judgment as well.

Whether the contribution of the original prophet or of a later editor, the charged rhetoric of Amos allows readers to imagine a powerful preacher in action. In the opening, a systematic harangue of foreign nations draws the audience into the prophet's anger against those who abuse basic human rights. Then in a

dramatic turn much like the parable the prophet Nathan tells to King David (2 Sam. 12), the accusers are led to condemn themselves when the same diatribe is extended to Israel itself. Stinging metaphor and bold hyperbole portray the sins of the people: the rich women of Samaria are pictured as cows who will be led to slaughter (4:1–3), and Israelites are accused of selling the needy for a pair of sandals and trampling the head of the poor into the dust of the earth (2:7). The book's exaggerated literary style often makes reconstructing the actual practices of the people difficult—for example, is the "girl" of 2:7 a victim of incest or prostitution?

In addition to humanitarian concerns, the book of Amos also delivers some of the prophetic literature's strongest criticisms of Israelite worship. Chaps. 4–5 repeatedly mock worship at the Northern religious centers of Bethel and Gilgal and announce that God "despises your feasts" (5:21). Scholars are divided on how global these attacks are intended to be understood. Here, as before, the prophet may be utilizing hyperbole to stress God's anger with those who limit their concern to proper ritual while cheating the poor; or, as late-nineteenth-century scholars argued, Amos may be rejecting sacrifices and ritual altogether. A third possibility may be that the attacks are intended only for Northern worship sites; a later writer may have seen the North's failure to worship in Jerusalem as a major cause of its exile. Although other prophetic books (Hosea, Isaiah) include more accusations against the worship of foreign deities, Amos does occasionally critique idolatry (5:26; 9:14).

COMMENTARY

1:1–2, Superscription and Theme. The superscription offers various kinds of information. The odd phrase "the words which he saw" may be evidence that the book was put together from two earlier collections: one of the prophet's words (mostly in chaps. 1–6) and one of his visions (chaps. 7–9). In its current form, however, it evokes an image of a prophet who perceives God's words and faithfully delivers them. The superscriptions of other prophetic books identify their contents as "visions" (Isa. 1:1; Obad. 1; Hab. 1:1).

The information given about Amos himself is sparse. As noted above, the location of Tekoa identifies Amos as a resident of the Southern Kingdom, and since his message is to the North, readers immediately recognize Amos as a geographic outsider to his audience. Although the word used here for "shepherd" is obscure, the additional information given in chap. 7 describing Amos as a herder and dresser of sycamore trees has led to the assumption that he was not wealthy, but perhaps from among the poor he championed. No family information is given, in contrast to the superscriptions of Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel.

On a historical level, we cannot date the "earthquake," though reference to it does indicate that the book was written after the activity of Amos. On a literary level, however, the earthquake introduces readers to the themes of earthly disturbance and God's control of nature that will feature prominently in chaps. 4 and 9. The "withering" appearance of Yahweh is a frequent element in theophanies, when God appears in judgment (Judg. 5:4–5; Hab. 3:6; → Theophany). The Southern orientation (God roars from Jerusalem and Zion) may be evidence that some, if not all, of the book has been reworked to incorporate concerns beyond those of the eighth-century prophet.

1:3–2:16, God in Judgment of the Nations. This section is comprised of eight speeches, each directed toward a particular nation. Because of this feature, they usually are identified as oracles against the nations, a genre known elsewhere in the prophetic literature (Isa. 13–23; Jer. 46–51; Ezek. 25–32). Some scholars have suggested that the oracles against the nations were used in the ritual cursing of enemies or perhaps as part of ceremonies to ensure success in warfare. Amos's use of this form varies from other examples of the genre, however, in that the oracles not only occur at the beginning of the book, but also lead to a climactic accusation not of the enemy, but of the audience itself.

Moreover, the highly formalized character of Amos's speeches suggests that the form has become more of a speech pattern than an indicator of original setting. Each begins with "for three transgressions and for four," not an enumeration of the crimes, but a formulaic phrase also used in wisdom literature (Prov. 30) to build suspense. Each then lists the crimes one nation has committed against another; and, finally, each announces punishment in the form of burned strongholds and exile. Repetition of vocabulary ("entire communities" in 1:6; 1:9; "exile" in 1:5; 1:6) may indicate that Amos was using traditional language.

Amos probably chose these particular nations not because they were particularly evil, but because they lived near the real target of the condemnations—Israel. Unlike the oracles against the nations of Isaiah and Jeremiah, which indict Egypt and Babylon, the oracles in Amos all target relatively close neighbors of Israel: Damascus, the capital of Syria, to the northeast; Gaza, Ashdod, Ashkelon, and Ekron, the principal cities of Philistines, to the southwest; Tyre, a leading Phoenician city, to the northwest; Edom, farthest to the southeast; Ammon, slightly to the southeast; and Moab, between Edom and Ammon. Because the oracles do not follow a clear geographical progression, their organization may depend on literary catchwords: "Edom," for example, ends one oracle (1:9–10) and begins another (1:11–12).

All six of the nations are accused of atrocities in

times of war. Although we know of no international treaties outlining "proper" wartime behavior, the oracles do presume that certain behaviors are universally recognized as heinous: ripping open pregnant women (1:13) and exiling people from their land (1:6, 9). Other "crimes" are more generic in nature, especially those in the oracle against Tyre.

Although the first six nations are accused of humanitarian abuses, an important shift occurs with the oracle against Judah. The basis for condemnation in 2:4–5 is the violation of the covenant between Judah and God. Though precise violations of the law are not listed, the vocabulary is similar to that used in Deuteronomy's description of the covenant with Moses, raising the possibility that this oracle reflects an age later than that of the eighth-century B.C. prophet.

With great rhetorical drama, the final accusation falls on Israel. The oracle genre that has been used so effectively against others now brings its full arsenal against the prophet's own people; and, after having read the previous seven oracles, readers anticipate that punishment will be inevitable and harsh. Although the earlier oracles evaluate international relations, kings, and capital cities, the oracle against Israel focuses on injustice within the nation itself, particularly the oppression of the poor. In graphic, hyperbolic language ("who trample the head of the poor into the dust of earth," 2:7; "sell the needy for a pair of sandals," 2:6), the people of Israel are accused of remaining religiously observant while acting unjustly toward the poor. Even though the people frequent altars and the house of God, they do so at the expense of those they have oppressed.

Amos 2:9 marks a shift of literary style, abandoning the compact format of the oracles against the nations in favor of an extended, detailed review of Israel's crimes. A reminder of God's special attention to Israel during the Exodus and settlement experiences (2:9–10) becomes the ground for greater condemnation: although all nations are responsible for humane treatment of others, Israel's special covenant relation with God should have yielded justice. The people have even rejected God's gracious provision of religious spokespersons (prophets and Nazirites; → Nazirites), and their attempt to silence the prophets foreshadows Amaziah's warning to Amos in chap. 7. The ensuing punishment, as 2:13–16 graphically explains, will be military in nature and inevitable.

3:1–6:14, God's Judgment on Israel. Chap. 3 opens by stressing themes related to the thesis of 2:9–16: because God has shown special favor to Israel, especially in the events of the Exodus, then Israel is responsible for abiding by God's will. Israel is only one of the nations and yet a chosen people, a contradiction that pervades the book. Although the opening oracles against the nations treat Israel as one of the nations, 3:2 proclaims, "You only have I known from all the families of the earth." The Exodus experience is treated as unique to Israel in 2:10 and 3:1–2, though 9:7 attributes Exodus experiences to the Philistines and the Arameans as well.

Amos 3:3–8 bolsters the announcement of punishment by building an argument that the prophet is faithfully reporting God's will. This argument begins with a series of apparently rhetorical questions, the implied answers to which are "no." Just as common events have identifiable causes, so too the word of the prophet is the inevitable outcome of God's speech. Amos 3:6 states an important conviction of ancient theology—the belief that God causes all events, even disasters. The conclusion of the entire argument in 3:7–8 maintains that prophets do not choose their own roles, but are compelled to prophesy, a sentiment that will be repeated in 7:14–15. The "lion" of 3:8 is God, as may have been seen in the parallelism of the two halves of the verse ("The lion" // "The Lord GOD") and the description of a God who "roars" in 1:2.

Just as the capitals of the nations were targeted in the oracles against the nations, Samaria, the capital of Israel, is targeted in 3:9–15. Egypt, who along with Ashdod of the Philistines is called to testify against Israel, is mentioned for the first time, though references to the Nile appear later in the book (8:8; 9:9). Amos 3:11 explicitly indicates that the punishment to befall Samaria is that of military defeat, and 3:12 makes a harrowing comparison of the remnant of Judah to the body pieces left after a lion has attacked. Bethel, one of the religious centers of the Northern Kingdom, will be defaced; the style of "horned altars" is known both from archaeological finds and from the account in 1 Kings 1–2. The residences of the wealthy, who can afford two homes, will be destroyed as well.

Particular attention to Samaria continues in 4:1–3, a scathing attack on the city's wealthy women. Their description as "cows" may arise from a feminine parallel to "bulls of Bashan" (Ps. 21:12). Bashan was an area known for fine cattle (→ Bashan). Although translations consistently refer to "hooks" and "fishhooks" in 4:2, the precise meaning of the words is unclear; the image apparently is of implements for leading cows to slaughter. To be flung into Harmon, the trash heap, brings additional shame.

The Northern worship centers of Gilgal and Bethel are targeted in the sarcastic call to worship in 4:4. Religious ritual in general may be condemned, in keeping with the book's insistence that true religion cares for the poor, or the passage may reflect the pro-Jerusalem concerns of a later editor/author. As in chap. 3, all natural events are attributed to God. God controls rain, famine, and crop productivity. The people are expected to know that the lack of sufficient food and water are due to God's displeasure. The recalling of the events leading to the Exodus provides an ironic twist: Exodus reports that drastic measures were needed because God hardened the pharaoh's heart, but here the

people themselves are blamed for hardening their hearts against the evidence of God's terrible deeds.

In the first of three doxologies in the book, 4:13 portrays a God who both controls nature and communicates with humans. These attributes of God, typical of hymns in ancient Israel, do not stand as detached praise of the mightiness of God, however, but remind readers that the deity Israel has offended is none other than the all-powerful God of all the earth.

Both the literary style of lamentation and the tense of the verbs in 5:1–3 describe Israel's destruction as if it had occurred in the past—so inevitable that it can be described as already accomplished. The imperatives that follow in 5:4 and 5:6, however ("seek!" "live!"), suggest that repentance might still be possible. The nation is described as a desolate woman, an image explored in great depth in other prophetic and related literature (Lamentations, Isaiah). Amos 5:5–6 repeats vocabulary already encountered in the book: the rejection of Bethel and Gilgal (4:4) and punishment described as unquenchable fire (oracles against the nations). In a second doxology, 5:8–9 links God's cosmic activity with God's moral governance of the world. The same deity who controls the constellations acts on behalf of the oppressed.

Amos 5:10–13 repeats many of the concerns of chaps. 2–3, identifying mistreatment of the poor as the nation's primary crime and announcing that those with material wealth will not be allowed to enjoy their possessions. The wrongdoing is not primarily individual but corporate, as seen in the repeated reference to the city gates, where the elders administered justice. The frequent imperatives to act positively in the face of God's great displeasure (5:5, 6, 14, 15) do not offer refuge from punishment, but rather the hope that those who remain after the large-scale destruction of the nation might find God's favor. Images of destruction predominate, however, encompassing both urban ("streets," "squares") and rural ("farmers") life.

Because the book attributes to Amos's audience positive views of the Day of the Lord, many scholars infer that Amos's audience expected a day of final vindication for God's chosen people, a time when the divine warrior would appear and take vengeance on Israel's enemies. Amos crushes those expectations and argues that the people's sins require a just God to punish and not to reward them. What they desire will not bring safety, much like the irony of seeking refuge from a lion only to encounter a bear.

The theme of useless religious ceremonies, explored in 4:4–5, is expanded in 5:21–23, where God claims to hate festivals and offerings. This bold hyperbole is likely best understood in light of the famous summary of 5:24: only when worship is matched with justice as powerful as torrents of water can it have any real value or meaning. The claim that Israel did not offer sacrifices in the wilderness is a minority opinion in the OT; the books of Exodus and Leviticus, for example, locate the origin of Israel's sacrificial worship in instructions given to Moses at Mount Sinai. Exile for Israel is mentioned explicitly for the first time in 5:27.

Chap. 6 rehearses many of the themes already developed in Amos: Israel's common lot with other nations, the inevitability of the Day of the Lord, and the extravagance of the wealthy paired with their disregard for the poor. Unique, however, is the pairing of Zion (Jerusalem, the capital of the Southern Kingdom) with Samaria (6:1). As the book progresses, images of exile become more graphic: 5:27 announces exile, 6:7 reveals that the wealthy will be among the first to go into exile, and, in the harrowing image of 6:9–10, families suffer not only complete decimation, but also the indignity of improper burial.

Amos 6:12 offers more rhetorical questions (see 3:3–6), the implied answers to which are "no," yet translations vary on the precise meaning of the verse. Because early Hebrew manuscripts were written without spaces between words, translators' judgment of where to divide words can differ, leaving the possibility that the second half of v. 12a could read either "Does one plow the sea with oxen?" (NRSV) or "Does one plow with oxen?" (KJV, ASV). After repeating the "justice to wormwood" theme utilized in 5:7, the chapter closes with a new clue to the upcoming disaster: God will use an unnamed nation as an instrument.

7:1–9:10, Visions of Judgment. The visions that begin with 7:1 mark a shift in style. Compared with earlier chapters, they follow a more narrative than poetic style, have a more clearly recognizable structure, and build upon one another toward an important climax. For these reasons, and because they speak of the process by which a prophet comes to know God's will, some interpreters have considered the visions as the core of the original book of Amos, perhaps recorded by the prophet himself. There is no reason, however, to separate the authorship of the visions from that of the book as a whole. A later writer could have used a first-person style just as easily as one in the eighth century B.C. in order to evoke the sense of immediacy that confronts readers of the visions.

The first two visions, of locusts (7:1–3) and fire (7:4–6), develop in similar ways. God shows the prophet images of devastation, the prophet pleads mercy for the people, and God withholds the punishment. Since the first harvest was taken by levy for the king, the latter growth would have been the people's sole source of livelihood and, hence, essential for their survival.

The third vision, that of the plumb line (7:7–9), marks a break in pattern from earlier ones. Here, the prophet does not protest God's decree and the verdict is not revoked. For the first time in the book (apart from the superscription), the prophet is mentioned by name, though we learn no more about his background

than the superscription suggests. The vision concludes with judgment on the king of Israel, Jeroboam II, whose name provides a link to the following short narrative about official opposition to Amos's work.

Having encountered so many critiques against Bethel, readers are not surprised that a priest at Bethel plays the role of villain in 7:10–17. Amaziah's report of Amos's words to Jeroboam faithfully transmits the basic message of Amos. Moreover, the prophet does not deny his own words. Instead, Amos defends himself by claiming that he accurately reports God's message (as in 3:8). Amaziah sees prophecy as a profession that one can manage; one could be a prophet for hire in either Judah or Israel. Amos, however, stresses the nonvoluntary nature of prophecy. His speech implies that he *was* not a prophet until the compelling call of God sealed his fate. Like much of the Deuteronomistic History (Joshua through 2 Kings), the text condemns those who try to hinder or control the prophetic word: because Amaziah has attempted to silence Amos, he and his entire family will be included in the punishment that Amos has already announced on the nation. The fate of Amaziah's wife and children is given as punishment not for their own deeds, but for those of the priest.

The fourth vision (8:1–3) relies on a verbal, not visual, pun between the words "fruit" and "end," suggesting the report is the product of literary work. Although 7:13 does mention a temple of Jeroboam, the mention in 8:3 of a temple may reflect a Southern perspective. The vision incorporates themes from earlier in the book: mass deaths (6:9–10), trampling the needy (2:7; 5:11), unjust business dealing (5:12), selling the poor for silver and the needy for sandals (2:6). The consistent rhetorical power of the book is also evident here: the quotations in 8:5–6 are probably not the actual words of the people, but more likely the author's attempt to verbalize the attitudes that govern the people's behaviors. "On that day" (6:9) refers to the Day of the Lord described in 5:18–20. It will be a time of horrific reversals in nature and in human destinies. Those who worship other deities will be punished (see also 5:25–26).

Amos's final vision (9:1–4) does not begin with the same formula and, this time, does not involve objects or animals. Instead, he sees God, who stands beside an altar. The mention of capitals and thresholds suggests a real temple, which may be the temple of Jeroboam mentioned in chap. 7 or, if the contribution of a Southern perspective, the Temple in Jerusalem (also 8:3). God begins by acting in the temple; both the people and the structure itself will fall, and although readers have been made aware that no one will escape, God's determination to root out every last person is highlighted here. Captivity itself is not a sufficient punishment; God will kill wrongdoers. As with the previous two doxologies, 9:5–6 serves not as free-floating praise, but rather as the basis for God's judgment. Judgment has been decreed by none other than the all-powerful God, who controls all great waters.

9:11–15, Prophecies of Restoration. Since total destruction of the nation and the people within it has been a consistent theme of the book, the closing words of hope seem out of place. The lines appended to the message of judgment (vv. 8b–10) argue the opposite and anticipate these concluding promises of restoration. Even though "on that day" has elsewhere in the book opened announcements of destruction, in 9:11 it opens a promise of future restoration. That the restoration involves the house of David, clearly a Southern concern, indicates that the book was either edited or perhaps written after the defeat of the Judean monarchy by the Babylonians in 587 B.C. Similarly, concern that the people will never again be exiled from the land suggests a vantage point from the experience of exile. The promise for the future is painted in as bold a way as were the announcements of punishment; not only will cities be rebuilt, but nature itself will also change to benefit the returnees.

Such positive endings to otherwise scathing books (Hosea, as well) allowed later generations to understand prophets as voices of hope for the future. The NT, for example, treats prophetic language as the fulfillment of positive promises for the writer's own time (especially Rom. 15).

Bibliography

Auld, A. G. *Amos.* Old Testament Guides. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1986.

Gowan, D. E. "The Book of Amos." *The New Interpreter's Bible.* Vol. 8. Nashville, TN: Abingdon Press, 1996.

Mays, J. L. *Amos.* Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1969.

Sanderson, J. "Amos." In *Women's Bible Commentary.* Expanded ed. Edited by C. Newsom and S. Ringe. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox Press, 1998.

Obadiah

MICHAEL H. FLOYD

INTRODUCTION

The heading, "The vision of Obadiah," describes the book of Obadiah as the record of a prophetic revelation received by someone by that name, but not necessarily written by him. The term "vision" refers to whatever the prophetic imagination has been divinely enabled to perceive, whether images seen (e.g., Dan. 8:1–12) or, as in this case, words heard (cf. 1 Sam. 3) and written down (cf. Hab. 2:2; Jer. 36). The superscriptions of prophetic books often include biographical data that locate the prophet historically (e.g., Isa. 1:1; Jer. 1:1–2; Amos 1:1), but in this case subsequent references to events involving Edom (vv. 6–7, 11) provide the only historical background. We thus know nothing about Obadiah except that he is reported to have had prophetic insights regarding God's involvement in these particular events. These insights have been recorded in their present form so that readers may learn from them how to recognize similar patterns of divine activity in other historical situations.

There are striking similarities, in some cases verbatim, between the initial verses of Obadiah and a similarly anti-Edomite prophecy in Jer. 49:7–22 (cf. Obad. 1–7; Jer. 49:7, 9, 14–16). Scholars disagree on whether this resemblance shows one of these texts to depend on the other, or whether it shows both to depend on a common but no longer extant antecedent. In any case, these similarities underscore the joint membership of Obadiah and Jer. 49:7–22 in an extended family of anti-Edomite prophetic texts (e.g., Isa. 34:5–17; Lam. 4:21–22; Ezek. 25:12–14, 35; Amos 1:11–12; Mal. 1:2–4). This polemic is informed by traditional memories of Edom's refusal to allow Moses to lead the Hebrew refugees through its land (Num. 20:14–21) as well as wars in which Edom became subject to and broke free from Judahite rule (2 Sam. 8:13–14; 1 Kings 14:7; 2 Kings 16:6; 2 Chron. 20; 21:8–10). Obadiah also repeats the accusation that the Edomites were accomplices in the Babylonians' destruction of Jerusalem in 586 B.C. (vv. 11–14; cf. Ps. 137:7) and refers to a subsequent attack on Edom by former allies (v. 7), which cannot be as precisely dated (→ Edomites; Nabatea; Nabateans). By reflecting retrospectively on what these two events portend for the world's future, the prophetic voice speaks from a late sixth- or early fifth-century Judeocentric perspective and invites readers to consider the world scene from this same viewpoint. Some scholars date all or part of Obadiah to the pre-exilic period, but the book could hardly have assumed its present form any earlier than the Exile. It could even have been written in the postexilic period so as to portray the prophet functioning in an earlier time. There may well have been earlier versions of the text, but there is no consensus regarding the stages of its development.

By characterizing Israel as Jacob and Edom as Esau, Obadiah associates the conflict between these two peoples with the pentateuchal theme of the conflict between their eponymous ancestors, the twin sons of Isaac and Rebekah (Gen. 25:19–33:20; note esp. 25:30b; 32:28). Against this background, Obadiah's reflections on the historic animosity between Israel and Edom become more than nationalistic sentiment masked in religious terms. These stories do reflect Israel's sense of being destined to overcome Edom (Gen. 25:23; cf. Num. 24:18), but they also reflect other almost paradoxical issues. For example, conflict with Edom is recognized as an aspect of the same fratricidal tendencies that erupt within the Israelite community. Moreover, encounters with God are recognized as occurring not only in victories, but also in crippling struggles with God (Gen. 32:24–32) and in reconciliation with fraternal enemies like Edom (Gen. 33:1–17; note v. 10b). Obadiah is confident that Yahweh will requite Edom's treachery by obliterating it as a nation, but not because Israel is always justified or Yahweh always sides with Israel. Israel has learned that Yahweh can call for reconciliation or give victory to Israel's enemies, or even obliterate Israel as a nation. Yahweh now intends to destroy Edom and secure Israel's place in the world in order to teach the nations a moral lesson.

The conflict between Israel and Edom is also figuratively described as an opposition between two mountains, Mount Zion (vv. 17, 21) and Mount Esau (vv. 8, 19, 21). In ancient myths, mountains are sites of sanctuaries, and the establishment of a temple is often described as occurring because its god won a cosmic victory on the mountain where it is located (→ Creation). Such mythic connotations are suggested by the description of Mount Zion as the "holy mountain" at which Yahweh will requite the nations that behave like Edom, thereby establishing a sanctuary where Yahweh's people can take refuge (vv. 15–17; cf. Ps. 48). The association of Mount Esau with Teman (v. 9) bears similar mythic connotations alluding to the motif of

Yahweh marching from the south to defend his people (Hab. 3:3; Deut. 33:2; Judg. 5:4; Zech. 9:14; → Teman). The main issues at stake are Israel's integrity as a religious community centered on Yahweh's Temple in Jerusalem and Israel's right to assume the kind of sociopolitical form that will guarantee this status. Edom is emblematic of the forces that threaten to undermine the world's recognition of this right, and Yahweh's rule over the nations will be manifest in the elimination of such threats.

COMMENTARY

The heading is followed by a narrative introduction (v. 1) that identifies the main body of the text as a message from Yahweh and summarily describes its contents and mode of delivery. Like an envoy carrying a diplomatic communiqué, the prophet has issued a manifesto concerning Edom that puts both the Edomites and other nations on notice. Though brief, the introduction imagines a rather complicated rhetorical situation involving a narrator, the readers implicitly addressed by the narration, the prophetic character named Obadiah, an audience of fellow Yahwists before whom he implicitly delivers the prophecy, and the various foreign nations to whom the prophecy is explicitly addressed. The narrator's report implies to readers that the prophet was overheard by fellow Yahwists as he spoke in God's name, confronting the Edomites with the consequences of their negative behavior and urging other nations to join in attacking them. First-person plural pronouns are used ambiguously to blur these levels of discourse. It is not clear whether the phrase "let us rise" is addressed to the nations or to the prophet's implied audience of fellow Yahwists, and whether the phrase "we have heard" includes the readers of the narration or the audiences addressed both explicitly and implicitly by the prophet.

The speech of Yahweh (vv. 2–18) begins with an announcement of punishment (vv. 2–9). Yahweh intends to diminish the Edomites until they become "utterly despised" (v. 2), God's response to their self-deceptive pride. A false sense of security, engendered by the region's naturally defensible high terrain, is symptomatic of their overall hubris (v. 3). Even if they were to attain the status of a dominant power, Yahweh could use their own arrogance to bring them down (v. 4; cf. the image of the eagle in Ezek. 17:1–10 and the image of being cast down from the stars in Isa. 14:12–17). The possibility of such a downfall is underscored by reminding the Edomites that a similar fate has befallen them before (vv. 5–7). They have previously found themselves double-crossed by their allies, whose plundering has taken even more than thieves take and left even less than harvesters leave. In being thus victimized by their false sense of security, there is hardly any evidence of Edom's proverbial wisdom (Jer. 49:7; Bar. 3:22). In view of this precedent, there could well come a "day" when Yahweh will destroy the scribes that sustain Edom's wisdom traditions and the soldiers that provide Edom's defense, thus eradicating the entire population (vv. 8–9). In vv. 10–14 Yahweh makes an accusation that explains the punishment of the Edomites. They have "done violence" to their brother Jacob (v. 10a) by condoning and exploiting the Babylonians' defeat of Jerusalem (vv. 11–14). For this offense they will be shamed and expelled from their land (v. 10b).

In vv. 15–18 Yahweh describes how the nations are implicated in the fate of Edom, thus providing the motivation for them to oppose all that Edom stands for (v. 1b). The Edomites' impending doom is but the beginning of a process that encompasses the whole world. As Edom's fortunes are now being reversed, so is the world situation about to be reversed in the coming "day of Yahweh." And the pivot on which this cosmic process turns is the Temple of Yahweh in Jerusalem. Its destruction is the great wrong that needs to be set right, and its restoration to holiness (v. 17a) is the focal point of a world transformation. The change begins with Edom because its participation in the destruction of Jerusalem was most treacherous. As kindred neighbors, the Edomites should not have taken advantage of the situation. Because the Edomites were so heavily implicated in Jerusalem's "day of trouble" (note the recurrence of this phrase and variations in vv. 11–14), they will be the first to know the troubles of the "day of Yahweh." They will continue to suffer the kind of treachery that Israel has suffered at their hands, until Edom is finally consumed by Israel (v. 18). Any nation guilty of crimes like Edom's will similarly find that their victory toasts have turned to drunken gulps from the cup of doom (v. 16; cf. Ps. 75:8; Isa. 51:17–23; Jer. 25:15–17). But as for the Israelites, whose refuge on Mount Zion was once cut off (v. 14), they will find there a refuge from which to dispossess all those who had dispossessed them (v. 17). The outcome of this turnabout is described in vv. 19–21. Israel will regain the territory to which it historically aspired, Edom will become subject to the authority emanating from Yahweh's Temple in Jerusalem, and Yahweh's cosmic kingship will once again be manifest.

The book of Obadiah reflects theologically on the history of Israelite-Edomite relations so that its readers might draw such moral conclusions as these: If nations with brotherly affinities play imperial power games to exploit one another, God will inevitably redress this unjust violation of the world order. Whenever such a violation threatens the welfare of Yahweh's people, God will reshape the international context so that Israel can assume the sociopolitical form most appropriate for its mission in a changing world.

Bibliography

Ben Zvi, E. *A Historical-Critical Study of the Book of Obadiah.* Beihefte zur Zeitschrift für die alttestamentliche Wissenschaft 193. Berlin: de Gruyter, 1996.

Dicou, B. *Edom, Israel's Brother and Antagonist: The Role of Edom in Biblical Prophecy and Story.* Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series, 169. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1994.

Raabe, P. R. *Obadiah: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary.* Anchor Bible, 24D. New York: Doubleday, 1996.

Wolff, H. W. *Obadiah and Jonah: A Commentary.* Translated by M. Kohl. Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1986.

Jonah

SIDNIE WHITE CRAWFORD

INTRODUCTION

"Oh, Jonah, he lived in a whale . . ." That phrase from George Gershwin's *Porgy and Bess* aptly summarizes, for most people, the salient feature of the book of Jonah: Jonah the prophet was swallowed by a "great fish" and three days later was miraculously vomited out onto dry land. Yet this is only one episode in a book that, despite its size, is one of the most theologically sophisticated in the Bible.

Jonah is included in the sequence of the twelve Minor Prophets, in Hebrew Bibles appearing in fifth place, between Obadiah and Micah, and in Greek Bibles sixth, between Obadiah and Nahum. Jonah, however, is not a typical prophetic book. The other prophetic books are collections of sayings by a prophet with often minimal narrative, but Jonah is a story about a prophet told by an omniscient narrator. In this way the story of Jonah resembles the stories about prophets such as Elijah and Elisha found in the books of Kings. These stories narrate the deeds of prophets, but contain little direct speech. But these stories are part of larger historical narratives, while Jonah's story stands alone. In this way, Jonah resembles other narrative books such as Ruth, Esther, Tobit, and Judith, none of which features a prophet as the main character. Further, Jonah is never called a prophet, although he certainly acts like one: God speaks directly to him, he acts as God's spokesman, and he expects his prophetic words to have consequences. In addition, the Jonah of the book is surely meant to be identified with Jonah son of Amittai, a prophet of the Northern Kingdom, Israel, appearing in 1 Kings 14:25. Thus, Jonah is a prophet's book, but one that does not fit the typical prophetic genres.

Jonah's genre, therefore, is best described as a short story, "a fictional story developed around a historical figure for didactic purposes" (Limburg). In presenting his message, the author uses humor and a mocking irony that is very striking. The story is fictional; it is unlikely that the events narrated in Jonah actually happened, and whether they did or not is irrelevant to the author's purpose. The characters and setting in Jonah are "types," or stock characters. The characters, aside from Jonah and God, are all nameless; Nineveh is any big city, and Tarshish is simply a faraway place. Readers are meant to identify with Jonah and learn the lesson God wishes to teach them.

The book of Jonah is a unified composition, and none of its various episodes can stand as a separate entity. Past commentators have argued that the psalm Jonah sings in 2:3–10 is a later interpolation into the text, since a psalm of thanksgiving is incongruous given Jonah's situation in the belly of the fish. However, the psalm does have literary unity with the rest of the book (key words such as "go down" recur), and, after all, Jonah has just been rescued from certain death by drowning. Purported inconsistencies between the psalm and the prose narrative can be explained by postulating that the psalm was an earlier composition incorporated by the author into his narrative. Thus the psalm is now an integral part of the book.

The best evidence for a date of the composition of the book is that of vocabulary, which contains Aramaic (or possibly northern Israelite) features. In addition, the book's lack of historical accuracy (Nineveh was a much smaller city than described, and its king was the king of the Assyrian Empire, not merely the city), its dependence on earlier literature such as the Exodus narrative, the Psalms, and possibly Joel, and its short story genre, which is more common in the postexilic period, all point to a postexilic, Persian period (sixth to fourth centuries B.C.) date as most likely.

Jonah's message may be summed up in God's question (4:11): "Should I not have pity over Nineveh the great city . . . ?" (→ Nineveh). God's mercy, the story proclaims, prevails over God's justice, for which humanity should be thankful. It would be just for Nineveh to perish, but God chooses, in light of the inhabitants' repentance, to be merciful to it. Likewise, it would have been just for Jonah, a prophet who disobeyed God's direct command, to have drowned in the sea, but God chose to be merciful to him even before he repented. Thus the story is not, as some commentators have supposed, aimed at those concerned with Jewish identity. Rather, the author wants readers to see that God's mercy can extend even to those that least deserve it. Thus, the Ninevites are targets of God's wrath not because they are Gentiles, but because they are sinners. Jonah is reluctant to go to Nineveh not because it is a Gentile city, but because it is such a sinful city. He is angry at the end of the book not because

God saves Gentiles, but because God saves sinners, and this perverts his idea of justice. But God may choose to override justice in the name of mercy.

The book of Jonah has been consistently popular with both Jews and Christians, its canonicity and place among the Twelve Prophets never questioned. In Judaism, it is the afternoon reading for the services of Yom Kippur, since the Ninevites are models of repentance. For biblical literalists, the historical veracity of Jonah has become a test of faith. This insistence upon the historical truth of the details of the Jonah narrative misses the larger theological truth of the story; Jonah's historicity is theologically irrelevant.

COMMENTARY

1:1–16, Jonah Attempts to Flee. The narrative starts fast and quickly moves to the scene of the action for the first part of the narrative, the sea. Verse 1 begins with a typical prophetic formula, "The word of the LORD came to Jonah . . ." (Jer. 1:4; Hos. 1:1; Mic. 1:1). Yahweh, the god of Israel, orders Jonah to "arise" and go to Nineveh, characterized as a great city but otherwise unidentified. Readers, however, would recognize Nineveh as the capital of the Assyrian Empire, the empire that dominated the ancient Near East in the eighth and seventh centuries B.C. Assyria was the great enemy of Israel, destroying the Northern Kingdom in 722 B.C. and forcing the Southern Kingdom, Judah, to become a vassal state (2 Kings 17:5–6; 16:7–18). Nineveh itself, located on the bank of the Tigris River in northern Mesopotamia, was destroyed by the Neo-Babylonians in 612 B.C. (cf. Nahum), but would have remained in Israel's historical memory as a symbol of conquest and rapacity. Thus, Jonah is told to proclaim to the Ninevites that their "evil" (Heb. *ra'*) had come before Yahweh. The word "evil" (*ra'* with various nuances) will recur throughout the story.

Jonah does "arise," but does not go to Nineveh. Instead, in the first of a series of oppositions in the story, he "flees" in the exact opposite direction, to Tarshish (→ Tarshish). Tarshish has been identified with various exotic locales, including Phoenicia, Sardinia, and Spain. Its exact location is less important than its distance from Israel and the fact that it is reached by sea (Nineveh is reached by land). Jonah seems to believe he is successfully fleeing from God and God's jurisdiction, a notion contradicted by the Psalms: "Where can I go from your spirit, and where can I *flee* from your presence?" (Ps. 139:7; emphasis mine).

Jonah begins by "going down" to Joppa (modern Jaffa). This "going down" begins Jonah's downward movement in the first half of the book, culminating in the depths of the sea (Sasson). Jonah is physically going down, from the inland hills to the Mediterranean coast, but he is also "going down" spiritually as he attempts to flee from Yahweh's presence. Joppa, his first stop, was not under Hebrew control in the postexilic period. Jonah hires a ship to take him to Tarshish; he seems well on his way out of Yahweh's jurisdiction.

However, Yahweh, the deity who controls nature as well as nation-states, "hurls" a great storm at the ship, which is in danger of capsizing. Yahweh's control of the sea is well-attested in Israelite literature, beginning with the earliest story of the Exodus in Exodus 15 (→ Sea). The sailors (gentile and pagan) react in typical fashion, praying to their various gods and attempting to lighten the load. Jonah, however, "goes down" into the ship's hold and falls asleep! For Christian readers, this action forms an obvious parallel to Jesus' slumber during a storm on the Sea of Galilee (Matt. 8:23–27; Luke 8:22–25). But Jesus' sleep signifies peace in the presence of God, while Jonah's sleep is the sleep of oblivion. The helmsman seeks to recall Jonah from this oblivion by rebuking his indifference to his own and the ship's fate.

The sailors now decide to cast lots, a traditional way of determining the will of the gods (e.g., 1 Sam. 10:19; Esther 3:7). The lot falls, as readers expect, on Jonah. Jonah's response is ironic: rather than being repentant or fearful, he proudly proclaims that he is a Hebrew, a servant of the god who caused the storm, the very god from whom he is fleeing! The narrative now emphasizes the contrast between the pious heathen sailors and the evidently unrepentant prophet: Jonah blandly advises the sailors to toss him into the sea (is death preferable to going to Nineveh?), while the sailors first attempt to row back to land and then ask Yahweh's forgiveness for what they are about to do to Jonah. When the recalcitrant Jonah hits the sea and the storm stops, the sailors offer sacrifices and vows to Jonah's god. There is no mention of conversion; the point is that the heathen sailors are more pious than the prophet Jonah!

2:1–11, Jonah Inside the Great Fish. Yahweh now "appoints" a *dag*, a "fish," to swallow Jonah. *Dag* is the only available word in Hebrew for "fish," so it is impossible to tell what kind of fish swallowed Jonah. The "whale" of the KJV is unlikely. However, pondering the odd details of the narrative misses the main point: Yahweh chooses to rescue the disobedient Jonah before he utters a word of repentance. The length of Jonah's sojourn in the fish's belly, three complete days, bears symbolic significance. The number "three" often is used in miraculous events: Elijah stretches himself three times on a child in order to revive him (1 Kings 17:21); Daniel's three companions survive the fiery furnace (Dan. 3). Further, three days signifies a significant stretch of time (Gen. 42:17; Jth. 2:21). Finally, in the Gospels Jonah's three-day sojourn in the fish's belly

becomes the type for the three days Jesus spends in the realm of the dead (Matt. 12:38–42, 16:1–4; Luke 11:29–32).

Jonah's psalm, as stated above, was probably not originally composed by the author of Jonah, but was used by him for his narrative. There thus exist some incongruities between the psalm and the rest of the narrative: Jonah has not previously cried out to God, but rather ignored him; he is not literally in the depths of the sea; and the book otherwise shows no interest in the Temple or cultic practices. However, on a symbolic level the psalm fits the narrative very well: Yahweh has rescued Jonah from death by drowning; his downward plunge, which began in 1:3, reaches rock bottom at the "roots of the mountains" in 2:7; and in the psalm Jonah the prophet finally "remembers" Yahweh (2:8). The sentiments expressed in the psalm would have been familiar to any reader (cf. Ps. 28; 69; 130); it also contains elements found in older mythological literature, such as the parallel between sea and river (v. 4), which recalls the formulaic Prince Sea/Judge River, the god of chaos in the Ugaritic Ba'al epic.

With this psalm Jonah begins to reverse his downward spiral. His rehabilitation continues when the fish vomits him out on dry land, a farcical moment. Jonah may be ascending from his spiritual depths, but physically he is a wreck.

3:1–10, Jonah in Nineveh. Jon. 3:1 begins in exactly the same way as 1:1, "the word of the LORD came to Jonah. . . ." The only change comes with the word "a second time," leading readers to hope for a different outcome. Yahweh's command to Jonah, however, is slightly different from the command in 1:2. Jonah is to cry "to" Nineveh rather than "over" Nineveh. The preposition "to" suggests the possibility of a response from the Ninevites. The message itself is left unspecified; no mention of Nineveh's evil is made.

Jonah finally obeys Yahweh and goes to Nineveh. The description of Nineveh in v. 3 is ambiguous: the Hebrew says literally "Nineveh was a great city for God, a journey of three days." Several suggestions for understanding the phrase "for God" have been made: Nineveh was a great city "even in God's sight" (Limburg); "an exceedingly large city" (NRSV); "a large city of God" (JPS; understanding the preposition as an Aramaicizing genitive); "a large city to the gods" (understanding *'elohim* as a plural referring to the pagan gods [Sasson]). The exact meaning of this phrase, however, remains uncertain. The size given for Nineveh is, according to the archaeological remains, hyperbolic; Nineveh here is the type of a great and wicked city, as Babylon and Rome function later in Jewish and Christian literature.

The report of Jonah's message, which differs from the original message in 1:2, is remarkably laconic. No prophetic passion or energy seeps out of Jonah; he walks into the city and speaks his message. Jonah may now be obedient, but he is still reluctant. The threatened destruction of Nineveh puts it in the category of other sinful cities such as Sodom and Gomorrah (Gen. 18–19). The number forty is symbolic: Noah was in the ark for forty days; the Israelites wandered in the wilderness for forty years; Jesus fasted in the wilderness for forty days.

Jonah's delivery may be laconic, but the Ninevites' response is nothing short of astounding. They immediately believe in Jonah's god, a deity presumably hitherto unknown to them. Once again the book's pagans prove themselves more pious than the Hebrew Jonah. They call a fast and clothe themselves in sackcloth, typical gestures of mourning (2 Sam. 12:16–17; Neh. 9:1; Esther 4:1). Jonah becomes, in the space of one short verse, the most successful prophet in history!

The king's reaction in v. 6 presents evidence of Jonah's continued success. It is in these verses that the author's humor reaches the level of parody. The king, unidentified with any historical figure, is simply a stock character, but he overturns the norms of ancient Near Eastern ruler-subject relations when he follows the lead of his subjects. He too wears sackcloth and in addition covers his head with ashes (2 Sam. 13:19). The king declares that even the domestic animals are to fast! This is very funny, but has a profound purpose: perhaps God will have mercy on the Ninevites (cf. Joel 2:14). And God does have mercy on the Ninevites. As the Ninevites "turn from their evil way," God "changes his mind" over "the evil which he spoke to do to them." Again, God's mercy overrides God's justice.

4:1–11, God Confronts Jonah. Jonah responds to his prophetic success in a way that at first seems inexplicable—he becomes angry. The Ninevites have turned from their "evil," God has forsworn the "evil" the Ninevites deserved, but to Jonah all this is "very evil." Now once again faced with the consequences of his actions, as he was in the belly of the fish, Jonah prays to God (cf. 2:2; also note the sailors' prayer in 1:14). In his prayer, Jonah finally reveals his reason for fleeing to Tarshish; he was afraid that God would be merciful! His discomfiture seems comical to readers for whom God's mercy is a positive characteristic. Indeed, the formula that Jonah uses (4:2) is one that recurs, with slight variation, throughout the Hebrew Bible: Exod. 34:6–7; Num. 14:18; Joel 2:13; Ps. 86:15; 103:8; 145:8; Neh. 9:17. The assumption in all of these examples, with the exception of Jonah, is that God's mercy is a very good thing. Why then is Jonah so upset that he, the survivor of the fish's belly, considers dying better than living (4:3)? Several suggestions have been made: Jonah is angry that the wicked Ninevites will be saved after all, or he is upset because his prophetic message proved to be false. The *Midrash Jonah* offers the humorous suggestion that Jonah, physically changed by his time in the fish's belly, was being tormented by flies and fleas! A combination of the first two suggestions seems most

likely: Jonah's sense of justice indicates to him that the Ninevites should certainly be destroyed; however, God's mercy intervenes, circumventing his prophetic message and offending his sense of justice.

Yahweh responds to Jonah's anger with a simple question: "Is it good for you to be angry?" This question turns the focus away from the Ninevites and what they deserve to Jonah and his response. The question "is it good" can be interpreted on many levels. Is it theologically sound? Morally correct? Emotionally healthy? Yahweh, by continuing to interact with the stubborn prophet, demonstrates the depth of his attachment to Jonah. Jonah, however, does not answer the question; he is not yet ready to acknowledge it in all of its ramifications. Instead, he leaves the city. Is he once more running away? He sits east of the city, a direction that receives strong sunlight, so he builds a shelter for shade and waits to see what will happen in Nineveh. His action is once again puzzling. Is he still hoping that God will "change his mind" and destroy the city after all? Is he judging the sincerity of the Ninevites' repentance? Readers are left to decide his motive.

Now God, as the creator god, "appoints" in rapid succession a plant, a worm, and a "withering" east wind. The identity of the plant, mentioned only in Jonah 4, is uncertain and ultimately unimportant. Jonah's reactions are important: he "rejoices a great rejoicing" over the plant (v. 6), but again requests death in the face of his physical discomfort (v. 8). Jonah's reactions border on farce, as they have throughout the story. If readers have identified with Jonah up till now, they should be feeling quite uncomfortable! Jonah's blindness to the larger situation is evident. God then prods Jonah to see the ridiculous quality of his reactions, but Jonah refuses to see. Instead, he counters with still another outburst, yet again mentioning death. Jonah has by now lost all sense of proportion—the loss of a plant is worth dying for.

God responds for the final time to Jonah in a speech that, in length, balances Jonah's speech at the beginning of chap. 4. God notes Jonah's lack of insight: he pities a plant, but begrudges God's pity over an entire city of people. Jonah bears no responsibility for the plant, unable to control its growth or withering. God, however, as the universal creator god, does bear responsibility for humans (in this case 120,000 of them) and also animals (a final phrase that should elicit a chuckle). If Jonah's pity is appropriate, how much more so God's? Jonah does not speak again; the author leaves readers to answer the book's final question for themselves.

Bibliography

Fretheim, T. *The Message of Jonah: A Theological Commentary*. Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1977.

Landes, G. "Linguistic Criteria and the Date of the Book of Jonah," *Eretz Israel* 16 (1982): 147–70.

Limburg, J. *Jonah: A Commentary*. Old Testament Library: Louisville, KY: Westminster/John Knox, 1993.

Magonet, J. *Form and Meaning: Studies in Literary Techniques in the Book of Jonah*. Sheffield: Almond, 1983.

Sasson, J. *Jonah*. Anchor Bible, 24B. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1993.

Micah

W. EUGENE MARCH

INTRODUCTION

The book of Micah, the sixth of the twelve Minor Prophets, consists of a collection of prophetic materials broadly categorized as announcements of punishment and salvation. The book has two major parts, 1:2–5:15 and 6:1–7:20, preceded by a superscription (1:1). The two major parts are arranged in similar fashion, moving from accusations and announcements of destruction to pronouncements of hope and deliverance. The superscription designates Micah of Moresheth as spokesman of the addresses collected in this book. Although Micah spoke during the reigns of Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah, approximately 742 to 698 B.C., we know very little about him.

In 745 B.C. the Assyrian Empire began a period of expansion under the leadership of Tiglath-pileser III. In 721 B.C. Assyria destroyed Samaria, the capital city of Israel, and took captive thousands of Israelites (→ Samaria, City of; Samaria, District of). Judah, Micah's principal place of activity, also felt the pain of Assyrian attack (→ Judah, Kingdom of). In 713 B.C. Judah barely avoided a major confrontation with the Assyrians. Then, in 701, Assyria's Sennacherib launched a major onslaught (→ Sennacherib). Thousands of people were slain and many more were taken captive. Jerusalem was besieged, but miraculously escaped destruction. The book of Micah is built around a core of material widely regarded as original to Micah the Moreshite and fitting the times of the Assyrian crisis (chaps. 1–3). Debate continues among commentators, however, with respect to the remainder of the book.

The book of Micah seems to have grown in two or perhaps three stages. The first stage involved the work done by the prophet Micah as remembered by a group of disciples and some of Judah's leaders (cf. Jer. 26:18–19). The second phase appears to have involved people concerned with preserving collections of prophetic announcements, particularly those of Isaiah and Micah (a close affinity exists between these two books). The first and second phase of the book's development may overlap. The third phase, however, seems to postdate the destruction of Jerusalem by the Babylonians in 587 B.C. Micah 6–7 is best understood from the perspective of the sixth or early fifth century B.C. The historical catastrophes experienced by Israel and Judah are given a theological interpretation. The justice of God worked itself out. The punishment of Jacob is a sign for God's people and the nations of the world. The everlasting mercy of God will be exercised, however, to reclaim God's people as a further sign of God's intention for all humankind. For the Christian community, the book of Micah has taken on special significance. Mic. 5:2–4 announces a righteous shepherd who will come forth from Bethlehem to rule on behalf of God. The Gospel of Matthew quotes Micah (Matt. 2:6) in support of the tradition that Jesus of Nazareth was born in Bethlehem.

COMMENTARY

1:1–5:15
The Reign of the Lord Over the Nations

1:1, Micah, the Moreshite. The prophet is remembered as Micah of Moresheth. The name "Micah," which means "Who is like the Lord?" is a common name type in ancient Israel. Moresheth, also known as Moresheth-gath, was a small village approximately twenty-five miles southwest of Jerusalem (1:14). The village has not yet been positively identified by archaeologists. Apart from the superscription, nothing in the book of Micah gives any concrete information about the prophet. The material in the book was associated with this Micah by ancient editors. These same ancient editors dated the work of Micah to the reigns of Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah. Micah is remembered in Jer. 26:18 as having uttered words of doom against Zion and Jerusalem that prompted Hezekiah to repent. The primary subjects of the oracles are the capital cities of the Northern and Southern Kingdoms, Samaria and Jerusalem.

1:2–16, Mourning Inescapable Destruction. Micah's message begins with a call to all peoples to hear the Lord. Material originally much more concrete and time-bound is made applicable by later editors to a wider audience: an announcement first directed at Samaria (1:3–7) is linked with a cry of lament for Jeru-

salem (1:8–16). This entire text sets the mood for the announcement that will unfold in chaps. 1–5: the sovereign Lord addresses humanity with judgment and deliverance. The controversy God has with Israel and Judah is thus put in a worldwide context.

The Lord is described as coming forth from the holy place, provoking an upheaval of nature (→ Theophany). The "holy temple" (NRSV) or "sacred palace" (JB) of 1:2, in view of the indictment against Jerusalem in 1:5, probably refers to God's heavenly abode (cf. Pss. 11:4; 18:7; Isa. 6:2), though the term often refers to the Temple in Jerusalem (Pss. 5:8; 65:5; 138:2). God comes forth to battle enemies (Judg. 5:4; Isa. 26:21; Ps. 68:8), but here the "foe" is God's own people.

The judgment centers on the capital of the Northern Kingdom, Samaria, and on the rampant idolatry that signals the sin of Israel. Jerusalem is also mentioned, but almost as an aside (some commentators think it is an addition). As in Hosea, the widespread presence of idols is categorized as harlotry (1:7). Destruction of all idols constitutes part of the punishment. Because Samaria sought prosperity by such harlotry, the city will be laid waste. In 722/721 B.C. the Assyrian Shalmaneser captured and destroyed Samaria.

Verses 8–9 link the preceding announcement of forthcoming judgment on Samaria with the following description of disaster reaching the gate of Jerusalem. The prophet laments an incurable wound inflicted on the people (1:8). The prophet's anguish is punctuated by reference to "my people" (1:9). In the language and mode of mourning ("stripped," "naked," 1:8), the prophet laments the death of his people. In the Hebrew of 1:16, a singular feminine "you," possibly Jerusalem, is enjoined to lament by shaving her head. Her "children" (NRSV) or "sons" (JB) are the outlying villages, whose inhabitants have been taken away into exile.

A number of uncertainties in a poorly preserved Hebrew text result in a wide variety of translations. Nonetheless, the basic outline of 1:8–16 is clear. With numerous wordplays involving the names of these towns, a picture of mounting disaster is painted. The people of Beth-leaphrah in 1:10 are told to roll in the dust (cf. the term *'aphrah* with the word "dust" in Hebrew, *'apar*). The Hebrew term for "steeds" (NRSV) or "horse" (JB) in 1:13 also sounds like the city name "Lachish." Such style may be strange to modern readers, but it effectively guides the hearer to a sense of the total destruction that is the subject of the lamentation.

Many of the places mentioned in Micah 1 cannot be identified conclusively. Those that can lie to the southwest of Jerusalem and protect its approach routes. In 701 B.C. Sennacherib mounted an offensive against Judah from this direction. Sennacherib boasted in his annals of capturing forty-six cities, laying siege to Jerusalem, and taking away a large company of captives. This attack could well provide the historical setting for these verses.

2:1–5, Woe to Greedy Land-grabbers. Woe sayings are used frequently by the prophets to threaten the wicked by announcing imminent disaster (cf. Amos 5:18–20; 6:1–3; Isa. 5:8–24; 10:1–4). The subject here is the covetous oppression of greedy land-grabbers who ignored time-honored stipulations against treacherous dealings with neighbors (Exod. 30:17; 34:24; Lev. 6:1–5; 19:13; Prov. 14:31; 22:16). They plot ways (2:1) to acquire more land (possibly by making loans and then foreclosing). By so doing, they attack the foundation of Israel's economy and society, a system based on the right of families to be free landholders obligated to no one.

The wickedness of the greedy will create their own ruin. The Lord will yoke the wicked with an evil they cannot escape (2:3). The land they so desperately desired will be taken from them (probably by conquerors). Professional mourners will sing a taunting, satirical dirge over them (2:4). Their ruin will be irreversible. They will have no one to represent them when land is reallocated after the coming judgment (2:5). The sentence of the wicked matches their crime.

This rather specific accusation seems to have been expanded later to refer to a wider audience. The terms "this breed" (JB) or "this family" (NRSV) in 2:3 and "my people" in 2:4 seem to generalize the original charge. Likewise, "an evil time" and "in that day" in the same verses enable the message to be heard repeatedly in varying situations by the community that treasured the prophet's words.

2:6–11, Against False Preaching. Though the Hebrew text is problematic, the essential point is clear. Those who speak soothing lies to the people mislead them concerning the gravity of the situation. While the helpless are being deceived, defrauded, and expelled from their homes (2:8–10), the perpetrators of oppression are being assured by their "preachers" that all is well. Opposition is silenced (2:6). The false preachers wrongly use tradition to assure the people of God's patience (so 2:7; cf. Exod. 34:6; Ps. 103:8; Joel 2:13).

The term sometimes translated as "preach" (NRSV) can have a pejorative connotation such as "rant" or "rave." The activity described is usually associated with the speaking of prophets (Amos 7:16; Ezek. 20:46; 21:2). This passage indicates a serious controversy between the speaker and other "preachers" like that encountered earlier by Amos (Amos 3:3–8; 7:14–17) and later by Jeremiah (Jer. 28:5–9).

"This people" (2:11), a term that indicates a degree of separation between prophet and people not reflected in 1:9, wants only to hear words of blessing, promises of plenty (cf. such words in Joel 2:24; Amos

9:13–14). Though they drive widows and orphans from their homes (2:9–10), they applaud false preachers who will not tell the truth (2:11). Both people and preachers are rejected by the prophet.

2:12–13, The Gathering of Jacob. This is an enigmatic passage. Scattered "Jacob," a reference to God's people, is assured that the Lord will gather them. Such a word seems out of place in a context of accusation and announcement of impending judgment. Probably this word was added at the time of the Babylonian attack on Jerusalem in 587 B.C. or even later. If it is original to the eighth century, it may represent a visionary hope that those taken into exile after the fall of Samaria in 722/721 B.C. will one day return.

3:1–4, Unjust Cannibals. Using the striking and shocking image of cannibalism, the prophet describes those responsible for administering justice as devouring the prophet's people (cf. 1:9). Various terms are chosen to designate these leaders: "princes," "heads," "rulers." In the villages, the elders traditionally cared for matters of justice in courts convened at the town's gate. Others appointed by the king may also have had responsibility. Because they loved evil rather than good, the authorities allowed justice to fail (cf. Amos 5:10–15; Isa. 1:17, 21–23; Deut. 1:9–18).

As in preceding oracles, the punishment fits the crime. The rulers refused to hear the cries of their victims; thus, their cries for deliverance to the Lord (3:4)—in the hope that they will be heard and delivered (Pss. 22:5; 107:13, 19; 142:5–6)—will be in vain (3:4). The Lord will turn away before their evil deeds (cf. Pss. 13:1; 27:9; 69:17).

3:5–8, Against Profiteering Prophets. Introducing his speech with the messenger formula "thus says the LORD," Micah levels a severe word of judgment against deceiving prophets who speak words of peace and well-being for a price. Such venal prophets will find themselves enshrouded with darkness. They will be confused, shamed, disgraced. Denied God's word, they will cover their lips in mourning (cf. Ezek. 24:17, 22).

In contrast, the speaker claims an endowment by God's spirit that guarantees a successful mission (3:8). Strength to persevere ("power," NRSV) in the face of opposition is linked with the courage ("might," NRSV) that characterizes brave warriors. The capacity to recognize and act for justice completes the prophet's endowment. The wrongs of the social order are denounced for what they represent: rebellion against the will of God, sin.

3:9–12, The Inescapable Judgment. With almost the same words as in 3:1, the prophet calls the rulers and leaders of Israel to give heed. Zion and Jerusalem, chosen and protected by God, are fouled with blood and wrongdoing. Misdirected zeal to build (2:2, 8–9), perhaps, has prompted illegal or unjust acquisition of land. The authorities have ignored appeals for justice and their responsibility to uphold it (Exod. 23:1–3, 6–8). Judges, priests, and prophets are all for sale.

A cardinal tenet of the "official" theology of Micah's day was that God had chosen the Davidic king and Jerusalem (→ Covenant) and would maintain and protect both forever (Pss. 46; 48; 132). Thus, leaders trust the theology and say, "Is not the LORD in our midst? Evil will not come upon us" (Mic. 3:11). The prophet, however, has a different view (3:12). Because the leaders have forsaken God's way, Jerusalem and Zion, like Samaria before (cf. 1:6), will be plowed up and become a wooded hill!

4:1–5, God Will Reign in Zion. In striking contrast to the preceding announcement, this well-known promise succinctly expresses a hope for universal peace with justice founded on the benevolent reign of the Lord. A Jerusalem based on bloody wrongdoing has no future (3:9–12). God's intention for a transforming peace will be realized for individuals and nations.

The promise includes four elements. Zion, the mount on which God's house stands, will become preeminent in the latter days (4:1). All nations will come in pilgrimage to this new center to receive divine instruction, *torah,* and divine adjudication of international disputes (4:2–3). There will be worldwide peace, the dismantling of the machines of war, and the construction of implements of production (4:3). Finally, all people will have the means and the security to pursue life to the fullest (4:4).

But the prophet holds no illusions. The nations do not yet act in accordance with this expectation. Nonetheless God's people affirm their intention to live on the basis of their hope in God's promise (4:5).

There is much debate about the historical setting of this famous passage and its almost identical parallel in Isa. 2:2–4. The slight differences between the two suggest that neither is related directly to the other; both depend on some other tradition. Perhaps those who collected and transmitted the message of Micah included this promise because it enhanced the theological perspective they proclaimed. God's response to iniquity was judgment, but God's intention thereby was to refashion the people and establish a worldwide dominion marked by peace and justice.

4:6–8, Gathering the Survivors. These verses present two brief promises of restoration in the latter days, a theme introduced in 4:1–5. The first saying, 4:6–7, announces the gathering and return of those driven into exile by the historical disasters that have befallen Israel and Judah. The term frequently translated "lame" is used to describe Jacob in Gen. 32:31. It is used in Micah as a poetic reference to the people of Israel/Judah, to Jacob, wounded by the encounter with God. A remnant will be fashioned by God and estab-

lished in Zion where God will reign (→ Remnant). In 4:8, the second brief saying continues the theme of God's restored dominion at Zion (cf. 3:9–12; 4:1–5).

4:9–10, You Shall Be Rescued. This oracle of salvation is built on a contrast between present distress and future deliverance. It is the first of three sayings beginning with "now." A series of taunting questions is addressed to a singular "you," the daughter of Zion, a personification of Jerusalem (cf. 4:8, 13). The people face a time of terror. The king has perhaps died or at least lost authority. Jerusalem and her people cry out as a woman in labor (cf. Jer. 4:31; 6:24; 13:21). "Now" the people will be forced from city into open field!

The last lines of the oracle change the message to one of salvation. God will intervene to rescue the daughter of Zion. This rescue is described as "redemption," the legal process of securing the release of someone or something. God's people will be delivered from their enemies. Explicit mention of Babylon in 4:10 suggests that the relevant historical circumstance is the exile of many Judeans after Babylon destroyed Jerusalem in 587 B.C.

4:11–13, You Shall Thresh the Nations. The second "now" oracle uses language associated with threshing grain. Hostile nations, perhaps the neighboring states or some more generalized enemies of a later time, will gather to desecrate Zion (4:11). As part of God's mysterious plans, however, these enemy peoples are actually being gathered like sheaves for threshing (4:12). "Now" many are gathering against the daughter of Zion. But God will work a reversal whereby Zion will thresh those so gathered. The wealth gained as booty will be devoted to God (cf. Josh. 6:17–19; 1 Sam. 15:3). A relatively rare divine title, "Lord of all the earth" (Josh. 3:11, 13; Ps. 97:15; Zech. 4:14; 6:5), further emphasizes the visionary character of the passage.

5:1–4, God's Ruler to Come. The third "now" oracle declares that a ruler will emerge to shepherd God's people in an appropriate manner. Bethlehem, the family home of King David (cf. 2 Sam. 16:1), will be this leader's birthplace. The distress described (5:1) may be related to Sennacherib's attack in 701 B.C., but the specific terminology used ("siege") suggests the Babylonian attack a century later (cf. 2 Kings 24:10; 25:21; Jer. 52:5). Christian tradition claimed this oracle in its exposition of the origins of Jesus (Matt. 2:5–6; John 7:42).

5:5–9, Rule Among Adversaries. In this unit, comprised of three originally independent sayings (5:5–6, 7, 8–9), two primary assertions are made. First, Assyria will never again dominate Israel. Second, God's remnant (cf. 2:12; 4:6–7), God's special work, will be secure among the nations. This will come to pass at some later time when God brings about the reversal of current conditions. As the text now stands, this time of new security is linked with the appearance of the ruler celebrated in the preceding verses. The language and theme of this unit suggest a sixth- or fifth-century B.C. setting for its composition.

5:10–15, The Final Purge. The concluding oracle of chaps. 1–5 recalls the opening announcement of God's intention to judge Samaria, Jerusalem, and all peoples (1:2–7). An original poem built on the repetition of "I will cut off . . ." has been supplemented with the last two verses. False sources of confidence, whether military (horses and chariots) or religious (soothsayers and idols), will be destroyed. The people and the land will be purged of all that is offensive to God. The nations that will not obey or listen (cf. 1:2) will encounter God's punishment. The concluding verse uses anthropomorphic language to emphasize that God will not permit human disobedience to prevail.

6:1–7:20
The Reign of the Lord Over His People

6:1–5, God's Controversy. This dramatic passage initiates the carefully arranged sequence that follows. God is portrayed as filing a lawsuit against the people (cf. Isa. 1:18–20; 3:13–15; Hos. 4:1–3, 4–6; Jer. 2:4–13). The witnesses summoned are the mountains, hills, and foundations of the earth rather than the more frequently cited heavens and earth (Isa. 1:2; Deut. 32:1). God speaks as both plaintiff (6:1–2) and defendant (6:3–5). This kind of address is sometimes called a covenant lawsuit and has as its background a type of international suzerainty treaty that spelled out the terms and consequences of agreements made between an overlord and vassal.

God speaks directly to "my people" and recalls the saving history in which God has repeatedly rescued and led Israel (Deut. 7:8; Josh. 24:5–11; Pss. 78:42–55; 105:26–45). In light of this history God cannot understand the people's faithlessness. God redeemed Israel so that the saving acts of God would be known and recited with praise and honor.

6:6–8, God's Requirements. In response to God's questions in the preceding verses, 6:6–8 acknowledges a need for forgiveness and reconciliation. The unidentified speaker represents those who seek instruction on the appropriate sacrifice to offer God (6:6–7). A procedure of requesting priestly clarification of such matters provides the background for the passage (cf. 1 Sam. 6:2–4).

A famous summary of God's requirements then follows (6:8). God seeks the doing of justice, which involves the faithful honoring of God-established relationships (cf. Amos 5:15; Isa. 1:12–17; Jer. 7:5–6). Second, God expects the love of "kindness" (NRSV), a devotion

to loyalty, the practice of steadfast love (cf. Hos. 2:19; 4:1–3; 6:6). The third requirement is proper attention to God, to "walk humbly" (NRSV) rather than presumptuously (cf. Prov. 11:2–3; 15:33; 18:12). This verse (6:8) is often quoted as a summation of the prophetic ethical tradition.

6:9–16, God's Intention to Punish. The central point is clear: God announces punishment because of social injustice (6:11; cf. 3:2–3, 9–11). A series of terrible things will befall the people and the land (6:13–15; cf. Deut. 28:25–46). The people are accused of adopting the ways of the house of Omri, and more particularly those of Ahab (6:16), who was remembered for moral wrongdoing and encouraging idolatry (1 Kings 16:30–34; 21:1–15). This reference suggests a relatively late period when the tradition of Omri and Ahab had become a well-known symbol for wickedness (cf. 2 Kings 8:27; 21:3). The consequence of that sin will be desolation and scorn (cf. Jer. 19:8; 29:18; Lev. 26:31–33).

7:1–7, A Time of Trial. The time is a wicked time (cf. 6:10–12). As after the gleaning, when nothing is left in the field, the speaker feels alone (7:1). All of the righteous ones, the godly, have perished (7:2). The wicked join together to accomplish their goals (7:3). As a result, the society breaks down completely; the relationships that make life productive and enjoyable cease (7:2, 5–6). In such a time of trial, the faithful wait for deliverance (7:7). Thereby they express their confidence in God (Pss. 38:15; 42:5, 11; 43:5; 130:5–6). In the NT the coming of Jesus is seen as producing a similar crisis (Matt. 10:21, 35–39; Mark 13:12–13; Luke 12:52–53).

7:8–20, God's Forgiveness Will Prevail. The closing verses of chaps. 6–7 sound liturgical. First there is a song of trust (7:8–10) followed by a promise of restoration (7:11–13). Next comes an appeal that the nations be compelled to acknowledge God (7:14–17) with a concluding song of praise, sung by the people, of the Lord's steadfast love and compassion (7:18–20). The individual poems may have been developed separately, but their present arrangement seems purposeful. The judgment announced in 6:9–16 will eventually give way to vindication, restoration, and pardon (7:8–20).

In these verses, a number of allusions remain uncertain. The enemy remembered in 7:10 is probably Edom, which participated in the destruction of Jerusalem in 587 B.C. (cf. Obad. 10–15; Isa. 34:8–14; Ps. 137:7). In 7:11–12 a dispersed people return, apparently to Jerusalem, where the walls will be rebuilt. This text probably reflects conditions of the early fifth century B.C. The text of 7:15 is difficult to understand since it remains unclear to whom the "you," "I," and "him" or "them" refer.

The concluding verses (7:18–20) are much clearer. In the language of a time-honored theological formulation, God's forgiveness is extolled (cf. Exod. 34:6–7; Pss. 86:15; 103:8–10; 145:8; Jon. 4:2; Joel 2:13; Neh. 9:14). The iniquity of God's people brought disaster. The incomparable God of forgiveness, however, will act to bring restoration as a sign of continuing faithfulness to Abraham (7:19–20).

Bibliography

Hillers, D. *Micah.* Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1984.

Mays, J. *Micah.* Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1976.

Wolff, H. W. *Micah: A Commentary.* Translated by G. Stansell. Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1990.

Nahum

PETER MACHINIST

INTRODUCTION

Nahum, like Jonah and Obadiah, focuses not on Israel, but on a foreign nation, Assyria. Nahum addresses the end of this empire, more specifically, the conquest of Nineveh, its last principal capital, an event that occurred in 612 B.C. (→ Nineveh).

Nahum offers a vivid picture of the attack on Nineveh. That picture unfolds in a well-structured manner, suggesting that the book was composed deliberately as an integrated work, albeit one drawing on certain conventional motifs and language. Thus, after the superscription, chap. 1 begins with a partial acrostic hymn to Yahweh that celebrates his awesome cosmic power (1:2–9). This hymn provides the background to the events of Nineveh's fall described in chaps. 2–3. The transition to those events is laid out in the latter half of chap. 1 (vv. 8–15), by an increasing focus on an enemy to be punished, followed by the announcement of a messenger bringing news about the defeat of the enemy and the arrival of peace. What this news means is then described in a report about Nineveh's capture and destruction (chap. 2), and finally in a lamentlike satire on the city's fall (chap. 3). Reinforcing this logical progression of the chapters are a variety of phrases, images, and ideas that, as they recur throughout the text, help bind it together.

The book of Nahum deals with the troubles that the Assyrian Empire brought on Israel and the rest of the Levant (→ Assyria, Empire of). Specifically, Nahum represents a kind of closing of the circle that was opened by the eighth-century B.C. Israelite prophets, especially Isaiah, who first addressed Assyria and its imperial takeover of the Levant (→ Isaiah). Isaiah had argued that Assyria was acting at the behest of Israel's God to punish Israel and Judah for their sins and would eventually itself be punished by Yahweh for its failure to acknowledge Yahweh's authority (e.g., Isa. 10:5–19). The fall of Nineveh, then, was taken by Nahum and by Zephaniah (2:13–15) as the fulfillment of Isaiah's argument, underscored by various allusions to Isaianic language and motifs. This pattern of foreign, arrogant conqueror conquered by Yahweh proved quite attractive and was subsequently applied to Neo-Babylonia by Habakkuk, Jeremiah, and Second Isaiah. However, some in Israel/Judah challenged this scheme, arguing that just in time Assyria recognized its arrogance and accepted Yahweh's sovereignty—and so was spared destruction. This view survives in the book of Jonah, which may well have been reacting to Nahum.

The historical context for the events described in the book is the seventh century B.C., more specifically the period between 663, the Assyrian capture of Thebes (3:8–10) as an event of the past, and 612, the capture of Nineveh. One may ask, however, whether Nahum is a genuine prophecy about the fall of Nineveh or a report and response to this event. In choosing between these options, the critical factor is the graphic and precise elements in Nah. 2–3, with their references to Assyrian officialdom and water as a factor in the city's conquest. Altogether these features suggest, however tentatively, that Nahum is not a prophecy, but a report, or at least a text based on a report, composed not long after the fall and before the loss of memory about details of Assyrian history and society. Still, Nahum did come to be regarded as a prophecy; an early example of this perception is the Second Temple period commentary on the text from the Qumran community.

COMMENTARY

1:1, The Superscription. This verse describes the book as a "[divine] oracle [of coming punishment]" (Heb. *massa'*, lit., "burden") against Nineveh. The book is also labeled as a "scroll of vision," which appears to emphasize the written, not oral, character of the text. The meaning of the name Nahum, perhaps "the one comforted" or "comforter," may not be accidental, since it may allude to the reaction of Israel to the destruction of its hated oppressor, Assyria.

1:2–14, Description of Yahweh's Power and Wrath. This portrayal draws on a variety of traditional motifs and language. It begins with a description of Yahweh's attributes (vv. 2–3) elsewhere attested in the OT, e.g., Exod. 34:6–7. Here the focus narrows to Yahweh as wrathful, foreshadowing his destruction of Nineveh in the next two chapters. Significantly, the only other OT

book that describes Nineveh, Jonah, also quotes the divine attributes passage (4:2), but in Jonah only Yahweh's mercy is mentioned.

The picture of Yahweh's power in the storm, clouds, and on sea and land (1:3–6, 8a) is traditional, with abundant echoes in other OT texts (e.g., Hab. 3:6, 8, 10, 15; Judg. 5:4–5; Ps. 18:7–15; 2 Sam. 22:8–16; 29; and for v. 8a, in particular, Isa. 8:6–8; 28:15, 18) and in ancient Near Eastern literature. Just as with the passage listing the divine attributes, Nahum did not choose this nature imagery lightly, for it clearly provides the background to the account of Nineveh flooded out (2:7, 9).

Nah. 1:2–14 moves from general praise of divine power and wrath (vv. 2–7) to a more specific target of that power (vv. 8–14). The turning point comes in v. 8a, which may be translated: "With an overwhelming flood, he will make a complete end of her place"—"her" referring to Nineveh.

This movement from general to specific is only partially congruent with the arrangement of the chapter. The first unit may be the partial alphabetic acrostic, if this has been correctly identified as encompassing the first half of the letters of the Hebrew alphabet *(aleph–kaf)* in vv. 2–9. It ends on two occurrences of the *kaf* line; the occurrences are variants of each other (v. 8a: "he will make a complete end of her place"; v. 9b: "he makes a complete end"), which are clearly meant to form an emphatic conclusion to the unit. At the same time, the *kaf* serves as link to the remaining two literary units of this chapter, both of which begin with the same letter: vv. 10–11, describing the enemy, who plotting against Yahweh (echoing v. 9a), is tangled up in thorns and consumed; and vv. 12–14, Yahweh's own address, promising release from the affliction he had brought to Israel/Judah (vv. 12–13) and doom to an enemy.

1:15–2:13 (Heb. 2:1–14), Destruction of Nineveh. The account of Nineveh's conquest and destruction in both chaps. 2 and 3 is introduced by the arrival of a messenger "of peace" (1:15). This messenger brings the report of Nineveh's end—note the reference to the city as Belial, echoing the Belial mentioned in the preceding description of Yahweh's power and wrath (1:11). The news triggers a command for festivals of celebration, in which Judahites would come and pay their vows.

The report on Nineveh follows (2:1–10). It begins with the arrival of the enemy at the capital, seen from the perspective of the city's defenders, who are commanded, in a series of short, emphatic phrases (v. 1), to prepare for the coming battle (vv. 1–3). Verse 2, sometimes regarded as a latter addition, makes better sense as a deliberate parenthesis, recalling 1:12–13 and so affirming that the battle against Nineveh will be nothing less than revenge on Israel's enemy and the beginning of Israel's restoration. The focus then shifts to the actual attack on and conquest of Nineveh (vv. 4–10). The enemy cavalry enter the city and run through its streets, with the Assyrian warriors unable to resist; mobile siege engines, well known from Assyrian texts and reliefs, are brought up to batter the city walls (vv. 4–5). The gates of the "rivers" leading around and into the city are opened, flooding it out (vv. 6, 8)—an action that, while it is not yet attested in the archaeological excavations at Nineveh, is echoed in later Greek sources, notably, Ktesias in Diodorus Siculus (2:26–27), and fits with the riverine topography of the site. Alternatively, the text may refer to a ritual watering of part of the city, to signify symbolically its destruction. With this physical destruction go the plunder of Nineveh's treasures (v. 9) and what appears to be (v. 7; the verse is problematic) the capture and deportation of its queen—either the human queen or the chief goddess—who is taken away to loud wailing by her maidens. Nineveh's inhabitants react in utter anguish and paralysis, a response conveyed in a series of short, emphatic, occasionally rhyming puns (vv. 9–10; cf. vv. 1, 2b; 1:10ab).

The implications of Nineveh's destruction are drawn out in the final verses of chap. 2 (vv. 11–13). In vv. 11–12, the image of Assyria as aggressive, indomitable lions, familiar elsewhere in the OT (esp. Isa. 5:29–30) and in Assyrian royal inscriptions and art, is startlingly reversed: the den, i.e., the capital Nineveh, where once the lion brought his prey in large numbers for his young, has ceased to exist. This depiction leads to Yahweh's statement, echoing his concluding declaration in 1:12–14, that confirms Nineveh's and, by extension, Assyria's end.

3:1–19, Satirical Lament over Nineveh. Having given the report of Nineveh's end, the prophet now retraces his steps and buries the city with a satirical lament. It begins with the word "woe" (NRSV: "Ah!"), which originally signaled a funeral lament (e.g., 1 Kings 13:30). But especially in the prophetic texts, it is used in an ironical, if not parodic way, to announce divine punishment of a particular human community, whether Israel or another (e.g., Amos 5:18; 6:1, 4). The rationale for such a judgment on Nineveh appears in the next epithet: it is "a city of blood," an obvious reference to the violence of Assyrian imperial rule. This epithet, or variants, can also be found, just as with "woe," in prophetic denunciations of Jerusalem for violent behavior that flouts Yahweh's directives (Ezek. 24:6, 9; cf. Mic. 3:10). But the occurrence closest in time to the present one comes in Hab. 2:12, where the blood is on Babylon (more particularly its king), the successor to Nineveh and the Neo-Assyrian Empire.

If Nineveh is a bloody city because of what it directed against other peoples, it becomes even more of one when revenge is finally wreaked on it. That revenge is described in the verses that follow the invocation (3:2–3), using language that recalls the picture of

destruction already given in chaps. 1 and 2 (e.g., 1:5; 2:3, 4, 12, 14).

Nahum then denounces Nineveh from another angle, as a harlot, whose flagrant ways are now exposed and punished by Yahweh (3:4–7; → Harlot). The image, again, is a familiar one among Israelite prophets, who apply it to Israel/Judah (e.g., Hos. 2) or to the cities Jerusalem and Samaria (Jer. 13:20–27; Lam. 1:9; Ezek. 16; 23); it may also echo Neo-Assyrian reliefs of women war captives, stripped naked (oral communication, D. Vanderhooft). Mixed in with this charge of harlotry is one of witchcraft (3:4). This not only heightens the image of dangerous seductiveness (cf. 2 Kings 9:22; Mal. 3:5), but may reflect awareness of the importance of magical and divinatory traditions in ancient Assyria. This same awareness also figures in the accusations of Second Isaiah, though there directed against the imperial successor to Nineveh, Babylon (Isa. 47:9, 12–13).

Nahum next alludes to the Egyptian capital of Thebes as a way of understanding the conquest of Nineveh (3:8–10). The reference here is to the capture of Thebes and oppression of its population by the Assyrians, under their king Ashurbanipal, in 663 B.C. The point seems ironic: that surrounding watery defenses did not save Thebes from Assyrian conquest any more than they now save Nineveh from enemy takeover. We are thus brought back to the account of flooded Nineveh in 2:6, 8.

Verses 11–15a return to the siege against Nineveh, picking up the description in vv. 2–3. Two images are especially striking. One is that her demise is that of a dazed drunk (v. 11), a frequent depiction elsewhere in the OT for the targets of Yahweh's wrath, whether Israel/Judah or foreign nations (e.g., Jer. 51:7, 39, 57 [Babylonia]; Ezek. 23:32–34 [Samaria and Jerusalem]). In addition, Nineveh, or more exactly, its soldiers, are insulted as fighters with no more capacity than that of women (13); again, one may find this image in other prophetic texts that condemn foreign troops (Isa. 19:16 [Egypt]; Jer. 50:37; 51:30 [Babylonia]) as well as in the curse in several ancient Near Eastern treaties.

The final section of the satirical lament on Nineveh views the end of the city and its empire through the fate of various of its classes of officials (3:15b–19). Locust imagery enables the transition from the preceding section on siege: in the siege, it signifies the devouring might of the enemy invaders (v. 15a; cf., e.g., Joel 1:4–7); for the officials, it and related terms describe their numerousness and then the swiftness with which they disappear (vv. 15b–17). The officials run from merchants (v. 16), through some kind of royal intendants (v. 17a: "princes") and royal scribes (v. 17b), then onto the summary categories of the kings and their ruling elite (vv. 17d–18a) and the people as a whole (v. 18b). The terms for at least two of these groups appear to be borrowed directly from Assyrian practice: "your intendants" (Heb. *minzarayik*, perhaps from Akkadian *manzazu [pani]*), and "your scribes" (Heb. *tafserayik* from Akkadian *tupsharru;* in the OT otherwise only in Jer. 51:27, where it refers to Babylonia). Noteworthy as well is the comment on the kings and ruling elite: that they sleep and slumber, i.e., with the sleep of death, which is a deliberate reversal of the same language earlier applied by Isaiah to the aggressive campaigning, without sleep or slumber, of the Assyrian army (Isa. 5:27; cf. Ps. 121:4). The last verse (v. 19) brings everything together with an emphatic pronouncement on the irrevocability of Assyria's fall—here personified no longer by Nineveh, but by the Assyrian king introduced in v. 18a—and on the exultant reaction of peoples everywhere to the news. In particular, this pronouncement rounds out the story, as it recalls the messenger who first brought the news and the festal joy that greeted his arrival (1:15).

Bibliography

Christensen, D. L. "The Book of Nahum: A History of Interpretation." In J. W. Watts and P. R. House, eds., *Forming Prophetic Literature. Essays in Isaiah and the Twelve in Honor of John D. W. Watts*. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament, Supplement Series, 235. Sheffield: Sheffield, 1996. Pp. 187–94.

Machinist, P. "The Fall of Assyria in Comparative Ancient Perspective." In S. Parpola and R. M. Whiting, eds., *Assyria 1995*. Helsinki: The Neo-Assyrian Text Corpus Project. Pp. 179–95.

Roberts, J. J. M. *Nahum, Habakkuk, and Zephaniah*. Old Testament Library. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1991.

Spronk, K. *Nahum*. Historical Commentary on the Old Testament. Kampen, Netherlands: Kok Pharos, 1997.

Sweeney, M. A. "Concerning the Structure and Generic Character of the Book of Nahum." In *Zeitschrift für die alttestamentliche Wissenschaft* 104 (1992): 364–77.

Habakkuk

MARVIN A. SWEENEY

INTRODUCTION

The book of Habakkuk provides little direct historical or personal information about the prophet to whom it is attributed. He is identified twice simply as "Habakkuk the prophet" (1:1; 3:1), with no indication of the time in which he lived. Consequently, later nonbiblical traditions place Habakkuk in a number of historical contexts. In its title, the apocryphal Bel and the Dragon (second century B.C.) claims to be "from the prophecy of Habakkuk, son of Jeshua of the tribe of Levi" and identifies the prophet as a contemporary of Daniel, living during the Babylonian exile. The pseudepigraphical *Lives of the Prophets* (first century A.D.) follows this dating, although it identifies Habakkuk as a member of the tribe of Simeon. The midrashic historical work *Seder 'Olam Rabbah* (second–third century A.D.) claims that Habakkuk lived during the reign of King Manasseh (697–642 B.C.), whereas the Jewish kabbalistic work *Sefer ha-Zohar* (ca. A.D. 1280) identifies Habakkuk as the son of the Shunammite woman whom the prophet Elisha (ninth century B.C.) restored to life (2 Kings 4:8–37).

Most modern scholars agree that the reference to the rise of the Chaldeans (1:6) and the general descriptions of distress in the land of Judah (chaps. 1–2) indicate that Habakkuk spoke during the reign of King Jehoiakim (609–598 B.C.) or perhaps during the brief reign of his son Jehoiachin (597 B.C.). Judah became a vassal state of the Chaldean or Neo-Babylonian Empire following Nebuchadnezzar's defeat of the Egyptian army at Carchemish and Hamath in 605 B.C. (→ Chaldea; Nebuchadnezzar). Jehoiakim was a loyal subject of Babylon for three years, imposing heavy taxation on the population of Judah and repressing dissent to meet the demands of the Babylonian monarch. After Jehoiakim revolted in 602 B.C., Nebuchadnezzar sent bands of raiders to harass Judah until he could mount a full-scale invasion of the land. Jehoiakim probably died during the Babylonian advance against Jerusalem in 598 B.C. Following the capitulation of the city, Nebuchadnezzar deported the new king, Jehoiachin, and leading members of Judean society to Babylon (→ Babylon). Many scholars think that Habakkuk, a contemporary of Jeremiah, was a prophet active at the Temple of Jerusalem during these years (see Jeremiah, Introduction).

The book of Habakkuk is designed to address the theological issue of theodicy, which involves justifying the righteousness of God in circumstances of great evil or threat. The superscription in 1:1 identifies the first major section of the book (chaps. 1–2) as a "pronouncement." The word "pronouncement," frequently translated as "burden," refers to a type of prophetic oracle that attempts to explain the manner in which God's purposes are manifested in human affairs. It is generally spoken by a prophet in response to an inquiry or complaint concerning a particular situation. Here the pronouncement occurs in the form of a dialogue between Habakkuk and God. In the first exchange, the prophet complains that the land is in turmoil (1:2–4), but God responds that the turmoil is caused by a divine plan to establish Chaldean dominance in the world (1:5–11). Habakkuk then complains about the treachery of the Chaldeans, who have overstepped their bounds and not acknowledged God as the source of their power (1:12–17). God's response, presented in 2:1–20, includes a vision stating the basic principle that, unlike those who are arrogant, those who are righteous will live by their steadfast faith. The lengthy elaboration of this principle in vv. 5–20 employs five "woe" oracles, which predict that the Chaldeans will eventually fall victim to their excessive greed.

The second major section of the book, identified by its superscription as the "prayer" of Habakkuk (3:1), follows in 3:1–19. Many scholars argue that this "prayer" is not an original part of the book, because it appears to be a liturgical psalm and is so different from chaps. 1–2. In the present form of the book, however, the psalm functions as the prophet's reaction to the "pronouncement" of chaps. 1–2. The psalmist petitions God to defeat an invading enemy. Using theophanic imagery, the psalmist acknowledges God's role as master of the universe and waits faithfully for the manifestation of God's power (→ Theophany), which will eventuate in the downfall of the Chaldeans. Consequently, the book of Habakkuk affirms the righteousness of God and anticipates the realization of the divine plan.

The book of Habakkuk has played an important role in both Judaism and Christianity. It appears as the eighth book in both the Masoretic (Hebrew) and Septuagint (Greek) versions of the Twelve Prophets, following Nahum and prior to Zephaniah, where it

points to the upcoming Babylonian exile. The authors of the Dead Sea Scrolls produced a commentary on the first two chapters of the book in the first century B.C. that related the text to their own origins. The apostle Paul used Hab. 2:4 as a major textual basis for formulating the doctrine of "justification by faith" (Rom. 1:17; Gal. 3:11; cf. Heb. 10:38–39). Likewise, the Talmudic rabbi Simlai identified this verse as a summary of all the 613 commandments of the Torah (*b. Mak.* 23b–24a). In Jewish tradition, Habakkuk 3 is understood as a description of the revelation at Sinai; it is read as the *Haphtarah,* or prophetic portion, for the second day of the festival of Shavuot (Pentecost), which commemorates the revelation of Torah at Sinai (*b. Meg.* 31a).

COMMENTARY

1:1–2:20
The Pronouncement of Habakkuk

Habakkuk's pronouncement represents his attempt to explain the significance of the rise of the Neo-Babylonian Empire and its domination of Judah. Although he views the Babylonians as wicked oppressors of the righteous, Habakkuk maintains that the rise of Babylon is an act of God, the true master of the world. However, greed and the failure to recognize God as the source of its power have caused Babylon to overextend its grasp in an attempt to master the entire earth. The oppressed nations will then overthrow Babylon, and God's righteousness will triumph.

Habakkuk's pronouncement takes the form of a dialogue between Habakkuk and God. The prophet's understanding of Babylon's rise develops as God responds to each of Habakkuk's complaints.

1:1, The Superscription. This verse is a title for the pronouncement that follows. Not only does it identify the type of prophetic oracle employed here, it also designates Habakkuk as a "prophet." Because of this title, the use of the term "oracle" elsewhere in the Hebrew Bible, and the psalm in chap. 3, many scholars think that Habakkuk was a professional Temple prophet.

1:2–4, Habakkuk's First Complaint. Habakkuk uses typical complaint language (cf. Job 19:1–7; Ps. 18:6, 41) to protest to God concerning the breakdown of order in the land caused by an unnamed wicked party. The identity of this "wicked" party has prompted much discussion. Some maintain that it is none other than Jehoiakim and his officials, because the prophet's description of the land's turmoil includes terminology used elsewhere to indicate Judean abuses of social justice (Amos 3:10; Isa. 10:1; Ps. 12:6; Prov. 16:28–29). Certainly, Jehoiakim was no stranger to the abuses of social justice, as Jeremiah's condemnation of this king demonstrates (Jer. 22:1–8, 13–19). But Habakkuk represents a distinct prophetic viewpoint that must not be confused with Jeremiah's. Whereas Jeremiah argued that God would punish Judah, Habakkuk demanded to know why. Hence, the "wicked" party should be identified as the Babylonians. In Hab. 1:4, the description of the righteous "surrounded" by the wicked employs a verb that also means "besieged," suggesting Babylon's military actions (cf. 1:10). In such circumstances, Babylonian justice (1:7) would undermine Judean law (1:4). Furthermore, 1:13 identifies the Babylonians as "wicked," and the "violence" of Babylon (1:9; cf. 1:8; 2:17) corresponds to Habakkuk's complaint in v. 2.

1:5–11, God's First Response. In response to Habakkuk's complaint, the deity states that the Chaldeans' emergence depends on God's intentional activity. God identifies no specific purpose for this act, although Habakkuk's comment in v. 12 suggests that it was to be judgment upon Judah. After describing the might of its army, however, God defines the basic problem with Babylon, "Then they sweep through like wind, pass by, and incur guilt; their own might has become their god" (v. 11). The Babylonians do not recognize that God has given them their victories.

1:12–17, Habakkuk's Second Complaint. Dissatisfied with God's response, Habakkuk renews his complaint. He begins by referring to God as creator and master of the universe. (The statement "We shall not die" in v. 12 is an ancient scribal emendation of the text, which originally read, "You shall not die."). Habakkuk challenges God directly in v. 13 by asking how God can tolerate the evil of Babylon's treachery against the righteous. In v. 14, he then proceeds to charge that God is directly responsible for the triumph of evil over righteousness. Using the imagery of a fisherman to describe Babylon's greed and idolatry, the prophet then asks God how long this evil will continue.

2:1–20, Habakkuk's Presentation of God's Second Response. Habakkuk stands watch (cf. Ezek. 3:16–21; 33:1–9) to wait for God's response to his "complaint." That response begins with instructions to write down the vision that is to follow, a procedure known for both visions (Isa. 29:11–12) and pronouncements (Isa. 30:6–7, 8), and to wait for the time of its fulfillment. The basic principle of the vision is stated in Hab. 2:4, "Behold, his soul within him is arrogant [lit., "puffed up"], it is not upright, but the righteous shall live due to his steadfast faith." The Hebrew term translated as "steadfast faith" expresses reliability, confidence, continuity, and trust (→ Faith). Here, it refers to the confidence of the righteous person in God's reliability and

indicates that the righteous will continue to trust in God despite adversity. This text contrasts Babylon, puffed up by its own arrogance, with the righteous people whom it is oppressing and implies that whereas the righteous will live, Babylon will not.

Verses 5–20 elaborate the meaning of 2:1–4. Babylon is compared to a boisterous drunk who is initially inflamed by wine, but who quickly fades under its influence as he drinks more and more. The insatiable greed of the drunk is illustrated by a mythological reference to Sheol or Death personified, whose appetite is never satisfied. A taunt by the nations who will rise up against Babylon then illustrates the coming downfall of the wicked empire. The taunt includes five woe oracles accusing Babylon of various crimes that will bring punishment. These include plundering (vv. 6b–8), extortion (vv. 9–11), bloodshed (vv. 12–14), degradation of people and lands (vv. 15–17), and idolatry (vv. 18–19). The statement concerning idolatry summarizes the reason that the other crimes take place and reiterates the basic problem concerning Babylon, its failure to recognize God (cf. 1:11, 16; 2:4, 13a). The section concludes with a demand for silence before the Lord (v. 20), which frequently precedes the manifestation of God's power and presence (cf. Zeph. 1:7; Zech. 2:13; Ps. 46:10).

3:1–19
The Prayer of Habakkuk

The prayer petitions God to manifest divine power and presence in the world so as to deliver the land from invaders (v. 16). The introductory and closing sections of this petition (vv. 2, 16–19a) bracket two sections that depict a theophany (vv. 3–7, 8–15). A theophany, a portrayal of God's manifestation in the world, generally includes two elements, a portrayal of God's approach and accompanying natural upheavals (cf. Deut. 33:2; Judg. 5:4–5; Mic. 1:3–4; Ps. 68:8–9). These theophanic sections express the psalmist's confidence that God will indeed intervene to defeat the invaders. In this respect, the psalmist demonstrates the steadfast faith of the righteous mentioned in 2:4.

The technical musical terms that appear in the prayer (vv. 1, 3, 9, 13, 19) suggest it may have been employed as a psalm in the Temple of Jerusalem.

3:1, The Superscription. The psalm is named a prayer, the title given to a number of psalms that probably functioned as part of the Temple liturgy (cf. Pss. 17:1; 86:1; 90:1; 102:1; 142:1). The term "Shigionoth" is related to an Akkadian term that means "song of lament" and appears in the title of Psalm 7, a lament psalm. In its present context, the term may refer to the prophet's complaints in chaps. 1–2, indicating that the psalm is Habakkuk's reaction to God's response.

3:2, Introduction. The psalmist asks God to manifest the divine "work" in the world (cf. 1:5). Within the context of this book, such "work" would refer to the vision of Babylon's downfall (2:4–19).

3:3–7, Portrayal of God's Approach. Here, the psalmist employs the natural imagery of the sun and earthquake to portray God's power and appearance in the world. God advances from Teman (Edom) and Paran, names that are used to refer to the region of Mount Sinai (cf. Deut. 33:2; Judg. 5:4–5). Recalling judgment against Midian during the period of wilderness wandering (Num. 25; 31), the psalm portrays their tents quaking at God's approach.

3:8–15, Portrayal of God's Victory. Drawing on ancient mythological traditions concerning creation and the defeat of Israel's enemies, the psalmist praises God for the defeat of both nations that threaten the people of Judah and their anointed king (cf. Ps. 2; 89) as well as the sea, which symbolizes cosmic chaos (cf. Ps. 104; Job 38–39). The imagery encompasses the entire cosmos; just as the rivers, the sea, the mountains, the sun, and the moon submit to God's power, so the nations that threaten the people of Judah will be defeated as God advances against them in the divine chariot. In this respect, the psalmist extols God as the master of both the natural world and the realm of human events (cf. Exod. 15; Judg. 5) and as the protector of the divinely set order in the cosmos.

3:16–19a, Conclusion. The psalmist, overwhelmed by God's majesty, expresses confidence that God will answer the petition despite the present adverse conditions. The imagery of the "hinds' feet" indicates the psalmist's sense of security and trust in God (cf. Ps. 18:33).

3:19b, Instructions to the Choirmaster. This psalm is to be accompanied by stringed instruments (cf. Pss. 4:1; 6:1; 54:1; 55:1; 61:1; 67:1; 76:1; Isa. 38:20).

Bibliography

Haak, R. D. *Habakkuk*. Supplements to Vetus Testamentum, 44. Leiden: Brill, 1991.

Hiebert, T. "The Book of Habakkuk." *The New Interpreter's Bible*, vol. 7. Edited by L. E. Keck et al. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1996. Pp. 621–55.

Roberts, J. J. M. *Nahum, Habakkuk, and Zephaniah: A Commentary*. Old Testament Library. Louisville, KY: Westminster/John Knox, 1991.

Sweeney, M. A. "Structure, Genre and Intent in the Book of Habakkuk." *Vetus Testamentum* 41 (1991): 63–83.

Zephaniah

MARGARET S. ODELL

INTRODUCTION

The superscription of Zephaniah (1:1) identifies the book as a collection of oracles attributable to the seventh-century prophet Zephaniah, who was active during the reign of King Josiah of Judah (640–609 B.C.). Shifts in subject matter and speaker's voice provide clues that the work is a composite collection of independent oracles. However, they have here been integrated into a single exhortation to acknowledge the sovereignty of Yahweh.

The superscription assigns Zephaniah's prophecy to the time of Josiah's reign (→ Josiah). The period is significant because it saw the collapse of the Assyrian Empire, which had dominated Judah and Israel along with the entire Near Eastern region for more than a century (→ Assyria, Empire of). In the wake of Assyria's decline, Josiah launched religious reforms that included the eradication of the worship of Canaanite baals and Assyrian astral deities (2 Kings 23:4–14). In this context, Zephaniah announces the impending Day of Yahweh, a time when the full majesty of Yahweh's power will be revealed. Indeed, the book equates the destruction of Nineveh with the disclosure of Yahweh's identity as king of the heavens and the earth.

The book has three major sections. The first (1:2–2:3) is addressed to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, whose syncretistic religious practices reveal that they have little respect for Yahweh's power. This section announces the Day of Yahweh and offers a last chance to repent. The second section (2:4–15) contains oracles against the nations of Philistia, Moab, Ammon, and Assyria. This section proclaims Yahweh's universal sovereignty not only over the nations, but over their gods. The final section (3:1–20) considers whether Jerusalem has taken Yahweh's awesome display of power to heart.

Contemporary readers may be surprised to discover Zephaniah's frank acknowledgment of the existence of other gods. Zephaniah does not say that other gods do not exist; instead, he depicts Yahweh engaging directly in battle against them. Similar traces of polytheism can be found elsewhere in the OT (Exod. 20:3; Deut. 32:8–9; → Polytheism). There are also traces of the theme that Yahweh is exalted above the gods (Pss. 29:1; 89:7; 96:4). Zephaniah reflects these older polytheistic notions.

The book is significant because it anticipates the movement toward monotheism. At a time when the people of Judah believed that other deities and other powers controlled their lives and compelled their allegiance, Zephaniah asserted that the god of Israel created the heavens and earth, controlled the destinies of the nations, and, indeed, was sovereign over all the principalities and powers of the cosmos.

COMMENTARY

1:1
Superscription

The superscription provides the proper framework for reading the book. First, and most important, it identifies the writing as "the word of the LORD." The book thus carries authority as the oracles of Yahweh.

Second, the book identifies the recipient of the oracles as Zephaniah, about whom nothing is known outside this verse. The name in Hebrew means "Yahweh has hidden/protected/treasured" (cf. Ps. 30:19–20; Zeph. 2:3). Zephaniah is further identified by a four-generation genealogy, which is unusually lengthy for a prophet. It has been conjectured that the first name in the list, Cushi, implies foreign parentage. It has also been suggested that the fourth ancestor in the list, Hezekiah, is the Judean king of that name. If both suppositions are correct, then the genealogy attests to cultural and ethnic diversity not only within Judah, but also within the royal family (cf. Matt. 1:5). However, neither of these suggestions is certain.

Finally, as noted above, the superscription places Zephaniah and his oracles in the context of Josiah's reign (640–609 B.C.). The oracles themselves do not allow for a more precise dating.

1:2–2:3
Judgment on Jerusalem

1:2–6, Reversal of Creation. The book opens with a comprehensive statement of Yahweh's intention to "sweep" everything off the face of the earth. Verses 2–3 depict a reversal of creation, as Yahweh removes

humans and animals, birds of the air, and fish of the sea. The sequence of destruction reverses the order of creation (the language is reminiscent of Gen. 1). By depicting Yahweh as creator and destroyer of the heavens and the earth, the oracle asserts that Yahweh is the supreme god of the universe.

In 1:4–6, the focus of the oracle narrows to Yahweh's judgment against the Jerusalemites for their combining the worship of Yahweh with the worship of the Canaanite baals and Assyrian gods. This impiety involves the inclusion of pagan priests in the cult (v. 4) and the incorporation of alien ritual practices, such as the worship of the "host of heaven," the sun, moon, and stars (1:5; see also 1:8). According to the book of Kings, these practices were introduced in the reign of Manasseh (2 Kings 21:1–7). Although some scholars have suggested that the worship of other gods was forced upon Judah by the Assyrians, others now think that these more cosmopolitan forms of worship were voluntarily adopted.

The syncretism is an obvious compromise of Yahwistic faith, as 1:5 illustrates: the people swear loyalty *to* Yahweh, but they swear *by* another god whom they acknowledge as their king. The NRSV translates "their king" as Milcom, the god of the Ammonites; however, the Hebrew word, which may be translated "their king," is probably a sarcastic reference to another god. Although it is uncertain which god is being worshiped as king, it is clear that this god is not Yahweh. The actions of the Jerusalemites not only reveal that they are disloyal to Yahweh, but also that they regard him as of lesser importance in their lives than "their king." The opening oracle thus establishes a contrast between Yahweh's supreme power over the universe and an appalling Jerusalemite indifference to that power.

1:7–18, The Day of Yahweh. This section announces the coming Day of Yahweh, a concept found primarily in the prophetic books. It has been customary to trace the origin of the concept either to Israelite traditions of holy war—the Day of Yahweh or a day of victory—or to cultic celebrations of Yahweh's defeat of his enemies and his resulting enthronement. More recent treatments of the Day of Yahweh focus on the meaning of the concept in specific literary contexts. Applied to momentous historical events, the concept of the Day of Yahweh was used to claim that God had been active in those events.

In Zephaniah, the "day" is equated with the decline of the Assyrian Empire and the resulting geopolitical changes (2:4–15). Theophanic imagery associated with the Day of Yahweh is especially prominent in 1:7–18 and again in 2:1–3 (→ Theophany); however, the "events" of the Day are also described in the oracles against the nations (2:4–15). The convulsions depicted in chaps. 1–2 should, therefore, be interpreted as manifestations of a single "day" or "era" of divine activity in history.

The description of wailing, gloom, and darkness in 1:7–18 derives from the language of theophany and is not a description of an actual military invasion of the city of Jerusalem. The imagery reveals the significance of these momentous events: Yahweh, and not some other god, is king (cf. 1:5). That fact exposes all human commitments to other sources of power to the searching light of God's judgment. The oracle opens with a specific judgment against the ruling elite who indulge in alien ritual practices and thus fill the "house of their lord" with violence and fraud (1:8–9). Although the expression "house of their lord" is ambiguous, the reference to Yahweh's sacrifice (1:7) suggests that the phrase refers to Yahweh's sanctuary. The judgment thus begins at the root of the problem, syncretistic worship.

The effects of the Day of Yahweh are heard throughout the city rather than seen, as the sound of wailing erupts in different quarters. Yahweh searches through the city with a lamp for all those who "thicken on their lees" and act as if Yahweh has no real power (1:11–12). The imagery of thickening on the lees is taken from winemaking. After new wine has achieved its flavor and color, it is decanted so that the sediment will not cause the wine to become moldy or sour. The Jerusalemites have not been "decanted" or jarred out of their indulgent lifestyles; consequently, they imagine that they are in complete control of their lives and that Yahweh will do neither good nor harm. With the advent of the Day of Yahweh, however, this self-delusion is exposed, and all human efforts are doomed (1:13, 18).

2:1–3, Call to Repentance. In almost disparaging terms, the prophet offers the nation a last opportunity to repent. Since the summons to "gather together" employs verbs that are normally associated with the gathering of straw, the prophet's command invokes the metaphor of the people as nothing but so much straw. Their worthlessness is further underscored by the address, "O unloved nation" (NRSV: "O shameless nation"). The futility of gathering straw in order to protect it from the fire of Yahweh's wrath is obvious. Nevertheless, the prophet urges the humble ones to "seek Yahweh" (cf. 1:6). The phrase "humble of the land" in 2:3 may refer to economic poverty, in which case there is a clear contrast between the ruling elite of 1:4–8 and those who have remained faithful to Yahweh (2:3). By contrast with those who are exposed to the harsh light of God's judgment in 1:7–8, these humble ones may hope to be hidden and therefore protected from God's wrath.

2:4–15

Oracles Against the Nations

As with 1:2–2:3, the oracles against the nations consist of separate sayings whose original contours can no

longer be confidently discerned. The collection includes three elements, each highlighting a particular dimension of Yahweh's sovereignty over the nations (2:4–7, 8–10, 11–15). The final unit presents a grand climax of Yahweh's victory not only over the nations, but also over their gods.

2:4–7, Philistia. After describing the utter desolation of four Philistine cities, the first section envisions a reapportioning of territorial boundaries. Once the inhabitants of Philistia are destroyed, the land will be reallocated as a possession of the house of Judah. The allocation of lands and districts is reminiscent of Deut. 32:8–9, where the task of assigning the boundaries between the nations is reserved for the high god of the pantheon. Zeph. 2:5–7 implies that Yahweh alone has the authority to make such decisions.

The shepherd imagery of 2:7 symbolizes Yahweh as king (cf. 1:5; Ezek. 3:1). Although 2:6 appears to refer literally to shepherds and flocks, in 2:7 the remnant of the house of Judah are viewed as sheep who find pasture in the territory of Ashkelon. If the remnant of Judah are sheep, then Yahweh is their shepherd (cf. Ps. 23).

2:8–10, Moab and Ammon. Zeph. 2:8–10 responds to the taunts of Moab and Ammon against Judah; again, the issue is whether Yahweh can defend his people's claim to their territory (2:8).

2:11–15, Assyria and the Gods of the Nations. Zeph. 2:11–15 describes Yahweh's battle against the gods. As his power becomes manifest, the other gods shrink. The idea reflects an apparent equation between the size of a nation and the strength of its god: from the strength and prestige of a nation one could infer the strength and prestige of its god. Accordingly, if the territories of Philistia, Moab, and Ammon have been handed over to the kingdom of Judah, then their gods have shrunk, while Yahweh's power has increased. The gods acknowledge Yahweh's power, as each bends the knee to Yahweh from his "place," or sanctuary (2:11). The concept of gods associated with the nations is reminiscent of Deut. 32:8–9 (cf. Ps. 76:12).

The section continues by calling the Assyrians to witness Yahweh's battle against the gods (2:12; NRSV: "Ethiopians"; Heb.: "Cushim"). Although the NRSV translates "Cushim" as "Ethiopians," one might interpret "Cushim" as a traditional designation of the peoples of Assyria (cf. Gen. 10:8–10). The NRSV also obscures the fact that someone other than the Cushim are slain by the sword. The second half of this verse reads, "they [NRSV: 'you'] are pierced by my sword"; the referent is probably to the gods mentioned in 2:11. The prophet declares that Yahweh, and not Assyria, holds dominion over the gods and lands of the Philistines, Ammonites, and Moabites.

Yahweh now turns to attack Nineveh (2:13). It is customary to interpret this verse as an attack on the *nation* of Assyria. However, the mythological dimension of 2:11, in which an attack on the nations is also understood as a defeat of the nations' gods, suggests that an attack on Nineveh may also have been understood as an attack on its god Asshur. Accordingly, v. 13 could be understood as follows, "And he will stretch out his hand against the north, and he will destroy [the god] Asshur." The evidence of Yahweh's defeat of Asshur is the destruction of his city Nineveh. However, unlike the cities of Philistia, which remain habitable regions for the remnant of Judah, the city of Nineveh is made an utter waste.

3:1–20
Jerusalem's Response

Having demonstrated his sovereignty over the nations and therefore also over their gods, Yahweh now turns to see whether the people in Jerusalem have taken these mighty acts to heart. By developing Yahweh's claim to sovereignty on both the heavenly and earthly levels, Zephaniah anticipates later apocalyptic themes, where God's sovereignty is acknowledged first in heaven and then on earth (cf. Dan. 7, 10–12; Revelation).

There are two major sections in this chapter. In 3:1–13, Jerusalem's inability to perceive Yahweh in the events described in chap. 2 leads to the announcement of another demonstration of Yahweh's power against all the nations. Zeph. 3:14–20 describes the implications of Yahweh's renewed kingship over Israel. This concluding section celebrates Yahweh's kingship in language and imagery taken from the royal psalms (Pss. 46; 48; 93; 96).

3:1–13, Yahweh's Decision. Although Jerusalem is not named in 3:1, the accusations against its rulers, prophets, and priests resemble other prophetic condemnations of that city. In 1:2–89, the ruling elite were condemned for their syncretistic worship; in 3:3–5, they are condemned for social abuse that stems from corrupt worship. They are indicted for their inability to establish justice and righteousness. By contrast, Yahweh acts righteously, sustaining the created order day by day.

In 3:6–8, Zephaniah raises the question whether Jerusalem has learned from Yahweh's defeat of the nations. Though Yahweh was confident that Jerusalem would take instruction and thus be spared, the city continues to pursue its corrupt ways, as if the demonstration of Yahweh's power gave them a warrant for their arrogance (3:7).

Yahweh will not judge Jerusalem directly, but instead declares that he will manifest his power yet again throughout the whole earth. However, Yahweh's decision to gather all nations addresses the root of the

problem in Jerusalem. At that time, the languages of the nations will be turned to pure speech so that all may call on the name of Yahweh; and supplicants will come from beyond the rivers of Assyria (NRSV: "Ethiopia"; Heb.: "Cush"; see commentary above on 2:11–15). When all the nations turn to the worship of Yahweh, Yahweh's people will once again seek refuge in Yahweh (3:11–13; cf. Rom. 9–11).

3:14–20, Yahweh Is King. The imagery of pasturing and lying down in Yahweh's care (3:15) is an allusion to kingship (cf. Ezek. 34; Ps. 23). Although the haughty Jerusalemites had revered another god as their king in 1:5, the humble and lowly ones rest securely when they accept Yahweh's rule.

Bibliography

Berlin, A. *Zephaniah: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary*. Anchor Bible, 25A. New York: Doubleday, 1994.

Roberts, J. J. M. *Nahum, Habakkuk, and Zephaniah: A Commentary*. Old Testament Library. Louisville, KY: Westminster, 1991.

Haggai

KENT HAROLD RICHARDS

INTRODUCTION

Haggai is known only from the book that bears his name, and from his appearance, with Zechariah, in one narrative in the book of Ezra (5:1; 6:14). In the book of Haggai he is regularly identified by the title "the prophet" (1:1, 3, 12; 2:1, 10) and once called "the messenger of the LORD" (1:13). Formulas that introduce prophetic sayings, such as "Thus says the LORD of hosts," are used recurrently to commend Haggai's words (e.g., 1:1, 2, 3, 7, 9). The composer of the book was obviously concerned to present what Haggai said as "the LORD's message" (1:13) to lend it all the authority that belonged to the communication of an authentic prophet (→ Prophet).

The literary arrangement of the book is quite similar to that of Zechariah 1–8, so much so that Zechariah can be read as a prophetic continuation of Haggai. In both, the sayings of the prophet are introduced by precise dates locating them in the reign of the Persian ruler, Darius (→ Darius). These chronological introductions to the sayings are part of a narrative framework in which Haggai's sayings are set. The narrative setting divides the book into sections that can be read in sequence as a chronological account of Haggai's prophetic activity.

The five major sections of the book may be dated to a four-month period in 520 B.C.:

August 29, 1:1–11
September 21, 1:12–15a
October 17, 1:15b–2:9
December 18, 2:10–19
December 18, 2:20–23

The Temple of the Lord in Jerusalem was the major focus of Haggai's prophecy (→ Temple, The). Its rebuilding and the reinstitution of its ceremonies as central to the life of the nation were his constant concerns. At the conclusion of the book there is also a word of promise for an heir to the kingship of David. Throughout, the sayings reflect the conditions of Judah in the difficult decades of the late sixth century, when Judah belonged to the empire of Darius the Great.

Darius came to power after a series of intrigues approximately two years before Haggai's ministry. Cyrus (→ Cyrus), the much-praised Persian leader (Isa. 44:28; 45:1) who brought the downfall of Babylon in 538 B.C., had begun to institute less harsh control over the territories than the Babylonians had exerted with their tactic of exiling people and their leaders. Darius, who still had to deal with unstable conditions throughout the Persian Empire (→ Persia), began to concern himself with the large political area "Beyond the River." This area included Syro-Palestine and was especially important since it was on the borders of Egypt, where there was unrest. As a part of Darius's social and political reforms, a prominent member of the Davidic line like Zerubbabel might well have been appointed to return to Jerusalem to act as governor of Judah. (A story from a much later period is told of Darius's appointment of Zerubbabel [1 Esd. 4:42–5:3].)

Archaeological data show that small towns and villages existed in Judah during the sixth century B.C. We also know that some believers in the Lord were not sent into exile, remaining in the land (→ Exile).

Life in Judah was organized as a "city-Temple community." It provided a religious and social identity with an administration centered around the Temple. The "city-Temple community" was made up of smaller groups, referred to as the "ancestral house," headed up by returning exiles (e.g., Neh. 7:7). Tensions existed between those who were returning from exile and those who had remained in the land and who were now engaged in subsistence agriculture. The small collectives that included returnees and those who had remained in the land took part in the rebuilding of the Temple.

Haggai brings the Lord's word into this community, which is struggling both economically and religiously. Haggai's message, based on earlier traditions and new strategies, provided an opportunity for believers in the Lord to be at home in their land. Now with modest direction from a fairly benevolent Persian leadership and some funds provided by the returnees (Ezra 2:68–69), the leaders and people were able to gain a degree of self-determination by rebuilding their Temple.

COMMENTARY

1:1–11, Consider Seriously Your Situation. The chronological formula (1:1) places the Lord's com-

mand, conveyed by the prophet to a political leader and high priest, within an urgent context. The people are quoted (1:2) as saying that they refuse to build the house of the Lord, despite dwelling in their own houses (1:4, 9). In the midst of Zerubbabel's and Joshua's failure to lead and the people's refusal to build, Haggai comes empowered by the Lord, commanding that the people consider the results of their actions as well as the potential impact of building the Lord's house (1:5, 7). Despite the people's efforts to provide for their own well-being, they still hunger and thirst (1:6). The Lord claims full responsibility for the people's unrealized expectations (1:9) and is unequivocal in stating that their plight is due to the fact that "my house lies in ruins" (1:9). Equally clear in this initial divine word is an admonition and the promise that, should the "house" of the Lord be built, the Lord will accept it and be glorified. This initial section of Haggai weaves together all of the primary elements that are heard throughout the book: the efficacy of the prophetic word, the inexorable connection between the people's houses and the Lord's house, and the powerful continuity between the Lord's actions with the people and all that happens in the heavens and on earth.

1:12–15a, I Am with You. A simple word of assurance from the Lord (v. 13) moves the narrative beyond the Lord's initial admonition (vv. 1–11). Even though the leaders are still addressed, the people are of central importance (v. 13). The historical narrative that links the Lord's word and deed with the people's word and deed also emphasizes the importance of the prophet's role. Only twenty-four days after the initial prophetic word (1:1; 1:15a), the people begin to work on the Temple. The Lord's action here recalls the Lord's role in inspiring Cyrus to set the stage for the Temple rebuilding (1 Chron. 36:22–23).

1:15b–2:9, I Will Fill This House with Glory. The occasion for these precisely dated words of comfort is not stated explicitly. The day occurred within the Feast of Booths (Lev. 23:33–36), a major festival of communal gathering (Ezek. 45:25) with leaders present (1 Kings 8:2, 65). The question that no doubt emerged during this rebuilding time was, "How is this new Temple going to compare with the old one?" Ezra 3:10–14 narrates a similar situation at the foundation-laying ceremony. Haggai begins by questioning (v. 3), then reassuring the leaders and the people; they must not fear, for he will be with them (note the similarities between 1:12–13 and 2:4–5). Haggai promises that glory will fill the Temple and that, ultimately, well-being and prosperity will ensue. Glory, mentioned first in 1:8, conveys both material wealth (Isa. 10:3; 66:11–12; Nah. 2:10; Ps. 49:17–18) and the divine presence (Ezek. 43:1–4).

2:10–19, Consider This Day and Its Future Significance. Something of profound importance happened three months from the day that Haggai first conveyed the Lord's word. Nothing seems special about this twenty-fourth day of the ninth month. Instead of reporting a word to the leaders and the people, Haggai asks the priests a question regarding holiness and uncleanness. The priests routinely answered such questions (Lev. 10:10–11; Deut. 17:8–13; 33:10; Mic. 3:11; Jer. 18:8; Ezek. 7:26). And here the priests' answers are clear, namely, uncleanness has a level of contagion that holiness does not have. Haggai's questions and the expected priestly responses are particularly poignant when the Temple is still in ruins. Indeed, the uncleanness occurs because the Temple has not been rededicated. Haggai is calling for the priests to rededicate the Temple and, presumably, to allow for clean offerings.

One key to understanding vv. 10–19 is the recognition that "this people" and "this nation" to which Haggai refers (v. 14) are the people and nation mentioned throughout Haggai. They must consider "this day" (v. 15). The call to consider, first, reminds the listeners of the call to consider the lack of blessings (1:5, 7). Moreover, they are to reflect on the day when the foundation stone of the Temple was laid, making it possible for God to provide "blessings" (Gen. 26:3–5; Lev. 26:3–13; Deut. 28:2–14), thereby transforming the situation from the one stated at the beginning of the book. Instead of famine, there will be agricultural bounty. The twenty-fourth day of the ninth month was the day on which the Temple was rededicated, a day that would enable fertility in the land.

2:20–23, I Will Take You. The importance of "the day" in the preceding section (2:10, 18) is further emphasized by Haggai's receiving another word of the Lord on the very same day. Here, as at the beginning of the book and on several other occasions (1:2, 12, 14; 2:2, 4), Zerubbabel is mentioned. However, in contrast to the other occurrences, Zerubbabel is now the only one addressed. The Lord stresses Zerubbabel's significance by addressing him as "my servant." The term is used on some occasions to refer to non-Israelite leaders (Isa. 45:1; Jer. 25:9; 27:6), perhaps even Darius (1:1; 2:10). However, the term "servant" regularly refers to the king in Israel (Ps. 132:10; 1 Kings 11:32, 36; Ezek. 34:23), as is also the case with the seal or signet ring of the Lord, which symbolizes the Davidic heir (1 Kings 21:8; Jer. 22:24). With this oracle, Haggai confirms the Lord's sovereignty over all the kingdoms, the centrality of the Temple, and hope for the future.

Bibliography

Meyers, C., and E. Meyers. *Haggai, Zechariah 1–8.* Anchor Bible, 25B. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1987.

Petersen, D. *Haggai and Zechariah 1–8.* Old Testament Library. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1985.

Zechariah

DAVID L. PETERSEN

INTRODUCTION

The book of Zechariah has two parts. The first is chaps. 1–8, visions and oracles for the most part attributable to Zechariah, son of Berechiah, who was active as a prophet from 520 to 518 B.C. The second is chaps. 9–14, sometimes called Deutero-Zechariah, anonymous oracles that, though difficult to date, derive from a period later than that of the first section, most probably the fifth–fourth centuries B.C. Within each of these two units there is significant diversity. In chaps. 1–8, there are eight vision reports interspersed with speeches, and then in 9–14, two "oracles," as indicated by the superscriptions at the beginning of chaps. 9 and 12. Hence, for the final editor of Zechariah 9–14, this section appears to be made up of two primary units: chaps. 9–11 and 12–14.

Although the historical setting for the second part of the book is impossible to determine, the setting for the first part is rather clear. By the mid-sixth century B.C. the Persian Empire had replaced the Neo-Babylonians as the controlling power not only of Mesopotamia, but of Syro-Palestine as well (→ Babylon). Judah, which had earlier been a subdivision of the Babylonian Empire, was now a subprovincial district in the Persian Empire. Those who had been deported as captives in 595 and 587 B.C. by the Babylonians had become Persian prisoners (→ Exile).

With the advent of this new empire led by Cyrus, whom the prophet of Isaiah 40–55 labeled as a "messiah" (Isa. 45:1), fortunes for some Israelites began to look up (→ Cyrus II). Some of those who had been deported, as well as their children born in captivity, were allowed to return to the homeland. Moreover, Persian policy, which included support for local religions, supported the restitution of the Temple in Jerusalem. There were, however, competing notions of what the rebuilt community should look like, especially about religious and political matters. During the years 520–518 B.C., Israelites, including both those who had been in exile and those who had remained in the land, were attempting to rebuild their community in and around Jerusalem. The book of Haggai attests to this process with very focused attention on the rebuilding of the Temple (see Haggai, Introduction). Haggai suggests that important leadership roles during this period were held by Joshua, the high priest, and Zerubbabel, a member of the Davidic royal line and, probably, a minor official of the Persian Empire with civil responsibilities. Zechariah 1–8, too, is designed to provide a way of thinking about the restoration time, but not in quite so concrete a way as Haggai.

Zechariah 9–14 has been dated by biblical scholars to widely varying settings, from the pre-exilic to the Greco-Roman periods. Several recent studies have suggested the fifth–fourth centuries B.C. as the most likely context. This was a time when the stability, even identity of the Judahite community was at issue. The problems of the community were so severe that the authors of chaps. 9–14 thought it necessary for Yahweh to intervene directly.

The relations of Zechariah 9–14 to what precedes and follows it are complex. Zech. 9:1; 12:1; and Mal. 1:1 all commence with the word "oracle," which is then followed by a brief formula. Zechariah 9–11, 12–14, and Malachi may, therefore, be viewed as three distinct "oracles." And all three sections are by consequence held as distinct from Zechariah 1–8, which is rooted in the discourse of Zechariah, son of Berechiah. The authors of Zechariah 9–14 developed various perspectives found in Zechariah 1–8.

COMMENTARY

1:1–8:23
Visions and Oracles of Restoration

1:1–6:8
Visions

There are eight visions in Zechariah 1–8. Visions are an important part of the prophetic repertoire (e.g., Amos 7:1–7; Jer. 1:11–14). However, in no other prophetic book do they make up so large a part of the prophet's proclamation. The visions in chaps. 1–8 share three essential themes: they depict activity between heaven and earth, they present a world in which things are on the move, and they provide a perspective that is universal (note the phrase "all the earth" in 1:11; 4:14). By using these themes, the visionary suggests that

Yahweh's imminent action is truly universal and that what he does will restore Judah.

1:8–17, First Vision. Zechariah beholds the divine corral where the deity's horses are at rest. The place is well watered, almost Edenic—v. 8, "near the watery deep" (RSV: "in the glen"). Zechariah is disturbed to learn that things are calm since Judah still suffers the effects of defeat and exile. The horses and riders that serve as the deity's patrol report to a messenger of the Lord that the earth is at peace (1:11). The messenger then poses a disturbing question: "How long, O Yahweh of Hosts, before you have compassion?" This lamentlike language receives a response in the form of two oracles: Yahweh has become jealous for Israel and he will do something. A promise focusing on Temple restoration and rebuilt cities follows. This vision authorizes the prophet to proclaim that a change is about to occur for Judah and Jerusalem.

1:18–21, Second Vision. The prophet reports seeing four horns. Although the report is enigmatic, the prophet probably sees an altar that in ancient Syro-Palestine often had four corners or horns (→ Altar). However, this image is interpreted as referring to the four powers that decimated Judah. One senses that the four horns symbolize all foreign nations. Artisans or smiths who are on the way will not reconstruct an altar, but will destroy those who have destroyed Jerusalem and its altar. If the first vision promised weal to Israel, the second promises woe to foreign nations, especially those that decimated Israel.

2:1–5, Third Vision. Here the prophet, for the first time, enters the visionary world. He meets a man who is undertaking measurements of Jerusalem, measurements that prescribe dimensions for the restored city. An angelic interpreter interrupts these proceedings and proclaims that the new Jerusalem will exist without boundaries. (Boundaries for the restored Jerusalem were, in contrast, revealed in Ezek. 40–48.) Moreover, Yahweh, symbolized by walls of fire, will protect Israel. By the end of this vision, Zechariah's reports begin to focus on Judah and Jerusalem within the universal compass established in the first two visions.

3:1–10, Fourth Vision. With the introduction of Joshua the high priest, the visionary vocabulary becomes even more specific than in earlier visions. The prophet sees the divine council, but without the deity present (see 1 Kings 22:19–23 for a description of the divine council in action). Joshua is cleansed and purified, presumably so that he may undertake his priestly role. If the Temple were to be rebuilt, it would be necessary to have the priesthood in place. Ezekiel 40–48 addresses this matter, but does not suggest that the high priest has a role. For Zechariah, a high priest is necessary. This fourth vision serves to justify not only the role of high priest, but a specific person to hold it.

4:1–5, 10b–14, Fifth Vision. In this vision, interrupted in the middle by an oracle (4:6–10a), Zechariah reports seeing a golden lampstand, a type of lampstand attested by archaeological discovery. It is not the classic Jewish menorah, but a bowl with seven pinched or indented spouts. Above it stand two trees that presumably provide the lamp with olive oil. The seven spouts symbolize Yahweh's all-searching and beneficent eyes. The two trees or "sons of oil" no doubt refer to the two leaders of the postexilic community, the civil leader and the high priest. The imagery here does not seem to be that of anointing. Rather, the writer emphasizes the interrelationship between the lamp, which symbolizes the divine presence, and the trees, which symbolize human leadership in the restored community. There is an innate, divine-human connection as symbolized by the trees, which provide oil for the lamp, and the lamp, which provides the light for the trees. This vision suggests a specific form of leadership structure for the restored community, namely, civil and priestly leaders who depend upon Yahweh for their power.

5:1–4, Sixth Vision. Zechariah sees a flying scroll of huge and yet precise proportions. The divine mediator interprets it as a curse, which is a standard feature of Israel's covenant with God (→ Covenant). The point of this vision is straightforward. In the restored community Yahweh will continue to punish evildoers, almost magically. This perspective alone suggests that for Zechariah the restoration would not be utopian; there would still be those who err, and they would be punished.

5:5–11, Seventh Vision. In this most bizarre of the visions, Zechariah sees a basket with lead lid and, inside, a figure personifying wickedness. This vision report has several distinctive features. It denigrates Mesopotamia, the plain of Shinar, the land toward which the basket of evil is headed. Moreover, the basket heading east allows some sort of cosmic balance to be achieved. Evil goes out of Syro-Palestine while presumably there are those loyal to Yahweh, the "good," who are moving from the east, or Mesopotamia, to Syro-Palestine.

6:1–8, Eighth Vision. In this final vision Zechariah again sees the horses, which are now joined to chariots and set before bronze mountains, nothing less than the place where God dwells. Things are now in motion, unlike the calm of the first vision. The deity's patrol has been sent out; restoration for Judah is under way. The good news of renewal for those loyal to Yahweh has been perceived and reported by the visionary Zechariah. The visions put the events of ca. 520–518 B.C. in cosmic perspective.

1:1–8:23
Oracles

Although visions predominate in Zechariah 1–8, oracular material is prominent as well. An oracle introduces the book (1:1–6). Its language is typical of Israel's pre-exilic prophets. With this rhetoric, Zechariah is presented as an authentic prophetic voice: return, lest you suffer the disaster that befell your fathers!

Apart from the introduction, there are two basic sorts of oracles: those scattered throughout the visions, in 1:7–6:15, and those collected at the end of this section in chaps. 7–8. The first sort seem to be a response to the visions. For example, 1:14–17 specifies that the future time of weal will concentrate on Jerusalem, but will as well include other cities. The oracles in 4:6–10a interpret the complex imagery of the lampstand vision by referring to specific individuals, Zerubbabel and Joshua.

When oracles do occur, there is always more than one. (Not all visions receive an oracular response.) This multiplicity of sayings attests to the rich implications of the visions, so much so that the sayings connected to one vision (e.g., 4:6–7, 8–10) often provide distinctive emphases. In this instance, the first oracle emphasizes the prominence of Zerubbabel in comparison with Joshua, and the second focuses on Zerubbabel as Temple builder.

The oracles associated with the visions seem thematically both similar to and different from those visions. They are different in the way that they emphasize the importance of the royal figure and the special place of Jerusalem in the restored polity. They concretize what was left unspecified in the visions. Nonetheless there are certain commonalities between the visions and these oracles. For example, one may note the continuity between the cosmic symbolism of the four winds in the final vision, and the notion of four winds in 2:10. Interestingly, both the visions and oracles in chaps. 1–8 share certain motifs present in the book of Isaiah, e.g., the personified Zion (Isa. 4:9), cities of Judah (Isa. 4:49), and nations coming to Zion (Isa. 56:6–7).

The oracles in Zechariah 7–8 are quite different. This collection begins as a response not to vision reports, but to a question posed in 7:3: should the community continue to mourn and fast? In the oracular material that follows, there are three basic sections: 7:1–14; 8:1–17, and 8:18–23. In the first small subcollection, there is a response of sorts to the question about fasting that eventuates in a series of counterquestions, vv. 5–7, as well as more general hortatory language, vv. 8–14. Then, in the second collection, which is itself subdivided into three blocks (8:1–8, 9–13, 14–17), readers learn that Yahweh will act on behalf of Zion and that a marvelous restoration will eventuate. But, as with the previous collection, the ending provides admonitory language as a prerequisite of the good times that are about to occur. The end time will not be a utopia, namely, a time without problems.

In the final collection of oracles, 8:18–23, the prophet's long-awaited answer to the query raised in 7:3 is presented: fast shall become feast. But even here there is admonition—"love truth." Then, in the final two oracles of the first part of the book, a universalistic note is struck as the importance of Jerusalem is highlighted by reference to an international pilgrimage in which many peoples will come to Zion.

Some interpreters have been tempted to think that the visions in the book of Zechariah present the primary or important material and that the oracles are of secondary importance. To suggest this would be far from the mark. Instead, the oracles in chaps. 1–6 help one understand the meaning of the visions, many of which seem to demand interpretation. Furthermore, chaps. 7–8 present a picture of the prophet that enlarges the one given in the visions. In the earlier section, Zechariah was a visionary, one whose work required further interpretation. In the final two chapters, he becomes oracular speaker, answering questions and commenting on topics of importance to the postexilic community. Together chaps. 1–6 and 7–8 constitute a comprehensive picture of prophetic activity, one in which Zechariah's prophetic credentials are emphasized. This is important since some have maintained that the book of Haggai is written to defend his role as prime mover in the rebuilding of the Temple. One may suggest, by contrast, that Zechariah 1–8 justifies the full range of this prophet's activity.

9:1–14:21
Oracles About the Future

9:1–11:17
First Oracle

Like the book of Amos, Zechariah 9 begins with oracles against foreign nations. Similar to Amos too is the fact that in this chapter the nations are those of Syro-Palestine: Phoenicia, Syria, and Philistia. Also similar to Amos, the cities within these nations are mentioned by name. Unlike the oracles in Amos, however, there is less attention to indictment of these nations than there is to the punitive action of Yahweh. Yahweh will defeat these nations and cities, an action enabling him to be perceived as guardian of his nation. One result of this divine war will be the institution of Yahweh's kingship (9:9–13): "His kingdom shall be from sea to sea." Moreover, those who worship Yahweh are to be saved from their plight (vv. 11–13). The motif of Yahweh as divine warrior is picked up and highlighted at the end of the poem (vv. 14–15). In graphic language, we hear that those whom he is protecting will consume the blood of the slain enemy warriors.

The divine war will bring fertility and prosperity (vv. 16–17). Zechariah 9 involves two essential themes: defeat and destruction for the foreign nations and return and restoration for Israel.

Theme and language change in Zechariah 10. In v. 1, the people of Yahweh are commanded to request rain. The theme of fertility connects 10:1 with 9:17. However, in 10:1, fertility is the result of a petition to Yahweh, rather than the result of a successful institution of Yahweh's kingship, as it is in chap. 9. One senses a different topic in v. 2, which appears to have the form of a judgment oracle. There is an indictment in the first half of the verse, a description of improper forms of intermediation, and then in the second half, a retrospective judgment that the people (here construed in metaphoric terms as "sheep") wander without leadership. The connecting word, "shepherd," unites vv. 2 and 3. It would seem that, in v. 2, shepherds were religious leaders, prophets, or priests, whereas in vv. 3–5, one has the impression that "shepherd" is a political leader. It is not, however, easy to determine whether the leader is Israelite or foreign.

Unlike 10:1–2, which seem to be short, unrelated poems, 10:3–12 appears to be a longer unified unit, which, apart from the negative statement in v. 3, contains significant positive statements about Israel. Verses 4–5 speak of military action, but here, unlike in Zechariah 9, it is the people who fight instead of Yahweh. The allusive style uses descriptions of Israel's earlier battles, e.g., the riders on horses and similar language from Exod. 15:1. Like Zechariah 9, however, this poem concerns both the Northern and the Southern Kingdoms, namely, Judah and Ephraim, as was the case in 9:13. Verses 8–12 promise that Yahweh will reverse his exile of Israel by acting to bring it back. Just as the military language echoes the Red Sea events, so too the language of return alludes to salvation at the Red Sea. Zech. 10:11 suggests that just as Israel earlier escaped from Egypt, so now it will escape from captivity in Mesopotamia. The poem puts this prophecy of military action and return in a theological perspective by concluding with a promise that its strength will be in Yahweh and it shall glory in his name.

Zechariah 11 begins with an address to yet another foreign nation, Lebanon. However, the tone of this oracle is different from the standard oracle against a nation, like the one in 9:1–8. Imperatives, e.g., "Open your doors" (11:1), as well as literary personifications, e.g., "O cypress" (11:2), make this an unusual literary piece. What appears to be a call to obedience directed at Lebanon quickly and ironically becomes a call to self-destruction: "Open your doors, O Lebanon, that the fire may devour your cedars." This entire poem, 11:1–3, uses terms from the forest: jungle, forest, oak, tree, cypress, cedar. This vocabulary is consistent with the notion of fertility raised earlier in chaps. 9–10. However, since this is a poem against a foreign nation, destruction rather than the creation of fertility is the point. Direct discourse as well as the language of fertility create a literary linkage between 10:1 and 11:3.

The rest of Zechariah 11, except for the woe oracle (v. 17), is prose. Zech. 11:4–17 and 13:7–9 both speak against shepherds. Some scholars have suggested that, despite the fact that 13:7–9 is poetry and 11:4–17 is, with the exception of v. 17, prose, both texts belong together as one piece, an examination of Israel's leaders. Zech. 11:4–16 is an autobiographical narrative. However, the identity of the individual described is as obscure as that of the shepherds or shepherd in chap. 10. Someone is charged with the responsibility of becoming a shepherd for a flock. This is, however, an unhappy task, since the flock has been doomed to slaughter. Improper attention to wealth has resulted in a sentence of doom for this flock.

The autobiographical report continues, and we hear that some individual, the first-person "I" in vv. 7–8, assumes the role of shepherd. Although this ambiguous shepherd performed his role, he reports having destroyed three other shepherds. This statement suggests a context in which there is social friction within the community out of which this text has grown. As a result of these difficulties, the person who had assumed the role of shepherd declined that role, especially since he reports that the flock is destined to die.

Termination of this person's role as shepherd is described in vv. 10–14, a description that, though obscure, no doubt refers to the ritual destruction of the symbols of leadership. This same individual is, in vv. 15–16, challenged to act as shepherd again. However, this time the person refuses. And then, in v. 16, the author presents the notion of a shepherd as one who will destroy.

The role of shepherd here is obviously complex. In the ancient Near East, the shepherd metaphor normally refers to the royal office—that of the king (→ Shepherd). In the postexilic era and within the Israelite context, the metaphor of shepherd might refer either to a religious or to a civil leader. In any case, the tone of this prosaic section at the end of chap. 11, a section that concludes the first "oracle," is decidedly negative. The war oracle in 11:17 reemphasizes the notion of a worthless shepherd and includes formal curses upon one who exercises this role. In 13:7–9, the shepherd is clearly Yahweh's or "my shepherd." Similar to chap. 11 is the strong feeling of solidarity between the sheep/people and the shepherd/leader as well as the suffering all parties will undergo.

Interestingly, in 13:8–9, there is provision for a remnant, a group that will survive Yahweh's punishment of the shepherd and his flock. Using standard covenant language, the author proclaims that the survivors will become Yahweh's people. In contrast to these verses in Zechariah 13, however, the language about shepherds in Zechariah 11 is fundamentally negative in its view of the future. Woe overpowers a positive outlook.

12:1–14:21
Second Oracle

Unlike Zechariah 9–11, the final chapters of the book record "a word of the LORD concerning Israel." Consistent with this difference is an additional distinction in literary style and theme. Whereas chaps. 9–11 were predominantly poetry, 12–14 are predominantly prose. In addition, the phrase "on that day" recurs with such regularity that these chapters appear to be made up of small fragments. (The phrase "on that day" appears in 12:3, 4, 6, 8 [two times], 9, 11; 13:1, 2, 4; 14:4, 6, 8, 9, 13, 20.) Although these final three chapters seem to focus on Israel, chap. 12 does begin by setting an international context for Yahweh's activity. At the outset we learned that there will be strife between those loyal to Yahweh and "all the peoples round about" (12:2). In 12:1–9, the author highlights the prominent position Jerusalem will have in the cosmic battle. There is even a hint of intra-Israelite strife (13:2). However, this issue remains muted compared to its importance in Isaiah 56–66. The Zion tradition appears in the motif of an inviolable city in which the deity lives.

The author then shifts themes and in 12:10–13:1 deals with the Davidic monarchy traditions. In so doing, he broaches the matters of earlier culpability and future possibilities. Some reference to apparent persecution and resulting mourning, caused by the Davidic house, is introduced in 12:10. However, the author foresees the possibility of cleansing for the Davidic line by Yahweh's purifying waters (13:1). This can happen, however, only after radical clan-by-clan lamentation (12:11–14).

Zech. 13:2–6 addresses the topic of prophecy. Although 13:2 commences with reference to idols, prophecy as such, not simply false prophecy, receives strong negative judgment. This writer thinks prophecy in the preclassical or classical molds is no longer to be allowed. If someone claims to be a prophet, "his father and mother who bore him, will say to him 'you shall not live.'" Whereas Zechariah 12–13 seemed to allow for continuity with earlier Israelite traditions, notably the Zion and Davidic motifs, 13:2–6 presents a counterbalance challenging the possibility of prophetic activity in the present age.

In Zechariah 14, one senses an intensification of motifs already broached in the book, e.g., military activity against Yahweh's foes. Consequently, some interpreters have viewed this chapter as apocalyptic in its orientation (→ Apocalyptic Literature). As in 12:1–13:6, the subsections of Zechariah 14 are segmented by the occurrence of the phrase "on that day." And as before, conflict is understood from the very outset as part of the Day of Yahweh (14:1). The motif of despoiling predator nations attested elsewhere (Nah. 2:9; Hag. 2:7–8) initiates this culminating chapter. But then the Zion tradition reappears in the prophecy of a battle at Jerusalem in which some Yahwists will survive while others will not. The remnant motif present in 13:9 reappears in 14:2. Then in 14:4–5 the personal presence of Yahweh as warrior is depicted using traditional themes from Israel's description of theophany, namely, the appearance of the deity and the attendant disturbance of the cosmic order. Even Israelites will flee from God's terrifying presence.

The theophany will cause fantastic changes in the natural world. There will be a radically new time when human experience of this age will be abrogated—no more cold, but presumably pleasant warmth, no more night, but continuous light (14:6–7; cf. Isa. 24:23). Eden-like living waters (cf. Joel 4:18) will presumably lead to marvelous fertility.

All this will result from Yahweh's kingship. Moreover, the belief expressed in Deut. 6:4, that Yahweh is one, will be firmly established (Zech. 14:9). The royal city will be elevated even as literally "the whole land" recedes and becomes a plain (cf. Isa. 40:4). Zech. 14:11 corroborates the promise of an impressive population for Jerusalem given earlier (cf. Joel 4:20).

Zech. 14:12–15 returns to the topic of Yahweh's defeat of those who will attack Jerusalem. They will suffer from decimating plagues (14:12). Classical holy-war traditions are used to describe the battle in which warriors from the same army will kill each other, a motif that, in 14:14, is reformulated to recognize the possibility of intra-Israelite conflict—"even Judah will fight against Jerusalem." The final portion of 14:14 returns to the notion of despoliation introduced in 14:1, just as 14:15 picks up on the plague motif broached in 14:12.

Zech. 14:16–21 portrays a time after the decisive military confrontation. Some from the attacking nations have survived, but now instead of attacking Jerusalem they will come on an annual pilgrimage for the Feast of Booths (14:16). There is even a punitive threat—no rain—to enforce this journey (14:17). The "family of Egypt" comes in for special attention (14:18–19). Finally, 14:20–21 provides ritual prescriptions for the celebration of that feast. Horses, bells, inscriptions, special basins, and sacrifices at the Temple will make up this remarkable ritual event. Zech. 14:20–21 implies that, by this time, the purity requisite for legitimate Yahwistic rituals will have been achieved.

There are several important themes in Deutero-Zechariah: military conflict, especially against foreign nations and with Yahweh as principal warrior; indictment of communal leaders, whether foreign or domestic, civil or religious; the hope of restoration for Jerusalem and those loyal to Yahweh; and the anticipation of a new time in which things will be very different and very good but still not perfect. Despite the significant literary variety present in Zechariah 9–14, there is remarkable thematic unity within these two oracles, 9–11 and 12–14. These "oracles" present readers with two versions of Yahweh-initiated action. In 9–11 the primary tone is doom; in 12–14 it is that of promise.

The final form of Zechariah provides readers with two literatures that have been juxtaposed and presented as one book. There are integral connections between chaps. 1–8 and 9–14. There are, of course, similarities in language, e.g., "the daughter of Zion" in 2:10 and 9:9. But more important, both sections share important themes: the divine initiative, the cosmic scope of Yahweh's activity, and the important role of Zion in the restored community. Since such important ties link chaps. 1–8 to 9–14 and since 1–8 was composed earlier than the final chapters, it seems likely that those who wrote 9–14 knew and were influenced by 1–8. The earlier writers were concerned essentially about what was happening in their time, namely, the restoration in Judah ca. 520 B.C. The later authors focused instead on Yahweh's future action, activity that would enable the restored community to do more than just survive and bring a time when the people would receive Yahweh as king and would be his glorious people.

Bibliography

Meyers, C. and E. Meyers. *Haggai, Zechariah 1–8.* Anchor Bible, 25B. New York: Doubleday, 1987.

———. *Zechariah 9–14.* Anchor Bible, 25C. New York: Doubleday, 1993.

Petersen, D. *Haggai and Zechariah 1–8.* Old Testament Library. Louisville, KY: Westminster/John Knox, 1995.

———. *Zechariah 9–14 and Malachi.* Old Testament Library. Louisville, KY: Westminster/John Knox, 1995.

Redditt, P. *Haggai, Zechariah, and Malachi.* New Century Bible Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1995.

Malachi

PAUL D. HANSON

INTRODUCTION

Literary Form

With the exception of 1:1 and 4:4–6, the book of Malachi can be read as a unified composition from the hand of a single author. It is held together by a common literary form, a narrative report of a dispute. Time and again, Yahweh makes an assertion, and the priests or the people respond with a query, usually implying objection to the divine pronouncement. This question leads to a clarification of the divine assertion; the intention of the divine word is elaborated and strengthened in the direction of indictment and judgment of the doubting people or of admonition.

Questions concerning authorship have revolved around the superscription in 1:1. Though some scholars take the Hebrew word *mal'aki* in this verse to be the personal name of the prophetic author, an alternative explanation seems preferable, namely, that the word derives from a misreading of the term "my messenger" *(mal'aki)* in 3:1 as a personal name designating the author. If this is the case, the book of Malachi is an anonymous composition that may have at one time circulated with two other anonymous collections, Zechariah 9–11 and Zechariah 12–14, a possibility suggested by the appearance of the same formula at the head of all three collections, "Oracle, word of Yahweh." The book may be divided into six sections, 1:2–5; 1:6–2:9; 2:10–16; 2:17–3:5; 3:6–12; and 3:13–4:3.

Historical Setting

Though without explicit chronological markers, the book of Malachi can be placed with confidence in the first half of the fifth century B.C. The high hopes connected with the era of the restored Temple reflected in the prophecies of Haggai and Zechariah clearly have been shattered. The book describes a priesthood that has degenerated into practices violating the laws regulating ritual sacrifice and that is lax in its responsibility of guiding and teaching the people. And the effects of degeneration and laxity are apparent throughout the land: people are reneging on their tithes; intermarriage is calling into question the identity of the Jewish community; and the day laborers, widows, orphans, and sojourners are suffering oppression. Nehemiah, whose activity in Judah began in 445 B.C., focused his reform efforts on ending intermarriage (Neh. 10:28–30), restoring the practices of honest tithing (10:32, 38–39) and of proper ritual (10:33–37), and ending exploitation of the poor (5:1–13). It is plausible to see Malachi as active shortly before the debut of Nehemiah, a date compatible with the developmental stage of the Hebrew in which the book is written. Thus, the book may be placed in the reign of Xerxes I (486–464 B.C.), when the Persians were experiencing their first stinging defeats by Greek armies. At this time, Judah was a vassal state of the Persians, living under a non-Davidic governor appointed by the Persians (Mal. 1:8), and may have been searching the international conflicts of the time for signs of divine intervention.

Socioreligious Setting

The author of Malachi writes from a perspective combining ethical norms rooted deeply in pre-exilic prophecy with careful attention to the laws governing sacrifice codified in the Pentateuch. The most trenchant rebuke is directed at complacent, self-serving priests who, rather than setting an example of integrity and virtue for the people, incur the wrath of God by their corruption. More specifically, those addressed generically as "O priests" can be identified as members of the Zadokite priesthood (→ Zadok), the priestly family that maintained exclusive control over the Temple since its restoration and rededication during the reign of Zerubbabel. The partisan perspective from which the author builds his case is intimated by the reference in 2:4–6 to God's "covenant with Levi," namely, the ideal to which certain levitical priests were appealing in their polemic against the dominant (and in their eyes defiled) priesthood. This polemic has a long prehistory reaching back to the Davidic period when the Mushite Abiathar served in the tabernacle alongside Zadok, the Zadokite priest (→ Mushi). From the time of Solomon on, the Zadokites came to dominate the Temple cult, and the Mushites were restricted increasingly to outlying shrines and non-Temple functions like itinerant teaching. As a result, traces of an ongoing polemic between Zadokites (or Aaronides) and Mushites can be seen in many parts of

the Bible (e.g., Exod. 32; Num. 12; 16; 25; Isa. 56; 66). The message of the book of Malachi, with its combination of ritual concerns and prophetic themes and its diatribe against the presiding Zadokite priesthood, can therefore best be understood as arising among levitical priests who feel that the present degraded state of the rival priesthood and the demoralized condition of the land substantiate their claims to legitimate priestly authority in Temple and community. Astutely, they attack the position of their rivals by pointing out how the latter's conduct directly contradicts the Priestly Blessing of Num. 6:23–27. At the same time, they substantiate their own claim to authority by appealing to the archaic blessing of Levi found in the Blessing of Moses (Deut. 33:8–11).

The description of the impending punishment of evildoers in terms of consuming fire brought by God combined with the participation in the field of battle of those fearing the Lord comports with the fifth-century date suggested above. The priestly controversies triggered by the Zadokite assertion of control over the Temple in the final quarter of the sixth century (cf. Isa. 56–66) have deepened into acrimonious conflict. Disintegrating conditions within the community combined with frustration over the failed attempts at reform by those tracing their pedigree to Levi provide fertile ground for the development of apocalyptic visions of divine retribution. As announced in an earlier oracle (Isa. 6:13–16), God will come with fire to purge the land of all evil and with healing to restore the righteous and inaugurate an era of blessing (4:1–3 [Heb. 3:19–21]).

Religious Significance

In an impassioned attempt to call people foundering amidst cultic decay and moral degeneracy back to their religious roots, Malachi uses the concept of covenant to disarm objections and reaffirm the principles that shaped the foundation of their religious identity. The objections arising among the people have assaulted that foundation. Morality, they claim, is of no consequence, since evildoers prosper and their blasphemy goes unpunished. Malachi responds with a bold restatement of the biblical conviction that the universe is moral to the core because it is governed by a just God who remains faithful to the covenant commitment to uphold the cause of the righteous and to hold the wicked responsible for their deeds. Those who read the current bleak situation as evidence that the "God of justice" is absent are in fatal error, as an imminent denouement will prove. Those who remain steadfast in affirming the validity of the covenant by confessing through their acts that justice and mercy matter and through their tithes that God is to be honored will be vindicated. Indeed, their names are already inscribed in a book kept by the Lord.

Malachi restates classical prophetic Yahwism with evident sensitivity to the complex postexilic political situation. His condemnation of economic and social injustice reaffirms the belief that a nation's health is intertwined with the treatment of its ordinary citizens, especially those most vulnerable to exploitation (3:5). And the portrayal of the God of Jacob as a deity whose domain extends to all nations (1:11) helps a community living as a vassal state of the Persian Empire maintain its sense of identity and worth (3:17). It is possible to detect here the roots of the policy of accommodation that over the course of the Persian period and beyond would seek to balance fidelity to the Mosaic heritage with existence in a complex and ever changing world.

Though the conditions faced by Ezra and Nehemiah suggest that the reform movement advocated in Malachi remained largely ineffectual, the book likely played a part in preparing the way for the two great reformers as they traveled from Persia to Judah on their mission of restoring stability to the land. The admonition added later to Malachi in 4:4 indicates that later readers recognized the words of Malachi to be fully in the spirit of God's commandments to Moses. Indeed, the themes of God's unchanging love and loyalty and the standards of fidelity and justice and dignity in worship that this book places before those who fear the Lord are themes whose meaning have not gone unnoticed among the spiritually sensitive down to our own time. Another theme also left its imprint on later ages, that describing the "messenger" (identified in 4:5 as Elijah) who would prepare the way for the Lord on the Day of Judgment (Mark 1:2; Matt. 11:10, 14; 17:10–13; Luke 1:17; John 1:21, 25; *m. Ed.* 8.7; *Tg. Ps.-J. Exod.* 40:10; *Tg. Ps.-J. Deut.* 30:4). The reemergence of this theme in the Gospels gives special significance to the fact that Malachi provides the link between OT and NT in most Christian Bibles.

COMMENTARY

1:2–5, The Sovereignty of God's Love. Yahweh's first word is directed to the heart of the people: "I have loved you." In the disputational style of the book, the people reply, "How have you loved us?" Yahweh's reply is based upon a comparison between two brothers, who are the eponymous ancestors of Edom and Israel. In contrast to God's love for Jacob, Esau has been the object of divine wrath. The comparison is harsh, but drives home the fact that Israel's election is based on nothing but the sovereign love of God. But why should Edom have been singled out as the example of divine curse? Though the early history of the relationship between Edom and Israel was a mixture of enmity and peaceful coexistence, the Edomites came to represent

the epitome of evil when they used the Babylonian destruction of Judah and Jerusalem in 587 B.C. as an opportunity to plunder the land (Lam. 4:21–22; Ps. 137:7; cf. Isa. 34:5–9; 63:1–6). Reference to Yahweh's undoing of their every effort to rebuild may be related to the pressure that was placed on Edom from the east and that culminated a century or two later in Edom's being driven into southern Judah by the Nabateans. This unit concludes by expressing a universalistic leitmotif in the book, "Yahweh is exalted beyond the border of Israel."

1:6–2:9, Faithful Priests Honor God. The unit begins with a proverbial saying, "Son honors father, and servant his master." In a double exchange with the priests, Yahweh goes on to assert that though he is father and master, the priests give him no honor, but rather despise his name by offering blemished sacrifices. We thus witness a situation in which the standards for Temple ritual set by the Torah (e.g., Deut. 15:21; 17:1; Lev. 22:17–25) are flagrantly broken. The priests no longer take the reality of God seriously, since, according to the Deuteronomic tradition here attested, the divine name is the reality of the deity manifested in the cult (Deut. 12:5, 11; 16:2, 6). The condemnation in v. 10 is harsh: *no* cult would be preferable to the existing one! Mal. 1:11, which has been the object of considerable debate and is often regarded as secondary, is integral to this argument, if it is read as an intentional contrast to the despicable disregard for God's reality by the priests. They are despising the God who is exalted among the nations and who is honored by every pure offering, regardless of where it is offered. This is the second instance of the book's universalistic leitmotif.

The priests are responsible for bringing blessing to the people and for leading them in the way of blessing by faithfully instructing them in the Torah. The priests have failed in both these duties (2:1–3, 8–9). Hence the disputation develops into a pronouncement of judgment: Yahweh's curse falls upon the priests, as their hereditary line is broken off, as they are rendered unfit for service by becoming defiled in a most shameful manner, with the dung of their own offerings being spread over their faces, and as people no longer honor them as teachers. The impact of this judgment is heightened by way of a contrast. Between the two prongs of the judgment Yahweh describes his "covenant with Levi," a covenant described in the Blessing of Moses (Deut. 33:8–11). When upheld, the fruits of this covenant were "life and peace," for in it the priests feared and honored the name of the Lord and through their example and teaching "turned many from iniquity."

2:10–16, Marriage Is a Covenant. The prophet addresses a larger audience as he turns to a problem threatening the very unity of the community. That unity is established upon a principle expressed in the opening prophetic question: "Do we not all have one father? Did not one God create us?" This central confession of Yahwistic faith is now being denied by the people through their marrying foreigners and thereby becoming yoked to foreign gods. The second half of this unit points out how the priests themselves again are instrumental in leading the people to unfaithfulness: though marriage is nothing less than a covenant witnessed by God, the priests are faithless to the wives of their youth. Such action notwithstanding, they are thrown into a quandary when Yahweh refuses to accept their sacrifices. "I hate divorce," Yahweh declares, and with this statement concludes a plea for marital faithfulness that goes beyond the one found in the Torah (cf. Deut. 24:1–4).

2:17–3:5, The Day of Yahweh's Cleansing. The disputation that begins this unit brings to light the perversion of values and the collapse of true faith that undermines the community's health. The people weary God by saying, "All who do evil are good in the eyes of Yahweh, and God takes delight in them," and by asking, "Where is the God of justice?" Poignantly these two sentences describe a shocking cynicism and mocking disbelief that defiantly resists prophetic critique and efforts to stir up feelings of remorse.

Before such an audience any prophet is tempted to despair. But here we find what was beginning to emerge as another response to a bleak situation, a vision of the very one the people have mocked and denied, the God of justice! God's way is prepared by *mal'aki* ("my messenger"). Against the background of Isa. 40:1–11, we can best picture this messenger as one of the heralds of the divine assembly, an individual charged with preparing the people for the day of Yahweh's epiphany. Proper preparation means the restoration of a sanctified cult, for the Temple is to this writer, as it was to the Deuteronomistic writers and to Ezekiel, Haggai, and Zechariah, the place of Yahweh's presence among the people. As expected in light of Mal. 2:4–7, the sanctification of the cult and the restoration of sacrifices pleasing to Yahweh would be carried out by a purified levitical priesthood (compare the messenger's purifying the sons of Levi with the seraph's purifying Isaiah as a part of the latter's commissioning in Isa. 6:6–7). Then Yahweh would appear for the great Day of Judgment and would restore the land by pronouncing judgment against all those who break the commandments. The list of offenders, namely, sorcerers, adulterers, those who swear falsely, those who oppress the day laborer, the widow, and the orphan, and those who cast aside the alien, harks back to the ideals of early Yahwism and to the stringent moral standards of the pre-exilic prophets. Just as the collapse of a moral universe was tied to a collapse of belief, so too the list of offenders is summarized by a phrase focusing on the heart of the broken covenant, those who do not fear

Yahweh. A resanctified priesthood and a land purged of those defiantly breaking the covenant and its Torah—that is the vision of this unit, a vision directly addressing the problems described in the units immediately preceding and following it.

3:6–12, The Fruits of Honest Tithing. In these verses, the writer compares Yahweh's never changing faithfulness with the perpetual apostasy of Israel. But even after this history of ingratitude and sin, the age-old invitation is extended once again: "Return to me, and I will return to you." True to the disputational style, the people try to deflect the thrust of this call to repentance by asking, "How shall we return?" Their response leads into another indictment: the people are robbing Yahweh by reneging on the tithes they are committed to bring into the Temple storehouse. Yahweh's charge involves more than a gesture of piety; the Temple was the organ through which the produce of the land was redistributed, both to Temple personnel and to other groups in the land. Dereliction in fulfilling one's rightful tithe was thus tantamount to upsetting the cosmic harmony that alone could assure prosperity in the land. Once the people renew their commitment to the Temple, the cosmic harmony of which the Temple cult was the earthly center will be reestablished, and the curse visiting the land because of the people's disobedience will give way to blessing (cf. Hag. 1–2). This sentiment leads into another formulation of the universalistic leitmotif of the book: the restoration of the tithe will redound to Yahweh's glory far beyond Judah, for all nations will witness the fruits of true worship (v. 12).

3:13–4:3, God Will Restore the Distinction Between the Righteous and the Wicked. One last time the theme of blasphemy is revisited, as the disputation exposes the arrogant disdain of the wicked: "It is useless to serve God. . . . We shall declare the arrogant blessed. . . . Not only are evildoers successful, but when they test God, they escape punishment." This deplorable situation, similar to the one that evoked judgment in 2:17–3:5, introduces here another contrast: over against the wicked there now appear those who fear Yahweh. Though the leaders and most of the people have obliterated the distinction between righteousness and evil, that distinction is preserved before Yahweh, written in "a book of remembrance" (cf. Ps. 139:16; Dan. 12:1). On the day when Yahweh acts, the righteous will be delivered and reconstituted as Yahweh's "special possession," fulfilling an ancient promise reaching back to Yahweh's covenant with Israel at Sinai (Exod. 19:5–6). Before Yahweh's holiness, all wickedness will be burned like stubble, whereas for those who fear Yahweh the "sun of righteousness" will rise "with healing in its wings." The God-fearers are even envisioned as being drawn into the action on Yahweh's Day of Judgment, as was later the case in the sectarian writings of Qumran.

4:4–6, Closing Exhortation. A later editor has added an appropriate exhortation, much in the style of the book of Deuteronomy, urging reverence for the Torah. Another postscript identifies the messenger of 3:1 with Elijah, the prophet who was taken up into heaven by a fiery chariot (2 Kings 2:11) and who would be instrumental in healing the foundation of Jewish community, the family, as a means of preparing a people for covenantal blessings rather than for the ban of destruction.

Bibliography

Hanson, P. D. *The People Called: The Growth of Community in the Bible.* San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1986. Chap. 8.

Hill, A. E. *Malachi: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary.* Anchor Bible, 25B. New York: Doubleday, 1988.

Kaiser, W. C. *Malachi: God's Unchanging Love.* Grand Rapids, MI: Baker, 1984.

Mason, R. *The Books of Haggai, Zechariah and Malachi.* Cambridge Bible Commentary on the New English Bible. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1977.

Petersen, D. L. *Zechariah 9–14 and Malachi: A Commentary.* Old Testament Library. Louisville, KY: Westminster/John Knox, 1995.

PART FOUR

The Apocrypha

Introduction to the

Apocrypha

JOHN J. COLLINS

The term "apocrypha" means "hidden things," but in ecclesiastical contexts it is used to refer to those books included in the OT of the Latin Vulgate translation, but not in the Hebrew Bible. Traditionally this designation has been applied to fifteen books or portions of books: 1 Esdras, 2 Esdras, Tobit, Judith, The Additions to Esther, Wisdom of Solomon, Sirach, Baruch, Letter of Jeremiah, Song of the Three Youths (including the Prayer of Azariah), Susanna, Bel and the Dragon (this and the previous two known collectively as The Additions to Daniel), Prayer of Manasseh, 1 Maccabees, and 2 Maccabees. Also included among the Apocrypha, especially in the Bibles of the Greek Orthodox and other Orthodox churches, are 3 and 4 Maccabees and Psalm 151, which are found in manuscripts of the Greek Bible (the Septuagint, LXX). The Psalms of Solomon are also found in manuscripts of the Greek Bible, but have not traditionally been included in the category Apocrypha (→ Texts, Versions, Manuscripts, Editions).

Origin of the Category "Apocrypha"

The distinction between canonical and apocryphal writings is found clearly in 2 Esdras 14. There Ezra is inspired to dictate ninety-four books and is instructed: "Make public the twenty-four books that you wrote first and let the worthy and the unworthy read them; but keep the seventy that were written last, in order to give them to the wise among your people" (vv. 45–46). The seventy books constitute a category of esoteric literature, presumably including apocalyptic revelations such as are found in 2 Esdras itself, but the esoteric character is atypical of the traditional Apocrypha.

By the time 2 Esdras 14 was written at the end of the first century A.D., the canon of the Hebrew Bible was closed. The number of books was variously given as twenty-two or twenty-four, but the variation can be explained as a matter of counting (e.g., Jeremiah and Lamentations may be counted as one or as two; the same is true for Judges and Ruth; see Beckwith, pp. 235–73). Traditionally, the closing of the canon was associated with the so-called Council of Jamnia, about A.D. 90. The tendency in some recent studies (Leiman, Beck-

PREVIOUS PAGE:
Maccabees: Scene of a Battle; *a manuscript illumination from the Renaissance period. Bibliothèque Municipale, Valenciennes, France.*

with) has been to push back the closing of the Hebrew canon to the pre-Christian era. This tendency, however, is not supported by the evidence. Although the Torah and the Prophets were already fixed in the second century B.C., the category of the Writings remained fluid. The Dead Sea sect of Qumran seems to have had a larger collection of psalms and to have revered some books such as *Jubilees* and parts of *1 Enoch* that were not later regarded as canonical. There is no evidence for a fixed number of sacred books until the last decade of the first century A.D., when it is attested in 2 Esdras and by the historian Josephus (*Against Apion* 1.37–41).

The rabbis appear to have recognized three classes of books: those that "defile the hands" (the sacred canonical Scriptures), books that were withdrawn or stored away (Heb. *ganaz*) and whose use was subject to restrictions, and "outside books" *(separim chisonim)* whose use was forbidden. The famous rabbi Akiba is said to have specified Sirach as one of the forbidden books, but it is cited in the Talmud "much like any other biblical book" (Leiman, p. 97), so his opinion cannot have prevailed. Yet it did not "defile the hands" either (*t. Yad.* 2:13). Origen remarks that Tobit and Judith were not even among the hidden books (Gk. *apocrypha*) of the Jews (*Letter to Africanus* 13), but there is no clear evidence that there was an official list of books that were stored away.

The Greek-speaking Christian church accepted a larger collection of Jewish writings as authoritative than what was included in the Hebrew canon. The traditional explanation of this fact is that Alexandrian Judaism had a more extensive canon than its Palestinian counterpart and that the Christians adopted the canon of the Diaspora. The notion of an Alexandrian canon, however, has been discredited by the work of Sundberg, who argues that only the Torah and the Prophets were closed before A.D. 70. The Christian church, then, inherited an open canon in the area of the Writings. Whether in fact the list of canonical Writings was still fluid in diaspora Judaism at the time of the great revolts (A.D. 66–135) is disputed (e.g., Beckwith, p. 385), but at least it was fluid in Christianity in the second and third centuries. When Melito of Sardis in the late second century A.D. was asked for "an accurate statement of the ancient books," he had to send to Palestine for an answer. His list is confined to the Hebrew canon, but without Esther. Others were more inclusive. Tertullian was aware that the book of *Enoch* was not in the Jewish canon; yet "since Enoch by the same scripture has also made proclamation concerning the Lord, nothing whatever must be rejected by us which pertains to us" (*On Women's Dress* 1.3). Clement of Alexandria cited Tobit, Sirach, and the Wisdom of Solomon as Scripture and Judith and 2 Maccabees as historical sources. Origen accepted Susanna as part of the text of Daniel, although he knew it was not in the Hebrew, because Susanna "is found in every church of Christ." Tobit could not be used in disputation with Jews, but could within the churches (*Letter to Africanus* 13).

In preparing the Latin Vulgate (A.D. 390–405), Jerome was committed to the *Hebraica veritas* (Lat., "the Hebrew truth") in canon as well as text. Yet he translated the additional books and passages too and called attention to their apocryphal status in his prefaces. The prefaces, however, were not always copied or heeded, and so the Western church came to regard all books of the Vulgate as part of Scripture. The Gelasian Decree at the end of the fifth century recognized Tobit, Judith, the Wisdom of Solomon, Sirach, and 1 and 2 Maccabees; other Apocrypha, such as Susanna, were accepted as parts of other biblical books.

The Protestant Reformers did not condemn the apocryphal books, but denied that they had divine authority or that they could be used to establish doctrine. The Council of Trent in 1546 affirmed the canonicity of the apocryphal books, with the exceptions of 1 and 2 Esdras and the Prayer of Manasseh, which were less firmly supported by tradition. These books were printed in an appendix to the OT in subsequent editions of the Vulgate. The Apocrypha

were still included in the King James Version of 1611, but were omitted with increasing frequency in later printings.

The Roman Catholic church today abides by the decision of the Council of Trent on the matter of canon. Catholics sometimes refer to the disputed books as "deuterocanonical," implying that they were written later than the protocanonical OT. The Greek Orthodox church accepts, in addition, 1 Esdras, Psalm 151, the Prayer of Manasseh, and 3 Maccabees, with 4 Maccabees in an appendix. The Russian Orthodox church accepts 1 and 2 Esdras, Psalm 151, and 3 Maccabees.

The Literary Genres

The works of the Apocrypha may be classified under two broad headings: narrative texts and discursive texts. Within the category of narrative we may distinguish works of historiography (1 and 2 Maccabees), historical fiction (Judith, Tobit, 3 Maccabees), and an apocalypse (2 Esdras). Within the category of discursive writing we may distinguish sapiential writings (Sirach, Wisdom of Solomon), exhortations (4 Maccabees, Letter of Jeremiah), and prayers (Prayer of Manasseh, Prayer of Azariah).

The Narrative Works

Historiography. There has been a growing awareness in recent years that historiography is never simply a record of fact, but always involves an imaginative, constructive element. The distinction between history and fiction is not an absolute one, but the terms are useful for indicating the extremes of a continuum.

The most obviously "historical" book of the Apocrypha is undoubtedly 1 Maccabees. This work was composed toward the end of the second century B.C., most probably in Hebrew. It reports the events from the outbreak of the Maccabean revolt to the end of the reign of Simon (134 B.C.) and draws on some earlier written sources (e.g., the chronicles of John Hyrcanus, 1 Macc. 16:24). It is written in a sober style, which inspires confidence in its reliability. Nonetheless, it should not be taken as an unbiased account. On the contrary, it may be viewed as political propaganda for the Hasmonean house, which is described as "the family of those men through whom deliverance was given to Israel" (5:62). Throughout, the Maccabees are presented as "pious," while their opponents are "lawless."

The ideological aspects of the narrative are especially evident in the speeches and prayers attributed to the protagonists. The deathbed speech of Mattathias serves to place the Maccabees in the tradition of the biblical heroes from Abraham to the companions of Daniel. There are frequent allusions to biblical prototypes throughout the narrative—Mattathias's first act of violence is legitimated by analogy with that of Phinehas in Num. 25:6–11. The author also inserts hymns of praise to Judah (1 Macc. 3:3–9) and Simon (14:4–15). The success of the Maccabees is attributed throughout to the power of their God (e.g., 3:19, 4:9–11). None of this is to deny the value of 1 Maccabees as a historical source, when due account is taken of its tendentious nature. 2 Maccabees is an epitome of a longer history by Jason of Cyrene, who may have been an eyewitness to the events he reports. The purpose of the abbreviator is stated explicitly in 2:25: "we have aimed to please those who wish to read, to make it easy for those who wish to memorize and to profit all readers." History, as conceived in 2 Maccabees, can accommodate heavenly apparitions and interventions (e.g., 2 Macc. 11:8). The religious

character of this history is evident in the central role of the Temple (e.g., in the miraculous story of Heliodorus in chap. 3). It also serves a broader hortatory purpose, as is evident in the martyrdom of the seven brothers in 2 Maccabees 7 and in the account of the death of Antiochus Epiphanes in chap. 9. Yet, although 2 Maccabees lacks the sober tone of 1 Maccabees, it is not necessarily inferior as a historical source. It preserves a number of important documents in chap. 11, and its account of the events leading up to the Maccabean revolt is in some respects more complete and accurate than that of 1 Maccabees. It also presents an interestingly different account of the events, focusing more on Judah and neglecting his father and brothers. The deaths of the martyrs are also recognized as a factor that contributed to the Jewish victory. Consequently the history as reported in 2 Maccabees is less amenable to the propaganda of the Hasmonean house. The popularity of the books of Maccabees rests, surely, on the fact that they are our main sources for a very important episode in Jewish history. The fact that the Hebrew text of 1 Maccabees was not preserved by the rabbis shows both their lack of interest in history and their disenchantment with the militant nationalism of the Maccabees.

Historical Fiction. The work known as 1 Esdras (3 Ezra in the Latin Vulgate) might also be classified as historiography, since it is primarily a variant text of the end of Chronicles, Ezra, and part of Nehemiah. It includes, however, a narrative that is not paralleled in the biblical text and belongs to another genre. This is the story of Darius's banquet in 3:1–4:63, which tells of the contest of wisdom between three courtiers in which the Jew Zerubbabel is victorious. This story belongs to a widespread genre variously identified as "court tale," because of its setting, or "wisdom tale," because of its theme. Biblical examples can be found in the Joseph story in Genesis, in Esther, and in Daniel 1–6. The designation "diaspora novel" is sometimes used for the Jewish tales, but this ignores the non-Jewish examples such as the tale of Ahiqar. These tales fall into the category of historical fiction because they describe a setting in realistic historical detail, but unlike the books of Maccabees they are scarcely constrained at all by the record or recollection of historical events. The objective of the story in 1 Esdras is to establish the superior wisdom of the Jewish youth Zerubbabel.

A number of other tales of the Apocrypha are set in the eastern Diaspora. Tobit is said to have been taken captive to Assyria in the days of Shalmaneser (ca. 722 B.C.). The book's cavalier approach to historical data is shown by the fact that the secession of the Northern tribes from Jerusalem (922 B.C.) is said to have taken place when the same Tobit was a very young man. In part, the portrayal of Tobit as a suffering, righteous man is reminiscent of the prologue of Job. The folkloristic character of the story is evident in the episode concerning the evil demon Asmodeus, who slew each of a woman's seven husbands before they had been with her. It is also significant that Tobit is said to be the uncle of Ahiqar and thereby located in relation to a broader cycle of Near Eastern folklore.

We have noted already that the first six chapters of the book of Daniel are made up of court or wisdom tales. We know from the Dead Sea Scrolls that Daniel 4 was a variant of a traditional tale, of which another older variant is found in the Prayer of Nabonidus. In another Danielic composition, 4QPseudoDan, Daniel delivers a prophecy in a royal court. It appears then that there was a larger corpus of Danielic writings than was included in the Hebrew canon.

Two other stories are attached to the Greek version of Daniel, Bel and the Dragon and Susanna. These stories were probably written in Hebrew or Aramaic, but they have not been found in the Dead Sea Scrolls. The story of Bel and the Dragon is set in the royal court like

the stories in Daniel 1–6. It also shares the motif of the lions' den with Daniel 6. In the protocanonical book, polemic against idolatry was a subordinate theme (e.g., Dan 3:18; 5:23). In the apocryphal stories, it receives the primary emphasis as Daniel unmasks the fraudulence of the gods of the Babylonians. The episode where Habakkuk is transported to Babylon by the hair of his head to feed Daniel in the lions' den is an element of fantasy that contrasts with the relatively sober canonical stories.

The story of Susanna is found after Daniel 12 in the LXX, before Daniel 1 in the translation of Theodotion. (Bel and the Dragon appears after Susanna in the LXX and after Daniel 12 in Theodotion.) The story tells how the intervention of Daniel saved the innocent Susanna from her detractors. The tale is set in Babylon but Daniel is described simply as "a young lad," not as an official in the royal court. The wisdom he exhibits recalls the judicial wisdom of Solomon in 1 Kings 3 rather than the mantic wisdom of Daniel 1–6. Daniel's role in the story is probably due to a play on his name (Heb., "my judge is God") rather than to the tradition of Daniel as a wise courtier. The story itself is a tale of parabolic reversal, in which the youthful Daniel confounds his elders and the suspect woman is proven more righteous than the judges of her people.

The book of Judith has a stronger appearance of history than either Tobit or the Danielic stories, in the sense that it claims to describe a public event of some magnitude—an invasion of Syria and Palestine by Nebuchadnezzar. The author's disregard for historical accuracy, however, is evident not only in the confused statement that Nebuchadnezzar was king of the Assyrians, but also in the assumption that the events in question took place after the return from the Exile. There is no independent record elsewhere of these events, and even the scene of the action in Judah (Bethulia) is an enigma. The very name of the protagonist, Judith (Heb., "Jewess"), suggests that she is a type figure rather than a historical individual. The story recalls the exploits of the woman Jael in Judges 4. The theological lesson, that God can destroy the most powerful enemies of Israel even by the hand of a woman, is celebrated in a hymn in chap. 16 and was probably intended to inspire Jewish resistance to foreign oppressors.

A final example of historical fiction, 3 Maccabees, is set not in the eastern Diaspora, but in Egypt during the reign of Ptolemy IV Philopator (221–204 B.C.). The story involves two episodes. First, there is an attempt by Ptolemy to enter the Temple of Jerusalem, which is prevented. This episode is apparently based on the story of Heliodorus in 2 Maccabees 3. Second, there is an attempt to reduce the Egyptian Jews to the status of slaves and brand them with the emblem of Dionysus. The order is thwarted, first by lapses in the king's memory and then by the miraculous intervention of two angels. A variant account of this episode is found in Josephus's *Against Apion* (2.53–55), where it is set in the reign of Ptolemy Euergetes II (Physcon, 140–116 B.C.). Various attempts have been made to establish the historical reliability of the story in one setting or the other. Philopator was devoted to the cult of Dionysus, and Physcon was notorious for his cruelty and was ill disposed to the Jews. At most, however, we can speak of partial historical reminiscences. The story is not a record of historical events, but a fantasy of supernatural deliverance from extreme danger. The threat to the Jewish people is reminiscent of the book of Esther, and 3 Maccabees has many close parallels with the Greek translation of Esther. Like the stories of the fiery furnace and the lions' den in Daniel, it was designed to support endurance in an alien, sometimes hostile, environment.

Apocalypse: 2 Esdras. 2 Esdras is a composite work. Chaps. 1 and 2 (together also called 5 Ezra) are made up of a collection of oracles with an apocalyptic vision in 2:42–48. Chaps. 15 and 16 (called 6 Ezra) are also a collection of oracles with an eschatological focus. Both of

these passages are of Christian origin. The bulk of 2 Esdras however (chaps. 3–14) is taken up with a Jewish apocalypse, commonly called 4 Ezra, which dates from about A.D. 100.

2 Esdras 3–14 is an apocalypse in the sense that it is a revelation of eschatological mysteries mediated by an angel. It is a complex work made up of three dialogues (chaps. 3:1–9:25), three visions (9:26–13:58), and an epilogue. The constituent parts are held together by a narrative thread that tells of Ezra's transformation from a skeptical critic of divine justice to a receptive vehicle for divine revelation. The dialogues are reminiscent of the book of Job because of Ezra's probing questions. Interestingly, the author emphasizes that Ezra has neither ascended to heaven nor descended to hell (4:8) and so does not lay claim to the kind of apocalyptic knowledge associated with Enoch. What the dialogues establish, however, is that the problem of divine justice is insoluble without such revelation. In the transitional chapter (9:26–10:59) Ezra finds himself cast in the role of comforter; he tells the woman in his vision to "let yourself be persuaded . . . and consoled" (10:20). Thereafter he accepts his own advice, as the angel describes the fulfillment that is to come. Commentators have been troubled by the change in Ezra's attitude in the second half of the book, and some have suggested multiple authorship or that Ezra and the angel are mouthpieces for different parties. These suggestions are unnecessary if we take seriously the narrative character of the book, which invites readers to identify with Ezra in his transition from doubt to faith.

The Discursive Writings

Sapiential Works. Pride of place among the discursive writings must go to the two great wisdom books, Sirach (or the Wisdom of Jesus the Son of Sirach) and the Wisdom of Solomon (→ Wisdom). Sirach is the only book of the Apocrypha that may have been considered canonical by some rabbis or whose status was seriously in dispute (see Leiman, pp. 92–102). Its popularity in Christianity is reflected in its Latin name, *Liber Ecclesiasticus,* or "Church Book." The Wisdom of Solomon was the book of the Apocrypha most widely used in early Christianity, both Eastern and Western, although it was listed among the OT Scriptures, not the OT, in the Muratorian canon. It was widely accepted as Scripture by the end of the second century, but Origen says it was still disputed in the third.

Although both of these books stand in the wisdom tradition and have important affinities with each other, they are still quite different in character. Sirach, sometimes called Ecclesiasticus, is essentially a collection of proverbs and maxims after the manner of the book of Proverbs. Like Proverbs 8, it includes a poem placed on the lips of personified wisdom. Sirach makes a significant departure from Proverbs, however, when it identifies wisdom with the book of the Torah of Moses (Sir. 24:23). This identification does not restrict the range of Sirach's wisdom, but serves as a norm for the discernment of true wisdom. The sage, in Sirach's view, is one who studies the law of the Most High and is concerned with prophecies, but who also travels through foreign lands to seek the good and evil among humankind (Sir. 39). The biblical history provides a parade of exemplars of wisdom, which is reviewed in the "Praise of the Fathers" (chaps. 44–49) and marks the first attempt to integrate sacred history into a wisdom book.

Sirach's book is exceptional among ancient Jewish writings in that we know who wrote it and when and who translated it and when. This very specificity may well have militated against its acceptance in the canon, when the book of Daniel, which was composed at a slightly later time, could pass as a work from the age of prophecy. The fact that we know the provenance of Sirach, however, is valuable for the historian and makes Sirach useful, in a way that earlier wisdom books are not, as a witness to the society of a particular period:

Jerusalem shortly before the Hellenistic reform in the early second century B.C. Sirach's posture has rightly been dubbed conservative; for him the Torah remained the norm. Yet he was far from closed-minded and his book reflects familiarity with Greek literature as well as with the biblical tradition. The encomium of the high priest Simon (chap. 50) enables us to place Sirach in the political context of the time.

The Wisdom of Solomon, in contrast, has scarcely any proverbial material and is presented as an exhortation to the rulers of the earth to "love righteousness." It is a product of the Greek-speaking Diaspora, most probably of Alexandria, and reflects a thought-world similar to that of the philosopher Philo. There is continuity with Sirach in the figure of personified wisdom (here equated with the Gk. *logos*, or "word"; 9:1–2) and also in the incorporation of biblical history in chaps. 10–19. As in Sirach, this history is a store of examples, a point that the Wisdom of Solomon underlines by omitting the names of the biblical personalities.

The most striking aspect of the Wisdom of Solomon is undoubtedly its use of Greek philosophy and in particular its acceptance of the Platonic idea of the immortality of the soul. On this point it contrasts sharply with Sirach, who held that "whether life is for ten or a hundred or a thousand years there is no inquiry about it in Hades" (41:4). Wisdom's account of the judgment after death was also indebted to Jewish apocalyptic traditions such as we find in *1 Enoch*, but the dominant tone of the work is Hellenistic. The sentiment that "a perishable body weighs down the soul" (9:15) was alien to Hebraic Judaism, but had far-reaching influence on Christianity. Wisdom anticipates another doctrine of Catholic Christianity in chap. 13, where it appears to endorse the idea of revelation through nature, as Paul also does in Romans 1.

Another hymn in praise of wisdom is found in chap. 3 of the book of Baruch. This book is made up of segments of diverse origin, at least some of which were composed in Hebrew. They were appended to the book of Jeremiah in many manuscripts of the Greek Bible and are sometimes cited as part of that book. The wisdom poem is found in 3:9–4:4 and is reminiscent of that in Job 28 insofar as it emphasizes that humanity does not know the way to wisdom. Unlike Job, but like Sirach, Baruch concludes by identifying wisdom with "the book of the commandments of God" (4:1). Baruch, however, construes this identification in a way that is more nationalistic than what we find in any earlier Jewish wisdom book: "Happy are we, O Israel, for we know what is pleasing to God" (4:4).

Exhortations. We have noted already that the Wisdom of Solomon is presented as an exhortation to the kings of the earth, but the hortatory purpose of the book is pursued indirectly through reflections on the nature of wisdom and of the universe. A more direct form of exhortation is found in 4 Maccabees, which like Wisdom is a product of the Hellenistic Diaspora (possibly Antioch). The subject addressed is whether reason is sovereign over emotions. "Reason," however, is virtually equated with obedience to the law—the Jewish law in all its particularity, including dietary restrictions. Fidelity to the law is the point at issue in the stories of the Maccabean martyrs that are adduced as illustrations. The stories show that it is possible to be faithful to the full law, even in the face of torture. The reasonableness of such conduct is suggested by the hope for "a life of eternal blessedness" (17:18) and more particularly by the inherent nobility of virtue.

4 Maccabees is a rhetorical rather than philosophical work. It simply asserts that the Jewish law is in accord with reason. Granted this assumption, it is able to portray the conduct of the martyrs in terms that Greeks could respect. It is eclectic in its philosophy, with smatterings of Stoicism and Platonism. Its peculiarity lies in its combination of an uncompromis-

ing, particularistic adherence to the law and a thoroughly hellenized consciousness, which placed a high value on philosophy even if it did not pursue it rigorously.

A very different homiletical work is found in the Letter of Jeremiah, which was most probably composed in Hebrew no later than the second century B.C. Sometimes it stands as an independent work in the manuscripts and sometimes it is attached to the book of Baruch. It is a straightforward polemic against idolatry, divided into segments by such pronouncements as "From this you will know that they are not gods; so do not fear them" (v. 23). It is devoid of any attempt to find common ground with the gentile world in the manner of Hellenistic compositions such as 4 Maccabees.

Prayers. The recitation of prayers is a characteristic feature of Jewish writings of the Hellenistic period. Sometimes prayers were added in the course of transmission of biblical books. The Hebrew book of Esther is remarkable for its lack not only of prayers, but even of reference to the deity. The Greek additions to Esther compensate for these deficiencies by placing prayers on the lips of Mordecai and Esther. They also mention that the Jews cried to God at the beginning of their problems (11:10, which comes before chap. 1 in the Gk.), and at the end Mordecai declares that "these things have come from God." The prayers of Mordecai and Esther are prayers for deliverance specific to their contexts. Esther uses the opportunity to protest that she had not eaten at Haman's table—an issue on which the Hebrew text was silent.

The Greek translation of Daniel is also embellished in chap. 3 by the addition of the prayers of Azariah and the three youths. These are traditional prayers, not specially composed for this context. The prayer of the three youths is appropriate to its context in the fiery furnace. It is a hymn reminiscent of Psalm 136 that gives thanks to the Lord for the works of creation. The Prayer of Azariah, in contrast, is a communal confession of sin, which is singularly inappropriate in the context. This type of prayer is very common in postexilic Judaism. Biblical examples can be found in Nehemiah 9 and Daniel 9 and a later example in the Qumran text "Words of the Heavenly Luminaries" (4QBibHam). Typically they contain a confession of sin, acknowledgment of God's justice, reference to the dejected state of Israel, and prayer for deliverance. They reflect an understanding of history that is characteristic of the Deuteronomistic writings. Since these prayers were widespread over a period of several centuries, they were probably variations on a pattern of liturgical prayer. (Another prayer of the same type is found in Bar. 1:15–3:8, which has verbal parallels to the prayer in Daniel 9.)

The Prayer of Manasseh is an individual confession of sin that exhibits the same logic and pattern as the communal prayers. It begins by establishing the justice of God and follows with a confession of sin and plea for mercy. The inspiration for the prayer is evidently derived from 2 Chronicles 33, which tells of the repentance of Manasseh and refers to his prayer.

The book of Baruch concludes with another lengthy prayer in 4:5–5:9 that calls on Israel to take courage because God's punishment is not final. Once again, the predicament of Israel is understood as a punishment for sin, in accordance with Deuteronomistic theology. In this case, however, the emphasis is on the imminent restoration, and the language recalls Isaiah 40–55.

The book of Psalms in the LXX also includes an additional psalm, Psalm 151. A longer variant of this psalm has been found in Hebrew at Qumran. There is reason to think that the Greek Psalm 151 was a condensation of this Hebrew psalm and of another that followed it in the Qumran *Psalms Scroll*. The psalm is ascribed to David himself. In the Greek version it recalls the election of David and his triumph over Goliath. The Qumran *Psalms Scroll* also

contains other psalms that were not preserved in Greek, but two of which are extant in Syriac. Other previously unknown Hebrew psalms were also found among the Dead Sea Scrolls (→ Scrolls, The Dead Sea).

This review has been confined to those prayers and psalms that are printed separately in modern editions of the Apocrypha. Prayers are scattered throughout the apocryphal books. Notable examples include the rousing prayer for divine intervention in Sirach 36, which is widely thought to be inserted out of context, and Solomon's prayer for wisdom in Wisdom of Solomon 9. The book of Tobit contains a confession of sin in chap. 3, benedictions by Tobias and Raguel in chap. 8, and a prayer of rejoicing by Tobit in chap. 13 that recalls the Song of Hannah in 1 Samuel 2. Judith has a song of victory in Judith 16, and there are laments for the desolation of Jerusalem in 1 Macc. 2:6–12; 3:45, 49–53.

Other Extracanonical Literature

The Apocrypha can scarcely be said to be a representative collection of Jewish literature between the Bible and the Mishnah. Some major categories are underrepresented. The apocalyptic literature is represented only by 2 Esdras, which is one of the finer works of the genre, but somewhat atypical nonetheless. The Apocrypha includes no testament as an independent work, although testaments are included in 1 Maccabees (2:49–70, testament of Mattathias) and Tobit (4:3–21, mainly moral instruction, and 14:3–11, mainly predictive). Sibylline oracles, which flourished in Hellenistic Judaism from the second century B.C., are not represented. In general, the extensive literature dealing with eschatological prophecy was only minimally taken up. Biblical paraphrases, such as we find in *Jubilees* and Pseudo-Philo, are also omitted. The Dead Sea Scrolls have brought to light other genres of literature (e.g., Rules, Commentaries [Heb. *pesharim*]) that are not hinted at in this collection. The relative lack of eschatological material suggests that Christian interests were not paramount in the selection of this material, and that it, rather, preserves material that was authoritative, even if not canonical, in Hellenistic Judaism.

Some books that were not finally included in the Apocrypha and yet were sometimes regarded as authoritative in the early church are called Pseudepigrapha (→ Pseudepigrapha). *1 Enoch* is cited in the Letter of Jude and is probably alluded to in 1 Pet. 3:19–20 and 2 Pet. 2:4. It is cited as Scripture in the *Letter of Barnabas,* and Tertullian argued that it should be accepted by Christians since it "made proclamation concerning the Lord" (*On Women's Dress* 1.3). *The Assumption of Moses* is also cited in Jude. Clement of Alexandria displayed familiarity with several Pseudepigrapha. Many of the Pseudepigrapha *(Jubilees, 1 Enoch, Ascension of Isaiah)* were preserved by the Ethiopian church, intermingled in the biblical manuscripts, and *Jubilees* at least was accepted as canonical (see Beckwith, pp. 478–505).

Significance

The significance of this extracanonical literature is manifold. It is of great historical importance for understanding the variety within Jewish religion in the formative period of Christianity and of rabbinic Judaism. Stories and motifs from the Apocrypha have become embedded in Western culture—Handel wrote oratorios on Susanna and Judas Maccabeus. Italian and German operas were composed on the theme of Judith. Susanna, Tobit, and Judith were popular subjects for artists. A verse from 2 Esdras (6:42, which says that the waters

occupy one-seventh part of the earth) is said to have inspired Columbus on his voyage of discovery (see Metzger, pp. xviii–xx).

The theological importance of the Apocrypha is considerable too. The very existence of this body of literature is a reminder that the canon, in any of its forms, is a selection from a wider corpus of traditional literature and that there was considerable fluidity on its boundaries. The recent revival of interest in the Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha can only enrich our appreciation of the biblical heritage by helping us recover a fuller spectrum of the tradition.

Bibliography

Beckwith, R. *The Old Testament Canon of the New Testament Church.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1985.

Charlesworth, J. H., ed. *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha.* 2 vols. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1983, 1985.

Collins, J. J. *Jewish Wisdom in the Hellenistic Age.* Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1997.

———. *The Apocalyptic Imagination.* 2d ed. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1998.

———. *Between Athens and Jerusalem: Jewish Identity in the Hellenistic Diaspora.* 2d ed. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1999.

Leiman, S. Z. *The Canonization of Hebrew Scripture.* Hamden, CT: Archon, 1976.

Metzger, B., ed. *The Oxford Annotated Apocrypha.* Expanded ed. New York: Oxford University Press, 1977.

Nickelsburg, G. W. *Jewish Literature Between the Bible and the Mishnah.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1981.

Sanders, J. A. *The Psalms Scroll of Qumran Cave 11 (11QPs^a).* Discoveries in the Judean Desert, 4. Oxford: Clarendon, 1965.

Sparks, H. F. D., ed. *The Apocryphal Old Testament.* Oxford: Clarendon, 1984.

Stone, M. E., ed. *Jewish Writings of the Second Temple Period.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1984.

Wills, L. M. *The Jewish Novel in the Ancient World.* Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1995.

1 Esdras

RALPH W. KLEIN

INTRODUCTION

The first book of Esdras contains an alternate form of the text of 2 Chronicles 35–36, Ezra 1–10, Neh. 7:73–8:13, and an account of a contest in the court of Darius (1 Esd. 3:1–5:6) not attested elsewhere in the Bible.

The book is called Esdras *a* in the Septuagint (LXX), where it is distinguished from Esdras *b*, a literal Greek translation of the OT books of Ezra and Nehemiah. 1 Esdras is called 3 Ezra in the Latin Vulgate (Vg.), where it, the Prayer of Manasseh, and 2 Esdras (known there as 4, 5, and 6 Ezra) are printed as a supplement to the NT.

The Greek translation now contained in 1 Esdras, though relatively free, is based on an older and often shorter form of the Hebrew and Aramaic biblical text. Esdras *b* in the LXX is based on a Semitic text that closely resembles the later Masoretic Text (MT).

The relationship between 1 Esdras and other portions of the canon is as follows:

1:1–22 = 2 Chron. 35:1–19
1:23–24 = (no parallel)
1:25–58 = 2 Chron. 35:20–36:21
2:1–5a = 2 Chron. 36:22–23 / Ezra 1:1–3a
2:5b–15 = Ezra 1:3b–11
2:16–30 = Ezra 4:7–24
3:1–5:6 = (no parallel)
5:7–73 = Ezra 2:1–4:5
6:1–9:36 = Ezra 5:1–10:44
9:37–55 = Neh. 7:73–8:13a

Except for the last section above, 1 Esdras omits everything from the book of Nehemiah. Neh. 7:73–8:13a is treated, probably correctly, as a part of the story of Ezra, without mention of Nehemiah. The major addition in 1 Esd. 3:1–5:6 recounts the wisdom of Zerubbabel and explains why Darius, the Persian king, authorized a return of the Jews from Babylon to Jerusalem and their rebuilding of the Temple, and why he supported financially and legally the postexilic religious establishment in Jerusalem. It also exalts Zerubbabel and, implicitly, the Davidic line.

Ezra 4:7–24 has been moved to a position before 1 Esd. 3:1–5:6 (at 1 Esd. 2:16–30). According to this passage, criticisms from the enemies of the Jews during the days of Artaxerxes led to the cessation of work on the Temple until the time of Darius, even though Artaxerxes ruled after Darius. 1 Esdras partially unscrambled this confusion by putting the efforts to stop the Temple in 2:16–30 before Darius's permission for Zerubbabel to rebuild the Temple in 3:1–5:6.

Fragment or Complete Document?

Some scholars think that 1 Esdras preserves a fragmentary copy of an earlier arrangement of the Chronicler's history. In this view all or most of 1 Chronicles 1 to 2 Chronicles 34 has been lost from the beginning of 1 Esdras and at least Neh. 8:13b–18 from the end. Recent studies, however, question whether there ever was a Chronicler's history consisting of a unified account of 1 and 2 Chronicles and Ezra (or Ezra and Nehemiah) (→ Chronicler). Others, therefore, treat 1 Esdras as a more or less complete document that has been drawn from the materials now in 1 and 2 Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah. They defend the integrity of the present book and seek to understand what its author or editor might have wanted to say by the present arrangement of materials. T. C. Eskenazi, for example, thinks that the author of 1 Esdras wanted to conform the books of Ezra and Nehemiah to the ideology of the books of Chronicles by giving special emphasis to the centrality of David, the inclusive characteristics of Israel, the doctrine of retribution and the need to obey the prophets, and the Temple and its practices. A. E. Gardner attempts to relate 1 Esdras as a complete book to the events and people of the Maccabean crisis. The insertion of the story of the three bodyguards was to show that all the riches and power in the world are of no interest compared to rebuilding the Temple. The Temple's central importance is also emphasized by setting the beginning and ending of the book in the Temple, or at least in its vicinity.

Whether the book is a fragment or complete, whether its order represents an earlier form of the Chronicler's history or a compilation drawn from the canonical books of 2 Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah, this much is certain: the addition in 1:23–24 helps to resolve the theological anomaly of Josiah's premature death, and the addition in 3:1–5:6 places great emphasis on the Davidic Zerubbabel and explains why the Persian Darius was moved to authorize the rebuilding of the Temple.

COMMENTARY

(For passages with parallels elsewhere in the canon, readers are referred to the commentaries on the appropriate sections of 2 Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah.)

1:1–2:30
Extracts from 2 Chronicles and Ezra

1:1–58
The Last Kings of Judah

1:1–22 (2 Chron. 35:1–19), Josiah's Passover. It is unlikely that 1 Esdras originally began at this point, since Josiah is not introduced in v. 1 as the king and no year is provided in the date formula of this verse (see 2 Chron. 34:8, where the date is given as Josiah's eighteenth year). The Levites slaughtered the Passover sacrifice as they had for the Passover of Hezekiah (2 Chron. 30:17), and the Passover lamb was both roasted and boiled (cf. Exod. 12:8–9; Deut. 16:7). No Passover had been held like this one since the time of Samuel the prophet (1:20; in 2 Kings 23:22 the last such Passover was held when the judges ruled Israel). The uniqueness of this Passover, in the opinion of the Chronicler, apparently consisted in the prominent role of the Levites.

1:23–24, The Reason for the Fall of Israel. These verses, without canonical parallel, are a supplement based on 1 Kings 13:2, 32 (a prophecy of the rise of Josiah) or 2 Kings 23:24–27. They explain that the evil of the people at the time of Josiah was so great that the judgmental words of the Lord eventually had to rise up against Israel. Without these verses some might conclude that the great piety of Josiah would have prevented the final destruction of Jerusalem that occurred a few years after his death. C. C. Torrey believes that these two verses were part of the original text of Chronicles.

1:25–33 (2 Chron. 35:20–27), The Death of Josiah. Josiah was killed in a battle with Pharaoh Neco of Egypt, near Megiddo, in 609 B.C. The Egyptian leader was on his way to the Euphrates to support the Assyrians, who had suffered a series of defeats at the hands of the Neo-Babylonian Empire. The death of Josiah at the age of forty is theologically unexplained in 2 Kings and in fact it seems to contradict the doctrine of retribution, which held that a person's fate corresponded to his or her deeds (→ Retribution). According to 2 Chron. 35:21, Neco sent messengers to Josiah warning him not to disobey the word of the Lord by opposing his march toward the Euphrates. In v. 28, 1 Esdras asserts that this word of the Lord that favored Neco was actually delivered by Jeremiah the prophet. By ignoring such a prophetic word in his attack on Neco, Josiah brought about his premature death. 1 Esdras reports that these events were recorded in the histories of the kings of Judea (cf. 2 Kings 23:28), while 2 Chron. 35:25 adds that the laments for Josiah were written in "the laments," a reference either to the biblical book of Lamentations or to some other similar collection.

1:34–58 (2 Chron. 36:1–21), The Successors of Josiah and the Destruction of Jerusalem. The names of the kings are confused in 1 Esdras: instead of the expected Jehoahaz in v. 34, the Greek text reads Jeconiah (= Jehoiachin), and instead of Jehoiachin in v. 43, the Greek text reads Jehoiakim (changed in the NRSV to Jehoiachin). According to 2 Chron. 36:4 (1 Esd. 1:37 is defective), the king of Egypt made Eliakim king and then changed his name to Jehoiakim. Neco exiled Jehoahaz to Egypt according to 2 Chron. 36:4, but 1 Esdras reports in 1:38 that Jehoiakim brought his brother Zarius (?) *from* Egypt. 1 Esdras 1:40 follows 2 Chron. 36:6 in reporting that Jehoiakim was taken into Babylonian exile (cf. 2 Kings 24:1, 5). 1 Esdras speaks of the king's uncleanness and impiety (1:42), whereas 2 Chron. 36:8 mentions his abominations. Both 2 Chronicles (36:12) and 1 Esdras (1:47) criticize King Zedekiah for refusing to submit to the word of the Lord delivered through Jeremiah. 1 Esdras adds that Zedekiah violated an oath sworn to Nebuchadnezzar and transgressed the laws of the Lord (1:48).

When the Exile finally came, it lasted for seventy years, to fulfill the word of Jeremiah (1:58; cf. Jer. 25:11; 29:10). During this time the land enjoyed its Sabbath rest in fulfillment of Lev. 26:34–35. Because the people had not made provision for proper Sabbath observance in the pre-exilic period, rest for the land was provided by the Exile. Through this Sabbath rest the word of the prophet Jeremiah has been linked to and interpreted by a passage from the Torah.

2:1–30
The Early Days of the Return

2:1–5a (2 Chron. 36:22–23; Ezra 1:1–3a), The Decree of Cyrus. The last verses of 2 Chronicles are repeated in the opening verses of Ezra. 1 Esdras does not repeat the doublet as it moves from 2 Chronicles to Ezra, and this fact has led a number of scholars to suppose that the books of 1 and 2 Chronicles and (at least) Ezra once formed a part of the supposed Chronicler's history of Israel (see the Introduction above). Cyrus, under the influence of the Lord of Israel, decreed that the Judean exiles could go home and restore the Temple to fulfill the word of Jeremiah (e.g., Jer. 51:1, 6; cf. Isa. 41:2, 25; 44:28; 45:1).

2:5b–15 (Ezra 1:3b–11), The Return Under Sheshbazzar. After Cyrus had given permission for the

return to the land of Israel and the rebuilding of the Temple, he urged that the returnees be supported with generous offerings by their neighbors. He also restored the Temple vessels, which had been captured by Nebuchadnezzar (2 Kings 24:13; 25:13–16; 2 Chron. 36:10, 18; Jer. 52:17–19), to Sheshbazzar, the governor. This restoration helped to establish continuity between the First and Second Temples, just as the new Temple was set on its old site (Ezra 6:3; 1 Esd. 6:24) and the altar on its original foundations (Ezra 3:3; 1 Esd. 5:50).

2:16–30 (Ezra 4:7–24), Letters to and from Artaxerxes. There is chronological confusion in both 1 Esdras and Ezra. According to Ezra 4:4–5 (1 Esd. 5:72–73), the people of the land harassed the Jews and prevented the completion of the Temple during the time of Cyrus (559–530 B.C.) and up to the second year of Darius (522–486 B.C.). The next verses in Ezra (4:6–23) justify the Jews' rejection of help from their neighbors since subsequent history—fifty years later in the time of Artaxerxes I (465–424 B.C.)—proved that the people living in Samaria had no positive interest in the restoration of Jerusalem. Ezra 4:24 returns chronologically to 4:5 and notes that the cessation of work on the Temple continued until 520 B.C., in the time of Darius.

1 Esdras lacks an equivalent for most of the obscure Ezra 4:6, and it has moved the whole unit under discussion to a different place than it occupies in the book of Ezra. Because of the ringing endorsement of the Temple by Darius in 1 Esd. 3:1–5:6, it was necessary to put the account of the Persians' stopping the Temple building earlier. This shift in location also separates this passage from its continuation in 1 Esd. 6:1–7:9 (Ezra 5:1–6:18). Ezra 4:7–6:18 is written in Aramaic and often referred to as the Aramaic Chronicle. Various Samaritan leaders in the time of Artaxerxes I complained in writing to the Persian king about the rebellious character of Jerusalem. They charged that the Jews were repairing the walls of the city and laying the foundations for the Temple (2:18; "the building of the Temple is now going on," 2:20; cf. the more general "repairing the foundations" in Ezra 4:12). These activities, according to the accusers, would lead to loss of taxes for the empire and open revolt. They implored the king to check the official archives that would show that the Jews had always been rebellious and that this troubling characteristic, in fact, had been the reason for the destruction of Jerusalem by the Babylonians. They alleged that the present rebellion would deprive the king of his Syro-Palestinian holdings. The king's records confirmed the charges that Jerusalem had long been the home of rebels and cruel kings (2:26–27; Ezra 4:18–20). He ordered all work on the city to cease, and the Samaritan officials hurried to Jerusalem with a military force and stopped the building. Hence the building of the Temple ceased until the second year of Darius, or 520 B.C. According to both 1 Esdras and Ezra, the reason for the delay in Temple building was the interference by local obstructionists, not the indifference of the restoration community, as in Haggai and Zechariah.

3:1–5:6
The Contest of the Bodyguards

3:1–17a, What One Thing Is Strongest? King Darius prepared a great banquet for all the officials of the Persian Empire, which stretched from India to Ethiopia (cf. Esther 1:1; 8:9). Although there is a hint that the king had insomnia (3:3), he is asleep during the initial contest among the bodyguards. Strangely, the bored bodyguards determined for themselves what prizes the king would award in the contest (3:5–7). In his retelling of the account, first-century Jewish historian Josephus has the king himself propose the contest and promise the rewards (*Antiquities of the Jews* 11.3.2 §35). The bodyguards decided to put their proposals under the king's pillow and to abide by the decision he and the three nobles of Persia would make. The first two bodyguards proposed wine and the king, respectively, as the two strongest things in all the world. The third suggested that women are the strongest, but then changed his answer to truth, since it is the victor over all things. When the king woke up and learned about the contest, he summoned all his officials and ordered the three bodyguards to explain the reasons for their opinions.

3:17b–24, The Speech of the First Bodyguard. Each speech has a common introductory formula ("Gentlemen," followed by a rhetorical question), and each ends in a similar way ("he stopped speaking"). Wine demonstrates its strength by leading astray the mind of all classes in society. Wine makes people forget sorrows or poverty, but it also makes people forget to be friendly. People drunk with wine fight, and when they sober up, they cannot remember what they have done. After exploring the ambiguities of wine, the wise bodyguard concludes that it must be the strongest thing, since it forces people to do the things he has just described.

4:1–12, The Speech of the Second Bodyguard. References to men as the strongest (v. 2; cf. 4:14) have led to the proposal that a speech about the strength of men has been lost. The second bodyguard concentrates primarily on the ambivalent qualities of the king. Kings get people to fight for them blindly and to turn over all their booty to the royal treasury. Soldiers hardly ever wonder whether the goal of war justifies the supreme sacrifice. Farmers too are controlled by the king, who forces them to pay taxes on their produce. The word "obey" is prominent in this speech (vv. 3, 5, 10, 11, 12). People fight for or farm for the king even though he is only a man (v. 6). In addition, the

king eats, drinks, and sleeps, and so he is vulnerable. Yet no one attacks him or goes off to take care of his own business (v. 11). Seven times in vv. 7–9, the speaker notes that whatever the king commands, his subjects do.

4:13–41, The Speech of the Third Bodyguard. The fact that Zerubbabel suddenly appears in v. 13 without advance notice probably means that the contest among the bodyguards once served another function before it was included in 1 Esdras. Zerubbabel first reviews the previous proposals about the king, men, and wine before turning to consider women. Since women are the originators of kings and other rulers, by giving birth to them, they are clearly superior to these political figures. Women also raise the men who plant vineyards, which in turn produce wine. Women make men's clothes and affect their reputation. Men who have accumulated all sorts of treasures drop them in open-mouthed amazement when they gaze at a beautiful woman. Men leave their parents and their native lands to live out their lives with their wives. Hence, the bodyguard argues, "women rule over you." Though soldiers are forced by the king's power to fight, men voluntarily undertake all sorts of military or dangerous adventures for the women they love. They face wild animals or even take up lives of crime so that they can lay their trophies at the feet of a woman. Many lose their minds because of women, become slaves because of them, and perish or sin because of them.

The third bodyguard, Zerubbabel, even dares to contrast the strength of women with that of King Darius. Although foreign lands fear him, his concubine Apame playfully takes his crown and puts it on her head and slaps the king with her left hand. The king looks at her in open-mouthed amazement like the rich men noted above. He laughs when she laughs; when she becomes angry, he flatters her. This defense of the strength of women is an incisive critique of the second bodyguard's proposal about the strength of kings.

Just when it seems as if the case is closed (v. 33), the third bodyguard begins to assert the superiority of truth as the strongest of all phenomena (cf. Pss. 117:2; 146:6). "Truth" may connote rightness, steadfastness, and uprightness in addition to its usual meanings. Truth is a quality of God. Earth and heaven call upon and bless truth; all the previous candidates for the strongest thing—wine, the king, women, the sons of men and their works—are deemed unrighteous or deceptive. Because of their unrighteousness people die, but truth is strong and prevails forever and ever. Truth controls the strength, kingship, power, and majesty of all the ages (v. 40; cf. 1 Chron. 29:11–13 and the doxological conclusion to the Lord's Prayer). Truth is an impartial judge. That is why Zerubbabel could tell the truth about the king's subordination to his concubine in vv. 29–32. Finally, the bodyguard prays, "Blessed be the God of truth!" (This prayer hints that God himself may even be stronger than truth; cf. also vv. 34–35a.) The speech of the third bodyguard leads the people to acclaim his answer. The Latin rendering of their cheer—*Magna est veritas et praevalet* ("Great is truth and it will prevail")—has become a well-known proverb.

4:42–57, Zerubbabel's Prize. Darius recognized Zerubbabel as the wisest of his bodyguards and honored him as a Kinsman (v. 42; cf. 3:7). Thanks to the story of the three bodyguards, Zerubbabel becomes in 1 Esdras the most important person of the restoration period. He is wise and pious and loves the people. God gave him the wisdom that won the contest. As in Daniel, a Jew has pitted his wisdom against that of gentile rivals and has won both the contest and the king's favor. His personal success and his favor with Darius did not make him forget his duty. Zerubbabel reminded the king of vows that he and Cyrus had made to build Jerusalem, to return the ritual vessels there, and to rebuild the Temple. Though 1:55 (2 Chron. 36:19) reports that the kings of the Chaldeans destroyed the Temple, 4:45 blames that action on the Edomites (cf. Ezek. 36:5; Obad. 11–14). In his favorable reply (4:47–57) Darius combined elements of the decree of Cyrus (Ezra 1:2–4; 6:3–5), his own affirmation of this decree (Ezra 6:6–12), and Artaxerxes' authorization of Nehemiah (Neh. 2:5, 8). He granted Zerubbabel and the other returnees safe conduct, provided cedar wood from Lebanon to rebuild the Temple, and exempted the Jews from government searches of their houses. Darius also excused the Jews from taxes and expelled the Idumeans (Edomites) from their territory. He provided for annual grants for rebuilding the Temple and for maintaining the regular worship, perhaps hoping that sacrifices and prayers would be made for him and his sons (cf. 6:31; Ezra 6:10). Like his predecessor Cyrus (Ezra 6:5), he commanded that the Temple vessels be restored. In 1 Esdras and Ezra the Temple vessels are returned also by Sheshbazzar (1 Esd. 2:14–15; Ezra 1:11; cf. 1 Esd. 6:18–19; Ezra 5:14–15), in addition to Zerubbabel. The commandment to offer seventeen daily sacrifices (v. 52) is unattested elsewhere in the OT.

4:58–63, The Jewish Response. Zerubbabel (called only the "young man" in v. 58) offered appropriate thanksgiving to the King of Heaven, who had granted him wisdom. When he shared the good news with other Jews in Babylon, they rejoiced for seven days, a response more enthusiastic than seems to have been the case historically.

5:1–6, The Leaders of the Return. Darius provided the caravan with a cavalry escort of one thousand and sent them off with martial music. The names in v. 5 show some confusion. Jeshua is the high priest of the early postexilic period (see Ezra 3:2). The other figure

is the governor Zerubbabel. Read: "Zerubbabel, son of Shealtiel, son of Jehoiachin, of the house of David . . ." The book of Ezra makes no mention of Zerubbabel's Davidic descent, perhaps because the author was receptive to Persian domination and attached no hopes for deliverance to the house of David.

5:7–9:55
Extracts from Ezra and Nehemiah

5:7–7:15
The Rebuilding of the Temple

5:7–46 (Ezra 2:1–70; cf. Neh. 7:6–73a), The List of Those Who Returned. This list may originally have been a composite summary of a number of returns to Palestine during the reigns of Cyrus and his successor, Cambyses, though in 1 Esdras it is used to describe the return of Zerubbabel during the reign of Darius. Twelve leaders are listed in v. 8. Laity are listed in vv. 9–23, priests in vv. 24–25, Levites and other Temple personnel in vv. 26–35, and those who could not prove their ancestry in vv. 36–40. The governor Attharias (= *tirshata'* of the Hebrew text [Ezra 2:63; Neh. 7:65]) is linked in v. 40 to Nehemiah (cf. Neh. 8:9; 10:1). The list presupposes that the community in Palestine was composed almost exclusively of Jews who had been in exile (cf. Jer. 24:10), though this does not conform to historical fact.

5:47–65 (Ezra 3:1–13), The Altar and the Temple Foundation. The text of Ezra implies that the altar was set up without delay, in September 538 B.C., though it has confused Zerubbabel with Sheshbazzar. According to the arrangement of materials in 1 Esdras, however, the altar was reestablished only in the reign of Darius (522–486 B.C.). The people celebrated the Feast of Booths (or Tabernacles; → Tabernacles, Festival of), which began on the fifteenth day of the seventh month, and offered up the daily sacrifices required for this feast. Thereafter, all appointed feasts were kept (v. 52).

The ceremony at the beginning of the repairs on the Temple echoes that of Solomon at the dedication of the Temple (1 Kings 8; 2 Chron. 5–7) and of David at the bringing of the Ark to Jerusalem (1 Chron. 15–16). Older people, who had seen the First Temple, wept, while many others rejoiced. The Greek of v. 65 suggests that people could not hear the trumpets because of the weeping of the people. The corresponding Hebrew verse (Ezra 3:13) notes that the people could not distinguish the sounds of shouts of joy from the shouts of weeping.

5:66–73 (Ezra 4:1–5), Opponents Stop the Building of the Temple. Adversaries heard the sound of the trumpets and came to find out what was going on. The Jewish leaders refused the offer of these enemies, who claimed to have been worshiping the Lord ever since Esarhaddon had brought them to Palestine. The placement of these verses in the reign of Darius by 1 Esd. 5:6 (cf. 5:47, 56, 57) causes great difficulties, since Zerubbabel and Jeshua seem to be under orders from Cyrus, the second Persian king before Darius, to rebuild the Temple.

6:1–7:15 (Ezra 5:1–6:22), The Temple Completed. Work on the Temple resumed in the second year of Darius (6:1; this date is lacking in Ezra 5:1), thanks to the encouragement of the prophets Haggai and Zechariah and the leadership of Zerubbabel and Jeshua. Tattenai and Shetharbozenai (transcribed as Sisinnes and Sathrabuzanes in 1 Esdras), Persian officials of Coele Syria and Phoenicia (called the province "Beyond the River" in Ezra 5:3), questioned the Jews about their authorization for Temple building and demanded (6:12; Ezra 5:10: "asked") a list of the leaders' names. Fortunately, they decided to bring their concerns to Darius instead of trying to stop the project themselves. In their letter to Darius they quoted the Jews' self-defense (6:13–20), in which the Jews recited the history of the Temple from its erection by Solomon to its destruction by Nebuchadnezzar and the authorization to rebuild it by Cyrus. They claimed that the Temple vessels were given by Cyrus to their governors Sheshbazzar and Zerubbabel (6:18; Ezra 5:14 mentions only Sheshbazzar). The Persian officials concluded their letter by asking Darius if the claim of Cyrus's approval for the Temple was true.

Darius found the decree of Cyrus in Ecbatana and ordered the Persian officials not to interfere with the Temple and to allow Zerubbabel, the governor of the Jews, and his colleagues to continue (6:27). The text of Ezra (6:7) does not identify the governor by name, nor does it call him the servant of the Lord (cf. also 1 Esd. 6:29; Ezra 6:8). Darius ordered financial support for the Temple and for the sacrificial service that would be carried on there. He also put any opponents of the Temple under the threat of capital punishment (6:32). Verse 33 refers to the Lord who is "called upon" at the Temple; the corresponding text of Ezra (6:12) refers to God "who has caused his name to dwell there." The Persian officials cooperated with the Jews, and the work proceeded, encouraged by Haggai and Zechariah, the command of God, and the consent of Cyrus, Darius, and Artaxerxes (7:1–4). The latter king, of course, ruled long after the Temple was completed. Perhaps his provisions for the Temple at the time of Ezra led to the addition of his name here. The Temple was completed on the twenty-third (7:5; Ezra 6:15: third) day of the month of Adar, in the sixth year of Darius (April 1, 515 B.C.). The twenty-third of Adar fell on a Friday; the third on a Sabbath. At the dedication the priests and Levites performed the appropriate sacrifices as prescribed in the Pentateuch (the author of

1 Chron. 23–26 attributed such prescriptions to David). 1 Esdras adds that the gatekeepers were at each gate (7:9; this reference is lacking in Ezra 6:18). Subsequently (in the text of Ezra the language switches from Aramaic back to Hebrew at this point), the community kept the Passover and the Feast of Unleavened Bread in thanksgiving for the help given them by Darius, who here is given the unusual title of "the king of the Assyrians" (7:15; Ezra 6:22). At the rededications of the Temple in the time of Hezekiah and Josiah, Passover was also observed (2 Chron. 30:13–27; 2 Chron. 35:1–19; → Passover, The).

8:1–9:55
The Career of Ezra

8:1–67 (Ezra 7:1–8:36), Ezra's Trip to Jerusalem. Fifty-seven years later, in the seventh year of Artaxerxes (458 B.C.), Ezra, a priest and scribe, was sent to Jerusalem to investigate the situation there on the basis of the law. Ezra's priestly status is demonstrated by the genealogy in 8:1–2. The king's letter (8:9–24; the text of Ezra 7:12–26 is in Aramaic) commanded Ezra to lead Jews to Jerusalem, deliver gifts to the Temple, make inquiry about how the law was being implemented in Judah and Jerusalem, and appoint judges to administer and teach the law. Ezra expressed his thanksgiving at the beginning of a first-person narrative (8:25–90; Ezra 7:27–9:15). After a list of those who were ready to return with Ezra (8:28–40; Ezra 8:1–14), Ezra sought to find additional priests and Levites to go with him to Jerusalem; in the book of Ezra only the absence of Levites is mentioned. Thirty-eight descendants of Levi were found, in addition to 220 Temple servants. Ezra fasted and prayed for protection, but did not seek a royal escort, lest that be construed as a lack of trust in the power of the Lord. He entrusted the enormous gifts he was bringing to twelve priests, who were charged with delivering the gifts to the authorities in Jerusalem. The inflated totals—equal to the income of 100,000 to 500,000 people—may be an attempt to give glory to the Temple. The king, his officials, and all Israel had given these gifts (8:55) just as they did for the construction of Solomon's Temple (1 Chron. 26:26). With God's help Ezra's entourage arrived safe and sound in Jerusalem and turned over the gifts to two priests and two Levites. A series of animal sacrifices—twelve bulls, ninety-six rams, seventy-two lambs, and twelve he-goats—may express the idea that the restoration community was "all Israel," since the numbers are all multiples of twelve.

8:68–9:36 (Ezra 9:1–10:44), A Crisis over Mixed Marriages. Ezra was informed that a number of people, including the leaders, had married foreign wives, a situation that had the potential of leading to syncretistic practices. After expressing shock and mourning for this iniquity, Ezra confessed the Israelites' sin throughout their history, but also noted the gracious actions of God that had recently given them a root and a name. The Lord had also brought them into favor with the Persian kings who glorified the Temple of the Lord and raised Zion from desolation (8:81; cf. the more modest claims in Ezra 9:9). This restored community now had violated the law and the prophets by intermarrying with the peoples of the land, and this raised the possibility that God would destroy the community without root, seed, or name.

At the suggestion of Shecaniah (8:92; Gk. Jeconiah), Ezra led the people in taking an oath to divorce their foreign wives (8:91–96; Ezra 10:1–5). In response to a proclamation that threatened severe penalties, an assembly was held of all the tribes of Judah and Benjamin in Jerusalem on the twentieth day of the ninth month. The multitude listened to Ezra and agreed to divorce their foreign wives, though they asked for additional time because of the large number of people involved and the inclement weather and decided to turn the matter over to a special investigative commission. Ezra appointed the commission on the new moon of the tenth month, and it completed its work by the new moon of the first month. Thus, within a year of Ezra's departure from Babylon (8:61), a purified community had been created in Jerusalem. The account closes in 8:18–36 (Ezra 10:18–44) with a list of 101 or 102 priests, Levites, and laity who had intermarried. The problem, which was primarily confined to the upper classes, involved only a very small percent of the population.

9:37–55 (Neh. 7:73–8:13a), Ezra Reads the Law. 1 Esdras appears to contain an equivalent to Neh. 7:73, the last verse of the list in Nehemiah 7. If this judgment is correct, the compiler of 1 Esdras probably knew the present arrangement of the books of Ezra and Nehemiah. Some argue that he did not know about Nehemiah 1–7 and that his placement of Nehemiah 8 right after Ezra 10 represents the original location for this chapter. Most scholars are agreed that the events of Nehemiah 8 belong *historically* in the context of Ezra 10.

Ezra read the law to the assembly on the first day of the seventh month, at the east gate of the Temple. The book from which Ezra read for five to six hours (9:41) was very likely some form of the Pentateuch. The people assented to the law by calling out "Amen" and by prostrating themselves on the ground. Thirteen Levites taught the law to the assembly by explaining what had been read (v. 48). Verse 49 should be emended to read: "Ezra the chief priest and reader said to the Levites, who were teaching the multitude . . ." The Greek text has the "governor" *(Attharates)* address Ezra and the Levites (cf. NRSV; Neh. 8:9). Ezra assured the Levites that the day was a holy feast day, and that there was no reason to mourn since the Lord would exalt them. Inspired by what they had heard, the com-

munity prepared for a festive meal, in which those who had nothing could also share. The book of 1 Esdras breaks off in mid-sentence in 9:55, "And they came together . . ." The Hebrew text of the corresponding verse in Neh. 8:13 reads: "On the second day the heads of ancestral houses of all the people, with the priests and the Levites, came together to the scribe Ezra in order to study the words of the law." Did 1 Esdras originally end in mid-sentence? Or did it include all of v. 13 or even all of Neh. 8:13–18, the account of the celebration of the Feast of Booths (Feast of Tabernacles)? According to Neh. 8:17 there had been no Feast of Booths like this since the days of Jeshua (Joshua; cf. 2 Chron. 30:26; 35:18). Josephus, who follows 1 Esdras in the *Antiquities,* alludes to all of Neh. 8:13–18 (*Antiquities of the Jews* 11.5.5 §157).

Bibliography

Crenshaw, J. "The Contest of Darius' Guards." In *Images of Man and God.* Edited by D. M. Gunn. Sheffield: Almond, 1981. Pp. 74–88.

Eskenazi, T. C. "The Chronicler and the Composition of 1 Esdras." *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 48 (1986): 39–61.

Gardner, A. E. "The Purpose and Date of I Esdras." *Journal of Jewish Studies* 37 (1986): 18–27.

Nickelsburg, G. W. E. "The Bible Rewritten and Expanded." In *Jewish Writings of the Second Temple Period.* Compendia Rerum Iudaicarum ad Novum Testamentum, 2.2. Edited by M. E. Stone. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1984. Pp. 89–156.

Torrey, C. C. *Ezra Studies.* Prolegomenon by W. F. Stinespring. New York: KTAV, 1970 (1910).

Williamson, H. G. M. "The Problem with First Esdras." In *After the Exile: Essays in Honor of Rex Mason.* Edited by J. Barton and D. J. Reimer. Macon, GA: Mercer University Press, 1996. Pp. 201–16.

2 Esdras

MICHAEL E. STONE *and* THEODORE A. BERGREN

INTRODUCTION

Names and Parts

A number of writings in Jewish and Christian tradition are connected with the figure of Ezra, or Esdras, as the name is rendered in Greek. In the Greek and Latin Bible manuscripts that preserve the most familiar of these works, it was customary to distinguish them by number (i.e., 1 Esdras, 2 Esdras, 3 Esdras, etc.). Unfortunately, the Septuagint (the Greek translation, LXX), the Latin Vulgate, many later Latin manuscripts, and the English editions all use different numbering systems. Complicating the situation even more is the fact that the second book of Esdras actually consists of three independent writings (chaps. 1–2, chaps. 3–14, and chaps. 15–16). Modern biblical scholars customarily use either a system of numbering derived from the Latin Vulgate or one derived from the later Latin manuscripts. Here we will use the one derived from the Vulgate, in which 1 Ezra is the canonical book of Ezra; 2 Ezra is the canonical book of Nehemiah; 3 Ezra is the book of 1 Esdras in the English Apocrypha; and 4 Ezra is the central portion of 2 Esdras (i.e., 2 Esdras 3–14). To identify the two independent writings that accompany 4 Ezra, the title 5 Ezra is used to refer to 2 Esdras 1–2, while 6 Ezra identifies 2 Esdras 15–16.

4 Ezra

4 Ezra is an apocalypse, a form of literature in which heavenly secrets, often including information about the impending end of days, are revealed to a seer (→ Apocalyptic Literature). Such revelations are frequently presented as visions, mediated by an angel (see the books of Daniel and Revelation). 4 Ezra consists of seven such visions, separated by small narrative units. The first three visions take the form of dialogues between Ezra, the pseudonymous author (→ Pseudonym), and an angel of God. The fourth is a waking experience of the heavenly Jerusalem; the fifth and sixth are symbolic dreams interpreted by an angel. The seventh vision relates Ezra's receipt of sacred scriptures from God and his transmission of them.

A Jewish work, originally written in Hebrew, 4 Ezra was translated into Greek and from Greek into a variety of languages by different churches: Latin, Ethiopic, Syriac, Georgian, Arabic, Armenian, and Coptic. The Hebrew and Greek versions are lost, except for a few quotations, and all modern translations of the book are based on these later "daughter" versions.

4 Ezra stems from the last decade of the first century A.D. and was composed in reaction to the Roman destruction of Jerusalem in A.D. 70. Its primary concern, therefore, is to understand that traumatic event. To do this the book charts Ezra's development from distress to consolation. This development is paralleled by his growth as a visionary until, by the end of the sixth vision, he is designated a prophet. Full consolation has also brought full prophetic status. Thus another major concern of the book, the restoration of the tradition of secrets concerning the eschaton, or end time, is made possible by Ezra's consolation.

Little is known about the social setting of the book, although it is possible to point to literary connections between 4 Ezra and other Jewish writings. Especially close are the Syriac *Apocalypse of Baruch*, which is dependent on 4 Ezra and written somewhat later, and the *Biblical Antiquities* of Pseudo-Philo, which seems to be earlier than 4 Ezra. In addition, the eagle vision of 4 Ezra (chaps. 11–12) is explicitly related to the vision of Daniel 7 (see 4 Ezra 12:11). Whether these literary relationships imply a social, historical continuity or something about the author's self-conscious sense of writing in a tradition cannot be finally established.

It is possible that the dialogues between Ezra and the angel in the first three visions reflect the conflicting viewpoints of two different groups in society. It seems more fruitful, however, to think of the conflicts in the book as reflecting the author's inner life and developing perspective. In its general views and attitudes, 4 Ezra seems to be close to rabbinic Judaism as it developed in the decades after the destruction of the Temple in A.D. 70.

The role of 4 Ezra in Judaism remains largely unknown, since Jewish tradition lost it at an early date. Its wide circulation among the Christian churches indicates its popularity there. 4 Ezra was on the fringe of canonical Scriptures in the Latin church down to the Council of Trent and is usually included in manuscripts of the Latin Bible (the Vulgate). Its position was

similar in the Armenian church. Other churches seem to have cherished it, but did not consider it fully part of Scripture. The "Prayer of Ezra" (8:20–36) had an independent life in the Latin and Syriac liturgical traditions.

5 Ezra

5 Ezra takes the form of a prophetic discourse. The first section (1:4–2:9) indicts God's people for their sins; the second (2:10–48) promises redemption to a new people. The final portion of the book (2:42–48) is a brief apocalypse.

5 Ezra was probably written pseudonymously by an unknown Christian author to describe the Christian sense of taking over God's patrimony originally promised to the Jews. It dates from the second or early third century; its place of origin is unknown. 5 Ezra was composed in Latin or, less probably, in Greek and survives only in two Latin versions.

The texts of 5 and 6 Ezra were joined with 4 Ezra at some time before A.D. 500. (For the historical influence of the combined work, see above under 4 Ezra.) The latter part of 5 Ezra (2:33–48) exerted a strong influence upon the liturgy of the Roman church.

6 Ezra

6 Ezra, like 5 Ezra, is a prophetic discourse in two parts. The first (15:5–16:34) warns of terrible catastrophes that will soon ravage the earth; the second (16:35–78) exhorts a group of God's chosen people to remain faithful under persecution in order to be saved.

6 Ezra was probably written by an unknown Christian during a period of persecution in Asia Minor in the late third century. The author interprets the persecution as a sign of the end and aims to inspire fellow Christians to stand firm. The book, written in Greek, survives in full only in two Latin versions.

6 Ezra does not seem to have had a strong influence on subsequent Christian communities. It is quoted extensively, however, by the British historian Gildas (sixth century A.D.)

COMMENTARY

Part One: 1:1–2:48

The Fifth Book of Ezra

A short work composed independently of 4 Ezra and 6 Ezra, 5 Ezra depicts Ezra as a prophet pronouncing judgment on God's people and announcing the transferal of God's patrimony to a new people or "another nation."

1:1–3
Ascription

The book is ascribed to "the prophet Ezra," whose priestly genealogy is traced (cf. Ezra 7:1–5; 1 Esd. 8:1–2). The designation of Ezra as "prophet" is unusual. In Ezra-Nehemiah and 1 Esdras he is described as "priest" or "scribe."

1:4–2:9
Prophetic Indictment

At God's command, Ezra indicts God's people, Israel, for their continual disobedience to the divine commandments. The present people will be abandoned, and God's inheritance will be given to a new people.

1:4–23, Historical Recital. After being commissioned by God as a prophet, Ezra recalls God's mighty acts for Israel during the Exodus. This historical review touches upon various well-known highlights of the biblical Exodus story, but also includes several incidents not mentioned there (see vv. 11, 20b). Interwoven with the elements of the historical recital are rhetorical questions and statements of exasperation uttered by God (vv. 7b–9, 14b, 15b–17a, 21b), emphasizing the people's persistent unfaithfulness.

Such rehearsals of God's saving acts occur frequently in the Hebrew Bible (see, e.g., Pss. 105; 106; Ezek. 20). This recital is especially close to the prayer in Neh. 9:6–31 (attributed to Ezra in the LXX) and to Psalm 78. In fact it may have been modeled on the latter. Although the present passage serves as a prelude to God's indictment of the unfaithful people, a very different use of such a historical summary is made in 4 Ezra 3:4–27 (see commentary below).

1:24–37, Pronouncement of Judgment. On the basis of the incriminating evidence brought forward in the historical recital, God delivers an indictment against his people. He will turn and "give [his] name" to "another nation," which will be characterized by qualities of gratitude, obedience, and belief.

The simile of the hen gathering her brood and the context of vv. 30–33 have close parallels in the NT synoptic Gospels (cf. esp. Matt. 23:30–38). These parallels are interpreted by most commentators as evidence for Christian authorship of 5 Ezra.

1:38–40, Vision of the Coming People. Ezra, addressed by God as "father," is summoned by God to observe "the people coming from the east." Language and images that had earlier been used to describe the return of Israel from exile (cf. Bar. 4:36; 5:5) and the expectation of the eschatological return of the dispersed tribes of Israel (cf. 4 Ezra 13:46–47) are here applied to the new people of God. In a symbolic way the heritage

of Israel is given to this people. God announces that the leaders who will be given to the people coming from the east will include the three patriarchs and the twelve minor prophets.

2:1–7, Further Pronouncement of Judgment. In a passage strongly recalling Bar. 4:11–21, Jerusalem, the "mother" of the people who have "sinned before the Lord God," bewails her children's sins. Whereas in Baruch Jerusalem sees her children returning from the east (Bar. 5:5), here Ezra is again invoked as "father" to testify against both mother and children and so bring about their destruction. This summons to Ezra (2:5–7) is often interpreted as a reference to the destruction of Jerusalem in A.D. 70 or 135.

2:8–9, Woe Against Assyria. This section, in which God threatens Assyria with the punishment of Sodom and Gomorrah, seems incongruous in its context. It is not clear whom the author intends to identify as "Assyria."

2:10–41
Prophetic Exhortation of the New People

The focus of the book shifts from indictment of God's former people to encouragement of the newly chosen people.

2:10–14, Blessing and Instruction. God announces that his new people will inherit blessings previously reserved for Israel (vv. 10–11). That 5 Ezra is not a Jewish work in its present form is clear from this deprecatory reference to Israel. In addition, there are numerous echoes of phrases from the NT in these verses (cf. Matt. 24:22; Mark 13:37; Luke 11:9–10).

2:15–32, Exhortation of the Mother. The image of the mother, introduced in 2:2–6, is elaborated. In contrast to the previous passage, however, here the mother and her role are depicted in positive terms. The prophet encourages the mother to embrace her sons (v. 15) and, after enumerating the eschatological delights awaiting her children, informs her of her earthly, social responsibilities (vv. 20–23). The mother is reassured that when the day of tribulation comes, her children will receive "the first place in [God's] resurrection" (v. 23). The emphasis on eschatology (vv. 18–19, 24, 26–30) and resurrection (vv. 16, 23, 31) is especially pronounced.

The description of the mother in 2:15–32 is presented in deliberate contrast to that found in 2:2–6. In Bar. 4:8–35, which seems to have influenced the author of 5 Ezra, the mother in both her desolate and joyful aspects represents Jerusalem. In 5 Ezra, however, though the sorrowing mother appears to be Jerusalem, the book's Christian tenor has persuaded many commentators that the mother addressed in 2:15–32 stands for the church.

2:33–41, Encouragement of the New People. Ezra, now speaking in the first person, states that he was commanded by God on Mount Horeb to go to Israel, but was rejected. He directs to those who "hear and understand" a series of exhortatory, eschatologically oriented statements. The depiction of Ezra on Mount Horeb (equated in biblical tradition with Mount Sinai) suggests a typological comparison of Ezra with Moses. These figures are also compared in 4 Ezra 14:1–8 and in various rabbinic sources.

2:42–48
The Vision of Ezra

Ezra receives a vision of a tall young man distributing crowns to a surrounding multitude on Mount Zion. An angel informs Ezra that the youth is the "son of God" and the crowd, those who "confessed the name of God." The vision probably represents Jesus rewarding Christian confessors (possibly martyrs). Though it has close parallels in Revelation 7 and the early Christian work *Hermas, Similitudes* 8–9, the vision is clearly based on Jewish models, especially 4 Ezra 13.

Part Two: 3:1–14:48
The Fourth Book of Ezra

The section 3:1–14:48, which we are referring to as 4 Ezra, is a separate work from the preceding chaps. 1–2 and the following chaps. 15–16. It focuses on the religious problems raised for Judaism by the destruction of the Temple and Jerusalem by the Romans in A.D. 70.

3:1–5:20
First Vision

The first vision is composed of four parts: an address to God, a dispute, a dialogic prediction, and a direct prediction. In the first the seer alone is the speaker; the second and third are dialogues between the seer and an angel; the fourth is set in the mouth of the angel alone.

3:1–3, Introduction. The protagonist, Ezra, is presented lying on his bed during the thirtieth year of the Babylonian exile. He is distressed by the suffering of Zion and breaks into an inspired address to God. Curiously, Ezra is identified with Salathiel (Heb. Shealtiel), perhaps Salathiel the father of Zerubbabel (see Ezra 3:2; 5:2).

3:4–36, Address. The address to God falls into two parts. The first, 3:4–27, sets forth the wondrous works of God in history from the creation of Adam (3:5),

through the saving of Noah (3:11), the election of Abraham (3:13), Exodus and Sinai (3:17–19), to David (3:23). In counterpoint to these events, the repeated sins of humankind and the punishment that God visits upon them are highlighted (3:7, 9–10, 25–27). The destruction of Jerusalem is the climax of sin and punishment. Even more significantly, throughout the address Ezra accuses God of responsibility for these events: God created; God punished; even when God gave the law to "bring forth fruit in them," the evil inclination remained in the heart of the people "and you did not hinder them" (3:8, NRSV). In the Hebrew Bible such recitals of the gracious deeds of God usually precede the making or renewal of a covenant between God and Israel or form part of a legal indictment of Israel before the heavenly court for transgressing the covenant (cf. Josh. 24; Ezek. 20; Neh. 9). Here 4 Ezra strikingly inverts the biblical form and indicts God before the bar of his own justice for conducting the world unjustly. This radical position comes out of the seer's struggle to understand the seemingly incomprehensible destruction of the Temple. 4 Ezra's view that the tendency to sin was inherited from Adam by all generations is not unlike Pauline attitudes about original sin. What 4 Ezra says is inherited, however, is not sin, but the weakness that enables persons to sin (3:26–27).

Following this very strong statement, a new, almost reflective, tone enters (3:28–36). Ezra asks whether Babylon is any better (morally) than Zion now that it has gained dominion (3:28). Israel, whatever its sins, is still more God-fearing than other nations: "What nation has kept your commandments so well?" (3:35, NRSV). Already in the prophetic writings, although the political affliction of Israel by foreign nations was seen as the working of God, questions were raised about the moral qualities of the nations (see Isa. 10:5–19; cf. Jer. 25:8–14). Yet the justice of the punishment was not questioned by the prophets, whereas for 4 Ezra the moral faults of Babylon (Rome) raise questions about the justice of the punishment itself. Setting the theme for the dialogic dispute that follows, Ezra reproaches God who has "not shown to anyone how your way may be comprehended" (3:31, NRSV). In this way the central issue of the book is posed, that of the justice of God's action toward Israel and by implication toward all humankind.

4:1–25, The Dispute. The angel Uriel appears in response to the address. He chides Ezra for wishing to understand the "way of the Most High," i.e., the working of divine providence. By use of riddle questions (4:5–8) and the striking dual parable of the forest and the sea (4:13–18) he demonstrates to Ezra that "dwellers on earth can understand earthly things and nothing beyond; only he who lives above the heavens can understand the things high above the heavens" (4:21, REB). Ezra responds that the angel has misconstrued his intent. He had only wanted to ask "why the people whom you loved has been given over to godless tribes" (4:23, NRSV). Ezra has posed a major issue. He wishes to understand the course of events as he has presented them in the preceding address. The angel does not deny the validity of his presentation, but replies that this is something mortals cannot understand. Ezra responds that Uriel has avoided the question. What a strange sort of dialogue! It has no parallel in the other apocalypses, and perhaps, like much of the dialogue in the first three visions, it reflects the author's own inner conflicts.

The riddle questions here in 4:5–8 and in 5:36–37 imply a rejection of the possibility of specially revealed knowledge of heavenly secrets such as one finds in many apocalypses. In spite of this rejection of special knowledge, Ezra repeatedly formulates his quest in terms of knowing and understanding. He seeks to understand the working of God, incomprehensible to him when he considers the fate of Israel. This is a proper subject of concern to mortals, he insists, in spite of the angel's denial.

4:26–52, Dialogic Prediction. Continuing the dialogue form, the author shifts from disputatious to predictive dialogue. The angel makes certain prophetic pronouncements about which the seer poses simple questions to elicit information. Although most of the angel's responses are clear, the transition from disputation to predictive dialogue is marked by a cryptic oracular passage (4:26–32; cf. similar transitional passages in 5:41–42; 6:8–10; 7:25; 8:3). The pronouncement that "the age is hastening swiftly to its end" (4:26, 5:14) is elaborated in the ensuing oracle (4:33–52), as the seer seeks more details about the prediction of the imminent end. When will this be (4:33)? Is human evil delaying it (4:38–39)? Has more time passed than is to come (4:44–46)? To these three queries the angel replies that the times are predetermined (4:34–37), that they will not be delayed (4:40–43), and that most of the times are past (4:50). The section concludes with the seer's question whether "those days" are imminent (4:51). In this section the angel repeatedly emphasizes the idea that the future has been predetermined by God (4:36–37, 42, 50). Counterpointing this idea is a pervasive sense of urgency and haste (4:26, 33, 40–42, 51). These themes and the tension between them are central to the thought of the book. How, then, does their introduction respond to the questions the seer has posed at the end of the previous section? They clearly do not satisfy Ezra, for he returns to the same questions again in the second vision. It is as if here the angel takes up the last of Ezra's questions in 4:52 and answers it alone.

5:1–13, Direct Prediction. This passage, spoken entirely by the angel, is very like the one that concludes the second vision (6:11–29). The dominant idea is that

evil will peak before the end comes. This evil, which is caused by human sin, will be characterized by disruption of social, family, and natural order. The signs, as these fierce events are called, are presented in four groups—cosmic disruption (5:4b–5), the reign of the eschatological ruler (5:6–7), chaos (5:8–9a), and the loss of wisdom (5:9b–11). Such lists of signs are widespread in Jewish and Christian apocalypses, in rabbinic literature, and in the NT (e.g., Matt. 24:6–29; Mark 13:7–24; Luke 21:9–26; *1 Enoch* 99:4–9; *m. Sota* 9:15). They derive partly from passages in the Hebrew Bible that assume that the regularity of nature can be disturbed by human sin (e.g., Lev. 26:18–26; Deut. 11:17). Ezra is to watch for these signs that will alert him to the imminent end (4 Ezra 9:1–2). He is to fast for another seven days, after which he will hear "yet greater things than these" (5:13).

5:14–20, Conclusion. In 5:14–15 Ezra's violent physical reaction to the vision is described. Real trance experience, perhaps even that of the author, may lie behind this description. The onset of the experience is marked in 3:1–3, where Ezra is described as lying on his bed and contemplating the destruction of Zion until inspiration seizes him and he is impelled to speak. At the very end of the vision he is approached by Phaltiel, leader of the people, who is concerned for his welfare; but Ezra dismisses him.

5:21–6:34
Second Vision

The second vision is composed of four main parts exactly corresponding to the four main parts of the first vision. The same shift of speech from the seer, to dialogue, to direct angelic prediction occurs here too.

5:21–22, Introduction. The first lines conclude the narrative transition, referring back to the angelic commandment in 5:13 and the introduction to the first vision. The onset of Ezra's vision experience is described, as in 3:3.

5:23–30, Address. The first part of the address (5:23–27) is a series of comparisons, showing that there is one chosen thing of each kind. These comparisons culminate in the characterization of Israel as the elect people of God. Election is described as "love" (5:27), a theme that recurs in the disputatious dialogue that follows. God's punishment of Israel is consequently described not in the legal language of judgment, but as "hate" (5:30). In the second part of the speech (5:28–30) Ezra poses three questions. The root of his concern is once again the fate of Israel; here he poses the issue to God in terms of God's love for Israel.

5:31–40, The Dispute. As on the earlier night, the angel appears and reproaches Ezra, saying, "Do you love [Israel] more than his Maker does?" (5:33, RSV). Note the prominence of the idea of love. Ezra responds, saying, "I try to understand the *ways of the Most High*" (5:34, REB; cf. 3:31). The angel again employs riddle questions to demonstrate Ezra's inability to comprehend the way of God's governance of the world, which is also described in terms of love and judgment. Ezra accepts the limitations of his abilities and, in contrast to the first vision, here does not pose anew the questions about the fate of Zion. The angel concludes: "You cannot discover my judgment, or the goal of the love that I have promised to my people" (5:40, NRSV; cf. 4:21).

5:41–6:10, Dialogic Prediction. The transition from dispute to prediction is marked by a question and an oracular response (5:41–42). 4 Ezra 5:40 had hinted at the future ("goal" and "judgment"), and in 5:41 the seer asks about God's future action. Will the redemption include all generations or only those actually alive at the end (cf. 13:19–20; see also 1 Thess. 4:13–17)? The simile of the crown, used in the response (5:42), clearly implies that judgment will take place in an equal fashion for all, through resurrection (cf. 5:45).

In a series of questions Ezra expresses his impatient desire to see the judgment immediately. Using the image of a womb, the angel emphasizes the fixed order of creation—as a womb cannot produce ten at once, so the earth would contradict its natural properties if it produced the allotted number of human beings simultaneously (5:46–49) and so hastened the end. Still, the angel assures him, the creation "already is aging and passing the strength of youth" (5:55, NRSV). Thus Ezra learns that all will be judged equally, that judgment cannot be immediate, and that the end is fixed and unchangeable but will come soon.

In 5:56 the issue of a timetable is abandoned as Ezra desires to know "through whom you will visit your creation." The beginning of the end, he is told, will be through human agency (perhaps a reference to the Messiah), though its consummation will be through God. God's unique role is strongly supported by the series of statements in 6:1–6. God alone made the whole of creation. Even before that he planned the events of the end, and he alone will execute them. In 6:7, when Ezra asks about the division between this age and the age to come, the angel's answer is couched in symbolic terms. As Jacob's hand grasped Esau's heel (see Gen. 25:26), so nothing will intervene between the two ages.

6:11–29, Direct Prediction. By its reference to signs revealed "on a previous night" (6:12) this section refers to the corresponding prediction passage at the end of the first vision (5:1–13). The angel warns Ezra that he will hear a loud voice that may cause the earth to shake (6:13–16). Ezra hears the divine voice (6:17), which delivers an oracle (6:18–20a) and reveals signs of the end (6:20b–28).

The heart of the passage lies in the revelation of the "end of the signs" (6:12). It is introduced by solemn events: an elaborate question, the seer's rising to his feet (he has been lying down throughout the first two visions), the shaking of the earth, and the resounding divine voice—recalling the theophanies of, e.g., Judg. 5:4; 1 Kings 19:11–12; Nah. 1:5; Ps. 18:13. A list of woes follows, describing the events that will signal the breakdown of cosmic order. Finally, in 6:26–28, redemption is briefly described. This note of hope marks the end of the first part of the book, climaxing the spiritual struggle and questioning of the first two visions.

6:30–34, Conclusion. These verses contain the injunctions with which the second vision concludes (cf. 5:13; 9:23–25). The statement that the seer is acceptable to God (6:32b) is a new element, an innovation no doubt related to the preceding message of redemption. The cryptic command in 6:34 not to think vain thoughts may refer to questions and responses such as those in 4:2, 20–21 and 5:33, 40. The essential message is that the seer should believe because of the signs and not ask such questions.

6:35–9:25
Third Vision

The exceptionally long third vision (longer than the first and second combined) falls into three major sections, 6:35–7:44; 7:45–8:3; and 8:4–9:25. Each of these parts is structured, basically, like the first two visions.

6:35–37, Section 1: Introduction. As in the introduction to the first two visions, the seer's troubled state of mind is described, followed by the onset of his spiritual experience and speech.

6:38–59, Section 1: Address. The address is parallel in general to the prayerful addresses that open the preceding visions. Like them, it is formulated in the second person and is divided into two parts: 6:38–54 and 6:55–59. The first part tells of the works done on the six days of creation. In the second part the implications of this recital are set forth. The creation account often draws word for word on Genesis 1. No other similar use of Genesis 1 in a prayer is known. The recital of creation is so presented as to emphasize the election of Israel (6:55–59). Several special themes are introduced: the idea of creation through divine speech (e.g., 6:38, 43), the creation of the luminaries for the service of humankind (6:45–46), and the preservation of Leviathan and Behemoth (6:49–52) and their purpose in the events of the eschaton (6:52). Verses 54–59 focus the author's problem for the ensuing dispute. Though 6:54 connects "the people whom you have chosen" with the creation of Adam, 6:59 asks, "Now if the world was made for us, why may we not take possession of our inheritance?" (NEB). In the first vision the problem is formulated in terms of history, moving from creation to exile. In the second vision it is put in terms of the election of Israel. The present address combines these two preoccupations; its chief subject is creation, yet its questions arise from the concept of election.

The prophecy of redemption at the end of the second vision did not satisfy the author. Now he returns to the same basic issues. Why is the fate of Israel as it is? How does that accord with divine justice and providence? A shift has taken place in the author's understanding during the first two visions and is highlighted by the fact that he does not even mention the destruction of the Temple, previously the central issue.

7:1–25, Section 1: Dispute. As in 4:1 and 5:31, the dispute opens with the appearance of an angel who commands the seer to stand, the sign of a particularly solemn context (cf. 6:13; 10:33; 14:2). The angel begins by recounting two parables and their explication (7:3–16). Both parables stress that a difficult first stage must be traversed before the spacious future is achieved. If this is a response to 6:59 ("Why, then, may we not take possession of our inheritance?" REB), then the world to come, not this world, is Israel's heritage. The image of the city in the second parable may suggest such a view, since a city is a common way of referring to the future world or the heavenly Jerusalem (cf. *Herm. Sim.* 9.12.5). 4 Ezra 7:15–16 implies the same conclusion, with its contrast between mortality and "the future world."

In 7:17–18 Ezra objects that although it is reasonable to ask the righteous to sustain the difficulties of this world, since they will inherit the world to come, the wicked will suffer in both worlds. The angel rebukes Ezra for thinking he understands God's justice better than God himself. The fate of the righteous and the wicked is written in the Torah (→ Torah). The wicked did not hearken (7:22), so they will be punished, and the righteous will be rewarded (7:21–25).

One problem is that although Israel is clearly under discussion up to 7:10, from there on the passage refers to the righteous and the wicked in general. Even allusions to Torah here do not unambiguously refer to Israel; in 7:11 "my statutes" seems to mean divine commands in general. The discourse shifts from Israel, via Adam's sin, to the righteous and the wicked, the reverse of the development in chap. 3.

7:26–44, Section 1: Direct Prediction. This passage opens with the prophetic phrase "Behold, the time will come" (7:26; cf. 5:1; 6:18) and concludes with an assertion of the special revelation made to Ezra. 4 Ezra 7:26 deliberately relates this passage to the preceding direct predictions (5:1–13; 6:11–29) and forms a complement to them, carrying the prediction on to the day of judgment. The passage is structured according to the eschatological timetable.

In this passage, as elsewhere in the book, the Mes-

siah is called "servant" (some translations give "son," reflecting a Greek word with both meanings, but a Hebrew original that meant "servant"). The messianic kingdom precedes the Day of Judgment and is limited to four hundred years, after which the Messiah will die. Unlike in the fifth and sixth visions, here the Messiah plays no role in the inception of his kingdom. Following his death (which is unparalleled in other sources) the world will revert to the state before creation. Then a new world will be created, and the resurrection of the dead and judgment will take place. The picture of God on a throne rebuking the wicked is appropriate to the representation of this judgment as a courtroom scene (cf. Dan. 7:9–14). The withdrawal of mercy, highly stressed here, is connected with the idea that judgment is perfect. Until that time, there is place for mercy; but on the Day of Judgment itself, truth alone will rule.

7:45–74, Section 2: The Dispute. The dispute opens the second section of the vision, which concludes with 8:3. Broadly, the passage may be designated "dialogic dispute," for Ezra's questions urge his point of view against the angel's. Its major parts are Ezra's sustained address (7:45–48); the angel's response concerning the two worlds (7:49–51); a parable narrated by the angel (7:52–57); Ezra's statement of the moral of the parable (7:58), from which the angel draws the implications (7:59–61); Ezra's lament (7:62–69); and the angel's final, detailed response (7:70–74).

Starting from the view that the world to come is for the righteous only (cf. 7:26–44), Ezra objects that few persons will be saved but many damned (7:45–48). Although the objection somewhat resembles that of 7:17–18, it is focused not on eschatological reward, but on the present quandary that is evident only after the revelation about reward. This quandary is the problem of the "evil heart," which now leads to the damnation of "almost all who have been created" (7:48, RSV). The angel's assertion in 7:50 implies that God values the righteous highly and that it was to reward them that he created the world to come. The parable of the precious and base metals (7:52), which is completed in 8:2–3, further suggests that God, owner of the precious, keeps them unmixed with the worthless.

In this way the angel repeats and refocuses Ezra's initial charge: indeed there are only few righteous, he asserts, but over them God rejoices. To this hard message Ezra responds with a lament, a cry of distress. He had opened the pericope with the exclamation, "Blessed are those who are alive and keep your commandments!" (7:45, NRSV). Now he closes the body of his argument and the lament with the contrasting, "And if after death we were not to come into judgment, perhaps it would have been better for us" (7:69, NRSV).

The pericope concludes with the angel's carefully argued reply (7:70–75) that judgment is foreordained, human action foreseen, and its results provided for in advance; that because human beings have intelligence they exercise free will and consequently bear the results of their actions; and that this is particularly true of the requirements of Torah, which were given to humans, but which they did not observe.

7:75–99, Section 2: Dialogic Prediction. This pericope is composed chiefly of the angel's sustained response to the seer's question whether after death recompense will ensue immediately (7:75). The response falls into three parts: introduction on the nature of death (7:76–78); the description of the postmortem state of the wicked (7:79–87) and the righteous (7:88–98); and a conclusion (7:99). The descriptions of the fates of the righteous and the wicked are closely parallel in their structure. They are sevenfold, corresponding, it seems, to the seven heavens. The passage is very distinctive, with a title ("Concerning death the teaching is: . . ." NRSV) and a conclusion ("This is the order of the souls of the righteous, . . ." NRSV). At the time of death, which is decreed by God, the soul leaves the body and adores the glory of God (7:78). A detailed description of the state of the souls of the dead follows. This teaching is unique in ancient Jewish literature, although the idea of such a state is found elsewhere, e.g., *Testament of Abraham* A.13–14. The view of 4 Ezra 7 is that this intermediate state comes directly after death and is itself succeeded by resurrection and judgment.

7:100–115, Section 2: Dispute. The exact point of the transitional dialogue in 7:100–101 is obscure, but it seems to be whether souls experience any interval between their death and entry into their postmortem habitations.

The elaborate formula in 7:102 introduces a major new topic. In his ongoing search for some softening of what he perceives as draconian divine judgment, Ezra moves from considering the fate of the souls after death to intercession. Will there be intercession on the Day of Judgment? The angel answers with an uncompromising no. In the past, the seer protests, there has been intercession, so why not in the future (7:106–111)? If such prayer has been effective in this corrupt world, he argues (and adduces examples from Scripture to prove his point), surely it will be so in the world to come. To the contrary, the angel replies, intercession is an indication of the imperfection of this world "in which the glory of God does not abide continually" (7:112). But in the future, perfect, age, there will be no intercession. This accords with the view, noted earlier in the book, that until the end humans can repent and will experience God's mercy; but at the end truth and judgment alone will prevail (7:32–38). No intercessory prayer will be possible.

7:116–8:3, Section 2: Second Dispute. The second dispute is a complex passage composed of four parts:

Ezra's lament (7:116–126), the angel's response (7:127–131), an exegesis of Exod. 34:6–7 (7:132–140), and the angel's response and conclusion (8:1–3). We have characterized 7:116–126 as a lament, even though it is a series of questions. Four such passages of lament can be isolated in the first three visions: 4:12, 22–24; 5:35; 7:62–69; and 7:116–126. These laments occur when the seer despairs of achieving any resolution to his problems. Each opens with a rhetorical question about the purpose of birth and then poses the point of the seer's despair.

In his answer the angel speaks of free will and the responsibility of human beings for their actions (7:127–131). He implicitly rejects the idea of "original sin" that Ezra might have implied (7:118) and strongly asserts the freedom of human action and the corresponding human responsibility for this action. His position is bolstered by a quotation of Deut. 30:19, a rare use of a proof-text in the book (7:129). The response to the issue of the few and the many is not that there is some means by which the many can be saved from punishment, but that there will be more joy over the few than there will be grief over the many (7:131; cf. 7:60–61).

Just as the angel used Scripture to make his point, so Ezra cites Scripture in his prayerful response (7:132–140). In a phrase-by-phrase exegesis of Exod. 34:6–7, Ezra asserts God's mercy and compassion. (Both the selection of the passage and the method of interpretation—midrash—recall rabbinic reflection on the nature of God.) The relations implied between God and human beings are complex, but the overall point is clear, that humans can survive only because of God's mercy. In his final response, which is also the conclusion of the second section of the vision, the angel reiterates the opening position of 7:49–61. Indeed, 8:1–3 is the conclusion of the parable that was told in 7:52–59 (8:2 should be translated "But I will explain the parable [i.e., that of 7:52–59] to you, Ezra"). This subdivision concludes, as it started, with the assertion of the inevitability of human fate. The problem of the few and the many remains unresolved.

8:4–19a, Section 3: Monologue. The monologue that opens the third section of this very long vision and the prayer (8:19b–36) are first-person addresses by Ezra that together function similarly to the speeches with which the first three visions open. In the monologue Ezra presents the issues that concern him (8:4–14) and then the questions arising from them (8:15–19a). If the creation of human beings was such a complex and wondrous procedure, Ezra asks, why does God destroy them so quickly (8:14)? This question seems universal, yet in vv. 15–18 the specific fate of Israel is to the fore; Ezra prays on Israel's behalf. Thus the issue of the few and the many, which runs through the whole second section of the third vision, is refocused in an intriguing way.

Both the content and style of this passage are so structured as to reiterate God's responsibility for creation of human beings. The tone is set gently by 8:4–5, Ezra's apostrophe to his own soul; in his address to God the theme becomes dominant (8:6–12), and it is brought to absolute explicitness by vv. 13–14. God is responsible for the creation and growth of mortals as well as for their fate. The line of argument is similar to that of 3:4–36, where God is made responsible for the course of history.

8:19b–36, Section 3: The Prayer. The prayer pronounced by Ezra forms the second part of his introductory speech. It has had a special influence in various churches, some of which transmitted it separately for liturgical use. The parallelism that is typical of biblical prayers also dominates its literary character. It is composed of an opening doxology (8:20–23), a call for attention and statement of purpose (8:24–25), and the body of the prayer, consisting of intercessory petition, confession, and grounds for petition (8:26–36). The same central elements (doxology, confession, and petition) occur in earlier prayers, especially Ezra 9, Nehemiah 9, and Daniel 9.

The thrust of the prayer is a call for divine mercy. The argument that God cannot be called "merciful" except by forgiving "us sinners, who have no just deeds to our credit" (8:32) is a reference back to the midrash on the divine attributes (7:132).

The prayer carries on the preoccupation with the issue of the few and the many, but concern for Israel, which was prominent in the address (8:15–18), now disappears. The prayer is focused on the conflict between the ideas of 8:1–3 and God's care, evident in creation.

8:37–62a, Section 3: Dispute. This passage, a mixture of dispute and prediction, is composed of two speeches by the angel separated by a short address by the seer. The definitive comment by the angel in v. 40 and the character of vv. 61–62 show that the end of the long third vision is approaching.

The passage plays a clear role within the overall framework of the third vision. All Ezra's attempts to find mercy for the wicked are rebuffed. Ezra, although he reflects love for humankind by his concern, in fact loves them less than God, whose love is expressed by his very joy over the righteous. Thus Ezra's argument on behalf of the wicked is misplaced, and he should rejoice, instead, over his own reward and that of those like him (8:46–49). This reward is detailed in the remarkable list in vv. 51–54.

The wicked have determined their own fate, denying God even though they knew that they must die an eternal death (8:56, 58). Their death and the corresponding life of the righteous, which is asserted in v. 46, bracket the heart of the passage. So the problem of the few and the many has been resolved—the many

perish not as God's responsibility, but as their own. The passage concludes with two classical, apocalyptic themes, the nearness of the end and the revelation of the secrets to the righteous (vv. 61–62a). Finally, Ezra seems to have accepted the angel's arguments and docilely turns in 8:63 to asking questions about the signs. His understanding has reached a new stage that makes such questions relevant.

8:62b–9:22, Section 3: Direct Prediction. This pericope falls into four sections, with questions by the seer alternating with addresses by the angel. If we take the direct predictions at the end of the first two visions together, they present events that are to occur at the time of the messianic woes and at the Day of Judgment (5:1–13; 6:11–29). Although the present passage fulfills a corresponding role at the end of the third vision, it does not add to their list of events. Instead, it focuses on the issue of when the signs will take place. This is a question that has been on the seer's mind since early in the first vision (4:33). Here Ezra is told that when he observes the predicted signs starting to happen he will know the end is near (9:1–4). The importance and use of such lists of signs is to enable those who know them to tell when the end is coming.

Verses 5–6 are somewhat obscure but seem to introduce the idea of the purposiveness of creation, or the divine intent expressed in the eschatological reward. The eschatological redemption is described only very briefly and then, in 9:10–11, the angel returns to the idea that repentance is only possible in this world. In conclusion, Ezra reasserts the position that he has held throughout this vision, but now he neither argues with nor reproaches God (9:14–16).

The angel's final address accepts Ezra's answer and strongly reasserts the relationship between deed and reward (9:17). Disobedience is the work of humankind, not of God, who takes responsibility for the righteous and their perfection. The images used for the righteous are drawn from earlier passages in the book.

9:23–25, Section 3: Conclusion and Injunctions. In the concluding injunctions Ezra is commanded to live in an open field for seven days, eating only the flowers that grow there. At the end of that period, the angel promises, "I will come and talk with you" (v. 25).

9:26–10:59
Fourth Vision

The fourth vision is pivotal in the structure of the book and displays a major shift in the author's perceptions. It begins much like the previous three visions, but concludes with the description of a profound waking experience much different from any the seer has undergone before.

9:26–28, Introduction. A new narrative context is set by the new physical location (the field) and by the eating of the flowers. The seer's distress, inspiration, and speech are described here just as in the first three visions.

9:29–37, Address. The address is exactly parallel in function to those with which the first three visions began. A question is posed to God based on a recital of history (cf. 3:4–36; 6:38–59). God revealed himself to Israel in the wilderness and pronounced the law (9:29–31); God's speech, quoted directly, does not occur in the Bible, but is derived from 3:20–22.

Here Ezra's concern is refocused. He has accepted the angel's views on divine providence and theodicy. Now anomalies about the idea of Torah become central. God gave Torah, yet left the evil inclination in the heart of the people, so the Torah was unable to produce its fruit of eternal life. These ideas, already raised tellingly in 3:19–22, are here brought up again even more acutely. The anomaly is that the eternal Torah survives the vessel that contains it.

9:38–10:4, Vision, First Part. The vision does not respond to the real problems raised in the address. The author is conscious of this, as is clear from 9:39 ("abandoning my meditations," NEB) and 10:5 ("I interrupted the train of my thoughts," NEB). Since he is a skilled writer, this discontinuity probably arose from the author's actual vision experience. That experience caused a reorientation of his perception of the world as a result of which the former issues ceased to concern him.

The passage is composed of initial description (9:38–39), Ezra's dialogue with the woman (9:40–42), and the woman's tale (9:43–10:4). She tells him that, barren for thirty years, she eventually bore a child and raised him, and that on the day of his marriage he fell down dead. She fled to the field, determined to mourn until she died. It has been suggested that this is a folktale, used by the author of 4 Ezra for his own purposes. If so, then the story is incomplete, for it has no ending, and it is well integrated into the book.

In a number of respects the figures of Ezra and the woman are parallel. Her thirty barren years can be compared with the thirty years since the fall of Jerusalem in 3:1. Her fasting, mourning, and weeping exactly parallel Ezra's in the previous part of the book.

10:5–24, Vision, Second Part. Ezra then talks to the mourning woman to comfort her (10:5–17), and her response (10:18) is followed by his final address (10:19–24). The most important aspect of this passage is the change in Ezra's role from the one comforted to comforter. We noted above that the mourning woman took on many of the characteristics that Ezra himself, as mourner for Zion, had borne previously. Just as the woman plays Ezra's role, Ezra now takes on that of the

angel. He reproves the woman (10:6), just as the angel reproved him (e.g., 4:2; 5:33). Like the angel, here Ezra implies that the woman does not see the whole picture. Moreover, there are clear parallels between the rhetorical techniques the angel used earlier and those Ezra now employs (cf. 7:54 with 10:9; 5:51–53 with 10:12–14). The author uses these literary means to mark the change in Ezra's own understanding and spiritual state.

This reversal of roles flows from Ezra's acceptance of the implications of the angel's prior teaching. Although he had, even at the end of the third vision, encountered difficulty in accepting the ideas about the few and the many, here he uses them to comfort the woman (10:10). Even further, he who had questioned God's justice consoles her, saying, "If you acknowledge the decree of God to be just, you will receive your son back in due time" (10:16, NRSV). Thus Ezra consoles the woman using the very ideas and concepts he himself has struggled to accept from the beginning of the book.

10:25–27a, Transformation. This passage is unique in Jewish apocalyptic literature. Four stages of transformation are described: the illumination of the woman's countenance (10:25), her cry and the shaking of the earth (10:26), her transformation into a city (10:27), and Ezra's cry of terror. The city is, of course, the heavenly Jerusalem.

The most striking thing about this section is the intensity of the seer's experience. Sight, hearing, and physical orientation are disturbed until the terrified Ezra cries out for his angelic guide and loses consciousness (10:28–30). What is being described is an intense emotional experience analogous to conversion, i.e., the restructuring of personality in light of beliefs previously assented to, and an ensuing enlightenment. Each of the various elements of this experience have parallels earlier in the book (cf. 6:13–16; 7:125; see Dan. 10:6).

10:27b–37, The Appearance of the Angel. The angel appears in response to Ezra's call, just as in 5:31 and 7:1. The familiar figure of the angel connects this rather different experience to the preceding ones. The description of Ezra's faint in v. 30 and the dialogue with the angel in vv. 31–37 convey a strong sense of his inner turmoil. Ezra is commanded to stand (10:33), as he was twice previously (6:13; 7:2). This is a sign of the particular solemnity of the revelation that is to follow (cf. 14:2).

10:38–54, The Interpretation. The central message of the vision, the restoration of Zion, is the consolation Ezra sought. The passage makes three points. First, the vision is called a revelation of secrets (10:38–39). Note how the interpretation is bracketed by references to the revelation of secrets (10:38, 55–59). Second, the interpretation proper is given, opening with a formal title (10:40) and followed by a summary of the contents of the vision (10:41–43). A detailed interpretation of most of the vision ensues: the woman is Zion; her thirty years of barrenness are the three hundred years before offerings were made in Zion; the birth of the son is Solomon's building of the city; his careful nurture is the time of Israel's habitation of the city; and his death is the destruction of Zion (10:44–48). Third, the angel explains Ezra's experience to him (10:49–54). Verse 38 tells us of Ezra's fear; v. 55 of its reversal.

In his vision Ezra sees both the woman and her transformation into a city. These two parts of the same vision differ: whereas the woman symbolizes Zion, the city *is* Zion. Both elements are seen in the vision, and both are explained in the interpretation. Moreover, the city is not said to disappear, nor is Ezra said to wake from a dream. The vision experience continues throughout.

10:55–59, Conclusion and Injunctions. Structurally, this section resembles the conclusions of the preceding visions: encouragement, 10:55; injunctions, 10:55b–56; explanation, 10:57; and concluding injunctions, 10:58–59. The content, however, differs. Ezra is told to go in and see the building, implying that the building is still there (10:55). He is to see "as much as the eye can see" (cf. 1 Cor. 2:9), indicating special revelation of an esoteric type.

11:1–12:51
Fifth Vision

The fifth vision, a symbolic dream vision and interpretation, conveys the message of the imminent end of the hated Roman Empire and the coming of the messianic kingdom. It stands in a long tradition of political visions, the chief biblical representatives of which are Daniel 2 and 7. The interpretation of this vision is crucial for dating 4 Ezra.

11:1a, Introduction. Unlike in the preceding visions, here there is no description of the seer's psychological state, only the observation that he saw a dream.

11:1b–12:3a, Vision. A long passage narrates the content of the complex symbolic dream. The dream falls into three chief parts, the description of the eagle (11:1b–35), the judgment scene (11:36–46), and the execution of the judgment (12:1–3a).

The dream is described in very great detail. Expressions like "and I looked and behold" mark the introduction of new elements and form one of the notable characteristics of the style of this passage. The various stages are: general description (11:1b), initial stance of the eagle (11:2–4), the eagle's rule over the whole earth

(11:5–6), preparation for the rule of the wings and the heads (11:7–9), summary and observations (11:10–11), rule of the wings on the right-hand side (11:12–19), rule of the wings on the left-hand side (11:20–21), summary (11:22–23), rule of four small wings (11:24–27), fate of remaining two small wings (11:28–32), fate of the heads (11:33–35), appearance of the lion (11:36–37), indictment of the eagle (11:38–43), sentencing of the eagle (11:44–46), and execution of the sentence (12:1–3a).

The last three stages (11:38–12:3a) clearly represent a legal process, including the laying of specific charges, the sentencing, and the execution of the sentence. Although the animal symbolism is sustained throughout the vision, God is not included in the symbolic structure. A measure of self-involvement of the seer in the dream is found (11:36), as is usual in dreams, but there is no hint of an angelic guide or of any action attributed to the seer. This vision is much more typical of apocalypses than are those found in the preceding sections of the book.

12:3b–9, Seer's Response. Opening with an introduction (12:3b), the response passage continues with a brief soliloquy by Ezra (12:4–6; cf. 7:62) and a prayer to God (12:7–9). Like 10:25–37 and 13:13b–20, this section recounts the seer's response to the dream and his prayer for enlightenment. All three passages contain the sequential elements of fear, wonderment, and prayer. At the literary level the passage carries readers from the dream to the interpretation. The appearance of the angel, as in the sixth vision, is assumed, but not described.

12:10–36, Interpretation. In the interpretation the symbols are each stated, and then their meaning is given. The introduction (12:11–12) is followed by seven stages of interpretation (12:13–34), ending with a conclusion (12:35–36). The dream is explicitly said to be of the fourth of the beasts that Daniel saw (12:11–12), referring to Daniel 7. It is extremely rare that an apocalyptic vision is set in an explicit relation to other visions. The various wings, little wings, and heads are identified as kings and rulers of an empire. The lion is the Messiah, and the destruction of the eagle is the freeing of the earth from the tyranny of that empire.

The vision is thus interpreted as a summary presentation of the history of the Roman Empire. Historical surveys of this sort are particularly prevalent in the literature of the Second Temple period (after 520 B.C.; see Dan. 7; 10–12; *1 Enoch* 85–90). History is presented as a schematic process. The author's interest is not merely in the abstract presentation of such a scheme, but in discerning just where he stands in this process. A similar interest is betrayed in Ezra's question at the end of the third vision (8:63).

As in many apocalyptic overviews of history, the point at which the author moves from the telling of past history to real prediction may be assumed to indicate the date at which the book was written. Thus the exact identification of the wings, little wings, and heads is of great importance. The author seems to move from history to prediction in the time of the third head. The most persuasive suggestion would make the second wing Augustus and the three heads Vespasian, Titus, and Domitian. If so, the vision was written in the time of Domitian, A.D. 81–96, probably in the early 90s.

12:37–39, Conclusion and Injunctions. This section is structurally parallel to the conclusions of the first four visions. Ezra is commanded to write the vision in a book, to hide it, and to teach it only to the truly wise (cf. Dan. 12:4). This is the first such command in 4 Ezra, and the theme is central to chap. 14. Ezra has become the recipient of secrets that are to be transmitted further.

12:40–51, Narrative Interlude. Verse 51 is properly part of the preceding section; the rest is a narrative interlude. The only other such narrative interlude is 5:16–19, which comes after the first vision. Here, the passage is composed of an introduction (12:40), the people's address to Ezra (12:41–45a), Ezra's response (12:45b–49), and a narrative conclusion (12:50).

A key to the understanding of this passage is the familiar concept "it would be better to die than live." This was Ezra's piercing cry in 4:12, and now the people pronounce it (12:44). God's spokesman, the angel, comforted Ezra in chap. 4; here Ezra comforts the people in God's name. Thus, as in the fourth vision, a reversal of roles has taken place. Ezra is called a prophet by the people (12:42), a title that is now appropriate, since he speaks for God. This designation fits with his full assumption of the role of apocalyptic seer, already evident in the preceding pericope. He tells the people who inquire after his doings merely that he has been "praying on account of Zion." In accordance with the command to conceal the secrets, Ezra does not hint at the revelation he has received.

13:1–13:58
Sixth Vision

In a dream Ezra sees a man arising from the sea and conquering his enemies. The man is interpreted as the servant who will overcome the wicked in the eschatological battle and gather the scattered tribes of Israel. The dream provides a more detailed discussion of certain things spoken of in the preceding vision. The redeemer figure is described as a "man." His title and superhuman character have been compared with those of the Son of man in *1 Enoch* and in the NT.

13:1, Introduction. A simple verse records Ezra's dream after seven days (cf. 12:39, 51).

13:2–13a, Dream. The narrative of the dream falls into four episodes separated by "after this, I looked and behold": the appearance of the man (13:2–4); preparations for attack and defense (13:5–7); the battle (13:8–11); and the redemption (13:12–13a). It is set in a very simple narrative framework, and its symbol structure is also simple when compared with the fifth vision.

The man appears from the sea (cf. Dan. 7:2–3). He flies on the clouds of heaven (cf. Dan. 7:13), and wherever he turns all melt. A multitude assembles to attack him, and he bestrides a mountain. They attack, but he destroys them with his fiery breath. Then a peaceful multitude assembles before him. What is notable is that the language used to describe the man's appearance and activity is suggestive of a superhuman or cosmic role. The flying on clouds, the melting of enemies, and the fiery breath are all elements usually found of God as divine warrior (cf. Pss. 18:7–15; 29:3–9).

13:13b–20a, Seer's Response. Like 12:36–39, this passage forms a bridge between the dream and its interpretation. Ezra prays to the Most High, referring to his own worthiness. He concludes with two cries of "Alas!" based on his own understanding of the vision. Significantly, 13:20a is a reversal of what Ezra and the community had previously said, "Better my death than my life" (4:12; 12:44). Now Ezra asserts, "Better to be alive at the end than dead." An important change has taken place in his understanding.

13:20b–55, Interpretation. The angel's explanation of the dream is composed of an introduction and an answer to the seer's question (13:20b–24), the interpretation of the dream (13:25–53a), and a conclusion (13:53b–55). In this passage there is considerable repetition and lack of clarity. The man is interpreted three times (13:25–26, 32, 51–52); the sequence of events is interrupted (cf. vv. 25–26, 32–39). In his response (13:20b–24) to Ezra's words the angel reasserts the seer's position, using language very close to that of 9:7–8. He then proceeds to interpret the dream. The angel says that the man is the precreated Messiah who will deliver creation and rule the remnant (see 3:6; 6:6; 9:8; 12:32 on precreation). The interpretation of the mountain is influenced by Dan. 2:34 and contradicts the vision (cf. 13:6, 36). The fiery elements that destroy the enemies in the dream are here interpreted in legal terms.

The tight relationship between vision and interpretation observed in the fourth and fifth visions is absent. Moreover, the brief dream here contrasts with the diffuse, somewhat incoherent interpretation. A number of elements of the dream are not interpreted, while many elements of the interpretation are not hinted at in the dream. Most striking is the long description of the ten tribes (13:40–47) to which the author appends a description of the redemption of those in the land (13:48–50), a description having no basis in the vision. The author seems to be writing an interpretation to an inherited symbol structure. This would explain the disjunction of dream and interpretation. Notably, the figure of the Messiah in the interpretation is congruent with the rest of the book, whereas the figure in the dream, with its superhuman, cosmic characteristics, draws on a different tradition with analogies elsewhere in the period of the Second Temple.

13:56–58, Conclusion and Injunctions. The brief conclusion contains an angelic assurance, an injunction, and the promise of future revelations. The praise of Ezra's love of wisdom shows that he has reached a stage when he will be told "yet weightier and more wondrous matters."

14:1–48
Seventh Vision

The concluding vision differs from all those preceding. It is the story of a waking experience, a direct revelation from God to Ezra, culminating in the revelation of the Scriptures, both public and secret. It concludes with Ezra's translation to heaven.

14:1–2, Introduction. God calls to Ezra from a bush, using the same formula of summons and response as in the calls of Abraham, Moses, and Samuel (Gen. 22:1; Exod. 3:4; 1 Sam. 3:4–8).

14:3–18, Address. The divine address to Ezra, instructing him as to his conduct, may be divided into three parts: history of the revelation to Moses (14:3–6), prediction (14:7–12), and final injunctions (14:13–18).

The crucial nature of this vision is highlighted by various means. The vision opens with an address by God, not by the seer. The history starts from the call of Moses and the Exodus, and climaxes with Sinai. (The direct quotation of God's speech that occurs in v. 6 is not from the Bible, but is apparently related to 14:45–46; cf. 9:31.) The theme of secret and public revelation is introduced and recurs throughout this vision (see 12:37–38). The command to remember the "signs," "dreams," and "interpretations" (14:8) focuses all the eschatological prophecies of the book in this vision. The double prediction of Ezra's end and the end of the world (14:9–12, 16–18) heightens the sense of impending doom. This sense is reinforced by the foretelling of Ezra's ascension (14:9), by the prediction of the division of the times (14:11–12), by the announcement of the senescence of the earth and the consequent woes (14:10, 16–18a), and by the foretelling of the coming of the eagle (14:18b). The imminence of this final prophecy is marked by the expression "and now."

14:19–22, Speech. Ezra accepts the injunctions God has laid upon him, and at the end of v. 20, he poses a question to God: how will his reproof be received by those still unborn? To resolve this issue he asks for inspiration from the Holy Spirit so that he can write down "the things which were written in your law" (14:22, NRSV).

14:23–26, Injunctions. Ezra's prayer is granted, and God issues instructions to him. Ezra, to whom the Scriptures will be revealed anew, is to depart for forty days, like Moses. He is to comfort the people, prepare writing tablets, and take skilled scribes with him.

14:27–36, Ezra's Speech. In accordance with the divine command Ezra addresses the people. He calls for attention (14:28), relates the historical sins of Israel that account for the present situation (14:29–33), exhorts the people and promises them reward (14:34–35), and concludes with an injunction (14:36). The formula "Hear these words, O Israel" (14:28) occurs also in 9:30 and recalls Deuteronomy. The historical recital serves to highlight God's grace and Israel's unfaithfulness, much like the use of such recitals in the Bible (e.g., Ezra 9; Neh. 9; Ps. 106; cf. the use of historical recital earlier in 4 Ezra 3). The exhortation assures the people that if only they repent, they will receive eternal life. The theme taken up is that of Torah, one that had been raised, but not resolved in 9:29–37.

14:37–48, Revelation of Scriptures. These verses describe the execution of the commands laid upon Ezra by God in 14:23–26. Ezra returns to the field with the five men (cf. v. 37). The next day he undergoes a waking experience in which he is given a goblet full of the Holy Spirit to drink. He senses the influx of inspiration, the feeling of enlightenment. He retains its content and is able to articulate it, so that the scribes can write it (14:38–41). This is a remarkable description of an experience that transcends those related previously. It not only authenticates Ezra's vision, but also explains how he could have written ninety-four books in forty days. The five scribes are also said to be inspired and to write in an unknown script. The crucial point is reached in God's instructions to Ezra concerning the disposal of the newly revealed books. Twenty-four books (one traditional reckoning of the Hebrew Bible) are to be made known publicly; the remaining seventy are to be transmitted secretly. These secret books are said to contain saving knowledge (14:47). They apparently include 4 Ezra itself, for in 12:37–38 the eagle vision is described using the same language as is here used of the secret books. The theme of life is taken up. The Scriptures are given so that "those who want to live in the last days may live" (14:22, NRSV).

In a certain way, chap. 14 is about the revelation of 4 Ezra itself. This conclusion is also indicated by the parallel between the forty days of the six previous visions and the forty days of the seventh vision. The revelation that is at the heart of this narrative is both that of the ninety-four books and that of the secrets of the times that Ezra has received. It forms a true climax to the spiritual quest and saga of Ezra's development.

The final verse (14:48) is uncertain on textual grounds, but clearly in view of 14:15 some description of Ezra's translation is demanded.

Part Three: 15:1–16:78
The Sixth Book of Ezra

6 Ezra predicts and describes calamities that will soon occur on the earth and promises deliverance to those of God's people who refrain from sin.

15:1–4
The Prophetic Commission

God instructs the prophet, who here and throughout 6 Ezra remains unnamed, not only to speak his prophecy, but also to record it in writing.

15:5–16:34
Prediction of Worldwide Catastrophes

Through the prophet, God announces that destruction and calamities are about to take place in the world in general and in certain specific locations as punishment for human sin. These "woes" form part of the traditional historical schema of prophetic and eschatological literature (cf. 5:1–13, 6:17–24, and commentary).

15:5–19, Forecasting of Calamities. After briefly reviewing the impending woes, the prophet states that these are actions of punishment by God that are brought about by iniquity on earth, especially that practiced against innocent and righteous people. The consequent tribulation will be universal (15:14) and will manifest itself in the form of violence in society. The events predicted in vv. 15–19 find parallels elsewhere in eschatological literature (cf. Mark 13 and parallels; 4 Ezra 5:1–2, 9–10; 13:30–31).

15:20–27, Condemnation of Sinners. An indictment is delivered against sinners that encompasses both rulers who persecute the righteous (15:20–21) and sinners among God's people (15:24–25). This theme of condemnation of sin is recurrent in 6 Ezra (see esp. 16:53–67, 76–78).

15:28–33, Vision of Conflict in the East. The prophet describes a vision of two military forces engaged in battle in the east. It is generally thought that these two forces represent the troops of Odenathus of Palmyra ("the Arabian dragons," v. 29) and those of Shapur I of

Persia ("the Carmonians," v. 30), which fought on the eastern borders of the Roman Empire in A.D. 260–261. If this identification is correct, it establishes the earliest possible date of composition for the work.

15:34–45, Vision of Storm Clouds. The seer proceeds to relate a symbolic vision of storm clouds that arise from various directions, come into conflict, and pour out destruction on the earth. Eventually the storm clouds reach and destroy "Babylon," almost certainly a symbolic representation of Rome (see 3:28–36 and commentary above; cf. Rev. 14:8; 18:2–3). Although 15:43–45 thus anticipates (as in Revelation) or describes the destruction of Rome, it is not possible to identify with precision the historical events (if any) represented in 15:34–42.

15:46–63, Condemnation of Asia. The prophecy turns to a condemnation of Asia for "shar[ing] in the splendor" (15:46, NRSV) of the "hateful" Babylon (again to be identified with Rome; cf. esp. Rev. 17:3–5; 18:3). Because of its imitation of Rome's harlotry and its persecution of God's people, Asia will be totally devastated; in fact, the agents of Rome's destruction will turn back to plunder Asia (15:60). The special attention given here to the fate of Asia makes it seem possible that 6 Ezra was composed in this province.

16:1–17, The Inevitability of God's Judgment. After the prophet threatens destruction to four major parts of the Roman Empire (16:1–2), his discourse takes a more reflective turn. Employing a series of rhetorical questions set in parallel structure (16:3–11), the seer uses examples from the spheres of natural and human activity to emphasize the conclusiveness of God's judgment, once it has been set in motion (cf. Amos 3:3–8).

16:18–34, Prediction of Desolation on the Earth. The prophet envisions the initial stages of the impending catastrophes, then sketches in graphic terms the desolation that will prevail on earth in their wake. The idea of desolation as a result of God's judgment is familiar from prophetic and eschatological literature (cf. Isa. 6:11; Zeph. 3:6). In addition, various of the specific images employed here find parallels elsewhere (to 6 Ezra 16:28, cf. Amos 5:3; Matt. 24:40–41; to 6 Ezra 16:29–31, cf. Isa. 17:6; to 6 Ezra 16:32, cf. Isa. 7:23–25).

16:35–78
Exhortation of God's People

Whereas the first major part of 6 Ezra is concerned exclusively with prediction of woes (15:5–16:34), the book's final section focuses on the exhortation of God's people. God's elect are counseled to withdraw from worldly activity and to abstain rigorously from sin, in view of the impending calamities.

16:35–52, Advice and Instruction. The prophet warns God's people of the imminence of the coming destruction and exhorts them to be like "strangers on earth" (16:40) during the time of tribulation. Every worldly activity should be undertaken as though it will not bear fruit, since in fact the land will soon be plundered and its inhabitants taken captive.

The image of childbirth in 16:38–39 is close to that in 4:40–42 and to 1 Thess. 5:3. Also, the literarily parallel statements that make up 16:41–47 show similarities to Deut. 28:30–33, 38–42; 1 Cor. 7:29–31.

16:53–67, Warnings to Sinners. As was noted above (see commentary above on 15:20–27), 6 Ezra features a strong polemic against sin. The present section stresses the futility of trying to hide one's sins from God. The recital of God's acts of creation in 16:55–62, intended to underscore the Creator's omniscience, finds parallels in wisdom literature (cf. Job 38; Sir. 43) and in apocalyptic literature (cf. 4 Ezra 4:5–9; *1 Enoch* 93:11–14).

16:68–73, Prediction of Persecution. The seer anticipates the advent of a terrible persecution against "those who fear the Lord" (16:70; cf. 15:8–10, 20–21, 52–56). This persecution will demonstrate the "tested quality" (16:73) of God's chosen people.

16:74–78, Concluding Instruction to the Elect. The prophetic discourse concludes with a reassurance of salvation to the elect and a stern warning to them not to be overcome by sin.

Bibliography

Bergren, T. A. *Fifth Ezra: The Text, Origin and Early History*. Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1990.

———. *Sixth Ezra: The Text and Origin*. New York/Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1998.

Box, G. H. "4 Ezra." In *Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament*. 2 vols. Edited by R. H. Charles. Oxford: Clarendon, 1913. Vol. 2, pp. 542–624.

Coggins, R. J., and M. A. Knibb. *The First and Second Books of Esdras*. Cambridge Bible Commentary on the New English Bible. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1979.

Myers, J. M. *I and II Esdras*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1974.

Stone, M. E. "Coherence and Inconsistency in the Apocalypses: The Case of 'The End' in 4 Ezra." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 102 (1983): 229–43.

———. *Fourth Ezra*. Hermeneia. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1990.

Tobit

GEORGE W. E. NICKELSBURG

INTRODUCTION

Literary Analysis

Tobit as Narrative

Tobit is a piece of historical fiction set in the Assyrian captivity that recounts the sufferings of a pious Israelite and his family and God's alleviation of these troubles. From a literary point of view Tobit is a rich and complex text that eludes simple analysis. Taken as a whole, however, the work is a sophisticated and carefully crafted narrative.

Briefly, this is the plot. In spite of his faithfulness to God and his many deeds of mercy to others, Tobit suffers greatly. When he can no longer believe that God will deliver him, he prays for death. In another city, his relative Sarah also sees death as the only likely solution to her suffering. But when all appears hopeless, God sends healing by means of the angel Raphael. Parallel to the story of Tobit is the uncompleted story of Israel. Tobit's situation is paradigmatic for the exiled nation. As God has chastised Tobit, so Israel, suffering in exile, is being chastised. But God's mercy on Tobit and his family guarantees that this mercy will bring the Israelites back to their land. Since this event, described only in predictions, awaits fulfillment, one level of the double story is incomplete.

The author's mastery of narrative technique is evident at many points. The plot develops, is complicated, and is resolved in classic fashion. Parallel scenes advance the plot and develop characterization. Narrative tension is maintained by revealing to readers what the characters do not know and by moving in and out of alternating scenes with different subplots and characters. These characters are exemplary in their piety and believable in their human flaws. The protagonist, Tobit, is a complex figure. Although he epitomizes the right life and is articulate in his conviction that God rewards the righteous, he can vacillate between faith and doubt. His movement, however, from despair at the beginning to doxology at the end offers a model and a promise for readers who can empathize with his predicament. Humor is an important component in Tobit, and one often senses the author's delight in entertaining readers. This factor notwithstanding, the book is a serious treatment of the religious problem of innocent suffering.

Other Literary Forms

Although the author writes narrative, the complex use of other literary forms enriches the work and complicates the issue of its genre. The characters express sorrow and praise in prayers and hymns written in the diction and forms of contemporary Israelite liturgical usage. Twice Tobit instructs his son in a deathbed testament. First he speaks in proverbs. Later, his prediction of future events is reminiscent of historical apocalypses such as Daniel 7–12. God's resolution of Tobit's suffering, which dominates the narrative, is recounted in an extended angelic epiphany, or appearance.

In addition to these clearly discernible forms are traces of folkloristic motifs and themes such as "the grateful dead" and "the dangerous bride." Also reflected is the traditional tale of the persecuted and vindicated courtier (Dan. 1–6; Esther; and the nonbiblical story of Ahiqar). Finally, Tobit evinces striking parallels with the first three books of Homer's *Odyssey* and Genesis 27–29, two accounts of young men on a journey.

Religious Dimensions

The literary complexity of Tobit mirrors the richness of the book's religious expression. Fundamentally, the work makes a multifaceted statement about the interrelationships of God, humanity, and the world, and it does so through many traditional religious themes. Basic is the assertion that a providential God orchestrates the events of life and history for the benefit of Israel and the Israelites (→ Providence). Faithfulness to God and love toward others are rewarded.

The author's assertions about the sovereignty of God do not avoid the problematic aspects of human experience, which are explained in several ways. Evil spirits wreak havoc on the righteous and innocent. Since the righteous are not perfect, the merciful God must sometimes "scourge" or "chastise" them before providing their due rewards. The dispensing of such rewards is, moreover, no simple matter and involves a

complex divine juggling act; final benefit for all requires temporary suffering for some. A central factor in the book is the inability of human beings to perceive divine activity. This failure to understand is, in an important sense, the point of the work. God's purpose moves on in spite of human ignorance of it. Heaven's decisions and actions are hidden from human knowledge. The healing angel is thought to be merely a friendly and helpful companion. A journey undertaken for one purpose has unimaginably beneficial consequences. People widely separated wrongly suppose that the worst is happening. The resolution of the plot involves a revelation—not simply of the angel's identity, but of the triumph of God's purpose and the frailty of human faith. Tobit is not an apocalyptic work. Nonetheless, in its two-storied universe, with angels and demons, its claim that God's hidden purposes are operative, and its assertion that God's triumph will be revealed, the book owes a debt to apocalyptic texts like *1 Enoch* (→ Angel; Demon; Apocalyptic Literature).

Although the author's eye is on the workings of the heavenly court, God intervenes on earth in human life and history. God and the angels are "with" the righteous as they live their lives and "with" Israel in its exile. Human beings are healed now, and final healing will restore the people to their land and again give them access to the sanctuary from which they apostasized.

Constitutive of the book's portrayal of God's activity on earth is its own version of the cross-cultural myth of the disguised heavenly helper. NT students will find here one prototype for the Marcan Gospel's story of Jesus, the hidden Son of God who comes to heal and combat Satan, and whose unique saving death reveals his identity.

For the author of Tobit, God's merciful, saving activity is cause for doxology, and the book is replete with hymns and hymnic language. Tobit's progress from doubt to affirmation is marked by his successive use of a prayer of lament and a hymn of praise. It is not accidental that the book itself is said to be a doxological confession of God's great and marvelous activity (12:16–22).

Social Aspects

For the author of Tobit, religion is embodied in social realities—of which we are given some tantalizing glimpses. Marriage and family are central for social stability and for Israelite national and religious identity. Of marriage customs and family obligations there are numerous hints. Within this domestic sphere the men dominate, although the portrayal of Anna mitigates somewhat this patriarchal familial structure. When the author focuses on religious matters, men are clearly privileged and superior to women. Proper burial of the dead is a pervasive concern. The pious life is enacted in concrete deeds of loving-kindness. Thus, the religious obligation to bring tithes and first fruits is intended to benefit others, and the rich have a special responsibility to share their wealth through the giving of alms.

For Israelites in exile the righteous life has its negative social consequences. Tobit is persecuted and ridiculed by antagonistic and unsympathetic neighbors. The importance of endogamy (i.e., marriage within one's own tribal group) must be underscored, because intermarriage and assimilation are an easy capitulation to the social pressures felt in a minority situation.

Place and Time of Writing

Tobit is thoroughly exilic in its viewpoint, and return to the land of Israel and Jerusalem is a consummation devoutly to be awaited. These factors, inextricably woven into the narrative fabric, strongly suggest that the book was written in the Diaspora (i.e., among Jews living outside the land of Palestine). A date in the third century B.C. seems likely, although the oral and folkloric roots are older.

Text

Tobit was composed in Aramaic and translated into Hebrew and Greek. The Greek was transmitted in a long form (G^2, supported by the Old Latin version) and a short form (G^1). Fragments of several Aramaic and Hebrew manuscripts from Qumran indicate that the long form is more original (although it lacks two sections found in G^1 and the Old Latin: 4:7–19; 13:6–10a). All major English editions are now based on the long form. This commentary follows that form, but makes occasional reference to possible original readings in G^1 (sometimes supported by the Old Latin).

COMMENTARY

1:1–2

Superscription

The superscription describes the work as "the book of the words of Tobit"; it was written at the command of the angel Raphael (12:20) as a doxological confession of God's intervention in the lives of the protagonists. The name Tobit is a Greek form of the Hebrew name

Tobi, probably short for Tobiah ("Yahweh is my good"), which in the present work is the name of Tobit's son (in Gk., Tobias). Tobit's home was in Thisbe, a city the author locates in upper Galilee. The location is the first of a number of parallels with *1 Enoch,* which describes certain mythic events as taking place in the same general area (*1 Enoch* 13:4–10).

1:3–2:10
Tobit's Piety and Its Consequences

The narrative begins as Tobit recounts his piety and its anomalous consequences. Although he did not participate in Israel's apostasy, he and his family were taken into exile, where his pious concern cost him his job and his physical well-being.

1:3–9
Tobit in Galilee

The first-person singular narrative begun here will continue until 3:7, when the story of Sarah is introduced by an anonymous third-person narrator who will recount the rest of the story. Using the idiom of the two ways (1:3; see commentary below on 4:3–19), Tobit describes himself as a righteous Israelite who devotes himself to acts of kindness for his exiled compatriots in Assyrian Nineveh.

This activity is traced back to his days in Israel, where he was an exception among the apostates in the Northern Kingdom (1:4–8). Tobit describes the prevailing situation—Jeroboam's schism and his establishment of a rival sanctuary at Dan (1 Kings 12:25–33; cf. Tob. 2:6, the quotation of Amos's oracle against Bethel). The divine establishment of the Jerusalem Temple will be emphasized in chap. 14. In the midst of Israelite apostates, Tobit is singularly faithful to the Jerusalem sanctuary, to which he makes the pilgrimages prescribed in the "eternal commandment" in the Mosaic Torah (Deut. 16:16–17). Tied to these pilgrimages are the obligations to bring first fruits and tithes: first fruits of crops (Deut. 26:1–11); tithes of herds (Lev. 27:32); first shearings (Deut. 18:4); tithes of crops (Lev. 27:30; Deut. 14:22–23); a tithe turned into money (Deut. 14:25); and the third-year tithe for the orphans, widows, and sojourners (Deut. 14:28–29). Emphasized in this recitation are the Israelites' obligations to Jerusalem and to the Aaronidic priesthood, the Levites, and the poor and deprived. Concerning the last, Tobit will say much more later. Tobit learned the law from his grandmother, Deborah. This reference to the family is the first of many. Already in the next sentence, Tobit states that he married a woman from his own kindred; in 4:12–13 he will instruct their son, Tobias, to do so as well.

1:10–2:10
Tobit's Piety in Assyria

The deportation to Assyria provides the story of Tobit with the diaspora setting that is presumed for the rest of the narrative. As before, Tobit's piety is the author's central concern, but now this pious conduct has disastrous consequences.

1:10–15, Tobit's Success in Shalmaneser's Court. With the deportation (722 B.C.; see 2 Kings 17), Tobit takes up residence in Nineveh, the capital of Assyria, where he remains the pious exception. Tob. 1:10–13 is reminiscent of Dan. 1:8–20, where Daniel and his friends rise to prominence in a Mesopotamian court after maintaining righteous conduct in a gentile context. Other elements typical of Daniel 3 and 6 will occur in Tob. 1:16–22. Tobit's deposit of money and inability to retrieve it are crucial for the development of the plot in chaps. 4–11. That the Israelite Gabael lives in Media (as do Sarah and her family, 3:7) can be explained by 2 Kings 17:6, which locates part of the deportees in the cities of Media.

Although the text follows the narrative in 2 Kings 17–18, its historical statements and inferences are incorrect. The succession of Assyrian kings was Shalmaneser V, 727–722 B.C.; Sargon II, 722–705; Sennacherib, 705–681; and Esarhaddon, 681–669. Shalmaneser and Sennacherib were brothers, not father and son. Although Sargon defeated Samaria and deported the Israelites, his absence here and in the next section is probably due to the omission of his name in 2 Kings.

1:16–22, Tobit Persecuted and Restored. Events here parallel Daniel 3 and 6. The Israelite courtier is persecuted for righteous deeds and then restored to high position. Different from Daniel, the persecution and restoration of Tobit occur under successive kings, and the righteous deeds are acts of mercy, deeds of particular interest to this author. On feeding the hungry and clothing the naked, see Tob. 4:16. The concern is emphasized by the many commands to give alms (cf. 4:7–11). On burial of the dead, cf. 2:1–10; 4:3–4; 6:14; 8:12; 14:10–13. The importance of burial is presumed in the Hebrew Bible, as it is throughout the literature of the ancient world. Exposure of bodies was especially abhorrent (cf. Deut. 28:26; 1 Kings 21:24; 2 Kings 9:30–37; Ps. 79:2–3). Sennacherib's murder of Judeans (Tob. 1:18) is not indicated in 2 Kings 19, 2 Chronicles 32, or Isaiah 37, although his defeat is seen as divine punishment. Although Sennacherib's death occurred two decades after his siege of Jerusalem, 2 Kings 19:35–37; 2 Chron. 32:20–21; and Isa. 37:37–38 suggest a much shorter period of time (here specified as forty days). Again the author of Tobit is misled. Tobit's persecution for burying the victims of the king is reminiscent of Euripides' *Antigone.*

In 1:21–22 Tobit identifies Ahiqar as his nephew. The story of Ahiqar was a popular tale about a sage in the court of Esarhaddon who was conspired against by his nephew Nadin (called Nadab in 14:10–11), condemned to death, rescued, and restored to power. The plot parallels Daniel 3 and 6. The earliest evidence for the story is fifth-century B.C. Aramaic papyrus found at the ruins of the Egyptian Jewish colony of Elephantine. Neither the manuscript nor the later versions of the text, translated into numerous other languages, indicate that Ahiqar was a Jew or a relative of someone named Tobit. The author of Tobit mentions Ahiqar again in 2:10; 11:18; 14:10, where details of the story's plot are given. Tob. 4:17 closely parallels a proverb in 2:10 of the Syriac version of the Ahiqar story.

2:1–10, Tobit's Blindness. This scene parallels the previous one: mention of a monarch; Tobit's burial of the dead; the disastrous consequences; and reference to Ahiqar's kindness. Different from 1:16–22, the consequences of this event will require most of the rest of the book to resolve.

The incident is typical of the characterization of Tobit and portrays one of the major problems dealt with in the book. The pious Israelite suffers because he attends to the needs of others. Tobit's piety is evident in his concern to bury the Israelite and in other details. He observes the feast of Pentecost, and, more important, he wishes to share his meal with the poor (cf. 1:17; Luke 14:12–24; 16:19–31). The references to ablution are puzzling. According to Num. 19:11–19, contact with the corpse renders one unclean for seven days. The present text suggests that Tobit's ablution cleanses him, so that he can enter his house (vv. 4–5). The sequence—burial, ablution, sleeping outdoors (vv. 7–9)—may indicate impurity (thus G^{I}), or it may simply provide narrative cause for the event that follows. The function of the reference to sunset is unclear. Does Tobit postpone the burial so that he can eat the meal on the feast day? Or has the detail been suggested by the references to sunset in Num. 19:19–22 and Amos 8:9? (See the next paragraph.)

The quotation of Amos 8:10 in Tob. 2:6 is ironic. The oracle against the sinners of Bethel, who trample on the poor and take their grain (Amos 5:11; 8:4–6) is here applied to the pious one who shares his bread with the poor. Elements in the Amos passage are woven into the narrative of Tobit: it is on a feast day (Tob. 2:1) that Tobit's joy turns to sorrow (v. 5) and mourning (v. 6). The motif of mockery will return in 3:1–15. Why does the author have his hero blinded by bird droppings? It is a cruel conclusion to the incident, and one can imagine the continued mockery. Perhaps the birds are agents of a demon like Asmodeus (3:8; cf. *Jub.* 11:11, where Satan sends ravens to devour seed; and Mark 4:4, 15, which appears to know some such tradition). In any case, the event triggers the divinely directed scenario that is tracked through the rest of the plot. Perhaps the author asserts that God works even in cruel and evidently arbitrary circumstances. Such a point is reinforced by a comparison with Sir. 38:1–7. Although physicians are agents of divine healing, their failure will facilitate God's plans for the Tobiad family. The section ends with a motif that will recur frequently. Tobit's family grieves, because they do not know of God's eventual disposition of the case (cf. 11:17–18).

2:11–3:17
Tobit's Fate Linked to Sarah's

Tobit's reproach by Anna and his death wish are parallel to Sarah's reproach by her servants and her prayer for death. This literary diptych and its immediate sequel are the turning point in the story. The prayers are heard, but they will be answered in an unexpected way—through healing rather than death. This resolution will join two parts of the family and solve another problem for Israelites in exile—finding a suitable spouse with whom to maintain one's religious and cultural identity in a foreign land. The description of Israelites in prayer is integral to the author's view of piety, and the laments prepare for the contrasting hymn of praise in chap. 13.

2:11–3:6
Tobit Led to Seek Escape in Death

The problem of Tobit's blindness is exacerbated by a new domestic incident, which leads him to pray for death as an escape from his misery.

2:11–14, Tobit's Criticism and Anna's Reproach. The exacerbation of Tobit's troubles is tied to his concern about the righteous life, but the section is replete with irony. The prosperous, influential, and generous public servant is now dependent on his wife's earning power and the generosity of her employers. Although his deeds stemmed from his trust in God and presumed God's reward, he cannot believe that he is the recipient of the generosity of others. These reactions flesh out the characterization of a complex and believable human being. His central virtue—a concern with righteousness—is his undoing. In a state of depression because he fails to experience God's blessing for his righteous deeds, Tobit interprets an act of generosity as confirmation of his sad plight. Now he believes his wife has strayed from the straight and narrow. Concern with righteousness has become an obsession. His shaken faith in divine retribution has its corollary in his inability to trust Anna. Her response is ironic, although its precise meaning is unclear. According to G^{I}, Tobit's criticism shows his true colors ("Everyone can now see what you are really like," 2:14, REB). The text of G^{I} looks like an ironic suggestion that Tobit is playing

God, claiming to know everything (in spite of his blindness).

3:1–6, Tobit's Prayer. God's righteous judgment is the pervading theme of Tobit's prayer. In keeping with the book's double focus, this judgment is dispensed to individuals like Tobit and is evident in the nation's exile. His earlier recitation of his pious deeds notwithstanding (chaps. 1–2), Tobit does not claim perfection, but confesses "my sins and errors" (3:3). The prayer does not presume that God exacts retribution for every sin. Verse 2 balances divine justice with mercy and faithfulness. Nonetheless, the prayer recognizes God's right to exact the retribution that Tobit sees in his life. Paradoxically, Tobit parallels the punishment he perceives in his righteous life with the nation's plight, which tradition uniformly saw as just.

Tobit's petition (v. 6) expresses another paradox—faith's mixture of doubt and acceptance. As woes are compounded, Tobit can no longer believe that God will reverse these disasters. Yet he accepts the divine sovereignty that expresses itself in premature death. This acceptance is not based on a belief that such a death will be reversed through resurrection and eternal life.

3:7–15
Sarah Led to Seek Escape in Death

The swift movement from Nineveh to Ecbatana to the heavenly throne room (v. 16) and the use of temporal expressions (vv. 7, 10, 11) tighten the narrative and unify the action, but they also depict God's control over widely scattered events.

3:7–9, Sarah Reproached by Her Maids. Sarah's plight is similar to Tobit's. She is an innocent victim of circumstances beyond her control. The demonic element, perhaps suggested in 2:10, is explicit here. The reproach that Tobit felt in the disparity between his piety and his lot in life has its counterpart in the reproach of Sarah's inability to consummate her marriage and have children to continue her father's line. The motif of the demon lover was widespread. In contemporary Jewish literature it is closely paralleled in the story of watchers, angelic beings who descend from heaven to mate with human women, in *1 Enoch* 6–11. Here the demon who cannot consummate his lust kills his rivals.

3:10–15, Sarah's Prayer. Sarah's response and prayer have their own nuances. Her reflections move from self-pity to filial concern. Because her contemplated suicide would grieve her father, she turns to Tobit's solution. Let God take her life. Although Sarah's prayer is similar to Tobit's, there are remarkable differences. Sarah begins with praise and never refers to God's justice. To the contrary, she protests her innocence (cf. vv. 14–15a with vv. 3, 5). Moreover, a second reference to her death is modified. If God does not see fit to let her die, then let God heed her (and remove her affliction). It is an alternative Tobit has not considered.

3:16–17
A Solution Prepared in Heaven

Prayer catalyzes the divine resolution of human problems. The introductory expression "at that very time" and the repetition of the verb "hear" connect this scene with the prayers, and the rest of the paragraph summarizes the events to come. In the heavenly throne room the seven archangels (cf. *1 Enoch* 20) relay the prayers they receive (cf. Tob. 12:12, 15) and are sent to answer them. Raphael's name (Heb., "God has healed") denotes the angel's activity (cf. *1 Enoch* 10:4, 7; 40:9). For a close parallel to this view of the divine throne room and the relationship between prayer and the angels' roles as intercessors and agents of deliverance cf. *1 Enoch* 8–10; 40; 47; 97:5; 99:3; 100:4. The probable original wording of Tob. 3:16 and 12:12, 15, "before the glory of the Great One (Holy One)," reflects the formulas in *1 Enoch* 103:1; 104:1. God's providence will result in Tobias's marriage to the woman for whom he is the most suitable husband (3:17). This providence is evident in Tobit's and Sarah's simultaneous return to the world where their prayers will be answered.

4:1–11:18
The Healing of Tobit and Sarah

Heaven has made its decision to deliver Tobit and Sarah; the enactment remains to be described. Essential to the narrative art in these chapters is a disparity between readers' knowledge of what is happening and the characters' ignorance. This disparity has its humorous side, but also makes a religious statement: God's purposes are operative even when they are not perceived. The denouement will reveal this to the characters.

4:1–5:3
Tobit Prepares for His Death

Certain that his prayer will be answered, Tobit prepares for his death. He must straighten out his finances and give his son the testamentary advice typical of deathbed situations.

4:1–2, Tobit Remembers a Bank Deposit. Human events can have a divine dimension. We may paraphrase 4:1 as follows: "As soon as God had decided to help, God jogged Tobit's memory." This recollection will trigger events that effect the healing of Tobit and Sarah and the marriage of Tobias and Sarah. Tobit's human perception is altogether different. Confronted

with the certainty of his death, he wishes to secure his son's future. And so he remembers the money he deposited (1:14–15), which can lift Tobias from the family's present deprivation. He cannot suspect the outcome of Tobias's journey.

4:3–19, Tobit's Testament. Tobit's certainty about his imminent death is evident in his testamentary instruction to Tobias. The genre is familiar from texts like Genesis 49, Deuteronomy 31–34, *1 Enoch* 81–82, 91, *Jubilees* 21–23, the *Testament of Moses,* and the *Testaments of the Twelve Patriarchs.* (→ Testament; on the literary form, see the commentary below on 14:2–11.) The narrative in Tobit has already presented the exemplary biographical material typical of these texts. The context here confines itself to the kind of ethical instruction that predominates in many Jewish testaments. The focal issues are the special concerns in Tobit: proper burial (vv. 3–4); charitable and generous use of wealth and possessions (vv. 7–11, 14, 16–17); and endogamous marriage (vv. 12–13). This specific advice is punctuated with general instructions that use the categories of the "two ways." This section and its reprises in 12:6–10 and 14:10–11 have many parallels in Jewish wisdom literature and lend an explicitly didactic tone to the present work (→ Wisdom). The poetic parallelism in this section is not indicated in all English editions.

Typical of the testamentary form is the summoning of the son (4:3) and the command to bury. This text stresses the son's responsibility to his parents (cf. Matt. 8:21; Luke 9:59). The phrasing recalls the commandment to honor one's parents (Exod. 20:12; Deut. 5:16) and its paraphrase in Sir. 7:27. Tob. 4:3–4 reflects this author's broader interest in familial matters.

Verses 5–6 introduce the idiom of the two ways—of righteousness (or truth) and iniquity. The imagery is typical of Jewish and early Christian wisdom instruction and appears also in pagan sources. A parallel to the antithetical formulation of these verses and to 4:19 occurs in *1 Enoch* 94:1–5.

A major section of text, Tob. 4:7–19, is omitted in G^2, but its originality is supported by its presence in G^1 and the Old Latin translation, which otherwise tends to agree with G^2.

The prospering of the ways of the righteous (v. 6) forms a transition to the discussion of wealth in vv. 7–11, where Tobit promises that generosity will be rewarded. Verse 7b expresses a principle of appropriate compensation ("Do not turn away your face . . . the face of God will not be turned away"). Similarly, to give alms to others is to lay up treasure for oneself (v. 9). Almsgiving was an important part of Israelite piety and expressed the biblical concern for the poor (→ Alms). The topic is integral to this book. The hero himself performed such acts of charity (1:3, 17), and his commands here provide the ethical context for Tobias's receipt of the money from Gabael in Rages (9:1–6). As Raphael and Tobit repeat later, God rewards such generous use of wealth (12:8–10; 14:11). There is irony in Tobit's observations, however. He is awaiting a premature death, which is not the proper recompense for his conduct. But for the author, who knows the outcome, the statement is true, and it will be reiterated when it is shown to be true. Tob. 4:11 suggests a parallel between almsgiving and sacrifice, which will be made explicit in 12:9. According to this view, one obtains forgiveness and atonement not only through sacrifice in the Temple, but also through generous deeds. Several centuries later the idea would have a special and essential religious function for the Jews, whose Temple had been permanently destroyed.

The injunctions about wealth and possessions provide a context for NT statements on the subject, especially the wisdom material in Matt. 6:19–33; Luke 12:22–34, in passages peculiar to Luke, and in the Letter of James.

From the responsible use of wealth, Tobit returns to the topic of the family (cf. Tob. 4:3–4), here the making of a proper marriage. In one of the book's playful ironies, Tobit gives instructions that will be carried out in a way he hardly suspects. Tobias's journey to fetch the money will result in his marriage to the kind of wife that Tobit has in mind. The prohibition against marriage to a foreign spouse appears already in the stories of Isaac and Jacob (Gen. 24:3; 28:12), where journeys are also undertaken to find such a spouse. The concern reappears in Ezra 9–10 and Neh. 10:28–30, is emphasized in *Jubilees'* recasting of the Genesis narratives, and is central in *Joseph and Asenath.* The topic is especially relevant here in a document set in the Diaspora. Tob. 4:13 reflects the author's sociopsychological insight. In an alien culture it can be tempting for a member of the minority to marry into the majority to prove oneself better than one's compatriots. For Tobit such arrogant disdaining of one's own people leads to the destruction of the nation and religious and cultural disorder. This, rather than a notion of racial purity, is the basis for endogamy.

The proverb in v. 13b is probably traditional. Although the proverb begins with a comment on the arrogance of exogamous marriage (i.e., marriage outside the tribal unit), the next two lines discuss useless behavior and its results—loss, want, and hunger. Verse 14a complements this train of thought and may have been part of the tradition: shiftless behavior can lead to hunger; so can the withholding of wages (for the biblical command, see Lev. 19:13). In the context of Tobit, 4:14a is a command for the proper use of wealth, with the promise of appropriate recompense.

Verses 14b–15a are a pair of general injunctions. The first is a balanced line ("in all . . . in all") that begins like v. 12 ("watch yourself"). The second is the earliest datable formulation of the Golden Rule.

Verses 15b–17 touch on traditional topics of Jewish

piety: feed the hungry, clothe the naked, give alms. The subject of food is introduced by a reference to the abuse of overdrinking—also a traditional wisdom topic (cf. Prov. 23:29–35; Sir. 31:25–30; *T. Judah* 11–14; 16). Tob. 4:17 is one of several parallels to the story of Ahiqar (2:10 in the Syriac version of *Ahiqar;* see commentary above on 1:16–22). Here the point is: sustain the hungry, but if they are sinners, leave your food at the grave of the righteous dead. The ethic is startlingly narrow and the practice obscure, but the author's interest in burial is evident.

The interpretation of 4:18–19 depends on one's textual reconstruction; the omission in G^2 ends at v. 19b (". . . the Lord gives"). In G^1 and the Old Latin seeking good counsel and the imagery of the two ways are central. Verse 19a may reflect Ps. 34:1, a psalm whose theme is relevant to the story of Tobit. The warning about nations' lack of good counsel (cf. Deut. 32:28) is pertinent in a diaspora writing. What God gives varies according to the texts: in G^1, "all good things" (cf. Matt. 7:7–14, with many parallels to this text); in G^2, "good counsel." According to the Old Latin and G^2 in part, God exalts and brings down to Sheol. The concluding admonition parallels *1 Enoch* 94:5, which also concludes a section of two ways instruction (*1 Enoch* 94:1–5).

4:20–5:3, Tobit's Instructions About the Money. His ethical instructions completed, Tobit takes up the subject of the money in Rages (4:1–2). Still speaking in the idiom of wisdom instruction, he assures Tobias that this money will reverse their circumstances if Tobias uses it rightly (4:20–21). Tobias's response (5:1) echoes Exod. 19:8; 24:3, 7; Josh. 1:16 and constitutes his formal acceptance of his father's Torah, or teaching. Tob. 5:3b answers Tobias's second question in v. 2b and forms a transition to the next section of the story.

5:4–22
Tobias Hires a Traveling Companion

Tobias's journey to Rages in Media requires a traveling companion. Little do Tobit and Tobias suspect that he will be an angel sent to effect God's beneficent purposes. This ignorance and the double entendres by Tobit and Raphael are the subject of considerable narrative delight.

5:4–8, Tobias Finds Raphael. The section of Tobit that is cast in the form of an angelic epiphany begins here as the angel appears to Tobias in human form. The presence of an unrecognized divine being is an ancient folkloristic motif (cf. Gen. 18; Judg. 13). Especially close to Tobit is its use in books 1–3 of Homer's *Odyssey.*

Raphael's words in 5:6 suggest that this man is a frequent traveler through Mesopotamia. In reality, Raphael alludes to his angelic journeys (cf. v. 9). The distance from Rages to Ecbatana took Alexander's army ten days' forced march.

5:9–16a, Tobit's Conversation with Raphael. The author continues the playful description of the ignorance of Tobit and Tobias over the real state of affairs. As readers know, Tobit's concern about Raphael's lineage and qualifications is beside the point.

The opening words of the conversation are psychologically loaded. Tobit reacts bitterly to the angel's common greeting "may all be well with you," and with some self-pity he likens himself to the dead man he expects to be. But Raphael means what he says and predicts an outcome that Tobit cannot comprehend.

When Tobit queries Raphael about his family, the angel futilely attempts to avoid the issue. He must lie. The discussion of Raphael's lineage is, of course, absurd, but his and his father's alleged names suggest the story's outcome (Azarias, Gk., from the Heb. for "the Lord has helped"; Ananias, Gk., from the Heb. for "the Lord has had mercy"). Tobit's desire to know the facts (Gk. *aletheia*) about Raphael's family is a piece of authorial irony, but it is also a theological comment: human beings can know "the truth" only when God reveals it, and human precautions are a charade when God is in charge. Both Tobit's comment on Raphael's family stock (v. 13) and his benediction on the angel (v. 16) are humorously gratuitous.

5:16b, Tobit's Farewell. The two textual traditions narrate this section with different nuances. In G^1 there is a play on the idea of "the way." God will prosper Tobias on his journey, as God prospers the "way" of the righteous (cf. 4:19). The idea appears in G^2 in the next section. Here G^2 implies that Tobit expects to be alive when Tobias returns. In both texts Tobit's wish for an angelic guide unwittingly expresses the truth.

5:17–22, Anna's Sorrow and Tobit's Encouragement. For Anna, Tobias's departure is a cause for sorrow, and the expected monetary gain is not worth the risk. Her sensibility contrasts with Tobit's faith: an angel will accompany Tobias, his journey will prosper, and he will return safely. Recognizing in Tobit the influence of Genesis 27–29, the author of *Jub.* 27:13–18 incorporates this scene into his account of Jacob's departure.

6:1–17
Tobias and Raphael on the Road to Media

The journey to Media has several functions. Most obviously, it provides the geographic movement that enables Tobias to seek his financial fortune. But in God's scheme, Tobias is headed for other, unexpected, goals. He will meet the woman destined to be his bride, and

along the way he will acquire the magical apparatus that will facilitate the healing of Tobit and Sarah.

6:1–8, Tobias Catches a Fish. As elsewhere in the story, God intervenes directly in human events. The means for healing Tobit and Sarah literally leaps out of the water just as Tobias arrives at the riverbank. God has prepared a great fish to accomplish the divine purpose. The parallel to the Jonah story is clearer in G^{I}, where the fish attempts to swallow Tobias himself rather than just his foot (cf. also commentary below on 14:4–7). An allusion to magical practice for physical cure and exorcism is evident, but the author's appraisal of it is less certain. Perhaps he makes fun of magic. In any case one wonders how Tobias can survive a journey through the Mesopotamian heat transporting the reeking organs of the fish. Although the journey is from one geographic location to another, the narrative recalls the accounts of Enoch's cosmic journeys (*1 Enoch* 17–36). In the company of an angel Tobias travels to a place where he sees something he does not understand. When he asks, the angel explains. The scene is also reminiscent of the description of the first night of Jacob's journey (Gen. 28:10–22).

6:9–17, Raphael Promises Tobias a Bride. When Tobias and Raphael have traversed the 325 miles to the Median capital, the angel informs Tobias of the events that will take place in Ecbatana. The section serves two functions. First, it allows Tobias to protest against the dangers of marrying Sarah, but then to accept Raphael's assurance of divine protection. This acceptance is remarkable since he does not know that his companion is an angel. Second, in this section Tobias receives the instructions necessary to defeat the demon.

The conversation is carefully constructed and held together by key words. The references to "this night" emphasize how swiftly the action will move and how imminent is the danger that Tobias may perish on his wedding night. Raphael's repeated urging ("listen to me, brother") meets with resistance. Tobias has "heard" about the fate of Sarah's previous husbands, and he is "afraid" the same will happen to him. After Raphael's reassurances and the formulaic "fear not," typical of epiphanies (though Tobias does not perceive this as such), the young man acquiesces in what he has "heard" from Raphael. The angel uses several arguments. He responds to Tobias's concern that he live to bury his parents (4:3–4) by recalling Tobit's other command that he marry a woman from his family (4:12–13). In addition, the apparatus for an exorcism, combined with earnest prayer, will effect the couple's deliverance. Finally, without citing his sources, Raphael assures Tobias that Sarah is the bride eternally destined for him. Predestination is an aspect of the author's belief that God intervenes in human affairs. Raphael's reference to Sarah's beauty and Tobias's love for her (6:12, 17) recall Gen. 29:17, 30.

7:1–9:6
The Travelers in Media: Sarah Is Healed

This lengthy section solves the second of the problems in chap. 3. Sarah is healed when Tobias and Raphael dispose of Asmodeus. Moreover, Tobias's marriage fulfills Tobit's commandment (4:12–13) and dramatizes the importance of endogamy.

7:1–8a, Tobias and Raphael Are Welcomed. Once Tobias has agreed to marry Sarah, he is anxious to be taken to her house, where he is welcomed with great emotion. This scene parallels Telemachus's arrival at Sparta (*Odyssey* 4:137–44, 183–86) and Jacob's arrival in Mesopotamia (Gen. 29:11–14). As in 6:13, the author assumes that news traveled through the Mesopotamian Israelite communities. Although Tobit is "healthy and alive," Raguel finds incongruous the blindness of a man who fits the Greek ideal of goodness and nobility (the translator uses the Gk. terms *kalos* and *agathos*) and epitomizes Israelite piety (he is righteous and does deeds of mercy; cf., e.g., 1:3).

7:8b–15, The Wedding of Tobias and Sarah. Tobias wastes no time in reminding Raphael of his promise to arrange a marriage with Sarah. One did not discuss business before meals. Tobias's breach of etiquette underscores the urgency of the request. Raphael's role as marriage broker combines features from Genesis 24, where Abraham sends a servant to find a wife for Isaac, promising that an angel will accompany him (Gen. 24:7, 40).

Tobias need not worry; according to the law of levirate marriage, he is the leading candidate for Sarah's hand, a fact emphasized by the references to the law of Moses (cf. Deut. 25:5–10). The author is concerned not with descendants for the first husband, the point of levirate law, but with Sarah's status as an only child (Tob. 3:15). In this context Raguel's willingness to "tell the truth" (7:10) is praiseworthy. The author's irony appears in Raguel's statement, "Eat, drink, and be merry tonight, for there is no one else to take Sarah my daughter, except you" (v. 10). It is an ad hoc reformulation of the familiar aphorism; past events suggest that tomorrow Tobias will be dead. Tobias's single-minded determination to marry Sarah contrasts with Raguel's vacillation between the assumption that Tobias will die like the others and his hope that things will be different. This hope may reflect Raguel's evident ignorance of the demonic cause of the husbands' deaths. The brief description of the wedding ceremony sheds a little light on the details of such occasions.

7:16–8:18, The Wedding Night: Healing and Joy. With the wedding ceremony and meal finished, the moment of truth has arrived. Will the marriage be consummated, or will another bridegroom die? The

mother is hopeful and quiets her daughter's sorrow with the doubly repeated "have courage" (Gk. *tharsei*), very likely a translation of the same Aramaic as Raphael's "fear not" (6:17).

The first part of 8:4 appears to have originally been located after v. 1. The parents bring Tobias to the wedding chamber, and then they leave and shut the door. Whether the text ever described the demon's entrance into the wedding chamber is uncertain. In any case Tobias's magical ritual and the young couple's prayer stand in the same order as in Raphael's earlier description (6:16–17).

The idea that the stench of roasted fish organs (now many days ripe) could drive off a demon was surely intended as humorous, though it may reflect some actual ritual. "Binding" is a technical term used for the incapacitating of demons. The description recalls *1 Enoch* 10:4, where Raphael binds Asael hand and foot (cf. Matt. 22:13; → Magic and Divination). Asmodeus's banishment to Egypt suggests that Tobit was written in a place other than in Egypt.

The prayer of Tobias and Sarah is a functional equivalent of the magical ritual. They pray for mercy (Gk. *eleos*, a technical term in Tobit for deliverance; see commentary below on 13:1–2) and salvation (Gk. *soteria*). They have already been saved from the demon; so the prayer (which fits well with other liturgical elements in Tobit) is a petition for continued blessing. Perhaps the references to the fish and the ritual go back to older folkloristic motifs that were early integrated into this story. Noteworthy in the prayer is the allusion to Genesis not as a reference to Scripture, but as a reminder of God's will in creation.

The prayer's doxological character contrasts with Raguel's pessimistic assumption that Tobias will die. For readers the digging of the grave is a ludicrous act of unfaith that parallels some of Tobit's actions. The narration of the simultaneous contrasting events inside and outside the wedding chamber parallels chap. 3. When Raguel ascertains that Tobias is alive, he sings a hymn similar to Sarah's and Tobias's prayer.

This unusual wedding night is a foil to Gen. 29:23–25. Instead of a marriage consummated with a rival wife, the rival lover is driven out.

8:19–9:6, The Wedding Feast, the Money Recovered. Now that the bridegroom has survived the family hex, Raguel orders a sumptuous public feast. Tob. 8:21 focuses on family relationships, and Raguel's repeated "have courage, child" (in G^2) parallels Edna's words to Sarah (7:18) and emphasizes Tobias's status as the family's son.

With the marriage of Tobias the nature of the journey has changed. Tobias's companion has shown his credibility and is sent on alone to fetch the money. Time is of the essence. Tobias's delay will worry his father, or perhaps his father will die before the young man returns. When Gabael arrives, he is welcomed as a member of the family (cf. 1:14), and his meeting with Tobias (9:6) closely parallels that in 7:1–8.

10:1–11:18
The Return of Tobias

This major section recounts the completion of Tobias's journey and the healing of Tobit. Thus a solution is found for the problem that led to the development of the plot.

10:1–7a, Anticipation and Apprehension at Home. Again the author juxtaposes simultaneous contrasting scenes. Over against the joy of the wedding celebration stands the gloom of the Tobiad household. Not only are Tobit and Anna ignorant of events in Ecbatana; they assume the worst. The scene is a counterpart to 5:17–22, but the interaction between Tobit and Anna has become more bitter. The psychology is interesting. Tobit counts the days of Tobias's absence (10:1; cf. 9:4) and creates a pessimistic scenario to explain the delay. When Anna outdoes him by supposing that Tobias has died, Tobit responds with words of comfort, which Anna refuses to accept. She acts as one mourning the dead.

10:7b–11:1a, Newlyweds and Parents Bid Farewell. Again changing scenes, the author returns to the dutiful son's concern about his father. Understandably, Raguel wants his newfound son and newly healed daughter to remain, but when he fails to delay the departure, he sends Tobias off with his bride and with a substantial dowry that is a down payment on a full inheritance (cf. Raphael's prediction, 6:11).

The scene is a counterpart to the farewell in 5:16b. In overlapping speeches Raguel and Edna offer parting words of instruction and encouragement. Central is the book's pervading concern with family, expressed with complementary sentiments. Raguel reminds Sarah that in her father-in-law's house she will be the daughter of Tobit and Anna. Edna exhorts her "son" to care for "my daughter." Both send the couple off "in peace," wishing them a safe journey, prosperity, and children that Raguel and Edna will live to see. Raguel's concluding exhortation about honoring parents may be textually out of place and may have originally been addressed to Sarah. Tobias praises God, as we have come to expect.

11:1b–4, Tobias and Raphael Arrive at Nineveh. As earlier, Raphael instructs Tobias, reminding him, as well as readers, that the fish's gall has yet to be used. A curious narrative touch is the reference to Tobias's dog, which had gone off on the journey with them (5:16, G^1; 6:1, G^2) and is now mentioned again for the first time. Dogs are not house pets in Israelite texts, but cf. *Odyssey* 2:11; 16:62.

11:5–15a, Reunion and Healing. The author returns to Anna (cf. 10:7a), who, despite her gloomy protests, is still watching the road for Tobias's return. She is her blind husband's eyes and informs him that "your son" is coming. Raphael's instructions build narrative tension. The wording of G^2, "he will see the light" (v. 7), suggests a wordplay, for Tobias is "the light of my eyes" (v. 14, G^2; cf. Anna's expression in 10:5). Anna's readiness to die recalls the motif in 4:4. With a touch of pathos the father is depicted as stumbling out to meet his son. The healing has a magical or miraculous element; fish gall works where the physicians had failed (cf. 2:10). But plot is of importance. The physicians' failure allowed Tobit to recover his money, Sarah to be healed, and Tobias to find his destined wife. Doxology is in order, as when Sarah was healed. The motif will be expanded in chaps. 12–13. The interpretation of Tobit's experience as scourging and mercy will also recur in 13:1–2. That Tobit "sees" his son has double meaning, connoting both the son's return and Tobit's recovery of his sight. The scene has some interesting parallels (and resonances?) in Luke 15:20–24. (Cf. also *Jub.* 31:4–9).

11:15b–18, The Parents Meet Their New Daughter. With this scene another theme is resolved. Tobit meets the wife he had hoped Tobias would find (4:12–13). Of course, he praises God on his way to meet her. The people's astonishment is a motif that will be typical of the later miracle stories in the Gospels. Tob. 11:17 again emphasizes the family. The rejoicing of the people gives the scene the character of a communal festival (cf. Esther 8:16–17). Reference to "the Jews," if original to the text, is odd in a document about a northern Israelite family (but cf. 1:3–7 and chap. 13). On Ahiqar and Nadab, see commentary above on 1:16–22.

12:1–14:1
The Aftermath of the Healing

Now that the major problems have been resolved, the author provides a final narrative twist. When Tobit and Tobias offer their helper a bonus, they discover his real identity and are told that appropriate thanks belongs to God, who sent the healer. So they sing hymns of praise, and Tobit writes the doxological book we have been reading—including a hymn of praise (chap. 13).

12:1–22
The Healer Reveals Himself and Ascends

The author now concludes the angelic epiphany introduced at 3:16–17. The disguised angel reveals his true identity, Tobit and Tobias react in terror, and Raphael reassures them, commissions them to a task, and then disappears.

12:1–5, Tobit Wishes to Square Accounts. The protagonists continue to act in accordance with their wrong perceptions. As Tobias's summary suggests (v. 3), Raphael has resolved all their problems and is worthy of a special reward. The 50 percent commission vastly exceeds what was implied in 5:14, but is consonant with the generosity espoused throughout the book.

12:6–10, Raphael Instructs Tobit and Tobias. Raphael's self-revelation and instructions are given privately to the men of the story and not in the presence of Anna and Sarah, who have also been beneficiaries of the angel's activities. Raphael emphasizes that proper payment is the offering of praise and thanks for God's deeds in the presence of all humanity (vv. 6–7; cf. vv. 17–18). Such public acknowledgment anticipates the universalistic note to be struck in 13:11; 14:6–7.

The injunctions in 12:7b–10 indicate the proper use of wealth and promise blessings to the giver of alms. By the time readers come to this reprise of Tobit's testamentary instructions (4:5–11), it is clear that almsgiving does deliver from death (cf. 4:10; 14:11). The combined references to prayer, fasting (G^2, Old Latin), almsgiving, and "storing up" gold are paralleled in Matt. 6:1–21, which thus reflects its background in Jewish wisdom teaching.

12:11–21, Raphael Reveals His Identity and Ascends. Raphael reviews past events, revealing to the protagonists the divine activity of which they had been unaware. His explanation brings Tobit and Tobias up to date on what readers have known since 3:16–17 and adds a few details to that section. Raphael is one of seven angels of the presence who have special access to the divine throne room, where they relay the prayers of humanity in the form of memoranda to the heavenly King. The text of 12:13 is uncertain. According to G^1, Tobit's pious deeds were not hidden from the angelic witness. The motif of testing in G^2 suggests the same idea, but may imply some divine initiative in the incident described in 2:1–10. (On Raphael's second function as divinely sent savior, or specifically, healer, see commentary above on 3:16–17.)

The form of Raphael's self-revelation as well as the human reaction, the angelic reassurance, and the sudden disappearance are traditional elements in the epiphany form. More often than not, such epiphanies have a commissioning function. Although that function is not central in Tobit (Raphael appears in order to heal), it is present in the command to praise God and write a doxological book (12:20; cf. Rev. 1:19) and in the fulfillment of the command (Tob. 12:22). That angels do not eat human food is a traditional idea (cf. *T. Abraham* 4, Recension A; Luke 24:36–43). The formula, "I am ascending to him who sent me" (Tob. 12:20), recalls the language of the Fourth Gospel,

which shares with Tobit a common pattern of a descending and ascending Savior.

12:22, Tobit and Tobias Praise God. This verse concludes the principal narrative in the book by underscoring its doxological tone, which is punctuated by the hymn that follows.

13:1–14:1
Tobit's Hymn of Praise

Tobit's hymn partakes of two worlds. Its themes, diction, and literary form are typical of Israelite piety in the real world in which the author of Tobit and his audience lived. Indeed, it may be a reused liturgical composition. Because the hymn reflects real usage, it lends verisimilitude to the literary portrait of Tobit in the fictive setting that constitutes the hymn's second world. Within the world of that narrative, the hymn not only serves the literary functions of characterization and plot development, but also helps to express some of the author's central religious conceptions: exile and return; judgment, repentance, righteousness, and deliverance; and God's sovereignty and ultimate triumph.

Between the narrative introduction (13:1) and conclusion (14:1) the hymn is framed by a pair of matched benedictions (13:1, 18). The introduction (vv. 1–2) sets the theme (divine justice and mercy), and the body of the poem is divided into two major sections addressed to the "sons of Israel" in exile (vv. 3–7) and to Jerusalem (vv. 8–18). Pairs of opposing words ("scourge"/"have mercy"; "grieve"/"rejoice"; "scattered"/"gathered") contrast Israel's present situation in exile and its future return to Jerusalem, which are functions of God's judgment for sin and the salvation that will follow repentance.

The composition is a hymn of praise in response to God's mighty acts, a prayer of rejoicing. Its consistently optimistic tone is evident in the repetition of verbs like "praise," "exalt," "give thanks," "rejoice." Although much of the vocabulary is reminiscent of the Psalter (esp. Pss. 92–118), key themes and terminology reflect the concerns of the author and the author's time. Israel is in dispersion. The glory of Jerusalem and the Temple are eschatological or end-time realities, described in imagery derived from the Isaian tradition. God's royal rule is denoted by such titles as "King of the Ages" and "King of Heaven," which do not occur in the Psalter, but are frequent in liturgical passages in the apocalyptic literature of the Hellenistic period.

13:1–2, Introduction. An initial blessing with an explication ("I give thanks to you / Blessed are you . . . because . . .") is formulaic in prayers of this period (cf. 1QH 5:20; 10:14). The terminology in the address implies the title "King of the Ages" (cf. Tob. 13:6, 10). (On the word pair "scourge"/"have mercy," see commentary below on 3:5, where it applies to Israel, and above on 11:15a, where Tobit applies the words to his own experience.) The double theme of judgment and salvation is developed in v. 2. Sickness and healing were, in Israelite thought, a descent to and return from Hades. On the God who kills and brings to life, cf. Deut. 32:39; 1 Sam. 2:6. For the whole complex of ideas here, see Wisd. of Sol. 16:13–15; cf. also 2 Macc. 7:35, in the context of resurrection. For death, Sheol, and resurrection as metaphors for exile and return, cf. Ezekiel 37 and Bar. 2:17; 3:4–8.

13:3–7, Address to Israel in Exile. The address to "the sons of Israel" (v. 3) is presumed in this section in its use of the second-person plural. This first major part of the prayer, like the second (vv. 8–18), concludes with the author speaking in the first-person singular (vv. 6–7).

This section (and not least its titles for God) emphasizes the power and majesty of the divine judge, who has scattered Israel into exile because of their sins. As chastisement or scourging, however, this banishment is the act of the heavenly "Father" (v. 4). Israel is to acknowledge this act for what it is—in the presence of the nations—lest they conclude that their might led to the defeat of Israel (cf. Deut. 32:27–31). Semantically and conceptually, a fine line separates Israel's "confession" of God's judicial power from their "giving thanks" to God. Such thanksgiving and praise recognize that God's scourging is not ultimate punishment, but paternal chastisement that will be mercifully alleviated when God gathers the scattered people. This mercy is predicated on Israel's repentance. When they "turn" back to God, then God will "turn" to them, a common prophetic theme. This crucial motif of Israel's repentance, absent in Deuteronomy 32, is present, however, in its context (Deut. 30:1–6) and appears in Jewish texts of the Hellenistic and Roman periods that employ the historical scheme found in the latter chapters of Deuteronomy.

13:8–14:1, Address to Jerusalem. This second part of the prayer complements the first. Reference is made to Israel's punishment (vv. 9, 14), Jerusalem's suffering because of the sins of its "sons" (v. 9; cf. 2 Macc. 5:19–20), and the present distress of its inhabitants (v. 10). But the text's emphasis on God's anticipated salvation is evident in the density of doxological terminology and the repeated references to joy and gladness. Since salvation presumes repentance, earlier mention of Israel's iniquities (v. 5) and the nation's status as sinners (v. 6) is replaced by reference to its new status as "the righteous" (vv. 9, 13).

Although Tobit is depicted as a Galilean and the author doubtless thinks of a return to the whole of the land of Israel, this hymn focuses on Jerusalem as the locus of salvation. This emphasis is consonant with

the account of Tobit's journeys to Jerusalem (1:5–8) and the eschatological scenario in 14:5–7. Jerusalem's importance is indicated by the fourfold use of the name (13:8, 9, 16, 17) and the shift from the plural address to the Israelites in vv. 3–7 to the singular address to Jerusalem in vv. 8–18. This mode of direct address and the concern for the deliverance of Jerusalem and its attendant joy are paralleled in the "Apostrophe to Zion" (a noncanonical poem preserved on the Qumran *Psalms Scroll* [11QPs^a] 22:1–15), Bar. 4:36–5:9, and *Psalm of Solomon* 11 (cf. also Sir. 36:1–17), which are probably remnants of a category of literature that gave liturgical expression to Zion-centered future hope (cf. also the prayers in Dan. 9:4–19; Bar. 1:15–3:8; the Prayer of Azariah [Song of Three Youths 1–22]).

The chief source for these expressions of a hope in Zion's restoration is in the oracles of Isaiah 40–66 (esp. Isa. 54:11–14 [cf. Tob. 13:16–18]; Isa. 60:4–14 [cf. Tob. 13:11]). Thus, Tobit 13 and other contemporary texts attest a liturgical or contemplative setting for nourishing the older, unfulfilled prophetic hopes for restoration. A bolder expression of the hope for a divinely rebuilt Jerusalem appears in Rev. 21:9–27, which has also been influenced by a tradition fed by Ezekiel 40–48.

14:2–15
Death and Narrative Closure

Our story closes with the deaths of the *dramatis personae,* and the accounts serve several narrative functions. Tobit's testament contains final instructions that bring closure to aspects of the story. The land of exile will perish. The return of God's scattered people, anticipated in chap. 13, is guaranteed by the prophetic word. The command to give alms is repeated. Proper burials are carried out. Tobit's prediction about Nineveh's destruction is fulfilled.

14:2–15
Tobit's Death and Second Testament

The final chapter centers on Tobit's death. His second testament (see commentary above on 4:3–19, Tobit's first testament) has many elements typical of the genre: the protagonist's deathbed situation and his age (14:2, 3); the summoning of children and grandchildren (v. 3); eschatological prediction (vv. 4–7); ethical instructions (vv. 8–11a); and death and burial (v. 11b). Two literary peculiarities of Tobit govern the shape of the testamentary form here. Tobit's ethical instructions have already been given in chap. 4, where he anticipated his death. In keeping with the author's parallelism between the individual and the nation, most of Tobit's instructions in chap. 14 constitute a prediction about Israel's future that complements the scenario in Tobit's hymn (chap. 13).

14:2–3, Tobit's Deathbed. In contrast to chap. 4, when he sorrowfully anticipated the premature death he had invoked as an escape from an unbearable life, Tobit now dies "in peace" after the full and prosperous life that has been the reward of his piety. The texts differ as to his age. Death at 158 (G^1) seems more likely than 112 (G^2); we would expect the pious hero to live longer than his son, who dies at the age of 127 (14:14). In keeping with earlier emphases, Tobit's life after his recovery has been marked by almsgiving and doxology. In preparation for his death, the father summons his son and grandsons (G^1, Old Latin) in order to give his testament.

14:4–7, Tobit's Testamentary Prophecy. Speaking with the insight traditionally ascribed to a deathbed situation, Tobit utters a prophecy that he supports by an appeal to "the prophets of Israel" (G^2) and the word of Nahum (G^2, which G^1 has revised to the more familiar story of Jonah [see also commentary above on 6:1–8]). The appeal to the veracity of the prophetic word (cf. 2:6) attests the authority of the prophetic corpus in the author's time. The first event in the predictive scenario is the destruction of Nineveh (612 B.C.). Reference to the event is natural in a story set in that city, although the repeated vendetta (14:4, 10, 15) is hardly prepared for in the narrative (but cf. 1:16–20). Though apologetic in tone (prophecy has been fulfilled), it may also express the author's unhappiness with diaspora existence.

Tobit's prediction has the expected references to the Babylonian exile, the return, and the building of the Second Temple. More interesting are his expectations of a glorious eschatological Temple, the Gentiles' conversion and abandoning of their idols, the return of the whole Dispersion, and the expunging of evildoers from all the earth. Certain of these elements appeared in chap. 13 and are rooted in prophetic tradition (esp. Isa. 40–66). Close parallels in the eschatological scenarios in *1 Enoch* 10–11; 90; 91:7–9, 11–17 may attest common tradition.

14:8–11a, Tobit's Ethical Instructions. In this summary statement reference to almsgiving and doxology is an expected final emphasis. Testaments teach ethics by positive and negative example. Tobit's example, already recounted in detail, is here supplemented by a brief reference to Ahiqar and Nadab. Ahiqar's almsgiving was suggested in 2:10. The allusion to death and life, darkness and life is a reprise of 13:2.

14:11b–12a, Tobit and Anna Die and Are Buried. With Tobit's death and burial the testamentary form concludes. The glorious burials of the main characters (vv. 11–13) are a final reminder that this is a story about the wealthy. For this author the pious rich deserve such obsequies. By way of contrast cf. *1 Enoch* 103:5–8 and

Luke 16:19–31. Tobit's and Anna's burials resolve the concerns in 4:3–4; 6:14; 14:10.

14:12b–15, Tobias's Death. Tobias's responsibility as a son extends to the burial of his father-in-law and mother-in-law. The author brings closure to his story by associating Tobias's death not with his burial, but with his joy and his praise of God for Nineveh's destruction. This last word guarantees the fulfillment of the other predictions in Tobit's testament.

Bibliography

Bow, B., and G. W. E. Nickelsburg, "Patriarchy with a Twist: Men and Women in Tobit." In *"Women Like This": New Perspectives on Jewish Women in the Greco-Roman World.* Edited by A.-J. Levine. Society of Biblical Literature Early Judaism and Its Literature 6. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1991. Pp. 127–43.

Doran, R. "Narrative Literature." In *Early Judaism and Its Modern Interpreters.* Edited by R. A. Kraft and G. W. E. Nickelsburg. Philadelphia: Fortress; Atlanta, GA: Scholars, 1986. Pp. 287–310.

Lindenberger, J. M. "Ahiqar." In *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha.* Edited by J. H. Charlesworth. 2 vols. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1983, 1985. Vol. 2, pp. 479–507.

Moore, C. A. *Tobit.* Anchor Bible, 40A. New York: Doubleday, 1996.

Nickelsburg, G. W. E. *Jewish Literature Between the Bible and the Mishnah.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1981. Pp. 30–35.

Petersen, N. R. "Tobit." In *The Books of the Bible.* Edited by B. W. Anderson. New York: Scribner, 1989. Vol. 2, pp. 35–42.

Judith

LUIS ALONSO-SCHÖKEL

INTRODUCTION

Historical Context

Hellenism

For the Jewish community the encounter with Hellenism, the cultural influence of Greece, was a time of challenge and crisis. Throughout its history Israel had managed to assimilate alien cultural elements, e.g., Babylonian legal tradition, Canaanite poetry, and Egyptian wisdom literature. Israel had been able to incorporate alien law into its own context of covenant and to reshape the narrative structure of myths to generate symbols valid for its own experience.

Apparently, the pervading presence of Hellenism after the conquest of Palestine by Alexander the Great in 332 B.C. posed a more serious challenge. Hellenism presented itself as a higher culture, with great richness and strong allure. Greek culture was not wholly bound up with traditional Greek religious thought. It was also a literature, a philosophy, and an ethics. Over the course of time a form of Judaism even developed that included Hellenistic values, showing that many Jews considered Hellenism to be reconcilable with their religious beliefs.

Antiochus IV Epiphanes

At a certain point, however, a grave crisis arose. After the death of Alexander the Great in 323 B.C., his empire was divided among his generals into Greek, Egyptian, and Syrian areas. Ptolemy and his descendants ruled in Egypt; Syria came under the control of the Seleucids. Judea and the rest of Palestine were disputed territory, subject first to the Ptolemaic kingdom (301–198 B.C.), and after 198 B.C. to the Seleucids. When Antiochus III captured the area in 198 B.C., he issued an edict that allowed the Jews free exercise of their religion and their national customs. During the next twenty-five years a forward-looking Jewish party developed, open to collaboration and to assimilation of Greek customs (→ Alexander; Seleucids, The).

In 175 B.C. Antiochus IV Epiphanes ascended the throne. He sought to advance the growth of Hellenism as a means of promoting cultural uniformity and stability in his empire. Though some Jews welcomed this development, others were opposed to it. When disturbances broke out in Jerusalem in 168 B.C., Antiochus responded with a cruel persecution of the Jews of Judea. Coexistence and collaboration with Hellenism became impossible. The party that advocated collaboration was discredited. As the books of Maccabees tell, the hour had come for the passive resistance of the martyrs and the active resistance led by Judah the Maccabee (→ Maccabees).

It was against this background that the book of Judith was composed. In it the name of the protagonist is the feminine form, Judith, of the national hero's name, Judah. The book highlights fidelity to the Lord and his commandments, trust in God, and a combative attitude. The context of crisis and belligerence produced a partial and simplified vision, one with no nuances. With religious fervor, the author calls for armed resistance.

Narrative Art

With the passage of time the Jews had developed their narrative technique (also with Hellenistic influences). By the time in which Judith was written it was possible to construct an ample and well-modulated narrative emerging out of a central idea rather than a collection of loosely related episodes. Among the classical books of Israel, only the story of Joseph shows such narrative ability.

The book of Judith is in these respects a literary innovation, but not in its narrative motifs, which are traditional. The proud and aggressive ruler depicted in Judith is the successor of the character of Sennacherib in Isaiah 36–38. Over against him, the heroine is, in literary terms, a direct descendant of Jael, who slays the defeated general Sisera (Judg. 4–5). She also has some of the traits of the wise woman of 2 Samuel 20, who saves the inhabitants of the city by tossing the rebel's head to the besiegers. The alien Achior, who sings the praises of Israel in Judith 5, has his antecedents in Rahab of Jericho (Josh. 2) and in Balaam (Num. 22–24). The theme of seduction is already insinuated in the story of Jael. The head cut off and used to create confusion among the enemy is an obvious offshoot of the story of David and Goliath, except that the weak and beautiful woman takes the place of the handsome and almost weaponless shepherd boy. And the victory

of a weak people through divine intervention is as traditional as one can imagine—although this time it is accomplished without an angel of death, pestilence in the enemy camp, or miracles (see 2 Kings 6–7; Isa. 38).

Purpose and Function

The repetition of traditional themes is significant both as a vehicle and as part of the message. The author wishes to encourage the people by bringing to mind national memories transformed into an original and interesting story. The past is still present and may repeat itself, even while taking new forms. Judith the widow personifies the nation. She gives advice like Deborah, strikes like Jael, and sings like Miriam. The book also continues, actualizes, and enriches the great lyrical tradition of an Israel that sings of its heroes and its God.

Text

Originally written in Hebrew, the book has come down to us in an artless and literal Greek translation. Behind this translation it is sometimes possible to recreate the original Hebrew text. There does exist a translation of the Greek text into Latin (known as the Old Latin), which follows the Greek text rather closely. On the other hand, the Vulgate, the Latin translation prepared by Jerome, differs markedly from the Greek. In his "Preface to Judith" Jerome claims that he worked from an Aramaic text of Judith, which he translated in a single night. Although the Aramaic text Jerome used is no longer known, scholars think it was a rather free translation of the Greek. Thus Jerome's translation is not generally considered a valuable witness to the original form of the Hebrew text. The Vulgate (or the Aramaic text on which it was based) often seems to be trying to improve on the Greek text, although usually detracting from its vigor and enlarging on its piety.

COMMENTARY

1:1–16, A Clash of Giants. In the very first paragraph the author winks at us to let us know that the story is fictional and that we should not waste our time trying to identify its historical setting. Only by accepting the fiction will we gather the meaning. Nebuchadnezzar never ruled in Nineveh, as stated in 1:1; nor did Arpachshad rule in Ecbatana (see Gen. 10:22–24).

The first chapter depicts the clash of two mighty kings, Nebuchadnezzar and Arpachshad, and enjoys the hyperbole. The immense walls of Ecbatana are the measure of Nebuchadnezzar's victory, which in turn will be the implicit measure of what takes place in Bethulia. Nebuchadnezzar wishes to involve all kingdoms from Persia to Egypt in his conquest of Ecbatana. But their wish for neutrality and their disrespectful attitude raise his ire.

At the end of the chapter the author drops a phrase that should be carefully read and remembered. Nebuchadnezzar, the author says, destroyed Ecbatana and "turned its beauty into shame" (1:14). Later on, the narrative will introduce another beauty whom someone will seek to shame (13:16).

A respite of four months while victory is celebrated is another hyperbole by a storyteller who is in no hurry and feels no need to be conservative in numbers. Meanwhile, does the king's ire abate? No one can go unpunished who humiliates the most powerful man on earth. Is he only a man?

2:1–13, The Divine King. King Nebuchadnezzar makes decisions and issues commands like a god. The author purposely places on the lips of the king expressions that the prophets put on the lips of God—cf. v. 11 with Ezek. 5:11; 7:4, 9; 9:5, 10; and v. 12 with Isa. 46:11; 48:15. He who originally appeared like another Sennacherib (2 Kings 18:19) now seems to aspire to a divine role—like the king in Isaiah 14. He does not swear by his god, but "as I live, and by the power of my kingdom." This oath contains a satirical allusion to the pretensions of Antiochus IV Epiphanes.

From the pinnacle of power Nebuchadnezzar moves to excessive pride. Habitual readers of the Bible know that such arrogance cannot be victorious or remain unpunished. The phrase "what I have spoken I will accomplish by my own hand" (4:12, NRSV) is laden with irony for wise readers, and even for some not so wise. Although we do not know the details—which keeps our interest—we do know the outcome—which calms us.

Holofernes (or, more properly, Horofernes) is a Persian name. Also Persian is the formula "preparing earth and water" (2:7). Those are two more signs of the fictional character of the story, which freely knits together diverse pieces of history: Ecbatana of Media, the Babylonian king of Assyria, Persian generals, and so forth.

2:14–3:10, Holofernes the Conqueror. The general with a Persian name is put in command of an Assyrian army. In the cryptic language of the book, Assyria stands for Syria, that is, the Seleucid kingdom. Nebuchadnezzar is Antiochus IV. Holofernes is probably Nicanor, one of Antiochus's generals, whose name means "conqueror."

The route of the campaign is not geographically logical, nor does the author pretend that it is. The purpose of the itinerary is to cover a wide expanse in a brief time. There is considerable variety—strong

cities, desert bedouins, shepherds, and farmers—one could say, all of culture. The list also includes traditional names, some of which have no political significance at the time when the book was written, but do have historical resonance for Jewish readers—names such as Japheth, Midian, and those of territories that had been Phoenician or Philistine.

In brief strokes the campaign places the general at the Mediterranean coast. Azotus and Ascalon, names in the ancient Philistine pentapolis, surrender themselves and their possessions unconditionally. They could be called vassals or, even better, slaves, like the Egyptians in the time of Joseph (Gen. 47:13–26). We are reminded of Jeremiah, who, during the gravest crisis in the nation's history, admonished the Judeans to "bring your necks under the yoke of the king of Babylon, and serve him and his people, and live" (Jer. 27:12, NRSV).

But the reaction of Holofernes goes beyond the orders he has received from the king, or at least those recorded in the narrative. His religious policy also goes beyond the intentions of those who have surrendered. Holofernes seeks to destroy the various national religions to install the sole worship of Nebuchadnezzar. At this point one hears echoes of the divine title of Antiochus IV Epiphanes, "god manifest." The contemporary implications of the preceding chapter become clearer (cf. Dan. 11:36; 2 Macc. 9:12). Chap. 3 ends with a radical option. To save their lives the peoples must surrender their freedom and even their religion. Again, compare the measures taken by Antiochus IV in 1 Maccabees 1.

Having subdued the coastal peoples, the general camps before Dothan of Judea. There his rapid advance will be stopped. He makes camp, however, with the morale of the undisputed conqueror. All he has to do is to stretch out his hand to occupy a defenseless region he has already encircled.

4:1–15, Resistance at Bethulia. This is the point of the dramatic and unexpected contrast—unexpected, that is, for naive readers, but not unexpected for the readers who know the Bible. In an extreme situation, Judea does not surrender, but rather makes ready for war. From this small territory two forces will oppose the military giant—the courage of a people and their trust in God.

The author takes time to describe the situation, still symbolically. The return from exile and a rebuilt Temple would seem to correspond to the times of Haggai and Zechariah. The high priest's name, Joakim, is a detail that seems to be taken from the book of Nehemiah (Neh. 12:10, 26). Other anachronistic elements are the extension of the land as far as Samaria, the fact that the Jews have no king, and that the supreme authority is that of the high priest, assisted by a senate. In fact the book refers to the conditions described in 1 Macc. 4:36–61; 2 Macc. 10:1–8, where the Temple is consecrated anew after its desecration by Antiochus IV.

In the story the people fear for the Temple, since they have heard of the measures Holofernes has taken against other local religions. This concern permits the narrator to focus on the religious theme, after having given primary attention to geographical details. In effect the narrator treats the Temple as the absolute center of the country and for its inhabitants.

The people's reaction is not limited to the purely ritual and liturgical measures of sackcloth, ashes, and humble prayer. At this point the defense of the Temple also requires military measures. Prayer and preparation for war go together. Rather than the quietness required by Isa. 30:15, what is needed is an attitude like that of Neh. 4:17, where the builders of Jerusalem's walls worked with their weapons at their sides. The military preparation is described in general terms, although the description of the passes to be defended recalls the narrow passes of Megiddo. The religious preparation is prayer, expressing the people's trust.

At the end of chap. 3 we encountered for the first time the name of Judea, the scene of the rest of the book. In 4:6 we encounter that of Bethulia, the center of resistance. It would be useless to try to pinpoint the place; it has never existed on the map of Palestine. One should look rather to its symbolic meaning.

Bethulia (Gk. *Baityloua*) is not Jerusalem, which would have been the obvious place for the confrontation (as in the time of Hezekiah and Sennacherib). Is Bethulia perhaps intended as a polemical contrast to the capital? At any rate there are other possible connotations. In 1 Chron. 4:30 there is a reference to Bethuel in the lands of Simeon. The tribe of Simeon will play an important part in the book of Judith. Moreover, Bethulia sounds like a cross between Bethel and *betulah*. Bethel was a religious capital with a tradition going back to the times of the patriarchs. *Betulah* is a Hebrew word meaning "virgin, young woman." It is a good name for a city that wishes to remain spotless. (Recall the phrase "turned its beauty into shame" in 1:14.)

5:1–21, The Foreigner's Report. The storyteller seems to enjoy keeping readers in suspense. As if the narrative rhythm of the preceding sections were not slow enough, a lateral episode is inserted here involving a secondary character. This episode will be ably woven into the plot until its final unfolding.

At the end of his campaign Holofernes encounters his first serious resistance. He is surprised and enraged. He is surprised, according to the author's depiction, by this strange people, and as a general he feels the need for information. In the list of his questions (5:3–4) there are echoes of Num. 13:17–20 (Moses' inquiries regarding the Canaanites). The focus of the series of questions in Judith is on the different behavior

of these people, for "they alone, of all who live in the west" have defied Holofernes.

Holofernes' questions are answered by Achior, the Ammonite leader. He is a character with several functions. He is an alien who will join the people of Israel, like Rahab. He is a teacher of the history and theology of Israel to foreign ears. An ally of Holofernes, he will turn against the invader. He will be the trustworthy witness at the end. Achior's summary of Israel's national history would tell nothing new to Jewish readers. The author's interest is in the point of view, for Achior is a hostile foreigner. How should foreigners look upon Jews?

The historical portion of Achior's speech is stylized and refers only to the main stages of Israel's history, giving preference to geographical movements and characterized by the absence of personal names. There is no mention of Abraham, Jacob, Moses, or David (similar to the historical sketch in Wisd. of Sol. 10). It is as if there were a choral protagonist, the people, and a transcendent one, God. From Chaldea to Mesopotamia, and then to Canaan. Pause. Deportation and repatriation. Following the narrative setting of the book, the informer stops at this point. The action of God becomes noticeable at the third stage of the people's journey. "Their God commanded them to leave their place" (5:9). It becomes more explicit at the fourth stage. God "afflicted the whole land of Egypt, . . . dried up the Red Sea, . . . and led them on to Sinai" (5:12–14). In the last two stages of deportation and repatriation God's action establishes a principle of retribution (5:17–19), thus giving the entire piece a didactic and rhetorical character.

Achior, the narrator, wishes to make Holofernes understand a principle of history and to move him to act in consequence. This will serve as a lesson to readers. Holofernes was warned, but did not heed the warning. As an irony of history, he will have caused his own destruction. For Jewish readers it will also have been helpful to remind them of the principle that what is important is to be faithful to God, who will be on their side, even in times of war. In the historical process of relation with God, once the fidelity of the people is broken, the next necessary step is return. The Jews are a people who have already returned to God, a subject to which we shall return in chap. 9.

5:22–6:9, Reaction to the Speech. The reaction is quite hostile, tumultuous on the part of the soldiers, more rationally articulated by the general. The narrator shows us characters and attitudes dramatically through action. The soldiers cannot accept something that will undercut their vanity as soldiers. This trait will propel the narrative action to the final denouement. "It's their own fault," readers will comment, without the author saying so explicitly. Pride and arrogant self-confidence remind us of Sennacherib's thoughts as described in Isa. 10:8–11; 36:18–20. Fatal blindness reminds us of Pharaoh entering the waters with his armies, going to meet death. As the saying goes, "God blinds those whom God will destroy."

On the surface the officers' words are justifiable bragging. In what they do not say, they are a lesson in theology. "They are a people with no strength or power for making war" (5:23b, NRSV). Yes, because God needs no armies to grant victory. A few are enough against many. God has weapons enough. This is a constant theme in the history of Israel, since the time of the Exodus. Foreigners will not and therefore cannot understand this, even when they are told by a foreigner like themselves, Achior. As Ps. 20:7 puts it, "Some boast of chariots, and some of horses; but our boast is the name of the LORD our God" (REB).

The speech of Holofernes in 6:2–9, besides abounding in rhetorical bragging, is an *ad hominem* response to Achior on the theological plane. Achior had not spoken of the military might of the Jews, and therefore he did not have to be refuted on that point. He had spoken highly of the conditional protection of their God. On this point a rebuttal was needed.

The general's bragging is a hyperbolic echo of his officers' cries and really addressed to them. Readers see in his words a dramatic irony awaiting the denouement. The irony will be obvious to those who hear overtones of similar attitudes (Ben-hadad in 1 Kings 20:10–11; Amaziah and Jehoash in 2 Kings 14:9–10).

The theological theme is more important. Holofernes claims exclusive deity for the king, Nebuchadnezzar, with the formula "who is God except . . . ," a phrase whose lineage is classic (Isa. 43:11; 44:6, 8; 45:5–21; 46:9; Ps. 18:31). What the Jews profess of their God, Holofernes professes of his king. Nebuchadnezzar's almost divine title is significant, "the lord of the whole earth."

Holofernes invents a refined punishment for Achior, one that combines ire and mockery. He is to share in the fate of the Jews, who are to be destroyed. This decision plays a role in the narrative, for by allowing him to keep his life temporarily, Holofernes gives him a continuing place in the story. The intended punishment also has an ironic function. Those who foresee the ultimate outcome are already laughing. Those who do not will also laugh in the end.

6:10–21, Achior's Lot. Achior is an Ammonite, and therefore an enemy of Israel, excluded from the sacral community (Deut. 23:3–4). Now, forced to do so by his recent master, he will join the Jewish people. Notice the movement. The soldiers lead him out of the allied pagan camp and toward Jewish territory. The Jews then introduce him into the city. Thus Achior imitates the movement of the Jews that he has just described. Leaving pagan Egypt, they enter the land of Canaan. The enemy is taking Achior to salvation. This will be

his reward for having spoken truly regarding the Jews. The literary character of Achior may represent the proselytes of the time, who left paganism for a superior ethics or religion. In the narrative Achior has simply approached; he is at the gates.

Achior lying bound is like an insulting and mocking present from the besiegers. He is an important officer. He could become a spy against Holofernes. No matter. Those who are secure in their victory can afford to give the adversary some minor advantages.

The author has decided that the inhabitants of Bethulia will receive this enemy cordially and without suspicion. They believe what he tells them. Readers must simply accept things as they are told and look at the scene. Here is the Ammonite "in the midst of their people," telling them what has happened. In another scene, in 14:8, we shall hear echoes of this one, with another person "in the presence of the people." Achior then becomes a guest of Uzziah, the city magistrate. In passing, we are told that this magistrate is of the tribe of Simeon. Later we shall see the significance of this detail.

The naive credulity of the people is neutralized and even justified by their trust in God. The people of Bethulia respond with an invocation that is the basis for their petition (6:19), implying the great theological principle of Ps. 138:6, "though the LORD is high, he regards the lowly; but the haughty he perceives from far away" (NRSV; cf. Ps. 113:6–7). There follows a night of calling for help to the God of Israel.

The hospitality banquet and the night of prayer close the episode of Achior, which has interrupted the military action. In exchange for this delay, we have learned about life in Bethulia, which begins to take on increased importance in the narrative.

7:1–32, The Besieged City. The picture of the small city surrounded by a huge army centers all the action on one point. From a human perspective it is obvious that Holofernes will win. Theologically, we expect the Lord's victory. Readers who recall the siege of Sennacherib will expect that "the angel of the LORD" will settle the matter. Or they could look to the poetic expressions of Psalms 46 and 48, which describe God's victories. The writer chooses a different narrative line, opening new fields of action by having the general choose a different military strategy.

The new strategy is suggested by allied chiefs. The contrast with Achior is noteworthy. He had recommended no attack to avoid shame. They also recommended not attacking, but rather subduing the city through thirst, so as not to face losses. When Holofernes agrees, the narrative gains time. God will not be called upon to save the city at the break of dawn.

The advice of the allied officers betrays their lack of understanding. They say that the Israelites rely "on the height of the mountains," on the topography of their land and on the strategic placement of their strongholds. They judge like the Syrians in 1 Kings 20:23. The truth of the matter is that Israel does not receive its help from the mountains, but from the Lord (see Ps. 125; 1 Kings 20:28). The temporal structure of the new action is asymmetrically divided. On the first day (vv. 1–5) the besiegers advance. The Israelites grow concerned and set a night watch. The second day (vv. 6–19) the besiegers take the springs. The defenders are discouraged, but they call upon the Lord. After thirty-four days of continuing siege and thirst (vv. 20–29), the people demand surrender. Uzziah persuades the people to hold out for five more days (vv. 30–32). God is given a limited time for action. This turn of events opens another measure of time in the narrative, one that is narrow and tense. Returning to the beginning of the chapter, Holofernes' new strategy revolves around the spring. This traditional detail, confirmed by archaeology (Hazor, Jerusalem, Megiddo), has a clear function in the narrative. Moreover, for readers who know biblical language, a spring is loaded with symbolic value. A never-failing spring is God for Israel (Isa. 8:6; 12:3; Jer. 2:13; Ps. 36:9); all others are "cracked cisterns" or rivers that flood and destroy.

The inhabitants of Bethulia are at first alarmed and prepare to resist the assault. Then comes the scarcity of water, which is described with overtones from Lam. 2:11, 21. The people mutiny, like the Israelites in Egypt (Exod. 5:21) or like during other rebellions in the desert, when they declared that they would rather live and be slaves (Exod. 14:12). In contrast to those other rebellions, in their present mutiny against their leaders the honor of God is not denied. If the people suffer now, it is because of their past sins. They humbly accept the punishment, as Jeremiah had urged an earlier generation to do (Jer. 27:12). Intimidated by the crowd, Uzziah weakens. He gives God a deadline, which is the same as tempting God, for God will intervene "at the set time that I appoint" (Ps. 75:2, NRSV) and not when the people decide.

8:1–8, The Protagonist Enters. Finally, after seven chapters full of events, the protagonist, Judith, enters. The ancients gave no titles to their books, or they simply called them by their first word. Unwarned readers have no idea at this point that the book has a feminine protagonist. That is not the case for those of us who know the title or who have read it before.

Judith enters belatedly, like a prima donna coming onstage in the second act of the opera. She is adorned with all the qualities that the author freely bestows on her. She is beautiful, rich, and devout. She is also a widow who leads an ascetic life. Her name, Judith (Heb. *yehudit*), is the feminine of Judah or Judahite (*yehudah* or *yehudi*), and she is the personification of the Jewish people. Like Uzziah, she belongs to the tribe

of Simeon, probably as a reminder and contrast with Dinah, the violated sister of Simeon (see Gen. 34). She is a widow, for the Jewish nation is living at a time of grave danger and affliction, like a forlorn widow. In her faithfulness to her husband's name she embodies the nation's faithfulness to its Lord.

8:9–36, Speech and Dialogue. It is noteworthy that Judith summons the chiefs rather than attending the council. In this she acts like Deborah calling Barak (Judg. 4). From her voluntary retreat she enjoys undeniable authority. Her lengthy speech is programmatic, with prophetic accents and abundant echoes of several biblical texts. Through her mouth tradition calls on the present. Two points should be underscored. First of all, she corrects the people's interpretation that their present situation is a punishment from God. It is not so. The people are faithful to God (cf. Ps. 44:18–19), and their suffering is a test from God, such as those sent earlier to the patriarchs. It is an honor to be tested and purified by God. Second, a surrender would have enormous consequences for all Israel. Bethulia is presently holding the future of all the people, for "the temple and the altar" rest upon them.

There follows a brief and tense dialogue. The words of Uzziah are ambiguous (8:28–31). There could be a sting of irony in them, as though saying, "We know that you are intelligent, but you really do not understand. You should go back and pray, while I fulfill my oath." Or they could be sincere, coming from one who acknowledges in the wise Judith a prophetic gift like Elijah's, capable of bringing rain. In either case the oath cannot be undone.

Judith does not answer directly. She accepts the oath and the deadline, and she announces that she has a secret and personal plan. She takes full responsibility. From the chiefs she requires trust and support, with no questions asked. Here the author, who already had an ace of suspense in the deadline of five days, plays another ace by mysteriously announcing a memorable event to come.

9:1–14, Judith's Prayer. First of all, Judith prays. Compared to an average psalm, her prayer is long. In the economy of the book, it is exceedingly long. There is cause for haste; only four days are left. Yet Judith spends all this time in prayer. For her, as for the author, it is how the time is best used.

In the prayer the space devoted to supplication is minor, while the hymnic introduction of praise is much longer. The outline is as follows: vv. 2–4, historical evocation of the God of the patriarch Simeon; vv. 5–6, God the Lord of history; v. 7, the power of the Assyrians; vv. 8–9, petition; vv. 11–12, God as Savior and Creator; and vv. 13–14, repetition and acknowledgment. Why this unequal distribution? The petition is based on and framed by the hymnic verses. Judith's action will be God's action. This action, which reaches back to the patriarchs, is foreseen and governed by God. It will be revelatory.

The meaning of the prayer is shown through a web of explicit and implicit correspondences. Explicit are the actions of the Shechemites in shaming a virgin of Israel (v. 2) and the plan of the Assyrians to shame the Temple (v. 8), and the striking of "slaves along with princes" by both Simeon and Judith (vv. 3, 10). Implicit is Dinah as virgin and Judith as widow, both women conventionally seen as weak and defenseless before the alien. Judith represents Israel in its weakness, for she is a woman and a widow (vv. 9–10). The power of Assyria is opposed to Jewish weakness, and God takes the side of the weak (vv. 7, 11, 14). God, who acts through human means, has no parallel and is equal only to God.

By the time her prayer ends, do we know more of Judith's plan? A little more. Though Judith says nothing to the leaders of the people, thus arousing our curiosity, she has nothing to hide from God. In allowing us to listen to her private prayer, the author could let us know fully what the plan is. The narrative takes an intermediate course. We know that Judith plans to employ the seduction of her words ("by the deceit of my lips," "make my deceitful words to bring wound and bruise," vv. 10, 13, NRSV). Only her words? What about her beauty? What does the reference to Dinah tell us?

The prayer partly imitates the poetic style of the Psalms, using synonyms and parallelisms. It contains quotations and echoes from the Psalms and the Prophets. Where it breaks with tradition is in its positive valuation of Simeon's vengeance, which Genesis condemns both in the narrative put in Jacob's lips and in the testament of the patriarch (Gen. 34:30; 49:5–6). The author of Judith takes the side of Simeon and Levi against Jacob. And now we see why the author decided to make the heroine a member of the diluted, if not extinct, tribe of Simeon.

10:1–23, Judith Goes to the Assyrian Camp. Finally the protagonist begins to act—but not immediately (vv. 1–10). The beautiful coquette spends part of the little time remaining in careful toilette that the author divides into nine separate actions. Now the storyteller mocks readers' haste. And we tell ourselves, "Apparently the seduction will not be merely verbal."

Judith's dress is laden with symbolic meaning when seen in the light of Isa. 52:1–2, where Jerusalem is called by God to joy and feasting. "Awake, put on your strength, . . . put on your beautiful garments. . . . Shake yourself from the dust" (NRSV). As Judith's widow's garments mourned the oppression of the people, so her joyous raiment anticipates salvation. The new action has begun. Judith's beauty will conquer, sweeping all as it passes. The narrator enjoys letting us see that beauty through the eyes of others in the

story. The first of these are the leaders of Bethulia, who in their brief prayer correctly link her beauty with the glory and exaltation of Jerusalem (10:8).

Judith's other measures are part of her secret. Why does she need to take with her clean food? To keep the laws of purity or as part of her plan? Her maid will be a silent figure, a witness, a defense, a helper. We must gaze upon Judith leaving through the eyes of the inhabitants of Bethulia—from above, wondering, worrying. With a technique like that of cinematography, changing our perspective, the storyteller lets us see her next coming toward us in the enemy guardpost. This is the beginning of the conquering advance of beauty, which contrasts with the destructive advance of Holofernes (vv. 11–19). Who will win? Judith conquers the guards (v. 14), creates a tumult among the soldiers (v. 18), overcomes the staff and the general himself (v. 23), and then falls prostrate. That beautiful face humbles itself before the general, as if beauty were rendering homage to the power of arms. Is it so? Holofernes is thinking about conquering her, and he sees her already surrendering.

It is at this point that the masterful irony of these chapters comes into play. Judith's words walk a narrow edge of ambiguity. Their interpretation will depend on the hearers' attitude. Judith appears to surrender before the defenders of Bethulia do likewise. She goes over to the enemy with very valuable information. It is a good exchange—Judith for Achior.

One has to read and reread the dialogue to grasp its ironic ambiguity. "They are about to be handed over to you," Judith says, and readers recall the five-day limit. "You have saved your life. . . . Do not be afraid. . . . He will treat you well," the soldiers reply. Their words sound almost like an oracle of salvation (cf. Isa. 42:1–7). What does it mean, for a man to treat a woman well? Admiring Judith, the soldiers speculate on the prowess of the Jewish men who "will be able to beguile the whole world" (NRSV), never suspecting that this woman is a snare.

11:1–12:20, Judith and Holofernes Face to Face. It is in this section of the narrative that the dramatic irony reaches its apex as it develops at various levels. The irony appears in the verbal duel between the beautiful and the powerful. We have already been told that Judith is wise and able (like so many other women in the history of Israel). The action now shows the vanity and sensuality of Holofernes. The woman will use these two vices as allies in her plan. She will bait his vanity by praising his successes, promising new ones, and downplaying the role of the king. His sensuality, captivated by the display of her beauty, will be awakened with signs and gestures of acceptance, until his desire becomes passion, assured of conquest.

Vanity and sensuality are unable to see through Judith's ambiguities, for to be suspicious would be to acknowledge his own vanity and to call a halt to sensuality. Judith praises the power and wisdom of the general, and this is like a challenge. Let his sagacity unmask her; let his power overcome her. Otherwise he will be shown to be weak and naive.

Also, in a long and complicated discourse Judith leads the general along legal and religious paths he does not understand, where he is lost. She had promised to lead him free of danger along the mountain passes. The general has to accept her guidance and be grateful for her information, while being unable to understand or criticize her. To crown it all, Judith appears with the impressive aureole of the prophet or confidante of God. Hers is a superior knowledge that all must follow.

Throughout the entire duel, like a permeating light, there is the radical polarity between man and woman and the traditional correspondence, suggested in the narrative, between a city and a woman. The general, whose king "shamed the beauty" of Ecbatana, will conquer the woman Judith before he conquers Bethulia. On her part Judith has been entering the camp, even into the commander's tent and, through his eyes, into his heart. How will this battle of love end? Love walks with death.

11:1–23, An Arcane Report. Holofernes opens the first round of the dialogue to the greater glory of the "king of all earth," whom all either serve or will serve. He addresses the young woman with an air of protective condescension, as lord of life and death, with words that are traditionally heard from God, "Have courage and you will live." Not really knowing what he says, he adds, "tonight and from now on."

Judith responds by glorifying Holofernes, the true creator of the king's victories. With a different intention she echoes the general, calling Nebuchadnezzar "king of all the earth" and foretelling a cosmic domain for him, such as is described in Psalm 8 or in Dan. 2:38; 4:20–22. (The author of Daniel is almost contemporary with the author of Judith.) She even dares to swear by the king's life.

After a long introduction in which she gains his goodwill, Judith begins to analyze the present situation of Bethulia. To do this she takes Achior's speech as a point of reference. This is a risky move, but the risk is controlled by astuteness. Judith quotes Achior to draw the opposite conclusion—or rather to put forth the alternative that Achior's conditional style left open. In summary, the Jews are invincible only if they obey the commandments of their God. But they are about to break them, and therefore their downfall is near.

While entangling the inexpert general in religious considerations, Judith (or rather the author) is also issuing a warning to Jews in the collaborationist party. Take care not to give way in the observance of the commandments! Whoever surrenders a wall surrenders the city. The worst of all is that this party is in control of Jerusalem (11:14–15).

In v. 16 Judith thrusts with one of her mysterious

phrases aimed at the same time in two directions, at Holofernes and at readers. "God has sent me to accomplish with you things that will astonish the whole world, wherever people shall hear about them" (NRSV).

The following verse prepares and justifies a fundamental maneuver in her plan of action and also shows her trust in God. She concludes with a promise. She, with her own hand (neither the king nor he himself), will give the general the attributes of David, the title of shepherd and a throne in Jerusalem.

Holofernes' answer is extravagant. He will either accept Judith's God in his pantheon, or he will convert. (On this expression, "your god," see Ruth 1:16; Dan. 2:47.) Judith will be a wife or a concubine to the king. (Or is Holofernes keeping her for himself?) The general has allowed himself to be carried away by Judith, and his tone becomes religious, even devout. His last phrase closes the passage with a sharp irony. It is as if he were saying, "Thanks to me, you will be famous in all the world." Let it be! (suggests the author). So it is! (say readers).

12:1–20, A Guest of Honor. The dialogue becomes more terse, and the setting changes. With her words Judith has built around herself a sacred aura of fascination as well as a refuge to which she can go to maneuver. She will be able to invoke religious motivations as needed, giving her freedom of movement.

In the new field, that of amorous conquest, Holofernes leads the gallant siege. First he makes a gesture of generous vanity, exquisite food on silver dishes. This offer might impress and bribe the young and hungry refugee. Judith takes shelter in the religious observances that she has so wisely discussed and declines the offer. Second, the eunuch seeks to transform Judith into "one of the Assyrian women who serve in the palace of Nebuchadnezzar" (v. 13, NRSV). Judith accepts with renewed ambiguity. Third, as the two sit face to face, eating and drinking, Judith's ambiguity reaches its apex.

The details underline the sensuous atmosphere that pervades the explicit words—the food, the soft fleeces on which to lie, the wine, and "her woman's finery." The language is carefully chosen, and one must listen attentively. The characters will interpret it in one way and the readers in another. While the general substitutes insinuation for direct proposition, the young woman, with feints of verbal fencing, pushes her enemy to the place where she wants him. Holofernes is too sure of himself to doubt or suspect. When she declines, he has to respect her convictions. When she does not object or agrees to a proposal, he takes the final answer for granted. The result is that the general abandons himself to her looks, to overwhelming passion, to the excitement of wine. In the end the powerful general is at the mercy of the young woman.

There are three responses by Judith that should be underlined: 12:4; 12:14; and 12:18. Each has a temporal reference. The first is to the framework of five days (of which the narrator opportunely reminds us). The other two are to the immediate present ("at once" and "today") as an exceptional occasion. Also, the term "lord" changes its meaning. The first time it refers to Judith's God. In the other two instances it could refer either to Holofernes or to the Lord.

The general's words to the eunuch Bagoas clearly express what today we would call machismo. "It would be a disgrace if we let such a woman go without having intercourse with her" (v. 12, NRSV). In the context of the story, such machismo fits well with the arrogance of power.

13:1–10, The Fatal Night. The dialogue ends. The action begins. It is all on Judith's part, for Holofernes lies prostrate, "overcome with wine." The narrator adds some earlier details that are necessary to have the plan work.

The servants all retire to their various tents. Outside the general's tent the maid waits. In the bedchamber the man and woman are alone. But Judith does not feel alone, for with her is the Lord, whom she twice invokes, mentally and briefly.

Following the traditional models of Hebrew narrative, the action is now expressed in a series of brief strokes, with a great density of verbs, thus giving speed to the narrative. Among the details, one should note that Judith beheads Holofernes using the enemy's own sword (like David beheading Goliath) and that she takes the canopy (a private and reserved possession) as her proof.

By the time Judith reaches the gates of Bethulia, the story could be over. At least it could for modern readers. But not for readers of those times, who wished to complete, to exploit, and above all to celebrate.

13:11–14:10, The Victorious City. At this point the narrative takes on a festive tone. Hymns and praises overshadow the action. Judith speaks three times before her fellow citizens can recover from their surprise and respond to her. Twice her words are those of a hymn. The third time they are more informative. When those in Bethulia respond, they pronounce blessings.

In the first speech (13:11), the initial words, rather than a petition, are quotations or echoes of Pss. 24:7; 118:19; Isa. 26:2. "God is with us" is an oracular formula, reminiscent of "immanuel." In the second speech (13:14), praise continues. The previous statement spoke of "today"; the second speaks of "this night," echoing the Passover ritual (see Exod. 12:12). In this second speech Judith begins the report of the enemy's death. In the third speech (13:15–16), this statement is more informative, with exhibit of proof and an oath of innocence ("He committed no sin with me," NRSV). Readers can imagine the effect of the head of Holofernes raised by Judith in the wavering light of the fire.

The people respond to Judith's words by praising and blessing God. The chief of the city pronounces a more elaborate blessing, including the two traditional components, "may God bless you" and "the Lord be blessed" (cf. Gen. 14:19–20). The choral "amen" of the people is the third part, which underscores the almost liturgical tone of the scene. The more informative details are interspersed in that setting.

In 14:1–4 Judith takes military command of the city. In the form of orders she foretells what will take place. The pattern of events is familiar from other biblical descriptions of the death of an enemy leader. For the hanging head, see 1 Sam. 31:9–10 (the head of Saul) and 1 Macc. 7:47 (the head of Nicanor; cf. 2 Macc. 15:30–35). For the mobilization of the Israelites, see Judg. 3:26–30. And for the spoils, see, e.g., Gen. 34:27–29; 1 Sam. 17:52–54; 2 Kings 7:14–16.

The encounter between Achior and Judith (14:5–10) closes the secondary story of the Ammonite leader. The one who had been a benevolent preacher of the history of Israel and a proselyte is now a witness. A paradoxical witness, he gives his testimony by falling on his face and losing his spirit. The deed is so great that he cannot bear it and loses his senses. When he recovers, all he can do is pronounce another benediction. He is converted and is fully incorporated into the community of Israel, even against the rules of Deut. 23:3–4. With Judith's report, which the narrator does not repeat, time is taken up until daybreak.

14:11–19, In the Assyrian Camp. The narrator knows how to exploit contrasts. To the discovery and information in Bethulia correspond the discovery and spreading of the news in the camp. To the ritual joy of the besieged corresponds the funeral rite of the besiegers. The narrator enjoys telling us how the alarm rises along the military hierarchy toward the center and the head. There it is suddenly interrupted, for the general lies headless. The author also knows how to develop the discovery and the reaction by Bagoas in a crescendo of verbs. These verbs first move forward: "went . . . knocked . . . opened . . . found." Then they stop: "cried out . . . wept . . . groaned . . . shouted . . . rent his garments." Bagoas's report is intensively emotional. But his pain and indignation are the joy of the narrator and of the readers. The Jews, Bagoas says, are slaves and traitors, and a woman from among them "has brought disgrace." The woman has conquered the man, the servant the master.

Since the author was not willing to end the story at 13:10, this would be another good ending place, with the shouts of despair of the besiegers, in contrast to their arrogant confidence in the initial chapters. But the author would rather end with a joyous tone and wishes to savor and prolong the joy of victory. Narratively, we are now descending.

15:1–13, Denouement. This chapter does not add much to the narrative. It describes the rout of the enemy, pursuit, and plunder. The author could have saved time, but is caught in the very web of the narrative, like a sportscaster after a victory for the home team.

One should note for their political implications the congratulations of the high priest and of the senate. The highest authorities confirm that belligerent resistance is the correct attitude and that collaborationism is wrong. The Israelites can plunder the material goods of the enemy, but they must not accept their customs. Not only do the authorities approve, but they also affirm that "God is well pleased." This is the ultimate referendum, which the people approve with a unanimous "amen."

Then Judith, who has acted as a prophet, an intercessor, and a strategist, takes on the role of choreographer, like Miriam (see Exod. 14–15). Finally, she takes the crown of a poet. The storyteller will not begrudge praise and makes the protagonist the author of the final hymn.

16:1–17, Canticle of Judith. Her poem is wide in scope, like the prayer in chap. 9. Its movement is majestic, with synonymous repetition and evocative, bold strokes (vv. 3, 9). The generative theme is succinctly stated in v. 5: "But the Lord Almighty has foiled them by the hand of a woman" (NRSV). "The Lord" is a name that resounds seven times in the hymn. He is "omnipotent" in creation and in repeated historical events. The "them" who are foiled are now the Assyrians, the very powerful and invincible Assyrians. "By the hand of a woman" refers to an individual and recent event. God chooses the weak to overcome the strong. The structure of the hymn is as follows: introduction (vv. 1–2) and historical depiction (vv. 3–12); introduction (v. 13) and cosmic depiction (vv. 14–15); and conclusion (vv. 16–17). The parallelism between historical action and cosmic action is traditional (cf. Ps. 136). The eschatological ending harkens back to the prophets.

The relationship between the historical and the cosmic goes beyond a mere parallelism or coincidence. There is a unifying dynamism. The recent history has been dramatic—aggression, extreme danger, and miraculous deliverance. Such was also the drama of creation, with its resistance and rebellion, which the Lord's power repeatedly overcomes (cf. Isa. 52:9–11). Then comes a basic contrast. Although God rules over the cosmos directly, in history God prefers to act and to triumph by means of the weak, as long as they fear the Lord. Judith's mighty deed has been above all a new revelation of the Lord.

Although the psalm is full of quotations and echoes from the OT, it is still original. What follows are a few parallels to guide readers:

v. 4: Ps. 3:6; Isa. 37:24; Jer. 1:15
v. 5: 2 Kings 8:12; Ps. 137:9; Nah. 3:10
v. 6: Judg. 4:9; Ps. 33:10
v. 7: Deut. 1:28; 3:11

v. 13: Exod. 15:1; Ps. 144:9
v. 14: Pss. 33:6–9; 104:30
v. 15: Pss. 46:3; 97:4–5; Mic. 1:4
v. 17: Isa. 66:24

The section of highest poetical quality is vv. 3–9. Here one finds a well-developed antithesis between the massive and overwhelming advance of Assyria and Judith's meticulous actions: a woman against an army; seduction against aggression; beauty against strength. Between the two, as a wedge, intervenes the transcendent Lord, whose extended arm Judith is (v. 6). She is exalted by contrasts of mythical or legendary flavor ("the sons of Titans, . . . tall giants," v. 6, NRSV). Verse 9 is masterful in its use of the ambivalent verbs "ravished" and "captivated," which belong to the language both of war and love, as well as by the symmetry of its poetic lines and by the surprising leap from subject to subject ("her sandal . . . her beauty . . . her sword").

The final verse is also an admonition. Empires and nations decide their own final lot, "in the day of judgment" by their attitudes toward the weak people of Israel. The psalm is followed by a processional dance (cf. Ps. 68) that leads to the Temple in Jerusalem.

16:18–25, Epilogue. It would appear that the original readers, or at least many of them, would wish to know what happened next. So Judith was very rich, very famous; she had many suitors; and she did not marry. Would this disillusion readers? No. With her unbreakable fidelity to the memory of her first husband, Judith symbolizes the fidelity of the people to its only Lord. From this fidelity follows a stable peace. Judith lives to be 105, 15 years older than Moses, 5 years younger than Joshua. The peace she has secured lasts longer than any achieved in the times of the judges.

Bibliography

Bal, M. "Head Hunting: 'Judith' on the Cutting Edge of Knowledge." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 63 (1994): 3–34.

Craghan, J. *Esther, Judith, Tobit, Jonah, Ruth.* Old Testament Message, 16. Wilmington, DE: Glazier, 1982.

Craven, T. S. *Artistry and Faith in the Book of Judith.* Society of Biblical Literature Dissertation Series, 70. Chico, CA: Scholars Press, 1983.

Hopkins, D. D. *Judith.* New Interpreter's Bible. Vol. 3. Nashville, TN: Abingdon Press. Forthcoming.

Moore, C. A. *Judith.* Anchor Bible, 40. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1985.

Purdie, E. *The Story of Judith in German and English Literature.* Paris: Honoré Champien, 1927.

Vanderkam, J. C., ed. *"No One Spoke Ill of Her": Essays on Judith.* Society of Biblical Literature Early Judaism and Its Literature Series, 2. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1992.

Wills, L. M. *The Jewish Novel in the Ancient World.* Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1995.

The Additions to Esther

AMY-JILL LEVINE

INTRODUCTION

The Hebrew form of the book of Esther, the canonical form for Jews and Protestants, is only one of several versions of the story preserved from antiquity (*see* Esther). The Septuagint (LXX) version, also known in scholarly circles as the "B," or "Beta," Text, is found in the ancient Greek Codex Vaticanus. Although it is likely dependent on the Hebrew, or Masoretic Text (MT), it includes six major additions that are not attested either in the MT or in any of the other Semitic versions of the story (Talmud, Targumim, Syriac Bible). Greek Esther also makes other substantial changes that influence the book's theology, characterization, and plot. There is also a second Greek version, called the "A," or "Alpha," Text. Opinion is divided as to whether the "A" version originates in a tradition earlier than and different from the MT (except for the Additions) or whether it is entirely based on the LXX.

In modern scholarly discussion, the six Additions are identified by the letters A–F. Of the Additions, A, C, D, and F probably were composed in either Hebrew or Aramaic, whereas B and E were probably composed in Greek. A colophon (i.e., a scribal note at the end of the text) indicates that the Greek book of Esther, including the Additions, was brought from Jerusalem, where it had been translated by Lysimachus, to Egypt in the fourth year of Ptolemy and Cleopatra (probably 114 B.C., although, since there were other royal couples with those names who ruled Egypt, 77 and 48 B.C. are also possible dates).

When the Christian scholar Jerome (ca. A.D. 342–420) prepared the Latin (Vulgate [Vg.]) version of the Bible, he moved the Additions, found only in the Greek version, to the end of the book, even though they belong logically at various points in the course of the narrative. When Christian monastics added chapter and verse numbers in the thirteenth century, they mostly followed the order of the Vg. Following 10:3, the last verse of Hebrew Esther, they placed Addition F, the interpretation of Mordecai's dream, the explanation of the origin of Purim, and the colophon (10:4–11:1), because its content logically follows from 10:3. The Additions are as follows:

A 1–17 (= 11:2–12:6): Mordecai's dream and the eunuchs' plot

B 1–7 (= 13:1–7): Artaxerxes' first letter

C 1–30 (= 13:8–14:19): Prayers of Mordecai and Esther

D 1–16 (= 15:1–16): Esther's appearance before the king

E 1–24 (= 16:1–24): Artaxerxes' second letter

F 1–11 (= 10:4–11:1): The interpretation of Mordecai's dream; colophon.

Some English versions of the Bible print only the Additions in the Apocrypha; others, in addition to printing the Hebrew Esther in the OT, also print the Greek book of Esther, including the Additions, in the Apocrypha; and some, especially those published under the authority of the Roman Catholic church, print only one book of Esther, translating both the Hebrew text and the Greek Additions in the sequence in which they appear in the Greek Bible. In the interest of reading Greek Esther as a narrative whole, discussion below considers the Additions in their narrative context.

Historical, Social, and Religious Setting

Although the Hebrew version of Esther may have been composed as early as the late fourth century B.C. (i.e., at the end of the Persian period or the beginning of the Hellenistic period), Greek Esther is a product of the Hellenistic era. Numerous differences between the Hebrew and Greek versions reflect the different settings of the two versions. Most striking are the differences with respect to explicitly religious themes and motifs. The Hebrew story of Esther does not mention God, address Jewish practices such as circumcision, food laws, and Sabbath observance, or demonstrate a concern for enmity with Gentiles or even intermarriage. By contrast, Greek Esther mentions God over fifty times; Jewish practices are repeatedly invoked, as is antipathy between Jews and Gentiles; and Esther explicitly states her distaste for her intermarriage. These concerns, common elsewhere throughout the OT Apocrypha, reflect the changing cultural and religious pressures upon Jews as Greek thought spread in the wake of Alexander the Great (d. 323 B.C.). Esther may even be read as a symbol for postexilic Israel: orphaned and in the Diaspora, she might appear to be defeated. Yet she succeeds gloriously in retaining her

religious and cultural identity. Even the Gentiles recognize her beauty, her loyalty to the state, and the divine protection she receives.

As Jews retained and developed religious practices that enhanced their own distinctive identity (e.g., dietary restrictions, Sabbath observance), they also adapted and adopted the languages, genres, and motifs of the wider culture. Thus recognizably Hellenistic literary features are evident not only in Greek Esther, but also in other Jewish writings from this period. These features include the genre of the novella (a developed short story), the use of women as main characters (e.g., Judith, Susanna, Sarah and Anna in Tobit, the martyred mother in 2 and 4 Maccabees), the emphasis on expressions of personal piety, and the development of characterization through descriptions of emotion.

Ironically, Greek Esther—more "Jewish" in theology and praxis than the Hebrew version—is not canonical for Judaism. It is designated as part of the OT Apocrypha in Protestant churches and is canonical for Roman Catholicism and Eastern Orthodoxy.

Esther as Exemplar

In the synagogue, Esther has been traditionally viewed as a model wife who, unlike Vashti (Gk. Astin), is obedient to her husband. In churches, Esther was often the favorite topic for a "women's Sunday" sermon. Feminist criticism in the 1970s, however, began to distrust Esther's role as moral exemplar. She became viewed as one who used her body rather than her brains, who was weak compared to Mordecai, and who was the instigator of the slaughter of thousands. The true heroine, some claimed, was Vashti. She refused to be displayed before her husband's drunken friends; she determined her own fate.

Interpretation of Esther's character has subsequently become more complex. Esther is now frequently hailed as knowing when and how to follow good advice (from Mordecai, from the eunuchs), as gaining in self-confidence, as moving from passivity to active engagement, and as both brave and clever in her manipulation of the king. Although Vashti refused the king's command, her action could be seen as of benefit, and that questionable, only to herself. For those who seek a more self-assured, braver protagonist, however, Esther in the Hebrew version, as opposed to the one in the Greek account, may be of more value.

Greek Esther's heroine is more "feminine" than her Hebrew counterpart. She is frequently described by means of passive verbs; she is self-effacing in her prayer; she faints before the king; she appears more interested in clothing, etc. The Greek account also heightens the dangers Esther faces in visiting the king, so that her physical reactions (fainting, twice) can be accentuated. Complementing her feminine role, Greek Esther is also more pious than her Hebrew counterpart. The LXX version accentuates her religious practices and provides her a prayer twice as long as that of Mordecai. However, the Greek text also suggests that Esther is literate and attributes to her the composition of imperial edicts.

Whereas the story in Hebrew Esther begins with Vashti's refusal, and so highlights women's action, Greek Esther begins with Mordecai's dream. In so doing, it constrains the power of its heroine. Similar contextualization of female protagonists within the stories of male characters appears in the books of Judith and Susanna. The first allusion to Esther's story in other literature is the notice in 2 Macc. 15:26 that the fourteenth of Adar (Esther 9:19) was called "the day of Mordecai"; such a notice would be more consistent with the Greek than the Hebrew version.

COMMENTARY

Addition A (1–17) = 11:2–12:6, Mordecai's Dream and the Eunuchs' Plot

11:2–12, Mordecai's Dream. Unlike the Hebrew story, which begins events in the royal court, Greek Esther begins with Mordecai (Gk. Mardocheus; the connection of the name to that of the Babylonian god Marduk is evident). Thus it locates Jews at the center of the story. Emphasis on Mordecai's Benjaminite descent serves more than genealogical curiosity. Like other Second Temple texts (Ezra-Nehemiah, Judith, Tobit), Greek Esther highlights ancestry. Following exile, and especially for diaspora communities, identity is increasingly determined by lineage as opposed to land. Notice of Mordecai's participation in the Babylonian exile raises chronological problems, since the captivity ended in 538 B.C., and Artaxerxes (probably Artaxerxes II, 404–358 B.C.) reigned more than a hundred years later. Perhaps this discrepancy, especially coupled with Mordecai's dream, bespeaks the tale's fictional nature.

The Addition also raises Mordecai's status by identifying him as a "great man, serving in the court of the king." The Hebrew does not make clear whether Mordecai was already a royal functionary or whether he appears at court simply because he is concerned for Esther (2:11). Mordecai's prominence is confirmed by his dream. Recollecting that earlier dreamer Joseph and drawing upon apocalyptic motifs that increasingly mark Second Temple Judaism, the dream establishes Mordecai as a mediator of heavenly portents. Unlike later visionaries such as Daniel and John of Patmos, however, Mordecai receives no divine interpretation. The story will unfold the meaning of the dream, which Mordecai then summarizes in Addition F.

The dream's two dragons, representing Mordecai and Haman, and the miraculous spring, symbolizing

Esther, raise the plot to cosmic proportions. The threat to the Jews, the "righteous nation" (11:9) is a threat to the earth. The motif of antagonism between Jews and Gentiles continues throughout the book, as it does throughout much of the Apocrypha. With the image of sunrise, the dream appropriately ends. The final image in Mordecai's dream presents the apocalyptic theme of reversal: the exaltation of the lowly and their devouring of those now honored. The Jews' victory will be accomplished through two themes permeating Greek Esther: prayer and divine response.

12:1–6, Discovery of a Plot Against the King. Whether Addition A presents a more elaborate version of Esther 2:21–23 or a different account of treachery is not clear. Mordecai, dozing in the court, overhears the conversation of the eunuchs Gabatha and Tharra and, after investigation, discovers their plan to assassinate the king. In reward for alerting him to this danger, Artaxerxes orders Mordecai to serve in his court (a redundancy, since Mordecai is already there). Mordecai thus fills the role of the wise courtier, a character type well known in ancient Near Eastern literature (cf. Joseph and Daniel in the Hebrew Bible, and Ahiqar in the nonbiblical story of the same name).

The scene also introduces the king. Less the continuously drunk bumbler of the Hebrew version who fails to reward Mordecai immediately (2:19–23; 6:1–11), here he at least begins as a competent ruler who arranges that the eunuchs be questioned and, only after their confession, executed. Both Mordecai and the king record the event; the major role official documents will play begins here.

The Addition closes with the notice that Haman plotted against not only Mordecai, but also his people "because of the two eunuchs" (12:6). In the Hebrew, Haman's motivation is Mordecai's refusal to bow to him; his reasons are personal, and Mordecai's responsibility for Haman's actions an open question. In the Greek version, however, Haman's reasons are political, and Mordecai emerges as both patriotic and pious (see Addition C).

Finally, Addition A identifies Haman as a "Bougian." The word could be a synonym for "Agagite" ("Bougian" appears in 3:1, where the Hebrew reads "Agagite") or "Macedonian" (see 9:24), or perhaps a word meaning "bully" or "braggart." Less likely, it may be derived from an Iranian term meaning "god." If the last is correct, then Haman's name might mean "worshiper of Mithra."

1:1–22, The Royal Court. Following the Hebrew, Greek Esther depicts the court of Artaxerxes (probably Artaxerxes II, 404–358 B.C.) as sybaritic: there is much luxury, wine, and indulgence for the king's friends, the Persian and Median nobles, and the provincial governors. The initial celebration of 180 days is followed by a drinking party of 6 days.

Separate from her husband, Queen Vashti (Gk. Astin) is hosting her own gathering for the women in the palace. On the seventh day of his drinking party, Artaxerxes orders his seven eunuchs to bring the queen (1:11). One of the eunuchs is identified as Haman (1:10). If this is the same character as the story's villain, then his children (9:10) were conceived prior to his becoming a eunuch. Alternatively, it could be a textual error.

Vashti refuses the king's order to appear before him (1:12). Why she refuses—disgust at being an object of display for drunken men; involvement with her own party; mean-spiritedness—is never explained. The absence of motive is not uncommon in biblical narrative, especially in relation to female characters (cf. Jael in Judg. 4–5 or Delilah in Judg. 16). Artaxerxes, furious at the insult, inquires about an appropriate response.

One adviser responds that news of Vashti's having "defied the king" (1:17) will prompt all governors' wives to defy their husbands. The solution is for Artaxerxes to enact a decree, unalterable as all laws of the Medes and Persians, that Vashti no longer appear before him. Thus, the king sanctions what Vashti willingly chose. Artaxerxes is also advised to promulgate a new law compelling women to honor their husbands. Whether Esther and Haman's wife, Zosara, do this, let alone all women throughout Persia, is another question.

2:1–20, The Search for a Queen. To replace the exiled Vashti, Artaxerxes appoints officers to select "beautiful and virtuous girls" (2:2) who are virgins, bring them to Susa, and entrust them to the royal eunuch. Obtaining a wife by beauty pageant and talent show, although inconsistent with political realities in which royal marriages serve to cement international relations, is entirely consistent with Greek Esther's satirical description of the Persian court.

Esther is introduced as the orphan daughter of Mordecai's uncle Aminadab. Described as a young girl (Gk. *korasion*), Esther is raised as "Mordecai's own" (2:7). Scholars debate whether the phrase indicates that she was like his own daughter or that she was to become Mordecai's wife (see *b. Meg.* 13a).

Brought to Susa, Esther is placed in the care of Gai the eunuch; pleasing him, she is granted ointments, seven maids, and special favor in the harem. However, following Mordecai's command, Esther does not disclose her "people or country" (2:10). In referring to "country" (Gk. *patrida*), the LXX emphasizes the Jews as a political entity, whereas the corresponding Hebrew word (*moladetah*, "kindred") focuses on her family line. The Greek also implies that had she mentioned her people, her position would have been less secure. That she remained "closeted" is consistent with the way the narrator introduces her, for Esther says nothing in this opening montage.

Next described is the regimen for potential brides. Each candidate marinates for a year in oil, myrrh, and

spices, after which she has one night to impress the king. The next morning, after this affair of state (evening events are not detailed), she departs to the second harem "of the women" (i.e., the "girls" are now classified as "women") and does not revisit the king unless summoned.

Esther succeeds in impressing Artaxerxes, in part because she neglected nothing the eunuch had commanded (2:15). The king places upon her head the "queen's diadem" (as opposed to the Hebrew version's "royal crown"; the woman, at this point, has no governmental role) and gives a banquet to celebrate his marriage. Anticipating a motif developed later, that the elevation of Jews is good for the general population, Artaxerxes also grants a remission of taxes.

At this point, Greek Esther introduces its major difference from the Hebrew. Esther is described as "fearing God," "doing his commandments," and remaining faithful to her (Jewish) way of living (2:20). Her identity remains known only to Mordecai and to the readers.

2:21–23, The Plot Against Artaxerxes, Again. This scene, resembling Addition A, reports that the king's eunuchs, angry over Mordecai's advancement, conspire to kill Artaxerxes. Mordecai reports the plot to Esther, who conveys the information to her husband. Artaxerxes executes the eunuchs and deposits a memorandum of Mordecai's goodwill in the royal library; he will be reminded of Mordecai's fidelity later (6:2).

3:1–13, Haman's Edict. Chapter 3 reintroduces Haman, already known from Addition A. Artaxerxes orders his courtiers to bow before Haman, but Mordecai refuses. The Hebrew provides no explicit reason for Mordecai's behavior; later Jewish tradition (Targumim, Midrashim) suggests the cause was an idol Haman wore. Greek Esther offers a rationale in Addition C (see commentary below). Mordecai's fellow attendants inform Haman of his recalcitrance and that Mordecai had told them he was Jewish. Haman, furious, plans to kill Persia's Jews.

Haman fixes the date for the genocide by casting lots (Heb. *purim*), which fall on the fourteenth of Adar. Then he manipulates the king into signing the death warrant by speaking not of "Jews," but of a "certain nation" (3:8) that keeps different statutes and customs and does not obey royal law. Along with noting the expediency of eliminating this nation, Haman offers Artaxerxes ten thousand silver talents for the treasury. The king, showing no concern for evidence or details, gives Haman his signet ring, apparently bargains for the amount Haman will pay (scholars argue that "keep the money" [lit., "Your silver is given to you," 3:11] reflects the opening of a financial discussion), and grants permission to "do whatever you want" (3:11). Haman then arranges for the edict to be sent throughout Persia.

Addition B (1–7) = 13:1–7, Artaxerxes' First Letter

This pretentious composition, ostensibly historical but likely composed for the purposes of the book, breaks the flow of the plot in favor of developing the king's characterization and the book's sarcasm at his expense.

The letter depicts Artaxerxes as oblivious to the folly of the edict. His lack of perspicacity is evident in his claims to be lacking in "presumption," but as always acting "reasonably" and "with kindness." To the contrary, he is sanctioning a slaughter. Moreover, the letter never specifies the people to be killed and never details examples of their political infidelity. Readers recognize the irony: it is Mordecai, not the Persian eunuchs, who shows faithfulness; Esther, not Vashti, who shows loyalty; Haman who, as Addition A indicates, cannot be "distinguished for his unchanging goodwill and steadfast fidelity" (13:3). No "second father" (13:6) to king and kingdom, Haman proposes the killing not only of men, but also of their wives and children.

3:14–15, Susa's Confusion. Upon the posting of the royal edict in every province, Artaxerxes and Haman celebrate, while the capital of Susa is thrown into confusion (3:15). Again, Greek Esther indicates that danger to Jews means danger to the empire.

4:1–17, Mordecai Alerts Esther. Reacting to the edict, Mordecai dresses in traditional mourning garb: sackcloth and ashes. Running throughout Susa, he cries, "An innocent nation is being destroyed" (4:1). He stops only at the king's gate because of a law forbidding sackcloth and ashes inside the courtyard. His mourning is repeated by Jews throughout Persia. Esther, informed by her maids and eunuchs about Mordecai's appearance, but apparently unaware of the reason, sends him new clothes.

When Mordecai refuses her gift, she sends her attendant, the eunuch Hachratheus, to get "accurate information" (4:5). Mordecai mentions Haman's bribe, provides Esther a copy of the edict (perhaps implying that she is literate), and, invoking his parental role, commands that Esther call upon the Lord and plead her case to the king.

The mediated conversation highlights Esther's obedience and religiosity. Esther expresses her fear of approaching Artaxerxes unbidden. Mordecai responds that Esther has no choice: should she remain silent, Jews will receive help from another quarter (sometimes seen as an implicit reference to divine intervention), but she and her father's household will die. He ends by suggesting that her accession to the throne was providential.

Agreeing to Mordecai's demands, Esther orders him to assemble the Jews of Susa and to command a fast for three days and nights; she and her maids will also fast. Then, in violation of Persian law (4:16), she will see the king.

Addition C (1–30) = 13:8–18; 14:1–19, Prayers of Mordecai and Esther

Unlike the Esther in the Hebrew version, but like other female characters in the Apocrypha (Judith, Sarah in the book of Tobit, Susanna in the Additions to Daniel, and the martyred mother in 2 and 4 Maccabees), the LXX's Esther offers a well-developed prayer. Mordecai's prayer resembles the invocations by Daniel's companions (Song of the Three Youths), the Prayer of Manasseh, and Tobit. Likely composed originally in Hebrew, the prayers provide the most extensive theological components of the Esther tradition.

The prayers are conventional: both praise God as "Lord" and "king"; mention divine strength, universal rule, and omniscience; and proclaim the Jewish community to be an "eternal inheritance." Their emphasis on personal piety and identification with the community are hallmarks of the Apocrypha.

Differences also mark the scenes. Mordecai, perhaps more confident of heavenly aid, anticipates joy and feasting; Esther, whose prayer is twice as long, expresses fear and loneliness. Mordecai's political theology is of a universal creator and glorious king; Esther invokes a personal deity who aids the distressed. Whereas Mordecai asks for divine mercy, Esther prays for divine self-disclosure and rescue.

13:8–18, Mordecai's Prayer. Mordecai's prayer complements his dream (Addition A) in explaining, perhaps somewhat defensively, his refusal to bow. Motivated by neither pride nor insolence—he "would have been willing to kiss the soles of Haman's feet" in order to avert the plan (13:13)—he sought to avoid setting human glory above the divine. Nevertheless, Mordecai's being Jewish should not have prevented compliance. Esther bows to Artaxerxes and, within Hellenistic Judaism, there was little problem with paying culturally appropriate respect to monarchs. Indicating that Mordecai and Esther represent the Jewish community by their piety and prayer, the transitional verse (13:18) observes that "all Israel" cried out in the face of death.

14:1–19, Esther's Prayer. Esther prepares for prayer by changing from royal finery to mourning garments. Instead of perfume, she covers herself with her tangled hair, ashes, and dung. Such connection of physical appearance with spiritual needs follows the pattern of Jewish-Hellenistic literature (see Jth. 9:2). The prayer emphasizes Esther's solitude; lacking human support, she places her trust in the "God of Israel," "my Lord" and "our king" (in contrast to Artaxerxes). She observes that she learned of divine action "from my birth in the tribe of my ancestors" (14:5); she celebrates Israel's special role as an "everlasting inheritance"; and she says that the Jews' victory will be a sign to the nations of divine power. Sounding like the prophets, she mentions the sin of worshiping other gods as the just reason for the present danger, even though the story provides no such description. She also suggests that the people are in slavery; ironically, only Esther's freedom has been constrained.

Shifting attention from Israel to more personal concerns, Esther (cf. Jth. 9:2–14), prays for appropriate speech before the king (14:13), whom she compares to a lion. She accentuates her fidelity to Jewish dietary practices (see Dan. 1; how this comports with her receiving rations from the harem, 2:9, is unclear), her hatred of her intermarriage (see Ezra 10:2; Neh. 13:23–27), and her detesting of royal clothing.

Addition D (1–16) = 15:1–16, Esther Appears Before the King

Changing from mourning clothes to magnificent attire, offering a final prayer, and taking two maids, upon one of whom she leans daintily, Esther proceeds to the king. The LXX (cf. MT 5:1–2) accentuates her danger, her emotion, and the heavenly intervention that occurs. Although Esther's situation in the account of the LXX is not as bad as the Vg. portrays it (the king "saw her as a bull at the peak of his anger, and he considered killing her"), Greek Esther—although radiantly beautiful—is "frozen with fear" (15:5). She faints (the three-day fast did not help) at seeing the king's fierce anger. His spirit divinely changed to gentleness (15:8), Artaxerxes leaps from his throne to catch his wife, and his language continues to display his affection for her. He also provides her, a bit late, the information that the law against entering unbidden applies only to his subjects, not to his wife. Esther responds by describing him as glorious, like an "angel of God" (15:13). Then, again, she faints.

5:3–8, Esther's Request. Versification begins with line 3, because Addition D replaces 5:1–2 in the Hebrew. Artaxerxes promises up to half his kingdom for her request, but Esther responds by inviting him and Haman to a banquet. Once there, as they are drinking wine, the king repeats his question. A second time Esther invites Artaxerxes and Haman to dinner. In a subtle way, she could be seen as disobedient in not responding directly to the king's question, "What is your request?" At the least, she withholds information.

5:9–14, Haman's Return Home. Although Hama departs joyfully, his pleasure is spoiled at seeing Mordecai. Returning home, he summons his friends and his wife, Zosara, to recount both Esther's invitations and his hatred of Mordecai. The assembled party advises him to build a gallows, fifty cubits high, and to request the king that Mordecai be hanged thereupon. Then, somewhat distastefully, they suggest he should go merrily to dinner. Haman is pleased to do all three.

6:1–14, Mordecai's Reward. That same night, prompted by a divinely caused insomnia, Artaxerxes orders his secretary to read aloud the daily record. Likely he hoped that the recitation would facilitate sleep. Hearing of the eunuchs' plot (2:21–13), he asks what reward had been given to Mordecai. Just as the king learns that none was granted, Haman arrives to request Mordecai's execution.

Hearing that Haman has arrived, Artaxerxes summons him to inquire what should be done for the person the king wishes to honor. Haman, presuming himself the only candidate, advises dressing the man in the king's robes, placing him upon the king's horse, and having the horse led into the city square by a royal friend who is to announce, "Thus shall it be done to everyone whom the king honors" (6:11). Artaxerxes then commands that Haman arrange this tribute for "Mordecai the Jew." Mordecai thus takes the place of honor Haman expected; later, Haman will assume the place prepared for Mordecai: the gallows.

The theme of reversal continues. Completing his unwelcome task, Haman, in mourning and with his head covered, hurries home. Mordecai, the one in mourning, wears the king's robes; Haman, the architect of the genocide, is now in sorrow. Telling his wife and friends about his humiliation, he receives the unwelcome news that if Mordecai is a Jew, Haman will be unable to defend himself. As the Gentiles attest that "the living God is with" Mordecai (6:13), eunuchs arrive to escort Haman to Esther's second banquet. He is now, structurally, in the same location where Esther first appeared: summoned to the palace for royal pleasure.

7:1–10, Esther's Banquets. Again drinking wine, the king asks Esther for her petition. Responding passionately, she asserts that she and her people are "destroyed, plundered, and made slaves" (7:4). She stresses her solidarity with the Jewish community by speaking not only of "we" who would die, but of "our children." Simultaneously, she speaks as one loyal to the palace, by describing Haman not only as deceitful, but also as "not worthy of the court of the king" (7:4).

Haman's anxiety now matches that of Esther when she appeared unsummoned before the king (15:13). When Artaxerxes leaves the banquet, Haman—begging for mercy—throws himself upon Esther's couch. Returning, the king asks who dares to assault the queen. Then, "Haman turned away his face" (7:8), recognizing his doom. Conveniently, one of the attending eunuchs notes that Haman had prepared a gallows for Mordecai. The king immediately orders Haman's execution (lit., "Let him be crucified" [7:9]).

8:1–12, Transfer of Authority. Artaxerxes grants Esther all Haman's property; upon Esther's revealing her relationship to Mordecai, the king entrusts Mordecai with the royal seal Haman previously held, and Esther commits to him Haman's estate.

Next, Esther again pleads that Artaxerxes rescind Haman's letters. The king responds that he has already hanged Haman for acting "against the Jews" (8:7), and that Esther may write in his name whatever she thinks best, for "whatever is written at the king's command and sealed with [the king's] ring cannot be contravened" (8:8). Because the original edict was also unalterable, the new one is less rescission than response: the Jews are ordered to observe their own laws, to defend themselves, and to act as they wish against their enemies. As with Vashti's banishment, the king enacts into law what the people would willingly do.

Addition E (1–24) = 16:1–24, Artaxerxes' Second Letter

This convoluted, pompous letter explains how an unalterable edict has been, if not abrogated, at least made innocuous. Artaxerxes begins by casting himself as victim. Having been betrayed by many whom he has rewarded, he promises to judge all matters "with more equitable consideration" (16:9); Haman's proposal received no such reflection. Such consideration is not immediately evident in his subsequent condemnation of Haman for being "Macedonian" and "alien to the Persian blood" (16:10), while praising the Jew Mordecai as "savior and perpetual benefactor" (16:13).

Artaxerxes next hails the Jews as "children of the living God . . . who has directed the kingdom both for us and for our ancestors" (16:16). Like Achior in the book of Judith (5:5–21) and the Babylonian kings of the book of Daniel (3:28–29; 4:3, 34–35; 6:26–27), this figure of authority expresses appropriate gentile piety.

Denying responsibility for the initial edict, Artaxerxes advises that Persians would "do well not to act upon the instructions given by Haman" (16:17). The inalterability of Persian law goes unmentioned. Another inconsistency is the announcement that Haman and his household have been hanged at the city. Yet the gallows erected for Mordecai were in Haman's courtyard, and the sons have not yet been executed. These discrepancies may represent authorial lapses, but they also suggest that Artaxerxes remains unaware of events in his kingdom.

The edict ends with the mandate that all Persians celebrate the deliverance of the Jews. Failure to do so would constitute a capital crime punished with such severity that even wild animals would suffer. The comment recollects the cosmic images of Addition A and anticipates their interpretation in Addition F.

8:13–17, The Joy of the Jews. Learning of the new decree, Jews throughout Persia rejoice. Mordecai, in royal robes and gold crown, goes out among the

people of Susa. "Many of the Gentiles were circumcised and became Jews out of fear of the Jews" (8:17), but whether because they were worried about the Jews' ability to defend themselves or because they recognized Mordecai's elevated role remains unstated.

9:1–15, Killings. On the appointed day, all the enemies of the Jews perish. In Susa, the Jews kill Haman's ten sons; manuscripts differ as to whether they took plunder. Hearing of the deaths of five hundred in the capital, the king wonders to Esther what the toll was in the countryside but, rather than showing concern for his citizens, notes that she might have whatever else she requests. Esther asks for a second day of retaliation and that the bodies of Haman's sons be hanged. Three hundred more people are killed in Susa, but the Jews take no plunder. To do so would violate the terms of holy war (→ Holy War).

In the rest of the empire, the Jews kill fifteen thousand enemies. On the fourteenth of the month, they rest. In Susa, given the second day of defense, they do not. Therefore, outside Susa Jews celebrate on the fourteenth of Adar by sending presents of food to each other; in Susa and in other large cities they celebrate on the fifteenth.

9:16–32, The Festival. Recording what had transpired, Mordecai tells Persia's Jews to keep the fourteenth and fifteenth of Adar as a festival of sending presents of food to their friends and to the poor. The recapitulation of the events in 9:23–28 fails to mention Esther's involvement, but it does provide the explanation for the name of the holiday. It is called "'Purim,' because of the lots (for in their language this is the word that means 'lots')" (9:26). According to 9:26, Mordecai established the festival. In 9:29, Queen Esther, together with Mordecai, writes the history and establishes the festival (→ Purim).

10:1–3, Political Responses. Returning to normal practice, Artaxerxes levies taxes upon his kingdom and records his power and bravery, along with the wealth and glory of the kingdom, in Persia's annals. The authority that Mordecai possesses to act on the king's behalf (10:3) recalls the similar authority exercised by Joseph in Pharaoh's court (Gen. 41:37–45). When Jews are endangered, kingdoms suffer; when they are in positions of authority, kingdoms prosper.

Addition F (1–11) = 10:4–11:1, Interpretation of Mordecai's Dream and Colophon

Mordecai's acknowledgment that all things come from God is demonstrated in his interpretation of his dream: the river is Esther, "whom the king married and made queen" (10:6); the dragons are Mordecai and Haman; and the nation is Israel, saved with divine aid.

The dream and its interpretation may have been originally independent of the story of Esther. This would explain the strained correspondences Mordecai's interpretation draws. Supporting this conclusion is the Alpha Text of Esther, which associates the river with the Jews' enemies and equates the sun and light with divine revelation rather than leaving them, as does the LXX, unexplained. However, in apocalyptic visions, strained or unexplained images are not infrequent.

The Addition next provides another explanation for the name of the festival. Haman had cast only one *pur,* or lot, to determine the date for the massacre. Greek Esther resolves this discrepancy over the plural name, Purim, by explaining that two lots represent the fates of Haman and Mordecai, and so of Gentiles and Jews.

The final verse (11:1) is a colophon, a scribal note typically found at the end of ancient Greek scrolls. Since the LXX differs substantially from the Hebrew text, the colophon appears to have an apologetic purpose. Notice that the manuscript is described as having been provided by one Dositheus, who "said that he was a priest and Levite" and who, together with his son, vouched for its authenticity. This may suggest doubt on the translator's part about the scroll's complete authenticity.

Mention of the "fourth year of the reign of Ptolemy and Cleopatra" likely indicates a date of ca. 114 B.C. There were, however, two other Egyptian kings named Ptolemy, who reigned for at least four years and who were married to women named Cleopatra. If the colophon refers to either of these kings, then the date for the translation would be 77 or 48 B.C.

Bibliography

Clines, D. J. A. *The Esther Scroll: The Story of the Story.* Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement Series, 30. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1984.

Fox, M. V. *The Redactions of the Book of Esther: On Reading Composite Texts.* Society of Biblical Literature Monograph Series, 40. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1991.

Moore, C. A. *Daniel, Esther and Jeremiah: The Additions.* Anchor Bible, 44. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1977.

Reinhartz, A. "The Greek Book of Esther." In *Women's Bible Commentary.* Expanded ed. Edited by C. A. Newsom and S. H. Ringe. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1998. Pp. 286–92.

Wisdom of Solomon

JAMES M. REESE

INTRODUCTION

The Wisdom of Solomon produces a variety of impressions on readers. It is learned but contains simplistic arguments, traditional in content but original in form of presentation. It is hostile to pagan practices, but sympathetic to certain aspects of Hellenism, that fusion of Greek and Near Eastern culture that developed in the centuries after Alexander the Great's conquests. In style it alternates between the parallelism characteristic of OT poetry and the elaborate periodic sentences found in Greek oratory. Its subject matter ranges widely over philosophical problems, ethical questions, theological doctrines, historical descriptions, psychological reflections, and scientific teaching. Because of the broad scope of the Wisdom of Solomon, commentators are divided as to its date, origin, structure, unity, and even its original language. The book receives its traditional name from the unknown author's identification of himself with King Solomon, famous for his pursuit of wisdom. The literary form and special vocabulary indicate that it is a Hellenistic school tract. Its author was a pious Jewish intellectual, an enthusiastic supporter of traditional belief, but someone also open to cultural adaptation and doctrinal progress.

Subject matter, method of developing arguments, and familiarity with the OT point to its author as a teacher of Jewish students in Alexandria. The complicated style, difficult to follow in the last section, suggests that the composition of the book may have extended over a period of years. Yet the large number of cross-references in the form of flashbacks favor the overall unity of this complex production. The undertaking has many marks of a work-in-progress, and the intricate syntax of the last half betrays the lack of a final revision. A single couplet (19:22) brings the book to a dramatic close.

As a unified whole the Wisdom of Solomon belongs to the literary genre of protreptic, a genre of rhetorical exhortation in Greek philosophy. The sprawling genre of protreptic met the author's needs, namely, to justify God's actions toward the Israelites, to encourage Jewish readers to love their revealed tradition, to display encyclopedic knowledge capable of impressing sophisticated readers, and to portray biblical morals as superior to Hellenistic ones. The opening address to "you judges of the earth" is merely a literary device to focus attention, for the book is directed to readers thoroughly familiar with Jewish tradition and OT writings. In fact, after the author assumes the person of King Solomon to pray to the "God of our fathers and Lord of mercy" (9:1) for the gift of Woman Wisdom, the bulk of the remaining text speaks directly to God in prayerful dialogue. This too is a literary artifice in keeping with the flexibility of a protreptic.

Structure

The flowing style and frequent asides make clear-cut divisions between major parts difficult to isolate, but the following outline preserves both the unity and the complexity of its composition.

The first part, 1:1–6:11 and 6:17–21, is an exhortation to blessed immortality. This section is a diatribe, a form of argumentative discourse developed in the Greek philosophical schools. In this diatribe the author argues that the promises of the Mosaic covenant are the heritage of those virtuous believers who trust in the Lord who led their ancestors out of Egypt. Because "righteousness is immortal" (1:15; → Righteousness), the rewards promised will be enjoyed not for a short time on earth, but "in God's hand for ever" (3:1).

In the second part, 6:12–16 and 6:22–10:21, we find praises of Wisdom, personified as God's throne partner. These chapters form an aporia, a statement of a philosophical problem. They begin by promising to resolve the aporia, "What is Wisdom and how does she come into being?" (6:22). The lengthy answer makes these chapters an exposition of several theological and ethical questions involved in the human quest for eternal life with God. Warnings not to abandon divine wisdom for human folly form the third part, 11:15–16:1a. This section is another diatribe, serving to justify God's conduct toward all human sinfulness, especially that of Israel's enemies during the Exodus, an issue that will form the subject of the fourth part. (The close connection between the two parts accounts for the insertion of Part Three as an excursus after Part Four has already begun in 11:1–14.) The length, subject matter, and special purpose of Part Three all suggest that it is a

major division of the Wisdom of Solomon. It performs the role of providing necessary background information.

Part Four is 11:1–14 and 16:1b–19:22, praise of God as Israel's liberator. The last part is a syncrisis, or comparison, an adaptation of a Hellenistic form in which two persons or qualities or events are compared. The author contrasts two modes of the Lord's activity. Israel's all-powerful Creator used the same natural events for the benefit of Israel and the destruction of Israel's Egyptian oppressors. This syncrisis is a skillful adaptation of the Greek genre, which conveys the lesson stated in the final couplet, "In every way, Lord, you magnify and glorify your people; present at every moment in every place, you never ignore their needs" (19:22).

Setting and Purpose

The focus on the Exodus in the last half of the Wisdom of Solomon and the book's frequent allusions to the religious practices of ancient Egyptians point to Alexandria as the book's place of origin. The work should not be seen, however, as a historical appeal to Egyptian authorities to treat the Jewish community more humanely. Its frequent references to the cruelty of ancient Egyptians and its harshness toward all forms of pagan religious practice make the Wisdom of Solomon ill suited to be a political tract in a concrete historical crisis. On the contrary, it is the kind of exhortation that appeals to the loyalty of a group questioning its own identity and direction. Its style and content point to literary activity within a rabbinical school as the setting for its composition. The author was familiar with metropolitan culture and capable of appreciating scientific research. But what believing Jews have received from God is the value at stake. God is with them in their present situation, and so "their hope is full of immortality" (3:4). Danger comes not so much from outside political forces as from loss of faith in God and the providence guiding history (→ Providence). The large number of terms borrowed from Hellenistic anthropology, philosophy, psychology, medicine, and the popular cult of the goddess Isis point to a date near the beginning of the reign of the Roman emperor Augustus in 28 B.C. The unknown author argues for fresh stands on religious questions under discussion by Jewish intellectuals of that period. With vivid language the Wisdom of Solomon proclaims personal immortality for the just. In spite of difficulties and disappointments like sterility and early death, the lot of those remaining loyal to Israel's God is preferable to the path of sinners. On judgment day, by means of God's gift of "incorruptibility" (2:23; 6:19), "the just will stand with great confidence in front of those tormenting him" (5:1; → Judgment, Day of).

Religious Significance

To the large Jewish community in and around Alexandria, a city whose population the Jewish philosopher Philo put at over a million persons (*Flaccus* 43), the Wisdom of Solomon offered a formal apologia for a vigorous stance against the appeal of Hellenism. In a sense, each of its four parts could stand alone as a defense of some value of Israel's revelation. Joined together in this sustained protreptic, these four major parts provide a powerful appeal for continued fidelity to the Mosaic covenant.

COMMENTARY

Part One: 1:1–6:11; 6:17–21

Exhortation to Blessed Immortality

An extended, self-contained diatribe, 1:1–6:11 and 6:17–21, sets the tone for the entire book. Forces are at work seeking to shape human destiny, which finds its center not in this age, but in eternal life. A series of vivid tableaux describes the fate of the righteous as reigning forever, safe "in the hand of God" (3:1).

From this extended appeal, the nature of the Wisdom of Solomon as an apologia (an argued defense of beliefs) is clear. Only God can draw human beings to their eternal destiny. This long diatribe prepares readers for the polemic against idolatry in Part Three. The author shows sophisticated literary skill in setting up this exhortation in the schema *a b a b a*. The first, third, and fifth developments take the form of exhortations (1:1–15; 3:1–5:1; 6:1–11). Between these appeals are inserted two descriptions: the first, of evil conduct (1:16–2:24), and the second, of God's judgment upon evil conduct (5:2–23). The appendix, 6:17–21, serves to summarize the exhortations.

1:1–15
Exhortation to Walk in Righteousness

Serving as an introduction to the entire book is an ardent appeal to "you judges of the earth," a phrase taken from the Septuagint (LXX) translation of Ps. 2:10. They are to seek righteousness, for "righteousness is eternal" (1:15). This exhortation sets the mood in three ways: by its poetic style, by its appeal to biblical themes, and by its ethical demands. An examination of these three features will illustrate characteristics common to the entire Wisdom of Solomon.

The poetic style imitates the parallelism of Hebrew poetry, in which each line contains a complete clause (→ Poetry). The language employs figurative speech, e.g., calling God "Power" (1:3) and "Ear of Jealousy" (1:10). Biblical themes are pervasive. One searches for

God "in simplicity of heart" (1:1), an expression alluding to the words of the aged David as he prayed before the assembly of Israel in 1 Chron. 29:17. And worshipers must avoid "murmuring" (1:10, 11), almost a technical term in Exodus 15–17 for scorning the God of the covenant. Failure to trust in God's care is a way to call divine punishment upon one's life (1:12–14).

By far the greatest preoccupation of this introduction is attention to ethics; it insists that God refuses worship from those who are malicious (1:3). The text does not resolve the dilemma whether ignorance opens the way to malice or whether malice is the underlying cause of ignorance (1:4–5). The introduction begins with ethical goals, but then shifts attention to the pursuit of wisdom, enemy of all kinds of sin. What wisdom achieves, God accomplishes. Both search human hearts and bring secret motives to light (1:6–11).

The final verses of this opening exhortation make clear the orientation of all its parts (1:12–15). Moral integrity and righteousness are not ethical matters limited only to this life; rather, they primarily concern future life. "For God did not make death nor does he delight in the destruction of living beings" (1:13). God's care to maintain the varieties of living species offers an insight into his loving nature.

When this divine care is directed to humans, it is not limited to protecting the species as such, but offers immortality to each person. Obviously God did not "make death" (1:13), an allusion to the result of human sin described in Gen. 3:19. Thus immortality is not simply a natural quality of human souls, but a dimension of "righteousness" (1:15). How God overcomes death and communicates the gift of immortality will be explained as the book unfolds (→ Immortality; Soul).

1:16–2:24
Description of Evil Conduct

Abruptly the scene changes from the royal figures addressed in 1:1–15 to a group of evildoers. Rather than describing their conduct, the author allows these opponents of God to describe their own deeds and motives. This first-person narrative conveys their arrogant cynicism, in which ill will colors their knowledge of God. In certain ways the description presents a stereotype of the Greek philosophical tradition of Epicureanism (→ Epicureans). The Epicureans viewed the soul as made of subtle matter. The picture is simplistic, but it captures the feeling of despair in much Hellenistic philosophy contemporary with the author. Human life appears "short and painful" (2:1); "our end is irreversible" (2:5).

Those who hold this foolish view of life pour out a violent tirade. For them life has only two goals: to seek pleasure and to prove by their conduct that might makes right. This diatribe is a lively portrayal of the contrast between the high moral standards of Jewish society and the perceived corruption of Hellenistic permissiveness. The contrast is an implicit exaltation of the moral superiority of God's chosen people.

Some influence from OT pictures of suffering, just believers, especially the suffering servant figure of Isaiah 53, colors this vivid description (→ Servant). Certain church fathers saw in Wisd. of Sol. 2:12–20 a prediction of the Passion of Jesus. Other commentators viewed these verses as a Christian interpolation based on the Gospel passion narratives. But no image of a suffering "messiah" should be read into the designation of the persecuted just man as "son of God" (2:18). The salvation envisioned here is simply rescue from verbal and physical abuse. Sinners mock self-control and passive resistance as no protection against their philosophy that might makes right.

In a brief reply of nine verses the author passes judgment on Hellenistic morality, which attracted some Jewish students. Bluntly put, "They were deceived for their evil blinded them" (2:21). The battle is between the closed world of expediency that offers no hope and the "mysteries of God," which assure the "last honors of blameless souls" (2:22).

In a concluding remark (2:23–24) the author states the eschatological basis for evaluating human life: "God created human beings for incorruption, and made them as an image of his own eternity" (2:23; some ancient manuscripts and modern commentators read "nature" in place of "eternity"). This profound statement introduces a new insight into Jewish teaching by borrowing the concept of "incorruption" from Epicurean philosophy. Incorruption was a divine quality that prevented the subtle atoms of the gods from escaping their bodies; it thus ensured their immortality.

By appropriating this technical term, the author is engaging in a polemic on two fronts. First, he places human immortality in the divine sphere, as an "image" of God rather than a quality inherent in human nature. Second, he affirms that eternal life is a pure divine gift designated by God to draw certain human beings into a form of communion surpassing natural powers. This carefully articulated eschatological outlook permeates the entire diatribe (→ Eschatology).

What, then, is death? Not part of God's plan, but the result of demonic envy. These verses provide an original, creative interpretation of the fall of the man and woman of Gen. 3:1–19. The serpent is implicitly identified with the devil who induced these first mortals to challenge God and thereby lose their precious gift of "incorruption." As a result, human beings are now subject to a double death, in both the realm of nature and the sphere of eschatological destiny. This bold appropriation of Hellenistic philosophical vocabulary to articulate faith identifies the original audience of the

Wisdom of Solomon as a specific group of knowledgeable Jewish intellectuals.

3:1–5:1
Exhortation to Upright Conduct

The central section of the opening diatribe is the longest and most carefully developed of its three exhortations (1:1–15; 3:1–5:1; 6:1–11). Its structure indicates that the author felt a need to justify this new eschatological perspective at length with specific examples.

3:1–12, The Contrasting Fates of the Upright and the Sinful. The section opens with a joyful announcement of the eternal reward for "upright souls" (3:1). First, they must undergo a period of testing that baffles unbelievers. Trials are God's way of revealing who is "worthy of himself" (3:5). To be worthy of God means exactly that: victorious over death, the just enjoy life with God. The just are empowered to participate in God's lordship. In using the term "souls" to identify the just, the text neither affirms nor denies resurrection of the body; it affirms only continuity in personal existence. "Soul" is one of the author's favorite words. Appearing over twenty-five times, it reflects the influence of Hellenistic psychology, which identified conscious activity with the spiritual principle of life.

Those who remain faithful to the Mosaic tradition will be assigned to preside over the judgment of their wicked oppressors. Once more the promise serves as an incentive to fidelity. Only those who persevere in doing what God wants "will abide with him in love," that is, enjoy divine "favor and mercy" (3:9).

A graphic contrast shows why the gloom of sinners is justified. First, they have no hope in the future because they cut themselves off from the Lord. Second, their life upon this earth is marred by disappointments in three areas: marriage, family, and posterity. These three provide the subject matter for extended reflections presented in a series of overlapping contrasts, a technique also used extensively in Part Four.

3:13–4:6, True and False Faithfulness. The first arena for the testing of conduct by the promise of eternal life with God is fidelity in marriage. Rather than exalting physical fruitfulness as a criterion for divine approval (→ Child, Children), the author proclaims that the Lord will look for "fruit in the visitation of souls," i.e., for moral integrity (3:13). The expression "visitation" to describe final judgment on life is the common OT image for God's intervention either to punish or to reward. The Wisdom of Solomon alludes here to Isa. 56:4–5, but gives it an eschatological significance. Promises of fidelity are extended so that even eunuchs, who have no hope of offspring, can hope for an honorable role in the new age. Their struggles to remain chaste are "good birth pangs" (3:15). The bleak picture of unfaithful marriage unions continues by identifying their offspring as bad seed, destined not only for personal doom, but also to disappear without progeny. Neither will they enjoy consolation "on the day of decision" (3:18). Here final judgment is called by a Greek legal term. This is one of the many instances of the authors balancing images from Hellenistic and from Jewish traditions.

The real fruitfulness in human life is to produce virtue. "For in its recollection is immortality, because it is known in the sight of God and in the sight of human beings" (4:1). This juxtaposing is emphatic in that it provides an opportunity for the author to clarify the different effects of human and divine remembering. God's remembering triumphantly carries those who have virtue into eternal life, "crowning with victory the struggle of those who are not soiled" (4:2). This image, modeled on Greek athletic contests, is a strong plea to Jewish readers to opt for divine friendship.

Having made this urgent appeal, the author moves on to the third area where improper unions produce painful results: when children end up as accusers of their parents' sinful lives (4:4–6).

4:7–5:1, Eschatological Triumph of the Just. A final comparison illustrates the same lesson of the superiority of upright conduct. Only those familiar with the Bible could understand the double allusion here. To the story of Enoch's being snatched from earth by God in Gen. 5:24 are joined reflections about the moral crassness of sinners based on Isa. 57:1–11.

This detailed exhortation ends with a vivid contrast between the wicked, who will wither away under the burden of their sins, and the just, who stand triumphantly at God's judgment before "those who tormented him and despised his suffering" (5:1). This picture of the just person is a good example of the author's use of inclusion, or ring style, i.e., a return to the topic with which he began this exhortation (see 3:1).

5:2–23
Description of God's Judgment on Evil

The author's love of balance accounts for a second description that carefully parallels the monologue of evildoers in 2:6–20. The device of making sinners speak once more, after they have seen their error, gives this passage a special persuasive power. Having seen God vindicate the upright in the eschatological judgment, sinners repeat many of the images and examples they used in their previous mockery. This speech thus forms an ironic reprise of their earlier attack on the righteous. They voice regret that they came to understand too late. The images of a ship passing through water (5:10) and of a bird in flight leaving no trace (5:11) skillfully utilize the riddle of Prov. 30:19 to wonder at the emptiness of sin.

The author drives home what is at stake in human choices by balancing this lament of sinners over their foolish choices with another praise of the righteous. They enjoy reward "in the Lord's hand," from which they receive a royal crown (5:16). This picture recalls the book's opening address to earthly kings. But now the description of God is expanded by drawing upon the warrior imagery of Isa. 59:17. The apocalyptic elements introduced briefly here (5:16–23) anticipate the long descriptions of God using nature against sinners in Part Four.

The length to which the author goes to picture the glorification of the upright and the destruction of sinners proclaims its central role in his teaching. Obviously he deemed the lesson to be of supreme importance for Jews living in the environment of Alexandria. Unless they were committed to an eschatological view of their destiny, they would not have the depth of motivation needed to remain faithful to the God of Israel. Victory in the contest of life against forces of evil comes from the "spirit of the Powerful One," who easily sweeps away all human arrogance (5:23).

The imagery of this description comes from the popular apocalyptic movement that flourished among Jews between 200 B.C. and A.D. 200 (→ Apocalyptic Literature). Its goal was to encourage Jews, who were a subject people, and to keep alive their hope for enjoying God's covenant promises, which this author has translated into eternal rewards. Unless God acts, the sin that entered the world through "the devil's envy" (2:24) "will make the whole earth a waste" (5:23). A profound awareness of sin's destructive power penetrates the long diatribe that opens the Wisdom of Solomon. The author will now draw it to a close with an exhortation that prepares readers for Part Two.

6:1–11
Exhortation to Seek Wisdom

Once more the text addresses rulers. The terminology differs from that used in the opening admonition, in keeping with the author's attraction to synonyms. This literary fiction of an exalted audience both ties the whole section of the book together and presses home the sense of urgency marking the diatribe. The real audience is the Jewish intellectual community, which needs to be confirmed in its faith. What it needs is neither political influence nor territorial domination, but "power from the Most High" (6:3).

The mood of this exhortation is somber, because the readers are being blamed for failure to "walk according to the will of God" (6:4). They are not to depend on any supposed privileges, presuming that their God, "the Lord of all does not shrink from any face" (6:7, alluding to Deut. 1:17). Rather, they must "learn wisdom," for that is the only protection against "falling away," in the sense of committing apostasy, the supreme spiritual folly (6:9).

This mention of wisdom serves as a hinge enabling the author to prepare for Part Two of this protreptic, which will celebrate the mysterious Woman Wisdom. She is the one who empowers believers to receive the gift of blessed immortality, the goal of their existence.

In the book's opening exhortation (1:6), the term "wisdom" is used to designate God as a "beneficent spirit." That experience of God must have worn thin for Jews exposed so long to the many attractions of Hellenism. This complicated diatribe urges them to open their lives once more to their mission in the world. As usual, the author blends traditional biblical teaching with technical terminology from contemporary Hellenistic culture. Greek philosophers could not even agree whether or not any kind of providence existed. Israel's God "is provident toward all" (6:7). So the author can end the first part of his work with an emphatic couplet, "Set your desire then on my discourse; long for it and you will become learned" (6:11).

6:17–21
Concluding Summary of Part One

Thoughtful touches like this summary identify the author of the Wisdom of Solomon as a teacher, unable to leave a topic without making one final connection for pupils. Even after beginning the praises of Woman Wisdom in 6:12–16, he stops to insert an extended syllogism in the style cultivated by the Stoics, namely, a sorites (→ Stoics). It celebrates practical wisdom as the crowning achievement of an upright life. The seven qualities listed as generated by loyalty in pursuing God's will restate in a succinct way those virtues that "you judges of the earth" were urged to cultivate in the opening exhortation (1:1–15). The logic is not perfect, but the thrust is meant to be more emotive than didactic.

The insertion of this summary as a kind of afterthought is one final reminder that goodwill on the part of believers is essential for participating in the moral transformation and blessed immortality that ultimately come through God's gift of Wisdom.

Part Two: 6:12–16; 6:22–10:21
Praises of Woman Wisdom, Personified as God's Throne Partner

The outstanding characteristic of Part Two is the personification of God's saving presence as the woman who shares his throne. Woman Wisdom is mentioned explicitly over twenty-five times in Part Two. The personification of wisdom appears in the OT and in other Jewish writings (e.g., Prov. 8; Sir. 24). The Wisdom of Solomon, however, makes two significant modifications to bring Woman Wisdom into closer contact with Hellenistic civilization.

First, her activities are modeled on the portrait of Isis, worshiped widely in the Aegean area and Egypt as goddess of culture and benefactor of humanity. The praises of Isis were formulated in litanies, called aretalogies, which recorded her outstanding accomplishments in promoting human culture. Original Jewish readers of this protreptic would have recognized that it was drawing upon the picture of Isis to present the Lord of Israel as ultimate benefactor of humanity by his sending of Woman Wisdom to work on behalf of members of the chosen people.

Second, the author spells out his own development as the fruit of the presence of Woman Wisdom within his body, mind, and spirit. She gave him the qualities that Hellenistic philosophers urged political leaders to cultivate in the self-help ethical manuals of that era, known as the kingship tracts. These manuals came into existence after the death of Alexander the Great when his generals set up kingdoms in the ancient Near East. They needed public support for their new style of leadership. Accordingly, they employed famous philosophers as tutors for their children to train them to be benefactors of humanity. These kingship tracts helped future kings prepare for their tasks.

Part Two of the Wisdom of Solomon deliberately mirrors contemporary Hellenistic ethical and religious documents to celebrate the God of Israel as source of those skills and talents responsible for all human growth. It is the heart of the author's apologia for biblical faith as Israel's contribution to humanity. Only by fidelity to their revelation of a superior religious tradition can Jewish intellectuals bring knowledge of the true God and of salvation to the world. The author offers new theological insights to these readers as "kings" in the sense that they have the destiny to uphold the Lord's law in the world. The sublimity of its message accounts for its ornate and scholarly style, with many plays on words and figures of speech that add to the luster of Woman Wisdom.

6:12–16, 22–25
Prologue Introducing Woman Wisdom

Suddenly, without transition, the style and imagery of the Wisdom of Solomon change. No longer is the author engaged in a diatribe to provide incentives for the cultivation of a life of holiness. Now this ideal is portrayed concretely in the activity of a "shining and spotless" woman (6:12). As God's "throne partner" she offers the gift of blessed immortality that readers have been urged to seek. Thanks to her presence, holiness is not an agonizing struggle, but a joyful experience that floods the human spirit with well-being and loving communion with the Lord. The text pictures God as originating this desirable communion by dispatching Woman Wisdom to those who choose to "love" and "seek" her. These two activities were urged upon the "kings" in the opening address (cf. 1:1). The transformation that she effects is spelled out in the sorites that divides this prologue (6:17–21).

In the second half (6:22–25) of this short prologue, in which the author assumes the identity of King Solomon, he appropriates a technical expression from the Isis litanies—"I will proclaim"—to outline the program for Part Two. He will undertake a quest for answers to questions: who or what is Woman Wisdom? How did she originate? What are her secrets? The author promises a comprehensive search "from the beginning of creation" and an openness that holds back nothing of her "secrets," in contrast to the practices of contemporary mystery cults (6:22). Their mysteries could not be revealed.

The very nature of Woman Wisdom precludes such pettiness, for she has nothing to do with "pining envy." The questions raised give this second part of the book the nature of an aporia, or problem composition. Questions will be answered first in the portrait of Woman Wisdom and of her gifts (7:22b–8:16) and then in the concluding ode that traces her saving influence in the world from Adam to Moses (10:1–21).

7:1–22a
Autobiographical Account of an Encounter with Woman Wisdom

To enhance the credibility of his revelation about Woman Wisdom, "Solomon" explains how he began his personal relationship with her. He had no advantage because he was born a king. Hellenistic philosophers often made the point that a king is no different from any other human being. He came into this world during a "ten-month" period of time (7:2). It is no accident that the rare compound used here also occurs in a litany of Isis. One of her good works was to guard the "ten-month" pregnancies of her devotees (i.e., ten four-week lunar months, or forty weeks). In fact, this autobiographical sketch is marked by over fifteen words never found in the OT, including new compounds found only in this book. By this choice of unusual words the artful Solomon displays his familiarity with contemporary science and culture.

The point this approach makes is that under Wisdom's direction he reacted to his common condition of being subject to human weakness in an uncommon way—he prayed. He correctly reasoned that every human being needs divine help. God answered his plea in two ways: in the form of "prudence" and through the action of "Wisdom's spirit" (7:7). Young Solomon found himself with a new attitude as well as enjoying great material advantages given by Woman Wisdom.

He confesses that, ironically, he did not know that she was their "female begetter" (7:12; NRSV: "mother"). This new feminine coinage is an example of a practice popular among Hellenistic writers. The

author uses this same technique again, calling Woman Wisdom "female initiate" and "female selector" (8:4).

The last part of this autobiographical recollection provides insight into who Woman Wisdom is (7:14–22a). Solomon now asks God directly for accurate knowledge and a worthy attitude, because God is "guide of Wisdom and director of the wise" (7:15), phrases that recall Hellenistic titles of Isis and Hermes as guides of souls. He goes on to say in a series of seven phrases that God has already given him the whole range of human knowledge from astronomy to botany (7:17–21). Abruptly he changes direction and states boldly that all this came to him from the "craftswoman" Wisdom, a feminine form applied to her three times (7:22; 8:6; 14:2).

The surprise is that what was attributed to God is immediately assigned to Woman Wisdom without restriction. By refusing to make any clear distinction between the two, the author indicates that the identity of Woman Wisdom is an aporia, a theological problem to be probed. In one sense she cannot be separated from God as some kind of distinct entity, like the "emanations" of Hellenistic philosophical speculation. At the same time the technique of personifying this dimension of God provides a shift of perspective to generate a desire to enter into communion with the Lord. The author wishes to communicate his own "friendship with God" (7:14).

7:22b–8:16
A Portrait of Woman Wisdom and List of Her Gifts

Having provided his credentials, the self-styled King Solomon now fulfills his promise to reveal "who Wisdom is." The answer is a complex and challenging philosophical meditation.

7:22b–8:1, The Qualities and Activities of Wisdom. It begins with a list of twenty-one diverse qualities that are deeply rooted in Hellenistic learning (7:22–23); ten of these terms never appear in the LXX. Woman Wisdom resembles the Stoic world spirit, which is immanent in the universe, permeating, unifying, and vivifying all. In addition, she has a transcendent spirit that communicates goodness, mercy, and loving-kindness to intelligent creatures.

Since many of these qualities were also applied to Isis in her litanies, they obviously communicated to the original audience a variety of connotations whose significance is lost on modern readers. Woman Wisdom operates universally and effectively because she acts like rays of the sun emanating from the divine glory. Her identity is further defined by five activities that make her a kind of cosmic soul (7:24–25). These actions derived primarily from contemporary speculation on the relation of divine power to human existence. Wisdom serves as mirror (7:26) to reflect qualities attributed to the divine sphere in the eclectic philosophical climate popular among the Stoics.

Woman Wisdom has transcendent features. She possesses powers belonging to Israel's Lord, the one Creator and Savior. She makes all things new. In each successive generation she enters into holy souls and prepares friends of God and prophets. She has made creatures lovable to God and never fails in her mission to transform persons (7:27–30). A striking couplet sums up her work in the world: "With force she stretches from one end of the earth to the other and rules the whole universe gently" (8:1).

In abstract terms Woman Wisdom is God's providence. But the author delivers the message of God's wisdom as empowered saving presence in a poetic language that spoke to cultured Jewish readers. This portrait instructs them that they do not have to espouse Greek ideals to find meaning in life. On the contrary, to abandon the unique Lord of the universe, who promises eternal friendship, is supreme folly.

8:2–16, Gifts Available from Wisdom. Having fulfilled his promise to reveal who Woman Wisdom is, the author now explains her secrets in the form of gifts she has given him and offers to anyone else willing to woo her and be united with her in marriage. Here the text draws first on the language of Hellenistic mystery cults to interpret what love for Wisdom is. It explains that communion with her culminates in the so-called four cardinal virtues: prudence, justice, courage, and self-control (8:7). In a departure from the biblical practice, the text employs the technical terminology of Hellenistic ethics. Thus, justice designates what is due others, rather than the state of holiness, as in 1:1.

As a whole, these four virtues constitute the holiness that is "more useful in life" than anything, because they bring eternal life. For all this use of technical vocabulary, the imagery of Woman Wisdom giving birth to these virtues is a significant departure from philosophical ethics, which saw virtue as the achievement of purely human effort. Not so, insists the author. Woman Wisdom gives birth to true virtue only in hearts loyal to God.

Other gifts that Woman Wisdom brings transform her followers into seasoned and articulate "life companions," a metaphor never employed in the OT. With a certain amount of repetition, the text closes this portrait of Woman Wisdom by returning to the autobiographical style. In a carefully balanced and artistically constructed conclusion with daring sexual imagery, Solomon once more reminisces about the advantage he recognized for his kingship of a life led in intimate companionship with Woman Wisdom (8:9–16). She gave him satisfaction and superiority even over powerful kings. The lesson for readers is that they do not have to fear, but can have "joy and merriment" at every

moment. In the literary unfolding of the book, this personal story sets the stage for the following prayer.

8:17–9:18
Prayer Begging God for Woman Wisdom

8:17–21, Introduction to the Prayer. The solemn language introducing an intense prayer to God to be allowed to receive Woman Wisdom reflects the author's deep religious experience and his desire to convey it to young Jewish intellectuals. Its thrust is eschatological: "immortality is having Wisdom as a relative" (8:17). That emphasis does not lessen a whole range of present benefits flowing from Woman Wisdom's presence: good delights, unlimited wealth, glory.

Here appears a controversial verse that has been understood as teaching the preexistence of the soul: "I was a child of good natural condition and had received a good soul, or rather, being good I came into a spotless body" (8:19–20). In context, however, this sentence describes the author's status at the moment of his ardent prayer. As he had stated earlier, Woman Wisdom gave him "all good things" before he recognized her presence (7:11). So now he shows that, thanks to her influence, he "came into" a spotless body, in the sense of the Greek ideal of a sound mind in a sound body. Recognizing his maturity as gift, he responds by praying with his whole heart to God for Woman Wisdom.

9:1–12, Structure of the Prayer for Wisdom. This plea is a free translation and elaboration of the famous prayer of Solomon in 1 Kings 3:6–9. It can be divided into an address to God (9:1–3) and two parallel petitions, each joined with a motive for offering this prayer (9:4–9, 10–12). The address to "God of our fathers and Lord of mercy" directs this prayer to the author of the covenants with the patriarch Abraham and the lawgiver Moses. This is the same God who is Creator and whose providence governs all.

What is new in the address is the theological insight that God created by his "word," and in particular that God established the human family by Woman Wisdom (9:1b–2a). This amounts to another way of saying what was affirmed earlier, that she is God's providence. She has a role in enabling humans to participate in her task of managing the whole universe "in holiness and uprightness" (9:3). They do so when they conduct themselves like kings by ruling over their share of creation in integrity of heart. All in all, this opening is pregnant with the author's vision of the purpose of creation.

By the loftiness and variety of the address to God, young Solomon stimulates in pious readers a sense of their importance and encourages them to resist Alexandria's metropolitan appeal. By describing Woman Wisdom in Hellenistic religious and philosophical terminology, he exalts biblical revelation above human learning.

The first petition asks God for Woman Wisdom in her capacity as "throne partner" (9:4), the bold image repeated from 6:14. This title is linked both to the goddess Isis and to Fate in Hellenistic piety. By what right does Solomon expect to receive her as gift? Not because he is a king, but "because I am your servant and son of your maidservant" (9:5, an uncharacteristic direct quotation of Ps. 115:7, LXX). He supports his petition by spelling out his weaknesses in body, mind, and deed. This motive introduces the reality behind all prayer, namely, that even the most accomplished human being will be accounted as nothing without Woman Wisdom. In other words, salvation is God's free gift.

The example of his divinely imposed mission to build the Temple with its altar (9:8) may not seem relevant to a sophisticated audience. The Jerusalem Temple, however, is cited in its cosmic significance, as symbol and model of the heavenly sanctuary, where God receives adoration from the saints. Only Woman Wisdom can communicate an appreciation of that divine worship. Thus, the first petition ends by emphatically repeating her divine prerogatives (9:9).

The second petition is an elaborate plea that God send Woman Wisdom (9:10–12). It is artistically constructed in ten balanced poetic clauses expressing Solomon's absolute need for her help. She goes into labor to bring forth for him the discernment and good works practiced by his wise father, David.

9:13–18, Concluding Reflection. The prayer itself consists of only these two dynamic petitions. The remaining verses (9:13–18) form a reflection and transition. First, they recall the opening of Part Two and the promise to explain who Woman Wisdom is and what her secrets are (see 6:22–23). Then they elaborate the truths stated in the prayer itself: human beings are weak and need special protection. An allusion to Plato's teaching in *Phaedo* 81c, that the tent of the earthly body weighs down the "constantly reflecting mind," occurs in 9:15.

Once more the author cannot refrain from adding an additional comment. This takes the form of an oratorical question to emphasize the need for Woman Wisdom and God's "holy spirit" (9:17). The question is answered by a practical example of her impact. The exchange forms an appropriate summary to the aporia section of the book and acts as a hinge to Part Four: she enables mortals to exercise upright conduct on earth and to "be saved" (9:18). This is the first appearance of the verb "save" that will dominate the remainder of the work.

10:1–21
The Saving Power of Woman Wisdom

Chap. 10 has its own style and unity, characterized by two striking features. The first is the repetition of the

emphatic "she" to designate Woman Wisdom six times as aiding Israel's heroes. The second literary feature is the absence of the proper name of any of these heroes. Not only does that style imply an audience familiar with the OT narratives; it also makes the patriarchs types or models to illustrate ways by which Woman Wisdom manifests her saving power.

The first beneficiary of Woman Wisdom's protection was Adam, when he abided on earth "alone," i.e., bereft of any companion (10:1). His position exemplifies the point made in the prayer that even the most illustrious mortal, the head or "father of the cosmos," is nothing without Wisdom, a lesson repeated below (10:8–9). When Adam was deceived by "the devil's envy" (2:24), she rescued him from the consequences. By way of contrast, Cain is mentioned as one who refused to heed Woman Wisdom (10:3). A poetic image identifies her as the "pilot" of Noah's ark, a title also attributed to Isis (10:4). More attention is devoted to Abraham and his nephew Lot, with an allusion to the popular story about the unbelieving wife who was turned into a pillar of salt (10:7).

Only Jewish readers would recognize the allusion to Jacob's ladder of Gen. 28:12 in the reference to the "kingdom of heaven" (10:10). Jacob's piety amid a variety of hardships shows that Wisdom's help does not eliminate struggle, but she does empower the devout to overcome (10:12). Next is Joseph, after whom the text skips directly to Moses, thus limiting the number of examples to seven. At this point Woman Wisdom begins to protect "a holy people and blameless posterity" (10:15), a change that prepares for the examples of Part Four. This verse also introduces two changes of style. The author goes from third-person narrative to direct address to God (10:20) and also begins to describe events in the form of a series of contrasts. The same situation that serves as a blessing on the chosen people brings destruction upon their enemies (11:5–14).

Part Two comes to a resolution appropriate for the literary problem, or aporia, in the author's favorite technique, a summarizing couplet: "Wisdom opened the mouths of the speechless and made the tongues of babies distinct" (10:21). These achievements point to universal harmony and integration of Jewish and Hellenistic cultures, because they were both attributed to the goddess Isis in her litanies and assigned to the messianic age in Isa. 35:6.

Part Three: 11:15–16:1a

Warnings Not to Abandon Divine Wisdom for Human Folly

Part Three serves a double function. First, it is a powerful condemnation of idolatry, the chief expression of human folly. Second, it provides a reasoned defense of Judaism's monotheism. Its nature as an excursus is emphasized by its insertion within Part Four (11:1–14; 16:1b–19:22), which describes God's saving activity during the Exodus. This breaking off after the first comparison drives home the truth that Israel's God dominates history. What is at stake in this diatribe is the vindication of God's way of governing the universe.

The exaltation of God's authority, addressed to human rulers in 6:1–11, prepared readers for this dissertation on divine providence. The whole development is held together by a traditional biblical theme, that God punishes idolaters by the instruments of their sin: "through those things which one uses to commit sin, through them comes punishment" (11:16). In some way God lets sinners take on the qualities of the creatures that they worship.

11:15–12:27

A Defense of God's Provident Ruling of the World

11:15–12:2, God's Restraint in Punishing Sin. The mention of thirst as punishment for the ancient Egyptians serves as occasion for inserting a long defense of God's intervention against the Egyptians, who practiced animal worship, a vice mentioned three times in Part Three (11:15–26; 12:23–27; 15:14–16:1a). Perhaps to respond to criticisms of God's harsh treatment of the Egyptians as recorded in the biblical account of the Exodus, the text hastens to exempt God from any charge of vindictiveness in punishing. On the contrary, God's "all-powerful hand" (11:17), capable of meting out any mode of punishment, even to the point of creating fearful instruments of torture, always acts with love and restraint.

This highly imaginative presentation ironically offers God a whole list of possible instruments of torture that he could create on the spot. Their psychological impact would be to instill fear in the worshipers of idols. God could cause fear by calling upon Fate, the supreme power conceived in Greek religion as ruling over gods and mortals. Having mentioned the possibilities, the text shows God acting in a way completely different from Fate. As the author says to the Lord, "You have arranged all in measure and number and weight" (11:20). The text continues speaking to God about the manner in which he fulfills all his activity, showing that it achieves the Greek ideal of perfect balance and harmony. The prayerful dialogue style gives this diatribe greater apologetic power, in that it exhibits an even deeper religious intimacy than the cult of Isis could. The Lord's covenant promises and powerful protection are always available to loyal worshipers. The reminder, "For to prevail mightily is always in your power" (11:21), is spoken to the Lord, but directed to Jewish students tempted to sample Hellenistic cults. Rather than being harsh or arbitrary, the God who punished Israel's enemies in Egypt

always acts as a concerned and merciful benefactor who does not have any self-interest to protect.

What Egyptians criticized as punishment had a different role. All divine conduct is a display of the truth stated above in 1:13 that God does not delight in the destruction of any living creature. "You overlook sins of mortals with a view to repentance; for you love all creatures. For you would not have fashioned anything you hated" (11:23–24). By using vocabulary similar to that in the polemic against sinners in chap. 2, the text continues the plea for fidelity to Israel's tradition. The same God who "created humans for incorruption" (2:23) did so by placing his "incorruptible spirit in all" (12:1). Because there is continuity between earthly existence and eternal life, God disciplines mortals now to engender the fidelity and righteousness that reign forever.

12:3–27, Speaking to God About Providence. The emotional pitch of the text reaches new heights as the author enters into a series of four brief personal exchanges with God about the workings of providence. First, in a dense outpouring that has prompted modern editors to see some textual corruption, or damage, the text paradoxically reminds God that he hated the Canaanites for their magical rites of idolatry and cannibalism (12:3–11a). Knowing that they were an "accursed seed," God nevertheless eliminated them only gradually, to provide an opportunity for repentance.

Second, employing legal terminology and the technique of rhetorical questions, the text affirms strongly God's providence (12:11b–18). Infinite strength is the basis of this justice. Rather than acting in the "might makes right" manner of those who oppressed the innocent worshiper in 2:18, God always manifests honesty and fairness. In the third brief colloquy God's providence is presented as a lesson to the chosen people "that the upright person should show lovingkindness" (12:19). The lesson itself is straightforward, but its application is so obscure that it created difficulty for copyists. Such variety exists in the manuscripts that many commentators think the original reading has been lost. They question how punishing enemies "ten thousandfold" either exhibits fairness or provides a lesson that invites Jews to expect mercy (12:22). Assuming the text is sound, we find in it the realism of the author, who here assumes a prophetic stance. The very severity of God's conduct toward the chosen people's foes is their own best hope for survival, for it is an unmistakable sign of his providence calling them to conversion.

This paradox gives rise to the fourth conversation with God, which focuses on the conduct of the Egyptians during the Exodus as illustrating the painful lesson of perceiving God's punishment too late (12:23–27). The Egyptians were the most striking example of the principle underlying Part Three: sinners are punished by the instruments of their sins. By going to the limits of idolatry in worshiping brute animals, they became so completely hardened that they could not perceive God's efforts to correct them by punishments. "And so the fullness of condemnation overwhelmed them" (12:27).

13:1–9
Why Aeon Worship Fails

Again the author's ability as teacher manifests itself in a carefully developed condemnation of idolatry. The remainder of Part Three is not limited to the ancient Egyptian foes of Israel, but focuses on the idolatry of contemporary Hellenism. Chaps. 13–15 form the most methodical development of the whole exhortation as they lash out against the chief forms of idolatry in order of increasing malice.

They are written from the point of view of faith with a twofold objective: apologetic and polemic. As an apologia they confirm believers in the wisdom of worshiping the God of revelation, whose power was celebrated in Part Two. As a polemic this series of diatribes mocks what Hellenism has to offer as a source of comfort and hope. The series builds to a climax, beginning with the least offensive form of idolatry, nature worship, whose devotees were merely "foolish" (13:1). Next, those who worship carved statues are "doomed" (13:10). Worse is a person who fashions idols out of clay, "for such a one knows that he sins more than all" (15:13). Finally, "most stupid of all and more wretched than a foolish child" are those who worship brute animals, the kind of idolatry practiced by Israel's masters in Egypt (15:14).

The first of these polemics begins with a short but skillfully constructed passage against nature worship (13:1–9). Argument from analogy is used, namely, that anyone perceiving the beauty of the universe should recognize that its source must be superior and stronger and more beautiful. An objection is raised that this kind of idolatry springs from goodwill and so is excusable. But this defense is rejected on the principle that anyone capable of exploring the richness of the cosmos is easily within reach of quickly finding the Lord of all (→ Creation).

In this concluding judgment the cosmos is designated as "Aeon" (13:9; NRSV: "world"), the widespread Hellenistic personification of the universe as eternal and living, without beginning, middle, or end. This argument rests upon belief that the Lord has manifested himself through creation, inviting humans to enjoy transcendent religious experience greater than the popular desire to "become Aeon," i.e., to enter into the cosmic harmony of the universe.

13:10–14:8
Condemnation of Those Who Worship Idols

The second form of idolatry condemned was more common, namely, idol worship. It is now treated at

greater length and in a variety of ways (→ Idol). First, with biting irony the text ridicules trust in idols by offering detailed descriptions of the stages involved in selecting and carving material for an idol and preventing it from falling, and then begging this helpless object for all kinds of favors (13:10–19).

Next, the description turns to the role that idols played in sea voyages (14:1–8). This is the only passage outside of Part Two that speaks of Woman Wisdom, the "craftswoman" who governs this dangerous activity. Only God's providence can lead sailors across the waves safely. The case of Noah's ark is cited as proof, although no proper name is mentioned. God acted as pilot for Noah, selected to be "the hope of the world" (14:3–6). God's protection elicits a blessing, but idols and their makers are cursed for their cruel deceptions.

14:9–15:6
A Short History of the Origin and Spread of Idolatry

14:9–21, The Euhemeristic Explanation. Probing deeper into the folly of idolatry, the author interrupts the series of illustrations by inserting an excursus within an excursus. This brief sketch of the origin and spread of idolatry heaps further scorn upon the practice. It draws upon contemporary inscriptions erected by Hellenistic kings to glorify their contributions to society. Its basis is the so-called Euhemeristic theory that gods are deified mortals. Little is known about Euhemerus, who lived about 300 B.C. The theory attributed to him developed over a period of time and existed in a variety of forms. The Wisdom of Solomon finds it useful to bolster the case against idolatry.

This historical note begins with a statement of the theme, which also serves as title for the excursus: "Equally abhorrent to God are the sacrilegious and their sacrilege; without doubt both performance and performer will be punished!" (14:9–10). This title is composed with the help of unusual terms, repeated at the end (15:6), thus setting the development apart clearly as a unit. The title also gives this survey a moralizing tone that is developed from the opening condemnation of idolaters for their misuse of God's creation. They exemplify human malice and scandal at its worst (14:11–14).

The moral depravity of idolaters is illustrated by two examples. In the first case, a father translates his untimely grief into idolatrous "mysteries and rites." In the course of time "the sacrilegious custom is observed as law" (14:15–16a). The second example began in the vanity of rulers who courted their subjects' favor by having their statues erected at advantageous locations throughout their kingdoms. The sculpture proved so attractive that after the ruler's death his statue continued to encourage honor. This eventually led to worship in times of misfortune and oppression (14: 16b–21).

14:22–31, A Vice List. The historical survey goes on to spell out the ever increasing evil consequences of idolatry in the form of a Hellenistic vice list, which describes the desolation that sin causes. Vice lists were a commonplace in contemporary Cynic-Stoic diatribes. The specific vices mentioned fit better, however, into the standard of morality urged by biblical writers. The list serves the author's purpose of illustrating that the moral life of Jewish believers was superior to that of pagans, among whom "everything is pell mell" (14:25). After describing typical sins, the list repeats in different words the underlying principle of Part Three: "For worship of unmentionable idols is source and cause and goal of all evil" (14:27).

Concluding the list is a sin that links it to the revelation of the God of Israel, perjury (14:28–31). Why accent this vice? Because perjury is a practical form of idolatry that denies God's concern for human integrity and mocks his power to bring humans to their destiny. Perjurers are the living antithesis of "the judges of the earth," addressed in the opening of the book, whose concern was to honor the Lord.

15:1–6, The Reward of Those Who Worship Israel's God. The final paragraph of this historical summary contrasts the sad story of idolatry's harm with a happy outburst praising Israel's God, "gracious and true, slow to anger and ruling in all mercy" (15:1), for watching over the chosen people. Implied is praise for faithful Jews who have not let themselves be enticed by the allure of painted idols. Jewish readers could not miss the allusion to the Sinai covenant. Into the traditional covenant formula of Exod. 34:6 is inserted the Stoic term for providence, "ruling," used earlier for the work of Woman Wisdom (cf. 8:1).

This passage serves to reinforce the diatribe against idolatry by reminding readers about the gift of revelation they enjoyed. Their links to the living God differ from links to an idol. Revelation nourishes and is nourished by a hope "full of immortality" (cf. 3:4), in contrast to the empty hopes of all whose lives are involved with idols. Believers' hope rests on "knowing" the Lord who promises eternal happiness, which is the reward of virtue (cf. 4:1).

15:7–13
Condemnation of Those Making Clay Idols

The author's scorn for potters who make idols pours out in the emotional description summed up in the word he coined, translated as "perverted drudgery" (15:8), to show contempt for those who know they are "sinning beyond all others" (15:13). Such arrogance stirred the author's ire. By refusing to admit that his life is a "loan" from God and by willfully making "counterfeits" for personal gain, the maker of clay idols reveals that his own heart is made of "ashes" (15:10, a term from Isa. 44:20, LXX). His hope is as

fragile as his product. The text illustrates the principle inspiring this long diatribe, that sinners are punished by the very matter of their sins.

In turning breakable clay into an "inane god," such potters chart a foolish destiny and change hope for eternal life into wearying toil. This example incorporates a commonplace in Greek protreptic literature, that life is a plaything of the gods, a "carnival" where fools seek profit and pleasure. Those who buy into that shallow form of life shut their hearts to the opening plea of the entire book, "Love justice" (1:1).

15:14–16:1a
Animal Worship as the Most Evil Form of Idolatry

A transitional paragraph both concludes the diatribe against idolatry and prepares to continue the comparisons based on the Exodus from Egypt. The ancient Egyptians who enslaved the Israelites deserve to be scorned as "most foolish" and "more miserable than an infant's soul" (15:14, recalling 12:24) for two reasons: they esteemed even their enemies' idols and they worshiped hostile and ugly beasts.

The first identifies the Egyptians as stupid children lacking any personal judgment. They embraced the sins and ignorance of their enemies by attributing to them superhuman powers. The second reason for calling ancient Egyptians incomparably foolish is that the brute animals they worshiped were inferior to other animals. In fact, since these beasts are the very ones cursed by God for their part in humanity's fall, they lack "both the praise of God and his blessing" (15:18–19, referring to Gen. 1:22; 3:14). This multiple folly prompted God to visit upon the ancient Egyptians punishment by means of the same type of creeping animals they worshiped (16:1a). This climactic statement completes the justification of God's conduct toward the enemies of his people. The author is now free to celebrate God's care for the chosen people during the Exodus as the final phase of his exhortation to Jewish students to remain faithful to their tradition.

Part Four: 11:1–14; 16:1b–19:22
Praise of God as Israel's Liberator

The subject matter of the final part of the book relates to the role of Woman Wisdom, yet forms an independent section, a literary syncrisis, i.e., a set of contrasts between the different ways God treated Israel and its enemies. The Lord, addressed throughout, is pictured as carrying out a series of dramatic interventions related to the departure of Israel from Egypt. The author freely uses data from biblical and traditional sources to construct seven contrasts.

Not only does the Lord determine the outcome, but both Egyptians and Israelites are aware of what is happening to each other. The Israelites experienced a certain degree of suffering, but it was always brief and served to teach that the Lord never abandons them. In contrast, the Egyptians are held fully responsible for their sins against God and Israel.

After the first set of contrasts, Part Four is suspended to insert Part Three (11:15–16:1a), which provides a systematic theological justification for the Lord's way of acting on behalf of the chosen people during the Exodus. The syncrisis itself is too complicated to allow for an adequate apologia for God's providence, which is an integral part of the aim of the Wisdom of Solomon. Since Part Four could not achieve its goal without the systematic diatribe against idolatry, these two sections complement each other.

11:1–14, First Contrast: The Lord Offers Drink to Israel, but Subjects Egyptians to Thirst. A brief introduction provides the setting for the contrasts (11:1–3). The narrator speaks directly to the Lord, with whom he recalls key moments in Israel's history. Since no proper names occur, only Jewish readers familiar with the traditions of the Exodus would be capable of following these imaginative musings that glorify the interventions of Israel's God. Often the biblical order and details are modified.

The first divine intervention comes when the Israelites wandering in the desert call upon the Lord and he supplies water "from a sharp rock" as a "remedy" for their thirst (11:4, recalling Deut. 8:15). Then follows the characteristic feature of Part Four, a description of the Lord's contrasting treatment of the hostile Egyptians with respect to water. The underlying principle governing these examples is that God is teaching and saving Israel. "For through the events that punished their enemies, through these very things they were aided in their need" (11:5).

An elaborate description, both adapting and going beyond details of the plague of the "ever-flowing river," describes the punishment of the Egyptians. They suffered not only from seeing their drinking water turned to blood, but also from seeing the divine favor upon the Israelites (11:6–14; see Exod. 7:17–24).

Some added details come from Jewish oral tradition, but many others were no doubt simply invented by the author to embellish the description of God's favor toward the chosen people. Their great variety made the accounts difficult reading for later scribes copying new manuscripts, so that many textual variants appear in manuscripts. Variation in translations is often linked to the manuscript reading chosen by a translator.

16:1b–4, Second Contrast: The Lord Sends Strange Animals to Feed Israelites and Starve Egyptians. The book returns to the contrasts after the long diatribe against idolatry, which ends with the animal worship of the ancient Egyptians. During the Exodus both

Israelites and Egyptians suffered the torment of hunger. The Lord's people, however, experienced his care in the form of an unexpected gift. He sent quail as a delicacy to nourish them. At the same time he sent upon the starving Egyptians animals so ugly that they took away all appetite. This contrast rests on an imaginative interpretation of the impact of the plague of frogs, presented as punishment for the persecution of the Israelites (see Exod. 8:2–7).

16:5–15, Third Contrast: God Exposes Both Israelites and Egyptians to Poisonous Animals, but Rescues the Israelites. The two groups go through an even more severe crisis: being bitten by poisonous animals. The original Jewish readers would recognize the allusion to the bites of the fiery serpents (see Num. 21:5–9). The text stresses that the healing must be attributed not to the image of the serpent erected by Moses but to God's mercy and word. The Lord snatched believers from death—identified as both Lethe, the River of Forgetfulness, and Hades, two Hellenistic terms for the underworld—and brought them healing (16:10–13).

The contrast changes the details in the case of the Egyptians, who were plagued not by poisonous animals, but by locusts (see Exod. 10:12–20). The Exodus text does not mention flies. The contrast rests almost entirely on the healing of the Israelites and draws from it praise for God as the only one who has power over "life and death" (16:13). These terms are used in the religious sense of eternal life with God or complete separation from him.

The message to be learned is succinctly summarized in the closing reminder to the Lord, "It is impossible to escape your hand" (16:15). There is a deliberate recall of the dramatic rescue of the righteous just one in Part One, snatched away from enemies to live forever confidently with the Lord (see 5:1, 15).

16:16–17:1, Fourth Contrast: The Lord Uses Creation to Destroy Egyptians and Heavenly Food to Feed Israelites. After describing the hardening of the Egyptians, the narration tells how they and their animals were lost in the mysterious storm in which fire and rain cooperated against them (see Exod. 9:22–25). Their punishment contrasts with the miraculous feeding of the Israelites on the "bread from heaven," the "food of angels" (16:20, recalling Ps. 77:25, LXX). This bread not only resisted changes of nature in the desert, but "afforded every delight and adapted to every taste," as an expression of the Lord's surpassing "tenderness" (16:20–21). The manna's power to withstand the elements gave believers perspective on how little they suffered compared with Egyptians, whose crops were destroyed.

Rather than end the syncrisis at this point, the author generalizes with a prayerful consideration. The Lord's heavenly gift provides the model for the people's spiritual insight. Addressing the Lord directly in this syncrisis, the author is struck with religious awe that "creation opens up for the benefit of those who trust in you" and responds "to the desire of those who beg" (16:24–25). Such a display of divine love teaches believers that their real life is sustained ultimately not by creatures, but by the divine "word." These favors invite them to "anticipate the rising of the sun in praising" the Lord so that dawn finds them "praying" for what they need (16:28). This responsive and confident faith community forms a strong contrast to the "hope of the ungrateful" that melts and flows off like "useless water" (16:29).

This personal outpouring reveals the motives behind the book's opening admonition, "Be concerned about the Lord in goodness and seek him in simplicity of heart" (1:1). What is at stake is fidelity to divine revelation as key to personal integrity and eternal destiny. In this religious framework the final couplet of this central contrast serves to remind readers that the ancient Egyptians were closed to God's grace: their "undisciplined souls went astray" (17:1). Rather than being like idolaters, slaves to nature or any other creature, believers reap the divine bounty lavished by God's tenderness on all creation through faith, prayer, and self-control.

17:2–18:4, Fifth Contrast: God Sends Darkness to Terrify Egyptians and Light to Fortify His People. The longest of the contrasts contains a lively poetic description of the terrors experienced by the Egyptians. The impact of the plague of darkness that engulfed not only the land but also the minds and the hearts of the Egyptians is described in striking metaphors at great length. In fact, the text devotes five times as much space to this display of divine punishment as it does to the experience of light enjoyed by the Israelites before their departure.

In theological terms, what the author contrasts are two ways in which God's "eternal providence" works (17:2; see 14:3). This providence turned the arrogant captors of the chosen people into "prisoners of darkness and captives of lingering night" behind the veil of "Forgetfulness," the river of Hades from which God protected his people (17:3; see 16:11). This vivid description portrays how the power of darkness worked on the imagination of the Egyptians to accent sights and sounds so that "they thought what they had seen was worse" than it really was (17:6). Through divine intervention those who promised to drive out all fear from Egypt themselves suffered "a timidity so sick it was laughable" (17:8).

This vivid picture leads up to a descriptive definition of fear, placed at the very center of this long development: "fear is nothing other than betrayal by the resources of the reasoning faculty, ignorance converting anticipation into the worst form of torture" (17:12–13). This psychologizing definition reflects a

kind of speculation popular among contemporary Hellenistic writers, who interpreted Homeric myths and the "descents into hell" in psychological terms.

Once the definition is formulated, the author balances the description with further images of "unexpected fear" at work through dreams, which formed an "unbarred prisoner," made either by "monstrous phantoms" or by the "betrayal of the soul" (17:15). Hellenistic philosophers looked on dreams as psychological self-punishment. The author of the Wisdom of Solomon was aware of such speculation, but he viewed dreams as instruments of divine providence directing human destiny and trapping sinners in their evil choices. This approach continues his apologia for fidelity to revelation. Sin traps all classes of human beings, like farmers, shepherds, and solitary workers, in "one chain of darkness" (17:17). Their fear foreshadowed even worse punishment at the hands of divine justice.

The short second part of this fifth contrast celebrates the blessing of freedom upon the chosen people. It came first on them in the gratitude of the Egyptians for not being wiped out when they were helpless in their prison of darkness. More important, God's blessing took the form of a "flaming column," the pillar of fire God prepared, along with a protecting sun, to lead them on their journey to freedom (18:1–3).

This contrast affirms once more the justice of God in punishing the Egyptians severely. They fully deserved their loss of freedom for imprisoning the Israelites, who had the mission to give "the light of the incorruptible law to the world" (18:4). This revelation recalls the longer justification of God that opened Part Three, the only other time the adjective "incorruptible" occurs in this work. There the author reminded God, "Your incorruptible spirit is upon all" (12:1).

God's all-powerful justice obliges him to demand responsible conduct from everyone. For their part, being true to themselves is the condition for recognizing both God's presence in human affairs and the law revealed to Israel as light of the world. The Egyptians fall into the same category as the wicked of Part One, who strayed from the way of truth and did not let the light of justice shine for them (see 5:6–7).

18:5–25, Sixth Contrast: The Word of the Lord Brings Death to the Egyptian Firstborn, but Freedom to Israel. Mention of the law in 18:4 suggests Moses, the lawgiver. The sixth contrast, which deals with the death of the firstborn of the Egyptians in the Red Sea, takes its origin from an allusion to the attempted slaughter of Moses and the actual killing of an unknown number of Israelite babies. In punishment, God destroyed not only Egyptian children, but also Egyptian soldiers in the water.

That incident prompts a further elaboration, a poetic description of the first Passover feast, celebrated in Egypt as the Israelites anticipated their freedom (18:6–9). This description tends to clutter the comparison, but it also supplies elements usually included in them. First, the Israelites knew about "the destruction of the enemy," i.e., the final fate of the Egyptians. Second, it repeats the principle governing the contrasts, why God brought them about: "for by the way you punished our adversaries, you also invited us to glory" (18:8).

The destroying angel of the Exodus is portrayed as God's "all-powerful word," reaching from earth to heaven. But the Egyptians learned too late that Israel is truly "God's son" (18:10–16). The contrasting scene pictures Israel as being rescued from an "experience of death." Without offering details the text refers to the time when Aaron, dressed in priestly robes, intervened through "prayer and the propitiation of incense" to appease God's anger (18:21; see Num. 16:46–47).

19:1–21, Seventh Contrast: The Lord Leads Israel to Safety and Destroys Its Captors. The last contrast begins by portraying one final act of malice on the part of Egyptians. In a desperate "plan of folly" they try to stop the Israelites, whom they had already agreed to let go. The point of the contrast is the way God organized Israel's escape without violating either Egypt's freedom or the laws of nature. Creation obeyed the divine "commands" to expedite Israel's marvelous journey through the sea "on a plane of green grass," skipping like lambs and praising "you, Lord, the one who rescued them" (19:5–9). God's people kept in mind the previous suffering, for them a short prelude to comfort, but for Egyptians, who "justly suffered their own evil deeds," a disaster (19:10–13).

Similarities to the central contrast appear at this point. The tone is highly emotive, with the author addressing God explicitly as "Lord" and using the second-person pronoun five times. He adds two reflections. First, the malice of the Egyptians is presented as even greater than that of the Canaanites who resisted the arriving Israelites (19:13d–17). The second, concluding, description pictures the transformation of nature, repeating the miracle of the manna, now called "ambrosial food" (19:18–21; see 16:20–22).

19:22, Concluding Comment. The final couplet, addressed to the Lord, is an optimistic expression of the attitude permeating the entire protreptic: the Lord has always brought the chosen people through danger. Readers are left to draw the conclusion: to abandon the faith community is self-destruction.

Bibliography

Collins, J. J. *Jewish Wisdom in the Hellenistic Age.* Old Testament Library. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1997.

Grabbe, L. L. *Wisdom of Solomon.* Guides to Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1977.

Kloppenborg, J. S. "Isis and Sophia in the Book of Wisdom," *Harvard Theological Review* 75:1 (1982): 57–84.

Reese, J. M. *The Book of Wisdom and the Song of Songs.* Old Testament Message. Wilmington, DE: Glazier, 1983.

———. *Hellenistic Influences on the Book of Wisdom and Its Consequences.* Analecta Biblica, 41. Rome: Biblical Institute Press, 1970.

Winston, D. *The Wisdom of Solomon.* Anchor Bible, 43. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1979.

Sirach

JAMES L. CRENSHAW

INTRODUCTION

In most Greek manuscripts the title of this book identifies its genre and author: the Wisdom of Jesus the Son of Sirach. The Syriac text has a shorter version, the Wisdom of Bar Sira. Latin tradition drops the name and introduces descriptive categories such as "the Church Book" (Ecclesiasticus, so the Vulgate) and *Parabolae* ("Proverbs," according to Jerome, who states that a Hebrew copy had this title). On two occasions later Jewish writers introduce a citation from Sirach with the words *hammoshel amar* ("the Parabolist said"). At least one Jewish scholar, Saadia (d. A.D. 942), refers to Sirach as *seper musar* ("the Book of Discipline/ Instruction").

The manuscript tradition yields some confusion about the author's name and precise relationship to Sira. In all probability his name was Jeshua ben Eleazar ben Sira, the name Simon in some manuscripts having entered the text by mistake from 50:1. The "ch" ending on Sirach in the Greek manuscripts represents either a Greek *chi*, indicating an indeclinable word, or a final Hebrew *aleph*. For convenience, in this commentary Ben Sira designates the author and Sirach the book.

In a way the twofold title in which literary type and authorship appear seems entirely appropriate for a book that bridges two cultures, the Hebraic and the Hellenistic. Sirach represents the culmination of Jewish wisdom literature of the sort found in the book of Proverbs (→ Wisdom). Although Sirach introduces distinctive features, specifically the integration of Israel's sacred history into the wisdom tradition, the book resembles Proverbs in all essentials. At the same time, pride of authorship deriving from the Greek culture prompted Ben Sira to identify himself rather than attribute the written product to King Solomon or to some other figure of the past.

The Historical Setting

Sirach opens with a prologue written by Ben Sira's grandson, who arrived in Egypt during the thirty-eighth year of Ptolemy Euergetes and resided there for some time before translating the book into Greek. The reference is to Ptolemy Physcon VII Euergetes II, who ruled Egypt from 170 to 164 B.C. and again from 145 to 117. Ben Sira was probably active as late as 180 and perhaps even later. The death in 195 of the Simon whose ministry as high priest made such a lasting impression on Ben Sira reinforces this dating of Ben Sira's activity between 200 and 180 B.C.

At this time opportunists joined forces with rulers and their challengers, hoping to be on the side of the victor. Competing families, Tobiads and Oniads, divided the people's loyalty, and the rivalry between Jews and Samaritans extended the dissension even further. The struggle between Jason and Menelaus for the office of high priest demonstrates the degree to which avarice and greed affected religious office (see 2 Macc. 4–5). Their willingness to compromise Hebrew ways in favor of Greek customs illustrates the degradation of the priesthood and explains why Ben Sira praises Simon, the father of Onias III, so lavishly. At the same time Antiochus IV Epiphanes' deposition of Onias constituted an infringement by a foreign government on the religious freedom of the Jews that precipitated open revolt. Only a few allusions in Sirach betray this volatile political atmosphere (50:25–26, a reference to Edomites, Philistines, and Samaritans; 40:25–26 and 50:1, 23–24, which possibly criticize the contenders for the high-priesthood for fomenting strife and for offering money for the religious office). Perhaps the unique prayer in 36:1–17 for renewed deeds of salvation arises from Ben Sira's sense that the sacred legacy was in jeopardy at the moment.

Relation to Tradition

The translator identifies his grandfather as a student of Jewish Scriptures, which already exist in his time as three distinct entities: the Law, the Prophets, and the other books (→ Canon). The last division was still open, and Ben Sira fully expects his book to find a place beside the other wisdom books. In his view Israel's wisdom cast a wide net, embracing the sacred tradition as well as, presumably, the usual fare of literature such as Proverbs, Job, and Ecclesiastes. His grandson acknowledges a practical dimension of knowledge in that all instruction enables an individual to live in compliance with Jewish law. He also assumes that a translation into the adopted language of Jews in Egypt, probably at Alexandria, will facilitate obedience to the Torah.

Ben Sira's grandson also recognizes the inadequacy of his translation, conceding that things originally expressed in Hebrew have different nuances from their nearest equivalent in the Greek tongue. If this protest amounts to something more than a modest disclaimer, it suggests that the disappearance of the Hebrew text of Sirach is particularly unfortunate. Recent discoveries of considerable portions of Sirach in Hebrew have thus ushered in a new stage of research on the book, although the Greek text remains fundamental to every analysis.

According to the grandson, Ben Sira specialized in instruction and wisdom. This description accords with Ben Sira's own understanding of his vocation as a wise man and a scribe (→ Scribe). Admittedly, the latter term occurs in a conventional text about various vocations (38:34); the oldest such text seems to be the Egyptian *Instruction of Duauf*. More reliable therefore is the self-description in 50:27, where Ben Sira characterizes his book as "instruction in understanding and knowledge," and in 51:23–30, where he implies that he administers a school (Heb. *bet hammidrash*, "house of study"). This is the first clear mention of an Israelite school, although some scholars have assumed the existence of the institution at a much earlier date on the basis of parallels with Egypt and Mesopotamia and to some extent Ugarit; the needs of the royal court, especially with respect to diplomacy; scattered archaeological evidence in Palestinian inscriptions; and the quality of Israel's literature (→ School).

Ben Sira uses the first person freely, as does also the unknown author of Ecclesiastes, but the actual extent of autobiography remains uncertain. Much of this material belongs to literary convention, and it therefore reveals little about specific details in Ben Sira's life. Even the much discussed allusion to travel in 34:9–13 may fall into the category of literary convention, and the ambiguous allusion to deliverance from some peril associated with a journey may consequently indicate nothing about Ben Sira's travels. On the other hand, he may very well have represented his compatriots before a foreign government in the same way John and his son Eupolemus negotiated on behalf of Judea (2 Macc. 4:11) and Philo defended the Jewish cause before Caligula.

Ben Sira cherished irreconcilable traditions, the prophetic and the wisdom. Believing in inspiration during his own day, he endeavored to write a book in the tradition of the Mosaic legislation and the prophetic corpus. For Ben Sira instruction embraced far more than the general insights, however astute, achieved by the wise. It included the specific law of Moses. The majestic hymn about wisdom in 24:1–29 thus occupies a central position in the book, for it claims the Mosaic teaching as the essence of wisdom (→ Torah). This may not constitute a declaration of war against the Greek understanding of knowledge as the fruit of reasoned inquiry, but the insistence that revelation lies at the heart of learning gives Judaism a distinct advantage over Hellenism in this regard.

The insistence on inspiration may actually have emerged as a response to Israel's wisdom literature, which elevates human inquiry as the fundamental mode of existence. Although the compilers of Proverbs 1–9 challenged this understanding of knowledge by inserting religious devotion into the equation, thereby insisting that the fear of the Lord was both the essence and the principal element of knowledge, Ben Sira takes an even greater step. For him wisdom is identical with the Mosaic legislation at Sinai and hence a divine gift rather than a human achievement.

This integration of themes from Yahwism (Israel's specific religious traditions) and wisdom occurs throughout the book, not simply in the praise of famous men (44:1–50:21). Allusions to Israel's sacred tradition function as examples and warnings, whereas earlier teachers had restricted their material to universal experience. Ben Sira goes so far as to quote David's bold response to the divine anger: "We shall fall into the hands of the Lord, not into the hands of men; for his majesty is equal to his mercy" (2:18; cf. 2 Sam. 24:14). Elsewhere Ben Sira alludes to pentateuchal traditions from the primeval history (Gen. 1–11) and the patriarchal narratives (Gen. 12–50). He mentions Adam (Sir. 33:10; 40:1), Eve (25:24), Lot (16:8), Sodom and Gomorrah (39:23), the fallen angels (16:7), the Flood (40:10), the Noachian covenant (17:12), the image of God (17:3), the creation account (39:16, 21), and Jacob's descendants (23:12).

Allusions to matters outside the book of Genesis also occur, such as the six hundred thousand Israelites who perished in the wilderness (16:9–10), the divine epithet "Holy One" (4:14), the Mosaic law (24:23), Zion (36:13–15), and the tree that sweetened water (38:5). Twice Ben Sira brings together a large number of sacred themes. In 24:1–12 he refers to creation by means of a heavenly mist, the pillar of cloud symbolizing God's dwelling place, Jacob and Israel, the holy tabernacle, Jerusalem, and the special people of God; in 36:1–17 to divine signs and miracles, the reciting of God's wonders, tribes of Jacob and their inheritance, people called by God's name, Israel as God's firstborn, the city of God's sanctuary, prophecies spoken in God's name, and Aaron's blessing.

The Forms of Expression

Ben Sira's literary expression borrows heavily from Proverbs, Job, and Ecclesiastes. He offers instruction to students, using the technical language of a teacher who addresses his students as sons. Interesting variations of "my son" do occur, e.g., "holy sons" (39:13), "children" (3:1), "my children" (23:7; 41:14), and "you who need instruction" (51:23). Ancient instructions typically employ imperatives, freely offering prescriptive advice

reinforced with warnings and admonitions. These instructions resemble brief paragraphs on specific subjects, often set off from what follows or precedes by refrains and repeated phrases. In this regard Ben Sira develops a practice that the author of Proverbs 1–9 preferred, presumably because it gave ample opportunity to support his teachings with religious arguments.

These paragraph-length instructions cover a wide range of topics, for they aim to prepare young men for coping in society. Hence the teacher discusses everything from table manners to religious duties, always concentrating on the best way to succeed in an endeavor. Almost all Ben Sira's advice has a strong practical bent, even when the subject extends to matters like dreams (34:1–8), shame (41:17–42:8), and death (41:1–4). At times he endeavors to solve vexing theological dilemmas, such as justifying the vocation of the physician in a society that believes sickness indicates divine punishment for sin (38:1–15), and comparing the scribe's life of leisure to the drudgery of other types of work, while at the same time recognizing the contribution that laborers make to the well-being of the community (38:24–39:11). Much of Ben Sira's energy addresses the difficult area of sexual conduct and, more generally, relations between the sexes, but he also speaks often about parental responsibilities to discipline children. These instructions strive at inculcating attitudes that issue in specific actions; they answer questions like "How should I respond to people from widely different social strata, the wealthy and paupers? What is my duty in the matter of charitable contributions? When should I speak in a public meeting?"

Sirach also has numerous truth statements, often called sentences, the other major form of expression in proverbial literature. These brief aphorisms capture what were regarded as timeless and universal truths, expressing them in a way that seizes the imagination and lingers in memory. "A rich man does wrong, and he even adds insults; a poor man suffers an injustice, and he must apologize" (13:3). "A story told at the wrong time is like music in a time of mourning, but rebuke and punishment are always wise actions" (22:6). "A new friend resembles new wine; after it has aged, one can drink it with pleasure" (9:10b). "All living beings become old like a garment, for the ancient decree reads, 'You must surely die'" (14:17).

Like teachers before him Ben Sira varies the truth statements enormously. He uses the "better than" proverb ("Better is a man's wickedness than a woman who does good; and a woman brings shame and disgrace," 42:14), the numerical proverb ("I take pleasure in three things which are beautiful in the sight of the Lord and of men: agreement between brothers, friendship among neighbors, and a wife and husband living in harmony," 25:1), and the particle of existence ("There is one who by keeping silent is deemed wise, while another is detested for talking too much; there is one who keeps silent because he has no answer, while another remains silent because he knows when to speak," 20:5–6). Ben Sira also pronounces benedictions and maledictions ("Blessed is the man who does not err with his lips and does not suffer remorse for sin," 14:1; "Woe to timid hearts and to slack hands, and to the sinner who leads a double life," 2:12), and he uses rhetorical questions freely ("What race is worthy of honor? The human race. What race is worthy of honor? Those who fear the Lord. What race is not worthy of honor? The human race. What race is not worthy of honor? Those who break the commandments," 10:19).

In these cases, Proverbs serves as Ben Sira's guide to literary expression. To some degree that is true of prayer, which achieves prominence in Sirach despite its meager role in Prov. 30:7–9. With Ben Sira the wise man becomes a worshiper, unashamedly offering prayers to the deity (22:27–23:6; 36:1–17). The titles with which Ben Sira addresses God emphasize majesty and intimacy: "Lord, Father and Ruler of my life" (23:1); "Lord, Father and God of my life" (23:4); "Lord, the God of all" (36:1); "the Lord, the God of the ages" (36:17). This sage lifts up his voice in hymnic praise (42:15–43:33; 51:1–12), particularly when the wonders of nature steal his imagination. For this hymnic praise the author of Job is Ben Sira's mentor, even if some of the poems in the book of Job amount to dubious praise. At least two things stand out as one surveys the wonders that Ben Sira extols: a sense of awe and a recognition that the human eye has only penetrated the surface. Moreover, Ben Sira's language waxes eloquent, especially in his use of exquisite images for freezing rain, frost, and racing clouds (in 43:14–20, pools put on ice "like a breastplate," hoarfrost becomes "pointed thorns," clouds "fly forth like birds").

Two didactic compositions resemble the hymns, although these learned meditations leave the impression of rational reflection and studious instruction (16:24–17:24; 39:12–35). These compositions explore the place of humankind in the universe and affirm a legitimate role for everything, even things that appear to be out of place in an orderly universe. Closely related to these meditations, especially in function, is the debate form, for which Ecclesiastes paved the way within Israelite wisdom literature. (This device to stave off dissent, specifically denial of divine justice, appears in Egyptian wisdom traditions as well.) Ben Sira warns against an attitude that presumes too much about God's patience, mercy, and sovereignty (5:3–6) and challenges the assumption that one can sin with impunity ("Do not say: 'I am hidden from the Lord, and who from on high will remember me? Among so many people I shall not be noticed, for what is my life in the boundless creation?'" 16:17). Here the normal form ("Do not say . . . for . . .") has given way to an elaborate rationale introduced by an expression demanding close scrutiny: "Behold!" (16:18–23).

Like Proverbs and Job, Sirach uses the hymnic

form to praise wisdom (24:1–29), but he introduces altogether new concepts. Whereas wisdom in Job 28 remains inaccessible to everyone but the Lord, in Sirach she takes up residence at Jerusalem and expresses herself through the law of Moses. Proverbs 8 stresses wisdom's participation in creating and ordering the world, a theme that Ben Sira picks up and elaborates in peculiar fashion. A universal motif, creation by a mist that covers the earth, bows before particularist notions such as a dwelling in Jacob and an inheritance in Israel, a resting place in Zion among an honored people, the portion of the Lord. The erotic relationship between student and wisdom, present in Proverbs 8–9, achieves new expression in an acrostic poem that concludes Sirach (51:13–20, 30), an earlier form of which was discovered in Cave 11 at Qumran (→ Scrolls, The Dead Sea).

An astonishing shift takes place when Ben Sira actually sings praises of mortals (44:1–50:24). Like the formal expressions of praise called encomia in Greek culture, these walks through the gallery of biblical characters prepare the way for an effusive display of respect for the high priest in office during Ben Sira's time. The choice of heroes, highly selective, betrays a prejudice for priestly lineage and for individuals who contributed to Israel's religious establishment. Not a woman graces the pages of this account, despite the contribution of women to the religious life as recorded in sacred literature. Pride of position goes to Moses, Aaron, and Phinehas; David, Solomon, Hezekiah, Josiah, Zerubbabel, and Joshua receive praise for their part in reforming and strengthening the Temple and its service. Others who make this select list impressed Ben Sira by miraculous feats rather than by the content of their prophetic teaching. By design the personalities make an appearance according to the threefold division of the Hebrew canon: Pentateuch first, Prophets next, and the Writings last, except for an afterthought that returns to the starting point, Enoch, and works backwards to Adam. The essential themes of the book, fear of the Lord and wisdom, interact so effectively that some question remains about which of these occupies prominence. The author of Proverbs 1–9 subjugated fear of the Lord to wisdom, relegating this religious aspect to the essence and first principle of knowledge. For Ben Sira fear of the Lord has no rival, not even from the person who acquires wisdom: "How great is he who has gained wisdom! But there is no one superior to him who fears the Lord. The fear of the Lord surpasses everything" (25:10–11). This exalted appreciation for religion leads Ben Sira to conclude that wisdom's garland and root exist in the fear of the Lord (1:20). Therefore, such religious devotion alone justifies a sense of accomplishment in Ben Sira's eyes (10:22). Beneath these themes of true piety and the quest for knowledge lies an explosive issue that threatens to divide Ben Sira's constituency. Can one believe in divine justice? The tension between wrath and mercy lends immense pathos to the book, which virtually begins and ends with an affirmation of both concepts (1:30; 51:39).

The Larger Environment

Although Sirach resembles other Jewish literary works of the third to first centuries B.C., the book also has points of contact with Greek literature. Affinities with Jewish wisdom link Sirach more closely with those texts in Hebrew than with the Greek Wisdom of Solomon. Ben Sira shares a few phrases with Ecclesiastes, but he does not endorse this book's skepticism, particularly with regard to the divine-human relationship. The book of Tobit places more emphasis on specific acts of piety as an expression of loyalty to the Mosaic law, but both Tobit and Sirach freely lift their voices in prayer. Whereas Ben Sira prays for wondrous acts on God's part, Tobit both prays for and experiences divine feats. Baruch's poem on wisdom (3:9–4:4) does not integrate mythic themes about wisdom's role in creation with the idea that the concrete expression of wisdom occurs in the law. *The Testament of the Twelve Patriarchs* transcends the ritual aspects of religion to a degree that Ben Sira never achieves. The author of Wisdom of Solomon embraces Hellenistic concepts enthusiastically, whereas Ben Sira's indebtedness to the Greeks appears to be no more than unconscious breathing of the air. Occasional parallels occur between Sirach and Greek authors (Theognis, Sophocles, Xenophon, Euripides, Hesiod, and Homer), but none of them requires actual literary dependence. The comparison of death to falling leaves in Sir. 14:18 and in Homer, a natural association of ideas, belongs to folk wisdom. The Stoic declaration, "He is the all!" occurs in Sirach, along with a host of Greek ideas and customs: a eulogy of ancestors, the notion of a rational universe, the balancing of human freedom and divine providence, dining customs, and pride of authorship. Perhaps Ben Sira's attitude toward physicians owes much to the Greek ethos. Links with Egyptian wisdom may exist, especially in the attitude to shame, the use of the bee to illustrate the importance of small things, and the comparison of the scribal profession to other types of work.

The air that Ben Sira breathed may have been hellenized, but he does not permit it to overcome him. The Stoic ideal of world citizenship can find no toehold, for Ben Sira believes that Israel is the Lord's portion. Links with Aramean wisdom through Ahiqar, although plausible, may belong to folk tradition, e.g., references to the futility of opposing a flowing river and the revelation of character through one's clothes. Ben Sira does not openly endorse Jewish eschatological hopes, but he approaches them in fervent prayer (36:6–12). One strange allusion to the Lord's fighting on behalf of those who strive to the death for truth

must have taken on new meaning during the Maccabean revolt. Earlier wisdom had no place for God as cocombatant.

Ben Sira's opponents are Jews who have surrendered their Jewish heritage, becoming indifferent to the Mosaic law and adopting a libertine lifestyle. They do not believe in the traditional concept of reward and retribution; hence they associate with dangerous companions. Unlike Wisdom of Solomon, Sirach directs its message to Jews and lacks any explicit attack against the dominant culture in the Mediterranean region. Ben Sira does not hate Hellenism, but he believes in the superiority of Jewish wisdom and ethics.

The Text

The Greek text survives in two forms: codices such as Sinaiticus, Vaticanus, and others; and a longer form of certain cursives (the most important of which is identified by its catalogue number, 248). The Old Latin and Vulgate used the Greek text of Sirach, which has also influenced the Syriac Peshitta to some degree (→ Texts, Versions, Manuscripts, Editions). In 1896–1900 parts of the Hebrew text dating from the ninth to twelfth centuries A.D. came to light after having disappeared for centuries. The Cairo Genizah, a medieval synagogue storage room for discarded manuscripts that was rediscovered in the nineteenth century, yielded about two-thirds of the Hebrew text (labeled A, B, C, D); another leaf (E) was discovered in 1931. Additional fragments of B and C came to light in 1958 and 1960; three years later a fragmentary scroll was discovered at Masada containing 39:27–44:17 in mutilated form. The B manuscript from Cairo closely resembles this scroll from Masada. This original Hebrew version antedates the Greek, but it has numerous errors and glosses (explanatory comments by the scribe). The freedom with which scribes rewrote this text indicates that it was not considered sacred like the books of the Hebrew canon. An interesting feature of Cairo B and E, an arrangement of the text in poetic lines, occurs also in a fragment of 6:20–31 (the ends of the lines) that was found in Cave 2 at Qumran. In all, the Cairo Genizah has yielded Sir. 3:6–16:26; 30:11–38:27; 39:15–51:30, plus fragments of other chapters.

Although they are not usually reproduced in English translations, titles for individual sections are found in both the Greek and Hebrew texts (20:27; 23:7; 24:1; 30:1, 16; 44:1; 51:1; Heb. 31:12 = Gk. 34:12, 41:14, and 44:1). Transitions between sections also occur several times (42:25 to 43:1; 43:33 to 44:1; 49:16 to 50:1). In the Hebrew an extra psalm similar to Psalm 136 follows 51:12. The sequence from chap. 31 to 36 differs in the Hebrew, Vulgate, and Syriac from the Greek, which offers a less likely order at this point.

Sirach was not included in the Hebrew Bible, but the book was often cited until the tenth century A.D. in rabbinic circles, occasionally as sacred Scripture. Some features of the book are closer to Sadducean teaching than to Pharisaic, which may have precluded its inclusion in the canon, although its relatively late date probably explains its omission. Within the Christian church the status of Sirach has varied. The author of the Letter of James was especially fond of Sirach; and the writers of the pseudepigraphal works the *Didache*, the *Shepherd of Hermas*, and the *Letter of Barnabas* as well as Clement of Alexandria used it as a source of inspiration. The early Latin fathers included Sirach as one of the five Solomonic books; Cyprian, bishop of Carthage in the middle of the third century, affirmed the canonical status of Sirach, later proclaimed at the Council of Trent. Protestant churches do not accept Sirach as canonical, but value it as instructive and edifying.

COMMENTARY

The Prologue. The elegant prologue in the Greek text comprises three sentences. It explains Ben Sira's reasons for writing the book, encourages readers to study the translation, and locates the translator historically. The audience, Jews in the Diaspora, and possibly some Egyptians (unless the praise of Israel's wisdom, like Deut. 4:6, targets Jewish readers) learns that the author of the book was a teacher who read (i.e., explained) the Scriptures. These sacred texts already existed in two distinct divisions, the Law and the Prophets, plus another group, still undefined. Sirach draws inspiration from all three divisions, although it most resembles those books in the third group. Ben Sira's teachings have a practical raison d'être, to enable one to observe the Mosaic law.

1:1–21, Wisdom and the Fear of the Lord. Because wisdom derives from God and is fully known only by the Creator, Ben Sira endeavors to identify it by demonstrating the intimate relationship between wisdom and fear of God. Two impossible tasks emphasize wisdom's hiddenness (1:2–3). God pours out wisdom in the same way the Holy Spirit is poured out (1:9), making the customary identification of wisdom and spirit (Wisd. of Sol. 1:4–7) doubly interesting. Ben Sira praises fear of the Lord highly; awe and religious devotion, the essential meaning of the concept, constitute both the first principle and essence of wisdom (1:11–16, 20). (Although v. 21 is not present in the older Greek manuscripts, Skehan and Di Lella argue for its authenticity.)

1:22–2:6, The Necessity for Patience. During adversity God strengthens the humble, bestowing hope and faithfulness, the two ingredients in the Hebrew word

amunah. Israelite and Egyptian wisdom literature warns against hotheaded behavior, the opposite of wise conduct, and advocates patience until the correct moment when speech achieves maximum potential (1:24). In certain circumstances good people encounter extraordinary testing, partly through the evil machinations of powerful officials, but also as a means of shaping character (2:1, 5). Ben Sira encourages fidelity in trying circumstances in the same way the Letter of James urges steadfastness (James 1:2–15), but the two authors respond differently to the question "How can I become wise?" Ben Sira advises observance of the law (1:26), whereas the Letter of James suggests that one ask God for wisdom. Both authors warn against having a divided mind, for God knows the authentic character of every person.

2:7–18, The Vastness of Divine Compassion. The prevalence of temptation does not necessarily imply an uncaring deity. Ben Sira affirms the ancient credo from Exod. 34:6–7, particularly those attributes that bring comfort to the believer (Sir. 2:11). As an object lesson, Ben Sira quotes David's bold response to divine displeasure (2 Sam. 24:14), thus emphasizing divine mercy equivalent to majesty (Sir. 2:18). This entire section in Sirach shows rhetorical flourish and balancing of refrains grouped together in threes ("You who fear the Lord"; "Whoever . . . ?"; "Woe to . . ."; "Those who fear the Lord"). Similarly, the assertion in 2:11 that the Lord is compassionate corresponds to 2:18, which brings together power and tenderness. The appeal to lessons from experience to reinforce God's justice (2:10) ignores the force of Job's personal attack against overconfidence on the part of the wise. Nevertheless, Ben Sira could have justified his position by noting that Job ultimately experienced honor after only temporary distress.

3:1–16, Filial Duty. This reflection on the implications of the commandment to honor one's parents preserves an early example of the belief in the efficacy of good deeds, their power to offset transgression in the final reckoning (3:3, 15). Ben Sira's observations about old age and its unwelcome features may reflect changing economic factors in Judea and the accompanying breakdown of the larger family. The earlier identification of wisdom with length of years has yielded before harsh examples of persons like Auranus, whom the author of 2 Maccabees describes as advanced in years and no less advanced in folly (2 Macc. 4:40). An aged father's vanishing strength and reduced intellectual acumen (3:13) offer occasions for insensitive youth to seize unprecedented authority in daily affairs, but such seemingly innocent usurpation of power has devastating consequences, particularly in destroying the offender's relationship with a higher authority, God (3:16). The same goes for those who lack respect for their mothers, whose curse the Lord reinforces.

3:17–31, Intellectual Modesty. The inquirer after knowledge needs to recognize that some things can never be discovered, for wisdom conceals itself (3:21–24). Nevertheless, a discerning person will ponder proverbs, seeking to learn as much as can be known (3:29). Where revealed knowledge vies with insights achieved through human effort, considerable tension results. The author of Deut. 29:29 and 30:11–14 wrestles with this problem generated by suspicion that worthwhile things require extraordinary expenditure of energy and insists that mystery remains, although God has bestowed considerable information on humankind. The manner of posing the questions in Deuteronomy reveals the presence of disconcerting claims that such revealed truth is too accessible to be truly valuable. Ben Sira confronts a similar attitude and adopts the earlier stance that God has granted adequate insights. Here is a call for intellectual humility, one that may address Greek influence among young Jews or even the philosophical quest in the Greek world.

4:1–10, Kindness to the Poor. Intellectual rigor that manifests itself in studying proverbs does not require one to withdraw from society and its deprived citizens. Ben Sira advises his students to relieve the burdens borne by the poor, for which kindness God will respond favorably. Such unfortunate individuals already have enough vexation without having to wait for a handout or having their hopes dashed by a potential benefactor who pretends not to see them. Ben Sira reproduces ancient belief that the Holy One attends to the prayer of the afflicted, which in this instance takes the form of a curse against the person who increased the poor one's burden (4:6). Potential officials are thus encouraged to use their power to improve the lot of widows and orphans, rendering verdicts in favor of the powerless rather than currying favor from the rich.

4:11–19, Wisdom's Practical Benefits. Ben Sira describes some rewards that accompany wisdom, making it worthwhile to endure initial hardship in the quest for her. Here wisdom is personified. She leads new students along difficult paths and tests their resolve, eventually rewarding those who endure faithfully (4:17–18). This idea corresponds to the sages' teaching that the Lord disciplines those who occupy a place of favor. Wisdom's benefits extend beyond Judean borders; an allusion to Joseph is possible (4:15).

4:20–6:4, Speaking Wisely. This section deals with timidity in speech and its opposite, reckless talk. In the first instance Ben Sira considers the person who refrains from speaking when the occasion demands some comment (4:20–28). The result is concealed wisdom, hence worthless. The truly intelligent individual recognizes the right moment and seizes the opportunity to throw light on the situation. This does not

mean that one must speak in every circumstance, for sometimes silence is wiser, particularly when passions run freely. Nevertheless, one should have courage to state the truth and to fight for its supremacy. Sages normally did not present the deity as entering into human battles (4:28).

Rash speech comes in many forms (4:29–6:4). Ben Sira warns against freethinkers who let lusts govern their lives, thinking wealth lasts forever. He uses an old formula of debate (the "Do not say *X*" formula) to withstand those practical atheists who deny God's sovereignty on the basis of delayed punishment or who presume on divine mercy in the same way a later philosopher said, "God will forgive. That's his business." Instead of these types of speech, one ought to be thoughtful and consistent, scrupulously avoiding slander and boasting. The power of speech brings honor and shame, so silence is preferable to speech unless understanding governs the tongue. Ben Sira thus carries on an ancient discussion, a favorite topic among the wise, but also one that later captured the imagination of the author of the Letter of James.

6:5–17, Friendship. Not everyone who claims to be a friend can be trusted, for some people use friendship for their own advantage, turning away when the slightest sign of adversity arises. Ben Sira recommends caution in choosing intimates, even to the point of testing potential friends (6:7). The expression "one in a thousand" (6:6) occurs in Job and Ecclesiastes for a rare find; the same usage appears in Egyptian wisdom literature. Ben Sira acknowledges the fact that some so-called friends take excessive liberty, becoming overly familiar. As protection from abuse of friendship, Ben Sira advises extreme measures: remaining distant from enemies and maintaining a guard toward one's friends (6:13). The Egyptian *Instruction of Amenemope,* written for Amenemope's son Sesostris, goes even farther, discouraging trust in anyone. Sirach does not manifest such a jaundiced view; instead, it endorses friendship enthusiastically (6:14–16).

6:18–37, Wisdom's Unwelcome Discipline. Ancient teachers made no secret of the difficulties confronting those who wished to become learned. Behind Ben Sira's metaphor of plowing (6:19) lies the erotic dimension of learning (elsewhere expressed as a lover in pursuit of a beloved, especially wisdom personified as a woman who invites students to her banquet). The image of plowing, frequently used as a euphemism for sexual relations, also seems to be associated in this instance with another metaphor, wisdom viewed as a rough path students must travel (unless the reference is to a rocky field [6:21]). The metaphor of wisdom as a yoke (6:23–28) suggests that wisdom both assists in the effort to plow a field and imposes discomfort at the same time (cf. Jesus' invitation to take on his yoke, Matt. 11:29–30). The enigmatic assertion that wisdom, like her name, is carefully guarded (6:22) probably makes a pun on the Hebrew noun *musar* ("instruction"), which resembles a participle *musar* ("removed, withdrawn") or, less likely, the noun *moser* ("bond, halter").

Ben Sira concludes this advice with some immensely practical suggestions (6:34–37). Surprisingly, he does not tell students to read written texts; instead, they are advised to locate intelligent people and listen to their discourse.

7:1–17, The Fate of the Wicked. This section warns against ungodly conduct and admonishes readers to adopt habits that will not bring punishment. Two features of this discussion catch the attention of modern interpreters. The first is the personification of evil, which is similar to that of wisdom in Proverbs 1–9. Sin has a will of its own, choosing its own companions. Hence an erotic component possibly colors the remark about sowing the furrows of injustice (7:3). The second feature involves a difference between the Greek and Hebrew versions. The addition of fire as punishment in the Greek text of 7:17 may reflect developments in thought among Jews in Alexandria about the afterlife as a time of punishment, although the same expression occurs in Isa. 66:24.

In 7:4–5 the natural movement from the Lord to an earthly ruler betrays their functional kinship in Ben Sira's mind. Nevertheless, the attitude toward official responsibility differs from earlier wisdom, which encourages persons to seek high office and to act justly in positions of leadership. The pressure on judges from foreign sources may explain Ben Sira's attitude. The subject of prayer crops up often in Sirach. Verse 14 urges perseverance and warns against verbosity in public gatherings and at prayer.

7:18–28, Domestic Advice. Except for the reference to cattle, this section focuses on intimate relationships between husbands and wives, parents and children, and owners and slaves. Ben Sira recognizes the immense worth of an intelligent and good wife, but he also knows that not every man is so fortunate. He therefore discourages anyone from remaining in a marriage that lacks affection. Ben Sira's comments about slaves (7:21) reflect the biblical law allowing a Hebrew slave to go free after six years' service (Exod. 21:2; Deut. 15:12). The linguistic shift from cattle to children (7:22–23), although offensive to modern readers, indicates the indispensable role of domestic animals in an agricultural community. The remarks about a father's responsibility to see that his daughter finds a suitable husband (7:25) show that this important task was not taken lightly, despite Ben Sira's suspicion about the character of daughters, which manifests itself later with considerably more virulence

than here. In one Hebrew manuscript (A) the father is urged to find wives for his sons while they are young, hence preventing temptation.

7:29–36, Obligations to Priests and the Poor. Ben Sira's high regard for priests finds expression here. He implores his readers to provide the necessary means of their subsistence, particularly since Mosaic law commands it. Ben Sira also encourages charitable deeds, among which he appears to include religious ritual in connection with the dead. The Greek text tones down this reference to a cult of the dead, suggesting instead that Ben Sira mentions burial rites, so important to the author of Tobit. The motive for such kindness is self-interest, both the anticipation of divine favor and the avoidance of punishment.

8:1–19, Some Things to Avoid. A sense of humor underlies the observations about old age and death (8:6), but the gravity of subject matter can scarcely be missed. Ben Sira's allusion to lack of respect for the aged reflects the conflict between the generations that became particularly harsh during this time of competing worldviews, Hebraism and Hellenism. The association of old age and death flows naturally, but Ben Sira's comments do not have the power of Ecclesiastes' poem on the same topic (Eccles. 12:1–7). The appeal to the insights acquired by those persons who have lived a long time ignores Job's attack on this traditional attitude. Ben Sira advises students to listen to sages as they talk about their lessons from experience (8:8–9). He thinks such attention to learned people will enable one to serve powerful officials, the goal of students in older wisdom traditions, at least in Egypt. The warning against legal disputes with individuals whose financial resources or social standing will determine the outcome (8:2, 14) demonstrates Ben Sira's practical approach to things. This cautious realism also rests behind his warning against letting down one's guard, particularly in the presence of someone who might talk too freely to others (8:18).

9:1–9, Relationships with Women. This section treats a husband's behavior toward his own wife and toward other women. Ben Sira implies that jealousy has a way of injuring the one who lacks trust; the specific background for this intriguing comment about a wife who turned the tables on her jealous husband is missing. The warning against surrendering to a woman's power occurs elsewhere in Prov. 31:3, advice from King Lemuel's mother to her son. Ben Sira's primary concern in this section is to alert students to the dangers associated with sexual laxity. His worry is essentially an economic one (9:5–6; cf. Deut. 22:28–29), but not entirely, for he thinks adulterous conduct brings destruction in the end. Much of this material recalls the warnings against the strange woman in the book of Proverbs. Ben Sira's observation about dining with another man's wife (9:9) uses the image of leaning on the elbow, i.e., acting too familiarly (a reading preserved in codex 248).

9:10–16, Friends and Neighbors. This section returns to some of the ideas expressed in 8:1–19, almost as if to contrast faithful friends with harmful acquaintances. The statement that an old friend resembles old wine seems proverbial, but Ben Sira may have composed it himself. He reiterates the danger of ruthless and powerful companions, who make one walk as if in the presence of hidden snares. Similarly, he repeats the recommendation that students acquire wisdom from sages, adding that the subject of study should be the Mosaic law. As in 8:17–19, this unit closes with a reference to the damaging effect of the tongue, specifically from a person who reveals confidential information and/or talks too much.

9:17–10:5, On Rulers. The optimism underlying Ben Sira's statement about God's active participation in ensuring that the right ruler achieves power (10:4) demonstrates the pervasive quality of traditional views, even when political circumstances seem to render them obsolete. Ben Sira affirms a benevolent providence, one that operates universally rather than merely on Israel's behalf. Still, the Greek text insists that the ruler of the whole earth shows special favor to scribes. Thus Ben Sira combines universalist and particularist thinking in a way that was typical of ancient wisdom literature. The initial comment about rulers (9:17) states that a person's skill at a particular craft manifests power over the medium, and that a ruler's persuasive speech manipulates subjects in a desired manner. Ben Sira observes that the product reveals the skill of an artisan in the same way a magistrate's language demonstrates his competence as a ruler of the people.

10:6–11:1, Pride and Honor. This section asserts that even the most powerful ruler succumbs to a horrible death, hence has no reason to be proud (10:9–10), and that human beings are both honorable and dishonorable, necessitating a decision about who deserves respect and who does not (10:19–25). Ben Sira had witnessed a transferal of power of great magnitude, the victory by Antiochus III over the Ptolemaic empire (→ Seleucids, The). Nevertheless, this astute observer of the political scene realizes that today's king is tomorrow's corpse. The anecdote about an illness that mystifies the physician (or that the physician makes light of, 10:9–10) may have a specific king in mind, but the point applies generally. A mighty ruler became mortally ill, inheriting unwanted vermin at death (10:11). In light of the inevitable end awaiting all mortals, every arrogant boast becomes hollow. This

example of pride offers an occasion for Ben Sira to deliver a brief homily on its awful results (10:12–18). In particular, human arrogance has prompted God to intervene in the political arena, replacing proud rulers with humble ones. This motif of a topsy-turvy world occurs in Egyptian wisdom literature, but without Ben Sira's optimism that the change promises good things for society at large. This section has a striking example of a rhetorical device whereby the same answer is solicited for opposite questions (10:19). In this way Ben Sira emphasizes differences among human beings, who are worthy of honor and contempt. This necessity for distinguishing among citizens leads to a discussion of sociological differentiations, which Ben Sira challenges. He insists that the customary honor bestowed on the rich and famous should take into account a religious ingredient. This quality alone determines who deserves honor; thus poor people who fear God ought to be held in high esteem. This principle prompts Ben Sira to make an astonishing claim that free persons will serve intelligent slaves (10:25). Nothing suggests the actual manumission of slaves, however, for the implication is that perceptive slaves use their learning to their own advantage. Because all human beings suffer decay, distinctions that take into account religious and intellectual qualities count most. But some persons overdo humility by depriving themselves of life's bounty, while others pretend to have plenty although lacking essential commodities. Ben Sira advocates a little common sense, while acknowledging that people usually honor the poor for their intelligence and the rich for their possessions (10:30).

11:2–28, Appearances Are Deceiving. This section takes up the subject of deceptive appearances, insisting that intelligent persons probe beneath the surface of things to get to the heart of the matter. External features do not make a person, and those whose appearance is less pleasing may actually be far more impressive. Ben Sira uses an illustration of the bee, which despite its smallness is responsible for the sweetest of things (11:3). An Egyptian Instruction, Papyrus Insinger, uses the same example. Anyone who takes present honors seriously forgets their fleeting nature, for God works in mysterious ways, sometimes reversing one's fortunes. For this reason one ought to refrain from judging persons in adverse circumstances. Their status could change in a moment. The same principle applies to the prosperous, who could easily lose everything. It follows that no one's true character is manifest until the moment of death. Ben Sira therefore offers some simple advice: wait until a person's death to make a final assessment of that life (11:28). Because he does not believe in life beyond the grave, Ben Sira assumes that God will weigh one's deeds, balancing the good against the bad, and hand out reward or punishment during one's lifetime. However, this idea of a rigid accounting later came to play an important role in the Pharisaic belief in an afterlife.

In this connection Ben Sira cautions against hasty judgments deriving from an unwillingness to listen to others and to reflect on matters prior to speaking. The decisive factor in human relations is impenetrable, for it derives from the Lord. No one can understand why one person, whom modern critics would label a workaholic, fails to amass a fortune while a person less capable and less industrious achieves extraordinary success (11:11–12). Ben Sira attributes the success and failure to God's hidden action. From this source come good luck and bad, life and death, wealth and poverty. Nevertheless, Ben Sira boldly asserts that God's favor falls to the godly (11:17). Still, this practical teacher acknowledges that human beings have no assurance that a life of hard work will result in years of luxurious living, since death steals into the presence of confident individuals, mocking their unused wealth. Ben Sira's efforts to defend God's reputation for just dealings imply that a brief moment of bliss can compensate for a life of misery. His argument mixes realism and idealism; people undergoing hardship forget their better times, and those who enjoy life's bounty easily blot out all memory of earlier unhappiness. That is why the final moment looms large in Ben Sira's thinking.

11:29–14:19, On Wealth. Although many topics surface in this long section, the unifying theme is riches. Ben Sira discusses some unfortunate character traits of many wealthy people and cautions poor people against courting the favors of the affluent. His reason is that people associate with their own kind (13:2, 15–20). Another compelling argument concerns the destructive behavior unscrupulous persons of power display toward those they consider inferior. Moreover, Ben Sira insists, foolish people deny themselves many pleasures, hoping to amass a fortune and forgetting how quickly death can strike (14:11–15). Given the unpredictability of life, human assessments seem somewhat skewed, particularly when rich individuals can offend others and add insult to injury, whereas the poor are victimized and submit to the additional indignity of offering apologies (13:3). In connection with his comments about death Ben Sira uses a simile that must have occurred to numerous thinkers, specifically that the passing of humans resembles falling leaves. Nature's cycle takes place, with new leaves replacing old ones; in the same way, some people die and others come into being (14:18).

Ben Sira introduces an interesting criterion for deciding when to give alms. Good deeds should be targeted for devout people, inasmuch as they occupy a special place in God's eyes (12:1–7). Such thinking naturally produced the clever proverb of a later time that God loves the poor, but helps the rich. This attitude does not represent a rigid rule in Ben Sira's mind. Rich

persons can be scoundrels; hence ordinary citizens should not invite the wealthy into their homes. Some scheming individuals will usher in strife and dissent while pretending friendship. The real test of friendship requires adversity, for only genuine friends remain when circumstances become tough. Ben Sira mentions a metal mirror as a device for determining bogus friendship (12:10–11). This illustration may allude to the ancient idea of a magic mirror that revealed friends and enemies. Alternatively, it offers a dubious analogy that false friendships corrode just as a metal mirror does. By frequent polishing, one can prevent tarnish.

The futility of trying to be something one is not produces some fine observations. For example, whoever flirts with danger deserves no pity, and any earthen pot that foolishly strikes against a kettle can hardly expect sympathy when it shatters. Similarly, whoever grasps pitch will discover its adhesive power, and whoever lifts too heavy a weight will regret the action (13:1–2). Living creatures associate by species, so rich and poor do not belong together. The analogy is inadequate, since the two represent a single species. Nevertheless, Ben Sira presses the point by offering additional examples highlighting the vulnerable status of poor people in the presence of the rich (13:15–20). If anyone accepts an invitation to dine with the wealthy, caution should prevail, and deference, but not too much—that would result in the poor person's disappearing into the woodwork. Ben Sira states a fact: the rich can do nothing wrong, whereas the poor can do nothing right, at least in the estimation of the crowd, which lifts up a falling rich person but pushes down a poor one (13:21–23).

Having said all this, Ben Sira refuses to condemn wealth outright, for not all riches have sin's taint. As a matter of fact, he encourages people to enjoy life's good things rather than passing the days as a miser (13:24; 14:3–16). Here Ben Sira repeats Ecclesiastes' advice, which a later scribe turned into a commandment that all people must give an account for every good thing not enjoyed. The emphasis of this unusual ruling lies on the goodness of creation and God's desire that human beings appreciate nature's largesse. Ben Sira's motive differs significantly: death approaches, so make the most of things without incurring divine wrath.

14:20–15:10, Wooing Wisdom. The happy person acquires wisdom by every available means: stalking her like game, spying on her, camping alongside the wall of her house, building a nest (according to the Hebrew text) in her branches, and enjoying her shade (14:22–27). Such an individual achieves all this by mastering the law. Wisdom's response to such ardor includes conduct appropriate to a bride and mother (15:2). The understanding that she bestows on her husband ensures prosperity, honor, and eloquence. But she withholds herself from fools and arrogant people, restricting her favors to those who practice piety, the outward expression of wisdom.

15:11–20, Freedom of Choice. The previous section concludes with an allusion to impious sinners, perhaps freethinkers. Ben Sira attempts to refute their argument that conduct is determined by external forces. He insists that everyone has free will, indeed that God created humans good, but they exercised freedom and chose their evil inclination (15:14). Later rabbis developed the notion of two inclinations, an evil one and a good one. As far as Ben Sira is concerned, evil did not originate with God. Other Israelites thought differently, blaming either God or Satan. Although Ben Sira accuses humans, he assures them that God sees everything (15:18), the implication being that justice ultimately prevails.

16:1–23, Misguided Thinking. Discarding traditional Israelite attitudes toward numerous progeny, Ben Sira sees children as a blessing only if they fear God (16:1–3). But such bold thinking has its limits, and he rejects the opinion that one can sin with impunity because God dwells in the remote heavens (16:17). Appealing to personal experience and to biblical record (16:5–10), Ben Sira refutes the claim that an indifferent God overlooks human sin. The giants who rebelled against heaven, the inhabitants of Sodom, the Canaanites, the rebellious Israelites—they all experienced divine retribution. The same exacting punishment applies to individuals, and God's mercy matches the divine wrath. Therefore it is foolish to deny God's active distribution of justice. Ben Sira quotes two examples of such misguided thinking (16:17, 20–22), between which he reflects on the majesty of God (16:18–19).

16:24–17:14, Divine Wisdom in Creation. Traditions about creation and the Sinaitic legislation come together in this unit, which gives the impression of mathematical precision. God created the universe in perfect order; hence nothing inappropriate can occur (16:26–28). The same care went into the fashioning of human beings, to whom God gave special gifts such as divine likeness and authority over all other creatures (17:1–4). One manuscript (248) adds that God gave the five senses to humans, and to those God added a sixth (understanding) and a seventh (speech). The divine solicitude eventuated in a covenant between God and the people, who beheld the glorious majesty at Sinai and received the law (17:12–14). Curiously, only relationships between human beings are mentioned here.

17:15–18:14, The Compassionate Judge. Ben Sira endeavors to explain God's special relationship with Israel. To be sure, God watches over all people, but the

care of non-Jews falls to other designated divine beings (17:17; cf. Deut. 32:8–9). God's attention focuses on Israel, whose deeds of charity bring immense joy, but whose sins are fully known and despised. Nevertheless, God leaves open the door of repentance for fragile human beings (17:24). Unlike humans, God lives forever. The greatness and majesty of God escape detection and defy description. Ben Sira asks the same question that Psalm 8 does, "What is man?" and answers somewhere between the psalmist's and Job's responses (18:8; cf. Ps. 8:4–8; Job 7:17–19). Whereas the psalmist spoke of human glory and Job of misery, Ben Sira emphasizes the brevity of life and bleak prospects in the grave, but he also highlights God's compassionate shepherding (18:9–14).

18:15–18, Kind Words. Kind words ought to accompany a gift, for they are superior to it. The implicit contradiction in a gift from one who begrudges it (18:18) recalls Ben Sira's discussion of true generosity in 14:3–10.

18:19–29, Using Caution. Wise persons use caution in all things, particularly vows, for they know how quickly fortunes change. Ben Sira reverses the usual order of the expression "from evening to morning" (18:26; cf. Gen. 1:5). Ecclesiastes also admonishes its readers to pay their vows promptly and urges caution in taking vows (Eccles. 5:2, 4–5).

18:30–19:12, Self-Control. This section warns against two kinds of behavior related to drinking and speech. Ben Sira opposes a lavish lifestyle if one cannot afford it (18:33), and he makes fun of people who cannot refrain from telling what they know. The humorous illustrations convey his point beautifully: a word about to burst one's insides, birth pangs, and an arrow in one's thigh cause great discomfort for fools (19:10–12). The association of wine and women as temptation (19:2) occurs also in Egyptian wisdom literature.

19:13–17, Rebuking Others. Because everyone offends with the tongue, intelligent people give others every opportunity to clarify what actually occurred. Four of the five verses employ anaphoristic style, repeating the phrase "Question a friend/neighbor" for rhetorical effect.

19:18–30, Wisdom and Cleverness. Israel's sages recognized that information could be put to dubious use, indeed that intelligence itself sometimes functioned in the cause of evil. Such cleverness is attributed to the serpent in Gen. 3:1 and to Jonadab, who schooled Amnon in the art of seduction (2 Sam. 13:3). Because of this negative potential of wisdom, the sages were reluctant at first to attribute wisdom to God. In this unit Ben Sira brings together the basic themes of the book, wisdom and the fear of God. (Verses 18, 19, 20c, and 21 are later additions to the text.) The description of unscrupulous persons whose outward demeanor conceals inner hostility demonstrates profound psychological understanding (19:26–28), and the juxtaposition of a statement indicating awareness that things are not always what they seem over against a straightforward assertion that one is known by the impression made on others (19:29–30) indicates cautious realism.

20:1–31, Guarding One's Speech. Egyptian and Israelite sages developed a highly sophisticated concept of rhetoric that consisted of timeliness, restraint, integrity, and eloquence. Knowing when to speak and when to remain silent was a mark of intelligence; in Egypt a sage was known as "a silent one." Truthfulness and persuasiveness were essential if one expected to make optimal use of the right moment for speech. The wise trained themselves to speak well in behalf of truth, but they also acknowledged that some people possessed an innate gift of eloquence. This understanding of speech and silence was more complex than it might appear, as the two sayings in Prov. 26:4–5 illustrate. They isolate instances when neither silence nor speech achieves the desired goal. Ben Sira therefore works with a revered tradition when considering the merit of speech and silence (20:5–8). In his view, silence in itself may derive from ineptness. Violence in a good cause necessarily aborts, like a eunuch's desire to seduce a woman (20:4). What seems to be a bargain may cost one dearly (20:12). The meaning of this obscure saying may be that some people obtain a bargain while others pay exorbitant prices.

21:1–10, Sin's Smooth Path. This counsel to sinners has two graphic images: sin resembles a viper (21:2), and an assembly of sinners is like a bundle of tow (21:9; the Greek contains a wordplay here). Roads were not normally paved in ancient Israel, but sin's path is so smooth that its occupants slip into the grave (21:10). Ben Sira likens building a house with borrowed money to preparing one's tomb (21:8; unless the reading "for the winter" is original, which suggests stupidity in failing to gather wood). The houselike shape of ossuaries added poignancy to Ben Sira's words.

21:11–22:18, The Wise and Foolish. The contrast between the wise and fools occurs frequently in ancient wisdom literature. Here Ben Sira gives some examples of conduct typical of each group. Their attitudes toward learning also set them apart, for the wise value education. In a sense wisdom connotes good manners, but it implies more: weighing what one hears, thinking first, then speaking, improving on maxims (21:15). In a word, the wise expand knowledge like an overflowing river (21:13). Fools are like leaking containers, retaining nothing (21:14). Hence mourning for them lasts forever as opposed to the usual seven days (Heb. *shiba'*,

22:12). It appears that Ben Sira thought one's quest for wisdom permitted the setting aside of normal etiquette (21:23; cf. 14:23). Ben Sira's remark about the birth of a daughter may derive from the fact that she cannot continue the family name, but the context implies that he has in mind the onerous task of locating a husband for the daughter (22:3–5). Instead of a fence on a hill, the image in 22:18 may be that of small pebbles on a wall, having been placed there to alert farmers when jackals threatened a crop (cf. RSV and JB).

22:19–26, Holding On to Friendship. This section returns to the subject of friendship (see 6:5–17) and presents a complementary dimension of human relationships in which the remarkable resiliency of affections comes to expression. Ben Sira recognizes that the bond uniting friends can snap when one person exceeds the limits of propriety, but he also celebrates the amazing readiness to forgive that characterizes genuine friendship. The sudden shift from third person to first in v. 25 has precedent in Ecclesiastes, where first-person style dominates one particular section (Eccles. 1:12–2:26). For Ben Sira the shift may be a subtle move to emphasize the personal dimension of friendship.

22:27–23:6, A Prayer for Self-Control. Rarely do prayers occur in biblical wisdom (cf. Prov. 30:7–9; Sir. 36:1–17). The dominant images in this prayer (a sentry and a seal) come from the military and economic realms, respectively. Important official documents were sealed with hot wax, on which one's insignia was stamped.

23:7–15, Proper Use of Language. Two types of language bring ruin. The first, empty religious oaths and frequent reference to God, incurs divine wrath (23:9–11); the second, coarse talk, issues in public disgrace (23:13–15). Ben Sira's allusion to the inheritance of Jacob (23:12) refers to the Israelites rather than to the land promised them.

23:16–27, Fornication and Adultery. "Bread" as a euphemism for illicit sex (23:17) also occurs in Prov. 9:17, where its secretiveness is highlighted. Ben Sira stresses the woman's offense (23:22–27), but the man's behavior deserves the same condemnation.

24:1–22, Wisdom Praises Itself. A poem of three stanzas (vv. 3–7, 8–12, 13–17) plus introduction (vv. 1–2) and conclusion (vv. 19–22) brings part one of Sirach to a close. Rooted in earlier belief (Prov. 8:22–36), the hymn resembles aretalogies (i.e., hymns of praise) associated with the Egyptian goddess Isis. The first strophe (3–7) employs imagery from the account of creation in Genesis 2 and from Israel's sojourn in the wilderness. Wisdom is compared to the enlivening mist (Gen. 2:6) and protective cloud (Exod. 13:21–22); she circumvents the vault of earth in an indication of sovereignty. Verse 7 introduces the topic of strophe two, wisdom's search for a resting place (cf. *1 Enoch* 42:1–2, which denies that she found one). In vv. 8–12 wisdom's choice of Israel is attributed to divine decree, like creation itself. The allusion to "my creator" recalls Prov. 8:22, where a special relationship exists between wisdom, the first of God's creative acts, and God. The tent (v. 10) refers to the ancient tabernacle; here Ben Sira boldly associates wisdom with priestly sacrifice. The third strophe (vv. 13–17) develops the image of deep roots. Wisdom is like different trees: durable and majestic (cedar, cypress), beautiful (palm, oleander), useful (olive), rare (plane), fragrant (producing spices, perfume, incense), and sprawling (terebinth). The main idea is wisdom's omnipresence. Like the vine in v. 17, she is the source of a delicious feast to which all are invited.

24:23–34, Reflection on Wisdom. Ben Sira identifies wisdom with the Mosaic law, which bestows life like the four rivers of Eden, to which he adds the Nile and the Jordan. Nevertheless, the first occupant of Eden did not fully grasp wisdom, nor has anyone done so since that early attempt (24:28). That experience is tempered somewhat by the claim that the Mosaic law is a concrete expression of wisdom (24:23). Ben Sira's own effort to seek wisdom has overflowed its banks, prompting him to write an additional treatise for posterity (24:30–34).

25:1–26:27, Good and Bad Wives. Two surprising comments occur in this unit. Ben Sira exalts the fear of the Lord over wisdom and attributes the instigation of evil to woman. Normally, piety served as the initial stage to wisdom; often religious expression is called the crowning achievement of knowledge. But here Ben Sira subjects wisdom to religion (25:10–11). A similar break with traditional interpretation takes place when he blames Eve for the origin of sin (25:24), for Jewish literature of this general period usually accuses Adam of introducing death. In some circles his crime consists of a refusal to repent. Ben Sira's description of two types of wives plumbs the depths of sadness and soars to lofty heights of joy. Two important manuscripts, 70 and 248, together with the Syriac add a section about an appropriate choice of a wife and about harlots. Ben Sira's characterization of loose women who drink from any spring and open their quiver for any arrow demonstrates powerful imagery as a pedagogic tool (26:12).

The best manuscripts of Sirach lack 26:19–27, which seems to reflect later sentiment, although the ideas generally agree with Ben Sira's attitude toward women. The metaphor of one's wife as a fertile field occurs widely in Israelite and non-Israelite wisdom. The book of Proverbs may have inspired these comments, but they use harsher language than their earlier counterpart.

26:28–27:15, Honesty. The merchant's profession offers an easy means of cheating the buyer, so much so that Ben Sira thinks the temptation virtually irresistible (26:29–27:1; cf. *Ankhsheshanky* 28:4, "Do not have a merchant for a friend; he lives for taking a slice"). He also believes that eloquence and clear reasoning reveal character (27:4–7).

27:16–28:26, Offenses Against Companions. Ben Sira observes that betrayal of a friend's secrets destroys the friendship forever and that the "third tongue," a technical expression for slander in rabbinic literature, ruins three people: the slanderer, the person being slandered, and whoever believes the cruel report (27:16–21; 28:12–26). A tension exists here between realistic observation and religious ideology. Ben Sira's emphasis on forgiving one's neighbor for offenses (28:2–7) has precedent in earlier wisdom literature, although the motive is not exactly altruistic. Prov. 25:21–22 recommends kind actions toward enemies and promises divine reward for this conduct. The section on actions that double back to harm the actor (27:25–27) also has biblical and extrabiblical precedent.

29:1–20, Lending Money. Whereas Prov. 22:26 advises against surety, Ben Sira offers a cautious defense of the practice. His rationale, purely religious, implies the winning of divine favor by lending to the needy (29:9). No usury is mentioned (cf. Lev. 25:36).

29:21–28, Hospitality. In the Greco-Roman world some men dwelt in other people's houses and rendered various services in return. Ben Sira's observations imply a similar arrangement, which he compares unfavorably with humble circumstances in one's own abode.

30:1–13, On Rearing Children. Ancient sages believed in the effectiveness of the whip. A Sumerian sage reminisces about school days and indicates that he was caned for numerous offenses. Similar texts from Egypt refer to the constant threat of physical punishment in school, but promise ample rewards for the pain. The book of Proverbs also encourages vigorous discipline for disobedient children, so that the nonbiblical saying "Spare the rod and spoil the child" adequately sums up the teaching about this subject.

Ben Sira urges parents to wield a heavy hand, whipping children soundly and keeping some distance to avoid familiarity. The primary concern is the father's welfare. The Hebrew text adds a graphic image: as a python pounces on a wild beast, so crush a son's loins while he is young. The sayings of Ahiqar use similar images, e.g., corporal punishment is like manure to a garden.

30:14–25, On Good Health. In the ancient Near East sickness posed a special intellectual problem in addition to its physical burden. Was illness a sign of divine displeasure? The simple answer, based on a concept of reward and retribution that pervaded popular belief, brought immense grief to innocent people. The book of Job wrestles with this vexing problem, although it fails to resolve the issue. Job's friends and Elihu give voice to the conventional understanding that grievous deeds alone explain the extremity of his suffering, but Job adamantly maintains innocence. In general, the book of Proverbs fueled the thinking of Job's detractors. Ben Sira has mixed feelings about the problem (cf. 38:1–15). On the one hand, with Job he realizes that not all misery comes as divine punishment. On the other hand, Ben Sira believes that wicked persons fall into God's punishing hands. Healthy persons are the richest of all individuals (30:14–17), but the sick bear a double burden: the illness and knowledge that God is angry toward them (30:18–20). After v. 24 the order of the Greek text becomes confused (30:25–33:13a and 33:13b–36:16 are transposed).

31:1–11, On Riches. In the process of discussing the ambiguity of wealth and poverty, Ben Sira uses the Aramaic word *mamôn* for gold (31:8), possibly its first such recorded use.

31:12–32:13, Conduct at Meals. Like ancient Egyptian wisdom, which offers advice on etiquette at meals, Ben Sira teaches what is proper in his day. His remark about the eye in 31:13 is puzzling, but probably reflects the notion that the expression "desires of the eyes" sums up all evil. His attitude toward wine (31:25–31) is more positive than that in Proverbs (cf. Prov. 23:29–35), while his comments on vomiting echo Seneca's remark that his contemporaries "vomit in order to eat and eat so as to vomit." The Greek background of Ben Sira's remarks about banquets is seen in the choice of a host to select the guest list and to say grace, as well as in the wreath of honor.

32:14–33:6, God-Fearers and Sinners. A Hebrew idiom lies behind the double imperatives in 32:19–20, indicating a condition and its consequence. The absolute statement about the well-being of a God-fearer needs to be qualified by the realities of experience. Ben Sira's zeal for the law leads to extreme statements, like the one about the utter reliability of the sacred dice (33:3). He had complete confidence in priests who manipulated the Urim and Thummim. These rocks probably had a Hebrew *waw* or a *taw* on them. Priests asked questions with "yes" or "no" answers, continuing until two rocks with the same letter appeared (→ Urim and Thummim).

33:7–15, Differences in Things and People. The Stoics also believed that the universe consisted of divinely constituted opposites. This basis for excluding some people from the priesthood was attached to a notion of impurity and extended to all women.

33:16–18, Ben Sira's Personal Appeal. Acknowledging his temporal sequence at the end of the inspired writers, Ben Sira claims to have excelled at wisdom and asks for a hearing from leaders. The latter is a rhetorical device in Wisdom of Solomon especially (Wisd. of Sol. 1:1; 6:1–2).

33:19–23, Financial Independence. Ben Sira offers sound advice to overly pious persons who gave all their possessions away to receive credit from God. Better wait until the hour of death, he suggests.

33:24–31, Treatment of Slaves. Ben Sira's remarks on slaves are in keeping with the tendency of wisdom literature to reflect the values of the reasonably well-to-do. Essentially conservative, it recommends the status quo, abhorring revolutionary periods in society. Ben Sira advises harsh treatment of slaves, but balances his words with the reminder that they represent considerable investment (in blood, i.e., purchased with one's life substance).

34:1–8, Empty Dreams. Three means of predicting the future are rejected because they lack substance, resembling a reflection in a mirror. Ben Sira says that dreams generate excitement in senseless people. Biblical precedent for divine communication through dreams forced Ben Sira to qualify his remarks (34:6). But how could one determine the source of dreams?

The attitudes toward dreams in the ancient world varied considerably. In Mesopotamia dream revelations were so common that a "science" of predicting the future arose. Specialists in interpreting dreams existed throughout the ancient Near East. The Hebrew Bible also witnesses to their presence (cf. the Joseph story and Daniel), but confusion over the source of dreams eventually led to a disparaging of this medium of revelation (cf. Jeremiah's objection to dreams). The supernatural source of dreams persists in the NT (e.g., the stories about Pilate's wife and Joseph's escape from Herod's wrath).

34:9–17, The Protection of Wisdom. Sages viewed life as a journey, for which they offered helpful advice. Travel may therefore be a literary convention.

34:18–35:20, Authentic Sacrifices and Prayers. Ben Sira continues the prophetic criticism of sacrifices that are not accompanied by moral rectitude. He employs a strong image: sacrifices gained from abuse of the poor are as offensive as murdering a son before his father. For Ben Sira deeds of kindness do not take the place of ritual (35:1–5). Although the law commands the offering of sacrifices, one's attitude and moral character determine God's response. Genuine repentance is essential, regardless of how frequently one fasts (34:26).

36:1–17, A Prayer for Deliverance of Jews. This fervent prayer for decisive action on God's part looks back on the Exodus and forward to the messianic era. Ben Sira notices disparity between the assurances just articulated and the dire circumstances of the Jews. He therefore pleads for God to restore them and crush the enemy. His guarded language in v. 10 may allude to Antiochus the Great. The comment about prophetic predictions (36:15) witnesses to the popular conviction that the unfulfilled oracles promising weal cannot abort. For a brief moment Ben Sira abandons the universalism of the sages altogether. It should be noted, however, that the earlier sages' generosity did not extend to the fools among them. The universalism was therefore a qualified one, moral qualities determining the assessment.

36:18–26, Using Discriminating Judgment. Some food tastes better than other food, and some wives are better than others. Ben Sira's observations assume the "purchase" of wives and the arrangement of marriages by fathers. The Hebrew text calls the wife her husband's best vineyard, a common image in the Bible. Despite the risk (cf. 25:16–20), Ben Sira favors marriage over the single life.

37:1–6, True and False Friends. In the context of discussing friendship Ben Sira laments the creation of the evil inclination (but cf. 15:14). The text of v. 3 is not well preserved in the Greek or Hebrew, apparently reflecting the reluctance of later readers to attribute evil to God. In later rabbinic tradition, however, God's responsibility for creating the evil inclination is freely admitted, although a corresponding good inclination is postulated. In every individual the evil inclination was said to antedate the good by a dozen years, which seemed to explain the early occurrence of folly.

37:7–15, On Advisers. Shrewd practical advice does not suffice for Ben Sira, who adds some religious observations as well. He presupposes polygamy and astrology in the comments about a rival wife (37:11) and seven watchmen (37:14). Presumably, the seven people observe the heavenly bodies in an effort to discern the future. The allusion may, however, suggest an exaggerated attempt to spot danger from human foes. The combination of self-reliance and prayer for divine leadership shows how Ben Sira lives fully in two worlds, that of secular sages and the one inhabited by deeply religious individuals. For him the insights acquired through reason, although significant, need the greater knowledge that God makes accessible to devout souls.

37:16–31, Using Intelligence for One's Well-Being. Intelligence that does not issue in beneficial actions is wasted. Ben Sira uses two illustrations, a teacher whose words offend others (37:20–21) and a person whose eating habits harm the body (37:29–31). A curious contrast occurs in this section: lone individuals vanish

soon, but Israel survives indefinitely (37:25). This idea represents a break with earlier wisdom tradition, which was individualistic in its teachings.

38:1–15, On Physicians. Ben Sira counters objections to doctors who, in the view of some people, interfered with divine punishment for sin. He still thinks of sickness as punishment, for he advises prayer, repentance, and sacrifice when illness strikes, and he implies that sinners will need physicians (38:15). Nevertheless, he defends the medical profession, arguing that God created medicines and that doctors solicit divine aid in the practice of their trade. The Hebrew text states that sinners act proudly before physicians, presumably disparaging their services.

38:16–23, Grief for the Dead. According to 22:12, mourning for the dead lasted seven days, but here Ben Sira advises a shorter period of grief because of its adverse physical effect. The dead person's "epitaph" is sobering: mine today, yours tomorrow (38:22). Notably, Ben Sira does not mention prayers for the dead, which later became a custom among the Jews (but cf. 7:33–34). The unusual early termination of mourning recalls David's unconventional behavior after the death of the child conceived by Bathsheba, and the comment about no coming back echoes David's solemn observation that the child "will not return to me" (2 Sam. 12:23). Ben Sira's astonishing counsel to let the remembrance of the dead cease contrasts sharply with the usual attitude about the importance of a lasting remembrance. Even Ecclesiastes complains bitterly because one cannot count on a permanent reputation.

38:24–39:11, Advantages of Being a Scribe. Like the Egyptian *Instruction of Duauf,* Sirach contrasts the occupations of various craftsmen with that of scribes. Ben Sira does not disparage the contribution of artisans in society (38:32, 34); nevertheless, he holds scribes in much higher esteem because of their status as royally appointed officials and leaders in high councils. This description of a scribe's subject matter focuses on the Scriptures, but not exclusively so (39:1). Egyptian sages emphasized the lasting memorial of scribes, writings that are recited for generations; Ben Sira simply mentions the reputation that endures (39:9–11).

39:12–35, In Praise of the Creator. In his effort to respond to the vexing problem of the apparent injustice of God, Ben Sira borrows heavily from earlier wisdom literature, but he also draws on the Greek philosophical tradition. He looks to the future for final rectification, explains suffering as disciplinary, recognizes that appearances deceive, and affirms justice in the face of apparent injustice, surrendering to mystery and raising a voice of hymnic praise. But he introduces new emphases, the one psychological and the other metaphysical. Sinners experience excessive anxiety, and the universe fights on behalf of virtuous people. The latter idea of a rational order that consists of complementary pairs derives from Greek arguments for an inherent justice in the world. In vv. 26–27 Ben Sira asserts that one's inner state determines how certain things appear to that person. Wisdom of Solomon develops this psychological idea fully, showing the devastating power of fear to turn ordinary things into objects of terror.

40:1–11, The Heavy Yoke. Ben Sira draws on a lively tradition about the miserable lot entrusted to humans. His language recalls Gen. 3:17–20, the divine curse on rebellious Adam, as well as Job's ruminations about the terrible plight of human beings (Job 7; 14). One also hears an echo of the unflattering characterization of the human disposition that brought on the Flood (Gen. 6:5). Moreover, Ben Sira's allusion to returning to the mother of all recalls Job's reference to returning there (possibly the aforementioned maternal womb, but more likely he uses a euphemism for the underworld). Whereas the earlier texts from Genesis and Job describe a universal human bondage, one in Job's case exacerbated by divine surveillance, Ben Sira thinks God's watchful care ensures a measure of justice, multiplying sinners' grief sevenfold. The miserable experience of human beings, outlined in detail here, throws in relief the preceding praise of the Creator.

40:12–27, Life's Positive Features. Ben Sira continues the argument that God sees and punishes evil and rewards good deeds. He also uses a rhetorical device to emphasize nine things that surpass others that are good in themselves (e.g., a friend or companion is welcome, but to be husband and wife is preferable).

40:28–41:13, On Death. The attitude toward death in various wisdom texts reflects both realism and faint hope. The latter manifests itself in feelings of consolation over a life well lived (the harvesting of golden shocks of grain) and expresses confidence in the timing of death's summons after a long, prosperous life (cf. Job 5:17–26). But the sages also know a darker side of death, the premature visitation by the angel of death who seizes persons unawares. An Egyptian sage states that protests at this time accomplish nothing worthwhile, for the messenger of death does not consider youth to rest outside its grip. Some individuals, like Job, actually welcomed death because of their personal suffering, while others, like Ecclesiastes, viewed the shadow of death as a grievous burden affecting every waking moment. Ben Sira's cool detachment contrasts noticeably with the views of Job and Ecclesiastes, but he still refuses to endorse belief in life after death, which the author of Dan. 12:2 does a couple of decades later. Wisdom of Solomon welcomes the Greek notion of immortality as an answer to this problem.

41:14–42:8, Two Kinds of Shame. The Hebrew text has a title before v. 16 ("Instruction About Shame"). Ben Sira first explores some actions in which shame has a proper place (41:17–23) and then proceeds to name other acts that ought not to cause a sense of shame (42:1–5). The reference to an old man in 42:8a probably relates to fornication, but was mistakenly read "contends with a youth." The motivation in this unit is thoroughly secular—winning popular approval (42:8b).

42:9–14, On Daughters. A father's worries over a daughter are chronicled, beginning with temptations during her tender youth and continuing after her marriage. The Hebrew text characterizes her, nonetheless, as a secret treasure. Still, the popular proverbs that conclude this section reveal a low opinion of women that often finds expression in rabbinic, Greco-Roman, and early Christian literature.

42:15–43:33, A Hymn in Praise of the Creator. This hymn introduces the long section in praise of the fathers, as the transition in 43:33 makes specific. Ben Sira asserts that even angels lack the ability to praise God fully (42:17); hence his own effort only scratches the surface. Yet that surface is a wondrous one, as Ben Sira illustrates with rare poetic images. The summary statement that God is "the all" does not indicate pantheism, for Ben Sira adds that the Creator is greater than the sum of the parts (43:27–28). A sense of awe permeates the language about natural phenomena (sun, moon, stars, rainbow, lightning, dew, etc.).

44:1–50:24, Praise of the Fathers. A general introduction (44:1–15) and a specific conclusion from Ben Sira's own day (50:1–24) conclude this journey through Israel's sacred history. Although the material of the hymn is thoroughly Hebraic, the similarities with Greek encomia (rhetorical compositions in praise of heroes) are noteworthy, suggesting to some interpreters that Ben Sira models his hymn on these orations. His own special interests surface in the choice of heroes to stand out in the list and in what he recalls about some of the others. The priestly institution and its founders occupy central position, and the contribution of others to the religious establishment at Jerusalem comes into play. These include David, Solomon, Hezekiah, Josiah, Zerubbabel, Jeshua, and Simon II. The list of Israel's worthy men includes a sampling of heroes, but its exclusive nature is highlighted by the absence of women and non-Israelites. The emphasis on the miraculous carries over to what Ben Sira says about prophets, whose wondrous deeds outshone their words in his estimation. With this hymn Ben Sira thoroughly integrates Israel's sacred history into the thought of the wise, whose literature before him does not betray the slightest hint of familiarity with Israel's special religious story. Presumably, the hymn attributes the miraculous deeds to God's gift of wisdom, which guided these men and enabled them to make a name for themselves.

The description of Simon II may function polemically, for Ben Sira seems to have witnessed the corruption of the priesthood under Jason and Menelaus. Ben Sira's choice of a starting point for the poem in 44:16 witnesses to the popularity of reflection on Enoch during the second century B.C.; the later reference to him, followed by mention of Joseph, Shem, Seth, and Adam (Israelite heroes!), has suggested to some scholars that the book is not in the form that Ben Sira planned for it. The most surprising feature of the hymn is the absence of any specific Torah or wisdom piety.

Why did Ben Sira completely drop Ezra from the biblical record? Changed socioeconomic circumstances made mixed marriage a matter of indifference in the late third and early second century B.C. Ezra's strict legislation about marriage with foreigners failed to take into account long-standing practice among the Jews. Therefore, embarrassment perhaps led Ben Sira to omit Ezra from the heroes deemed worthy of praise.

Alternatively, the scribe in Ezra's day was narrowly and exclusively oriented toward the Mosaic law. Ben Sira understands the vocation of scribe more broadly. The interest in the law was complemented by research in the wisdom tradition. In a sense Ben Sira transforms the office of priest-scribe into that of teacher-sage, whose authority rests ultimately on his scholarship, insights, and communicative skills.

Perhaps the state of the priestly office following the death of Simon II, specifically the weakness of Onias III, explains Ben Sira's silence about Ezra, also a political quietist. For this reason Ben Sira does not want to extol Ezra as someone whom Onias III could emulate. Instead, Ben Sira skips over Ezra and highly praises Onias's father, hoping to stimulate a desire on Onias's part to pattern his actions after those of his father and predecessor in the office of high priest. Two other omissions in the hymn have occasioned some comment. Joseph does not appear in the body of the hymn, although the brief "afterthought" in 49:14–16 mentions him along with the prediluvians Shem, Seth, and Adam (Enoch appears for a second time here, but the Syriac and the Masada texts do not include him at 44:16). One possible reason for this curious situation is that Joseph's link with the Northern tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh and his blessing on these sons implied a positive attitude toward the hated Samaritans. The active campaign waged by the Samaritans and the Tobiads in Transjordan against the policies of Simon II may have generated enough animosity to prompt Ben Sira's silence about Joseph. Another explanation is that Ben Sira pulled Joseph's name out of sequence to blot out any record of Joseph's role as adviser to the Pharaoh. A third answer takes its cue from the fact that Onias III switched allegiance from the Seleucids to the

Ptolemies. Ben Sira does not want to give the appearance of approving this shift of loyalty. None of these answers deals with the problem adequately if the allusion to Joseph in 49:14–16 derives from Ben Sira; for this reason, as well as for its strange location, some interpreters consider these verses secondary, or added later.

Ben Sira also omits Saul, although the biblical record contains enough negative material on this tragic figure to explain his absence in the hymn. Furthermore, Ben Sira makes no secret of his hatred for the Samaritans, whom Saul would undoubtedly have recalled, and David, Saul's enemy, is Ben Sira's hero. Finally, Saul was not an example of piety for later Judeans, at least in sacred memory.

50:25–26, A Numerical Proverb. This expression of animosity toward Philistines, Edomites, and Samaritans seems out of place in the book, and it hardly expresses the universalism typical of earlier sages. Nevertheless, Ben Sira's attitude toward these neighboring peoples reflects the animosity resulting from hostile actions directed toward Judeans who returned from captivity in Babylonia and attempted to resettle in Jerusalem and its immediate vicinity. The inhabitants of Samaria are linked together with archrivals, Philistines and Edomites. The bitterness toward all three groups resulted in military action by the Hasmonean rulers shortly after Ben Sira's day.

50:27–29, Ben Sira's Epilogue. The author identifies himself by name and commends his teachings to readers.

51:1–30, An Appendix. This appendix consists of a prayer (51:1–12), a psalm (sixteen verses in the Hebrew, but missing in Greek), and an acrostic poem (51:13–30). The prayer resembles a thanksgiving psalm in which the author praises God for deliverance from some danger. The psalm in the Hebrew text is made up of numerous biblical quotations; its kinship with Psalm 136 has attracted some attention. Finally, Ben Sira describes his successful acquisition of wisdom, a motif that recurs in Wisdom of Solomon with erotic overtones (like the manuscript of Sir. 51 discovered at Qumran). The invitation to attend Ben Sira's house of instruction (Heb. *bet hammidrash*) is the first of its kind. The Hebrew text of v. 29 also mentions Ben Sira's academy (Heb. *yeshivah*). The emphasis on human learning and divine mercy in the last verses concludes the book in a way that brings together the tension throughout.

Bibliography

Alonso-Schökel, L. "The Vision of Man in Sirach 16:24–17:14." In *Israelite Wisdom.* Edited by J. Gammie et al. Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1978. Pp. 235–45.

Crenshaw, J. L. *Old Testament Wisdom.* Atlanta, GA: Knox, 1981.

———. *Sirach.* New Interpreter's Bible, 5. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1997.

Jacob, E. "Wisdom and Religion in Sirach." In *Israelite Wisdom.* Edited by J. Gammie et al. Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1978. Pp. 247–60.

Mack, B. L. *Wisdom and the Hebrew Epic.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1985.

Sanders, J. T. *Ben Sira and Demotic Wisdom.* Society of Biblical Literature Monograph Series, 28. Chico, CA: Scholars Press, 1983.

Skehan, P. A., and A. A. Di Lella. *The Wisdom of Ben Sira.* Anchor Bible, 39. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1987.

Snaith, J. G. *Ecclesiasticus or the Wisdom of Jesus Son of Sirach.* Cambridge Bible Commentary. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1974.

von Rad, G. *Wisdom in Israel.* Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1972.

Yadin, Y. *The Ben Sira Scroll from Masada with Introduction, Emendations and Commentary.* Jerusalem: Israel Exploration Society, 1965.

Baruch

DANIEL J. HARRINGTON

INTRODUCTION

The book of Baruch (sometimes also called 1 Baruch to distinguish it from the noncanonical books designated as *2 Baruch* and *3 Baruch*) is a composite work consisting of a narrative introduction (1:1–14), a prose prayer attributed to the Jewish exiles in Babylon (1:15–3:8), a poem about the elusiveness of wisdom and the identification of wisdom and the law (3:9–4:4), and another poem in which the theological significance of Israel's exile is explained and the hope of restoration is explored (4:5–5:9; → Exile).

The three major sections (1:15–3:8; 3:9–4:4; 4:5–5:9) appear to have been originally independent works. Because all three pieces were connected with Israel's experience of exile in Babylon and its hope for return to the homeland (though the connection of 3:9–4:4 with this theme is quite weak), they were joined together and given a narrative framework (1:1–14). All three pieces combine words and phrases from the Hebrew Bible (esp. Dan. 9; Job 28; Isa. 40–66) into a kind of pastiche that ends up being a new and somewhat creative composition.

Most likely, the narrative framework and the three major parts were composed in Hebrew. The evidence for this hypothesis was laid out by J. J. Kneucker in *Das Buch Baruch* (1879), in which a reconstruction of the original Hebrew text was attempted and explained in great detail. Although Kneucker convinced most scholars that 1:1–3:8 reflected a Hebrew original, there was resistance to the idea that the last two parts (3:9–4:4; 4:5–5:9) were written in Hebrew. But D. G. Burke's *Poetry of Baruch* (1982) seems to have established that those two sections also were composed in Hebrew. The criteria used in establishing Hebrew as the original language include the poetic style, the reliance on parallelism, the clarity gained by retroversion (i.e., retranslation) into Hebrew, and the occasional instances where the Greek translator may have misunderstood the Hebrew original.

Of the extant texts of the book of Baruch, the Greek translation of the lost Hebrew original is the most important. The Greek text of Baruch appears in four uncial manuscripts of the Septuagint (LXX) and in thirty-four minuscule manuscripts (→ Texts, Versions, Manuscripts, Editions). There are also versions in Syriac, Latin, Coptic, Ethiopic, Arabic, and Armenian.

The alleged author of the book is Baruch the son of Neriah, the secretary and companion of Jeremiah (→ Baruch). If Baruch was the author, he would have written in the early sixth century B.C. from Babylon. This setting, however, is universally acknowledged today to be a literary fiction, and the book of Baruch is considered an example of pseudepigraphy. The chief arguments for this position are historical and literary. Not only is there no other evidence that Baruch was in Babylon, but also there are so many mistakes and inaccuracies in the narrative framework (1:1–14) that Baruch the son of Neriah could not have been responsible for them. Furthermore, the three major parts (1:15–3:8; 3:9–4:4; 4:5–5:9) are mosaics of biblical passages (Dan. 9; Job 28; Isa. 40–66) that were most likely not even in existence in the early sixth century B.C.

There is a wide range of opinion about when the book as a whole and its parts were composed. The spectrum of scholarly views extends from the period of the Exile to the second century A.D. Most scholars place the work in the Maccabean period (200–60 B.C.; → Maccabees). Further precision in dating is hard to achieve, mainly because of the method of composition (a pastiche of biblical phrases) and because of the lack of clear allusions to contemporary historical events.

Although the work is set in Babylon, the fact that it appears to have been composed in Hebrew suggests that it originated in Palestine. This setting is confirmed to some extent by the narrative framework's insistence that the three major sections were intended as advice for the Jerusalem community. Nothing can be said about the identity of the author. In fact, we must reckon with the possibility of four different authors—one for each major section plus the final redactor who put the parts together and supplied the framework. Of course, we cannot rule out the possibility that one author was responsible for more than one part.

The individual parts of the book of Baruch have distinctive theologies. The exiles' prayer (1:15–3:8) admits that the Exile was the Lord's just punishment of the people on account of their sin, but appeals nonetheless to the Lord's goodness and mercy as well as to his own glorification in restoring Israel. The wisdom poem (3:9–4:4) alludes to Israel's situation in exile, but offers no sustained reflection on it. The

wisdom poem's focus is the elusive quest for wisdom and the real opportunity for Israel to discover wisdom in God's gift of Mosaic law. The poem of consolation (4:5–5:9) returns to the subject of exile, but is primarily concerned with offering encouragement about the return from exile under the guidance of the "everlasting one." It presents the Exile as God's just punishment of Israel for its sins.

The joining of these three pieces into a whole provided a reflection on aspects of Israel's exile in Babylon and its restoration to the land. The central position given to the wisdom poem (3:9–4:4) makes the law into the pivot for moving from the sadness and despair of exile (1:15–3:8) to the confident hope in restoration (4:5–5:9). If the redaction (i.e., editing) took place during the Maccabean period, the book of Baruch may have been part of the movement of religious restoration that accompanied the Maccabean triumph over Antiochus IV Epiphanes. Since the first part (1:15–3:8) drew extensively on Daniel 9, the final redaction probably occurred at some chronological distance from the events of the Maccabean crisis.

The Hebrew book of Baruch was not included among the canonical books in the Hebrew Bible. Its Greek version appears in many manuscripts of the LXX. The Council of Trent in a decree issued on April 8, 1546, listed Baruch among the canonical books of the OT as part of or closely associated with the book of Jeremiah.

COMMENTARY

1:1–14
Narrative Framework

After a prescript (1:1–2), the book sets a "historical scene" (1:3–9) and gives an instruction from the Jewish Babylonian exiles to those Jews who remain in Jerusalem (1:10–14). The prescript provides a more extended genealogy for Baruch than appears in Jer. 32:12. There is no other evidence that Baruch was in Babylon. According to Jer. 43:5–7, he accompanied Jeremiah into Egypt. The date formula "in the fifth year, on the seventh of the month" is peculiar for its omission of the name of the month. Since both Jerusalem and its Temple seem to be intact (see 1:7–14), the date formula may refer to Nebuchadnezzar's first capture of Jerusalem and deportation in 597 B.C. (see 2 Kings 24:10–17).

The historical framework (1:3–9) paints a picture of Baruch reading what follows (1:15–5:9) to the Jewish exiles under the leadership of King Jeconiah (Jehoiachin). The biblical inspiration for the scene may have been Hananiah's prophecy in Jer. 28:1–4 and Jeremiah's letter to the exiles in Babylon in Jer. 29:1–32. The Jewish community assembled in Babylon by the otherwise unknown river Sud, as they did under Ezekiel's leadership by the river Chebar (see Ezek. 1:1). Their observance of the anniversary of the capture of Jerusalem by mourning, fasting, and praying (1:5) fits in with Jewish custom of the Second Temple period (see Zech. 7:1–7; Neh. 9:1; Ezra 8:21; Dan. 9:3). Their collection for the Jerusalem community (1:6–7) expresses a solidarity between the Babylonian exiles and Jerusalem. The high priest in Jerusalem is the otherwise unknown Jehoiakim (see 1 Chron. 6:13–15). In his first attack on Jerusalem (597 B.C.), Nebuchadnezzar had carried off vessels from the Temple (see 2 Kings 24:13). Likewise, in the second Babylonian attack (587), sacred vessels were taken and brought to Babylon (see 2 Kings 25:13–17). The reference in 1:8–9 is to a substitute set of vessels allegedly made under Zedekiah after the exile of Jehoiachin. Although there is no mention of a substitute set in 2 Kings 24:18–25:7, its existence is a logical necessity if the Temple service was to continue. According to Ezra 1:7–11, the Temple vessels were returned to Jerusalem only under the Persian king Cyrus in 538 B.C.

In the instruction that accompanies the collection (1:10–14), the people first urge that the money be spent on material for sacrifices at the Jerusalem Temple (1:10). The assumption is that the Temple worship at Jerusalem continued through the Exile (see Jer. 41:5). The Jerusalem community is asked to pray for the Babylonian king and for the exiles (1:11–13). As in Dan. 5:1, Belshazzar, the son of Nabonidus, is wrongly identified as the son of Nebuchadnezzar. This positive attitude toward the Babylonian kings reflects Jeremiah's own stance (see Jer. 29:7). For the idea of the postexilic community praying for the Persian king and his sons, see Ezra 6:10. The Jerusalem community is also to pray on behalf of the Babylonian exiles (1:13). Their present suffering is interpreted as just punishment for their sins. What follows is to be read as a confession (see Lev. 5:5; 16:21; Num. 5:7) on "the day of the feast and in the days of the solemn assembly." Perhaps there is reference to the Day of Atonement or to the anniversary of Jerusalem's fall.

1:15–3:8
The Exiles' Prayer

Only in 2:11 is God addressed directly in prayer. Before 2:11 the text is a confession of Israel's sinfulness and an admission that the Exile is a just punishment (1:15–2:10). The prayer proper (2:11–35) is followed by a concluding summary (3:1–8). The prayer starts out as a close rewriting of Daniel's confession in Dan. 9:4–19 with the help of other biblical phrases (esp. from Jeremiah). But by 2:19 the Danielic confession is left behind, because the material has been used up.

1:15–2:10, Preliminary Confession. The obvious biblical model is Dan. 9:7–8, 10–14. Nearly every word

from that passage is reproduced here. Phrases from other biblical books fill out and expand the Danielic confession. The one "original" move is the identification of Israel's great sin in Bar. 2:3 as cannibalism. The beginning of the confession of sins (1:15–18) uses the vocabulary of Dan. 9:7–8, 10 (see Neh. 9:26, 32–33). The people are to proclaim that in their experience God has been shown just because their punishments resulted from their own sins. All the people of Judah and Jerusalem, especially their leaders, are accused of failing to obey God's commands.

The admission of communal guilt in Dan. 9:11 is expanded in Bar. 1:19–22 by phrases from Deuteronomy (9:7; 29:19) and Jeremiah (7:24–25; 11:4–5; 26:5; 32:30). A pattern of disobedience set in the Exodus has continued until the Exile. The curse (see Dan. 9:11) is the just outcome of this disobedience. Instead of heeding Moses and the prophets, the people served other gods and did evil. Bar. 2:1–2 is almost a verbatim quotation of Dan. 9:12–13. The mention of the incomparable evil done in Jerusalem (see Dan. 9:12) and the allusion to something written in the law of Moses (see Dan. 9:13) leads the author to identify this evil as cannibalism (Bar. 2:3; Lev. 26:29; Deut. 28:53; Jer. 19:9; Lam. 2:20; 4:10). This terrible crime is presented as the reason why Israel has been subjected to other nations and scattered in exile (2:4). Israel's low state (see Deut. 28:13) is attributed to its sin in refusing to hear the Lord's voice (2:5), once more in terms taken from Dan. 9:8, 11, 16.

The final part of the preliminary confession of guilt (2:6–10) begins as the first part did, by using the contrast between God's righteousness and Israel's shame from Dan. 9:7. Almost every other phrase is taken over directly from Dan. 9:12–14, with additional material from Jer. 7:24 in Bar. 2:8 and Dan. 9:10 in Bar. 2:10. The text confirms the righteousness of God in all the calamities that have befallen Israel and blames them all on Israel's failure to repent and its refusal to hear God's voice and to walk according to the divine commands.

2:11–35, The Prayer Proper. The first part of the prayer proper (2:11–18) appeals to God's activity in the Exodus and admits the people's sin. It urges God to look with favor on Israel for two reasons: that all the earth might know that Israel is called by the Lord's name (2:15) and that Israel may give glory to God and ascribe justice to him (2:18). These themes reappear in the concluding summary (3:6–7). Whereas up to this point God had been talked about in the third person, now with 2:11 God is addressed in the second person. The same shift occurs in Dan. 9:15. Bar. 2:11–12a follows Dan 9:15 closely, with some influence from Jer. 32:21. Although Bar. 2:12b–13a corresponds to Dan. 9:16, the reason God should turn away his wrath ("because we are left as few among the nations") has been imported from Jer. 42:2. The idea of Jerusalem and its people having become a byword among its neighbors (Dan. 9:16b) was used in Bar. 2:4. Bar. 2:14–15 begins and ends with phrases adapted from Dan. 9:17 and 9:19. The idea of God giving favor before captors appears in Gen. 39:21, and the challenge that God should save Israel so that all the earth might recognize God as Lord occurs in 2 Kings 19:19. After Bar. 2:16 combines Deut. 26:15 and Dan. 9:18, Bar. 2:17–18 contrasts the dead in Sheol who cannot honor God and testify to his justice (see Pss. 6:5; 88:11–12; Isa. 38:18) with even the weakest and frailest living person who can do so. There is probably a personification of Israel in defeat and in exile in 2:18.

The second part of the prayer proper (2:19–26) gives God's mercy as the only reason for approaching God (2:19). In failing to heed Jeremiah's call to serve the king of Babylon, Israel has brought upon itself the severe punishments that it has endured. After alluding to Dan. 9:18b in specifying God's mercy as the basis of the prayer, Bar. 2:19–20 refers back to Dan. 9:6 ("your servants the prophets") as the vehicles by which God makes known his will. God's will for Israel is expressed in Bar. 2:21–23 by a pastiche of quotations from Jer. 27:9, 12–13; 7:34; 48:9. The result of Israel's refusal to serve the king of Babylon has been the desecration of the graves of Israel's ancestors (see Jer. 8:1), the exposure of their bones to heat by day and to cold by night (see Jer. 36:30), the death of the people from various causes (see Jer. 16:4; 32:36), and the desolation of the Jerusalem Temple. These punishments were the consequence of Israel's evil deeds (see Jer. 11:17). According to Bar. 2:27–35, even these punishments were part of God's goodness and mercy toward Israel. Israel should have known this from the Torah (see Deut. 31:24–25; Josh. 8:32). The alleged quotation from the Torah in Bar. 2:29–35 uses phrases from Deuteronomy (esp. 30:1–10) and Jeremiah. It attributes Israel's exile to its stubborn failure to hear God's voice (2:29–30a) and foresees Israel's repentance in the land of exile and its return to God (2:30b–33). It looks forward to resettlement in the ancestral land and great growth for the people (2:34). It concludes with God's promise of an eternal covenant with Israel according to the terms of Jer. 31:31–34 and an eternal homeland as a reversal of 1 Kings 14:15 (2:35).

3:1–8, Conclusion. The prayer ends by appealing to almighty God to hear Israel's prayer and to have mercy by remembering that hearing Israel's prayer is in God's interest. Some themes from the prayer reappear, giving the impression that 3:1–8 was intended as a summary and conclusion. The initial appeal to God in 3:1–3 contrasts God and Israel: God is almighty and lives forever, whereas Israel is mortal and lives in anguish. Again Israel admits its sin and appeals to God's mercy. The description of the exiles as "dead" in 3:4 may reflect a Greek mistranslation of the Hebrew or the idea of the exiles as spiritually dead (see Ezek. 37:1–14). "Remember," the key word of the prayer, occurs in 3:5. As

in 2:11–18, God is urged to remember Israel for the sake of his own name and so that he may be glorified (3:7). The prayer ends with the plea that God take notice of Israel's plight in exile in language that alludes back to 2:4, 13, 26.

3:9–4:4
The Wisdom Poem

The setting in exile is established both in the beginning (3:10–11) and at the end (4:2–3). Almost every phrase in the poem is found elsewhere in the Hebrew Bible, though this poem does not follow one text as closely as the preceding prayer followed Daniel 9. Its major themes—the elusive character of wisdom and the identification of wisdom and the law—appear most clearly in Job 28 and Sirach 24, respectively. The wisdom poem exhibits a chiastic structure *(A B C B′ A′)* in five parts: the first (3:9–14) and fifth (4:1–4) stanzas identify wisdom and the law; the second (3:15–23) and fourth (3:29–38) stanzas reflect on the quest for wisdom; and the middle stanza (3:24–28) joins the two themes in an indirect way.

The poem begins in 3:9 by paralleling (and thus equating) the commandments of life (see Deut. 30:15–20) and wisdom. It proceeds in 3:10–11 to describe Israel's exile in Babylon not only as life in a foreign land, but even as existence among the dead in Sheol. Israel's exile is explained in 3:12 as due to its abandoning the fountain of wisdom (see Prov. 18:4), which here must refer to God's law, as the parallel phrase "the way of God" in 3:13 makes clear. If Israel had kept the law, it would have dwelt in everlasting peace. The stanza ends in 3:14 with the imperative "learn" plus five "where" clauses. Wisdom, strength, knowledge, long life, and enlightenment and peace are to be found in the law. The consequence of ignoring the fountain of wisdom has been exile and life among the dead.

Wisdom's elusive character is brought out in the second stanza (3:15–23). The treatment of this theme is reminiscent of Job 28, which contrasts the human search for and discovery of precious metals and stones and the unsuccessful human quest for wisdom. A second piece of background is supplied by the motif of personified wisdom's search for her rightful place (see Sir. 24; *1 Enoch* 42:1–3; Wisd. of Sol. 7; Col. 1:15–20). From what follows in 3:16–23, it is clear that the double question in 3:15 about finding wisdom's place and entering its treasures or storehouses is rhetorical. Those who "play with the birds of the heaven" (3:17) are probably described in terms taken from Job 41:5. The description of those who work in silver in 3:18 may be metaphorical; i.e., it may be a reference to those who scheme and are greedy for money. The judgment passed on the persons mentioned in 3:16–18 is that they have disappeared into Sheol and others have taken their places (3:19). The cycle repeats itself from generation to generation, according to 3:20–21. Failing to perceive wisdom is described there in terms of not finding the "way" of wisdom. The stanza concludes in 3:22–23 by listing peoples who have not understood wisdom's "way." It mentions two places with a reputation for wisdom: Canaan (Phoenicia; see Ezek. 28:4; Zech. 9:2) and Teman (Edom; see Jer. 49:7; Obad. 1:8–9). Then it denies that Hagar's sons (Ishmaelites; see Gen. 16; 21) found wisdom. The "merchants of Merran" may have been from Midian (see Gen. 37:28). "Storytellers" and the seekers of understanding likewise did not find wisdom.

The central stanza (3:24–28) describes the greatness of the universe created by God and denies that God gave wisdom to the "giants" of old. Since both the first and the fifth stanza identify wisdom as Mosaic law, the third stanza is an oblique testimony to Israel's status as the elect people of God. At first glance, the reference to "the house of God" in 3:24a would seem to be the Jerusalem Temple (see Sir. 24:10–12). But because of 3:24b–25, most commentators conclude that the house of God is the entire created universe. The "giants" were born from the rebellious angels who knew the heavenly secrets and shared them with humans (see *1 Enoch* 7). According to 3:27–28, they were not given genuine knowledge by God and so they perished.

The fourth stanza (3:29–38) takes up the theme of the elusiveness of wisdom, which was the theme of the second stanza (3:15–23). After establishing that humans cannot find and possess wisdom (3:29–31), it describes God as the wise governor of the universe (3:32–35) and as the one who gave wisdom to Israel in the form of the law (3:36–38). The section about the failure of humans to find wisdom (3:29–31) is reminiscent not only of Job 28, but also of Deut. 30:12–13, an indirect preparation for the later identification of wisdom and the law. The second section (3:32–35) establishes that God alone knows wisdom (see Job 28:23–27) and describes God's governance of the universe. The reference to "light" in 3:33 may mean lightning. Throughout this section the emphasis is on the obedience of creation in carrying out God's plans. The third section (3:36–38) identifies the God who creates and governs with the God of Israel, who gave wisdom to Israel as his beloved people. In the literature of the early church, the description of wisdom in 3:38 ("Afterward she appeared upon the earth and lived among human beings") was applied to Jesus. Modern scholars have argued that the sentence was a Christian addition. It is best taken, however, as a Jewish reference to Wisdom dwelling among human beings on earth (see Prov. 8; Sir. 24; Wisd. of Sol. 7).

The final stanza (4:1–4) takes up two themes from the first stanza: Israel's situation in exile and the law as wisdom. Identifying wisdom with "the book of the commandments of God" (4:1) recalls Sir. 24:23 ("the book of the covenant of the Most High God"). The

idea that one's response to God's commands leads to either life or death (4:2) echoes the phrase "the commandments of life" (3:19; see Deut. 30:15–20). The command to Jacob to turn and walk toward wisdom brings back the setting in exile and continues the "way" imagery. Bar. 4:3 may indicate that God might offer wisdom (the law) to another nation, or it may simply refer to other nations boasting over Israel's defeat. The poem concludes by declaring Israel happy or blessed (see Matt. 5:3–12; Luke 6:20–23) because through the law it knows what pleases God.

4:5–5:9
The Poem of Consolation

The third major piece concerns the Exile directly. It is a pastiche of biblical phrases taken chiefly from Isaiah 40–66. After an introductory exhortation to the remnant of Israel (4:5–8), the personified Jerusalem addresses the "neighbors of Zion" and the exiles (4:9–29). Then the narrator encourages Jerusalem to look toward the restoration of her children (4:30–5:9). The responsibility for the Exile is placed on God, who used that experience to punish Israel for its sins. Nevertheless, the emphasis in this poem is God's promise to restore the exiles to Jerusalem.

The poem of consolation (4:5–8) begins by calling Israel to "take courage" (see 4:21, 27). In addressing the "memorial of Israel" the author refers to the exiled remnant that keeps alive the memory of Israel. The reason for the Exile is identified as Israel's sins, especially in sacrificing to demons rather than to God (4:7). Nevertheless, exile does not mean the total destruction of God's people (4:6). Israel is accused of forgetting God and of grieving Jerusalem (4:8). The second part of this charge sets the stage for Jerusalem's portrayal as a person addressing first the "neighbors of Zion" in 4:9–16 and then the exiles in 4:17–29.

Those nearby peoples who had seen Zion's capture are personified as "neighbors of Zion." In her address to them (4:9–16), Mother Jerusalem first explains the responsibility and reason for Israel's plight. Despite appearances, God is really the one who brought about the Exile. The favorite epithet for God in this part of the book is the "everlasting one" (see 4:8, 10, 14, 20, 22, 24, 35; 5:2). Jerusalem's role as a mother deprived of her sons is portrayed poignantly in 4:10–13. She is both widowed and made childless. The fault is with Israel for turning aside from God's law. Next (4:14–16) Mother Jerusalem urges the "neighbors of Zion" to remember Israel's captivity when God brought their enemies against them. After a repetition of 4:9b, the Babylonians are described in highly negative terms taken from Deut. 28:49–50. This first address has put in proper theological perspective the major actors in the Exile: God, Israel, and the Babylonians.

The second address (4:17–29) is directed to the Jewish exiles, though the transition is made obliquely by a rhetorical question. It begins and ends with the promise that God, who brought these disasters upon Israel, will rescue it (4:18, 29). In between, the text emphasizes that God brought these calamities on Israel (see 4:25, 27) and that God will deliver Israel (see 4:21–24, 27). God is the "everlasting one" and the "holy one" (4:20, 22), who hears the people's prayers (4:27–28). In a reversal of the language of Isa. 52:1 and 61:3, Mother Jerusalem puts on the "sackcloth of supplication" (see 4:20) to pray on behalf of her children. In 5:1, she will put on forever the beauty of the glory of God. Twice (4:21, 27) she urges her children to "take courage" and pray to God, in full confidence that her captive children will be restored to her (4:23). The "neighbors of Zion," who had seen Israel's captivity, will see its glorious restoration (4:24). The enemies of Israel will be punished (4:25). Israel itself is urged to be patient (4:25) in its exile, though the reason for the Exile is traced to its own resolve to go astray from God (4:28).

Having addressed the people in 4:5–8 and narrated Mother Jerusalem's address in 4:9–29, the poet now speaks directly to Jerusalem in 4:30–5:9. Three imperatives ("Take courage" in 4:30, "Look" in 4:36, and "Arise" in 5:5) divide the text into stanzas. The first stanza (4:30–35) describes the fall of Babylon, the captor of Israel, as part of the consolation of Israel (see Isa. 40:11; 51:3, 12; 61:2–3). A threefold reversal of the beatitude form ("Wretched will those be . . .") in 4:31–32 introduces the theme of reversal in 4:33–34. God is described as the one who "named" Jerusalem; in 5:4 the city is called "peace of righteousness and glory of godliness." According to 4:35, the "everlasting one" will bring fire on Babylon (see Isa. 34:10; Jer. 50:32; 51:30, 58), and it will become an abode for demons (see Isa. 13:21; 34:14).

The second and third stanzas presuppose the picture of Jerusalem watching the return of the exiles (see Isa. 40:9–11). Personified Jerusalem first is told (4:36–5:4) to look at her children returning to her at God's command. For the idea of the exiles coming from "east and west" in 4:37, see Isa. 62:6–9. In 5:1–2, the "sackcloth of supplication" described in 4:20 is put off by Jerusalem and replaced by the cloak of God's righteousness and the headdress of glory (see Isa. 61:10). In doing so, she conforms to Isa. 52:1; 61:3. In 5:3–4, the motifs of God's splendor (4:24) and God's naming Jerusalem (4:30) are brought to fulfillment. Then the personified Jerusalem (5:5–9) is told once more to look for her returning children, as in Isa. 40:9–11. Here, however, the focus is the exiles who come back. The return takes place at the command of God and under God's leadership. The exiles rejoice that God has remembered them (5:5) and are carried in glory (5:6). In fulfillment of Isa. 40:4, their way will be made straight and easy (5:7). According to 5:8, God will even make the woods and trees provide shade. A close parallel (probably dependent on Bar. 5:8) appears

in *Pss. Sol.* 11:6–7. The light of God's glory (see Isa. 60:1–3) will lead Israel back, with personified Mercy and Righteousness beside him (5:9).

Bibliography

Burke, D. G. *The Poetry of Baruch.* Chico, CA: Scholars Press, 1982.

Moore, C. A. "I Baruch." In *Daniel, Esther, and Jeremiah: The Additions.* Anchor Bible, 44. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1977. Pp. 255–316.

Saldarini, A. J. "Baruch." In *The New Interpreter's Bible.* Vol. 6. Nashville, TN: Abingdon Press, forthcoming.

Schürer, E. *The History of the Jewish People in the Age of Jesus Christ.* Vol. 3, pt. 2. New English version. Revised and edited by G. Vermes, F. Miller, and M. Goodman. Edinburgh: Clark, 1987. Pp. 734–43.

Tov, E. *The Book of Baruch. Also Called I Baruch (Greek and Hebrew).* Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1975.

Letter of Jeremiah

DANIEL J. HARRINGTON

INTRODUCTION

The Letter of Jeremiah purports to contain advice from Jeremiah to Jews exiled in Babylon on why they should avoid participating in non-Jewish worship (→ Exile). The structure of the book is set by nine refrains (vv. 16, 23, 29, 40, 44, 52, 56, 65, 69) in which the writer concludes that the pagan idols are not gods at all (→ Idol). After providing a historical setting in the exiled community at Babylon (vv. 1–6), the work gives ten reflections on the foolishness and uselessness of idol worship, concluding all but the last with the refrain. The reflections are repetitive and without any clear logical progression.

The work has been transmitted in Greek and in versions dependent on the Greek text, but there is a scholarly consensus, based on the style of the Greek and some probable mistranslations, that Hebrew was its original language. In the two most important Greek manuscripts of the Septuagint (Vaticanus and Alexandrinus) it appears as a separate book between Lamentations and Ezekiel. The Latin tradition attaches it to the book of Baruch, and so it is often taken as the sixth chapter of Baruch.

The scene for Jeremiah's Letter is the exile of Jews in 597 B.C. under Nebuchadnezzar (see v. 2; → Nebuchadnezzar). The idea of a letter from Jeremiah to the exiled community in Babylon derived from Jeremiah 29, while the content and many of the phrases have been taken over from Jeremiah 10 and other biblical polemics against idol worship (see Pss. 115:4–8; 135:15–18; Isa. 40:18–20; 41:6–7; 46:1–7). Indeed, the work as a whole is a rewritten and expanded version of Jeremiah 10, taking its thrust from the Aramaic slogan in Jer. 10:11: "May the gods who did not make the heavens and the earth perish from the earth and from under the heavens." The statement in v. 3 that the Babylonian exile would last "up to seven generations" (cf. Jer. 29:10, where it is supposed to last only seventy years) is sometimes taken as indicating composition late in the fourth century B.C. Since one generation lasts about forty years (see Judg. 3:11, 30), subtracting 280 years from 597 B.C. would give a date of 317 B.C. The allusion to the work in 2 Macc. 2:1–3 and the discovery of a fragment of the Greek version in a Qumran Cave 7 manuscript dated about 100 B.C. suggest the second century B.C. as the latest possible date of composition. If it was composed in Hebrew, a setting in the land of Israel and a time in which attitudes toward foreign cults were hostile (perhaps during the crisis under Antiochus IV Epiphanes) seem likely. The writer, however, is quite familiar with Babylonian customs and may have written in Babylon at an earlier time.

The Letter of Jeremiah provides a handbook of arguments why Jews should not worship foreign gods. The idols are powerless, helpless, and lifeless, without sense perception or consciousness. They are human fabrications and cannot do what the God of Israel does. They serve no purpose. Their manufacturers, priests, and devotees are shameful, deceitful, and foolish.

The Letter of Jeremiah is not considered canonical by Jews or Protestants. Catholics take it as chap. 6 of Baruch, but do not use it in the current lectionary.

COMMENTARY

1–7, Historical Setting. The warnings against idolatry in Babylon are placed in the context of Jeremiah's letter to the exiles there (see Jer. 29). Since Nebuchadnezzar was not really responsible for the exile of 587 (see 2 Kings 25:11), this exile must have occurred in 597 (see 2 Kings 24:14–16). The warnings are addressed to Jews in Babylon who might be attracted to participation in foreign worship. The promise of return to Israel after "seven generations" (v. 3) can be taken as an indication of the date of the book's composition (shortly after Alexander's conquest). Or perhaps it was only a way of dealing with Jer. 29:10 ("When seventy years are completed for Babylon, I will visit you and fulfill for you my promise and bring you back to this place"), when in fact the return from exile had not been complete. When tempted to join in Babylonian worship, the exiles are urged to confess in their hearts the God of Israel, who will protect them with his angel (see Exod. 23:23; 32:34).

8–16, First Warning. Even though the idols are dressed and decorated in great splendor, they remain powerless. Made with great skill, they nevertheless cannot speak (v. 8). The gold and silver used in their crowns is taken by the priests for their own purposes

and shared with the temple prostitutes (vv. 9–11a). Their beautiful garments corrode, and their faces gather dust (vv. 11b–13). Even their weapons and symbols of power are useless (vv. 14–15). The conclusion is that, since the idols are not gods, the exiles should not worship them (v. 16).

17–23, Second Warning. The idols lack sense perception and consciousness. After comparing the idols to a broken dish in their uselessness (vv. 17a–18a), the Letter presents a series of pictures intended to show that they are not conscious of anyone or anything outside themselves. The feet of the worshipers raise dust up into their eyes (v. 18b). The idols are locked in like prisoners (v. 18c) and cannot even see the lamps lit for them (v. 19). They are blocks of wood, and their garments are eaten by worms (v. 20). Smoke blackens their faces (v. 21), and birds and animals alight on them (v. 22). Their total lack of sensitivity proves that they are not gods and therefore deserve no worship (v. 23).

24–29, Third Warning. The idols are lifeless, helpless, and senseless. Not only would the idols' gold tarnish unless polished by a human being, but also in the process of manufacture and purchase (vv. 24–25) the idols are totally unconscious. They have to be carried, need to be set upright, and cannot right themselves (vv. 26–27). The sacrifices offered to the idols are used selfishly by the priests and their wives and are even touched by menstruating women (vv. 28–29; see Lev. 12:1–8). The lifelessness, helplessness, and senselessness of the idols proves that they are not gods and do not deserve worship (v. 29b).

30–40a, Fourth Warning. The idols do not act like God. The first part of this warning (vv. 30–33) pictures women serving meals to the idols and priests either behaving in grotesque ways or stealing clothes from the idols. The second part (vv. 34–38) focuses on their inability to achieve anything. The idols cannot pay back good or evil, set up or depose kings, give money or wealth, demand the fulfillment of vows, rescue people, and so forth. These things, of course, are assumed to be done by Israel's God. The idols are no better than rocks, and so there is no reason to worship them (vv. 39–40a).

40b–44, Fifth Warning. The practices connected with idol worship are foolish. The first example (vv. 40b–41) is bringing a man who cannot speak before the idol in hope of a cure when the idol itself cannot speak. How can this powerless object give power to a human being? The second example (vv. 42–43) involves the Babylonian practice of cultic prostitution described by Herodotus in *Histories* 1.199 as the most disgraceful of the Babylonian customs. A god that would allow such a custom cannot be a real god deserving worship.

45–52, Sixth Warning. The idols are human fabrications, manufactured by mortal craftsmen who engage in a deceit (vv. 45–47). Thus when the priests futilely consult the idols in time of war, all will know that the idols were only products of human ingenuity and are not gods (vv. 48–51).

53–56, Seventh Warning. The idols are powerless. They cannot do what God does—set up kings, give rain, judge, or deliver those in need (vv. 53–54). When fire breaks out in their temple, the priests escape but the idols perish in the flames (v. 55). When a king or an enemy comes, they offer no resistance (v. 56). Since they cannot do what one would expect from God, why should anyone imagine that they are gods?

57–65, Eighth Warning. Since the idols are powerless and a god is supposed to be powerful, they are the most useless things imaginable. Their powerlessness is demonstrated by their inability to protect themselves from robbers (vv. 57–58). Persons, even inanimate objects and the forces of nature, perform their assigned functions (vv. 59–63a), but idols do not perform the function of real gods (vv. 63b–65).

66–69, Ninth Warning. The theme of the uselessness of the idols is continued by showing that they do not act like gods, the sun and moon, or even wild beasts (who at least can flee danger). Since there is no evidence that the idols act like gods, therefore there is no reason to treat them like gods.

70–73, Tenth Warning. The argument is concluded by comparing the useless idols to scarecrows (see Jer. 10:5), a thorn bush, and a dead body. Just as their clothing rots, so will the idols rot. Therefore the just person who has no idols will be far from reproach.

Bibliography

Moore, C. A. "Epistle of Jeremiah." In *Daniel, Esther, and Jeremiah: The Additions.* Anchor Bible, 44. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1977. Pp. 317–58.

Saldarini, A. J. "Letter of Jeremiah." In *The New Interpreter's Bible.* Vol. 6. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, forthcoming.

The Additions to Daniel

MARTI J. STEUSSY

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

The Two Greek Versions of Daniel

Ancient Greek copies of Daniel contain about three chapters' worth of material that does not appear in the Masoretic Text (MT) of the book. The Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Youths are embedded in Daniel 3. Bel and the Dragon, an independent chapter, tells how Daniel discredited two pagan objects of worship and then survived in a lion pit for seven days. In Susanna, two corrupt old men accuse a virtuous wife of adultery, but Daniel shows that they are lying.

This whole collection (the twelve chapters of Daniel MT, plus the Additions) circulated in two different Greek versions. The Old Greek (OG) probably comes from Alexandria (an Egyptian city with a large and influential Jewish population) in the late second century B.C. In Daniel proper it seems to translate a Hebrew/Aramaic text that had not yet reached the form recorded by the MT. The OG incorporates the Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Youths in Daniel 3. In the oldest OG manuscript, Bel and the Dragon and Susanna appear, in that order, at the end of the book.

The third-century Christian scholar Origen records that in his time the OG version of Daniel had been nearly abandoned in favor of "Theodotion's" version (TH). Since some NT passages quote this version, it must go back at least to the first century A.D. It probably originated in northern Syria or Asia Minor. Daniel 1–12 in TH is very similar to that in the MT, except for inclusion of the Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Youths in Daniel 3. Unlike the OG, however, TH begins with Susanna and ends with Bel and the Dragon. Some Roman Catholic translations print Susanna and Bel and the Dragon as Daniel 13 and 14. Protestant Bibles place all three Additions in the Apocrypha.

Azariah's prayer and the youths' song are almost identical in the OG and TH. But TH revises and expands the OG's Susanna into a much longer story. The two versions of Bel and the Dragon are about the same length, but differ in many details—they seem to represent two different tellings of the story, rather than different stages of the same telling. Standard English translations of the Additions are based on TH. Translation of and commentary on the OG can be found in Collins, Davies, Kay, Moore, and Steussy.

The Impact of the Additions on the Book of Daniel

Daniel MT contains two basic types of literature: stories about Jewish life in foreign courts (Dan. 1–6) and apocalyptic literature (Dan. 7–12; → Apocalyptic Literature). The stories portray diaspora life as sometimes dangerous, but ultimately profitable for both Jewish courtiers and their foreign employers (→ Diaspora). The apocalyptic visions, however, announce that the foreign empires are destined for destruction. The Additions tip Daniel's balance of legend and apocalyptic toward legend by quantity and by ending as well as beginning the book with legend.

MT Daniel shows God protecting faithful Jews, but also explores God's relationship to foreign kings. Will they recognize God's sovereignty? Will God let blasphemous pretensions go unpunished? The Additions focus less on foreign kings (although this remains a theme in Bel and the Dragon) and more on Jewish characters. Readers enter the burning fiery furnace with Daniel's friends, rather than waiting outside with Nebuchadnezzar, as in Daniel 3 MT. Bel and the Dragon similarly takes readers into a lion pit with Daniel, rather than leaving them outside, as Daniel 6 does. Habakkuk's visit to the pit links diaspora and homeland Jews. Susanna takes place entirely within the Jewish community.

The Prayer of Azariah and the Song of the Three Youths

INTRODUCTION

Relation of the Additions to Daniel 3

In Daniel 3 MT, Daniel's companions Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego (who are always called by these

names in this chapter) refuse to bow to a huge golden statue set up by a Babylonian king. Therefore they are thrown into a burning fiery furnace, so hot that the men who throw them into it are killed by its flames. But the king sees them walking unharmed through the fire, accompanied by a mysterious fourth figure. The three emerge intact, not even smelling of smoke.

The Greek versions of Daniel 3 insert information about what the youths say inside the furnace. (When incorporated into Daniel 3, this material then appears as Dan. 3:24–90.) The youths are here called Hananiah, Azariah, and Mishael (see Dan. 1:6–7)—one clue that this section was not part of the original chapter.

Except for v. 66, the prayer and song sound remarkably generic. Why would Azariah—who is in the furnace for refusing to worship an idol—say, "by a true judgment you did all these things, because of our sins" (v. 5)? This is not spontaneous personal testimony. Instead, an editor has the youths modeling prayers of the type readers themselves should pray.

Forms, Origins, and Religious Value of the Addition

The material in this Addition seems to have been translated from Hebrew (which continued to serve as a language of prayer even after Aramaic and Greek dominated everyday life), although Daniel 3 MT is in Aramaic. Quite possibly the prayer and song existed as worship material in their own right before being inserted in the chapter.

Azariah's prayer, like Daniel's in Dan. 9:4–19, begins with an acclamation of God's goodness (vv. 3–4). It does not suggest that God has failed to meet covenant obligations (cf. Pss. 44:17–19; 89:39). Instead, it proclaims the complete justice of God's actions against the people. References to "the most wicked" king (v. 9), lack of prophets, and having no place for offerings (v. 15) do not describe the Babylonian exile, when Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and of course Daniel himself were still active and offerings could still be made on the site of Jerusalem's ruined Temple. Instead, they point to the situation under Antiochus Epiphanes (second century B.C.; → Maccabees), which is "foreseen" in Daniel's visions (→ Daniel, The Book of) and which probably occasioned both the prayer in Daniel 9 and Azariah's prayer.

Yet for all its penitential language, the prayer is about God's graciousness rather than the people's sinfulness. It does not appeal to God on the basis of the people's merit, but it can and does appeal to God's promises to the ancestors and to concern for God's reputation among the world's peoples (vv. 11–13). The prayer asks that those who fear God be delivered, and that their oppressors' strength be broken.

The Song of the Three Youths has two parts, referred to in Latin liturgical tradition by their opening words: the "Benedictus Es" ("Blessed are you," vv. 29–34) and the "Benedicite" ("Bless ye," vv. 35–68). The first part blesses God, an action which remains prominent in Jewish prayer today. The second part calls upon all of creation to do likewise. In content it parallels Psalm 148, but like Psalm 136 it adds an unvarying refrain. The generality of the song's parts makes them difficult to date, but has encouraged their appropriation in worship. They form chaps. 8 and 9 of Odes, an appendix to the Greek book of Psalms.

COMMENTARY

1–2
Prologue: The Furnace

Many interpreters object that vv. 26–27, in which the angel drives the flames out of the furnace, should precede vv. 1–22, since Azariah could not say such a long prayer without protection from the furnace's heat! But realism was probably not the ancient editor's main concern. Azariah models prayer *from the midst* of trouble, a point that would be blunted by premature announcement of his deliverance. In the somewhat longer OG version of these verses, all three youths pray.

3–22
The Prayer of Azariah

3–9, Past Sin and Judgment. Biblical writers often meditate upon one period of history by telling stories about a previous period. Writers of the Babylonian exile tell of wilderness wanderings in Moses' time (e.g., Isa. 48:21; 51:10; 52:12). Writers pondering Antiochus Epiphanes' desecration of the Temple often speak of Babylonian exile. The king who appears in Daniel 3 is Nebuchadnezzar, but the description of him as "unrighteous and villainous" evokes Antiochus Epiphanes.

Although most of the prayer stresses that God's punishments are deserved because the people have broken commandments (cf. Dan. 11:14, 32), the first verse mentions the ancestors and God's "name"—motifs that will ground the later appeal for deliverance.

10–17, Present Humbleness. "And now" signals a new section, which deals with the people's present pitiable state. They have been "made small," in contrast to the increase which God promised Abraham, Isaac, and Israel (Jacob).

The prayer assumes that God protects a particular people and in turn receives their praise and offerings. The composer also believes that God rules all the

earth, but God has chosen to demonstrate divine power and love to the world vis-à-vis the one people who will in turn proclaim God's glory to other nations. The chosen people's present shame detracts from God's reputation (vv. 10–11). If they cannot open their mouths, how will God be praised?

Antiochus's "desolating abomination" (cf. Dan. 9:27; 11:31; 12:11) stopped the normal rituals of worship (v. 15). In place of those rituals, our speaker offers a "broken soul and humbled spirit" (vv. 16–17). But like Psalm 51 (which uses very similar language), Azariah's prayer looks forward to eventual reestablishment of animal sacrifices.

18–22, Final Appeal. Another "and now" introduces the climax of the prayer, which appeals to God's gentleness and mercy, and also to God's desire to be known and glorified. Although the community has been acknowledged guilty, it does not deserve its present shame: rather, shame should come upon the evil oppressors. Those who have taken upon themselves to claim to be God ("Epiphanes" in Greek means "[a god] made manifest") need to learn who is really in charge.

23–28
Interlude: The Furnace

This brief narrative partly duplicates Dan. 3:19–23, but shows, even more dramatically than the earlier description, the heat of the furnace and the correspondingly miraculous nature of the youths' survival. Its placement hints that deliverance comes in response to Azariah's prayer.

29–68
The Song of the Three Youths

29–34, Blessed Are You. The Benedictus Es begins with the same words as Azariah's prayer, but continues in a quite different tone. It calls for God to be highly exalted, praised, hymned, and glorified. If v. 31 refers to the earthly Temple, then the song was written in different circumstances than the Prayer of Azariah (see v. 15), but v. 31 might refer to God's heavenly temple. Cherubim are mythological beasts, often portrayed as winged lions or bulls with human faces. They are supposed to have stood at either side of the holy Ark in the Temple's inner room (see 1 Kings 8), but are also associated with storm clouds (Ps. 18:10).

35–51, Let the Heavens Bless. The Benedicite opens with a summary: all God's works should bless God. Verses 36–41 call upon the creatures of the high heavens. The writer imagines a universe like that of Genesis 1, in which a beaten metal dome (the firmament or heavens) prevents primordial chaos waters from crashing down on earth (v. 38). Verses 42–51 address the intermediate zone between heaven and earth, calling upon weather-related elements to bless God.

52–65, Let the Earth Bless. Verse 52 gives another summarizing introduction. Large and awesome earth creatures are addressed first: mountains, seas, and the great dragons, in a sequence still reminiscent of Genesis 1. "Israel" is a subset of humankind; the "priests," "servants," "souls," and "devout" of vv. 62–65 seem to be groups within Israel. Verse 64 probably addresses the souls of the living, rather than the dead.

66–68, Closing Witness. In the one verse composed specifically for this setting, the three youths call themselves to praise and then speak as "we." "Hades" probably refers here to a neutral, lifeless storage place for used souls (→ Sheol) rather than to a place of punishment for the dead. It is a synonym for "death's hand," just as "burning fiery furnace" is a synonym for "inside the fire."

The celebration of God's mercy in vv. 67–68 was probably the climax of the hymn even before v. 66 was inserted, but the call to witness nicely fits the situation of the youths. If the furnace symbolically represents persecution under Antiochus Epiphanes (see the commentary above on Azariah's prayer), then this song exemplifies proper celebration by those who have been delivered from such persecution.

Susanna

INTRODUCTION

Genre and Origins

The issues that have engaged commentators on the story of Susanna have varied considerably over the centuries. Early in the third century A.D., some interpreters of the Greek book of Daniel described Susanna as fiction and denied that it had been an original part of the book. Others, including the translator Origen, defended the narrative's historicity. Around the beginning of the twentieth century, interpreters debated the story's relationship to Jewish legal controversies about the punishment of false witnesses (Ball). More recent commentators have stressed folkloric motifs of the wise child and the wrongly accused wife.

Susanna, however, is a very particular kind of folklore: biblically based storytelling (→ Haggadah). The setting of Susanna draws heavily upon Jeremiah 29, which urges deported Judean leaders to build houses, plant gardens, and arrange marriages in Babylon (Jer.

29:4–7). Jeremiah 29 mentions Hilkiah and Jeconiah (a name sometimes translated "Joachim"), the same names used for Susanna's father and husband. Jeremiah inveighs against two wicked adulterers, destined to die by fire, as the elders do in OG Susanna.

Verse 5 establishes another set of connections. The quotation "Lawlessness came from Babylon" does not appear in any other known text, but similar statements occur in Jer. 23:14–15, where godlessness goes out from adulterous prophets (although they are Jerusalem's prophets), and Zech. 5:5–11, which in Greek shows a woman named "Lawlessness" going out *to* Babylon. Some manuscripts of Susanna associate the story with a "prophecy of Habakkuk," perhaps alluding to Hab. 1:3–4, which speaks of perverted judgment coming forth.

The links between Susanna and these other biblical passages may seem strained to modern readers. What does a passage about Lawlessness going *to* Babylon have to do with one about lawlessness coming *from* Babylon? But such discrepancies are typical of haggadah. (For instance, in a later haggadah on Jer. 29:23, the wicked prophets proposition the Babylonian king's daughter rather than the wives of their Israelite neighbors.) Discrepancies between Susanna and related passages reflect two points of tension. First, is Babylon a location in which Jewish life can flourish (as in Jeremiah's Letter, Jer. 29:1–14, and Dan. 1–6) or an embodiment of pagan evil? Second, Jeremiah implies that Jewish prophets in Babylon are false—so what about Daniel?

Few clues exist as to the date of composition. The story is late enough that haggadic expansion has begun around the figure of Daniel and the text of Jeremiah, but it cannot be later than the OG text of Daniel. A date in the third or second century B.C. seems likely.

Language

Some have argued, on the basis of Greek-language puns in vv. 54–55 and 58–59, that Susanna must have been composed in Greek. However, other aspects of the Greek style suggest that the story was translated from a Hebrew original. A translator faced with Hebrew puns could easily have created corresponding ones in Greek (as has since been done in English).

Relation Between the Versions

The OG Susanna begins with the quotation concerning lawlessness (v. 5) rather than with an extended introduction of Joachim and his family. Of Joachim, it says only that he is Susanna's husband. The elders do not come to the house on judicial business, as TH says (v. 6), but to spy on Susanna. In the OG, she simply walks about the estate, and there is no mention of bathing. When she refuses their advances (without screaming), the elders slink away. They make their accusations in the city assembly, which does not, as in TH, meet at Joachim's house.

Susanna's prayer in the OG is silent and occurs at the end of v. 35, just after the elders place their hands on her head. The narrator states that God hears, lessening readers' anxiety about the testimony and verdict, but they do not know until vv. 44–45 what God will do.

The OG's Daniel is a young man (not a "boy," as in TH). Assembly members do not invite his wisdom (v. 50, TH). Instead, Daniel takes the initiative and warns them, "Do not focus on the fact that these are elders, saying, 'Surely they would not lie!'" (v. 51a, OG). After the questioning, the assembly exclaims over Daniel's cleverness and throws the elders into a ravine, where an angel hurls fire at them. In lieu of TH vv. 63–64, which report the praise of God by Susanna's relatives and the enhanced reputation of the young Daniel, the OG's narrator exhorts, "Thus, in their sincerity, young men are Jacob's beloved. As for us, we must see that young men become men of worth, for when young men are pious, an insightful and understanding spirit will always be in them." These final words assume the authority of elders, even as they praise the sincerity of the young.

The OG Susanna focuses on the elders and the question of how the community will be led. TH offers more personal background on Joachim and Susanna and is more dramatic, showing Susanna preparing for her bath, then screaming, then standing in shame as the elders make their accusations. By making Daniel a "boy," it also emphasizes the divine character of his inspiration.

Religious Significance

Injustice does not always originate with pagans! Perverse elders within the Jewish community and a naive assembly nearly bring death to Susanna. As a woman—albeit a wealthy one—Susanna is especially vulnerable. God's intervention on her behalf illustrates the general biblical theme of God's care for the powerless.

In TH, which emphasizes the personal aspects of Susanna's piety and a very young Daniel's openness to inspiration, the implication seems to be that God will protect those who live virtuously. The OG, by contrast, emphasizes the community's responsibility for preventing miscarriages of justice. Both versions show God responding to the prayers of a woman, but in both God works that deliverance through male-dominated courts.

COMMENTARY

1–6
Prologue

Like the introduction to a fairy tale, these verses present readers with stock characters: a beautiful, pious woman, and two perverse but powerful old men frequenting her house. One can easily imagine what problem will develop! Daniel is not mentioned: he will function as an agent of God in this story, rather than as a central character in his own right. Although many translations refer to a "garden," the Greek term in v. 4 (also used in Gen. 2) denotes a wooded, parklike estate. Its trees will play a crucial role in the denouement.

7–27
The Crime

7–14, Lustful Plotting. The narrator lingers on the elders' thoughts, showing how they nurture their desire, and how it begins to crowd out all other concerns. The elders' initial shamed silence shows that they know the wrongness of their desire. By isolating them, their silence also temporarily decreases their power. Once they confess their shared lust to one another, the elders find confidence to act upon it.

15–18, Enter Susanna. Modern Western readers sometimes think that Susanna "asks for trouble" by bathing outdoors, but the story seems to assume the propriety of outdoor bathing (cf. 2 Sam. 11). The narrator, having told us that Susanna is pious and well grounded in Torah, emphasizes that she does not know of the elders' presence. Indeed, she takes precautions (ordering that the gates be closed) to ensure privacy. Paintings of this scene typically show Susanna at least partially unclothed, but the narrative suggests that the elders confront her immediately, before she has had a chance to disrobe.

19–27, Confrontation and Discovery. With the elders' approach, closed gates mean entrapment rather than safety. Caught "in a bind," Susanna articulates the story's ethic: better to fall into the hands of the wicked than to sin against God (v. 23; cf. Dan. 3:18). Susanna's scream establishes that she has not cooperated with seduction (Deut. 22:23–24), but her cry may be drowned out by the elders' yells. It is not clear whether the servants believe the elders or are simply distressed by the prospect of public scandal.

28–59
The Punishment

28–35, The Court Gathers. The OG has Susanna accompanied by five hundred servants in addition to her blood relatives—perhaps suggesting that the servants have a better understanding than the assembly does about what has really happened. Her husband, Joachim, is conspicuous by his absence from the list of supportive mourners (in both versions). The OG's elders apparently order that Susanna be stripped (a procedure by which adulteresses were publicly shamed; cf. Ezek. 16:37), rather than merely unveiled (cf. Num. 5:18). If so, they are presuming a verdict that has not yet been given. Their placing of hands on Susanna (v. 34) recalls her words in v. 23.

36–41, False Justice. Since the narrator has told what really happened, readers know the elders' testimony is false. Indeed, Susanna's servants should know that it is false—the elders have reversed the order of the gate shutting and the servants' dismissal (cf. vv. 36, 17–18)—but no one asks the servants. The fictitious young man does all that the elders themselves had longed to do.

42–43, Susanna's Appeal. Susanna reacts to the elders' false account as she did to their original threats: by screaming. She exhorts the God in whom she has trusted (v. 35) to take note of how events are progressing.

44–59, True Justice. In TH, God responds immediately to Susanna's prayer. (The OG leaves readers in suspense for several verses after the prayer, which it locates in v. 35a.) Daniel's outcry emphasizes the guilt that a false verdict places upon the assembly, rather than the injustice being done to Susanna. He does, however, get the assembly's attention. The instantly accommodating response of its elders (presumably distinct from the two accusing elders) in v. 50 seems almost as miraculous as Daniel's own inspired knowledge of the elders' guilt.

Although it is tempting to celebrate Daniel's cleverness in questioning the accusers separately, the story itself attributes his success to divine inspiration. He is, after all, so confident of the truth that he condemns the first accuser (v. 55) before hearing the conflicting testimony of the second. Indeed, he accuses each even before hearing the answer to his question (vv. 52–53, 56–57)! However, their conflicting answers ultimately vindicate his judgments. Verse 53 quotes the Greek text of Exod. 23:7.

Daniel's response to each elder puns on the tree the elder has named, as if Daniel were to respond (in English) to "clove" with "God will cleave you" and to "yew" with "God will hew you" (Ball, p. 341). The Canaan/Judah and Israel/Judah contrast in vv. 56–57 seems to reflect intracommunity polemics about who is really Jewish, with "Judah" as the inner circle, "Israelite" as the next and more suspect layer, and "Canaan" as the outside.

60–64
Epilogue

The assembly, recognizing the true source of Daniel's wisdom and Susanna's deliverance, now begins its own yelling and shouting, "praising God who saves those who trust in him" (cf. Bel and the Dragon 38). At last, the rest of the community joins Susanna and her parents in observing Mosaic law (v. 62; cf. v. 3), and Susanna's husband joins her parents in celebration. The closing note about Daniel's "impressive reputation" serves to connect Susanna with the other Daniel stories (Dan. 1:19; 2:46–49; 3:30; 5:29; 6:28).

Bel and the Dragon

INTRODUCTION

Literary Form

Bel and the Dragon incorporates several substories. In both "Bel" and "The Snake" (a more accurate rendering than the traditional "dragon"), Daniel's human cleverness suffices to show how unworthy of worship those so-called gods are. But in "The Lion Pit Episode" (vv. 41–32), which concludes the story of "The Snake," human cleverness cannot save Daniel. Surely it is the living God who restrains the seven hungry lions, although the narrative does not explicitly say this. In the interpolated episode of "Habakkuk's Airlift" (vv. 33–39), an angel carries the prophet from Judea to Babylon to give Daniel a meal. Here, God's intervention is explicitly stated.

Bel and the Dragon is above all a "court legend," a tale about the conflicts and successes of a courtier serving a foreign king. Such stories reinforced the confidence and ethnic identity of persons serving in the great multiethnic courts of Persia and the Hellenistic kingdoms. Heroes typically survive by superior cleverness or knowledge, as Daniel does in the Bel and the Snake stories. As the genre developed among Jews, special knowledge or special protection provided by God came to play an increasing role in the hero's survival/success, as in the Lion Pit sequence.

Another component of Bel and the Dragon is its mockery of idolatry. This motif also appears in such biblical passages as Ps. 115:4–8; Hab. 2:18–19; Isa. 44:9–20; Wisd. of Sol. 13–15; and the Letter of Jeremiah. However, only Bel and the Dragon offers a *narrative* parody of idolatry.

Origins of the Story

Bel and the Dragon, like Susanna, has the style of a narrative originally written in Hebrew or Aramaic. Although it is set in Babylon in the late 500s B.C., it seems out of touch with events in that period. Bel's temple was indeed famed, but ancient historians agree that it was destroyed by the Persian emperor Xerxes, not Cyrus (or Daniel). There is little evidence that Babylonians or Persians worshiped live snakes. Habakkuk, if he prophesied during the last years of Judah, would probably have been dead by the time of Cyrus.

These considerations, alongside the known flourishing of Daniel and Habakkuk legends in Hellenistic times, make it likely that Bel and the Dragon, like the legends of Daniel 1–6, took shape around the third century B.C. (→ Daniel, The Book of). The Habakkuk episode may have been inserted after the rest of the story was finished. The court legend genre suggests a locale in which Jewish courtiers served a foreign power. The story's mockery of live snake worship and the very strong position of the Jewish courtier in the OG version may point more particularly to Egypt.

Differences in the Versions in Relation to Their Community Settings

A key difference between the OG and TH emerges in the opening verses. The OG begins with reference to the story's Jewish characters, Habakkuk and Daniel. It names Daniel's father, but not the Babylonian king. Daniel speaks more words of dialogue than anyone else in the OG's story and is named thirty-two times compared to TH's twenty-six. The OG refers to God from Daniel's point of view, as "Lord" (used in Jewish fashion as a proper name). Daniel repeatedly takes a commanding role—for instance, Daniel tells the king to inspect the seals on Bel's temple. The king puts Bel's priests and rations at Daniel's disposal at the end of the Bel episode. The OG's Babylonian crowd rallies against *Daniel* at the beginning of the Lion Pit episode.

The OG's Jewish orientation and Daniel's strong position vis-à-vis the king may well reflect the version's Alexandrian context. The city of Alexandria had a large and highly influential Jewish population (→ Alexandria), including a number of priests (a status which the OG assigns to Daniel himself). The city's Serapeion temple was famous for its special effects. Live animals seem to have been worshiped in Alexandria (see, e.g., Wisd. of Sol. 15:18–19; *Let. Arist.* 138). There was friction between the city's Greek kings and Egyptian populace (Bel and the Dragon 28 OG speaks of "the country's people"). Kings sometimes got more support from Jewish leaders than from fellow Greeks, who might well support rival claimants to the throne. Thus the OG shows Daniel aligned with the king over against other courtiers.

Jews occupied a relatively less powerful position in Roman-ruled cities such as Antioch and Ephesus (possible locales for the TH translation). TH's story begins not with Habakkuk and Daniel, but with foreign

kings, of whom two are named. Daniel's lineage is not given. The king speaks more words of dialogue (by a slim margin) than Daniel. Verses 4, 41 refer to God from the king's point of view (as Daniel's god). Foreign priests play a more active role in TH's story, having more words of dialogue than in the OG and a more commanding role in the action (e.g., they give directions for the preparations in vv. 11–12).

Since Jews in Syria and Asia Minor participated less in the high circles of power, it comes as no surprise to find an exaggerated, fairy-tale flavor in TH: Bel gets forty sheep instead of the OG's four; Daniel laughs at the king in v. 7 and restrains him in v. 19; the snake is "big" or "great"; the lions get two sheep in addition to two bodies each day; Habakkuk is returned home and the evildoers get eaten by lions "immediately"; and the king shouts "loudly" when he sees Daniel. TH reflects a more sophisticated theological vocabulary (e.g., the phrases "ruler of all flesh" and "living God" in vv. 5, 25).

Religious Significance

Court legends are generally associated with ethnic rivalries, but Bel and the Dragon directs attention to specifically religious aspects of such conflict. Focus lies less on testing human loyalties (as in Dan. 1, 3, 6) than on testing alleged deities. Who is a living God? The king claims that Bel is living because he eats—but, we discover, Bel does not eat. The snake eats—but the results show that it is no god. Human cleverness discredits these false deities.

In the Lion Pit episode, a truly living God takes action. This God does not receive mixed wine or boiled food (vv. 11, 27), but distributes them to others (vv. 33–34). Daniel lapses into a passive role, leaving the foreign king to make the story's closing theological acclamation (v. 41).

COMMENTARY

1–22
Bel

1–4a, Prologue. Concisely crafted prose introduces the protagonists. "Companion" refers to an official court advisory position, not just a social relationship with the king. "Honored above all his friends" hints at rivalry between courtiers, which will eventually send Daniel to the Lion Pit.

4b–9, A Test Proposed. God's status as "Creator of heaven and earth" is similarly cited as reason for refusing to worship any other god in the Additions to Esther (13:10–12) and may also be implicit in the Song of the Three Youths.

One of the story's strategies for ridiculing idol worship is to show pagans as outrageously gullible (v. 6). In real life, a king would have known quite well where his cult support money was going. The story's king is not only gullible but impulsive, as shown by the life-or-death terms of the contest (vv. 8–9).

10–14, Arrangements Made. Greeks ordinarily mixed their wine with water (v. 11). A peek into the priests' thoughts in v. 13 explains their confidence, helps readers understand the reason for sprinkling ashes around the sanctuary in v. 14, and thus alleviates anxiety about how the test will turn out. The hidden entrance architecturally expresses the falsehood surrounding Bel's cult.

15–22, Results. The narrator's aside in v. 15, revealing the priests' hidden activities, means that readers know more than either Daniel or the king as they arrive at the gate in the morning (although Daniel clearly suspects the outcome). The king's "very early" rising and his shouted acclamation of Bel—after only a cursory peek into the sanctuary—again characterize him as impulsive. This judgment is confirmed by his treatment of the priests and their families. He is right, however, that "there is no trickery" in Bel (v. 18)—the passive idol cannot even perform trickery on its own behalf, but must depend on its priests to do so.

23–27
The Snake

Though the traditional title of this narrative is "The Dragon," this object of worship is clearly an ordinary living animal, a "snake" or "serpent" rather than a "dragon." Some interpreters have drawn a connection between the snake and the great sea goddess Tiamat, whom the Babylonian god Marduk (= Bel) was supposed to have killed by throwing a ball of winds down her throat (→ Tiamat). That the snake "blew up" after eating Daniel's concoction might be an echo of Tiamat. However, a connection is closer to hand in a legend about Alexander the Great killing a snake with a mixture of tar and poison.

28–42
The Lion Pit

28–32, Another Test Proposed. The narrator does not say how the king responds to Daniel's sarcastic remark in v. 27, but the people have had quite enough of Daniel's clever unmaskings. The crudeness of their threat in v. 29 and the king's quick capitulation are caricatures rather than realistic portrayals of court life. In v. 42 readers will discover that the king still wields life-and-death power over these subjects.

Although no one in the story describes Daniel's plight as a test of Daniel's own God, the ordeal paral-

lels the testings of the Babylonian objects of worship, even including (as they did) special food arrangements (v. 32).

33–39, Habakkuk's Airlift. Preserving Daniel from the hungry lions might have been miracle enough, but, instead, God makes a new set of food arrangements, bringing Habakkuk from Judah (characterized here as source of sustenance for the Diaspora) with mixed wine, boiled stew, and bread for Daniel. The only thing Daniel himself does in this episode is to underscore its theological assurance: "You [God] do not forget people who love you."

40–42, Results. The story returns to the king's point of view for the conclusion. Like the stories of Daniel 1–6, Bel and the Dragon climaxes with a foreign king's acclamation of Daniel's God (Dan. 2:47; 3:28; 4:34–37 [31–34]; 6:26–27). The other plot threads are finished off in a single verse: Daniel is pulled out of the pit, and his scheming rivals are thrown into it to their destruction. The lions have apparently gotten very hungry.

Bibliography

Ball, C. J. "The Additions to Daniel." In *Apocrypha of the Speaker's Commentary*. London: John Murray, 1888. Vol. 2, pp. 323–60.

Collins, J. J. *Daniel*. Hermeneia. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1993.

Davies, W. "Bel and the Dragon." In *The Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament*. 2 vols. Edited by R. H. Charles. Oxford: Clarendon, 1913. Vol. 1, pp. 652–64.

Kay, D. M. "Susanna." In *The Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament*. 2 vols. Edited by R. H. Charles. Oxford: Clarendon, 1913. Vol. 1, pp. 638–51.

Moore, C. A. *Daniel, Esther, and Jeremiah: The Additions*. Anchor Bible, 44. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1977.

Spolsky, Ellen, ed. *The Judgment of Susanna: Authority and Witness*. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1996.

Steussy, M. J. *Gardens in Babylon: Narrative and Faith in the Greek Legends of Daniel*. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1993.

Wills, L. M. *The Jew in the Court of a Foreign King: Ancient Jewish Court Legends*. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1990.

Prayer of Manasseh

DANIEL J. HARRINGTON

INTRODUCTION

The Prayer of Manasseh contains an invocation of God (vv. 1–7), a confession of sins (vv. 8–10), and a petition for forgiveness (vv. 11–15). It uses many biblical phrases, apparently according to the Septuagint (LXX; → Septuagint) version, and stands in line with the conventions of postexilic Jewish prayer. Its key descriptions of God as "the God of the righteous" (v. 8) and "the God of those who repent" (v. 13), while not explicitly biblical phrases, serve to capture the basic spirit of the prayer.

The Prayer of Manasseh was most likely composed in Greek. This position is supported by its author's apparent acquaintance with the LXX, the occurrence of some Greek words that are unusual in translations from the Hebrew, and a few strange Greek constructions. Several phrases, however, preserve the flavor of a Semitic composition.

Even though the work was not part of the LXX, it is customarily included in editions of the Greek Bible immediately after the Psalms and under the heading "Odes." Thus it appears in two Greek uncial manuscripts of the LXX (Alexandrinus and Turicensis; → Texts, Versions, Manuscripts, Editions). It is also preserved in the *Apostolic Constitutions* and *Didascalia*, early church manuals from the third and fourth centuries A.D. The most important versions are the Syriac and the Latin.

Manasseh was king of Judah from 698 to 642 B.C. According to 2 Kings 21:1–18, Manasseh was a wicked king, especially because he introduced foreign cults into Jerusalem and Judah, even to the extent of setting up the graven image of Asherah in the Jerusalem Temple (see 2 Kings 21:7). He is also said to have shed much innocent blood (see 21:16). Nevertheless, Manasseh had the long reign of fifty-five years (see 21:1).

A different portrait of Manasseh appears in 2 Chron. 33:1–20. After describing the wicked deeds done by Manasseh (vv. 2–9), the Chronicler states that he was captured by the Assyrians and taken off into exile in Babylon (vv. 10–11). In his distress, Manasseh sought God's favor, humbled himself, and prayed to God. The result was that God heard his prayer and restored him to his kingdom in Jerusalem (vv. 12–13). Then Manasseh embarked on a program of restoring proper worship to Jerusalem (vv. 14–17). The concluding summary of his life (vv. 18–20) claims that "his prayer" is written in both the "Chronicles of the Kings of Israel" and the "Chronicles of Hozai (or, the Seers)."

The Prayer of Manasseh purports to be the prayer uttered by Manasseh according to 2 Chron. 33:12–13 and preserved in two chronicles. Since the earliest evidence for the present text comes from the third century A.D. and the prayer was probably composed in Greek, we are most likely dealing with a pseudepigraphical work produced under Manasseh's name many centuries after his death. Since there are no discernible Christian elements, it was probably composed by a Greek-speaking Jew. It is not impossible, however, that a Christian author putting himself in Manasseh's position could have written this Jewish prayer. The author's use of phrases from the LXX suggests a date for the original composition around the turn of the era, though there is no further precision on this matter.

The major theological themes of the Prayer of Manasseh are the mercy of God and the power of repentance (→ Repentance). The God of Israel's ancestors, who is also the Creator and Sustainer, is addressed as "compassionate, long-suffering, and very merciful" (v. 7). Because he repents over the evils done by human beings (v. 7), he can be said to have established repentance for sinners (v. 8) and can be addressed as the "God of those who repent" (v. 13).

Manasseh presents himself as the worst of sinners. Thus the clear message is that, if God accepts Manasseh's prayer (see 2 Chron. 33:13), repentance is possible for any sinner. God's reception of Manasseh's repentance serves to display publicly the mercy and goodness of God (see vv. 11, 14).

Although considered authoritative by Eastern Orthodox churches, the Prayer of Manasseh is not considered canonical by Jews, Protestants, or Roman Catholics. Since the Council of Trent, the Latin translation of it is placed in an appendix to the Latin Bible. The original author apparently composed it to fill the gap created by the statement in 2 Chron. 33:18–20 that Manasseh's prayer had been preserved in two chronicles. In carrying out this exercise, he produced a prayer treasured by many readers for its theology of repentance.

COMMENTARY

1–7, Invocation. Manasseh begins the prayer by addressing God directly and reflecting on the attributes of God. The customary references to the "Lord Almighty" as Israel's God and the Creator give way to reflection on God's mercy shown in forgiving sinners. The invocation provides the reason why Manasseh may approach God with his confession. The traditional invocation of the "God of our fathers" (see Exod. 3:6, 15; 4:5; 1 Chron. 29:18) is given a twist with the phrase "and of their righteous offspring," suggesting a division within the descendants of the patriarchs between the righteous and the unrighteous (see Tob. 13:9, 13; Rom. 9:6). With his prayer, Manasseh wishes to align himself with the righteous in Israel.

The naming of God in v. 1 is followed in vv. 2–3 by an account of what God has done in creation, described in three participial clauses: "who made . . . who shackled . . . who closed . . . and sealed." The description of God's making heaven and earth (see Gen. 1:1; 2:1) is modified by the phrase "with all their order" (see Gen. 2:1, LXX). Shackling the sea (v. 3) is an act attributed to God also in Job 38:8, 10, 11; Ps. 104:7, 9. The "abyss" is the "deep" of the creation account (see Gen. 1:2; 7:11; 8:2), the subterranean watery region beneath the earth. The agents by which God works ("by your word of command . . . by your fearsome and glorious name") presuppose the ancient Near Eastern idea of the active force of words and names.

Fear and trembling is the response to the Creator on the part of all created things (v. 4). The Semitic idiom "from the face of your power" could be translated either "because of your power" or "before whose power." In vv. 5–6 the theme of awe in response to God is developed by linking divine attributes and somewhat unusual adjectives beginning with the so-called alpha-privative (i.e., the Greek letter *alpha* used as a negative particle): the majesty of God's glory (see Ps. 144:5, 12, LXX) is unendurable; the wrath of his threat toward sinners is irresistible; and the mercy of his promise is infinite and unsearchable. The "mercy of his promise" probably refers to God's promise to forgive sinners when they repent. Thus Manasseh goes beyond the fascinating and fearsome aspect of the divine mystery and arrives at the chief theme of his prayer—God's willingness to forgive repenting sinners.

The invocation concludes in v. 7 with an appeal to God's mercy. After a series of adjectives ("compassionate, long-suffering, and very merciful") based on Joel 2:13 (LXX), Manasseh echoes the final phrase of Joel 2:13 (LXX) when he describes God as "repenting over the evils of human beings." Although in Joel the "evils" refer to the calamities that came upon Israel because of its sins, here the evils are the apostasies committed by King Manasseh (see 2 Kings 21:1–9; 2 Chron. 33:1–9). The prayer assumes that God will pardon even those evil deeds in merciful response to sincere repentance. The second half of v. 7 is absent from the two Greek manuscripts. It was very likely part of the original text and lost accidentally in the textual transmission. The line serves to draw the invocation to a close and to focus on the mercy of God to which the following confession of sin and request for forgiveness of sins are directed.

8–10, Confession. Next, Manasseh accuses himself of his many sins, especially as they related to fostering foreign cults and neglecting the Jerusalem Temple (see 2 Kings 21:1–18; 2 Chron. 33:1–9). The confession proper begins in v. 8 by invoking the Lord as "the God of the righteous," an epithet without biblical foundation, but one that allows Manasseh to approach God in spite of his admitted sinfulness. The God of the righteous established repentance not for the righteous patriarchs who did not sin against him, but precisely for a sinner like Manasseh. The sinfulness of Manasseh is emphasized by his description of himself as "the sinner." Although the Hebrew Bible does not describe the patriarchs in the same terms as Manasseh does, the portrayal of them in Genesis certainly contrasts with what is said of Manasseh in 2 Kings 21:1–9 and 2 Chron. 33:1–9. The contrast between the righteous and the sinners with respect to repentance appears in several Gospel sayings (see Mark 2:17 and parallels; Luke 15:7; 18:13). The sins of Manasseh, which are described in 2 Kings 21:1–18 and 2 Chron. 33:1–9, mainly concerned what was perceived as encouraging foreign cults and idol worship ("according to the abominable practices of the nations," see 2 Chron. 33:2).

Describing his sins as "beyond the number of the sand of the sea" (v. 9), Manasseh hesitates to approach God in prayer. The "height of heaven" refers to God's throne (see Isa. 38:14). The Syriac version adds the following to the verse: "And now Lord, I have been justly put down and deservedly afflicted." This verse allows a smoother transition to v. 10 and is probably original.

The description of Manasseh as weighed down with "many an iron chain" in v. 10 derives from 2 Chron. 33:11 ("bound him with bronze fetters"). The translation of the following phrase is problematic: whereas the NRSV reads "so that I am rejected," most other translations render the phrase as a description of Manasseh's not being able to lift up his head. There is manuscript evidence for an additional phrase ("not doing your will and keeping your commandments") between "in thy sight" and "setting up abominations," but most interpreters dismiss it as a gloss.

11–15, Petition. The petition for forgiveness, for which the invocation and confession have prepared, calls upon "the God of those who repent" to forgive sins. Manasseh promises to spend all his days in praising God. Manasseh's petition for forgiveness begins in v. 11

by appealing to God's goodness. The image of bending "the knee of my heart" indicates that his prayer comes from deep within him and is made with full consciousness (see Joel 2:13: "rend your hearts and not your garments"). The petition is based on Manasseh's dramatic admission of his sinfulness in v. 12: "I have sinned, Lord, I have sinned, and I myself recognize my iniquities." This emphatic statement summarizes what has been said previously about Manasseh's sins and prepares for the prayer that follows.

The repetitive "forgive me, Lord, forgive me" in v. 13 balances "I have sinned, Lord, I have sinned" in the preceding verse. Manasseh trusts that God will not destroy him along with his iniquities, store up memory of his evils forever, or condemn him to Sheol (see Ps. 63:9). The "lowest parts of the earth" are not so much a region of torment as they are a place of separation from God (see Ps. 88:5–6). His prayer appeals to the Lord as "the God of those who repent." Like the epithet "the God of the righteous" in v. 8, it is not a biblical expression, but it does capture the spirit of Manasseh's prayer as a whole.

According to v. 14, God's answering Manasseh's prayer will be a display of the divine goodness and mercy, because all recognize Manasseh's unworthiness. The salvation envisioned by Manasseh involves release from captivity and restoration in Jerusalem (see 2 Chron. 33:12–13). Manasseh's resolve to praise God always in v. 15 probably alludes to his zeal in driving out foreign cults and restoring the worship of Yahweh after his return to Jerusalem (see 2 Chron. 33:15–17). He envisions a oneness between the worship on earth and the worship offered to God by the entire host of the heavens. The prayer ends with a doxology (see 1 Chron. 29:11) and an "Amen" (see 1 Chron. 16:36; Tob. 8:8; 1 Cor. 14:16).

Bibliography

Charlesworth, J. H. "Prayer of Manasseh." In *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha.* 2 vols. Edited by J. H. Charlesworth. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1983, 1985. Vol. 2, pp. 625–37.

Ryle, H. E. "Prayer of Manasses." In *The Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament.* 2 vols. Edited by R. H. Charles. Oxford: Clarendon, 1913. Vol. 1, pp. 612–24.

1 Maccabees

LAWRENCE H. SCHIFFMAN

INTRODUCTION

Title and Original Language

It is generally agreed that 1 Maccabees was originally written in Hebrew. Even though no manuscripts or fragments still exist in Hebrew, the Greek text has the unmistakable style of a rather literal translation from the Hebrew. The church father Origen (third century A.D.) claimed that the Hebrew title of 1 Maccabees was *Sarbethsabaniel.* This puzzling title is difficult to interpret, but may be a somewhat corrupt, or poorly preserved, rendering of Hebrew *sar bet 'el* ("Prince of the House of God") or of *sfar bet sabanai 'el* ("Book of the House of the Resisters of God"). Most Greek manuscripts simply term the books of 1 and 2 Maccabees *Makkabaion A* and *Makkabaion B.* By the second century A.D. *Ta Makkabaika* ("The Things Maccabean" or "Maccabean Histories") was the designation for both 1 and 2 Maccabees. The early church father Clement of Alexandria (second century A.D.) termed 1 Maccabees *to Biblion ton Makkabaikon* ("The Book of Things Maccabean") and 2 Maccabees *he ton Makkabaikon epitome* ("The Epitome of Things Maccabean"). Although "Maccabee" (Aramaic meaning "hammer") was originally the nickname of the hero Judah, the use of the title "Maccabean Histories" led to the custom of referring to all the heroes of the book as "Maccabees" (→ Maccabees).

Circulation

1 Maccabees was not only composed in Hebrew, but also written in a style imitating biblical historiography. Translated into Greek, 1 Maccabees was known to the first-century A.D. Jewish historian Josephus, who used it as the basis of his account in the *Antiquities of the Jews.* It is possible that the last two chapters of 1 Maccabees were not available to Josephus, since he seems to lack adequate sources for the reign of Simon (→ Josephus). The Greek translation was included in the Hellenistic canon of the Greek-speaking Jews and, therefore, eventually in the canon of the Christian church (→ Canon). In this manner it was preserved. Knowledge of this book was widespread among the church fathers. Yet the contents of 1 Maccabees began to circulate among Jews only in the Middle Ages, indirectly through the Latin translation. Like 2 Maccabees, 1 Maccabees must be sharply distinguished from the medieval Jewish composition *Megillat Antiochus* ("Scroll of Antiochus") or *Megillat Hashmona'im* ("Scroll of the Hasmoneans"), first mentioned by the Jewish scholar Saadia Gaon (882–942).

Manuscript evidence for 1 Maccabees is also widespread, although the book is absent from the Codex Vaticanus. The most important manuscript witnesses are Codex Sinaiticus (fourth century A.D.), Alexandrinus (fifth century A.D.), and Venetus (eighth century A.D.; → Texts, Versions, Manuscripts, Editions).

Contents

1 Maccabees presents an account of the history of Judea from 175 to 134 B.C. It describes the background of the Maccabean revolt, the revolt itself, the exploits of Judah the Maccabee (in Gk., Judas Maccabeus), and the efforts of his brothers Jonathan and Simon to permanently reestablish Jewish nationalism and religious practice.

The author is clearly a believing Jew who emphasizes the piety of Judah's family, the Hasmoneans, and their trust in God. At the same time, he gives full credit for their success to their own sagacity and tenaciousness. The author seeks to highlight the excellence of the Hasmonean dynasty and in this respect may be seen as an official historian of the dynasty. He sees the Maccabees as emulating various biblical figures and presents a defense for the charismatic leadership the Hasmoneans provided. Judah's piety is especially emphasized in the prayers and speeches attributed to him. The author sees this family as specially selected by God to bring about the deliverance of Israel from the empire of the Seleucid kings.

Over and over the author emphasizes the antinomian character of the Jewish opponents of the Maccabees—they are "lawless men." All opponents of the Hasmoneans are seen as motivated only by the basest of motives and allied against the way of God's Torah.

Sources

Numerous documents are included in this work to prove the legitimacy of Hasmonean rule within the

context of the Seleucid empire and contemporary international law. The author also has included various poetic extracts that must come from poems circulating in that period. Beyond this, the various theories regarding the sources of 1 Maccabees are speculative. (For additional discussion, *see* 2 Maccabees, Introduction.)

The author of 1 Maccabees was certainly influenced by the style of the biblical historiographical books, especially 1 and 2 Samuel. Judah's accomplishments are often described in ways evocative of the triumphs of Saul, Jonathan, and David. Like the historiographical books of the Bible, 1 Maccabees has a prominent chronological framework, though the dates are given in accord with the Seleucid era, which began with the capture of Babylon in 312 B.C. by the former general of Alexander the Great, Seleucus I. As a source for reconstructing the events of the period, historians have generally held 1 Maccabees in high regard, considering it to be earlier and more trustworthy than 2 Maccabees (→ Seleucids, The). In certain respects, however, the evidence and approach of 2 Maccabees must be preferred. Specific instances will be discussed throughout the commentary. The author of 1 Maccabees appears to be quite familiar with the practices of the Seleucid empire. On the other hand, he seems to exaggerate numbers greatly and takes the opportunity, like all historians of his period, to place speeches of his own composition in the mouths of his heroes.

Date

Virtually all scholars take the view that the book had to have been written before the Roman conquest of Judea in 63 B.C., since the Romans are presented in 1 Maccabees as friends and allies of the Hasmoneans (→ Rome). The author's knowledge of the period of John Hyrcanus requires that he wrote not much before John's death in 104 B.C. The most probable date for the composition of 1 Maccabees, therefore, is the first decades of the first century B.C. Goldstein (pp. 62–64) dates the composition to the reign of Alexander Janneus (103–76 B.C.), but not later than 90 B.C.

Historical Background

Ptolemies and Seleucids

In the summer of 332 B.C., Palestine was conquered by Alexander the Great (356–323 B.C.). The land and people of Israel were now part of the new Hellenistic world, the cultural fusion of Greek and Near Eastern traditions that developed in the lands conquered by Alexander and held by his successors. After Alexander's death in 323 B.C., his generals, known as the *diadochi* (Gk., "successors"), were unable to maintain the unity of the kingdom. Individual generals were appointed to rule as satraps over particular areas on the old Persian pattern, but eventually came to rule in their own right. In 305 B.C. Ptolemy was crowned king of Egypt, and by 312 B.C. Seleucus had established on sound footing his empire, which included Syria and the entire eastern part of the empire of Alexander (→ Ptolemy).

By 301, Ptolemy had finally established his hold on Palestine, although Seleucus claimed legal title to the area. Consequently, during the third century B.C. Ptolemaic and Seleucid armies fought five times over Palestine. Despite heavy damage, the Ptolemies were able to maintain control over this territory, establishing Greek cities and developing the economy.

There is virtually no information from this century regarding Jewish political affairs. We do know that the high priest Onias II had a disagreement regarding taxation with Ptolemy III Euergetes (246–221 B.C.), who was reputed to have visited the Jerusalem Temple. The result of the dispute was the imposition in 242 B.C. of the young Joseph son of Tobiah, a nephew of the high priest, as a tax collector for the entire nation. The rivalry between the Tobiad family and the Oniad high priests would eventually play a part in the attempts at radical hellenization of Judea later, in the second century B.C.

In 221 B.C. and again in 201 the Seleucid king Antiochus III invaded Palestine. Successful in his second attempt, from 198 B.C. the Seleucids controlled Palestine until the Maccabean revolt. By the time Ptolemaic rule came to an end in Palestine, Hellenistic cities had been firmly established throughout the country. The process of hellenization had sunk strong foundations that would ultimately tear the nation apart but also play a role in its renewed independence.

Hellenistic Reform and the Maccabean Revolt

Throughout the years of warfare between the Seleucids and Ptolemies, each empire had its supporters among the aristocracy of Jerusalem. When Seleucid rule finally became stabilized, the pro-Ptolemaic party was left disenfranchised. After his conquest, Antiochus III affirmed the right of the Jews to live according to their ancestral laws. The *gerousia* (Gk.), i.e., the council of elders, and the high priest Simon II emerged as supporters of the Seleucids. But his son and successor, Onias III, changed the direction of his foreign policy and became at least a covert supporter of the Ptolemies. This, in turn, led the pro-Seleucid party to denounce him to the current Seleucid ruler, Seleucus IV. In an effort to shore up his rule, Onias went to Antioch in 175 to meet with the king.

Seleucus IV died in 175 B.C. and was succeeded by the infamous Antiochus IV Epiphanes (reigned 175–164 B.C.). Onias did not convince him of his loyalty and was forced to remain in Antioch. Onias's brother Jason then bought the right to the high-priesthood from

Antiochus, as well as the right to establish in Jerusalem a gymnasium and ephebium, the central educational and cultural institutions of a Greek city. Jason thus refounded Jerusalem as a Hellenistic city, a *polis*. The right to live according to the Torah granted to the Judeans by Antiochus III was now rescinded. In its place, the Jews were to live under the law of the newly constituted Greek city. Among other changes, this meant that the majority of those who previously had had full rights under the laws of the Torah now found themselves as second-class citizens in an oligarchy. Athletic activities characteristic of Greek culture became prominent, and the *gerousia* was probably purged of those members who did not support this reform.

Jason's brand of hellenization was apparently not radical enough for some. As a member of a family that had been pro-Ptolemaic, he soon found himself opposed by the pro-Seleucid Tobiad family and by the three brothers Simon, Menelaus, and Lysimachus. The Tobiads plotted to replace Jason with Menelaus as high priest. In 172 B.C. Menelaus bought the office from Antiochus. After an armed battle, Jason was forced to flee Jerusalem. Menelaus, now in control, appropriated funds from the Temple treasury to present gifts to Antiochus.

This misappropriation and his not being of the Oniad family turned the people bitterly against Menelaus. Violence broke out in Jerusalem, and Lysimachus, who had been left in control while Menelaus was in Antioch, fell in battle. Despite an appeal from representatives of the *gerousia* to replace Menelaus, Antiochus allowed him to continue in office, and the representatives were executed. It was not long before popular discontent would become full-scale revolt under new leaders.

During 169 B.C., when Antiochus made an ultimately unsuccessful attempt to conquer Egypt, a false rumor of his death led Jason to leave his hiding place in Transjordan and assault the city. He succeeded in driving Menelaus and his supporters into the citadel. Yet Jason was not able to reassert his rule. Apparently, popular forces rose against him, remembering that he had started the Hellenistic reform, and forced him to flee the holy city again. Despite a slaughter by Antiochus himself, insurrection continued in Jerusalem. Antiochus's general Apollonius tried to control matters by establishing a fortress, known as the Akra, at the center of the city, but this attempt led only to further popular opposition and to massive flight of Jews from the city, some having been dispossessed to make room for the garrison he stationed there.

It is possible that at this time foreign deities were introduced into the Temple, creating further friction. The earliest attempts at organized rebellion were probably led by the Hasidim, a group of pietists who abhorred the religious compromises in Hellenistic Jerusalem. To stem the rising rebellion, Antiochus initiated the famous persecutions, which, far from being the beginning of the story, came after years of struggle and insurrection, fueled by the attempt of Hellenistic Jews to foist their way of life on the entire nation of Israel. There is no evidence at all that Antiochus pursued a policy of hellenization anywhere else in his kingdom. Rather, he took up this banner in Judea for tactical reasons. For Antiochus, the way to defeat the rebels was by an onslaught against the forces that propelled them—the Torah, the commandments, and the culture of the Jewish people.

The persecutions were enacted in the winter of 167–166 B.C. Foreign idolatrous worship and cultic prostitution were introduced into the Temple in December of 167 B.C. The God of Israel was syncretistically identified with Olympian Zeus and the Syrian god Baal-shamem. Throughout Palestine, the Sabbath and festivals were to be violated. High places were built where unclean animals were to be offered. Circumcision and observance of dietary laws were outlawed. The penalty for violations of these ordinances was death. The stage was now set for the confrontation of two opposing forces, the Jewish people and the Seleucids. The appearance of the Hasmonean (Maccabean) family would ignite the flames of full-scale revolt.

We cannot be sure if the accounts describing the beginning of the revolt are historical. Nonetheless, the refusal of Mattathias, the priest of Modein, and of men and women like him to succumb to the persecutions soon led many to escape to the mountains. Several thousand soon coalesced around the Hasmonean family, Judah the Maccabee and his brothers. Together with elements of the Hasidim they began to take control of villages throughout the countryside. According to 1 Maccabees, by the time of Mattathias's death in 166/165 B.C., they had already achieved considerable success.

Under Judah the Maccabee the Jewish armies defeated successive Seleucid generals who attempted to put down the uprising. Judah soon was master of the entire country. Menelaus and the Hellenizers sought a peaceful settlement, asking that the Jews be allowed to return to their homes and that the persecution be officially suspended. The Seleucids realized the need for a political compromise. On October 15, 164 B.C., they restored the rights of the Jews as granted by Antiochus III, providing amnesty as well. Although some may have taken advantage of this amnesty, the soldiers of Judah did not. In December of that year Judah and his men took Jerusalem, although the Seleucids continued to hold the Akra. On the 25th of Chislev (December), 164, Judah purified the Temple and reorganized the sacrificial cult to conform to the Jewish tradition. This event is commemorated in the Jewish holiday of Hanukkah ("dedication"; → Dedication, Feast of). The main objectives of the revolt, eliminating the persecutions and restoring Judaism to the nation, had been achieved.

Judah undertook wars throughout the land to defend the Jews from their pagan neighbors and to extirpate paganism from the country. After the death of Antiochus IV in 164 B.C., his son Antiochus V Eupator advanced on Judea, came to terms with Judah, and restored the rights of the Jews. Menelaus was executed by the Seleucids. In 162 B.C. Alcimus, a moderate Hellenizer, was appointed high priest, although Judah and his supporters resisted his appointment.

Alcimus sought Seleucid help to maintain his power against Judah. Fleeing to Syria, he returned with the general Bacchides. When Judah fell in battle in 160 B.C., his followers rallied around his brother Jonathan and continued their opposition to Alcimus, to the hellenized Jews who supported him, and to their Seleucid allies. After Alcimus's death from stroke in 159, the post of high priest remained vacant for seven years. Though there was further conflict in 157, the Seleucid general Bacchides entered negotiations with Jonathan. A treaty was established, and Jonathan controlled most of Judea from a stronghold at Michmash, north of Jerusalem.

When internal affairs in Syria in 152 B.C. led to civil war between two pretenders to the throne, both sides began wooing Jonathan. Jonathan accepted the proposal of Alexander Balas, which included Jonathan's appointment as high priest. Thus, on the Feast of Tabernacles in 152 B.C., Jonathan appeared in the robes of the high priest. Judea was now united under the rule of the Hasmoneans. Disturbances and violence were not at an end, however. In 143 B.C. Jonathan was kidnapped and murdered by a former Seleucid ally who was uneasy about Jonathan's growing power. Simon, Jonathan's brother, succeeded him. Simon fortified Jerusalem and secured freedom from tribute from the Seleucid ruler Demetrius II. By 142 B.C. he had driven the Seleucid garrison out of the Akra. In a public assembly in 140 B.C., Simon was confirmed as high priest, ruler, and commander of the army. A dynasty had been established that would rule the Jewish people until the coming of the Romans in 63 B.C.

COMMENTARY

1:1–64
Background of the Revolt

1:1–10, Alexander and His Successors. The first four verses of the book briefly set the scene by tracing the origins of Hellenistic rule over the Near East. In 334 B.C. Alexander the Great set out from Pella in Macedonia on his series of conquests. The author of 1 Maccabees refers to "the land of the Kittim" as Alexander's home. The term "Kittim" originally referred to Kition on Cyprus, but had come to be a general term for the Aegean islands and parts of the coastline of the Mediterranean. Alexander defeated Darius III, the reigning Persian king, twice, first at Issus in 333 and then two years later at Gaugamela. By 332 Alexander had taken Palestine, and when his conquests ended, his empire stretched from Egypt to the area that is modern-day Afghanistan and Pakistan.

Alexander died in Babylon on June 10, 323 B.C. Although 1 Macc. 1:6 says that he divided his kingdom among his officers before his death, in fact Alexander died without having left instructions for his succession. Struggles between rival generals resulted in the dismemberment of the empire. The emblem of kingship, the white diadem, was assumed in 306 B.C. by the generals Antigonus and Demetrius, who ruled in Greece and Asia Minor, respectively. The following year Ptolemy, who controlled Egypt, and Seleucus, who ruled Syria and the eastern part of the empire, also claimed royal status (cf. 1:8–9).

1 Macc. 1:1–9 quickly skips over the century of competition between the Seleucid and Ptolemaic dynasties for control of Palestine, neglecting to mention that the Ptolemies ruled for most of that period (301–198 B.C.) until defeated at the battle of Paneas by Antiochus III ("the Great"). The interest of 1 Maccabees is in one of the sons of Antiochus III, the king Antiochus IV Epiphanes (Gk., "god manifest," or "god famous"). Verse 10 alludes to the fact that Antiochus IV had been taken as a hostage by Rome in the aftermath of the defeat of Antiochus III at the battle of Magnesia (189 B.C.). Antiochus III died in 187 and was succeeded by his son Seleucus IV. In 176 Antiochus IV was released by the Romans. After the death of Seleucus IV in 175 and the short reign of his infant son, Antiochus IV took power.

1:11–15, The Hellenistic Movement. Verses 11–15 describe the beginnings of the movement we know from other sources as the Hellenistic reform. A much more thorough account of these events is found in 2 Macc. 4:7–11. That passage tells us that Jason, the brother of the Jewish high priest, went to the king to get permission to reincorporate Jerusalem as a Hellenistic city *(polis)*, to be called Antioch. Part of the motivation must have been economic (see v. 11).

The gymnasium (vv. 14–15) was the central cultural institution of Greek civilization and a prominent feature of every *polis*. In addition to physical activity and recreation, it was the place of education as well. Circumcision was known throughout the ancient world as the sign of the Jew. Nonetheless, because Greek athletics were performed in the nude, some hellenized Jews underwent epispasm, a procedure to reverse the appearance of circumcision, "the holy covenant" (NRSV).

1:16–40, Antiochus IV in Egypt and Judea. Despite the account in 1:16–19, which attributes the initiative to Antiochus IV, the war between Antiochus IV and

Ptolemy VI Philometor (reigned 180–145 B.C.) resulted from a Ptolemaic attempt to reconquer Syria and Palestine. In 170 B.C. Antiochus routed the Egyptians. By 169 Egypt was nearly overrun and Ptolemy VI taken captive. He was, however, put back into power by Antiochus IV.

1 Macc. 1:20–64 describes Antiochus's assault on Jerusalem and the persecutions he put into effect. 1 Maccabees does not attribute a motive to Antiochus other than a passing reference to his "arrogance" and says nothing of the inner struggle between the hellenized Jews and the more traditional Jews that actually provoked the confrontation, according to 2 Maccabees 3–5. In September or October of 169 B.C. Antiochus IV sacked Jerusalem (cf. 2 Macc. 5:1, 11–26). He entered those areas of the Temple restricted to Israelites and plundered the Temple furnishings. The "curtain" (1 Macc. 1:22) is probably that separating the Holy of Holies from the sanctuary. Antiochus also took treasures that had been deposited in the Temple for safekeeping by individuals and carried out a great massacre (cf. 2 Macc. 5:12–14). 1 Macc. 1:25–28 comprises the first of a series of poetic dirges (see also 1:36–40; 2:7–13; 3:45, 50–53; 7:17; 9:21).

In about April of 167 a chief tax collector, known from 2 Macc. 5:24 to be Apollonius, "captain of the Mysians" (NRSV), was sent to Judea by Antiochus. He took Jerusalem by force and then established a citadel, the Akra, which dominated Jerusalem. The exact location of the Akra is a subject of debate. This citadel was colonized by hellenized Jews, "men who were transgressors against the law" (trans. Tedesche). In 1:36–40 a second dirge mourns the defilement of the sanctuary in language that recalls the destruction of the First Temple by the Babylonians in 587 (cf. Lamentations; Pss. 74; 79).

1:41–64, Antiochus's Decrees. The motivation for Antiochus's decrees outlawing local customs is explained by the author of 1 Maccabees as part of an overall policy to impose uniformity on his kingdom. Most modern scholars do not believe that Antiochus pursued such a general policy of hellenization. (For the background to Antiochus's decrees against Judaism, see the Introduction; *see also* 2 Maccabees, Commentary, chaps. 3–5). In any event certain Jewish practices that served to separate Jews from the surrounding pagan culture were proscribed by Antiochus as punishable by death. (Goldstein is correct that Gk. *hagious*, "holy ones [i.e., priests]," in v. 46 needs to be corrected to *hagia* in accord with the Latin translation *sancta*, "holy things," i.e., sacrifices.) Although some Jews acquiesced, others sought refuge. This account in 1 Macc. 1:41–53 completely ignores the internal Jewish unrest over the issue of Hellenism, described in 2 Maccabees, which seems to have led to Antiochus's decrees.

Antiochus went so far as to have an idol installed in the Temple, according to this account, on the 15th of Chislev (December 5), 167 B.C. The date of the 25th, given in Josephus and in 2 Macc. 1:18; 10:5 is probably an attempt to synchronize the defilement with the rededication three years later (1 Macc. 4:52–54). Illicit sacrifices were to be offered throughout the land. The Torah, itself considered the cause of the Jewish resistance, was not to be read, and its scrolls were to be destroyed. Despite horrible tortures, Jews continued circumcision and the eating of exclusively kosher food. The mention in v. 59 of monthly offerings on the 25th of the month probably refers to observance of the king's birthday.

2:1–70
Mattathias's Revolt

2:1–28, The Rage of Mattathias. The beginning of chap. 2 introduces the Hasmonean family and describes the reaction of Mattathias and his sons to Antiochus's decrees. Mattathias and his family were among the lower clergy, priests of the clan of Joarib. As the process of hellenization advanced, they left Jerusalem and relocated in Modein (cf. 1:53). This town, seventeen miles northwest of Jerusalem in the Judean mountains, was probably the ancestral home of the family. The author portrays the family's response by putting a dirge into the mouth of Mattathias and describing the family as observing traditional mourning rites (2:7–14; cf. Esther 4:1).

The confrontation between Mattathias and the Seleucid officials is foreshadowed in 1:51–53. When the "enforcers" arrived in Modein (2:15), even the Hasmonean family was gathered among the crowd. Antiochus's officials offered Mattathias and his sons the status of Friends of the King as well as riches in return for their participation in pagan sacrifice. The Friends of the King were granted special status at court and wore distinctive purple hats and robes. Mattathias refused, but despite his eloquence, a Jew came forward to sacrifice, only to be killed by Mattathias. The author describes Mattathias as a latter-day Phinehas (2:26), referring to the account of Num. 25:1–15 in which Phinehas killed Zimri and Cozbi in the midst of their idolatrous sexual rites. As a result of Mattathias's actions, he and his sons fled into the mountains bordering on Samaria (cf. 2 Macc. 15:1). With this act of zeal and rage, the rebellion began.

2:29–41, Permissibility of Fighting on the Sabbath. The narrative temporarily leaves its account of Mattathias to describe an unnamed group, separate from the Hasmoneans, who also left their homes and sought refuge in the wilderness. Pursued and overtaken, the members of this group refused to leave their camp on the Sabbath, in accord with a literalist interpretation of Exod. 16:29; nor would they fight on the holy day, even to defend themselves. Consequently, they were slaughtered when Antiochus's troops at-

tacked on the Sabbath. The Hasmoneans emphatically decided that defensive warfare should be permitted on the Sabbath. This ruling, despite the opposition of certain circles within Judaism, became the normative view of Jewish law.

2:42–48, The Hasidim and the Beginnings of the Revolt. Among those who joined the Hasmoneans in the early days of the revolt were a group of Hasidim, "pious ones" in Hebrew. Various attempts have been made to claim that these were an organized sect, perhaps connected with those who gave their lives in v. 38, precursors of either the Pharisees or the Essenes. None of these theories can be proven. It is best to take "Hasidim" as a loose term for individuals of great piety, who "volunteered in defense of the Torah" (trans. Goldstein). The initial operations of the Hasmoneans were directed against hellenizing Jews, who are called "sinners" and "lawless" (v. 44). The altars erected for their use were destroyed, and they were forced to maintain the law of circumcision.

2:49–70, The Death of Mattathias. Verses 49–68 contain a "testament of Mattathias," put into his mouth by the author. Such deathbed testimonies and farewell speeches were a popular feature in ancient Jewish literature (cf. Gen. 49; Deut. 33; Josh. 23; and the pseudepigraphical composition *The Testaments of the Twelve Patriarchs*). Mattathias recalls how the Lord stood by the great heroes of Israel, Abraham, Joseph, Phinehas, Joshua, Caleb, David, Elijah, Daniel and his three companions, Hananiah, Azariah, and Mishael. He also calls on his sons, in dramatic foreshadowing, to be willing to sacrifice their lives for the covenant. Mattathias passes on the leadership of the family to Simeon, while acknowledging Judah as the military chief. Mattathias died in April of 165 B.C. (Goldstein).

3:1–9:22
Judah's Struggle for Liberation

3:1–12, Judah Defeats Apollonius. The poem in 3:3–9 tells us that Judah's earliest operations were mounted against hellenizing Jews, identified as "lawless," "evildoers," and "ungodly." Only when attacked by Apollonius (v. 10) did Judah begin to do battle with the Seleucid forces. The comment of v. 8, that "he turned away wrath from Israel," compares him, like Mattathias, with Phinehas. Josephus suggests that Apollonius was governor of Samaria, but he may have been the collector of tribute referred to in 1:29 and identified as Apollonius in 2 Macc. 5:24. Although 1 Macc. 3:10 identifies Apollonius's troops as "Gentiles and a large force from Samaria" (NRSV), it is likely that the reference is to pagan Greco-Macedonians who then inhabited the city of Samaria and not to actual Samaritans (so Goldstein). In any event Judah was victorious in his first battle against Seleucid forces.

3:13–26, The Battle of Beth-horon. Seron, commander of Syria, decided to try his luck against Judah. He was joined by hellenizing Jews who sought to avenge Judah's earlier campaigns against them.

There were two villages, upper Beth-horon (to the southeast) and lower Beth-horon (to the northwest), on the road from Jerusalem to Lydda, between Jerusalem and Modein. The pass between them was extremely narrow (*b. Sanh.* 32b). Despite the fact that Judah's men were holding the higher position, they still despaired at the sight of the larger enemy forces. Judah encouraged his men, reminding them that their lives, the lives of their wives and children, and their way of life were all at stake. His comment, that "in the sight of Heaven there is no difference between saving by many or by few" (3:18, RSV), recalls the words of Jonathan in 1 Sam. 14:6. The same theme is present in the story of Gideon's victory in Judges 7.

Judah fell upon the enemy suddenly and routed them, his forces killing eight hundred and putting the rest to flight westward. Josephus even reports that Seron was killed. From this time on Judah was considered a force to be reckoned with.

3:27–37, Seleucid Affairs. Our author explains Antiochus's eastern campaign as resulting from the need to finance his actions against Judah's revolt. No doubt the real motivation for this campaign was to bring the eastern satrapies under control. Before he left to campaign in the east (perhaps May or June of 165) Antiochus may have established a coregency with his young son Antiochus V Eupator, appointing Lysias as guardian. Lysias, whose title of Kinsman of the King indicates a rank above that of Friend of the King (so Goldstein; cf. 2:18; 3:38), was ordered to crush the rebels. For this purpose extensive forces were deployed, although the claim that half the king's armed forces were to be dedicated to crushing Judah's insurrection at this early stage seems exaggerated.

3:38–4:25, The Battles with Nicanor and Gorgias. According to 3:38, Ptolemy son of Dorymenes, Nicanor, and Gorgias were sent to Lysias. Yet 2 Macc. 8:8–9 makes Ptolemy the one who sent Gorgias and Nicanor. These three Friends of the King were provided with large armies. The number of soldiers here (40,000 infantry and 7,000 cavalry) is probably derived from the size of the Aramean (= Syrian) force defeated by David, according to 1 Chron. 19:18. Emmaus, where the Seleucid army camped, commanded several routes from Jerusalem to the coastal plain, yet it was exposed from the south. Expecting the immediate rout of Judah's forces, slave traders joined the camp of the Seleucid army. The additional troops who joined the Seleucid forces (3:41) were, as Goldstein suggests, from *Idumea* and Philistia, not *Syria* and Philistia. The two names are written similarly in Hebrew and are easily confused.

Judah's forces assembled at Mizpah, an ancient place of prayer, where they mourned, fasted, and read from the Torah. The author inserts his fourth dirge in v. 45 (cf. 1:25–28, 36–40; 2:7–13). The exact location of Mizpah cannot be determined. It was the site of Samuel's prayer to God to enable Israel to be victorious over the Philistines (1 Sam. 7:2–14). Even without a Temple, Judah's forces put on priestly garments and offered first fruits, but they were unable to complete the rites of Nazirites since the offerings had to be made in the Jerusalem Temple. (In 3:49 the translation "stirred up" in the NRSV must be set aside; Tedesche translates "shaved," a part of the Nazirite rite [Num. 6:18].) After praying for deliverance, the assembly sounded the trumpets in accord with Num. 10:9.

Judah organized his army on the biblical model and then discharged the requirements of Deut. 20:1–9, the law of conscription (1 Macc. 3:55–60). Similar rites are required in the Qumran *War Scroll* as well. He dismissed those to be exempted and made the priest's address of encouragement. Again, he repeated his father's message (2:50) that his forces had to be ready to sacrifice their lives if necessary.

Gorgias intended to outnumber Judah's three thousand men and to take them by surprise. For this reason he had to employ hellenized Jews ("men from the Akra"), as they knew the terrain well enough to guide his troops by night. Informed of this plan, Judah slipped away and positioned his underequipped army to attack the larger and better fortified main camp of the Seleucids (4:1–7). The speech the author attributes to Judah in vv. 8–11 recalls the deliverance of Israel at the Reed Sea (Exod. 14:10–13).

Judah's forces apparently commanded the high ground, and the Seleucids fled toward the plain as their guard posts failed to withstand the descending army of Judah (4:12–15). Gazara is Gezer, where there may already have been a Seleucid stronghold to which the soldiers fled. Azotus is Ashdod and Jamnia is Yavneh. A tongue of Idumean territory may have separated Judea from the Philistine towns of Azotus and Jamnia (Goldstein), or we may read Judea for Idumea with some manuscripts (so Tedesche).

Gorgias's force, having failed to catch Judah's men in their camp, next appeared in the hills above their own camp, which was being burned by the Maccabean army (v. 20). They immediately fled to Philistia. Judah's men turned to the spoils and to celebrating their victory with praise of God. The refrain quoted in 4:24 ("for he is good and his mercy endures for ever," NRSV) is familiar from Psalms 106; 107; 118; 136; and 1 Chron. 16:8–36 (cf. 2 Chron. 20:21).

4:26–35, The Battle with Lysias. When his men reported their failure, Lysias prepared to mount an even greater offensive. The defeat of Nicanor and Gorgias had probably taken place in summer or autumn of 165 B.C. Lysias's campaign ended in failure by late winter of 164. The dangers of an insurgency so close to the borders of the Ptolemaic empire made it worth the risk of a winter campaign. One of the reasons for advancing from the south (4:29) may have been the desire to avoid the rains. At the same time, the approach from Idumea afforded Lysias a friendly base, since the Idumeans had no sympathy for the Hasmoneans. Beth-zur, where the battle took place, was in southern Judea. Lysias chose this location since it afforded him the high ground. Judah was outnumbered, even though his army had grown substantially since the defeat of Nicanor and Gorgias.

Facing overwhelming odds, Judah prayed to God that the Seleucids be delivered into the hands of his army, just as Goliath had been handed over to David (1 Sam. 17) and the Philistines to Jonathan (1 Sam. 14:1–15). The model of those early heroes of Israel is very important to the image the author of 1 Maccabees wished to create for Judah. Judah began his prayer (4:30–33) with the benediction formula, "Blessed are You," which was widespread in literature of the Second Temple period (515 B.C.–A.D. 70) and which forms the basis of the Jewish liturgical system.

The battle resulted in a resounding defeat for Lysias. His decision to return home may have resulted from the news of the death of Antiochus IV and the appointment of Philip as regent for his son Antiochus V. Nonetheless, Lysias was already preparing for another engagement.

4:36–61, The Rededication of the Temple. The defeat of Lysias left the Hellenizers and Seleucids in the Akra isolated. When Judah and his men went up to the Temple they found it abandoned; the hellenized priests had probably fled to the Akra or left the city.

While some of his men fended off the troops of the Akra, Judah set out to purify the sanctuary. Only priests unblemished according to the law of Lev. 21:17–23 participated in the cleansing of the sanctuary. Regarding the altar, Goldstein suggests that Judah faced a dilemma, since Deut. 12:2–4 commanded the destruction of idolatrous altars, but at the same time prohibited the destruction of God's altar. What was to be done in a case in which God's altar had been defiled by idolatrous worship? Accordingly, the altar was replaced with a new one (built of unhewn stones in accord with Exod. 20:25; Deut. 27:6), but the stones of the old altar were hidden away. The vessels, candelabrum (menorah), and incense altar had to be replaced, since Antiochus had carried them away when he first entered Jerusalem (1:21–23). The burning of incense and the setting out of the loaves rendered the Temple fit for the renewal of sacrifice (4:50–51).

The first sacrificial offering was brought on the 25th of Chislev, 164 B.C. (vv. 52–53). The notion that the rededication took place on the anniversary of the day on which the Temple was defiled has given rise to the emendation of 1:54 (see commentary above on 1:

41–64). The cornices and decorations were replaced (4:57) as they had been taken by Antiochus (1:22). The gates and doors that had been burned (4:38) were also restored. It was decreed that the Festival of Hanukkah ("Dedication") was to be celebrated annually as an eight-day festival.

The Mount Zion referred to in 4:60 means the Temple Mount, which needed to be fortified against the troops in the nearby Akra. It was now clear that a fortress facing Idumea was required, to prevent the Seleucids from attacking again from that direction. Hence, Beth-zur was also fortified.

5:1–68, Judah Expands His Domain. The author describes Judah's early attempts to extend his territory and punish the enemies of Israel as defensive operations against gentile aggression. Akra-battene was a district in southern Samaria populated by Idumeans. The Baeanites may be the people of the city of Beon referred to in Num. 32:3, located in Transjordan. The Ammonite Timothy of 5:6, identified as a *phylarch,* Greek for a local leader, appears also in 2 Macc. 10:24–37. He is probably to be distinguished from the *strategos* named Timothy, a high official of the Seleucid empire, mentioned in 1 Macc. 5:11–44; 2 Macc. 12:2, 10–31 (so Goldstein).

At the same time, non-Jews in surrounding locales rose up against their Jewish neighbors. Judah received pleas for help from the Jews of Gilead who had taken refuge in Dathema (5:9–10) and from Galilee as well (v. 14). Gilead is the land east of the Jordan between the Yarmuk River to the north and the Arnon to the south. The location of Dathema is unknown. The Timothy who besieged the Gileadite Jews was the *strategos* by that name (see commentary above). The words *en tois Toubiou* in 5:13 have been variously understood. The NRSV translates "who were in the land of Tob," for which see Judg. 11:3. Cf. Tedesche, "who were in the village of Toubias," which his note seems to indicate is to be identified with the land of Tob. Goldstein, however, translates "who were members of Tubias' troop," referring to a military unit under the leadership of one of the Tobiad family, a clan of hellenized Jews. If this last translation is correct, it would show that even hellenized Jews were under attack. While Judah and Jonathan went to rescue the Jews of Gilead, Simon was sent to Galilee (5:17). Judah commanded those left in Judea not to do battle with the enemy; he was concerned about the risk entailed in deploying substantial forces outside of Judea. Simon was victorious and drove the pagan attackers into the city of Ptolemais, also known as Acco on the Mediterranean, north of Haifa. Unable to hold Galilee, he evacuated those Jews he had rescued (vv. 21–23).

The longer account of Judah's exploits in 5:24–54 results from his being the central hero. Indeed, v. 43 emphasizes the personal bravery of Judah, as v. 53 speaks of his kindness and concern for stragglers. Judah's attempt to avoid armed confrontation with the people of Ephron (vv. 46–51) follows the laws of Deut. 20:10–15. The exact location of most of the cities mentioned in this account cannot be established. Carnaim, known as Ashteroth-karnaim in Gen. 14:5, is north of Edrei in Transjordan. The temple of Carnaim, which Judah burned, was probably dedicated to Astarte. Raphon is in the same vicinity. Ephron is eight miles east of the Jordan, opposite Beth-shean. Judah also had to evacuate the Jews from Transjordan, since it would have been impossible to hold on to such far-flung territory. The triumphant entry of these Jews into Jerusalem described in v. 54 echoes Isa. 35:10.

Joseph and Azàriah, left to command the troops in Judea, violated their instructions (15:19) and marched against Jamnia (Yavneh on the Mediterranean shore). Gorgias, probably the same one mentioned in 3:38–4:25, routed their army (5:59–60). The author gives two reasons for the rout, disobedience to commands and not being of the Hasmonean house. Here the author is emphasizing his view that the Hasmoneans were divinely chosen legitimate rulers. The Hasmonean brothers themselves continued to attain victories and to command popular support (vv. 65–66). Judah's destruction of pagan cult sites (v. 68) was part of the general Hasmonean approach to extirpating paganism from the land of Israel.

6:1–17, The Death of Antiochus IV Epiphanes. Chronologically, 6:1–17 follows 3:37. The "upper," or "inland," provinces of 6:1 are Mesopotamia and Iran. Elymais is the region known in the Bible as Elam. No city of that name is known, however, and the precise location of Antiochus's campaign remains uncertain. Antiochus is pictured here as a temple robber, as he appears in 1:21–24. The beginning of 6:4 may be translated, with the NRSV, "and they withstood him in battle" or, with Goldstein, "when they stood against him for battle." Goldstein's translation allows him to conclude that no actual battle took place, but that Antiochus gave up when he saw that the inhabitants would resist.

In vv. 5–7 the text describes an envoy who related to Antiochus the events of 3:38–4:61. This account attributes the king's death to the news of the defeat in Judea. Such a sequence of events is extremely unlikely, even though Antiochus's death did occur a short time after the rededication of the Temple. Indeed, in Chislev (November/December) of 164 B.C. the news of Antiochus's death became known in Babylonia, according to an ancient clay tablet from Babylon. It is therefore not probable that events of that same month in Judea could have been known to Antiochus before he died. More likely, the author has presented his own interpretation of events, and the account of the messenger is fictitious, as suggested by Goldstein.

Sensing that he was dying, Antiochus summoned the Friends of the King (see commentary above on

2:1–28). The author has Antiochus blame his death on his despoiling of the Jerusalem Temple (cf. 1:20–24) and his attacks on Judea. The second-century B.C. Greek historian Polybius attributed Antiochus's death to his desire to plunder the temple of Artemis in Persia (*Histories* 31:9). Josephus counters Polybius's claims with the view of 1 Maccabees (*Antiquities of the Jews* 12.358–59).

The king designated Philip as regent for his young son Antiochus, displacing Lysias, whom he had entrusted with the government in his absence (3:32–36). Antiochus IV then died in early winter of 164 B.C. Before Philip could assert his authority, Lysias, to cement his own power over the Seleucid realm, set up Antiochus V, then nine years old, as king, giving him the title Eupator, meaning "born of a noble father."

6:18–63, The Campaign of Antiochus V Against Judea. In 163/162 B.C., about a year after the death of Antiochus IV, spurred on perhaps by the instability attending the succession and regency of the Seleucid empire, Judah besieged the Akra. A group of pagans and hellenized Jews managed to elude the siege and approached the king, arguing that the attack on the symbol of Seleucid hegemony over Judea and the fortification of the Temple and Beth-zur constituted acts of rebellion.

In 6:28–33 the young king is pictured as controlling affairs, although in reality power was concentrated in the hands of the regent, Lysias. The size of the forces is no doubt exaggerated here. As in Lysias's previous campaign against Judah, the approach to Beth-zur was through Idumea (see 4:29). After defending the fortress, Judah suddenly withdrew his men to Beth-zechariah, where he was soon met by the enemy. The author's description of the valiant defense of Beth-zur by the Jews in 6:31 leads us to believe that actually the Jews withdrew because they were unable to withstand the Seleucid pressure.

The detailed account of the overwhelming forces of the enemy in 6:34–41 is intended to show that it was not Judah's fault that he lost this battle. Goldstein suggests that the author took the description of the elephants from a military manual. In his view, the unfermented grape and mulberry juice stimulated the animals because of its color and taste. Although the NRSV in v. 37 says that there were "four armed men" on each elephant, that reading is based on emendation. More probable is "two" as in Tedesche and Goldstein, based on a reconstructed Hebrew original *shene shalishim*, "two riding warriors," which was easily misread as *shenayim u-sheloshim*, "thirty-two," the reading in most Greek manuscripts.

After an initial success, the battle quickly went against Judah's army. His brother Eleazar, surnamed Avaran, died in battle (vv. 43–46). This tragedy may have contributed to the demoralization that caused Judah to withdraw his army.

The king was greatly aided in conquering Beth-zur by the fact that Jews were prohibited from farming the land of Israel during the Sabbatical Year (see Exod. 23:11; Lev. 25:3–7). Most probably this means that it was the year after the Sabbatical Year, at which time the lack of the previous year's produce would be felt. The same problem afflicted those Jews who sought to defend the Temple against the army of Antiochus V (6:51–54).

At this time, Lysias's control over the young Antiochus V was challenged by Philip. Lysias decided that he needed to commit his troops to the struggle against Philip, and for this reason he sought peace in Judea (vv. 55–56).

Lysias's speech in 6:57–59 is no doubt a composition of the author. In it Lysias asserts that there is no sense in continuing the war and that the only reason the Judeans opposed the Seleucids was that the latter had prohibited the practice of Judaism. Lysias, according to the author, deliberately conceals the true reason for his desire to return to Antioch, the presence there of Philip. In a parallel in 2 Macc. 11:13 Lysias decides to make peace because he realizes that God is on the side of the Hebrews.

Verses 60–61 describe the legal proceeding wherein the two sides exchanged oaths. We can imagine that this was a solemn occasion in which specific military protocol was followed. Compare the parallel description in 2 Macc. 11:13–21, 27–33, in which the agreements take the form of a series of letters. The king's acceptance of Lysias's proposal (1 Macc. 6:61) is paralleled in a letter in 2 Macc. 11:22–26 in which Antiochus V proposes that the Jews be allowed to live according to their own laws. Only after all arrangements were concluded did the defenders of the Temple (perhaps termed Mount Zion here) withdraw from their positions.

Despite Lysias's oath of peace, Antiochus V treacherously destroyed the walls of Mount Zion (6:62). Antiochus V then departed for Antioch, where he was forced to take the city by force from his erstwhile regent, Philip. His withdrawal from Jerusalem is probably to be dated to sometime in winter of 162 B.C.

7:1–25, The High-Priesthood of Alcimus. Shortly thereafter, Demetrius I Soter (ruled 162–150 B.C.), son of Seleucus IV Philopator (ruled 187–175 B.C.) and nephew of Antiochus IV, managed to escape from Rome, where he had been held hostage. After establishing himself at Tripolis, in Phoenicia (Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 12.389; 2 Macc. 14:1), he took Antioch, and had Antiochus V and Lysias put to death. His accession is probably to be dated to October 162 B.C. (Goldstein).

The "renegade and godless men of Israel" (7:5, NRSV) describes for the author the party of moderate Hellenizers. 2 Macc. 14:3 relates that Alcimus (whose Hebrew name was Jakim) had earlier been designated high priest. Josephus (*Antiquities of the Jews* 12.385)

says that he was appointed by Lysias after the execution of Menelaus. Perhaps this passage refers to his seeking confirmation from the new ruler. Alcimus and his supporters argued that Judah and his followers had made life impossible in Judea for the supporters of the Seleucid empire.

Bacchides, whom the new king Demetrius entrusted with the task of pacifying Judea, was one of the Friends of King Antiochus IV (Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 12.393) and must have been led to support Demetrius as a result of conditions under Antiochus V and Lysias. The province "Beyond the River" was that of Coele Syria and Phoenicia. Demetrius's own involvement in pacifying the eastern part of his empire led him to put so distinguished a leader as Bacchides in charge of affairs in Judea. Alcimus was confirmed as high priest. Although the Hasmoneans under Judah realized the purposes of the large expeditionary force sent with Bacchides, some of the Hasidim who did not share the Hasmonean insistence on Jewish independence, but who were concerned only for religious freedom, were lulled into Bacchides' trap (7:12–18). Probably the presence of the priest Alcimus convinced them that the Seleucids could be trusted. But Alcimus and Bacchides proved treacherous, arresting and executing sixty of the Hasidim. Verse 17 is an adaptation of Ps. 79:2–3 and Jer. 14:16. The story of the execution of the Hasidim is not found in the parallel account of 2 Maccabees 14.

Beth-zaith (7:19) was about four miles north of Beth-zur on the road to Jerusalem. Here Bacchides again committed atrocities, denying the corpses burial (cf. v. 17). Despite the support Alcimus received from the Seleucid army and from the hellenizing Jews, he was unable to stabilize his power as high priest in the face of the opposition of Judah and his men.

7:26–50, The Defeat of Nicanor. In response to the appeals of Alcimus (v. 25), King Demetrius dispatched Nicanor to assist him. The parallel account in 2 Macc. 14:18–30 suggests the possibility that there was a period of friendship between Nicanor and Judah. When Nicanor turned against him, Judah escaped. According to 1 Maccabees, however, Nicanor was treacherous from the start (vv. 26–30). Abandoning his earlier tactics of entrapment, Nicanor met Judah in battle near Capharsalama, a site for which no convincing identification has yet been made. Verse 32 is somewhat ambiguous. The version in Josephus (*Antiquities of the Jews* 12.405) to the effect that Nicanor was victorious and that Judah's men fled to the Akra is mistaken. The correct interpretation is that Judah was victorious and that Nicanor's men were sent scampering back to their fortress in the City of David.

Nicanor's threat was made to the priests and elders who were showing him the burnt offering being made on behalf of the Seleucid king (v. 33). From the Persian period on, such offerings had been made on behalf of the king as a sign of loyalty (see Ezra 6:10). This token failed to convince Nicanor that the priests were loyal to the Seleucid empire. From the prayer the priests recited after his departure, it seems that he was correct. The first part of the poem in 7:37–38 is influenced by 1 Kings 8:29–30, 43; 9:3. Nicanor repaired to Beth-horon, a strategic high point, where he met his reinforcements from Syria. Yet Judah outsmarted him by occupying Adasa, a village on the road from Jerusalem to Beth-horon, some seven miles southeast of Beth-horon. By blocking the road, Judah intended to stop Nicanor from fulfilling the oath of 1 Macc. 7:35 (Goldstein). In his prayer Judah recalls the destruction of Sennacherib's army, described in 2 Kings 19:35 (cf. 2 Macc. 15:22–24).

The battle took place in March of 161 B.C. Although 7:43 asserts that Nicanor was the first to fall, Josephus places the death of Nicanor later on in the battle (*Antiquities of the Jews* 12.409). The enemy was pursued westward, toward Gezer. The blowing of the trumpets by Judah's forces (v. 45) was intended to signal the surrounding villagers to block the path of escape of the Seleucid army so that the rout could continue. After the battle the victorious Jews cut off Nicanor's right hand as retribution for his having raised it in taking the oath to destroy the Temple (cf. 2 Macc. 15:32).

The Day of Nicanor, which was decreed as an annual festival (7:49), was celebrated as a minor Jewish holiday as late as the end of the first century A.D. Fasting and mourning were forbidden on this day according to the early rabbinic text *Megillat Ta'anit* ("Scroll of Fasting"). The rabbis later abolished this and other minor commemorations in favor of Hanukkah and Purim.

8:1–32, Judah's Treaty with the Romans. The account of the greatness of Rome in 8:1–16 is a collection by the pro-Roman author of information and even misinformation about the power and glory of Rome. This material is intended to justify Judah's having allied himself with a foreign nation. The author accepts the tendentious claims of the Romans that those whom they had conquered had undertaken aggression against Rome (Goldstein). The Gauls referred to in v. 2 are either those of northern Italy defeated in 190 B.C. or the Galatians of Asia Minor conquered in 189 B.C. The Carthaginian colonies in Spain were conquered in the Second Punic War (218–201 B.C.). Philip was defeated in 197 and his son Perseus, last king of Macedonia, was defeated in 168 B.C. Antiochus (III) the Great was defeated by the Romans at Magnesia in 189 B.C. He was not made a prisoner as v. 7 claims, but he was forced to accept the terms of the Romans. Although India is mentioned in v. 8, it was never conquered by Antiochus III, yet he did march toward it and was widely reported to have had elephants in his forces. Media was retained by Antiochus, but Lydia had to be surrendered to the Romans along with other parts of Asia

Minor, most of which were then given to Eumenes II of Pergamum. Probably vv. 9–11 are an anachronistic description of the war with the Achaean league in 146 B.C. The Roman senate did not meet daily, as v. 15 states, but usually three times each month and on festivals. It began with 120 members, and it gradually increased to approximately 300, until it was further enlarged to 600 in 81 B.C. The author apparently did not realize that there were two consuls, rather than one ruler (v. 16). The allusion to harmony in v. 16 suggests that the passage was written before the Roman civil wars.

Judah chose two ambassadors to Rome, Eupolemus and Jason. Eupolemus was the son of the same John who, according to 2 Macc. 4:11, secured royal concessions for the Jews from Antiochus III. He is perhaps to be identified with the author of the Greek work *Concerning the Kings in Judea.* Goldstein's translation "of the clan of Hakkoz" is to be preferred to the NRSV's "son of Accos" in 1 Macc. 8:17. (On this priestly clan see Ezra 2:61; Neh. 7:63; cf. 1 Chron. 4:8.) Jason is otherwise unknown. The Jews continued to be taxed by the Seleucid kingdom, even after the victory of Judah over Nicanor. Further, Alcimus still remained high priest, supported by the Seleucids. It was this yoke of slavery (1 Macc. 8:18) that Judah sought to cast off by entering an alliance with the Romans. As was usual at that time, the emissaries were invited to address the senate. The claim of v. 22 that the Romans sent a bronze copy of the treaty to Jerusalem was doubted by Josephus (*Antiquities of the Jews* 12.416) in light of the usual Roman practice of depositing such bronze copies in the temple of Jupiter Capitolinus in Rome.

The text of the treaty given in 8:23–32 generally follows Roman usage except that the form had to be somewhat modified since the other party was "Judah . . . his brothers and the people of the Jews" (8:20), not a sovereign kingdom. (For a complete comparison, see Goldstein.) If the document is indeed authentic, as most historians argue, some difficulties in legal terminology have resulted from the translation of the original text from Latin into Hebrew and then into Greek. The terms of the treaty are that each side promises to aid the other if attacked and not to aid the enemies of the other. Some scholars take the postscript concerning Demetrius in vv. 31–32 to be a later addition to the text (Josephus omits it).

9:1–22, The Death of Judah. Bacchides and Alcimus, the high priest, had fought in Judea already, according to 7:5–25. After the failure of Nicanor (7:39–50), Demetrius I again sent Bacchides, accompanied by Alcimus, to Judea, this time with "the right wing of the army," i.e., half of his infantry. From 9:4 we gather that he had some twenty thousand soldiers. The route taken by the army is uncertain. One should probably read "Galilee" in v. 2 instead of "Gilgal" (so Josephus, accepted by Goldstein). There is an Arbela in Galilee, but none known near Gilgal. Mesaloth probably derives from Hebrew *mesillot,* "steps," a name given to the village because of the shape of the cliffs. Yet it is difficult to see why the Seleucids would have entered Galilee and attacked one obscure village situated in difficult terrain. In any case, after taking this village and slaughtering its inhabitants, the Seleucids turned toward Jerusalem, where they encamped in Nisan (March/April) of 160 B.C. They then marched to Berea, probably the modern El-Bireh, opposite Ramallah, ten miles north of Jerusalem. Meanwhile, Judah was encamped at Elasa, probably to be identified with Khirbet el-'Assi, located off the Jerusalem-Nablus road, near Ramallah, across a valley from El-Bireh. The fright and desertion of so many of Judah's soldiers presumes that the camps were located close to one another. Judah insisted on fighting the battle despite the advice of his troops. His speech in vv. 8–10 foreshadows the coming defeat.

Verse 11 is ambiguous in not specifying whether it is Judah's army or Bacchides' that marches out first. Tedesche translates literally, "The army set out from the camp and stood in battle line against them." Josephus took "the army" to be that of Bacchides, who stood in battle formation arrayed against the Jews (*Antiquities of the Jews* 12.426). The second half of the verse does indeed describe a large army such as that of Bacchides, not a small band such as the one that remained with Judah.

Although vastly outnumbered, the Jews initially routed the right wing of Bacchides' phalanx. The phrase "as far as Mount Azotus" (9:15, NRSV) makes no geographical sense and is generally regarded as a corrupt reading. In any case, as the Jews pursued the Seleucid right wing, the left wing moved in behind Judah's forces and defeated them. Judah died on the battlefield (v. 18).

Josephus suggests that a truce allowed Jonathan and Simon to recover the body of Judah and to bury it at Modein (*Antiquities of the Jews* 12.432). The author's attempt to model Judah's life and death after those of Israel's heroes and kings can be clearly seen in vv. 21–22. Verse 21 is influenced by 2 Sam. 1:19, David's lament for Saul and Jonathan. 1 Macc. 9:22 is an imitation of the style of royal chronicles preserved in the books of Kings (e.g., 1 Kings 11:41).

9:23–12:53
The Leadership of Jonathan

9:23–73, Jonathan's Defeat of Bacchides. Alcimus and the pro-Seleucid Hellenistic Jews, abetted by Bacchides, quickly gained the upper hand after Judah's death. The phrases "the wicked sprouted" and "the evildoers flourished" in v. 23 are allusions to Ps. 92:7 (Goldstein). Note that the populace supported Alcimus and even cooperated in turning Judah's supporters over to the authorities. It was the cruel

punishment of these heroes that must have again created the climate for revolt. It fell to Jonathan to succeed his brother and to take up the struggle against both the Seleucids and their Jewish allies (9:31).

Jonathan, aware that Bacchides sought to kill him, fled with Simon and their men to the wilderness of Tekoa, toward the Dead Sea. The pool where Jonathan and Simon took refuge may be the modern Bir ez-Za'feran, about three miles south of Tekoa, although other possibilities can be suggested. Verse 34, which describes Bacchides' pursuit of Jonathan, is almost certainly out of place. Its similarity to v. 43 suggests either that it originally preceded v. 43 (so Zeitlin) or, more probably, that it was a scribe's explanatory comment on v. 43, which was later copied into the manuscript at the wrong place (so Goldstein).

Jonathan sent John with the noncombatants and the baggage to ask the Nabateans if they would store their possessions (vv. 35–36). The Nabatean Arabs must have maintained some degree of freedom from the Seleucids and seemed like a reliable refuge. On the way, John and his party were intercepted by the Jambrites, an Arab tribe from Medeba, some twelve miles east of the Dead Sea, and taken captive. From 9:38, 42 we gather that John died in the attack. We do not hear of the fate of the others.

An opportunity for revenge occurred when Jonathan and Simon heard news of a large Jambrite wedding procession from Nadabath to Medeba (vv. 37–38). Nadabath is probably to be identified with Nebo, somewhat north of Medeba. After attacking the Jambrite wedding procession, Jonathan and his men took refuge in the swamps immediately north of the Dead Sea, on the east side of the Jordan. Bacchides and his troops crossed the Jordan on the Sabbath (reading v. 34 as an explanatory comment on v. 43; see above). They positioned themselves to the north of Jonathan facing south, so that the Jews were hemmed in by the Jordan on one side and the swamps on the north end of the Dead Sea on the other side. Jonathan's words in v. 44, "for today things are not as they were before" (NRSV), is an allusion to the life-threatening situation that justified fighting on the Sabbath (cf. 2:34–41). Bacchides is pictured here as a coward who ran to take refuge in the rear when Jonathan attacked him. Jonathan and his men leaped into the Jordan and swam to the western shore, from which they made their escape. Bacchides suffered heavy casualties.

Bacchides fortified the citadel of Jerusalem (the Akra) and a string of towns to solidify his control of Judea. In all of them he built fortifications and placed garrisons that may have consisted of Jews loyal to Alcimus. The Akra was the base from which the Seleucids kept Alcimus's Hellenistic regime in power (cf. 1:29–40). It was there that Bacchides held hostages from among the aristocratic families to prevent them from throwing their lot in with Jonathan, whose exploits must have provoked widespread admiration.

According to 9:54, in May of 159 B.C. Alcimus altered the structure of the Temple, thus violating, in the author's view, the commands of the prophets Haggai, Zechariah, and Malachi, in whose time the Second Temple had been built. He attempted to tear down the barrier of the inner court. Most scholars consider this to be the wall that separated the Temple Mount, where Gentiles were permitted, from the Temple itself, where they were forbidden to enter. If so, Alcimus sought to allow Gentiles access to the Temple. According to v. 55 he miraculously suffered a stroke and was unable to continue. The author certainly sees this as divine intervention. Despite v. 57, which reports that Bacchides returned to Syria only after Alcimus's death, it is probable that Bacchides departed soon after completing the new fortifications, assuming Alcimus's control to have been established. In keeping with his attempt to model the history of the Hasmoneans after the early traditions of Israel, the concluding phrase of v. 57, "and the land of Judah had rest for two years" (NRSV), is influenced by the language of Judg. 3:11, 30; 5:31; 8:28. The hellenized Jews summoned Bacchides back to Judea to deal with Jonathan and his men. Bacchides, seeking to avoid risking his forces, tried to get his allies in Judea to capture Jonathan. When the plan became known, Jonathan and his men took revenge, killing the fifty or so leaders of the pro-Seleucid party (9:61).

Bethbasi, where Jonathan and Simon assembled their forces, is to be identified with Khirbet Beit Bassa, about a mile southeast of Bethlehem. When Bacchides heard that Jonathan had fortified it, he tried unsuccessfully to conquer the town. Textual problems obscure the meaning of v. 66. The text followed by the NRSV says that after leaving Simon in command at Bethbasi, Jonathan attacked two Arab tribes. Yet some manuscripts imply that he "placed in command" (so Zeitlin) these two allies in his battle against Bacchides. Goldstein similarly concludes that the text originally said that Jonathan summoned "Odomera and his brothers and the Phasironites in their encampment, so that they began to harass and attack Bacchides' troops." This view is supported also by Josephus (*Antiquities of the Jews* 13.28).

After securing the support of these nomadic tribes, Jonathan attacked Bacchides from the rear, while Simon set out to destroy the siege machines from within (v. 67). Upon defeat, Bacchides turned against the Hellenizers who had summoned him to Judea and killed many of them. He then decided to return to Syria.

As soon as Jonathan learned of Bacchides' intention to leave Judea, he proposed an exchange of prisoners and a truce (v. 70). There now ensued a long period of tranquillity for Judea, some seven years until the events described in 10:69. Michmash, where Jonathan settled, is present-day Mukhmas, eight miles northeast of Jerusalem. It was there that Saul and Jonathan had defeated the Philistines (1 Sam. 13:2).

Jonathan the Hasmonean was not secure enough to control Jerusalem. He still had no official position and was not high priest. Judea remained a Seleucid dependency. Yet Jonathan led as a charismatic leader, much like the biblical judges, as 9:73 suggests.

10:1–21, Jonathan Confirmed in Office by Alexander Balas. By 152 B.C. the hostility of Rome and of a number of petty kingdoms against Demetrius I made the time ripe for the appearance of Alexander Epiphanes, known as Alexander Balas, a pretender to the Seleucid throne. His claim to be the son of Antiochus IV Epiphanes was widely doubted in antiquity, but his attempt to gain control of the empire was abetted by the fact that Demetrius had taken to drink and had secluded himself outside Antioch. By spring or summer of 152 B.C. Alexander Balas had conquered Ptolemais (Acco) on the Mediterranean seacoast. When Demetrius I began his military offensive against Alexander, he sought to make Jonathan his ally. He therefore gave Jonathan the power to raise an army and delivered the hostages into his hands (cf. 9:53).

Jonathan's legal recognition allowed him to take up residence in Jerusalem (10:7). The actual text of the letter from Demetrius granting these privileges to Jonathan is not preserved. Although the men in the Akra were forced to accede to this letter, they still held their position, indicating that Judea was not yet independent of Seleucid rule. The rebuilding of the walls of Jerusalem was also intended to enhance Jonathan's position, as well as to provide defense. These walls had been torn down under Lysias (see 6:62). Many of the Seleucid soldiers (see 9:52) fled, although the hellenized Jews remained in their refuge at Beth-zur (10:14).

Alexander felt constrained to better the offer of Demetrius, as he recognized the danger that an alliance of Demetrius and Jonathan would pose. In proposing to make Jonathan not only a Friend of the King but also an ally, he intended to grant him some degree of autonomy. Accordingly he made him high priest (10:20), an office that had been vacant since the death of Alcimus in 159 B.C. Jonathan was not of the appropriate priestly family, so that departure from tradition was opposed by some, e.g., the Qumran sect, who withdrew from Jerusalem at this time. The purple robe, always part of the garb of the Friends of the King, and the crown of gold were normal parts of priestly attire in the Hellenistic world. Jonathan assumed his position in 152 B.C. and in the Jewish high-priestly garments he celebrated the rites of the Festival of Tabernacles (Sukkoth). At the same time he took advantage of his new autonomy to expand his army greatly (v. 21).

10:22–50, Demetrius I and His Defeat. Demetrius realized that he had been upstaged and sought to redress the balance by granting Jonathan even greater privileges. Since he was in fact the ruling sovereign, he was able to marshal a much more extensive list of concessions. Scholars have noted that his letter is addressed "to the nation of the Jews" (v. 25), not mentioning either Jonathan or his high-priesthood. It is possible that this was an attempt to woo the Jewish people away from Jonathan's leadership. Yet it is more likely that since he had not appointed Jonathan to his position, he preferred to make allusion simply to "the high priest" (v. 32). Demetrius ignored the agreement Jonathan had made with Alexander. The difficult syntax of this letter may be the result, if it is indeed genuine, of the fact that the author of 1 Maccabees translated it from Greek into Hebrew, from which it was later retranslated in the Greek text of 1 Maccabees.

The tribute mentioned in 10:29 refers to annual payments required from communities. The salt tax and crown levies were originally in-kind payments later converted to cash payments. All three taxes were to be abolished by Demetrius. The high proportion of the taxes on the grain and fruit (one-third and one-half, respectively) make it likely that these levies had been instituted to punish Judea for having revolted. The three districts to be added to Judea were Aphairema, Lydda, and Rathamin (see 11:34). These three areas, originally transferred to Judea from Samaria by Alexander the Great, had been taken away from Judea by Antiochus IV. In 10:38 Demetrius I proposed to join them again to Judea. Samaria and Galilee are mentioned together since they constituted a single province.

The granting of special status to Jerusalem (v. 31) meant that henceforth it would not be liable to attack except as a result of aggression by its citizens. It was also to be freed from Seleucid customs duties. Demetrius was even willing to surrender control of the citadel, the Akra, to the high priest (v. 32). This would have meant the end of Seleucid domination over the city, tantamount to de facto independence for the Jews and recognition of the high priest as their ruler. Jewish captives, who must have been scattered throughout the Hellenistic world in the aftermath of the Maccabean wars, were all to be set free.

Demetrius also proposed that on the days surrounding Jewish festivals and the festivals themselves the Jews would not be compelled to discharge civic duties or to appear in court. The right to serve as trusted members of the armed forces was to be restored to the Jews, who, led by Jewish officers, would be allowed to observe the laws of the Torah even while serving in the Seleucid army (v. 37).

The granting of Ptolemais and its revenues to the Temple (v. 39) was an empty gesture, since it was under the control of the pretender Alexander Balas. The grant may even have been intended to punish the city for supporting Demetrius's rival. Verse 41 is ambiguous. Tedesche and the NRSV take it to mean that "all the additional funds that the government officials have

not paid as they did in the first years, they shall give from now on for the service of the temple" (NRSV). Goldstein translates, "And if there should be any surplus which the officials in charge shall not have paid out, they shall apply it from now on, as in former years, to the needs of the temple." This letter formally permits the procedure of reassignment that had been used by Temple officials. Further, according to most scholars, v. 42 applies to the cancellation of a levy against the Temple by the Seleucids.

The right of asylum in the sanctuary, to which v. 43 refers, did not exist for any category of criminal in biblical tradition (Exod. 21:14), let alone for debtors. Here it is extended based on Hellenistic practice. In financing the rebuilding of the Temple and the city walls (v. 45), Demetrius follows the pattern set by the Persian kings (Ezra 6:8; 7:20).

The support of Alexander Balas by the Romans, long allies of the Hasmoneans (8:1–32), must have been a factor in the decision of the Jews to reject the privileges offered by Demetrius. They chose to remain loyal to Alexander, judging his alliance as more reliable. After the defeat of Alexander Balas by Ptolemy VI Philometor and the establishment of Demetrius II, son of Demetrius I, as ruler of the Seleucid kingdom (11:14–19), these same privileges were offered once again by Demetrius II and, this time, accepted by the Jews (11:20–37).

Manuscripts of 1 Maccabees and interpreters are divided over the sequence of events in 10:48–50. After the initial confrontation, either the army of Demetrius or that of Alexander fled with the enemy in hot pursuit. If Alexander's army was in pursuit (NRSV) we can easily understand how Demetrius was lost in battle. If it was Demetrius who gained the upper hand (Goldstein), then we must assume that Alexander rallied his men and turned the battle around, at which time Demetrius fell. In any case, with the death of Demetrius I in the summer of 150 B.C., Alexander emerged as undisputed king of the Seleucid empire.

10:51–66, Alexander's Meeting with Jonathan. Alexander asked for the hand of Cleopatra III Thea (v. 57), daughter of Ptolemy VI Philometor. (Alexander's letter of proposal is probably the composition of the author, not an authentic document.) Ptolemy VI had supported Alexander because of his hostility to Demetrius I, caused by the latter's attempt to take Cyprus from him in 156/155 B.C. The wedding took place in summer of 150 B.C., shortly after the defeat of Demetrius I.

Jonathan, invited to the wedding, took the opportunity to ingratiate himself with Ptolemy VI and Alexander Balas by giving manifold gifts to them and their officials, the Friends of the King (vv. 59–60). The protests of some hellenized Jews were of no avail. Jonathan was treated royally and elevated to Chief Friend of the King (cf. 10:20, where he became a Friend). He was officially designated commander and governor of the province (v. 65). Jonathan's de facto control of the province of Judea had now become de jure.

10:67–89, Jonathan's Victories. Sometime after March of 147 B.C. Demetrius II, son of Demetrius I, attempted to recapture his kingdom from Alexander Balas, an incompetent and unpopular king. Apollonius, governor of Coele Syria (southern Syria), supporting Demetrius II, camped at Jamnia (Yavneh on the Mediterranean coast), and challenged Jonathan to open combat (vv. 70–73). Jonathan, it seems, was the only local ruler to remain loyal to Alexander Balas.

Jonathan accepted the challenge together with Simon, his brother. Joppa, modern Jaffa, to the south of present-day Tel Aviv, was a city on the coastal plain but adjacent to Jonathan's territory. He quickly overran the garrison of Apollonius's men.

Apollonius with his horsemen and infantry marched south through Azotus (biblical Ashdod), exposing his large force in the plain. Near Ashdod a major battle ensued, which turned out to be an ambush carefully laid by Apollonius (vv. 79–80). Jonathan's men held out until the enemy horses were exhausted. At that point Simon, whose men had been held in reserve and were fresh, quickly overwhelmed and dispersed Apollonius's forces. Jonathan pursued them to the temple of Beth-dagon, which he burned. The entire operation left Apollonius's army completely destroyed.

After hearing of his exploits at Ashdod, the people of Ashkelon quickly opened their city to Jonathan (v. 86). This foray into the coastal plain was the beginning of a process throughout the Hasmonean period of extending Jewish sovereignty to this region. Control of the coastal plain was necessary to stabilize Hasmonean rule and maintain Mediterranean trade. Jonathan's defeat of an ally of Demetrius II led Alexander Balas to elevate Jonathan even further, from among the Chief Friends of the King (v. 65) to the status of Kinsman (v. 89). Since he already controlled Ashdod and Ashkelon, Alexander ceded Ekron to him.

11:1–19, Ptolemy VI's Invasion. Josephus (*Antiquities of the Jews* 13.103–10) suggests that Ptolemy VI Philometor entered Palestine to help his son-in-law Alexander, but soon discovered that Alexander plotted to kill him. As a result he decided to switch his allegiance to Demetrius II. 1 Macc. 11:1–8 presents Ptolemy's intentions as treacherous from the start. In any case, when he arrived, aided by Alexander's welcome, Ptolemy quickly took control of the country. He kept his intentions secret, pretending to befriend Jonathan, who accompanied him as far as the Eleutherus River, present-day Nahr el-Kebir, north of Tripolis in Lebanon.

Ptolemy took his daughter from Alexander and

married her to Demetrius II, justifying his actions with the claim that Alexander had plotted to kill him. The author of 1 Maccabees sees this as a false charge, simply a justification for adding Alexander's territory to the Ptolemaic holdings (v. 11). Ptolemy soon took advantage of Alexander's absence in Cilicia (v. 14) and claimed the throne of the Seleucid empire for himself as well.

According to the first-century B.C. geographer Strabo, Alexander met Ptolemy in battle on the banks of the Oinoparas River in the plain to the northeast of the city of Antioch (*Geography* 16.2.8). Alexander fled to the east, where he met his end at the hands of an Arab sheik (11:16–17). Ptolemy's death, laconically reported in 11:18, was said by the Roman historian Livy to have occurred as a result of surgery in July of 145 B.C. (Livy *Summaries* 52). The native population, to ensure that their cities would not be annexed by the Ptolemaic empire, immediately rose up and slaughtered the garrisons Ptolemy had posted in Seleucid territory (vv. 3, 18). By the summer of 145 B.C. Demetrius II ruled Syria after a five-year struggle to regain the empire of his father, Demetrius I.

11:20–37, Jonathan and Demetrius II. Jonathan took advantage of the instability in the Seleucid empire to try to rid Jerusalem of the Seleucid garrison. (On the importance of control of the Akra, see the commentary above on 10:22–50 [v. 32].) Hellenistic elements in Judea appealed to Demetrius, so that Jonathan was forced to present himself at Ptolemais. There he demonstrated both his popular support and his wealth and declared his allegiance to Demetrius II. His tactics were successful, no doubt because the king was in need of such allies to consolidate his own power. He therefore confirmed the status of Jonathan as high priest and made him one of his Chief Friends, a status higher than that of Friend of the King. The text of the letter that Demetrius issued (11:29–37) is parallel in many details to that of Demetrius I in 10:25–45, except that the mention of the Akra, which Demetrius I had offered to release (10:32), is conspicuously absent in the version of Demetrius II. From 11:41 we can gather that Jonathan had to agree at Ptolemais to lift his siege on the Akra, which he had left in place upon his departure (v. 23). The letter to Jonathan was in reality a copy of a letter Demetrius II sent to Lasthenes, chief of his mercenaries in Crete (Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 13.86). By now, Lasthenes had probably become Demetrius's leading minister (Goldstein). "Father" (v. 32) was an honorific title. In response to Jonathan's request (v. 28) Demetrius ceded three districts of Samaria to him (see 10:30, 38, and the commentary above on 10:22–50). Aphairema is Ephraim; Rathamin is Ramathaim. (On the tax abatements of v. 34, see 10:29–30 and the commentary above on 10:22–50.) Just as in 10:29, the exemption was for the Jews, designated in 11:34 as "those who offer sacrifice in Jerusalem," thus excluding the Samaritans (so Goldstein). Verses 32–36 are the text of Demetrius II's letter to Lasthenes. Verse 37 is an instruction from Demetrius to Jonathan to put a copy of his letter to Lasthenes prominently on display on the Temple Mount. The display of such decrees was common practice in the Hellenistic world.

11:38–53, Jonathan Aids Demetrius II. Demetrius made the mistake of retiring his troops, thus creating a large group of discontented, unemployed soldiers. He retained only the mercenaries, who were probably hated by the population. This set the stage for Trypho's uprising. Trypho, whose real name was Diodotus, was one of Alexander Balas's commanders at Antioch. He had been hostile to Demetrius I and II and had been involved in the attempt to crown Ptolemy VI Philometor in Antioch. By 144 B.C. he had taken the designation Trypho, "the magnificent." Then he convinced the Arab sheik raising Alexander's young son Antiochus to release the boy so that he could be crowned king. The Greco-Roman historian Diodorus gives the name of the guardian as Iamblichos, Semitic Yamliku (Diodorus *Library of History* 33.4a). This must be the origin of the author's Imalkue.

Jonathan turned now to diplomatic means to end Seleucid control of the Akra. The implication of Demetrius II's answer in vv. 42–43 was that he would relinquish control in return for Jonathan's sending him troops to help quell the incipient revolt against him in Antioch. As the rebellion increased in proportion, the king called on the Jewish soldiers (among other mercenaries), who through massive slaughter and destruction (the numbers in this passage all seem exaggerated) succeeded, at least temporarily, in keeping Demetrius in power. (See Goldstein, who supplies additional details from Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 13.135–41 and Diodorus *Library of History* 33.4.2–4.) Verse 53 implies that Demetrius did not turn the Akra over to Jonathan, despite his agreement (v. 42). The entire episode must have made the Jews unpopular in the Seleucid empire, since they had helped to preserve the rule of a brutal despot in the face of mass opposition. This opposition was now to lead to widespread support for Trypho.

11:54–74, Jonathan Is Again Victorious. Antiochus VI Epiphanes must have reigned, in name, from 145 to 142 B.C. Since he was the son of Alexander Balas and Cleopatra III Thea (daughter of Ptolemy VI Philopator), he could not have been born before 149 B.C. Clearly, his rule was but a fiction to legitimize that of Trypho. Demetrius II fled to Cilicia (Josephus) or to Seleucia (Livy), in either case continuing to hold parts of the kingdom. With the help of the disaffected veterans (see commentary above on 11:38–53), Trypho

took Antioch. Over Antiochus VI's seal, Trypho confirmed Jonathan's high-priesthood, including its political powers, as well as naming him to be a Friend of the King, with all the attendant privileges. Simon's territory as commander *(strategos)* extended from Tyre (the Ladder of Tyre reached from Tyre to Haifa) to Wadi el-Arish, the border of Egypt. Trypho's alliance with so strong a supporter can only be explained in light of his need for Jonathan's wealth and military power. At the same time, Jonathan's survival among all these Seleucid pretenders could only be assured by such quick changes of allegiance.

"Beyond the river" (v. 60, NRSV) refers to the area known in the Persian period as the province of 'Abar Nahara, "the Trans-Euphrates province" of Syria and Phoenicia (Goldstein). There Jonathan recruited allies. He then turned to establishing control of the Mediterranean coastline (see commentary above on 10:51–66 [vv. 86–89]). Gaza's resistance resulted from the close relations this city enjoyed with Demetrius II. Goldstein suggests that Jonathan was *strategos* of the province of Coele Syria, but not of Phoenicia. This would explain his reaching as far as Damascus.

Supporters of Demetrius II continued their resistance, assembling a large force at Kedesh, some four miles northwest of Meron. Meanwhile Simon successfully took the fortress of Beth-zur from the hellenized Jews. Jonathan and his men camped at the Sea of Galilee. The claim that all of Jonathan's men except two fled in the face of the ambush must be exaggerated, as realized already by Josephus (*Antiquities of the Jews* 13.16), who suggested that about fifty men remained. Jonathan is here pictured as turning to prayer in the face of great danger. As the tide of battle turned, his men returned and defeated the forces of Demetrius II decisively, showing that Jonathan's prayer was answered. After this narrow escape, Jonathan returned to Jerusalem.

12:1–23, Alliances with Rome and Sparta. Because the time was propitious (Gk. *kairos,* "time," appears here in 12:1 in the sense of fortune or luck), Jonathan decided to renew the alliance with Rome (see chap. 8). The Spartans, to whom Jonathan also sent letters, had themselves demonstrated friendship to Rome. The description that follows is consistent with the diplomatic usages of the period. Jonathan's ambassadors were sent sometime between the start of the reign of Antiochus VI in 145 and the death of Jonathan in 143 B.C. As was customary, all ambassadors were allowed to address the senate. In addition, letters of safe conduct were normally granted.

What follows in 12:6–18 is the text of the letter from Jonathan to Sparta. (From v. 2 it seems that other such letters were sent to other places, but the author did not include them.) Goldstein argues at length for the authenticity of this letter. In v. 6 "the senate" (NRSV) obscures the use of Greek *gerousia,* correctly rendered "the Council of Elders" (Goldstein). This is the first mention of the existence of such an institution in the Hasmonean era. Jonathan's government had been transformed from that of a rebel chieftain into an organized polity supported by a representative council. Jonathan refers to a letter (quoted in vv. 19–23) sent to Onias I, high priest from 320 to 290 B.C. (Zeitlin), or to his grandson Onias II, second half of the third century B.C. (Goldstein), by Arius I, king of Sparta in 309–265 B.C. Jonathan asks the Spartans to renew the terms of "alliance and friendship" that the original correspondence had proffered. The letter accents the renewal of the Hasmonean alliance with Rome in view of Sparta's close relations with Rome. Of the two ambassadors mentioned in v. 16, Antipater's father may be the Jason who made the first alliance with Rome in 8:17. Both men appear again in 14:22, 24 and may have been members of diplomatic families.

The letter that purports to be a copy of the one the Spartans sent to Onias I or II (v. 7) is judged by most scholars to be inauthentic, although some accept its veracity (see Goldstein for arguments in favor of its authenticity). The claim of v. 21 that the Jews and Spartans are both descended from Abraham must have come from some lost Hellenistic work. The letter intended that the envoys who brought it would enlarge on the nature of Sparta, its culture and its people.

12:24–53, Trypho Captures Jonathan. The author returns to the narrative of chap. 11. Jonathan sought to avoid meeting the army of Demetrius II in his own territory, so he marched to the region of Hamath (modern Hama in Syria), known as the Amathitis, in the Orontes Valley. Goldstein's translation of 12:26, "were preparing to attack them," ignores the technical, military sense of Greek *tassontai.* Better is "were drawing up in formation to attack them [the Jews]" (cf. NRSV; Tedesche). The enemy used a ruse to avoid Jonathan's attack and escaped across the Eleutherus River. Failing to overtake the forces of Demetrius, Jonathan attacked a local Arab tribe.

The tribe of the Zabadeans probably gave their name to Zebdani, northwest of Damascus. Jonathan had mastered an empire that in the east extended as far as that of the United Monarchy under David and Solomon. At the same time Simon was actively consolidating control of the coastal plain (vv. 33–34). Joppa (Jaffa) had apparently not been garrisoned by Jonathan after he took it (see 10:76). The area was in danger of coming under the control of Demetrius II, whose stronghold was on the coastal plain of Phoenicia.

Jonathan was constrained to consult the elders before undertaking the various projects. These elders were probably the members of the *gerousia,* the council. Jonathan's status in Antiochus VI's empire allowed

him to fortify Jerusalem. He attempted to cut off the citadel (Akra), still occupied by the forces of Demetrius II, to starve the occupants out (v. 36). The wall of Jerusalem facing the Kidron Valley on the east was also repaired. Adida, which Simon fortified, is Hebrew Hadid (Ezra 2:33; Neh. 7:37), located less than four miles east-northeast of Lydda, on a hill above the plains of Judea.

Trypho offered to grant Jonathan Ptolemais (Acco). Although Demetrius I had proposed to give it to the Jews (10:39), they had rejected his entire offer. Its inhabitants had remained hostile to the Hasmoneans.

Jonathan entered Ptolemais with only a thousand men. Trypho had sent ahead orders to seize Jonathan and kill the rest. Trypho's men attempted to overtake and destroy the other two thousand of Jonathan's soldiers who had been left in Galilee, but they were able to withstand the attack. Jonathan's troops thought, however, that he had been killed, and so, on their return, all Israel mourned for him. 1 Macc. 12:53 indicates that both Seleucid pretenders, Demetrius II and Trypho, were now enemies of the Jews (Zeitlin).

13:1–16:24
The Rule of Simon

13:1–30, The Death of Jonathan. The death of Jonathan left the people shocked. Simon had to rally them to stand firm against the onslaught of Trypho. It is doubtful if 13:3–6 actually preserves the words of Simon. Rather, this speech is probably from the pen of the author. Simon is pictured as presuming his brother Jonathan to be dead. In response to his address, the people declare Simon to be *hegoumenos* (Gk.), "leader, chief." Jonathan had been designated *archonta kai hegoumenon,* "ruler and leader," in 9:30.

The walls of Jerusalem, which Jonathan had started to rebuild (12:36–37), were not yet complete, so Simon hastened to finish the work (13:10–11). Simon feared that the inhabitants of Joppa (Jaffa) would defect to Trypho, opening up for him the southern coastal plain. So he sent Jonathan son of Absalom to occupy it. He may have been the brother of Mattathias son of Absalom, favorably mentioned in 11:70.

When Trypho set out to invade Judah, taking the still living Jonathan with him, Simon confronted him from the fortified town of Adida (see 12:38). Again Trypho resorted to a ruse, claiming that he was holding Jonathan for nonpayment of debt. The money he claimed must have been either an unpaid fee of some kind or a tax Jonathan had failed to collect (Goldstein). Although Simon saw through the promises of Trypho, he had little choice but to comply, fearing a loss of popular support if he did not (13:17–18).

Trypho finally was ready to face Simon in the field. Trypho's army traveled through the lowlands from the south, but Simon blocked him at every point from entering the hill country to approach Jerusalem. Adora, where Trypho tried to circle around Simon's forces, is biblical Adoraim, about six miles southwest of Hebron. The men of the Akra were short of provisions as a result of the steps Jonathan had taken in 12:36. Their appeal to Trypho led him to finally chance cutting through, but at the last minute he was prevented by a snowstorm. Instead, he turned toward Gilead, where he killed Jonathan, probably out of frustration. Baskama, where he buried Jonathan, cannot be identified. It is curious that the people of the Akra, supporters of Demetrius II, turned to Trypho. If this report is accurate, it would indicate that now that Trypho had broken with Jonathan, they saw him as a potential ally.

Jonathan was disinterred and reinterred in Modein, where 1 Maccabees says that Mattathias (2:70) and Judah (9:19) and, as we see, Eleazar, John, and now Jonathan were buried (13:25–30). The elaborate tomb and monument have been explained by Goldstein as including motifs common in the Hellenistic period for commemorating victory in both land and sea battles.

13:31–53, Simon Brings Independence to Judea. Trypho now felt powerful enough to have the young king Antiochus VI, probably seven years old at the time, murdered. Livy relates that Trypho arranged to have the king's surgeons kill him while supposedly operating to remove a stone. Thus in 143 or 142 B.C. Trypho crowned himself king of the Seleucid empire ("Asia"). The chaos that ensued allowed Simon to intensify his efforts to fortify Judea.

In addition, Simon was now in an enviable diplomatic position. Trypho had violated his agreements with Simon, and his military and political position was deteriorating rapidly. Demetrius II was in need of support and seemed about to emerge victorious. Simon therefore sent emissaries to Demetrius to ask for tax relief in return for his loyalty. Demetrius agreed, citing his earlier grant of privileges to the Jews (11:30–37), which he now reconfirmed. In his letter, quoted in 13:36–40, Demetrius alluded only subtly to the Hasmonean support of Trypho and Antiochus VI. Most significantly, he granted the tax exemptions.

To the author, this tax relief was tantamount to the culmination of the Hasmonean quest for freedom from foreign domination. Finally, from 142 B.C., tribute would no longer be paid to the Seleucids. Accordingly, documents would henceforth be dated according to the high-priesthood, not according to the reigns of Seleucid rulers. Simon, we may conclude, had been elected to the high-priesthood after Jonathan's death. (On the titles granted to Simon, see commentary above on 10:51–66; 11:54–74.)

Gezer (Gazara) and the Akra were the two remaining Hellenistic strongholds Simon had to conquer. (The reading "Gaza" in the Greek text of 13:43 must be corrected with Josephus.) After conquering Gezer, he

set about turning it into a traditional Jewish town, expelling the Hellenistic pagans and destroying their idols, and, it seems, driving out hellenized Jews as well. He built a palace there, intending to guarantee his continued control of the region.

By 141 B.C., Jonathan's walls (12:36), as intended, had led to a serious food shortage in the Akra (13:49). Its inhabitants sued for peace and were expelled by Simon. The idols were also removed. As in the case of the conquest of Gezer, Simon and his men sang hymns of praise, probably psalms. They carried palm branches as symbols of victory. Indeed, this day was decreed a holiday and was listed in the *Megillat Ta'anit,* the Scroll of Fasting. Although Josephus claims that Simon razed the citadel, the account of 1 Maccabees is to be accepted. The author appends the remark that by this time John Hyrcanus, Simon's son, was ready to assume a role of leadership. He was appointed as military commander *(hegoumenon)* and lived in Gezer, while Simon took up residence in the recently conquered Akra in Jerusalem.

14:1–15, The Glory of Simon. Trypho was by now extremely weak. The rising Parthian empire had by 142–141 B.C. already taken Babylonia from the Seleucids. Demetrius II marched off to oppose that threat. The author interpreted this decision as an attempt to increase the size of his army so as to finally defeat Trypho (14:1). Arsaces VI (Mithradates I), king of Parthia in 171–138 B.C., was at this time in Hyrcania (near the Caspian Sea). He dispatched his generals, who soon took Demetrius captive. Other sources indicate that after he was exhibited as an object lesson for Parthia's subjects, Demetrius was later married to Mithradates' sister.

It is difficult to understand why a poem in praise of Simon appears at this point in the text (14:4–15). We would have expected it either at the end of chap. 13 or at the end of 14. The poem may originally have constituted the conclusion of the book, as Josephus ceases following 1 Maccabees in his account at this point. The poem praises Simon for his military exploits but, more important, for living in accord with the Torah and for bringing peace and prosperity to his people. In v. 15 we learn that he donated vessels to the Temple, a matter not alluded to elsewhere.

14:16–24, Alliances with Rome and Sparta. From vv. 16–17 it is clear that the rumors concerning Jonathan's death and Simon's accession circulated separately, so that the two events appear to have been separated by some time. In view of his still precarious position as high priest, an office in which the Seleucids had not yet confirmed him, Simon sought to gain the recognition of the allies of the Hasmoneans. Verse 18 reports that the Spartans wrote to Simon to renew the previously established alliance (see 12:5–23). The envoys mentioned in the Spartans' letter are the very same envoys who were sent by Jonathan to Sparta and Rome in 12:16–17. Simon relied on their previous experience and their personal contacts to ensure their success. Only Numenius proceeded on to Rome. The shield of gold he presented to the Romans is said to have weighed a thousand minas, over a thousand pounds (14:24).

14:25–49, The Great Assembly. In gratitude for the accomplishments of Simon and his family an assembly of the Jews promulgated a document in praise of Simon that was inscribed on bronze tablets and displayed on Mount Zion. The document was dated to September 13, 140 B.C. (Goldstein). There is one textual problem in v. 28. The NRSV translates "in Asaramel," taking Greek *asaramel* as a place-name. The Greek word may be a rendering of a Hebrew phrase, either *hasar 'am 'el,* "the courtyard of the people of God," or *sar 'am 'el,* "prince of the people of God." Goldstein and Zeitlin prefer to assume that the text is corrupt and to translate "and prince of God's People" (Goldstein), taking this phrase as a title given to Simon alongside that of high priest. The document was proclaimed in a great assembly. Although some scholars wish to see this as indicating the existence of an ongoing Sanhedrin, the occasion should be understood instead as an ad hoc gathering that occurred only on such major occasions as the official installation of a new high priest.

The first section of the document (vv. 29–34) recounts the glorious deeds of Simon and is in many ways a prose parallel to the poem in 14:4–15. In addition to matters already narrated in 1 Maccabees, we learn here of Simon's financial commitments to the liberation of his people. The passage stresses Simon's efforts to bring the entire country under Jewish control, not only Judea, but also the border town of Bethzur and the cities of the coastal plain.

Verse 35 states that Simon became leader and high priest before capturing the Akra (so chaps. 13–14). Indeed, this document shows that the "great assembly" that issued it was convened only to confirm the high-priesthood and temporal rule of Simon; Simon's status had already been recognized by Demetrius II (13:36) and by the people (13:42). This text claims that Simon's alliance with Rome led Demetrius II to recognize him. Yet the order of events in 1 Maccabees would place the Roman exchange after Demetrius II's letter. It is possible that Simon had dispatched his ambassadors to Rome immediately after the death of Jonathan and that he had secured a response before Demetrius II's letter. It is also possible that the author was confused about the chronology and drew this incorrect conclusion from the information before him.

The clause contained in 14:41–45 is the resolution that follows the series of "whereas" clauses in

vv. 29–40. These, therefore, are the new conditions bestowed by the assembly. Simon's high-priesthood is to be hereditary. Recognizing that he is not of the Zadokite line, the document provides that this status is to continue "until a true prophet shall arise." In addition, the document spells out his power over the Temple and the privileges to be extended to him by the people. Verse 45 concludes the document with a clause indicating the consequence of its violation. Goldstein suggests that "shall be liable to punishment" (NRSV) refers to the death penalty.

In 14:46–49 the text records that both the people and Simon officially accepted these conditions. Therefore, in accord with normal legal usage of the Hellenistic period, copies of the agreement were to be provided for both sides. The copy of the document for the people was to be set up in public (perhaps in the Temple; cf. v. 27), while that for the Hasmoneans was to be deposited in the Temple archives (so Zeitlin).

15:1–14, Simon and Antiochus VII. Antiochus VII Euergetes (reigned 138–129 B.C.) was known as "Sidetes," since he grew up at Side in Pamphylia, in southern Asia Minor. He was the son of Demetrius I and younger brother of Demetrius II. After his brother was captured by Arsaces (see 14:2–3), he attempted to gain control of the Seleucid kingdom for himself. His main obstacle was Trypho, who was still in control of much of Syria. Naturally, he turned to Simon to enlist him as an ally. The "islands of the sea," from which Antiochus wrote, is probably a reference to Rhodes, where Antiochus received news of his brother's capture, according to the ancient historian Appian (*Syrian Wars* 68). He confirmed all the privileges accorded to Simon by his brother Demetrius II and the other Seleucid pretenders. The granting of rights of coinage was new and meant that Simon could produce bronze coins. This clearly represented an additional step in the direction of independence. These promises, however, were apparently abrogated (see 15:28–31). In 138 B.C. Antiochus VII arrived in the Seleucid territory. He was unable at first to make any headway until the advisers of Cleopatra III Thea, originally the wife of Alexander Balas (10:58), then of Demetrius II (11:9), advised her to throw her lot in with Antiochus VII and marry him. This alliance resulted in the mass desertion described in 15:10 (Goldstein, based on Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 13.221–22). Trypho took refuge in Dor, nine miles north of Caesarea, an ancient Phoenician port that had remained faithful to him. Excavations at Dor have revealed evidence of this battle. The account of this siege is continued below in v. 25.

15:15–24, Renewal of Ties with Rome. Goldstein places this section between 14:24 and 14:25, and, indeed, in its present place it interrupts the description of the siege and capture of Dor. Further, the addressing of a letter to Demetrius II (15:22) can only be possible before the Romans learned of his capture by the Parthians. The consul Lucius, named as author of the letter in v. 16, has been identified by Goldstein as Lucius Caecilius Metellus, who was consul in 142. Goldstein considers this letter to be chronologically earlier than its place in the book. Zeitlin identifies the author as Lucius Calpurnius Piso, 140–139 B.C., assuming the text to be in order. In any case, this consul wrote letters to numerous kings and countries, and a copy of one such letter was delivered to Simon. The acceptance of the gold shield (see 14:24) indicated Roman willingness to renew ties with the Hasmoneans. New to this document is the granting of the right of extradition to Simon. (For the identification of the kings and localities, see Goldstein and Zeitlin.)

15:25–16:10, Defeat of Cendebeus. Verse 25 returns to the narration of the siege of Dor, after the interruption of vv. 15–24. Although there are some difficulties with the translation of v. 25, the verse seems to refer to a siege after the one Antiochus laid in v. 14. Simon, believing that he had entered into an alliance with Antiochus VII, attempted to come to his aid. By this time, after his marriage to Cleopatra III Thea and the attendant alliances, Antiochus no longer felt that he needed Simon, so he took a harder line. His envoy demanded the return of the Seleucid strongholds Simon had taken, seeing them as falling outside the privileges granted by Demetrius II. Further, he demanded the contraction of the Hasmonean realm to the original province of Judea, long outgrown by the exploits of Jonathan and Simon. Antiochus's true colors were shown when he demanded payment of tribute in lieu of the return of all these territories.

Athenobius, the king's envoy, delivered this message to Simon in person (v. 32). Simon argued that he had the right by law to reconquer Jewish territory and to protect his people from their enemies. For the gold and silver service that Athenobius observed, see 11:58, where Antiochus VI granted Jonathan the right to use such vessels. Simon's offer to pay only one-fifth of the tribute demanded (v. 35) left Athenobius and Antiochus VII offended.

Meanwhile, Trypho had succeeded in running the naval blockade (15:14), escaping through Ptolemais (Acco) to Orthosia, a few miles north of Tripolis. He then moved on to Apamea, where he met his end, perhaps by suicide, after being besieged by Antiochus VII (Goldstein). Antiochus VII appointed Cendebeus commander of the coastal region and instructed him to invade Judea (vv. 38–39). Moving down the coast, Cendebeus first came to Jamnia (Yavneh), where he attacked the Jewish population. From there he proceeded to fortify Kedron (biblical Gederoth [Josh. 15:41], modern Katra, southeast of Ekron), using it as a guerrilla post from which to menace Judea.

John Hyrcanus, Simon's son, had been appointed commander of the army and was headquartered at

Gazara (see 13:53). He must have seen firsthand the havoc wreaked by Cendebeus. Perhaps he realized that Simon's age was hindering him from taking decisive action. Simon is pictured in 16:1–3 as realizing his failing and passing this responsibility on to his sons Judah and John.

The subject of v. 4 is ambiguous. The text says only "he selected . . ." The translators of the NRSV assume that John Hyrcanus is meant. Goldstein, apparently following Josephus (*Antiquities of the Jews* 13.226–27), assumes that Simon is the subject. That assumption raises problems, since Simon had just withdrawn from command in v. 3. The wording of v. 9, however, raises problems for the assumption that John is the subject of the preceding verses. If John were the subject, v. 9 might be expected to read "Judah, his brother," whereas the text has "Judah, the brother of John." On balance, though, John is the more likely subject. The battle described in vv. 5–10 probably took place near the brook of Ayyalon, a short distance from Modein (Goldstein). The use of cavalry by the Hasmonean forces (v. 7) is not mentioned earlier in 1 Maccabees. Placing the cavalry in the middle of his formation was certainly not a usual tactic. In any case, although Judah was wounded, the enemy was routed by the Hasmonean army.

16:11–24, The Death of Simon and Accession of John Hyrcanus. Ptolemy, Simon's son-in-law, was *strategos* of the region of Jericho. In 134 B.C. he succeeded in treacherously murdering Simon, as well as his sons Judah and Mattathias. The site of the murder, Dok, is probably to be identified with Jebel ed-Duq, near the spring 'Ain Duq, some three to four miles northwest of Jericho.

Ptolemy asked Antiochus VII to support him, offering to reduce the country to the status it held before Jonathan and Simon's military and diplomatic successes. His attempt to have John Hyrcanus assassinated was foiled, however.

The author concludes in the style of the book of Kings. John ruled and served as high priest from 134 to 104 B.C. No chronicles of the high-priesthood as described in vv. 23–24 are known to have existed, although much historical material on the reign of John Hyrcanus is preserved in the writings of Josephus.

Bibliography

Bickerman, E. J. *The God of the Maccabees.* Translated by H. Moehring. Leiden: Brill, 1979.

Doran, R. "The First Book of Maccabees." *New Interpreter's Bible,* vol. 4. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1996. Pp. 1–178.

Goldstein, J. A. *I Maccabees.* Anchor Bible, 41. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1983.

Hengel, M. *Judaism and Hellenism.* 2 vols. Translated by J. Bowden. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1974.

Tcherikover, V. *Hellenistic Civilization and the Jews.* Translated by S. Applebaum. Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 1966.

Tedesche, S., and S. Zeitlin. *The First Book of Maccabees.* New York: Harper, 1950.

2 Maccabees

LAWRENCE H. SCHIFFMAN

INTRODUCTION

For a discussion of the name of 2 Maccabees and its historical background, *see* 1 Maccabees, Introduction.

Composition and Contents

2 Maccabees is an abridgment of a lost five-volume work by an otherwise unknown author, Jason of Cyrene, North Africa. Both Jason's history and the abridgment were composed in Greek, and the present book exhibits a refined rhetorical style. 2 Maccabees begins its account in the time of Seleucus IV (187–175 B.C.) and details the events leading up to the Maccabean revolt (→ Maccabees; Seleucids, The). From this book we learn of the Hellenistic reform and of the various parties of Jews whose actions ultimately led to the decrees of Antiochus IV (175–164 B.C.). 2 Maccabees then continues to recount the career of Judah the Maccabee (Gk., Judas Maccabeus), ending after his defeat of Nicanor in 161 B.C. The entire span of the period covered by the book is approximately fifteen years.

It seems most likely that the abridger worked directly from the works of Jason of Cyrene, shortening Jason's lengthy text into this small book. Either he or a later hand added the two letters in 2 Macc. 1:1–2:18. It is difficult to judge the full extent of the work of Jason. In view of its five-volume length, it is difficult to believe that it would only have been a more detailed history of these fifteen years. It may be that the abridger selected a period of great importance to him and prepared an abridgment and adaptation of Jason's account of that period. As to the letters, there are a number of indications that they were added by a third hand, since they are not fully integrated into the text as it now stands. They may have been added in an attempt to propagate the observance of the Festival of Hanukkah (→ Dedication, Feast of), which celebrated the purification of the Temple by Judah in 164 B.C. A few other additions were certainly made by either the abridger or some other editor.

Sources

2 Maccabees quotes a variety of Seleucid documents. These, presumably, were already present in the work of Jason. The quoted documents are generally regarded as authentic, even if sometimes incorrectly placed in the history. Identifying other sources used by the author is more difficult. Because of the extensive similarities between 1 and 2 Maccabees, it has been claimed that the author of 2 Maccabees used 1 Maccabees as a source, but this is unlikely. There are too many discrepancies between the two works. The possibility that both 1 and 2 Maccabees had a so-called common source raises similar problems. Although the details remain speculative, we should probably assume that some of the sources of 1 and 2 Maccabees were common, such as a biography of Judah, while other materials were distinct to each work.

Relation to 1 Maccabees

The historical periods covered by 1 and 2 Maccabees differ significantly. Both begin with the events of the Hellenistic crisis (in the 170s B.C.), but 2 Maccabees ends its account with Judah's victory over Nicanor in 161 B.C., while 1 Maccabees continues until the death of Judah's brother and successor, Simon, in 134 B.C. Although much of the account given in 2 Maccabees agrees with that of 1 Maccabees, a number of small differences exist. The prime example is the placement of the rededication of the Temple after the death of Antiochus IV, whereas according to 1 Maccabees it occurred before Antiochus's death. Opinion remains divided as to which book preserves the correct sequence, although a Babylonian chronicle supports the order of 1 Maccabees. Similarly, the account 2 Maccabees gives of the events leading up to the revolt is far more accurate and detailed than the sketchy and incorrect summary in 1 Maccabees 1.

Dating

It is generally assumed that Jason used oral reports in his history, and, therefore, that he wrote not long after 161 B.C. Goldstein, however, argues that Jason wrote in about 90 B.C. and that he sought to refute the pro-Hasmonean bias of 1 Maccabees. This theory seems overly speculative and unlikely, however. It is certain that the abridgment was made before the Roman conquest of 63 B.C. and probably before 124 B.C., since that

is the date of the first letter appended to the book (2 Macc. 1:1–9).

Theology

Jason or the summarizer emphasizes certain religious ideas: the centrality of Temple worship, supernatural intervention in human affairs, division of body and soul, and the bodily resurrection of the pious dead. He seeks to demonstrate several times that God punishes evildoers, measure for measure, with punishments that point out the wickedness of their deeds. Because history is a manifestation of divine justice and retribution, the misfortunes of the Jewish people result from their own transgressions. Hence, the text gives a full account of the events leading up to the revolt. The punishments Israel must suffer are designed to bring it back to the right path and are a manifestation of God's love for his people.

Circulation

The first-century historian Josephus apparently did not know 2 Maccabees, as it is not used in his account in *The Antiquities of the Jews* (→ Josephus). The book of 4 Maccabees, however, is clearly dependent on 2 Maccabees. Among the church fathers 2 Maccabees was well known, especially because of the descriptions of martyrdom that became paradigmatic for the Christian church.

COMMENTARY

1:1–2:32
Introductory Materials

1:1–9, Letter to the Jews of Egypt. Although preserved now only in a Greek translation, the letter to the Jews of Egypt was originally written in Hebrew or Aramaic. Even in translation the introductory part of the letter (vv. 1–6) reflects the standard epistolary style of Hebrew and Aramaic letters from the Hasmonean period. Verse 1, the salutation, is notable for the prominence given to Jerusalem. The series of pious prayers in vv. 2–6 are conventional good wishes, included as a formality, and should not be taken to reflect particular problems among the Egyptian Jews or subtle criticisms by the senders that the Jews of Egypt are not doing the will of God "with a strong heart and a willing spirit" (v. 3, NRSV).

The letter is a specimen of a well-known type, a festal letter, sent from Jerusalem to inform Jews in outlying areas of the correct way to observe an upcoming holiday. Such documents are attested from biblical times (see 2 Chron. 30:1–9; Esther 9:20–23) through the Talmudic period (*b. Sanh.* 11a–b). An actual copy of such a festal letter was recovered among the papyrus documents of the Egyptian Jewish colony of Elephantine (near modern Aswan). That letter, which was sent in 419 B.C., called on the Jews of Elephantine to observe the approaching festival of Passover.

The present letter, which is dated ca. 124 B.C. (1:9), quotes an earlier festal letter (in vv. 7–9) that had been written during the reign of Demetrius II, in 143 B.C. Apparently, in 143 the Judeans had appealed to their Egyptian brethren to observe Hanukkah, and now, some twenty years later, they are again sending a festal letter to remind their coreligionists of the holiday and its significance. Verses 7–8 give a highly abbreviated version of the Maccabean crisis and its resolution. Jason, who is mentioned in v. 7 as the source of the troubles, had become high priest in 175 B.C. (His Hellenistic reform is described in 4:7–22.) Jason's rebellion against "the kingdom" (1:7) probably refers to his usurpation of the high-priestly office. The burning of the gates of the Temple (v. 8) is mentioned in 1 Macc. 4:38. The shedding of "innocent blood" with which Jason is charged may refer to the murder of circumcised infants along with their mothers and other members of their families (1 Macc. 1:60–61). Although Jason was not directly involved in these killings, the author of the letter traces ultimate responsibility to him. The author's understanding of the means by which the crisis was resolved is significant. The allusion in 2 Macc. 1:8 to the prayers of the community and God's help totally ignores the role of the Hasmoneans in overthrowing the Hellenizers. In the aftermath of the victory and the cleansing of the sanctuary, the regular sacrificial worship was restored. Verse 8b is a summary of the events described in 1 Macc. 4:36–51 and 2 Macc. 10:3. After quoting the letter of 143 B.C., the present letter goes on to call for the observance of Hanukkah (1:9). It is here designated "the feast of booths [Tabernacles, Sukkoth] in the month of Chislev [November-December]," since the first Hanukkah celebration had been celebrated in the manner of Sukkoth. The Maccabean soldiers had been unable to celebrate Sukkoth properly at its appointed time (10:5–7; cf. 1 Macc. 4:52–59, where no mention of Sukkoth appears).

1:10–2:18, Second Letter to the Jews of Egypt. The salutation of the letter states that it was written by the Jews of Judea and Jerusalem, as well as the council of elders (Gk. *gerousia*) and Judah. Although it is undated, the letter claims to have been written shortly before the purification of the Temple, i.e., in 164 B.C. (1:18; 2:16). In fact, there is reason to believe that this letter is a much later composition. (See the lengthy argument of Goldstein, who dates the letter to 103/102 B.C.) The letter is addressed to Aristobulus, a Jewish philosopher who flourished during the time of Ptolemy VI Philometor (reigned 180–145 B.C.). There

is no independent confirmation that Aristobulus served as a teacher of Ptolemy VI, though the fourth-century A.D. church historian Eusebius does preserve extracts of Aristobulus's philosophical treatise on the Torah, which he dedicated to Ptolemy VI. The letter further identifies him as a member of the family of "anointed priests," i.e., of the high-priestly Oniad family. His lineage and his relationship to Ptolemy made him a key figure in the Egyptian Jewish community, and the letter was therefore addressed to him.

The letter thanks God for taking the side of the Judeans against Antiochus IV Epiphanes and for bringing about Antiochus's death at the hands of the priests of Nanea (vv. 11–17). Nanea was a goddess of Mesopotamian origin, identified by the Greeks with Aphrodite and Artemis, whose temple was in Elam. Antiochus feigned participation in a sacred marriage ritual in the hope of plundering the temple treasury. According to the letter, Nanea's priests killed Antiochus, a divine punishment for the robbery of temples. According to 1 Macc. 6:1–16 and 2 Macc. 9:1–28, Antiochus was not killed by the priests of the temple, but died of illness sometime after his failed attempt to plunder the pagan temple.

This letter also seeks to enlist the Jews of Egypt in the observance of Hanukkah. It is to be celebrated "as Days of Tabernacles [Booths, Sukkoth] and Days of the Fire, as when Nehemiah, the builder of the Temple and the altar, brought sacrifices" (Goldstein; cf. Tedesche). The author of the letter means that Hanukkah is to be celebrated in a manner like that of Sukkoth and of the Day of the Fire. Nehemiah is here given credit for what the Bible records in the name of Zerubbabel (Ezra 3:1–13). Although there is some late evidence that the two figures were identified or confused with one another (see *b. Sanh.* 38a), Ben Sira, writing in the early second century B.C., clearly distinguishes the two men and their accomplishments (Sir. 49:11–13).

2 Macc. 1:19–35 gives an account of the origin of the festival of the Day of the Fire, a celebration not mentioned in any other text. The author of the letter recounts a legend in which the priests of the First Temple hid fire from the altar in a dry well when they went into exile. (The reference to Persia [v. 19] as the place of the Jews' exile is an anachronism. Babylonia, to which the Jews had been exiled in 587 B.C., became part of the Persian Empire only in 539.) The fire, which changed to the highly flammable liquid naphtha (vv. 20, 36), was retrieved at Nehemiah's direction and put on the altar of the newly rebuilt Second Temple. Its spontaneous combustion served to authenticate the altar and its renewed sacrificial service. Although otherwise quite unknown, the festival of the Day of the Fire was presumably commemorated by the lighting of lamps or fires. For this reason, the author of the letter uses it as a paradigm for Hanukkah. The entire story may have been influenced by familiarity with the role and transportation of sacred fires in Zoroastrianism (see Goldstein).

The author puts a prayer of supplication into the mouth of the people (vv. 24–29). Prayers of a similar nature are known from the Dead Sea Scrolls and from rabbinic sources. The language of the prayer contains many biblical echoes (cf., e.g., Exod. 34:6–7; Neh. 9:31–33). Goldstein also notes that 1:24–25 resembles the opening benediction of the Amidah, a traditional prayer it was obligatory for every Jew to recite. After the prayer, as the sacrifice was burning, the Levites (here called "priests") sang psalms. Verses 31–32 describe some further use of the naphtha to make fire, but unfortunately the Greek text of these verses is obscure and cannot be translated with confidence. The miraculous nature of the events is recognized by the Persian king, who, himself a fire worshiper, established a shrine at that location. The author of the letter concludes with a folk etymology of the word "naphtha," claiming that it is derived from Hebrew *niftar,* "was exempted, freed," which he takes to mean "purified." The word actually comes from Akkadian *naptu,* "petroleum."

The narrative about Nehemiah and the miraculous fire provides the occasion for the author to introduce other legendary traditions associated with Jeremiah, whom the author claims was the person who ordered the fire of the altar to be taken and hidden during the Exile. The author of the letter makes repeated claims that what he says about Jeremiah is to be found in authoritative texts (2:1, 4). No other writing preserved from antiquity contains the legend of Jeremiah and the altar fire, however. Similarly, there is no other known source for the claim that Jeremiah gave the departing exiles a copy of the Torah (2:2a), although the warnings against idolatry (2:2b) are a reference to the contents of the apocryphal Letter of Jeremiah. There was an ancient tradition that Jeremiah hid the Ark of the covenant when the Babylonians sacked Jerusalem. Although the earliest version of the story is known only from the first-century B.C. Greco-Roman historian Alexander Polyhistor, he clearly derived his information from a Jewish source, perhaps Eupolemus, the author of a book entitled *Concerning the Kings in Judea.* This Eupolemus is perhaps the same man sent by Judah as an ambassador to Rome (see 1 Macc. 8). The claims of 2 Macc. 2:1–8, that Jeremiah also hid the tabernacle and the incense altar on Mount Nebo, near the place where Moses died, go beyond the information Alexander Polyhistor relates. All in all, 2 Macc. 1:10–2:18 reminds us that a lively literary tradition about the legendary accomplishments of various biblical figures developed during the Hellenistic period, even though most of these texts are now lost.

In 2:9–12 the author seeks to point out the parallelism between Moses' dedication of the altar and Solomon's. Both shared the miraculous, spontaneous consumption of the sacrifices, as had also occurred in

the time of Nehemiah (2 Macc. 1:22). 2 Macc. 2:11, however, is enigmatic. The quoted words of Moses, which appear nowhere in Scripture, refer to a dispute between Moses and Aaron in Lev. 10:16–20 as to whether the meat of the sin offering was to be eaten by the priests. But it is not clear how Moses' words are to be related to that dispute or to the dedication ceremonies of the tabernacle and the Solomonic Temple, which are the subject of vv. 9–10, 12. The author understood 1 Kings 8:65 and 2 Chron. 7:9 to indicate that Solomon had celebrated an eight-day dedication ceremony. Goldstein is no doubt correct that the author meant in 2 Macc. 2:11 to establish that the eighth day (see Lev. 9:1) was part of the dedication ceremony. To this end he cited the requirement that the meat of the sin offering must be eaten on the eighth day as well (cf. Exod. 29:33–37). Hence the author asserts that the dedications of Moses and Solomon, like that of Judah—the festival of Hanukkah—were celebrated for eight days. He has therefore cited precedent for both aspects of Hanukkah, the use of fire, as exemplified in 1:19–36, and the eight-day period of celebration, in 2:9–12.

In the conclusion to the letter (2:13–16), Nehemiah is said to have celebrated the rededication of the Temple for eight days, a claim that cannot be paralleled from any other source. Nehemiah's founding of a library (v. 13) is also unknown. The letter informs the Jews of Egypt that Judah also collected all the sacred writings Antiochus IV had attempted to destroy (see 1 Macc. 1:56). The materials listed in v. 13 as the library of Nehemiah must, in fact, have been the contents of the protocanon reassembled by Judah. The author concludes the letter with the hope that the Jews of Egypt will join in the celebration of Hanukkah and that they will soon be gathered to the land of Israel.

2:19–32, The Abridger's Prologue. It is here with 2:19–32 that the book proper begins. The two letters (1:1–2:19) were placed at the beginning of the already complete abridgment. Since the book is an abridgment of the five-volume history by Jason of Cyrene, the author begins with a brief description of that work, the only information regarding it that we have. Jason's history was probably written in the mid-second century B.C. At the outset the abridger makes clear that Jason's emphasis was on Judah and his exploits. The abridger claims to have altered nothing, only to have shortened the work and to have made it more accessible to general readers. Such self-serving claims are common in the introductions of classical histories and must be taken with a grain of salt.

3:1–7:42
Background of the Revolt

3:1–4:6, Onias III and Simon. The history begins with a description of the idyllic conditions prevailing during the high-priesthood of Onias III, son of Simon the Just, who was high priest before 175 B.C. Contributions to the Temple had in fact been made by the Ptolemies (during the third century B.C.) and by the Seleucid king Antiochus III (reigned 233–187 B.C.). Seleucus IV Philopator (reigned 187–175 B.C., son of Antiochus III), continued this practice. Later sources reflect a debate as to who should pay for the daily sacrifices. The Pharisees insisted that the expense be paid from public funds, while the Sadducees required that the high priest defray the expenses. In any case, all agreed that Jews had to donate the daily sacrifices, although it was permitted for non-Jews to contribute voluntary sacrifices or funds for the upkeep of the Temple. It is most probable, then, that Seleucus IV contributed to the general upkeep of the Temple.

Verses 4–7 introduce the conflict that sets in motion the plot of 2 Maccabees. Unfortunately, textual problems complicate the identification of two of the protagonists of this section. Although the Greek manuscripts describe Simon as "of the tribe of Benjamin" (NRSV), Latin and Armenian texts have "from the [priestly] clan of Bilgah" (Goldstein). (The clan of Bilgah was condemned by later tradition for events that took place during the Maccabean revolt [*m. Sukk.* 8:8; *t. Sukk.* 4:28].) It is impossible that Simon's brother Menelaus could have served as high priest (see 2 Macc. 4:23–24) if he was of the tribe of Benjamin, since priests had to be of the Aaronidic clan of the tribe of Levi. The reading "Bilgah" is therefore to be preferred (Tcherikover, pp. 401–2). Apollonius (3:5) is understood by the Latin versions to be "son of Tharseas" (so Goldstein), although some commentators, in light of the appearance of an Apollonius son of Menestheus with the same office in 4:4, 21, have taken the text to mean that he came from Tarsus (so NRSV; Tedesche). Simon was serving as the administrator of the Temple. If he was a priest, his office was probably identical with that known in rabbinic sources as *segan ha-kohanim*, "prefect of the priests," a title for the second in command below the high priest. The quarrel between Simon and Onias III concerned the office of market supervisor, to which Simon wanted to be appointed. This official in Greek cities was responsible for inspecting the quality of merchandise, licensing merchants to sell in a particular market, and recording legal transactions. The Temple funds about which Simon informed Apollonius were those of private individuals deposited for safekeeping with the Temple. Simon argued (v. 6) that these could be appropriated without committing the horrible sacrilege of plundering a temple. Since the Seleucid kings were frequently short of money, the situation presented a tempting opportunity.

In claiming that Heliodorus's entire tour of inspection was a cloak for his plan to plunder the Temple (v. 8), the author undoubtedly reflects his own perspective more than the facts of the case. Probably Heliodorus was on a tour through the province, and, as

part of his business in Judea, intended to confiscate the money. When confronted by Heliodorus, Onias III identified a substantial sum as belonging to Hyrcanus, son of Joseph son of Tobias (v. 11). The Tobiads had been loyal to the Ptolemies until the conquest of Palestine by Antiochus III in 202–198 B.C. The other Tobiads switched allegiance to the Seleucids, while Hyrcanus took refuge in the Transjordan and remained a supporter of the Ptolemies. The fact that the Temple accepted private deposits from a sworn enemy of the Seleucid realm and that Onias III could relate this so casually led Heliodorus to move ahead with his plans.

Contrary to what Simon claimed (v. 6), the Jews saw Heliodorus's act as a sacrilege, even though the funds were those of private individuals. The sanctity of the Temple was supposed to render the deposits inviolable (v. 15). We can well imagine that many Jerusalem citizens who had their money there may have faced the prospect of economic ruin. The highly dramatic and emotional description of the people's distress in vv. 14–21 is characteristic of the author's style of history writing.

2 Macc. 3:24–29, as already observed by Bickerman (pp. 172–90), is a conflation of two different versions of how God intervened to protect his sanctuary. Verses 24–25 and 29 describe how a horse and rider, visible to everyone, attacked Heliodorus and left him and his bodyguards helpless. According to vv. 26–28, he is beaten by two young men who appear only to him, while his guards are unable to assist him. (The two young men reappear in v. 33, where they attribute Heliodorus's recovery to the intercession of Onias III.) Both of these versions have parallels in Greek literature. Apparently, the author of 2 Maccabees had two sources before him and wove the two versions into his composition.

Modern, rationalistic commentators have suggested that Onias III may have perpetrated a ruse on Heliodorus. Others suggest that in reality some diplomatic or financial accommodation was reached. Whatever may have happened, Heliodorus was forced to retreat from his plan. God's power had been demonstrated (see vv. 37–39), and the people of Jerusalem rejoiced. The author tells us that Heliodorus was revived through the agency of Onias, who offered what must have been a burnt offering on his behalf. Upon his recovery, Heliodorus brought a freewill offering as was permitted for non-Jews, took leave of Onias III, and returned home. There he testified to the greatness of God and his protection of Israel. The author of 2 Maccabees uses this account of Heliodorus to present the theme of the entire book: "He who has his dwelling in heaven watches over that place himself and brings it aid, and he strikes and destroys those who come to do it injury" (v. 39, NRSV).

Simon, as the true instigator of Heliodorus's abortive attempt to pillage the deposits in the Temple, sought to shift the guilt to Onias III, his rival. The sympathies of the author are not in doubt. He presents Onias III in the most favorable light (vv. 1–6), undoubtedly obscuring a political situation that was in reality much more complex. Simon had a powerful ally in the person of the governor, Apollonius son of Menestheus, who is perhaps to be identified with Apollonius of Tarsus (see commentary above on 3:1–4:6 [3:5]). Onias found it necessary to seek a personal interview with the king. Although we do not hear further about Simon, Onias seems to have remained permanently at Antioch (see v. 33).

4:7–50, The Hellenistic Reform. Seleucus IV died on September 3, 175 B.C. The ancient historian Appian claims that he was killed in a plot hatched by Heliodorus. Whether or not Appian's information is correct, Heliodorus himself was then driven out by supporters of the successor, Antiochus IV Epiphanes. 2 Maccabees is less interested in Seleucid dynastic politics than in the change in the Jewish high-priesthood that occurred shortly after the accession of Antiochus IV. Although Onias III was still alive, his brother Jason bribed Antiochus IV not only to appoint him high priest, but also to allow him to institute the Hellenistic reform that would change the legal status of Jerusalem and reconstitute it as a Greek city, or *polis*. Among other things, this meant the establishment of two central public institutions, the gymnasium and the *ephebeion*. 1 Macc. 1:14 mentions only the gymnasium, an educational and athletic institution. Yet the *ephebeion* was also central to the Hellenistic way of life. (The NRSV's "a body of youth" for Greek *ephebeion* in 4:9 is too vague.) The *ephebeion* was an organization that provided civic, military, moral, and literary training for males within the walls of the gymnasium. Ephebic education opened to the "graduate" participation in the economic and social advantages of the Hellenistic world. In Jerusalem, the *ephebeion* was intended to engender widespread cultural change. The decision to reorganize the city of Jerusalem as a Hellenistic *polis* to be called Antioch and to enroll its citizens as Antiochenes was intended to effect the corresponding political change. Jason and his supporters sought to hellenize Jerusalem and, by extension, the entirety of Judea.

In setting up the *polis*, Jason abolished the decree of Antiochus III that had guaranteed the Jews the right to live according to the laws of the Torah and their ancestral way of life (Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 12.138–46). This decree had been negotiated by John, whose son Eupolemus negotiated the treaty between Judah and the Romans (1 Macc. 8:17). The gymnasium was located immediately below the *acropolis*, which may designate either the Temple Mount or the Akra, the citadel (Goldstein; see also 2 Macc. 4:14, which shows that the Temple and the gymnasium were in close proximity). In the Greek gymnasium, the exercises were performed naked, the participants wearing

only the *petasos*, a broad-rimmed hat worn for protection from the sun. The report of the removal of circumcision (by epispasm) in 1 Macc. 1:15 suggests that Jewish youth also trained naked.

Although Jason is castigated by the author as wicked and as an illegitimate high priest (since Onias III was still alive and, technically, high priest), he also reports that there was considerable popular enthusiasm for Jason's reforms. Hellenism (this author is the first to use the term) must have already become influential even among elements of the priesthood well before the Hellenistic reform. The author of 2 Maccabees is fond of stating explicitly the moral lessons he wishes readers to learn from his narration. In vv. 16–17 he places the blame for the persecutions of Antiochus IV on the hellenizing tendencies of elements of the Jewish population, which he characterizes as "irreverence to the divine laws" (v. 17, NRSV).

The Greek games of Tyre were held every four years, although it is not possible to identify the exact date of the games mentioned in v. 18. They were of sufficient importance for Antiochus IV to attend. The games were dedicated to the chief god of Tyre, Phoenician Melqart, who was identified with the Greek deity Hercules (or Heracles). Fees paid by participants were used for sacrifices in honor of the god. Unwilling to violate Jewish law and participate in pagan worship, even indirectly, the envoys whom Jason had sent with the money asked that their funds not be used for sacrifices, but instead be applied to the building of galleys. Jewish attitudes about such matters were far from uniform. The Jewish author Eupolemus (probably to be identified with the Eupolemus mentioned in 1 Macc. 8:17 as the close associate of Judah the Maccabee and negotiator of the friendship treaty with Rome) noted with pride in his book *Concerning the Kings of Judea* that Solomon had sent a golden pillar to Hiram of Tyre "which is now set up in the temple of Zeus in Tyre." Although it is highly unlikely that there is historical substance to the claim, what is interesting is that Eupolemus evidently did not think the gift religiously improper.

In vv. 21–22 the author describes one final vignette of Jason's term as high priest, the visit of Antiochus to Jerusalem and his welcome by Jason and the city. The background to the visit is as follows.

Apollonius (cf. v. 4; commentary above on 3:1–4:6 [3.5]) attended a royal celebration of Ptolemy VI Philometor (ruled 180–145 B.C.) that took place in about 172 B.C., when the king was fourteen years old. Cleopatra, mother of Ptolemy VI and sister of Antiochus IV, had recently died. As a result, the Ptolemaic house now had second thoughts about the peace treaty it had signed with Antiochus III in 192 B.C. This treaty had been sealed by the marriage of Cleopatra, the daughter of Antiochus III, to Ptolemy V Epiphanes. When Antiochus IV learned of this change of heart on the part of the Ptolemaic government, he moved southward, along the coastal plain (Joppa is modern Jaffa, south of Tel Aviv) to forestall any designs on Palestine that young Ptolemy VI's advisers might have. In this connection, Antiochus IV visited Jerusalem.

Three years after Jason's accession as high priest and during the same year as Antiochus's visit to Jerusalem (172 B.C.), Menelaus traveled to the king. The Greek of v. 24 is ambiguous as to whether Menelaus flattered the king or exaggerated his own importance. Like his brother Simon, he was a priest of the house of Bilgah (see commentary above on 3:1–4:6 [3:4–7]). In any case, he bought the high-priesthood by offering to raise the yearly tribute to 660 silver talents, a sum he was soon unable to pay. Jason's flight to Ammon (4:26) may have been to the fortress of Hyrcanus the Tobiad. Lysimachus now held the post occupied by his brother Simon in 3:4. When the commander of the Akra, who represented the interest of the Seleucid monarchy in Judea, was unable to get payment from Menelaus, the two of them were summoned before Antiochus IV. Lysimachus, the brother of Menelaus, was left in charge as Menelaus's deputy.

But the king was not in residence in Antioch, having left to put down a rebellion in Tarsus and Mallus, cities in Cilicia, in Asia Minor. Menelaus attempted to settle his affairs with Andronicus, the official Antiochus had left in charge, by using sacred vessels to pay Andronicus the tribute he owed to Antiochus IV. Onias III, the legitimate high priest, who had been living in Antioch since 175 B.C., took himself to the temple of Apollo and Artemis, located five miles outside of Antioch at Daphne. Temples were considered places of asylum in the Hellenistic world. From there he condemned the sacrileges of Menelaus. Although Josephus offers contradictory reports (*Jewish War* 1.33; 7.423), it does indeed appear that Onias III was killed by Andronicus at the instigation of Menelaus. Although the author of 2 Maccabees claims that Antiochus IV executed Andronicus for that deed, Andronicus actually was executed for killing the child Antiochus, son of Seleucus IV. The author may have placed Jewish affairs at center stage and, hence, misinterpreted the execution (cf. Goldstein). The melodramatic style of the author is again evident in his account of Antiochus's grief at Onias's murder and his rage at Andronicus (vv. 36–38). The plundering of the Temple vessels was such a great offense that it led to rioting in Jerusalem and, eventually, to the killing of Lysimachus (v. 42).

It is not possible to tell if Menelaus was taken to trial at Tyre from Antioch or if he had already returned home before he was summoned. The accusation that Menelaus had plundered the Jerusalem Temple was put forward by members of the *gerousia*, the council of elders. Menelaus again appealed to bribery (v. 45). Ptolemy son of Dorymenes, who acted on Menelaus's behalf, is probably the governor of Coele Syria and Phoenicia in 8:8. In 1 Macc. 3:38 he is chosen by Lysias

to fight Judah, along with Nicanor and Gorgias. (He is probably not to be identified with Ptolemy Macron [10:12], who is reported to have been well disposed toward the Jews.) Because of the intervention of Ptolemy son of Dorymenes, Antiochus IV decided to acquit Menelaus and to execute the members of the *gerousia* who had pressed charges. The author compares the "justice" of Antiochus unfavorably with that of the Scythians, a tribe from what is now southern Russia with a reputation for excessive brutality.

5:1–27, Antiochus IV and the Desecration of the Temple. 1 Macc. 1:20 dates Antiochus's plundering of the Jerusalem Temple to 169 B.C. Yet his second campaign against Egypt, which is associated with the attack on the Temple in 2 Maccabees 5, occurred in 168 B.C. Although it is possible that the author considers the entry of the Seleucid army into Palestine in 172 B.C. (4:21–22) to be the first phase of the invasion and this to be the second, Goldstein solves the problem by translating "Antiochus made preparations for his second departure against Egypt," thus making possible the dating of his plundering of the Temple in 169 and the invasion in 168 B.C. The report of apparitions of troops of soldiers in the sky (vv. 2–4) is similar to the types of omens recorded by various Greco-Roman writers as preceding significant events (see Josephus *Jewish War* 6.298).

Jason, the perpetrator of the Hellenistic reform (4:7–12), had been displaced by his agent Menelaus (4:23–25) and had fled to Ammon (4:26). When he heard the false report that Antiochus IV had died, Jason took advantage of the situation to try to regain the high-priesthood (5:5–7). He must have been opposed both by the followers of Menelaus, who took refuge in the Akra, and by the nonhellenized Jews as well (Zeitlin). This opposition must have led him at some point to give up the fight and to flee again toward Ammon.

Jason was imprisoned by Aretas, the Nabatean ruler. After escaping from or being freed by Aretas, Jason made his way to Egypt, expecting that the Ptolemies would welcome an opponent of the Seleucids. In 168 B.C., as Antiochus IV prepared to invade Egypt, Jason fled to Sparta (also known as Lakedaimon), appealing to the ancient legend that claimed common kinship for the Jews and the Spartans (1 Macc. 12:7). Apparently, he did not succeed in finding refuge there. The author reminds us (5:10) that he suffered measure for measure for the transgressions he committed, a theological notion already found in 4:16. The circumstances of his death, however, are not reported. Jason must have fled (5:7) after hearing that Antiochus IV was returning from Egypt. Antiochus IV knew that both the pro-Ptolemaic factions and the traditionalists were united against his puppet, Menelaus, so he interpreted the strife in Jerusalem as directed against him. In light of his perception that Judea had revolted, he felt legally and morally entitled to massacre and despoil the city, actions that otherwise would have been considered prohibited by law and custom. It is probable that numbers in v. 14 are exaggerated, even in light of a population estimate of 120,000 offered by Hecateus of Abdera (Josephus *Against Apion* 1.197).

By this time, Antiochus IV had liberated Menelaus from his refuge in the citadel. Menelaus then conducted the king on a tour of the Holy of Holies, within the area of the Temple non-Jews were forbidden to enter. The text of v. 16 is unfortunately corrupt, or damaged, but should probably be interpreted to mean that Menelaus handed over certain sacred vessels to Antiochus.

Antiochus failed to understand that he was serving as the instrument of God's anger, which was but temporary. The idea that God used foreign kings to punish rebellious people had a long history in Israelite religion. In the eighth century B.C. the prophet Isaiah referred to Assyria and its king as "the rod of my anger" (Isa. 10:5). It is only because God was using Antiochus, the author reasons, that he did not suffer the same fate as Heliodorus (chap. 3). In 5:19–20 the author states one of his fundamental theological presuppositions. God sanctified the Temple Mount and the city of Jerusalem to raise the spiritual level of his people who dwelt in the land of Israel. Through the sanctuary they would be given the opportunity to commune with God by means of prayer and sacrifice. Therefore, the fate of the Temple would reflect the spiritual and religious state of the people. If they transgressed and had to be punished, the Temple might be defiled or destroyed. Yet when the people repented and returned to God, as in the days of Judah the Maccabee, the Temple would be restored to its sanctity and purity, reflecting that of the Jewish people.

Antiochus IV must have plundered both the deposits of individuals and the Temple funds belonging to the community designated for sacred purposes. He thought Judea so secure that he left various officials in Judea (5:21–23). Philip, from Phrygia in western Asia Minor, was probably appointed commander of Jerusalem and the highest Seleucid official in Judea. He appears again in 6:11 and 8:8, but is probably not the regent mentioned in 9:29. Andronicus (certainly not the one who intervened on behalf of Menelaus in 4:31–38, as he was executed) was in command over Samaria. Menelaus continued to serve as high priest.

Although the text of 5:24–26 is ambiguous, it must be Antiochus IV who sent Apollonius to Jerusalem after some two years (167 B.C.; see 1 Macc. 1:29), because disturbances against Menelaus continued in Judea. In 1 Macc. 1:29 Apollonius (whose name is not mentioned) is described as "a chief collector of tribute," no doubt a corruption of his real title of "Mysarch," commander of mercenaries from Mysia in northwestern Asia Minor. Apollonius employed a

ruse, pretending to be friendly, and then attacking on the Sabbath, a fact omitted in the account in 1 Macc. 1:29–35. The account in 1 Maccabees also supplements 2 Macc. 5:26 in important ways. 1 Macc. 1:33–35 attributes the founding of the Akra, the Seleucid citadel of Jerusalem, to Apollonius's invasion.

Judah the Maccabee is described in 5:27 as the earliest leader of the revolt, already beginning his guerrilla struggle at this time. Contrast the account of 1 Maccabees 2, which, besides identifying Judah's father, Mattathias, as the first to raise the banner of revolt, places the start of the revolt only after the decrees of Antiochus (1 Macc. 1:41–64; cf. 2 Macc. 6:1–11). Indeed, Judah is the central hero of 2 Maccabees, and it may be that the author wished to cast him as aware of the dire situation even before the repressive decrees of Antiochus IV. The accounts of both 1 and 2 Maccabees contribute to a correct historical reconstruction of the events, but neither is wholly accurate. 1 Maccabees is correct in attributing to Mattathias a role in the early stages of revolt. But 1 Maccabees incorrectly sees the decrees as the cause of the revolt, whereas 2 Maccabees understands that the decrees resulted from Antiochus's desire to support the Hellenizers in the internal Jewish struggle precipitated by the Hellenistic reform.

6:1–17, The Earliest Persecutions. The agent of the king is identified in v. 1 as *geronta athenaion*, an ambiguous Greek expression that may be rendered "Geron the Athenian," "the elderly Athenaeus," or "the Athenian Elder." This agent, whatever his name, was charged with enforcing the decrees of Antiochus IV, which are themselves omitted by the text (for the decrees see 1 Macc. 1:41–50). The author of 2 Maccabees probably thought it sufficient to relate the results of the decrees (6:3–7:42). Not only were the persecutions to be directed against the Jews, but the Samaritans, still considered as Jews in the Hellenistic world, were to suffer as well. The identification of the God of Israel with Zeus was meant to transform Judaism into one of the syncretistic religions of the Greek world in which Near Eastern and Greek traditions were combined. Indeed, in the period of the Israelite monarchy, some Israelites had similarly identified the God of Israel with the various local baals (see the polemic of the prophet Hosea against such beliefs, e.g., Hos. 2:16; → Baal). The attributes selected for the names of the Jewish and Samaritan temples were themselves innocuous. Olympios meant "Most High" and Xenios meant "Protector of Strangers." Yet name changes would bring in their wake fundamental changes in worship and the prohibition of Jewish practice.

Sacred prostitution similar to that known from the old Canaanite cults was introduced into the Temple (v. 4). Since v. 5 refers to the offering of impure animals (including swine [1 Macc. 1:47]), it is likely that the end of 2 Macc. 6:4 should be translated with Goldstein, "and also brought forbidden things inside." This would be a reference to the introduction of the idol described in 1 Macc. 1:54. The prohibition of confessing oneself to be a Jew (2 Macc. 6:6) is taken by Goldstein as a reference to the twice daily recitation of the Shema ("Hear, O Israel"), which is already mentioned by Josephus (*Antiquities of the Jews* 4.212) and which is attributed to Second Temple times in *m. Tamid* 5:1. The cessation of the Jewish sacrifices, mentioned in 1 Macc. 1:45, is not mentioned here.

2 Macc. 6:7–9 describes various attempts to coerce the Jews to participate in non-Jewish religious observances. The king's birthday was celebrated monthly in Hellenistic monarchies and involved sacrifices. Partaking of pagan sacrifices, however, was anathema to Jews and was prohibited by Exod. 34:15. The festival of Dionysus (Bacchus) occurred yearly, usually in the autumn around the time of the grape harvest. It was celebrated with orgiastic dancing, and the usually inebriated participants wore ivy wreaths. The beginning of 2 Macc. 6:8 may be translated "At the suggestion of Ptolemy," referring to Ptolemy son of Dorymenes (see 4:45), although Goldstein argues for translating "on the proposal of the citizens of Ptolemais." In any case, these persecutions were extended beyond the borders of Judea to the Hellenistic cities of Syria and Palestine. The death penalty for those who refused to "hellenize" is mentioned in the decree of 1 Macc. 1:50 and in the narrative of 1 Macc. 1:57.

2 Macc. 6:10–11 briefly alludes to the killing of the women whose sons had been circumcised (cf. 1 Macc. 1:60–61) and the story of those who died in caves on the Sabbath (cf. 1 Macc. 2:29–38). This text, however, neglects to explain that the victims would not fight on the Sabbath and, therefore, there is no mention of Mattathias's decree (1 Macc. 2:39–41). This omission fits well with the author's attribution of the initial leadership of the revolt to Judah, rather than Mattathias.

The author feels constrained to enter into the issue of theodicy (6:12–17) before recounting the horrible suffering of Eleazar (6:18–31) and the mother and seven brothers (7:1–42). He proposes that God's quick punishment of the Jewish people for the sins of the Hellenists is evidence of God's mercifulness, since it prevents further transgression and punishment. In dealing with the non-Jews, God allows them to continue their misdeeds until they are worthy of complete destruction. Hence, readers should not question God's justice in chaps. 6 and 7.

6:18–31, The Martyrdom of Eleazar. The stories of Eleazar (6:18–31) and the mother and seven sons (7:1–42) were independent stories of the genre of martyrdom accounts that the author incorporated into his work. Brief reference to these two stories occurs in 1 Macc. 1:62–63. In both cases the martyrdom came about because of the refusal to eat pork that was

offered as a pagan sacrifice. Eleazar, one of the leading scribes, would not violate the Torah's restriction against eating pork (Lev. 11:7; Deut. 14:8) or the prohibition against eating pagan sacrifices (Exod. 34:15). Some of the hellenized Jews had respect for him and so suggested a ruse whereby he would eat kosher food, while appearing to eat the forbidden food. He judged even this a violation of the Jewish law, a position with which later rabbinic tradition agreed.

Eleazar's speech may have been composed by the author in the style of Greek historians who took the liberty of filling in such words. In any case, Eleazar argued that even if he might technically avoid violation of the law, the appearance of transgressing (Heb. *mar'it 'ayin*, a technical term in rabbinic parlance) would lead others astray and was, therefore, as serious a violation as the act itself. Further, he asserted that this violation would be punished in the hereafter, if not in this world. In v. 28 the reading "he went" must be preferred to "he was dragged," which occurs in some manuscripts, since it is clear that he voluntarily surrendered his life rather than violate the divine law. The very same Hellenizers who had tried to save him turned against Eleazar (v. 29), probably because his heroism cast their compromise in a bad light. Goldstein contrasts this story with that of Mattathias in 1 Macc. 2:1–28. Whereas Eleazar, intending to serve as an example to his people, accepted martyrdom and did not rebel, Mattathias rose up in the same circumstances to lead his people to armed rebellion. In origin, then, the two stories presented very different ideal types, the martyr and the rebel. The author included the Eleazar story in 1 Maccabees, even though he would soon describe the rebellion of Judah and his brothers. He intended the Eleazar material as evidence of the extent of the persecution and the devotion of the Jews to their ancestral faith, not as a course of action preferable to revolt. Some Jews did believe that martyrdom alone would provoke divine intervention. Such a view is evident in the pseudepigraphical writing *The Testament of Moses.* The first edition of this work was written during the time of Antiochus's persecutions.

7:1–42, The Martyrdom of Seven Brothers and Their Mother. The story of the mother and seven sons that takes up all of chap. 7 is narrated in 2 Maccabees as another example of the horrors of Seleucid persecutions. Yet, like the story of the martyrdom of Eleazar (6:18–31), the original intent of this story may have been to counsel passive, rather than active, military resistance. This story appears in various versions in ancient and medieval Jewish sources (see, e.g., 4 Maccabees). The historicity of the story can no longer be determined in light of its appearance in the traditional form of a martyr legend. As is, the story lacks both geographical and chronological setting. Yet the author presents it among the events leading up to the revolt, indeed as a justification for taking up arms against the Seleucid rulers. The story is alluded to in 1 Macc. 1:62–63, along with that of Eleazar. Here again, the Seleucids demanded that Jews eat pork, probably from pagan sacrifices (see 2 Macc. 7:42).

The family has been arrested for the practice of Judaism and is being interrogated. Horrible tortures of the sort described in chap. 7 are indeed known from the ancient world. (After the Crusades and the Holocaust, we have no reason to doubt the terrible inhumanity the author ascribes to those who persecuted the Jews.) In v. 6 the author refers to the poem in Deuteronomy 32, identifying it by an adaptation of the words of Deut. 31:21 as "The Song Which Bore Witness Against [the Jewish People]." The highly influential poem of Deuteronomy 32 accused the Israelites of disobedience and ingratitude toward God, as a result of which God would punish his people. But eventually, as Deut. 32:6 states, "He will have compassion on his servants." The author quotes this ancient poem to interpret the Hellenistic crisis. Jason's hellenizing innovations had been identified as a sin that would provoke divine anger (2 Macc. 2:16–17). But even in the midst of the persecutions the theological model provided by Deuteronomy 32 gave grounds for hope.

Although the account of the torture of the first brother asserts only the justice of God, the second brother proclaims in the Hebrew language the concept of resurrection of the dead (7:8–9). The third son adds that at the resurrection, the dismembered bodies would be restored to perfection (v. 11). The fourth asserts that he will be resurrected, but that Antiochus, because of his transgressions, will not be (v. 14). The fifth calls attention to the temporal nature of Antiochus IV's power (vv. 16–17). God, he says, will torture the king and his descendants. (The horrible death of Antiochus IV is described in 9:5–9. Antiochus V Eupator, son of Antiochus IV, was killed at Demetrius I's order according to 1 Macc. 7:4.) The sixth explains to the king why it is the Jews who suffer, while he does not (vv. 18–19). The explanation consists of the traditional Jewish theodicy: the Jewish people suffer because of their sins. Yet, says the sixth boy, despite the fact that Israel deserves its fate, he, Antiochus, will be punished for "having tried to fight against God" (NRSV).

As her sons are being tortured, the mother encourages them in Hebrew (vv. 21–23). Her argument is that as God created her sons originally, he will give them back their life again. Although there are similarities between the mother's language and that of Ecclesiastes (see esp. Eccles. 11:5), she shares none of Ecclesiastes' skepticism about the afterlife (Eccles. 3:19–21).

As a last resort Antiochus appeals to the seventh son with offers of reward rather than threats of punishment (7:24). (On the status of Friend of the King, *see* 1 Maccabees, Commentary, 2:1–28.) When the son refuses, the mother leads Antiochus to believe that she

will persuade her youngest son to eat the pork. Instead, in Hebrew, she begs him to stand steadfast (vv. 27–29). We follow most commentators in seeing in v. 28 an assertion of the theory of *creatio ex nihilo*, God's creation of matter out of nothing. She tells her son: just as God created the universe out of nothing, he will again bring you back to life in the end of days. She pleads with her last surviving son to give his life, for otherwise, if he fails to sanctify the divine name (to use classical rabbinic terminology), he will not be deemed worthy of resurrection in the end of days, and she will not be reunited with him. The seventh son's final speech (vv. 30–38) recapitulates the theological assertions of his six brothers who went to their deaths before him. The author of the speech assumes the notion of a division of body and soul, both of which the youngest son is prepared to surrender rather than to violate the laws of the Torah. The boy prays that, like ancient Pharaoh, Antiochus IV will come to acknowledge the God of Israel (v. 37). His sacrifice and that of his brothers should be the last his people must suffer. The manner of the mother's death is not described. Details are supplied in a variety of later sources (e.g., 4 Macc. 14:11–17:6). Throughout the episode (cf. vv. 24, 39) the king believes he is being mocked. To the very end, even after the horrible deaths of the seven boys, he fails to perceive the steadfast faith of the Jewish people and their devotion to their God and the Torah.

8:1–9:29
Judah's Wars Against Antiochus IV

8:1–36, Judah's Early Victories. The text now returns to the story of Judah's heroism, already introduced in 5:27. Here, as there, there is no mention of Mattathias and his role (see commentary above on 5:1–27 [v. 27]). 2 Macc. 8:1–8 is parallel to 1 Macc. 3:1–9. The author of 2 Maccabees also includes in v. 5 a brief reference to Judah's early victories, which are recounted in 1 Macc. 3:10–26. His earliest efforts were directed to raising an army and mounting a guerrilla struggle against the Seleucids. (On the surname Maccabeus, *see* 1 Maccabees, Introduction.)

1 Macc. 3:25–4:25 parallels 2 Macc. 8:8–36. Comparisons will be noted below. 2 Maccabees is, however, unaware of the information given in 1 Macc. 3:27–37 concerning Antiochus's departure for Persia and his appointment of Lysias to oversee affairs in his absence. According to 2 Macc. 8:8 Philip (see commentary above on 5:1–27 [v. 22]), governor of Judea, appealed to his immediate superior, Ptolemy (see commentary above on 4:7–50 [v. 45]) for help in resisting the guerrilla attacks of Judah and his men. In 2 Maccabees, Nicanor (cf. 14:12–15:37) is sent by Ptolemy, assisted by Gorgias (v. 9). According to 1 Macc. 3:28 Lysias, the king's viceroy, at the command of Antiochus IV, was to send a force to oppose Judah. Lysias appointed Ptolemy, Nicanor, and Gorgias. 2 Maccabees preserves a more reliable account here, since it is unlikely that Judea stood at the center stage of Seleucid foreign and military policy at this time. Further, in the ensuing campaign in 1 Macc. 3:40–4:25, Ptolemy does not appear. This makes sense if, in fact, he was not one of the commanders.

The financial difficulties of the Seleucid empire were proverbial (cf. 1 Macc. 3:28–31). The author, however, is incorrect in suggesting in 2 Macc. 8:10–11 that Nicanor wanted to raise money to pay off the tribute owed to the Romans as a result of their defeat of Antiochus III in 189 B.C. In fact, this debt had already been paid off by 173 B.C., according to the Roman historian Livy. The selling of slaves was a regular part of all ancient warfare, and slave traders assembled spontaneously when needed. The author, in his attempt to portray Seleucid persecution of the Jews, suggests that this time a special invitation was sent out by Nicanor. The cities of the seacoast were predominantly inhabited by hellenized pagans who would have been happy to share in the spoils of Seleucid campaigns against Judah.

Verses 12–23 describe the manner in which Judah, serving as a priest, fulfilled the commands for the rites of battle found in Deut. 20:1–10. This same ritual is alluded to in 1 Macc. 3:54–57. According to 1 Maccabees the preparations took place at Mizpah (1 Macc. 3:46). The report that those who were cowardly fled (2 Macc. 8:13) alludes to Deut. 20:8–9, except that in 2 Maccabees 8, those who were afraid left of their own accord, even before the ritual. The selling of property undertaken in v. 14 refers to those who had built new houses or planted new vineyards. According to Deut. 20:5–6 such soldiers should have returned home. Rather than leave their stations, however, they sold the property in question. The Maccabean fulfillment of the laws of war of Deut. 20:1–10 indicates that they did not accept the later rabbinic interpretations (*m. Sota* 8:7) that limited the application of these laws to offensive warfare of an optional character. Here we have the Maccabees fighting a defensive war of obligatory nature and still observing these rituals.

2 Macc. 8:16–20 contains the exhortation that Judah, as a priest, delivered to his army in accord with Deut. 20:2–4. He calls attention to the defilement and plundering of the Temple by Antiochus IV (2 Macc. 5:15–16; 1 Macc. 1:20–24) and the Hellenistic reform, according to which the ancestral government by the high priests, in accord with the laws of the Torah, had been replaced by the decrees of Antiochus. The mention of divine assistance against Sennacherib is a reference to the narrative of 2 Kings 18:13–19:37, which recounts Sennacherib's unsuccessful siege of Jerusalem, in which 185,000 were said to have died. The other occasion to which Judah refers is nonbiblical. The Galatians were Celts who settled in large numbers in central Asia Minor in the early Hellenistic period. The reference here must be to Galatian mercenaries. Gold-

stein suggests that these soldiers supported Antiochus Hierax in his war with his brother Seleucus II Callius (reigned 247–226 B.C.). Some Jews must have fought on the side of Seleucus II along with the Macedonians. Although vastly outnumbered by the Galatians, the Jews and Macedonians were victorious, a triumph Judah attributes to aid from heaven.

Judah, following his interpretation of Deut. 20:9, completed the rite by appointing the provosts and dividing the men into military units (2 Macc. 8:21–22). The list of Judah's brothers is incongruent with that of 1 Macc. 2:2–5. Rather than assuming the existence of two additional brothers, as some do, we prefer to understand Joseph as a confusion for John in v. 22 and to read Eleazar in v. 23. Eleazar's appointment "to read aloud from the holy book" (v. 23) can only be understood in light of the parallel in 1 Macc. 3:48, which describes a public reading from the Torah as part of the assembly at Mizpah. The reading is described there as for the purpose of inquiring of God and receiving oracular guidance. For the password, cf. Ps. 124:8. Passwords and slogans figure prominently in Qumran *War Scroll.* The battle took place to the south of Emmaus (see 1 Macc. 3:57). 2 Macc. 8:24 reports that nine thousand enemy soldiers fell, while 1 Macc. 4:15, in the context of a detailed description of the battle, presents a more realistic figure of three thousand. It is interesting that 2 Maccabees claims that Judah's men called off their pursuit of the enemy because of the impending onset of the Sabbath (v. 26), whereas 1 Macc. 4:6–18 presents this as a tactical decision based on Judah's fear of the army of Gorgias, which had been held in reserve. The author of 2 Maccabees apparently takes the view that fighting on the Sabbath, unless it is a matter of immediate threat to life, is forbidden (cf. 1 Macc. 2:29–41). The praise and thanksgiving that the Maccabean soldiers offered (2 Macc. 8:27) must have been in the form of hymns similar to those of the Qumran *War Scroll.* 1 Macc. 4:24 quotes part of such a hymn that is a biblical psalmodic refrain. The reference to God in v. 27 as the one "who had preserved them to this day" has a verbal parallel in the rabbinic benediction *she-heheyanu* (cf. *m. Ber.* 9:3).

In accordance with an interpretation of Num. 31:27, half of the booty was apportioned to the soldiers who had fought and their families, and half was apportioned to needy members of the community (8:28). The author departs somewhat from chronological order to relate how the spoils were divided in a similar manner after other battles (v. 30). Further, the arms were stored in caches for later use. The reference to carrying spoils to Jerusalem in v. 31 requires that we place these battles after the rededication in 10:1–8.

With 8:33–36 the scene shifts back to the victory celebration after the defeat of Nicanor. The NRSV's "in the city of their ancestors," i.e., Jerusalem, cannot be correct since Jerusalem was not yet conquered by Judah; it should be translated with Tedesche, "in the land of their fathers." According to 8:33 Callisthenes and his followers had burned a gate in the Jerusalem Temple. In 1:8 the burning of "the gate" is attributed to Jason and his followers (cf. 1 Macc. 4:38). It is probable that Callisthenes was a hellenizing Jew who made common cause with Jason. Somehow Judah's men found them in a small house and burned them. The author again repeats the notion that God's punishment was measure for measure. Those who had burned his house were themselves burned to death. In the same way Nicanor, who had intended to sell Jews into slavery, now fled like a runaway slave (v. 34), stripped of the purple broad-rimmed hat and cloak that were the usual attire of the Friends of the King. Israel's true champion and defender was its God, whose laws they followed and who protected them (v. 36).

9:1–29, Death of Antiochus IV. Some scholars have argued that the original order of the episodes of the text has been disturbed. The problem arises from the peculiar position of 10:9 ("Such then was the end of Antiochus, who was called Epiphanes," NRSV). One would expect such a statement to follow immediately after the account of Antiochus's death, which is narrated in 9:1–29. As it stands, the statement follows the episode of the purification of the Temple (10:1–8). Moreover, in the present sequence of the narrative, Antiochus IV dies before the rededication of the Temple. In 1 Maccabees the Temple is rededicated first (4:36–61), before the death of Antiochus (6:1–17). Since the chronology of 1 Maccabees seems to be correct on this point, it is reasonable to conclude that the original sequence of the narrative as composed by Jason of Cyrene placed 2 Macc. 10:1–8 after 8:36, followed by 9:1–29, and then 10:9. It is noteworthy that the sequence of events as they are now narrated in the text of 2 Maccabees follows the chronology of the second festal letter appended to the book (1:10–2:18), which gives the impression that Antiochus died before the rededication of the Temple. Thus whoever was responsible for adding the letters at the beginning of the book, whether the abridger or a later editor, was probably also responsible for changing the sequence of the events narrated. 2 Macc. 9:1–2 recounts Antiochus's failed attempt to rob a Persian temple. Persepolis, near present-day Shiraz, was the capital of Persia and was founded by Darius I. 1 Macc. 6:1 and 2 Macc. 1:13–15 say that it was the temple of Nanea in Elymais (Elam) that the king attempted to plunder. 2 Maccabees 9 is the only source that identifies Ecbatana, the royal seat of the old Median kingdom, as the place of Antiochus IV's death. 1 Macc. 6:4 places his death on the journey from Persia back to Babylonia. According to our interpretation of 2 Macc. 8:30–32, we must assume that the abridger misunderstood the parenthetical note there about the division of the spoils of later battles and construed the battles with Timothy as having occurred immediately after the defeat of Nicanor.

Therefore, when he mentioned Antiochus's anger at learning of the defeat of Nicanor, he added "and the forces of Timothy" (9:3).

On the death of Antiochus IV, cf. 1 Macc. 6:8–16. Antiochus IV's campaign in Persia and Media had been a failure. According to 2 Maccabees, he attempted to allay his frustration by attacking Jerusalem. This intention, in the view of the author, soon led to Antiochus's death. The author stresses the sufferings of the king to emphasize that he was punished by God for his deeds against the Jews (9:5–10). The very torments he suffered were the same ones he had mercilessly inflicted on the Judeans. It is another instance of the author's interest in a measure-for-measure conception of justice.

In vv. 11–17 the author presents Antiochus as undergoing a deathbed repentance. He offers to reverse every course of action he has taken with respect to Jerusalem. The claims of the author regarding the king's desire to convert to Judaism raise serious doubts about the historicity of the entire account. The author seems to have begun with a narrative similar to that of 1 Macc. 6:8–16 and to have embellished it with very unlikely details designed to place Judea at the center of the affairs of the Seleucid empire and to accent the just punishments meted out by the God of Israel. The letter that follows in vv. 18–27 is presented here as if it were written only to the Jews and as if it followed on the decisions Antiochus IV supposedly reached in vv. 11–17. Yet investigation of the letter does not bear out this conclusion. First, its contents are not a reflection of vv. 11–17. Second, critical analysis of the letter raises serious questions about its authenticity. The letter does not consistently accord with Seleucid epistolary style. The inconsistencies with vv. 11–17, however, make it unlikely that Jason of Cyrene or the abridger composed the letter. On the other hand, as it certainly is not what the author claims, we must conclude that Jason or the abridger adapted a letter Antiochus had written to confer kingship on his son Antiochus V Eupator. This announcement would have been sent to all of the Seleucid empire and made no reference to the Jews. The letter was adapted and placed within this book as part of the tendency of the author to see Judean affairs as determining the fate of the Seleucid empire. The "worthy Jewish citizens" of v. 19 are those who were enrolled in the *polis* of Antioch at Jerusalem, which was established as part of the Hellenistic reform (4:9). The stated purpose of the letter is to provide for an orderly succession in case of the king's death (9:21–24). Antiochus recalls the precedent of his father's similar action. Antiochus III, intending to march eastward, appointed his oldest son Antiochus, brother of Antiochus IV, as coregent and successor from 210/209 to 193/192 B.C. Seleucus IV was designated from 189 to 187 B.C. Antiochus IV was well aware of the powers both within and outside of his empire waiting for his death. Among them was certainly Demetrius I, son of Seleucus IV, who was at this time a hostage in Rome. For this reason he appointed his own son, the boy Antiochus V Eupator, as his heir and coregent.

Antiochus IV died in November or December of 164 B.C. (v. 28). 1 Macc. 6:14–15 relates that the king had appointed Philip guardian of Antiochus V and had entrusted him with the regency of the kingdom. Lysias, who had been appointed to rule over the western provinces and to care for Antiochus V in the absence of Antiochus IV (1 Macc. 3:32), moved quickly to consolidate his own power and immediately proclaimed his charge sovereign (1 Macc. 6:17). Philip found it impossible to gain control and had to flee Lysias (Antiochus V was merely a figurehead at this time). He took refuge with Ptolemy VI Philometor (v. 29).

10:1–8
Purification of the Temple

On the possible displacement of these verses, see commentary above on 9:1–29. 1 Macc. 4:26–35 describes Judah's battles with Lysias as preceding the rededication of the Temple. The author of 2 Maccabees places these victories after the rededication (11:1–15). In so doing the author incorrectly moved them to the reign of Antiochus V (so Goldstein). In actuality these battles took place while Antiochus IV was campaigning in Persia and Media. From 2 Macc. 11:13–38 we gather that these battles ended in negotiations leading to the rescinding of the decrees of Antiochus IV. The forces still stationed in the Akra may have made Judah hesitate to capture Jerusalem and the Temple. Before long, though, Judah and his men made their move and succeeded in taking control of the Temple and rededicating it. The rededication of the Temple is narrated in 1 Macc. 4:36–60.

Greek *temenos* at the end of 2 Macc. 10:2 must be rendered "illicit shrines" with Goldstein, not "sacred precincts" with the NRSV. Apparently, the Temple had been surrounded by pagan altars and shrines. Judah and his followers reinstituted the orderly conduct of the sacrificial ritual that had been suspended when the idol was brought into the Temple (1 Macc. 1:54), an event omitted in 2 Maccabees. Whereas this text says that sacrifices had been suspended for two years, 1 Macc. 1:54 and 4:52 indicate a lapse of three years. Again the author stresses that Antiochus IV and his persecutions were the instruments of God's anger, which the Jewish people had incurred because of their transgressions (v. 4).

The Temple was purified in 164 B.C. The celebration of the first Hanukkah was held in imitation of the Festival of Tabernacles (Sukkoth; 2 Macc. 10:6). The *lulav* (Heb., "palm frond"), together with the willow and myrtle branches, and the *etroq* (Heb., "citron") were carried, in accordance with the traditional interpretation of Lev. 23:40. Following postbiblical custom,

Judah and his followers recited the Hallel Psalms, known from later sources to be Psalms 113–118 (2 Macc. 10:7). It was decreed that Hanukkah should become a regular part of the Jewish calendar (v. 8). Although 1 Macc. 4:52–59 gives no explanation for the eight-day duration of Hanukkah, 2 Maccabees claims that the model of Sukkoth, seven days (Lev. 23:40, 42; Deut. 16:13; Num. 29:12–34) followed by the eighth day of solemn assembly (Num. 29:35–39) led to the eight-day celebration of Hanukkah. Tannaitic tradition (*b. Shabb.* 21b; cf. *Megillat Ta'anit*) relates that when the Maccabees purified the Temple, they found only one pure cruse of oil with which to light the menorah (cf. 10:3). Miraculously, it burned for eight days until additional ritually pure oil could be processed and brought to the Temple.

10:9–13:26
Judah's Wars with Antiochus V

10:9–11:15, Judah's Victories. On 10:9, see commentary above on 9:1–29. Antiochus V Eupator (reigned 164–162 B.C.) was later killed by Demetrius I (2 Macc. 14:2; 1 Macc. 7:1–4). His reign began when he was only nine years old, and his appointment of Lysias was a legal fiction. In fact, his father, Antiochus IV, had appointed Philip, but Lysias seized power (cf. commentary above on 9:1–29 [v. 29]), taking charge of the government and serving as "chief governor of Coele Syria and Phoenicia," a post similar to the one he had held under Antiochus IV (1 Macc. 3:32).

Ptolemy Macron (10:12) was not Ptolemy son of Dorymenes mentioned in 4:45 and 8:8. The latter sought to exterminate the Jews entirely, while Ptolemy Macron was deposed because of his good relations with them. Ptolemy Macron was governor of Cyprus under Ptolemy VI Philometor. Then he transferred his allegiance to Antiochus IV, in the aftermath of the fall of Cyprus to Antiochus IV in 168 B.C. (Goldstein). At some point he was appointed governor of Coele Syria, a post Lysias took over for himself. It must have been during Ptolemy Macron's tenure that the Maccabees took control of the Temple and began to campaign against their pagan neighbors. These factors, no doubt, led Lysias to depose him. Some even accused Ptolemy of collusion or treason.

1 Macc. 5:3–5 records an abbreviated version of the same events as are narrated in 2 Macc. 10:14–23. Gorgias, the governor (v. 14), was previously mentioned in 2 Macc. 8:9 as an associate of Nicanor (cf. 1 Macc. 4:1–25, where Gorgias appears as the field commander of the Seleucid army). Judah made a foray into Idumean territory that resulted in a great slaughter, although the numbers here must be exaggerated (10:17). He left his brother Simon, along with Joseph (who may be his brother John; see commentary above on 8:1–36 [v. 22] as well as Zacchaeus (who may be the Zechariah of 1 Macc. 5:18) in command of the siege force. The incidence of treachery within Judah's forces (2 Macc. 10:20–22) is passed over in silence in the parallel account in 1 Maccabees 5.

Goldstein considers 2 Macc. 10:24–38 to be parallel to 1 Macc. 5:6–8. If so, the author has confused Yazer (in Transjordan) with Gazara (= Gezer in Judea), and this has led him to assume that the Ammonite force under Timothy had invaded Judea (cf. 1 Macc. 5:6–8; 2 Macc. 10:24, 32). Embellishments were then added to the story in 2 Maccabees concerning superhuman apparitions. Compare the earlier apparitions in 3:24–28 and 5:2–4 and the one recorded in 11:8–11. Although Jason may have been influenced by parallels from classical authors, the idea that God's heavenly armies fight with Israel is well attested in the Bible as well as the *War Scroll* from Qumran (see, e.g., Judg. 5:20; Josh. 5:13; Zech. 9:14–16). The NRSV renders the beginning of 2 Macc. 10:24 as "Timothy who had been defeated by the Jews before . . . ," but Goldstein's understanding, "the first of the two by that name to be defeated by the Jews," is consistent with the existence of two Timothys (*see* 1 Maccabees, Commentary, 5:1–68 [v. 6]). The Maccabean forces performed standard biblical mourning practices, which were considered appropriate at times of national crisis. Only after praying at the base of the altar for God "to be an enemy to their enemies and an adversary to their adversaries" (cf. Exod. 23:22) did they go forth to battle.

Gazara (10:32) remained in the hands of the Seleucids until it was captured by Simon in 143 or 142 B.C. (1 Macc. 13:43–48). The reference here must be to Yazer in Transjordan (see above). The report of Timothy's death makes it certain that he is not the same Timothy who appears in 2 Macc. 12:2, 18–25.

The events described in 11:1–15 have been misplaced by the author. They took place before the rededication of the Temple and the death of Antiochus IV and are parallel to 1 Macc. 4:26–35. Lysias's stated intention in 2 Macc. 11:2–3 mostly parallels his instructions from Antiochus IV in 1 Macc. 3:35–36. Yet for the author, with his mistaken chronology, the goal of Lysias was to reverse the successes of Judah and his "de-hellenization" of Jerusalem (cf. Goldstein). According to 1 Macc. 4:7, 24, the Seleucids had already sold the high-priesthood. The levying of tribute on the Temple (v. 3) sounds like a euphemism for plundering it.

Verses 5–12 record 2 Maccabees' version of the battle of Beth-zur (cf. 1 Macc. 4:28–34). Beth-zur is some twenty miles south of Jerusalem on the road to Hebron. The author pictures the Maccabees as going out to battle from Jerusalem. Here again he follows his false chronology (see above). On the apparition of the horseman, cf. 3:25; 10:29–30.

2 Macc. 11:13–15 continues with its mistaken chronology, according to which the nine-year-old An-

tiochus V was already ruling (10:10). Actually, the events occurred in 164 B.C. 1 Macc. 4:35 has Lysias depart immediately to Antioch after his defeat at Bethzur to recruit a larger army. Soon after, Judah and his men take the city of Jerusalem and rededicate the Temple (1 Macc. 4:36–61). 2 Maccabees 11, however, preserves evidence that negotiations ensued (vv. 13–38). As an analysis of the diplomatic letter quoted in vv. 16–21 indicates, these exchanges were between Lysias and Menelaus, and Judah (despite v. 15) probably played no part. Nevertheless, he took advantage of the truce to take control of Jerusalem and rededicate the Temple.

11:16–38, Letters of Lysias, Antiochus V, and the Romans. Judah is nowhere mentioned in Lysias's letter to the Jewish people (vv. 16–21), written in 164 B.C. Most likely, this letter was written to a group of pious Jews who sought an end to the war and the persecutions, but who were not closely allied with the Maccabees. The letter may have been written as a result of the representations of the high priest Menelaus (cf. v. 29).

The second document, quoted in vv. 22–26, is a letter from Antiochus V to Lysias ("brother" is a term of endearment) and is to be dated early in 163 B.C., soon after the young king's ascension. Its actual historical context is the attempt of the king to reverse his father's mistaken policies to widen his base of support. Due to the author's incorrect dating of Lysias's campaign (see above), he relates this letter to Lysias's negotiations with the Jews in the aftermath of his defeat at Beth-zur.

The third letter (11:27–33), which is from Antiochus IV or from the young coregent Antiochus V to the *gerousia*, the Jewish council of elders, must be genuine, since no later forger would have cast Menelaus in so positive a light (v. 29). The letter proposes an amnesty for those who return home within fifteen days and desist from their military activities by March 27, 164 B.C. Further, permission is granted to the Jews to return to their ancestral laws, i.e., to reverse the effects of the Hellenistic reform. After Judah rededicated the Temple (following the correct chronology of 1 Maccabees), Menelaus must have rushed off to Antioch, where he obtained this amnesty as a last-ditch attempt to preserve his own power and high-priesthood. His strategy was to separate the bulk of the pious Jews, who wanted only religious freedom, from the more "nationalistic" Maccabees. Menelaus's plan must have been partially successful and may have been a factor in the decline of Judah's power, which took place soon afterward. The last letter quoted (11:34–38) purports to be from Roman envoys to the Jewish people. Although there is some reason to doubt the authenticity of this letter, the date and certain details of which are difficult to reconcile with the rest of the narrative, it was Roman policy to support Judea against the Seleucid empire. The Roman envoys requested information on the state of the negotiations so that they could help to press the case of the Jews. Despite some obscurities, the letter is probably authentic.

12:1–45, Judah Defends the Jews of Palestine. Verse 1 is a transition necessitated by the incorrect placing of the events of chap. 11 after the rededication of the Temple. In fact, the events of 12:2 pick up immediately after 10:31. The truce of chap. 11 did in fact occur, but it preceded Judah's rededication of the Temple. The Timothy mentioned in 12:2 was commander of northern Transjordan and southern Syria (*see* 1 Maccabees, Commentary, 5:1–68 [v. 6]). Apollonius is distinguished by his patronymic ("son of Gennaeus") from others by that name who have appeared in 2 Maccabees. The other local commanders are unknown. Nicanor was not "the governor of Cyprus" (NRSV; Tedesche), since Cyprus was under Ptolemaic rule until 58 B.C., but the commander of Cypriot mercenaries (Goldstein).

In the aftermath of the rededication of the Temple, the citizens of certain of the Hellenistic cities rose up against their Jewish neighbors. The inhabitants of these cities probably took Judah's rededication of the Temple as a violation of the truce. The atrocity at Joppa in which Jewish residents of the city were lured onto boats and drowned (12:3–4; cf. 1 Macc. 5:1–2) provoked Judah to avenge their deaths. Judah's forces were able to destroy the port, but could not gain entry to the city itself (2 Macc. 12:7). To prevent a similar fate from befalling the Jews of Yavneh (Jamnia), some thirty miles south, his men destroyed that harbor as well (vv. 8–9).

The background of vv. 10–12, which record Judah's alliance with an Arab tribe, may be provided by 1 Macc. 5:9–13, in which Judah received a report that the Jews of Gilead were being besieged by Timothy. On the way to Gilead, the Maccabean army defeated an Arab force and made peace with them (1 Macc. 5:24–27). The events of 1 Macc. 5:14–23 are not related in 2 Maccabees. It is difficult to determine if the omissions resulted from the work of the abridger or from the original composition of Jason of Cyrene.

Of the events of 1 Macc. 5:35–36, only the taking of Chaspho is paralleled in this account of the conquest of Caspin (12:13–16). Caspin is probably present-day Khisfin, east of Lake Tiberias, near a swamp that may be the lake mentioned here. Here, according to the narrator, Judah and his soldiers, egged on by the taunts of the enemy, invoked the memory of Joshua's capture of Jericho (Josh. 6) and stormed the city, even though they lacked the usual siege equipment.

For 12:17–19, cf. 1 Macc. 5:30–34, which details Judah's first encounter with Timothy. "Charax" (v. 17) may be either the city of Kerak or a common noun meaning "palisaded camp." In any case, it was the cen-

ter of the Toubiani, i.e., the Jews of Tob or of the Tobiad household (cf. 1 Macc. 5:13) who had always been anti-Seleucid. The author assumes that their center was still at Araq el-Emir in Transjordan, some ninety-five miles south of Caspin, but this is highly unlikely. The itinerary from Caspin to Araq el-Emir and back to Carnaim is implausible (see Goldstein). 2 Macc. 12:20–25 is parallel to 1 Macc. 5:37–43, from which we learn that the battle described here took place at Raphon. According to 2 Maccabees, Judah appointed Dositheus and Sosipater (see v. 19) over the forces besieging Timothy's stronghold. The main body of Timothy's army (the numbers are surely exaggerated here) broke ranks and fled, according to the author, because they saw a divine apparition (v. 22). The two commanders who somehow captured Timothy (v. 24) are pictured as freeing him in the hope of securing the freedom of Jewish hostages.

2 Macc. 12:26–31 is paralleled by 1 Macc. 5:44–54. Carnaim, the ancient cult site of Ashtoret (Astarte), now housed the temple of Atargatis, a goddess identified with Ashtoret in Hellenistic times. The reference to Lysias in v. 27 is difficult to translate. We would suggest that Lysias had stationed *katoikoi* (Gk.), "military colonists," there. Again, the casualty figures must be reduced. Scythopolis (v. 29) is Beth-shan, seventy-five miles by road (but not as the crow flies) north of Jerusalem. It is noteworthy that 1 Maccabees, which has a more hostile attitude toward the Gentiles than does 2 Maccabees, does not mention the good relations between the Jews and Gentiles of Scythopolis (vv. 29–31).

For the parallel to 2 Macc. 12:32–45, see 1 Macc. 5:55–68. After the Feast of Weeks (Shavuot), the Jews again joined battle with Gorgias (cf. commentary above on 8:1–36 [v. 9]; 10:9–11:15 [vv. 14–15]), the governor of Idumea. Dositheos, one of the Toubiani (following Tedesche and Goldstein) was maimed in the battle, but succeeded in putting Gorgias to flight toward Marisa (Mareshah), an Idumean city in the foothills southwest of Jerusalem. Esdris (12:36) must have been mentioned earlier in a passage omitted by the abridger. He may be Azariah, probably to be identified as Eleazar, Judah's brother. Only when Judah spurred his men on with Hebrew battle cries were they finally victorious. From the parallel we gather that the events of vv. 32–35 occurred while Judah was campaigning in the north. After his return, he had to intervene to turn the tide of battle against Gorgias and the Idumeans, as described in vv. 36–37.

Adullam (v. 38) is located seven and a half miles northeast of Marisa and was still in Jewish hands. There, in preparation for the Sabbath, Judah's men performed ritual immersion, a practice apparently widespread in Second Temple times, although it never acquired the force of law. After the Sabbath, when permissible (following Goldstein's translation), the bodies were recovered and buried, as required by Jewish law. In the process, it was discovered that the dead men had picked up idolatrous figurines during the battles at Yavneh (cf. 12:8–9), thus violating Deut. 7:25–26. (1 Macc. 5:67 gives a different explanation for the losses.) Judah and his men prayed to God to expiate the sin of these soldiers and collected money for an expiatory offering on their behalf. In view of Lev. 4:13–21, which provides for the expiation of a sin of the entire "congregation," Goldstein suggests that this was an offering to expiate the collective guilt of the Maccabean army. The author of 2 Maccabees reinterpreted it as indicating Judah's belief in resurrection of the dead.

13:1–26, War with Antiochus V. The background to the invasion of Judea by the young king Antiochus V Eupator in 163 B.C. (13:1–2) must be sought in 1 Macc. 6:18–27, where Judah's siege of the Akra (the citadel of Jerusalem) and his fortification of the Temple Mount and Beth-zur are described. Upon learning these facts, Antiochus V, under the tutelage of Lysias, set out for Judea. As so often in these accounts, the numbers in 2 Macc. 13:2 and in 1 Macc. 6:30 must be scaled down.

1 Maccabees makes no mention of Menelaus's audience with the king or of the fate of Menelaus, as does 2 Macc. 13:3–8. Menelaus had been shunted aside by Judah's rededication of the Temple and therefore sought to have himself reestablished in office (Tedesche and Zeitlin assume he sought higher office). Lysias charged Menelaus (cf. 4:23–50) with being the instigator of the Hellenistic reform and the cause of all the troubles in Judea, for which Jason was really to blame (4:7–22). As a result Menelaus was cruelly executed in Beroea, modern Aleppo. The author again stresses the notion of measure-for-measure punishment.

Faced with Antiochus V's impending attack, Judah ordered the people to undertake a three-day fast (13:9–12; cf. Esther 4:16). Judah consulted the elders before taking the offensive (v. 13). Similarly, the king is required to consult before offensive wars in *m. Sanh.* 1:5 (with the Sanhedrin) and in the Qumran *Temple Scroll* 58:18–20 (with the high priest). According to 2 Maccabees, a preliminary skirmish took place at Modein before the main battle of Beth-zur (vv. 14–17). This preliminary skirmish is unknown in 1 Maccabees. Further, the killing of the largest elephant and subsequent death of Eleazar in 1 Macc. 6:43–46 occur in the battle of Beth-zur, whereas here parallels to those events take place in the preliminary skirmish at Modein. In 2 Maccabees the killing of the elephant is attributed to Judah himself. Either the author of 1 Maccabees has telescoped two phases of the campaign, or the author of 2 Maccabees has invented a battle to take place at the Hasmonean ancestral home, Modein (cf. 1 Macc. 2:1). The password "God's victory" is similar to the one used in 2 Macc. 8:23, "God's help." According to 2 Maccabees, the skirmish at Modein ended with a Maccabean victory.

2 Macc. 13:18–22 parallels 1 Macc. 6:31–50. The Se-

leucid force repeatedly assailed Beth-zur, about twenty miles southwest of Jerusalem, attempting to enter Judea from the south. According to the account of 2 Maccabees, the treason of a Jew enabled the king to negotiate a truce at Beth-zur, after which he was defeated in a skirmish (vv. 21–22). The reality is probably closer to the account of 1 Maccabees, which mentions no treason and indicates that as part of the truce the Jews had to abandon the fortress and allow the Seleucids to garrison it. The author of 2 Maccabees is either unaware of the true outcome or hesitates to admit the failures of Judah.

At this point the account in 1 Macc. 6:48, 51–54 relates the unsuccessful attempt of the Seleucids to dislodge Judah's forces from the Temple Mount. The words of 2 Macc. 13:22, "he attacked Judah's men," probably are a reference to this abortive siege. Philip, identified in 1 Macc. 6:55 as the guardian of Antiochus V (cf. 2 Macc. 9:29), was now trying to take power in Antioch. The king, therefore, sought to wind up affairs in Judea and return home to protect his throne. Consequently, the king reinstated the rights of the Jews to live according to the Torah. (Cf. the letter of Antiochus V quoted in 11:27–33.) 1 Macc. 6:55–63 presents a more realistic account, excluding the fanciful meeting with Judah (2 Macc. 13:23–24) and including the destruction of the walls of Mount Zion by the Seleucids (1 Macc. 6:62). The appointment of the new governor and the subsequent scene at Ptolemais (Acco) appear only in 2 Macc. 13:25–26.

14:1–15:36
The Battle of Nicanor

14:1–10, The Rise of Demetrius I. 2 Macc. 14:1–15:36 is parallel to 1 Maccabees 7. Demetrius I Soter (reigned 162–150 B.C.), son of Seleucus IV Philopator, made his escape from Rome, where he was being held as a hostage, in 162 B.C. Tripoli, where Demetrius landed, is north of Sidon. He soon took control of the Seleucid empire and killed Antiochus V and Lysias (cf. 1 Macc. 7:1–4). For 2 Macc. 14:3–10 cf. 1 Macc. 7:5–25. 1 Macc. 7:8–24 has no parallel in 2 Maccabees, as the author telescoped into one account both visits of Alcimus to Demetrius I and the campaigns of Bacchides and Nicanor. Alcimus was probably appointed to replace Menelaus by Antiochus V (Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 12.383–85). Upon the accession of Demetrius I, Alcimus was confirmed as high priest at his first visit, in 162 B.C. (1 Macc. 7:9). This text is describing his second visit in 161. After his appointment, Alcimus won the confidence of the Hasidim and other pious Jews, weaning them temporarily away from the camp of Judah. But Alcimus betrayed their trust (1 Macc. 7:12–16); hence the statement of 2 Macc. 14:3 that he "had willingly defiled himself" (NRSV). A priest who was implicated in murder was disqualified from service at the altar. The speech of Alcimus in vv. 6–10 is clearly the author's composition. The NRSV's "I have laid aside . . . the high priesthood" (v. 7) must rather be translated "I have been deprived of . . . the high priesthood" (Goldstein; cf. Tedesche).

14:11–30, Judah's Pact with Nicanor. Paralleling 1 Macc. 7:26–50, 2 Macc. 14:11–15:36 reports the battle with Nicanor. Nicanor is appointed by Demetrius to reinstate Alcimus to the high-priesthood and to destroy Judah and his forces (2 Macc. 14:11–13). 1 Maccabees omits the account of 2 Macc. 14:15–17, which describes how the Jews observed mourning customs (cf. 10:25) and prayed for divine help. Expecting a full-scale attack, Judah sent a detachment with Simon to block the enemy at a village named Dessau (to be identified with Adasa, 1 Macc. 7:40–45). Simon seems to have been less than successful because the enemy surprised him. Among the delegation that Nicanor sent to open negotiations with Judah was at least one hellenized Jew, named Mattathias (2 Macc. 14:19). Although Judah was somewhat suspicious, he entered into discussions with Nicanor (vv. 21–22). Cf. 1 Macc. 7:27–29, in which dishonest motives are imputed to Nicanor. 2 Maccabees, rather, blames the failure of negotiations on Alcimus (vv. 26–27).

Only 2 Maccabees stresses the friendship of Judah and Nicanor. The author credits Nicanor with encouraging Judah to settle down to marry and raise a family (vv. 23–25). Yet Nicanor's desire to have Judah constantly with him and his desire to see him tied down to house and family can be taken as a tactic designed to neutralize Judah's ability to function as a guerrilla leader. Tedesche translates v. 24 "He kept Judah under surveillance." According to vv. 26–30 it was Alcimus who engineered the breakdown in relations between Nicanor and Judah. To advance his own interests as high priest, he sought to be rid of Judah's opposition. Alcimus complained to Demetrius I that Nicanor had appointed Judah as *diadochos,* "successor" (NRSV, Tedesche; Goldstein's "deputy" is not precise). Demetrius I's response produced discomfort on the part of Nicanor (v. 28), and Judah perceived it (v. 30; cf. 1 Macc. 7:30).

14:31–15:36, Judah's Final Victory. In a passage without a parallel in 2 Maccabees, 1 Macc. 7:31–32 describes a skirmish between Judah and Nicanor at Caphar-salama that resulted in defeat for Nicanor and motivated his threat against the Temple (1 Macc. 7:33–38). In 2 Macc. 14:31 Nicanor is provoked when he discovers that Judah has outwitted him and gone into hiding. The gruesome tale of martyrdom found in 2 Macc. 14:37–46 has no parallel in 1 Maccabees. It is indeed difficult to understand its place in 2 Maccabees, unless we assume that Razis knew the whereabouts of Judah. Otherwise, all it does is to demonstrate the cruel lengths to which Nicanor, now a persecutor of the Jews, would go (v. 39). Verse 46 emphasizes belief

that at the time of resurrection the martyred body of Razis will be restored to wholeness (see commentary above on 7:1–42 [v. 11]).

There is no parallel to 2 Macc. 15:1–5 in 1 Maccabees. Judah had taken refuge either within the province of Samaria or very close to the border. Nicanor's plan to attack on the Sabbath was opposed by Jews in his army (cf. commentary above on 14:11–30 [v. 19]). These hellenized Jews must have been supporters of Alcimus, but even they sought to observe the Sabbath. Nicanor's haughty reply to them is seen by the author as having been his undoing (v. 5).

At this point 1 Maccabees gives the location of the battle, information either unknown to or omitted by 2 Maccabees. According to 1 Macc. 7:39–40, Nicanor positioned himself in Beth-horon and Judah in Adasa. There is no parallel in 1 Maccabees for 2 Macc. 15:6–19, Judah's preparation of his army. As he had on previous occasions (see 8:16–20), Judah followed the instructions of Deut. 20:3–4 and addressed his army with encouraging words. Judah also reminded his men that Nicanor had entered into an agreement with him, which was now being violated. Finally, Judah recounted a dream or vision in which he saw Onias III (cf. commentary above on 3:1–4:6) and the prophet Jeremiah. Both were praying for a Maccabean victory. Jeremiah's presentation of a sword to Judah is symbolic of that victory (15:12–16). Judah's men were greatly encouraged by his exhortation, including his description of the vision. In Jerusalem, both the supporters of Judah and those of Alcimus realized that the hour of decision was at hand (v. 19).

Just before the battle was joined, Judah offered a prayer (vv. 20–24). Cf. the parallel in 1 Macc. 7:40–42, where the prayer is strikingly similar. The battle itself, which is described in 2 Macc. 15:25–30, is narrated in more detail in 1 Macc. 7:43–47. The author of 2 Maccabees emphasizes that the praises offered at the conclusion of the battle were recited in Hebrew (v. 29). He seems surprised that Judah could order the dismembering of even one so despicable as Nicanor (v. 30). 1 Macc. 7:47 does not mention Judah's role in the mutilation of Nicanor. Judah easily advanced on Jerusalem, which was not protected by any substantial Seleucid force. He showed Nicanor's head and arm to the inhabitants of the Akra so that they would see that Nicanor was dead. Again the author emphasizes measure-for-measure punishment: the head and tongue were severed because of blasphemy, and the arm was cut off because he had lifted it when taking an oath threatening the Temple (15:32–33). 1 Macc. 7:47, conscious of the laws of ritual impurity, has the head and hand put on display just outside of Jerusalem.

It was decided to observe the commemoration of Nicanor's defeat on the thirteenth of Adar, the day before Purim or Mordecai's day (Esther 9:21), as an annual minor holiday (v. 36). As such it appears in *Megillat Ta'anit.* This holiday ceased to be celebrated when the minor holidays of *Megillat Ta'anit* were displaced by Hanukkah and Purim, which then served as the sole occasions commemorating national deliverance.

15:37–39
Epilogue by the Abridger

"And from that time the city has been in the possession of the Hebrews" (v. 37, NRSV). The abridger must have written these words before the conquest of Jerusalem by Pompey in 63 B.C. The author writes as if Judah succeeded in restoring freedom to his people, ignoring the fact that he was soon killed on the battlefield and that it took years of struggle for his brothers to achieve his goal of Jewish independence (1 Macc. 9–13). Perhaps the author realized that Judah had set in motion a struggle for religious freedom and national aspirations that would occupy the Jewish people for more than two thousand years.

Bibliography

Bickerman, E. J. *The God of the Maccabees.* Translated by H. Moehring. Leiden: Brill, 1979.

Doran, R. "The Second Book of Maccabees." *New Interpreter's Bible,* vol. 4. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1996. Pp. 179–299.

Goldstein, J. A. *II Maccabees.* Anchor Bible, 41A. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1983.

Hengel, M. *Judaism and Hellenism.* 2 vols. Translated by J. Bowden. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1974.

Schalit, A., ed. *The Hellenistic Age.* New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press, 1972.

Schürer, E. *The History of the Jewish People in the Age of Jesus Christ.* Vol. 1. Edited by G. Vermes, F. Millar, P. Vermes, and M. Black. Edinburgh: Clark, 1973.

Tcherikover, V. *Hellenistic Civilization and the Jews.* Translated by S. Applebaum. Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 1966.

Tedesche, S., and S. Zeitlin. *The Second Book of Maccabees.* New York: Harper, 1954.

3 Maccabees

JOHN J. COLLINS

INTRODUCTION

The third book of Maccabees is found in some manuscripts of the Greek Bible (Alexandrinus and Venetus, but not Vaticanus or Sinaiticus), in the Syriac Peshitta, and in the Armenian Bible (→ Texts, Versions, Manuscripts, Editions). It was not included in the Latin Vulgate, so it is not present in the canon of the Roman Catholic church or in the traditional Protestant Apocrypha. It is, however, regarded as canonical in Eastern Christianity. Despite its title, the book has nothing to do with the Maccabees. (The title was probably suggested by the fact that it follows 1 and 2 Maccabees in the manuscripts and is set in the Hellenistic period.) Instead it describes three episodes involving Ptolemy IV Philopator, king of Egypt (221–204 B.C.; → Ptolemy). The first is an introductory paragraph (1:1–5) that describes how the Ptolemy was saved from assassination at the battle of Raphia (217 B.C.) by the intervention of one Dositheus, an apostate Jew. The second, 1:6–2:24, tells of the king's unsuccessful attempt to enter the Jerusalem Temple. The third episode, which is the main body of the book (2:25–7:23), describes the Ptolemy's persecution of the Jews of Egypt.

Date

There is universal agreement that 3 Maccabees was written in Greek, most probably in Alexandria, Egypt, at some time after the battle of Raphia and before the destruction of the Jerusalem Temple (A.D. 70). Attempts to fix the date more precisely hinge on the relation of the narrative to history. The plot to assassinate the Ptolemy (1:2) is also reported by the second-century B.C. Greek historian Polybius, but not the role of the Jew Dositheus, which is reminiscent of the role of Mordecai in Esther 2:21–23. The second episode, the unsuccessful attempt to enter the Temple, has a parallel in 2 Maccabees 3 in the story of Heliodorus. A variant of the third, main, episode is found in the writings of the first-century A.D. Jewish historian Josephus (*Against Apion* 2.53–55), where the Ptolemy in question is not Philopator, but Ptolemy VIII Euergetes II (Physcon, 144–117 B.C.).

The historical value of these accounts is assessed in different ways. Kasher claims that they are "genuinely historical" reports from the time of Philopator. A key element in his argument is the fact that Philopator is said to have attempted to enroll the Jews in the religion of the Greek god Dionysus, a cult that this Ptolemy did, in fact, promote. Nonetheless the genre of the narrative must raise grave doubts about the historical value of the accounts. 3 Maccabees is a historical romance with strong legendary features. It is concerned with the wonderful and the miraculous and aimed at edification. Its stories may contain historical reminiscences, but their historicity is incidental and unreliable. The very fact that one of the stories is variously attached to Philopator (in 3 Maccabees) and to Physcon (Josephus) shows that it became a traditional tale in which historical accuracy was not the primary concern. Tcherikover argues that the story was more likely to preserve reminiscences of Physcon than of Philopator, but at most it would symbolize a general threat to the Jews at that time and not describe an actual event. Tcherikover, like many scholars, sets the composition of the book in the Roman period (after 30 B.C.).

There is internal evidence that the book as we have it cannot have been composed in the time of Philopator. 3 Macc. 6:6 refers to the Greek addition to the book of Daniel, and this allusion was scarcely possible before the first century B.C. Resemblances in style and language to 2 Maccabees and the *Letter of Aristeas*, a Jewish composition from the late second century B.C., suggest a date no earlier than the late second century B.C., while its probable dependence on the Greek edition of Esther would require a first-century B.C. date at the earliest.

Tcherikover and Hadas argue more specifically for a date in the Roman period because of the statement in 2:28 that the Jews should be reduced to the popular census and slave condition. Although the Greek word *laographia* simply means "census" and censuses had been taken in Ptolemaic times, the word acquired a special connotation in Roman times because of the poll tax introduced by Augustus in 24/23 B.C. Greek citizens of Alexandria were exempt from this tax and so the line between citizen and noncitizen was more clearly drawn than before. Jews as a class were not citizens, and so the *laographia* could be said to entail a loss of status for Jews. The fact that political parity with the Alexandrians was an issue (3 Macc. 2:30) also fits a setting in the Roman era. Kasher disputes Tcherikover's

arguments in detail. The Roman *laographia* did not single out the Jews or explicitly address their status. But there is plenty of evidence that the status of the Jews in Alexandria was disputed in the early Roman period. One papyrus (BGU 1140) shows that a Jew named Helenos petitioned for an exemption from the *laographia*. He began by calling himself "an Alexandrian," but then changed this to "a Jew from Alexandria." If he had been an Alexandrian, he would have been exempt. Another papyrus contains the anti-Jewish propaganda of the Alexandrian leader Isidorus. "They are not like the Alexandrians," he says of the Jews, "but in their way of life (they resemble) the Egyptians. Are they not like those who pay the tax?" (BGU 8877). It is reasonable, then, to infer that the Roman *laographia* did affect the status of the Jews. There is no evidence for such a census in the time of Philopator (or any other Ptolemy) apart from the legendary narrative of 3 Maccabees.

The different episodes of 3 Maccabees find their parallels in different sources and were probably originally independent (see Tromp). The decision of the author of 3 Maccabees to combine the story of the threat to the Temple with the perils of Egyptian Judaism may contain a clue to the time of composition. In *Embassy to Gaius*, the Jewish philosopher Philo describes the two dangers that confronted Judaism in the time of Caligula—the pogrom in Alexandria in A.D. 38 and the attempted violation of the Jerusalem Temple. Although the stories in 3 Maccabees are traditional tales and were not composed as allegories for the Roman era, the troubles in the time of Caligula may well have been the occasion for the combination and edition of these stories in the present book. Although certainty is not possible, the reign of Caligula (A.D. 37–41) provides a more plausible setting than any other that has been proposed. The objection of Anderson (p. 512) that 3 Maccabees does not read like a "crisis document" assumes that the only Jewish response to crisis in this period was the apocalyptic one (→ Apocalyptic Literature). The nonapocalyptic response of 3 Maccabees reflects its distinctive social ideology and the situation of Alexandrian Judaism from which it arose.

Historical and Social Significance

The historical significance of 3 Maccabees lies not in the uncertain references about its setting, but in the picture of diaspora Judaism it presents. The Jews are loyal servants of the king, but also strict observers of the law, including the distinctive dietary laws (3:3–4). Although these observances provide an opportunity for their enemies, they win the respect of many, including "the Greeks," who were in no way injured and who tried to comfort the Jews (3:8–10). 3 Maccabees here distinguishes between "the Greeks" and the Alexandrian enemies of the Jews. This distinction is of dubious historical value, but is also found in Philo and Josephus. The Alexandrian Jews sought the acceptance and respect of "the Greeks" and were unwilling to dignify their enemies with that name. Philo and Josephus argue that their Alexandrian opponents are of Egyptian extraction. Conversely, the Alexandrians argued that the Jews were like Egyptians. Most fundamentally, the problems confronting the Jews in 3 Maccabees are traced to the arrogance and even madness of the king and to his bad advisers. There is no objection to pagan rule as such. In the end, when the king comes to his senses, all is well for the Jews. 3 Maccabees, then, sees persecution as an aberration that can be rectified without the removal of the pagan kingship.

Not all the hostility of 3 Maccabees is directed toward the king. The Jews who betray their religion are singled out for contempt (2:33) and eventual vengeance (7:10–16). Equality with the Alexandrians cannot be bought at the price of idolatry. Even the king acknowledges that those who "transgressed the divine commandment for their belly's sake would never be well disposed to the king's estate either" (7:11) and gives permission that they be slaughtered.

3 Maccabees, then, attests loyalty to the letter of the law among Egyptian Jews without any of the allegorical rationalization associated with Philo or the *Letter of Aristeas*. Loyalty to the law is the basis of solidarity for the Jewish people in exile. Yet this religious particularism is maintained in the context of loyalty to the pagan rulers. At the end of the story the Jewish apostates are slaughtered, but not the gentile enemies (unlike in the biblical story of Esther). Although the rhetoric of the book is often antagonistic to Gentiles, the book ends on a note of reconciliation with the king.

Theological Significance

Insofar as 3 Maccabees is a historical novel (a fictional tale with a realistic historical setting), it stands in a tradition that is attested in the Hebrew Bible in Esther and in Daniel 1–6. Like those stories, it is set in exile, and the Jews are exposed to danger at the whim of a gentile king. Yet the danger proves ephemeral, and the welfare of the Jews proves to be quite compatible with gentile rule. In 3 Maccabees, the removal of danger results from divine intervention in response to prayer. This is explicit in 2:21 (protection of the Temple) and again in 5:28 and 6:18. The book maintains the traditional Deuteronomic belief in retribution and makes no appeal to the ideas of immortality or afterlife that were widely accepted in Hellenistic Judaism. The fundamental faith attested by the book is in the omnipotence of God. This faith is expressed in the great prayers in chaps. 2 and 6, while the divine power is dramatized in the miraculous acts of deliverance. Al-

though 3 Maccabees lacks the philosophical depth of Philo or the Wisdom of Solomon, it is more likely to represent the faith of the rank and file of Egyptian Judaism. Its faith that God would set things right in this world was adequate for much of the history of the Diaspora, including the crisis under Caligula, but did not anticipate the disasters that would befall Egyptian Judaism in A.D. 66 and especially in 115–117, when the Alexandrian community was nearly destroyed.

The picture of Jews being rounded up for destruction (3 Macc. 4) remains, sadly, hauntingly relevant to the twentieth century.

COMMENTARY

1:1–5
The Battle of Raphia

The narrative begins abruptly with an account of Philopator's march to Raphia. The abruptness suggests that this passage was excerpted from a historical source. The main point at which 3 Maccabees differs from the account of this battle in Polybius is in the role assigned to Dositheus, who intervenes to save the king. The analogy with Mordecai in Esther 2:21–23 would seem to suggest that Dositheus is introduced as a Jewish hero, but the fact that he is explicitly said to have abandoned his religion makes this unlikely. 3 Maccabees leaves us in no doubt of its opinion of those who voluntarily forsook the law—they cannot be good servants of the king and deserve death (7:11–12). There is considerable irony in the role of Dositheus. By saving Philopator's life, he indirectly causes the persecution of his people. Moreover, he causes an innocent "undistinguished person" to be killed in place of the king. Dositheus, then, is scarcely a hero. Dositheus son of Drimylus was a historical person, although we do not know that he was present at Raphia. He held an exalted position as (pagan) priest of Alexandria under Ptolemy III Euergetes, about 223/222 B.C. (see Modrzejewski, pp. 56–61) and is probably the same Dositheus mentioned in a number of earlier papyri as a Ptolemaic administrator. In the second century B.C., a Jew named Dositheus became a general in the army of Ptolemy Philopator (together with Onias IV, the founder of Leontopolis; Josephus *Against Apion* 2.49).

1:6–2:24
Philopator's Visit to Jerusalem

Philopator's visit to Jerusalem is not otherwise attested, but is not implausible. He is said to have acted respectfully until he resolved to enter the Temple. We know that the Roman general Pompey did, in fact, enter the Temple in 63 B.C., but the closest parallel to 3 Maccabees is undoubtedly the story of Heliodorus in 2 Maccabees 3. In both stories a foreign dignitary attempts to enter the Jerusalem Temple over the protests of the priests. The attempt causes consternation in the whole Jewish population. Finally there is a miraculous intervention. The details of the stories are quite different: Heliodorus wants to seize the Temple treasure, Philopator merely to see the interior. There is a lengthy prayer in 3 Maccabees; in 2 Maccabees the miraculous punishment of the intruder is administered by angels. Heliodorus repents at the end; Philopator does not. The strongest case for literary dependence concerns the reaction of the Jewish populace: in both stories priests prostrate themselves, maidens who had been secluded rush outdoors, and all make supplication to God. The dramatic and emotional account is typical of Hellenistic historiography. Comparable incidents are reported by Josephus from the first century A.D., when Pilate introduced standards into Jerusalem (*Jewish War* 2.169–74; *Antiquities of the Jews* 18.55–59) and when Caligula ordered the erection of his statue in the Temple (*Jewish War* 2.184–203; *Antiquities of the Jews* 18.269–72). A noteworthy feature of the account in 3 Maccabees is that some people propose armed resistance (1:23), but are dissuaded by "the old men and the elders." Such a division of opinion on the issue of violence was characteristic of Judaism in the first century A.D., but there was already some disagreement on the subject in the time of the Maccabees (see 1 Macc. 2).

2:1–20, The High Priest's Prayer. The high priest at the time of the battle of Raphia was Simon II, "Simon the Just," who is extolled in Sirach 50. The prayer attributed to him here resembles a type that was very widespread in postexilic Judaism and was shaped by traditional Deuteronomistic theology (Ezra 9; Neh. 9; Dan. 9; Bar. 1:15–3:8). It begins by affirming the righteousness of God and recalling his mighty deeds, including the Exodus. It also recalls the promise of 1 Kings 8 that God would heed the prayers offered in the Temple. The prayer proceeds to confess that it is "for our many and great sins" that the Jews are now troubled and concludes by asking God to blot out their sins and act "lest the transgressors boast." This prayer differs from the other Deuteronomistic prayers insofar as the distress of the Jews is not related to the Exile and there is less emphasis on the confession of sin, but the logic is the same. God is urged to act for his own sake, not because of any merit on the part of the Jews.

2:21–24, The Divine Intervention. Like Heliodorus in 2 Maccabees 3, Philopator is said to be "scourged" and knocked to the ground, although in this case there is no apparition of angels. Divine chastisements of pagan kings are often (though implausibly) reported in Jewish writings of the Hellenistic period—e.g., Nebuchadnezzar in Daniel 4 and Antiochus Epiphanes in 2 Maccabees 9. Such punishment normally

leads to repentance and sometimes to conversion. The dramatic conception of 3 Maccabees, however, requires that Philopator's change of heart be delayed until after his major attack on the Jews.

2:25–6:15
The Attack on Egyptian Jewry

2:25–33, The Demand Made on the Jews. The action of the king on his return to Egypt is presented as a direct result of his misadventure in Jerusalem. The proclamation "that none of those who did not sacrifice should be permitted to enter their temples" (trans. Anderson, 2:28) amounts to a proscription of Jewish synagogue worship. Synagogue worship was in fact disrupted in the pogrom of A.D. 38. Moreover, the Jews are subjected to the census and reduced to a servile condition. Registration would involve branding with the emblem of Dionysus and a reduction in status. Some Jews, however, were given the option of being initiated into the mysteries of Dionysus and enjoying equal rights with the Alexandrians.

The nature and purpose of these proposals is the most controversial question in the study of 3 Maccabees. It is well known that Philopator promoted the cult of Dionysus and associated it with the royal cult. A decree preserved on papyrus provides an interesting parallel to 3 Maccabees: "By decree of the king. Persons who perform the rites of Dionysus in the interior shall sail down to Alexandria . . . and shall register themselves . . . and shall declare forthwith from what persons they have received the transmission of the sacred rites for three generations back and shall hand in the sacred book sealed up . . ." (see BGU 1211). This decree shows an attempt to regulate the cult of Dionysus by registering its practitioners. A recollection of such an attempt by Philopator may underlie the narrative of 3 Maccabees.

The God of the Jews was often supposed by Greeks and Romans to be identical with Dionysus, in accordance with a common trend to identify Near Eastern gods with their more familiar Western counterparts. (Even the *Letter of Aristeas* suggests that the God of the Jews is identical with Zeus.) The identification with Dionysus is most fully argued by the Roman author Plutarch (*Table Talk* 4.6.1–2), who points to the Festival of Tabernacles at the height of the vintage, Jewish ritual use of wine, and the observance of the Sabbath (Dionysus was identified with Sabazius, whose name suggested the connection with the Sabbath). During the persecution by Antiochus Epiphanes in 167 B.C., Jews were compelled to walk in the procession in honor of Dionysus, wearing wreaths of ivy (2 Macc. 6:7). It is possible that Philopator thought Judaism was a Dionysiac cult and tried to regularize its practices. 3 Maccabees, however, is our only testimony for such an action by this Ptolemy, and it is a dubious historical witness. The fact that the story contains credible historical elements does not guarantee that the main incidents happened.

The custom of branding or tattooing was associated with the cult of Dionysus from ancient times. It is likely that Philopator himself was so branded. Branding was also used to mark slaves, so that they could be captured if they ran away. 3 Maccabees appears to confuse the two kinds of branding, since the Jews are said to be reduced to servile status. The "former limited status" (2:29) probably refers to the condition of Jewish captives before their liberation by Ptolemy Philadelphus (*Let. of Arist.* 22).

The central issue in the interpretation of this passage concerns the *laographia,* or census. The term could refer simply to the registration of worshipers of Dionysus. It is probable, however, that the usage in 3 Maccabees was colored by the Roman association of a census with the poll tax, which was imposed on noncitizens (see Tcherikover, Hadas). Hence, the entire proposal of the Ptolemy is construed as an attempt to lower the status of the Jews.

The issue of citizenship is raised again by the offer of the king that those who were initiated into the mysteries would enjoy equal rights with the Alexandrians. It is not clear whether this offer is extended to all the Jews or only to a few. Underlying the episode is the dilemma of diaspora Jews, especially in the Roman era. They aspired to equal rights with the Greeks, but citizenship would involve the worship of pagan gods in the course of civic functions. 3 Maccabees, like Philo and others, regards this price as unacceptable. There were always individual Jews who paid this price to advance their careers. (Dositheus son of Drimylus may have been such; the most famous example is Philo's nephew Tiberius Julius Alexander). 3 Maccabees not only disapproves of such people, but extols those who were willing to risk death rather than betray their religion.

3:1–10, The Slander Against the Jews. The refusal of the Jews to comply with the registration leads to an escalation of the threat. The decision to gather the Jews of the countryside to Alexandria is reminiscent of the papyrus on the cult of Dionysus, quoted above. Here, however, the purpose is not only registration, but extermination. The king's resolve is supported by people who plot against the Jews. The author insists that the Jews were loyal to the king, but incurred enmity because of the strangeness of their customs. The charge that Jews were disloyal because they did not worship the pagan gods is found already in the book of Daniel, but there, as in Esther, the professional rivalry of courtiers is a factor. The scandal of Jewish difference was an issue in the Diaspora. The *Letter of Aristeas* tried to overcome it by providing an allegorical interpretation of the dietary laws. There was a tradition of

anti-Jewish polemic in Egypt, beginning with the Egyptian author Manetho (about 300 B.C.) and reaching a crescendo in the first century A.D. The recurring charges were "atheism" and "inhospitality" (see Josephus *Against Apion*). 3 Maccabees, like Josephus, refuses to ascribe this slander to "the Greeks." Josephus insists that the detractors are "Egyptians." 3 Maccabees calls them "foreigners" (somewhat enigmatically) and insists that "the Greeks" were well disposed to the Jews and tried to help them.

3:11–30, The Ptolemy's Decree. The remark that the Ptolemy had no regard for the power of God suggests that he was guilty of hubris—the typical sin of tyrants in Greek tragedy, on the one hand, and in Hebrew tradition, on the other (see the treatment of Babylon in the Prophets and of the Seleucid king Antiochus IV Epiphanes ["the king of the north"] in Daniel). In his decree, Philopator places the blame on the Jews for their inhospitality at the Jerusalem Temple and their rejection of the cult of Dionysus and the offer of citizenship. The decree condemning a whole people to death seems wildly out of proportion to these charges. The threat of virtual genocide was a specter that had long haunted diaspora Judaism, as can be seen already in the book of Esther. It had acquired some substance in the persecution of Antiochus Epiphanes (167 B.C.) and again in the pogrom in the time of Caligula (A.D. 38). Although there is obvious similarity between these incidents and the anti-Semitism of modern times, it is important to bear in mind that there was no racial theory in the ancient disputes. In part, the hostility to the Jews in Egypt came from the fact that they had no sympathy with Egyptian nationalism and were all too loyal to the Roman overlords, who were thought to favor them unduly. In both ancient and modern times, however, some of the hostility came from the fact that Jews were a clearly identifiable foreign body and so an easy scapegoat on which their neighbors could vent their frustrations.

4:1–21, The Imprisonment of the Jews. The arrest of the Jews is described with considerable pathos in the emotional style of Hellenistic historiography. The use of the hippodrome anticipates the Roman use of the circus for tormenting Christians. Two anomalies in the story require comment. First, it seems that the death sentence at first only applied to the Jews from the countryside and that their kinsfolk in the city were only included because of their show of sympathy. Yet there is no apparent reason why this should have been so. Second, all those condemned to death are registered at considerable inconvenience. The registration may conceivably have been in preparation for seizing the property of the condemned, but this is not indicated here (note, however, 7:22, where the Jews recover their property according to the registration). Both these anomalies may result from the adaptation of an older story about a census, such as is described in the papyrus quoted above. That census was specifically for country folk, who were required to come to Alexandria, and the registration had a more obvious purpose.

In 3 Maccabees the registration becomes the occasion of a miracle when the paper mill and pens give out. The incident underlies the implausibility of an attempt to register the whole Jewish population of Egypt at one location. 3 Maccabees, however, construes it as "the working of invincible providence." It becomes a forewarning of the frustration of the king's further plans against the Jews.

5:1–51, The Frustration of the King's Plans. The proposed manner of execution was that the Jews be trampled by elephants who had been drugged with frankincense and wine. (The elephants are also made drunk in the parallel story in Josephus.) Intoxicating the elephants made little practical sense: war elephants were trained to kill by trampling and might be more difficult to control if they were drunk. Kasher suggests that the wine and frankincense were given as part of a Dionysiac ritual and that the execution was likewise ceremonial, but the whole story is fantastic. The number of elephants, five hundred, is excessive: Philopator has only seventy-three elephants at the battle of Raphia. The name of the keeper of the elephants, Hermon, is reminiscent of Haman, enemy of the Jews in the book of Esther.

The story skillfully builds suspense, as the plans of the king are frustrated three times. First, the king is overcome by sleep at the appointed hour. On the second occasion he becomes forgetful of his purpose. In each case he is said to be thwarted by God, in response to the prayers of the Jews. The suspense is heightened by the prolongation of the third attempt. This time the king, who is compared to Phalaris (a sadistic tyrant of the sixth century B.C.), resolves not only to destroy the Egyptian Jews, but also to attack Judea. The entry of the elephants into the hippodrome is described along with the supposed last farewells of the Jews, who fling themselves prone and cry out with a final prayer. The outcome is further delayed by the prayer of Eleazar.

6:1–15, The Prayer of Eleazar. The name Eleazar was popular in Hellenistic Judaism. It was the name of the high priest in the *Letter of Aristeas* (in 3 Maccabees, Eleazar is "one of the priests") and of a martyr in 2 Maccabees 6 and 4 Maccabees 5–6. Like the Maccabean martyr, this Eleazar is advanced in years. His prayer recalls previous tyrants who were humbled by God (Pharaoh in Exod. 14; Sennacherib in 2 Kings 18–19) and acts of miraculous deliverance (Daniel in Dan. 6; the three young men in Dan. 3; Jonah; the references to Daniel show the post-Maccabean date of the book). Like the earlier prayer of Simon, this one

stands in the Deuteronomistic tradition, but the confession of sin is even more muted here. Eleazar asks, "If our life is forfeit by reason of irreverent deeds during our foreign sojourn, deliver us." This is the only suggestion that the persecution is a punishment for sin. God is not asked to intervene because of any merit of the Jews, but lest the enemy say that God failed to deliver them. Instead, God should remember them "even in the land of their enemies." The latter phrase reflects a measure of alienation from their environment that is quite different from the perspective of Philo, who said that Jews "severally hold that land as their fatherland in which they were born and reared" (*Flaccus* 46). The prayer also expresses a very sharp dichotomy between Israel and the nations. "Let the nations fear your invincible might" (6:13; Anderson exaggerates the antagonism by translating "nations" as "heathens"). "Let it be made clear to all the nations that you are with us, O Lord" (6:15). The traditional language of the prayer makes no exception for the Greeks.

6:16–7:23
The Deliverance of the Jews

6:16–41, The Reversal of Fortune. The story moves to its climax as the king enters the hippodrome. As in the story of Heliodorus (2 Macc. 3:26), two angels appear. It is not clear why they should not be visible to the Jews. Hadas suggests that the apparition was part of a source and that the author's own theology had no place for intermediary beings (there are no angels in the Temple incident in chap. 2). If that were so, the author could easily have omitted the angels here. The fact that they were not visible to all underlines their supernatural character. The parallel story in Josephus (*Against Apion* 2.53–54) also has the elephants turn on the Ptolemy's army. (Cf. Dan. 3, where the fire from the furnace burns some of the executioners, and Dan. 6, where Daniel's accusers are cast into the lions' den and devoured.)

The conversion of the king is a standard element in such stories (cf. Dan. 2–6, where pagan monarchs regularly praise the God of Daniel). Philopator passes the blame on to friends. In the stories of Daniel (chaps. 3, 6) and Esther, the primary blame clearly rests with the king's advisers, but here the Ptolemy himself had taken the initiative. In these diaspora tales, however, it was reassuring to think that the highest authority was not itself hostile, although it might be swayed against the Jews from time to time.

The establishment of a festival (3 Macc. 6:36) has an obvious precedent in Purim in the book of Esther (chap. 9). Josephus also speaks of the deliverance from the elephants as "the origin of the well-known feast which the Jews of Alexandria keep, with good reason, on this day" (*Against Apion* 2.55; trans. Thackery, Loeb Classical Library). Presumably there was such a feast. We do not know just what it was or how it was related to Purim.

7:1–9, The Ptolemy's Letter. The letter formalizes what the king has said in chap. 6, blaming his "friends" and praising the Jews and their God. "The most high God" is a common appellation for God on the lips of Gentiles in the Hellenistic period (cf. "the God of heaven" in Ezra and Nehemiah).

7:10–16, Revenge on Apostates. At the end of the book of Esther, the Jews take vengeance on their gentile enemies and slay them by the thousand. In 3 Maccabees, these enemies get off lightly. The king accepts no blame, and, although he upbraids his "friends," he spares their lives. The vengeance of the Jews is directed toward those of their own people who voluntarily transgressed the law (even though they did so under duress). The king agrees that such people cannot be trusted, and more than three hundred of them are put to death.

The motif of the destruction of the enemy is a standard motif in stories of this kind, as a counterpart to the salvation of the righteous. In apocalyptic literature it attains a more definitive character as *eternal* damnation. 3 Maccabees, however, is not merely repeating the standard motif. The fact that Jews rather than Gentiles are singled out for vengeance suggests the animosity that observant Jews felt for renegades, especially in a time of crisis when the survival of the people was at stake.

7:17–23, The Departure. The story ends happily with the return of the Jews to their homes. We should note that the happy ending is "by the ordinance of the king"—there is no aspiration to independence. The festival mentioned here is presumably an extension of the one mentioned in chap. 6. The registration proves to have a providential purpose after all, as it enables the Jews to recover their possessions. The book closes appropriately with a benediction to God as "the Deliverer of Israel."

Bibliography

Ägyptische Urkunden aus den Königlichen (later: Staatlichen) Museen zu Berlin: Griechische Urkunden (BGU). 8 vols., 1895–1933.

Anderson, H. "3 Maccabees." In *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha.* 2 vols. Edited by J. H. Charlesworth. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1983, 1985. Vol. 2, pp. 509–29.

Collins, J. J. *Between Athens and Jerusalem: Jewish Identity in the Hellenistic Diaspora.* 2d ed. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1999.

Hadas, M. *The Third and Fourth Books of Maccabees.* New York: Harper, 1953.

Kasher, A. *The Jews in Hellenistic and Roman Egypt.* Tübingen: Mohr, 1985.

Modrzejewski, J. M. *The Jews of Egypt: From Rameses II to Emperor Hadrian.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1997.

Tcherikover, V. "The Third Book of Maccabees as a Historical Source." *Scripta Hierosolymitana* 7 (1961): 1–26.

Tromp, J. "The Formation of the Third Book of Maccabees." *Henoch* 17 (1995): 311–28.

4 Maccabees

STANLEY K. STOWERS

INTRODUCTION

The fourth book of Maccabees occurs in important manuscripts of the Greek Bible and was also circulated with the works of the first-century Jewish historian Flavius Josephus (→ Texts, Versions, Manuscripts, Editions). In the latter it was given the apt title "On the Sovereignty of Reason." To the eyes of modern interpreters accustomed to making a sharp theologically motivated division between "Greek" and "Jewish," the work has seemed strangely dual, even artificial. Its explicit topic is the rule of reason over the passions or emotions. The theme pervades the book and is repeated throughout (1:9, 13, 19, 30; 2:6, 24; 6:31; 7:16; 13:1; 16:1; 18:2). The topic belongs to Greek philosophy. 4 Maccabees is also about martyrs from the Maccabean conflict and expresses a kind of Judaism that partially defines itself over against the Greek way of life. Using the language and concepts of Stoicism (→ Stoics), 4 Maccabees argues that Jews can dominate their passions through reason trained and taught by the law and thus resist challenges to faithfulness even at the cost of life.

Literary Characteristics

The book is also literarily dual. Indeed the author is explicit about the work falling into two parts (3:19; cf. 1:2, 7–12). The first section, 1:1–3:18, is the discursive argument of a thesis. After an introductory narrative (3:19–4:26) that provides the dramatic setting, the second part of the work (3:19–18:24) focuses on the stories of the Maccabean martyrs: the martyrdom of Eleazar (5:1–7:23); the martyrdom of the seven brothers (8:1–14:10); and the mother of the seven (14:11–17:6; → Maccabees). Even though the work provides substantial accounts of the martyrs' defiance and torture, it is misleading to think of the second half as essentially "historical" narratives. Argumentation and the rhetorical praise known as encomium are as important there as narrative.

The variety of generic descriptions proposed for 4 Maccabees reflects the difficulties interpreters have experienced in providing an overall description of the work. It has most commonly been called a diatribe. Scholars have usually employed "diatribe" to mean any popular ethical and philosophical work with dialogical characteristics. With its hypothetical objections in 1:5 and 2:24, the first part of the book, 1:1–3:18, fits this definition of the diatribe fairly well. The second part, with its long narrative sections, however, does not. Moreover, recent scholarship on the diatribe has shown that it is better defined as a type of rhetoric that has its setting in the classroom discussion of the philosophical schools. Thus while the work has some similarities to the diatribal literature, diatribe is wholly inadequate as a generic description.

Others have described 4 Maccabees as a synagogue sermon, but have not provided any examples for comparison, since we know almost nothing about synagogue "preaching" in the time of 4 Maccabees. The description of 4 Maccabees using styles of oratorical praise common in Greek and Latin culture (i.e., as an encomium or panegyric) partially fits the second half of the work. There, praise of the martyrs and their virtues is a significant element. It is even possible to call the latter part of the book an *epitaphios logos* (Gk.), a commemorative funeral oration. This genre is related to panegyric, and genuine similarities to it do appear in the last chapters of 4 Maccabees.

The combination of observations that are the basis for the preceding generic descriptions are best accounted for by the techniques of the rhetorical *thesis*. The thesis is known from numerous rhetorical handbooks and student manuals known as elementary rhetorical exercises, as well as from examples of the genre and miscellaneous discussions, especially in Cicero. Theses were general theoretical and ethical questions first discussed and written about in the philosophical schools. Many of these topics were taken into the rhetorical schools, where "thesis" came to mean "the investigation of a topic without reference to specific circumstances." Students were trained in how to develop theses rhetorically. Theses were contrasted with *hypotheses*, which were topics including specifics such as person, time, and place. The following are examples of theses: "whether one ought to worship God"; "whether the wise man can suffer distress"; "whether one can trust the evidence of sense perception." A thesis could be transformed into a hypothesis by adding specific circumstances and treated as a judi-

cial case, a matter of advice, or a subject for praise or blame (i.e., treated encomiastically). Quintilian, a Roman teacher of rhetoric, gives "whether one ought to marry" as an example of a thesis that could be turned into the following hypothesis: "Should Cato have married?" (*Institutio oratoria* 3.5.8).

4 Maccabees is the rhetorical treatment of the thesis formally stated in 1:1, "whether religious reason is sovereign over the passions." In 1:1–3:18 the orator treats the subject as a typical thesis. In 3:19–18:24 he continues to argue the thesis, but fixes on the example of the Maccabean martyrs, so that, in effect, he has added person, time, and place. The second half of the work then resembles the argument of a thesis combined with its hypothesis treated encomiastically. Thus the subject of the second half becomes "we ought to praise the martyrs if they are shown to have mastered the emotions through religious reason." This explains why 3:19–18:24 contains so many characteristics of encomium or panegyric and yet continues to argue the philosophical theses. Since the commemorative funeral oration was a speech praising dead war heroes and civic martyrs, it is not surprising that the Maccabean heroes would be praised in similar terms. Thus the common techniques of developing a thesis explain 4 Maccabees' similarities to the diatribe, panegyric, sermon, and funeral oration.

A number of commentators have thought that 4 Maccabees is the record of a speech delivered orally at a festival or occasion in honor of the martyrs. In 1:10 and 3:19 there is reference to "the present occasion." The same expression is used in funeral orations and panegyrics that were at least purportedly delivered in public. A reference to the tomb of the martyrs occurs in 17:8, and a grave site commemoration is conceivable. Students of rhetoric, however, were taught to develop hypotheses so as to portray a courtroom situation, an advisory speech to Cato, or a civic oration. Thus one can only say that 4 Maccabees literarily presents itself as an occasional oration with a live audience.

In sum, 4 Maccabees represents the perfect form for a rhetorically trained orator who is also committed to philosophy. It both rhetorically argues a philosophical thesis and develops that thesis into an encomium of those examples that are used as evidence for the thesis. The elements of encouragement and consolation in 4 Maccabees are natural to panegyric. This complex mixture of praise, moral example, and exhortation is specified in the introduction to the funeral oration in Plato's *Menexenus* (236E): "The proper speech will sufficiently praise the dead and gently exhort the living, encouraging their descendants and brethren to imitate their virtue—and to console survivors—praising the good men who in life brought joy to friends by their virtue, and gave their lives in exchange for the salvation of the living."

Authorship, Date, and Place of Origin

Although at one time 4 Maccabees was attributed to Josephus, its author is unknown. The author was a Jew who spoke fluent Greek and was highly trained in rhetoric. He had at least a basic knowledge of Greek philosophy, namely, some form of later Stoicism. He was probably a public figure and one of the literati in some Jewish community (see 1:12). He knew Scripture, namely, the Law and the Prophets, but used scriptural examples in a typically Greek rhetorical way. He employed the Septuagint Greek translation (LXX), and 4 Maccabees is free of Semitisms that might suggest that Greek was the author's second language. The author drew on various legends from the Maccabean period. His most important source for 4 Maccabees, however, was 2 Maccabees. The narrative portions of chaps. 3–18 are largely an expansion of 2 Maccabees 6:12–7:42.

Scholars have proposed many dates between 63 B.C. and A.D. 120 for the writing of 4 Maccabees. Since there is no clear evidence for dating, no proposal can be much more than an educated guess. The most probable suggestion would place its composition in the first century A.D. The one argument for dating that carries some weight was made by E. Bickerman. He points to 4:2, where Apollonius is called governor of Syria, Phoenicia, and Cilicia and shows that Cilicia was only an administrative part of Syria between about A.D. 20 and 54. The administrative arrangement mentioned in 4:9, then, may be an anachronism reflecting the author's own time.

The work itself gives no evidence for place of composition. The literary setting for the martyrdoms is clearly Jerusalem. Scholars have most often proposed Alexandria and Antioch as places of composition, the former because of its famous Greek-Jewish intellectual tradition and the latter because a Christian cult of the Maccabean martyrs in Antioch seems to go back at least to the fourth century. Jerusalem or any of the Greek, Phoenician, or Jewish cities of Palestine are even more likely. Greek was a literary and administrative second language of upper-class Jews in Palestine, and Greek education continued in Jerusalem even after the Maccabean revolt. Substantial numbers of Jews who spoke Greek as a first language also lived in Palestine. Palestine and Syria together produced more Stoic teachers than any other region. Finally, however, the lack of evidence means that the author could have come from any urban setting in the Greek East with a Jewish community.

Significance and Thought

4 Maccabees is important as a witness to one way of being Jewish in a world where many types of Judaism

flourished. Already in the time of the Maccabees being a Jew was, for the majority, a matter of belonging to two cultures. It was never a matter of merely choosing between Hellenism and Judaism, but of continually adapting some form of Judaism to a Hellenistic world to which it already belonged. Although 4 Maccabees takes the strongest stand against compromising practices deemed essential to "the Jewish way of life," it also assumes a large area of commonality and rapprochement with "the Greek way of life." For the author this commonality surely included concrete and practical areas of social and cultural intercourse, but in 4 Maccabees it is conceived in terms of Greek philosophy.

In the world of 4 Maccabees there is a Greek way of life, a Jewish way of life, and a large area of the universally true that substantially overlaps with both ways of life. This common ground is primarily conceived in terms of human nature and worked out in psychology and ethics. The four cardinal virtues (prudence, fortitude, temperance, and justice), their subvirtues, reason, the emotions, and instincts are human. Both the Greek and Jewish ways of life aim for the virtues, although the Jewish law that produces the Jewish way of life is a superior means to them. There is no opposition between nature and the law (e.g., as human convention or supernatural), because both were ordained by God and made compatible by God. At the same time the book does not universalize the law. It is the constitution of the Jewish people.

There has been great confusion in the scholarly literature concerning the philosophical kinship of 4 Maccabees. It has been called Platonic, Aristotelian, and, most often, Stoic. Most unsatisfactory of all is the claim that it is a mishmash of philosophical commonplaces. 4 Maccabees is a rhetorical oration and not a philosophical treatise. That, however, does not mean that its philosophical thought is incoherent. In several respects its thought is definitively Stoic. This has never been clearly shown in the scholarly literature because Stoicism, with its long and complex history, has been treated as a superficial caricature.

What is most Stoic about 4 Maccabees is the role of reason in relation to the emotions and irrational dispositions. Although all of the Hellenistic schools agreed that reason was to be master of the emotions, what this meant was developed in quite different ways and expressed in their depictions of the ideal wise man. Stoics thought that reason should thoroughly dominate the emotions. There is no room in Stoic theory for the continual and often creative struggle between the two that is characteristic of Platonism or the integration of emotion into the higher form of reason as in Aristotelian thought. The older, or orthodox, Stoics taught that the typical emotions of most people were diseased states of the soul that needed to be replaced by rationalized emotions. The so-called middle Stoics, especially Posidonius, taught that the emotions were innate and could not be eradicated or rationalized. They could only be tamed and mastered.

4 Maccabees stands very close to the middle Stoicism of Posidonius on several points of psychology. The emotions and dispositions are innate and cannot be eradicated, but must be thoroughly subjugated by reason. The Stoic character of the work's philosophy is most clear in its depictions of the martyrs, who resemble the figure of the Stoic wise man. The mother, for example, so thoroughly mastered her emotions and irrational impulses by her reasonings that she suppressed her maternal love and did not even flinch or grieve when she saw her children being burned alive and dismembered. The chief virtue of the work is courage, which is defined in a typically Stoic way as endurance and constancy. The martyrs, like the wise man, know what must be endured (i.e., that which is not morally good, the emotions, and fortune).

It is impossible to know what 4 Maccabees meant to its first readers or hearers. We can only imagine what it meant for the author and his implied literary audience. The latter are imagined to be Jews for whom the philosophical doctrines of 4 Maccabees are for the most part accepted as scientific knowledge. 4 Maccabees' way of arguing by means of a decisive empirical example, the endurance of the martyrs, resembles a type of "proof" for which Posidonius was famous. The work uses the thesis to define the nature of Israel's inviolable integrity as God's people. History, including the events of the Maccabean struggle, had shown that military power and political-religious institutions could not be the basis for Israel's integrity. Through the argument of its thesis concerning the endurance of the martyrs, the book seeks to show that the integrity of the whole nation can be guaranteed by the faithful sage's inner invincibility. The essential premise is that obedience to and education in the law produces virtuous character in those who are faithful. Antiochus Epiphanes violated the physical and symbolic boundaries of the nation, but he was not able to destroy the moral-religious integrity of the martyrs even though he violated their bodies. Therefore the soul of the nation was inviolable. 4 Maccabees answers the question, "What shall we be in order to survive?" In the form of encomium that praises the martyrs' virtues, it also contains a strong element of exhortation. What it praises, it also recommends.

The impregnable boundary may be the faithful Jew's religious reason, i.e., moral-religious character, but the faithful Jew is not merely an individual. As a member of Israel the individual bears a part of Israel's corporate responsibility to God's justice. In turn, the individual can affect the whole. The martyrs in 4 Maccabees affect the whole nation in two ways. First, the example of their faithfulness had great paradigmatic power, and that helped to effect faithfulness in the rest of the nation. Second, their endurance was so merito-

rious that God regarded their suffering as sufficient atonement for the nation's apostasy. 4 Maccabees interprets the significance of their deaths within the tradition of "the merits of the fathers." Some individuals like Abraham and Moses were so virtuous that God henceforth blessed the whole people or all descendants on the basis of their faithfulness. Thus all Israelites receive the blessings of the covenant on the basis of God's regard for Abraham's faithfulness. So God also restored the nation's fortunes because of the Maccabean martyrs.

4 Maccabees does not seem to have been known to any later types of Judaism. Rather, Christians transmitted the book. Some scholars have argued that 4 Maccabees' conception of the martyrs' expiatory suffering influenced Paul's interpretation of Jesus' death. Although there is virtually nothing about the atoning effect of a person's death in Jewish literature before the turn of the era, the theme is extremely important in Greek literature. Some, then, have argued that 4 Maccabees may have mediated such concepts to the earliest followers of Jesus.

This theory would also help to explain why 4 Maccabees was read as a Christian book by the later church. It was clearly important to the later church's cult and theology of martyrdom and was a force in forming that tradition. *The Martyrdom of Polycarp* (second century A.D.), the earliest piece of Christian martyr literature, seems to contain literary and conceptual echoes of 4 Maccabees. 4 Maccabees was popular among the representatives of the golden age of patristic literature in the fourth and fifth centuries. Gregory of Nazianzus, John Chrysostom, Ambrose, Augustine, and Jerome preached and wrote about the martyrs. These authors treat the Maccabean heroes as Christian protomartyrs. Thus although 4 Maccabees never achieved a canonical status in either Western or Eastern churches, it was influential, especially in the latter.

COMMENTARY

1:1–12

Introduction

The introduction in 1:1–12 exhibits the advice of certain rhetoricians that writers of theses should use a special type of careful and artful introduction instead of the normal rhetorical introduction. Thus the author not only attempts to make the audience attentive, but also lays out his thesis and exactly how he will treat it.

1:1–6, Statement of the Thesis. The orator announces the thesis (1:1a), urges its importance (1:1b–2), and clarifies it with a qualification (1:3–6). Modern philosophy is an academic discipline that concerns theories of knowledge and their implications. For this author and Greco-Roman culture, philosophy meant wisdom in living life. On the basis of medieval and modern assumptions about "faith and reason," interpreters have claimed that "religious reason" is an oxymoron. But with rare exceptions ancient philosophy understood reason and piety toward the gods to be integrally related. For Stoics "religion" or "piety" was one of the virtues. Like Philo and many other Jews, the writer of 4 Maccabees believed that the wisdom of philosophy found its highest expression in the teachings of the five Mosaic books of the law (see, e.g., 2:16–17). Thus the author speaks of "religious reason," probably adding "religious" to a thesis that may have already been current in the rhetorical schools.

Verse 2 not only claims importance for the thesis but also suggests the twofold treatment that the author will give to it. The rhetorical handbooks divide theses into theoretical and practical subjects. Theses were sometimes treated encomiastically, praising and recommending moral virtues. The first part of 4 Maccabees treats the thesis theoretically (1:12– 3:18), while the second is encomiastic and exhortatory (3:19–18:24). Verse 2 suggests this distinction: the work will encompass both "theoretical knowledge" and praise of "practical moral thinking" (i.e., "prudence").

Verses 3–4 elaborate the thesis. The four cardinal virtues of the Platonic and Stoic schools, "rational self-restraint," "justice," and "courage," as well as "practical moral thinking" in verse 2, are set against a miscellany of opposing emotions and dispositions that are all called passions (Gk. *pathe*). The word may also be properly translated as "emotions," but no modern English concept fully corresponds to the ancient idea of "passions."

Some of the rhetorical handbooks instruct authors of theses to use objections from imaginary interlocutors to sharpen the discussion and answer typical criticisms of the thesis. The objection in 1:5 is repeated in 2:24. It allows the clarification of two possible counterarguments: first, that reason cannot control emotions (i.e., passions) because it cannot even control ignorance and forgetfulness that affect the intellect itself; second, that mastery of the emotions means their elimination. The latter was a common misunderstanding of the orthodox Stoics, who taught that the diseased emotions such as "irrational fear" had to be entirely eliminated and replaced with the good emotions such as "rational caution."

1:7–12, The Examples to Be Used. The second part of the introduction explains how the orator will treat the thesis in the second part of the work (3:19–18:24) by turning to the martyrs in order to illustrate it. This procedure resembles what the rhetoricians called de-

veloping a hypothesis, i.e., adding person, specific events, and place to a thesis. Verse 10 probably means that although the author could give a standard speech of formal praise of the martyrs' virtues (i.e., an encomium or panegyric), he will give an oration that commemorates dead heroes. It was customary to speak of the dead as "blessed." The expression "at this time" (1:10; 3:19) may indicate that the oration was delivered at a festival commemorating the martyrdoms.

1:13–3:18
Theoretical Development of the Thesis

In 1:13–3:18 the thesis is developed with various arguments. In 1:13–30a the author follows the practice in theoretical theses of beginning with definitions and distinctions regarding the key concepts. The following section, 1:30b–3:18, provides illustrations showing that reason has mastery over each type of emotion.

1:13–30a, Definitions and Distinctions. The definition of wisdom in 1:16 may have originated with the Stoics, but had come to be a philosophical commonplace. 4 Maccabees has assimilated Greek ethics and psychology and yet remains definitively Jewish. It is the law, the five books of Moses, that gives content to the faculty of reason (1:17). Reason is almost the will to do God's law. The law teaches and trains the intellect (2:23; 5:24, 34; 13:24) and enables reason to develop the virtues (5:23; 13:13; cf. 11:27). The second half of 1:24 is textually problematic and the translation uncertain.

1:30b–2:23, Examples of the Power of Reason. Here the author advances examples to show how reason allows the person to master the emotions and thus obey the law. The discussion falls into three parts: reason's rule through rational self-control (1:30–2:6a); reason's rule through courage (2:6b–14); and reason's rule over violent emotions through the rationally self-controlled mind (2:15–23). The most important concept in 1:30b–2:23 is "rational self-control," the most characteristically Greek virtue, which is often poorly translated as "temperance."

There are two quite different ways to translate the second part of v. 30. Hadas (similarly Anderson) renders the phrase in question "in the case of the deeds which hamper temperance." But the following translation is equally possibly (similarly the NRSV and Townsend): "by means of the restraining effects of rational self-control." The first translation has the advantage of being parallel to 1:3 and 2:6. One reason that rational self-control looms so large in 4 Maccabees is that such self-control was traditionally the habit of resisting temptations to overeat or eat the wrong kinds of foods. The Jewish food laws become the central test case in the account of the martyrdoms (1:33–34; cf. 5:16–24). Rational self-control was also the means of restraining sexual desire. The story of Joseph (2:2–3) became the example that epitomized this virtue in Jewish and early Christian literature.

In 2:6b–14 the author provides examples from the law that he treats as general humanitarian principles. In the law, lending without interest applies only to Jews (Exod. 22:25; Lev. 25:36; Deut. 23:20). Similarly, on gleaning (4 Macc. 2:9), see Lev. 19:9–10. 4 Macc. 2:9–10 shows clearly how the law provides the content for reason. Verse 14 is quite elliptical and difficult to construe precisely, although the general idea is clear (cf. Deut. 20:19–20; Exod. 23:4–5).

In discussing the hardest case of the most violent emotions (2:15–23), the author will finally clarify his philosophical position on human psychology. The concepts contained in vv. 21–23 are Stoic and probably come from the middle Stoicism of Panaetius and Posidonius, who emphasized that the emotions were innate and could not be eradicated. Reason's role is to subdue and master the passions completely. There is not just a standoff or creative struggle between the two parts of the soul, as a Platonist might have taught. At the same time, the passions cannot be cut out. God himself created humans with passions and inclinations (2:21) that through the agency of the senses are to be ruled by the governing power of the intellect (2:22). For orthodox Stoics, the mind has no innate ideas, but is consubstantial with universal divine reason. The senses work together with reason in apprehending the world empirically. Passions arise when the intellect errs about the value and nature of objects. The middle Stoics modified this position by making the passions innate. For this Jewish author the Mosaic law educates the faculty of reason and is also an object of perception. The Stoics, in one of their famous paradoxes, said that the wise man, who lives according to reason, is the only true king. He controls the only thing over which a person truly has power, the inner moral state. The author says that the one who lives according to the law reigns over a kingdom of the virtues (2:23).

2:24–3:18, The Example of David's Thirst. Although there is no manuscript warrant, several commentators reject the phrase "those of the body" in 3:1 and replace it with the corresponding answer in 1:6. They do this because the examples of passions in 3:2–4 are not passions of the body. The author's contrast, however, is not between passions of the body and those of the soul (NRSV misleadingly translates "soul" as "mind" in 3:3), but between passions of the body and those of reason. Reason is merely the governing aspect of the soul. "Passions of the reason" (2:24–3:1) refers to states of the intellect like forgetfulness, which are basically involuntary. The point, then, is not a contrast between soul and body, but the extent to which reason controls soul-body. The author could as well have written, "those of the body and irrational aspects of the soul" in 3:1. In introducing "desire" in 3:2, the ex-

ample of King David is already in view. The LXX uses "desire" of David in 2 Sam. 23:15, and desire is the focus of the story in 4 Maccabees (3:11, 12, 16). The writer already emphasized that some desires are of the body and some of the soul (1:32). The story about David illustrates both as it creatively embellishes the biblical account. The "tensing and loosing" in 3:11 reflects the Stoic explanation of the emotions. The story is yet another argument for the power of the mind when it exhibits the virtue of rational self-control (3:17; cf. 1:35; 2:16, 18; 3:19). Through this virtue a martyr can "overcome the sufferings of the body regardless of how extreme" (3:18).

In sum, 1:1–3:18 argues for the thesis in a way that stresses rational self-control over the appetites, especially appetites of eating, and over the emotions of pain. Courage is also important. This philosophically informed orator has given a scientific explanation of the ability to endure in the face of temptation, persecution, and torture. In 3:19–18:24 he will rhetorically narrate stories that he believes profoundly prove the truth of his thesis.

3:19–18:24
Development of the Thesis Through the Example of the Maccabean Martyrs

4 Macc. 3:19 is the major transition of the whole discourse. After 3:19 the style changes from the popular philosophical argumentation of a thesis to emotionally charged narratives and panegyrics. The differences, however, should not be overplayed. The first part already uses narratives about Joseph, Jacob, Moses, and David as examples, and the second part argues the thesis. The rhetorical genre of 3:19–18:24 is epideictic, the rhetoric of praise and blame customary on occasions such as weddings, funerals, commemorative celebrations, and award ceremonies. The author continues explicitly (6:31–34; 7:16–23; 13:1–7; 14:11–15:1; 16:1–4) and implicitly (throughout) to argue the thesis, but also mixes argumentation with praise, or panegyric. The latter in turn is implicitly a kind of exhortation for the audience to emulate the virtues of the martyrs (see 18:1–2). The statement in 3:19 that "the proper time calls us to demonstrate the theme of rationally self-controlled reason" may refer to an occasion commemorating the martyrs at which the speech was given (cf. 1:10).

3:19–4:26
Historical Background to the Persecution

After the transitional v. 19, 3:20–4:26 provides a preface to the discussion of the martyrs. The first part (3:20–4:14) tells the story of Apollonius's attempt on the Temple treasury, and the second (4:15–26) narrates the background to Antiochus's persecutions. Here, and in the narratives that follow, the author probably drew on 2 Maccabees, but not always accurately. The author has confused "Seleucus Nicanor" (actually, Nicator), who lived ca. 358–281 B.C., with Seleucus IV Philopator (ruled 187–175 B.C.), the actual predecessor of Antiochus. Similarly, "governor of Syria, Phoenicia, and Cilicia" (4:2) is anachronistic. Cilicia was part of the province only in A.D. 20–54. Verse 5 contradicts 2 Macc. 3:7–8, where Heliodorus is put in command, not Apollonius. Such details are of little importance to the author's purposes. The orator need only provide enough narrative to make sense of the tyranny of Antiochus and his persecution of the martyrs.

Verse 15 is also inaccurate: Antiochus IV Epiphanes was not Seleucus's son, but the brother of Seleucus IV Philopator. Verse 21 attributes Antiochus's attack to "divine justice" because of national apostasy from the law. The faithful endurance and deaths of the martyrs are more than isolated incidents with an exemplary personal significance in 4 Maccabees. They are an atonement and purification for the sin and apostasy under Antiochus (1:11; 17:21; 18:4). The work makes the story into a personal struggle with cosmic implications between the demonically anti-Jewish Antiochus, who is being used by God to punish and test his people, and the unlikely martyrs: an old man, seven boys, and an old woman. 4 Maccabees clearly has the struggle take place in Jerusalem, although the later church believed that the martyrdoms occurred in Antioch.

5:1–7:23
The Martyrdom of Eleazar

The section 5:1–7:23 comprises the martyrdom and eulogy of Eleazar (cf. 2 Macc. 18–31). The narratives of Eleazar's and the youths' martyrdoms have a very similar structure: the tyrant's exhortation to apostasy (5:5–13); a speech of defiance (5:14–38); torture of the hero (6:1–25); final words and death (6:26–30). In each case the narrative is followed by an encomium in praise of the martyr(s) and an appeal to their behavior as evidence for the thesis. The mother is treated differently in several respects due to the ancient hierarchical conception of gender.

5:1–4, Narrative Setting. The events unfold at a preeminent public place in Jerusalem. When Eleazar speaks, he speaks to the "people" of the city (5:15). Many Jews have already chosen apostasy by participating in the abolition of the constitution and way of life taught in the law (4:18–20). The story of Apollonius is told to show that such a thing would have been impossible if the Jewish leaders had been faithful and God had been with them. But now God is justly angry and sends Antiochus to punish his people (4:21). When Antiochus arrives many people bravely resist apostasy, but without God's help they are killed (4:24–26). In

this dramatic setting, all eyes focus on Eleazar, the boys, and the mother. In likening the martyrdoms to an athletic contest, 17:14 describes "the world and humanity as the spectators." They are public examples and the narrative will make it clear that the fate of the nation hangs on the strength of their character.

Verse 4 introduces and characterizes Eleazar. He is a priest, skilled in the law, an old man, and a philosopher. In 2 Maccabees he is a ninety-year-old scribe. That he is a priest and known to Antiochus's court for his philosophical way of life reflects the peculiar perspective of 4 Maccabees. As a priest and expert in the law he is definitively loyal to the Jewish nation-people-religion. As a philosopher he also lives in a larger Greek world that is partially reconcilable with Judaism. The irony of 4 Maccabees is that Greek philosophy explains how the utmost loyalty to Judaism is possible. 4 Maccabees emphasizes that each martyr faces torture and death with a disability that makes his or her endurance more remarkable. For Eleazar it is his old age.

5:5–13, Antiochus's Exhortation to Apostasy. Antiochus's exhortation to apostasy (5:5–13) and Eleazar's reply (5:14–38) comprise opposing philosophies. The tyrant's speech takes the form of an exhortation to adopt a certain philosophy and its way of life. His argument against Eleazar's philosophy occupies vv. 8–10. It is unjust to reject the gifts of nature such as pork; such pleasures are a good not to be rejected by those who are truly wise. The mention of pleasure and nature makes Antiochus sound vaguely Epicurean. In a way typical of Stoics and other Hellenistic schools the author has nothing positive to say about "pleasure" (see 1:20–33), even if he believes that the capacity for pleasure is inherently human.

5:14–38, Eleazar's Defiant Reply. In his reply Eleazar says that the law, in teaching "rational self-control," allows him to dominate his impulse toward pleasure (5:23). Summing up what Eleazar's case demonstrates about his thesis, the author includes the ability to dominate pleasure (6:35). Antiochus calls Eleazar to a philosophy of what is "beneficial" rather than to risk death on the basis of his philosophical doctrines (5:11). The king is enticing him to think personally and selfishly about his situation.

Eleazar, the philosopher tutored by the law, cannot reason as Antiochus urges. His defiant reply outlines the essential philosophical-religious notions of 4 Maccabees. In essence vv. 16–18 mean that Eleazar's transgression would not be a personal matter. The argument carries force if one remembers the dramatic setting. Eleazar's behavior is on display before the Jewish nation at a moment when either survival or assimilation to the Greek way of life is a real possibility. The way the nation will go depends upon whether or not the old philosopher upholds his "reputation for piety" (v. 18). In such a public situation, whether the particular transgression is minor or serious in itself, symbolically it represents the rejection of the law (5:19–21; cf. v. 13).

The basic line of Eleazar's argument for observing the law is as follows: living by the law produces the virtues in us (vv. 23–24); therefore we do not eat unclean foods, but believe that the law corresponds to the way that God has created us (vv. 25–27). The virtues in question are three of the four cardinal virtues generally regarded in Hellenistic culture as the mark of the wise man, plus "religion" or "piety," also an important virtue. Verses 25–26 are crucial for understanding how the author has reconciled his Greek and Jewish heritages: "Believing that God established the law, we know that the creator of the world, in giving the law, has cared for us according to nature. He has allowed us to eat the things which are well-disposed to our souls, but has commanded us not to eat meats which are contrary to our souls." God who created both the law and nature has made the teachings of the law correspond to the spiritual nature of the Jewish people. 4 Maccabees does not go on to argue that the natural constitution of all humans is created to conform to the food laws. The word translated as "well-disposed" was an extremely important concept for the Stoics. Verse 26 is reminiscent of what the Stoic Chrysippus said: "In constituting the creature, Nature made it well-disposed to itself so that it repels the harmful things and allows the things which are well-disposed" (*Diogenes Laertius* 7.85).

Verses 27–38 provide a rhetorical display of defiance against the tyrant. Socrates was the beginning of a long tradition of philosopher-martyrs. Under the early empire Stoics developed a reputation for opposition to tyranny. Eleazar's words are reminiscent of such Stoic defiance. Epictetus said that the tyrant could chain his leg or kill his body, but never control his moral reasoning. Eleazar says the same in vv. 27–38. For 4 Maccabees, reason and the emotions are not abstract philosophical concepts. These doctrines mean that Judaism need not be subdued by a superior political power. Eleazar, like the Stoic sage, displays complete inner freedom. Unlike the Stoic sage he also is emboldened by belief in a future life and future retribution (5:37; cf. 13:17; 17:12).

6:1–30, The Torture and Death of Eleazar. In the lurid description of his torture (6:1–25), Eleazar is the synthesis of a Jewish "saint" and a philosopher-martyr. He raises his eyes to heaven in the attitude of prayer and dying martyrs (6:6, 26; cf. Acts 7:55). In the language of Hellenistic moral exhortation, he is a noble athlete (6:10). Athletic imagery, so important in Hellenistic moral-philosophical literature, is one of the most important figurative motifs in the work (e.g., 17:11–14). Above all, Eleazar is a model or example for his people (6:19). The narrator gives him a last chance to save himself (6:12–15), so that the old philosopher

can interpret his behavior as an example (6:16–23). Within the narrative it is an example most explicitly for the youths who will follow him (6:19, 22). Eleazar's example effects a reaction of imitation beginning with the boys and their mother that will finally save the whole nation. Cynics and the later Stoics spoke frequently of the philosopher's behavior under hardship and pain as an example for imitation. The example of the perfected philosopher, the wise man, was believed to have amazing power over people's lives.

From ancient literary practice, one expects final words in a death scene (6:26–30) to express key notions for the piece of literature in question. Verses 27–29 contain concepts that are virtually without precedent in Jewish literature, including the Hebrew Bible, but that were extremely important in ancient Greek literature, especially tragedy. These also became central ideas for interpreting the meaning of Jesus' death. Eleazar could have saved himself, but remains faithful to God in order to die for his people. He asks God to regard his death as a "ransom" (cf. Mark 10:45) and "purification" for the sin of his people (cf. 4 Macc. 1:11; 9:24; 12:17; 17:21–22; 18:4). In other words, Eleazar is asking God to consider his faithfulness to death as sufficient punishment for the apostasy of Israel under Antiochus. He is asking for the return of God's protecting presence as it was in the days of the Apollonius incident.

6:31–35, Eleazar's Death as Philosophical Proof. Having depicted Eleazar's remarkable suppression of immediate self-interest for the sake of loyalty to God and the greater good of the nation, the author abruptly asserts what for him is the inescapable logic. Thus vv. 31–35 claim the narrative as "proof" of the thesis. Eleazar's self-giving is explainable by and demonstrates the governing power of reason over the irrational impulses of physical pain and the enticements of pleasure. Before amplifying Eleazar's case as proof of the thesis (7:16–23), the orator celebrates the old man in a brief encomium.

7:1–23, An Encomium and Further Argument. The model figure for the encomium in 7:1–15 is the Stoic wise man. The metaphor of reason as pilot is common in Hellenistic philosophy, but it was the Stoics, especially in the early Roman empire, who likened the wise man fortified with his reason to a besieged city (cf. Paul's opposition to such an attitude in 2 Cor. 10:3–6). The Stoics derived the imagery from Antisthenes, who said, "Prudence is a most secure fortress which is never broken or betrayed. We ought to construct walls of defense with our own impregnable reasonings" (*Diogenes Laertius* 6.13). Instead of being compared with Stoic sages, however, Eleazar is compared to Aaron and Isaac, models of self-giving for their people through the power of reason. Eleazar himself has entered the ranks of these powerful moral examples (7:9).

When the author returns to arguing his thesis (7:16–23), he raises a possible objection (7:17). What if many cannot attain the impregnable prudence that Antisthenes and he recommend? Stoics thought that the true wise man was extremely rare and that most people did not live by reason. 4 Maccabees seems to agree. The answer to the objection seems to be that, although only some will attain prudent reason, anyone who trusts in God and is devoted to his ways can fully develop his or her reason (7:18–19, 21–23). Like the Stoics, the author can say that only the wise man rules his emotions (7:23). The objection has no force for the author. Perfection is what reason and religion demand. In fact, 4 Maccabees polemicizes against Jews who would argue that torture and duress make lapses in keeping the law excusable (8:16–26). As with the philosophers, healthy reasoning is based on sure belief in true doctrines. These illustrate the author's Jewish-Stoic synthesis. Only the people who believe that they, like the patriarchs, will not die to God but live to God (7:19) and that it is blessed to suffer for the sake of virtue can attain prudent reason (7:22).

8:1–14:10
The Martyrdom of the Seven Brothers

This section, which treats the martyrdom of the seven brothers, seems to be a rhetorical expansion of 2 Macc. 7:1–38. If Eleazar's disability was old age, that of the seven brothers is youth. Stoics most often taught that children only attained the capacity for reason at age fourteen. It is unclear just how the author stands on this issue, except that the children are presented as exceptional because they are Jewish (e.g., 9:18). Stoics believed that children, because they were not fully rational, could only receive training; adults needed doctrines and training or in some cases doctrines alone. The youths in 4 Maccabees have received both. They were "nurtured in doctrines" (10:2), which probably included those mentioned in 7:19–22. Their victory is also attributed to the power of their reason (e.g., 8:15). The second youngest appeals to the invincibility of "religious knowledge" (Gk., *episteme*) in 11:21. The narrative, however, also emphasizes their "training" *(paideia)* and "discipline" *(askesis)*, e.g., 10:10; 13:22–24.

8:1–14, Narrative Setting and Exhortation to Apostasy. Antiochus's "violent rage" (8:2) is in marked contrast to the emotional self-control of the martyrs. There are also sexual overtones to the king's admiration for the boys (8:4–5). He offers to make them Friends of the King, which means employment in his government (8:5, 7). The weakness of the tyrant's philosophy and his defeat by mere boys is a major theme of 8:1–14:10. The boys conquer him by testing his arguments with reason and standing firm in their own philosophy (8:15).

8:15–9:9, False Arguments and the Brothers' Defiant Reply. False arguments that the brothers might have used but did not are given in 8:16–26. This section functions as a model of how not to think, and the orator may be polemicizing against less rigorous members of the Jewish community. Instead of excuses, the boys collectively sing out a defiant response, like a Greek dramatic chorus (9:1–9). The boys are following a long line of Jewish martyrs that includes "old men of the Hebrews" (9:6) who endured torture. By the beginning of the common era there were legendary traditions attributing martyrdom to many figures in the Hebrew Bible (cf. Heb. 11:35–37). Stoic themes reappear in 9:7–8: physical suffering cannot affect the inner rational nature of the wise man; suffering is managed by the virtue of endurance. The boys can endure because they know that they will be with God and that the tyrant will be punished eternally (9:8–9).

9:10–12:19, Account of the Torture of the Seven Brothers. In a pattern that is followed with minor variation for each of the youths, the eldest son's torture, defiant words, and death are described in 9:10–25. The narration illustrates the orator's complete freedom with the account in 2 Maccabees. In the latter, the boy's tongue is cut out, he is scalped, his hands and feet are cut off, and he is burned in a pan. Here he is flogged, broken on the wheel, and burned in a fire. Verse 22, "as if transformed into incorruption by the fire he endured," shares language with the Letters of Paul (Phil. 3:21; 1 Cor. 15:51–53; 2 Cor. 3:18) and certain Hellenistic philosophers. Here the reference is probably to the divine and incorruptible nature of reason and virtue rather than end-time events as in Paul. As Eleazar encouraged the boys, so the eldest exhorts his brothers to imitate him (9:23). The third and fourth brothers will explicitly appeal to brotherhood in accepting death (10:3, 15). The narrative of the second eldest follows briefly on the first (9:26–30). The boy's insolent reply in vv. 30–32 mixes two themes: virtue is the greatest reward and vice entails the worst punishment; the judgment of divine wrath is inescapable. The latter is an important theme in both Jewish and Greek literature.

The martyrdoms of the other brothers occupy 10:1–12:19. For ancient readers, each is yet more amazing, as the boys are successively younger. The assumption is that, the younger the child, the less his reason. In the account of the third brother, only some manuscripts have 10:4, which is probably an interpolation. The third brother's "boldness" outrages the tyrant. None of the martyrs are merely loyal to their cause; they are outspoken and insolent. "Boldness" was associated especially with the speech of Cynic philosophers, but was also an attribute of the Stoic wise man. The characterization of Antiochus becomes progressively more malevolent. In 10:17 he is "bloodthirsty, murderous, and completely abominable." This characterization does not square with what is known about Antiochus. The exaggerations are created to achieve a high level of pathos. The fifth brother volunteers himself for torture so that the king will receive even more punishment (11:1–3). 4 Macc. 11:7–8 is not found in some important manuscripts and may be an addition to the text.

The narrative emphasizes the youth of the sixth and seventh brothers (11:13–14; 12:1–2). The sixth proclaims that he is nevertheless equal to his older brothers in intellect (11:14). The last is so young that even the wicked king feels strong compassion for him (12:2). There are few indications, however, of their "actual" ages. In 16:9 the orator mentions that some were married and some not. The accounts of the last two emphasize with great irony the utter helplessness and defeat of the tyrant by these young boys (e.g., 11:20–27). The speech of the youngest stresses the eternal torture that the king will receive as punishment both for rejecting God's blessings and for persecuting the truly faithful (12:11–19).

The story of the seventh brother breaks the tiresome pattern and concludes with a twist. Out of compassion the king sends for the mother, hoping that she will persuade her son to eat (12:6–7). The actual words of the mother are postponed (see 16:12–24, although here she is inconsistently made to encourage all of the sons), and she speaks in Hebrew so that the tyrant will not hear her exhortation to martyrdom. Feigning acceptance of the king's offer, the boy is set free and commits suicide after a defiant speech. Stoics argued that suicide was justified in cases where there was no escape from the tyranny of a despot without compromising virtue.

13:1–7, The Brothers' Example as Certain Evidence. One implication is that any Jew who is trained by the law and believes its doctrines can be fully rational and prevail over all of the nonrational impulses and dispositions of soul and body. A second implication is that the real struggle between good and evil takes place within the individual's soul. Although Antiochus is the external enemy, the real opposition to be conquered is that produced by the nonrational impulses (e.g., 13:2). This attitude is characteristically Stoic. The author believes this to be a basic teaching of the sacred Scriptures (e.g., use of David, Moses, and others as examples; "reason commended by God" in 13:3).

13:8–14:10, An Encomium and Further Argument. In 13:8–18 the author begins to praise the brothers' reason. He employs the common rhetorical device of imaginary dialogue to illustrate the thesis further. The brothers speak in turn to one another, using the typical

style of moral exhortation. Chap. 13:9 refers to the Daniel legend (Dan. 3) and 13:12 to Isaac, who was often considered the prototype of the self-giving Israelite. In 13:19–14:1 the author provides an encomium to the brothers and brotherhood. The orator treats brotherhood as both an asset and a liability. It was a liability for the brothers because their mutual sympathy had to be overcome in order to encourage one another to accept the martyrdom (13:27). It was an asset because it made their mastery of the emotions even more remarkable, and their common brotherhood became the basis for mutual encouragement to a common cause. The Stoics showed more interest in children and "natural" familial bonds than did the other Hellenistic schools. They extensively discussed the interrelationship of natural instincts toward familial affection and "sympathy" (lit., "shared passions") and stages in the development of reason. They also discussed the rational limitations of such bonds and their relationship to socialization and moral habituation. All of these topics appear in 13:19–14:1, e.g., the physical basis for natural instincts (vv. 19–21); socialization and moral training (vv. 22, 24, 27); familial sympathy (v. 23); and the rational mastery of the emotion of brotherly love (14:1). Natural instincts, socialization, and moral habituation are mentioned in 13:27.

The orator ends his discourse on the brothers by elevating his rhetoric to a higher level of elegance and pathos in 14:2–10. He begins the section with a direct address to reason, a rhetorical device known as an apostrophe. Verse 2 echoes the Stoic paradoxes that only the wise man (i.e., fully rational person) is king and only the wise man is free. The apostrophe immediately shifts into a eulogy of the seven brothers and their brotherly harmony (vv. 3–8). "Running the course to immortality" is yet another of the numerous athletic metaphors (cf. 1 Cor. 9:24–27). The number seven was considered to have special, almost mystical, significance (vv. 7–8). The orator concludes by addressing the audience and contrasting its mood to that of the brothers (vv. 9–10).

14:11–17:6
The Martyrdom of the Mother

2 Macc. 7:41 mentions only the mother's death. The orator treats her torture as the climax of the story. But it is precisely because she is a striking exception to her gender that she receives the honored place. Her treatment illustrates much about the ancient construction of gender, albeit a construction modified by philosophical beliefs. If the orator presents it as amazing that boys could attain such reason and thus overcome their natural emotional bonds, it is even more amazing that a woman could do the same. Women were commonly thought to have only part of the rational capacity of men and to have much stronger passions. Cynicism and Stoicism taught that men and women had equal capacity for reason.

14:11–20, Maternal Affection. The first two verses set forth the theme: "The mind of even a woman" prevailed over the passions. Even though the author mentions the mother's advanced years as a disability, his emphasis is on her gender (e.g., 16:1–2). Accordingly, the orator immediately digresses into a discussion of maternal love in 14:13–20. Maternal affection is described as a very bodily and instinctual as opposed to rational disposition (14:13–19). Even birds and bees share it. Because of the great natural power of these emotions, her mastery of them is the ultimate proof of the thesis (14:20; cf. 16:1–2).

15:1–32, An Encomium. The author's praise of the mother is based on a comparison between what she might have done according to her "natural" constitution and what she actually did on the basis of religious reason. At bottom, when all of the psychological mythology is stripped away, the opposition is between loyalty to her nation-culture-religion and love for her sons (15:1–2): "she loved religion more." Mothers are supposed to have stronger parental affections than fathers (vv. 4–5), and this mother loved her children more than any other woman (v. 6). Verse 5 means that because women are "weaker souls" and give birth to many children, they have a more passionate nature. There was, however, more than an instinctual component to this mother's love. She also loved her sons because of their virtue (vv. 9–10).

Verses 11–28 elaborate the theme of the mother's rational mastery of maternal affection and the nature of her suffering. Eleazar and the boys primarily endured physical suffering, but the mother's suffering is a hideous affective and psychological suffering since she has to watch and commend the cruelest torture and death of her sons. The point is made in the most gruesome way (vv. 12–15, 18–21). She did not even cry. In many ways her description approaches the stereotypical characterization of Stoic *apatheia* (Gk.), lack of emotion. But she is an exception to her gender: "Religious reason gave her a man's courage" (15:23). At the same time her disability makes her endurance more noble than that of men (15:30). In vv. 25–27 the orator employs the image of casting a ballot in the council, a choice for or against argued in her heart. The orator finishes with a eulogistic flourish as he rhetorically addresses her directly as "mother of the nation" and victorious athlete (15:29). She possessed to a greater degree than men (15:30) the two most important virtues of a martyr, "constancy" and "endurance," both subcategories of courage.

16:1–11, False Arguments Considered. Verses 1–4 return to explicit argumentation of the thesis. The au-

thor regards the mother's case as the most decisive, since her maternal passions are regarded as the strongest possible. Her passions were more intense than the perils that Daniel (Dan. 6:16–18) and Mishael (i.e., Meshach, Dan. 3:19–23) faced. To heighten the emotional impact of his point, the orator employs the rhetorical technique of characterization to depict how the mother might have, but did not, reason (vv. 5–11). It is an amplification through contrast (cf. 8:16–26).

16:12–17:1, The Mother's Speech to Her Sons; Her Suicide. From the contrast, 16:12–15 returns to praise of the mother. She is very much the figure of the Stoic wise man. For a dramatic conclusion the orator now introduces the delayed speech of the mother to her sons from 12:7. In 2 Maccabees the story of Eleazar is not connected with the mother and her sons as it is in 4 Macc. 16:15. Verses 16–23 comprise her exhortation to martyrdom. The mother's speech appeals to the sense of honor and shame so important in that culture (e.g., v. 17). In 9:5–6 the sons already proclaimed it their greater duty to die, being young men. Shame and honor form a system of comparative behavior in hierarchical societies. In that culture the mother's comparison with the old man's behavior would have been a compelling argument. She again appeals to the orator's favorite examples of martyrdom, Abraham, Isaac, and the young men from Daniel. As Hadas suggests, v. 18 seems to be an argument against the view expressed in 8:23 that the pleasures of life are reason to avoid martyrdom. But 16:25 does not imply the resurrection. Indeed the oration's conception of a future life is very unclear, although frequently suggested. It may be a vague immortality of the soul. In places where 2 Maccabees mentions and emphasizes the resurrection, 4 Maccabees is silent. The mother's suicide in 17:1 exhibits her modesty. The ancients considered modesty to be especially important for women. Her suicide is not mentioned in 2 Maccabees.

17:2–6, Concluding Praise of the Mother. The section on the mother concludes with a final panegyric in 17:2–6. It stresses the unity of mother and sons in martyrdom. The reference to the stars in v. 5 may reflect the author's conception of immortality. The ancients widely believed that the stars were living beings and sometimes that the purified soul substance of the virtuous returned to them at death.

17:7–18:24
A Final Encomium

The final encomium or panegyric to the martyrs in 17:7–18:24 emphasizes the effects and benefits of their deaths. The section contains many similarities to the commemorative funeral oration that honored dead heroes of the city-state and focused civic ideology. This kind of speech was particularly important in Athens. Similarities include references to an epitaph (17:7–10); the image of the contest (17:11–16); discussion of the virtues, honor, and benefits of the heroes' sacrifice (17:17–24; 18:3–5); exhortation for the living (18:1–2); a lament (18:20–21); and a consolation (18:22–24). These elements are not put together in quite the same way as in a funeral oration, and there are important differences, but the similarities are significant. It is clear that this oration, especially if read at a commemorative event, would have performed many of the same functions as the Athenian commemorative funeral oration.

The reference to the tomb and inscription in 17:8–10 may be the rhetorical device of concrete description, as is the reference to the painting in 17:7. A number of commentators have believed that the passage indicates delivery of the oration at the tomb sites of the martyrs. The use of imaginary epitaphs in Greek literature makes a decision impossible. In Athenian funeral orations the Persian king was depicted as the cruel tyrant out to destroy the Greek way of life. The dead heroes were remembered as saviors of their people and city. The epitaph is reminiscent of these themes.

4 Macc. 17:11–16 constitutes the most extended and the climactic use of the athletic metaphor. Elsewhere the emphasis is on the contest between reason and the emotions and victory of reason. Here the struggle is external and public. The tyrant is the athletic opponent and the whole world and the human race the spectators. This suggests the national and international effects of the martyrs' faithful endurance, which the orator will soon spell out.

The effects of the heroes' endurance and death are recounted. Perhaps surprisingly, the first effect is on the tyrant. His amazement is mentioned in 17:17 and detailed in 17:23–24. Antiochus commends the martyrs' example to his own soldiers, and they are so emboldened that they win great victories. In view of the just retribution that will be the king's ultimate fate, this benefit is an anomaly. It is well, however, to remember that the author lived in a Greek world and that he believed that integrity as a Jew and openness to Greek culture were both possible. Verse 19 is a quotation of the LXX translation of Deut. 33:3.

Not only do the martyrs have the honor of immortality in the presence of God, but they actually saved the nation from foreign takeover (17:20). On the one hand, their example of virtue enabled others to resist and demonstrated to Antiochus that he could not hellenize the nation. On the other hand, God regarded their faithful deaths as "a ransom for the sin of the nation," an "expiation" that was "through their blood." Because of their virtue God overlooked the apostasy of the nation and returned his favor. The combination of language and concepts here is most closely paralleled in early Christian texts about the effects of Jesus' death, especially Rom. 3:21–26.

Exhortation to his audience has been implicit throughout, but in 18:1–2 there is an explicit appeal to obey the law and understand the power of religious reason over the emotions. Verses 3–5 again take up the benefits effected by the martyrdoms. Verse 4 makes explicit the exemplary power of the martyrs' faithfulness to the law on the whole nation. The author perhaps suggests that Antiochus's involvement in the Parthian (i.e., Persian) War that drew him away from Judea and his ultimate failure were acts of divine punishment. Verse 5 is quite awkward, and its connection is unclear in the Greek.

Since the mother's case is the climax of the story, the discourse returns to her in 18:6–18. The passage has seemed to many to be a rhetorical blunder that does not fit in the oration's conclusion. Some think it an interpolation. It does, however, draw together a picture of the piety and religious pedagogy of the family that produced seven of the eight martyrs. It particularly serves as a reflection on the power of religious education in the home. The passage is also unique in 4 Maccabees because of its many quotations from and references to Scripture.

The last verses are a concluding lament (vv. 20–21) and consolation (vv. 22–24). The lament was a standard part of funeral speeches. An author influenced by later Stoicism would naturally keep grieving to a minimum. In fact, in 16:5–12 a lament was used to illustrate how the mother would have reacted if she had not been steadfast. The lament in 8:20–21 is brief and restrained. Typically, lament leads to words of consolation that point to reasons why grief should be limited. Verses 22–24 serve this purpose.

Bibliography

Anderson, H. "4 Maccabees." In *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha.* 2 vols. Edited by J. H. Charlesworth. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1983, 1985. Vol. 1, pp. 531–64.

Bickerman, E. "The Date of Fourth Maccabees." *Studies in Jewish and Christian History.* Vol. 1. Leiden: Brill, 1976. Pp. 275–81.

Hadas, M. *The Third and Fourth Books of Maccabees.* New York: Harper, 1953.

Renehan, R. "The Greek Philosophic Background of Fourth Maccabees." *Rheinisches Museum für Philologie* 115 (1972): 221–38.

Young, R. D. "The 'Woman with the Soul of Abraham': Traditions About the Mother of the Maccabean Martyrs." In *"Women Like This": New Perspectives on Jewish Women in the Greco-Roman World.* Edited by A.-J. Levine. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1991. Pp. 67–81.

Psalm 151

DANIEL J. HARRINGTON

INTRODUCTION

Before the discovery of the Dead Sea *Psalms Scroll* from Qumran (11QPs[a]), Psalm 151 was known in its Greek version and the texts dependent on it (Syriac, Latin, Ethiopic; → Texts, Versions, Manuscripts, Editions). The Greek psalm recounts God's choice of David (vv. 1–5) and David's victory over Goliath (vv. 6–7; → David). David speaks in the first person, narrating events in and using phrases from 1 Samuel 16–17. Though it is easy to grasp the basic content, the Greek text sometimes gives the impression of incoherence and anticlimax. The discovery of a Hebrew version in column 28 of 11QPs[a] has clarified the Greek text considerably. It is now obvious that the Greek Psalm 151 was a shortened version of two originally distinct Hebrew poems. The first of these (corresponding to vv. 1–5 of the Greek text) is fully preserved. Of the second (corresponding to vv. 6–7 of the Greek) only the first two lines remain. It is not possible to ascertain whether the abbreviation and the translation were done by the same person, though they may have been.

The Septuagint version (LXX) was known as Psalm 151 in the Syro-Hexaplar, a Syriac translation of Origen's third-century A.D. critical edition of the LXX. It comes first in the group of five Syriac noncanonical psalms. Though not considered canonical in Protestant and Catholic churches (as the Greek superscription states), it appears after Psalm 150 in modern editions of the LXX (→ Canon).

COMMENTARY

The various versions of Psalm 151 contain different superscriptions: "A hallelujah for David the son of Jesse" (Heb.); "A thanksgiving of David" (Syriac); "This psalm was truly written by David, even though it is outside the number, when he fought alone against Goliath" (Gk.). The "number" in the Greek text refers to the canon of 150 psalms in the Hebrew Bible. The Goliath episode is described only at the end of the Greek psalm; the Hebrew Goliath psalm was separate and had its own superscription.

1–5, God's Choice of David. Verses 1–5 retell the story of 1 Samuel 16 with David as the speaker. It shows how the one who was ruler over Jesse's flock became ruler over God's covenant people. The description of David in v. 1 as the youngest of Jesse's sons and a shepherd derives from 1 Sam. 16:11. The Greek version destroys the symmetry of the Hebrew text. For David's musical skill (v. 2), see 1 Sam. 16:14–23. The Greek corresponds with the beginning of the Hebrew verse except that it contains an additional verb ("fashioned") in the second member. The remainder of the Hebrew ("And I rendered glory to the Lord, I spoke in my soul. The mountains do not witness to him and the hills do not tell. The trees have cherished my words and the flock my deeds!") is absent from the Greek. The difficulty of translating and interpreting these lines has given rise to the suggestion that the picture of David here has been influenced by that of the legendary Greek musician Orpheus, but the hypothesis of Orphic influence is unlikely. The Greek text of v. 3 could suggest that David's musical activity was futile since the Lord proclaims to himself. The Hebrew version shows that the text continues the reflection on praising and glorifying the all-knowing God. The omniscient God knew David as the one whom he would choose. Verses 4–5 are a poetic retelling of 1 Sam. 16:4–13. The order of events in the Greek version (anointing of David, description of his brothers) is anticlimactic. The Hebrew version maintains the proper suspense by describing first David's brothers and then God's choice of David.

6–7, David's Victory over Goliath. The first part of the Hebrew text ("The beginning of David's might after the prophet of God anointed him") is a superscription. Then David begins to narrate his battle with Goliath (see 1 Sam. 17). The Greek text is an epitome of a longer Hebrew poem. The idea of Goliath cursing by his gods appears in 1 Sam. 17:43. David's beheading of Goliath is described in 1 Sam. 17:51.

Bibliography

Charlesworth, J. H., and J. A. Sanders. "Psalm 151." In *The Old Testament Pseudepigrapha*. 2 vols. Edited by J. H. Charlesworth. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1983, 1985. Vol. 2, pp. 612–15.

Sanders, J. A. *The Dead Sea Psalms Scroll*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1967.

———. *The Psalms Scroll of Qumran Cave 11 (11QPs[a])*. Oxford: Clarendon, 1965.

PART FIVE

Books in the Form of Narrative

The Gospels and Acts

Introduction to
Books in the Form of Narrative

ADELA YARBRO COLLINS

The NT includes six narrative books, the four canonical Gospels, the Acts of the Apostles, and the book of Revelation. The Gospels and Acts belong to the general category of ancient historical writing, but the book of Revelation is distinctive. It belongs both to the category of narrative, as an apocalypse, and to the category of letters.

The Gospels

The question of the literary nature of the four canonical Gospels seems to be settled from the point of view of Christian tradition, since the works have long been called "Gospels" and that label appears to be a literary definition (→ Gospel, Gospels). The issue begins to become complicated, however, when viewed historically. One factor is that the titles of the Gospels were not given to them by their authors, but were added later. Another complication is that there were other early Christian works given the label "Gospel" that do not seem to belong to the same literary category at all. For example, the *Gospel of Thomas* is a collection of sayings of Jesus and short dialogues between him and his disciples. This work has no narrative framework at all. It is best understood as an instruction or other type of wisdom book (→ Thomas, Gospel of). Another example is the *Gospel of Truth,* which is a Christian mystical sermon on the theme of salvation.

This variety in the use of the word "Gospel" is less surprising when we consider the usage of the term in the oldest texts of Christian literature, namely, the Letters of the apostle Paul. He used the word to mean the announcement of God's plan of salvation, proclaimed by the prophets and realized through the death and resurrection of Christ. This announcement was originally oral and its social setting was the missionary work carried out by Christians in the eastern Mediterranean world in the first century. Given this original meaning and use of the term, it is not surprising that later writers communicated the Christian message in a variety of literary types.

It is not clear whether the word "gospel" in Mark 1:1 was intended by the author to be un-

PREVIOUS PAGE:
The Ascension *(of Christ into Heaven): a late-twentieth-century painting on linen by Frederick J. Brown. Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York.*

derstood as a literary self-definition of the work or as a reference to its content. Apparently the authors of Matthew and Luke did not take the word as a literary designation, or if they did, they chose not to adopt it. Matthew refers to itself (or to some part of the work) as a "book" in 1:1. Luke designates itself quite generally as a "narration" or "narrative" in 1:1.

The earliest author to provide explicit evidence for early Christian reflection on the literary nature of the works that eventually became the canonical Gospels is the second-century Christian apologist Justin Martyr. In citing the words of Jesus spoken over the bread and the cup, he says, "For the apostles, in the reminiscences composed by them, which are called Gospels, have passed on to us the following instructions" (*First Apology* 66). It is likely that Justin used the term "reminiscences" or "notes" not as a precise literary definition, but rather to characterize the Gospels as historical sources in the ancient sense. The third-century theologian Origen referred to the Gospels, or to their content, as "histories" or "investigations," although he argued at the same time that some of the events they record did not actually occur: "The exacting reader can observe innumerable examples in the Gospels similar to these, in order to agree that other things, which did not occur, are woven together with the histories which happened literally" (*De principiis* 4.1.16). Like Justin, Origen does not seem to be interested in defining the literary nature of the Gospels precisely, but in claiming historical reliability for the more important events they narrate. This conclusion is supported by the fact that he also refers to "the history" recorded by the apostles as well as by the Evangelists. With the term "apostles" he seems to refer to the Letters of the NT, which also recount the main events of salvation: "The Spirit arranged things in this way not only with regard to the writings before the coming (of Christ); on the contrary, since he is the same (in both periods) and comes from the one God, he did the same thing in the case of the Gospels and the apostles. Not even these contain the history entirely free from elements interwoven with it but which never occurred in the bodily sense, and thus the legislation and the commands which they contain do not always immediately manifest a rational sense" (*De principiis* 4.1.16). Justin was also the first author, as far as we know, to use the term "gospel" in the plural to refer to what later became the four canonical Gospels. It is likely that this usage, like that of "reminiscences" or "notes," refers more to content than to literary form.

In the usage of Paul, an important aspect of the gospel was that it was foretold in Scripture. This idea also appears in the Gospels. The Gospels depart from Paul, however, in expanding the referent of the term "gospel" to include much more of the earthly life of Jesus. To the extent that Mark is a passion narrative with an extended introduction, his use of the term "gospel" may be seen as similar to Paul's. But once we recognize the profound difference between the discursive language of Paul's Letters and the narrative character of Mark, which most scholars regard as the earliest of the canonical Gospels, we begin to appreciate the magnitude of Mark's innovation. Mark has taken a term coined as a summary of oral preaching and used it to describe (the content of) an extended narrative. How to characterize that narrative is the question to which we now turn.

The Gospels as a New Genre, a "Gospel"

The position that the term "Gospel" adequately defines the literary form of the canonical Gospels and that it emerged as a new type of literature has its roots in the Romantic movement in Germany. From the perspective of this movement, the Gospels belong to the category of folk literature and thus were not composed in accordance with the ideals of Greek and Roman biography. Romantic thinkers acknowledged the similarity between the Gospels

and the historical books of the OT. Yet they did not recognize the sophistication of the biblical histories, but assigned them to the childhood of the human race. In the nineteenth century, German scholars concluded that the Gospel genre is the only original Christian literary type. Ideas from this period concerning the originality of the Gospels and their anonymous production by the Christian community were taken up by the form critics and thus had a tremendous impact on NT scholarship in the twentieth century (→ Biblical Criticism).

The form critics and their heirs defined the new Christian genre "Gospel" as an account of the "good news" that centers on the life, death, and resurrection of Jesus Christ. In their view, this account, like a sermon, had as its primary function the evocation of repentance and faith. One form-critical conclusion was that the Gospels were the end products of a process of oral tradition, produced by many anonymous individuals and not stamped by the intentions or personality of an individual author. Another conclusion was that the Gospels are expanded cult legends and that the literary type "Gospel" developed out of the preaching of the early Christian missionaries. Some form critics even argued that the whole notion of "kind" of literary text is inappropriate for the Gospels because, in their view, the Gospel belongs to the history of dogma and worship.

The Gospels as Biographies

At the beginning of this century in Germany, advances in the study of Greek and Roman biography led some scholars to compare the Gospels with ancient literary "lives." Plutarch, a philosopher who wrote in Greek in the Roman imperial period, composed a large number of parallel lives (one Greek and one Roman in each case). These lives share a literary technique with the Gospels. Rather than preferring explicit description and commentary on the subject's virtues or vices, as in some other ancient biographies, Plutarch and the Gospels took an indirect approach. They described the hero's deeds and thus illustrated his character. This similarity in characterization, however, is too small a basis upon which to build a theory of literary dependence or even analogy. Since this technique was not confined to the biographical genre, its presence alone does not indicate that the Gospels should be assigned to the category of biographical literature.

In the early part of this century, the Gospels were also compared with ancient biographies in the American scholarly context. It was recognized that, in comparison with the elaborate literary productions of the Greeks and Romans, the Gospels are brief, special, and popular writings. In character a Gospel is a religious tract, intended to promote the Christian movement. Nevertheless, the Gospels may be called biographies of Jesus, depending on the connotation given to the term "biography." One may distinguish biography in a historical sense from biography in a popular sense and argue that the Gospels are popular biographies. At this time, the closest parallels to the Gospels were believed to be the works about Socrates written by his pupils in order to rehabilitate his reputation after he had been executed by the state. A similar concern is evident in Luke, who emphasizes that Jesus was innocent and executed unjustly (23:4–5, 13–25, 47). One could thus compare the Gospels with the dialogues of Plato and with Xenophon's recollections of Socrates. Since the latter works are among the classics of high literature, the view that they belong to the category of "biography in a popular sense" has lost favor. Furthermore, although the dialogues of Plato have a biographical aspect, they can hardly be defined as biographies in terms of literary genre. Nevertheless, it was important to observe that some ancient texts maintain distance from their subjects and assess them critically, whereas others aim to persuade their readers, either by blaming or

praising their subjects, even though this difference does not correspond neatly to two distinct genres or subtypes.

The hypothesis that the Gospels should be defined as biographical works was eclipsed during much of the twentieth century by the form-critical thesis of their non- or pre-literary character and by an emphasis on their uniqueness stemming from both redaction criticism and some theological perspectives (e.g., neoorthodoxy). But the biographical hypothesis was revived in the 1970s and has received growing attention. Ancient biography was now defined as a narration about a person's life that selected supposedly historical facts in order to demonstrate the individual's essence of character. Often biographies carry the purpose of shaping the behavior of readers. An attempt was made to classify ancient biographies on the basis of how they functioned in their social, intellectual, and spiritual contexts. All ancient biographies were divided into two main categories, didactic or propagandistic lives, on the one hand, and nondidactic lives, on the other, and it was argued that the majority of ancient lives were concerned with moral example and thus were didactic.

The purpose of some ancient lives was to dispel a false image of the teacher or ruler and to provide a true model to follow, and some have argued that the Gospels of Mark and John belong to this type. For example, Mark corrects traditional messianism by reinterpreting the role of the Messiah (8:29–33). John is critical of those who base their faith on the miracles of Jesus (2:23–25). The purpose of another group of ancient lives was to indicate where the "living voice" was to be found in the period after the death of the founder. The Gospel of Luke may be seen as a life of the "founder" and the book of Acts as a narrative concerning his successors. Another group consists of lives aimed at validating or providing the hermeneutical key for the teacher's doctrine. The Gospel of Matthew may be seen as a life of this type. According to Matthew, Jesus came not to abolish the law, but to fulfill it (5:17–20). The antitheses that follow present Jesus as an interpreter of the law; thus the fulfillment of the law in Jesus means that it receives its proper interpretation in his teaching and practice.

In the 1990s, scholars continued to argue that there is a high degree of correlation between the Greco-Roman lives and the Gospels and that therefore the Gospels are lives of Jesus. They may constitute their own subgenre because of their shared content, but ancient lives is the "family" to which they belong. The differences are not sufficiently marked or significant to prevent the Gospels from belonging to the genre "life."

The significance of this conclusion is undercut by the fact that the narrower the genre proposed for the Gospels, the harder it is to prove the case, but the more useful the hermeneutical implications; whereas the wider the genre, the easier it is to demonstrate that the Gospels belong to it, but the less helpful the result. The argument that the Gospels belong to the genre "life" is strong, but the genre is very wide. The only consistent characteristic of a "life" is that it focuses on one person. In spite of criticisms of this approach, it is more helpful and interesting to attempt to articulate a primary or typical function of the ancient biography and the more specific functions of its subtypes. The exemplary purpose of the ancient lives and their focus on character as a matter of virtue and vice is a significant theme in most examples of Greco-Roman biography and qualifies as the most distinctive purpose of the genre. In spite of attempts to find something analogous in the Gospels, it is clear that their portrayal of Jesus' so-called character and virtues belongs to a different cultural context and has a purpose beyond the exemplary. For example, the invitation to take up one's cross and follow Jesus is not primarily an imitation of the virtue of obedience exemplified by Jesus. Rather, it is bound up with the apocalyptic view of the imminence of the kingdom and with a particular understanding of the role that suffering plays in the history of salvation.

The Gospels as Histories

As noted above, Justin referred to the Gospels in ways that associated them with historiography and claimed for them reliability on major points, if not in every detail. In the context of the German Enlightenment, scholars applied the tools of critical historiography to the Gospels, taking them as imperfect historical documents on which a reliable reconstruction of events could be based. Similarly, certain scholars of the nineteenth century understood the Gospels to be historical works that had been embellished with mythic elements; that is, the basically historical account of Jesus had been expanded with stories in which traditional Jewish and folk ideas about Jesus as the Messiah were given history-like form. The Gospels were also compared at this time with the historical books of the OT that were characterized as didactic, hortatory narrative, associated by later Jews with the prophets. The anonymous biblical historiography was contrasted with the Greek, in which the person of the author and the verification of sources played major roles. The authors of Mark, Matthew, and John do not call attention to themselves at all. The author of Luke remains nameless, although he speaks about his intentions and methods in the preface (1:1–4).

Because of the emerging nineteenth-century consensus that Mark is the earliest Gospel, many interpreters treated Mark as more historically reliable than the other Gospels. That view was undercut in the early twentieth century by the argument that the chronological and topographical framework of the Gospels is fictional. It was further undermined by the conclusion that the Messianic Secret (the prohibitions against revealing Jesus' identity, e.g., Mark 1:44; 7:36; 8:30) in Mark does not reflect an actual, historical development in the self-understanding or self-revelation of Jesus, but is rather a theological construct of the post-resurrection period. The form critics then went further than critics of the nineteenth century by arguing that not only the miracle stories, but the entire synoptic tradition was shaped by the beliefs and intentions of those who handed it down. The redaction-critical method was introduced under the assumption that the Gospels are to be understood as proclamations of faith in Jesus Christ and not as belonging to any type of ancient literature.

Until the 1950s, most readers of the NT assumed that a work should not be classified as "history" unless it represented events accurately and reliably. But then it was pointed out that such a point of view relies on a nineteenth-century understanding of the nature of history. Twentieth-century insights could lead to a new understanding of history, and thus a reassessment of the character of the Gospel of Mark was in order. It should not be understood as immanent, objective history (the nineteenth-century view), as nonhistorical theology (as the redaction critics had argued), or as mythology (as the form critics had defined it in part). Rather, it may be seen from a twentieth-century point of view as existential, communal history.

In spite of these insights, in the second half of the twentieth century two main obstacles have continued to stand in the way of a serious consideration of the idea that the Gospels should be understood as representing a type of history. Both of these are modern ideas that have colored the perception of the Gospels. One is the positivistic understanding of history, according to which a historical work must be reliable in the details reported and have as its primary intention the aim of communicating information. The other is the idea that the Gospels, as early Christian theological works, belong to a special category of writing that expresses faith and has the purpose of proclamation, and thus cannot be assigned to any type of literature current at the time. A further deterrent is the tendency to assume that ancient canons of historical writing have more in common with modern historiography than they do with the Gospels.

The ancient definition of history may be inferred from a passing remark of Aristotle: "It is clear, therefore, that for legislation books of travel are useful, since they help us to understand the laws of other nations, and for political deliberations, the investigations of those who write about deeds" (*Rhetoric* 1.4.13 [1360A]). The Roman rhetor Quintilian made a similar observation: "Now there are three forms of narrative, without counting the type used in legal cases. First, there is the fictitious narrative as we get it in tragedies and poems, which is not merely not true but has little resemblance to truth. Secondly, there is the realistic narrative as presented by comedies, which, though not true, has yet a certain verisimilitude. Thirdly there is the historical narrative, which is an exposition of something done" (*Institutio Oratoria* 2.4.2). In both cases, it is probably assumed that the deeds in question are not just any deeds, but memorable deeds worth telling, especially glorious achievements in war and politics. The defining quality of all types of ancient history in the classical period was their direct concern with the description of the actions performed in politics, diplomacy, and war in the far and near past.

It is generally agreed that, for the Greek cultural realm at least, Herodotus was the inventor of historical writing. He used the methods and incorporated the results of older genres such as mythography, ethnography, local history, and chronography. All of these result from the collecting and reporting of data. History emerged as a genre when Herodotus decided to describe and explain a sequential development and not merely to report it. In comparison with the previously mentioned genres, history is the only one that has a mimetic quality. In other words, it is the only one that recreates events in a representational way, rather than simply reporting them or listing them. This quality is probably due to the influence of the *Iliad*. It should be noted that this characteristic reveals the similarity of ancient historical writing to epic and tragedy and makes it less like the modern positivistic ideal of historiography. The more the historian must use imagination to paint a picture of events he did not actually witness, the less similar the result is to the positivistic ideal.

The fact that the Greek word for "inquiry," "research," "investigation" became the name of a particular class of literature ("history") indicates that a certain method was the defining characteristic of the genre, namely, the interrogation of witnesses and other informed parties and the synthesis of the answers in a continuous narrative. Thucydides emphasized the evaluation of the sources as to their accuracy and reliability, but this methodological aspect was more important to some historians than to others. Although the laws of evidence and obedience to truth were at least in theory mandatory in history, the adaptation of ethnography permitted the publication of the unconfirmed report of even the improbable. The nature of ethnography was "history" in the original sense: "inquiry" into what was "worthy of relation," "marvelous," "deserving to be heard." Whether something was true or likely to be true was secondary to the fact that it was a "report" told by an informant (Herodotus 1.23–24; 2.123, 125; 3.9; 7.152). Even though the historian would often distance himself from such tall tales, their acceptability in historical works paved the way for the use of miraculous tales in an encomiastic, missionary, or propagandistic sense. Examples of such tales in the Gospels are the healing of the Gerasene demoniac (Matt. 8:28–34; Mark 5:1–20; Luke 8:26–39) and Jesus' walking on water (Matt. 14:22–33; Mark 6:45–52; John 6:16–21).

The genre of history was transformed in a momentous way by the emergence of powerful personalities at the dawn of the Hellenistic age. Socrates in the realm of ideas and Alexander in the public domain especially had tremendous impact on the shape of subsequent literature. The influence of historical personalities and philosophical and literary interest in personality as such led to the emergence of a new kind of history. Xenophon's use of the phrase "the deeds of Jason" reflects a conceptualization that would eventually be expressed in a type

of history, "memorable deeds," which centers on a single person (*Hellenica* 6.1.19). The climax of the development was the series of historical works that focused on the deeds of Alexander the Great. Once personality had emerged as a dominant theme in the Hellenistic period, the focus remained on the individual instead of on the history of the people. Roman annalistic writing went in the same direction. We see then, that, although Greek history was typically perceived as an account of memorable deeds in politics and war, it contained a variety of other materials at its origin (Herodotus) and was later expanded to include other topics, such as cultural and religious affairs. Furthermore, it came to focus more and more on individuals, sometimes on a single person.

Unlike the Greeks, the Israelites did not reflect directly on the nature of historical writing and its methods; at least no such reflections have been preserved. For this reason, a definition of biblical history must be brought from outside to aid in analysis. As a working definition, we might define history as the way in which a people explains its own past. This definition is too narrow to cover at least some types of Greek and Roman history, especially the universal histories, but it does seem to express the intention of Israelite historical writing rather well. Criteria for identifying historical writing in ancient Israel have also been proposed: any explanation of the genre as the mere result of an accidental accumulation of tradition is inadequate; historical writing is not primarily the accurate reporting of past events, but also considers the significance of those events; historical writing is national or corporate in character; thus, a report of the deeds of the king is not biographical when such deeds are viewed as part of the national history.

If the biographical traditions about Moses, Samuel, Elijah, and Elisha have been thoroughly integrated into the national history, so that they appear not so much as personalities in their own right, but as successive mediators between the deity and the people, it may well be that this way of portraying the prophets served as a model for the presentation of Jesus in the Gospels. From this point of view, Jesus is the last and the greatest of these mediators. The account of the transfiguration of Jesus makes this point (Matt. 17:1–8; Mark 9:2–8; Luke 9:28–36).

The presence of prophetic legends in biblical history and of improbable "reports" or "accounts" in Herodotus settles the question whether the miraculous and the divine may play a role in ancient historical writing. As noted earlier, Herodotus included such materials under the rubric of ethnography, at times pointing out contradictions and distancing himself from improbable reports, but at other times reporting remarkable events without questioning them (e.g., Herodotus 1. 23–24). The biblical historian included the prophetic legends to present the prophets as divine messengers and to make theological and didactic points.

It seems useful to distinguish two main ways in which historical events and developments were related to divine power in antiquity. The older of the two involves appearances of deities and their direct intervention in human affairs. This type is well represented by the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*. Later Greeks of course did not consider the Homeric epics to be examples of historical writing, but they were convinced that these works preserved the memory of real individuals and actual events. Related to this type is the notion that the external, visible aspect of historical events is merely a veil, an outward form, in which the act of a deity realized itself. The difference between the first and second type may be illustrated by contrasting the *Iliad* and Herodotus. Homer stated his theme, Achilles' anger, and asked which of the gods was responsible for the quarrel. Herodotus dispensed with the regular intervention of the Olympian gods in human affairs and usually explained events in terms of human motivations and reactions. Nevertheless, divine agency is always implicitly at work and shows itself to be the most important causal agency in his history when Xerxes and

Artabanus are persuaded by repeated dream visions that the Persian invasion of Greece is divinely ordained.

In the Gospels the divine plan is manifest in Scripture and in the predictions of the events of the Passion that "must" take place (e.g., Mark 8:31). The Gospels differ from Homer and the editorial comments of the Deuteronomistic historian (1 Sam. 16:18; 2 Sam. 17:14; → Deuteronomistic Historian) in minimizing the role of God as a character in the narrative, describing very few direct divine interventions (primarily the descent of the Spirit of God and God's raising of Jesus from the dead, which are reported, but not narrated), and in portraying Jesus as acting independently, rather than directly guided by God. In the depiction of Jesus as an independent miracle worker, the Gospels are similar to the folktales about Elijah and Elisha incorporated into the Deuteronomistic History. Like Herodotus, the Gospels focus on human interaction and interpret events as the results of this interaction. But unlike Herodotus and the Deuteronomistic historian, the Gospels place this human interaction in the context of a divine plan which underlies and indirectly controls events.

Conclusion

With the Gospel of Mark, a new type of writing emerged, but if it had been entirely new, it could not have been understood. That is why it is important to determine which types of work it is most like, how it differs from those, and how it attempts to create its effect. The activity of Jesus in the Gospels is modeled upon that of the leaders of Israel in the biblical narrative: Moses as teacher and interpreter of the law, Elijah and Elisha as wonder-working prophets, and David as anointed king, although Mark's Jesus is like David only in a mysterious and ironic way (12:35–37; 15:16–20; 15:26). Jesus resumes and fulfills the work of the earlier agents of God. But unlike the Gospels, there is no eschatology in the Israelite histories, i.e., no expectation of the definitive fulfillment of history or the arrival of a new age (→ Eschatology). The Gospels, however, imply that there is a divine plan in history that unfolds in stages. First, John the Baptist appears, proclaims his message of repentance, and performs his preparatory baptism. Then Jesus proclaims the good news of the kingdom of God and makes it present in his teaching, meal fellowship, and mighty deeds. But the good news also includes the death of Jesus, his resurrection, and his return as Son of Man to inaugurate the new age. Thus, in a Jewish cultural context, the Gospels may be seen as eschatological and apocalyptic counterpoints to the biblical foundational histories. They continue Israelite and Jewish ethnic sacred history and illustrate the fulfillment of the universalist tendency in Israelite and Jewish literature through the extension of the revitalization movement begun by John and Jesus to the Gentiles.

In a Hellenistic context, the Gospels may be seen as historical works that focus on the activity of a leading individual. He is the Jewish messiah, a royal figure whose kingship has been reinterpreted, so that the military aspect is removed and the usual political context is transcended (→ Messiah). The "memorable deeds" of Jesus include his authoritative teaching, the benefactions accomplished by his wonder-working, and his effective death.

The Acts of the Apostles

The Acts of the Apostles is the second volume of a two-volume work, the Gospel of Luke being the first volume. This relationship is made clear by the prefaces to the two books. The link between the two books suggests that they belong to the same literary kind of work. This

observation suggests that Luke is not a biography of Jesus, since Acts appears to be a historical work. In any case, the preface of Luke implies that the author intended to write a historical account. The author's statement that he had investigated all the aspects of the matter carefully from the beginning recalls the statement of Thucydides in the preface to his work, the *History of the War between Athens and Sparta* (fifth century B.C.). He says that he did not write down the events according to whim, but investigated the details as much as possible (1.22.2). Thucydides also recommended reliance upon eyewitnesses as far as possible. The author of Luke mentions eyewitnesses (1:2), but does not claim to have interviewed them personally. The process of investigation pursued by the Evangelist was most likely the critical use of sources.

Like the titles of the Gospels, the title by which this work is known, "The Acts of the Apostles," is not original. It was added at some point before 150 A.D. Nevertheless, the title indicates how readers in the second century understood the work. It is noteworthy that the title "Acts of the Apostles" associates the work with historical writing in antiquity, since "acts" and the "memorable deeds" of history translate the same Greek word. It is also used in the actual titles of a few ancient works, such as Callisthenes' *Acts of Alexander* (fourth century B.C.) and Sosylus's *Acts of Hannibal* (second century B.C.). Unlike ancient biography, literature described as "acts" does not treat character, but focuses on the deeds of a prominent person, such as a king, general, or hero, or on the accomplishments of cities. The content may be mythical, historical, or fictional or some of each. The designation of Acts as history, therefore, does not mean that it is accurate, reliable history in all its details. An important literary feature that Acts shares with Greek and Roman historical works is the prominence given to the speeches of the main characters.

It has also been proposed that Acts belongs to the literary category of the novel. Although this is not a fitting definition of the genre of Acts, it is helpful to note the narrative devices that Acts shares with ancient novels and that Acts is entertaining in many ways. It includes arrests and escapes from prison, stonings and beatings, riots and trials, journeys to faraway places, and a life-threatening shipwreck.

Alongside political and military history, the literary type "cultural history" also developed in antiquity. This type of historiography focused on laws, customs, morals, philosophy, religion, and the activities of everyday life. Acts may be understood as a historical work that narrates the origin and spread of an institution, the "church," which is treated as an allegorical figure or person and thus can be a proper historical subject. This religious group is formed by separating from an older cult, the Jewish way of life. Like other institutional histories from the time, Acts treats topics like the election of leaders; rules for membership in the group; financial questions; expansion and growth; definition of the roles and functions of members, especially leaders; the setting of boundaries over against other institutions; and the resolution of internal conflict.

The narrative of Luke-Acts begins with the vision of Zechariah in the Temple in Jerusalem and ends with the preaching of Paul in Rome. If the purpose of the narrative is to recount the origin and progress of an institution, it becomes more understandable why the death of Paul is not narrated. The focus is not the life of Paul, but the growth and expansion of a religious group.

The Book of Revelation

The book of Revelation opens with a preface that characterizes it as a revelation and a prophecy. These terms refer more to its content than to its literary character. Apart from the

prologue, the work is presented as a letter, sent by a certain John to seven congregations in the Roman province of Asia. The opening features of a letter occur in 1:4–6 and the typical closing greeting of a letter is given in 22:21. Some have argued that the seven messages in chaps. 2–3 were either originally actual letters or that each has the form of a letter. In fact, they are closer to prophetic oracles than to ordinary letters. They do have a resemblance to imperial edicts that belonged to one type of ancient letter.

The body of the letter, however, is not like most ancient letters. It is a narrative of an extended revelatory experience that involves an appearance of the risen Christ, who gives John messages for the churches (1:9–3:22), and a series of visions introduced by the appearance of an open door in heaven and the command that John ascend (4:1–22:5). In this portion of the book, the revelation that John receives is mediated by various angels. The content of the revelation involves eschatological or definitive salvation; e.g., the visions of 7:9–17 and 21:1–22:5. The revelation also involves the heavenly world; e.g., the divine throne room in chapters 4–5; the heavenly temple in 6:9–11 (altar), 8:3–5 (altar), 15:5–16:1; and scenes of heavenly worship (e.g., chap. 5).

Although there is a certain forward movement from vision to vision, there is also a great deal of repetition. Each series of visions has a different set of details, but all include the same pattern or underlying plot: persecution is followed by judgment on the persecutors and salvation of the persecuted. This literary technique is an effective way of communicating a message; the repetition and the variation ensure that the message is perceived and assimilated by the audience.

Many of the characters and events are more symbolic or mythic than realistic. These qualities make clear that the purpose of the work is not to narrate actual history, past or present, but to adapt ancient narrative patterns or old stories in order to characterize the present and future of the audience and to urge a particular type of behavior. The portrayal of the Roman empire as a beast and a prostitute is a powerful rhetorical challenge to the social and political dominance of Rome. The narrative art of the book of Revelation makes visible and audible for the audience the worship going on in the present in the heavenly temple. It also presents before the mind's eye of the audience the new Jerusalem of the future. These narrative techniques are employed in order to create a symbolic universe, an alternative world to the one centered around imperial Rome. The audience of the work is expected to refuse to give divine honors to the emperor and to recognize instead the risen Jesus as the mediator of divine power.

Bibliography

Aune, D. E. *The New Testament in Its Literary Environment.* Philadelphia: Westminster, 1987.
Bultmann, R. *The History of the Synoptic Tradition.* 2d ed. New York: Harper & Row, 1968.
Burridge, R. A. *What Are the Gospels?: A Comparison with Graeco-Roman Biography.* Society for New Testament Studies Monograph Series, 70. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1992.
Koester, H. *Ancient Christian Gospels: Their History and Development.* Philadelphia: Trinity; London: SCM, 1990.
Pervo, R. *Profit with Delight: The Literary Genre of the Acts of the Apostles.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1987.
Strecker, G. *History of New Testament Literature.* Harrisburg, PA: Trinity Press International, 1997.
Stuhlmacher, P., ed. *The Gospel and the Gospels.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1991.
Talbert, C. H. *What Is a Gospel?: The Genre of the Canonical Gospels.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1977.
Votaw, C. W. *The Gospels and Contemporary Biographies in the Greco-Roman World.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1970.

Matthew

MARK ALLAN POWELL

INTRODUCTION

The Gospel of Matthew tells the story of Jesus' life, ministry, death, and resurrection. In this regard, it is similar to the other three NT Gospels. But Matthew's Gospel is distinctive in certain respects: it has the most Jewish tone of the four Gospels; it presents the clearest and most comprehensive record of Jesus' teaching; and it emphasizes the continuing validity of the law as a guide to moral behavior and the continuing presence of Christ in the institution of the church. It also portrays a more dualistic view of reality than the other synoptic Gospels, dividing people and things into clear-cut categories of "good" and "evil" (cf. 13:24–30; 36–43).

The structure of Matthew may be understood in two ways. A plot structure of the book diagrams the development of the narrative in its present form. Three major divisions seem to be indicated by the author through the formulaic phrase "From that time on" inserted at 4:17 and 16:21. Thus, a basic outline for the story is:

The Identity of Jesus (1:1–4:16)
The Ministry of Jesus (4:17–16:20)
The Death and Resurrection of Jesus (16:21–28:20)

Subdivisions may be discerned within these broad categories, as will be evident in the commentary below.

Some interpreters also find it useful to analyze the compositional structure of Matthew, i.e., the organizational scheme the author has imposed upon his sources. What then becomes most apparent is that this Evangelist has organized material that relates the teaching of Jesus into five great topical sermons or speeches. Interpreters have given these specific names:

The Sermon on the Mount (chaps. 5–7)
The Missionary Discourse (chap. 10)
The Parable Discourse (chap. 13)
The Community Discourse (chap. 18)
The Eschatological Discourse (chaps. 24–25)

Stories about the acts of Jesus are interspersed between these speeches. The overall effect of this scheme is that the Gospel story seems to alternate back and forth between "word" and "deed" as the narrative unfolds.

Historical Context

Popular Christian tradition ascribes this Gospel to the tax collector named Matthew, who, according to this book, became one of Jesus' twelve disciples (9:9; 10:3). The Gospel itself, however, is anonymous, and very few scholars today would credit it directly to one of the Twelve. Since the book uses both the Gospel of Mark and an ancient collection of sayings (called "Q") as sources, it is not likely to have been composed by an eyewitness. Most scholars think the work was compiled around A.D. 85 by a second-generation Christian in an urban Greco-Roman setting. The city of Antioch is a favorite candidate for its location.

The author and his community were most likely Jewish Christians (or, as some prefer to say, "Christian Jews"). They were not only ethnically Jewish, but continued to believe that their faith in Christ was congruent with the traditions of their ancestors. Other Jews, however, would have disputed this claim. The Matthean Christians identify Jesus as the Messiah (1:1), call him Son of God (16:15–17), and even appear willing to worship him (28:9, 17). Orthodox Jews would have regarded them as heretics or blasphemers, even as traitors to the nation of Israel. Thus, the Matthean Christians may have been expelled from synagogues or in other ways ostracized by those whom they regarded as family (cf. 5:11; 10:17, 23; 21:35; 25:34). At the same time, they discovered a surprising receptivity to their message among pagan Gentiles. The future of their community seemed to lie in cross-cultural outreach (28:19), though memory of the Jewish past remained strong. Many passages display a strong Jewish orientation (10:5; 15:24), while others imply a preference for Gentiles (8:12; 21:43).

In short, Matthew's Gospel was written by and for Christians in transition. The faith they confess has already taken on the character of a new religion, distinct from Judaism, though they may not yet be prepared to acknowledge this. The inevitable tensions produced by such an identity crisis have caused schism within the community, such that the Matthean Christians now anticipate heresy (7:25; 24:11), apostasy (13:21–22; 24:12), and betrayal (24:10) even within their own ranks. Still, they try to affirm the essential and enduring Jewish matrix of their faith while simultaneously embracing the radical innovation of the Christian gospel. Aware of the problems associated with putting

new wine in old wineskins (9:17), they nevertheless treasure both new and old and wish to lose neither (13:52).

Literary Characteristics

The author of Matthew's Gospel probably had a copy of the Gospel of Mark and appears to have taken almost all of that work over into his own. In doing so, editorial changes were made that can be easily observed by comparing parallel accounts. The following types of changes are typical:

- Details that do not seem immediately relevant are dropped, so that Matthew's version of a story is usually shorter than Mark's (cf. Matt. 9:20–22; Mark 5:24b–34);
- Grammar and linguistic style become more polished, though this is not always apparent in English translations;
- Apparent inaccuracies are corrected (cf. "King Herod" in Mark 6:14; "Herod the tetrarch" in Matt. 14:1);
- Minor changes are made to make the material more relevant to Jewish Christians, to an urban setting, or to a more prosperous audience (cf. Matt. 10:9; Mark 6:8);
- The power and dignity of Jesus are generally enhanced (cf. Matt. 13:58; Mark 6:5), as is the character of his disciples (cf. Matt. 16:5–12; Mark 8:14–21);
- The portrait of the religious leaders of Israel becomes more negative (cf. Matt. 22:34–30; Mark 12:28–40).

In addition, Matthew has added material thought to derive from the Q source—material also found in the Gospel of Luke (→ Q; Synoptic Problem, The). And this Gospel also contains a large amount of unique material, including stories about the birth of Jesus at the beginning (1:18–2:23) and stories related to his resurrection at the end (27:52–53, 62–66; 28:11–20).

Much of the Q tradition and the material unique to Matthew consists of sayings and parables of Jesus. In essence, then, the Gospel of Matthew is an expanded version of Mark—the basic story of Jesus' life and ministry that Mark presents has been expanded with generous accounts of Jesus' teaching, much of which occurs in the five great speeches of Jesus listed above.

Matthew's Gospel displays a penchant for organizational patterns, including numerical ones. Sometimes, numbers appear to have symbolic value (cf. 1:17). The five great speeches of Jesus may be intended to recall the five books of Moses in the OT. Similarly, the Gospel groups ten miracle stories together in chaps. 8–9 and seven parables in chap. 13. For some reason, Matthew also seems to be fond of pairs. When this Gospel is compared to Mark's, some minor characters appear to be doubled (cf. Matt. 8:28; Mark 5:1; Matt. 20:29; Mark 10:46; Matt. 21:6; Mark 11:7). Even within Matthew's narrative itself, sayings or entire pericopes are sometimes "doubled," i.e., reported twice (cf. 5:31–32; 19:9; 12:38–42; 16:1–4; 9:32–34; 12:22–24).

Themes

In keeping with the Jewish matrix discussed above, Matthew's Gospel shows particular interest in the continuing validity of the law (the commandments and moral codes of the Jewish Scriptures). Jesus declares that he has come not to abolish the law, but to fulfill it (5:17). He insists that "until heaven and earth pass away, not one stroke of a letter will pass from the law" (5:18). Apparently, as far as Matthew is concerned, dietary and Sabbath laws are still in effect, as much for Christians as for Jews (cf. Matt. 15:17; Mark 7:19; Matt. 24:20; Mark 13:18). At the same time, some texts appear to present Jesus as setting aside what Moses or other traditional exponents of the law have said (5:21–48; 19:3–9) in favor of his own teaching. Notably, the "Great Commission" to make disciples of all nations is to be fulfilled by teaching people to obey not the law of Moses, but the commandments of Jesus (28:20).

The fulfillment of prophecy is also an important theme in Matthew. Jesus says he has come to fulfill the prophets as well as the law (5:17), and Matthew appears to regard Jesus' entire life as previewed or predicted in the Scriptures. He finds references in those writings to Jesus' conception (1:22–23), birth (2:4–6), upbringing (2:23), ministry (12:17–21), and Passion (26:54). In fact, the Gospel includes exactly twelve "fulfillment citations," passages that claim what is reported "happened to fulfill what was written in the prophets" (1:22–23; 2:5–6, 15, 17–18, 23; 4:14–16; 8:17; 12:17–21; 13:14–15, 35; 21:4–5; 27:9–10). The number twelve itself is symbolic of Israel, since in the Hebrew Scriptures the nation of Israel consists of twelve tribes. In other instances, echoes of biblical passages or motifs may be discerned even where no formal citation is given (e.g., the allusion to Ps. 69:21 in 27:48; Isa. 53:9 in 27:57–60). Matthew is also conscious of prophecies that refer to the time after the earthly life of Jesus, including new prophecies given by Jesus himself. These include specific predictions regarding the destruction of the Jerusalem Temple (24:1–2), and sweeping projections regarding the end of the world (24:3–25:46; → Old Testament Quotations in the New Testament).

The phrase "kingdom of heaven" is often used in Matthew and is synonymous with the phrase "kingdom of God," which is used in the other Gospels and occasionally turns up here (6:33). Matthew prefers the former expression because it avoids using the name of God, in keeping with the pious practice of some Jews.

Either phrase refers to the reality of God ruling, a phenomenon not limited by space or time. In other words, the kingdom of heaven is not just the place where God lives, but is the sphere of God's influence; it is found wherever and whenever God's will is done. In Matthew, Jesus declares the accomplishment of God's will to be on the brink of fulfillment. He frequently speaks of the kingdom as a present reality (11:12; 13:38), but he also instructs his disciples to seek the kingdom (6:33) and to pray for it to come (6:10; → Kingdom of God).

Matthew emphasizes Jesus' identity as the Son of God. His divine sonship is attested first by his miraculous conception: he is born to a virgin and, so, literally has no father but God (1:18–25; cf. 23:9). It is further attested through God's own voice, heard twice in this story, at Jesus' baptism (3:17) and transfiguration (17:5). In public, Jesus typically refers to himself as "the Son of Man," a nondescript phrase that does not seem to reveal who he truly is. Still, his disciples come to worship him as the Son of God (14:33) in keeping with a confession that depends upon divine revelation (11:27; 16:16–17; cf. 27:54). Opposition to Jesus is related to this same identification (4:3, 6; 27:39–44); indeed it is Jesus' claim to be Son of God that earns him the death sentence of crucifixion (26:63–65). Nevertheless, Jesus is also depicted throughout Matthew as the one who fulfills the prophet Isaiah's poetic descriptions of a divine Servant (e.g. 8:17; 12:18–21). Thus, Jesus is both Son of God and Servant of God or, better, the Son who comes to serve (cf. 20:28; → Son of God).

Matthew's Gospel is the only one of the four to display Jesus talking explicitly about the church that is to continue after he is gone (16:17–20; 18:15–18). According to Matthew's Gospel, the church did not simply come into being after Easter as followers of Jesus struggled to understand what had transpired. Matthew portrays Jesus as starting the church during his life on earth. This church, furthermore, is not just a social movement, but an institution with rules and procedures for defining membership and conducting business.

The disciple Peter receives special prominence in this Gospel. Matthew contains a number of stories concerning Peter not found anywhere else (cf. 17:24–27; 18:21–22). Matthew also expands stories from Mark's Gospel with new information about Peter. The story of Jesus walking on the water (Mark 7:47–52) now concludes with an account of Peter trying (with limited success) to walk on the water (Matt. 14:28–31). Most significant, Matthew has attached to the Marcan story of Peter acknowledging that Jesus is the Messiah (Mark 8:27–29) an extended blessing in which Jesus declares, "You are Peter, and on this rock, I will build my church" (Matt. 16:17–20; → Peter).

The presence of God is an overriding theological motif throughout much of this Gospel. From the virginal conception of Jesus on, Matthew insists that "God is with us" (1:27), and numerous passages unique to this Gospel explore ways in which God's presence is manifest in the world. These include traditional affirmations of God's presence in the Temple (23:21) and more innovative declarations of God's presence in Jesus and his followers (10:40). Matthew also assumes that although the divine presence in the world is assured (18:20; 28:20), it may assume unlikely guises so as to go unrecognized by the righteous and the wicked alike (18:5; 25:31–46).

Plot

The overall story of Matthew's Gospel concerns the plan of God to send Jesus into the world to save people from their sins (1:21). He does this by teaching and living in ways that fulfill the law and the prophets (5:17), by calling sinners to become part of a merciful, healing community (9:13), and by giving his own life as a ransom to establish a new covenant of forgiveness (20:28; 26:28). Matthew's story relates the enactment of this divine plan among humans, who exhibit varying levels of resistance to it. Though certain minor characters—notably women (26:6–13) and children (21:15–16)—seem to be aligned with God's plan, conflict develops between Jesus and the two major character groups: his disciples and the religious leaders of Israel.

The disciples are portrayed as persons of little faith (6:30; 8:26; 14:31; 16:8; 17:20; cf. 28:17). They are devoted to Jesus (e.g., 4:20, 22; 9:1; 19:27), but they frequently disappoint him (e.g., 16:5–11; 17:14–17; 19:13–15; 26:40–41). Jesus struggles to teach them that the way of discipleship involves service and suffering (e.g., 16:21–28; 19:23–25; 20:20–28). He appears to be unsuccessful at doing so, for in the end they betray, desert, and deny him (26:14–16, 56, 69–75).

The religious leaders of Israel, however, are Jesus' true opponents. They are depicted in this Gospel as hypocrites who honor God with their lips, but not with their hearts (15:7–8). John the Baptist rejects them as candidates for baptism (3:7–9); Jesus castigates them as unrighteous (5:20) and views the Israel they rule as essentially leaderless (9:36). He calls them a "brood of vipers" (12:34; 23:33), views them as "evil" (9:4; 12:34; 16:4), and indicates that they represent the devil, not God (15:13; cf. 13:24–30, 36–43). In turn, the leaders criticize Jesus (9:11), make accusations against him (9:3, 34; 12:24), test him (16:1; 19:3; 22:18, 34), challenge his authority (21:15–16, 23), try to "entangle him in his talk" (22:15), and even plot to kill him (12:14; 26:3–4). Again, Jesus' efforts to silence them appear to fail while the leaders' schemes against him succeed: they do turn the people against him and manage to orchestrate his death (27:20–22; cf. 28:11–15).

Nevertheless, the plot of Matthew's Gospel has a hopeful outcome. Neither the conflict between Jesus and the disciples nor that between Jesus and the reli-

gious leaders is ultimately determinative for the major story line. Beneath these conflicts lies a basic substratum of enmity between God and Satan. Jesus is God's agent sent to "bind the strong one" (12:29) and overcome the devil's hold on humanity. Both Jesus' disciples (16:21–23) and the religious leaders (15:13; cf. 13:36–43) function as agents of the evil one when they oppose Jesus and his way. But, ironically, it is only by "losing" his conflicts with these agents that Jesus is able to win the greater conflict for God. When he dies on the cross, he fulfills the will of God (cf. 26:39, 42) and defeats the will of Satan (cf. 16:21–23). Thus, he succeeds in saving his people from their sins (1:21; cf. 20:28). The forces of evil succeed at doing their worst—and, still, the plan of God is accomplished.

Significance

Matthew's Gospel was probably placed first in the NT canon because it was deemed foundational for the Christian church. Even today, it is often called the "Gospel of the Church," because it contains more explicit instruction for pastoral and ecclesiastical ministry than do the other three Gospels. But portions of Matthew have certainly captured the attention of readers outside the church as well. The story of the Magi in chap. 2 is a classic of literature. Matthew's imagery of the last judgment (7:21–23; 13:37–43; 25:1–46) has fueled the imagination of artists and poets. Most of all, the three chapters called the "Sermon on the Mount" have come to be viewed as a quintessential guide to basic morality. This brief tract, which contains such well-known items as the Beatitudes (5:3–10), the Lord's Prayer (6:9–13), and the Golden Rule (7:12), has had an enormous impact on Western civilization. Many of its expressions have entered language at a popular level, such that even people who are not Bible readers have heard about "the salt of the earth" (5:13), "turning the other cheek" (7:15), and "wolves in sheep's clothing" (7:15). Thomas Jefferson, who repudiated most elements of Christian faith, identified the Sermon on the Mount along with the Ten Commandments as expressive of the moral principles on which the United States of America should be founded.

COMMENTARY

Part One: 1:1–4:16

The Identity of Jesus

The first major portion of Matthew's Gospel presents Jesus to readers as the Messiah and Son of God (cf. Mark 1:1). Before beginning the story of Jesus' ministry to Israel and narrating his eventual rejection, death, and resurrection, Matthew makes certain that readers know the true identity of Jesus and the significance of that identity. The episodes in this portion of the book dramatically demonstrate that Jesus meets with opposition precisely because he is the Messiah of Israel and the unique Son of God. Matthew's readers come to recognize that as the Son of God, Jesus is conceived by the Holy Spirit, born of a virgin, worshiped by the Magi, challenged by Satan, and ministered to by angels. He fulfills all righteousness (3:15) and manifests God's presence in the world (1:23). He will save his people from their sins (1:21) and execute a final judgment of baptism with Spirit and fire (3:11–12). Yet throughout this presentation, Matthew also drops clues of another side to Jesus' identity. He is not just a royal, powerful figure, but a humble one, on whom the Spirit lights "like a dove," one who will somehow fulfill the biblical prophecies of the Servant with whom God is well pleased (3:17; Isa. 42:1). He is the Son who lives as a Servant.

1:1–17
Genealogy

Matthew begins his story with a list of the ancestors of Jesus. Unlike Luke, who traces the lineage of Jesus to Adam (cf. Luke 3:23–38), Matthew is content to begin with Abraham, the patriarch of the Jewish people. This is in keeping with the emphasis in Matthew on Jesus' close association with Israel (10:6; 15:24). So also, the number fourteen is emphasized (v. 17) because that number has messianic symbolism—the numerical value of the Hebrew letters in the name David add up to fourteen. This genealogy is also unusual in that it mentions five women: Rahab, Ruth, the wife of Uriah (Bathsheba), Tamar, and Mary. This corresponds to Matthew's inclusion of women as primary witnesses to Christ (27:55, 61; 28:1–10), but may also serve to highlight God's history of working for salvation in surprising ways. The four women prior to Mary were all involved in situations that were at least potentially scandalous, as is Mary herself in the account that follows. Rahab, Ruth, Uriah, and Tamar were also all non-Israelites, so Matthew may be striving to indicate that there are Gentiles in the lineage of Jesus. Though Jesus is the Messiah of Israel, he brings light to the Gentiles as well (3:15–16). The convoluted reference to Joseph as "the husband of Mary, of whom Jesus was born" (v. 16) also hints that Jesus is more than Messiah. As Messiah, he could have been "son of Joseph" as well as "son of David" and "son of Abraham" (v. 1), but he is not (biologically) the son of Joseph. This curious anomaly is explained in the next section (→ Gentiles; Messiah).

1:18–2:23
Infancy Narrative

The stories that make up Matthew's infancy narrative are unique to his Gospel. The story of Jesus' birth is

also told in Luke 1:26–2:40, but that account is quite different. For one thing, Luke's story is told primarily from Mary's perspective. Here, Joseph is the primary actor and much of the story is told from his point of view.

1:18–25, Birth and Naming of Jesus. In obedience to God, Joseph accepts Mary who has become pregnant through the agency of the Holy Spirit and demonstrates by naming her child that he accepts the boy into his own family line. Matthew describes Joseph as "a righteous man," and we get an indication here of what constitutes righteousness: Joseph is ready to do as the law requires, but unlike the legalistic Pharisees who appear later in this Gospel, he is also concerned about being merciful (v. 19) and is open to divine revelation that corrects his traditional way of thinking (cf. 12:1–8). The name of the child "Jesus" is appropriate since that word means "God saves," and it is through Jesus that God will save people from their sins. Thus, we are told that Jesus' mission is to bring salvation, but this mission is limited in two ways. First, the salvation is for those identified as "his people," an expression that first seems to refer to the nation of Israel (10:6; 15:24), but eventually seems to refer to a community known as "the church" (16:18). Second, Jesus' mission will be to save these people "from their sins," not necessarily from political turmoil or other forms of temporal distress. An additional prophetic name is also attributed to Jesus here, that of "Emmanuel," which means "God with us" (cf. Isa. 7:14). Matthew regards Jesus' entry into the world as a cataclysmic event: somehow God is now present in a way that God has never been present before (cf. 12:6). On fulfillment of prophecy (vv. 22–23), see the Introduction (→ Bethlehem; Immanuel; Mary, the Virgin; Virgin Birth).

2:1–12, Visit of the Magi. When Jesus is born, God uses a star to guide the Magi from the East to the very house where he lives so that they can come and worship him. Along the way, they encounter the evil king Herod, who is troubled by news that the Messiah may have been born. Matthew's readers would not be expected to think of magi as kings or even as "wise men," but simply as pagans. The story of God's revelation to them foreshadows the great mission to all nations that Matthew's Gospel will announce in its final verses (28:16–20). Likewise, the fact that the religious leaders of Israel appear here as Herod's underlings (vv. 4–6) hints already of the paradoxical rejection of Jesus by his own people (on the fulfillment of prophecy in vv. 5–6, see the Introduction). This episode also presents Jesus as the Messiah (v. 4), though ironically only those who ignore or oppose him seem to recognize this. The Magi call him "King of the Jews" (2:2), an identification subject to misunderstanding (cf. 27:37). Still, by worshiping him (2:11), they somewhat unwittingly pay tribute to the divine presence manifest in his person (1:23; → Herod).

A distinctive feature of Matthew's Gospel is that it frequently portrays Jesus as a recipient of worship. Jesus is worshiped not only by the Magi, but also by a leper (8:2), a ruler (9:18), his disciples (14:33; 28:17), a Canaanite woman (15:25), the mother of James and John (20:20), a group of children (21:16), and by two women at the tomb (28:9). For Matthew, this motif is connected to the belief that God is present in Jesus and present with others through him (1:23; 10:40). Matthew does not think it appropriate to worship anyone other than the Lord God (4:10), but God is present in Jesus to such an extent that worshiping Jesus counts as worshiping God.

2:13–23, Flight and Massacre. Warned by an angel, Joseph flees to Egypt with the infant Jesus and his mother and so escapes a terrible massacre precipitated by Herod in a fruitless attempt to murder the Messiah. This ironic account portrays something of a reverse exodus: Matthew's readers would recall that God once brought Israel out of Egypt to escape a baby-killing tyrant (see Exod. 1–6). Now infants are slaughtered in the promised land itself and the once oppressive Egypt has become a site of refuge. Parallels also occur between the Joseph in this story and the patriarch of that name who traveled to Egypt and was also guided through dreams (see Gen. 37; 39–41). Still, the dominant concern for this part of Matthew's narrative is establishing Jesus' credentials. Thus, the eventual return from Egypt allows Matthew to cite a scriptural reference that subtly identifies Jesus as God's "son" (v. 15). Furthermore, the story explains why Jesus (who was born in Bethlehem) ended up living in Nazareth. This may have solved a problem for those who knew him only as "Jesus of Nazareth," but were aware that the Messiah ought properly to come from Bethlehem (cf. John 1:46). In a broader sense, the early wanderings and the ever present dangers from Herod and his descendants set a tone for the narrative to follow, a story that presents Jesus as one who has nowhere to lay his head (8:20). On the fulfillment of prophecy, an especially prominent theme in these verses, see the Introduction (→ Bethlehem; Herod; Nazareth).

3:1–4:16
Preparation for Ministry

The focus now shifts to the figure of Jesus as an adult. Matthew's Gospel tells us nothing of the intervening years of Jesus' childhood or adolescence (cf. Luke 2:40–52). Clearly, Matthew's interest is not biographical, but theological. The stories recounted here, like those above, seek to present Jesus as the Spirit-filled Son and Servant of God.

3:1–12, Ministry of John the Baptist. Cf. Mark 1:1–8; Luke 3:1–18; John 1:6–8, 19–28. We are introduced to John as the figure Isaiah said would "prepare the way of

the LORD" (Isa. 40:3), an affirmation now understood as applying to "the Lord Jesus," the stronger one who will come after John and execute the coming judgment (vv. 11–12). The description of John's peculiar dress (v. 4) is probably intended to identify him with Elijah (see 2 Kings 1:8), a theme that will be taken up again in Matthew (11:9–14; 17:9–13). His diet marks him as one who does not "reap or sow or gather into barns," but who relies entirely on uncultivated foods provided by the Creator (cf. 6:26). Matthew emphasizes John's preaching more than his baptizing, and he focuses on the call to repentance without ever mentioning any promise of forgiveness (cf. Mark 1:4; Luke 3:3). Most striking is the way John's words parallel words of Jesus that will be reported later in the book. The central message (3:2) is identical to that of Jesus (4:17) and his followers (10:7). Likewise, Jesus' words will echo John's polemic against religious leaders (12:34; 24:33), metaphor of a fruitless tree (7:16–20), and description of judgment as harvest and fire (9:37–38; 13:37–42). On John's expectation that the "coming one" will bring judgment, see commentary below on 11:2–6 (→ Baptism; John the Baptist; Repentance).

3:13–17, Baptism of Jesus. Cf. Mark 1:9–11; Luke 3:21–22. Jesus comes to be baptized by John, and a voice from heaven dramatically claims him as "my Son, the Beloved" (cf. 17:5). Although Matthew has dropped hints previously (1:16; 2:15), this is the first direct acclamation of Jesus as the Son of God (see Introduction). Thus, God's own voice is the first to proclaim this climactic designation, which can only be recognized by those to whom God reveals it (11:27; 16:17). The acclamation recalls the words of the coronation hymn in Ps. 2:7, but then continues with the words, "with whom I am well pleased," an allusion to the beginning of the Servant Song in Isaiah 42 (see commentary below on 12:18–21). Thus, Jesus is presented as both royal Son of God and faithful Servant of the Lord, a collusion that will continue to be developed in the temptation story that follows this passage.

On another note, Matthew's is the only Gospel that describes John's objection to baptizing Jesus (v. 14). Jesus' response offers the first words he speaks in this Gospel (v. 15). They declare his intent to "fulfill all righteousness," an objective that not only applies to this baptismal scene, but will govern his ministry as a whole (5:17). The description of the Spirit's descent as being "like a dove" recalls a biblical symbol of peace and reconciliation (Gen. 8:6–12). It contrasts with the fiery judgment John himself has associated with Spirit baptism (3:11–12; cf. 11:2–3; → Baptism; Dove; John the Baptist; Righteousness; Son of God).

4:1–11, Temptation of Jesus. Cf. Mark 1:12–13; Luke 4:1–13. The Spirit who has just come upon Jesus at his baptism now leads him into the wilderness to be tested by Satan. Three tests follow and Jesus responds to each by quoting Scripture, though as the second test reveals, the devil too can cite the Bible (v. 6). These tests come at the end of a time in which Jesus has fasted for forty days and nights, a period analogous to the forty years when Israel was tested in the wilderness on the way to the promised land (Deut. 8:2). Jesus proves more faithful than Israel did, rejecting satanic suggestions that would interpret his identity as God's Son in ways that would not please God (cf. 3:17), that would involve his "being served" rather than "serving" (20:28). Jesus refuses to produce bread miraculously to satisfy his own hunger, though he later will do so to relieve the hunger of others (14:13–21; 15:32–39). He similarly rejects the ways of self-aggrandizement or compromise as shortcuts to manifesting his authority on earth. Already, Matthew's readers are being prepared to recognize as satanic any route to the kingdom that would bypass the cross (cf. 16:21–23). Thus, as indicated at his baptism, Jesus is the Son of God, but his role as Son is to be exercised paradoxically as a Servant (→ Satan; Son of God).

4:12–16, Galilee of the Gentiles. Cf. Mark 1:14; Luke 4:14–15. The narrative jumps ahead in time again to some indefinite period after John the Baptist has been arrested. We do not actually hear the story of that arrest or its outcome until Matt. 14:1–12. Its mention now, however, offers ominous commentary on the world into which Jesus has come. As one who came to prepare the way of the Lord, call people to repentance, and, indeed, collaborate with Jesus in fulfilling all righteousness (3:15), John is at least a great prophet of God (see 11:7–15). Jesus' ministry is to take place in a world where such persons are arrested, where righteousness is resisted. Such a world may be described as a place of darkness, but Matthew concludes the first section of his Gospel on a hopeful note: a great light has dawned on the people who dwell in such darkness. Specifically, the citation here of Isa. 9:1–2 with its reference to Jesus' homeland as "Galilee of the Gentiles" indicates that the light will shine even for the pagan peoples of this dark world, perhaps especially for them. There is hope even for the Gentiles, i.e., for the non-Israelites who have not traditionally been identified as belonging to God's chosen people. The visit of the Magi (2:1–12) already alluded to some possible connection between the Messiah of Israel and those from nations far away. Eventually, Matthew's Gospel will conclude with a proclamation to make disciples of such persons (28:16–20). On vv. 14–16 and the fulfillment of prophecy, see Introduction (→ Galilee).

Part Two: 4:17–11:1

Jesus' Ministry to Israel

The phrase "From that time on . . . " (4:17) signals the beginning of a new section (cf. 16:21). This second

major portion of Matthew's Gospel describes the mission first Jesus and then his followers undertake on behalf of Israel. It is a ministry of word and deed, of preaching, teaching, and healing (4:23; 9:35; 11:1). Jesus instructs his disciples on how to live in accord with the will of God and together they announce the advent of God's reign and exercise authority over diseases and demons. Notably, in this portion of the Gospel, opposition to Jesus is somewhat muted. We discern some displeasure on the part of the religious leaders concerning him and we hear predictions of persecution to come, but as reported here, such conflict is less intense than what will erupt in the next section.

4:17–25
Jesus Begins His Ministry

Before describing Jesus' ministry to Israel in detail, Matthew's Gospel offers an overview: a capsule report of his essential message, a paradigmatic account of how he called disciples, and a summary description of what he did for people and how they responded.

4:17, The Message of Jesus. Cf. Mark 1:15. The précis of Jesus' message to Israel is stated in one sentence: "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." Notably, this is exactly the same message that was proclaimed by John the Baptist (3:2) and essentially the same message that will be proclaimed by Jesus' disciples (10:7). To say that this kingdom has "come near" or is "at hand" implies that what God wants to happen is about to take place. The nearness of God's rule makes repentance both possible and imperative. Such repentance implies not simply minor alteration of habits, but a reorientation of life that allows for participation in the establishment of God's reign. It allows for God's will to be done not only on the cosmological scale that Jesus has announced, but also in the particular lives of his hearers (→ Kingdom of God; Repentance).

4:18–22, Call of Disciples. Cf. Mark 1:16–20; Luke 5:1–11; John 1:35–42. Immediately after announcing that the kingdom of heaven has drawn near, Jesus begins calling disciples to join him in the work of making the advent of the kingdom known. The call stories of these two sets of brothers are related not only because these individuals prove to be among the most significant in the narrative that follows (Simon is later known as Peter), but also because their stories offer a paradigm for how all of the disciples presumably were called (cf. 9:9). Jesus initiates the relationship by summoning persons who apparently had no previous interest in him. They respond by abandoning their way of life—family, possessions, and occupation—in order to follow him. The stories bring out the authoritative nature of Jesus' person and word, which are able to inspire total allegiance. They demonstrate that Jesus himself is responsible for building the community that will eventually be known as his church (16:18). They typify the nature of this community as being directed toward Jesus (following him) and others ("fishing for people"; → Disciple; Peter).

4:23–25, Summary. These few verses contain the first of three "summary passages" regarding Jesus' ministry of preaching, teaching, and healing (cf. 9:3; 11:1). The content of his ministry is described as "the gospel of the kingdom" (see commentary above on 4:17) and the focus for the mission is clearly the people of Israel, since most of the teaching takes place in synagogues (lit., "their" synagogues—indicating that Matthew and his readers no longer recognize those institutions as their own). We also learn for the first time that Jesus is working miracles—healing people who suffer from a variety of diseases or disabilities. Such works, furthermore, have made Jesus famous so that already great crowds from a variety of locations are following him (→ Miracles; Synagogue).

5:1–7:29
The Sermon on the Mount

These three chapters of Matthew's Gospel are the best known portion of the book. Indeed, they have been identified in some surveys as the three most widely read chapters of the Bible. They contain the Beatitudes, the Golden Rule, the Lord's Prayer, and numerous sayings of Jesus that have made their way into the repertoire of popular proverbs and folk wisdom of contemporary culture. The overall theme of the sermon is discipleship, or response to the call of Jesus. The sermon follows Jesus' announcement that "the kingdom of heaven is at hand" (4:17) and explains the implications of this announcement for those who repent and follow Jesus (→ Sermon on the Mount).

5:1–2, The Setting. Jesus deliberately separates himself from the crowds to speak these words to his disciples (but see commentary below on 7:28–29). By indicating that the disciples are the intended audience, Matthew's Gospel presents the words that follow as Christian teaching, not exposition of moral behavior to be expected of or imposed upon the world at large. Baptized persons who want to be "made disciples" (28:19–20) will obey these commandments of Jesus, which call for a greater righteousness than is exhibited by people in general (5:20). The location of this teaching on a mountain recalls the giving of the law to Moses in Exodus 19–31. Just as God gave the law to Moses, who then became the great teacher of Israel, so here Jesus gives divine commandments to his disciples, who will teach them to a church composed of people from all nations (16:18; 28:19–20; → Righteousness).

5:3–12, The Beatitudes. Cf. Luke 6:17, 20–23. The sermon begins with a poetic prelude that presents Jesus'

vision for what will happen as the rule of heaven becomes established on earth. A two-stanza poem (5:3–10) is followed by direct commentary offered to the disciples themselves (5:11–12).

The first stanza of the poem (5:3–6) declares four times that those who appear to be most unfortunate in this world are actually blessed, because the rule of heaven will right what is wrong and bring them justice. The poor in spirit (v. 3) are the despondent people of the earth who have no reason for hope in this world. They may have given up on God, but Jesus says that God has not given up on them—indeed, the rule of heaven exists for their sake. Those who mourn (v. 4) are ones who have no cause for joy in life. Jesus promises them comfort when the rule of heaven is established. The meek (v. 5) are the dispossessed people of the earth who have been humiliated and deprived of their share of the earth's resources. Jesus says they are blessed because God will not allow them to be so denied forever. Those who hunger and thirst for righteousness (v. 5) are those who long for God to put things right. They are starved for justice, and Jesus says their craving for life to be as it should will be satisfied. Thus, all of these first four Beatitudes speak not of rewards, but reversals.

The second stanza (5:7–10) promises rewards for people who join God in alleviating the suffering of those described in the previous four verses. Those who exercise the divine quality of mercy (v. 7), whose devotion is genuine and not merely for show (v. 8), who actively work for peace (v. 9), and who are willing to suffer so that the will of God may be accomplished are blessed. Jesus assures such people that the rule of God will come and the things for which they strive (peace, righteousness, mercy) will be realized. The coming of God's rule will itself provide the ultimate blessing for those who seek it.

Jesus has spoken these words to disciples who presumably would not identify themselves among those described in the first stanza, but who would view themselves as included with those in the second stanza. He then appends to the Beatitudes a strong word of warning, indicating that any who choose to join God in working for justice and righteousness will themselves become oppressed and persecuted. In other words, those who seek to be among the second group will ultimately find themselves among the first group as well—those who aid the oppressed will become oppressed. Yet it is to these that the establishment of heaven's rule will be a blessing. So, as Jesus declares elsewhere in Matthew, when God's will is done, "the first will be last and the last will be first" (19:30; 20:16).

5:13–16, Salt and Light. Jesus uses two metaphors to describe the relationship his disciples are to bear to the world: they are to be its salt and its light. The precise meaning intended by the former symbol is hard to identify since salt was used for a variety of purposes: as seasoning, as a preservative, and in religious ceremonies involving sacrifices or covenants (cf. Mark 9:49–50; Luke 14:34–35). What is certain is that Jesus' followers are not to withdraw from the world that persecutes them (5:11–12), but are to engage that world in ways that have a beneficial effect upon it. They are to do this through the performance of good works (v. 16), which in context must be assumed to include acts of mercy and peacemaking performed from a pure heart and for the sake of righteousness (5:7–10). Matthew's Gospel exhibits here an unusually high evaluation of Christian potential. In designating Jesus' followers as "the light of the world," Matthew applies to Christians an acclamation usually reserved for God (Ps. 27:1; Isa. 60:1–3) or Jesus (Matt. 4:12–16; John 8:12). This is in keeping with Matthew's view that Jesus' disciples embody the presence of Jesus and of God in the world (10:40; → Light; Salt).

5:17–20, The Greater Righteousness. Jesus declares that he has come to fulfill the law and the prophets, which will remain valid as long as heaven and earth endure (also Luke 16:17; but cf. 24:35). This is the first of four explicit "statements of purpose" in Matthew (cf. 9:13; 10:34; 20:28). The whole of Matthew's Gospel reveals Jesus as one who does indeed fulfill the law and prophets. He is often said to fulfill the prophets when details from his life match quotations from these revered writings. He fulfills the law by living in a way that is perfectly consistent with the will of God and by authoritatively interpreting the law through his own teaching. While demanding full compliance with the law, Jesus grants that those who fail to meet his best expectations may still find some acceptance among those who are "least in the kingdom." There is a minimal level of righteousness that must be met, however, and the scribes and Pharisees exemplify those who fail to come up to this level (→ Kingdom of God; Righteousness).

5:21–48, The Antitheses. Jesus illustrates what he means by his summons to a greater righteousness (5:17–20) with six concrete examples of the moral behavior expected of his followers. These examples are called "antitheses" because in each case the expectation of Jesus contrasts with a more moderate or even contradictory expectation that passes for conventional wisdom. Ultimately, his expectation is nothing less than perfection, an exhibition of righteousness equal to that of God (5:48).

Jesus expands upon the commandment prohibiting murder to indicate that harboring vicious angry thoughts against another person also violates the will of God (5:21–26). Jesus' followers are not to insult each other. Reconciliation must be a first priority in the family of God's people, or else the worshiping community will be no different from the world at large,

where festering pride and resentment lead people to drag each other into court and throw each other into prison (cf. Luke 12:57–59).

Jesus likewise expands upon the prohibition against adultery by insisting that lustful thoughts and glances are also unacceptable (5:27–30). He punctuates this with extreme statements about plucking out one's eye or cutting off one's hand to ensure righteousness (cf. 18:8–9; Mark 9:43–48). Such hyperbole serves to emphasize the absolute necessity of forestalling temptation, of dealing with potential problems before they become actual ones.

Jesus goes on to liken divorce and remarriage to a form of legalized adultery (5:31–32; cf. 19:3–9; Mark 10:11–12; Luke 16:18). Such practices can be allowable in a legal sense and still not constitute what is right or good in the eyes of God. The one exception Jesus allows is "on the grounds of unchastity," which probably refers to an incestuous union (not, as is often thought, to a marriage in which one of the partners has been unfaithful). In all other cases, Jesus says, divorce and remarriage is sinful. It represents a failure to be perfect, as Jesus says his followers should be (5:48; → Marriage).

Jesus radicalizes the traditional view regarding the swearing of oaths (5:33–37; cf. 23:16–22). Conventional wisdom taught that one must always carry out a vow; Jesus insists that it is wrong to offer vows in the first place. His reason is that the ability to fulfill the vow may depend on factors beyond one's control. People should not promise what they might not be able to give.

Finally, Jesus rejects natural inclinations toward vengeance and insists on a practice of nonretaliation (5:38–48; cf. Luke 6:27–36). The former inclination finds justification in a scriptural provision for people to seek vengeance equal to the wrong done them (Exod. 21:24–25), but Jesus now reveals that his followers should forego rights that even the Scriptures grant. The preferred way is revealed in the nature of God, who shows kindness to good and bad alike. So the followers of Jesus should be known as those who "turn the other cheek" and "go the second mile." They will love their enemies and pray for their persecutors. Why? Because God does this, and they want to be godly.

6:1–18, Practicing Piety. Jesus declares that his followers are not to practice piety in ways that will call attention to themselves. If they do so, he says, that attention itself constitutes all the reward they will ever receive for their pious actions, for such is the way of hypocrites (vv. 2, 5, 16). Hypocrisy is a key theme in Matthew (see 7:5; 15:7; 22:18; 23:13–29; 24:51). Originally, the word "hypocrite" simply designated an actor on a stage. The thought here seems to be that those who practice piety to win attention for themselves are only pretending to be pious; in reality, they are more concerned with gaining honor for themselves than for God (→ Hypocrisy).

Jesus affirms that God does reward those who practice piety "in secret" (vv. 4, 6, 17). The theme of heavenly reward is present elsewhere in Matthew (10:41–42; 19:27–29) and is more prominent in this Gospel than in the others. Three instances of piety are mentioned: almsgiving (6:2–4), prayer (6:7–15), and fasting (6:16–18). The assumption is that Jesus' followers will do all these things. Almsgiving referred to charitable contributions above and beyond the stipulated tithes and offerings everyone was expected to make. Praying included the practice of reciting certain memorized or liturgical prayers at key times of the day (the Shema was to be said twice; the Eighteen Benedictions, three times). The section on praying is interrupted by a presentation of the Lord's Prayer. Fasting meant going without food entirely or, sometimes, adopting a restricted diet in penitence for one's sin, in observance of a national holiday, as an expression of mourning, or simply as a way of strengthening one's communion with God (→ Alms; Fasting; Prayer).

The prayer of vv. 9–13 is one early Christians treasured. They said Jesus had taught it to his disciples, and they made it part of their private devotional lives and liturgical worship services. Traditionally called the "Lord's Prayer" or the "Our Father," the prayer is preserved in three early documents: Matthew 6:9–13, Luke 11:2–4; and *Didache* 2:8 (the last is a nonbiblical writing from the early second century). The prayer is very Jewish in form and content. Indeed, in Matthew, Jesus presents it in explicit contrast to the type of prayers said by Gentiles (6:7).

The metaphorical identification of God as Father is typical for Matthew, occurring ten times in 6:1–18 alone (see also 5:16, 45, 48; 6:26, 32; 7:11, 21; 10:32, 33; 12:50; 15:31; 16:17; 18:10, 14, 19, 35; 20:23; 25:34, 41; 26:29, 42, 53; 28:19). Matthew does not mean to assert that God is male, but no doubt finds the masculine reference appropriate for conveying the image of an authority figure to readers who live in a patriarchal society. God is not only a caring parent (7:9–11), but also the head of the household, the one whose unilateral decisions are to be respected by the whole family of believers (23:9). Thus, by encouraging his followers to call God "Father," Jesus urges them both to respect God's authority and to trust in God's generosity and providential wisdom.

The prayers for God's name to be hallowed, God's kingdom to come, and God's will to be done are parallel petitions that state the same basic request three times in slightly different words. In the context of Matthew's Gospel, this request is essentially for God to bring to fulfillment what has begun with Jesus. The kingdom has already drawn near (4:17), Jesus and his followers are bringing God's will to accomplishment,

and God's name is being glorified on account of them (5:16). Jesus' followers are to pray for the work of Christ to continue.

Three more petitions make simple requests of God, ones that Jesus deems appropriate for all people to make at any time. The request for "daily bread" flows from an assumption that all followers of Jesus will embrace a simple lifestyle. Bread is a metaphor here for life's necessities—food, shelter, clothing, and by extension, the conditions for obtaining these (health, employment, etc.). Jesus' followers are to ask that God provide them with what they need, no more, but also no less.

The request for forgiveness of sins (lit., "debts") is traditional for Judaism. Jesus attaches to it a reminder that those who seek such forgiveness ought also to forgive others. To emphasize the point, Matthew quotes another saying of Jesus on this subject immediately after the Lord's Prayer (6:14–15) and, elsewhere, records a parable Jesus told to illustrate the lesson (18:23–35). This need to forgive others is the only facet of Jesus' moral teaching deemed so important that his followers are to remind themselves of it every time they pray.

The next petition is easily misunderstood when it is translated, "Lead us not into temptation," since neither Matthew nor Jesus would have wanted to imply the possibility that God ever would tempt people to sin. Rather, the request is that God would guide Jesus' followers in such a way that they would not experience the kinds of things that would test their faith (cf. 26:41). According to the parable of the sower (Matt. 13: 2–9, 18–23) such trials might take the form of hardship ("trouble or persecution") or distraction ("the cares of the world and the lure of wealth"). Elsewhere, Matthew indicates that some trials are inevitable (18:7; 24:9–13). Thus, the petition continues with the plea, "deliver us from evil" (or "the evil one"). Jesus' followers are to ask that they be spared trials whenever possible and—when this is not possible—that they be protected from the potentially destructive consequences of such experiences (cf. James 1:2–4; 1 Pet. 1:6–7).

The well-known conclusion to the Lord's Prayer ("Thine is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever and ever, Amen") was not originally in the Bible. It was written by early Christians when the prayer came to be used in liturgical worship. Later, some copies of the NT began adding the conclusion to the text with the result that it is found today in a few English translations (e.g., KJV; → Lord's Prayer, The).

6:19–24, Undivided Allegiance. In a few memorable sayings, Jesus emphasizes the absolute devotion that his followers must have for the things of God in contrast to the things of earth, which he refers to as "mammon" (v. 24). "Mammon" does not mean "wealth," as some translations indicate, but simply refers to material things. As the next passage (6:25–34) demonstrates, even the poor can suffer misplaced values if they prize such basics as food and clothing over the kingdom of God. The concern is to have but one master (cf. Luke 16:13). Material possessions are not bad in themselves—they may be "good things" that God gives (7:11), but Jesus tells his followers that they are not to value such possessions (regard them as "treasures") or love them or be devoted to them. Instead, they should store up "treasure in heaven," i.e., value divine things such as those listed in the Lord's Prayer: God's name, God's kingdom, and God's will (6:9–10; see also 6:33). The sayings about a "healthy eye" (vv. 22–23; cf. Luke 11:34–36) are a bit obscure, but probably indicate that those whose allegiance to God is undivided have clarity of vision, while those with divided loyalties have blurred vision. The followers of Jesus are supposed to be the light of the world (5:14), but if they try to serve both God and mammon, to value both what is worldly and heavenly, the light in them goes dark (v. 23) and they have nothing to offer.

6:25–34, Do Not Worry. Cf. Luke 12:22–31. Jesus continues his warning against concern for material things (6:24) by insisting that even anxiety over the basics of life (food, drink, clothing) can distract one's allegiance from the kingdom of God (v. 33). There are two reasons why his followers ought not strive for such things. On the one hand, life is more than food and the body more than clothing (6:26). Jesus himself went forty days without eating in order to affirm the truth of Scripture that one lives not by bread alone, but by the word of God (4:2–4). Matthew's Gospel repeatedly asserts the relative importance of temporal life (and all that sustains it) compared to God's eternal kingdom (10:28; 18:8–9). On the other hand, Jesus affirms that God is generous and can be trusted to provide the necessities of life. The Father who cares for the birds and clothes the fields with flowers knows what people need and will provide accordingly (see also 10:29–31). Anxiety is a sign of "little faith" (6:30; cf. 8:26; 14:31; 16:8; 17:20). Those who put God's kingdom and God's righteousness first in their lives do not need to worry about tomorrow. God will provide for them (→ Kingdom of God; Righteousness).

7:1–5, On Judging. Cf. Luke 6:37–38, 41–42. Jesus warns his followers not to let their concern for righteousness set them on a crusade to correct the faults of others while ignoring their own failings. Those who do this are "hypocrites" (see commentary above on 6:1–18), in the same camp with people who practice piety for show (6:2, 5, 16). Judging in this sense is the opposite of forgiving. Jesus has told his followers that God will not forgive them if they do not forgive others (6:14–15); now he says that God will hold them

accountable to the same standards that they seek to apply to others. As the last part of v. 5 makes clear, Jesus does not mean to discourage his followers from helping each other overcome their faults (cf. 18:15–18). The point is to make self-improvement the first priority and to be generous and merciful in assessment of others.

7:6, Pearls Before Swine. In a general sense, this brief proverb speaks of waste. One does not throw pearls into a pigpen or take sanctified food from an altar and toss it out in the street as scraps for stray dogs. Jesus says, do not waste what God has given you (life, health, intellect, freedom, talent). Make it count. More precisely, Jesus will urge his followers to show discernment in proclaiming the gospel and he will advise them to seek new audiences rather than wasting their efforts on the stubbornly unreceptive (10:5, 14, 23).

7:7–11, Confidence in Prayer. Cf. Luke 11:9–13. Jesus encourages his followers to pray, to seek "good things" from God, and to believe that God will grant them. Foremost among the good things that Jesus' followers seek will be God's kingdom and God's righteousness (6:33), but Jesus also wants his followers to pray for their material needs to be met (6:11). Notably the two examples he uses here for God's gifts are bread and fish. Later, Jesus will demonstrate quite literally how God provides these items (14:15–21; 15:32–39). Jesus says that prayer for such necessities is to be offered in the trust that God is like a Father, that God has both the means and the desire to provide for them.

7:12, The Golden Rule. Cf. Luke 6:31. Jesus offers his followers an ethical maxim that is beautiful and effective precisely because of its simplicity. The "law and the prophets," the major books of Scripture, offer detailed advice for determining the will of God and discerning right from wrong. Religious scholars in Jesus' day (as now) debate various interpretations and applications of these writings. Jesus indicates that if you just treat others the way you want to be treated yourself, you will get it right most of the time. Indeed, Matthew's Gospel is filled with stories in which the scholars get things wrong because they ignore this principle (12:1–8, 9–14; 15:3–6). Elsewhere, Jesus restates this rule as the "law of love" (22:34–40). Statements similar to the Golden Rule are found in many other religious writings, including the book of Tobit (4:15), the Jewish Talmud (*[Scaron]abbat* 31a), the *Didache* (1:2), and the Letters of Paul (Rom. 13:10; → Golden Rule).

7:13–14, Two Ways. Cf. Luke 13:23–24. Jesus contrasts the way that leads to life with the one that leads to destruction. The former is "a narrow way," a harder road to take, and there are few who find it. The imagery is conventional (cf. Ps. 1:6; Jer. 21:8; Sir. 21:10; 2 Esd. 7:1–19), and in a general sense the point is simply that the more popular course of action may not be the wisest one. This point is accentuated, however, when one realizes that the "life" Jesus refers to here is to be found in a blessed paradise after death. Eventual participation in this future life makes the enactment of self-discipline and the bearing of present hardship and persecution worthwhile (18:8–9; 24:6–13).

7:15–23, False Prophets. Cf. Luke 6:43–45. Jesus warns his followers that false prophets will come among them to lead people astray (cf. 24:11). By such "prophets," he means those who wrongly claim to know God's future plans (24:23–26) or otherwise try to lead the community in ways that God has not ordained. These prophets are "evildoers," Jesus says (lit., "lawless ones," 7:23), who will be rejected by him on the day of judgment and denied participation in the kingdom of heaven. The problem is that they are like "wolves in sheep's clothing" (7:15), bearing a superficial resemblance to true followers of God. They may use Jesus' name, call him their Lord, and even work miracles or drive out evil in spectacular ways (7:22; cf. 24:24), but all this is only "sheep's clothing." If you know what to look for, Jesus says, the false prophets can be detected as surely as a tree may be identified by its fruit. What to look for is whether they do the will of the Father as described by Jesus in this sermon (7:21). For example, the false prophets will be the ones who do not treat others the way they themselves wish to be treated (7:12). Or they may be those who advocate a popular, easy course instead of insisting on the narrow and hard way to life (7:13–14; → Judgment, Day of).

7:24–27, Parable of Two Builders. Cf. Luke 6:47–49. Jesus tells the first of many parables in this Gospel, comparing responses to his teaching to foundations on which homes may be built. Both persons in the parable are likened to those who have heard his words —nothing is said about those who have not heard them. The difference is that the wise person acts on what has been heard while the foolish person does not. Everyone who acts on Jesus' words is like a person who builds a house on rock; the one who does not is like a person who builds on sand. Notably, the house on rock suffers the same tribulations as that on the sand—yet it survives. Thus, Jesus does not indicate that his faithful followers will be spared any of this world's adversity, but rather that they will endure and ultimately be saved (cf. 24:13).

7:28–29, Response to the Sermon. The sermon concludes with a note that the crowds were astonished at Jesus' teaching, since he taught "as one who had authority, not as their scribes." The point is not simply that he taught in an authoritative style, but that his teaching revealed him to be a person authorized to speak for God in a way that other religious teachers

were not (cf. 8:5–13; 9:8; 10:1; 21:23–27; 28:18). The revelation that crowds are hearing the sermon at all is surprising, because Matthew indicated earlier that Jesus was speaking to his disciples apart from the crowds (5:1–2). Apparently, the crowds have eavesdropped, overhearing words that were not intended for them. For Matthew's readers, these crowds may represent the unbelieving world—those who have not experienced Jesus' call, but who have heard snippets of his message. Astonished at the authority evident in his words, they still do not know what to make of those words—or of the one who spoke them.

8:1–9:38
Mighty in Word and Deed

Picking up on the theme of authority sounded at the conclusion of Jesus' most famous sermon (7:29), Matthew's Gospel continues with a narrative section regarding events in Galilee—events that further display the authority that the crowds hear in Jesus' voice. Now, the emphasis is on miracles that Jesus performs, though these stories are interspersed with ones that begin to indicate what sort of tensions are involved in following this authoritative teacher and miracle worker (→ Miracles).

8:1–4, Healing of a Leper. Cf. Mark 1:40–44; Luke 5:12–14. A man referred to as a "leper" is healed by Jesus and told to offer the sacrifices for purification prescribed in Scripture (Lev. 14). We no longer know what sort of skin diseases were described as "leprosy" in biblical times (probably not what is today identified as "Hansen's disease"). In any case, such persons could be treated as social outcasts (Lev. 13:45–46). This leper worships Jesus (see commentary above on 2:1–12 [v. 11]) and displays the ideal attitude elsewhere identified as "faith." He is fully confident in Jesus' power, but makes no presumption concerning the divine will (v. 2). The healed leper's sacrifice is to be "a testimony" to the priests, serving as evidence that Jesus does in fact observe the law, but also that he has power to accomplish what the law cannot. The healing of the leper reveals a reversal of conventional wisdom concerning purity. Normally, that which is unclean is thought to have power to pollute whatever is clean. But when Jesus touches the leper (v. 3), he does not become unclean. Instead the leper is cleansed. This is a dramatic signification that God's rule is at hand (4:17), that purity is now more powerful than impurity. On the command to secrecy in v. 4, see below on 9:27–31 (→ Faith; Leprosy).

8:5–13, Healing of Centurion's Servant. Cf. Luke 7:1–10; John 4:46–53. Jesus is amazed at the faith of a gentile centurion, who knows Jesus can heal his servant (or possibly "son") from a distance by merely speaking a word. Jesus' offer to visit the centurion's home shows he is willing to transgress social conventions since Jews (especially Jewish "holy men") did not normally enter the "unclean" homes of Gentiles. The centurion's recognition of Jesus' authority picks up on a dominant theme in this Gospel (cf. 7:29; 9:8; 10:1; 21:23–27; 28:18). That such faith should be found in a Gentile prompts Jesus to declare that the advent of God's rule will indeed transcend all social and ethnic boundaries. Jesus alludes to the great banquet that is expected to celebrate God's final victory when the kingdom is fully established (see Isa. 25:6; Rev. 19:9). The thought is not that Gentiles will be favored at this banquet and Jews excluded, but that people will enter the kingdom from unexpected quarters, while many who were thought to be insiders will find themselves shut out (cf. 7:21–23; 19:30; 20:16; 25:31–46; → Centurion; Gentile; Kingdom of God; Slavery in the New Testament).

8:14–15, Healing of Peter's Mother-in-Law. Cf. Mark 1:29–34; Luke 4:38–41. Jesus goes to Peter's house in Capernaum and, at his own initiative, heals Peter's mother-in-law of a fever. In contrast to the two preceding stories, nothing is said of this healed person's faith or confidence in Jesus' power. Instead, Matthew reports that after the healing, she "served" Jesus. Many people follow Jesus in this narrative, but Peter's mother-in-law and another unnamed woman mentioned in 26:10 are the only people who serve him. They are, in that sense, the two persons in the story whose attitude is most like that of Jesus himself (19:26–28).

8:16–17, Healings and Exorcisms. Jesus stays at Peter's house in Capernaum and heals many people, especially those who were possessed by demons. There are numerous stories about demons in Matthew's Gospel and some are quite dramatic (8:28–34; 9:32–34; 12:22–24, 43–45; 17:14–21). The demons themselves are never described but, as spirits, are apparently invisible. Instead of causing people to sin, they afflict people, causing sickness and disability. In the NT, demons are said to be responsible for insanity, leprosy, deafness, paralysis, and other such ailments. By attributing such maladies to demons, the ancient world affirmed that these conditions were neither caused by God nor the fault of the sufferer. Matthew also notes that Jesus' healings fulfilled the prophecy of Isa. 53:4 that a true Servant of the Lord would take away human suffering (→ Demon).

8:18–22, Would-be Followers. Cf. Luke 9:57–60. Jesus determines to expand his ministry to the area on the other side of the lake. Before he leaves, two encounters—juxtaposed for comparison—highlight the demands of being his follower. A scribe states, "Teacher, I will follow you wherever you go." The claim is not only bold, but presumptuous, for Jesus has not

called this scribe to be his disciple. Jesus' enigmatic response ("The Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head") is apparently a rejection of the scribe's pledge, indicating that the rigors of discipleship are beyond what he has calculated. Notably, in Matthew only outsiders address Jesus as "Teacher" (8:19; 9:11; 12:38; 17:24; 19:16; 22:16, 24; 24:36); the only disciple to do so is Judas (26:25, 48). Likewise, Jesus typically refers to himself as "the Son of Man" only with a view to the unenlightened general public, not in reference to how he is to be perceived by believers (cf. 16:13; 16:15; → Scribe; Son of Man).

After rebuffing the presumptuous scribe, Jesus ironically learns that one of his own disciples, whom he *has* called, now wants to turn back from following him. He wants to provide his father with an appropriate burial, as social convention and most interpretations of the law (Exod. 20:12; Tob. 4:3; Sir. 38:16) would demand. Jesus' harsh response takes the form of a proverb ("Let the dead bury the dead"). The exact meaning of this aphorism is unclear, but certainly the disciple's request for a leave is denied. Elsewhere, Jesus insists on the importance of keeping family obligations (15:4–5), but he will not allow devotion to family (10:34–37) or any other "good cause" (26:8–11) to become an excuse for allowing his kingdom summons (4:17) to become a secondary concern (cf. 22:1–10).

8:23–27, Stilling of a Storm. Cf. Mark 4:36–41; Luke 8:22–24. On the way to the other side of the lake (8:18), a storm comes up, frightening Jesus' disciples. They awaken him and appeal for help in language that sounds liturgical ("Lord, save us"). He chides them for their "little faith" (cf. 6:30; 14:31; 16:8; 17:20) and miraculously makes the storm stop. The disciples' incredulous response (v. 27) shows that they do not yet know Jesus is the Son of God (cf. 14:33).

8:28–34, Exorcisms at Gadara. Cf. Mark 5:1–20; Luke 8:26–39. As Jesus enters Gentile territory for the first time, he encounters two demon-possessed men who live in a cemetery and are apparently insane. The demons know what no human character in the story has yet discerned—that Jesus is the Son of God (v. 29; cf. 4:3, 6). They seem surprised to see him "before the time" when heaven and earth will pass away (24:35) and God's kingdom will come in all its fullness (6:10). They thought their spree on earth would last longer, but as Jesus will later explain, Satan has already been bound and his legions are already being routed (12:28–29). In that sense, the kingdom has already come, in the person and work of Jesus. At their own request, the demons are driven into a herd of swine, which then plunges off a cliff and drowns. Thus, it is sent to the abyss, consigned to the sea over which Jesus has just demonstrated his authority (8:26–27). The townspeople subsequently beg him to leave, indicating that they prefer evil powers with which they are familiar to divine ones they know nothing about. On demon possession, see commentary above on 8:16–17 (→ Demon; Kingdom of God).

9:1–8, Healing of a Paralytic. Cf. Mark 2:1–12; Luke 5:17–26. Returning to Capernaum, which is now called Jesus' "own town" (v. 1), Jesus heals a paralytic after declaring the man's sins to be forgiven. The healing seems almost an afterthought, a demonstration that the more important forgiveness of sins has in fact taken place. The story also presents Jesus as possessing unusual mental powers—he is somehow able to "see" the faith of the paralytic's companions (v. 2) and to "know" the thoughts of the scribes (v. 3). The latter believe he is already guilty of blasphemy, the charge for which he will ultimately be condemned to death (26:65–66). The crowd is impressed by the divine authority evident in Jesus' actions just as they were previously by the authority evident in his speech (7:28–29; cf. 8:5–13; 1-:1; 21:23–27; 28:18; → Blasphemy; Capernaum).

9:9–13, Call of Matthew. Cf. Mark 2:13–17; Luke 5:27–32. Jesus summons a toll collector to follow him and later joins a group of "tax collectors and sinners" in a meal. The toll collector, referred to as "Levi" in other books (Mark 2:14; Luke 5:27), is only here called "Matthew" and thus identified as one who later became one of the Twelve (10:3; cf. Mark 3:16–19; Luke 6:13–16). Tax collectors were regarded as wicked people whose occupation violated God's law and constituted treason. Jesus' fraternity with such persons offends the overtly pious Pharisees. By comparing himself to a physician, Jesus asserts both a commitment to welcome sinners and an intention to heal them. He also quotes Hos. 6:6 to indicate that this policy of prioritizing mercy reflects the nature of God (cf. 12:7; 23:23). In v. 13, Jesus offers the second of four explicit "statements of purpose" in Matthew (cf. 5:17; 10:34; 20:28; → Matthew; Publicans).

9:14–15, Question About Fasting. Cf. Mark 2:18–20; Luke 5:33–35. A query from the disciples of John the Baptist as to why Jesus' disciples do not fast (cf. 11:18–19) prompts an enigmatic response from Jesus. He compares himself to a bridegroom (cf. 22:2; 25:1–13), evoking an image that would become popular in early Christianity (John 3:29; cf. Eph. 5:22–33; Rev. 21:2). The nearness of God's reign (4:17) calls for celebration, specifically a celebration of love similar to that of a wedding. The bridegroom, however, will be taken away, initiating a time when joy and celebration are not complete. Verse 15 is the first of two significant passages in Matthew that speak of the "absence of Jesus" during the time of the church (cf. 26:11). These sayings must be held in tension with those assurances

in Matthew of Jesus' continued presence (18:20; 28:20). Jesus *is* still with us, this Evangelist wants to say, but not as he once was, and not as he will be (→ Fasting).

9:16–17, Patches and Wineskins. Cf. Mark 2:21–22; Luke 5:36–39. Jesus continues by citing two proverbs regarding patches on cloth and wine in wineskins. These sayings function as brief parables to indicate that the good news about God's reign cannot simply be added to an already existing system or lifestyle. It changes everything and demands total transformation, which is why the announcement of that good news is typically preceded in Matthew by the word, "Repent" (3:2; 4:17). Not only individual lives, but also religious and social systems must change to accommodate this "gospel of the kingdom" (4:23).

9:18–26, The Ruler's Daughter and the Hemorrhaging Woman. Cf. Mark 5:21–43; Luke 8:40–56. A pair of miracle stories present Jesus as one who restores life and health to two unnamed women—the daughter of a ruler (he is not here called "Jairus" or identified as a synagogue leader, as in Mark 5:22) and a woman who has suffered from a hemorrhage for twelve years. Both stories emphasize faith. Like the leper in 8:2, the girl's father worships Jesus (see commentary above on 2:1–12 [v. 11]) and demonstrates complete confidence in his power. The hemorrhaging woman is so confident of this power that she knows she need only touch Jesus' garment to access it (cf. 14:36). Lest this be interpreted as magic, Jesus affirms that it is her faith in his power that has brought about the healing. Such examples of faith are contrasted with the ridiculing laughter of the crowds at the young girl's funeral (v. 24).

9:27–31, Healing of the Blind. Jesus opens the eyes of two blind men who address him as the Son of David (a similar incident is described in 20:29–34). The use of the title "Son of David" probably indicates that these men think Jesus is the Messiah (cf. 22:42) and that they know Isaiah identified the healing of the blind as a sign of the messianic age (Isa. 29:18; 35:5–6; 42:7; cf. Matt. 11:5). Once more, faith is emphasized (cf. 8:10; 9:2, 22), though here it is Jesus' mercy rather than his power that is explicitly sought (v. 27), and this appears to prompt Jesus to ask whether they have confidence in his power as well (v. 28; cf. 8:2, 8; 9:18, 21; → Blindness; Faith; Mercy).

As before (8:4), Jesus wants the matter kept secret for reasons never explained (see also 12:16; 16:20; 17:9). But this does not happen; the incident becomes one more occasion for his fame to spread (v. 31; cf. 4:24; 9:26). Notably, Matthew does not fault the healed men for disobedience in making the matter known. The point may be that, though Jesus did not seek to attain "celebrity status" for his miraculous powers, the effects of his works were simply too marvelous to be kept a secret.

9:32–34, Healing of a Mute Man. Cf. Luke 11:14–15. Jesus casts a demon out of a mute man, enabling him to speak (on demon possession, cf. above on 8:16–17). The man is probably also deaf; the Greek word used for his condition *(kophos)* is identical to that translated "the deaf" in 11:5. This brief incident elicits contrasting responses from the crowds and the Pharisees. The former testify that something unique has come in the person and work of Jesus (cf. 12:6, 41, 42). The Pharisees dismiss the exorcism as the work of the devil, an accusation that prepares for the larger discussion of this charge in 12:22–32. Earlier Matthew concluded the Sermon on the Mount with an acclamation by the crowds concerning the authority of Jesus evident in his teaching (7:28–29); now, he concludes two chapters devoted primarily to miracles with an acclamation by the crowds concerning the unique authority evident in his deeds. In both instances, the tension and potential conflict between Jesus and the religious leaders of Israel is evident.

9:35–38, Summary of Jesus' Ministry. The second of three summaries of Jesus' ministry in Matthew (see 4:23; 11:1) concludes with an emphasis on Jesus' compassion (cf. 14:4; 15:32; 20:34) and on the need for more workers to take up the sort of ministry he performs. His compassion for the crowds is aroused not by the degree of sickness or suffering they experience, but by something more fundamental: a lack of leadership that leaves them harassed and helpless like "sheep without a shepherd" (cf. Num. 27:17; 2 Chron. 18:16). This theme of lost or scattered sheep looms large in Matthew (10:6; 15:24; 18:12; 26:31) and here it is linked to the even more prominent indictment of Israel's unfaithful leaders. The work that needs to be done is described as a "harvest," but this does not here signify eschatological judgment as it does in 13:39. Rather, this use of the harvest metaphor points to what is envisioned in the parable of the sower (13:1–9, 18–23). Jesus is calling for persons like his disciples to sow the word of the kingdom through preaching and healing (10:7–8) so that some, at least, may bear much fruit.

10:1–42
The Missionary Discourse

The second major speech given by Jesus in this Gospel (the first was the Sermon on the Mount in chaps. 5–7) is ostensibly to the twelve persons who are called "apostles" and concerns the work they are to perform as missionaries to Israel. In fact, however, some of the content of this speech appears to be addressed to Christians of a later time and place, when the gospel will be taken to all nations (v. 18; cf. 28:19); indeed,

much of it presumes the situation of violent persecution that the church would not know until decades after Jesus' death. In any case, the speech describes the mission of these disciples as closely paralleling the mission of Jesus himself and indicates that the fate they may suffer as a consequence will also parallel what befalls him (vv. 24–25).

10:1–4, Twelve Apostles Chosen. Cf. Mark 3:16–19; Luke 6:14–16; Acts 1:13. Jesus has been calling disciples all along (4:18–22; 9:9), but it is only now that he chooses twelve as "apostles." The number twelve is itself significant as a symbolic reconstitution of the twelve tribes of Israel (19:28). Matthew emphasizes that Jesus gave these twelve disciples authority over demons, so that they would be able to conduct a ministry of healing similar to his. On Jesus' authority, see 7:29; 8:5–13; 9:8; 21:23–27; 28:18 (→ Apostle; Demon.)

10:5–15, Instructions for Missionary Work. Cf. Mark 6:8–11; Luke 9:2–5. Jesus gives specific directions regarding the mission to the lost sheep of Israel. Identifying Israel rather than the gentile nations as a mission field implies a certain ironic reversal, since the people of Israel typically regarded themselves as God's chosen ones who were to become a light to the (other) nations. Jesus has not abandoned this ideal, but he believes that Israel itself first needs enlightenment (28:19 reveals that 10:5 is not meant to imply permanent exclusion of Gentiles or Samaritans). Jesus' followers are to preach the gospel of the kingdom (v. 7; cf. 4:17) and conduct a ministry of healing similar to that of Jesus. Like him, they are to accept no payment for their preaching and healing. This will be possible if they adopt his ideal of an austere lifestyle, requiring no more of their hosts than the basic hospitality (food and shelter) due any traveler. Jesus notes, however, that some will prove unworthy of their ministry, refusing even to acknowledge their greeting of *shalom* (Heb., "peace"). His followers ought not waste their time on such as these, but should move on, shaking the dust from their feet—a traditional prophetic sign warning of divine judgment to come (cf. Acts 13:51). The seeming inability of some to receive the word is a theme elsewhere in Matthew as well: see 7:6; 13:19; 15:12–14.

10:16–23, Certainty of Persecution. Cf. Mark 13:9–13; Luke 21:12–17, 19. Jesus intensifies his warning that missionaries will meet with rejection: some people will not only be inhospitable to his disciples, but will actively seek to demean them, betray them, and harm them physically. The demands of Jesus (as stated, e.g., in 5:43–48) make his followers vulnerable to such abuse. Wisdom and innocence become especially important virtues in such a context: disciples must be "wise as serpents" so as not to provoke their enemies and bring persecution upon themselves unnecessarily; they must also be "innocent as doves," living publicly in such an exemplary fashion as to give the lie to whatever slanderous accusations are made against them. Still, their position will be like that of sheep in the midst of wolves; many of them will suffer, and some will die. Even members of their own families will turn on them. Jesus counsels them not to be anxious, but to trust in God. He promises that, first, the Spirit will help them, such that their persecutions themselves will serve the cause of God; and, second, the Son of Man will come and save those who have endured suffering and indignity. They also need not worry about satisfactory completion of the mission. The goal is simply to do what can be done as the occasion arises; the work, Jesus knows, will still be incomplete when the Son of Man returns (→ Son of Man).

10:24–42, Promises and Threats. Cf. Luke 12:2–9, 51–53. Jesus continues his warnings about coming persecution with general comments regarding rewards that may—or may not—be granted. He notes that the troubles that will come upon his followers need to be considered in light of the suffering that he himself has borne. When they are unjustly slandered, they can know that their master was also (9:34; 12:24; cf. John 15:20). Another source of comfort will be the realization that the truth will eventually be known (vv. 26–27)—the slanderous lies their enemies tell will be exposed. Still another will be the awareness that human suffering is limited. The God who knows the fate of every sparrow and the number of hairs on every head is the one who determines the ultimate fate of human beings. Rewards will come to those who acknowledge Jesus before others, to those who are willing to lose their lives for his sake, to those who are receptive to his followers, and even to those who show but the slightest kindness to "the little ones" he calls his own (cf. 25:40). But these rewards are not automatic. Those who deny him, who put earthly concerns (such as family ties) ahead of him, who refuse to take up the cross that following him requires (v. 38; cf. 16:24), or who are concerned only with preserving their own lives (v. 39; cf. 16:25) risk missing out on the blessings of God's kingdom.

Verse 34 offers the third of four explicit "statements of purpose" in Matthew (cf. 5:17; 9:13; 20:28). His words here ("not peace, but a sword") have nothing to do with endorsement of armed conflict—an unthinkable proposition for this, the most pacifist book in the Bible (see 5:38–41; 26:52). Jesus is referring to the divisions that will become evident as people are forced to decide for him or against him (cf. 12:50). In doing so, he draws on the prophet Micah's description of the folly of trusting in human beings when only God can offer salvation (Mic. 7:6–7).

11:1
Conclusion

With a final sentence, Matthew concludes not only Jesus' missionary discourse to his disciples, but also this broad section of the Gospel in which the dominant motif has been his ministry to Israel (4:17–11:1). This is now the third "summary passage" (cf. 4:23; 9:35) that describes Jesus' work of preaching and teaching throughout the land of Israel (the other summaries also mention healing). The ministry to these "lost sheep" (10:6) is not complete (10:23), but it has now been described sufficiently for Matthew to turn his attention to the matter of their response.

Part Three: 11:2–16:20
Israel's Repudiation of Jesus

Matthew's story shifts from reporting the glorious works of God being done in Israel to focus on Israel's failure to respond to those works. This section opens with John the Baptist wondering who Jesus is (11:3) and concludes with a summary of who others wrongly think Jesus is (16:14). Pharisees plot against Jesus (12:14) and townspeople murmur against him (13:54–57), in contrast to Jesus' own disciples, who worship him and confess that he is the Son of God (14:33; 16:16). Lines are drawn, and Jesus declares, "Whoever is not with me is against me" (12:30). He speaks oracles of judgment upon the unrepentant (11:20–24; 12:39–42), publicly condemns the religious leaders (12:34, 15:3–9), and speaks mysteriously of hidden revelation (11:25) that is deliberately kept from the undeserving (13:10–17).

11:2–30
A Negative Response

Instead of reports of Jesus achieving acclaim (4:24; 7:28–29; 9:8, 26, 31, 33), we now hear of his identity being questioned, his lifestyle challenged, and his message ignored. Such passive resistance to the gospel of the kingdom provokes Jesus' ire and elicits some of his harshest words.

11:2–6, John the Baptist's Question. Cf. Luke 7:18–23. John has been arrested (4:12) and now sends disciples to Jesus to ask whether he is in fact "the one who is to come," i.e., the Messiah. Earlier, John himself seems to have thought Jesus was this "coming one" (3:14; cf. 3:11), but he also thought "the deeds of the Messiah" (v.2) would be works of judgment (3:12). Jesus is not doing what John said the coming one would do. This is the second time now that disciples of John have questioned Jesus regarding what appear to be anomalies in the program (9:14–17; cf. 11:18–19). Jesus responds with allusions to Isaiah (Isa. 29:18–19; 35:5–6; 61:1) that indicate the works being done by him (blind: 9:27–31; lame: 9:2–8; lepers: 8:1–4; deaf: probably 9:32–34; poor: 6:25–33) and by his followers (10:8) are indeed signs of the messianic age. He does not, however, indicate that John was wrong with his earlier predictions of a coming Judge. Those predictions will eventually be fulfilled at the Parousia (Second Coming; 16:27). Thus, John's question posed a false alternative. Jesus *is* the one who is to come, but we still must wait for "another"—for another *time*, when the Messiah will return as Judge.

11:7–15, The Role of John. Cf. Luke 7:24–30. Jesus now speaks about John in lofty terms, proclaiming him the greatest man ever born (11:11). But first he teases the crowd with humorous false descriptions. Whatever one might think of John, no one would call him "a reed" (a weak and vacillating figure) or accuse him of a love for fine things (cf. 3:4). He was indeed a prophet, Jesus affirms, but more. He was the messenger come in accord with Scripture to prepare the way for the Messiah (Mal. 3:1), the one who somehow fulfills the ancient prophecy that Elijah would return (Mal. 4:5; cf. Matt. 17:10–13; the fulfillment is not literal—see John 1:21). Still, Jesus says that the least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than John; in that realm of light, every child of God will know a glory surpassing that of the greatest person who ever lived on this earth (→ John the Baptist; Kingdom of God).

Verse 12 (cf. Luke 16:16) is difficult to understand. Most likely, Jesus is referring to persecution, including that which John has suffered and which will come upon his own followers in the near future (10:16–23). Godly people—like John—are the treasures of God's kingdom and when violent people—like Herod—attack them, the kingdom itself suffers violence. By imprisoning John (and killing him, cf. 14:1–12), Herod attacks God's own realm and deprives the earth of one of heaven's treasures.

11:16–19, The Rejection of Wisdom. Cf. Luke 7:31–35. Suddenly Jesus castigates not only the powerful people who have attacked John and opposed him, but the common people as well. The entire "generation" of people are depicted as obstinate and unbelieving. He compares them to spoiled or stubborn children who refuse to play first one game, then another (v. 17 probably refers to pretend wedding or funeral pageants that children might put on). In the same way, the people rejected John because he seemed too strange and Jesus because he seemed too normal. In response, Jesus quotes a proverb that alludes to the personified figure of Wisdom mentioned in such writings as Proverbs 8. To say that "Wisdom is vindicated by her deeds" is to affirm that the ultimate course of events reveals who has made wise decisions (cf. 7:24–27). Jesus believes

that the wisdom of his (and John's) actions will be proved right in time (→ Wisdom).

11:20–24, Failure to Repent. Jesus' castigation of unbelievers continues with specific reference to the cities where he had performed miracles. Three are singled out: Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum (4:13; 8:5; 9:1; cf. 17:24). Oddly, no miracles in Chorazin are reported anywhere in the NT, and none in Bethsaida are reported in Matthew (cf. Mark 8:22; Luke 9:10). These cities are contrasted with classic pagan locations: Tyre and Sidon, which were condemned in Isaiah 23 (cf. Ezek. 26–28; Joel 3:4–8), and Sodom, whose destruction is reported in Genesis 18–19. The point of the contrast is to indicate that the present cities have witnessed revelations of God that would have transformed even these evil sites of old. Matthew has told us previously that people were astonished by Jesus' miracles (9:33), spread his fame far and wide (4:24; 9:26, 31), followed him in great crowds (4:25), brought ever more sick people to him for healing (4:25; 8:16), and even glorified God for what was done (9:8). What they have *not* done thus far is what Jesus called them to do in his initial pronouncement: recognize that the kingdom of heaven is near, and repent (4:17).

11:25–27, Hidden Things. Cf. Luke 10:21–22. Jesus turns his attention now to the Father, praying to God with public words that his audience is intended to overhear. He identifies the obstinate unbelief he has encountered as the result of God's will, since God hides divine truth from "the wise and intelligent" and reveals it to "infants." True understanding must be given by God (cf. 13:11; 16:17) and is necessary to bear fruit for the kingdom (13:23). The "wise and intelligent" include all those who are able to come up with what seem to be good reasons for rejecting the prophetic messages of both John and Jesus (11:16–19). The "infants" may refer to Jesus' childlike disciples and others who humble themselves (18:2–4), but it does also refer to literal children, for whom God has special regard because they are helpless and often treated as insignificant (18:5–6, 10, 14; 19:13–15; 21:15–16). By extension, such a reference may also apply to others who are helpless and/or treated as "no-accounts" (see commentary above on 5:3–12 [vv. 3–6]). The language of Jesus' prayer is remarkable for the close association it assumes between Jesus as "the Son" and God the Father. Jesus is uniquely identified with God to such an extent that no one can know the one without the other.

11:28–30, An Open Invitation. After all the harsh talk about judgment (11:20–24) and about God hiding the truth from certain people (11:25–27), Jesus concludes this speech to the crowds with a gracious invitation. This is the only passage in the NT in which Jesus calls the general population to come to him in the same way that he calls specific disciples to follow him (4:19; the words usually translated "Follow me" read literally "Come after me"). Those who are weary and burdened here are the same as those who were described as "harassed and helpless" in 9:36. In both cases, the problem is a dearth of true leadership. Their leaders have not only failed to provide direction, but have also placed unfair and unnecessary demands upon them (cf. 23:4). The principal example of such "burdening" in Matthew is unrealistic interpretation of the law, as the next two episodes will illustrate. But Jesus can describe his yoke as easy and his burden as light not because he is more lax than other religious leaders (5:17–48), but because he interprets the law in accord with God's will—the persons who follow *his* teaching will live in the will of God and so (no matter how stringent the demands) find rest for their souls.

12:1–50
Open Conflict

The conflict between Jesus and the religious leaders of Israel has been smoldering throughout the narrative, as the two parties castigated each other indirectly (cf. 5:20; 7:28–29; 9:3, 11, 34, 36). Now, at last, this conflict bursts into the open with accusations offered face to face.

12:1–8, Picking Grain on the Sabbath. Cf. Mark 2:23–28; Luke 6:1–5. Jesus' disciples are accused by the Pharisees of harvesting grain on the Sabbath, which they take to be a violation of one of the Ten Commandments (Exod. 20:10; Deut. 5:14). At issue is the question of legal interpretation and ultimately of who has the authority to rule on such matters. The Pharisees apparently think that picking just enough grain to satisfy one's own hunger (v. 1) counts as harvesting; Jesus disagrees and declares his disciples "guiltless" (v. 7). The incident illustrates well why Jesus can claim that his yoke is "easy" (11:29–30). Unlike the Pharisees, he interprets commandments in a way that prioritizes mercy over sacrifice (v. 7; cf. 9:13): God would rather see hungry people fed than see them go without food for a day just to demonstrate their fidelity to a rule. Notably, Jesus does not set himself against Scripture, but finds justification for his principle in Scripture (Hos. 6:6). He even cites a precedent where soldiers, because they were hungry, were allowed to eat holy bread normally reserved for priests (1 Sam. 21:1–6; cf. Lev. 24:5–9). But what he says next takes the discussion to a different level. The work that he and his disciples are doing constitutes "something greater than the temple" and, as the Son of Man, he is "lord of the Sabbath." In short, he has divine authority to decide what is allowed regardless of whether the Pharisees or anyone else accept the rationale for his decisions. Thus, the conflict is not simply a legal dispute over how to interpret commandments; it is a Christological controversy over fundamental acceptance or rejection

of Jesus and his authority (cf. 7:28–29; 8:5–13; 9:8; 21:23–27; 28:18; → Mercy; Pharisees; Sabbath).

12:9–16, Healing on the Sabbath. Cf. Mark 3:1–6; Luke 6:6–11. Immediately after claiming to be "lord of the Sabbath" Jesus enters a synagogue where the Pharisees test him to see if he will act on this claim in a way that will allow them to discredit him or even charge him with a crime. Since he is known as a healer, they ask him whether he therefore believes it is lawful to practice this profession on the Sabbath—clearly a violation in their eyes of the Mosaic injunction against performing work on the Sabbath (Exod. 20:10; Deut. 5:14). He takes the bait and heals a man with a withered hand, but first utters words that make them look foolish: since their own legal interpretations allow a person to rescue a sheep on the Sabbath, he implies that they must be more concerned with the health of animals than people. Thus, the Pharisees themselves are put to shame and Jesus—instead of being discredited—is vindicated by God when the healing does occur. The Pharisees are left to plot against him in other, more dastardly ways: they conspire to destroy him in a manner that begs comparison with the earlier machinations of evil king Herod (2:16, 20). The crowds, however, follow Jesus and continue to be healed by him. On the secrecy motif in 12:16, see commentary above on 9:27–31 (→ Pharisees; Sabbath; Synagogue).

12:17–21, The Servant of the Lord. A citation from Isa. 42:1–4 interprets Jesus' healing ministry as the work of God's Servant, a theme that Matthew already touched on in his quotation of Isa. 53:4 in 8:17. Paradoxically, Jesus has more authority (divine power) than other religious leaders (7:28–29; 9:33), yet he exercises this authority in service. The focus on the Gentiles in this citation, furthermore, points already to the ultimate scope of his ministry: not only the "lost sheep of the house of Israel" (10:5–6; 15:24), but "all nations" (28:19), the whole world (24:14).

12:22–37, The Beelzebul Controversy. Cf. Mark 3:20–30; Luke 11:14–23. Jesus' exorcism of a blind, mute demoniac leads to an extended rant against the Pharisees when they castigate the healing as the work of Beelzebul (cf. 9:32–34; 10:25). The accusation was intended to dampen the enthusiasm of the common people, who had been amazed by the healing and had speculated that Jesus might be the Son of David, i.e., the Messiah (cf. 22:42). Jesus' response is based on his supernatural knowledge of the religious leaders' thoughts (cf. 9:4; 12:15; 16:8; 22:18; 26:10). First, he appeals to logic: it is patently ridiculous to suggest that Satan's agents would be ridding the world of demonic influence (the argument could just as easily be turned against them, since their own disciples perform exorcisms). No, the logical conclusion would be that Jesus is overcoming the spirits of Satan through the Spirit of God. And if this is true, Jesus continues, then his claim that God's kingdom is near (4:17) must also be true. If Jesus is robbing Satan of some of his prized possessions (the tormented souls that his demons have enslaved), someone must have tied up the devil (or put him on a leash, as Martin Luther had it). On demon possession, see commentary above on 8:16–17 (→ Demon; Kingdom of God; Pharisees).

After dispensing with the facetious argument, Jesus turns to a more serious matter: the blasphemy of the Holy Spirit. God's dawning kingdom brings an unprecedented offer: forgiveness of every sin and blasphemy, even those directed against Jesus himself. But if the Pharisees reject that offer, dismissing God's gracious, liberating activity as the work of the devil, there will be no hope remaining for them (→ Unpardonable Sin).

Finally, vv. 33–37 are a virulent response to the fact that the Pharisees have offered this, their most nasty assessment of Jesus, behind his back rather than to his face. A good tree ought to bear good fruit and a bad tree, bad fruit (cf. 7:16–20), but the Pharisees are hypocrites who somehow manage to "speak good" when they are truly evil. It will all come out eventually, Jesus says, and people will be judged on the basis of their careless (lit., "unguarded") words.

12:38–42, Request for a Sign. Cf. Luke 11:16, 29–32. Some of the religious leaders now ask Jesus to give them a sign to verify his claim to divine authority and he rejects their plea with caustic words (cf. 16:1–4). The request is hypocritical, since those who make it are already plotting to kill him (12:14). Furthermore, he has just indicated that the exorcisms he performs are an irrefutable sign that God's kingdom has come to them (12:28). What sort of sign could they have in mind? Perhaps the kind of omen or wonder that false prophets and false messiahs will be eager to perform in their attempts to lead astray the elect (24:24). In any case, Jesus dismisses the request as typical thinking for a wicked and adulterous generation so immune to repentance (cf. 11:20–24). He claims to bring a greater revelation of God than did Jonah or Solomon, yet those figures generated repentance and attracted a following even among the pagan peoples of the earth. How tragic, then, that God's own people resist this, the greatest revelation of all. Embedded in Jesus' response is a reference to the one sign that the religious leaders of Israel will be offered—the sign of Jonah, i.e., Jesus' own burial and resurrection. Eventually, they do receive this sign, but it only provokes them to redouble their opposition to Jesus (28:11–15; → Repentance).

12:43–45, Parable of the Unclean Spirit. Cf. Luke 11:24–26. Still speaking to the religious leaders of Israel, Jesus likens them and their generation to a person possessed—and then repossessed—by demons. The

comparison is parabolic; he does not mean to indicate that the Pharisees are all literally demon possessed or else their "sons" would not be able to perform exorcisms (12:27). Rather, Jesus means to describe his own ministry to Israel as a time of respite. In driving out the forces of evil, he gives Israel a chance to enact true repentance and become the people of God. If this does not happen, the demons that Jesus is keeping at bay will return and the condition of Israel will be worse than ever.

12:46–50, The True Family of Jesus. Cf. Mark 3:31–35; Luke 8:19–21. Jesus' mother and brothers (cf. 13:55–56) come to speak to him about some unidentified matter. Jesus indicates that his disciples are his true family. God is Father to all people (5:45, 48; 6:26; 23:9) and thus all people are related to each other as part of God's family. Those who do the Father's will (cf. 7:21) are ones who recognize this standing and acknowledge through their deeds this relationship with God and with each other. The lesson here is positive, emphasizing inclusion of disciples in the family of Jesus rather than exclusion of his literal earthly relatives. Matthew's Gospel does not mention the tensions between Jesus and his relatives that are alluded to elsewhere in the NT (Mark 3:21; John 7:5; but see commentary below on 13:54–58).

13:1–53
The Parable Discourse

Matthew 13 presents the third of Jesus' five major speeches (cf. chaps. 5–7; 10; 18; 24–25). The word "parable" has not been used up to this point in the Gospel, though Jesus has occasionally spoken in ways that seem parabolic (7:24–27; 12:43–45). Now, however, Matthew tells us explicitly that Jesus spoke in parables, and he records seven examples. (Matthew is careful never to refer to Jesus as teaching in parables for, as we shall see, the parables do not necessarily offer instruction; Jesus simply speaks of mysteries.) All of these parables concern the main subject of Jesus' preaching, the kingdom of heaven (cf. 4:17). In this discourse, Jesus alternates between speaking to the crowds (13:2, 34) and to his disciples (13:10, 36). The discourse is given on the same day that the Pharisees commence their plot to kill Jesus (12:14), and it is related immediately prior to Matthew's report of John the Baptist's murder at the beginning of chap. 14. With conflict and danger on either side of him, Jesus sits by the sea and speaks of the mysteries of the kingdom (→ Kingdom of God; Parables).

13:1–9, Parable of the Sower. Cf. Mark 4:1–9; Luke 8:4–8. Jesus begins with an apparently simple story of seed falling on different types of soil. Most of the seed is wasted. Some of it is eaten by birds before it ever takes root; other seed does begin to grow, but the plants are subsequently choked out by thorns or scorched by sun. Nevertheless, the small amount of seed that does fall onto good soil produces a harvest that more than compensates for the seed that did not. As such, the story is a fairly typical description of agricultural experience, though this sower seems to be especially indiscriminate and yet still enjoys incredibly good results. Jesus is speaking of what happens with "the word of the kingdom" (13:19), which does indeed go out to all indiscriminately and which does sometimes yield spectacular, even miraculous results (→ Sowing).

13:10–17, The Purpose of Parables. Cf. Mark 4:10–12; Luke 8:9–10. Jesus' disciples ask him why he speaks to the crowd in parables instead of just telling them plainly what he wants them to know. In his response, he cites Isa. 6:9 and notes a distinction between the crowds and the disciples themselves. He speaks of the secrets or mysteries of the kingdom in ways that will only be clear to those to whom God grants understanding (cf. 11:25; 16:17). Others will hear, but not understand; hence, they will not repent and they will not be healed. The presumption is that, for some, judgment has already occurred. Some persons—on account of their unrighteousness (5:20) or lofty status in this world (11:25)—have been deemed unworthy of receiving the benefits that God's dawning kingdom will bring. Thus, according to v. 12, those who lack even a basic orientation to God's will and word (e.g., those who blaspheme the Holy Spirit, 12:31) will not be given this understanding and will eventually lose whatever it is that they rely on (pedigree, 3:9; wealth, 19:23–24; etc.). The focus of Jesus' words, however, is primarily positive. He emphasizes that his disciples *do* have ears to hear (cf. 13:51; 16:12; 17:13). God has granted that they know the mysteries of the kingdom. Indeed, they are privileged to participate in what many prophets and righteous ones have longed to experience (cf. Luke 10:23–24). (On the fulfillment of prophecy theme in vv. 14–15, → Parables.)

13:18–23, Explanation of the Sower Parable. Cf. Mark 4:14–20; Luke 8:11–15. Now Jesus explains the sower parable (13:1–9) to his disciples. It is an allegory, concerning the spread of the word of the kingdom, the gospel message Jesus (4:17, 23) and his disciples (10:7) are taking now to Israel and will eventually bring to the whole world (24:14). The four types of soil illustrate how different people may respond to this word. Some will simply reject it out of hand—these are the ones about whom Jesus has just spoken (13:14–15), whose hearts are closed to God's word. Others will respond favorably, even with joy, but will eventually fall away either because they cannot bear the stress of persecution (cf. 24:10) or because they try to serve two masters

and become hopelessly entangled in worldly pursuits (cf. 6:19–24). But not every seed needs to produce fruit. God is in charge of the harvest and God has taken opposition and apostasy into account. As has been true throughout the history of Israel, only a remnant is needed, for the fruit they bear will be so miraculous as to constitute the glorious kingdom of heaven. As used here, the metaphor of "bearing fruit" has qualitative and quantitative meanings: it means to demonstrate repentance through ethically righteous behavior (cf. 3:8), but it also means to multiply, to increase the community by fulfilling Jesus' initial (4:19) and final (28:19) words to his disciples. The mark of those who do this, notably, is that they hear the word and *understand* it. Such understanding has nothing to do with mental capacity but, as Jesus has indicated, must be given by God (11:25; 13:11; cf. 16:17).

13:24–30, Parable of Wheat and Weeds. Jesus returns to addressing the crowds (13:34), after a brief hiatus with his disciples (13:10–17). Once again (cf. 13:1–9, 18–23), he tells a parable that will later be explained to his disciples in private (13:36–43). Again, the image is agricultural: a farmer plants a wheat field but an enemy comes and sows weeds in it as well. The man decides to let the wheat and weeds grow together until the harvest, rather than risk destroying some of the wheat while ridding the field of weeds (→ Weeds).

13:31–35, Parables of the Mustard Seed and Leaven. Cf. Luke 13:18–21. Before explaining the parable of wheat and weeds, Jesus tells two more brief parables. The kingdom of heaven is like a mustard seed or a measure of leaven, either of which at first appears tiny but expands to become far more significant than may at first have been anticipated. Jesus has already indicated that the kingdom of God is present in his ministry (12:28), so he no doubt intends for these metaphors to be applied to the work he and his followers are pursuing. A peasant preacher who has nowhere to lay his head (8:20), he has initiated a movement that will reach the whole world (24:14) and transform people from every nation (28:19). The mustard seed is elsewhere used in Matthew as a symbol for the tiny speck of faith that is required for people to accomplish all that God would expect of them (17:20). As such, Matthew may mean to indicate that even the "little faith" of Jesus' disciples (6:30; 8:26; 14:31; 16:8) will be sufficient to facilitate the establishment of God's kingdom. The reference to birds in v. 32 alludes to Dan. 4:12. Matthew also refers elsewhere to leaven (16:6, 11–12), but in a context where it is a metaphor for corruption. A concluding comment in vv. 34–35 indicates that Jesus' practice of using parables fulfilled an ancient prophecy from Ps. 78:2. The prophecy reveals the purpose of the parables in terms similar to those stated in 13:11.

13:36–43, Explanation of Wheat and Weeds Parable. Alone with his disciples again (cf. 13:10–23), Jesus explains the parable of the wheat and weeds (13:24–30). It is an allegory like the parable of the sower and, in a sense, picks up where that story left off. Through his ministry, Jesus has sown the word of the kingdom and it has borne fruit in some (such as his disciples). But the devil has sent his minions into the field as well—those who work lawlessness (cf. 7:23) and who cause others to stumble (cf. 18:6–7). Elsewhere, Matthew speaks of false prophets (7:15) and of people who are just plain evil (5:39). Jesus' followers need to recognize that the world is so infected, but they also need to resist the impulse to purge the world of evil. Under no circumstances are they to try to rid the world of those they would identify as demonic. Just as God sends rain and sunshine on the good and the bad, the just and the unjust (5:45), so Jesus' disciples (the field hands) are to let the wheat and weeds grow side by side and leave judgment to God (cf. 7:1). This is the main point of the parable, though it also offers two words of affirmation to those who must live in a world where good and evil are so entwined. First, the devil rather than God is to blame for this situation; the presence of evil is not by God's design. Second, the condition is temporary. In time, the harvest will come, all causes of sin and all evildoers will be destroyed, and "the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their Father" (v. 43; → Judgment, Day of; Kingdom of God).

13:44–46, Parables of the Treasure and the Pearl. Still speaking to his disciples, Jesus tells another pair of parables (cf. 13:31–33). The kingdom of heaven is of great value, worth sacrificing everything else to obtain (cf. 19:27, 29). As is typical in Matthew, the phrase "kingdom of heaven [or of God]" refers not only to that realm of bliss beyond death, but also to the sphere of God's influence here and now. Thus, Jesus indicates that living in accord with God's will is not burdensome (cf. 11:28–30). Finding the life that God intends one to live is like discovering a valuable treasure. Life under God's righteous rule is to be sought above everything else (6:33; → Kingdom of God).

13:47–50, Parable of the Dragnet. Jesus tells his disciples one more parable and then explains it. The kingdom of heaven involves judgment, a sorting of good from bad. At the close of the age, angels will separate evil people from the righteous (cf. 5:45) in the same way that fishers divide up their catch. The point of the parable is essentially the same as that made in the parable of the wheat and weeds above (esp. 13:41–43)—with one subtle difference. Since Jesus has called his disciples to "fish for people" (4:19), the image of sorting fish may signify a judgment of those who have responded to their ministry; i.e., a judgment of those

in the church rather than of those in the world at large (cf. 13:38). The "bad fish," then, would not symbolize evildoers in a generic sense (13:41) but, rather, those persons who call Jesus "Lord" and do not do the will of the Father (7:21–23; cf. 7:15; 24:24, 45–51; → Judgment, Day of).

13:51–53, Conclusion. As Jesus concludes this series of parables regarding the kingdom of heaven, his disciples affirm that they have understood all that he has said (cf. 16:12; 17:13). This confirms his earlier claim that God has granted that they know the kingdom's mysteries (13:11) and it sustains his hope that, as ones who understand the word of the kingdom, they will bear much fruit (13:23). Jesus responds to their affirmation with an enigmatic saying that amounts to a bonus, eighth parable. The disciples will be scribes, but of a different sort than those who have so relentlessly opposed Jesus throughout this narrative. They will be scribes trained in the things of God's kingdom (cf. 23:34), able to combine the old word of the law and prophets with the new word of the kingdom (cf. 5:17–19; 9:16–17; → Scribe).

13:54–16:20
Ministry in a Hostile Environment

The long Sabbath ended (12:1–13:53; cf. 13:1), Jesus continues his ministry, almost oblivious to the conflicts and challenges described in the last three chapters. He goes about as before, teaching, preaching, and healing. The environment is different, though, as can be seen from his rejection in his own hometown (13:54–58) and his need to beware of the murderous Herod (14:13). But the ministry itself continues undaunted. The sick are healed (14:34–36) and the hungry are fed (14:13–21; 15:32–39). His disciples seem to come to ever greater understanding (14:33; 16:16), even as the religious leaders of Israel continue to attack them (15:1–2).

13:54–58, Rejection at Nazareth. Cf. Mark 6:1–6; Luke 4:16–30. Jesus comes to his own hometown and teaches in the synagogue. The people are astonished by his wisdom and by reports of his miracles, but they also take offense at him, apparently because he is acting as one above his station. A mere carpenter's son whose relatives are known to them, he is behaving like some kind of prophet (cf. John 6:42; 7:15). Jesus responds with a proverb that makes the claim to be a prophet explicit; in fact, their rejection of him only accords with the type of treatment prophets usually receive from their own people. He refrains from doing many miracles there, because of their unbelief (cf. Mark 6:5). The reference to being without honor "in his own house" is the only hint in Matthew that Jesus' family (mentioned here in v. 55 and also in 12:46) might not have numbered among his supporters (cf. Mark 3:21; John 7:5; → Nazareth; Synagogue).

14:1–12, Murder of John the Baptist. Cf. Mark 6:14–29; Luke 9:7–9. A wild speculation on the part of Herod the tetrarch (a son of the Herod mentioned in Matt. 2:1–19) introduces a "flashback" account that reveals how Herod had John the Baptist arrested (4:12) and subsequently put to death. Only now are we told the reason for that arrest: John objected to Herod's illicit marriage to his half sister Herodias, who also happened to be married to another half brother, Philip of Iturea. This Herod is depicted as a rather pathetic figure, lacking the courage to carry out his plans as his father would have done. He wants to kill John, but is afraid of public opinion. Then, after he makes an extravagant promise to Herodias's daughter, he is shamed into granting his wife's request to have John beheaded because he fears the opinions of his invited guests (noblemen) even more than those of the populace. Everything he does is motivated by fear and, in the end, he is left worrying that Jesus might be John the Baptist reborn to haunt him. He somewhat ironically illustrates those whom Jesus says fear people, but not God (10:28; → Herod; Herodias; John the Baptist).

14:13–21, The Feeding of Five Thousand. Cf. Mark 6:30–44; Luke 9:10–17; John 6:1–13. Wary of Herod, Jesus seeks isolation, but his compassion for the crowd (cf. 9:36; 15:32; 20:34) moves him to heal those who follow him. Then, he miraculously feeds the crowd of well over five thousand people (v. 21), using only five loaves and two fish. The story contrasts with Herod's gruesome banquet (14:8–11) and seems to preview Jesus' Last Supper (26:26–29) and the eucharistic services of the Christian church. His words to the disciples in v. 16 may indicate an expectation that they will or should preside at analogous meals. A similar miracle is recounted in 15:32–39 (see also 16:5–12).

14:22–33, Walking on Water. Cf. Mark 6:45–52. Jesus walks on water and bids Peter do the same. The latter has some success, but must be rescued by Jesus when overtaken by fear. The story is a paradigm for believers in troubled times, depicted through the universal image of a ship in a storm. The boat may even be a symbol of the church, since both Peter's call ("Lord, save me") and the disciples' confession in v. 33 have a liturgical ring. Jesus is able to overcome storms (v. 32), but for his followers, fear remains a constant enemy (vv. 27, 30). Still, Jesus does not abandon those of little faith, those who doubt (v. 31; cf. 6:30; 8:26; 16:8; 17:20; 28:17). Thus, in just a few verses, these disciples move from being terrified of ghosts to worshiping Jesus as the Son of God (cf. 16:16; 27:54). For the worship theme, see commentary above on 2:1–12 (v. 11; → Peter; Son of God).

14:34–36, Healings at Gennesaret. Cf. Mark 6:53–56; Luke 4:40–41. In a brief note, we are informed that the healing ministry of Jesus continues unabated and

that Jesus is known even in a land he has not previously visited. The reference to the healing power of his garment recalls the story in 9:19–22, where Matthew clarifies that faith, not magic, is the significant factor.

15:1–20, Controversy over Defilement. Cf. Mark 7:1–23. When the Pharisees accuse Jesus' disciples of not abiding by "the tradition of the elders," he responds with a countercharge against them and a brief discourse on the subject of defilement. The "tradition of the elders" was an oral code of biblical interpretation that generally intensified demands of the law; in this case, the issue was ritual handwashings prescribed before meals. Jesus does not accept the authority of this code, viewing it as mere human tradition (v. 9). He indicates that, on another matter, it allows people to give money to a religious institution that otherwise would have been spent caring for elderly parents, a practice that "makes void" the commandment in Exod. 20:12 (cf. Deut. 5:16). Then, on the topic of "defilement," he shifts the focus from ritual purity to moral behavior, insisting that one's conduct rather than one's religious practices is what makes one clean or unclean (cf. 23:25–26). The conflict between Jesus and the religious leaders has now reached a fever pitch—he identifies them as "plants the heavenly Father did not plant" (v. 13; cf. 13:36–43; → Pharisees).

15:21–28, Encounter with a Canaanite Woman. Cf. Mark 7:24–30. Traveling to the traditionally pagan region of Tyre and Sidon (cf. 11:21), Jesus is accosted by a Canaanite woman whose banter so impresses him that he reneges on his usual policy of ministering only to "the lost sheep of the house of Israel" (v. 24; cf. 10:5–6) and heals her daughter. Her comment about dogs receiving crumbs reveals humble recognition of her position: she deserves nothing from him, but hopes something good will fall her way nevertheless. She also calls Jesus "Lord" (vv. 22, 25, 27), identifies him as the Son of David (v. 22), and worships him (v. 25; see commentary above on 2:1–12 [v. 11]). She is the only person in the Gospel said to have "great faith," in contrast to the disciples' "little faith" (6:30; 8:26; 14:31; 16:8; 17:20). The story is similar to that of the Gentile centurion in 8:5–13; both accounts prepare for the universal mission charge with which this Gospel concludes (28:19–20; → Gentiles).

15:29–31, More Healings. Cf. Mark 7:31–37. Back in his home territory, Jesus continues healing people of diverse afflictions, performing the "works of the Christ" referred to in 11:2–6. As before, people respond with worship (9:8; cf. 5:16), giving God the credit for what Jesus is doing (cf. 5:16).

15:32–39, The Feeding of Four Thousand. Cf. Mark 8:1–10; Luke 9:12–17. Once again, Jesus miraculously feeds a multitude of people with a handful of food (cf. 14:13–21). Because this has happened before, his disciples appear particularly obtuse when they are unable to imagine that it could happen again (see also 16:5–12). The miracle is one more sign of Jesus' compassion for the crowds (v. 32; cf. 9:36; 14:4; 20:34).

16:1–4, Request for a Sign. Cf. Mark 8:11–13; Luke 11:16, 29. The religious leaders ask Jesus to show them a sign, as they did once before (12:38–42). This time, the request is specifically identified as a "test," similar to those brought by Satan at the beginning of Jesus' ministry (4:1–11, esp. vv. 6–7; see also 19:3; 22:18, 35). Jesus indicates that signs are all around them, but they do not know how to read them (cf. 12:28) and then reiterates his prediction of "the sign of Jonah," i.e., his resurrection (cf. 12:39–40).

16:5–12, Leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. Cf. Mark 8:14–21; Luke 12:1. The disciples' obtuseness reaches an all-time high when they misinterpret Jesus' metaphorical warning against "the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees" as a literal reference to leaven required for making bread. This mistake is exacerbated by what Jesus regards as unnecessary anxiety over food (cf. 6:25–27), a concern that should have been obviated by the two miraculous feedings he has performed (14:13–21; 15:32–39). The real danger is not running out of food, but the teaching of these religious leaders who are blind guides taking their followers toward a fall (15:14). On the disciples' "little faith" (v. 8), see also 6:30; 8:26; 14:31; 17:20; and on their eventual understanding (v. 12), cf. 13:11, 51; 17:13 (→ Pharisees; Sadducees).

16:13–20, Confession of Peter. Cf. Mark 8:27–30; Luke 9:18–22. The question of Jesus' identity is engaged at Caesarea Philippi. The disciples first offer Jesus a sample of opinions regarding him, including that favored by Herod (14:2). Then, Peter speaks for the Twelve, giving their own evaluation: Jesus is the Christ, the Son of the Living God (cf. 14:33; 27:54). Jesus affirms the acclamation as a product of divine revelation (cf. 11:25; 13:11). Playing on Peter's name (which means "rock"), Jesus identifies Peter as the first stone in the church that he will build. This church, however, will be more like an army on the move than a localized building—it will storm the gates of Hades (the stronghold of death and the devil) and they will give way before it (cf. 12:29). Peter will also have authority to "bind and loose" the law, i.e., to determine on the basis of Scripture the will of God for particular circumstances (the whole church is later presumed to have this authority in 18:18). In this sense, he will be given the keys to heaven's rule, the understanding needed to unlock the mysteries of God's will (cf. 13:11). For the secrecy motif in v. 20, see commentary above on 9:27–31 (→ Caesarea Philippi; Hades; Peter; Son of God).

Part Four: 16:21–20:34

Journey to Jerusalem

Once again (cf. 4:17), the words "From that time on . . ." introduce a major new section of Matthew's narrative. The focus now is on Jesus' journey to Jerusalem and, eventually, on the suffering, death, and resurrection he will experience there.

16:21–17:27
Looking Toward Cross and Glory

Jesus redirects his disciples' attention to things that are to come: his death, his resurrection, and his Parousia (Second Coming), summoning them to uncompromising faithfulness in the difficult times ahead and offering them a vision of their glorious future in the kingdom of heaven.

16:21–23, First Passion Prediction. Cf. Mark 8:31–33; Luke 9:18–22. Following Peter's great confession (16:16), Jesus reveals to his disciples for the first time that he is going to be killed and then raised on the third day (cf. 17:12, 22–23; 20:17–19; 26:3). Ignoring the latter part of this prediction, Peter rebukes him for adopting what he regards as a fatalistic perspective. Jesus, in turn, rebukes Peter with the harshest words ever directed to any of his disciples. He identifies this resistance to suffering and death (cf. 10:39) as a human perspective uninformed by the truth of God—and as a point of view that must ultimately be called satanic. The command "Behind me!" (v. 23) also reminds Peter that he has been called to follow Jesus (4:19), not lead the way (→ Peter; Satan; Stumbling Block).

16:24–28, The Way of Discipleship. Cf. Mark 8:34–9:1; Luke 9:23–27. Jesus continues his objection to Peter's seemingly innocent commitment to saving Jesus' life (16:22) by reiterating the demands of discipleship he has stated previously (10:38–39). The words are more poignant now that he has announced he himself will suffer and die (16:21). In any case, all such suffering must be viewed from the perspective of the future, in light of the coming Parousia and final judgment, when justice will be done and those who have suffered wrongly will be vindicated. But that judgment, Peter and the rest need to know, will not focus on whether people knew the right words to identify Jesus (16:16), but on whether they gave up their lives for his sake (16:25). Jesus encourages everyone to look for the Parousia to occur within their own lifetimes (v. 28; cf. 24:34; → Judgment, Day of; Parousia).

17:1–13, The Transfiguration. Cf. Mark 9:2–13; Luke 9:28–36. Jesus appears to be physically transformed in a vision (v. 9) beheld by three of his disciples on a mountain. His dazzling appearance and the presence of Moses and Elijah offer these disciples a glimpse of life in the heavenly kingdom beyond death. The climactic moment is God's own affirmation of Jesus as the Beloved Son, in words reminiscent of Jesus' baptism (3:17). The words "Listen to him!" may be directed at Peter, who is still rather foolishly trying to manage Jesus' career (v. 4; cf. 16:22). The vision is to be kept a secret until after the resurrection (see commentary above on 9:27–31), but the appearance of Elijah already prompts a discussion in which Jesus explains that the ministry of John the Baptist has fulfilled (in a metaphorical sense) the ancient prophecy (Mal. 4:5) that Elijah would someday resume his work on earth (cf. 11:13–14). The disciples understand (v. 13; cf. 13:11, 51; 16:12; → Elijah; John the Baptist; Transfiguration).

17:14–21, Healing of an Epileptic. Cf. Mark 9:14–27; Luke 9:37–42. Jesus exorcises a demon from an epileptic boy, after his disciples' faith proves inadequate to the task (cf. 2 Kings 4:29–37). His lament regarding the "perverse and faithless generation" with which he must abide is a reflection on the general climate of unbelief (cf. 13:58) now affecting even his own disciples. Indeed, he tells the latter that their chronic "little faith" (6:30; 8:26; 14:31; 16:8) has now apparently shrunk to a speck even tinier than a mustard seed, since that would be all they need to do what God requires. His extreme frustration with the disciples in this instance may be due to the fact that he specifically granted them authority to cast out demons (10:1) and commissioned them to do precisely that (10:8). On demon possession, see commentary above on 8:16–17 (→ Demon).

17:22–23, Second Passion Prediction. Cf. Mark 9:30–32; Luke 9:43–45. Jesus repeats the prediction he made earlier regarding his impending death and resurrection (16:21; cf. 17:12; 20:17–19; 26:3). The disciples refrain from openly challenging him this time (16:22–23), but remain "greatly distressed."

17:24–27, Payment of the Temple Tax. Jesus obediently pays a Temple tax to avoid conflict with authorities over a peripheral issue, but he lets Peter know that, as the Son of God, he is under no real obligation to do this. Apparently having no cash, both Jesus and Peter must rely on God to supply the coins in an unconventional manner. The story sets a paradigm for voluntary renunciation of rights, a hallmark of Christian ethics (cf. Rom. 14:13–19).

18:1–35
The Community Discourse

The fourth of Jesus' five major speeches (cf. chaps. 5–7; 10; 13; 24–25) focuses on the life that his disciples are to have as they seek to live together in the community that Jesus calls "the church" (16:18; 18:17).

18:1–5, Who Is the Greatest? Cf. Mark 9:33–37; Luke 9:43–45. Jesus uses a child to explicate the reversal of values that the rule of heaven brings. The child serves as an example of those whom society regards as unimportant. Where God rules, those who are otherwise deemed insignificant are most valued, and this is why repentance (v. 3; cf. 4:17) is required to enter into the sphere of divine influence that Jesus calls the "kingdom of heaven." The community of God's people is composed of those who welcome the insignificant as they would Jesus (cf. 10:40; 25:40) and of those who are willing to be regarded as insignificant themselves (→ Kingdom of God; Repentance).

18:6–14, Concern for the Little Ones. Cf. Mark 9:42–47; Luke 15:3–7. Jesus now extrapolates some implications from what he has just said about the insignificant being the greatest in the kingdom. Children, in particular, are to be treated with special value—they have guardian angels who enjoy immediate access to God, and severe punishment awaits any who lead them astray. On the contrary, the recovery of one such child who has wandered from the way is a concern more pressing than the care of ninety-nine other persons who have not. These words of Jesus refer primarily to literal children, as 18:2 and 19:13 attest, but by extension they may also apply to any who repent and become like children, voluntarily accepting the stigma of insignificance that children have thrust upon them. Almost as an aside, Jesus once again (cf. 5:29–30) uses hyperbole to stress the radical commitment expected of those who "seek first God's kingdom and righteousness" (6:33): they will separate themselves from anything that causes them to stumble (→ Stumbling Block).

18:15–20, Agreement in the Church. Now Jesus offers a practical strategy for recovering lost sheep (18:10–14), or at least for identifying those who are in danger of being lost. When a "sibling," i.e., someone committed to doing the will of God (12:50), appears to be caught in sinful behavior, that person needs to be corrected, preferably in private. If the person persists (probably because he or she does not agree that the behavior is sinful), the whole church will be asked to exercise its authority to "bind and loose," to determine on the basis of Scripture what is the will of God (cf. 16:19). The person ought then to accept the ruling of the church and obey (even if under protest). Those who do not do so are to be regarded as "Gentiles or tax collectors," i.e., as candidates for evangelism. They are *not* to be excluded from the community; if anything, the church is to intensify its efforts to keep them in the community (18:10–14), communicating its unqualified forgiveness of the offense, no matter how many times it may be repeated (18:21–22). In Matthew, Gentiles and tax collectors are typical examples of those whom Jesus wants to have as disciples (9:9–13; 28:19), but who may have to be taught to obey his commandments before they can be so regarded (28:20). The ultimate goal is agreement, for when the church is united in its understanding of God's will, Jesus is truly present and prayers will be answered.

18:21–35, Unlimited Forgiveness. Peter finds Jesus' plan for the community to maintain fellowship even with its most recalcitrant, sinful members to be incredible and asks whether some limit should not be placed on such forgiveness. Though "seven times" may have seemed generous, Jesus insists that the forgiveness must be infinite. This is implied by the symbolism of numbers (seventy times seven) and explicated further in a parable that serves as an effective commentary on what he said earlier when teaching the Lord's Prayer (6:14–15). There can be no limit to forgiveness for those who experience the limitless grace of God. No follower of Jesus should keep score of another's offenses—unless, of course, they have no objection to God keeping score of theirs. Furthermore, such forgiveness is to be "from the heart" (v. 35), not merely for show (cf. 5:8). The parable also emphasizes (vv. 27, 33) the quality of compassion, which is elsewhere exemplified by Jesus (9:36; 14:14; 15:32; 20:34). It illustrates his Beatitude on the merciful (5:7; cf. 9:13; 12:7; 23:23; → Forgiveness; Slavery in the New Testament).

19:1–20:34
Jesus Travels to Jerusalem

As Jesus presses on to Jerusalem, Matthew's narrative focuses increasingly on issues of relationships—the value of marriage and children, the inhibiting effect of possessions, and the implications of that curious kingdom reversal that makes the last first and the first, last.

19:1–2, Jesus Enters Judea. Cf. Mark 10:1. The community discourse ended, Jesus proceeds into the region of Judea, heading for Jerusalem where he has predicted he will die (16:21).

19:3–12, The Question of Divorce. Cf. Mark 10:2–9; Luke 16:18. Pharisees ask Jesus whether it is lawful for a man to divorce his wife and then indicate that they have missed the point of his response by insisting that Moses did allow this. His response did not address the question of what should be allowed, but, rather, addressed the more important question of what God wants (cf. 5:31–32). Jesus expects a "greater righteousness" (5:20) of his followers, according to which they will not ask "What can I get away with?" but, "What does God most want?" Jesus' disciples respond cynically to this teaching, in a way that indicates they view wives as burdensome responsibilities rather than as gifts from God (v. 10; cf. vv. 4–6). Jesus' reply grants

that not everyone will be able to accept the standards he has set forth (cf. 26:41b). There are saintly persons—including not only those who practice lifelong marriage, but also some who are called to a single and celibate life—who come close to fulfilling God's ideal of perfection (cf. 5:48). But even for those who fail, it is important to acknowledge that divorce is not God's will, rather than hiding the sin behind some biblical statement that allows (but does not approve of) it (→ Marriage; Pharisees).

The "exception clause" in v. 9 (cf. 5:32) probably does not refer to adultery, for a God who expects people to practice unlimited forgiveness (18:21–35) would not think this one sin should be intolerable. Rather, the word used here (an ambiguous Greek term) probably refers to illicit unions—such as incestuous ones—that must be separated because they never should have taken place at all. Hence, John the Baptist told Herod he must "divorce" Herodias, who was his half sister and his brother's wife (14:3–4).

19:13–15, Jesus and the Children. Cf. Mark 10:13–16; Luke 18:15–17. Jesus welcomes and blesses little children in a manner wholly consistent with what he said earlier in 18:1–14. The interference of his disciples demonstrates an incredible ignorance of the kingdom's values. It is as though they did not hear a word he said (see esp. 18:5).

19:16–26, Jesus and the Rich Man. Cf. Mark 10:17–27; Luke 18:18–27. A discussion concerning the obedience required of those who will enter into eternal life (cf. 7:21–23) comes to focus on the one thing a rich man needs to do "to be perfect" (cf. 5:48): sell his possessions, give to the poor, and follow Jesus unencumbered. His inability to do so leads Jesus to surmise that it is actually impossible for God to rule a rich person's life (lit., for "a rich person to enter the rule of God"). The reason would be that, as he has said before, a person's heart will always be where his or her treasure is (6:21). Still, Jesus allows that God can accomplish the impossible—perhaps Joseph of Arimathea, whom we meet later in the narrative (27:57), is an example of one camel that God squeezed through the needle's eye.

19:27–20:16, Parable of Day Workers. In response to a question of Peter regarding rewards (cf. Mark 10:28–31; Luke 18:28–30), Jesus tells a parable of persons receiving the same wage even though they were hired at different times of the day. After the encounter with the rich man who could not give up his possessions (19:16–26), Peter wanted to point out that he and the other disciples *had* done this and so should receive whatever reward the rich man missed. Jesus affirms that indeed they shall: their sacrifices will be repaid a hundredfold and they will inherit eternal life. But, as the parable makes clear, the same rewards will be given to many who have suffered less and sacrificed less. God is not unfair, only generous (v. 15), and it is the very nature of God's rule to reverse standards on which evaluations of worth are usually made. The one reward that does seem unique to the disciples is that in the kingdom of God they will be given thrones from which they will rule the twelve tribes of Israel (v. 28). Although this language may be intentionally symbolic (cf. Rev. 3:21; 20:6), it at least indicates that unbelieving Israel will ultimately recognize and respect the role of those whom it has persecuted (10:17; 23:34).

20:17–19, Third Passion Prediction. Cf. Mark 10:32–34; Luke 18:31–34. Once again, Jesus tells his disciples what is going to happen when they reach Jerusalem (16:21; 17:22–23). This time, he offers even more detail, mentioning his crucifixion for the first time in the Gospel. Notably he assigns ultimate responsibility for this deed not to the religious leaders who have opposed him throughout the story, but to the Gentiles, i.e., to the Roman government headed by Pontius Pilate.

20:20–28, Request for Positions of Honor. Cf. Mark 10:35–45; Luke 22:24–27. Jesus' promise that the Twelve will have thrones in the kingdom (19:28) prompts the mother of two of his disciples—James and John, the sons of Zebedee (4:21–22)—to ask if her boys can have the two best seats in glory. She makes the request worshipfully (v. 20; see commentary above on 2:1–12 [v. 11]) and nothing Jesus says indicates she is wrong to ask for what she wants (cf. 7:7–11). Still, the request can only be granted if it is in keeping with the will of God, and not even Jesus presumes to know God's will in every matter (cf. 26:39). At the same time, he warns the Zebedee boys themselves that the granting of such a request might entail greater demands on them than they realize—suffering and martyrdom similar to what he will experience. Subsequent events (26:56) give the lie to their confident profession (v. 22; cf. 26:35).

The incident creates strife among the disciples, causing Jesus to remind them all of the kingdom's reverse values. In seeking places of honor, the Zebedee boys are in fact seeking the lowliest positions, asking to be greater servants than others. To underscore the point, Jesus offers his final, climactic statement of purpose (cf. 5:17; 9:13; 10:34). Though Lord of all, he has come to serve all, even to the point of giving his life as a ransom—shedding his very blood to purchase forgiveness (26:28) and save God's people from their sins (1:21).

20:29–34, Healing of the Blind. Cf. Mark 10:46–52; Luke 18:35–43. Motivated by compassion (cf. 9:36; 14:14; 15:32), Jesus gives sight to two blind men who call out to him as the Son of David (cf. 9:27; 12:23; 15:22;

21:9, 15). The crowd's attempt to hush them (cf. 19:13) reveals an ironic misunderstanding that seeks to protect Jesus from being asked to do what he has claimed he came to do (11:2–6). A similar incident is also reported in 9:27–31 (→ Blindness).

Part Five: 21:1–26:2
Ministry in Jerusalem

As Jesus arrives at last in Jerusalem, the stage is set for events to play out as Jesus predicted they would (16:21; 17:22–23; 20:17–19). But before the passion story itself commences, Jesus has a final public confrontation with his enemies and offers a private final testimony to his disciples.

21:1–22:45
Confrontation with Authorities

The conflict between Jesus and the religious leaders of Israel reaches a new level of intensity as he enters into their stronghold and encounters them on their own terms.

21:1–11, Jesus Enters the City. Cf. Mark 11:1–11; Luke 19:28–40. Jesus' disciples and other supporters provide him with a royal welcome as he enters Jerusalem, using garments and palm branches as a "red carpet" laid out before him. The crowds announce him as the "prophet from Nazareth," but some also acclaim him as "the Son of David," indicating he could be the Messiah (cf. 22:42). The procession is peculiar in that he rides not a majestic steed, but a donkey and its colt. This marks him as a humble king, but a king nonetheless (v. 5). The scenario appears to have been staged to fulfill the prophet Zechariah's proclamation of how Israel's true king (Messiah?) would come (Zech. 9:9; cf. Isa. 62:11).

21:12–17, Cleansing the Temple. Cf. Mark 11:15–19; Luke 19:45–48. Jesus goes immediately to the Temple and disrupts the worship there, overturning tables in the courtyard where money was changed and animals were bought for the required sacrifices. Apparently, he objects to the sacrificial system because it turns the Temple into a place of refuge that protects people from accountability for their sins (a "den of robbers" is a hideout where criminals are safe from prosecution; cf. Jer. 7:9–11). The Temple should be a house of prayer (cf. Isa. 56:7), where the afflicted find healing and where God can delight to be praised—even (or especially) by supposedly insignificant members of the community (cf. Ps. 8:2). The chief priests, however, want none of this, and they are especially perturbed that this upstart Jesus is being proclaimed the "Son of David," a title with messianic significance (cf. 22:42). On v. 16, see commentary above on 2:1–12 (v. 11).

21:18–22, Cursing the Fig Tree. Cf. Mark 11:12–14, 20–25; Luke 13:6–9. A hungry Jesus curses a fig tree that has no fruit, causing it to wither. On one level, the incident seems to be an acted parable, illustrating dramatically the judgment that will come on those who do not bear good fruit (3:8–10; 7:16–20; cf. 12:33; 13:8, 23). The warning may be meant to apply to Israel, for the Temple (21:13) and the nation as a whole (21:34) have failed to produce the kind of fruit that God seeks. On another level, however, the incident becomes one more occasion for Jesus to extol the power of faith, demonstrating to his amazed disciples (the people of "little faith," 6:30; 8:26; 14:31; 16:8; 17:20) what is possible for those who do not doubt (cf. 14:31; 28:17). On the efficacy of prayer, see also 7:7–11; 18:19 (→ Faith; Prayer).

21:23–27, Question of Authority. The religious leaders question Jesus about the source of his authority (7:28–29; 9:8; 28:18; cf. 10:1). They may wonder about his political affiliation—granted his implicit claim to be a king (21:1–5) and his actions in the Temple (21:12)—or they may wonder as before (9:34; 12:24) whether the supernatural power by which he heals (21:14) and withers (21:19) comes from evil. In any case, Jesus does not regard them as sincere, since they lack the integrity either to admit their opposition to John the Baptist or to acknowledge that John was God's servant after all. He regards them as examples of the presumptuous "wise and understanding" (11:25), to whom God reveals nothing.

21:28–32, Parable of Two Sons. Although not answering the religious leaders' question about his authority (21:23–27), Jesus does respond to them with a parable that reveals their true plight. Their stubborn refusal to acknowledge that John the Baptist came "in the way of righteousness"—as God's agent whose call to repentance they should heed—marks them as analogous to a boy who only says the right things without actually doing his father's will (cf. 7:21). They will fare worse at the judgment than notorious sinners who openly opposed the Father, but then repented.

21:33–44, Parable of Rebellious Tenants. Cf. Mark 12:1–11; Luke 20:9–18. Jesus tells another parable to the religious leaders who question his authority (21:23), one that depicts them as rebels against God. As leaders of Israel, they ought to be faithful stewards of God's vineyard (cf. Isa. 5:1–7), but they have not led Israel in such a way as to produce the "fruits of repentance" (3:8) that God seeks. Indeed, they have mistreated the prophets whom God sent to them (cf. 23:29–36) and now they are prepared to kill Jesus himself, God's own

son. The problem is not that they do not know the source of his authority—or that of John the Baptist (21:25–27). Rather, they oppose him precisely because he is God's son, the representative of their enemy, against whom they have rebelled. Put this way, their fate is obvious, and Jesus traps them into declaring it themselves (v. 41). If, indeed, their opposition to Jesus is born of enmity with God, they have no hope of winning such a conflict; they will be broken and crushed, and the benefits of God's rule will pass to others—who *will* produce the fruits of repentance. In this way, Jesus identifies himself as the stone that, though rejected, becomes the cornerstone (Ps. 118:22–23; cf. Acts 4:11; 1 Pet. 2:7). A negative response to him means losing everything (10:33).

21:45–46, Response to the Parables. Cf. Mark 12:12; Luke 20:19. The religious leaders fully understand the terms that Jesus has set forth in these parables (21:28–44). They know he is accusing them of being not merely misguided, but rebellious stewards, stubbornly unrepentant hypocrites who talk about obedience (21:30), but are actually at war with God. Realizing this, they want to move against him, but fear the public opinion of the crowds who think he is a prophet (cf. 21:26; 14:5).

22:1–14, Parable of the Wedding Banquet. Cf. Luke 14:15–24. Jesus tells yet another parable to the religious leaders, one that expands upon his comment that the kingdom of God will pass from them to people who will produce the fruit of repentance (21:43; cf. 3:8). God's kingdom is a celebration, like a wedding banquet with Jesus himself (God's Son) as the bridegroom (cf. 9:15). Having ignored God's gracious invitation to participate in this celebration, the religious leaders of Israel will miss out; worse, they will be horribly punished for not only neglecting the invitation, but mistreating the agents of God who brought it (cf. 23:29–36). God's kingdom will come to include people not initially invited—those from all nations who are made disciples of Jesus (28:19). Yet there is a word of warning for them as well: anyone not clothed with the righteousness the kingdom requires (5:20) will suffer the same fate as those who did not produce the fruit of repentance. Living in the kingdom (i.e., living under God's rule) implies repentance and righteousness; those who do not do the will of God will be excluded (7:21).

22:15–22, Question of Taxes to Caesar. Cf. Mark 12:13–17; Luke 20:20–26. In the first of three tests put to Jesus by religious leaders (cf. 4:1–11), Pharisees try to entangle him in his speech. They feign sincerity and ask him a question they suppose will present him with the same sort of dilemma he foisted upon the chief priests (21:24–26): he must either lose favor with the populace by supporting oppressive Roman taxation or incur the ire of the Herodians (v. 16) by opposing it. But Jesus has more integrity than the priests and answers without fear. He does support the payment of Roman taxes, for the same reason that he agreed to pay taxes to the corrupt Temple (17:24–27; 21:13) and counseled his disciples to travel a second mile for an oppressor who forces them to go one mile (5:41). Whether the tax is just is not the point. Those who give to God (v. 21) their heart, soul, and mind (22:37) are able to love even their enemies and to bless those who oppress them (5:44). And with hearts fixed on their treasure in heaven, they are not overly concerned with the loss of money in this life (6:20–21; 19:21). So, give Caesar his worthless coins and give God everything that counts (→ Pharisees; Tribute, Tax, Toll).

22:23–33, Question of Marriage in the Resurrection. Cf. Mark 12:18–27; Luke 20:27–40. A second test is put to Jesus by Sadducees who attempt to expose the doctrine of life after death as inane. With whom will a woman spend eternity, if she had seven legitimate husbands in this life (cf. Deut. 25:5)? Jesus affirms that the doctrine of resurrection is grounded in Scripture—God continues to speak of the dead as living (cf. Exod. 3:6)—and upbraids the Sadducees for trivializing God's power. They assume that life in a new age would be but a continuation of this one, rather than a more glorious existence in which people (like angels) experience a new level of unlimited intimacy (→ Sadducees).

22:34–40, Question of the Greatest Commandment. Cf. Mark 12:28–34; Luke 10:25–28. Again, one of the Pharisees attempts to put Jesus to the test (cf. 22:18) by asking a question that he assumes to be inherently problematic. Jesus, however, has no problem identifying two commandments that share equal billing as the greatest in the law: loving God (Deut. 6:5) and loving neighbor (Lev. 19:18; cf. Matt. 19:19). Each assumes the other, but together they form the basis on which everything else depends. The whole of Scripture may be understood as an exposition of these twin commandments (cf. 7:12). Miss these, says Jesus, and you have missed it all (→ Pharisees).

22:41–45, Question of the Messiah's Sonship. Cf. Mark 12:35–37; Luke 20:41–44. Now that Jesus' enemies have put three questions to him (22:17, 28, 36), he turns the tables and presents them with a difficult query. Quoting Ps. 110:1, he asks how the Messiah can be both the Son of David and the Lord of David. They are unable to answer, but Matthew's readers are expected to be able to solve this riddle. Jesus the Messiah is the Son of David (1:1), yet he is David's Lord because he is also the Son of God (3:17; 11:27; 14:33; 16:16; 17:5; → Messiah; Son of God).

23:1–39
Condemnation of the Scribes and Pharisees

The polemical parables and witty banter of the previous two chapters now give way to outright condemnation as Jesus speaks first to his disciples and then to the religious leaders themselves, cursing them as he did the fig tree that bore no fruit (21:18–19).

23:1–12, Warning to Disciples. Cf. Mark 12:38–40; Luke 20:45–47. Just as Jesus has warned his disciples not to emulate the sort of authority exemplified by political tyrants (20:25–26), so now he warns them not to follow the example set by Israel's religious leaders. The scribes and Pharisees are recognized experts on Scripture, and Jesus' disciples should follow all the teaching of Scripture they cite (cf. 5:17–18). However, their lifestyle and even their teaching (interpretation of Scripture) are not approved (cf. 15:14; 16:12). Like Jesus (11:28–30), the disciples are to bind and loose Scripture (16:19; 18:18) in ways that will not be burdensome. The disciples are also to eschew the Pharisees' love of position and power and, like Jesus, strive to exercise authority as humble servants (18:4; 20:25–28; → Pharisees; Phylacteries [v. 5]; Scribes).

23:13–36, Woes upon the Scribes and Pharisees. Cf. Luke 11:37–52. Jesus turns his ire on the scribes and Pharisees themselves, delivering seven "Woes" upon them. The "woe formula," derived from prophets (e.g., Isa. 5:8–22), introduces a judgment oracle that essentially places the recipient under a divine curse (see also 11:21; 18:7; 24:19; 26:24). Notably, in Matthew, Jesus condemns only the leaders of Israel and not the Jewish people themselves, whom he has come to save (1:21; see commentary below on 27:11–26 [v. 25]). These leaders are condemned as hypocrites (vv. 13, 15, 23, 25, 27, 28, 29; cf. 6:2, 5, 16; 15:7; 22:18; 24:51) and as blind guides (vv. 16, 17, 19, 24, 26; cf. 15:14). The root problem is simply that they are evil (9:4; 12:34, 39, 45; 16:4; 22:18), a "brood of vipers" (3:7; 12:34; 23:33), plants that the heavenly Father did not plant (15:13; cf. 13:37–43). But this evil shows up in sundry ways related to the two traits emphasized here: hypocrisy, by which they deceive others into thinking they are righteous (see commentary above on 6:1–18); and blindness, by which they are so deprived of revelation that they become deceived themselves (cf. 11:25). Several of the specific matters have come up before: leading others to perdition (v. 15; cf. 15:14); swearing of oaths (vv. 16–22; cf. 5:33–37); neglect of mercy (v. 23; cf. 9:13; 12:7; 23:4); neglect of internal purity (vv. 25–26; cf. 15:11, 17–20); hiding evil under a facade (vv. 27–28; cf. 7:15; 12:33; 21:30); murder of prophets (vv. 31–35; cf. 21:34–36; 22:3–6). The fate of these leaders is assured: they will not enter the kingdom of heaven, from which they have tried to exclude others (v. 13; cf. 5:20); they will be condemned to hell (v. 33; cf. 15:13; 21:43–44). But Matthew's Gospel does not record this gloomy material just so his readers can know that the scribes and Pharisees will get their just deserts. As 23:1–12 indicates, the main purpose is to send a warning to authority figures in the Christian church who may thus be motivated to avoid becoming like these religious leaders (→ Blindness; Hypocrisy; Pharisees; Scribes).

23:37–39, Lament for Jerusalem. Cf. Luke 13:34–35. The mood changes somewhat as Jesus turns his attention to the city of Jerusalem, which has followed its leaders in their murderous opposition to God and will share in the judgment that comes upon them (23:34–36; cf. 22:3–8). Jesus takes no delight in that judgment. He would give his own life to spare this city, just as a mother hen will sit unprotected on her chicks rather than seek shelter and leave them to a predator. In Matthew, Jesus speaks consistently of God as a Father who blesses (5:45; 6:26) and judges (10:32–33), justly determining who is and is not worthy of receiving rewards and forgiveness (e.g., 6:1, 4, 6, 15, 18). Here, for a moment, we catch him wishing he could fill the otherwise absent role of Mother, offering his people irrational and undeserved protection from the terror they have brought upon themselves. He looks forward to a day when the renewed city will once again welcome him (cf. 21:9) and the house will be desolate no longer (cf. Jer. 12:7; 22:5; → Jerusalem).

24:1–26:2
Eschatological Discourse

The last of Jesus' five great speeches in Matthew (cf. chaps. 5–7; 10; 13; 18) focuses on the theme of the final judgment and on the need for all to be prepared for that day (→ Eschatology; Judgment, Day of).

24:1–2, Prediction of Temple Destruction. Cf. Mark 13:1–2; Luke 21:5–6. When his disciples are impressed by the apparently magnificent Temple buildings, Jesus indicates that the complex will be completely destroyed. In this way, he indicates more explicitly what he meant earlier when he said that Jerusalem's "house" would be left desolate (23:38).

24:3–28, Ultimate Fate of Jerusalem. Cf. Mark 13:3–23; Luke 21:7–23. Seated on the Mount of Olives, Jesus says more about the impending destruction of Jerusalem. The disciples need to be prepared for trouble, typical and extraordinary. War, disasters, persecution, apostasy, heresy, lovelessness—all these will take their toll on the world and on the church, but still the gospel of the kingdom will be proclaimed and those who endure will be saved. For Jerusalem, though, the days are numbered. Another abomination such as that spoken of in Dan. 9:27 will defile the very

Temple itself, initiating a time of terrible suffering. Followers of Jesus will know to flee, though this may be hard, unconscionable, or even impossible for some. Even more important—they will know not to believe any rumors of the Messiah's coming. Opportunists always try to take advantage of troubled times, like vultures surrounding a corpse. But when Jesus does return (cf. 16:27), his entrance will be unmistakable—no one need worry about missing it. The main point, then, is that suffering will not have the last word. Hang on! Jesus says. The end (of tribulation) will come! (→ Jerusalem).

24:29–44, Coming of the Son of Man. Cf. Mark 13:24–37; Luke 12:39–40; 17:26–35; 21:25–35. That Jesus will return with power and great glory to rescue his chosen ones is certain—but *when* will he come? Here are two answers. On the one hand, the time is unknown (v. 36). Just as the destructive flood in the days of Noah came in the midst of normal activities, so the return of Jesus will be unexpected, interrupting daily routines. On the other hand, the time is soon. Those who suffer should look for Jesus to return immediately (v. 29), before their generation passes away (v. 34). They should know that he is near (v. 33) in the same sense that he has said the kingdom is near (4:17). With regard to the kingdom, followers of Jesus maintain that it has already arrived (12:28), even as they continue to seek it and pray for it to come (6:10, 33). In the same way, disciples (especially those who experience tribulation) should expect Jesus to come immediately, even though they know his coming will defy all their expectations. So they must be ready and watchful at every hour (→ Parousia; Son of Man).

24:45–51, Parable of Wise and Reckless Slaves. Cf. Luke 12:42–46. A simple parable illustrates two courses of action in the time before the judgment (cf. 7:24–27). Those who are wise will not try to compute the time that is left, but will simply invest themselves in doing what they have been told to do. Those who are reckless may decide there has been a delay, grow lax, and forget that they will be held accountable for their actions (cf. 16:27). The results are predictable, if harsh (vv. 47, 51; → Judgment, Day of; Slavery in the New Testament).

25:1–13, Parable of Wise and Foolish Bridesmaids. Another parable makes essentially the same point as the one that precedes it. Those who are wise will be ready and waiting when Jesus comes; those who are foolish may fail to prepare for the long haul or they may mistakenly think that others can be prepared for them (v. 8). The wise who are ready will enter the glorious kingdom that extends beyond this life (cf. 13:43), while the foolish who are not ready will be shut out (cf. 7:21–23). To be "ready" means to be living in the way that Jesus has instructed his disciples to live (cf. 28:20), i.e., in accord with the repentance that enables one to live under the rule of heaven (4:17). The details of the story (bridesmaids, oil, lamps, sleep, shopkeepers) simply make it memorable and ought not be allegorized to squeeze more specific sense out of it. A bridegroom, however, is a fairly consistent symbol for Jesus (9:15; 22:2; → Judgment, Day of; Parousia).

25:14–30, Parable of Talents. Cf. Luke 19:11–27. Jesus tells a third parable of the Parousia and last judgment. The point now is that mere perseverance is not enough. Mission, not maintenance, is expected (cf. 28:18–20). The servant who does nothing in this story fares as poorly as the one who behaves abysmally in 24:48–51. Jesus is indicating that, while the final judgment will take into account what one was given (the man with two talents is not expected to produce five more), it will also take into account what one did with what one was given. Faithful discipleship means taking risks. Inactivity is not the safe option it appears to be (→ Judgment, Day of; Punishment, Everlasting).

25:31–46, Description of the Final Judgment. After telling three parables about the final judgment, Jesus goes on to describe what that event will be like. Here he discusses only judgment of the "nations" (lit., Gentiles), i.e., those people who have not been made disciples of Jesus through baptism and instruction in obedience (28:18–20). Even among these there will be a separation. Some will be allowed to enter the kingdom even though they did not become disciples of Jesus. Why? Because they performed acts of kindness for those disciples, with whom Jesus himself identified (cf. 10:40–42). Others, however, will face only eternal punishment. They not only did not heed the gospel of the kingdom brought by those disciples, but failed to show them even the basic hospitality that any human being deserves (cf. 10:9–15). Jesus identifies with those he calls his family (12:50) and takes personally the manner in which those persons are treated (→ Judgment, Day of; Punishment, Everlasting).

26:1–2, Reminder of the Crucifixion. The long discourse on the final judgment (chaps. 24–25) comes to a close with Jesus reminding his disciples he is about to be crucified (cf. 16:21; 17:22–23; 20:18–19). Now, for the first time, he reveals that this will happen during the Passover. This timing would facilitate association of his death with the Passover sacrifice of a paschal lamb (cf. John 1:29; 1 Cor. 5:7).

Part Six: 26:3–28:20

Passion and Resurrection

Matthew's story of Jesus' death and resurrection comes as the climax of his Gospel, the point to which

the narrative has been leading all along. Through foreshadowing (2:16–19; 14:1–12), allusions (9:15; 17:12), and outright predictions (16:21; 17:22–23; 20:18–19; 26:1–2), Matthew's readers have been prepared for this outcome. This is what Jesus came to do (20:28); this is how he will fulfill his destiny and save his people from their sins (1:21).

26:3–56
Jesus' Last Hours with His Disciples

The disciples of Jesus were portrayed favorably in the first part of this Gospel, as those given to understand the mysteries of God's kingdom (13:11; cf. 4:18–22; 10:1; 11:25; 13:51; 16:16–20). The problem of their "little faith" (6:30; 8:26; 14:31; 16:8) did not seem insurmountable. But in the latter portions of this story, tensions between Jesus and the disciples have increased (16:21–23; 17:14–20; 19:10, 13–15, 23–25; 20:24). Now, in Jesus' last hours, the inadequacies of these disciples render them unable to do what Jesus has called them to do (10:28–33, 38–39; 16:24–25). They fail him.

26:3–5, The Plot Against Jesus. Cf. Mark 14:1–2; Luke 22:1–2. Religious leaders of Israel have been plotting to kill Jesus for some time (12:14), but now the conspiracy moves into the palace and is approved by the high priest himself. This fulfills what Jesus predicted in parables (21:37–39). The plan not to arrest him during the festival is revised when Judas comes forward to betray his master (26:14–16).

26:6–13, The Anointing at Bethany. Cf. Mark 14:3–9; John 12:1–8. When an unnamed woman (cf. John 12:3) anoints Jesus, his disciples object to the "waste." Jesus regards the act as unusually significant; in the entire NT, this woman is the only person other than Jesus (cf. Luke 22:19; 1 Cor. 11:25) whom Christians are told to "remember" in their celebrations of the gospel. Anointing Jesus may imply designating him as Messiah (the word "Messiah" means "anointed one"). But the woman does not anoint his head in a manner symbolizing the coronation of a king; instead, she anoints his body as though it were a corpse. Thus, she proclaims him a Messiah destined for death rather than political power (v. 12). Verse 11 implies no subordination of concern for the poor, whose assistance Jesus heartily approves (cf. 19:21); on the "absence of Jesus" theme in Matthew, see commentary above on 9:14–15 (→ Anoint; Messiah; Ointments and Perfumes).

26:14–16, The Treason of Judas. Cf. Mark 14:10–11; Luke 22:3–6. Judas Iscariot becomes the first of Jesus' disciples to fall, securing a permanent legacy as "the traitor" (10:4; 26:25). Exactly what he offers to do is not clear, but it probably involves leading Jesus' enemies to him at an opportune time, when they can arrest him in a private rather than public setting (cf. 21:46; 26:3–5). The only motivation for his action appears to be greed; he chooses mammon—thirty pieces of silver (cf. Zech. 11:12)—over his Lord (6:24; → Judas).

26:17–35, The Last Supper. Cf. Mark 14:12–31; Luke 22:7–34. Jesus eats the Passover meal with his disciples, investing its symbols with new meaning in light of his impending death. By identifying the bread as his body and the wine as his blood—the blood of the covenant poured out for forgiveness of sin—he affirms that his death will indeed be a ransom (20:28) by which his people will be saved from their sins (1:21). This promise is especially poignant in that it is offered in the midst of a discourse on the imminent apostasy of his disciples. Judas will betray him, Peter will deny him, and the others will desert him. Still, because of Jesus' atoning blood, they may yet follow him after he is raised (v. 32). On the fate of Judas (v. 24), however, see commentary below on 27:3–10 (→ Lord's Supper, The; New Covenant).

26:36–46, Prayer in Gethsemane. Cf. Mark 14:32–42; Luke 22:39–46. Retiring to Gethsemane, Jesus prays three times that he might somehow be spared the horrible death that he knows awaits him (cf. 20:22). Nevertheless, he remains unflagging in his commitment to fulfill his Father's will, whatever that may be. The sleepy disciples (cf. 24:42–43) represent the inevitable weakness of "the flesh," a problem that transcends mere physical limitations. Jesus recognizes that even those who are most committed to doing what is right are sometimes unable to fulfill their good intentions (cf. 26:33–35; → Gethsemane).

26:47–56, The Arrest. Cf. Mark 14:43–52; Luke 22:47–54; John 18:1–12. In an ultimate display of hypocrisy, Judas betrays his master with a kiss and in a remarkable demonstration of his own philosophy, Jesus refuses to resist those who are evil (5:39). He submits to their violence and even calls Judas "Friend." Jesus also indicates that the Father would rescue him if that were his desire, but he is now convinced that the will of the Father revealed in Scripture can be fulfilled by his accepting this "cup" (cf. 20:22; 26:39, 42). He eschews the human course of violence as self-perpetuating and by his peaceful acquiescence shames those who assumed they would have to beat him into submission. His disciples, however, are not yet able to practice what he has preached and, as he predicted (26:31), they desert him (→ Judas).

26:57–27:26
Jesus on Trial

Two trials, one before the Jewish authorities and one before the Roman governor, frame the rest of the

narrative leading up to Jesus' crucifixion (→ Trial of Jesus, The).

26:57–68, Trial Before Caiaphas. Cf. Mark 14:53–65; Luke 22:54–71. With Peter in tow (v. 58), Jesus is brought before the high priest Caiaphas. His sentence has already been determined (26:3–40), but legal grounds for the execution must be sought. Jesus gives no response to the suborned perjury of various false witnesses, including one mangled account of a saying Matthew's readers might be expected to understand as metaphorical (v. 61; cf. John 2:19–22). But when he is asked about his identity Jesus openly affirms his claim to be the Christ ("Messiah"), the Son of God, adding that he will soon be seated at God's right hand and will return on the clouds of glory (cf. 16:27; 24:30; Ps. 110:1; Dan. 7:13). This, alone, they determine is "blasphemy" (cf. 9:3), an offense deserving death. Their subsequent torture (cf. 24:9) and abuse of Jesus, however, gives the lie to any impression of righteous (though ignorant) indignation that might have been apparent otherwise (cf. Luke 23:34). Matthew portrays these rulers as vicious and cruel, not merely misguided (→ Blasphemy; Caiaphas; Trial of Jesus, The).

26:69–75, Peter Denies Jesus. Cf. Mark 14:66–72; Luke 22:54–62; John 18:15–18, 25–27. In stark contrast to Jesus' bold confession before the high priest (26:64), Peter denies three times that he is a disciple. This fulfills Jesus' earlier prediction (26:34), a realization that brings Peter to tears. The bitterness of those tears might depend on whether Peter recalls Jesus' harsh words in 10:32–33 or his promise of forgiveness in 26:27–28 (→ Peter).

27:1–2, Jesus Brought to Pilate. Cf. Mark 15:1; Luke 23:1; John 18:28. The religious leaders now send Jesus to Pilate, in hope that the Roman governor will authorize the death sentence they have decided he deserves (26:66).

27:3–10, Judas and the Blood Money. Regretting his betrayal of Jesus, Judas returns the money and commits suicide. The callous religious leaders use the funds to buy a field, unwittingly fulfilling ancient prophecies (Zech. 11:12–13; Jer. 18:1–3; 19:1–13; 32:6–15). Judas and the religious leaders may think they are somehow ridding themselves of the divine curse that can come on those who shed innocent blood (23:35), but ironically Jesus' blood brings not a curse, but forgiveness (26:28). Avoiding the effects of his blood assures their condemnation, a fact that is the more tragic for Judas since Jesus explicitly offered him this forgiveness (26:28) and continued to regard him as his friend (26:50) even after his treason was exposed (but see 26:24; → Blood; Judas).

27:11–26, Trial Before Pilate. Cf. Mark 15:2–5; Luke 23:2–7, 13–25; John 18:29–40. Knowing that Jesus is innocent of any crime against the state and that the religious leaders are motivated by jealousy, the Roman governor Pontius Pilate tries to find an acceptable way of releasing Jesus. The crowds, however, have now shifted their allegiance from Jesus (21:45–46) to the religious leaders, even to the point that they call for a notorious criminal to be released instead of the one who is known as "king of the Jews" (v. 11) or "Messiah" (vv. 17, 22). Spurning his wife's counsel, Pilate acquiesces to their wishes for fear of a riot (cf. 26:3–4). As predicted (20:19), Jesus is flogged, tortured with a cruel whip, which by itself sometimes brought death to the victim (→ Scourge).

Pilate's washing of his hands once again demonstrates an ironic rejection of the blood that could have brought him forgiveness (26:28; see commentary above on 27:3–10). By the same token, the cry of the people in v. 25 implies that the blood of the new covenant will come upon them, such that the people of Israel as a whole will benefit from this ransom (20:28). Their sins will be forgiven (26:28). Thus, Jesus will fulfill his destiny: to save his people from their sins (1:21; → Blood; Pilate).

27:27–56
Jesus Is Crucified

The story of the crucifixion is told in sparse and brutal language, and yet in terms that ironically portray Jesus as a royal figure (27:28–29, 37, 42), indeed, as the very Son of God (27:40, 43, 54).

27:27–31, Mocking of Jesus. Cf. Mark 15:16–20; Luke 23:26–32; John 19:1–3. About six hundred of the governor's soldiers (a cohort) gather around Jesus and mock him in a way that continues to fulfill his predictions (20:19) and to identify him with the Servant of the Lord described in Isa. 50:6. The cruel acts recall similar deeds of the supposedly more pious priests (26:67–68), but focus more on his identification as a king (cf. 21:5; 27:11), which the soldiers misinterpret as a political claim.

27:32–49, The Crucifixion. Cf. Mark 15:22–36; Luke 23:33–44; John 19:17–24. The event of Jesus' crucifixion itself is related with rare detail. Every element would later be significant for Christian memory: Simon the cross bearer (cf. 10:38; 16:24); the morbid name of Golgotha; the cruel offer of wine mixed with bitter gall (cf. Ps. 69:21); the dividing of garments and casting of lots (cf. Ps. 22:18); the placard with its satirical, yet ironically accurate description (cf. 2:2; 21:5), and the fellowship of criminals (cf. Isa. 53:12). The mocking of Jesus (26:66–67; 27:27–31; cf. 20:19) continues, with casual passersby and even the bandits crucified with him joining now in the derision (there is no mention in

Matthew of one bandit's conversion, as in Luke 23:39–41). The taunt of the religious leaders (v. 40) eerily recalls the words of Satan earlier in the Gospel (4:3, 6), in the same way that the three tests they once laid before Jesus (22:15–40) recalled the devil's activity in 4:1–11 (→ Cross).

Three hours of darkness at noon (cf. 24:29; Amos 8:9; Exod. 10:22) indicate to Jesus that God has now abandoned him, an apparent necessity for his death to be the ransom that would establish a new covenant (20:28; 26:28). His so-called cry of dereliction quotes Ps. 22:1 in a way that simultaneously affirms his continued commitment to God ("*My* God") and his continued confusion as to why this abandonment to death is necessary (cf. 26:39; → Eli, Eli, Lema Sabachthani).

27:50–54, Death of Jesus. Cf. Mark 15:37–39; Luke 23:45–48; John 19:30. Forsaken or rejected by the religious leaders of Israel, by the Roman government and soldiers, by his own disciples, by the crowds that once followed him, by casual onlookers, by the criminals crucified with him, and now even by God, Jesus dies with a great cry of anguish. And then, immediately, heaven and earth respond. The ripping of the Temple curtain probably signifies that a new covenant has begun through which sins are forgiven by virtue of Jesus' blood rather than animal sacrifices (20:28; 21:12–13; 26:28). The earthquake and raising of saints indicate that the gates of Hades are falling (16:18)—the power of death has been broken. A centurion and other soldiers who mocked Jesus in the courtyard (27:27–31) and then nailed him to a cross now confess him to be the Son of God (cf. 14:33; 16:16–17). Their confession is proleptic testimony to the effect that the gospel message will have when it is proclaimed among Gentiles throughout the whole world (24:14; 26:13; 28:19).

27:55–56, Women as Witnesses. Cf. Mark 15:40–41; Luke 23:49; John 19:25. Only now does Matthew indicate that some of Jesus' followers were present to witness the events of his crucifixion. Although his male disciples had deserted him (26:56), many women were present, including the mother of the sons of Zebedee (cf. 20:20) and two women named Mary, neither of whom has been mentioned before. Even outside this Gospel, little is known of Mary Magdalene (cf. Luke 8:2) and nothing of Mary the mother of James and Joseph. Still, these two Marys are important to Matthew's story because they serve as the primary witnesses to three key events: the death, burial (27:61), and resurrection (28:1) of Jesus (cf. 1 Cor. 15:3–4).

27:57–28:15
Jesus Is Raised

Matthew's narrative reports at last the climactic event it claims changed everything forever. The sign of Jonah (12:39–40; 16:4) is given and, as anticipated, rejected.

27:57–61, Entombment of Jesus. Cf. Mark 15:42–47; Luke 23:50–56. Joseph of Arimathea acquires Jesus' dead body and seals it in a tomb. That he has to do this accentuates the absence of Jesus' closest disciples (26:56), who might have been expected to do at least this much for their master (cf. 14:12). Yet Joseph himself is a "rich disciple," almost a contradiction in terms according to 19:24, but only almost according to 19:26. On the witness of the women, see commentary above on 27:55–56 (→ Tomb).

27:62–66, Posting of the Guard. Chief priests and Pharisees, the two groups that wanted Jesus dead (12:14; 26:3–4), convince Pilate to let them place a guard around the tomb to prevent any resurrection hoax from being perpetrated by Jesus' disciples. There are ironic moments here: Jesus' enemies remember the promise of a resurrection, but apparently his (male) disciples do not. And—if a rumor of resurrection would make these enemies regret putting Jesus to death (make the situation "worse"), what effect will an actual resurrection have?

28:1–10, The Empty Tomb. Cf. Mark 16:1–8; Luke 24:1–11; John 20:1–18. Like the religious leaders (27:63), the two Marys (cf. 27:56, 61) apparently remember Jesus' predictions (16:21; 17:23; 20:19) and they come to the tomb early on the third day to see what will happen (not to anoint the body as in Mark 16:1). A shining angel terrifies the guard and removes the stone—not to let Jesus out, but to show the women that he is already gone. The women are commissioned (first by the angel, then by Jesus himself) to regain Jesus' disciples for him, reminding them of what Jesus himself had told them (v. 7; cf. 26:32). The women are the first to worship the risen Lord (see commentary above on 2:1–12 [v. 11]) and the first to be commissioned by him. Such primacy in worship and mission gives them the role in the church that had originally been offered to Peter (16:18–19). The apostasy of Jesus' male disciples is forgiven, but it costs them the legacy that they might have had. Jesus wills for his church to be founded by women, grounded in their proclamation of the gospel, and marked forever by their experience of "fear and great joy" (→ Resurrection).

28:11–15, Report of the Guard. As the women run to tell the disciples what has happened, the guards likewise report the events to Jesus' enemies. Knowing now of the resurrection, having received the sign of Jonah (12:39–40; 16:4), they still do not repent, but resort to the sort of deception they previously said Jesus' followers would perpetrate (27:64). They become the impostors (27:62), spreading a rumor they know to be false—but not without some success (v. 15).

28:16–20
The Great Commission

The disciples are now only eleven, Judas having forfeited his identification as an "apostle" (10:2–3) and, presumably, the throne from which he might have ruled the tribes of Israel (19:28). Those who remain have themselves been "made disciples" through the testimony of women who proved more faithful than they, and now they are to "make disciples" of others. They are still people of "little faith" (6:30; 8:26; 14:31; 16:8; 17:20), a community in which worship and doubt coincide (v. 17; cf. 14:31–33 and see commentary above on 2:1–12 [v. 11]). As such, their commission now depends on Jesus' authority, not their own (7:29; 8:5–13; 9:8; 21:23–27; cf. 10:1). No longer limiting their ministry to Israel (10:5–6; cf. 15:24), they are to go out into the whole world with the gospel of the kingdom Jesus preached (24:14; 26:13; cf. 4:17, 23), making disciples of all nations. Becoming a disciple involves two steps: being baptized into the community of people who worship Jesus as the Son of God, an affirmation that leads them now to call God by a new name, "Father, Son, and Holy Spirit"; and being trained in obedience to fulfill the will of the Father (cf. 7:21) by living in accord with the commandments as taught and interpreted by Jesus.

Jesus' church will be an inclusive, ethical community of worshiping doubters. A church founded by women (28:1–10), a church that considers little children to be its most important members (18:1–5), a church that specializes in making room for sinners and outcasts (9:10–13)—this is the community of people with whom Jesus promises to abide till the end of time.

Bibliography

Carter, W. *Matthew: Storyteller, Interpreter, Evangelist.* Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1996.

France, R. T. *Matthew: Evangelist and Teacher.* Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 1989.

Guelich, Robert A. *The Sermon on the Mount: A Foundation for Understanding.* Waco, TX: Word, 1982.

Hagner, D. A. *Matthew.* 2 vols. Word Biblical Commentary. Waco, TX: Word, 1993, 1995.

Kingsbury, J. D. *Matthew As Story.* 2d ed. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1988.

Luz, U. *The Theology of the Gospel of Matthew.* Cambridge: Cambridge University, 1995.

Powell, M. A. *God With Us: A Pastoral Theology of Matthew's Gospel.* Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1995.

Senior, D. *What Are They Saying About Matthew?* 2d ed. New York: Paulist, 1996.

Smith, R. H. *Matthew.* Augsburg Commentary on the New Testament. Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1989.

Mark

JOHN R. DONAHUE

INTRODUCTION

Mark, the shortest of the Gospels, is generally thought to be the earliest and a source for Matthew and Luke, who incorporate it almost totally into their Gospels. It alone is called explicitly a "gospel" (Mark 1:1; 13:10; 14:9; cf. Matt. 1:1; Luke 1:1). This term is used in Second Isaiah (e.g., Isa. 40:9; 41:27; 52:7; 61:1) for the "good tidings" of God's saving action (Ps. 40:10). In secular Greek "gospel" means the good news of a significant event (e.g., the birth of the emperor) that is announced by a herald. It occurs frequently in Paul's Letters to describe the proclamation of the "Christ event," i.e., the significance that the person, life, ministry, Passion, death, resurrection, and exaltation of Jesus of Nazareth had and still has for human history and existence (1 Thess. 2:9; 1 Cor. 1:17–24; 15:1; Gal. 1:6–11; Rom. 1:16–17).

Though similar to other literary genres such as aretalogies (i.e., stories of the mighty deeds of heroic figures), lives of philosophers, martyrologies, and biblical writings such as the Elijah and Elisha cycles in 1 Kings 16–2 Kings 9 (→ Elijah; Elisha) or the book of Daniel, the Gospel of Mark represents a wholly new genre. Its form is "kerygmatic narrative"—the presentation in story of the "good news" about and from Jesus (→ Gospel, Gospels; Kerygma).

It is customary in NT studies to distinguish three stages in the composition of the Gospels. Stage 1 consists of recollections from the historical ministry of Jesus; stage 2, oral traditions about his ministry handed down under the influence of the proclamation of the risen Lord; and stage 3, the incorporation of this material along with editorial additions into the literary and theological composition of a given Evangelist. This commentary will interpret Mark's form of stage 3, i.e., how Mark's kerygmatic narrative confronts its hearers with that same challenge and offer of grace that Jesus extended to his original hearers.

Author and Setting

Like the other Gospels, the text does not identify its author, but early church tradition (beginning with Papias, ca. A.D. 120; see Eusebius *Ecclesiastical History* 3.39.15) attributed it to "Mark," a companion of Peter in Rome (1 Pet. 5:13), who is then identified with the "John Mark" of Acts 12:12, 25; 15:37–39, and the "Mark" of Philem. 24; Col. 4:10; 2 Tim. 4:1. This attribution is called into question by the apologetic desire to associate a nonapostolic Gospel with the apostle Peter, by the frequency of "Mark" as a name in the Roman Empire, and by the ancient tendency to attribute works to important figures from the past.

For the bulk of church history, principally on the authority of patristic writers (esp. Irenaeus *Against Heresies* 3.1.2) and certain internal evidence (see below), the final composition of the Gospel was situated at Rome, sometime after the martyrdom of Peter during the persecution of Nero (A.D. 64). Recently, because of the stress in Mark on Galilee as the place of the first and expected revelation of Jesus, along with its strong Palestinian coloring, its audience has been located in Galilee or southern Syria.

Internal evidence from the Gospel (esp. chap. 13) offers clues to its situation and community. Like similar apocalyptic literature, Mark 13, although in the form of predictions given in the past, cryptically depicts upheavals in the lives of the readers. The civil disturbances (13:7–8) and intensity of the persecution described in 13:9–13 may reflect both Nero's persecution (A.D. 64) and the Jewish war of A.D. 66–70 (see commentary below on chap. 13).

The large number of Latinisms (Gk. terms or phrases that reflect Lat., e.g., 5:9; 6:37; 7:4; 12:14, 42; 15:15–16, 19, 39) suggest a setting in which both Latin and Greek were used. The teaching on divorce reflects Roman law (10:10–12) and the widow's offering is explained in terms of Roman coinage (12:42, lit. two "coins" [Gk. *lepta*] are made equivalent to the Roman *quadrans*, which equals 1/4 of a cent).

The community included large numbers of Jews. Familiarity with the Jewish Scriptures is presumed and explicit citations of and allusions to them are frequent. They are the authoritative revelation of God, and the core of Jesus' teaching is a summary from the OT (12:28–34). Yet, the OT is quoted from Greek versions, rather than translated from Hebrew; Jewish customs are explained (7:3–4); Aramaic phrases are translated (e.g., 5:41; 7:34; 14:36; 15:34), and details of Palestinian geography are vague (6:45–7:37). The Gospel contains strong attacks on Jewish laws and institutions (7:1–23; 11:15–19) and implies a mission to the Gentiles (11:17; 13:10). Most likely the community comprises Jews and

gentile converts living outside of Palestine, who are breaking away from traditional Jewish observances.

The community is also most likely of lower socio-economic status. The language of the Gospel is not elegant, literary Greek, but the spoken Greek of ordinary people with occasional Semitic influence. The rich are suspect, as are those holding positions of power (10:23–25, 42). Ordinary items such as the "pallet" (2:4, 11) and the "basket" (6:43; 8:19) are those used by the poor. Though the available evidence precludes certainty, a Jewish-Christian community at Rome shortly after A.D. 70 would be an excellent candidate for the audience of the Gospel.

Literary Characteristics

Although there is no discernible written source, the Evangelist drew on early traditions (e.g., controversies of Jesus with Jewish leaders; collections of miracle stories, parables, and sayings of Jesus; and narratives of his final days in Jerusalem). Mark is, however, more than a simple collector. He leaves his distinct stamp on the Gospel, primarily by his manner of composition.

The Gospel manifests a theological conception superimposed over an original geographical framework (ministry in Galilee, beyond the confines of Galilee, journey to Jerusalem, and death in Jerusalem; cf. Acts 10:36–41). On the narrative level, events proceed to the climax in Jerusalem. The interpretive focus, however, comes in the middle. The units are structured like an arch: events on the side panels (Parts One and Two, 1:1–8:21; Parts Four and Five, 11:1–16:8) draw the onlooker to gaze to the main themes in the center (Part Three, 8:22–10:52). The structure is thus both architectonic and dramatic. As readers are drawn to the interpretive center, they are also caught up in the unfolding story of the journey of Jesus to the cross.

Mark begins with the ministry of Jesus in Galilee as the powerful Son of God who announces the kingdom, calls disciples, performs mighty works, and is acclaimed by the crowds (Parts One and Two, 1:1–8:21); he concludes with the entrance of Jesus into Jerusalem and his intensifying conflicts with Jewish leaders, leading to his crucifixion, death, and resurrection (Parts Four and Five, 11:1–16:8). In the center section (Part Three, 8:22–10:52), which is demarcated by references to "the way" (8:27; 9:33; 10:32), Jesus instructs his disciples on the meaning of his life and death (10:45) and on the cost of discipleship (carrying the cross and serving others as he did, 8:34–38; 10:42–45). This section provides the bridge between the revelation of the powerful Son of God, who in Galilee confronts the power of evil and heals the sick, and the revelation of the Suffering Son of Man in Jerusalem (11:1–16:8), whose blood is poured out for many (14:24; cf. 10:45).

Written in a lively, direct style, the Gospel reflects popular storytelling techniques. There is frequent use of "the historical present" (i.e., the Gk. present tense translated as past in English), which gives an "eyewitness" quality to the narrative. It is a Gospel of action in which narrative (rather than the teaching of Jesus) occupies the most space and its different incidents follow in rapid succession, connected often by a simple "and." Stories of Jesus' exorcisms and healings are recounted vividly and with a detail that Matthew and Luke compress.

Frequent repetitions allow similar incidents to be presented in new guises and settings. For example, there are two narratives of calming the sea (4:35–41; 6:45–52), two feedings (6:31–44; 8:1–10), and two healings of blind beggars (8:22–26; 10:46–52). Mark also likes progressive threefold groupings, e.g., three "calls" of disciples (1:16–20; 3:13–19; 6:7–13), three passion predictions (8:31; 9:31; 10:33), and three prayers of Jesus in Gethsemane (14:32–42).

Theological Motifs

Christology. The theme of Mark's Christology, i.e., his understanding of Jesus, is stated immediately: "the good news of Jesus, Messiah, Son of God" (1:1). Mark's purpose is not to prove this statement, but to unfold its implications for faith and discipleship. The titles of Jesus in Mark provide signposts along the narrative path of Mark's presentation of Jesus. Three are most important. First, Jesus is "the Christ" (i.e., Messiah, 1:1, 34 [some manuscripts]; 8:29; 14:61; 15:32), used in the Bible mainly for anointed royal figures and associated with Israel's hope for a king who would restore Davidic rule (see 2 Sam. 7:12–14). It came to designate other figures (priestly or prophetic) sent to establish God's reign (→ Messiah). Second, "Son of God" (1:1, 11; 3:11; 5:7; 9:7; 14:61; 15:39) does not imply, as in later theology, "divine nature," but principally a special relationship to God. In the OT kings (Ps. 2:7), angelic beings (Job 38:7), and righteous people (Wisd. of Sol. 2:18) are "sons of God" (→ Sons of God, Children of God). Third and most important to Mark, Jesus is Son of Man (→ Son of Man). This enigmatic phrase, which in Aramaic means "human being," derives from Dan. 7:13–27, where it describes the granting of power, honor, and glory in the heavenly sphere to one like a "son of man" who has suffered persecution and who is identified with the "Holy ones of the Most High" (Dan. 7:18). It suggests an individual who also is representative of a larger group. Jesus as Son of Man possesses power on earth (2:10, 28) and will suffer, die, and be raised up (8:31; 9:9, 12, 31; 10:33, 45; 14:21, 41); at his return as Son of Man (8:38; 13:24–26; 14:62), God will save the elect and punish the wicked.

Though taking over many of these titles from his tradition, Mark reinterprets them and uses them to shape his Christology. Jesus is Son of God not simply as a figure of power (3:11; 5:7), but as the obedient son

(12:6; 14:36) who suffers, dies, and is vindicated by God. The title "Son of Man" (used only by Jesus) underscores the vulnerability of Jesus as well as that humanity he shares with others. It establishes rapport with readers and gives a proper understanding to "Son of God."

This same Jesus who is addressed as "my Son, the Beloved" by a voice from heaven (1:11; 9:7) is also very human in Mark. He shows strong emotions such as pity (1:41), violent displeasure (1:43), and anger (3:5) and is moved at the suffering of others who are like sheep without a shepherd (6:34). Like the OT prophets, Jesus proclaims the need for conversion and manifests God's will through symbolic activity. Like them, he embodies the compassion of God (6:34), especially for those who are suffering or on the margin of society—lepers (1:40–45), tax collectors (2:15), and Gentiles (7:24–30).

Mark uses the perplexing "Messianic Secret" to convey a proper understanding of Jesus' life. Demons acclaim him as Son of God, but he silences them (1:24–25; 3:11–12; cf. 5:7). At other times Jesus tells people who have experienced his power to remain silent (1:34, 43–45; 3:12; 5:43; 8:30; 9:9). Two things are thereby communicated: first, knowledge of Jesus' identity comes from suprahuman power, either that of the heavens (1:11; 9:7) or of the demons; second, proper confession of Jesus should not be made on the basis of the miracles, but only after following him to the cross. The first human in Mark who correctly addresses Jesus as Son of God is the centurion who, at the moment of Jesus' death, says, "Truly this man was the Son of God" (15:39).

Discipleship. Although the Gospel of Mark is the story of Jesus, it is also the story of response to the call of Jesus. The disciples in Mark combine negative and positive traits. When Jesus calls, they follow "immediately" and they are summoned to be with him and to do the things he does: teach, heal, and cast out demons (1:16–20; 3:13–19). Jesus teaches them privately (4:34; 7:17; 9:28), gives them the "mystery of the kingdom" (4:10–12), rescues them when they are threatened by the storm, and makes them privileged witnesses to his power (4:35–41; 5:37–40).

The picture of the disciples is also one of growing estrangement from Jesus. In the first parts of the Gospel they misunderstand his miracles and teaching (4:40; 7:18; 8:16–21). In the central section (8:22–10:52) each time Jesus states that it is God's will that he suffer and die, they misunderstand (8:32–33), twice bickering over rank and prestige (9:33–34; 10:32–45). During the passion narrative, though they share a final meal with him, one disciple betrays him (14:10), others sleep during his greatest agony (14:32–42), all flee when he is arrested (14:50), and Peter denies ever knowing him (14:66–72).

This double-sided portrait of the disciples has spawned heated debate. Some argue that they represent those in the community who, fascinated by a theology of power, pride themselves in their spiritual gifts. The failure of the disciples is seen as a warning that without a theology of the cross, a triumphalist theology of glory can only end in denial and betrayal. Less harshly, others suggest that the failure of the disciples encourages those in Mark's community who have failed in the face of persecution. Though Peter denied the Lord, the early church knew him as a recipient of a resurrection appearance and as a great missionary. Jesus, who conquers death and empowers Peter to become a witness and a martyr, can conquer the weakness and betrayal of his followers.

Text and Canon

Though overshadowed by Matthew and Luke, Mark's place in the canon of Scripture was not contested, and the text of the Gospel is well established since it appears in the important fourth-century manuscripts (Vaticanus, Sinaiticus, and Alexandrinus) and portions of it appear in the third-century Chester Beatty papyrus (P^{45}). The major textual problem concerns the so-called longer ending (16:9–20, also called the "traditional" and the "canonical" ending) that appears in a great number of ancient manuscripts and in the Greek text used for the KJV. However, earlier and more important manuscripts such as Vaticanus and Sinaiticus end at 16:8. Scholars among the patristic authors such as Eusebius and Jerome (fourth century A.D.) held that Mark ended at 16:8. Internal evidence supports this. The transition from 16:8 to the longer ending is awkward and these verses differ in language and style from the rest of the Gospel. The "longer ending" is best explained as a later attempt to soften the final words of the Gospel, "for they were afraid," and to provide it with a resurrection appearance.

COMMENTARY

Part One: 1:1–6:6a

Throughout Galilee Jesus Proclaims the Imminence of God's Reign in Powerful Words and Deeds

The first major phases of Jesus' activity take place mainly in Galilee and its environs. Though Mark collects here authentic recollections of the life and teaching of Jesus, he has edited and arranged them in service of his theology. In this section Jesus is very much a figure of power (1:22, 27; 2:10, 28) who summons disciples to follow him and confronts evil and sickness. His authority is established in word and

deed, and he is acclaimed by the crowds (e.g., 1:28, 45; 2:12). His rapid movement from place to place conveys the urgency of the gospel he proclaims.

The section is divided into a prologue (1:1–13) and two subsections (1:14–3:6; 3:7–6:6a). Each subsection begins with transitional summaries (1:14–15; 3:7–12) followed by discipleship stories (1:16–20; 3:13–20) and concludes with opposition or misunderstanding (3:6; 6:1–6a).

1:1–13
Prologue: The Beginning of the Good News

The prologue sets the stage for the public ministry of Jesus and introduces major themes of the Gospel. The superscription (1:1) announces "the beginning of the good news" (cf. Gen. 1:1; Hos. 1:2, LXX). "Beginning" implies not simply the start of the narrative, but that its total message is the "foundation" of that gospel that continues to be proclaimed in Mark's own time (13:10; 14:9). Mark 1:2–3, attributed to Isaiah but actually a conflation of Exod. 23:20; Mal. 3:1; and Isa. 40:3, establishes the continuity of saving history; the Gospel fulfills God's promises.

The actions and description of John (1:4–6) draw on contemporary Jewish eschatological expectations, i.e., beliefs about the "last days." John is dressed like Elijah (v. 6; see 2 Kings 1:8), who will return to prepare for the day of the Lord (Mal. 3:1; 4:5). Mark depicts John not simply as the fiery reformer preparing for the advent of this day, but as forerunner of the Messiah (9:11–13; cf. 6:15; 8:28). After a quick summary of the preaching of John (cf. Matt. 3:7–10; Luke 3:7–9) and his baptism of repentance (also practiced "in the wilderness" by the Qumran community, 1QS 3.4–5), John's ministry culminates (1:7–8) in proclaiming the advent of "the stronger one" who will baptize in the Holy Spirit. Though Jesus does not baptize in the Gospels, an outpouring of the "spirit of holiness" was to characterize the eschatological age (Isa. 32:15–20; 1QS 4:18–21). The words and deeds of Jesus constitute a "baptism in the spirit" (→ Baptism; John the Baptist).

The second part of the prologue (1:9–13) begins with solemn biblical language, "in those days," to herald the messianic preparation of Jesus. The baptism of Jesus by John (1:9–11; Matt. 3:13–17; Luke 3:21–22; cf. John 1:29–34) conveys both the solidarity of Jesus with others so baptized (v. 9), and his unique status (vv. 10–11). The opening of the heavens (cf. Isa. 64:1) and the descent of the Spirit evoke the return of the longed-for prophetic spirit and the advent of the messianic age. The descent "like a dove" may reflect the Jewish comparison of the hovering spirit of Gen. 1:2 to a dove.

The high point of the baptism is the proclamation by the "voice" (a personification of God), "you are my Son, the Beloved; with you I am well pleased" (v. 11), which echoes the adoption formula of Ps. 2:7 and the choice of the servant in Isa. 42:1; 44:1. The baptism is both Jesus' messianic adoption and his commissioning as servant. The subsequent narrative will unfold how he is the beloved son and how his followers are to confess him as such. Both the superscription ("Son of God") and the baptism point to the Son of God on the cross (10:38–39; 15:39).

With the "testing" (more accurate than "temptation") in the wilderness (1:12–13) the messianic preparation of Jesus is complete. Like the righteous Job, Jesus is tested by Satan (Job 2:1–8). Though he will warn of Satan's power in the Gospel (4:15; 8:33), Jesus will emerge stronger than Satan (3:22–27). The "wilderness" has a double nuance as the place of the covenant betrothal between God and the chosen people (Hos. 2:14–15) and where the fidelity of the people was "tested" and found failing (Pss. 78:17–18; 106:13–33). From the wilderness also salvation will dawn for the people (Isa. 40:3; 1QS 8:12–16). Jesus as "God's son" (representing the people; see Exod. 4:22, "Israel is [God's] firstborn son"; cf. Hos. 11:1) relives the testing of Israel in the wilderness, but remains faithful when tested.

1:14–3:6
Initial Ministry in Galilee, Opposition from Pharisees

1:14–15, Summary of the Proclamation of Jesus. After the "handing over" (NRSV: "arrest") of John, which foreshadows the fate of Jesus (8:31; 9:31; 10:33; 14:21) and of the disciples (13:9–13), the time of preparation is complete, and in place of John's "baptism of repentance" (1:4), Jesus arrives proclaiming "the gospel of God" (v. 14), which is both the good news *from God* and *about* God's intervention in history (1 Thess. 2:3, 8–9; Rom. 1:1; 15:16). The proclamation is fourfold. First, the time (Gk. *kairos*, in the sense of time for decision) is fulfilled, recalling the apocalyptic motif that God has predetermined the stages of history. The final age has begun. Second, "The kingdom of God is at hand." "Kingdom" designates not simply the realm or place where God reigns, but, better, the "active ruling of God." The teaching and actions of Jesus about to unfold in the Gospel are an enactment of God's reign. This reign is "at hand," i.e., imminent but not yet definitively present (9:1). Third, "Repent." The Greek *metanoia* suggests a change of heart leading to a new way of life. It also evokes the prophetic summons to conversion from evil and a turning toward God (Hos. 6:1; Isa. 1:10–20; Joel 2:12–13). Fourth, "Believe in the gospel." Repentance leads to "belief," which involves obedience to the word of God as proclaimed by Jesus and a life of discipleship.

1:16–20, The Call of the First Four Disciples. This serves as a concrete illustration of 1:14–15. All the Gospels begin with Jesus gathering disciples (lit.,

"learners"), which inaugurates the new eschatological community of those who will hear Jesus' word and follow in his footsteps. These calls underscore the social dimension of God's activity in Jesus. Jesus is no solitary mystic, but one who forms a community to "believe in the gospel."

The call and commissioning narratives (1:16–20; 3:13–20; 6:7–13; cf. 2:13–14) follow a similar pattern. Unlike similar stories of the disciples of Hellenistic philosophers or Jewish rabbis in which disciples search for a teacher, here the initiative comes from Jesus (1:17; 3:13, "whom he wished"; 6:7). Those called are engaged in everyday activities (1:16; 2:14). They respond immediately (1:20; 2:14), and the summons involves personal commitment (following or "being with" Jesus, 3:13) and activity similar to that of Jesus: teaching, healing, exorcising (3:13; 6:7, 13).

1:21–45, The Inauguration of the Ministry of Jesus. Mark creates a unity (beginning and ending in Capernaum, 1:21; 2:1) of paradigmatic narratives of the public ministry of Jesus. These comprise an exorcism (1:21–28), a healing of an individual (1:29–31), group healings and exorcisms (1:32–34), a preaching tour (1:35–39), and the healing of a leper (1:40–45). The stories stress the expanding religious awe that the teaching of Jesus evokes from the crowds (1:22, 28; 37; 45) and the confrontation with and victory over demons who recognize that Jesus is no ordinary human (1:24, 34). Here appear also the first instances of the Messianic Secret (1:34, 44), those places where Jesus enjoins silence about his identity and power.

Miracle stories occupy roughly a third of the Gospel. Mark describes them as "mighty works" (Gk. *dynameis;* 6:2; 9:39), rather than "signs" that authenticate the ministry of Jesus (8:11–13). They are best interpreted as "symbols" of the power of God manifest in Jesus, which is stronger than the power of evil and which responds to human suffering (→ Miracles).

2:1–3:6, The Power of Jesus in Controversy with Opponents. This section contains five controversy stories, i.e., narratives culminating in a normative pronouncement, which are arranged topically, rather than historically. Though they may preserve disputes from the life of Jesus (esp. over his acceptance of tax collectors), they reflect later debates between early Christians and fellow Jews. The Pharisees (from an Aramaic word meaning "the separated ones"), who are the principal opponents here (2:16, 18, 24), constituted a popular movement (in contrast to the aristocratic Sadducees) dedicated to strict observance of the law (→ Pharisees; Sadducees).

Mark arranges these five narratives in a chiastic pattern *(A B C B′ A′)* of correspondence between the initial and final incidents to highlight the central narrative: *(A)* 2:1–12, *healing* of a paralytic; *(B)* 2:13–17, *controversy* over ritual law (i.e., not eating with unclean people); *(C)* 2:18–22, dispute over fasting, removal of bridegroom, contrast of old and new; *(B′)* 2:23–28, *controversy* over Sabbath law; *(A′)* 3:1–6, Sabbath *healing* of man with withered hand. This narrative unit also complements the picture of Jesus that emerged from 1:16–45. Jesus is powerful not only in the deeds of healing and exorcism, but in besting his opponents in debate. The contrast of the new and the old and the removal of the bridegroom, placed at the center, implies that Jesus' rejection of legalism and his willingness to violate the law to benefit suffering people evoked the opposition that led to his death (2:20; 3:6).

The first of these narratives (2:1–12) combines elements of two earlier narratives: the healing of a paralytic (2:1–5, 11–12) and a controversy over the power to forgive sin (2:6–10). By combining them Mark reinterprets the power of Jesus. The deeper "healing" accomplished by Jesus is release from the paralysis of sin. Since forgiveness of sin is a divine prerogative and since there are elaborate rituals of atonement, forgiveness by a word (v. 5) is tantamount to blasphemy (v. 7). The saying about the Son of Man (v. 10) explains to readers that Jesus has this power as "Son of Man," i.e., as the one who will suffer, die, and be raised up. Mark creates a bridge between the earthly authority of Jesus and the forthcoming Passion.

The call by Jesus of a tax collector to be a disciple and Jesus' table fellowship with tax collectors (2:13–17) are based on solid historical recollection (cf. Matt. 11:19 = Luke 7:34; Luke 15:1). Jesus enacted God's offer of mercy (v. 17) by associating with social and religious outcasts of his time. Tax collectors were considered dishonest and also ritually impure because of frequent contact with Gentiles. Jesus' acceptance of them shattered fundamental religious convictions and social conventions of his contemporaries and fomented growing opposition to him (see 3:6).

The question of fasting (2:18–22) is evoked by the table setting of the previous narrative. The OT knows of both public and private fasting (Ezra 8:21–23; Zech. 7:5; Jon. 3:7–9) as a form of petitionary prayer, as a sign of mourning and repentance, and as preparation for the day of the Lord (Joel 2:14–16). The Pharisees fasted twice a week (v. 18). The short parable of the bridegroom (v. 19) announces that the eschatological banquet, when joy and feasting will replace fasting, has begun in the ministry of Jesus. His new teaching and new practice shatters the wineskins of traditional observance. However, a time for fasting (as a sign of mourning; cf. 1 Sam. 31:13) will come when Jesus is taken away (v. 20).

The final two controversies center around violations of the Sabbath law and are narrative illustrations of 2:27, "the Sabbath was made for men and women, not men and women for the Sabbath." Jesus first defends his disciples' violation (Exod. 34:21 prohibits "reaping" on the Sabbath) by appealing in rabbinic

fashion to the precedent of David (1 Sam. 21:1–5), who violated another law by eating the consecrated "bread of the presence" (Lev. 24:5–9; Exod. 25:30) and giving it to his hungry followers. Jesus himself then violates the Sabbath rest by performing a cure. The controversies here culminate with a deepening fissure between Jesus and Jewish leaders. He is angry at their hardness of heart (cf. 6:52; 8:17) and they conspire to destroy him (3:6, the first of four such references; see 11:18; 12:12; 14:1).

3:7–6:6a
Parables and Mighty Works of Jesus Cause Misunderstanding and Division

This section continues the theme of Jesus powerful in word and deed, but with escalating opposition. After a summary introduction (3:7–12) and a call narrative (3:13–19a), the first section (3:19b–4:34) comprises extensive teaching in parables (3:23; 4:2, 10, 33–34), while the second (4:35–5:43) presents four of the most dramatic "mighty works" in the Gospel. It concludes with a rejection of Jesus by his relatives (6:1–6a).

3:7–12, Summary of Activity of Jesus in Galilee. Jesus withdraws to the Sea of Galilee (from Capernaum), and crowds stream to him from a widening circle reaching beyond the confines of Palestine, anticipating his ministry there (3:7–8; cf. 7:31). He heals the sick and casts out demons who cry out, "You are the Son of God" (3:11). Mark here recapitulates the major themes of the preceding section of the Gospel: Jesus as the Messiah, powerful in word (3:8b) and deed (3:10), who, when recognized by superhuman beings (unclean spirits), enjoins secrecy. The proper meaning of Son of God (cf. 1:1, 11) remains an enigma for readers.

3:13–19, Second Call of Disciples. "He ascended the mountain" and called the disciples (3:13). This evokes Mount Sinai, where Moses received the covenant that was to constitute the people of Israel (Exod. 19–34). Again the initiative is from Jesus (3:13, "he called those whom he wanted"). Lists of the Twelve appear four times in the NT (Mark 3:16–19; Matt. 10:2–4; Luke 6:14–16; Acts 1:13). The constancy of the number twelve, with variation in the names and in their order, reflects the symbolism of the twelve tribes of Israel, which Jesus now constitutes in new form. Jesus' disciples are not drawn from the educated or upper classes and include Simon "the Cananaean" (3:18, from a Semitic word meaning "zealot" [cf. Luke 6:15], i.e., a radical believer opposed to foreign rule in Palestine), as well as Judas Iscariot (mentioned last in all lists), who will betray Jesus.

3:20–35, Teaching in Parables Causes Division Among Those Who Hear Jesus. With the constitution of the eschatological community, the next incident is a violent "clash of kingdoms" (3:20–31). It begins with Jesus at home, where some members of his family (3:21; cf. 6:1–6) think he is "out of his mind." By a literary technique used frequently (e.g., 5:21–24 [25–34] 35–43; 6:7–13 [14–29] 30–32; 14:54 [55–65] 66–72), Mark "sandwiches" (or "intercalates") one incident (the dispute on blasphemy, 3:23–34) within another (opposition from family and designation of true family of Jesus, 3:20–21, 31–34). This creates suspense (e.g., how will Jesus react to the charge of his family?) and links disparate incidents to make a unified theological statement (i.e., the divided house cannot stand, but Jesus is the stronger one who can constitute the new household of those who do God's will).

The presence of scribes "from Jerusalem" (3:22, where Jesus will ultimately suffer and die) and the serious charge of being in league with "Beelzebul," the prince of demons, heightens the opposition between Jesus and Jewish leaders. Jesus responds "in parables" (v. 23). "Parable" in Mark comprises enigmatic sayings (3:23; 4:11; 7:17) as well as longer narrative parables (4:3–9; 12:1–12). Jesus uses them both to proclaim and to defend his mission. They challenge the hearers to see themselves and God's action in a new light. The twin parables of the divided kingdom or house and the plundering of the house turn their charges back on the scribes. The exorcisms of Jesus are the plundering of Satan's house and the binding of the power of evil, by the one who emerged in the initial sections of the Gospel as the "stronger one" (1:7).

In 3:28–30, Jesus responds directly (not in parables) and harshly. Though he himself has been charged with blasphemy, his accusers commit the unforgivable sin of blasphemy against the Holy Spirit, which, in context, is the attribution to evil of a power given by God. Though all sins can be forgiven by God, the inability to distinguish good from evil makes one impervious to the presence of God.

In 3:31 the mother and brothers (and in some manuscripts, "sisters"; cf. 3:35) of Jesus (the family of 3:21) reappear and "seek" Jesus ("seek" usually has negative overtones; cf. 8:11; 11:18; 14:1). Jesus' response relativizes natural familial bonds in relationship to the "new family" created by those who do God's will. Here is an important Marcan motif. Discipleship is enlarged; neither the natural family of Jesus, nor those called to be disciples have an advantage over those who do God's will (cf. 9:38–40). Later Jesus himself will emerge as the paradigm of one who does God's will (14:36).

4:1–34, The Mystery of the Kingdom of God Given in Parables. Along with chap. 13, Mark 4 is one of the longest discourses of Jesus. It continues the teaching "in parables" (3:23) as well as the motif of the division caused by Jesus. Here the mystery of the kingdom proclaimed in parables causes division between outsiders and those to whom the mystery is given (4:10–12). It is

a patchwork of different material: 4:1–2, an elaborate scenic introduction; vv. 3–9, the parable of the sower; vv. 10–12, sayings on the reason for speaking in parables; vv. 13–20, the allegory of the seeds; vv. 21–25, four enigmatic sayings; vv. 26–32, two seed parables; and vv. 33–34, sayings on reason for speaking in parables. A pervasive motif is that the process of growth is metaphoric of the proclamation of and response to the kingdom (cf. 1 Cor. 3:6–8; 2 Esd. 4:26–31).

The first parable (4:3–9), though called "the sower," really deals with the contrast between three failed sowings and one extravagant yield. Its hearers are caught up in the rhythm of planting and failed growth, but their expectations are shattered by the final yield. A sevenfold harvest is bountiful; thirty-, sixty-, and a hundredfold are unheard of. The teaching and action of Jesus are like this: the apparent rejection in the immediately preceding narratives will not prevent the hoped-for yield.

The saying of 4:10–12, especially v. 12 (= Isa. 6:9–10), is one of the most controverted in NT scholarship. Harsh determinism is implied in saying that Jesus spoke in parables in order to prevent his hearers from perceiving or understanding "so that they may not turn again and be forgiven." (Matt. 13:13 alters Mark's "in order that" to "because.") In a deterministic worldview (like that of apocalypticism), evil that happens must have been willed in advance by God. Early Christian apologetics found in the OT a response to the rejection of Jesus. God accomplished his purpose by blinding the people as he had earlier hardened Pharaoh's heart (Exod. 4:21; 7:2–4; see also the use of Isa. 6:9–10 in Acts 28:26; John 12:40). The saying thus summarizes the *result* of the proclamation of the kingdom by Jesus and of the crucified one by the early church, rather than its purpose. It also reflects the theology of Mark, who uses it to interpret also the "parables" of 3:23–27. What the disciples are meant to see, which blinds outsiders, is that Jesus is the stronger one who defeats Satan. Satan can still hinder the growth of the kingdom (4:15), but the final extravagant result is assured (4:1–9).

In the allegory of the seeds (4:13–20) and the following sayings (4:21–25), Jesus instructs the audience of 4:10 on the challenge of discipleship. The three failed sowings become warnings for the pitfalls of discipleship: destruction by Satan's power (v. 15; cf. 8:31–32); initial enthusiasm, quashed by subsequent scandal (vv. 16–17; the NRSV translation "fall away" is too weak)—which summarizes the action of the disciples in Mark; and worldly cares, the lure of wealth, and desire for other things that "strangle the word" (vv. 18–19; cf. 10:23–25, the rich young man). The fruitful harvest (v. 20) is virtual summary of the process of conversion: hearing the word, accepting it, and bearing fruit.

The following short enigmatic sayings (4:21–25), which are found in Matthew and Luke also outside the parable discourse, are adaptations of popular proverbs to illustrate fruitful hearing (4:20). The witness of the disciples will be like a lamp (4:21; cf. Matt. 5:16); the mystery of the kingdom, though now hidden (like the identity of Jesus), will be manifest (Mark 4:22 = Luke 8:17; cf. Matt. 10:26; Luke 11:33; 12:2); the care and zeal with which they receive the word, "the measure you give," will bring extravagant results, "the measure you get" (cf. Matt. 7:2; Luke 6:38). For those who accept the word, more will be given; for those who reject it, even what they have will be lost (Matt. 13:12; cf. 25:29 = Luke 19:26; cf. 2 Esd. 7:25).

The final parables (4:26–29, 30–32), addressed to the larger audience (4:26; cf. 4:1–9), return to the growth process as a metaphor of the kingdom. Like a seed it germinates in mysterious fashion (v. 27, "he knows not how") and has power independent of human endeavor (v. 28, "produces of itself"). Proper response to the kingdom is to be ready when the harvest is announced (v. 29; cf. 1:14–15; cf. Joel 3:13). The contrast between insignificant beginnings (the small mustard seed) and the luxuriant shrub that shelters all the birds of the air (v. 32) provides an image of the contrast between Jesus with his small band of disciples and the hoped-for eschatological community (cf. Ezek. 17:22–24; Dan. 4:10–12). The conclusion (vv. 33–34) continues the motif of insiders and outsiders begun in 3:20. The private instruction Jesus gives to his disciples (4:34; often in a house, 7:17; 9:28, 33; cf. 10:42) may symbolize the continued instruction of disciples within the house-churches of Mark's community.

4:35–5:43, Culmination of Mighty Works in Galilee. This section contains dramatic exemplars of the extraordinary power of Jesus. The evils that are overcome have a cosmic and mythic power—the uncontrolled sea (4:35–41), a legion of demons who inhabit the realm of the dead (5:1–20), a woman whose twelve-year illness renders her "unclean" (5:25–34; cf. Lev. 15:25–30), and the death of a young woman (5:22–24, 35–43). Although the initial ministry of Jesus took place in Galilee, mainly around Capernaum on the west side of the Sea of Galilee, in 4:35–41 Jesus crosses this sea to gentile territory (the Decapolis, or ten cities east of the sea). Crossing the barrier between Jew and Gentile, symbolized by the sea, anticipates the mission to the Gentiles that will occupy the next phase of Jesus' ministry (6:6–8:21).

The narrative of the calming of the sea (4:35–41) is rich in OT allusions; in the OT raging waters are a symbol of chaos and ominous power (Isa. 51:9–10; Ps. 89:8–10). Divine power is manifest in confining the sea within its boundaries (Gen. 1:2, 6–9) and in quelling the wind and the waves (Pss. 74:12–14; 93:3–4). Storms and raging waters also represent threats to the believer who cries out to God for deliverance (Pss. 69:1–2, 14–15; 107:23–32; cf. Mark 4:38). The narrative continues to unfold the mystery of the identity of Jesus. Like

God at creation his word controls unbridled power. Like God, he rescues a beleaguered people. Though the disciples are filled with awe (which is proper to a theophany, a story of God manifesting himself; cf. Exod. 3:1–6; Isa. 6:1–5), they continue to ask who Jesus is (v. 41).

The exorcism of the Gerasene demoniac (5:1–20) is one of the longest and most vivid of the NT miracles. Mark has here adapted an early folkloric narrative to his theology. (Geographical details that puzzled even ancient commentators, such as the location of Gerasa some thirty miles from the Sea of Galilee, are not important to Mark.) Just as Jesus began his ministry on Jewish soil with an exorcism (1:21–28; 1:24 and 5:7 are almost identical in Gk.), his first arrival in gentile territory (where pigs could be raised; cf. Luke 15:15) involves even more violent conflict with the power of evil. The first half describes the exorcism (5:1–13), while the second describes its effect on various people (vv. 14–20). The demoniac comes to him from the realm of the dead (v. 2; cf. Isa. 65:4, where Gentiles are a people "who sit inside tombs") and his destructive power is as uncontrolled as the raging sea (5:3–5).

The narrative violates the normal pattern of exorcisms: first, meeting of demoniac and exorcist; second, silencing and expulsion of demon by exorcist; and third, departure of demon, with reaction of onlookers. Instead, on first sight (vv. 6–7) he worships Jesus and recognizes him as "Son of the Most High God"—a way of speaking of God characteristic of pagans (Dan. 3:26; 4:2; cf. Isa. 14:14). The exorcism (v. 8) has already occurred and is mentioned almost as an afterthought. By departing from the traditional arrangement, Mark highlights the Christology of the narrative. The expulsion of the demons into the herd of swine and their drowning in the sea initiates the purification of gentile territory. Since the unbridled power of the water has already been subjected to Jesus' power (4:35–41), it now becomes the tomb of the demons. The subsequent meeting between Jesus and the freed demoniac is also unusual in miracle stories. Rather than commanding silence, Jesus now commissions the man to proclaim "how much the Lord has done for you and how he has had mercy on you" (5:19). He is the prototype for Mark's community of a gentile convert, freed from the domination of evil, who becomes a missionary proclaiming God's mercy. The following two miracles, performed in a Jewish environment (5:21–22), are another instance of "sandwiching": the raising of Jairus's daughter (5:21–24a, 35–43) and the healing of a woman with a hemorrhage (5:24b–34). Both narratives have women as central characters (cf. 7:24–30) and both stress the need for faith (5:34, 36). After the initial request of Jairus, Jesus is surrounded by a crowd, while the woman who found no human assistance (vv. 25–26) approaches Jesus with belief in his power. Though the story reflects popular belief in the physical power of holy people (cf. Acts 5:15; 19:11–12), the final words of Jesus shift the emphasis to the faith of the woman. Her faith leads to salvation (liberation from evil) and health and peace (in the biblical sense of wholeness; → Peace). Like the Gerasene demoniac, she is a prototype of those who experience the benefits of the new age inaugurated by Jesus.

In 5:35–43, the narrative of Jairus's daughter resumes. Like the raising of Lazarus in John 11:1–44, the death of a loved one brings a petitioner to Jesus and becomes the occasion for presentation of Jesus' power over death. The story contrasts the turmoil of the mourners (vv. 38–39) with the calm assurance of Jesus (v. 39). As in the calming of the sea (4:40), faith is opposed to fear (5:36). Faith, especially as exemplified by those who carry the paralytic, the two women of Mark 5, and blind Bartimaeus, is a courageous trust in Jesus in the face of opposition. The faith the gospel demands (1:14–15) brings life and salvation.

The resuscitation is accomplished only by a word and couched in the same language the early church uses of the resurrection of Jesus (v. 41, "rise up"; v. 42, "she arose"). Mark here reinterprets a traditional miracle in light of the resurrection faith of his church. Resurrection is victory over the power of death and the fear it injects in human life (cf. Heb. 2:14–15).

Mark links the narratives also by the word "twelve"; the woman who suffered from vaginal bleeding for twelve years (5:25) could not bear children, and the young woman dies at the age of twelve, at the brink of the marriageable age in that culture. Both women can now bring forth new life, symbolic of the new life the gospel brings.

6:1–6a, Rejection in His Own Country. Jesus' mighty works conclude with a rejection, not by opponents (cf. 3:6), but by his townspeople and relatives. The questions (vv. 2–3)—"From where do all these things come to him? What is the wisdom given him? What mighty works are wrought by his hand?"—summarize the preceding section (the words of wisdom are parables, the mighty works the three miracles) and continue the theme that those closest to Jesus are most in doubt as to his identity. Jesus responds with a proverb (confirming his reputation as one who possesses wisdom) about the frequent rejection of people by those who should know them best, which the narrator heightens by saying that "he was amazed at their unbelief." Unlike those in the two previous narratives whose faith brought healing and salvation, Jesus' relatives and townspeople do not allow their familiar expectations to be shattered and remain as outsiders (cf. 3:31–34).

Part Two: 6:6b–8:21

Jesus Extends His Ministry to Jews and Gentiles Beyond Galilee

After initial narratives dealing with discipleship (6:6b–30), this section is characterized by teaching and

mighty works within and beyond the confines of Galilee. It manifests a number of characteristics: sea crossings (6:45–51; 8:10, 13), movement beyond Galilee (7:31; 8:10), and doublets of significant narratives (two feedings, 6:31–44 and 8:1–9; two healings, 7:31–36 and 8:22–26; two dialogues about bread, 7:24–30 and 8:14–21). The repetitions are correlated with the geography and audience. What Jesus does for Jews in Jewish territory, he also does for Gentiles in their lands. He is a prototype for Mark's community in its mission of proclaiming the gospel to the nations (13:10).

6:6b–13, 30
Summary of Jesus' Activity and Commission of the Twelve

This section begins with a short summary (6:6b) of Jesus' itinerant ministry and then moves to the third call and commissioning narrative (6:7–13), which intensifies the earlier calls (cf. 1:16–20; 3:7–12). Like Jesus, who leaves family and home, disciples are to live a prophetic and itinerant lifestyle (v. 8) on the margin of society and, like him, they are to confront the power of evil and summon people to conversion.

6:14–29
Interlude: The Passion and Death of John the Baptist

This relatively long and somewhat independent narrative (the only one in Mark not about Jesus or the disciples) is interposed here by Mark (6:30 logically follows 6:13). It illustrates the risk of a prophetic lifestyle that confronts brutal power and prefigures the subsequent execution and arrest of Jesus. The questions of Herod in 6:14–16 reflect confusion in popular messianic expectations and anticipate similar questions in 8:27–30. The story of John the Baptist is at variance with the account of John's death by the first-century Jewish historian Josephus (*Antiquities of the Jews* 18.5.1–2, §116–19) who stresses Herod's fear of John as a popular leader. The attribution of the blame for John's death to Herodias, the dance of her daughter before assembled dignitaries, and Herod's remorse give the account the flavor of a folktale. Herod's vacillation anticipates (6:20, 26) that of Pilate (15:6–15). Both John and Jesus die because of the misuse of power by brutal, but weak, secular rulers (cf. 10:42).

6:31–56
Jesus the Shepherd of Israel

At their return the disciples recount all that they had done and taught—the same two things that characterize Jesus' ministry—and then Jesus retires with them to a "deserted place" (6:30–31). Jesus is the compassionate shepherd who feeds a pilgrim people, comes to the aid of storm-tossed disciples, and extends his ministry to the masses.

6:31–44, The Feeding of the Five Thousand. The "desert place" or wilderness (cf. 1:12) is the setting for a miraculous feeding (6:31–44; cf. 8:1–10), the only Galilean miracle of Jesus narrated in all four Gospels (see Matt. 14:13–21; 15:32–39; Luke 9:10b–17; John 6:1–13). These accounts show a double influence: from the OT narratives of the miraculous feeding of the people in the wilderness (Exod. 16:14–35; Neh. 9:15; Ps. 78:17–29, explicit in John 6:31–32), and from the Last Supper accounts of the Gospels (e.g., Mark 6:41, he blessed, broke, and gave the loaves to the disciples; cf. 14:22). They reflect the expectation of the eschatological banquet (Isa. 25:6–8), when God will feast with the elect (*2 Bar.* 29:5–8). Jesus, as the shepherd of Israel who "has compassion" on the crowd because they are like sheep without a shepherd (Num. 27:17; Ezek. 34:15), evokes God's compassion and care in the OT (Exod. 3:7–12; Isa. 49:8–13; Ps. 23).

The narratives also draw on the double symbolism of food as teaching (Prov. 9:5; 1 Cor. 3:2; John 6:41–48) and as nourishment. Jesus first teaches the crowds many things (v. 34) and then satisfies their hunger (vv. 35–44). Though the numbers (five loaves, two fish, twelve baskets, and five thousand people) are most probably symbolic, the referents are unclear. Seven, the combination of loaves and fish, frequently symbolizes adequacy or perfection; the baskets are enough for the eschatological banquet for the twelve tribes, and the five thousand people may simply be a way of exalting the miracle of Jesus over that of Elijah who feeds one hundred people (2 Kings 4:42–44).

6:45–52, Sea Crossings and Healings. The following "sea miracle" (6:45–52; cf. 4:45–52) again stresses the power of Jesus over the waves and the fear of the disciples. Here added to the disciples' amazement (cf. 4:51) is the harsh view that their hearts were hardened (cf. 8:17) "because they did not understand about the loaves." The feeding (like the other mighty works of Jesus) is not simply a marvel, but a symbol of the new age inaugurated by Jesus, the compassionate shepherd, who comes to the aid of suffering humanity. Their enduring fear and suspicion that Jesus is a "phantom" (6:49) manifests an unconverted heart. Jesus' use of the revelational formula "I am" (6:50; cf. 13:6; Exod. 3:13–15) turns the pericope into a veiled theophany.

6:53–56, Summary. A "Marcan summary" (cf. 1:45; 3:7–13) of the expanding extent of Jesus' mighty works (villages, cities, country) occurs in 6:53–56, and provides a transition to the stories of disputes that follow in chap. 7.

7:1–23
Jesus' New Teaching with Authority Breaks Down the Barrier Between Jew and Gentile

There is a long dispute on "clean and unclean" in 7:1–23. As a recollection of the ministry of Jesus (stage

1; see Introduction) this section echoes attacks on Jesus and his followers as nonobservant outsiders and Jesus' counterrejection of legalism. Since purity regulations are not simply ritual taboos, but a means of preserving religious and ethnic identity in a hostile world, the dispute deals also with whether the community is to be exclusivist or open to "unclean" elements, e.g., Gentiles.

The controversy is divided into a dispute over clean and unclean vessels (7:1–8) and on the institution of the corban (7:9–13; see below) followed by a parabolic saying on clean and unclean (7:14–17) with a private explanation to the disciples (7:18–23; cf. 4:1–20). This defense of the neglect by his disciples of ritual practice culminates, like earlier disputes, in a pronouncement contrasting human institutions and divine precepts (cf. 2:23–28). In citing Isa. 29:13 ("this people . . . precepts of men"), Jesus recalls not only the particular verse, but other prophetic attacks on misuse of religious practices (e.g., Isa. 1:10–20; 58:1–14; Amos 5:21–24).

The distorting power of legalism is then underscored by Jesus' harsh attack on corban (7:9–13), an Aramaic term for a practice whereby children were allowed to make a financial offering to the Temple that would then absolve them from using this money to care for their parents. As in the case with ritual uncleanness, Jesus invokes the OT (Exod. 20:12; 21:17; Deut. 5:16; Lev. 20:9) against later interpretations, which are equivalent to voiding the word of God. Like the prophets Jesus here defends the vulnerable members of the community and summons people to fidelity to the Decalogue. Like the prophets, Jesus teaches (7:14–21) that external religious actions are barren without integrity and purity of heart (see Hos. 6:6; Amos 5:23; Mic. 6:6–8; Isa. 58:1–14). Such spiritualization of ritual law by making interior attitudes and dispositions the criteria of morality is characteristic of Judaism in a Hellenistic environment (e.g., Philo of Alexandria) as well as of early Christianity.

7:24–8:10
Jesus' Mighty Works Among Gentiles

7:24–30, The Syrophoenician Woman. As if to enforce the previous teaching, Jesus himself now enters unclean territory (Tyre, 7:24–30), where he performs his first mighty work on behalf of a gentile woman whose daughter is possessed by an unclean spirit. The brisk dialogue (vv. 26–29) contrasts with the formal confrontation with the Pharisees. Jesus seems to dismiss her initial request with a slur on the Gentiles (who were often called "dogs" by observant Jews). With rhetorical skill equal to that of Jesus in the previous pericopes, the woman turns the saying back on Jesus (v. 27), who then heals her daughter "because of what she said" (v. 29). The woman is a model of that lively and courageous faith that constitutes a proper response to Jesus.

7:31–37, The Deaf Mute. The following story, also in gentile territory, again pictures Jesus as the missionary giving hearing and speech (7:31–37). In contrast to his disciples and compatriots who hear but do not listen, the once deaf and mute Gentile becomes a herald of Jesus' mighty works (7:37).

8:1–10, The Feeding of the Four Thousand. This feeding, a virtual retelling of the earlier one, presents Jesus as one who gives sustenance to people in gentile territory. They too will be fed with the bread given to the children (see 7:27). Like the earlier story, it takes place in the wilderness and reflects the language of the Lord's Supper. However, in place of the five loaves and two fish, we now have seven loaves and seven baskets, with "a few fish." As earlier, the numbers are symbolic, but the referents equally uncertain. "Seven" may simply suggest a totality of gifts for the Gentiles equal to those given to the Jews. The number four thousand may be less than the earlier five thousand to indicate the precedence of Israel in salvation history (cf. Rom. 9:1–9).

8:11–21
Jesus' Actions Culminate in Opposition and Misunderstanding

Mark concludes the public manifestation of Jesus with two vignettes about two groups that have misunderstood the mighty works of Jesus throughout his ministry. In 8:11–12 the Pharisees ask for a sign from heaven (i.e., some convincing mark of divine approval). They are the opposite of those who approached Jesus simply with faith. Deeply affected by such a request (v. 12, "he sighed deeply in his spirit"), Jesus rejects their attitude, saying that no sign will be given to this generation (used in a negative sense; Matt. 16:4 reads here "an evil and adulterous" generation; cf. Mark 8:38).

The misunderstanding of the disciples is described in a particularly enigmatic narrative (8:14–21). Jesus first cautions them to beware of the "leaven" (i.e., bread as a metaphor of teaching, with the overtones of leaven as an agent of corruption) of the Pharisees and of Herod. The disciples who have only one loaf (8:14) then discuss their plight in having no bread (8:16). Jesus tells them that their hearts are hardened and, like the outsiders of 4:10–12, they have "eyes which do not see and ears which do not hear."

Jesus then refers back to the two multiplications of the loaves, eliciting from the disciples answers about his actions, and asks if they do not yet understand (8:19–21). The disciples never answer his question. Both the Pharisees and the disciples lack faith. The Pharisees seek for a sign; the disciples do not see beyond the actions of Jesus to the power of his person.

They do not realize that the one loaf they have with them (Jesus) is more adequate than demonstrations of power.

Part Three: 8:22–10:52

Jesus Begins His Journey to Jerusalem Where as the Son of Man He Will Give His Life as a Ransom for Many

The centerpiece of the Gospel narrates the journey of Jesus and the disciples from the northernmost point of Palestine (Caesarea Philippi) southward to Jerusalem. References to being "on the way" (8:27; 9:33, 34; 10:17, 32, 46) punctuate the account, along with periodic geographical references (8:22, 27; 9:30, 33; 10:1, 32). Since the actual course of the journey is ill defined, "way" serves as metaphor for the way of discipleship (cf. Acts 9:2) that Jesus here teaches his disciples by word and example.

The whole section is framed by two giving-of-sight stories (8:22–26; 10:46–52) and structured around three passion predictions in the pattern: Jesus predicts his forthcoming suffering (8:31; 9:30–31; 10:32–34), followed by misunderstanding on the part of the disciples (8:32–33; 9:32; 10:35–41), which evokes further instruction by Jesus on the deeper demands of discipleship (8:34–9:1; 9:33–50; 10:42–45). Also, from now on there are very few miracles. Those recounted (9:14–29; 10:46–52; 11:12–14, 20) lack public acclamation and serve principally to instruct the disciples.

8:22–26
Transitional Giving-of-Sight Story

The healing of the blind man (8:22–26) at Bethsaida, a city in the north of Galilee, is important in the literary structure of the Gospel. It serves as a transition from the Galilean ministry to the journey southward to Jerusalem. More important, along with 10:46–52 (another healing of a blind man), it provides the frame for the important middle section, where Jesus gives his disciples "insight" about his forthcoming Passion and death. After the description of the disciples themselves as blind in 8:18, the first healing, which takes place in progressive stages (8:23–25), symbolizes the progressive journey to understanding that the disciples must make. At the second healing the man given his sight becomes a disciple who "follows on the way" (10:52). Between these stories of two blind people given sight, Jesus initiates his disciples into the mystery of the cross.

8:27–9:29
The First Passion Prediction Unit

8:27–30, The Confession of Peter. Throughout the first part of the Gospel Jesus' actions evoke questions about his identity, e.g., 1:27, "What is this . . . ?"; 4:41, "Who then is this . . . ?"; 6:2, "What is this wisdom . . . ?"; 6:14–15, the questions of Herod. Here Jesus himself poses the question "Who do people say that I am?" (i.e., human beings in contrast to those with supernatural power). The disciples recount the popular opinions, but then Jesus asks their opinion. Peter, the first called, responds simply, "You are the Messiah [anointed one]," at which Jesus commands silence. In the structure of the Gospel this dialogue sets the tone for the subsequent unfolding of the proper understanding of Jesus as the Christ and the consequences of confessing him as such. For Mark's readers (and subsequent generations) the challenge facing every future believer is how properly to confess Jesus as Messiah amid conflicting claims.

8:31–33, The First Passion Prediction. The passion predictions, though in present form written from a postresurrection perspective (like the Gospel as a whole), contain a historical core. Jesus did evoke mortal opposition from segments of Jewish society and Roman leaders. The earlier fate of the prophets (2 Chron. 24:20–22; 36:15–16) and of John made him aware that he might suffer a similar fate. Like the prophets and the suffering, just people of the OT (e.g., Wisd. of Sol. 2:10–20; 5:15), he hoped for vindication.

The first passion prediction plainly indicates in what sense Jesus is the Messiah (8:31). He is such as Son of Man (that human figure) who "must" suffer and be rejected by the leaders of his people. The term "must" or "it is necessary" (v. 31) offers no detailed theology of suffering, but is a concise reference to collections of OT texts cited to show that Jesus' suffering was willed by God. Coupled with the subsequent narrative of the transfiguration (9:1–8), this section (which is the approximate midpoint of the Gospel) presents a "Gospel in miniature," which reflects the pattern of rejection followed by vindication/exaltation found elsewhere in early Christian confessions (Phil. 2:5–11; cf. 1 Pet. 2:7–8) and preaching (Acts 2:22–24; 3:12–16; 4:10–12).

After his spontaneous confession (8:29), Peter's misunderstanding is surprising (8:32b). He "rebukes" Jesus—the same term used of Jesus' "rebuke" of demons (1:25). Like the relatives of 3:21, Peter may think Jesus "out of his mind." Jesus responds with an even stronger rebuke and calls Peter "Satan" (8:33). Like Satan (1:13) he attempts to turn Jesus away from God's will. Etymologically "Satan" means "adversary," and Peter is such because "he does not think the thoughts of God, but human thoughts" (v. 33).

8:34–9:1, Further Instruction on Discipleship. These sayings, often called "the cost of discipleship," are addressed to the crowd and not simply the disciples of 8:27. They unfold the most radical implications of proper confession of Jesus as Messiah.

Would-be disciples must enter into that same mystery that characterized Jesus' life. Following of Jesus, denial of self-interest, even to the point of losing one's life for Jesus and the gospel (v. 35), paradoxically results in making life more secure (i.e., saving it). For a community recently exposed to the horrors of Nero's persecution, such sayings are both challenging and consoling.

The demands of discipleship are then supported by the threat of eschatological rejection of those who are ashamed of Jesus and his words (v. 38). This saying reflects current apocalyptic expectation that at the final judgment those who suffer unjustly will be vindicated and rewarded, while their persecutors will be punished (cf. Mark 13:24–27; 2 Thess. 1:4–5; Phil. 1:28; *1 Enoch* 60:6; 100–101). The final saying (9:1), in which Jesus says that some of his hearers will be alive when the kingdom comes in power, reflects the expectation in early Christianity that the Parousia (or return) of the Lord was imminent (1 Thess. 4:15–18; 1 Cor. 7:29, 31).

9:2–13, The Transfiguration. After the prediction of the Passion and the sober demands of following Jesus, Mark presents a vision of the exaltation of the suffering Messiah (9:2–9). The term "transfigured" (v. 2) is used elsewhere of the transformation of the risen body (Phil. 3:21; 2 Cor. 3:18; cf. 1 Cor. 15:51). The account is rich in OT allusions: the appearance of the glory of the Lord to Moses on Mount Sinai after six days (Exod. 24:16–17, cf. Mark 9:2); glistening garments as a sign of the glorified state (Dan. 7:9; cf. Rev. 3:5, 4:4, 7:9; *1 Enoch* 62:15–16; *2 Enoch* 22:8); Elijah and Moses symbolizing the "law and the prophets" as well as two people who were taken up into God's presence (2 Kings 2:9–12; Deut. 34:6 was interpreted in postbiblical thought as the "assumption" of Moses); and the cloud and the voice as symbols of God's presence (Exod. 16:10; 19:9, 16). After the appearance of the exalted Jesus, in stylized misunderstanding, Peter (9:5) says, "It is good for us to be here," and requests that they build "three dwellings" (a term for the dwelling of God with the people, Exod. 25:1–9; Ezek. 37:27; 43:7). The account culminates in the voice proclaiming again (9:7; cf. 1:11) that Jesus is God's beloved son, whose word is authoritative ("listen to him"). Just as at the baptism the voice from heaven sanctioned the first phase of the ministry of God's son, the more elaborate theophany of the transfiguration inaugurates the second phase (suffering and death). Jesus is God's son not only as one powerful in word and work, but in a deeper sense as the one who follows his Father's will even to the cross. Peter's unanswered request represents an attempt to rest in the glory without following the way of the cross. The narrative ends suddenly with the disappearance of the supernatural phenomenon. The disciples suddenly (9:8) see only Jesus with them. The vision and the hope it offers is no substitute for the path they must follow with Jesus, a perspective emphasized by the concluding sayings that caution secrecy until after the resurrection (9:9) and return to the theme of the deaths of John and Jesus (9:10–13).

9:14–29, The Possessed Boy. After the serene image of the transfiguration, Jesus then returns to find the disciples who earlier had cast out many demons (6:13) unable to exorcise a particularly destructive demon. Jesus attributes their inability to lack of faith (9:19, cf. 6:6) and the story becomes the occasion for instruction on faith. Jesus tells the father that "all things can be done for one who believes" (cf. 11:20–25), which evokes the prayer of the father, "Lord I believe, help my unbelief." The exorcism (9:25–27) is then recounted in more detail than normal with an overlay of resurrection language (vv. 26–27, "he is dead . . . he rose up"). Alone with the disciples Jesus tells them that such a demon can be driven out only by prayer. Whatever the original form of this vivid narrative, Mark has adapted it to his theology. The promise of glory and the coming exaltation of Jesus (the transfiguration) exist along with destructive power of evil. During Jesus' absence (which Mark's community experiences), prayer enables his followers to confront this power. The path from unbelief to belief begins with the cry, "Help my unbelief." The first passion prediction unit thus concludes with a summons to faith and prayer.

9:30–50
The Second Passion Prediction Unit

9:30–32, Second Passion Prediction. The journey resumes in 9:30 followed quickly by a condensed passion prediction (the oldest form of the three), with a brief indication of the misunderstanding by the disciples (9:32). These will be followed by three collections of sayings (9:33–37, 38–41, 42–50) addressed to the disciples.

9:33–37, Dispute over the Greatest and Instruction on Service. In a pattern that will be expanded in 10:35–45, though having heard Jesus' prediction of his humiliation, the disciples argue about "who was the greatest" (9:34). Jesus' response in both word and symbol spells out the ethical implications of his example. The one who would be first must be last and servant of all (v. 35; cf. 10:45). He then takes a child, who in biblical thought is a symbol not of innocence but of powerlessness and vulnerability, and says that whoever receives the child receives him (9:36). In contrast to the disciples' concern for power, Jesus says that only those who accept the powerless and vulnerable will receive both him and God (v. 37, "the one who sent me"; cf. Matt. 25:31–46). Jesus will later say that one must actually become like the child to enter the kingdom of heaven (10:15).

9:38–50, The Unknown Exorcist and Teaching on Discipleship. The following pericope (vv. 38–41) undercuts any exclusive claim of the Twelve to divine power. Rather ironically since only a short time ago they could not exorcise (9:18), they forbid another exorcist who "was not following us" (v. 38). Jesus' reply repeats that universalistic thrust found earlier that those who are not explicitly disciples can do God's work (cf. 3:31–35).

The final section (9:42–50) collects originally independent sayings and unites them by catchwords, e.g., "scandal" (9:42, 43, 45, 47) and "salt" (9:49–50). They depict in radical images the risk of inauthentic discipleship and suggest that vying for positions of power can cause little ones (not only the powerless, but those weak in faith) to "fall away" (lit., "be tripped"; the Gk. word is the root of the English "scandalize"; cf. 4:17). The seriousness of such "scandal" is supported by metaphors that suggest self-mutilation is better than losing the opportunity to enter the kingdom of God (9:47). The section concludes with a mixed metaphor of salt as accompanying Temple sacrifices (Lev. 2:13; Ezek. 43:24; cf. Exod. 30:35) and as a seasoning and preservative for food. Disciples who bicker about power, rather than lead sacrificial lives, will lose their effectiveness (salt losing its saltiness). Rather, they are to live in peace.

10:1–31
Interlude: Teaching to Crowds Across the Jordan

In 10:1 Jesus resumes the journey and, under the general theme of "discipleship on the way," Mark locates here the longest "ethical" section of his Gospel (addressed to the crowds as well as to disciples). Jesus offers instruction on marriage (10:1–12), children (10:13–16), riches (10:17–27), and the rewards of discipleship (10:28–31). Since this teaching treats "domestic" issues and is located in gentile territory ("beyond the Jordan"), it addresses concerns that are alive in the "house-churches" of Mark's community. (On house-churches, see Rom. 16:5; 1 Cor. 16:19; Col. 4:15.)

10:1–12, Teaching on Divorce. To "test" Jesus, the Pharisees question his attitude toward divorce (10:1–12), an issue that divided the Pharisees themselves at the time of Jesus. His response is not simply the prohibition of divorce, but a denunciation of the "hardness of heart" that opened the door to abusive divorce (v. 5). According to OT law (Deut. 24:1–4) and its application at the time of Jesus, husbands could divorce their wives on very little cause. Such practice could lead to abuse and exploitation of women. By citing the creation narratives of Genesis (esp. 1:27; 2:24) in his response, Jesus counters that the purpose of marriage was lifelong mutuality and interdependence, not dominance of one party by the other. Spouses cannot treat each other as property to be discarded.

10:13–16, Receiving Children. The sayings on children (10:13–16; cf. 9:33–37, 42) follow naturally after a discussion of marriage, and also may be located here because of a dispute in the early community about the baptism or admission of children. The "blessing" and "laying on of hands" (v. 16) suggest some rite of admission. Children are also without legal rights (like women under first-century divorce laws), so the two incidents reflect Jesus' concern for the powerless.

10:17–31, The Rich Young Man and Teaching on Wealth. This narrative (10:17–22) is the only instance in the Gospels where a person refuses a call to follow Jesus, and it occasions a longer discourse on wealth (10:23–31). The would-be disciple is an observant seeker after eternal life. For this Jesus "loved him" and invites him to join the circle of those first called by doing as they did (cf. 1:18; 10:28). He becomes sad since he cannot abandon his many possessions (cf. 8:36). Though there is biblical precedent for associating riches with God's blessings (e.g., Job 1:10; 42:10; Ps. 128:1–2; Isa. 3:10), the more dominant strain (taken over by Mark and expanded by Luke) is the pervasive concern for the danger of wealth. The rich are described as wise in their own eyes (Prov. 28:11) and are prone to apostasy and violence (Amos 5:4–13; Isa. 2:6–8; cf. James 5:1–6).

The subsequent sayings (10:23–25) make this clear. After the departure of the now saddened rich young man, Jesus states, "How hard it is for those who have wealth to enter the kingdom of God" (v. 23). They cannot make the radical sacrifice called for earlier (9:43–47). Yet even this seeming impossibility (underscored by the comparison of the camel and the eye of the needle) can yield to the power of God (cf. Gen. 18:14).

The tone of the conversation shifts with the unfinished exclamation of Peter, "We have left everything and followed you" (10:28; Matt. 19:27 completes the implicit question, by adding "What then will we have?"). The context of Peter's exclamation is the concern of the disciples throughout this section for the rewards of discipleship, and its background is the often extravagant pictures of the future rewards of the just (*1 Enoch* 25:1–6; 92:3–5; 2 Esd. 7:88–99; Matt. 19:28). Jesus' response, rather, directs Peter to the rewards of this life. The community of disciples that will be formed by the call of Jesus will replace natural family and material possessions (10:30). Such sayings are not simply figures of speech. They here reflect the ethos of Mark's community. Early Christians, whose conversions often involved a break with their natural families, experienced new familial bonds (Acts 4:32; 1 Cor. 4:15; Rom. 16:13–17). Hospitality and mutual ac-

ceptance gave them new homes, mothers, brothers, and sisters.

Among the new family Mark omits "fathers," for in the ethos of this whole section service is to replace patriarchal power. The somewhat jarring comment that all this comes "with persecutions" mirrors actual persecutions (e.g., under Nero). Persecutions could arise also from their criticism of wealth and power, from their willingness to accept children into the community, which confronted the *patria potestas* (Lat.), or absolute power of the father, in that culture, as well as from their rejection of the patriarchal structure of marriage.

10:32–45
The Third Passion Prediction Unit

The middle section of the Gospel concludes with Jesus and the disciples almost in solemn procession drawing near Jerusalem (10:32). The pattern of prediction (10:32–34) and misunderstanding (10:35–37) is elaborated by sayings of Jesus that are central to the theology of the whole Gospel (10:43–45). The misunderstandings after the prediction do not center on the problem of the suffering of Jesus as in 8:32–33, but on the implications of this for his followers. The misunderstandings are twofold: first, the request of James and John for vice-regency in the coming kingdom (10:35–40), and second, the indignation of the other disciples (10:40–42; cf. 9:34).

10:32–34, Third Passion Prediction. The third passion prediction is the most detailed of the three and a capsule summary of the passion narrative.

10:35–40, The Request of James and John. In response to the request of James and John to sit at the right and left "in your glory" (i.e., when Jesus returns as judge, 8:38; 13:26), Jesus asks whether they can drink the cup he will drink and be baptized with the baptism he will be baptized with (10:38). On the narrative level this points to the forthcoming Passion, when Jesus will accept the cup that his Father offers (14:36). Since in the narrative the same disciples who protest their willingness to accept the fate of Jesus will flee at his arrest, Jesus' prediction of 10:39 ("you will drink") may be veiled allusion to the subsequent martyrdoms of James and John. In the reference to the baptism and cup, Mark's community also can reflect on their own baptisms and celebration of the Lord's Supper as a summons to follow Jesus on the way of discipleship.

10:41–45, The Indignation of the Other Disciples and Jesus' Example of True Discipleship. After the indignation of the other disciples at the request, the sayings of 10:42–45 constitute the high point of discipleship instruction of 8:22–10:52. In contrast to gentile rulers who "lord it over them," the disciples should strive to be "servants" (10:43; the Gk. term means "menial table server"), and those who wish to be "first" (like James and John) must be slaves, that is, at the beck and call of others (v. 44). The basis is that "the Son of Man came not to be served but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many" (v. 45). This saying derives its force by contrast with the first part of the Gospel in which Jesus is the powerful Son of God. Power is here radically redefined in terms of self-emptying service. Behind this saying stands the figure of the Suffering Servant of Isa. 52:13–53:12, whose death brings freedom to others. "Ransom" is a technical term for the money paid to purchase freedom for a slave. Here and in 14:24, Jesus' life itself is given as such a ransom for many (cf. Rom. 3:24).

10:46–52
Transitional Giving-of-Sight Story

The healing of blind Bartimaeus at Jericho (about twenty miles northeast of Jerusalem in the Jordan Valley; cf. 1:5), along with 8:22–26, not only provides the frame for the middle section, but provides the transition to the Jerusalem ministry. Bartimaeus's cry to Jesus, "Son of David, have mercy on me" (10:47), evokes the story of David returning to claim his kingdom in Jerusalem (2 Sam. 19:31–20:3). This confession also contains the first public and unrebuked recognition of Jesus as royal Messiah. Paradoxically, Jesus, who earlier announced the imminence of God's kingdom (1:14), will reign in Jerusalem, but from the cross (15:26). After the healing, the saying of Jesus, "Your faith has saved you" (10:52), and the action of the blind man have symbolic force. The blind man who asks simply for mercy is given sight. Unlike the disciples' desire for power, which blinds them to the necessity of suffering, the faith of the blind man leads to salvation. He follows on the way as a disciple.

Part Four: 11:1–13:37
The Messianic Actions and Teaching of Jesus in Jerusalem

With the goal of the journey attained, Jesus now enters Jerusalem with his disciples. Whereas Galilee was the place of revelation of Jesus as the powerful Son of God and of his acclamation by crowds (e.g., 1:28, 45; 2:13; 3:9; 5:21; 8:1), Jerusalem quickly becomes a center of opposition (11:18; 12:12). The only mighty work of Jesus performed here is a destructive miracle (11:12–14). He calls the Temple a "den of robbers" (11:17) and engages in controversy with Temple authorities (11:27–12:38). The Jerusalem leaders are equated with the unfaithful tenants who kill the son of the owner, and the vineyard will be given "to others" (12:1–12). After leaving the Temple (13:1), never again to enter it, Jesus utters a series of ominous prophecies against the city and

Temple (13:1–27). The passion narrative unfolds in Jerusalem, where the Jerusalem aristocracy in collusion with the Roman authority effects the death of Jesus (14:1–15:47). Though the resurrection is recounted in Jerusalem (16:1–8), the promised meeting between Jesus and his first followers is to take place in Galilee (16:7). The place of the first revelation becomes the center of the hoped-for appearance.

The polemic against the Jewish leaders and Jewish institutions should be evaluated in its historical and literary context. The most bitter opposition to Jesus in Mark comes not from the bulk of the people and the Pharisees, but from established Temple personnel who were in league with the Romans and themselves considered illegitimate by other Jewish groups (e.g., by the Essenes). The Gospel is also written for Christians a generation after the death of Jesus, and most likely after the destruction of the Temple in A.D. 70. Different Jewish groups *and* early Christians are claiming to be authentic heirs of the traditions of Israel, and the Gospels reflect the bitterness of interreligious strife (esp. Matt. 23). Mark also reflects the apocalyptic or deterministic view of history that attributes the rejection of Jesus by his own people to God's foreordained plan.

11:1–12:44
Ministry of Jesus in Jerusalem, Conflict of Kingdoms

Though much of the material here is pre-Marcan, such as the expulsion of the buyers and sellers from the Temple (see John 2:13–22) and a collection of five controversies (11:27–33; 12:13–17, 18–27, 28–34, 35–37; cf. 2:1–3:6), the Evangelist organizes the traditions according to his theology. He constructs a stylized chronology of six days in Jerusalem, three prior to the passion narrative (11:1, 12, 19) and three prior to the crucifixion and burial (14:1, 12, 17; 15:42). The events of the initial days are also carefully organized. After the entry into Jerusalem and the initial opposition (11:1–26), Mark places a controversy (11:27–33) and a parable (12:1–12) at the center of the Jerusalem ministry. In these first two sections the opposition so heightens that the vineyard (heritage of Israel) will be given to others (the Jewish Christian community of Mark). In the final controversies (12:13–37) Jesus teaches about issues that are at the center of the missionary proclamation of the gospel to the nations (13:10). After a final attack on the scribes (12:38–40) and a transitional story about a widow (12:41–44), Jesus abandons the Temple (13:1).

11:1–26, Entry into Jerusalem, Cleansing of the Temple, and Cursing of the Fig Tree. The messianic arrival at Jerusalem (11:1–11) comprises two distinct phases: the obtaining of the colt (vv. 1–6) and the acclamation of the crowd (vv. 7–11). Though often called the "triumphal entry" into Jerusalem, the acclamation of Jesus takes place prior to the actual entry (11:10), which is simply a cursory visit by Jesus and the Twelve. The narrative, dense with OT allusions, presents and reinterprets contemporary messianic expectations. The Mount of Olives (11:1) was associated with the arrival of the Messiah (Zech. 14:4; cf. Josephus *Jewish War* 2.13.5, §261–63). In contrast, however, to the militant Davidic Messiah attested in texts such as *Psalms of Solomon* 17, Jesus arrives, "humble, riding on a donkey" (Zech. 9:9). Though military leaders rode on horses, messengers of peace rode on donkeys. Garments were thrown on the ground to welcome an anointed king (2 Kings 9:13); the colt on which no one has ridden may recall the as yet unyoked cows that pulled the Ark (1 Sam. 6:7). In appropriating the narrative Mark stresses three things: first, Jesus as the Lord of his destiny and reliable prophet whose word is verified (11:1–8; cf. 14:12–16); second, the true understanding of Jesus' Davidic messiahship—Jesus is a peaceful Messiah who prepares for the coming of his father's kingdom (11:10); and third, the contrast between the people who acclaim Jesus (11:7–10) and the leaders who plot to kill him (11:18; 12:12). The cursing of the fig tree (11:12–14, 20–25) and the cleansing of the Temple (11:15–19) are "intercalated" and interpret each other. The cursing of the fig tree may have developed from a parable such as Luke 13:6–9, where the unfruitful tree symbolizes an unfaithful people (Isa. 5:1–7; Jer. 8:13; Mic. 7:1) and, along with the expulsion of the buyers and sellers from the Temple, constitutes a parabolic action (familiar in the prophets, e.g., Jer. 27:2; Ezek. 4:1–5:17, also connected with destruction of Jerusalem).

The enigmatic comment in 11:13 that the tree is cursed for not having fruit even though "it was not the season for figs" reflects apocalyptic determinism. Paraphrased it means, "it was determined that this would not be the proper time for the Jewish leaders to bear fruit," i.e., receive Jesus. The barren tree and the mercantile Temple symbolize to Mark's community that the older religious institutions and observances are not binding (cf. 7:1–23), and they are now to see their community as a fulfillment of Isaiah's prophecy of a "house of prayer for all nations" (11:17; Isa. 56:7). The instruction on prayer (11:21–25) evoked by Isaiah's prophecy directs the disciples' attention away from the fig tree and Temple to the challenge they face. More important than religious institution and practice is faith in God (11:22), which can accomplish the seemingly impossible (i.e., move mountains; cf. 10:27). Such faith is required in order to forgive "anyone" (v. 25) against whom you have anything. This exhortation puts into proper perspective the harsh actions and sayings of Jesus of the two previous incidents. Faith, prayer, and forgiveness are more important than complacency over the rejection of the Temple.

11:27–12:12, The Center of the Jerusalem Ministry: Jesus, the Rejected Son, Teaches with Messianic Authority. The "third entry" into Jerusalem (11:27; see 11:11, 15) is quickly followed by a "trial" of Jesus (11:28–33) over the source of his authority by the high priests, scribes, and elders (the same groups that conduct the formal trial in 15:53–65). In the Galilean controversies (2:1–3:6), the authority (2:10, 28) of Jesus as Son of Man was established. The Jewish leaders remain blind to this authority. When challenged (11:28), Jesus responds in rabbinic fashion with a counterquestion, asking them to take a stand on the baptism of John. Caught on the horns of a dilemma (admitting John's divine authority and disbelieving him, or criticizing a popular figure), they are reduced to silence. Since John prophesied that a stronger one would come after him (1:7) and since Jesus' authority rests on divine confirmation (1:11; 9:7), Mark's readers know that the officials are implicitly indicting themselves for their rejection of Jesus.

The parable of the wicked vineyard tenants (12:1–12) forms the centerpiece of the Jerusalem ministry. As an original parable of Jesus, it could express the constant reaching out by the long-suffering God for human response in the face of continued rejection (cf. Hos. 2:2, 14–20; Jer. 3:11–14; Ezek. 16:59–63). Jesus speaks parabolically of his ministry as embodying such an offer of God's mercy to all who hear him.

Its present form manifests strong allegorical elements, such as the verbal similarity between 12:1 and Isa. 5:1–2 (where the vineyard equals the house of Israel; cf. Isa. 5:7); 12:2–5, the repeated sending of servants (a term used in the OT for prophets, Jer. 7:25; 25:4; Amos 3:7; Zech. 1:6) and their violent rejection (also recalling the fate of OT prophets, 1 Kings 18:13; 22:26–27; 2 Chron. 24:20–22; 36:15–16); the final sending of the "beloved son" (12:6, a term used elsewhere for Jesus, 1:11; 9:7); and the destruction of the tenants and the transfer of the vineyard "to others" (12:9), reflecting the destruction of the Temple. The saying on the rejected stone (vv. 10–11) that becomes the cornerstone (or keystone) of a new building is added to the parable from a collection of OT "stone" texts used by early Christians as a defensive explanation for the rejection of Jesus and to buttress their claim to be the new building (temple) of God (see Ps. 118:22; Isa. 8:14–15, 28:16; cf. Acts 4:11; 1 Pet. 2:6–8; Eph. 2:20–22). With the aid of Isaiah 5 and the addition of "beloved son" Mark locates this allegory of the rejection of Jesus by Temple authorities at that point in the Gospel where Jesus, in conflict with Jewish authorities, is pointing to the emergence of the Christian community (the house that will be built on the cornerstone). It also answers the question of 11:27, "By what authority?" The authority of Jesus is that of the "beloved son" (12:6), sent from the Father, but rejected by the tenants. At the end of the parable (v. 12) the questioners from 11:27 perceive that the parable is directed against them.

12:13–34, In Controversy with Jerusalem Leaders, Jesus Offers a Compendium of Belief. The three controversies following the parable form a subunit. The first of the five controversies (11:27–33, on authority) and the last (12:35–37) take place in the Temple. The three in 12:13–34 are not localized and are initiated in stylized fashion by the three major groups of opponents in the Gospel: Pharisees and Herodians (12:13; cf. 3:6), Sadducees (12:18), and a scribe (12:28). They deal with three issues that were paramount to Mark's community (the "others" of 12:9) in its missionary preaching to Gentiles: relation to secular authority, the meaning of resurrection, and the core of their faith, love of God and neighbor.

In the first (12:13–18), the Pharisees try to trap Jesus into taking a dangerous stand on either side of a debated issue, paying taxes to Caesar. In a theocracy, as was the ideal of Jewish society, which the Zealots of A.D. 66–70 attempted to restore, a gentile ruler could be viewed as a usurper of divine prerogatives. Paying taxes was tantamount to diminishing God's sovereignty; refusal could imply political resistance, which the Romans brutally suppressed. Just as Jesus posed a dilemma on authority to his opponents (11:29), they now retaliate in kind. The narrative depicts Jesus as victor in this contest of dilemmas (12:17, "they were utterly amazed").

The action of Jesus (pointing to the inscription on the coin) and the saying, "return to Caesar the things of Caesar and to God the things of God," is as controverted (and misused) as any in the Gospels. Although this saying (and the Gospel as a whole) never spells out just what constitute the "things of God" and the "things of Caesar," it does *not* relegate religion to the "spiritual" realm or sanction the moral autonomy of the secular sphere. In the third controversy of this subunit (12:28–34), the "greatest commandment" is wholehearted love of God and neighbor that is to permeate all of life. No human ruler shares power or demands allegiance equal to God (cf. Acts 5:29). In its first-century context the saying of 12:17 affirms the sovereignty of God without adopting the theocratic or sectarian implications of that sovereignty (cf. Rom. 13:1–7; 1 Pet. 2:11–17).

In the following controversy (12:18–27) the mode of argument is more rabbinic, consisting of text and countertext, all taken from the Pentateuch, since the Sadducees (v. 18) gave greatest authority to the five books of Moses and (unlike the Pharisees) rejected the binding force of oral interpretations. Also in contrast to the Pharisees, they did not believe the resurrection (cf. Acts 23:8). Their objection (12:19–23) involves a rather crass interpretation of Moses' command on preserving the family line through levirate marriage (Deut. 25:5–10). Jesus attacks their attitude as unfaithful to Scripture and ignorant of God's power. Those who rise from the dead will be like the angels, spiritual beings alive in God's presence (cf. 1 Cor. 15:42–49).

Jesus then cites Exod. 3:6 (the revelation of God's name to Moses) against their "scriptural proof" to argue that if God was revealed "as a God of the living" to their ancestors, these same ancestors must be alive. Mark's readers are able to find in Jesus' spiritual view of the resurrection a way to adapt their own resurrection faith to a more spiritually minded Hellenistic audience, in a manner free of crude materialistic traits (cf. 1 Cor. 15:35–38; Acts 17:32).

Unlike the previous incidents, the Great Commandment (12:28–34) does not begin with a hostile question, for the scribe turns to Jesus to solve a disputed issue. Scribes and rabbis had often attempted to codify the law and summarize its more than six hundred precepts under fundamental principles. The issue here is *what* principles Jesus will choose, not whether he can do so. Asked about which commandment is "first of all," Jesus begins by quoting Deut. 6:4–5, which forms the beginning of the Jewish daily prayer, the Shema (from the Heb. verb, "hear"; → Shema). This prayer is an epitome of biblical faith and affirms the absolute sovereignty of God in all areas of life. The second commandment, also a citation of the OT (Lev. 19:18), is simply to love your neighbor as yourself.

This answer is then ratified and repeated by the scribe (12:32–33), whom Jesus states is not far from the kingdom (v. 34). The scribe in citing Hos. 6:6 confirms that such behavior is "much more" than burnt offerings and sacrifices. As the Temple will be replaced by the house of prayer (11:17) its sacrifices will be replaced by love of God and neighbor. This pericope should not be used to oppose the Christian love command to Jewish legalism. Later Jewish writings contain the command to love the neighbor (*Jub.* 7:20; 20:2), and urge forgiveness of enemies (Sir. 28:2; Philo *On the Virtues* 106–109). The praise of the scribe is Mark's way of acknowledging Christianity's debt to Judaism. Its most basic commands are the same. As with the teaching on the taxes to Caesar and the resurrection, the dual command of love offers Mark's community a way of presenting the core of their faith and heritage to outsiders.

12:35–44, The Temple Teaching of Jesus. The explicit mention of the Temple (12:35) recalls the setting of 11:27. In three brief incidents the Marcan Jesus defines his correct messianic status and again attacks Temple authorities. The question about David's son (12:35–37), though often listed as the final Jerusalem controversy, lacks the formal characteristics of such narratives—no question is posed by opponents and there is no counterquestion by Jesus. Rather, Jesus cites a scribal opinion that the Messiah is a Son of David, only to reject it. In view of the earlier acceptance of Son of David (10:48) as a title of Jesus, this incident is puzzling. In quoting Ps. 110:1 to show that the Messiah is David's "Lord" rather than son, the Marcan Jesus cites a psalm frequently used as a proof-text for the exaltation/resurrection of Jesus (cf. Mark 14:62; Acts 2:34–35; 1 Cor. 15:25; Heb. 1:13). This incident reflects the theology of the Marcan church that, while affirming Jesus' Davidic origin and messianic mission, rejects popular messianic expectations and redefines them in terms of the exaltation of Jesus above his enemies.

The Temple teaching of Jesus concludes with a warning against the scribes (12:38–40), primarily for ostentatious religious practices as a pretext for injustice, "they devour widows' houses and for the sake of appearances say long prayers" (v. 34). Similar warnings are frequent in the prophetic writings (Isa. 10:1–2; Zech. 7:10; Mal. 3:5) and underscore the growing estrangement in this section between Jesus and the Jerusalem leaders.

The following incident of the widow's offering (12:41–44) continues the motif of the exploitation of widows. This destitute widow ("poor" is too weak a translation) who gives only two small coins (roughly equal to one sixty-fourth of the contemporary daily wage) does more than the rich who contribute "out of their abundance" to the Temple. She has given her whole livelihood (lit., "her life"). Her action has been invoked as a symbol of wholehearted discipleship, generosity, and unquestioning surrender.

The text, however, contains no explicit praise of her action—an action that seems to accomplish the very thing the scribes were accused of fostering (12:40; cf. also the criticism of corban in 7:11). Jesus' statement can be interpreted as a "lament" in which Jesus points to the woman as an example of the exploitation of widows. Paraphrased it would read, "What I say is true [about the scribes]. This poor widow with nothing to spare gave everything." Mark however adapts this "lament" to his context. The incident provides the bridge between Jesus' attacks on the Temple and its authorities, Mark 11–12, and the predictions of the destruction of the Temple in Mark 13. It also prepares for the woman who anoints Jesus in Jerusalem who, like the widow, gave "everything she had" (14:8; cf. 12:44) and for the discipleship of other women during the passion narrative (15:40–41, 47; 16:1–8).

13:1–37
The Apocalyptic Testament of Jesus

All four Gospels conclude the public ministry with a private address of Jesus to his disciples (Mark 13; Luke 21; Matt. 24–25; John 13–17). In Mark (followed by Matthew and Luke) the discourse contains predictions of political unrest, natural disasters, and persecution of the community—all of which culminate in cosmic upheavals that usher in the return of the Son of Man. It is often called "the synoptic apocalypse," since it employs motifs and images from Jewish apocalyptic writings; like these it is "persecution literature" with a deterministic view of history (13:7, 10) that assures persecuted communities of their vindication and of

God's judgment of their oppressors. As a mixture of prediction and parenesis (warnings and admonitions), Mark 13 forms an "apocalyptic testament." One of the characteristics of such testaments is that, in the form of predictions from the past, the sayings address the present concerns of the community for which a document is written. Mark 13 thus becomes a key for understanding the struggles of the Marcan community.

The apocalyptic testament and the subsequent passion narrative (Mark 14–16) in effect form a dual conclusion to the public ministry of Jesus. In one, the historical Jesus is betrayed, executed, and raised up; in the other, the risen Jesus returns as glorified Son of Man to gather the elect (13:24–27). Prior to the concealing of the power of Jesus in the Passion, the disciples are given a rationale for their suffering and images of hope of their vindication.

The discourse manifests a definite literary and theological structure. After an introduction in which the destruction of the Temple is predicted (13:1–4), the sufferings preceding the end time are predicted in two stages (13:5–13, 14–23). The discourse then shifts to images of their future vindication (13:24–27) and concludes with parables and exhortations to vigilance (13:28–37) addressed to the actual situation of the community. The warnings in 13:5–6, 21–23 against "deceivers," who claim to come in the name of Jesus and who work signs and wonders, suggest that the community was beset with false messiahs who interpreted the destruction of the Temple in A.D. 70 as a definite sign that the end time had arrived. By his organization of material, Mark says that all these things are simply the beginning of the woes and that the Son of Man will return only "after the suffering" (13:24). The structure undercuts any attempt to identify a particular historical event as signaling the return of Jesus.

13:1–4, The Introduction. On leaving the Temple (the setting of 12:35–44), in response to a disciple's exclamation of its beauty Jesus predicts its total destruction (13:1–2). In a change of scene (on the Mount of Olives, opposite the Temple; see Ezek. 10:18–19, 11:23; Zech. 14) the disciples then ask Jesus "when" these things will be and what "sign" will indicate they are about to unfold (13:3–4). Speculation about the signs and the temporal sequence of eschatological events is frequent in apocalyptic literature.

13:5–13, The Beginning of the Tribulation. Rather than answering the disciples' question, Jesus (vv. 5–6) warns them that deceivers claiming divine power (13:6, "I am he!") will come who will lead many astray (cf. 2 Thess. 2:1–11). Wars and natural disasters are not signs, only the beginning of the "birth pangs" (13:8) of the end time. Although wars and natural disasters are familiar apocalyptic motifs as well as frequent historical occurrences in the first century, the persecutions of 13:9–13 seem to reflect real experiences of the community. A probable backdrop to these verses is the persecution under Nero (A.D. 64) as well as the civil chaos that surrounded the later years of Nero's reign and followed his death in A.D. 68. In addition to the physical horrors of Nero's persecution, the Roman historian Tacitus (ca. A.D. 56–116) records that Christians, when arrested, indicted a "vast number" of fellow Christians (Tacitus *Annals* 15.44). Writing from Rome at the end of the first century to warn the community at Corinth of the dangers of disharmony, Clement of Rome remarks that it was through "jealousy and envy" that the "righteous pillars" of the church were persecuted at Rome (*1 Clem.* 5:1–2). Clement provides evidence that discord *within* the Christian community contributed to the persecution. He and Tacitus support the picture of familial division and betrayal that will affect the community according to Mark 13:12–13 and that was one of the worst consequences of Nero's persecution.

These verses do not simply foretell persecution—they link together the fate of Jesus and his followers. Each is "betrayed" by those close to them (13:12; 14:10, 45) and unjustly executed by brutal civil power; in each case suffering is God's will and each is vindicated. Mark 13:9–13 does not urge passive acquiescence to persecution. Rather, persecution provides the occasion when, through faithful witness, the Gospel will be proclaimed to all peoples (13:10).

13:14–23, The Desolating Sacrilege and the Great Tribulation. After the instruction on fidelity amid persecution, these verses turn again to events preceding the end, in particular the enigmatic "desolating sacrilege" (or "abomination of desolation") standing where "he" should not. More than the previous civil and natural threats, this causes tribulation such as has never occurred since the foundation of the world (13:19). Though Mark's readers seem to know the identity of the desolating sacrilege (13:14, "let the reader understand"), subsequent generations are unsure. The term derives from Dan. 9:27; 11:31; 12:11 (cf. 1 Macc. 1:54) in reference to the desecration of the Temple by Antiochus IV, who offered pagan sacrifices there (167–164 B.C.). One clue to the identity of the horror in Mark is that the neuter "sacrilege" is modified by a masculine participle, (lit.) "standing where *he* should not." This could well describe the entrance of the Roman general Titus into the Holy of Holies on August 9 of A.D. 70 during the final days of the Jewish war (Josephus *Jewish War* 6.4.7, §260; 6.6.1, §316).

For Jews and Jewish Christians the destruction of the Temple was a world-shaking event that could signal the imminent end of history (13:19–20). At this stage in the discourse (13:21–23) Mark returns to the warnings against deception that initiated the discourse. Persecution and the destruction of the Temple

have spawned false messiahs and false prophets who perform "signs" and wonders (cf. Matt. 7:21–23), possibly to deceive even the elect (Mark 13:22).

13:24–37, The Return of the Son of Man. In both prediction (vv. 24–27) and parable (vv. 28–37) the Marcan Jesus offers a true eschatological scenario and describes the proper posture toward the end time. The return of the Son of Man will not be concurrent with the tribulation, but "in those days after that suffering" (v. 24)—thereby invalidating the claims of the false Christs. It will be accompanied by massive cosmic disturbances (vv. 24–25; cf. Isa. 13:10; 34:4; Ezek. 32:7–8; Joel 2:10, 31; 3:15) and the appearance of the Son of Man on the clouds with power and glory (13:26–27; cf. 8:38–9:1; 14:62). Here is a clear allusion to the vindication and granting of power and glory to "one like a human being" in Dan. 7:13–14, who is later equated with the "saints of the Most High" who suffered persecution under Antiochus IV. Jesus as Son of Man is rejected, suffers, dies, and is exalted. So too his faithful followers will be vindicated by his return—and not by the arrival of false messiahs during the tribulation.

The two concluding parables (13:28–29, 34–37) with the intervening sayings are complementary. The community is told to discern the signs of the times. Just as the budding fig tree shows that summer is near, the events predicted thus far (13:3–23) show the end is assured and near, but not here. The solemn prediction of v. 30 reflects the eschatological hope of Mark's community that Jesus' return will take place in their lifetimes (cf. 9:1).

The second parable with its introductory sayings (13:32–36) counters both undue speculation about the end and passivity. Not even Jesus knows the exact day or hour, so that his words and deeds cannot be invoked to identify any particular event with the end (vv. 32–33). The little parable of the absent master (vv. 34–36) is really an allegory of life in Mark's house-churches. Jesus is absent; each of his "servants" receives his "power" (v. 34; cf. 6:7) and each has a task (cf. 1 Cor. 12:1–12). Vigilance and fidelity (active waiting), not idle speculation, are to characterize the community (vv. 35–36). Jesus' final testimony gives a theology of history to his persecuted and missionary community and a promise that he is never far from them.

Part Five: 14:1–16:8

The Suffering, Death, and Resurrection of the Son of Man in Jerusalem

All four Gospels conclude with a connected account of the final days of Jesus' life, his execution by Roman authorities, and the proclamation of his resurrection. No two accounts agree on all points, with the greatest discrepancy between John and the Synoptics (e.g., for John the Last Supper takes place on the "eve" of Passover; for the Synoptics, it is a Passover meal; John omits the institution of the Eucharist from his account of the Last Supper). Similarly all four accounts reflect the distinctive literary style and theological concerns of each Evangelist. Nonetheless on substantive details there is enough similarity to suggest that there were common accounts and traditions on which all the Evangelists drew.

A suggested development of the accounts is first, an early, brief kerygmatic narrative such as 1 Cor. 11:23–26 (cf. 15:3b–5) used in a liturgical setting; second, a longer account with details from the arrest, trial, and crucifixion of Jesus (here is the greatest agreement between John and the Synoptics); third, the accounts as we now have them with addition of material such as the anointing and the prayer in Gethsemane.

The passion accounts were never narrated purely for historical purposes and from their earliest stages show such strong influence of the OT that in certain places (such as the details of the crucifixion) they comprise a virtual narrative commentary (midrash) on select OT texts (e.g., Ps. 22, cited in Mark 15:24, 29, 34). Especially influential is the motif of the righteous sufferer found in the Psalms (e.g., 31:4, 11; 35:4, 11, 19–24; 38:12, 14–16) and in the Wisdom of Solomon (2:10–20; 5:1–15). Jesus, like this figure, is persecuted unjustly, suffers in silence, but is vindicated by God. Also very influential is the "servant" of the fourth servant song of Isa. 52:13–53:12, who is exalted after brutal mistreatment. Theological concerns also shape the accounts: first, apologetic—Jesus was innocent of the charges against him and it was willed by God and predicted in Scripture that Jesus should suffer; second, soteriological—his death as ransom for many brings salvation to those who through faith accept it as an offer of God's mercy; and third, Christological—Jesus' true nature is revealed during the Passion. There is no docetic circumvention of the realism of Jesus' sufferings. Yet, the one who suffers as Son of Man is also proclaimed as God's son at the very moment of his death.

14:1–52
From the Plot to Kill Jesus to the Arrest

The passion narrative comprises two major phases. In the first (14:1–52), though aware of his imminent death, Jesus is active, the teacher and leader of the disciples; in the second (14:53–15:47), Jesus is passive, moved from place to place by hostile forces, and rarely speaks.

14:1–11, The Plots Against Jesus, and the Anointing. The earlier plots against Jesus (3:6; 11:18; 12:12) now culminate in the plan of the high priests and scribes to arrest Jesus and put him to death (14:1) and

in the agreement of Judas to betray him to the priests (14:10–11). According to Mark's somewhat obscure chronology (14:1, 10, 12; 15:1, 42; 16:1), the trial before Pilate (15:1–20) and the crucifixion took place on the feast of the Passover (celebrated from the evening of the 14th of Nisan to the evening of the 15th [Friday]), which was also the eve of a Sabbath (15:42; 16:1). The last meal with the disciples, followed by the betrayal, arrest, and night trial (14:12–72), took place on the evening of the 14th of Nisan (Thursday). The anointing and contract of Judas with the priests (14:1–11) should be located on the day preceding (Wednesday).

The likely independent story of a woman who anoints Jesus (14:3–9), recounted at different places in the ministry of Jesus (cf. Luke 7:36–50; John 12:1–7), is inserted between the two plots (14:1, 10) to contrast two attitudes toward the suffering Jesus, betrayal or devotion. The narrative stresses two things, the action of the woman and its interpretation (14:3, 8) and the defense by Jesus against her detractors (14:4–7). The woman's action, "anointing" (cf. 1 Sam. 10:1; 2 Kings 9:6), constitutes an acclamation that Jesus is a royal Messiah—hence Jesus' explanation in 14:8 conveys the ironic reinterpretation of messiahship characteristic of Mark (cf. 8:29–31). Her action creates an arch to the ending of the passion narrative, where women accompany Jesus to the cross (15:40–41) and again propose to anoint him (16:1). The woman's action is praised by Jesus in solemn language (14:9, "Truly I tell you"). Wherever the gospel is proclaimed what she does will be spoken of "in memory of her" (RSV). She confesses her faith by symbolic action and embodies those qualities of devotion, generosity, and courage that the liberating message of the gospel is to proclaim to the whole world. She and the women at the crucifixion who followed and ministered to Jesus in Galilee (15:41) manifest faithful discipleship when confronted by the cross, much as the chosen disciples (who flee or deny Jesus) symbolize human fragility.

Jesus' defense of her action continues the earlier attack on "religious" attitudes (14:5, giving alms to the poor) as a cloak for false religion (cf. 7:9–13; 12:38–44). When Jesus says "you always have the poor with you," he is not predicting the inevitability of poverty, but reminding his followers of the duty of Deut. 15:11, to support the poor after his death (14:7, "whenever you wish, you can do good to them"). By contrast, the time when they can still serve Jesus is limited.

14:12–31, The Passover with the Disciples. Jesus' final meal with his disciples occupies an important place in the passion narrative and interprets his death. Different elements are interwoven to create a rich tapestry: the commands of Jesus regarding the arrangements for the meal (14:12–16; cf. 11:1–6); the prediction of Judas's betrayal (14:17–21); the institution of the Lord's Supper (14:22–26); and the prediction of Peter's denial (14:27–31). The actions and deeds of Jesus here tell readers the deeper meaning of the tragic events that follow. What appears simply as betrayal and execution of an innocent man is really Jesus' self-offering for many (14:24). The narrative of the Lord's Supper is handed down in different traditions and has been influenced by the liturgical practice of the early community. Matt. 26:26–29 follows Mark, but Luke (22:14–23) and Paul (1 Cor. 11:23–25) may have independent traditions (e.g., both include the command to continue the supper, "in remembrance of me"—which Mark does not include). Common to all traditions are actions and words over bread and a cup of wine (→ Lord's Supper, The).

Though Mark portrays it as a Passover meal, essential details (such as the eating of the lamb and the account of the deliverance from Egypt) are not mentioned. His account centers on the actions and sayings of Jesus over the bread (14:22) and the cup (14:23–25). The actions, couched in language similar to 6:41 and 8:6, are a culmination of the feeding and bread incidents in the Gospels. Jesus, who had compassion on the hungry, fed them, and offered bread to the Gentiles, is now himself the bread declared to be body that is an offering for others. The cup of blessing that Jesus gives to them and that they drink is then interpreted as "my blood" of the covenant (in some manuscripts, "new covenant"; cf. Luke 22:20; 1 Cor. 11:25; Jer. 31:31) that will be poured out "for many." The phrase recalls that the Mosaic covenant was ratified by the shedding of blood (Exod. 24:8).

The Son of Man who came to serve (as Jesus does here when he gives food and drink to his followers) and to give his life as a ransom (10:45) now offers himself as a sacrificial victim. His death, like the first Passover, will effect liberation. After the "institution" the final words of Jesus (14:25) underscore that the meal is an anticipation of the eschatological banquet (that day when he will drink the new wine "in the kingdom of God"). He must first drink the cup of suffering (14:36) before he can celebrate the banquet hoped for by Israel when wine would flow freely and death would be conquered. Mark offers images of hope amid symbols of death and suffering. Bracketing the supper are renewed predictions of failure by disciples, of the scattering of the sheep, and of the denial of Peter (14:27–31). Permeating these failures is a sense that all this has been willed by God (vv. 21, 27, "it is written"), which then supports the message of hope of 14:28. Jesus, who "went before" his disciples as they wandered through Galilee, will be raised up and again lead them. The prediction of denial (14:30) that is later fulfilled (14:66–72) again stresses that Jesus is a "true prophet" whose promises and predictions come to pass.

14:32–42, The Prayer in Gethsemane. Jesus, who had earlier been in control and had predicted his suffering and vindication, now begins "to be distressed

and agitated" (v. 33) and is afflicted with a grief leading to death (v. 34). Like every human who has lived, Jesus experiences imminent death as an alien force imposed from outside, not to be loved or accepted in itself, but only in terms of some higher vision. As he spoke earlier with assurance of the power of prayer (11:24–25; cf. 14:36, "all things are possible"), he prays now that God will remove the cup of suffering (with overtones of the cup of God's wrath, Isa. 51:17, 22; Jer. 25:15; Ps. 75:7–8).

Three times (14:40, 41) he turns to those who had been his companions at a moment of God's revelation (9:2; cf. 5:37), only to find them not watching, but sleeping. He warns them to watch and pray that they may not enter into the trial (cf. Matt. 6:13 = Luke 11:4, "the Lord's Prayer"), for "the spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak" (v. 40). "Flesh" in biblical thought describes the whole person as blind to God and driven by selfish concerns (Rom. 7:5; Gal. 5:17–21); "spirit" is the person as alive to God (Rom. 8:1–17; Gal. 5:22–26). Those who through prayer do not remain open to God's presence will fail at the time of trial. Jesus who was led by the Spirit to his first trial in the wilderness (1:12–13), after prayer at Gethsemane, will remain faithful in the ultimate trial of his passion and death.

This realistic narrative conveys a message of hope to a community like Mark's that experienced suffering and persecution. This narrative neither glorifies martyrdom nor mitigates the scandal of suffering. It does present the paradox of one who, when faced by the apparent victory of sin and violence and whose prayer was not answered, could yet address God with an affirmation of familial trust and love as *Abba* (Aramaic, "father"; cf. Gal. 4:6; Rom. 8:15). In contrast to Peter, who did not see suffering as consonant with the divine plan, Jesus accepts God's will. Like those earlier whom he called mother, sister, and brother because they did the will of God (3:31–35), he is God's son because of his obedience (cf. Heb. 5:8–9).

14:43–52, The Betrayal and Arrest. With the conclusion of his prayer, the hour has arrived (14:41); the betrayer is at hand and the arrest ensues. The designation of Judas as the betrayer (14:44) and the arrest as a whole fulfills the earlier prophecies (14:18). Betrayal by a kiss, the normal sign of respect and affection (Luke 7:38, 45; 15:20; cf. 1 Cor. 16:20) highlights the evil of Judas (Mark 14:21; cf. Prov. 27:6). After Jesus is seized, his disciples all flee (14:50). This flight is followed by the enigmatic incident of the "youth" who is clad only in a robe and flees naked when the arresting officers try to seize him (14:51–52). Since a "youth" (same Greek term) appears at the empty tomb clad in a white robe (16:5), the two youths may symbolize the Christian initiate who strips off the old self in baptism (which in Rom. 6:1–5 is entry into the mystery of Christ's death and resurrection) and puts on a new Christian identity. "Being clothed" is a metaphor for a new mode of existence elsewhere in the NT (see Gal. 3:27; Eph. 4:24; Col. 3:10).

14:53–16:8
The "Handing Over" of Jesus to Death and to God's Power

The second half of the passion narrative completes the earlier predictions (8:31; 9:31; 10:33). Here the passive Jesus is led from accuser to accuser, abused, and finally executed. On the narrative level readers are drawn into the mystery of the suffering Messiah. However, there is another "handing over" that transpires. Dying in submission to God's will, Jesus is also handed over to God's power. The narrative does not end with the cry of agony of a dying person (15:39), but with the proclamation, "He is risen" (16:6).

14:53–72, The Trial Before the Sanhedrin and the Denial of Peter. Whatever historical data can be culled from Mark's version of the trial, its primary setting is within the theology of the passion narrative and of the Gospel as a whole. Mark interweaves the trial narrative (14:53, 55–65) with the story of Peter's denial (14:54, 66–72), contrasting true and false confession. In the trial itself two major theological motifs converge.

The first motif emerges from the charge that Jesus would destroy the Temple and rebuild it in three days (14:57–59; cf. 15:29–30). Criticism of a corrupt Temple was current among other Jewish groups (e.g., Essenes), and from the time of Solomon on, "temple building" was a messianic prerogative (2 Sam. 7:4–17). From 11:1 forward Mark has shown a consistent anti-Temple motif: Jesus calls the Temple a den of robbers (11:17), like the fig tree it is unfruitful, and it will be demolished so that not a stone will remain on another (13:1–4). Though "false witnesses" (14:56, 57) stem from the tradition of the trial of the righteous sufferer (Pss. 27:12; 35:11), Mark twice interprets "false" as "they did not agree" (14:56, 59). Like many actions and sayings of Jesus throughout the Gospel, his Temple words are misinterpreted. However, the *content* of the charge brought by "false witnesses" is ironically true for Mark. Jesus is the messianic temple builder who after his resurrection will form his new community, a "temple not made with hands," i.e., a "spiritual temple" (see 1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19; 1 Pet. 2:4–6).

The other major motif centers on the identity of Jesus, which has dominated the whole Gospel and now culminates in the question and answer of the high priest (14:61–62). There is a joining of titles of Jesus—"Messiah," "Son of the Blessed," "Son of Man"—not found in any previous narrative. In 14:61 the high priest solemnly asks Jesus "Are you the Messiah, the Son of the Blessed One [i.e., God]?" Jesus responds (14:62) in agreement by using a formula of divine predication, "I am" (cf. 6:51; 13:6), and then redefines Son of the Blessed by reference to the Danielic Son of

Man (Dan. 7:13–14) and the exalted Lord of Ps. 110:1 ("seated at the right hand of power") whose glorious return will be seen by all (cf. Mark 8:38; 13:26). This response of Jesus occurs at the exact midpoint of the passion narrative and gives a proper interpretation to the following events. Jesus is Messiah and Son of God, but he fulfills those roles precisely as the Son of Man who has power on earth to forgive sin and heal on the Sabbath, who was yet rejected by those very authorities who question him. Yet he will return to judge his accusers (cf. 8:38–9:1; 13:26). His human vulnerability is paradoxically the path to understanding in what sense he is Son of the Blessed. Only when Jesus is understood on those terms set by God in the Gospel can proper confession of his identity take place.

Though Jesus has not technically committed blasphemy, the reaction of the Sanhedrin reveals to readers that they have paradoxically understood the true meaning of Jesus' messiahship. The trial concludes with another irony. At the very moment the Sanhedrin mocks Jesus as a false prophet (14:65), his prophecy about Peter is being fulfilled.

With the denial of Peter (14:66–72) the narrative of Peter's "following," suspended in 14:54, is now tragically resumed. Three times with an escalating intensity, Peter is charged with being a follower of Jesus (14:66, by one slave girl; 14:69, the girl repeats the charge to bystanders; 14:70, all the bystanders charge him). Three times with parallel ascending vehemence Peter denies the charge (14:68, "I do not know or understand what you are talking about"; 14:70, "he again denied"; 14:71, "he began to curse and swear an oath"). The final words of him who was first called (1:16–20) and who first confessed Jesus as Messiah (8:29) are a poignant, "I do not know the person of whom you are speaking" (14:71). With the crow of the cock the prophecy is fulfilled, and Peter, recalling the words of Jesus, "broke down and wept." Since "weeping" can be both a sign of repentance (2 Kings 20:4–5) and a form of prayer (Ps. 102:9; Job 16:20), the narrative points to forgiveness for Peter (see Mark 16:7).

15:1–20, The Roman Trial of Jesus. With the trial of Jesus before Pontius Pilate, the "handing over" (15:1; cf. 8:31; 9:31; 10:33) of Jesus is complete. The final day of Jesus' life (corresponding and contrasting to the initial day of his ministry in Galilee) is carefully measured by three-hour intervals according to the Roman custom (15:1, "early"; 15:25, "third hour"; 15:33, "sixth to ninth hour"; 15:42, "evening"). After the rapid pace of the Gospel so far, where Jesus was in constant motion, the measured pace of these scenes rivets the attention of readers on the silent and suffering Jesus.

The trial before Pilate involves: accusations (15:3), an interrogation of the accused by Pilate (15:2, 4), the choice of Barabbas or Jesus (15:6–14), and the sentence (15:15) followed by the mocking (15:16–20). Before Pilate the charge is "Are you the King of the Jews?" rather than "Are you Son of the Blessed?" and the saying about the Temple is dropped. Unlike the Jewish trial (14:62), where Jesus agrees with the charge ("I am") and effectively reinterprets it ("and you will see . . . "), his response to Pilate is simply, "You say so" (15:2), followed by silence when the charge is repeated. There is strong irony here. Like the demons, who earlier in Mark address Jesus as Son of God (3:11; 5:7), Pilate, who also exemplifies evil power, names Jesus as king (cf. 10:42, where rulers dominate and tyrannize their subjects; Pilate was recalled to Rome in A.D. 36 for abuse of his power). Just as Jesus was Son of God, but not in the sense proclaimed by the demons, he is also king, but not in Pilate's sense. Jesus, who proclaimed the imminence of God's kingdom, is a royal Messiah who enters Jerusalem for his enthronement on the cross (15:26).

After the initial interrogation Mark recounts the choice between Barabbas and Jesus (15:6–15). Since such a custom of releasing a prisoner at Passover is not attested elsewhere, the historical foundation of this incident is uncertain. In Mark's narrative it serves to contrast the innocent Jesus with the guilty Barabbas (who committed murder in the midst of an uprising, 15:7). It also highlights the evil of the high priests (because of "envy" they handed Jesus over), who sway the crowd to choose Barabbas. There may be a subtle irony in the choice of Barabbas, whose name means "Son of the Father" (Aramaic, *Abba*). Jesus, the true son of the Father, is rejected in favor of the pseudoson. Although not excusing Pilate, the narrative portrays him as capitulating to the cries of the crowd, "crucify him"—reflecting perhaps the desire of Mark's community to mitigate the involvement of the Romans.

The mocking (15:16–20), although reflecting the Roman custom of degradation of prisoners, is also influenced by the OT (esp. Mic. 5:1, "with a rod they strike the ruler of Israel upon the cheek"; cf. Isa. 50:6; 53:5). It heightens the irony of this whole section since the soldiers in hailing Jesus as king and in worshiping him (15:19) are paradoxically giving him that honor he will receive when God raises him up (cf. Phil. 2:5–11).

15:21–47, The Crucifixion, Death, and Burial of Jesus. The sober narrative of the crucifixion (15:21–41) masks the horror of this mode of execution. With the aid of OT allusions and quotations, the focus is shifted to its theological meaning. Like the sin offerings that are carried "outside the camp" (Lev. 16:27), Jesus is executed outside the city (cf. Heb. 13:12, "Jesus suffered outside the gate in order to sanctify the people through his own blood"). A third set of mockings occurs by the bystanders who challenge him to destroy and rebuild the Temple and come down from the cross so that they may believe (15:29–32a) and even by the "bandits" crucified with him (v. 32b). By calling their mocking "blas-

phemy" Mark ironically says that Jesus, who was condemned for "blasphemy," is now unwittingly hailed as the crucified God by his accusers.

The high priests similarly taunt Jesus for saving others and not himself and say they too will believe if he comes down from the cross. In the dramatic scene of the crucified king on the cross, Mark offers a vignette of lack of belief. The bystanders and Temple officials will believe only if some dramatic miracle occurs. Jesus, who earlier did no mighty work in Nazareth because of unbelief and who said earlier that one must lose a life in order to save it, is challenged at the moment of death to deny the meaning of his own life. The final paradox of this powerful scene is that, by remaining on the cross, he is both "saving himself" and "saving others" (cf. 10:45; 14:24).

The final three hours of Jesus' life are marked by apocalyptic imagery of the precreational darkness (15:33; cf. Gen. 1:2). At the ninth hour Jesus' final words, recorded by Mark in Aramaic, are an exclamation of the first verse of Psalm 22, "My God, my God, why have you forsaken me," which is then misinterpreted by the crowd as a call for Elijah. Though commentators often speak of Jesus' cry of abandonment on the cross, Psalm 22 as a whole moves from apparent despair of God's presence to a hope of vindication. Since Mark when quoting the OT normally refers to the larger context of a particular verse, readers of the Gospel are to hear Jesus' words as those of the suffering just one who dies with the hope of vindication.

With the cry and the death of Jesus two major themes of the Gospel reach their high point. The "anti-Temple" motif culminates in the splitting of the veil of the Temple (15:38). This may be the veil separating the Holy of Holies from the outer Temple or the curtain before the main entrance. Its splitting "in two from top to bottom" symbolizes that God's presence is no longer hidden. Through the death of Jesus all people now have access to God (cf. Heb. 10:19–20).

The confession of the gentile centurion, "this human being [Gk. *anthropos*] was truly the Son of God" (15:39), is the culmination of the Christology of the Gospel and confirms the access that the Gentiles now have to God. In contrast to the mockers who embodied false faith, the centurion symbolizes future believers who must stand before the cross and confess a crucified one to be Son of God (cf. 1 Cor. 1:18–25). Also present at Jesus' final moments are those women who had "followed" Jesus and "ministered" to him in Galilee, as well as "many others" who had come up with him to Jerusalem (15:41). Having been abandoned by his disciples, Jesus at death is accompanied by Gentiles and women—both outsiders in the eyes of the religious leaders, both to be the nucleus of the new community to be gathered by the risen Jesus.

The short narrative of the burial (15:42–47) contrasts the righteous Joseph, a respected counselor who was waiting for the kingdom of God, with the other members of the Sanhedrin. He "dares" to approach Pilate and, like the faithful disciples of John (6:29), oversees the burial of Jesus. Mark anticipates here a church composed of Jews who believed in Jesus as well as Gentiles who confess his divine sonship. The details of the burial confirm that Jesus really died (in opposition to any docetic misunderstanding) and prepare for the resurrection. After the noise and tumult of the previous hours, the day wanes with the quiet presence of the faithful women who keep watch at the tomb of Jesus (15:47).

16:1–8, The Resurrection of Jesus. The earliest tradition of the resurrection (1 Cor. 15:3b–7) affirms that Jesus died according to the Scriptures, was buried, and raised up on the third day. The term "raised up" is a "theological passive," meaning the same as "God raised Jesus up." In this tradition, taken over by Paul, the fact of the resurrection is followed by the appearances of Jesus to select witnesses. It contains no explicit mention of the discovery of an "empty tomb." No Gospel attempts any description of the resurrection itself (as does the later apocryphal *Gos. Pet.* 9:35–13:57). All the Gospels, however, mention some discovery of the empty tomb and all allude to appearances (implicit in Mark, explicit in the others).

The brief Marcan resurrection narrative begins "very early" on the first day of the week (the day after the Jewish Sabbath) with the journey of three women to anoint the body of Jesus. They muse among themselves about how the stone can be removed (16:4; cf. 15:46). The stress on the large stone may be an answer to the charge that the disciples stole Jesus' body (cf. Matt. 28:11–14, where the charge is made explicit). In Mark 16:4 the women notice that the stone has been rolled away and enter the tomb. They immediately see a "young man" (cf. 14:51) clad in white and seated on the right side of the tomb. They are "amazed"—the term used often throughout the Gospel in reaction to Jesus' miracles. The core of the narrative is in the message of the young man: "You seek Jesus of Nazareth, the crucified one; he has been raised up; he is not here" (16:6). The young man then charges the women to tell "the disciples and Peter" that Jesus "is going before them" (cf. 14:28) into Galilee and there they will see him. The narrative ends with the flight of the women from the tomb, their trembling and astonishment, and their silence, "for they were afraid" (16:7–8).

The narrative of the empty tomb does not provide for Mark (or for any Gospel) a "proof" of the resurrection. Mark rejects any sign that would facilitate belief (8:12; 15:32). In the biblical world a tomb is the anteroom to the realm of the dead. The empty tomb is a symbol that by the resurrection of Jesus death has been emptied of its power (cf. Heb. 2:14). The message of the young man actually directs the attention away

from the empty tomb—"he is not here"—to the proclamation "he is risen." Christian faith rests on this proclamation, not on the empty tomb.

The reaction of the women, their failure to deliver the message to the disciples, and the absence of a resurrection appearance pose many problems. Some interpret it as a final rejection of those disciples who fled and argue that even the faithful women disciples ultimately fail. This interpretation does not do justice to the force of Jesus' promise in 14:28 and to Mark's view that Jesus is the true prophet whose words will achieve their effect. The fear, wonder, and silence of the women are rather reactions that elsewhere in biblical narratives accompany theophanies and commissions given to prophets (Exod. 3:3; Isa. 6:1–5; Jer. 1:6–8; Ezek. 1:28; Luke 1:29–30). By the abrupt ending Mark also leaves his readers with a radical challenge to their faith. Belief, conversion, and discipleship do not really rest on resurrection appearances (which Mark's community of ca. A.D. 70 would not have experienced), but on the word of promise, the victory over death at that very moment when death seemed sovereign.

16:9–20

The Longer Ending of Mark

As mentioned (see Introduction) these verses did not constitute the earliest ending of Mark. They are a pastiche of language and motifs drawn mostly from the other Gospels or the traditions used by these Gospels. The appearance to Mary Magdalene (16:9–10, who is described here in terms found only in Luke 8:2 as "the one from whom he had cast seven demons") reflects Matt. 28:9–10; John 20:11–18. For the subsequent appearance to two disciples "walking in the country," see Luke 24:13–35. The appearance to the Eleven at table and their commissioning (16:14–18) draws on the Gospels and Acts (Luke 24:36–49; Matt. 28:16–20; John 20:19–23; Acts 1:6–8). These verses also elaborate the postresurrectional ministry of the disciples (not found elsewhere in the Gospels) to include speaking in tongues, handling deadly serpents and drinking any deadly thing without injury, and healing the sick.

Two of these "signs" (16:17, a term used in Mark 8:12 in a negative sense), speaking in tongues and healing, occur at Corinth (1 Cor. 12:1–11). This longer ending of Mark may stem from groups within early Christianity who prized such enthusiastic phenomena. This ending also interprets Mark in a direction in tension with the understanding of faith in the Gospel. It shows how difficult it was to accept the radical challenge to faith posed by the Gospel itself (→ Gospel, Gospels).

Bibliography

Achtemeier, P. *Mark.* Proclamation Commentaries. 2d rev. ed. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1986.

Brown, R. E. *The Death of the Messiah.* 2 vols. Garden City: Doubleday, 1994.

Collins, A. Y. *The Beginning of the Gospel: Probings of Mark in Context.* Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1992.

Garland, D. *Mark.* The New NIV Application Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 1996.

Gundry, R. *Mark: A Commentary on His Theology of the Cross.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1993.

Hooker, M. *The Gospel According to St. Mark.* Black's New Testament Commentaries. Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1990.

Juel, D. *Mark.* Augsburg Commentary on the New Testament. Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1990.

Luke

FRED B. CRADDOCK

INTRODUCTION

Among the Gospels, Luke is unique in that it has a sequel, the Acts of the Apostles. Even though the Gospel and Acts have their own separate aims, characters, geographies, histories, and stories, the companion prologues (Luke 1:1–4; Acts 1:1–2), the common literary style, the same governing themes, and the overarching theological perspectives argue persuasively that the two works are in reality one. Luke-Acts is the largest contribution by a single writer in the NT.

Quite early in the life of the church Luke and Acts were separated by the location of John's Gospel between them. Reasons are not difficult to find: Luke belongs with Matthew and Mark in the cluster called the synoptic Gospels; Acts offers a natural introduction to the Letters of Paul. However, careful readers of either Luke or Acts will want to reunite the two volumes regardless of whether the Gospel or Acts is being studied. The writer has made one continuous story of the life and mission of Jesus and the life and mission of the church. The definition of the gospel as repentance and forgiveness runs throughout (Luke 24:47; Acts 2:38; 3:19; 17:30–31). The Temple, Jerusalem, Mary, and the Holy Spirit figure prominently in both volumes; Jesus' and Paul's journeys to Jerusalem and Jesus' and Stephen's deaths are companion narratives. Luke and Acts are further related as promise and fulfillment, prophecies of Jesus having their completion in the life of the church (Luke 9:22; cf. Acts 3:21; Luke 21:12–15; cf. Acts 4:3–5, 14; Luke 9:5; cf. Acts 13:51). The Gospel anticipates Acts, and Acts reflects upon the Gospel. Undoubtedly, some stories Luke tells in the Gospel are framed with a story yet to come in Acts clearly in mind (see also Introduction to Books in the Form of Narrative: The Gospels and Acts; Acts, Introduction).

Composition of the Gospel

Authorship. The Third Gospel, like all the canonical Gospels, is anonymous. The text yields no name; neither does it provide sufficient information from which the author's name may be inferred. Still, on the basis of the text we can sketch a general portrait of the writer. We can know from the Gospel that the writer was not an eyewitness of the ministry of Jesus, but records those things "handed on to us by those who from the beginning were eyewitnesses" (1:2). Perhaps the tradition is already into its second or third generation. The writer is a student of previous accounts of Jesus' life (1:1) and assumes readers are already informed in these matters. The style of the writing indicates it is the work of a person of education and taste, familiar with the methods of narrative current in that culture. The content of the Gospel also reveals a thorough knowledge of the Septuagint (LXX), a Greek translation of the Hebrew Bible widely used in synagogues in the Hellenistic world (→ Septuagint). Whether this means the author was a convert from Hellenistic Judaism or a gentile Christian is not clear.

Also unclear is whether the diarylike "we" sections of Acts (16:10–17; 20:5–21:18; 27:1–28:16) are to be regarded as evidence that the writer was a traveling companion of Paul or simply making use of such a record by one who was in Paul's company. Arguments popular in the nineteenth century that medical terminology in the Gospel established the author as "Luke, the beloved physician" (Col. 4:14) have since been laid to rest. The tradition that the Third Gospel was written by Luke, a companion of Paul (Col. 4:14; Philem. 24; 2 Tim. 4:11), is at least as old as Irenaeus, a theologian living in Gaul about A.D. 185. At approximately the same time, confirmation of the tradition is found in Tertullian (North Africa), Clement of Alexandria (Egypt), and in a document from Italy called the "Muratorian Canon," which lists and comments on early Christian writings. In recent times, however, students of both Acts and Paul have seriously questioned whether Luke-Acts could be the work of a companion of Paul, given the differences in the presentations of Paul and his message in Paul's own writings and in Acts. Arguments over authorship have been far less heated in the last half century, not because new evidence has appeared, but because the question of authorship has been regarded as less weighty in understanding the content and accepting the authority of a biblical text.

Date and Place of Writing. The prologue to Luke speaks of dependence on eyewitnesses (1:2), so the date can be no earlier than the second generation of Christians. The author also says that many narratives about Jesus had been written previously (1:1), the Gospel of Mark most likely being among them, so this Gospel

can be no earlier than Mark. Those who have argued that Luke must be dated before A.D. 64, because Luke concludes Acts with Paul still under house arrest in Rome (Acts 28:30–31) with no account of his death, have mistaken the literary form for a historical record. The account of Paul's death is, in effect, implied in the farewell speech in Acts 20. Acts 28 can, therefore, close on a note of life, not death, open toward the future and not closed on the past. Many have reasonably argued that Luke's record of the fall of Jerusalem (Luke 19:41–44; 21:20–24), more detailed than that of Matthew and Mark, seems to accord with the known facts of the Roman siege, and therefore Luke must be dated after A.D. 70. But how much later? That Luke knew the writings of the first-century historian Josephus and therefore must have written after A.D. 93 has never been satisfactorily established. Luke was included in Marcion's canon of Christian writings about A.D. 140. Luke seems not to have known the collected letters of Paul, which perhaps were circulating as early as the end of the first Christian century. Hence most scholars settle for a time between A.D. 80 and 90.

The question of the place of writing is even more open than that of the date. Sentiment has selected Rome with Luke there with Paul, serving the apostle during his two years of house arrest. Other guesses abound, but the tradition from the time of Irenaeus (A.D. 185) is that Luke was composed in Achaia (southern Greece).

Destination and Purpose. The prologue makes it clear that the Third Gospel is addressed to a person (Theophilus) or persons already informed about the subject matter to be discussed (1:3–4). Presumably, then, the audience is Christian, and very likely gentile Christian, or at least predominantly so. The name "Theophilus" is Greek, not Hebrew. The prologue itself follows a literary tradition of the Hellenistic world. The genealogy of Jesus is traced back not to Abraham (Matt. 1:1–16), but to Adam (Luke 3:23–38). Citations from the OT are from the LXX. When following one of his sources, Mark, the author omits sections dealing with issues totally internal to Judaism—e.g., the issue of ritual cleansing in Mark 7:1–23. That Luke wrote to Gentiles would also account for the substitution of Greek for Hebrew (or Aramaic) terms and names: "skull" for Golgotha, "Lord" or "teacher" for rabbi, "zealot" for Cananaean, among others. Some scholars have added to the arguments for a gentile Christian audience the fact that both Jesus' ministry and the mission of the church move favorably toward Gentiles (Luke 4:16–30; Acts 1:8; 2:39; 28:28). However, that same evidence has been used to posit the readers as Greek-speaking Jews converted to Christianity who need to understand how a movement begun in Palestine among Jews has moved into the gentile world and is becoming increasingly gentile in its membership. But even if the background of the readers is uncertain, it is clear that Luke assumes the readers respect the authority of the OT (2:22–40; 4:16–21; 16:29–31; 24:27, 44–47) and have a knowledge of it.

This Gospel, especially when joined to Acts, has provided students of it a range of defensible views as to the author's purpose, and perhaps it is an error to try to find a single intention for the book. One could conclude from the prologue that the production of many narratives (1:1) about Jesus and his followers had proven to be confusing and therefore an orderly, well-researched account would assure the readers (1:3–4). Or, perhaps the assurance Theophilus (whether the name of a person or a literary device) needed was certainty that the Christianity of his day was truly rooted in the career and teaching of Jesus. Of long standing is the view that Luke was writing an apology, or defense, of the Christian religion, showing the Roman world that this was no insurrectionist movement, but one that deserved the respect and protection of the civil authorities. After all, Pilate had declared Jesus innocent (23:13–16) and Paul, a Roman citizen (Acts 16:37; 22:25–29), had enjoyed more the protection than the wrath of the government (Acts 23:12–35).

Other scholars, taking note of the continuity Luke draws between Jesus and the law and institutions of Judaism, identify Luke's purpose as primarily that of answering such questions as: If the promises of God were to Abraham (Gen. 12:1–3), why do Jesus and his church embrace Gentiles? Has God had a change of mind? Is Israel abandoned? Did Jesus break with his heritage? Certainly Luke gives major attention to the relationship of Jesus and his followers to the law, Jerusalem, the synagogue, and the Temple. Finally, a case could be made that in Luke's time, the church was becoming established in the Roman world and aware that it now had a history. The Parousia (the return of Christ), expected by many in the first generation, had not occurred and the followers of Jesus needed a clear sense of their past in order to move into the future. Luke, say the proponents of this view, responded to that need.

Sources. When Luke speaks of having received information from "those who from the beginning were eyewitnesses and servants of the word" (1:2; whether he is referring to one group or two is not clear), he introduces the possibility of oral sources. That Luke's research included interviews and other contacts with oral traditions is highly likely, but such sources are most difficult for readers to identify. The usual tendency has been to attribute to oral sources those portions of Luke for which no other known source exists. This material, unique to Luke, amounts to about 25 percent of the Gospel, and consists primarily of the birth stories, parables, and the resurrection narratives. Whether oral or written, this body of material is often referred to as L.

From among the many narratives compiled prior

to Luke (1:1), two written sources are generally recognized by students of this Gospel (→ Synoptic Problem, The). One is the Gospel of Mark, whose record constitutes well over one-third of Luke. Although Luke omits some sections of Mark (Mark 6:45–8:26) and inserts into the story blocks of non-Marcan material (Luke 6:20–8:3; 9:51–18:14), still it remains the case that Mark provides the basic structure for Luke. The other source has been called Q, from the German word *Quelle,* meaning "source," and refers to material common to Matthew and Luke, but not in Mark. Examples of Q are Luke 3:7–9 and Matt. 3:7–10; Luke 4:3–12 and Matt. 4:3–10. About 25 percent of Luke is attributed to Q.

In a very real sense another source for Luke was the LXX, which functioned as a literary guide and model. This is true in a general sense; e.g., Luke 1:5–2:52 has the style and flavor of the LXX. But it is also true of specific stories Luke tells. For example, Mary sings (Luke 1:46–55) as Hannah sang (1 Sam. 2:1–10); Jesus in the Temple as a boy (Luke 2:41–52) is an episode inspired by the story of the boy Samuel in the Temple (1 Sam. 2–3); Jesus' raising the son of a widow at Nain (Luke 7:11–17) even draws exact phrasing from the story of Elijah and the widow's son (1 Kings 17:17–24). It remains unclear to what extent, if at all, Luke assumed his readers' knowledge of those and other such stories from the OT.

Structure and Literary Features

As stated above, Mark's Gospel provided the basic structure for Luke's. However, additions by Luke at the beginning and the ending of the story, along with noticeable modifications at the center of the Gospel, make it important for readers, even if well-acquainted with Mark, to get an overview of the structure of Luke's Gospel before beginning a detailed study of its parts.

Following the prologue (1:1–4) Luke has an extended infancy and childhood narrative that includes accounts of the births of both John the Baptist and Jesus (1:5–2:52). This material is unique to Luke. Chap. 3 opens so much like the beginning of a Gospel that some scholars have theorized that this may, indeed, have been the original starting point of Luke's narrative. In 3:1–9:50 the setting is Galilee, and the story extends from the appearance of John the Baptist to Jesus' arrival at a Samaritan village on his way to Jerusalem. A major unit of material in this section is the Sermon on the Plain (6:20–49), Luke's version of Jesus' teachings found in Matthew's Sermon on the Mount (Matt. 5:1–7:29). In 9:51–18:14 Luke offers a special section of material often called the journey narrative because the events and teaching of this lengthy portion are framed on the image of Jesus on his way to Jerusalem. Granted, it is difficult to follow the geographical references and reconstruct the trip from Galilee to Jerusalem. However, that Jesus has "set his face to go to Jerusalem" (9:51) surfaces often in phrases such as "and as he went on his way," indicating that Luke wants all this material (some of it can be found scattered through Matthew and Mark) interpreted as falling under the shadow of Jesus' approaching death in Jerusalem. At 18:15 Luke rejoins the narratives of Matthew and Mark, approaching the city of Jerusalem in 19:11. The last major section has a Judean setting (19:28–23:56) and includes the entry into the city (19:28–44), Jesus' ministry—primarily that of teaching—within Jerusalem (19:45–21:38), and the passion story (22:1–23:56) beginning with the Last Supper and concluding with the burial. Luke concludes with the empty tomb story (24:1–12) followed by accounts of appearances of the risen Christ (24:13–53), records unlike those of Matthew and John, the other two Evangelists who relate resurrection appearances.

It is not, however, the structure of Luke's Gospel that most impresses readers, even though his infancy and resurrection narratives are certainly memorable. Rather, readers, even of a translation, know that this Gospel is the work of a consummate literary artist. Jerome recognized this fact quite early, referring to Luke as the most skilled writer among the Evangelists. Careful students will observe the points at which Luke improves upon Mark, removing redundancies, smoothing awkward lines, broadening the range of verbs to reduce monotony, and rounding off stories that seemed unfinished. But one does not have to be a careful student to appreciate the artistry of the parable of the prodigal son (15:11–32) or of the story of Jesus' appearance to two downcast disciples on the road to Emmaus (24:13–35). And reference has already been made to the unusual way Luke makes allusive use of the OT, weaving its stories and character almost unnoticed into the rich tapestry of his own telling about Jesus.

But this is not to say that Luke's primary effort is to produce an aesthetically pleasing story. After a prologue in the manner of Greek historians and an infancy narrative half told, half sung in the rhythm and language of the Greek OT, Luke launches what seems to be a history of Jesus and his followers. "In the fifteenth year of the reign of Emperor Tiberias, when Pontius Pilate was governor of Judea" (3:1) is Luke's way of setting Jesus' career in the context of world as well as local political and religious history. This interweaving of historical figures, places, and events and the stories of Jesus and his followers continues through Acts. Luke does write as a historian. He had sources written and oral; he researched carefully; and he offers "an orderly account." Readers have a sense of chronological movement and thoroughness.

But Luke is not simply a historian. He is continuing the narrative of God's people Israel, bringing it to fulfillment in his own day in Jesus and the Christian

movement. He is not just a describer; he is an advocate. He is not simply recording what happened, but what *really* happened, introducing God as the central actor in the events that occurred. Luke is a theological historian, and a biographer as well. After all, the focus of his attention is the one character, Jesus of Nazareth. But more than a historian, more than a biographer, Luke is an Evangelist, a proclaimer of the gospel.

The Significance of Luke for the New Testament and the Church

It is difficult to overestimate the importance of Luke's witness both for the NT, of which it is a major component, and for the church. However, space here permits mention of only the major contributions Luke makes to the shape and nature of the Christian tradition.

Luke is a major contributor to the church's understanding of its relation to Judaism. The issue of continuity/discontinuity was a critical one for the followers of Jesus. Paul, Matthew, John, and the author of the Letter to the Hebrews all are preoccupied with the question in different ways. Luke's accent is more on continuity than discontinuity. The story of salvation history is one narrative, not two. The Hebrew Scriptures, Jerusalem, the Temple, and the synagogue figure prominently and positively in the life of Jesus and in the Acts account of the church. This even includes Paul, the missionary to Gentiles. Many Jews reject Jesus and his message, to be sure, but God was keeping and fulfilling promises made to Abraham and his descendants.

To speak of God keeping promises is to be reminded that the central character in Luke-Acts is God. Some Christian writings are so Christocentric that in reading them one tends to forget what Luke does not forget: the story of salvation is God's story. God led Israel; God inspired prophets; God sent John the Baptist; God sent Jesus; God raised up Jesus; and God sends the Holy Spirit. God is at work through persons, nations, political leaders, laws, and institutions. Since God continues to lead and to work the divine purpose, Luke neither longs for nor calls the church back to a golden age of Jesus or of the early church, but shows that each time and place has its own appropriateness in the plan of God.

God, who has never been without witness in the world (Acts 14:17), is not the God only of Israel and the church, but also of Adam, of all creation, and of all nations. Luke, therefore, writes not only of Jesus and the Twelve, but also of Augustus, Tiberius, and Gallio, not only of Bethlehem and Jerusalem, but also of Athens and Rome. Luke sets the Gospel in the larger history of his generation, specifying times and places. After all, as Paul says to King Agrippa, "This was not done in a corner" (Acts 26:26).

Luke alone in the NT joins historically, rather than simply theologically, the ministry of Jesus and the birth and spread of the church. Of the Gospels only Matthew uses the word "church" (Matt. 16:18; 18:17), but it is Luke who concludes one volume with Jesus pointing his disciples toward the church (Luke 24:49–53) and opens a second with the church being born and sent into the world (Acts 1–2). Luke's historicizing of Jesus' resurrection and ascension as two separate events has been embraced in the church's calendar with separate celebrations of Easter and Ascension Sunday.

Luke offers one of the NT's definitions of the gospel: "Repentance and forgiveness of sins should be preached in his name to all nations" (24:47). The call to repentance and the offer of forgiveness occurs more frequently in Luke than in any other NT writer. This is the message to Israel; this is the message to the nations. The cross is not a prominent feature of that proclamation. Luke's preferred way to speak of Jesus' Passion is capsuled in the expression, "Thus it is written, that the Messiah is to suffer and to rise from the dead on the third day" (24:46). What is important to Luke is that what happened to Christ was exactly what had been prophesied in the Law, the Prophets, and the Psalms (24:44; also 24:27). In other words, God's will was and is being realized, even in Jesus' Passion. Understanding this is the removal of ignorance by repentance and the acceptance of forgiveness. Were one to use one word to describe Jesus' death in Luke's theology it would be "martyr," an example for Stephen and for all who follow in a world where the gospel has enemies.

Luke is one of the three major witnesses in the NT to the presence and activity of the Holy Spirit, Paul and John being the other two. The commentary that follows will note how frequently and with what significance Jesus' life is characterized by the empowering presence of the Spirit and by prayer. And Jesus' last act, according to Luke, was to instruct his disciples to wait for the gift of the Spirit before they attempt to continue his work (24:49), and this they did, says Luke, waiting in Jerusalem in prayer (Acts 1).

Perhaps the characteristic of Luke's Gospel most commonly known and remarked upon is his attention to and evident concern for the oppressed and marginalized persons in society. This attention to the poor and rejected appears early in Mary's song prior to Jesus' birth (1:46–55), reappears in the favor shown to the shepherds (2:8–14), surfaces again in the social message of John the Baptist (3:10–14), is publicly announced by Jesus in his sermon in his home synagogue (4:16–21), and then becomes a refrain in his teaching (14:12–14, 21). This is not to say Jesus turned his back on the strong and prosperous. He offered his good news to religious leaders (7:36) and to the wealthy (19:1–10). In fact, some women of means helped finance Jesus' preaching missions (8:1–3). Even so, Luke's Jesus pronounces God's beatitude on the poor, the hungry, the mourners, and the excluded (6:20–23),

and it is Luke's Jesus who offers to the poor, the maimed, the blind, and the lame places at the great banquet table (14:21–23).

COMMENTARY

1:1–4
The Prologue

The prologue to Luke's Gospel is without parallel in the NT, having its only similarity elsewhere in Luke in 3:1–2 and Acts 1:1–2. The Gospel of John contains a prologue, but it is a theological summary and not at all a statement of the author about sources, research, method, purpose, and addressee. Luke has employed the style of historians and technical writers of the time. This literary style is all the more noticeable since Luke shifts immediately in v. 5 to the more Semitic form, writing in the manner of the Greek OT for the entirety of the infancy narrative. (For approximate parallels to Luke 1:1–4, readers are referred to the prologues to Sirach [Ecclesiasticus] and Josephus's *Jewish War* and *Antiquities of the Jews*.) Even in English translation the careful construction of the prologue is evident. It consists of a single sentence, balanced between an introductory clause (protasis), "Since many" (v. 1) and a concluding clause (apodosis), "I too decided" (v. 3, NRSV). Such formal writing was a show of respect for a cultured reader, in this case Theophilus (v. 3). The expression "most excellent" is also used later by Luke to refer to the Roman governor of Judea (Acts 23:26). Scholars are divided in their attempts to identify Theophilus. Some take the name as a symbol (the Greek word means "friend of God"); others regard it as a real person, perhaps a Roman official who is informed about if not a convert to the Christian faith. Whether the name is a literary device or a real person, the quality of the writing is hardly of the type to have either its source or destination in a Christian community fitting the popular image of a deprived and unlettered lot.

Since many narratives about Jesus had already been written (we know of many, but can identify only one of those known to Luke, the Gospel of Mark), it is not clear why Luke wished to add another. Perhaps the many narratives had created confusion. There is no criticism of the former accounts, but the thoroughness of Luke's research, his recording the events "in order," and his desire to give the reader certainty in matters about which the reader was already informed may combine to argue that Luke found in the earlier narratives something confusing, erroneous, or incomplete. If the reader is a Roman official who may soon make decisions affecting Christians, then getting the story straight is vitally important. Again, it is unclear whether "you have been instructed" (v. 4, NRSV) means having gotten information or having been instructed as a Christian. What is clear is that some time has passed since the ministry of Jesus. What Jesus said and did had already, prior to Luke, become a written story passed along as a tradition ("delivered" translates the special term for transmitting tradition). Now after careful research Luke joins in that transmission, but prefers not to call his work a Gospel as does Mark (1:1). Rather, Luke chooses a term more historical than theological: an "account." As will be seen later, he sets this account into the larger record of world history. And not only has some time passed since Jesus' ministry, but Luke assumes much more time will pass before Christ returns. One does not research and write an orderly account if one is convinced that the Day of the Lord is at hand.

1:5–2:52
The Infancy and Childhood Narrative

Both Luke and Matthew have infancy narratives, but they represent quite different traditions. Some scholars have been persuaded that 3:1 was the original beginning of Luke's Gospel and that the infancy stories were added later. Although 3:1 is clearly a second beginning, and although interest in the circumstances of Jesus' birth probably arose some time after the resurrection (the NT records of apostolic preaching do not include references to the virgin birth), the content of 1:5–2:52 is fully consonant with the remainder of the Gospel. These early stories introduce many Lucan themes: continuity with Judaism, the line of David, God's favor on the poor and oppressed, and the importance of Jerusalem and the Temple. In fact, one could call 1:5–2:52 the Gospel in brief and not an account to satisfy questions about Jesus' origin.

The style of the infancy and childhood narrative is very much that of the LXX. Not only does Luke use many allusions to the OT (Exod. 30:7; Dan. 10:7, 12; Num. 6:3; Mal. 3:1, 4–5; 2 Sam. 7:12–16; Judg. 5:24 are but a few in chap. 1 alone), but he brings his readers into the religious world of the OT. There is no single literary genre—story, homily, poetry, song, prayer, history, and doctrine blend to welcome readers into a world where they are relaxed, oriented, at home. This literary achievement is due, in part, to Luke's allusive use of the OT, weaving the sacred past into the present story rather than quoting the OT to argue for the truth of the Christian story, as does Matthew. The readers' comfort and pleasure in 1:5–2:52 are also related to Luke's abundant use of poetry and song. Many scholars believe Luke draws upon early Christian liturgies for the songs and prayers of Mary, the angel, Zechariah, and Simeon. Luke's infancy and childhood narrative consists of two panels of material: the annunciation of the births of John the Baptist and

Jesus (1:5–38), followed by a transition story, the visitation (1:39–56); and the accounts of the births of John and Jesus (1:57–2:40), followed by a transition story, the boy Jesus in the Temple (2:41–52).

1:5–56
The Annunciation of the Births of John the Baptist and Jesus

1:5–25, The Annunciation of the Birth of John the Baptist. Luke begins his narrative by setting the event in the context of contemporary history, a pattern followed through the Gospel and Acts. Herod the Great was made king by the Roman senate in 40 B.C., but his actual control began in 37 B.C. and ended with his death in 4 B.C. Luke customarily uses Judea to represent the whole of Palestine (4:44). Both Zechariah and Elizabeth were of the priestly family of Aaron, Zechariah serving at the Temple in one of the twenty-four divisions named for Aaron's twenty-four sons (1 Chron. 24:1–19). Even though they are the picture of Jewish piety, they are still childless. Elizabeth, barren in her old age, belongs to a rich tradition: Sarah, Rebekah, Rachel, wife of Manoah, and Hannah.

Zechariah is on duty at the Temple for the services of morning and evening prayers when he is chosen by lot (a method for discerning God's will, Acts 1:26) to burn the incense in the holy place where only priests could enter. There at the altar he is visited by Gabriel, one of the seven archangels of Judaism. Luke's description follows the account of Gabriel's visit to Daniel (Dan. 10): fear, the message, being stricken speechless. The angel's message is fourfold: Elizabeth will have a child to be named John (v. 13); the child will give to them and to many joy and gladness (v. 14); the child will be reared in the tradition of Nazirites (v. 15; Num. 6:3; Judg. 13:2–5); and the child will minister in the spirit of Elijah, who was to herald the end time and prepare Israel for it (vv. 16–17; Mal. 4:5). Early Christians believed Elijah would appear as forerunner of the Messiah. Unlike Matthew (Matt. 17:10–13), Luke never specifically identifies John as Elijah.

Understandably, Zechariah has doubts, but for his unbelief he is stricken speechless. The worshipers outside, awaiting the overdue priest, get from him only signs and gestures, but sense he has experienced God. His duty ended, Zechariah goes home and Elizabeth conceives, for which she praises God, since barrenness was not only blamed on the woman, but was also viewed as a reproach from God. Zechariah is silent and Elizabeth is in hiding, creating a mood of waiting and expectation.

1:26–38, The Annunciation of the Birth of Jesus. Readers are struck by the close parallel this account bears to the preceding one: introduction of the characters, the appearance of the angel, fear, the good news, doubt, the sign, response, the angel departs. As usual, Luke dates (in the sixth month of Elizabeth's pregnancy) and locates (Nazareth was a small town of small regard, John 1:46, in south Galilee) the event to be presented. The angel's announcement of the birth comes not to the man, as in the preceding story and in Matthew's account of Jesus' birth (Matt. 1:18–25), but to the woman. Mary is a virgin, betrothed but not yet married (v. 34). Betrothals, legal and binding, were usually arranged when women were quite young, still only girls. Joseph's importance is that he is of David's house and thus provides Jesus' legal connection to the throne of David (1:32; 2:4).

To the angel's greeting, later scribes added "Blessed are you among women!" (NRSV footnote to 1:28), perhaps a borrowing from v. 42. Throughout the annunciation and infancy stories Mary is portrayed as favored of God (v. 30), deeply thoughtful (v. 29; 2:19, 51), obedient (v. 38), believing (v. 45), worshipful (v. 46), and devoted to Jewish law and piety (2:22–51). It is little wonder that Luke names her in the company of believers when the church began (Acts 1:14). Gabriel's message to Mary is fourfold: she will have a son to be named Jesus (v. 31); the child will be the Son of God (Ps. 2:7) and will occupy forever the throne of David (2 Sam. 7:13–16; Luke 1:32–33); the conception of the child will be effected by the overshadowing descent of God's Spirit (v. 35; Exod. 40:35; 1 Kings 8:10); as a sign of the truth of the message, the angel informs Mary of the pregnancy of her kinswoman Elizabeth (vv. 36–37). Gabriel's word concludes with the message to Abraham and Sarah when they doubted the news of the birth of a child: "Is anything too hard for the Lord?" (Gen. 18:14). Mary accepts in humble obedience the word from God.

1:39–56, The Visitation. This story consists of four parts: the visit itself (vv. 39–41a); the inspired speech of Elizabeth (vv. 41b–45); the song of Mary (vv. 46–55); and Mary's return home after the visit of three months (v. 56). Since Mary accepted Gabriel's word, there is no reason to think Mary's visit was to check the truth of that word. Two women, not only kin but now drawn by a common experience, meet in an unnamed village in the hills of Judea. The one woman is old and her son will end an old era; the other is young and virgin and her son will usher in the new. Even the unborn John knows the difference and leaps in the womb when Mary enters, recalling the struggle in Rebekah's womb (Gen. 25:22). In words inspired by the Holy Spirit, Elizabeth blesses Mary as "the mother of my Lord" and as one who accepted in faith God's promise spoken by the angel. Mary's song, in response to Elizabeth and to the events that have transpired, is sometimes called the Magnificat, from the opening word in the Latin translation. The song itself draws upon the song of Hannah (1 Sam. 2:1–10) with other OT allusions and phrases interspersed. Since Hannah was promised and given a child in her old age, some scholars have understood

the song as having originally belonged to Elizabeth rather than Mary. In fact, some Old Latin manuscripts read "and Elizabeth said," but the earlier Greek attributes the song to Mary. Only briefly does the canticle focus upon Mary's favored place (1:48–49); the major burden of it is praise to God who has acted always in justice and mercy and will continue to do so in memory of the promise to Abraham and to his descendants forever.

Two unusual features of the song deserve attention. First, God is portrayed in terms of what God has done, because what God has done is what God will do. The past tense is commonly used in Scripture to express hope for the future. Second, God's justice and mercy are presented in terms of reversed fortunes for the proud and the humble, the mighty and the lowly, the rich and the poor. This pattern will reappear often in Luke, e.g., Luke's beatitudes and woes (6:20–26) and the story of the rich man and Lazarus (16:19–31).

1:57–2:52
The Births of John and Jesus, with a Childhood Story of Jesus

1:57–80, The Birth of John the Baptist. This account consists of three parts: the birth, circumcision, and naming of the child (vv. 57–66); the inspired prophecy of Zechariah (vv. 67–79); and a summary statement about John (v. 80). As was customary, relatives and neighbors not only joined in the joy of the birth, but also in the naming (Ruth 4:17). Apparently in Second Temple Judaism the naming was linked to the circumcision, the act by which a male child was made a member of the people of God. The expectation that the boy would be named for his father was according to custom in some quarters (Tob. 1:9). That Elizabeth knew the child was to be called John may be understood as a revelation to her. That Zechariah's tongue was loosed is to be taken as miraculous, prompting him to praise God and the neighbors to be filled with fear. Throughout the hill country of Judea there is much pondering of these events, with great expectation.

Zechariah's inspired prophecy, often called the Benedictus after the first word in the Latin translation, falls into two parts: vv. 68–75 and 76–79. Resounding with OT allusions, vv. 68–75 are distinctly Jewish, similar to hymns of praise to God as deliverer (Pss. 34; 67; 103; 113) and to the thanksgiving psalms of the Dead Sea Scrolls. Jewish eschatological hopes (hopes for the end days) will be fulfilled: prophetic predictions will come to pass, the covenant with Abraham will be remembered, and all enemies will be overthrown by the "horn of salvation" (NIV; power of God, 1 Sam. 2:10; Pss. 18:2; 132:17) whom God has raised up. Luke 1:76–79, regarded by some as a Christian addition to a hymn that may have circulated among the followers of John the Baptist, specifies John as the forerunner of the Messiah, drawing on Mal. 3:1–2; 4:5–6. Malachi identifies this figure as Elijah returned. The one who will follow, bringing salvation, is characterized with lines from Isa. 9:1–2; 42:7. Luke rounds off this story with a summary statement about John's growth, recalling Samson the Nazirite (Judg. 13:24) and Samuel (1 Sam. 2:26). When the story resumes, when John is manifest to Israel, he will come demanding the cleansing of repentance (3:3).

2:1–40, The Birth of Jesus. Again, one is struck by the close parallels in the two birth stories: joy at birth, circumcision and naming, songs of great expectation, and concluding statement about the child's growth. Here, however, the style of writing is noticeably different, less like that of the OT and more like that of the remainder of the Gospel. Luke's birth story consists of five parts: the birth itself (vv. 1–7); the announcement to the shepherds (vv. 8–20); the circumcision and naming (v. 21); the purification and dedication in Jerusalem (vv. 21–38); the return to Nazareth and the summary of the child's growth (vv. 39–40).

Although Matthew and Luke agree Jesus was born in Bethlehem (Matt. 2:1), their accounts of the relation of the holy family to Nazareth and to Bethlehem differ (Matt. 2:19–23). Luke says Mary and Joseph were in Bethlehem to be registered for an imperial census and taxation. Historians have been unable to confirm a universal census in the reign of Augustus (Octavius), who ruled from 27 B.C. to A.D. 14 (→ Augustus). There was a census in Palestine when Quirinius was governor of Syria (perhaps the one referred to in Acts 5:37), but that was later, about A.D. 6. Since Quirinius was a viceroy in this region earlier and since some time elapsed between enrollment and tax assessment, some scholars have argued that Luke could be generally but not exactly correct in his historical references (→ Quirinius). Luke's primary aim is to place the birth in the city of David, because Jesus' continuity with the royal house of David was important for Luke's Christology, his depiction of Jesus' identity. Luke does not, however, quote the messianic prophecy about Bethlehem (Mic. 5:2) as does Matthew (2:5–6).

During this stay in Bethlehem Jesus is born and, like all newborns, is wrapped with strips of cloth to keep the body straight and assure proper growth. The guest room was apparently occupied and hence offered no privacy, so Mary and Joseph withdrew to the stable underneath or in back of the house, perhaps in a cave. A feeding trough served as a crib. In vv. 8–20 Luke provides a scene sharply different from that of Matthew, who sets the birth of Jesus among the wealthy and powerful (Matt. 2:1–23). The first to hear the news are the poor and lowly. The prophecy of Isa. 61:1 is being fulfilled: the poor have good news proclaimed to them. As elsewhere in these narratives, the word of God comes through an angel, a divine messenger. Luke speaks of angels as easily as he speaks of human beings. In fact, when a sign is offered as proof

of the good news, it is not what moderns might regard as a sign; i.e., something as extraordinary as a heavenly host. Rather, the sign is as common as a baby to be found in poor circumstances, lying in a feeding trough.

Luke provides through the angel a summation of his Christology: Jesus is of the house of David (royalty), he is Savior (neither Matthew nor Mark use this title), he is Christ (Messiah), and he is Lord. This is the message about Jesus preached by the apostles (Acts 2:14–36). The content of the song by the host of heaven is not fully clear. The oldest manuscripts have as the third clause, "among people of [God's] good pleasure," i.e., "those whom he favors" (NRSV). Some of these were later "corrected" (by changing a single letter) to read, "among humans, good will," and that reading prevailed for centuries. The shepherds go to the city of David the shepherd, and the scene is filled with some of Luke's favorite words: wonder, pondering, making known the revelation, praising and glorifying God. The presence (glory) of God floods the story.

In the two stories that follow, the circumcision (v. 21) and the purification of Mary, together with the presentation of the child (vv. 22–38), Luke offers readers several major themes important to his theology. First, Jesus is reared according to the laws of Judaism. Neither his parents nor Jesus rebelled against or rejected the law of Moses. The best of Jewish piety and obedience to Moses were observed. Five times in this section Luke speaks of actions according to the law of Moses. As for Mary's purification and the child's presentation to God, Luke interweaves the two rituals in a confusing way. According to Lev. 12:2–8, forty days after the birth of a male child the mother went through a ritual of purification, offering a lamb as a sacrifice in the Temple or, if poor, a pair of doves or pigeons. According to Exod. 13:2, 12–13, the firstborn male child belonged to God and could be redeemed (taken home) by means of an offering by the father.

A second Lucan theme lies in the setting: Jerusalem and the Temple. For Luke, the ministry of Jesus moves toward Jerusalem and the mission of the church moves out from Jerusalem. As for the Temple, Luke is alone among NT writers in his favorable view. His Gospel begins with Zechariah in the Temple and it will close with Jesus' disciples in the Temple.

A third Lucan theme is offered by old Simeon in his inspired benediction, the Nunc Dimittis (the first two words of its Latin version). Simeon, a pious man longing for "the consolation of Israel" (the messianic age), is assured by the Holy Spirit that he will live to see it. The Holy Spirit leads him to the Temple at the time of Jesus' presentation and inspires him to know the child is God's Messiah. In his inspired song, he declares Jesus to be the means of salvation for all people, Jew and Gentile. On that conviction rests Jesus' ministry and the mission of the church.

A fourth and final theme is expressed in Simeon's word to Mary (apparently this occurs in the outer court where women were allowed). Jesus will bring truth to light and will effect decision and judgment. However, in so doing he will face opposition and death. When Jesus comes to Jerusalem as an adult, the journey will be his "exodus" (NRSV: "departure," 9:31).

Simeon's words are confirmed by Anna, a devout woman of advanced age (2:37 may mean she is eighty-four or has been a widow eighty-four years). The two aged saints are Israel in miniature, poised in anticipation of the new. God is leading Israel to the Messiah, but the Messiah will weep over this city because it did not know the time of the messianic visitation (19:41–44). Luke rounds out the story of the Jerusalem visit: Mary and Joseph have fully kept the law, they return with Jesus to Nazareth, and the child grows in strength, wisdom, and divine favor (cf. 1:80; 1 Sam. 2:26).

2:41–52, A Childhood Story of Jesus. Anyone familiar with apocryphal stories of Jesus' childhood filled with exhibitions of the supernatural (→ Apocryphal New Testament) appreciates the quiet reserve of Luke's account, the sole episode between the forty-day-old infant and the man of thirty years (3:23). The setting is again the Temple in Jerusalem. The law required pilgrimages for Passover, Pentecost, and Tabernacles (Exod. 23:14), but for those at a great distance, only Passover. Jesus is twelve, and if he has already passed through the ceremony of bar mitzvah, then he is a "son of the law" and obeying the command to attend Passover. When the seven-day festival ended, the pilgrims from Galilee, including Mary and Joseph, returned home. It is not surprising that a boy among friends and relatives would not be missed for a day. The reactions of the parents are natural, both in the search and in the reprimand. Jesus assumed they would know he would be in God's house (about God's business). They do not understand; Mary has even more to ponder. And what is Luke saying about Jesus? He is precocious; he knows the Scriptures and seeks deeper understanding; he is at home in the Temple; he regards God as his Father; and he obeys his parents. There is no hint of any break with Judaism. Again, Luke adds the statement of Jesus' growth, an allusion from 1 Sam. 2:26 that summarizes the development of the boy Samuel who grew up in the house of God.

3:1–4:13
Preparation for the Public Ministry of Jesus

Although 3:1 reads like the opening of a book—especially that of an OT prophet (e.g., Jer. 1:1; Hos. 1:1; Amos 1:1)—we found reasons above to regard the infancy narrative as an integral part of the Gospel. It is quite natural for 3:1 to have the form of a beginning, since it

does begin the adult and public life of Jesus. In this section Luke will present John the Baptist (3:1–20), the baptism of Jesus (3:21–22), the genealogy (3:23–38), and the temptation in the desert (4:1–13).

3:1–20, John the Baptist. Luke first identifies John by time (vv. 1–2a), place (vv. 2b–3a), and function (vv. 3b–6). Luke provides the best clear date for the ministry of John and therefore of Jesus: the fifteenth year of Tiberius would be A.D. 28–29. Pontius Pilate was prefect (technically not "governor") of Judea from 26 to 36 (→ Pilate). In addition Luke mentions three tetrarchs (a tetrarch ruled one-fourth of a region): Herod Antipas and Philip were sons of Herod the Great and ruled Galilee, Perea, and the northeast areas of Ituraea and Trachonitus (→ Herod; Philip). Lysanias was one of several by that name who ruled Abilene, still farther to the north of Galilee (→ Lysanias). Principal religious authorities were high priests. The office was for life, but the Romans appointed them as they willed. Annas served between A.D. 6 and 15. He was replaced, but apparently the Jews still regarded him as high priest. His son-in-law held the office between A.D. 18 and 36. According to the Fourth Gospel, Jesus appeared before each of them at his trial (John 18:12–28). But all these rulers are but background to the coming of the word of the Lord (cf. Jer. 1:2) to John in the wilderness (desert).

The desert is not only a geographical reference; it also recalls the place of Israel's formation as God's covenant people and hence implies a return to God. John's ministry centered in the Jordan Valley, where he preached a baptism of repentance for forgiveness of sins (cf. Mark 1:4). This baptism differs from proselyte baptism, which was for non-Jews, and Qumran baptism, which was a repeated act of cleansing. Repentance and forgiveness of sins constitute the gospel for Luke (24:47).

Luke modifies his source Mark in several ways: he omits the quotation of Mal. 3:1; he extends the quotation from Isaiah 40 to include vv. 4–5 so as to present the universal reach of the gospel; and he omits the description of John's appearance as like Elijah (2 Kings 1:8), because for Luke it is Jesus who is Elijah-like.

In 3:7–20 John is identified by his message. Unlike in Matthew, John addresses his eschatological message to the crowds. The judgment of God is not deterred by claims of privilege; lives that do not bear evidence of repentance share the fate of fruitless trees. Those who wish to avoid such a fate ask for instructions. Three groups present themselves: the crowds, tax collectors, and soldiers. The message framed for each group not only addresses the temptations peculiar to each, but provides occasion for an early glimpse of the social message of Luke, especially his attention to economic oppression and inequity.

The last portion of John's message is in response to those who would identify him as the Christ. This was a question all Gospel writers had to address, because John had his disciples as did Jesus. Luke first addressed it with the leaping of John in Elizabeth's womb when Mary entered the room. John here distinguishes himself from the Christ in three ways: John is not even worthy to be a slave of the mightier One; the Christ will baptize not with water, but with the Spirit and fire (anticipating Pentecost, Acts 2); and the Christ will bring judgment. Drawing on the image of spirit (wind) and fire, John likens the judgment to winnowing wheat in the wind and burning the chaff. But even judgment is good news (3:18) when repentance and forgiveness are available. For Herod Antipas, however, the clear and bold preaching of John was too indicting. Rather than responding to the message, he silences the messenger. John will reappear in chap. 7, but with his imprisonment he is removed from the scene, making way for the entrance of Jesus.

3:21–22, The Baptism of Jesus. In several respects Luke's account of Jesus' baptism differs from those of Matthew and Mark. First, there is no mention of who baptized Jesus; in the preceding verse John is shut up in prison. Second, the baptism itself is subordinated in a dependent clause in which Jesus is part of a crowd who have been baptized. Finally, Luke joins baptism to prayer. Throughout this Gospel the prayer life of Jesus receives attention. Divine participation in the event is threefold: first, heaven opens, recalling Isaiah's prayer for heaven to open and for God to come again as in the Exodus (Isa. 64:1–3). The Holy Spirit comes on Jesus and will mark all his ministry (4:14) as well as be the gift that Jesus bestows on the church (24:49; Acts 1:4–5). Second, that the Spirit assumed bodily form as a dove must be a symbolic expression asserting the clear reality of the experience, not to be confused with mere thought or feeling. And finally, divine attestation comes as a voice from heaven. The message joins Ps. 2:7, which speaks of the coronation of a king, and Isa. 42:1, which expresses God's embrace of the Suffering Servant. Here sovereignty and service are joined. The reading in some manuscripts "today I have begotten you," also drawn from Ps. 2:7, was used in the ancient church by those who argued that Jesus was adopted as Son of God at his baptism.

3:23–38, The Genealogy of Jesus. The genealogy makes several statements important to Luke and his readers. It provides one of the two NT references to Jesus' age as an adult (John 8:57). It affirms Jesus' relation to the entire human race by tracing his line to Adam. The genealogy also establishes a point already repeatedly made by Luke, that Jesus is the son of David. It is quite clear that the family line is traced through Joseph, who was legally Jesus' father though not biologically "as was thought" (3:23). Anyone comparing this genealogy with Matthew's will notice Luke begins with Jesus and moves back to Adam and to

God, while Matthew begins with Abraham and moves forward to Jesus. Luke has more names and there are some differences. However, genealogies tended to become stylized and even symbolic. For example, Luke has eleven series of seven names, a total of seventy-seven. Many readers wonder what is achieved by tracing Jesus' family line. Does it offer an alternative way of affirming Jesus as son of God? Luke's intention is not clear. One can at least be sure of his desire to reaffirm Jesus' continuity with his Jewish heritage. What has been demonstrated by the family's piety and obedience to the law of Moses is here asserted by the genealogy (→ Genealogy).

4:1–13, The Temptation of Jesus. Luke separates Jesus' baptism and temptation with the genealogy, but if the genealogy affirmed Jesus' continuity with his heritage, the temptation does so even more dramatically. Israel's Exodus experience of trial in the desert (Deut. 8:2) is here recapitulated in Jesus' life. The similarity between Luke's and Matthew's accounts (Matt. 4:1–11) argues conclusively for a common tradition, but readers of Luke will want to notice this version carefully, so that what Luke wishes to say comes through. For example, the devil does not take Jesus up on a high mountain to show him the kingdoms of the world. Apparently Luke reserves mountains for experiences of prayer and revelation. Here the tempter provides a sudden vision. Or again, Luke has Jerusalem and the Temple the site of the final temptation. This is quite understandable since for Luke Jesus' ministry leads toward Jerusalem and the Temple, the scene of his final struggle and trial. The experience of temptation is between one full of the Holy Spirit and led by the Holy Spirit and the devil, the "slanderer," the one attempting to thwart the purposes of God. The forty days recall Israel's forty-year and forty-day experiences.

Since Jesus has yet to begin his ministry, we may surmise he is struggling with the nature and shape of his messianic role. Weakened by hunger, the first temptation is personal, but also social: will this be the ministry Jesus will have? The second is political: will Jesus submit to the ruler of this world to achieve good for people in this world? The final temptation is religious: will Jesus win Jerusalem and all it symbolizes and will Jesus avoid death there by the exhibition of supernatural power? For this story to be real it must not only be assumed that what Jesus was tempted to do he could do, but also that each temptation had strong appeal. Note that one of them was even supported by Scripture (Ps. 91:11–12). But in every case Jesus responds with Scripture (Deut. 8:3; 6:13; 6:16). The way of the Messiah is to be none of these. Luke concludes the temptations not with relief, but with foreboding: "until an opportune time" (4:13). Luke anticipates the Passion, for the tempter will reenter Luke's narrative through Judas (22:3).

4:14–9:50
The Ministry of Jesus in Galilee

4:14–15
Opening Summary

Unlike Mark and Matthew, Luke does not relate Jesus' Galilean ministry to the imprisonment of John. Rather, Jesus comes in "the power of the Spirit" that came upon him following baptism. Neither does Luke report Jesus preaching an eschatological message of the approaching kingdom. Instead, Luke offers the briefest sketch: Jesus teaches in the Galilean synagogues, the report of him spreads, and he is everywhere praised. Clearly Luke wants nothing substantive to be reported prior to the account of Jesus' visit in Nazareth. Although Luke 4:14–9:50 follows in general the text of Mark 1:14–9:39, some events are rearranged and, quite noticeably, Jesus' ministry according to Luke remains in Galilee. Therefore, Mark's stories of trips to peripheral regions and north to Tyre and Sidon are omitted.

4:16–30
In the Synagogue at Nazareth

Luke departs from Mark's order (this incident is much later, Mark 6:1–6), but not to say that Jesus began his ministry in Nazareth. Verses 14–15, 23 make it clear he has already ministered elsewhere. Rather, this story is placed here programmatically, offering in miniature both the nature of Jesus' entire ministry and the fact of his rejection by his own people in view of his acceptance of and being accepted by outsiders. As Luke has repeatedly made clear, Jesus is no rebel; he lives and works within his tradition. He regularly attends the synagogue and participates as all male members were permitted to do, by reading Scripture and commenting. He follows the regular practice: stand to read, sit to comment. The passage read, Isa. 61:1–2, is his choice (Luke's quotation is in fact composite, including a line from Isa. 58:6). The closing line alludes to the joyful restoration of persons and property in the year of Jubilee (Lev. 25:8–55). Jesus offers one comment, but it summarizes who he is and what he is doing. He understands himself as having received God's Spirit and fulfilling the prophecy. The response is mixed: admiration, wondering, doubt.

At this point (4:23) the encounter takes a surprisingly negative turn. Jesus quotes two proverbs: the one expressing their criticism of his not performing miracles as he did (or would do: 4:31–41) in Capernaum and the other being his response—a prophet is not acceptable at home. The tension obviously present increases sharply when Jesus defends ministry to outsiders by offering two OT stories. Both Elijah (1 Kings 17:8–14) and Elisha (2 Kings 5:1–27), prophets

in Israel, took God's favor to non-Jews. To be indicted by their own Scripture was too much. In anger the Nazarenes expelled and sought to kill Jesus. Tossing a person against stones apparently was an admissible form of stoning, but this is mob, not official, action. But the trial and death are here foreshadowed. For the present, Jesus moves away from them safely. Similar incidents are common in the Fourth Gospel (John 7:30, 43–44; 8:59; 10:39). One also recalls the free movement of Elijah in the midst of enemies.

4:31–5:16
Early Popularity in Galilee

In this section Luke offers six vignettes from Jesus' ministry that indicate the range of his work—teaching, preaching, exorcising demons, healing, calling disciples—and that account for his growing popularity with the people.

4:31–37, An Exorcism in the Capernaum Synagogue. Mark 1:21–28 is followed here, but with changes, such as the omission of the contrast between Jesus' teaching and that of the scribes. Capernaum lay on the north shore of the Sea of Galilee and was the center of much of Jesus' activity. The foundation of an ancient synagogue has been excavated, perhaps on the site of the one visited by Jesus (→ Capernaum). The NT assumes the active presence of evil forces in the world, and the presence of Jesus effects raging confrontations. Demons recognize Jesus as the power of God, and here a demon seeks to gain power over Jesus or at least to neutralize Jesus' advantage by the ancient practice of pronouncing an opponent's name. The battle lines are drawn, the man convulses, and the demon is exorcised. All the witnesses are amazed at the power of Jesus' word, and the news spreads rapidly. Note the focus on Jesus' word and not on the miraculous or on a ritual of exorcism (cf. v. 32; also 5:1; 8:11).

4:38–39, Healing Simon's Mother-in-Law. Luke abbreviates Mark's account (Mark 1:29–31) and alters the nature of the healing. "And he stood over her and rebuked the fever" (v. 39) is a description of an exorcism, based on the common assumption that physical illnesses were the work of evil spirits.

4:40–41, Healing the Sick at Evening. Readers can assume that this unit describes events in the same city and after sunset on the same day as the two units above. Now that the Sabbath is over, crowds gather and the sick are brought. The diseased are healed (every one of them) by laying on hands and the demon-possessed are exorcised by the strong word of rebuke. Jesus was named by a demon earlier as the Holy One of God (4:34); here he is named Christ. They recognize one who can destroy them. Jesus silences them, perhaps because he will not tolerate the confession from evil spirits, perhaps because the use of such titles would prompt misunderstandings of the nature of his mission.

4:42–44, Jesus Leaves Capernaum. Jesus moves away from the danger of popularity based on the miraculous and seeks privacy. Mark says he was praying and his disciples sought him (Mark 1:35–39). Here the crowds want him to stay. However, Jesus feels the urgency of his mission, to preach the gospel widely. Luke uses "the kingdom of God" (v. 43) for the first time here. The summary statement to the effect that Jesus was preaching in the synagogues of Judea does not mean he went to the region to the south. "Judea" in Luke can be a synonym for Palestine as a whole (1:5; Acts 10:37).

5:1–11, The Call of Disciples. Instead of Mark's early call of the first disciples (Mark 1:16–20), Luke places the call a bit later, during a preaching mission and following a miraculous catch of fish. The closest parallel is in John 21:1–8, a postresurrection story. Some scholars believe Luke's story would fit better in such a context because Peter's behavior (v. 8) would more appropriately follow his sin of denying Jesus. Understandably, the account assumes readers already know Simon, who is also called Simon Peter in v. 8. Luke's name for the Sea of Galilee is the lake of Gennesaret (→ Sea of Galilee). Jesus presses Simon's boat into service to get away from the crowding multitude. The extraordinary catch of fish prompts in Simon fear, astonishment, and a sense of his own unworthiness to be in the presence of one of such power and knowledge. In the episode Jesus is called Master and Lord, one whose very word commanded obedience (v. 5). Although the word, "henceforth you will be catching people" (v. 10), is addressed to Simon, his partners, James and John (no mention is made of Andrew), join him in abandoning everything to become disciples of Jesus.

5:12–16, Healing a Leper. Other than altering the introduction and conclusion, Luke follows the account in Mark 1:40–45. Leprosy, a name given to a range of maladies from mildew in houses and clothes to skin diseases in humans (Lev. 13; → Leprosy), was regarded as a social disease, removing the victim from social discourse and participation in religious exercises. This man apparently violated the rules in approaching Jesus, evidence of both desperation and faith. That Jesus touched him was most unusual, for he thereby entered into the man's isolation. But again, Jesus supports the law and will not be accessory to its violation. This and other acts of compassion generated great popularity and acclaim for Jesus. But Jesus is not swept away from the source of his power; he retreats to the desert for prayer. Luke's portrayal of Jesus carries this refrain.

5:17–6:11
Controversies with Pharisees

Against the backdrop of great popularity, Luke turns now to the darker side of Jesus' ministry: the stirrings of opposition and controversy. Again Luke follows Mark (2:1–3:6) but with modifications appropriate to Luke's theology and context. The issues—forgiving sin, socializing with publicans and sinners, fasting, and Sabbath observance—are offered in six stories that likely were used by the church in its debates with the synagogue.

5:17–26, The Cure of a Paralytic. Jesus' ministry has attracted not only the sick, but Pharisees and teachers of the law from all parts of the country. To appreciate their presence, one must discard popular negative images of Pharisees and understand their views of law, worship, and morality (→ Pharisees). Jesus and they had much in common. The story is dramatic and complex; a man lowered through a roof (Luke says "tiles," reflecting his own urban background) is both healed and forgiven. Does this imply a relation between his illness and his spiritual state? Some scholars hold that the episode is really the joining of a healing story with a forgiveness story set within it. The awkward point lies in vv. 23–24. How can one say whether healing or forgiveness is easier and how can healing prove the authority to forgive? Forgiving sin was certainly the graver issue, for to assume a power only God possessed was blasphemy, a capital offense. The church certainly claimed that the exalted Christ, the Son of Man, could forgive sin and in his name offered forgiveness. It is unclear what amazed the crowds, the healing, the pronouncement of forgiveness, or both. The conclusion is of the type that followed healings and exorcisms; forgiveness was a pronouncement and usually included in debate and opposition. No doubt the tradition carried in vv. 17–26 is a literary mix.

5:27–32, Eating with Tax Collectors and Sinners. This unit opens with the call of the man in whose home Jesus will eat with those regarded as social and religious outcasts. The man is Levi (called Matthew in the parallel Matt. 9:9; the name of Matthew occurs in the list of apostles in Luke 6:14–16, but Levi does not). His acceptance of discipleship is as complete as that of Peter, James, and John, and it is followed by a banquet at which Levi's old associates are at table with Jesus. Implied is his joy over his new life and the desire to share it (→ Publicans). Eating together, an important theme in Luke-Acts, indicated total acceptance of one another. The objection of the Pharisees is directed at Jesus' disciples, showing that at issue is not a historical question about Jesus, but the behavior of Christians in Luke's own day. Jesus defends himself and his church: he gives himself to those who need him. A favorite word of Luke is added to his version of the story: repentance. Repentance is both a gift and a demand of the kingdom life.

5:33–39, Concerning Fasting. Apparently this issue is also raised at Levi's house. The question is not whether fasting is right or wrong. Matthew says Jesus fasted (Matt. 4:2) and the church fasted (Matt. 6:16–18). Luke will later describe the church as fasting (Acts 13:2–3; 14:23). At issue is a matter of appropriateness. Routine fasting as the Pharisees did on Mondays and Thursdays was not an adequate reflection of God's grace and generosity toward the world. To Jesus' way of kingdom living there is an aspect of joy and thanksgiving. Weddings and banquets are proper analogies of the kingdom. Of course the Passion of Jesus evoked fasting among his followers, and until the end of days the church recalls the cross as well as Easter. Jesus tells his critics that his disciples can no more join their newfound joy to old rituals than one can tear up a new garment to patch an old or put new wine in old skins. Christian rituals must be appropriate to the new life. Luke's concluding v. 39 is unique and unusual. Is it humor or irony? Perhaps it is a recognition that even among the new, the followers of Jesus, there remains a clinging to the old ways of Judaism.

6:1–11, Concerning the Sabbath. That there are two stories focusing on Sabbath observance may indicate the frequency with which this issue arose between church and synagogue. The first (vv. 1–5) involves a defense of Jesus' disciples, concluding with a pronouncement: "The Son of Man is lord of the sabbath" (a much more Christological ending than in Mark 2:23–28). In the second (vv. 6–11) Jesus defends his own ministry of healing on the Sabbath. In the first the disciples are not accused of stealing; one was allowed to eat from a field while traveling (Deut. 23:25). The charge is harvesting and threshing on the Sabbath. Jesus' defense is by OT precedent (1 Sam. 21:1–6). Apparently the point is that human need, hunger, makes a claim prior to ritual.

In the second incident, the issue is sharply set: Jesus is facing a case of need, he can do something about it, but it is the Sabbath. Mark says Jesus was angry (Mark 3:5); Luke says the Pharisees and scribes were. Jesus poses the issue so as to make inactivity before human need no option at all. The question is simply, What is one to do? Give life (good) or kill (evil)? Jesus' action is the answer: it is never the wrong day to heal and help. The angry discussion that follows anticipates the cross.

6:12–16
Choosing the Twelve Apostles

After reporting the conflicts with the Pharisees and the growing hostility toward Jesus, Luke returns to the content and spirit of 5:16: great public approval and Jesus withdrawing for times of prayer. Choosing the

Twelve continues that narrative in that the apostles can help with an ever increasing ministry and they can assure continuity when the rising fury of Jesus' opponents ends his life. Luke again reminds readers that the selection of twelve helpers was not an act to expedite matters, but came after a night of prayer (cf. 3:21). And those chosen are not simply selected to be "sent out" (the verb from which the word "apostle" is derived, Mark 3:14), but they are in Luke given the name "apostles" (→ Apostle). The other Gospels each use this word only once, but it is more frequent in Luke (9:10; 17:5; 22:14; 24:10). One can see here an instance in which the anticipation of a second volume in which the apostles are principal figures noticeably influences Luke's Gospel narrative. As for the list of names (cf. also Mark 3:13–19; Matt. 10:1–4; Acts 1:13), Luke has Judas the son of James instead of Thaddaeus, and uses no "nicknames" such as "Sons of Thunder" (Mark 3:17) or "the Twin" (John 11:16). Judas Iscariot is identified by Luke alone with a rare noun for "traitor." The ancient manuscripts reflect some efforts by later scribes to standardize the list.

6:17–9:6
Ministry Between the Choosing and the Sending of the Twelve

Given the number of events and teachings between the selection of the Twelve and their being sent on a mission, we may regard this as a period of preparation for them.

6:17–49, The Sermon on the Plain. Luke has reversed the order of the call of the apostles and the healing of the crowds in Mark 3:7–19 and has shifted the setting from the sea (Mark 3:7) to a level place (Luke 6:17). Matthew places his version of this sermon after the call of four disciples and a general statement about Jesus' ministry (Matt. 4:18–25); Luke locates it after the call of twelve and a general statement about Jesus' ministry (Luke 6:12–19). In Matthew the sermon is from a mountain (Matt. 5:1); in Luke Jesus has prayed and chosen the Twelve on the mountain and now comes down to join a crowd made up of three groups: the apostles, the disciples, and the people (v. 17). Luke may have in mind Jews and Gentiles by referring to both Judea and to Tyre and Sidon. Matthew's version is four times the length of Luke's, contains material scattered elsewhere in the Gospels, and offers interpretations within the sermon that lead many students to conclude Luke follows more closely their common source (Q). As in Matthew, Luke seems to address the sermon to Jesus' disciples (v. 20) while insisting the teachings were given in the hearing of all the people (7:1). Luke's larger audience contains those of special concern to this Evangelist: the sick and the distressed.

The sermon itself consists of five parts: blessings and woes (vv. 20–26); on love of enemies (vv. 27–36); on judging (vv. 37–42); on proof of goodness (vv. 43–46); and on hearing and doing (vv. 47–49).

6:20–26, Blessings and Woes. Unlike Matthew's nine blessings and no woes, Luke has four each, set in parallels: poor/rich, hungry/full, weeping/laughing, and rejected/accepted. By sharply contrasting life now and in the future, Luke sets the sermon in an eschatological frame of reference. This is not to say Jesus' disciples are to sit and wait for a blessed future; Christ's presence means "*Today* this scripture has been fulfilled" (4:21; my emphasis). A blessing is a pronouncement of God's favor, fortune, happiness, while a woe is a curse, a pronouncement of God's disfavor, disapproval, judgment (Deut. 11:26–28). As early as the Magnificat, Luke makes it clear who is recipient of God's gracious favor. Notice also the direct "you" in Luke (which does not begin in Matthew until the last Beatitude), which implies the presence of both groups in Jesus' audience.

6:27–36, On Love of Enemies. The shifts in the Greek text from plural "you" (vv. 27–28), to singular (vv. 29–30), and back to plural (vv. 32–36), coupled with the fact that these sayings are found elsewhere in the Gospels, persuade readers that this "sermon" consists of a compilation of teachings. This unit contains two parts. The first (vv. 27–31) states the principle that Jesus' followers do not draw behavior patterns from those who victimize them (hating, cursing, abusing, striking, stealing, begging), but rather respond to others as they would wish to be treated (Luke's version of the Golden Rule; cf. Matt. 7:12). The second part (vv. 32–36) insists that neither should one's behavior be determined by one's friends. Rather, one is to imitate God, who does not reciprocate, but loves even the ungrateful and selfish.

6:37–42, On Judging. Cf. Matt. 7:1–5; 15:14; 10:24–25. From what has been said above, it follows that Jesus' disciples will not judge or condemn, but give and forgive. Even the balanced justice of measure for measure is joyfully broken by the image of overflowing generosity. "Into your lap" (v. 38) refers to the large pocket formed by the fold in a robe above the belt. Verses 39–40 warn that if one learns from blind, hypocritical, and judgmental teachers, then one will become such a person. Example was a bigger factor in pedagogy then than now. Verses 41–42 use the tragicomical image of a person with a log in the eye trying to improve the condition of another with a speck in the eye.

6:43–46, On Proof of Goodness. This subunit stresses the inseparable union of what one is, what one says, and what one does. Words and deeds announce character as surely as fruit reveals the nature of a tree.

6:47–49, On Hearing and Doing. Matthew (7:24–27) and Luke draw the parable of the two builders from a common source, but Luke has adapted it for a non-Palestinian setting. The meaning is un-

changed: the difference between interested auditors and obedient disciples will sooner or later become evident (James 1:22–25).

7:1–10, Healing the Centurion's Slave. Cf. Matt. 8:5–13; John 4:46–53. The centurion is a Gentile, perhaps serving under Herod Antipas or under Pilate at Caesarea. That he loved the Jewish nation and built a synagogue indicates he was a "God-fearer," one who was "at the gate," but not a convert to Judaism (cf. Cornelius, Acts 10:1–2). Unlike Matthew's account, Luke's story is of a man who never came in contact with Jesus. Two delegations, one of Jews and the other of friends, perhaps Gentiles, served as intermediaries. The image is not only of a humble, believing man, but of one who foreshadows the ingathering of Gentiles. The church later will directly take the good news to the Gentiles, but that mission has its authorization in the ministry of Jesus. Matthew uses this occasion to prophesy the time when many will come from east and west (8:11–12), but Luke will state that later (13:28–30).

7:11–17, Raising the Widow's Son at Nain. This story is without parallel in the other Gospels, but has antecedents in 1 Kings 17:17–24 and 2 Kings 4:32–37. As in 4:16–30, Luke again looks to the ministries of Elijah and Elisha to present Jesus, not only in what Jesus did but in the way the story is told. "He gave him to his mother" is verbatim from 1 Kings 17:23 in the LXX. A town southeast of Nazareth is believed by some to be the ancient Nain. Luke's "bier," or casket, is likely his Greek equivalent of the Jewish stretcher on which the dead were carried outside the town for burial. The story conveys the picture of Jesus not only as compassionate, especially to women, but also as a prophet through whom the people are experiencing a divine visitation (19:44). This event also prepares readers for the witness to John about Jesus: "the dead are raised" (7:22).

7:18–35, John the Baptist and Jesus. Cf. Matt. 11:2–19. This unit consists of two parts: the interchange between John's disciples and Jesus (vv. 18–23) and Jesus' words concerning John (vv. 24–35). In the first part, readers have to recall 3:19–20 to know John is in prison. John had disciples; in fact, according to Acts, John's movement had extended as far as Ephesus as early as Paul (18:24–19:4). Even today a small sect in Iraq called Mandeans traces its history to John. All four Gospel writers have to deal with John, affirming his role in God's purpose while keeping him subordinate to Jesus.

John's question is essentially about Jesus' messiahship. But why the question? Is John wavering, unclear about the nature of Jesus' ministry or Jesus' failure to make claims about himself? It must be kept in mind that while John announced the coming of a stronger One, only in the Fourth Gospel does John have the revelation that the person is Jesus (John 1:24–34), though it may be implied in Matt. 3:13–14. Jesus may not fit John's image, or John may wish to prod Jesus to a public declaration. Jesus' answer, recalling Isa. 61:1–2, which Jesus read in the synagogue at Nazareth, is a description of what he is at that time doing. John, like everyone else, must draw his own conclusion, and he is blessed if he is not offended by such a Messiah.

In the second part, Jesus identifies John as a prophet fulfilling Mal. 3:1, but unlike Matthew (11:14) Luke does not say John is Elijah to come (Mal. 4:5). But for all John's greatness, this child of old parents belongs to the old age; in Jesus, child of the young virgin, God does a new thing. Luke 7:29–30 offers a parenthetical comment (so indicated in the NRSV) that is perhaps the highest praise of John: receiving or rejecting John's baptism was receiving or rejecting the purpose of God. Verses 31–35 are framed on two proverbs, apparently familiar in the culture, about children, some of whom are fickle and impossible to please. John's and Jesus' eating habits reflect two different lifestyles and ministries, but the fickle children are pleased by neither. The other children reflect their wisdom by their acceptance of John and Jesus. Those who justified God (v. 29) are justified as wise (v. 35). The focus here on eating, so important in stating who does and who does not belong to the people of God, serves well to introduce the next story.

7:36–50, Jesus Anointed by a Sinful Woman. For Luke's story to be heard it must be separated from similar but different anointing stories in Mark 14:3–9; Matt. 26:6–13; and John 12:1–8. Luke's account involves an unnamed woman (there is no reason to assume it was Mary Magdalene, 8:2) and occurred in Galilee in the house of Simon, a Pharisee. Jesus had enough in common with Pharisees for this to be neither a surprise nor understood as a plot to trap Jesus. Since eating occurred while reclining, the woman's approach and activity were not awkward. For Simon, the act proves Jesus is no prophet, since a prophet would have known her to be a sinner and would have repulsed her. But Jesus proves himself a prophet not only by his acceptance of her penitence and love, but also by knowing Simon's thoughts. The parable of the two debtors who owed, one five hundred, the other fifty denarii (a denarius was a day's wages, Matt. 20:2) points up the differences between the woman and Simon, their behaviors registering responses to forgiveness. It is somewhat surprising that Simon had not extended to Jesus the customary courtesies; this and other meals in the homes of Pharisees (11:37; 14:1) reflect tensions, but not alienation and condescension.

Luke 7:47 is difficult in that Jesus seems to say the woman was forgiven much because she loved much, rather than the reverse. Surely the meaning is that she must have been forgiven much since it is evident she

loves much. The conclusion of the story (vv. 49–50) could possibly have appeared originally in another context. After all, the issue has not been Jesus' authority to forgive sins; nor has the praiseworthy quality in the woman been her faith. It was her love that had been abundantly demonstrated.

8:1–3, Women Share in Jesus' Ministry. Luke alone carries this note about these women, and perhaps it is placed here as a contrast to the woman in the preceding story. Joanna is mentioned here and in 24:10; Susanna, nowhere else. Mary of Magdala, prominent in the resurrection narrative, had been relieved of seven demons. Only popular legend has made her a prostitute by assimilation to the previous story. The women are said to have been healed, to have been with Jesus and the Twelve, and to have provided financial assistance. Luke's favorable reports about women began with Elizabeth and Mary and will continue through Acts.

8:4–18, The Parable of the Sower. Cf. Mark 4:1–9; Matt. 13:10–15. Since 6:19 Luke has not followed Mark, but here he returns to that source. However, Luke leaves the setting in Jesus' ministry quite vague and in general abbreviates the parable. The action of the sower is normal for that land in which planting preceded plowing. The parable can have the effect of instructing Jesus' followers that not all their teaching and preaching will be fruitful. It can also serve to encourage those who have looked at their failures and who have forgotten that some seed will yield abundantly. What is important is to realize this is a parable, and therefore is not a simple illustration of a point being made otherwise. Rather, a parable *is* the message, and the message offered in such a way as to elicit listener involvement in its meaning. With parables listeners bear heavy responsibility for what is heard and understood; quite often the message is not obvious nor available to casual, unengaged listeners (→ Parables). In stating the reason for speaking in parables (vv. 9–10), Luke very noticeably softens Mark 4:10–12. Luke has in mind two generally described groups: "his disciples" and "others." Since it is his disciples who ask for an explanation and yet who are the ones to whom kingdom secrets are given, we can assume an explanation will follow.

Luke omits Mark's "Lest they should turn again and be forgiven," which was Mark's way of saying that in the purposes of God lay the reasons for some not understanding Jesus' message. Matthew quotes Isa. 6:9–10 in support of this view. All the Evangelists are dealing with the fact that in the audience of Jesus (and of the church) some hear and some do not.

In the interpretation (8:11–15) the parable is made into an allegory, i.e., a story in which each item in the narration is made to represent something else. Most scholars agree this interpretation represents the situation of the early church in its missionary preaching to a variety of conditions. As an "explanation" of the parable, however, the interpretation is less than clear. For example, the seed is identified as "the word of God" (an early Christian term for the gospel message) and also as the various kinds of hearers. One would have expected the hearers to be identified as different kinds of soil.

The concluding verses (16–18) consist of three separate sayings, sometimes called "floating sayings" because they are found in other contexts (Matt. 5:15; 10:26; 25:29; Luke 12:2; 19:26). The sense of the three sayings, however, is appropriate to the revealing quality of parables, in contrast to their concealing or secretive quality. Jesus came to reveal, to give light, and those who attend diligently to his words will experience increasing understanding. Others, with no more investment than spectators, will walk away empty and confused.

8:19–21, Jesus' True Family. Both Mark (3:31–35) and Matthew (12:46–50) place this episode prior to the parable of the sower, and in Mark it occurs in a context of very tense controversy. By abbreviating the account and locating it after the parable of the sower, Luke achieves two things: any tension between Jesus and his immediate family is minimized, and the story serves to illustrate the parable: hearing and doing the word of God is the path into the fellowship created by Jesus.

8:22–25, Jesus Calms the Storm. Cf. Mark 4:35–41; Matt. 8:23–27. This story begins a series of wonders Jesus performs: stilling a storm, healing a demoniac, raising a dead girl, and healing a sick woman. If they are offered as examples of the mysteries of the kingdom, they are but loosely joined to what precedes. Luke simply says, "on one of the days" (v. 22). As usual, Luke calls Galilee a "lake"; for a non-Palestinian, "sea" meant the Mediterranean. Jesus is addressed as Master, appropriate to his action in calming the storm. The miracle is really an exorcism; the water was believed to be an abode of evil forces, and a sudden storm was viewed by many as the work of demons. Jesus rebukes them as he does in other exorcisms. It is rare in the Gospels for the Twelve to be the beneficiaries of an act of Jesus' power; usually they join him in ministering to others. In their amazement they ask the question the unfolding story is answering: who is this?

8:26–39, Healing the Gerasene Demoniac. Cf. Mark 5:1–20; Matt. 8:28–34. Luke does not tell this story as lengthily and dramatically as Mark. It is Luke's one story of Jesus ministering outside Jewish territory. The manuscripts differ on the spelling of the name of the place. The account itself is of an exorcism, and though an extreme case of demon possession, the exorcism follows the usual pattern (4:31–37). The abyss was the netherworld, the abode of the dead (Rom.

10:7), of imprisoned spirits (1 Pet. 3:19), and Satan's prison (Rev. 20:3). The man who is healed (Luke's word can also mean "saved") becomes a disciple and is sent to proclaim what God has done. The story prefigures the gentile mission and gives warrant for it in Jesus' own ministry.

8:40–56, Raising Jairus's Daughter and Healing a Woman with a Hemorrhage. Cf. Mark 5:21–43; Matt. 9:18–26. Luke found these two stories already joined in Mark, who often set a story within a story. The two events have natural connections in that both involve women, both are cases of ritual uncleanness, and, in Luke, both involve "twelve years." This is the second raising of an only child in Luke (7:11–17), and the woman's touch fulfills 6:19. Jesus' word to the woman: "your faith has made you well [saved you]; go in peace" repeats his word to the sinful woman who anointed him (7:50). Whatever the condition, Jesus makes people whole again. In the account of raising Jairus's daughter, Luke introduces the inner circle (Peter, James, and John) and the desire for secrecy on the part of Jesus. Soon now Jesus will turn toward Jerusalem and death; this act of raising the dead must not confuse the public over the uses of Jesus' power in the hour of his own death. In summary, Jesus saves (8:43–48) and gives life to the dead (8:49–56).

9:1–6, Jesus Sends Out the Twelve. Cf. Mark 6:7–13; Matt. 10:1, 9–11, 14. Since the time they were chosen to be apostles (6:12–16), the Twelve have listened to and observed Jesus. Now they are in fact apostles ("those sent out"), commissioned to exorcise demons, to heal, and to preach. Like that of Jesus, their ministry will testify to the inbreaking of the kingdom and an attack on the forces of evil. For this mission Jesus gives not only authority (Mark 6:7), but also power. They do not go two by two; Luke reserves that for the seventy (10:1–12). For the journey they are to be totally dependent on God. Like the Levites they could expect hospitality and support (Num. 18:31; 1 Cor. 9:3–14). Inhospitality was not to be met with retaliation, but with the simple ritual of judgment (Luke 9:5; Acts 13:51). Luke clearly has in mind the subsequent mission of the church led by the apostles, especially in the added note of universality: "bringing the good news and curing diseases *everywhere*" (v. 6, my emphasis).

9:7–50
Forebodings and Predictions of the Passion

Even though it is not until 9:51 that Jesus turns toward Jerusalem, every unit of 9:7–50 anticipates directly or indirectly the coming Passion.

9:7–9, Herod Perplexed About Jesus. Cf. Mark 6:14–16; Matt. 14:1–2. This Herod is Antipas, son of Herod the Great and tetrarch of Galilee. The various public opinions of Jesus (repeated in 9:18–22) disturb Herod. The ministry of Jesus has now reached a center of political power, a clear prophecy of death, especially since Herod had already killed John, a fact to which Luke makes only this one reference (for the full story, see Mark 6:17–29). Herod's curiosity about Jesus will turn to desire to kill him (13:31), a desire satisfied in Jerusalem (23:6–12).

9:10–17, Jesus Feeds the Multitude. Cf. Mark 6:30–44; Matt. 14:13–21; John 6:1–13. The apostles return; the report of their mission is brief, for the central event in which they have a part is now to be related. Only Luke identifies the place as Bethsaida (John 1:44). The feeding of the crowd is set in the context of a full ministry in Lucan terms; Jesus receives the people, he preaches, he heals, and he is concerned about lodging (only in Luke) and provisions for them. The meal itself prefigures the Lord's Supper (22:19, 24:30), both in the eucharistic language used (9:16) and in the use of the word translated "broken pieces," which came to be a term for the broken bread (*Did.* 9:3–4) of the Eucharist.

9:18–22, Peter's Confession and the First Prediction of the Passion. Cf. Mark 8:27–33; Matt. 16:13–23. Luke, like John 6:1–69, joins the feeding and Peter's confession, omitting Mark 6:45–8:26. The last geographical reference in Luke was Bethsaida and, typical of this Evangelist, Jesus is described as being in prayer. Setting the event in prayer alerts readers to its critical importance for Jesus and to the operation of God's will. The confession differs somewhat in the three Synoptics, and Luke omits the stern exchange between Jesus and Peter. Some scholars hold that Luke is thereby preserving a loftier image of Peter, but actually in Luke the entire occasion is briefer, more subdued, and wrapped in prayer. Also in Luke the charge to silence is directly tied to the prediction of the Passion, such is the force of the linkage of vv. 21 and 22 by a participle. The "must" here and elsewhere (13:33; 17:25; 22:37; 24:7, 26, 44) points to divine will.

9:23–27, The Demands of Discipleship. Cf. Mark 8:34–9:1; Matt. 16:24–28. Although the passion prediction is to the Twelve alone, the call for cross bearing is to all. Since the cross was a rather familiar instrument of death (Roman), Jesus could have spoken meaningfully of a cross prior to his own death, but Luke's readers understand their crosses after the fact of his. "Daily" alters the emphasis from martyrdom to sacrificial living. Jesus is identified as the Jewish figure "Son of Man," both in suffering (v. 22) and in his return in glory from God. In v. 27, by removing "with power" (Mark 9:1), Luke could be referring to some of the disciples seeing the transfiguration or the resurrection.

9:28–36, The Transfiguration. Cf. Mark 9:2–8; Matt. 17:1–8. Luke replaces Mark's six days (Exod. 24:15–16) with eight, perhaps meaning a week later, but not necessarily Sunday (sometimes called the eighth day). Again Luke says the journey was for a time of prayer, and the transfiguration occurred during prayer (recall 3:21). The phrase "suddenly they saw two men" joins this story to the resurrection (24:4) and the ascension (Acts 1:10). Moses and Elijah talk with Jesus about his approaching death or, more literally, "exodus," a powerfully symbolic term. The disciples do not hear because they are asleep (cf. 22:45). They wake in time to see the three glorified figures. It is the cloud, associated with the awesome presence of God (Exod. 24:15–16; Acts 1:9) that frightens the disciples. Moses and Elijah have vanished; it is Jesus, God's Chosen Son (recalling again the baptismal scene) now moving to his exodus, who is to be heard and obeyed. The silence of the disciples is appropriate.

9:37–50, Portraits of the Not-Yet-Ready Disciples. Cf. Mark 9:14–41; Matt. 17:14–23; 18:1–5. In four vignettes Luke shows the disciples unprepared for the events soon to transpire in Jerusalem. In the first (vv. 37–43a), on the day following the transfiguration, the disciples lack the power to exorcise a demon from a child. Jesus heals the boy and laments the disciples' lack of faith. How long will it take to prepare them to continue his work? In vv. 43b–45, Luke joins to these events the second prediction of the Passion. It is sharply stated, the omission of reference to the resurrection serving to emphasize his death. In v. 45 there is the mixture, not uncommon in Scripture but strange to us, of human unbelief and providential concealing of a truth. Seeing and not seeing, perceiving and not perceiving, are alike attributed to God (cf. 24:16, 31). The third vignette (9:46–48) clarifies why the disciples do not understand talk of suffering: they are concerned about greatness, with a competitive spirit. Lowliness of spirit is taught not by the example of a child, but in the reception of a child, i.e., in welcoming the lowliest. And finally (vv. 49–50), Jesus addresses the problem of exclusivism among his followers. Very likely Luke is addressing through words of Jesus problems that beset the church: lack of power, misunderstanding, arrogance, and exclusivism. Luke marks at 9:50 the end of the Galilean ministry; Jesus now turns with his not-yet-ready disciples toward Jerusalem.

9:51–19:28
The Journey to Jerusalem

Of this section, 9:51–18:14 is often called Luke's travel narrative, which in 18:15 rejoins Mark and Matthew. Actually, much in this section has with Matthew a common source (Q), a small portion is also in Mark, and a substantial amount is peculiar to Luke. The material is arranged as a journey, with Luke on occasion reminding readers of that perspective (9:51; 13:22; 17:11) since the stories in themselves do not usually imply a journey. Some scholars hold that Luke follows the narrative of Deuteronomy, and much does fit that pattern, though not all. For example, some Elijah and Elisha echoes from 1 and 2 Kings are here also. Geographical references do not really help one reconstruct the journey, since Luke's travel narrative is more theological than geographical. Jesus moves now toward suffering; to follow him is to face the same.

9:51–62
Jesus Establishes the Nature of the Journey

The two units that open this section make clear to the disciples the nature of the way and its destination.

9:51–56, Passing Through Samaria. The journey begins with a rejection and prophesies rejection. "To be taken up" refers to crucifixion, resurrection, and ascension (Acts 1:2, 11; cf. 2 Kings 2:9–11; Isa. 42:1). "Set his face" echoes Isa. 50:7, which speaks of determination in the face of opposition. Messengers are sent ahead to make preparations (anticipating 22:7–13), but they meet rejection, not because Jesus is a Galilean, but because he is moving on to Jerusalem. Jesus forbids any violent reaction in the manner of Elijah (2 Kings 1:9–10). Some scribes added an explanation to 9:55 (see the NRSV footnote on this passage). Later the Samaritans will welcome the gospel (Acts 8:5–25).

9:57–62, Underscoring the Cost of Discipleship. Cf. Matt. 8:19–22. The three cases of would-be disciples serve to accent the demands of following Jesus whose face is set toward the cross. The call to discipleship is not set against weak and flimsy excuses, but against primary personal and family obligations: attending to creature needs, filial duty, and family love. Loyalty to Jesus demands more than Elijah asked of Elisha (1 Kings 19:19–21), taking precedence over the best, not the worst, of human priorities.

10:1–24
The Mission of the Seventy

This unit consists of five subunits: the instruction of the seventy, woes upon those who reject the messengers, the return of the seventy, a thanksgiving, and a blessing.

10:1–12, The Instruction of the Seventy. This material recalls the mission of the Twelve (9:1–5; Matt. 9:37–38; 10:7–16). Traditionally Judaism spoke of seventy (some manuscripts say seventy-two) nations (Gen. 10), and Luke's sending out seventy in teams of

two anticipates the mission to the nations described in Acts. The time for the mission is ripe, but the resistance will be strong. However, the messengers are to be equipped only with trust in God, giving themselves to healing and preaching. They are neither to shop around for the best hospitality nor delay with conversation on the road. Whether received or rejected, their message is the same: the kingdom of God has come near. That truth is not contingent on the response. The judgment pronounced in 10:12 is Jesus' comment to the messengers and not a part of their message.

10:13–16, Woes on the Impenitent. Cf. Matt. 11:21–23. Apparently Jesus had ministered in all three towns, although there is no record of his being in Chorazin (north of Capernaum). Theirs had been a privilege not shared by gentile cities and, therefore, greater would be their judgment. The principle applies: to whom much is given, of them much is expected. Luke 10:16 underscores the seriousness of accepting or rejecting the disciples: treatment of them is treatment of Jesus, is treatment of God.

10:17–20, The Return of the Seventy. The report of the seventy is cast entirely in terms of exorcisms, indicating that the ministry of Jesus is gaining power over the forces of evil. The two OT allusions, the fall of Satan (Isa. 14:12) and treading on serpents and scorpions (Ps. 91:13), convey this note of victory. However, triumphalism is an inappropriate spirit among disciples; to be inscribed in God's book (Exod. 32:32–33) is the proper ground for joy.

10:21–24, A Prayer and a Blessing. Cf. Matt. 11:25–27; 13:16–17. Jesus' prayer of thanks (only Luke says Jesus rejoiced in the Holy Spirit) may have been a hymn of praise in the early church. It delights in the reversal common to much of the NT: concealed from the wise, revealed to babes. In addition, it portrays Jesus as the divine revealer, much like the figure of Wisdom in Judaism, a portrait more Johannine than Lucan. Jesus' blessing is on his disciples, who are among the babes who see, a privilege the ancient leaders could only anticipate.

10:25–42
Two Stories About Seeing and Not Seeing

Having blessed his disciples for seeing, Jesus now has two encounters with persons who did not see, a lawyer and a woman named Martha. The causes of their inability to see are different and so are Jesus' remedies: in the one case, "go and do likewise"; in the other, sit still and listen. By placing these stories back to back, Luke reminds readers that the responses to Jesus' call are not the same in every case.

10:25–37, Jesus and the Lawyer. Cf. Mark 12:28–31; Matt. 22:34–40. Both Mark and Matthew have this story later, with variations in details. For Luke the story illustrates how the wise and prudent miss what babes know. The lawyer's question is about eternal life, not the greatest commandment, and he is led to answer it himself. But he cannot accept his own answer because he must press for some advantage over Jesus. To his second question Jesus offers a parable, or perhaps an example story. The story begins as a common occurrence on a dangerous road. The behavior of the priest and the Levite (a Temple assistant) is not admirable, but could be explained on several grounds. The ugliness of their neglect appears sharply when, surprisingly, a Samaritan is introduced as the one unselfish, concerned, attentive, and caring to the point of delaying his own journey, expending much energy, and spending two days' wages, with the assurance of more. Ceremonially unclean, socially outcast, and religiously a heretic (from the Jewish point of view), the Samaritan is the opposite of the lawyer as well as the priest and Levite. Jesus alters the question "Who is my neighbor?" to "Who proved to be a neighbor?" Again the lawyer answers the question and the implications of his own answer are inescapable.

10:38–42, Jesus, Martha, and Mary. Martha and Mary appear in John's Gospel (John 11:1–12:8) and live in Bethany near Jerusalem. However, in Luke Jesus is not yet near the city. Martha's busyness indicates many guests and her work was not only hospitable, but supported by laws of hospitality. Her complaint is reasonable. Jesus' response to her anxiety is not totally clear. An alternate reading to "there is need of only one thing" is "few things are necessary, or only one." Does this mean only a few dishes, or only one dish is enough? If so, it still carries symbolic force: the greater need is spiritual food and that is the portion, or "dish," that Mary had chosen.

11:1–13
Teachings on Prayer

Luke has gathered sayings of Jesus on prayer; only the parable of the friend at midnight is peculiar to Luke. Matthew has the remainder, but locates it in two places in the Sermon on the Mount (Matt. 6:9–13; 7:7–11). Luke set all these sayings in the context of Jesus' own prayer life, which prompts his disciples to ask for instruction in prayer. John had disciples who prayed and fasted (John 5:33). Luke's form of the Lord's Prayer lacks the liturgical elaborations of Matthew's and may be earlier. The shorter phrases in Luke, such as "Your kingdom come," underline the urgent tone of the prayer. Here "sins" interprets "debts." The final petition is probably eschatological: do not lead us into trial, i.e., the final agony of evil before the end. The parable of the friend at midnight (11:5–8) is a bit awkward at first, because it seems to focus on the one asking for bread. "Which of you" as an introduction to

parables always anticipates a "No one" in response. It is soon clear that attention is on the one asleep on a mat on the floor with his children, having barred the heavy door for the night. The meaning does not lie in comparing God to a reluctant friend who helps only in response to importunity (persistence, shamelessness), but in thinking from lesser to greater. If friends respond, how much more will God. The closing verses (9–13) continue the teaching that God responds to prayer, but prayer is continual asking, seeking, knocking (present imperatives). Even so, this persistence is in the context of a parent-child relationship that assures not only good gifts, but in this case the highest gift: the Holy Spirit.

11:14–12:1
Conflicts and Controversies

The spirit of this section is that of controversy even though the particular issues vary: by what power Jesus exorcises demons; by what sign his power can be shown to be of God; and the hypocrisy of Jesus' critics.

11:14–28, Concerning Exorcisms. Cf. Mark 3:22–27; Matt. 12:22–30. Luke enjoys putting contrasting materials together: Holy Spirit (v. 13) and evil spirits (vv. 14–26). Following an exorcism, some marveled, some sought a sign as proof, while others charged Jesus with using the power of Beelzebul ("Baal the prince"; the Gk. text does not say Beelzebub, "Lord of the flies," 2 Kings 1:2). Jesus answers the charge with logic (Satan would not work against himself), with a comparison ("How do exorcists among you cast out demons?"), and a challenge ("If I work by the finger of God [Exod. 8:19], then the kingdom has come"). The fact is, says Jesus, Satan is being overthrown by a stronger one. But even after an evil spirit is cast out, there must be diligence or evil will return and the final condition will be even worse (cf. also Matt. 12:43–45). Luke's location of the saying about Jesus' mother (11:27–28) seems to have been influenced by Mark, who locates the coming of Jesus' mother and brothers after the Beelzebul controversy (Mark 3:20–35). For Mary and for all, hearing and doing bring blessedness.

11:29–36, Concerning Signs. Cf. Matt. 12:38–42; 5:15; 6:22–23. Unlike Matthew, Luke does not address Jesus' words about this evil generation to scribes and Pharisees. Also unlike Matthew, Luke's use of Jonah is not to offer a sign of the resurrection. And unlike Mark (8:12) who offers no sign, Luke offers the sign of Jonah's preaching that produced repentance. The Ninevites received from Jonah; the queen of the South received from Solomon; therefore, both will judge Jesus' audience, for they refuse to receive a greater prophet than Jonah, a wiser man than Solomon. The concluding sayings on light are apparently placed here to say that to the person of integrity and openness to light, Jesus' message is clear enough and able to give the light of God to one's life.

11:37–12:1, Woes to Pharisees and Lawyers. Cf. Matt. 23:1–36, but in a different order. Luke sets these woes in the context of a meal in the home of a Pharisee, not uncommon in Luke (7:36; 14:1). Jesus had much in common with them; in fact, it was Pharisees who warned Jesus about Herod (13:31). But they differed as to what constituted the will of God. True devotion and true almsgiving are with integrity and not outward only. The three woes against these (certainly not all) Pharisees have to do with care for legal details and neglect of God's justice and love; with pride of place and attention; and with being hidden contaminators of Israel's life, like buried graves. The three woes against the lawyers (experts in Mosaic law) have to do with burdening others while claiming personal exemption; with honoring dead prophets while consenting and participating in the causes of their death; and with confusing the people both by example and teaching. Luke is thinking of the church when he adds apostles to the list of the persecuted (v. 49). "Wisdom of God" in v. 49 is in Matthew Jesus himself (Matt. 23:34; also 1 Cor. 1:24). "This generation may be charged with" (11:50) may refer to the fall of the nation and of Jerusalem. Luke concludes the section with two comments: one to the effect that efforts to trap Jesus continued (vv. 53–54), and the other as a word of warning to the increasing crowds concerning the harmful influence of Pharisaic hypocrisy.

12:2–13:9
Exhortations and Warnings

Luke sets these teachings in his favorite context: his disciples surrounded by a large crowd (the Gk. literally means ten thousand). His words are for his followers, but for all to hear, ponder, and, if so minded, accept.

12:2–12, Call for Open Confession. Cf. Matt. 10:26–33; 12:32; 10:19. Luke draws together from Q what is scattered in Matthew. These verses participate in both present and future, both command and promise. At the end all secrets and mysteries will be revealed, and that fact necessitates full and open confession and proclamation now by those who belong to the new age. Disciples are not to be intimidated into silence, for only God is to be feared. God who cares for sparrows surely cares for those who trust. In the courts of heaven (Job 1:6–12; Isa. 40; Zech. 3) acknowledgment or denial will already have been determined on earth. Awkwardly inserted here at v. 10 is Luke's version of the sin that will not be forgiven (Mark 3:28–29; Matt. 12:32). Some early Christians took blasphemy against the Spirit to mean rejecting the inspired speech of a prophet. Here the saying seems to mean that not believing in Jesus as the Son of Man on earth could be

forgiven. After all, there was yet Pentecost and the call to repentance. However, if the Spirit's call to repentance and faith is dismissed as nothing, forgiveness becomes unavailable. Verses 11–12 continue the message of vv. 2–9: under pressures religious and political, disciples are to have courage, listening to the Spirit that leads and confirms in the time of trial.

12:13–21, The Parable of the Rich Fool. This parable, found only in Luke, is prompted by a dispute between brothers over an inheritance. Apparently the regulations for such cases (Num. 27:1–11; Deut. 21:15–17) were not being followed, in the opinion of the younger brother, who must wait on the older. Rather than act as judge, Jesus states a proverbial truth (v. 15b) and elaborates with a parable (vv. 16–20), v. 21 being commentary on it. The parable is clear: a man is blessed with abundance and he responds with self-congratulations and conversations with himself. Family, neighbors, God: all are absent from his plans.

12:22–34, Concerning Anxiety About Things. Cf. Matt. 6:25–33; 6:19–21. The injunction against anxiety is not a general one; some anxiety may be a form of care, as Paul's for the churches (2 Cor. 11:28). Here the issue is preoccupation with material things that reflects a lack of trust in God, a lack of interest in the kingdom, and a lack of generosity toward those in need. Such anxiety is not productive: can anxiety add a single hour to life (see the NRSV footnote on this passage)? This expression may echo Ps. 39:5, a cubit meaning one more step to life's walk. Birds and flowers offer lessons in dependence on God. Anxious grasping is the pursuit of pagans who do not know that God is aware of their needs. Those who put kingdom matters first not only have their needs met, but God's gifts include the kingdom as well. After all, one can even become anxious about the kingdom and forget that it is God's to give. The opposite of anxiety is the generosity that both expresses freedom and grants freedom in care for others (12:33–34).

12:35–48, Concerning Preparedness and Fidelity. Cf. Matt. 24:43–51. Having loins girded (the loose outer garment gathered up for work or travel) and lamps burning says it in two images: be prepared and stay awake, even if the master comes in the third watch (the Jewish night had three watches). The image of the return from a marriage feast recalls Matt. 25:1–13. Luke 12:37–38 pronounces a blessing on servants who are ready for the coming of the kingdom, or in Luke's day for the coming of Christ. Verses 39–40 offer a brief parable of the uncertain time, the night thief being a common motif (1 Thess. 5:2–11; 2 Pet. 3:10; Rev. 3:3). However, in response to Peter's question, Jesus pronounces a blessing on that steward whose behavior is faithful apart from any calculations of the early or late arrival of the master. Ascertaining the time of the Lord's return is inadequate and inappropriate motivation for behavior. And as for leaders (those who know the master's will, 12:47–48), their privileges and responsibilities are greater, but so will be their punishment for unfaithfulness.

12:49–59, Concerning the Approaching Crisis. Cf. Matt. 10:34–36; 16:2–3; 5:25–26; Mark 10:38. Probably Luke 12:49–53, 54–56, and 57–59 were not originally joined, but they have enough in common to be associated here. In vv. 49–53 there are two governing images: fire, which signifies both judgment and purification, and baptism, a reference to the Passion, into which Jesus soon will be plunged (Mark 10:38). Until all is accomplished Jesus is constrained, distressed, pushing against restraints. Jesus' presence is critical for the world, causing the rising and falling of many (2:34), separating doubt from faith and hence dividing households. Peace in the sense of status quo is disrupted. This has proven true historically and will be so at the end.

In 12:54–56 Jesus chastises the crowds for being clever in reading weather signs, but blind to the sign from God: the presence of Jesus heralds the coming of the kingdom. In view of the nature of the present time, one should be as wise before God as before a magistrate, i.e., make peace now before the judgment (vv. 57–59). In Matt. 5:25–26 this saying refers to making peace with an offending brother, but Luke sets it in the context of impending divine judgment.

13:1–9, The Call to Repentance. The material in 13:1–9 has no parallel in Mark or Matthew. It consists of two parts: vv. 1–5 and 6–9. The call for repentance, more common in Luke than in other NT writers, is especially fitting here in view of the preceding teaching. Verses 1–5 contain two parallel sayings that preface calls to repentance. One has to do with Galileans, the other Jerusalemites; one deals with human evil, the other natural evil. In other words, Jesus is inclusive when he says that the desire to find direct correlations between suffering and sin is fruitless and misses the point, which is that all are sinners in need of repentance. The final blow to the idea that any person suffering must have sinned is dealt at Golgotha. As to the two tragedies mentioned, there is no other record available.

The parable of the fig tree is the closest Luke comes to the story of the cursing of the fig tree (Mark 11:12–14; Matt. 21:18–19), which he omits. Cultivating and fertilizing the tree is a symbol of God's mercy (Hos. 9:10; Isa. 5:1–7; Ezek. 17:22–24). There is still time to repent and bear fruit.

13:10–35
Tensions and Forebodings of the Passion

This section is governed by references to Jerusalem and the suffering soon to occur. Even when not named, Jerusalem casts a shadow over this material.

13:10–17, Controversy over a Sabbath Healing. This story, peculiar to Luke, recalls a similar incident in 6:6–11, at which time Jesus' opponents discussed what to do to Jesus. Here, in Luke's last reference to Jesus' appearance in a synagogue, the tension is no less great, but the dynamic is different. The synagogue ruler addresses the crowd in an indirect attack on Jesus, but it backfires: the people rejoice over what Jesus does. The controversy plays on the word "to loose" or "release." Jesus looses the woman from her infirmity (v. 12); Jesus reminds them that they loose an ox or ass on the Sabbath for watering—then why not loose this woman from Satan's bond? It is an argument from the lesser to the greater. At the end the house is divided: all those set against Jesus are shamed; all the people rejoice. Those shamed will not forget.

13:18–21, Parables of the Kingdom. Cf. Mark 4:30–32; Matt. 13:31–33. Mark has the first parable, Matthew has both, and both writers place them in a collection of parables. Luke places these two in the tension-filled journey to Jerusalem. They address the problem of discouragement and despair over apparent lack of success. The measure of kingdom work is in the result, not in the small and obscure beginnings. Luke's placing the eight–ten-foot mustard plant in a garden would have been rare in Palestine, most likely not his native land.

13:22–30, Strict Requirements for the Kingdom. Matthew has parallels in six different places in his Gospel. Luke reminds readers that Jesus is on his way to Jerusalem, a fact that makes the sober question appropriate. Luke often launches teachings from a problem posed to Jesus (11:1; 12:13; 13:1, 41). The question really is the readers', who have listened to Jesus since 9:51. The teachings are obviously composite. For example, the door of 13:24 and the door of 13:25 are very different. The door into the kingdom is not only narrow, but it also will close, not to be reopened for those who have no more claim than that they know Jesus socially or recall his visit to their town. Added to the pain of refusal will be the sight of a large ingathering of those who believed, including their forebears, prophets, and, surprisingly to some, Gentiles.

13:31–35, A Warning About Herod and a Lament. Verses 31–33 appear only in Luke. We cannot assume the Pharisees who often had Jesus to dinner are here part of a death plot. Earlier Herod Antipas was perplexed about Jesus and wanted to see him (9:7–9). In what sense did Jesus mean Herod was a fox? In the OT a fox is destructive; among the Greeks, clever. But Herod must wait; Jesus' course is brief now, but must be finished (cf. John 5:36; 17:4; 19:28; Heb. 2:10). The three days are, of course, symbolic of death and resurrection, which, in God's purpose, are to be accomplished at Jerusalem. The lament over Jerusalem is in Matthew (23:37–39) at the close of Jesus' Jerusalem ministry, and by the addition "you will not see me until the time when" clearly refers to the Parousia. In Luke the location is awkward because Jesus has not yet gone to the city, making "how often would I have gathered you" premature. "Blessed is the one who comes" (Ps. 118:26) will be shouted when he arrives in Jerusalem (Luke 19:39–44). By this early placement perhaps Luke is saying that though Israel's house is forsaken, there is yet time for repentance and for joining in the expectation of redemption. It is late, but not too late.

14:1–24
Table Talk

Luke unites four disparate pieces by setting them in the context of a meal; in fact three of the four units deal with banquets. It was common in the Hellenistic world for banquets to be the setting for philosophers and teachers to offer their wisdom. But for Luke the image of Jesus at table was that of one who accepted and received all kinds of people, the proof of which was in the breaking of bread.

14:1–6, A Sabbath Healing. As already noted, it is not uncommon in Luke to see Jesus dining with Pharisees. (Concerning healings on the Sabbath and Jesus' defense of them, see commentary above on 6:6–11; 13:10–17.) The frequency of such stories reflects the critical role of Sabbath observance in Judaism and the tension between synagogue and church over the matter. In v. 5, "a child or an ox" is more awkward than "an ass or an ox," but has the stronger manuscript support.

14:7–11, A Lesson for Guests. Jesus advises choosing the lowest place, which would avoid public embarrassment and, on occasion, provide a moment of public admiration. Such a teaching would be no more than good advice on social behavior, had not Luke said Jesus spoke it as a parable (v. 7). Not etiquette, but kingdom behavior is the point, as the pronouncement in v. 11 makes clear. (This pronouncement is frequent in the Gospels, Luke 18:14; Matt. 18:4; 23:12.) But the ego is clever and may prompt the choice of low seats as a way to move up.

14:12–14, A Lesson for Hosts. Like the clamoring guests above, the host is caught in a cycle of self-seeking. Hosting can be a way of putting others in your debt, but why put in your debt those who cannot repay? However, in the kingdom God is host and who can repay God? Luke's list of the fringe people—the poor, maimed, lame, and blind (repeated in the next story)—is his list of kingdom people. That has been clear since Mary's song (1:46–55).

14:15–24, The Parable of the Supper. Perhaps the mention of resurrection (v. 14) prompts the remark of

a guest (v. 15), which in turn occasions the parable. Different versions of this parable are found in Matt. 22:1–10 and in the *Gos. Thom.* 64 (→ Gospel of Thomas). The parable assumes the custom of an invitation in advance and an invitation at the time of the meal to those who accepted the first. The excuses offered were not thin; marriage even exempted one from military duty (Deut. 20:7; 24:5), but this is no ordinary banquet competing with social and economic engagements. It is clear the parable is about the messianic banquet in the kingdom. The new invitation goes first to Luke's marginal people, whom God remembers (cf. Matthew's "both bad and good"). Next the invitation widens to the outskirts of the city (v. 23), probably a reference to Gentiles. In v. 24 the speaker is not the host but Jesus, speaking not to the servant (the "you" is plural) but to all.

14:25–35
Concerning Discipleship

Teachings here are paralleled in Mark and Matthew and even elsewhere in Luke. They are here gathered and addressed to the crowds; v. 25 makes clear the shift from the semiprivate material of vv. 1–24. These crowds are following Jesus, but do not know he is going to his death. What he says, therefore, does not address the reluctant, as in 9:59–62, but the enthusiastic, as in 9:57. The sayings are held together by a refrain "whoever does not . . . cannot be my disciple" (14:26, 27, 33). The words are stern, using the Semitic expression "hate," i.e., "turn away from," "detach oneself from" (v. 26). Even among primary relationships Jesus demands first loyalty. The two parables, one about a farmer (a tower for watching a vineyard) and the other about a king, say to high and low, rich and poor, "Is the price of discipleship more than you are willing or able to pay?" Verses 34–35 are rather detached, paralleled in Matt. 5:13; Mark 9:50. In this context the saying may be insisting that even an initial sincere commitment can fade if one is not careful, just as salt can lose its taste.

15:1–32
Three Parables of Joy

15:1–3, Narrative Setting. The three parables are Jesus' response to a criticism by Pharisees and scribes that he "welcomes sinners and eats with them." The word translated "welcomes" can mean that Jesus is host to them. The issue is table fellowship and Jesus' full acceptance of sinners, as breaking bread together implied. The critics feel justified in the charge, "Look, a glutton and a drunkard, a friend of tax collectors and sinners!" (7:34). Having three parables together is not unusual, since offering material in triplets is common in Luke (9:57–62; 11:42–52; 14:18–20; 20:10–12). Matthew has a parallel (18:12–14) to the first; the second and third are peculiar to Luke.

15:4–10, Finding the Sheep and Finding the Coin. The two parables say essentially the same thing, repetition serving to emphasize (cf. 5:36–39; 14:28–32). They have the same form, "What man," "What woman," questions that always evoke the response, "No one." In Matthew a sheep "goes astray" and church leaders are instructed to find and restore such a one. In Luke the sheep is lost, as are the sinners in Jesus' presence. Ezek. 34:12 and Isa. 49:22 lie behind Luke's image of the tender shepherd. Love for the lost sheep is so strong that the ninety-nine are left in the wilderness while the search is on. Such seeking love takes great risks. The woman's ten silver coins (drachmas) represented about ten days' wages and many months of saving. She, like the shepherd, seeks diligently "until she finds it"; there is no giving up in either story. The joy of finding cannot be contained; a party is appropriate. Even Jesus' critics are invited to celebrate, for such must be heaven's joy over the sinners who have come to Jesus.

15:11–32, The Loving Father. The theme of penitence in the first two parables anticipates the third, and the theme of joy (vv. 7, 10, 24, 32) binds the three together. A few points of information: according to Jewish custom, a younger son received one-third of the inheritance. Usually received at the father's death, the inheritance could be divided earlier. To feed swine was to become as a Gentile, a nobody (Lev. 11:7; Isa. 65:4; 66:17). The pods eaten were the long pods from the carob tree, eaten by animals and at times by the extremely poor. The few scholars who think 15:11–32 contains what once was two parables (vv. 11–24; 25–32) miss the structure and the focus. The structure does not have two conclusions (vv. 24, 32), but one conclusion repeated, not uncommon in parables (note Matt. 25:14–30). And the focus is not the sons, but the father. The father had two sons, loved two sons, went out to two sons (15:20, 28). God is a both/and, not an either/or God: to embrace sinners is not to reject Pharisees. The offense in 15:1–2, repeated in vv. 7, 10 and voiced by the older brother, is the joy, the party, the singing and dancing. Of course, let the penitent come home, but to bread and water, not grain-fed veal; to sackcloth, not a new robe; to ashes, not jewelry; to kneeling, not dancing. Forgiveness appears to critics very much like condoning.

16:1–31
Teachings Concerning Wealth

Except for vv. 16–18, the entirety of Luke 16 is devoted to teachings about possessions, a subject of primary concern to Luke (3:10–14; 12:13–21, 32–34; Acts 2:43–6:7). The discussion is in two parts, vv. 1–15 and 19–31, each part controlled by a parable and each parable beginning "There was a rich man" (vv. 1, 19). Only v. 13 has a parallel elsewhere (Matt. 6:24).

16:1–15, Parable of the Shrewd Steward. This parable is directed to the disciples. To understand the parable, it is important to separate the parable proper from comments on it. Although not unanimous, the view is widely held that the parable ends at v. 8a, and hence the commendation of the steward was for his prudence. What the steward had done is not clear: either he reduced the bills by subtracting his own commission (in which case he would not have been dishonest) or he permitted falsification of the amounts owed his master. The latter seems more likely. If v. 8b is commentary, then the lesson is that people of the world demonstrate an astuteness (REB) from which children of light (1 Thess. 5:4–5) can learn. And wherein is the astuteness? Verse 9 says it lies in using possessions so as to gain rather than lose one's future. Verses 10–13 provide further commentary on wealth, but not necessarily related to the parable. Each of these verses states a proverbial truth, vv. 10–12 framed on a lesser-to-greater argument and v. 13 an either/or statement, but none of them depend on the parable for the truth being stated. The Pharisees, here called lovers of money, were, unlike the Sadducees, generally urban and business people. Their making fun of Jesus may imply that they regarded prosperity as God's reward for righteousness (Deut. 27–28). Their self-justification may have been in the form of alms and other works of merit, but God's assessments are usually a reversal of our own.

16:16–18, Concerning the Law. Cf. Matt. 11:12–13; 5:18, 32. These sayings, differently located in Matthew, create a problem for the interpreter, because they seem unrelated to the preceding or succeeding parables. Perhaps the introduction of Pharisees in vv. 14–15 prompted sayings about the law. John, whose life Luke joined to that of Jesus from birth (chaps. 1–2), was the beginning of something new (3:1–2, 18). The phrase "everyone tries to enter it by force" (NRSV) or "everyone forces a way in" (REB) is most difficult. Luke uses the word elsewhere, with a prefix, to mean "urgently or strongly invite" (Luke 24:29; Acts 16:15). Perhaps that is the sense here, similar to compelling guests to come to the banquet (Luke 14:23). It could also refer to the large enthusiastic crowds pressing around Jesus. But even though John marks a new era, there is abiding authority in the old law (16:17). However, the old must be interpreted properly, as, e.g., in the case of divorce (Deut. 24:1–4). It is difficult to see any other reason for placing this teaching (16:18) here. This saying is here without context, but both Matthew (19:3–12) and Mark (10:2–12) as well as Paul (1 Cor. 7:10–16) present sayings on marriage and divorce with contexts. Luke's form of the teaching is very strict, but the other forms of this saying indicate how the church struggled with its application.

16:19–31, The Rich Man and Lazarus. The story (is it a parable, containing as it does a proper name?) of the rich man (in the Vulgate called "Dives," meaning "wealthy") and Lazarus seems to bear some relationship to the story in John 11 of the raising of Lazarus from the dead. But that association concerns only the second part of this story (vv. 27–31) and not its first part (vv. 19–26). Some have suggested that the story's two parts are responses to two themes introduced in vv. 14–17: love of money and disregard for the law. The story itself is well traveled—versions of it are found in rabbinic as well as Egyptian literature. It reflects popular beliefs about the hereafter. Details are rich and sharp. For the rich man, dressed in robes of royalty and fine Egyptian undergarments, life is a daily feast. The poor man, clothed in running sores, squats (lies) among the dogs, famished. Both die, but only the rich man is buried. Now their roles reverse (reversal of fortunes is frequent in Luke) and the change is unalterable. All that Luke has said in warning and in instruction about material things up to this point comes vividly to mind. "Poor" is almost a synonym for "saint," as Lazarus enjoys the bliss of Abraham's bosom while the rich man lies in Hades. But in vv. 27–31 a second point vital to Luke is made. The Scriptures are sufficient for faith and when they are rejected, as the rich man has done (Mic. 2:9; Isa. 58:7), not even an event as extraordinary as a resurrection will generate belief. That proved true in the case of Jesus.

17:1–10
On Sin, Forgiveness, Faith, and Duty

These four brief teachings have no thematic unity, but are joined only by a common audience: the disciples (v. 1). Some sayings attributed to Jesus are like proverbs, which have their meaning intrinsically rather than contextually. The first teaching (vv. 1–2) warns against causing any of Christ's "little ones"—i.e., followers, especially new and not yet mature ones—to stumble. "Being the cause of stumbling" more accurately translates the term here than does "temptation to sin" and "cause to sin" (cf. Mark 9:42; Matt. 18:6–7). This does not mean, however, that one is to avoid a brother or sister for fear of being a stumbling block. On the contrary, the second teaching (vv. 3–4) enjoins responsibility to rebuke in order to correct and to forgive, even seven times a day. A different form of vv. 3–4 is found in Matt. 18:15, 18–22. The context of the third teaching (vv. 5–6) implies that the apostles request more faith, having heard the rigorous demands of vv. 1–4. It is unclear whether Jesus' response ("Lord" is for Luke a favorite way of referring to him) is a rebuke (their faith is smaller than a mustard seed) or a word of encouragement (your own small faith will perform wonders; cf. Mark 11:22–23; Matt. 17:20; 21:21). The final teaching is a parable found in Luke alone. It begins in a fashion familiar in Luke: "Who among you would," the answer to which is "No one." The servant is, in fact, a slave, serving both in the field and in the

house. Even after faithful service the slave has no claim; nor does he reach a point of completed duty. There is no ground for assuming reward or for boasting (Rom. 3:27); such calculations are foreign to the life of dedication. There is no joy, no laughter in the parable, but the reason may lie in the next verse: "on the way to Jerusalem."

17:11–18:30
Teachings Leading to the Final Prediction of the Passion

This section consists of events and teachings between the reminder, "on the way to Jerusalem" (17:11), and the final prediction of his Passion, "See, we are going up to Jerusalem" (18:31). With 18:14 Luke's special section will close and in 18:15 he will rejoin the narrative of Mark.

17:11–19, The Grateful Leper. This story appears only in Luke (the account in Mark 1:40–45 is not parallel to this passage, but to Luke 5:12–16). The location between Galilee and Samaria is unusual for a journey to Jerusalem that began in 9:51 passing through Samaria. Perhaps the location is used to introduce a story involving Jews and a Samaritan (17:16). Otherwise details are realistic. Lepers tended to live in groups (2 Kings 7:3) and avoided contact with nonlepers (Luke 17:12; Lev. 13:45–46; Num. 5:2), but they stayed near populated areas to beg alms. A priest had to certify healings (Lev. 14:2–32). But did the command to go to the priest include the Samaritan, whose own ritual center was Mount Gerizim? And why rebuke them for not returning when they were commanded to go and in that obedience were healed (17:14)? Clearly this story follows 2 Kings 5:1–14, which is in two parts: Naaman, a foreigner, was healed of leprosy and then he was converted to Israel's faith. The two parts here are in vv. 11–14, the healing, and vv. 15–19, the salvation of a foreigner. The expression "Your faith has made you well" (v. 19) refers to some blessing other than healing, since that was already true for all. Literally the expression is, "has saved you." The story foreshadows Acts 28:26–27 in showing the faith of foreigners and the blindness of Israel. The nine, presumably Jews, are blessed and the Mosaic law is enjoined, but their response falls short of that of the Samaritan.

17:20–37, Concerning the Kingdom and the Coming Son of Man. Mark 13 and Matthew 24 combine the Parousia discourse with the prediction of the fall of Jerusalem, but Luke separates them. The material here has two audiences: Pharisees ask when the kingdom will come (vv. 20–21), and Jesus speaks to his disciples about the coming of the Son of Man (vv. 22–37). To understand Jesus' word to the Pharisees, it is necessary to note also 19:11. There is a future coming of the kingdom, but it is also "among you." This phrase can be translated "within you," but the "you" is plural, best translated "among you," a much less subjective perspective. Jesus among them is the presence of the kingdom, but his presence is not heralded by a display of wonders.

The phrases "Look there!" or "Look here!" are repeated in teaching the disciples about the coming of the Son of Man (v. 23; → Son of Man). Jesus is identified as the Son of Man who first must suffer and be rejected (v. 25). Because the church after him will suffer, the disciples will long for his coming in final deliverance. However, in their anxious expectation they are not to be fooled by the calculators of time and place. Rather, that day will come with the suddenness of lightning and at times when life seems to be proceeding normally, as in the days of Noah and Lot; when it comes, one is to give oneself to it and not try to save one's property or to escape it. Such attempts are self-defeating. After all, that event will be so decisive and final as to separate two in bed or two at work. (Notice the absence of v. 36, which some later manuscripts insert, borrowed from Matt. 24:40.) Jesus' answer to the question, "Where?" is as vague as his answer to the question, "When?" The proverb about the eagle (vulture) echoes Job 39:30. Both the where and the when of judgment will be known after it occurs, not before, as a gathering of vultures signifies dead prey.

18:1–14, Two Parables on Prayer. These parables are in Luke alone. Both are typically Lucan in structure: an introductory statement of purpose (vv. 1, 9), with interpretive comments following the parables (vv. 6–8, 14). The first parable stresses constancy in prayer and argues from the lesser (judge) to the greater (God). Verse 8 picks up on the context (17:22–37) in which Jesus offers teachings on the coming of the Son of Man. Luke's comments in vv. 6–8 assume a condition in which the faithful are persecuted, are praying for vindication, and are raising the question Israel had often asked, "How long will the Lord tarry?" (cf. 2 Pet. 3:9). The more pressing question is not, "Will vindication come?" but, "Will God's people still be faithful in that day?" Luke follows the parable about the prayers of the elect with one about the prayer of a sinner. Both parables are about vindication, but the word is translated "justified" (v. 14) in the second. Luke's closing comments are two: the declaration of the publican's justification (note Luke's familiar role reversal) and the pronouncement to the same effect, used in a variety of contexts (Luke 14:11; Matt. 18:4; 23:12). To regard the Pharisee as a villain and the publican as a hero is to have each get what he deserves, which misses the point: God justifies the ungodly. Equally defeating is to leave the parable thankful that one is not as the Pharisee.

18:15–17, Children and the Kingdom. Luke now returns to his Marcan source, which he left at 9:50. Un-

like Mark 10:13–16 and Matt. 19:13–15, Luke calls the children "infants" and says Jesus "called for them" (v. 16). The focus is on the children as images of discipleship and, therefore, Luke omits Jesus' blessing of the children as well as Jesus' indignation with the disciples.

18:18–30, The Rich and the Kingdom. Cf. Mark 10:17–31; Matt. 19:16–30. All three Evangelists agree the man was rich; Matthew says he was young (19:20); and Luke says he was a ruler (18:18, perhaps of a synagogue), providing the composite "rich young ruler." Some details in Luke vary from Mark, but as in Mark, Jesus here rejects the designation "good." In Luke the man does not go away, and it is persons overhearing the conversation who ask, "Then who can be saved?" (v. 26). As the Pharisee in a preceding story could not trust his good deeds, this ruler cannot trust the securities of wealth. He must trust God alone. Giving his goods to the poor is not only congenial with Jesus' teachings about wealth elsewhere in Luke (and practiced in Acts), but also with the context: the next episode speaks of Jesus' death. A camel going through a needle's eye is a proverbial statement of the humanly impossible and not a description of an unburdened camel crawling through a small gate. Only God can effect salvation. But to relinquish all for the sake of the kingdom is to be amply rewarded (Luke does not specify with what) both now and in the age to come.

18:31–19:28
From the Final Prediction of the Passion Until the Entry into Jerusalem

Luke continues to follow Mark, but he omits Mark's account of the request by the sons of Zebedee (Mark 10:35–45), adds the story about Zacchaeus, and offers from Q the parable of the pounds (talents, Matt. 25:14–30).

18:31–34, The Final Prediction of the Passion. Cf. Mark 10:32–34; Matt. 20:17–19. This is the third prediction of his Passion and the declaration that the journey signaled in 9:51 and discussed with Moses and Elijah on the mountain (9:31) is near completion. The Lucan theme of Jesus' Passion being the fulfillment of prophecy is stated here as elsewhere (24:25, 27, 44; Acts 3:18; 8:32–35; 13:27; 26:23). Omitted is Mark's "handed over to the chief priests and the scribes" (10:33); added is the observation that the disciples did not understand (18:34). Luke's mixture of human failure and divine purpose in the expression, "What he said was hidden from them" (v. 34) recalls 9:45 and anticipates 24:16. The risen Christ will open their minds to understand (24:32, 45).

18:35–43, Healing the Blind Man near Jericho. Cf. Mark 10:46–52; Matt. 20:29–34. Luke follows "What he said was hidden from them" with a story that demonstrates Jesus' power to enable the blind to see. This account is, therefore, promise and prophecy of what he will do for his disciples. Luke abbreviates the story in Mark, who identifies the blind man as Bartimaeus. The blind man recognizes Jesus as "Son of David," the Messiah, even though he is being rebuked by a crowd that does not see (v. 39). As announced at the outset of his ministry (4:18), Jesus opens the eyes of the blind (Isa. 35:5). The location, Jericho, and the people praising God anticipate the entry into Jerusalem.

19:1–10, Salvation Brought to Zacchaeus. In all three synoptic Gospels Jesus approaches Jerusalem through Jericho, but only Luke has the story of Zacchaeus. It is typically Lucan in its narrative artistry and attention to detail. The structure of the story, including the criticism of Jesus, is much like that of Jesus in the home of Levi (5:27–32). As a chief tax collector (the expression occurs nowhere else in Greek literature), Zacchaeus is part of a corrupt system of economic oppression, but in response to Jesus he goes beyond the law's requirement for restitution (Exod. 22:1; Num. 5:5–7). Jesus has entered the house (v. 7), but the closing remarks of Jesus are addressed to the crowd, not Zacchaeus. "This house" (v. 9) is household, the salvation of households being a common theme in Acts (10:2; 11:14; 16:15, 31; 18:8). "Son of Abraham" (v. 9) is probably true genealogically and is certainly true by faith (Rom. 4:11–12; Gal. 3:9, 29). The closing pronouncement recalls the parables of Luke 15 and also the missed opportunity of the rich man in 18:18–30.

19:11–28, Parable of the Pounds. Typically Luke prefaces the parable with an interpretive introduction (v. 11). The parable is given to correct false notions of the nature and purpose of Jesus' Jerusalem trip. The historical backdrop is that Palestinian rulers such as Archelaus did go to Rome to receive power as king, but Jewish leaders protested, in that case successfully. Some scholars think Luke has combined two parables: the pounds (vv. 12–13, 15b–26) and gaining a kingdom (vv. 12, 14–15a, 27). The pounds (a mina in the Greco-Syrian monetary system was worth 100 drachmas, between 20 and 35 dollars) portion is related to Matthew's parable of the talents (Matt. 25:14–30). More likely Luke offers one story with allegorizing that fits the circumstances: Jesus went away but will return in power; some disciples are good stewards, some are not because of fearfulness; Jerusalem, which rejected his reign, was destroyed. During the prince's absence (between first and second coming) the servants were to multiply his holdings (spread the word). Of the ten, only three report: the first, second, and "another," because interest can be sustained only so long. Even the fearful one should have made some gain through bankers. The exaggerated rewards highlight the point: following Jesus, especially on his way to Jerusalem, is a

risk calling for courage, but it will be amply rewarded. The fearful lose out and the opponents suffer death. The closing verse (19:28) vividly portrays the one who told the parable as out in front of the crowd, going to Jerusalem and to suffering. Jerusalem is named, with all that it implied, at the beginning and ending of this parable (vv. 11, 28) and this entire section (9:51; 19:28).

19:29–21:38
The Ministry in Jerusalem

In general Luke follows Mark 11:1–13:37 here, with such changes as will be noted. Although the traditional church year compacts the Jerusalem ministry, including the Passion, into one week, Luke seems to imply a longer period (19:47; 22:53). Both Jerusalem and the Temple figure prominently in the completion of Jesus' ministry and its continuation in the mission of the church (24:44–53; Acts 1:1–14).

19:29–48
The Entry into Jerusalem

In Luke the entrance of Jesus into Jerusalem consists of three units: the entry itself, Jesus' lament over the city, and the cleansing of the Temple.

19:29–40, The Entry. Cf. Mark 11:1–10; Matt. 21:1–9; John 12:12–16. Sending disciples ahead to make preparation recalls the beginning of the journey to Jerusalem (9:51–52). Bethany and Bethphage were villages on the eastern side of the Mount of Olives, within two miles of the city. Securing the colt is by divine knowledge and not prearrangement. The owners were probably disciples of Jesus. A king or ruler riding an ass recalls 1 Kings 1:38 and Zech. 9:9, which Matthew cites (21:5). Putting garments along the way showed honor to a leader (2 Kings 9:13); Luke omits the use of branches. Luke alone pictures the descent from Olivet. Luke identifies the crowds as disciples, many if not all having come with him from Galilee. Jesus is praised as King, but not as son of David (18:39). The Aramaic "Hosanna" is omitted from the praise that joins Ps. 118:26 and an echo of the choir's song in Luke 2:14. Verses 39–40 are in Luke alone. It is not clear why some Pharisees wanted Jesus to silence his disciples: are they registering their own unbelief or are they afraid a parade for a king could bring political retaliation? But the cosmos concurs in their praise; it cannot be stopped, for truth will not remain silent (Hab. 2:11).

19:41–44, Lament over the City. Found in Luke alone, this scene draws heavily on Jeremiah 6. The crowds have sung of peace, but in Jerusalem there will be destruction, because the city is blind to its own need for repentance and forgiveness of sin and to the fact that in Jesus God has visited the city. In vv. 43–44, Luke casts Jesus' prophecy of Jerusalem's fall in terms that describe how the Romans took the city in A.D. 70.

19:45–48, Jesus in the Temple. Cf. Mark 11:11, 15–19; Matt. 21:10–17; John 2:13–22. Luke noticeably abbreviates the account in Mark. Mal. 3:1–2 is vividly in the background. For Luke, Jesus' going to the Temple is the real purpose of the journey. The Temple is cleansed for his ministry of teaching the people (v. 47), and it will be in the Temple that Jesus' disciples continue in prayer and praise following the ascension (24:53). Here in the Temple the people align themselves with Jesus, but the priests, scribes, and principal men (elders who belonged to the Sanhedrin?) are offended to the point of plotting Jesus' death. Jesus' actions in the Temple, according to the synoptic Gospels, precipitated the death plots against Jesus. But for the present, his popularity protects him.

20:1–21:4
Controversies in Jerusalem

Luke follows Mark 11:27–12:44 very closely. Since the units in this section are not chronologically or intrinsically joined, the Evangelists perhaps placed them together here to give content to the hostility against Jesus.

20:1–8, The Question of Authority. Cf. Mark 11:27–33; Matt. 21:23–27. Luke follows Mark closely, but adds to Jesus' activity "and telling the good news," which for Luke was repentance and forgiveness of sins. "These things" in v. 2 probably includes his message as well as cleansing the Temple and teaching there (Temple meaning the Temple precinct and not the sanctuary). "The people" are the ones favorable to Jesus, the opposite of chief priests, scribes, and elders (cf. also 19:47–48). Jesus' question about John's baptism was probably not a clever move, but a repetition of an earlier affirmation: both John and Jesus were authorized of God and yet both were rejected (7:29–35). The critics say, "We do not know"; Jesus says, "Neither will I tell you."

20:9–19, The Parable of the Tenants. Cf. Mark 12:1–12; Matt. 21:33–46. Again Luke follows Mark, but with modifications. The vineyard owner is gone a long time (v. 9), perhaps referring to the period prior to John. Also in Luke, only the son is killed, and that is done outside (Heb. 13:12–13), an adjustment in the story to fit the son to Jesus. The people are stunned at the word of final punishment on the tenants (Jewish leaders), sensing that they too will fall with the nation as God gives the vineyard over to Gentiles. The vineyard was a familiar image of God's investment and expectation of return on earth (Isa. 5:1–7; Ezek. 15:1–6;

19:10–14). Luke 20:17–18, a quotation of Ps. 118:22 and an allusion to Isa. 8:14–15, joins two references to the stone: in the one Jesus is the rejected but exalted one; in the other he is the key factor in God's judgment of Jerusalem. One can see that the church and Luke have modified a parable (which may have originally ended at v. 15) to include what in fact did happen both to Jesus and then to Jerusalem. Verse 19 essentially repeats the standoff between the leaders and the people reported at 19:47–48.

20:20–26, The Question of Tribute. Cf. Mark 12:13–17; Matt. 22:15–22. This is the second of three questions put to Jesus (Mark has four, including the one about the greatest commandment, 12:28–34, which Luke had earlier in 10:25–28): authority, tribute, and resurrection. Unlike Mark and Matthew, who present this scene as a temptation or test of Jesus, Luke tells the story so as to stress three points. First, the questioners are spies from the priests, scribes, and elders (v. 19) who pretend to be "honest" (lit., "righteous") so that they may find grounds for charging Jesus before the Roman governor (v. 20). Second, their craftiness fails in that Jesus' answer is no basis for charging him with rebellion. The answer Jesus gave left and still leaves the church with the task of discerning the lines of loyalty to God and to the state (Rom. 13:1–7; 1 Pet. 2:13–17; 1 Tim. 2:2; Tit. 3:1; Rev. 13:1–18; 18:1–24). Third, the ever present "people" (v. 26) apparently support Jesus' answer and thus continue to be a buffer between Jesus and plotting opponents.

20:27–40, The Question Concerning the Resurrection. Cf. Mark 12:18–27; Matt. 22:23–33. The Sadducees (→ Sadducees) found authority for religion primarily in the five books of Moses, in which there is no doctrine of the resurrection. Their question presupposes the law of levirate marriage (Deut. 25:5–10). Luke adds to Mark's account in vv. 35–36: the worthy are raised; they cannot die anymore; they are equal to (not "like") angels; they are children of God. Jesus' argument that the resurrection is implied even in the Mosaic books meets with the approval of overhearing scribes. The phrase "all of them are alive" (v. 38) infers that the resurrected life is both here and hereafter (John 11:25–26). Since Luke does not follow this with the question about the greatest commandment, the conclusion to the questioning is marked here (v. 40; Mark 12:34).

20:41–44, Jesus' Question About the Son of David. Cf. Mark 12:35–37a; Matt. 22:41–46. The question-and-answer period ends with Jesus asking the question. The "them" and "they" are left undefined by Luke (v. 41). The question presupposes a messianic interpretation of Ps. 110 and, on the basis of it, raises the issue of the adequacy of calling the Messiah the son of David. Luke has, of course, affirmed Jesus as son of David (1:32; 3:31), but that term alone is not enough. The Christ is also like Elijah and Jonah and the Suffering Servant, but no single image says enough. And certainly "son of David" in any political sense does not.

20:45–21:4, A Warning and an Example. Cf. Mark 12:37b–44; Matt. 23:1–36. Luke has already pronounced woes on scribes and Pharisees (11:37–54); here the warning about scribes is addressed to the disciples in the presence of the larger favorable group Luke refers to as "the people." The disciples (the church) needed the warnings about ambition and greed, especially in the matter of taking over the property of widows as administrators in the faith community. Abuses due to greed sometimes plagued the church (Acts 4:32–5:11). Such love of money stood in sharp contrast to the lavish generosity of a poor widow whose only property was two lepta, coins of the least value. She trusts totally in God.

21:5–38
Jesus' Apocalyptic Discourse

Cf. Mark 13:1–37; Matt. 24:1–44. Apparently Luke has Mark 13 before him, but some modifications should be noted at the outset. The discourse is prompted by the remarks of "some" (v. 5) and not specifically by disciples. Jesus speaks in the Temple (vv. 5–7, 37–38) and not from the Mount of Olives (Mark 13:3). In fact, the Temple and "all the people" provide the favorable context of place and audience for this and all Jesus' teaching in Jerusalem. Luke's view of the Temple is a positive one in both the Gospel and Acts. The Mount of Olives was the place for lodging at night (v. 37). It should also be noted that Luke has already discussed the Parousia in 17:20–37 and therefore extracts that from present comments on the fall of Jerusalem.

The discourse proper (vv. 8–36) is prompted by the prediction of the destruction of the Temple (vv. 5–7), a prediction that evokes two questions: When? What will be the sign? As to signs of the end, Luke describes three phenomena (vv. 8–11): the appearance of impostors claiming the time (Gk. *kairos,* opportune time, not *chronos,* calendar time) is here; wars, tumults, and international conflicts; and natural disasters with cosmic terror. However, it is repeatedly said that one is not to be deceived by all this; the end will not be at once. And why? There must first be a time of witnessing (vv. 12–19). This is the period of the church Luke addresses. Faithful witnesses will be brought before synagogues (fulfilled in Acts 4–5) and before governors and kings (fulfilled in Acts 24–26). In those crises they will be given a mouth and wisdom (v. 15; a Semitism for an appropriate message; cf. 12:11–12) that cannot be withstood (fulfilled in Acts 4:8–13; 6:10). Hatred, betrayal by friends and relatives, and death await them (vv. 16–17). Verse 16 makes v. 18 difficult: either v. 18 is

misplaced (12:7; Matt. 10:30) or v. 16 means some will die, although v. 18 promises "but not you." In any case, faithfulness is the path to life. In vv. 20–24 Luke describes the destruction of Jerusalem.

Unlike Mark 13:14–20, in which the fall of the city is given an eschatological setting, Luke's account is historical and distinct from the end of the age. What Luke describes is what happened in A.D. 66–72, when Roman armies destroyed Jerusalem. "Until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled" (v. 24) may refer to the period of the gentile mission, which went out from Jerusalem (Acts 1:8; 8:1–4). The remainder of the discourse (21:25–36) sketches what is yet to be after the time of the nations has been fulfilled. The entire cosmos will be disturbed, radically affecting human life everywhere (vv. 25–27). However, the faithful are not to be distressed, but are rather look up, for redemption is near. Redemption here is in the sense of rescue and not in its usual meaning of salvation by repentance and forgiveness. These verses are akin to Paul's statement on redemption in a cosmic context (Rom. 8:18–25). And as surely as one can discern the approach of summer by the leafing of a fig tree, so these signs announce the nearness of the kingdom (vv. 29–31). When, then, will this be? Within this generation (vv. 32–33), i.e., between the period of God's punishment of Jerusalem by the Gentiles and God's judgment of the Gentiles by the appearance of the Son of Man, whose coming will signal the redemption of the faithful.

Luke provides his own ending to the discourse (vv. 34–36) addressing those for whom a delay in the Parousia has produced indulgence, secularism, and neglect of life before God. The end will affect everyone without exemption. However, prayerful watchfulness can have a sanctifying influence, setting one free from anxiety and the dulling influence of things. With the summary of vv. 37–38, Luke concludes the record of Jesus' public ministry.

22:1–23:56
The Passion Narrative

The passion and resurrection narratives together constitute the largest body of material in all the Gospels. These accounts may also have been the earliest to be framed into a tradition to be circulated among the churches. The central importance of this material for the church's self-understanding as well as its proclamation, liturgy, and instruction of new members is evident. The passion narrative proper begins with the Passover meal and closes with the burial of Jesus.

22:1–38
Jesus' Last Meal with His Disciples

22:1–6, The Conspiracy Against Jesus. Cf. Mark 14:1–2, 10–11; Matt. 26:1–5, 14–16. Luke fails to distinguish between Passover and the seven-day Feast of Unleavened Bread that followed (Exod. 12:6, 15; Lev. 23:5–8). The people are so favorable to Jesus they continue to be a barrier to plots to kill him. However, the initiative of one of the disciples (Luke places him among the Twelve, but phrases it as though reluctantly acknowledged) provides an opportunity. But primary attention is on Satan, last seen in 4:13 leaving Jesus in the desert, to reappear at "an opportune time." That opportunity (v. 6) is now here, and more trials (temptations) are to come (vv. 28, 40). Satan will work through Judas, the chief priests, and the captains (leaders among Levites, Acts 4:1; 5:24) for the betrayal ("handing over," "delivery") of Jesus.

22:7–13, Preparation for the Passover. Cf. Mark 14:12–16; Matt. 26:17–19. Again Luke says "day of Unleavened Bread" when he means Passover, as is evident in vv. 8 and 15. Luke also identifies the two disciples sent to make preparations. The event recalls preparation for the entry in 19:28–34. Not intriguing prearrangements, but Jesus' prophetic knowledge is involved here. Preparation involved purchase of a slain lamb, herbs, wine, and unleavened bread.

22:14–20, Institution of the Lord's Supper. Cf. Mark 14:22–25; Matt. 26:26–29. Luke frames this scene as a classical farewell by a leader to his followers: first the meal (vv. 14–20), and then the discourse on what will soon happen and how the disciples are to conduct themselves (vv. 21–38). Unlike Mark and Matthew, the indication of the betrayer follows the institution of the Lord's Supper. Luke's account of the meal consists of two parts: vv. 15–18 and 19–20, if, indeed, vv. 19b–20 are in the original text. Most manuscripts have these verses, but they are a problem because shorter readings are regarded as more original than expanded ones; vv. 19b–20 are remarkably like 1 Cor. 11:24–25; and including vv. 19b–20 gives the ritual the cup, the bread, and again the cup. (Both 1 Cor. 10:16 and the *Didache* have cup and then bread.) Quite possibly Luke has joined two traditions: vv. 15–18 tie the meal to Passover and stress its eschatological orientation; vv. 19–20 stress sacrificial and covenant meanings. Participation meant sharing in Jesus' death as well as the future messianic meal.

22:21–38, Farewell Instruction. Luke has expanded Jesus' words at table, placing here the dispute about greatness that Mark (10:42–45) and Matthew (20:25–28) relate earlier, adding the special attention to Peter (vv. 31–34) and the words about two swords (vv. 35–38). Luke's location of the prophecy of betrayal underscores the possibility of falling away even among those at the covenant table. Immediately following (vv. 24–30) are Jesus' words about greatness, implying, at least, that self-exaltation is related to falling away. True exaltation is a gift of God to those who have

endured Jesus' hardship, have entered into the "covenanted" (v. 29, NRSV: "confer"; REB: "entrust") relation with Jesus that he had with God, and who not only share the messianic banquet, but who reign with Christ. "Judging" should be taken in the sense of leading or ruling and not of deciding the fate of others.

In v. 31, Jesus addresses all the group by the use of the plural "you," but in vv. 32–34 the conversation is between Peter and Jesus. All will be tested ("sifted," Amos 9:9), but Jesus looks to Peter to turn about, become strong, and be a source of strength for the others. The prophecy here records what, in fact, occurred: denial, abandonment, experience of the risen Christ (24:34; 1 Cor. 15:5), leadership (Acts 1:15; 2:14), prison (Acts 4:3; 12:3–5), and death (John 21:18–19). To stress the critical nature of what lies before them and Jesus (whose trial and death will fulfill Isa. 53:12), the disciples are told that present conditions demand the opposite of the days of early mission journeys when nothing was needed, all was provided (22:35). This crisis calls for full equipment for it is a time of conflict and death. Jesus uses the word "sword" symbolically, but they hear him literally. Jesus drops the subject. That they have two swords reflects the degree of their misunderstanding of Jesus' messianic role (cf. Acts 1:6).

22:39–53
The Arrest

22:39–46, At the Mount of Olives. Cf. Mark 14:26–42; Matt. 26:30–46. On this hill east of Jerusalem Jesus had been lodging at night (21:37). Luke does not call the place Gethsemane, has Jesus come to the disciples once not three times, and does not have three disciples join Jesus. All are asked to pray lest they enter into temptation. Jesus withdraws a short distance, kneels (rather than falls to the ground), and prays with anguish, struggling with the will of God (v. 42). Verses 43–44 (included in the NIV; in brackets in the NRSV) are absent from many manuscripts and are disputed. They have no parallel in Mark and Matthew, although the ministering angel (Dan. 3:25) recalls Jesus' temptation (Mark 1:13). Verse 44 pictures Jesus' anguish as being of such intensity his sweat rolled down like blood from a wound. Luke softens Mark's rebuke of the disciples and explains their sleep as due to sorrow (vv. 45–46).

22:47–53, Jesus Taken Captive. Cf. Mark 14:43–52; Matt. 26:47–56. Judas is pictured as leading the crowd and approaching Jesus to kiss him, but is interrupted by Jesus (he does kiss him in Mark and Matthew). A sword (recall v. 38) is used by a disciple (Peter, John 18:10) to defend Jesus, but Jesus restores the slave's right ear (v. 50) and calls a halt to the altercation. Jesus censures the leaders, who have now caught him away from "the people." He taught in the daylight and they did nothing; they take him at night, for they work in the power of darkness. The symbolism is quite evident.

22:54–23:25
The Trials and Sentencing

22:54–71, The Jewish Trial. Cf. Mark 14:53–72; Matt. 26:57–75. Since Jesus was taken captive by priests, Temple guards, and elders, it was natural that disposition of him begin with the Jewish authorities. However, Luke has no trial before the Sanhedrin (→ Sanhedrin) the night of the arrest, as does Mark (14:54–64); rather, Jesus is held in custody at the high priest's house until morning (vv. 54, 66). Jesus does endure indignities and beating prior to his trial (vv. 63–65), the victim of insulting sport by the guards. Prior to the trial, Luke inserts Peter's denial (vv. 55–62). Peter and Jesus are at the high priest's house and the three denials occur in the courtyard, prompted by comments by a maid and two others. Peter does not invoke a curse or swear (Mark 14:71). Rather, the scene carries more pathos in Luke: "And the Lord turned and looked at Peter" (v. 61). The questioning by the council (Sanhedrin) is briefer in Luke, is not led by the high priest, omits Mark's account of false witnesses and the charge that Jesus would destroy the Temple, and does not state the charge of blasphemy, though that is implied in the council's interpretation of Jesus' response to "Are you the Son of God?" Son of Man and Son of God are here interchangeable (vv. 69–71). "You say that I am" is an answer that makes the council fully responsible for its interpretation and hence its actions.

23:1–25, The Roman Trial and Sentencing. Cf. Mark 15:1–15; Matt. 27:1–26. Notice that Luke does not focus on the high priest or any specific group in the Jewish trial and delivery of Jesus to Pilate; he speaks of "they" and "as a body" (23:1, 5), stressing the guilt of Israel's leaders, in contrast to Pilate's threefold declaration of Jesus' innocence (vv. 4, 14, 22). The charge against Jesus is that he is a revolutionary, forbids taxes to Caesar (readers recall 20:25), and claims to be king (kingship is a theme Luke holds in common with John 18:29–19:22). Jesus' answer to Pilate is taken by the governor as denial (23:3–4); the same answer to the Sanhedrin was taken as admission. The summary of Jesus' activity (v. 5) introduces the word "Galilee" and gives Pilate, governor of Judea, excuse to send Jesus to Herod Antipas, tetrarch of Galilee. Earlier Luke said Herod wanted to see Jesus (9:9) and reportedly wanted to kill him (13:31–33), but here he toys with Jesus, tries to get a sign from him, makes fun of him, and returns him to Pilate (23:9–11). Their agreement that Jesus was not deserving of death (v. 15) and their cooperation in this unusual trial cemented a new relation between Pilate and Herod. Ps. 2:2 is fulfilled (Acts 4:25–28).

Luke's position on the trial of Jesus is summarized in 23:13–16: all Israel is assembled, including "the

people"; Pilate tells them an examination of Jesus proves their charges wrong; Rome (Pilate and Herod) is unanimous in its judgment of Jesus' innocence; Pilate is willing to chastise Jesus and release him. But Satan had entered Judas, who led the leaders of Israel (22:47), who in turn now lead the people. Pilate repeats a third time his position and his offer. The irony of it is that the crowd asks for the release of Barabbas, a man guilty of sedition and murder, and calls for the crucifixion of one declared innocent. Some ancient manuscripts insert v. 17, a borrowing from Mark 15:6, to explain about prisoner release. Luke concludes by placing the responsibility on the Jewish crowd: Pilate granted "their demand" (v. 24); Pilate delivered Jesus "to their will" (v. 25).

23:26–56
The Crucifixion

23:26–32, The Way to the Crucifixion. Cf. Mark 15:21; Matt. 27:32. Luke alone describes the way to the place of execution. Simon of Cyrene in North Africa can be forced to carry the burden (Matt. 5:41), but here he is the symbol of the true disciple, carrying the cross "behind Jesus" (v. 26). Again Luke gives favorable attention to women, who alone weep over what is happening. The background is Zech. 12:10. Jesus tells them that the greater cause for tears is unbelieving Jerusalem. So terrible will be its fate that the woman without children will be fortunate, and desperate cries for shelter will go unheeded (Hos. 10:8). Jesus recites a proverb to the effect that if such crime as his death can occur now, what will be the horrors of the city's crisis? In a brief note (v. 32) Luke says two others were to be crucified.

23:33–43, The Crucifixion. Cf. Mark 15:22–32; Matt. 27:33–44. Luke does not use the Aramaic "Golgotha." Jesus is crucified between the two criminals. Some manuscripts omit v. 34a, but it is Lucan in that acts of ignorance can be forgiven upon repentance (Acts 3:17; 13:27; 17:30). Casting lots for his garments fulfills Ps. 22:18. At this point Luke relates the various responses to Jesus by those present. "The people" watch (v. 35); the rulers scoff, calling on Jesus for a miracle if he is indeed the Christ (v. 35); the soldiers mock him with the title "King of the Jews," offering him vinegar (vv. 36–38; cf. Ps. 69:21); and one criminal being executed rails at Jesus to save them while the other affirms Jesus' innocence (vv. 39–41). The latter shows his faith by asking to be remembered when Jesus comes in kingly power. Jesus assures him a place in Paradise (abode of the righteous, 2 Cor. 12:3; Rev. 2:7) "today"; i.e., not within a twenty-four-hour period, but in the "today" of the kingdom (4:21).

23:44–49, The Death of Jesus. Cf. Mark 15:33–41; Matt. 27:45–56. Prior to Jesus' death Luke includes only two phenomena: darkness from noon until three and the splitting of the Temple curtain between the holy place and Holy of Holies. This latter could mean God left the Temple, or access to God was now open, or Jesus was entering God's presence. Luke does not have the cry of dereliction or the discussion about Elijah. At the time of death, Luke says Jesus' cry was, "Father, into your hands I commend my spirit!" (v. 46, NRSV). Following the death, Luke records three responses: in the person of the centurion Rome again declares Jesus innocent; the crowds go home deeply penitent; and acquaintances and the women from Galilee (8:1–3) witness his death. The women will return in Luke's narrative of the burial and resurrection.

23:50–56, The Burial of Jesus. Cf. Mark 15:42–47; Matt. 27:57–61. Joseph is identified by address, character, position, and general attitude toward Jesus and his message. His caring for the body, apparently in haste since it was late and the Sabbath was beginning (lit., "dawning"; i.e., the evening star was appearing, marking the beginning of the Sabbath), has given him a favorable place in the church's memory. The women from Galilee observed the burial, prepared burial spices ahead of time, but waited in observance of the Sabbath. At death as at birth (2:21–39), Luke is careful to point out the keeping of the law.

24:1–53
The Resurrection Narrative

Although Luke's account of the empty tomb is similar to Mark's (Mark 16:1–8), this resurrection narrative as a whole is unique to Luke. All the appearances of the risen Christ are in or near Jerusalem, and they are told as occurrences of one day. Perhaps they had been so framed for the church's observance of Easter.

24:1–12, The Empty Tomb. Cf. Mark 16:1–8; Matt. 28:1–10; John 20:1–10. Luke's "they" clearly carries over from 23:56, their further identities being reserved until 24:10. Inside the tomb the perplexed women encounter two men. The reference to two men joins this text with the transfiguration (9:30) and the ascension (Acts 1:10), perhaps indicating how Luke wants the story to be understood. Since Luke repeats this empty tomb story at 24:22–24, it apparently is important to his resurrection narrative even though it is absent from the earliest account (1 Cor. 15:1–8).

Key points in Luke's story are: first, Galilee was the place of Jesus' teaching (v. 6), but is not to be, as in Mark 16:7, the site of resurrection appearances. Jerusalem will now be the center both for Christ's appearances (vv. 13–43) and for the mission of the church (vv. 44–53). Second, the women are reminded by a creedal formula of the gospel, essentially repeated in vv. 26, 46. Third, the women are treated as disciples

and not as messengers to the disciples (vv. 6–8). Fourth, the women do tell the Eleven (v. 9; "apostles," v. 10), but also "all the rest." Later Luke will say Galilean believers numbered about 120 (Acts 1:15). That the apostles did not believe the women reminds readers what a burden resurrection puts on faith, especially since there had not yet been an appearance. Luke 24:12, omitted in many translations, has strong manuscript support, but most likely is a borrowing from John 20:3–10 and is in some tension with v. 24.

24:13–35, Appearance on the Road to Emmaus. This story, unique to Luke and comparable to the parable of the prodigal son in skill and artistry, does not appear in the early resurrection text in 1 Cor. 15:1–8, although Luke 24:34 confirms 1 Cor. 15:5. Perhaps this account was shaped with Christian worship in mind since it involves Sunday, Scripture or word, and sacrament. In the background lies Gen. 18:1–15. Emmaus has never been identified with certainty, one of the two disciples is totally unknown, and Cleopas is encountered nowhere else. In a sense, this is the church's story of encountering the living Christ. The two disciples are kept from recognizing Christ (v. 16) until their eyes are opened by witnessing to the real meaning of the Scriptures. Their recitation of what had happened concerning Jesus is basically a summary of Luke's Gospel. The disciples' recognition of Jesus, however, depends on two events: first, Jesus' interpretation of the OT Scriptures (vv. 25–27), which they were able to grasp only later (v. 32). The role of Scripture in the removal of ignorance and the generation of faith is a strong theme in Luke (16:31; 24:44–47; Acts 2:14–36). Second, Jesus reveals himself in the breaking of bread (vv. 31, 35). The language is reminiscent of that of the feeding of the multitude (9:16) and of the Last Supper (22:19). The return of the two to Jerusalem joins this story to Jesus' appearances to Peter (v. 34) and to the Eleven in the company of other disciples (vv. 36–43).

24:36–49, Appearance in Jerusalem. This narrative contains few surprises since it is framed on the same pattern as vv. 13–35: the risen Christ appears, the disciples do not recognize him, they are scolded for doubting, food is shared, Jesus opens their minds to understand Scripture, and they respond in amazed joy. However, in vv. 36–43 a new theme emerges: the corporeality of the risen Christ. Eating fish and offering his body for proof is an early insistence that neither is resurrection a vague Greek notion of immortality of the soul nor is the risen Christ to be separated from the historical Jesus. "Look at my hands and my feet" (v. 39) means the one raised is the one crucified. Verse 40, found in some manuscripts, is obviously a borrowing from John 20:20. In fact, vv. 36–43 have close affinities to John 20–21. Throughout Luke's Gospel continuity between Jesus and Judaism has been stressed. This occurs here in two ways: first, in pointing out that Jesus' Passion and resurrection are according to Jewish Scriptures (vv. 44–46); and second, in naming Jerusalem as the center from which the mission to the nations is to spread (Isa. 2:3; Acts 1:1–8). The message to be preached is the one stated repeatedly in Luke and Acts: repentance and forgiveness of sins (Luke 24:47; Acts 2:38; 3:19; 5:31; 11:18; 17:30). To enable them for this mission they will receive power from God, the Holy Spirit, but for that power, they must wait in Jerusalem (Luke 24:49; Acts 1:4–8). In Luke's chronology, the disciples are now between Easter and Pentecost.

24:50–53, The Blessing and Departure. Luke says it was from a village near the Mount of Olives that Jesus parted from his disciples while in the act of blessing them. If v. 51b is in the original text (the evidence is divided) then his parting was his ascension. This creates a chronological problem between this account and Acts 1. Here the events are compacted into one day; Acts 1 says he appeared for forty days. Of course, parting into heaven at 24:51b does not preclude other appearances. More likely, Luke 24 compresses what is retold more extensively in Acts. The disciples return to Jerusalem as instructed and make the Temple their place of worship while awaiting the promise of power from on high.

Bibliography

Craddock, F. *Luke.* Interpretation. Louisville, KY: John Knox, 1980.

Ellis, E. E. *The Gospel of Luke.* London: Oliphants, 1974.

Fitzmyer, J. A. *The Gospel According to Luke.* Anchor Bible, 28, 28A. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1981, 1985.

Johnson, L. *The Gospel of Luke.* Sacra Pagina. Collegeville, MN: Liturgical, 1991.

Marshall, I. H. *Commentary on Luke.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1978.

Schaberg, J. "Luke." *The Women's Bible Commentary.* Edited by C. Newsom and S. Ringe. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1992. Pp. 275–92.

Schweizer, E. *The Good News According to Luke.* Translated by D. Green. Atlanta, GA: Knox, 1984.

Talbert, C. *Reading Luke.* New York: Crossroad, 1982.

John

D. MOODY SMITH

INTRODUCTION

The Gospel of John is significantly different from the synoptic Gospels, Matthew, Mark, and Luke. Indeed, in language and theological conceptions it is much closer to the Letters of John, and this similarity is visible even in the discourses of Jesus. Yet John is also a Gospel, a narrative of the ministry and message of Jesus, and as such shares certain content and characteristics with the Synoptics.

John and the Synoptics: The Distinctive Character of the Fourth Gospel

The course of Jesus' ministry is significantly different in John in that it spans a two- or three-year period; three annual Passover festivals are mentioned (2:13; 6:4; 11:55), whereas the Synoptics speak only of the one at which Jesus met his death. Most of Jesus' ministry takes place in Judea or Jerusalem, while according to the Synoptics his public activity prior to the fateful journey to Jerusalem is in Galilee or nearby. Places and people unknown in the Synoptics play roles in John. Nicodemus, the woman of Samaria, and Lazarus are prominent figures in the Gospel of John, but do not appear at all in the other Gospels. Disciples such as Thomas and Philip, who are only names in the other Gospels, ask questions or make comments in John (e.g., 14:5, 8; 20:24–29). The sheer content of John is considerably different from the Synoptics; most of what is found in John is missing from the others, and vice versa. The most notable exception to this overall difference is the narrative of Jesus' death, which runs parallel in all four Gospels. There are also similarities between John's resurrection appearance narratives and those of Matthew and Luke, which, however, differ from each other.

Jesus' miracles are narrated impressively in all the Gospels, but only in John are they called signs (e.g., 2:11) and explicitly set forth as demonstrations of Jesus' divine origin or mission (3:2). Their function is clearly to elicit faith in Jesus, although to believe that Jesus performed them is not tantamount to attaining genuine faith and understanding (3:1–12). Jesus' signs often lead to extensive discussions and debates about his identity and significance (→ Sign). In the Synoptics, on the other hand, there are, at most, brief expressions of amazement at Jesus' miracles on the part of the crowds.

In the synoptic Gospels, Jesus' teachings fall mostly within the framework of Judaism. Although they contain debates over whether Jesus has violated the law, it is clear that Jesus does not think his mission and message is to abrogate the law given to Israel. In John, however, Jesus speaks of "your law" (e.g., 8:17), implying that the law belongs to an alien community, namely, the Jews, while he identifies himself with a group of disciples who have broken away from Judaism to follow him. If a fundamental question in the synoptic tradition is how one should understand and respond to God's will as expressed, by and large, in the law, the fundamental question of the Fourth Gospel is whether one will understand and respond to Jesus as the definitive expression of God's revelation.

Thus the mission and message of Jesus revolve around his self-manifestation and self-proclamation. The kingdom of God, so prominent in the Synoptics, falls into the background as Jesus expounds and debates his own role and status. Jesus' "I am" sayings (e.g., 6:35; 8:12) are typical and distinctive of John. Although he is presented as the fulfillment of OT expectations, his messianic role goes beyond anything anticipated or adumbrated in the OT as it was read by ancient Jews. Not surprisingly, his claims evoke the sharpest dissent and dispute. The sheer content of Jesus' teaching is quite different; there is no Sermon on the Mount (or Plain), no sharp questions and injunctions, and no true parables. Even at the Last Supper and in the farewell discourses, where Jesus instructs his own disciples, his teaching has little concreteness or specificity. Rather, in a general, if moving, way he commands his disciples to love one another (13:34–35; 15:12).

The rather odd combination of differences from, as well as similarities to, the Synoptics has led many in-

terpreters to treat John as a Gospel composed independently.

The Setting and Composition of the Gospel

The dominant Christological themes of the Gospel and particularly its controversial tone, already afford a clue to its original setting and purpose. In the first half (chaps. 2–12) Jesus is portrayed as constantly debating with "the Jews" about who he is and whether they should believe in him. Obviously these Jews, and particularly the Pharisees, strongly reject and resist Jesus' claims (→ Pharisees). Yet Jesus and his disciples are Jews, and throughout the Gospel many Jews are said to believe in Jesus. Apparently, the subject matter and the participants in the discussion reflect the circumstances under which the traditions behind this Gospel developed and the Gospel itself was composed.

The several references to Jews being put out of the synagogue (9:22; 12:42; 16:2) and the prominence of the Pharisees help us define more accurately the setting and the period from which John's Gospel originates (→ Synagogue). After the Roman defeat of the Jewish revolt in A.D. 70, Judaism underwent an internal self-assessment and retrenchment in which the Pharisees played an increasingly important role. During this period measures were apparently taken to eliminate what were regarded as harmful sectarian divisions. The Twelfth Benediction of the Eighteen Benedictions used in the synagogue service pronounced a malediction upon sectarians, perhaps including Jewish Christians. The date of this benediction (perhaps ca. A.D. 80–90) is disputed, but its character is indicative of the trends of the time. Quite possibly some such liturgical device was used to smoke out and expel Christ-confessors from the synagogue. In any event, the fear of expulsion from the synagogue, the claims of Jesus for himself, and the sharp distinction of Jesus and his followers from the Jews bespeak a time and situation for John different from Jesus' own ministry and closer to the end of the first century. At least a part of John's purpose was to persuade followers of Jesus to leave the synagogue and join distinctively Christian communities. In all likelihood the Gospel was composed in stages or went through successive editions as the controversy developed.

John has long been thought to be a later Gospel, and early church tradition places its writing after the other three. In the ancient church, as well as in much modern critical scholarship, it was assumed that John wrote with knowledge of the other Gospels, although quite obviously he did not write to transmit the same material or content. Although John's considerable divergences from the others have recently caused this assumption to be questioned, relatively few scholars are inclined to argue for an early date even on the basis of John's independence. Aside from the probability that it reflects a Jewish-Christian situation that developed only after A.D. 70, its retrospective and reflective character seem to bespeak a later date.

The same may be said of its religious or philosophical vocabulary or conceptuality (e.g., the role of the *logos*, or Word), which has led to it being described as the most Hellenistic, and least Jewish, of the Gospels. However, such hellenization—assimilation to the culture of the Greek-speaking world—had already occurred among contemporary Jews (e.g., Philo), particularly outside Palestine. On the other hand, the discovery of the Qumran scrolls along the shores of the Dead Sea showed that the religious vocabulary and thought-world of John was not alien to some sectarian Jews in the Holy Land itself (→ Scrolls, The Dead Sea). John's kinship with Jewish thought both in Palestine and beyond fits quite well the situation of controversy within Jewish circles suggested above.

The scrolls not only opened up the possibility that John was written in Palestine or nearby, but in some quarters revived support for the tradition that the Fourth Gospel was, after all, the work of John, the disciple of Jesus and the son of Zebedee known from the Synoptics. That tradition was firmly established by the end of the second century, having been set forth as much as twenty-five years earlier by Bishop Irenaeus. It cannot be traced back further with any certainty, however, and several considerations militate against it, not least the slowness of the Gospel's acceptance in orthodox circles (see "The Gospel of John in the Early Church" below).

Although John the son of Zebedee, with his brother James, has a certain prominence in the other Gospels and is mentioned with Peter in Acts, he does not appear until the end of the Fourth Gospel (21:2) and then is not mentioned by name. This omission is sometimes regarded as reflecting John's personal modesty, and he is said to present himself under the guise of the Beloved Disciple, who appears only in the Fourth Gospel. Yet the Beloved Disciple is never in the Gospel identified as John, despite the later church tradition, although in 21:24 he is said to be responsible for it. The silence about all the incidents in which, according to the Synoptics, John was present (e.g., the raising of Jairus's daughter and the transfiguration) is only with difficulty explained by the modesty of a man who could refer to himself as the Beloved Disciple. The identity of the author of the Fourth Gospel remains a mystery, perhaps deliberately concealed (→ Beloved Disciple, The).

The tradition of Johannine authorship, shared by the Letters of John and Revelation, was in antiquity related to Ephesus as the place of origin of these writings

(nearby Patmos for Revelation). A Church of St. John and his reputed tomb, as well as other relics, tie the Johannine literature to this ancient city of early Christian fame, where the apostle Paul also worked. Yet Ignatius, writing to the church at Ephesus before A.D. 120, fails to mention John, although he emphasizes the Ephesians' relationship with Paul. On the other hand, Acts' description of Christians in Ephesus (Acts 18:24–20:38) comports well enough with what can be inferred about Johannine origins from the Gospel, for we read of disciples of John the Baptist, disputes with Jews, the descent of the Spirit, miracles of healing, and the threat of false teaching (the theme of the Johannine Letters). Ephesus perhaps remains as good a possibility as can be proposed for the place of origin, or publication, of the Johannine writings. That the Johannine tradition originated in Palestine or Syria need not be denied (→ Ephesus).

The Gospel of John in the Early Church

Doubts about John's authenticity in antiquity quite likely had something to do with the Gospel's obvious differences from the three that had already gained wide acceptance. We hear of Christians opposed to the Fourth Gospel (e.g., Gaius of Rome), and Clement of Alexandria maintained that John was a spiritual Gospel, perhaps thereby thinking to explain its differences from the others.

Meanwhile, some Gnostic Christians, later condemned as heretical, gladly made use of the Fourth Gospel. The first known commentator on John was such a Gnostic, Heracleon, who wrote his commentary about the middle of the second century. Later, orthodox exegetes such as Irenaeus felt compelled to prove that the Gnostics were misinterpreting John and thus to save the Gospel for the church, and Origen took issue with Heracleon specifically. Nevertheless, it is not difficult to see how the Gnostics found the Fourth Gospel compatible with their emphasis upon secret knowledge as salvation and their view of Christ as more, or other, than a human being. Quite possibly, the author of 1 John, who so emphatically insists upon the materiality and tangibility of Jesus (1 John 1:1–4), intended to make clear exactly what the Word's becoming flesh (John 1:14) entailed and thus to set the interpretation of the Fourth Gospel on the right track (→ John, The Letters of). In any event, by the beginning of the third century John was firmly established as an authoritative Gospel, to be read alongside the other three (→ Gnosticism).

Still, if John is read in this traditional way, there is a danger its distinctive witness to Jesus will fall from view. It is therefore important to ask about the contours, structure, and emphases that make this Gospel distinctive and in some ways unique. These will be our primary focus of attention.

COMMENTARY

1:1–51
Introduction

1:1–18
The Prologue

The prologue creates an aura of the cosmic and the philosophical at the outset that is resolved into the historical and revelatory at the end, as Jesus Christ is named (1:17). Its climactic point occurs in v. 14, as the incarnation of the Word (Gk. *logos*) is announced in a passage that has become the scriptural basis of the Christian doctrine.

The prologue falls into three parts. The first part (vv. 1–5) deals with the cosmic, creative work of the Word and the relationship of the Word to God and creation. The second part (vv. 9–13) narrates the advent of the Word and the response evoked by it. Verse 14 summarizes this advent and begins to set forth the incarnate Word's nature. For the first time the author speaks in the first person plural as the community of disciples confesses briefly and succinctly who the Word is and what his advent means (vv. 14–18).

1–5, The Word in Creation. The brief opening clause, "In the beginning," immediately suggests the creation narrative of Genesis at the beginning of the Hebrew Bible. Here the Word's close association with, and participation in, God's being is clearly stated. (Yet *theos,* "God," does not have the definite article; this implies that the Word is not to be equated with the totality of God.) In Genesis, God speaks and the creation takes shape. In John, it is as if God's speaking has become reified, objectified, in the Word. This difference is significant. The word of God or the prophetic word in the OT is almost always qualified as "the word of the LORD"; it does not have such an independent existence (→ Logos; Word).

In the work of contemporary writers such as the great Jewish philosopher Philo of Alexandria (ca. 25 B.C.–A.D. 50), the Word had already become a semi-independent entity, mediating between God and the world (→ Philo). John's insistence upon the Word's role in all aspects of creation (v. 3) also parallels the creative role of Wisdom in OT and later Jewish writings (Prov. 8, Wisd. of Sol. 7). Such usage stands behind this text. By assigning the Word an indispensable role in creation, John makes clear not only that creation is good, but also that in this Word creation and redemption are linked together. Salvation fulfills, rather than negates, creation.

The Word is the source of light and life for humanity (1:4; the NRSV translation of vv. 3–4 differs from the RSV, but is equally possible). The latter are themes of

the whole Gospel in a way the Word is not; there are subsequent references to the words of Jesus, but not to Jesus as the Word. With the mention of light comes the contrast with darkness (v. 5) that is typical in the Fourth Gospel. Light and darkness are found also in the Genesis creation narrative, where they are equated with day and night (Gen. 1:3–5). In John, they have metaphysical and ethical overtones: human life is lived either in light or darkness. Or, more accurately, life means to be in the light, while to walk in darkness is death. Thus the light struggles against the darkness, but is not overcome by it. The Greek verb usually translated "overcome" can also mean "comprehend," a suggestive double meaning.

Throughout the prologue the NRSV more accurately translates the Greek verb *ginomai,* "became" or "came to be," rather than "was made." So "became flesh" (v. 14) is consistent with vv. 3 and 10, which speak of all things or the world coming into being through the Word.

1:6–13, The Word in History. At 1:6 the focus shifts abruptly to the plane of historical events, and the style becomes more prosaic. If we already knew about John (never called "the Baptist" in the Fourth Gospel) from the Synoptics, we would envision him in the wilderness of Judea at some place near the Jordan River. Yet in this Gospel we have not yet been told where John is. Readers learn only that he was sent from God, that his name is John, and that he came (and hence was sent) to bear witness to the light (→ John the Baptist).

Another step is taken in identifying the light (v. 9). On the basis of v. 5 one would not necessarily think of the appearance of a historical personage. That the advent of a real person is in view, however, is clear from vv. 10–11. The Greek is not ambiguous, for the pronouns in vv. 10–11 are masculine, not neuter, as would be required if the antecedent were "light," a neuter noun in Greek. Moreover, knowledge of the gospel or of the Christian tradition would render the reference in vv. 10–11 to Jesus clear enough. The rejection referred to in v. 11 is not complete, as vv. 12–13 make plain. Although rejected by the officials of his people, Jesus is believed in by many. To receive (or accept) him is to believe in him (or "in his name"). Believers can also be described in terms of their origin or birth—with God, rather than through any human or natural causation (v. 13). Nevertheless, believing is to be construed as an act of the will or a genuine decision apart from which one's origin remains unclear.

1:14–18, Incarnation and Confession. That the Word has entered the realm of the flesh as a historical person is now made quite explicit, even though Jesus is not yet named (→ Incarnation). "Lived" (NRSV) translates a Greek verb that implies tenting or tabernacling, evoking the motif of God's dwelling with his people, in the wilderness tabernacle and in the Temple on Mount Zion. The "we" who have seen Jesus' glory may be the whole Christian community, the circle of Jesus' disciples, or some other and smaller group. An exact identification eludes us. Near the end of the Gospel, however, those who see are clearly differentiated from all who may believe (20:29); John distinguishes seeing from believing. Presumably, a group exercising authority speaks of the revelation of God, because they not only have seen the glory of Jesus the only Son, but can bear witness that he is full of grace and truth.

A reference to John the Baptist (v. 15) follows the explicit mention of the incarnation (v. 14), and the content of John's witness is now given (cf. v. 30). Belief in the preexistence of Jesus is here voiced by the Baptist, who says nothing like this in other Gospel accounts. Significantly, the Baptist makes Jesus' superiority clear at the outset; no one should make any mistake about that.

Verse 16 continues the thought of v. 14 as if it had not been interrupted by the Baptist. The meaning of "fullness" is not obvious. Probably it signifies the saving gift of God (cf. Col. 1:19); "grace upon grace" would then expand upon this fullness (→ Grace). Verse 17 makes an important differentiation by explicitly naming Jesus Christ for the first time. Conceivably, the giving of the law through Moses (v. 17a) is to be construed as grace (v. 16b) to which the grace (and truth) of Christ is now added (v. 17b). In the light of the treatment of Moses in the entire Gospel, however, v. 17 is best understood antithetically, putting Moses over against Jesus. Still the law of Moses is regarded as valid (7:51) if rightly understood (5:39), but the Jews neither understand it (5:46–47) nor obey it (7:19).

The conclusion of the prologue (1:18) rounds out its message as it refers to v. 1. That no one has seen God is a commonplace of OT theology (but cf. Exod. 24:9–11; 33:20–23; 34:6). The RSV reads "the only Son," which makes good (Johannine) sense, but is not found in the oldest and best Greek manuscripts, where "only [begotten] God" is read. (The NRSV is better, although not literal.) The latter reading is also supported by the fact that it echoes John 1:1b, where the Word is called *theos* ("God," but, as here, without the Greek article). Jesus Christ's having been in the bosom of the Father signifies his close intimacy with him. The Word Incarnate has not only seen God, he himself is *theos* and thus able to make him fully known.

At the end of the prologue one sees that it is an overture to or summation of the Gospel. Of course, the Gospel must be read or Christian tradition known in order to perceive this. Jesus Christ as the Word is the light who shines in darkness, who comes into the world he was instrumental in making. Rejected by his own people as a group, he was nevertheless received by individuals who believed in him, who gained the right to be children of God. Finally, at the end of the prologue (v. 18), the historical revelation of God in Jesus is succinctly summed up.

1:19–51
Encounter with John the Baptist and Call of the Disciples

The prologue is followed by episodes that are paralleled in the synoptic accounts: first, the witness of John (the Baptist) to Jesus (vv. 19–28), followed by an encounter between them (vv. 29–34). Then in a narrative comparable to but different from the call narratives of the Synoptics, Jesus gathers disciples and makes ready to begin his public activity (vv. 35–51). Unlike the Synoptics, John's Gospel has no mention of Jesus' being tempted by Satan; nor is Jesus said to open his ministry by coming forward in Galilee with a formal announcement of the approach of the kingdom of God.

1:19–28, John the Baptist's Witness Concerning Himself. John the Baptist testifies to Jesus before Jewish authorities, at the same time sharply delimiting his own role and thus expanding on the statement of the prologue that "he was not the light" (v. 8). He is not one of the anticipated figures of the end time (vv. 20–21). That the "priests and Levites" are sent from Jerusalem by the Jews is significant, for the Jews, centered in Jerusalem, are the chief opponents of Jesus in John. The senders seem also to be identified as Pharisees (v. 24), and the apparent identification of Jews and Pharisees is typical of this Gospel, for which the Pharisees are representative of the Jewish leadership. Perhaps the titles that John the Baptist refuses are being reserved for Jesus. When pressed, he will only claim to be a voice crying in the wilderness (v. 23; cf. Mark 1:3). Thus John the Baptist describes himself with the same Isaiah passage (Isa. 40:3) that is applied to him by Mark. He is a forerunner and witness to Jesus, but claims nothing more for himself.

Having failed to elicit any useful information from John about his person, the questioners take another line (v. 25). Using language familiar to us from the Synoptics, John exploits the question about baptism to bear witness to his role as subordinate and forerunner of Jesus (vv. 26–27). Probably to establish Jesus' superiority, the actual baptism of Jesus by John is suppressed. The scene ends abruptly with a statement locating these events as well as John's activity (v. 28). The whereabouts of Bethany beyond the Jordan, however, remains a mystery.

1:29–34, John the Baptist's Witness to Jesus. The next day (cf. vv. 35, 43) finds Jesus himself on the scene for the first time, approaching John, who identifies him in terms of his saving work (cf. v. 36). In all probability John's use of lamb imagery is to be seen against the background of the Temple sacrifice. In the Fourth Gospel, Jesus is crucified on the afternoon before Passover, as the paschal lambs are being slain (cf. 1 Cor. 5:7). The Lamb title appears only here and in 1:36 in John. The sacrificial understanding of Jesus' death is not, however, typical of the Gospel (but cf. 1 John 1:7; Rev. 5:6–14). In referring to his earlier testimony about Jesus (v. 30; cf. v. 15), John the Baptist typifies the Gospel's retrospective stance. He now looks back on it as an event that has already transpired (vv. 31–35); only in this Gospel is John the Baptist the narrator.

The Baptist, presumably like others (v. 26), did not know Jesus, and his baptizing activity is solely a means of revealing him to Israel (v. 31). Nothing is said about repentance and forgiveness as in the Synoptics (Mark 1:4). Significantly, John the Baptist is the first to bear witness to Jesus, and he himself sees and describes the Spirit's descending and abiding upon Jesus. The Baptist thus concludes this episode by summarizing and underscoring what he has done (v. 34); he attests that Jesus is the Son of God, rendering the definitive statement about Jesus that is attributed by the Synoptics to the voice from heaven (→ Son of God). The unique, God-directed role of the Baptist has now been heavily underscored. In the very act of testifying so decisively about Jesus, John sharply defines and limits his own role.

1:35–51, The Call of Disciples. As another day's activity begins, the Baptist bears witness to two disciples (v. 36; cf. v. 29), his brief testimony evoking what was said the previous day (vv. 29–34). They follow Jesus (v. 37). Quite possibly the first of Jesus' disciples had been followers of the Baptist, as only this Gospel suggests. Although synoptic call stories occur on or near the Sea of Galilee, there is little indication of where this episode takes place (cf. v. 28). The two disciples' brief conversation with Jesus (vv. 38–39) suggests more than it reveals. Significantly, the Evangelist translates "rabbi" (v. 38), suggesting that a non-Jewish audience is in view (cf. vv. 41–42). There is an obvious play on seeking Jesus and staying with him (v. 39) with a symbolic meaning that goes beyond location to conduct.

Subsequently, one of the disciples is identified (v. 40). That Andrew "first" found his brother Simon (Peter, v. 41) has been taken to imply that the other, unnamed disciple also found his brother. Since in the Marcan account (Mark 1:16–20) the brothers Andrew and Peter figure together with the brothers James and John, the sons of Zebedee, it has been inferred that the unnamed disciple was one of the sons of Zebedee and that he too found his brother. But such harmonization with the synoptic account hangs by the slenderest of threads. Peter, who first confesses Jesus to be the Christ in Mark (8:29; cf. Matt. 16:16) is now introduced to Jesus the Messiah (only John gives the Heb. form "Messiah"). John here stands in contrast to the Synoptics, where Jesus' identity is withheld throughout most of his public ministry. Jesus in turn calls Simon "Cephas" (in Aramaic, "Rock") or (in Gk.) "Peter" (v. 42), just as he does in Matt. 16:18 when Peter confesses him to be the Christ (→ Peter).

Jesus' call to Philip, presumably in Galilee (v. 43), is

couched in language familiar from the Synoptics (Mark 2:14). Nathanael (v. 45) is not named outside the Fourth Gospel (cf. 21:2). Philip's description of Jesus (v. 45) is striking, for he identifies him as the Messiah announced in Scripture, indicates that he is a Galilean (Nazareth of Galilee), and calls Joseph his father. Nathanael's question about Nazareth reflects the obscurity of that small village (v. 46), and Philip's answer repeats Jesus' invitation of v. 39.

The exchange between Philip and Nathanael mirrors a characteristic theme of the Gospel: Jesus' origins are thought to explain him. But Jesus has another origin the world cannot know. Only being with Jesus provides sufficient basis to understand who he is. Nathanael's experience is immediate and decisive (vv. 47–51), as again a characteristic motif of John's appears, namely, Jesus' omniscience or foreknowledge (vv. 47–48), which leaves Nathanael astounded (v. 48) and hardly prepared for Jesus' answer. Nathanael's confession (v. 49) is entirely appropriate, but that he stands only at the beginning of an experience of divine revelation is made clear by Jesus' rejoinder (v. 50). Jesus' final statement details what Nathanael can expect to see (v. 51). The Greek verb and subject here suddenly become plural; more people than Nathanael will view this strange sight. Oddly, Jesus' prediction or promise is not literally fulfilled in the Gospel. Its obscurity is, however, illumined by the recognition that there is a direct reference to Jacob's dream (Gen. 28), particularly to the ascending and descending of the angels of God upon the ladder (28:12). In John 1:51, of course, they ascend and descend upon the Son of Man (i.e., Jesus). As Jesus evokes the imagery of the entire Genesis scene, he himself becomes the place of God's revelation and dwelling (cf. 1:14), as ancient Bethel had been.

In these opening stories the principal traditional titles of Jesus are introduced. He is first called only "Rabbi" (teacher), then "Messiah" (Christ), "Son of God," "King of Israel," and finally "Son of Man." The last is the most common self-designation of Jesus in the Gospels. So, at the beginning of Jesus' public ministry in John we already gain a clear idea of who he is, as do his disciples.

2:1–12:50
Jesus' Manifestation of God's Glory Before the World

2:1–12
The Wine Miracle

Jesus' public ministry begins at a wedding feast in Cana of Galilee, a locality mentioned only in John (cf. 4:46–54), with Jesus' mother (never in John called Mary) as well as his disciples also present (cf. Mark 3:31–35; John 19:25–27). Although the imagery of a wedding (bride, bridegroom, etc.) appears in Jesus' teaching (3:29; Mark 2:19–20), only here does he attend a wedding. His participation is, moreover, extraordinary. Perhaps we are put on notice by the placing of the event on the third day (v. 1). This seemingly odd enumeration, which does not fit the context (cf. 1:29, 35, 43), could be a way of alluding to Jesus' resurrection, a hint that the story is to be interpreted symbolically. Yet "the third day" might simply mean "three days hence."

Jesus' mother helpfully informs him that the wine has run out (v. 3), but his response seems brusque (v. 4). That Jesus' hour has not yet come is a characteristically Johannine touch (cf. 12:23). As the narrative develops, it becomes clear that "the hour" is the hour of Jesus' glorification and death. Salvation flows from the crucified, exalted Jesus. The "hour" then alludes to this saving event and suggests that Jesus' supplying wine should be understood symbolically. Moreover, in the Christian sacrament of the Lord's Supper, wine represents Jesus' blood, i.e., his death.

Although rebuffed, Jesus' mother gives instructions (v. 5). The presence of six stone jars (v. 6), presumably in a home, is not explained, although their symbolic value is evident from their designation as Jewish purification vessels. As the servants obey Jesus' instructions (vv. 7–8), no miracle at all is recounted; Jesus speaks no word over the water. But such good wine is brought the steward (v. 9) that he exclaims to the bridegroom about what seems to him the reversal of ordinary practice (v. 10). The steward does not know where the wine came from (v. 9): again the motif of ignorance of Jesus' true origin. (That the servants know may suggest that they represent ministers of Jesus or the church.) The steward's words mean more than he intends. If Jesus himself is the good wine, his appearance at the culmination of salvation history is symbolized by its emergence out of the waters of Jewish purification: the last, not the first, is best. Such a symbolic interpretation seems confirmed by the closing statement (v. 11). Jesus has performed the first of his signs, whose purpose, to indicate who he is (to manifest his glory), is now fulfilled in the disciples' response of faith. Jesus is then the new wine, perhaps embodied in the wine of the Eucharist, and his coming is an event that drastically alters the prevailing circumstances, as did the miracle of his changing water into wine.

Jesus' mother and disciples have been with him at Cana; now suddenly and inexplicably at Capernaum his brothers appear also (v. 12). They all remain there a short while, but nothing happens. Not surprisingly, modern interpreters have wondered whether we find here the remnant of a narrative framework that has been lost in later editing (see commentary below on 4:46–54).

2:13–22
The Cleansing of the Temple

Somewhat abruptly we are told that Jesus went up to Jerusalem for Passover (v. 13), the first of at least three Passovers in the Johannine narrative (cf. 6:4; 11:55). The only Passover mentioned in the other Gospels is the one at which he died (→ Passover, The).

The description of Jesus' driving the moneychangers and vendors from the Temple begins in a manner similar to the one in the other Gospels, although there are differences in detail (e.g., Jesus' use of a whip, his direct address to those who sold pigeons). The words of Jesus and the quotation from the OT also differ. Only in John does Jesus speak of not making the Temple ("my Father's house") a house of trade (Gk. *emporion;* Lat. *emporium;* cf. Zech. 14:21) and quote Ps. 69:9. This Psalms quotation has a double sense; it not only refers to the zeal that motivated Jesus' deed, but alludes to his own death (→ Temple, The).

The demand for a sign (v. 18) is unique and typical of John (but cf. Mark 11:28). Jesus' word about destroying the Temple and raising it up in three days (v. 19) has numerous parallels (Mark 14:58 and parallels; Mark 15:29 and parallels; Acts 6:14), but not in the setting of this episode. Indeed, in other sources it is attributed to Jesus by his opponents. The question of the Jews (v. 20) allows the narrator to inform readers of the real meaning of the saying (v. 21) and to point ahead to the disciples' future belief (v. 22). This retrospective stance, in which the author assumes the vantage point of future, postresurrection belief, is typical of John (cf. 12:16). If Herod's reconstruction of the Temple (v. 20) began in 19 or 20 B.C., this event would have occurred in the year 27 or 28.

In all probability John has moved an event from the passion week (as in the Synoptics) to the beginning of the narrative. Such a move would fit his tendency to set out at the beginning matters or events that in the other Gospels take place later (e.g., the confession of Jesus as Messiah). Jesus comes to the Temple of Jerusalem, the very heart of the Israelite nation and religion, at the outset of his ministry and there confronts its authorities. Their forthcoming hostility is adumbrated, and his own death and resurrection are revealed by the testimony of Scripture and Jesus' own pronouncement.

2:23–3:21
The Discussion with Nicodemus on Birth from Above

2:23–25, Jesus' Reception at Passover. This general, summary statement about Jesus' signs prepares readers for the way in which Nicodemus will approach Jesus (3:2), as well as Jesus' cool response. Jesus' own attitude is described tersely (vv. 24–25) and grounded in the omniscience that he frequently manifests in John (1:48; 4:39).

3:1–21, The Discussion with Nicodemus. Nicodemus is a Pharisee and a leader of the Jews, probably a member of the Sanhedrin (→ Sanhedrin). Like many figures in the Fourth Gospel, he is representative of an attitude toward Jesus, probably one known to the Evangelist (cf. 12:42). That Nicodemus says "we" suggests that he speaks for a Judaism that is open to Jesus, that accepts him as one (among others) sent from God. Jesus is indeed a teacher (1:38) from God, whose signs accredit his origin.

The proof of divine accreditation through signs has a venerable biblical origin and history, particularly in the Exodus narratives (Exod. 4:1–9, 17, 30). Jesus himself was perceived as a miracle worker, exorcist, and faith healer (Matt. 11:2–6; 12:28). Miracles apparently came to be expected of the promised prophet like Moses (Deut. 18:15–22), even as Moses himself had performed signs. Nicodemus's evaluation of Jesus thus seems to imply that he is such a prophetic figure.

One might have assumed that Nicodemus's acceptance of Jesus (v. 2) would have elicited a positive response rather than what amounts to a sharp rebuke and challenge (v. 3). For the first time in John "kingdom of God" is mentioned. Whether Jesus is calling for rebirth or birth from above depends on how the Greek term *anothen* (v. 3, RSV: "anew") is rendered. It means either "again" or "from above." Nicodemus understands Jesus to say "again" (v. 4), although he grossly misunderstands him as meaning physical rebirth. Jesus immediately makes clear that he speaks on a different level. That Jesus and Nicodemus speak on different levels is characteristic of such misunderstandings in John. Birth by water and spirit (v. 5) looks like an allusion to baptism, performed in water and, in early Christian expectation, accompanied by the gift of the Spirit. The realms of flesh and spirit (v. 6) are not to be understood generally, but with reference to Christ and belief or participation in him. The flesh is the realm of unbelief, of separation from knowledge of God. That Jesus should speak as he has to one living in that realm is no marvel (v. 7). Nicodemus is called upon not to acknowledge Jesus by his old standards, but to break away from them into a new realm. Jesus' enigmatic statement about the wind or Spirit (v. 8) is bound to confound Nicodemus (v. 9). The Greek word *pneuma* can mean either, and an outsider like Nicodemus may only wonder what the blowing of the wind has to do with the working of the Spirit. The latter is not, however, erratic and arbitrary; to the believer its unaccountability signals God's grace.

Despite his initial positive reception of Jesus, Nicodemus is still in darkness (v. 10). That he is more than an individual is suggested by the following statement (v. 11), in which suddenly the verbs all become

plural in Greek; heretofore they were singular. Apparently the confessing community of Jesus' disciples speaks with him to those with whom Nicodemus is aligned, the synagogue (perhaps a synagogue including members well disposed toward Jesus). Jesus' question to Nicodemus (v. 12) is proverbial and highlights the latter's ignorance. The key to the heavenly things, which Nicodemus and company do not know, is knowledge of Jesus, particularly where he is from and where he is going. Thus, in v. 13 Jesus speaks enigmatically of the ascent and descent of the Son of Man, to and from heaven. Ascents to God were claimed for other personages of Judaism (e.g., Enoch, Elijah, Moses). This statement denies all such ascents to God except Jesus', and Jesus can uniquely claim to have descended from God (heaven). Although Judaism could easily speak of men sent from God (1:6; 3:2) and knew of ascents to God, the claim to have descended from him was another matter. Precisely that, however, is said of Jesus. Mention of the Son of Man (v. 13) sets the stage for the further exposition of Jesus' work. Although the reference to Moses' act (vv. 14–15; cf. Num. 21:8–9) is entirely appropriate in a discussion with a teacher of Israel, from this point on Nicodemus is actually no longer in the picture; nor does Jesus seem to be the speaker. John 3:11–13 forms a bridge from their conversation into a confessional statement of the Johannine Christian community. The unmistakable reference to the crucifixion of Jesus is still, however, veiled behind the reference to Moses, whose deed is taken to be a *type* of Jesus'. As Moses' act saved the people from death by serpent bite, so Jesus' crucifixion saves his people from death and opens the door to eternal life.

John speaks less enigmatically in 3:16, a statement in which the gospel message is encapsulated. Here, as in v. 15, life is made contingent on faith and believing. The giving or sending of the Son is the expression of God's saving purpose; he does not intend to judge or condemn (v. 17; the same Greek verb, *krinein,* could have either meaning). The statement about the one who believes (v. 18) is straightforward and presents no problem. The one who does not believe, however, is curiously described in the Greek perfect tense as judged already (→ Judgment, Day of). The Evangelist here contemplates the fact of unbelief, rejection. Such rejection is judgment for the unbeliever (v. 19) and is explained in terms of a light/darkness dualism reminiscent of the prologue (esp. vv. 5, 9). An explanation of why some avoid the light while others come to it is then given (vv. 20–21); it could mean that Jesus as light only confirms a preference for light or darkness, depending on people's previous disposition and conduct. Faith in Jesus would then be morally predetermined. John seeks, however, to find terms adequate to explain the phenomenon of rejection and the consequent alienation of communities (church and synagogue) in which he lives or has lived. Only in such a confrontation and decision for or against Jesus may the true character of one's past, as well as the direction for the future, be seen.

3:22–36
The Second Appearance of the Baptist

3:22–24, Jesus and John Baptizing. Since Jesus is already in Jerusalem, v. 22 must mean he went into the Judean countryside. Only in John is Jesus said to have baptized (cf. 3:26; 4:1–2). Aenon (3:23) may be a derivative from a Semitic word meaning "spring." There were at least a couple of localities known as Salim, one about three miles east of biblical Shechem, the other farther north, a few miles south of Scythopolis (biblical Beth-shan). We learn also that John had not yet been arrested (v. 24; cf. Mark 1:14). This statement seems to reflect some knowledge of the synoptic account of Jesus' ministry, whether on the part of the author or a very early editor.

3:25–30, John the Baptist's Witness to Jesus. The introduction (v. 25) does not lead smoothly into the question of v. 26, but seems superfluous. One would have anticipated a dispute with disciples of Jesus, if not with Jesus himself. Obviously, v. 26 refers to the opening scene (1:28). John himself is unperturbed that Jesus' baptism is attracting multitudes (3:27) and continues to bear witness to Jesus, referring to his own previous witness (v. 28; cf. 1:20, 23). The friend of the bridegroom (cf. our "best man") is obviously John the Baptist, who knows his own role in relation to Jesus' (vv. 29–30). He remains a faithful witness even in the face of a challenge from his own disciples. The fulfillment of joy is a mark of Jesus' eternal fellowship with his followers (15:11; 16:24; 17:13). The significance of this short episode now becomes clear: John testifies again to Jesus.

3:31–36, The Superiority of the Son. This paragraph again raises the question of who is speaking (cf. 3:16–21). John, if he is speaking, refers to himself in the third person (v. 31b). Although there is no explicit indication of a change of speakers, vv. 31–36 (like vv. 16–21) may best be understood as a kind of comment of the Evangelist upon the episode that has preceded.

The contrast (v. 31) is apparently between the Baptist and Jesus (cf. Matt. 11:11). That the witness and word of Jesus (vv. 32–34) are grounded in the Father's love (v. 35) is a way of expressing God's closeness (1:18) and unity (10:30) with Jesus. The Spirit is given by God to Jesus without measure, i.e., without limit or restriction (3:34). His giving him "all things" (v. 35) means that the Father's revelation of himself is accomplished wholly in Jesus the Son. That John the Baptist speaks of no one receiving Jesus' testimony (v. 32) and a moment

later of those who do receive it (v. 36) is typical (cf. 1:10–11; 1:12–13). "God" and "Father" can be used interchangeably. Because Jesus is so frequently referred to as "Son," God is often called "Father." The Father-Son relationship symbolizes and expresses the Johannine concept of revelation. That God's revelation and salvation are now vested wholly in the Son is confirmed by the either-or alternative set out in 3:36. Belief in the Son means eternal life already. Disobedience (i.e., refusing to believe) cuts one off from life and, instead, incurs God's wrath (v. 36).

4:1–42
Jesus and the Woman of Samaria

4:1–6, Jesus at Jacob's Well. The opening sentence clearly refers to the situation described in 3:22–30 and notes Jesus' return to Galilee, a journey accomplished by going through Samaria (v. 4; → Samaria, District of). John agrees with Luke (9:52; 10:29–37; 17:11–19) in showing Jesus having contact with Samaria and the Samaritans. In neither Gospel do Samaritans fare badly. Probably Sychar (John 4:5) was at or near biblical Shechem, directly north of Jerusalem in Samaria. By Hebrew time reckoning, the sixth hour would be noon; at midday Jesus would be weary from walking. This is one of the relatively few places in John's Gospel where Jesus is allowed to show normal human frailty (cf. 11:35).

4:7–15, The Conversation. Jesus' request of the woman of Samaria is not surprising by modern standards, given the setting (v. 6), but the woman's surprise is understandable (v. 9; → Samaritans). There is, of course, no way the woman could have known the particular identity of Jesus as the bringer of salvation (v. 10). The "living water" is also running water; John typically plays upon a double meaning in Greek that cannot be duplicated in English. Jesus means salvific "living water"; the woman thinks he is speaking of ordinary "running water" in the well (cf. 3:3–4). That Jesus may be a special personage, however, is suggested by her question (4:12), which in Greek expects a negative answer: Jesus could not be greater than Jacob. Of course, Jesus is greater. Jesus now gives a more straightforward answer (vv. 13–14), revealing that the water he gives is of a radically different sort. The woman begins to understand, but is apparently still thinking of the quenching of this-worldly thirst (v. 15).

The conversation again embodies the typical Johannine misunderstanding in which Jesus speaks with full and authoritative knowledge (fundamentally, knowledge of who he is), while the interlocutor responds in a natural, normal but uninformed way. Even Jesus' disciples, although they are said to believe, do not fully comprehend him during his lifetime (cf. 4:32–34).

4:16–26, Jesus Reveals Himself. Jesus suddenly turns the conversation in an unexpected direction (vv. 16–18). His command, the woman's answer, and Jesus' rejoinder culminate in a startling revelation about herself, which she can only acknowledge as true (v. 19). Understandably, she takes Jesus to be a prophet. Her question reflects the ancient dispute and tension between Jews and Samaritans (v. 20). "This mountain" is Mount Gerizim, where the Samaritan temple had been located until its destruction by John Hyrcanus (128 B.C.). Samaritan worship, however, continued there. The question allows Jesus to contrast the old false worship, whether Jewish or Samaritan, with the new (vv. 21, 23). Worship in spirit and truth (vv. 23–24) means, in effect, Christian worship of the God who reveals himself in Jesus, who is the truth and sends the Spirit upon his disciples after his death. Thus Jesus alludes to the hour of his death and exaltation (cf. 12:23; there may also be a contrast with sacrificial worship). That "the hour is coming and now is" probably means that the hour is future from the standpoint of Jesus' ministry and present to the Johannine church and readers of the Gospel.

The statement of v. 22 that salvation is from (or "of") the Jews is, at the least, an unexpected assertion in the Fourth Gospel. Because in this Gospel Samaritans are viewed more favorably than Jews, it is all the more difficult to understand why such a statement is made. Nevertheless, from the perspective of the Gospel it is correct in that Jesus is a Jew (v. 9) and represents the Jewish messianic hope (1:45) rather than the Samaritan. The woman's response to Jesus (4:25) seems to reflect Jewish messianic expectations. But perhaps she refers not to the Davidic Messiah, but to a prophet like Moses (cf. Deut. 18:15–22). The Samaritans viewed themselves as the heirs of the Northern Kingdom of Israel, in which the royal line was not descended from David. Jesus replies to her by identifying and revealing himself, using the formula *ego eimi* (Gk., "It is I" or "I am"), which is characteristic of the Gospel of John (cf. 8:12). This self-revelation brings the scene with the woman to an end, but the episode continues (→ Messiah).

4:27–30, The Woman Witnesses to the Samaritans. The disciples now return and are amazed because by conventional standards conversation between a man, much less a rabbi, and a woman was unusual. The woman, leaving her water jar (v. 28), bears witness to her people, making clear her grounds for thinking Jesus may be the Christ (v. 29). Because of her testimony, the people of the city (cf. v. 5) now come to see Jesus, but while they are on the way his disciples return to the center of the stage.

4:31–38, Jesus' Conversation with His Disciples. Jesus' disciples' entreaty (v. 31), his response, and their

puzzlement (vv. 32–33) form what has become a familiar pattern (cf. 4:7–15); now Jesus' own disciples find his words a riddle and misunderstand in terms of everyday possibilities or circumstances. Jesus solves the riddle by revealing the secret of his symbolic language (v. 34): the God-given mission that is his source and sustenance. There follows a series of sayings that have as their theme, or common denominator, the harvest (vv. 35–38). Although their precise relation to the preceding conversation is not obvious, two factors help explain them. First, Jesus' own mission is, in John's thought, closely linked to his disciples' (cf. 20:21). Second, this connection now finds expression through apparently traditional sayings whose referents are no longer clear (4:35 may echo Matt. 9:37; Luke 10:2). That the harvest is not in the future, but now, is typical of John, for whom God's salvation is present in Jesus. The identification of the sower and reaper (vv. 36–37) is a problem. If they represent Jesus and the disciples, as might seem obvious, the "others" (v. 38; plural) is difficult to understand.

The passage can be fruitfully read in light of Acts 8:4–25, where Philip, who was not one of the Twelve, first preaches the gospel in Samaria. Only later do the apostles Peter and John confirm his work. If in John 4:35–38 Jesus is addressing his disciples and speaks of others who labored before them (v. 38), he may envision a similar situation.

4:39–42, The Samaritans' Belief. Although the testimony of the woman brought many to faith (v. 39), the presence and word of Jesus himself causes more to believe and makes her testimony superfluous. That Jesus preached and made large numbers of converts in Samaria is attested by no other Gospel and is unlikely. Probably this brief narrative also reflects the mission of the early, Johannine Christians, who preached the gospel in Samaria. In John's view, firsthand experience of Jesus (vv. 40–42) is not limited to his earthly or historical presence (see 14:23; 20:29), but is fully available only after his death and exaltation. Such experiential knowledge enables one to hail him as "Savior of the world," a title used of Roman emperors.

4:43–54
The Healing of an Official's Son

4:43–46, Jesus' Return to Galilee. Jesus is still headed for Galilee (cf. 4:3) and now resumes his journey. "Two days" (v. 43) is stereotypical for a short period (cf. 4:40; 2:1). The famous saying of 4:44 is found also in the synoptic Gospels (Matt. 13:57; Mark 6:4; Luke 4:24), where it applies to Galilee or Nazareth itself (Luke 4:24); here it seems to apply to Judea. In Galilee, Jesus is welcomed, according to John, although for this Gospel not Galilee, but Jerusalem, is the center of his activity.

4:46–54, The Healing. The reference to the earlier wine miracle of Cana (v. 46) is typical of John. The official and his mortally ill son are in Capernaum, some miles away, so that to see Jesus he must leave his son and go to Cana. In Matt. 8:5–13 and Luke 7:1–10 (Q source?) there is a story, set in Capernaum, of a Roman centurion whose servant or slave is ill. The Johannine story seems to be a variant of it, although in addition to the other differences the Q version takes place entirely in Capernaum (→ Q). When the official approaches Jesus, he responds with what seems a negative statement (v. 48; Mark 8:11–12), although in John's Gospel belief frequently follows upon the seeing of signs. Nevertheless the official continues to urge Jesus (v. 49), who responds with a command that promises healing, and the official believes what Jesus has said (v. 50). The healing of the son, as it turns out, occurred just when Jesus spoke (vv. 51–53). Upon discovering this, the man (with his household) again believes, by which is now clearly meant he comes to faith in Jesus. Thus, perhaps ironically, Jesus' statement of v. 48 is fulfilled.

5:1–47
Healing at Bethzatha and Discussion

5:1–9, The Healing. Jesus now goes up to Jerusalem to an unspecified feast. "Of the Jews" (v. 1) is superfluous except that it once again sets Jesus over against Judaism. Since Passover is anticipated in 6:4, this is presumably not a Passover feast (→ Feasts, Festivals, and Fasts).

The pool described here is probably the one unearthed by archaeologists near the Church of St. Anne north of the Temple area. The name Bethzatha (NRSV) may be derived from the northern suburb of the city in which the pool was located. The pool was, in ancient times, a kind of spa where healings were thought to take place (v. 3). Descriptions of the duration of illness are often found in healing stories (v. 5; cf. Mark 5:25); there is perhaps no symbolic significance in the number thirty-eight (but cf. Deut. 2:14). That the Johannine Jesus knows the man's condition without asking (v. 6) is typical (cf. 1:48; 4:17–18), as is his taking the initiative (2:4–5; 9:5–7). The man's problem in getting into the pool in time (v. 7) was explained by the addition of v. 4 in early manuscripts. Typically, Jesus does not deal with that problem at all, but gives a sharp command (v. 8; cf. Mark 2:9, 11). The man's healing is obviously the result of Jesus' word (cf. 4:46–54), not of the healed person's faith (cf. Mark 5:34). Almost as an afterthought, we are told (v. 9b) that the healing took place on a Sabbath, a common feature of Gospel healing stories (cf. 9:14; Mark 3:2) and a crucial fact in the following discussion.

5:10–18, The Persecution of Jesus. Significantly, the Jews do not question Jesus, but the man healed (cf.

chap. 9). When the man is accused of violating the Sabbath (v. 10), he points to the one who has healed him. But when questioned, he proves to be ignorant of Jesus, who has now withdrawn (v. 13; cf. the healed man in chap. 9). Jesus, once more taking the initiative, accosts him with a warning (v. 14). The man's illness is not said to have resulted from his sin, and such a viewpoint seems to be explicitly denied in 9:2–3 (cf. Luke 13:2–3), but his destiny is still undecided (cf. John 9:38). If he then turns informer against Jesus (v. 15), the latter's warning has apparently been rejected. He does, and Jesus himself is now persecuted for breaking the Sabbath (v. 16). Jesus gives his reason for working on the Sabbath in a somewhat veiled statement that seems to liken his own working to God's (v. 17). The response of the Jews is immediate and life threatening, for they take his statement to imply his equality with God. Such an offense goes far beyond Sabbath breaking, itself a capital crime (Exod. 31:14; 35:2), whether or not the Jews at this period could execute lawbreakers (cf. John 18:31). Obviously the crime of which Jesus is accused (v. 18) impugns the deity and flies in the face of Jewish monotheism; it is blasphemy (cf. Mark 14:63–64). The narrative has moved quickly from the healing of an ill man to this extreme antinomy and conflict between Jesus and the Jews, and this mortal threat to Jesus is related directly to claims made by, or for, him. The portrayal is doubtless influenced by the situation of the Johannine community (see Introduction).

5:19–24, The Father and Son. The basic theme of this section is the relationship of the Father and the Son as expressed in their life-giving work. Although John describes Jesus and his mission in the most exalted terms—the Father withholds nothing from the Son (vv. 19–20)—he emphasizes that the Son's authority derives wholly from the Father. The love that begins with God's revelation to and through the Son ends with the disciples' love for one another (13:34–35). The distinctive life-giving work of the Father is also accomplished by the Son, to whom judgment is wholly delegated (5:21–22). Resurrection and judgment, the hallmarks of the end of the age (i.e., eschatology), are thus the work of the Son. Those who (truly) hear the Son and believe God avoid judgment completely (cf. 3:18) and come immediately into eternal life (5:24). To reject the Son, Jesus, is to reject God (v. 23).

5:25–29, The Raising of the Dead. The thought of the preceding section moved quite naturally from the Son's relationship to the Father to eschatological salvation, resurrection, and life, for the Son carries through on earth the Father's life-giving and eschatological work. Now this theme receives further treatment. Verses 26–27 reiterate vv. 21–22, but in v. 25 a new idea has been introduced. Clearly in v. 24 eternal life is a present possibility and possession, not something one can obtain only after death. If in v. 25 "the dead" means the spiritually dead (as in 9:39 "blind" means spiritually blind), the idea is the same as in 5:24. The phrase "is coming and now is" refers to the perspective of Jesus and that of the postresurrection church (cf. 4:23), which are here juxtaposed. In 5:28–29, however, the dead can hardly be other than the physically dead. The fact that their resurrection is anticipated ("is coming") but not present would seem to confirm this. The description of resurrection of life and judgment (v. 29) is reminiscent of Dan. 12:2. But such a distinction between those raised stands in tension with 5:21–25, where resurrection is equated with eternal life and a resurrection of judgment would be a contradiction in terms. Verses 28–29 apparently embody a more primitive eschatology, whether the result of the Evangelist's use of traditional material or of later editorial work. John brings together traditions and perspectives that are not consistent with one another (→ Eschatology; Resurrection).

5:30–47, The Testimony to Jesus. In v. 30 Jesus reiterates his relation to the Father (cf. 5:19, 26–27), for the first time introducing the category of will. The move to the theme of witness or testimony (5:31–40) follows logically. Jesus makes no claim for himself and does not testify to himself. Of course, the one who bears witness to Jesus is ultimately God (v. 32; cf. v. 37). But first Jesus mentions another witness, John the Baptist. The "you sent messengers to John" (v. 33) equates the hearers with the Jews mentioned in 1:19, who evoke John's earlier witness. Jesus, while acknowledging John's positive importance, nevertheless puts distance between himself and his predecessor (5:34–36; cf. 3:30, 31–36). The testimony or witness of Jesus' works (5:36) naturally includes his signs, but also his words and other actions. They are given Jesus by the Father as a mission to accomplish, and their accomplishment is a witness, even if his opponents do not recognize their origin.

How the Father testifies or bears witness (v. 37) is not said explicitly, but, as we have noted, Jesus' works are given him by the Father and are an aspect of his witness. The same could be said of John, a man sent from God (1:6). That Jesus' Jewish opponents had not seen God's form is perhaps a commonplace (cf. 1:18), although the claim that they had not heard his voice or had his word abiding in them (5:38) would have evoked their strong resistance. Even the witness of Scripture cannot be heard unless these writings are acknowledged to bear witness to Jesus (v. 39), but the fact that they bear witness to Jesus can only be perceived in the moment one comes to Jesus (v. 40). Thus everything depends on believing or believing in Jesus.

Jesus' not receiving glory from humans (v. 41) is typical of the Fourth Gospel. The succeeding statement (v. 42), while also characteristic of John's polemic, does not quite follow. Apparently it states the

grounds for the opponents' rejection of Jesus and their receiving glory from one another (v. 44), although this is not made explicit here. The opponents' obduracy is then summed up (v. 43). Who is meant by "another" is unimportant. In fact, there may be no specific referent, for Jesus here characterizes his opponents generally. The polemic continues in v. 44 (cf. vv. 41–42).

Finally Jesus returns to Moses, who testifies through Scripture (cf. v. 39; 1:45), and becomes the accuser of his opponents, the Jews who think of themselves as his disciples (cf. 9:28). Belief in Jesus would follow from really believing Moses (5:46), as v. 47 reiterates. John is doubtless convinced of this; of course, the statement of vv. 46–47 reflects the beliefs of Christians. There is little in the other Gospels or in early Christian literature or tradition, however, to indicate that such issues characterized Jesus' historical ministry. The text reflects later controversies about Jesus' identity and role. In John's view, there is no neutral ground from which one may decide about Jesus, but decide one must. Such a crisis of decision is the counterpart of the Johannine dualism in which important issues are cast in terms of extreme alternatives.

6:1–71
The Feeding of Five Thousand and the Bread Discourse

Chap. 6 is a distinct literary unit, beginning with a new setting and ending with the climactic confession of Peter. Obviously, a new episode begins in chap. 7. Although identifiable traditional units underlie the various narratives (e.g., the feeding of the multitude, Jesus' walking on the sea), the chapter centers on the theme of the bread that Jesus gives his disciples to eat.

6:1–15, The Feeding. Verse 1 presupposes that Jesus is in Galilee, whereas he has just previously been in Jerusalem with no indication that he was leaving. Consequently, it has been suggested that chap. 6 once stood before chap. 5, since at the end of chap. 4 Jesus is in Galilee, but no extant manuscript of the Gospel attests this order. The chapters are treated as they now stand.

The feeding of a multitude is recounted in all the synoptic Gospels (Matt. 14:13–21; Mark 6:32–44; Luke 9:10–17; cf. Mark 8:1–10; Matt. 15:32–39). It is the first in a series of events in John that has synoptic, especially Marcan, parallels in the same sequence: the feeding; Jesus' walking on the water (Mark 6:45–51; Matt. 14:22–27); a question about signs (John 6:30; Mark 8:11); a discourse on bread (John 6:31–58; cf. Mark 8:14–21; Matt. 16:5–12); and Peter's confession of who Jesus is (John 6:66–71; Mark 8:27–30 and parallels). If John is not following Mark or Matthew (significant portions are missing in Luke), he knows common traditions already arranged in the same order.

As in Mark, the feeding narrative begins with Jesus' crossing the sea and the gathering of a throng (vv. 1–2). In John, only Jesus initially withdraws to a mountain (v. 3) to which he later returns (v. 15). Presumably, the feeding took place near the shore, as in the Synoptics (cf. 6:23). John's account, although similar to the other Gospels', has distinctive features, e.g., the crowd has seen Jesus' signs (v. 2); the Passover is at hand (v. 4); Philip intercedes for the people (vv. 5–7); a young boy is the source of the loaves and fish (vv. 8–9). The account of the distribution and eating of the bread comes closest to the other Gospels, perhaps because early Christian eucharistic practice has shaped the narratives. Accordingly, only pieces of bread are gathered after the meal (v. 13). Remarkably, all the other Gospels agree on the numbers: five thousand men, two hundred denarii worth of bread, five loaves, two fish, twelve baskets of fragments.

The reaction of the people (v. 14) is unique to John and is based on Jesus' sign (2:11, 23; 3:2; 4:19, 29, 45, 48, 53–54). He is hailed as the prophet, a typical reaction to his God-given signs (cf. 3:2). The prophet in question is in all probability the prophet like Moses predicted in Deut. 18:15–22. (Moses worked signs and wonders before Pharaoh, and through his leadership God exercised miraculous care for Israel during the Exodus from Egypt.) The perception attributed to Jesus that they were about to come and make him king (6:15) bespeaks a linkage between prophet and king in John's thought. The concept of messiahship in John has significant connections with prophetic, Mosaic traditions. That Jesus takes up and surpasses the work of Moses becomes a theme of the great discourse of 6:31–58.

6:16–24, Jesus' Walking on the Sea. In Matthew and Mark, as in John, Jesus' feeding of five thousand is followed immediately by a tale of his coming to his disciples, walking across the water. But John has the disciples going from Transjordan back toward Capernaum (v. 17; cf. v. 1), the opposite direction from that in the Synoptics. In all of the accounts, the disciples' boat encounters strong winds, the sudden appearance of Jesus walking across the water frightens the disciples, and Jesus calms their fears, saying, "It is I" (Gk. *ego eimi*, which can also be translated "I am"; cf. vv. 41, 48, 51). In Mark and Matthew, the wind ceases when Jesus gets into the boat. In John, nothing more is said of it, but instead the immediate arrival of the boat at its destination is noted.

The awkward transitional episode (vv. 22–24) has no synoptic parallel. The people note the absence of Jesus, the one boat, and the disciples (vv. 22, 24) and correctly infer that Jesus has gone to Capernaum (vv. 24–25), although he did not embark with the disciples (v. 22; thus the miraculous character of Jesus' crossing is attested). Readers are also informed of the arrival of the people who had been fed (v. 26) on the other side of the sea (v. 25). Evidently, according to the tradition John knew, the feeding took place on the

eastern side of the Sea of Galilee (contrary to the Synoptics), but the discourse in Capernaum (v. 59), the center of so much of Jesus' activity according to the synoptic Gospels.

6:25–34, Bread from Heaven. With Jesus, the disciples, and the people back on the western shore of the Sea of Galilee, a long dialogue between Jesus and several groups of interlocutors now begins (6:25–59). This section sets the scene and poses the terms of the ensuing discussion and debate. Jesus typically ignores the people's question (vv. 25–26) and speaks rather to their seeking him in the first place (v. 24), revealing their deeper motivation. Jesus' injunction (v. 27) seems to presuppose that seeing signs, not eating and being filled, is a proper grounds for seeking him. The loaves they have eaten are apparently the food that perishes. Even their seeing the sign and response (vv. 14–15) may not represent the level of acceptance Jesus requires. But Jesus holds out the possibility of their attaining a more appropriate access (v. 27). The Son of Man is of course Jesus, whom God endorses as his messenger. Jesus has enjoined his hearers to labor or work (v. 27), and so their question (v. 28) is appropriate. His answer is direct and to the point (v. 29). John here adopts the terms of the great debate between Paul and his Jewish Christian opponents, faith and works, but, instead of replacing works by faith, interprets true work as faith. The people then show that they are prepared to understand that the one whom God has sent is Jesus himself, if he meets their expectations (v. 30). Their question seems to ignore the sign they have just witnessed, but it serves to indicate that what Jesus has done is not enough and to open up the necessity for further explanation of his feeding work. As a literary device it is typical of the Gospel of John.

Without waiting for Jesus' answer, the people refer to their fathers' eating the miraculous manna (Exod. 16) and quote Scripture (v. 31). The citation is an inexact reflection of several OT passages: Exod. 16:4, 15; Num. 11:8; Neh. 9:15; Pss. 78:24; 105:40. Nevertheless, it conveys a biblical authority that all parties to the discussion will honor. Jesus, however, offers an interpretation that differs from what he attributes to them, although they have not yet voiced it: not Moses gave, but my Father gives the bread (v. 32). All would have agreed that it came ultimately from God, but by calling God "my Father" Jesus suggests a special role for himself in conveying that bread, while seeming to differentiate the true bread from heaven from the wilderness manna. Then Jesus subtly identifies himself with that true bread from heaven (v. 33). Thus the hearers ingenuously ask for this bread (v. 34) as the Samaritan woman asked for an unending supply of water (4:15). (The descent of the bread from heaven of course reflects the Exodus tradition that is clearly cited, but may also be related to the biblical concept of the descent of wisdom, whose relationship to the Christology of the prologue has already been noted.)

6:35–51, Jesus the Bread of Life. In light of their misunderstanding (v. 34), Jesus identifies himself openly as the bread of life (v. 35), but anticipates their rejection of him (v. 36). He is obviously casting his hearers in the role of unbelieving Jews. Not surprisingly, the people who next speak are called "the Jews" (v. 41). There follows now a series of statements by Jesus (vv. 37–40) concerning his relationship to the Father and his life-giving work (cf. 3:16–21, 31–36; 5:19–24). The sure salvation of the believer is grounded in the will and gift of God, as effected in the work of Jesus, the Son. The "murmuring" of the Jews (6:41) echoes the murmuring motif of the Exodus tradition (cf. Exod. 16:2, 8), which is the background of this entire discussion. The statement attributed to Jesus by the Jews is not an exact quotation, but takes up the themes of 6:33, 35. Their identification of Jesus' parentage (v. 42) recalls Philip's statement to Nathanael in 1:45 (cf. Matt. 13:55; Mark 6:3). The Jews typically betray their failure to understand by attempting to explain Jesus by reference to his earthly origins (cf. 7:40–44). Jesus' coming from God is itself the miracle. Jesus admonishes the Jews not to murmur (6:43) and explains the grounds of their unbelief (v. 44). His statements about resurrection at the last day (a familiar motif of Jewish and early Christian eschatology) recur throughout this section (vv. 39, 44, 54), reminding readers of the eschatological warrant of the truth of his words. Isaiah (54:13) is invoked as testimony that those who have actually heard the Father come to Jesus—another appeal to biblical authority (6:45). That no one has seen God (v. 46) is a recurring emphasis of John (cf. 1:18).

Eternal life as the consequence of belief or faith in Jesus is the central and recurring theme of the Gospel (6:47). In v. 48 we again encounter a typical Johannine "I am" (Gk. *ego eimi*) saying. Jesus' subsequent statements (vv. 49–51) reiterate the message of the Gospel with specific reference to the OT "text" (v. 31) and draw further implications (on v. 48, see v. 35; on v. 49, see vv. 33, 35–40). The contrast between eating the manna and eating the living and true bread is one of death and life. Finally, the life-giving bread from heaven is said to be the flesh of Jesus (v. 51). Thus the bread is now given a specific, historical, and individual identity, and this identity sets the conversation on a new track (vv. 52–58).

6:52–59, Bread and Flesh. Most of the previous discussion has dealt with the theme "bread from heaven," which is the first part of the Scripture quotation of v. 31. The latter part ("to eat") already came into view in vv. 50–51, but now the theme of eating is emphasized and explained. The question of the Jews (v. 52) leads to

unequivocal assertions about the importance of eating the flesh and drinking the blood of the Son of Man (vv. 53–54). Already in 6:51 the giving of Jesus' flesh alludes to his death; in 6:52–58 that death is presupposed. Otherwise, the eating of his flesh and the drinking of his blood is unthinkable. Such a thought would in any event be abhorrent to the Jew. It becomes intelligible, however, on the basis of certain theological premises. From the death of Jesus, salvation flows (cf. 1 Cor. 15:3), and the bloodiness of his death by crucifixion suggests the inauguration of a new covenant through his sacrifice. Many interpreters see in this entire section a clear reference to the Eucharist, the sacramental meal (cf. 1 Cor. 11:23–26; Mark 14:22–25 and parallels). That John speaks of "flesh" rather than "body" sets him apart from the Synoptics and Paul; significantly he thereby takes up OT imagery ("flesh" and "blood"). Because of the richness of the sacramental allusions, it is perhaps all the more puzzling that John nowhere recounts, but seems to presuppose, Jesus' institution of the Eucharist. Assuming the Eucharist is in view, participation in it, like baptism, would constitute a clear confession of faith in Jesus, a break with the synagogue, and adherence to the new community of Jesus' disciples. The rituals of worship become the dividing line between Jewish and Christian communities, as they have continued to be ever since. The notation of the geographical setting (6:59) brings the discourse to an end, although the following scenes obviously constitute its aftermath.

6:60–71, Further Discussion and Peter's Confession. The reaction of many disciples is understandable (v. 60), as is the subsequent withdrawal of some (v. 66). Jesus' knowledge of their thoughts is characteristic (v. 61). The apparent grounds for greater offense, the ascent of Jesus to the Father (v. 62), has, by the writing of this Gospel, already occurred (20:17).

Jesus' statement about the life-giving role of Spirit as contrasted with the flesh (6:63) constitutes a puzzle. In discounting the importance of the flesh, Jesus seems in effect to be taking back what he said in vv. 52–58 about the necessity of eating and drinking his flesh and blood. Given the conviction of the Evangelist and his community that the ascended Jesus had sent the Spirit (20:22; cf. 14:16–17), he could hardly have Jesus omit the cruciality of the Spirit's role. As it stands, however, there is a tension, perhaps best resolved by understanding that "flesh" in 6:63 has the OT sense of mortality (in contrast to the Spirit of God) and not the specific sense it acquired in vv. 53–58 in combination with "blood" (→ Flesh and Spirit). Perhaps not surprisingly, Jesus' word leads to the defection of some, which he fully foresaw (vv. 64, 65).

The withdrawal of "many" disciples (v. 66) may reflect the fact that the Gospel of John is the product of a severe conflict situation. The Twelve, however, remain faithful. In response to Jesus' question (v. 67), Peter speaks (v. 68). His role is reminiscent of, but his words unaccountably unlike, the confession in Mark 8:29 and parallels. Jesus here asks a different question, and Peter's response is initially a counterquestion. Eternal life, belief, and knowledge, all missing from the synoptic version, are concepts typical of John, but the title "Holy One of God" is strange (cf. Mark 1:24). John's version is scarcely intelligible as a rewriting of the Synoptics. The concluding reference to Judas (6:70–71; cf. v. 64) refutes any hint that Jesus has been deceived by one of his own disciples. Any such disparagement is countered by his own revelation of the satanic character of the one who was to betray him (cf. 13:2, 21–30).

7:1–52
Jesus at the Feast of Tabernacles

Chap. 7 is another discrete literary unit, with a clear beginning point at 7:1 where the locus of Jesus' activity is discussed. The episode reaches a culmination with the reappearance of Nicodemus and the official rejection of Jesus in Jerusalem. Unlike chap. 6, chap. 7 has few points of contact with the Synoptics. There is an obvious break between 7:52 and 8:12 into which the story of an adulterous woman has been inserted in later manuscripts. Chap. 7 is a carefully constructed narrative containing dialogue, but there is only a minimum of narrative framework in chap. 8.

7:1–13, Jesus' Journey to Jerusalem. The deadly intent of the Jews, first mentioned in 5:18, leads Jesus to avoid Judea, presumably because his hour has not yet arrived (cf. 2:4). Tabernacles (v. 2) is the third of the great canonical feasts, the harvest feast in early autumn (cf. 6:4; Passover falls in spring). Jesus' brothers now appear (cf. 2:12; Mark 3:31) to urge him on to Jerusalem. That Jesus had disciples there is a Johannine idea (cf. 18:15); in the Synoptics Jesus' disciples are all Galileans. The works the brothers have in mind (7:3–4) presumably include signs. The brothers, by implying that open demonstration or proof is needed (v. 4), acknowledge they do not believe in him (v. 5). Jesus' response to them is very much like his response to his mother (2:4), for he does not move in reaction to any human initiative, but only at God's command (7:8–9). As if to underscore the point, no sooner are his brothers out of the way than Jesus goes up to Jerusalem (v. 10).

The Jews who are there seeking Jesus (v. 11) are apparently hostile and to be distinguished from the crowds of people who are divided but for fear of the Jews keep quiet (vv. 12–13; on the motif of the fear of the Jews see 9:22; 12:42; cf. 20:19). The accusation that Jesus is a deceiver, leading the people astray, represents the official view of the Jewish leaders.

7:14–31, Jesus' Discourses at the Feast and Crowd Reaction. The marveling of the Jews (v. 15) at Jesus' teaching in the Temple (cf. Mark 14:49) is based on what they know of his background; here again is the characteristic attempt to explain Jesus on the basis of inadequate knowledge of his origin (cf. 1:46; 6:42). Jesus immediately sets matters straight (7:16). That Jesus' will is in complete harmony with God's has already been stated (6:38); now the very recognition of this fact is said to depend upon the intention to do God's will. As Jesus' unity with God is a unity of will, unity with Jesus depends on a similar unity with God's will. Jesus implicitly contrasts himself with the (unidentified) charlatan who seeks his own glory (7:18; cf. 5:43), claiming nothing for himself except that he seeks the glory of the one true God, i.e., to do his will and work.

The mention of the law of Moses (7:19) states an issue for the remainder of the chapter: who is truly obedient to the law? The response of the people (lit., "crowd") to Jesus' ominous question (cf. 5:18; 7:1) seems on the surface quite normal (v. 20), but as John never tires of reiterating, superficial understanding misses the point. Jesus' rejoinder (vv. 21–24) refers to the healing of 5:1–9. He then demonstrates his knowledge of the law (7:22), arguing that if circumcision is permitted on the Sabbath, making a man's whole body well ought to be permissible also (v. 23; the fathers in v. 22 are Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob; Jesus corrects himself by indicating that circumcision is antecedent to Moses). Thus his injunction of v. 24 does not presuppose or ask more than that the prevailing standards should be correctly applied. Jesus submits his case to the law of Moses in order that he may be proven innocent by its best standards of interpretation (cf. 7:50–51). Of course, John does not believe that Jesus is finally subordinate to Moses (cf. 5:39–47). The Jerusalemites (7:25; cf. v. 12) are distinguishable from the Jews; their questions initially express only wonderment (v. 25) and openness to Jesus (v. 26). But finally their conclusion is negative; their statement (v. 27) corresponds to one strain of expectation according to which the Messiah would emerge out of obscurity. Again, consideration of Jesus' origins leads to erroneously negative conclusions about his role. Typically, Jesus responds with an assertion of his true origin and authority (vv. 28–29). The response to Jesus is an attempt to seize him (v. 30), which is untimely and therefore fails: Jesus' hour has not yet come. Still, many of the crowd believe because of Jesus' signs (v. 31).

7:32–52, The Official Response. The crowd's apparent division is not shared by the officials, however, who send out a search party to arrest Jesus (v. 32). The chief priests, probably Sadducees, are allied with the Pharisees, an unlikely combination for Jesus' day (→ Sadducees). The chief priests were Temple authorities then, but not the Pharisees, who came to dominance only after the Roman war (A.D. 70) when the Temple was gone. Jesus' enigmatic statement (vv. 33–34) refers to his coming death and exaltation to God. The Jews typically misunderstand (vv. 35–36), but in their misunderstanding nevertheless utter a profound truth (cf. 11:49–52). The death of Jesus will mean that his gospel will be taken to the Greeks of the Dispersion (cf. 12:20–23), i.e., the Jewish people scattered throughout the Mediterranean world. "Greeks" might mean any Gentiles (cf. Rom. 1:16), although here Greek-speaking Jews living outside the Holy Land may also be in view.

At the Feast of Tabernacles, daily libations of water were brought from the pool of Siloam (9:7, 11) near the foot of the Temple Mount. Possibly, when Jesus utters his pronouncement (7:37–38) on the last (seventh) day these water ceremonies are in view. His statement may be punctuated as in the RSV text or as in the RSV note; the original Greek manuscripts were without punctuation. (The RSV presents the alternatives more closely than the NRSV.) The marginal rendering is less difficult. If it is followed, the statement of v. 38 applies to Jesus: out of *his* heart (Gk., "belly") the rivers of living water flow (cf. 19:34), not from the believer, as is otherwise the case. The source of the Scripture reference is unclear. The Evangelist comments (7:39) that Jesus' statement refers to the time after his crucifixion (glorification), when the Spirit, and thus the salvation given through him, would be received (cf. 16:7).

Typically, Jesus' words cause a division (7:40–43). Probably John sees Jesus as both prophet and Christ (see commentary above on 6:1–15 [vv. 14–15]), but the latter is the more generally acknowledged title. Those who affirm him as either are on the right track. Others challenge him on the basis of his origin (7:41b–42), for Jesus is known to come from Galilee (cf. 1:46), a supposition never contradicted in the Fourth Gospel (cf. Matt. 2:1–6; Luke 2:1–7). Jesus' earthly origins can neither discredit him nor authenticate him. Once again an attempt to seize or arrest Jesus aborts (7:44), presumably because his hour had not yet come.

The officers (NRSV: "temple police") sent out to arrest (v. 32) Jesus now return, cognizant of what he has said (v. 46), and their evaluation is entirely accurate. The chief priests and Pharisees represent Jewish officialdom, but again theirs is an unlikely combination in Jesus' day. Probably the presence of the Pharisees is anachronistic and reflects the situation of Judaism in John's time (see Introduction). Tellingly, only the Pharisees pose the questions in vv. 47–49. Their annoyance at their subordinates' failure to arrest Jesus is patent (v. 45), as is their impatience with these officers' awed reaction to him. The question about being led astray takes up the earlier negative opinion of Jesus (v. 12). The contemptuous description of the crowd (v. 49) may reflect learned opinion of the so-called people of the land, folk who may have been God-fearing but did not have opportunity or wherewithal to be scrupulously observant. As if to answer the ques-

tion of the Pharisees (v. 48), out of the ranks of the scholars Nicodemus stands up to speak for Jesus and for a right judgment (7:24) under the law (vv. 50–51). Despite Nicodemus's standing (cf. 3:1, 10), he is derided, and his knowledge of Scripture impugned (7:52). Jesus cannot be a prophet (cf. v. 40) because he is from the wrong place.

The division over Jesus among the Jewish people falls more or less along the line between officialdom and general populace. Some of the latter may reject Jesus, but many credit him as a prophet, if not the Christ, while the leaders, particularly the Pharisees, reject his claims out of hand (cf. 12:42). He does not meet their standards. Increasingly, "Pharisees" and "Jews" will come to be used interchangeably.

7:53–8:11
The Woman Taken in Adultery

This famous story was not originally a part of the Gospel of John. The oldest manuscripts do not contain it; a few have it in other places, e.g., at the end of John or after Luke 21:38. Probably most stories of Jesus once circulated independently; this one did not find a place in John until after the Gospel was published.

8:12–59
Jesus the Light of the World: Claim and Controversy

As Jesus resumes speaking (v. 12), he now addresses the Pharisees (v. 13) or Jews (v. 22) and so, apparently, the hostile group who wanted him arrested (7:45). Although the narrative connection is not smooth, the general context of official hostility at the end of chap. 7 continues in chap. 8. This hostility is now directed to Jesus himself, who engages in vigorous and acrimonious debate with his adversaries. The debate likely manifests the tension between church and synagogue near the end of the first century.

8:12–20, The Light of the World. That Jesus is the light of the world has already been suggested by the prologue (1:4–5, 9). The form of Jesus' saying is, however, notable; it is an "I am" saying, typical of John (cf., e.g., 6:35; 10:7, 11; 11:25). When Pharisees accuse Jesus of witnessing to himself (8:13; cf. 5:31), he insists on the truth of his testimony (v. 14), once more stating his role in terms of his origin and destiny, which his opponents repeatedly demonstrate they do not know. Jesus now stresses their ignorance, invoking their own law ("your law," 8:17) and maintaining that it vindicates his judgment, while theirs is purely human ("according to the flesh," v. 15). When Jesus calls upon the witness of his Father in accordance with the law's requirement of two witnesses, the Pharisees think that he means his earthly father. Of course, Jesus means God the Father, whom his opponents do not know.

8:21–30, Jesus' Departure. The next stage of the discussion begins with Jesus' assertion about his departure and concludes with the statement that many of his hearers believed in him (v. 30). Again the Jews misunderstand and, in asking whether he will kill himself unintentionally, inject a note of irony. Jesus will in fact die, but not as they will, in sin, i.e., in unbelief (v. 24). Their unbelief is tantamount to their ignorance of Jesus' true origin, which is here contrasted with their own (v. 23). The contrast of above and below is characteristic of the dualism of John. Jesus' opponents do not know he speaks for God (v. 27). Jesus, however, points ahead to the possibility of their knowing his true identity when they have crucified him ("lifted up," v. 28), reiterating his own submission to the Father. Surprisingly, this series of exchanges seems to have a happy outcome, as many believe in him; but their belief will prove to be ephemeral.

8:31–38, The Jews Who Have Believed. There follows a discussion with Jews who have believed in him (v. 31) that quickly becomes acrimonious, as these believers fall into sharp dispute with Jesus, who soon imputes to them the intention to kill him (v. 37). The dispute becomes intelligible as the expression of extreme tension between the Johannine community and a group of Jesus' followers who wish to incorporate him into their already existing (Jewish) perspective. They deny that Jesus can invest them with a truth and give them a freedom they did not already possess in Abraham (vv. 32–33; such Jewish Christians survived well into the second century and beyond). The basic question is whether or not salvation (freedom) is already given in sonship to Abraham or is available only through Christ. A similar dispute is found in Gal. 2:11–21, there cast in terms of faith (in Christ) and works (of the law). The sharp divergence of views, expressed now by the Johannine dualism, is summed up in 8:38, and from this point onward the debate concerns fatherhood.

8:39–47, Abraham's Children. The Jews continue the discussion by claiming Abraham as their father, and Jesus rejects the claim on the basis of their intent to kill him (v. 40). The Jews do not actually say they mean to kill Jesus, but their actions reveal their intentions (7:44; 8:59), despite protestations (7:20), and Jesus knows what they will do (7:19; 8:40, 44). By now there is no longer any distinction between Jews who believe and those who do not; the latter have absorbed the former. The Jews' assertion that, as children of Abraham, they were not born of fornication (v. 41) introduces a factor not otherwise mentioned in the narrative and may suggest they think Jesus was born of fornication and is therefore discredited. Jesus' response is an absolute denial that the God who is his Father is theirs also (vv. 42–44). In a sharp display of Johannine dualism (cf. 8:23), Jesus charges that not

God but the devil is their father, hence their murderous intent and malicious falsehood. The devil is the "father of lies" and stands in sharpest contrast to Jesus, who speaks (and is) the truth (v. 45). The contrast is only underscored by their attempt to convict Jesus of sin (v. 46). Their rejection of the truth is grounded in their origin, their alienation from God (v. 47).

8:48–59, Jesus Accused of Demon Possession. Although readers are prepared for the accusation that Jesus is a Samaritan (v. 48; cf. chap. 4), nothing in the Gospel suggests that Jesus is demon-possessed, a charge he flatly rejects (v. 49; but cf. Mark 3:22). In John, Jesus performs no exorcisms, perhaps because the Evangelist wants to remove this cause of suspicion. In response to the new accusations, Jesus only reiterates his close relationship to God and his promise of life (vv. 49–51). The Jews now manifest the extreme dualism underlying this debate by repeating their charge. Their question to Jesus (v. 53) is so formulated in Greek as to anticipate a negative answer: Jesus cannot be greater than Abraham. Jesus responds in turn and in kind: his claims are grounded in God's will; his opponents have no claim upon God (vv. 54–55). But though Jesus seemingly sets himself in opposition to his Jewish contemporaries, he nevertheless claims the approval of Abraham, the father of the Jewish people and of their tradition (v. 56). Either Abraham was granted a vision of the future, or he was conceived of as being alive with God all along. The heated dispute ends typically, with a misunderstanding on the part of the Jews (v. 57), an enigmatic "I am" saying of Jesus (v. 58), and a very brief narration in which the Jews demonstrate the correctness of Jesus' imputation to them of a lethal intent (v. 59).

9:1–41
The Man Born Blind

Chap. 9 is a self-contained unit, a complete episode. Typically, a miracle or sign performed by Jesus leads to a discussion and debate, which in this case reveals a good deal about the setting and purpose of the Gospel.

9:1–7, The Miracle. The initial scene (vv. 1–7) describes the miracle of Jesus' giving sight to the man blind from birth. The miracle itself is described with economy of style (vv. 1, 6–7). Similar space (vv. 2–5) is devoted to the disciples' questioning the cause of the man's blindness (cf. v. 34; Luke 13:2–5), which provides the setting for God's work (cf. John 11:4). One does not wait for the Sabbath to pass to do it (9:4, 14). In view of Jesus' promise of his continued presence with the disciples after his death (chaps. 14–16), vv. 4–5 can hardly mean that the period of his saving or healing power is limited by his historical presence (cf. 14:12). In any event, Jesus indicates his intention to act without delay. His action and command (9:6–7) recall Elisha's cleansing of the leper Naaman (2 Kings 5:10; cf. also Mark 8:23). The pool of Siloam is at the foot of the hill of the old City of David, south of the Temple area. Its name, translated "sent" (9:7, NRSV), seemingly has symbolic significance (Jesus was sent from God), but that is not spelled out further.

9:8–12, The Initial Inquiry. The interchange between the man and his neighbors establishes that he is actually the one who was a blind beggar and how Jesus opened his eyes. Significantly, the once blind man knows the identity, but not the whereabouts, of Jesus (cf. 5:13).

9:13–17, A Hearing Before the Pharisees. When the man is brought before the Pharisees, the reality of the restoration of his sight is assumed (v. 13); their questioning concerns the manner of the healing and its legitimacy. Probably Jesus' making clay is regarded by some of the Pharisees as work and hence a violation of the Sabbath (v. 14). Therefore some think the miracle is illegitimate; others, impressed by his signs, do not accept this negative judgment (v. 16). The response of the blind man that Jesus is a prophet (v. 17) is entirely appropriate, since he can perform signs. The fact that the healing took place on a Sabbath is no disqualification.

9:18–23, The Parents Questioned. The Jews, not to be distinguished from the Pharisees, to make sure of the healed blind man's identity and previous condition now question the man's parents (vv. 18–19). Their response is minimally truthful, but obviously evasive (vv. 20–21); they refer questions to their son.

The situation here envisioned, in which people fear disciplinary expulsion from the synagogue because of adherence to Jesus (vv. 22–23), is not unparalleled in this Gospel (12:42; 16:2; cf. Luke 6:22). Because such a situation scarcely existed in Jesus' time, efforts have been made to locate its genuine historical setting. If in the period following the Roman war (i.e., after A.D. 70) Judaism sought to retrench, excluding Christ-confessors (i.e., Christians), his parents' reaction reflects that setting. John then encourages those who believe in Jesus to confess, even at the risk of expulsion from the synagogue (12:42). Significantly, in the narrative, not Jesus, but his followers are threatened with such expulsion.

9:24–34, The Second Hearing. The once blind man is called in for a second, quasi-legal hearing before Jesus' accusers. It is characteristic of this man that he engages in no speculation, but speaks only of his own experience (v. 25). When his adversaries begin to ask questions already addressed (v. 26; cf. v. 15), he becomes acerbic (v. 27). His obviously sarcastic question and their response (vv. 28–29) establish a stark dichotomy between Jesus' disciples and Moses', again a

situation that did not arise in Jesus' day. The opponents' ignorance of Jesus' origin is typically ironic. They think it discredits Jesus; actually, they discredit themselves (v. 29). The man's rejoinder is initially biting and even humorous (v. 30). But when he utters a solemn statement in which he expresses his own (and the author's) assessment of what has transpired and who Jesus is (vv. 31–33), utter anger and rejection are then unleashed upon him (v. 34). Arrogance shines through the contemptuous question, and they cast him out of the synagogue (cf. vv. 22–23).

9:35–41, True Sight and Blindness. Now the man's knowledge of Jesus passes beyond his immediate experience of Jesus' power to an understanding of who Jesus is. He believes in Jesus the Son of Man (v. 35) and worships him (v. 38); he becomes a disciple of Jesus. Jesus' statement (v. 39) has both the man and his opponents in view. The sight and blindness of which Jesus speaks are not just physical conditions. Although Jesus has restored physical sight, he obviously does not intend to blind people physically. The Pharisees' question (v. 40) also indicates the symbolic character of blindness. By claiming a sight they do not possess, they confirm their sinful status (v. 41). Their claim to sight ("we see") is implicit in their presumption in judging Jesus.

10:1–42
Jesus, the Good Shepherd

This chapter centers around the shepherd discourse (10:1–18), and the theme of shepherd and sheep continues through v. 30. Thereafter, the hostility of the Jews, who first attempt to stone Jesus (v. 31) and then to arrest him (v. 38), intensifies. The beginning has no transition or setting of the scene, but the connection with the preceding episode is tenuous. Jesus abruptly introduces a new theme or a new set of images. The "thieves and robbers" (vv. 1, 8) may be the Pharisees of chap. 9, but the identification is not explicit.

10:1–6, The Shepherd and the Door. The "figure" (v. 6, Gk. *paroimia*) of the true shepherd contrasts him with the thief, robber, and stranger who enter the sheepfold illegitimately. The point of the passage seems clear enough, but if taken as an allegory, it is not obvious who is represented by the various figures or elements. Because Jesus later refers to himself as the good shepherd (v. 11), one identifies him also with the shepherd of v. 2. But that shepherd enters by the door, and Jesus says he is the door (v. 7). The imagery of 10:1–6 is related to the imagery of 10:7–18, but when the sections are combined, no clear picture emerges. Either the shepherd of v. 2 is not Jesus, but a disciple of Jesus who leads his followers (i.e., a church), or we are dealing with two figures of speech (shepherd, door), both of which symbolize Jesus, but which cannot easily be combined. In the former case there is a jarring effect because Jesus is the good shepherd in vv. 11, 14.

10:7–18, Jesus as Door and Shepherd. Probably, different images are used by Jesus to describe his role: he is both door and shepherd. As door, he is the way to salvation (v. 9). Thieves and robbers now appear again (vv. 8, 10; cf. v. 1). Their identity has long mystified interpreters. The preceding chapter (esp. 9:40) suggests they are Pharisees, but this is not stated, and Pharisees otherwise do not appear. But if the imagery refers to persons known to the followers of Jesus, particularly in the community for whom John writes, the Pharisees or Jewish leaders are prime candidates. The identities of the wolf and hireling (10:12) remain as mysterious as that of the thief. The hireling's selfish motivation (v. 13) contrasts him with Jesus, whose devotion to his "sheep" (followers; vv. 14–15) is matched only by his knowledge of the Father.

Jesus' purpose, giving life, is contrasted with that of the thief (v. 10); it is fulfilled only in the laying down of his own (vv. 11–18). The wolf symbolizes the death that overtakes Jesus and threatens his sheep. The thief or hireling evades it by abandoning the sheep, but Jesus is faithful. The passage is, in effect, a meditation on Jesus' death and resurrection. His death is something he wills, not something imposed upon him (v. 18). Jesus even attributes to himself the power of his own resurrection, although its source is finally God (v. 18b). The "other sheep" (v. 16) have a referent that would have been known to the original readers; probably they symbolize gentile believers. The one shepherd and the one flock emphasize the unity of the Christian community under its Lord (cf. 17:20, 23).

Perhaps it is a mistake to interpret this passage as an allegory. Although the specific referents of the imagery may be obscure, the basic message is not. The loyalty of Jesus to his followers is underscored by his willingness to sacrifice himself for them (cf. 15:12–13), which sets him apart from other would-be shepherds or messiahs; his true disciples recognize and appreciate who he is.

10:19–21, Reactions to Jesus. The Jews' reaction to Jesus is still not uniformly hostile. Although some echo the sentiments of his opponents, others draw the proper conclusions (v. 21).

10:22–30, At the Feast of Dedication. The Feast of Dedication (Hanukkah) falls in December (vv. 22–23). Solomon's portico faced east, toward Gethsemane. Despite the division of opinion (vv. 19–21), the Jews will now appear in sharp opposition to Jesus. In effect, Jesus' own brusque response (vv. 25–30) seems to put them there, for their demand (v. 24) is not hostile. His response takes up the earlier pastoral imagery and unequivocally sets the Jews apart from his followers ("sheep"). Thus the Jews are cast in the role of

unbelievers, aliens to the flock (vv. 26–27), which is secure in the unity of Jesus and his Father (vv. 28–30).

10:31–39, Hostility to Jesus. The Jews' reaction (cf. 5:18), Jesus' response (10:32), and the Jews' rejoinder (v. 33) are now entirely predictable. From the standpoint of Jesus and his disciples (the Johannine church), his words and deeds are given him as a commission by God. He is one with the Father. From the side of the Jews, his claim is the supreme blasphemy, the arrogation of divine prerogatives to himself (v. 33). Jesus' response takes a new turn in that he now argues on the basis of Scripture, a common court of appeal (vv. 34–38), quoting Ps. 82:6 as "your law" and taking it to be addressed to the people of Israel (10:35). If the people may be called gods, it cannot be blasphemy for the one whom the Father has consecrated and sent into the world to be called "God's Son." Jesus then appeals to his works (vv. 37–38; cf. v. 25) as witnesses to him (cf. 5:36) and reasserts his unity with the Father (cf. 10:30). Again, the reaction of the Jews is predictable (v. 39).

10:40–42, Jesus' Withdrawal. This is the first of two withdrawals from public view that precede Jesus' Passion (cf. 11:54). The location of John's activity in Transjordan remains uncertain (cf. 1:28). The truth of John's witness is attested for the last time, while Jesus' own superiority is made clear (10:41). Even at this late point, people believe in Jesus (v. 42). As residents of the Transjordan they were not Judeans, perhaps not Jews.

11:1–44
The Raising of Lazarus

Chap. 11 contains two distinct, but related, incidents: the raising of Lazarus and the official Sanhedrin decision to put Jesus to death. The latter (vv. 47–53) derives from the former (vv. 45–46); because Jesus gives life, his opponents seek to deprive him of his own.

The first episode (11:1–44) is the climactic event of the public ministry of Jesus. Other Gospels narrate episodes in which Jesus restores a person to life (cf. Mark 5:35–43; Luke 7:11–17), but this story has no parallel. (A "secret" Gospel of Mark, discovered in this century, tells a similar story in much briefer form, without naming Lazarus. It is possibly a more primitive form of John's account.)

11:1–16, The Decision to Go to Lazarus. The participants and place are identified in a curious way (vv. 1–2). Bethany is said to be the village of Mary and Martha, who have not been mentioned previously (cf. Luke 10:38). Mary is identified by an incident that has not yet occurred (12:1–8; but cf. Luke 7:37–38). The sisters' summoning Jesus (11:3) sets in motion a series of questions and Jesus' explanation (vv. 3–16), culminating in a journey to Bethany. Jesus makes clear the purpose of Lazarus' illness and death (vv. 4, 14–15; cf. 9:3), but he does not immediately go to Lazarus (11:6), and his delay seemingly leads to Lazarus' death (cf. vv. 21, 32). Yet Jesus is resolved to go to Judea (v. 7), despite the hostility encountered there (vv. 8, 16; cf. 10:31, 39). In response to his disciples' dismay (11:8), Jesus utters enigmatic sayings (vv. 9–10) that seem to imply that he must now act promptly (cf. 9:4–5), and he decides to go to Lazarus (11:11). That the disciples should misunderstand and require further explanation (vv. 12–15) is no surprise to readers of this Gospel. Thomas's dogged commitment and courage (v. 16) finally prove empty (16:32). During Jesus' ministry his disciples' belief is provisional and incomplete.

11:17–37, Conversations with the Sisters. As Jesus approaches Bethany (just to the east of Jerusalem), first Martha (vv. 20–27), then Mary (vv. 28–37), meets him. Jesus' discovery that Lazarus has been dead four days (v. 17) anticipates his actual arrival at the tomb (v. 38). Jesus waited two days before starting (v. 6), and the journey apparently took a couple of days. The Jews (v. 19) in this episode form a kind of choral background and, although they lack understanding, are not initially hostile to Jesus. The Greek *Ioudaioi,* "Jews," can be translated "Judeans," which seems appropriate here.

Martha's statement on meeting Jesus (vv. 21–22) elicits a rejoinder (v. 23) that she misunderstands (v. 24). Jesus' word (vv. 25–26) represents a radical correction of Martha's expectation, which conforms to Jewish and much early Christian belief. Jesus, on the other hand, equates the resurrection with the life that he offers as a present reality. This is the characteristic Johannine teaching. Martha's response (v. 27) is positive, but does not indicate she understands the change in eschatology Jesus has proposed.

The next scene (vv. 28–37) starts out as a doublet of the preceding, except that Mary is accompanied by the Jews (v. 31). Mary repeats Martha's opening statement (v. 32; cf. v. 21), but here the parallel breaks off. Jesus appears deeply affected by his love for Lazarus (vv. 33–36). The scene ends as the Jews, like Martha and Mary, lament what might have been (v. 37). That they affirm Jesus' restoration of sight to the blind man and his life-giving power implies they are not enemies.

11:38–44, Lazarus Raised. When Jesus arrives at the tomb (v. 38), his conversation with Martha (vv. 39–40) confirms that Lazarus is dead and points forward to the life-restoring deed. Jesus' statement about her believing (v. 40) picks up the thread of their previous conversation (vv. 25–27), although he has not actually made the statement he attributes to himself. The raising of Lazarus will be the revelation of God's presence in Jesus and thus of his glory (cf. v. 4). The theme of the revelation of God can be stated in terms of Jesus' or God's glory (1:14). Jesus' glory or glorification is inti-

mately associated with his death, the supreme moment of revelation (7:39; 12:23; 17:1–5). That Jesus' praying (11:41–42) is not of necessity, but for others is a distinctively Johannine motif (cf. 12:30; cf. Mark 14:32–39). When Lazarus at length comes out of the tomb at Jesus' command (v. 43), the graveclothes underscore the fact that he had died and Jesus' command to the bystanders (v. 44) that he has been made alive. Jesus' restoration of Lazarus to life is the ultimate revelation of his mission and purpose during the public ministry (cf. 5:28–29): he is the resurrection and the life.

11:45–54
The Condemnation of Jesus

Once again there is a division among the Jews (cf. 7:12–13, 43; 10:19); those who disbelieve act as informers against Jesus (11:46). The gathering of the council (Sanhedrin) against Jesus (vv. 47–53; cf. Mark 14:1–2) occurs only at this stage in John, whereas Matthew (26:59–68) and Mark (14:55–65) place it after his arrest, where it consists of a full-scale trial of Jesus. John's presentation of the dynamics of the situation may not be misleading in that Jesus was perceived by the Temple authorities as a threat to stability and therefore to their own status and privilege with the Romans (11:48). The high priest Caiaphas's (cf. Matt. 26:3) practical, self-interested advice (11:49–50) is at the same time a prophetic utterance of which he himself has no notion, foretelling the saving work of Jesus' universal mission (vv. 51–52; cf. 10:16; 17:20). The council heeds Caiaphas's advice (v. 53) and plots Jesus' death.

Jesus' withdrawal (v. 54; cf. 10:40–42) was probably for the purpose of awaiting the arrival of his hour (12:23).

11:55–12:50
Jesus' Final Jerusalem Visit and the End of His Public Ministry

11:55–57, The Expectations. The approach of the third Passover of the Gospel of John (2:13; 6:4) sets the stage for Jesus' death, as the heightened expectancy and perplexity of the Passover pilgrims (11:56) and the hostility of Jewish officialdom (v. 57) are vividly portrayed. Only in John's Gospel are the crowds put on notice to turn Jesus in (cf. Mark 14:1–2 and parallels). From this point onward, however, there are remarkable similarities and parallels to the synoptic accounts.

12:1–8, The Anointing of Jesus. Both Matthew (26:6–13) and Mark (14:3–9) tell of a woman's anointing Jesus' head in the house of Simon the leper in Bethany within two days of Passover and after Jesus has already once entered Jerusalem. Luke (7:36–50) recounts a woman's anointing of Jesus' feet earlier in the ministry; Jesus pronounces her sins forgiven. John has the anointing occur as Jesus passes through Bethany on the way to Jerusalem at the home of Martha, Mary, and Lazarus (cf. 11:1–44). That Martha serves corresponds with Luke's characterization of her in 10:40. The words used to describe the ointment as well as its value (three hundred denarii) are virtually the same in John as in Matthew and Mark, as is Jesus' word about the poor (John 12:8). Strangely, however, John's statement about the purpose of the anointing is less clear than in the other Gospels, and there is no beautiful rounding off of the story in which Jesus says the deed will commemorate the woman (Mark 14:9). In every case (except Luke), the story portrays Jesus as being anointed for burial (John 12:7) and clearly prefigures his death.

12:9–11, The Plot Against Lazarus. The gathering of Jews around Jesus and Lazarus in Bethany gives the authorities cause to plot against Lazarus as well as Jesus. This brief scene underscores the role played by the raising of Lazarus in the authorities' decision to put Jesus to death. Possibly Lazarus here represents early Christian disciples who also came under threat because they attracted people to Jesus (16:2).

12:12–19, The Entry into Jerusalem. Like the other Gospels, John envisions a crowd coming into the city with Jesus (cf. v. 17), but there is also a crowd going out to meet him (v. 13). John's account is similar to the Synoptics', particularly in the crowd's greeting (Ps. 118:25–26; cf. Matt. 21:5 on the use of Zech. 9:9). Distinctively Johannine are the disciples' not understanding until after Jesus' glorification (12:16; cf. 2:17, 22), the witnessing of the crowd who had seen Lazarus raised from the dead (12:17), and the crowd's coming out to meet Jesus because of that spectacular sign (v. 18). The despair of the Pharisees (v. 19; cf. Luke 19:39) sums it up. In John's Gospel, Jesus will not leave the city again (cf. Mark 11:11). The Temple cleansing, which comes next in the Synoptics, occurred much earlier in John (2:13–22). The remainder of the chapter is distinctly Johannine, containing only a few echoes of synoptic sayings or events.

12:20–26, The Arrival of the Hour. The Greeks who approach Jesus through Philip are possibly Greek-speaking Jews. But their appearance signals the approach of Jesus' hour of glorification, i.e., his death (v. 23), and suggests the universal Christian mission that began only then. Thus this scene is, in an important sense, pivotal. The sayings of Jesus that follow (vv. 24–26) are traditional; they are found in somewhat different form in other NT writings (1 Cor. 15:36; Mark 8:34–35).

12:27–36a, The End of the Public Ministry. Jesus momentarily contemplates God's sparing him his coming death (v. 27), evoking the entire Gethsemane

scene of the synoptic Gospels (Mark 14:32–42 and parallels), otherwise not mentioned in John (but cf. Heb. 5:7). But Jesus suppresses any uncertainty: God's name will be glorified in his death (v. 28). Although Jesus says the voice from heaven came for the crowd's benefit (v. 30), they do not understand it (v. 29). Jesus continues speaking nevertheless (vv. 31–32), and we learn (v. 33) that he has alluded to his imminent death. Jesus' announcement of his death expresses in Johannine terms its function as saving event. It is at once judgment (v. 31) and the possibility of salvation (v. 32) for all.

The crowd apparently calls Jesus "Son of Man" (v. 34), although he has not used that title in the immediately preceding statement to which they refer (v. 32; but cf. v. 23). Their next question, "Who is this Son of Man?" can scarcely concern his identity, since they have just used the term where Jesus used "I." (The narrator knows that "Son of Man" on Jesus' lips is a form of self-reference.) The question may be about his role. They cannot credit the statement about his being lifted up (which they seem to know means crucifixion!), because the law says the Christ will abide forever. The force of their statement and questions implies that Jesus' unusual fate is tied to his use of this perplexing title, and they understand neither. Jesus cuts off further discussion with an urgent challenge to the crowd (vv. 35–36), his enigmatic statements evoking what he has previously said in 9:4 and 11:9–10. Probably Jesus refers here to the urgency of any confrontation with him, whether during his historic ministry or afterward as the gospel (good news) about him is proclaimed. One must not delay decision.

12:36b–43, Explanations of Jesus' Rejection. Jesus now withdraws. What follows is an explanation and summation of his work. Disbelief has characterized the Jewish reaction to Jesus (v. 37), and two quotations, from Isaiah 53:1 (v. 38) and 6:10 (v. 40), explain it. Both appear in other NT writings with a similar purpose (cf. Rom. 10:16; Matt. 13:14–15). John lays another explanation alongside this one, without any apparent awareness of tension. The believing authorities among the Jews who refuse to confess Jesus (v. 42) have their priorities inverted (v. 43). Their fear of expulsion from the synagogue betrays their too high regard for human opinion.

John believed Isaiah had seen Jesus' glory; v. 41 alludes to Isa. 6:1–3 (where John understands "Lord" to refer to Jesus), and the same narrative episode of Isaiah contains John's second quotation (12:40; Isa. 6:10). But Isaiah was not the only OT worthy to have seen Jesus Christ; the same is said of Abraham (John 8:56, 58).

12:44–50, Jesus' Summation. Jesus' public ministry ends with his final proclamation, which sums up the Johannine understanding of the Christian message. The repeated emphasis upon Jesus' complete submission and transparency to God himself is characteristic (vv. 44, 49–50), as is the claim that to believe in Jesus is to believe in God (v. 44). Jesus is light in darkness (v. 46) and eternal life to all who believe in him. He judges no one (v. 48; cf. 3:17; 8:15), yet his coming effects judgment for those who do not believe in him and therefore refuse God. What Jesus says here is not directed to his contemporaries so much as to the church and to the mission field that the Gospel has in view.

13:1–21:25
Jesus' Manifestation of God's Glory to His Disciples

With chap. 13, the second major part of the Gospel begins as Jesus is at first alone with his disciples (chaps. 13–17). When he again emerges into public view he is arrested, tried, and crucified (chaps. 18–19). But at the end, the risen Jesus is once again alone with his disciples (chaps. 20–21). Through most of this final half of the Gospel of John he directs his attention to them.

13:1–38
The Last Supper

John's account of the Last Supper (cf. Mark 14:17–25 and parallels) has no story of the preparation for the Passover meal (Mark 14:12–16 and parallels), for the last meal in the Johannine version is not the Feast of Unleavened Bread, but a supper given on the preceding evening (13:1).

13:1–11, Washing the Disciples' Feet. The beginning of the meal is integrally related to Jesus' washing of the disciples' feet, an act of humble service that reverses ordinary practice and expectations. The reversal is significant, however, for Jesus' act has a symbolic meaning, portending his death. It is reported in no other Gospel and, because John omits Jesus' institution of the Lord's Supper, appears to take its place (→ Lord's Supper, The).

The introduction (vv. 1–4) moves from a statement about Jesus' full knowledge of his origin and destiny and his love for his disciples (vv. 1, 3) to a description of his preparation for a seemingly menial task (v. 4). The act itself is described with utmost economy. The confrontation with Peter (vv. 6–10) conveys its significance and meaning. In effect, Peter expresses a classical Johannine misunderstanding as he refuses to allow his master to cast himself in such a humble role (vv. 6, 8). Jesus' rejoinder reveals the basis for all misunderstandings in this Gospel and points to their resolution (v. 7). The "afterward" to which he refers is not after dinner, but after his glorification. Like others, the disciples cannot, during Jesus' earthly ministry, understand him. When Peter is obdurate, Jesus' threatening re-

sponse (v. 8) seems to bring him to the point of genuine understanding (v. 9), but his reaction, typically excessive, shows he still fails to comprehend. Jesus' washing of his disciples' feet means more than Peter can know (→ Peter). If he does not accept that service, he cannot belong to Jesus (v. 8).

In view of the allusions to Jesus' approaching death at the outset of this account (vv. 1–3), it now becomes clear that the washing of the disciples' feet signifies Jesus' death on their behalf (cf. 10:11, 15; 18:12–14). This interpretation is confirmed by 13:10, particularly if the phrase "except for the feet" is omitted, as in some very ancient manuscripts. When this shorter reading is followed, the bathing of which Jesus speaks (cf. NRSV) is the washing of their feet (i.e., his saving death), and no further washing, such as Peter has proposed, is necessary. Otherwise, the foot washing becomes a matter secondary to the basic purification of bathing, which is contradictory to vv. 7–8. The scene concludes with a by now familiar explanation of Jesus' foreknowledge of his betrayal (v. 11). Probably John deliberately replaced the Lord's Supper with his distinctive portrayal of Jesus' washing the disciples' feet, for the words of institution interpret Jesus' death, just as the foot washing does.

13:12–20, Another Interpretation of the Washing. After the foot washing, Jesus gives yet another interpretation of it (vv. 12–17). The reversal of roles Jesus has just demonstrated should be reflected in how the disciples treat each other. The two interpretations are intimately related in John's thought: Jesus' death is an expression of his limitless, self-giving love, and he calls upon his disciples to share that same love among themselves (15:12–13; 13:34–35). Finally, Jesus once more takes account of Judas (v. 18), explains why he does so (v. 19), and makes a general statement about the relation of the apostle (one sent), God, and himself (v. 20) that is based on a tradition known also to Matthew (10:40) and Luke (10:16).

13:21–30, Identifying the Betrayer. In John, this scene is longer and more elaborate than in any of the Synoptics. In Mark (14:17–21) and Luke (22:21–23), Judas is not explicitly named: in Matthew (26:24–25) he more or less gives himself away; but in John Judas is unmistakably identified, at least to the Beloved Disciple and to readers. In all except Luke, Jesus' opening statement (v. 21b) is almost identical. In John, the disciples look at each other uncertainly (v. 22); as in Luke (22:23), they begin to question one another. Then begins the interplay between the Beloved Disciple, Peter, Jesus, and Judas, ending with Jesus' identifying Judas by handing him the morsel (v. 26)—whereupon Satan enters him (v. 27)—and, in effect, sending him into the night (vv. 27, 30). John confirms, as Judas receives the morsel and departs (v. 30), that Jesus knew from the beginning that he would betray him (cf. 6:70–71). This scene marks the first appearance of the Beloved Disciple (→ Beloved Disciple) in the Gospel (19:26–27; 20:2; 21:7, 20). He appears only in John and his identity is never revealed, although tradition since the end of the second century has identified him with John the son of Zebedee. His position nearest Jesus indicates the favor in which he was held and presumably his central role in the Johannine circle. Only the Beloved Disciple seems to be told that Judas was to betray Jesus (vv. 28–29; cf. 12:6). In Mark, none of the disciples would have learned the identity of the betrayer, as Luke's description of their quandary (22:23) clearly indicates.

13:31–35, The New Commandment. Following the prediction of his betrayal, Jesus speaks of his glorification, i.e., his death (vv. 31–33). Through his death Jesus attains the resurrection, and God's glory can finally be seen in light of both. Everything is now said from the standpoint of the cross and resurrection; the glorified Christ speaks. The meaning of the enigmatic saying of v. 33 is from that vantage point now clear: Jesus is going to his death (cf. 7:33). This saying prepares the way for others in which Jesus will reveal how after "a little longer" the disciples will see him again (14:19–20; 16:16–24).

At the point of his departure, Jesus gives his disciples a new commandment (13:34). This love commandment finds close parallels elsewhere in the NT (1 Thess. 4:9; cf. Rom. 13:9; Gal. 5:14; Mark 12:31 and parallels), and with good reason it has been taken to be an apt summary of Jesus' teaching. But in contrast to the Synoptics and Paul, who quote the command to love the neighbor from Lev. 19:18, the Johannine Jesus commands his disciples to love one another, i.e., other members of the inner circle, the church. This limitation agrees with John's emphasis on the unity of the church (17:21, 23) and with his dualism. One would expect love to be directed to the circle of true disciples and not to the world (→ Love).

13:36–38, Peter's Denial Predicted. All the Gospels relate Peter's denial of Jesus (18:15–18, 25–27) and Jesus' prediction of it. In the Synoptics, the prediction occurs just prior to his agony in Gethsemane and his arrest. In John, a long discussion and discourse (chaps. 14–17) intervene, but the next distinct event thereafter is Jesus' arrest (there being no Gethsemane story in John).

14:1–17:26
The Farewell Discourses and Prayer

Chaps. 14–16 are traditionally called the farewell discourses of Jesus; chap. 17 the high-priestly prayer. Chap. 14 seems to continue the table conversation of chap. 13, however, and there is no change of setting at chap. 17. There are, nevertheless, some lines of de-

marcation. Plainly, Jesus begins to pray in chap. 17, and the distinctiveness of chaps. 14–17 is obvious in relation to the synoptic accounts. The events of chap. 13 have synoptic analogies and parallels through the prediction of Peter's denial (13:36–38), and these resume with the account of Jesus' arrest (18:1–11). The farewell discourses are without parallel in the other Gospels. Yet they function like the apocalyptic discourses of the Synoptics (Mark 13 and parallels) in that they tell the disciples what they may expect in the future. The synoptic apocalypses have to do with the events leading up to Christ's triumphal public appearance in glory, while John's discourses concern his postresurrection manifestations to his disciples (14:22).

14:1–11, Jesus' Assurance and the Disciples' Questions. Jesus reassures his disciples: to believe in God is to believe in him and vice versa (v. 1)—a major theme of the entire Gospel. Jesus' statement that he is going to the Father to prepare a place for his disciples continues his answer to Peter's questions (13:36–37). Peter has rightly taken Jesus to mean that he is going to his death, but his death is also the way to the Father. How Jesus' death provides access to himself and to God becomes a major theme of the farewell discourses. So at the outset Jesus assures his disciples they will be safe in his hands.

Despite Jesus' assurance (14:4), Thomas candidly expresses his ignorance (v. 5). Obviously, Thomas refers to the way to God; he knows of Jesus' death (11:16). Jesus answers with a ringing affirmation of his own role as the one access to the life-giving truth of God (14:6). His statement about his disciples' knowledge in v. 7 (the "you" is plural in Gk.) reveals a significant time distinction. At first he seems to imply that their failure has cut them off from God (v. 7a), but then he indicates the future state of their knowledge (v. 7b). During Jesus' ministry there are things the disciples cannot know, though they witness what Jesus says and does; but after he has departed they will truly understand how he has made God accessible to them. They will not only know him, but see him.

Philip's question (v. 8) allows Jesus to reiterate and expand upon what he has just said (cf. 12:44–50). Philip's not knowing represents the disciples' inevitable ignorance at this time. In declaring that to see him is to see the Father (14:9), Jesus signals an end to the situation described in 1:18, in which no one has seen the Father (cf. 6:46; 12:45).

14:12–14, Jesus' Promise. Jesus promises his disciples that they will be empowered as well as informed (v. 12) and their prayers in his name will be answered (vv. 13–14). The qualification "in my name" is important, for it suggests the kind of prayer that will be answered, namely, one that accords with Jesus' own nature and purpose. Repeatedly in this Gospel, Jesus promises to answer his disciples' prayers (v. 14; 15:7, 16; 16:23), but assurance of answered prayer is found elsewhere in the NT as well (Matt. 7:7–11; Mark 11:24; James 1:5).

14:15–24, The Coming Counselor. Jesus' promise of his presence with his disciples is a gift, not something the disciples achieve, but it can be forfeited. Jesus demands they demonstrate their love by keeping his commandments (v. 15), i.e., they are to love one another (13:34–35; 15:12). At the same time Jesus promises them help: a Counselor or Advocate (NRSV), the Spirit of truth, the Holy Spirit (v. 26; in 20:22, the risen Jesus bestows the Spirit). *Parakletos* means "one called to the side of," which in other contexts has legal connotations ("advocate"; cf. 1 John 2:1, where the term is used of Jesus). But this common juridical sense does not appear to be adequate to its meaning here. Therefore, the RSV translation "Counselor" remains preferable. Jesus himself defines *parakletos,* however, by indicating his function (see 14:15–26; 15:26; 16:7–11, 13–15). First, the Counselor underscores the distinction (dualism) between the disciples and the world (14:17). The Spirit's presence is then tantamount to the presence of Jesus, although the equation is not made explicitly (v. 18). The mysterious reference (v. 19; cf. 13:33) to Jesus' resurrection will not be lost on knowledgeable readers; Jesus points ahead to the disciples' future state and knowledge (14:20). The promise of his presence will be fulfilled for the person who keeps his commandments and therefore loves him (v. 21; cf. v. 15; → Holy Spirit, The; Paraclete).

Judas (v. 22) is not the betrayer, but presumably the Judas son of James mentioned by Luke as one of the Twelve (6:16; Acts 1:13). His question allows Jesus to clarify a discrepancy between what he has just promised and other early Christian expectations (cf. 1 Thess. 4:13–17; Mark 13 and parallels). The manifestation of which Jesus speaks is not an apocalyptic, public event, but a spiritual presence contingent upon the expression of love for Jesus through keeping his word (or commandment; cf. John 14:15). Conversely, there is a threatening word to any nominal follower who does not heed Jesus: he ignores God (v. 24).

14:25–31, Jesus' Promise Repeated. Jesus now seems on the verge of taking leave of his disciples (vv. 15, 27, 30–31), although the discourses continue. Commentators have conjectured that chaps. 15–17 were interpolated, breaking an originally smooth connection between 14:31 and 18:1. Jesus repeats his promise of the Spirit (cf. 14:16–17), elaborating on its functions (v. 26), which fulfill expectations raised in 2:22; 7:39; 12:16. "Everything" surely does not mean anything conceivable but those things pertinent to Jesus' work that are necessary for disciples to know. The Fourth Gospel may itself be the literary deposit of what the Spirit-Paraclete has taught the disciples about Jesus.

In departing, Jesus bestows upon his disciples a blessing (cf. 16:33; 20:19), invoking the characteristic

dualism to distinguish his peace from the world's, and again reassuring them (14:27). Jesus reiterates what he has said already (v. 28) and declares his own subordination to the Father. Once more he invokes the distinction between the time of his ministry, when he is speaking, and the time after his death when they may understand and believe (v. 29; cf. 13:19). Jesus then clearly signals the end of this conversation (v. 30). The ruler of this world (Satan) is embodied in the party sent out to arrest Jesus (18:3). They, of course, do not determine Jesus' fate (cf. 7:6; 10:17–18); he does only what God commands him (14:31). Because Jesus' own command to depart is ignored until 18:1, chaps. 15–17 are often regarded as a later addition to the text, but all manuscripts contain them.

15:1–17, The Allegory of the Vine. There now begins a long discourse of Jesus that continues uninterrupted until the disciples' question of 16:17. The fundamental point of the first part, the vine discourse, is the necessity and nature of the disciples' unity with Jesus.

15:1–8, The Vine and Branches. The unity is a given, but it does not exist apart from the disciples' own participation. Jesus is both the one who commands them to abide and bear fruit and the one who enables them to do so (vv. 5–7). Their bearing of fruit is proof that they are Jesus' disciples (v. 8). In 13:34–35 Jesus links discipleship with mutual love; he reiterates this connection here (15:9–10, 12–14). The abiding and bearing fruit of which Jesus speaks is the mutuality of love among the disciples. The awful consequence of not abiding in Jesus' love by expressing love for one's fellow disciple is made clear by the imagery of casting out (as distinguished from pruning) and burning (vv. 2, 6; → Vine).

The distinctive meaning of two Greek words is important. "Pruning" (Gk. *kathairein*) can also mean "cleansing"; thus fruit-bearing members of the Johannine community are cleansed so they may bear more fruit (v. 2; cf. 13:10–11). The word used of the Father's function in 15:1, *georgos* (Gk.), is the ordinary term for farmer; the NRSV's "vinegrower" appropriately narrows the application to the vineyard and does justice to the fact that the *georgos* would be the one responsible for the vine's existence in the first place.

15:9–17, Love as Bearing Fruit. The exposition of the vine image then makes its hortatory purpose clear (v. 12). The love of which Jesus speaks has its source in God, the Father, whose love for Jesus, the Son, finds further expression in Jesus' love for his disciples (v. 9). That love ultimately takes the form of Jesus' sacrifice of his own life (15:13; 10:11, 15). This sacrifice is the paradigm and example of the love the disciples are to manifest for one another (15:12). Thus the disciples become Jesus' friends as they obey his command (v. 14) and share his love among themselves. Inasmuch as the death of Jesus is understood as his self-giving act and as such becomes a model for the disciples' love, Jesus is himself understood in distinctly human terms. Precisely the consciousness of the humanity of Jesus, and his death as loss, gives the love command its moral force and exemplary power.

Friendship with Jesus (v. 14) is the condition of receiving his revelation of God (v. 15). That the initiative and priority lies with Jesus is clear enough (v. 16); Jesus has chosen and appointed his disciples with a purpose. Their bearing fruit (v. 16) is the fulfillment of his love commandment (v. 17). It assures them of their unity with him, and thus with God, and means that their prayers will be answered (v. 16).

15:18–16:4a, The World's Hatred. The solidarity of Jesus and his disciples is now stated in a negative vein; it distinguishes them from the world, which will bear them hate.

15:18–27, The Basis of Hatred. The world's hatred of the community of Jesus' followers is grounded in its prior hatred of him (v. 18); that hatred will be manifest in both the crucifixion of Jesus and the persecution of his disciples. The Gospel of John arose in the context of persecution (v. 20). The Johannine dualism, doubtless a reflection of that context, makes the sharpest contrast between Jesus and his disciples and the world (v. 19). In v. 20, Jesus refers to his saying of 13:16 (cf. Matt. 10:24; Luke 6:40) to explain the persecution of the disciples. Although the disciples may encounter some who will believe (15:20; cf. 17:20), the hostility of the world is emphasized, not its receptivity.

The world's hostility reflects its ignorance of Jesus' origin and commission (15:21), but the world did not become positively sinful until it rejected Jesus, God's emissary (vv. 22, 24; cf. 9:39–41). Before his coming, the world existed in darkness and death, so that he can be described as its light and life (1:4–5, 9; 8:12; 11:25; 12:46). He is sent by God to effect salvation, life, not judgment (3:17; 12:47). Nevertheless, the inevitable consequence of rejection of him is judgment, for that rejection is tantamount to ignorance and rejection of God (15:21, 23–24). Thus John insists that genuine belief in God has now become contingent upon belief in Jesus. In v. 24b Jesus does not represent his opponents as having seen God (cf. 1:18) except as they have had the possibility of seeing God in him (14:9) but have rejected it. This rejection, uncanny as it is, is nevertheless the fulfillment of Scripture (15:25; Ps. 35:19; cf. Mark 4:11–12, Acts 28:26–27; Rom. 11:7–10).

Over against the sharpness of the world's rejection will stand the heavenly witness of the Counselor *(parakletos)*, the Spirit of truth (15:27), which Jesus will send to his disciples (i.e., the church) from the Father after his departure from the disciples and his return to God (cf. 16:7). This spiritual witness will be complemented by that of the disciples, significantly described as having been with Jesus from the beginning (cf. 1 John 1:1; Acts 1:21–22). Those who have seen have testified (v. 1:14; 21:24).

16:1–4a, The Manifestations of Hatred. Jesus explains his purpose in speaking of the world's hostility (v. 1) and then describes specific threats the community of disciples must endure (v. 2), reiterating their theological basis (v. 3). The concluding statement (v. 4; cf. v. 1) expands upon the reason for Jesus' prophecies: to prepare the disciples for persecution.

There are other references to being put out of the synagogue (9:22; 12:42); here as elsewhere they seem to reflect the actual experiences, as well as the fears, of the Johannine community. Whether death threats against Christians had actually been carried out is uncertain. We read elsewhere in the NT of severe persecution (Gal. 1:13, 23; Acts 9:1–2; 1 Thess. 2:14–15), which at least in the case of Stephen (Acts 7:54–60) led to martyrdom. Doubtless Jesus' death was seen by his early followers as an intimation of what they might expect, and the rise of opposition doubtless enhanced this apprehension.

16:4b–33, Jesus' Departing Words. Jesus continues to direct his disciples' attention to the future, specifically, his departure and coming again to be with them. His departure is put in a new light as the necessary condition of his continued presence among them. That his presence will not thereby be diminished, but enhanced, is a major emphasis of the Gospel.

16:4b–15, The Final Promise of the Counselor. John's now familiar time distinction (between Jesus' earthly ministry and the postresurrection period) appears in v. 4b, where it affords a transition to Jesus' subsequent discourse. What Jesus says in v. 5 does not square with Peter's explicit question about his destination in 13:36. But Jesus seems simply to underscore the disciples' despondency to introduce the discussion that follows. The statements that have caused sorrow to fill their hearts (16:6) could be his predictions of persecution (15:18–16:4). But 16:7 suggests rather that Jesus refers also to his several previous allusions to his departure, for now he tells the disciples that because of the coming of the *parakletos* (NRSV: "Advocate"), it is to their advantage that he go away.

Only here (vv. 8–11) does Jesus speak of the *parakletos* in its relation to the world rather than to the disciples. Thus the *parakletos*, who was Counselor or Advocate for the disciples, becomes prosecuting attorney against the world. One can surmise that the Spirit will act directly to assure the disciples that God convicts and judges the world (NRSV: "will prove the world wrong"), although the world at first may not know it.

Among the disciples, the Spirit will extend the revelation Jesus has brought. This revelation is of, or about, Jesus (v. 14); but it will go beyond what Jesus was able to say before his death (vv. 12–13). Moreover, Jesus himself hints that many of the things he says will not be comprehended until after his departure (cf. 13:7). The additional revelation is from Jesus and is grounded in his ministry, but the Spirit unfolds what it means after his departure as it declares the things that are coming (v. 13), i.e., those things that have to do with the death, departure, and return of Jesus and the life of the church.

16:16–24, The Coming Joy. Jesus repeats a mysterious saying (v. 16; cf. 7:33; 13:33; 14:19), and some of his disciples puzzle over its meaning (vv. 17–18). Characteristically, he knows what puzzles them (v. 19) and proceeds to unravel his own saying (vv. 19–24). Still speaking enigmatically (v. 20), he employs an analogy from common human experience (v. 21), but then makes clear he means his own departure and return (vv. 22–23) to the postresurrection church (vv. 23–24; cf. 14:13–14). The theme of joy recurs in this discourse (vv. 20, 21, 22, 24); joy will characterize the disciples' life after they are united with the risen Jesus.

16:25–33, Jesus' Speech and the Disciples' Understanding. Jesus continues to speak of the postresurrection period as a time when he will speak plainly to the disciples and they will pray to the Father in his name, reiterating the themes of the reciprocity of love and of belief in his origin with God (vv. 27–28). "In figures" (vv. 25, 29) applies to how Jesus' words appear to the disciples before his glorification and the advent of the Spirit. To knowledgeable readers, Jesus already speaks plainly. The disciples seemingly understand Jesus' speech (vv. 29–30), thinking that his promise to speak plainly and not in figures (v. 25) is fulfilled. Their confession that he came from God picks up on Jesus' immediately preceding statement (v. 28) and is theologically correct. But their comprehension and implied self-satisfaction are abruptly challenged and shattered by Jesus (v. 31), who alludes to their imminent desertion of him at the moment of his trial and death (v. 32; cf. Mark 14:27; Zech. 13:7). Nevertheless, Jesus concludes his farewell discourses on an entirely positive note (v. 33), as he points ahead to the peace that his words will provide the disciples (cf. 20:21, 26), warns them of their parlous existence in the world (cf. 15:18–19; 17:14–16), and encourages them with his triumph over the world, in which they participate if they abide in him.

17:1–26, Jesus' Prayer. Jesus' Great High-Priestly Prayer has no parallel in the other Gospels, except that in the synoptic Gospels he prays in anguish in Gethsemane; here he prays in utter serenity—but, in both cases, just before his arrest. The prayer falls into three parts, in which Jesus declares what he has accomplished (vv. 1–5), intercedes for his disciples (vv. 6–19), and broadens that intercession to include the later church (vv. 20–26).

17:1–5, Jesus' Glory. Jesus again announces the hour has come and speaks of glorification. Several days have passed since he first did so (cf. 12:23), but theologically it is still the hour of Jesus' glorification (crucifixion); God glorifies Jesus by revealing himself in his death, and Jesus glorifies God by revealing God

on the cross (v. 1). Glorification in John means revelation; both are defined by Jesus' death. The power Jesus has over all humanity (v. 2, lit., "all flesh") is the power through his death to give life to all those people God has given and will give him. Such life, defined as knowledge, is a present possibility (v. 3). Knowing God and Jesus Christ are not stages of knowledge, but the same knowledge. Jesus glorifies God in revealing him to humanity, in his ministry (v. 4), and in his death and exaltation (v. 5). But Jesus' glory is not his own achievement, but a primeval possession (v. 24); Jesus manifests what he already has been given. In this opening statement, Jesus sums up his ministry, his revelatory work, in characteristically Johannine terms (→ Glory).

17:6–19, Jesus' Prayer for His Disciples. As Jesus now prays for the disciples, described as the Father's gift to him (v. 6), he strongly implies divine election. Yet the statement that true followers have kept God's word hints that their own volition is meaningful. Jesus now describes them in entirely positive terms (vv. 7–8), and this description stands in contrast to his description of these same disciples just previously (16:31–32). Jesus now views them too as they are after his resurrection, when their earlier limitations have been overcome.

The remainder of Jesus' prayer for the disciples (17:9–19) deals with the world and the disciples' role and place in it (→ World, The). That Jesus sharply distinguishes his disciples from the world (vv. 9, 14, 16) is a typical expression of Johannine dualism. Yet they must continue to live there (vv. 11, 15). Jesus, who had kept them safe as long as he was in the world (vv. 11, 12), as he now departs prays God to keep them "in thy name" (v. 11). Despite the world's hatred (v. 14), Jesus refuses to pray that they be taken out of the world (v. 15; the evil one is presumably Satan), but sends them into the world as the Father had sent him (v. 18). Thus the disciples too have a mission to the world (cf. 20:21), which is still intended for salvation (cf. 3:16).

Jesus prays that while they are in the world the disciples may be made holy (RSV: "sanctified") in the truth (v. 17). "Your word is truth" has an important, double meaning. Any Christian or Jew would quickly agree. But in Johannine terms, the Word is Jesus (1:1–18), who is also the truth (1:14, 17; 14:6), so a distinctly Johannine Christian confession is concealed in this statement. At the end of this petition, Jesus says that he makes himself holy that his disciples may be made holy (sanctified) in truth (v. 19; cf. v. 17). The holiness of the disciples, their consecration to God, is dependent upon Jesus' holiness, as their salvation depends upon their unity with Jesus and God (v. 11; → Holiness).

17:20–26, Jesus' Prayer for the Church. Finally, Jesus prays for future believers (v. 20; cf. 20:29), for their unity with himself, the Father, and each other. This unity will serve their mission to the world (vv. 18, 20–21). Belief that the Father has sent Jesus (v. 21) is Christian faith (v. 8). The transmission of the glory from God, to Jesus, to the church effects this unity (v. 22) and renders believers, the church, transparent to the revelation of God. Oneness, an expression of believers' love for one another (13:34), convinces the world of the truth of the Christian message (v. 23) as it reflects God's love for Christ and his church. That love motivates and justifies the church's mission to the world (cf. 13:35).

In asking that all his disciples may ultimately be within the realm of his heavenly, preexistent glory (17:24; cf. 14:2–3; 1:14), Jesus once more invokes the typical dualism in sharply distinguishing the world's ignorance from his own and his disciples' knowledge of God (v. 25). Of course, there is now no knowledge of God except through belief in Jesus. As he turns to the cross (v. 26), Jesus sums up his revelatory work past and future, appropriately describing its purpose and character in terms of the realization of the love of God through Christ among his disciples.

18:1–19:42
The Passion Narrative

From the account of Jesus' arrest (18:1–11) onward, the Fourth Gospel's narrative is closely parallel to the Synoptics. Already as Jesus approaches Jerusalem, John's account begins to resemble the others. Quite possibly, the earliest Christians put together narratives of Jesus' Passion, whether in written or oral form, that antedate all the Gospels and account for the similarities between John and the Synoptics as well as the differences.

18:1–11, Jesus' Arrest. Jesus ends his final discourses with a prayer (chap. 17) and apparently only at this point leaves the site of the Last Supper (18:1) with his disciples. The garden to which Jesus and the disciples retire is not named; it is apparently Gethsemane (Matt. 26:36; Mark 14:32) on the slope of the Mount of Olives (Luke 22:39), the scene of Jesus' arrest. John characteristically emphasizes the initiative and authority of Jesus (18:4, 6, 8; cf. 10:18), who is arrested virtually at his own bidding. Only in John is Judas said to be familiar with the customary meeting place (18:2). Perhaps he betrayed this knowledge to the authorities. Only here are the Pharisees involved in Jesus' arrest (v. 3); their involvement is typical of their hostile role in John. In the Synoptics, Judas identifies Jesus with a kiss, but in John Jesus identifies himself (vv. 4–5). Although armed resistance and the cutting off of the ear of the high priest's slave is mentioned in every Gospel, only in John (v. 10) are the swordsman (Peter) and the victim (Malchus) identified by name (cf. 18:26). Jesus' authoritative command to let his disciples go free (v. 8) is interpreted as the fulfillment of his earlier word (6:39; 10:28), a culminating Johannine touch underscoring Jesus' self-sacrifice for his disciples (cf. 10:11,

15). Finally, Jesus orders an end to violent resistance (18:11; cf. Matt. 26:52–53; Luke 22:51).

18:12–27, Jesus Before the High Priest and Peter's Denial. When Jesus is taken to the high priest's house, his prediction that Peter would deny him three times is fulfilled (vv. 15–18, 25–27). In this John agrees with the other Gospels, but his account is remarkable in that it reports no nocturnal trial before the Sanhedrin (Matt. 26:59–68; Mark 14:55–65; but cf. Luke 22:66–71, where this meeting occurs on the following morning). No witnesses appear and there is no verdict (vv. 19–24). After Jesus testifies that he has always spoken quite openly, is struck by one of the attendants, and protests, he is then taken from Annas's house to Caiaphas (v. 24). John does not reproduce the more elaborate synoptic trial scene, in which Jesus was condemned for blasphemy (a charge often suggested in the Fourth Gospel).

In John, both Annas and Caiaphas are called high priest. But in vv. 13–14 (cf. 11:49) and v. 24 Caiaphas is clearly identified as high priest, and so he was—his father-in-law, Annas, was deposed over a decade before Jesus' ministry began. In the narrative of vv. 15–23, however, Annas plays that role. That in 11:49 and 18:13 Caiaphas is described as high priest "in that year" is also odd, for it was not an annual office. Furthermore, after being told that Jesus was taken to Caiaphas (18:24), we hear nothing of what transpired there (cf. v. 28).

Peter's repeated denials of Jesus (vv. 15–18, 25–27) are related in terms similar to Mark's (14:53–54, 66–72), although there are differences of detail. For example, only John identifies one of Peter's interrogators as a kinsman of the man whose ear Peter had severed (v. 26). Also, the cock crows immediately after Peter's final denial (v. 27), but John fails to mention Peter's weeping (Mark 14:72 and parallels).

18:28–19:16, Jesus Before Pilate. John's narration of the trial is so dramatic that it has made a lasting impression upon Christian memory and tradition, not least with respect to Pilate, who at the end appears caught between Jesus and the Jews. In the shorter synoptic version, Jesus remains silent except to respond laconically to Pilate's question of whether he may be a king (Mark 15:2 and parallels). In the Johannine, Jesus initially talks more than Pilate (18:33–38), but much less in the latter half (19:1–16), where they appear before the Jews and Pilate upbraids Jesus for not answering (19:9–10; cf. Mark 15:3–5 and parallels; → Pilate, Pontius).

18:28–38, Jesus Arraigned. Jesus is brought to Pilate at his headquarters (praetorium), the exact location of which is disputed, early in the morning. In John's account, Jesus was condemned at about noon (19:14; cf. Mark 15:25, 33–34 and parallels) on a Friday, the Day of Preparation, just before Passover, so that the Jews refuse to enter the praetorium for fear of defilement (v. 28). According to the unanimous testimony of the Synoptics, however, the Friday of Jesus' crucifixion followed the Passover meal, eaten the preceding evening. (Jesus was crucified on a Friday; the Gospels differ only with respect to the Jewish calendar.) The Jews have already determined that Jesus is guilty, but do not answer directly Pilate's question about the charge (vv. 29–32). Obviously, they want Pilate to put Jesus to death because they have no authority to do so (v. 31; probably their statement to that effect reflects the actual historical situation).

Throughout this episode Pilate moves in and out of the praetorium to question Jesus, who is inside, and then confront the Jews, who refuse to enter. Now he reenters the praetorium to question Jesus (v. 33), asking the question he puts to him in each of the other Gospels as well. Jesus' counterquestioning of Pilate and the latter's rejoinder are unique to John (vv. 34–35), as is Jesus' remarkable statement about the origin of his kingdom or kingship, with its sharp distinction between that kingship and the world. A worldly kingship would necessitate the disciples' offering physical resistance to protect Jesus from the Jews. Although Jesus was finally condemned to death and executed by Romans, in John the Jews are his mortal enemies (cf. 19:16). This state of affairs doubtless reflects the hostility between Jesus' followers and the synagogue at the time the Gospel was written. Pilate's conclusion that Jesus is, after all, a king is met by Jesus' evasive answer (v. 37), similar to his response in the Synoptics (Mark 15:2), but Jesus expands upon his unique function as witness to the truth in lines that are distinctively Johannine. Pilate's question (v. 38) expresses his disinterest and cynicism, but it also mirrors his profound alienation from the truth.

18:39–40, Barabbas. Pilate, who would as soon be rid of the whole matter (as in Matt. 27:24, he literally washes his hands of Jesus), declares his finding that Jesus is innocent and asks the crowd whether they would have him set free (v. 38b). Barabbas (v. 40) until this point has not been mentioned in the narrative, and no such custom as Pilate mentions (v. 39) has been documented from sources other than the Gospels. Mark (15:6–14) gives this incident in much fuller form, but the question Pilate puts to the crowd (15:9) is quite similar in John (18:39). John offers the briefest explanation of who Barabbas was; the term he uses to describe him (Gk. *lestes*), appropriately translated "bandit" (NRSV), could also be applied to the kind of rebel Mark describes. The irony of the incident is obvious.

19:1–16, Jesus Condemned. At the point of the crowd's choosing Barabbas, the other Gospels have them immediately demand Jesus' crucifixion, whereupon Pilate releases Barabbas, quickly has Jesus

scourged, and delivers him to be crucified (cf. Mark 15:15). In John, the trial does not end at this point, although Jesus is scourged and mocked (19:1–3). Pilate, who had been outside the praetorium with the Jews (18:38), evidently went inside to have Jesus scourged and now comes out again (19:4).

The trial culminates as Pilate brings Jesus out before the Jews and for the second time declares him innocent (vv. 4–5). The Jews now call for his crucifixion, as the crowd does in the synoptic Barabbas scene, and Pilate for the third time proclaims Jesus' innocence (v. 6; cf. Luke 23:4, 14–16, 22). When the Jews once again make their case against Jesus (v. 7), Pilate's fears rise (v. 8). Apparently, he stands in awe of Jesus, as his question may imply (v. 9); his reaction follows from the Jews' assertion that Jesus has made himself Son of God. Jesus' silence in response to Pilate's question (v. 9) evokes a motif of the synoptic trial scene (Mark 15:4); at this stage the Johannine Jesus is scarcely prepared to explain his origins to the same Pilate who has asked cynically about truth (18:38). Pilate's assumptions about who has power and what power is stand in sharp contrast to Jesus' knowledge (19:10–11). Jesus knows the truth that Pilate cannot begin to understand. But even here John makes clear that Pilate is relatively innocent in comparison with Judas or, more probably, the Jews (v. 11).

Pilate's final effort to release Jesus puts his loyalty to Caesar in question (v. 12). John more than once suggests that Jesus' fate is intertwined with Jewish-Roman relations (cf. 11:48) and that Jewish leaders intend to sacrifice Jesus to Roman authority so they may continue to stand in its good graces. In Luke (23:2) Jesus' Jewish accusers represent him as politically subversive. Here the Jews suggest that Jesus is somehow a threat to Roman power, but at the same time they must know he is not. He is rather a threat to their own religious authority.

The ensuing scene (19:13–16) continues the byplay between Pilate and the Jews that will lead to Jesus' condemnation. The location of the pavement (v. 13) has been identified by some archaeologists, but the identification remains disputed (→ Gabbatha). Both the date and the hour (v. 14) differ from the Synoptics, in which Jesus is condemned and crucified on the morning of the first day of the feast (cf. Mark 15:25). Pilate's "Here is your King" evokes his earlier "Here is the man" (19:5). Jesus is king of the Jews; the implication is that Pilate will no longer take responsibility for him. The chief priests then finally disavow Jesus in proclaiming their loyalty to Caesar alone (v. 15). There is a fine irony here as the chief priests disavow not only Jesus, but any king other than the Roman emperor. If, as is likely, the Gospel was written after the disastrous end of the Roman war (A.D. 70), there is a double irony. The war that was fought in the name of the lordship of God alone ended with the unequivocal assertion of the lordship of Caesar. Thus the prophecy of the chief priests would be entirely accurate. The scene concludes with Jesus' apparently being handed over to the chief priests for crucifixion (v. 16). That the Romans actually carried out the execution is clear enough (v. 15; cf. vv. 19, 23), but that John should portray Jesus as being delivered to the Jews is entirely appropriate in this Gospel (cf. 18:36), for they have been Jesus' mortal enemies all along.

The question of the role of the Jews in the death of Jesus demands that two points now be made. First, Jesus was, in fact, executed by the Romans. Nevertheless, some priestly authorities, who served at the pleasure of the Romans, may have had an interest in Jesus' demise; that, in fact, is what the Gospel of John suggests (11:48; 19:15). Second, the extension of this guilt to Pharisees and Jews generally is unjustifiable. By "Pharisees" (and "Jews") John means not just the contemporaries of Jesus, much less all Jews. He has in view certain members of the leadership of the synagogue of his own day, with which he sees himself and his church in mortal conflict.

19:17–30, The Execution of Jesus. The crucifixion and death of Jesus is described in as few words in John as in the other Gospels. In general, the Gospels do not draw out or dramatize Jesus' death, nor do they dwell upon its horror. Crucifixion was a common form of capital punishment in the Roman world (→ Cross).

In John, Jesus carries his own cross, as was customary (but cf. Mark 15:21 and parallels), to the place of his execution, Golgotha (v. 17). Its site may now be marked by the Church of the Holy Sepulchre. According to all the Gospels, Jesus was crucified between two other condemned criminals (v. 18), and his cross bore a title that (again according to custom) named the charge on which he had been condemned (v. 19). Only in John do we read that the title was written in three languages (v. 20) and that the chief priests wanted it changed to indicate that Jesus only claimed to be king of the Jews (vv. 21–22). As they had put pressure on Pilate, they now get the back of Pilate's hand; this wretched criminal can be their king. John alone cites Ps. 22:18 on the dividing of Jesus' garments (vv. 23–24).

All the Gospels state that several women witnessed Jesus' crucifixion, although his disciples had fled at his arrest. The distinctive feature of John's account is the presence of the mother of Jesus and the Beloved Disciple at the cross. Jesus' words to his mother and to his disciple are clear enough in meaning (vv. 26–27); whether they are to be understood literally or symbolically is the question. Christian interpretation has often seen the church symbolized in Jesus' mother; the Beloved Disciple is the witness who authorizes this Gospel.

Jesus' death is narrated much more briefly than in the Synoptics. There is no mocking of Jesus on the

cross (Mark 15:29–32 and parallels); no cry of dereliction (Mark 15:34; cf. v. 37); no rending of the veil of the Temple at Jesus' death (Mark 15:38 and parallels); and no word from the centurion (Mark 15:39 and parallels). Jesus' thirsting (John 19:28) allows Scripture to be fulfilled (Ps. 69:21); as in the other Gospels he is given vinegar to drink (v. 29). In John he says simply, "It is finished" (v. 30), and expires; the Greek phrase could be translated, "He gave over the Spirit." We have been led to expect that the glorified Jesus would send the Spirit. Jesus' earthly life and his revelatory work are complete (cf. 17:4). The hour has fully come.

19:31–37, The Piercing of His Side. This incident, found in no other Gospel, is related to John's unique chronology in which Jesus **dies** before the beginning of Passover (v. 31). Breaking the legs of a crucified man was an act of mercy that hastened death by rendering the victim unable to maintain himself erect so that he could breathe. Thus because Jesus was found dead, his legs were not broken, but his side pierced (vv. 33–34). The piercing causes an efflux of water and blood, which is attested by an eyewitness. The Scriptures are fulfilled (vv. 36–37). The first quotation is from Exod. 12:46 or Num. 9:12, both of which refer to the Passover lamb. (A similar passage in Ps. 34:20 refers to the righteous man.) In John 1:29 and 36, Jesus is called the Lamb of God. The second quotation is from Zech. 12:10, which speaks of the mourning of Jerusalem for him whom they have pierced (cf. Rev. 1:7). If the context of that passage is in view, it is appropriate, for Jerusalem has just caused Jesus to be pierced.

The witness (v. 35) is likely the Beloved Disciple, who is said to have been present at the cross (v. 26) and in 21:24 also is extolled as a reliable witness. The blood and water came to have great symbolic value as signifying the Eucharist and baptism, whether or not that meaning was understood or intended originally, and commentators have pointed to a seemingly related passage in 1 John 5:6–8. The blood and water would thus symbolize the salvation wrought through the death of Jesus, particularly as it was represented in these sacraments.

19:38–42, The Burial. According to all Gospel accounts, Jesus was buried by Joseph of Arimathea, variously described in the Gospels as a prominent person and an adherent of Jesus. He is not otherwise mentioned. That Joseph went to Pilate secretly because of fear of the Jews is, typically, said only by John (v. 38). Also only in John, Nicodemus joins him, bringing a large mixture of spices for anointing Jesus' body (v. 39) for burial. The Synoptics do not recount such a preparation (v. 40), for at least according to Mark and Luke the women who discovered the tomb empty intended to anoint Jesus' body. John alone notes that Jesus was interred in a garden tomb near where he had been crucified (vv. 41–42), supporting the tradition of the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, which commemorates the site of the crucifixion as well as the tomb of Jesus.

20:1–31
Empty Tomb and Resurrection Appearances

20:1–10, The Empty Tomb. The common factor in all accounts is that Mary Magdalene goes to the tomb early on Sunday morning and finds it empty (→ Mary). In John, Mary alone makes the discovery; she conveys the news to Peter and the Beloved Disciple, who quickly go to the tomb and confirm it (vv. 3–10). The Beloved Disciple, as usual, outdoes Peter by arriving first at the tomb; he sees the discarded graveclothes (vv. 4–5), but allows Peter to enter first and see also (v. 6). Yet only the Beloved Disciple is said to believe (v. 8; cf. 13:21–30). That neither yet knew the Scripture predicting Jesus' resurrection (20:9; cf. 1 Cor. 15:4) underscores the unanticipated character of the discovery. The disciples return home (v. 10) as Mary apparently stands outside the tomb weeping (v. 11), creating the impression that they go past her without sharing the good news. The poor transition and lack of attestation in other Gospels suggests that the episode of Peter and the Beloved Disciple is a later insertion into a traditional text. But most ancient manuscripts of Luke contain a summary of this account or the nucleus from which it grew (Luke 24:12). Notably, Luke does not mention the Beloved Disciple, but only Peter, who leaves the tomb in a state of wonderment. Moreover, Luke 24:24 refers to such a visit to the tomb by disciples, who obviously did not attain faith. In light of this, John's reference to only the Beloved Disciple's belief (20:8) becomes more significant; it is somehow exceptional.

20:11–18, Mary at the Tomb. Mary, left weeping outside the tomb (v. 11), now looks inside and sees the angels mentioned in the other accounts. They ask her why she is weeping and receive an answer of unparalleled poignancy (v. 13). Then in a brief but artfully narrated scene (vv. 14–18), Mary sees and recognizes Jesus, having at first mistaken him for the gardener. This scene is paralleled only in Matt. 28:9–10, which briefly recounts how the two women, including Mary Magdalene, encounter the risen Jesus as they depart from the tomb. Both stories conclude with Jesus' instructions to deliver a message to "my brethren." In John, Jesus instructs Mary not to hold him because he has not yet ascended, although he is ascending (v. 17; cf. Matt. 28:9). Subsequent Johannine resurrection narratives are presumably to be understood as manifestations of the ascended Jesus.

20:19–29, Appearances to the Twelve and to Thomas. The resurrection scenes of chap. 20 culmi-

nate in a pair of appearances of the risen Lord to his disciples on successive Sunday evenings and find a parallel in Luke 24:36–43. In both the Lucan and the Johannine scenes, the risen Jesus' demonstration of his identity with the crucified is a dominant motif. Yet John omits Jesus' striking demonstration of his corporeal reality, namely, the eating of broiled fish. In John, the ascended, exalted Jesus appears to his disciples through closed doors (20:19, 26) and is scarcely a normal, physical presence.

The disciples must protect themselves from those Jews who have also been enemies of Jesus (v. 19). Jesus appears suddenly and mysteriously. He establishes his identity with the disciples, who are obviously convinced (v. 20), sends them to continue his mission to the world (v. 21; cf. 17:18), and equips them with his Spirit (v. 22), the fulfillment of earlier promises (cf. 14:16; 16:7, 13–14). This scene marks the beginning of the church as a body inspired by the Spirit of Jesus and dedicated to the spreading of the gospel (cf. Acts 2).

Thomas's skeptical reaction to the other disciples' report of their encounter with Jesus (vv. 24–25) sets the stage for Jesus' next appearance (v. 26) and secures his own reputation as the proverbial doubting Thomas. When Jesus reappears and offers him the proof he has been seeking (v. 27), Thomas is not said actually to touch Jesus, although he confesses him as Lord and God (v. 28). Jesus' invitation to Thomas to touch him probably means that he has now ascended (cf. v. 17; the ascended Jesus sends the Spirit in Acts). Jesus' final word to Thomas puts even seeing Jesus, much less touching him, in proper perspective (v. 29), as Jesus in effect pronounces a blessing upon the church of the future for which he has already prayed (17:20).

20:30–31, The Purpose of the Gospel. The Evangelist's summation sounds like the conclusion of the book, although no manuscript lacking chap. 21 survives. Appropriately the purpose of the narrative is now stated. The theological themes of the Gospel are brought to a culmination in chap. 20, as is the literary development. Chap. 21 deals with other issues.

21:1–25
The Epilogue: Jesus' Appearance to Peter and Others by the Sea

As an epilogue, chap. 21 ties up neatly questions having to do with people important to the Johannine community, particularly Peter and the Beloved Disciple. Whether chap. 21 was written by the same author who composed chaps. 1–20 is a debated question. The style and vocabulary, the interest in Peter, and the final appearance of the Beloved Disciple mark it as Johannine, i.e., as a product of the same circles that produced chaps. 1–20. The chapter has two parts: vv. 1–14, an account of an appearance of the risen Jesus to seven disciples by the Sea of Tiberias (or Galilee), and vv. 15–25, a long conversation between Jesus and Peter that continues in the same setting and concludes with an appearance of the Beloved Disciple.

21:1–14, The Appearance by the Sea. This resurrection story finds a parallel in Luke 5:1–11, a call story, in which the disciples are also fishing on the Sea of Galilee (Gennesaret), Simon Peter figures prominently, and Jesus guides the disciples to make a large catch of fish. That the Lucan and Johannine stories are variants of the same tradition remains a possibility, especially in view of their apparent similarity of purpose as well as content: Jesus commissions, or recommissions, his disciples. Luke may have placed an original resurrection narrative at the outset of Jesus' ministry. The other Gospel call stories are entirely different. Interestingly, only here in John do the disciples of Jesus appear as fishermen, their vocation in the other Gospels.

This scene is said to be the third appearance of the risen Jesus to his disciples (21:14). Apparently, the appearance to Mary Magdalene (20:14–18) is excluded in the count, presumably because she is not considered a disciple. But the behavior of the disciples, before and at the appearance of Jesus, does not accord with the presumption that they know he has risen from the dead. Peter and company are returning to their previous occupation (21:3); they are astounded to see Jesus (v. 7). The story has all the marks of an initial appearance to these disciples.

The meal scene in vv. 9–13 has eucharistic overtones, although there is no wine and no eucharistic celebration we know of involved fish. At least one of the Lucan resurrection appearances takes place at a meal (24:30; cf. 41–43). The meaning of the number of fish (153) remains a mystery. That the disciples do not dare question Jesus, but know their host is the Lord (v. 12) allows a dimension of mystery to hang over the whole narrative to the end.

21:15–25, Peter and the Beloved Disciple. The interchange between Jesus and Peter continues the same scene; the others fade into the background. Obviously, Jesus' questioning of Peter (vv. 15–17) allows Peter to reestablish himself. The exact meaning of Jesus' initial question (v. 15) is uncertain, because we cannot know precisely the antecedent of "these." We are not even certain whether "these" are the objects of Peter's love or others who also love Jesus. Nevertheless, Jesus clearly calls on Peter to validate his affirmations of love by feeding or tending Jesus' sheep or lambs, i.e., his flock. Peter is thus cast in the role of church leader, or pastor (i.e., one who tends a flock). Jesus' words about Peter's fate (vv. 18–19) provide the earliest hint we have of the martyrdom of Peter (but cf. 2 Pet. 1:14), in later tradition associated with Rome.

The final episode of the Gospel concerns the Beloved Disciple (vv. 20–24), who appears (v. 20), but does not speak. Peter's question (v. 21) probably reflects tension in the early church between circles loyal to him (cf. 1 Cor. 1:12) and those who looked to the Beloved Disciple. Jesus' response rejects that rivalry as no proper concern of Peter's (v. 22). The narrator then notes a common misinterpretation of Jesus' statement about the Beloved Disciple and corrects it by reference to what Jesus actually said (v. 23). Probably the death of the Beloved Disciple before Jesus' return had caused some consternation. This disciple is identified not only as the true witness (cf. 19:35), but also as the author (or at least the source) of this Gospel. It has frequently been deduced, in light of church tradition, that the Beloved Disciple was John the son of Zebedee (cf. 21:2). There are, however, problems with this identification (see Introduction). At the very least, however, this passage evinces a strong interest in the eyewitness testimony on which the Gospel is based. In the final statement (v. 25) we see a reflection of the earlier colophon (20:30–31).

Bibliography

Ashton, J. *Understanding the Fourth Gospel.* Oxford: Clarendon, 1991.

Barrett, C. K. *The Gospel According to St. John: An Introduction with Commentary and Notes on the Greek Text.* 2d ed. London: S.P.C.K., 1978.

Brown, R. E. *The Gospel According to John.* Anchor Bible 29, 29A. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1966, 1970.

Bultmann, R. *The Gospel of John: A Commentary.* Translated by G. R. Beasley-Murray et al. Philadelphia: Westminster, 1971.

Culpepper, R. A. *Anatomy of the Fourth Gospel: A Study in Literary Design.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1983.

Culpepper, R. A., and C. C. Black, eds. *Exploring the Gospel of John.* Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1996.

Kysar, R. *John, the Maverick Gospel.* Rev. ed. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1993.

Martyn, J. L. *History and Theology in the Fourth Gospel.* 2d rev. ed. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1979.

O'Day, Gail R. "The Gospel of John." *New Interpreter's Bible,* 9. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1995.

Smith, D. Moody. *John Among the Gospels: The Relationship to Twentieth-Century Research.* Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1992.

———. *The Theology of the Gospel of John.* New Testament Theology. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1995.

Acts

CARL R. HOLLADAY

INTRODUCTION

Authorship

In spite of the ancient, well-established tradition that the Third Gospel and the Acts of the Apostles were written by Luke the physician, Paul's traveling companion and close associate (Philem. 24; Col. 4:14; 2 Tim. 4:11), both works are anonymous. Neither the name "Luke" nor an unnamed "physician-disciple" is mentioned in either writing.

Both works are linked together by their common addressee, Theophilus (Luke 1:1–4; Acts 1:1–2). The similarity of their language and style, as well as their unified literary and theological purposes, leave little doubt that they derive from the same author, possibly Luke.

Date

Acts must have been written after the appointment of Porcius Festus as procurator of Judea around A.D. 59–60 (24:27; → Festus, Porcius) and before the time of Irenaeus (d. ca. A.D. 200), the first author to make certain use of Acts. It is commonly dated in the last quarter of the first century, after the destruction of Jerusalem in A.D. 70 (which the Gospel appears to presuppose; cf. Luke 21:20–24).

Literary Features

Genre. Since Acts is the second part of a two-volume work, it is important to identify the genre of the larger work Luke-Acts. The best internal clue is provided in Luke's own preface (Luke 1:1), which suggests that the work be thought of as a "narrative (Gk. *diegesis*)." The story that unfolds exhibits biographical, historical, theological, sermonic, and apologetic elements, yet no one of these adequately captures the full range of the work. Rather, Luke-Acts should be understood as a narrative with different dimensions and multiple purposes.

Both its form and content suggest that the work was intended to be read as the continuation of the OT biblical story. The narrative throughout confirms what the preface states: the story is told to strengthen faith (Luke 1:4). Consequently, it should be read as an edifying narrative intended to inform and reinforce faith where it already exists and probably to create and instill faith where it does not.

Structure. In one sense, Acts seems organized around geographical concentric circles (1:8), in which the progress of "the Word" is traced from Jerusalem (chaps. 1–7), throughout Judea and Samaria (chaps. 8–12), and finally to "the ends of the earth," probably Rome (chaps. 13–28).

In another sense, the work comprises two parts: chaps. 1–12, which present the church's beginning in Palestine and its emergence as the new locus of God's presence within Israel; and chaps. 13–28, which tell how the gospel moves westward and how God's promises are extended fully to the Gentiles. Each section has its central figure: Peter in the first and Paul in the second.

Other Features. One conspicuous feature is the summaries provided throughout the work. There are both fairly extensive summaries (2:42–47; 4:32–35; 5:12–16) and briefer statements documenting the numerical growth and spread of the church (2:41, 47; 4:4; 5:14; 6:7; 9:31, 42; 11:21, 24; 12:24; 14:1; 16:5; 19:20; 28:31).

Related to this is the use of typical examples, a literary technique that uses a single character or event to illustrate what occurred typically. The healing of the lame man (3:1–11) is typical of the many "signs and wonders" performed by the apostles (5:12). Barnabas's generosity is presented as a concrete example that typified the many property owners who sold their possessions (4:34–37). The episodes reported in detail during Paul's preaching mission at Philippi (16:11–40) serve to illustrate typical features of his preaching among Gentiles. His vindication before Gallio (18:12–17) illustrates the way Roman authorities typically treated Christian missionaries.

One of the most striking features of Acts is the number of speeches contained in the book and the amount of space they occupy—roughly 20 percent of the entire narrative. They occur throughout the work, in each of its major sections, exhibiting different types: missionary speeches directed to Jews (2:14–36; 3:12–26; 13:16–41; 28:25–28) and Gentiles (10:34–43; 14:15–17; 17:22–31); defense speeches by Peter (4:8–12, 19b–20;

5:29b–32), Stephen (7:2–53, 56, 59b, 60b), and Paul (22:1, 3–21; 23:1, 3, 5, 6b; 24:10–21; 25:8, 10–11; 26:2–23, 25–27, 29; 28:17–20); "church speeches," Christians speaking to other Christians (1:16–22; 11:5–17; 15:7–21; 21:20–25), especially Paul's "pastoral homily," or farewell address, to the Ephesian elders (20:18–35); and speeches by outsiders (5:35–39; 19:25–27, 35–40; 24:2–8; 25:14–21, 24–27). In addition, numerous prayers and conversations are reported throughout the work. By providing various types of speeches fitted to the characters and the occasion, Luke is following a practice well established among ancient authors, both Jewish and non-Jewish.

Language and Style. Luke's language and style reflect the Hellenistic Greek typically used in literary circles of his day. Although it has much in common with popular, spoken speech, it is generally more polished. With his impressive vocabulary and sophisticated use of language, Luke compares favorably with other writers of the period. Both his language and style, however, are heavily influenced by the Greek OT, and this distinguishes him sharply from his Hellenistic counterparts.

His attention to literary style can be seen in his fondness for numerous rhetorical devices, such as litotes, the well-established Greek form of emphasis by understatement (12:18; 14:28; 17:4, 12; 19:11, 23–24; 20:12; 21:39; 27:20; 28:2). His skillful use of language is also seen in the way he effectively creates literary mood or captures the atmosphere of particular occasions, whether it be the primitive religious environment of Lystra (14:8–18) or Malta (28:1–10) or a poignant farewell (20:36–38). It is also seen in his ability to write in different literary styles. In describing the earliest period of the church (chaps. 1–12), he uses an archaic, biblical style that echoes the language of the Greek OT. This helps establish the close identity between his account and the biblical story he seeks to continue. Or, he can write in a more "modern" Greek style, especially on occasions where he needs to capture the mood of a contemporary setting, such as Athens (chap. 17), Ephesus (chap. 19), or a trial scene before Romans in Caesarea (chaps. 24–26).

Links Between Acts and Luke

Perhaps the best introduction to Acts is a careful reading of the Gospel of Luke. To be sure, Acts can be read independently of Luke's Gospel, for in one sense the story it tells is self-contained. Yet, when read in the light of Luke's Gospel, certain aspects of Acts become more understandable.

There are, first of all, continuous themes that run through both volumes. The "kingdom of God," which is mentioned over thirty times in the Gospel (e.g., 4:43; 6:20; 7:28; 8:1, 10; 9:2, 11, 27, 60, 62; 10:9, 11; 11:20; 13:18, 20, 28–29; 14:15; 16:16; 17:20–21; 18:16–17, 24–25, 29; 19:11; 21:31; 22:16, 18; 23:51), continues to be preached in Acts (1:3; 8:12; 14:22; 19:8; 20:25; 28:23, 31). Jesus' insistence that his suffering, death, and resurrection were "divine necessities" (Luke 9:22; 18:31–33; 24:7, 26, 44–46; also 9:31, 44; 13:33; 17:25) is a prominent theme in the apostolic preaching in Acts (3:18; 17:3; 26:23; also 8:32–35). The very visible role played by the Holy Spirit in the life and ministry of Jesus (e.g., Luke 1:35; 2:26–27; 4:1, 14, 18–21) continues in Acts, where the Spirit "comes upon" the church, especially at critical moments (1:5; 2:1–4; 8:15; 10:44–48; 11:15–17; 19:6), but also motivates the church's prophets to speak and act (4:8; 6:3, 5; 7:55; 8:26, 29, 39; 10:19; 11:12; 13:2; 16:6–7; 19:21; 20:23; 21:4, 11).

Throughout Luke-Acts there is also a consistent emphasis on the proper use of possessions. Luke's Gospel not only records Jesus' instructions about almsgiving (3:11; 6:30; 11:41; 12:33–34; 18:22; 19:8), but also presents many parables of Jesus where the proper attitude toward possessions is a central feature (10:29–37; 15:11–32; 16:1–9, 19–31; 19:11–27) and incidents in Jesus' ministry where discipleship is defined in these terms (10:38–42; 18:18–30; 19:1–10; 21:1–4). Acts continues this emphasis in its depiction of the church's generosity and willingness to dispose of its goods to assist the needy (2:44–45; 4:32–34). It also highlights the actions of generous individuals, such as Barnabas (4:36–37), Dorcas (9:36–43), and Paul (20:33–35), and churches, such as Antioch (11:29–30). It also provides negative examples to reinforce the point (1:16–19; 5:1–11; 8:20–24; 24:26).

Certain events or actions depicted in Acts are either already anticipated or explicitly predicted in Luke's Gospel: the apostles as Christ's duly appointed witnesses (Acts 1:8; 5:32; 10:41; cf. Luke 24:48); rejoicing while suffering on behalf of Christ (Acts 5:41; cf. Luke 6:23); the appropriate behavior of missionaries in the face of rejection (Acts 13:51; 18:6; cf. Luke 9:5; 10:10–11); the appropriate way to bear witness when brought before hostile officials (Acts 4:8–12; 5:27–32; 7:54–60; 22:1–21; 24:10–21; 25:8, 10–11; 26:1–23; cf. Luke 12:11–12; 21:12–15); offering the gospel to Jews first and, when rejected, then to Gentiles (Acts 13:46–48; 18:6; 28:23–28; cf. Luke 14:15–24; also 2:32, 34); and Jesus' promise that repentance and forgiveness of sins would be preached universally (Acts 2:38; 3:19; 5:31; 11:18; 17:30–31; cf. Luke 24:47; also 1:77; 3:3).

In some instances, Luke's Gospel illuminates more fully persons or events in Acts: the ministry and preaching of John the Baptist (Acts 1:4–5; 11:16; 13:24–25; 18:25; 19:3–4; cf. Luke 3:1–22, esp. vv. 15–17); and Jesus' ministry (Acts 2:22–24; 10:36–40; amplified by the entire Gospel of Luke), especially certain images or scriptures used of Christ, such as God's prophet (Acts 3:22; 7:37; cf. Luke 24:19) or the rejected stone (Acts 4:11; Luke 20:17–18).

Certain incidents in Acts are depicted in ways that parallel similar incidents in the Gospel: the healing of

paralyzed persons (Acts 3:1–11; 9:32–35; cf. Luke 5:17–26); raising persons from the dead (Acts 9:36–43; 20:7–12; Luke 7:11–17; 8:40–56); exorcisms (Acts 5:16; 8:7; 19:11–16; cf. Luke 4:31–37); and healing persons with fever (Acts 28:8; cf. Luke 4:38–39). In some respects, Paul's final trip to Jerusalem and his trial echo the Lucan account of Jesus' Passion: the crowds' responses (Acts 21:36; 22:22; cf. Luke 23:18); Paul's being "handed over by Jews to Gentiles" (Acts 21:11; 28:17; cf. Luke 18:32; 24:6–7); and his own declarations of innocence (22:25; 23:1; 24:12–13, 16, 19–20; 25:8, 10–11; 26:21–23; 28:17–19), confirmed numerous times by Jewish and Roman officials (23:9, 29; 25:18, 25–26; 26:31–32; on Jesus' innocence, cf. Luke 23:4, 13–15, 22, 41, 47; also Acts 4:27, 30; 7:52; 22:14).

See also Luke.

COMMENTARY

1:1–26
Between Easter and Pentecost

1:1–8
Jesus' Story Continued

From the outset, Acts is connected with the Third Gospel, Luke's "first volume," which gives a comprehensive account of Jesus' deeds and words until he was "taken up," or ascended into heaven (Luke 24:51). Their common addressee is Theophilus (Luke 1:1–4), otherwise unmentioned in the NT (→ Theophilus).

Whereas Luke 24 confines Christ's appearances to a single day (Easter Sunday), this period is now extended to "forty days" (Acts 1:3). His activity included "many proofs," presumably signs and wonders, various appearances to the apostles, and instructions (v. 3), which are summarized in Luke 24:44–49. The continuation of the kingdom of God is anticipated in the Gospel (Luke 22:16, 18, esp. vv. 28–30). Precisely what the kingdom signified remained unclear, as the apostles' question (v. 6) shows.

During a meal (v. 4), Jesus enjoins the apostles to remain in Jerusalem, echoing his earlier instruction that their prophetic witness to him would begin from Jerusalem (Luke 24:47). John the Baptist had anticipated that his form of baptism would be superseded by a more impressive form of baptism administered by the Messiah, in which persons would be suffused with God's Spirit (v. 5) and confronted with the fire of God's judgment (Luke 3:16).

At perhaps another gathering (v. 6), the apostles ask when Christ would "restore the kingdom to Israel." His response (v. 7) exposes their misunderstanding. Entering God's kingdom is not a matter of knowing when to mark the calendar, but of awaiting and receiving God's promised Spirit. The geographical scheme (v. 8) provides the organizing framework for the rest of the narrative (see Introduction).

1:9–12
Ascension

Christ's ascension has already been anticipated (Luke 9:51; Acts 1:2), but now is amplified in greater detail. Compared with the rest of the NT, Luke attaches greater significance to it as a separate event (cf. Mark 16:19; John 3:13; 6:62; 20:17; Eph. 4:8–10; 1 Tim. 3:16). By placing the ascension on the Mount of Olives (v. 12), Luke continues his pattern of locating the post-Easter appearances in close proximity to Jerusalem (Luke 24:13, 28, 33, 47, 50, 52).

Luke's portrait recalls Elijah's ascension (2 Kings 2:11), though it more closely resembles the extrabiblical tradition depicting the end of Moses' life as a disappearance into a cloud (Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 4.326). His promised return in similar fashion (Acts 1:11) recalls Jesus' own earlier prediction of the Son of Man's return (Luke 21:27; cf. Dan. 7:13–14).

The ascension occurs in the company of the apostles (vv. 2, 9), who thereby become eyewitnesses (cf. 1:22). In keeping with OT criteria for certified testimony (Deut. 19:15), Luke typically provides two witnesses who interpret the event's significance (Luke 24:4). Their "white robes" probably attest their extraordinary status (cf. Luke 24:4; John 20:12). By emphasizing the manner rather than the time of Jesus' return, Luke redirects the church's attention away from end-time speculation (1:7).

1:13–26
Replacing Judas

The Twelve are named earlier (Luke 6:13–16). Heading this list are Peter and John, who figure prominently in the succeeding narrative (3:1, 11; 8:14). James's death is later recorded (12:2). Omitting Judas Iscariot now confirms his expulsion from the apostolic circle and prepares readers for his replacement (vv. 15–26). To this point, readers know only of Judas's betrayal (Luke 22:47–53), not his fate (→ Judas).

Joining the apostles are "certain women," probably those from Galilee named earlier who had been healed by Jesus, supported him financially (Luke 8:2–3), witnessed the crucifixion (23:49), and first bore witness of the resurrection to disbelieving apostles (23:55–56; 24:1–11). The family of Jesus has also been introduced earlier (Luke 8:19–21), and Luke treats them favorably, especially Mary (chaps. 1–2). Elsewhere, they are portrayed as embarrassed and skeptical (Mark 3:21; John 7:5; though cf. John 2:1, 12; 19:25). Here, his family are among the nucleus of the faithful.

In keeping with Jesus' earlier promise that the

Twelve would enjoy special status in his coming kingdom (Luke 22:28–30), the sacred circle must be reconstituted. Accordingly, both the death of Judas and the choice of his successor are interpreted as "divine necessities" foretold in Scripture (vv. 16, 20). Specifying the number as 120 (v. 15; cf. "many others," Luke 8:3) indicates a sizable pool of candidates from which successors to Judas could be found.

Two OT citations figure centrally in this first of several speeches by Peter (vv. 16–22).

In Ps. 69:25 the psalmist's enemies are cursed to live deserted and lonely. In v. 20a, Judas is apparently regarded as such an enemy because his "field" (v. 18) had turned out to be a "desolate homestead." The Lucan accent falls on the tragic circumstances of Judas's death. His is the awful fate of those who attempt to thwart God's plan (cf. 5:1–11; 12:1–23). Matthew's account provides a sharp contrast: a remorseful Judas hangs himself (Matt. 27:3–10).

How he died is uncertain. "Falling headlong" (1:18) may suggest an accidental fall from a building or even a suicidal leap. The alternative reading, "swelling up," perhaps suggests some physical malady. In either case, the pit of his stomach burst, and his blood gave the field its name, Hakeldama (v. 19; → Akeldama).

The second OT citation, in v. 20b (Ps. 109:8), originally called for the seizure of the enemy's goods. In its altered form here, it provides the rationale for choosing Judas's successor. The chief qualification for the replacement is continuous participation in the historical ministry to Jesus from the time of John the Baptist until the ascension (v. 22). The essential apostolic function was to be a "witness to his resurrection" (v. 22; Luke 24:45–48; Acts 2:32; 3:15; 4:33; 5:32; 10:41; 13:31). The two candidates, Joseph Barsabbas and Matthias, are otherwise unmentioned in the NT. The final choice was by casting lots, but the decision was clearly God's (v. 24).

2:1–8:3

Beginning of the Church and Spread of the Gospel in Jerusalem

2:1–47

Inauguration of the Messianic Community on Pentecost

2:1–4, The Coming of the Spirit on Pentecost. Promises made earlier by John the Baptist (Luke 3:16) and the risen Lord (Luke 24:49; Acts 1:8) are now fulfilled. Among NT writers, only Luke sets the church's beginning on the day of Pentecost, fifty days after Passover (Luke 22:1; Lev. 23:15–21; → Pentecost). His adopting the tradition of a forty-day period of post-Easter appearances required at least this much time (1:3). The nucleus of the messianic community certainly included the apostles to whom Christ had promised the Spirit (1:8) and conceivably the 120 disciples (1:15). The Spirit's arrival is presented in a way that anticipates the prophecy in 2:19: the loud wind from heaven serves as a "wonder in the heaven above," while the tongues of fire resting on those gathered become "signs on the earth beneath." "Wind and fire" may recall a similar extraordinary appearance of the Lord to Elijah (1 Kings 19:11–13). All of those gathered, whether the Twelve or 120, were "filled with the Holy Spirit" (v. 4), the first of several such occurrences involving both individuals and groups in Acts (4:8, 31; 8:17; 10:44–47; 11:15; 13:9, 52; 19:1–7). What distinguishes this particular infusion of the Spirit is that the recipients speak "in other languages," i.e., foreign languages (cf. 2:6, 8, 11). The phenomenon is repeated later at the conversion of Cornelius (10:46).

2:5–13, The Worldwide Audience. The crowd attracted by this cacophony of sounds are Jews "living in" Jerusalem, not pilgrims from the Diaspora. They are struck by the speakers' distinctive Galilean accent (v. 7; cf. 1:11), yet they comprehend what is being said in their respective native dialects (vv. 6, 8, 11). The magnitude of the miracle is underscored as they list the nations from which they have emigrated (vv. 9–11). With its emphasis on universal understanding, the account is sometimes read as a reversal of the universal confusion of Babel (Gen. 11:1–9). More likely, Luke wants to stress that the Jewish community that first hears the gospel at Pentecost is genuinely universal in scope, hence representative of world Jewry. His narrative description here anticipates the promise in Peter's speech that "all flesh" (2:17; also v. 21) would receive God's Spirit.

2:14–36, Peter's Sermon. Among Peter's several speeches in Acts (3:12–26; 4:8–12, 19b–20; 5:29–32; 10:34–43), this sermon has special importance. Like Jesus at his Nazareth inaugural (Luke 4:16–30), Peter is introduced as an interpreter of OT Scripture. He now begins to unfold publicly the secrets of Scripture interpretation expounded by the risen Lord to the apostles on Easter (Luke 24:44–49). The sermon introduces major Lucan themes developed throughout the book, e.g., outpouring of God's Spirit (vv. 17–18; cf. 10:45), universality of the gospel (vv. 17, 21; cf. 2:39; 13:47–48), authenticating signs and wonders (v. 19; cf. 2:43; 4:30; 5:12; 6:8; 8:13), and salvation in the name of the Lord (v. 21; cf. 2:39; 4:12).

In the first part (vv. 14–21), Peter interprets the events of Pentecost as fulfilling Joel 2:28–32. What was expected "in the last days" (Isa. 2:2) has now come to pass: a dramatic effusion of God's Spirit experienced by men and women, young and old, accompanied by signs and wonders, both visible and audible, with truly

cosmic impact. This interruption of the normal course of events is seen as a prelude to the "Day of the Lord," when history would end, and a time when people would call out to the Lord for salvation.

In the second part (vv. 22–36), Peter explains Jesus' death and resurrection in light of two Davidic psalms: 16:8–11 and 110:1. His introduction to this part summarizes the essential features of the Jesus story that have been rehearsed at length in the Gospel: a ministry empowered by God, death by human hands yet according to God's will, resurrection by God (vv. 22–24). Rather than proving these claims, Peter assumes them throughout the sermon. These things the apostles have witnessed (v. 32).

In Ps. 16:8–11, as Peter reads it, David acknowledged a "Lord" who would not be abandoned to the corruption of death in Hades (v. 27). Since David both died and was buried, Peter concludes that David cannot have been speaking of himself, but that he must have envisioned some later figure who would escape death. Peter insists that this could only have been Jesus, who had been raised (v. 31). Peter cites Ps. 110:1, also attributed to David, as evidence that David envisioned his "Lord" sitting at God's right hand, exalted in a position of victory over his enemies (vv. 34–36). Once again, Peter disqualifies David as the "exalted Lord" mentioned in the psalm since he "did not ascend into the heavens" (v. 34). By the process of elimination, Peter identifies the risen Jesus as the only legitimate candidate to whom these two psalms could intelligibly refer. Consequently, the exalted terms of the psalms, notably God's "Holy One" (v. 27) and "Lord" (v. 25), Peter applies to the crucified Jesus (v. 36). The risen Lord now is seen as the one who pours out the divine Spirit at this inaugural event (v. 33).

2:37–41, Response to Peter's Sermon. Peter's preaching strikes a responsive chord and turns the crowds into willing inquirers. The cry for salvation will be heard again (16:30; 22:10; cf. Luke 3:10, 12).

The call to repentance and the promise of forgiven sins echoes the preaching of John the Baptist (Luke 3:3, 8; cf. 5:32) and fulfills the promise of the risen Lord (Luke 24:47). The baptism Peter requires is distinguished from John's baptism by being "in the name of Jesus Christ" (cf. Acts 19:5). The formula may suggest that Jesus' name was pronounced over those being baptized.

Along with the forgiveness of sins, the hearers receive (a measure of) what the risen Lord had received from the Father (v. 33) and given to the apostles (1:4): the Holy Spirit as God's gift to the obedient (5:32). This promise of the Holy Spirit is first extended to the Jerusalem Jews assembled on Pentecost—"you and your children" and either to their chronologically distant descendants or to their geographically remote countrymen, the Jews in the Diaspora—"all who are far away." The latter expression can denote Gentiles (cf. 22:21; Eph. 2:13), but appears not to do so here. "With many other arguments" (v. 40) indicates that Luke has provided only a summary of Peter's sermon.

2:42–47, Profile of the Early Church. Initially, the movement's success is marked with specific, impressively large numbers (v. 41). Eventually, this will give way to further growth and expansion as indicated in periodic summaries (see Introduction).

This idealized portrait of the church emphasizes aspects of religious community valued in both Jewish and Greco-Roman society: daily devotion to both public and private religious activities (vv. 42, 46), awesome respect in the presence of divine power (v. 43), internal harmony and community solidarity expressed by showing concern for each other (v. 44), and generosity (v. 45).

The voluntary sharing of possessions among members of the community distinguishes the early church (v. 44; cf. 4:32). Along with almsgiving and showing hospitality, Luke presents it as one way to use possessions responsibly (see Introduction).

3:1–4:31
Prophetic Witness in the Temple

This section exhibits a typical Lucan literary pattern: prophetic deed (3:1–11), prophetic word (3:12–26), resistance (4:1–12), and divine vindication (4:13–31).

3:1–11, The Lame Man Healed. This episode has the typical features of a well-formed miracle story: setting (v. 1); description of malady or afflicted person (v. 2); encounter between healer(s) and afflicted person (vv. 3–5); description of the healing miracle, consisting of healing word (v. 6), healing gesture (v. 7a), and act of healing (v. 7b); visible proof of healing (v. 8); and effects on audience or observers (vv. 9–11). Comparatively elaborate (cf. 9:32–35) and graphic in detail, it prompts Peter's sermon (3:11–12) and figures centrally in his subsequent defense (4:7, 9–10, 14, 16, 22). The portrait of the lame man is not complete until his age is finally reported as over forty years (4:22).

The prophetic deed occurs at the hands of the apostolic pair Peter and John (cf. 1:3; 4:19; 8:14–17; also Luke 22:8), but the central character here (vv. 6–7) and later (chaps. 3–5) is clearly Peter.

Details of time and place are given. The healing occurs at "the hour of prayer, at three o'clock"—one of the three periods of daily prayer (Dan. 6:10; Ps. 55:17) in mid-afternoon, coinciding with the Tamid, or daily whole offering, which was made throughout the year, twice a day, morning and evening, i.e., afternoon (Exod. 29:38–42; Num. 28:1–8; *m. Pesah.* 5:1; *m. Tamid* 4:1; Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 3.237; 14.65). The scene for this episode, as for the events recorded in

chaps. 3–5, is the Temple area, significant because of how Luke portrays the church as challenging the Temple and its leadership. The Beautiful Gate was perhaps located on the eastern side of the Temple.

The man is healed in the "name of Jesus of Nazareth," whose power Peter later proclaims and defends (3:16; 4:10). The healing power is mediated through physical contact (cf. Mark 5:27–28, 30; Acts 5:15; 19:12). The effects are visible through the man's leaping and shouting praise (cf. Isa. 35:6). Wonder and amazement are responses appropriate to dramatic displays of divine power (cf. Luke 4:36; 5:9, 26).

3:12–26, Peter's Sermon in the Temple. Set within the precincts of the Temple, the sermon drives home a fundamental point: the very God whom the Jews had come to worship in the Temple (v. 13) has been at work in their midst but in a new way. The sermon throughout accents the activity of God—what God foretold in the prophets and fulfilled (vv. 18, 21), God's covenant with Abraham (v. 25), God's promise of a new prophet like Moses (v. 22; cf. Deut. 18:15–16), God's reversing the misdeeds of those responsible for Jesus' death (vv. 15, 26), God's glorification of his servant Jesus through the healing of the lame man (v. 13), and God's eventual sending of his appointed Christ and the accompanying "times of refreshing" (vv. 19–21). The people of Israel are clearly being confronted with their own God, history, Scriptures, and legacy—in their own Temple—and are being asked to include the healing of the lame man, and by extension, the work of Jesus as part of their sacred story.

Even though God is the primary subject of the sermon, special emphasis falls on the trial of Jesus, with human misguidedness and divine intervention rhetorically juxtaposed (vv. 13–15; cf. Luke 23–24). Jesus is identified as God's servant (vv. 13, 26; cf. 4:27, 30; also Matt. 12:18), the fulfillment of the servant songs of Isaiah (Isa. 42:1; 52:13; 53:11). The designation "Holy and Righteous One" (v. 14) doubtless recalls the Lucan passion narrative, with its particular stress on Jesus' innocence (cf. Luke 23:4, 13–15, 22, 41, 47; cf. Acts 4:27, 30; 7:52; 22:14). He is the "author" or pioneer of (resurrection) "life" (v. 15), because through his resurrection he experienced a new, unprecedented form of life (cf. 5:31; also Heb. 2:10; 12:2). The "prophet like Moses" image (vv. 22–23; cf. 7:37) makes more precise the recurrent depiction of Jesus as prophet in the Gospel (cf. Luke 4:16–30; 7:16; 13:33; 24:19).

The "times of refreshing" (v. 20, NRSV) may reflect the Jewish expectation that a period of relief from tribulations and woes would accompany the Messiah's final coming. Repentance and conversion are expected to trigger the Lord's final coming (cf. 2 Pet. 3:11–13; also Rom. 11:25–32). Meanwhile, Jesus as God's appointed Christ remains in heaven until God finally restores all things, as the prophets promised (v. 21). The language recalls those in exile longing to be restored to their homeland by God.

4:1–4, Peter and John Arrested. Initial resistance comes from Temple authorities, Jesus' earlier antagonists (Luke 22:4, 52). A prominent source of resistance, now and in the second arrest (Acts 5:17), are the Sadducees, who had opposed Jesus (Luke 20:27–40) and later oppose Paul (Acts 23:6–10). Since they denied resurrection in principle (23:8), they specifically contest the apostles' claim that resurrection had begun with Jesus (4:2). Even though overnight custody is a relatively mild restraining action (v. 3; cf. 5:18; 12:1), it fulfills Jesus' prediction (Luke 21:12). Still, the gospel meets with significant numerical success (v. 4).

4:5–22, Peter and John Before the Council. Naming members of the high-priestly family underscores the intimidating stature of the assembled Temple authorities. Annas and Caiaphas are introduced earlier as a reference point for the ministry of John the Baptist (Luke 3:2), but are unmentioned in Luke's passion narrative (cf. Matt. 26:3, 57; John 18:13–14, 24, 28; cf. 11:49). Though Annas is called high priest (v. 6), he actually presided ca. A.D. 6–14. His son-in-law Caiaphas, who officiated ca. A.D. 17–36, would have been high priest during this time (→ Annas).

Like Jesus (Luke 20:1–8), Peter and John are challenged by the Temple authorities who inquire specifically about the lame man (v. 7). As before, Peter is the principal speaker (v. 8), whose testimony is prompted by the Holy Spirit, in keeping with Jesus' promise (Luke 12:11–12). Salvation, understood doubly as the power to make well and to forgive sins (cf. Luke 4:18–19; 7:21–23), is now located exclusively in Jesus and his effectual name (v. 12; cf. 2:21; 3:6, 16). With Jesus specifically identified as the stone rejected by Zion's builders but elevated preeminently (Ps. 118:22), readers now understand fully the parable of the vineyard (Luke 20:9–18; cf. 1 Pet. 2:4, 6–8).

The council (v. 15) of authorities who had been Jesus' antagonists (Luke 22:66–23:16) are struck by Peter's unusual boldness (vv. 8–12). Similar forthrightness, which derives from the Spirit (Luke 12:11–12; Acts 4:8, 31), will continue to characterize their preaching (4:29) and later that of Paul (9:27–29; 13:46; 14:3; 19:8; 26:26; 28:31; cf. also 18:26).

The council also marvels that they were "uneducated," i.e., without formal schooling, and "ordinary men," i.e., nonprofessionals (v. 13). How the council identifies them with Jesus is uncertain; perhaps through their Galilean accent (cf. 1:11; 2:7; also Luke 22:59).

With the healed man standing in their midst as undeniable proof of the apostles' power, the council is stymied (v. 16). Their inability to confute this visible sign of apostolic power confirms the earlier prediction

of Jesus (Luke 21:15; also Acts 6:10). Their injunction (v. 18) is two-pronged: neither to speak, i.e., heal anymore by pronouncing the name of Jesus (3:6), nor teach, i.e., preach publicly a message under his authority or about him (as, e.g., 3:12–26; 4:8–12). This second ban is later recalled explicitly (5:28).

Peter and John respond defiantly (vv. 19–20). They are compelled to speak what they have seen and heard, presumably the "deeds and words" of Jesus recorded in the Gospel (1:1; cf. 10:39; also 26:15), but most notably the Passion and resurrection (Luke 24:48; Acts 1:8, 22).

By reporting their release by the council, Luke notes the absence of any legal case against them and signifies their vindication by God, who becomes the object of widespread praise (v. 21).

4:23–31, Praying Confidently. The apostles' release is celebrated among "their friends" (lit., "their own"), perhaps the other apostles, more probably the small circle of disciples earlier depicted as a community of prayer (1:14; 2:42; cf. 6:4). Like Peter's earlier speeches (2:14–36; 3:12–26), the friends' prayer interprets aspects of Jesus' life as explicitly fulfilling Scripture. Its centerpiece is Ps. 2:1–2, which mentions adversaries of "the LORD" (Yahweh) and "his Messiah" (Gk. *Christos*). Luke interpreted the latter as a sure reference to Jesus, anointed with God's Spirit at his baptism (Luke 3:22; cf. 4:1, 14; Acts 10:38), hence becoming "beloved Son," or, as here, "God's holy servant" (v. 27).

The exact identification of the adversaries mentioned in the psalm (vv. 25–26) is difficult. As "Gentiles," the Romans are clearly implicated (Luke 23:36; cf. 23:11). The "peoples" are understood as Israel (v. 27), consistent with Luke's depiction of "the [Jewish] people" as active conspirators (Luke 23:13; Acts 2:23; 3:13–14). The "kings of the earth" may refer to Herod, and "rulers" to Pilate, although Luke normally uses "rulers" to designate Jewish leaders (Luke 23:13, 35; 24:20; Acts 3:17; cf. 4:5, 8).

Here Acts looks back to the Gospel and provides a fresh interpretation of Jesus' Passion. This may help explain why Luke alone of the four Gospels includes Herod Antipas as a participant in the passion narrative, indeed connects him directly with Pontius Pilate (Luke 23:6–16).

The prayer's primary subject is God, who is addressed as Creator, and therefore Sovereign (v. 24) who foretold these events (through David). Enemy actions against Jesus are placed under God's sovereignty (v. 28; cf. 2:23; Luke 22:22). This reassures the church that the resistance it now experiences is like that Jesus experienced. Like Jesus, the church can expect to be vindicated by God, who is asked to empower the apostolic servants boldly to "speak the word," i.e., preach the gospel (cf. Acts 8:25; 11:19; 16:6, 32; cf. Phil. 1:14).

The prayer calls for the preached word to be accompanied by healing and "signs and wonders" in the name of Jesus (v. 30), but these are seen as performed directly by "God's hand," not through human "power or piety" (cf. 3:12). This explains all the more why the council's injunction against such deeds is futile (4:7, 17–18)—it is an attempt to obstruct God's own work—and also why the apostolic witness cannot be suppressed (4:20).

God answers their prayer by providing visible signs: a quaking house and being filled with the Spirit. What was requested in prayer—boldness to preach—comes to pass, thus providing an instance of promise fulfillment within the story itself (v. 31).

4:32–5:11
Using Possessions

Luke's focus on apostolic activity in 3:1–4:31 resumes in 5:12, but this section focuses on a wider circle—the "whole group of those who believed" (4:32)—and how God's presence is felt within the community through the proper and improper use of possessions.

4:32–37, Sharing Possessions: Barnabas. With "everything in common," the community fulfills the Hellenistic ideal of friendship expressed in sharing possessions. By selling property to care for its poor, it embodies the ideal Israel (Deut. 15:4; Lev. 25:35–38).

This generalized portrait of community generosity and submission to apostolic authority is rendered concrete in the actions of a single property owner, the Levite Joseph. The name given him by the apostles, Barnabas, is his more usual NT designation and serves to distinguish him from Joseph Barsabbas (1:23). Precisely how, if at all, the name means "son of encouragement" is unclear (→ Barnabas).

5:1–11, Hoarding Possessions: Ananias and Sapphira. This negative counterpart to the story of Barnabas is partially influenced by the OT story of Achan, whose deceitful misappropriation of sacred possessions adversely affected Israel and resulted in radical exclusion from the community: the death of him and his family (Josh. 7:16–26).

The story continues to portray the church as a Spirit-filled community (4:31), Peter as a powerful prophetic figure, and is designed to elicit proper respect for the holy among the church itself, as well as outsiders (vv. 5, 11). Peter's enhanced prophetic status is reflected in his knowledge of Ananias's misdeed (v. 3) and the lethal force of his indictment of Sapphira (v. 9).

Precisely how and why they were at fault should be noted. The narrative implies that property owners could sell their possessions without thereby committing themselves to the community ideal of sharing everything in common (v. 4; cf. Deut. 23:21–23; though cf. Acts 4:32, 34). Their fatal mistake was in their failure

to recognize the church as a Spirit-filled community and in failing to see that deceiving the church—and themselves—was tantamount to deceiving the Spirit. The couple's misuse of possessions is attributed to satanic force (v. 3), paralleling Judas's misdeed (Luke 22:3; cf. John 13:2, 27).

5:12–42
Further Prophetic Witness in the Temple

5:12–16, Apostolic Signs and Wonders in the Temple. This summary shifts the action back to the apostles and, in fulfillment of the prayer of 4:29–30 (also 2:19), portrays their ministry of signs and wonders as stunningly successful. The locus of activity is still the Temple, "Solomon's Portico" (v. 12; cf. 3:11; also John 10:23), although the marvelous effects of their activity now extend into the streets, even to "towns around Jerusalem" (v. 16).

This summary extends spatial limits, but numerical limits as well. No numbers are given (cf. 2:41; 4:4), but the size of the group multiplies, encompassing women (mentioned as a group for the first time) as well as men (v. 14). The generalized picture of apostolic activity is once again focused in the person of Peter, whose shadow even has therapeutic power (v. 15). Somewhat similar is the healing power of Jesus' clothing (Mark 6:56; surprisingly omitted by Luke; though cf. Luke 6:18–19) and cloths touched by Paul (19:12).

5:17–26, Apostles Arrested. In response to increased apostolic successes, a second resistance occurs. Again, the high priest (v. 17), presumably Annas (4:6), and the Sadducees form the core of opposition (4:1), prompted by jealousy (cf. 13:45; 17:5). The restraining action is more intense than previously: all the apostles, not just Peter and John, are placed in a public prison, or, perhaps, are imprisoned publicly (5:18).

The release is proportionately more dramatic and is the first of three episodes in Acts when a prison miraculously opens (cf. 12:6–11; 16:25–27). It is achieved by an "angel of the Lord" (i.e., God; cf. Exod. 3:2), who makes the first of several appearances in the Acts narrative (7:30; 8:26; 10:3; 12:7, 11, 23; 27:23; cf. Luke 1:11; 2:9; for OT angels in deliverance roles, cf. Dan. 3:28; 6:22). The effect is heightened by the subsequent description in v. 23. Moreover, the angel countermands the council's earlier injunction (4:18) and commissions the apostles to return to the Temple and teach "the whole message about this life" (v. 20), i.e., resurrection life pioneered by Christ (cf. 3:15; also John 6:68; Phil. 2:16). The apostles comply, both with the angel's command and the earlier prayer (4:29). Ironically, the miraculous release of the apostles is achieved by an angel, whose existence the Sadducees deny (23:8).

The authorities assembled to hear the case were introduced earlier (v. 22; 4:5–6). The council (cf. 4:15) and "the whole body of the elders of Israel" (v. 21) are probably the same body (cf. Exod. 12:21; also 1 Macc. 12:6; 2 Macc. 1:10; Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 13.166). The dialogue in vv. 23–26 heightens the drama, portraying the council as comically helpless. The rhetorical flourish in v. 24b, where the officers wonder "what might be going on," may be an unintentional prophetic anticipation of future events; similarly, Gamaliel's words in 5:38–39.

5:27–32, Apostles' Defense. Though it is the apostles who are brought before the council and presented as making their collective defense (vv. 27, 29), Peter remains prominent (v. 29). The high priest's accusation (v. 28) recalls the council's earlier injunction (4:18), although the blood-guilt motif (v. 28) is new (cf. 18:6; Matt. 27:25). It presupposes the earlier sermon summaries that directly accuse the Jewish people (2:23; 3:14–15) and their leaders (4:10). Strictly speaking, it only implicates the high priests and the council, who are being addressed here.

The apostolic response opens by noting the moral obligation of obeying God rather than human authorities (v. 29; cf. 4:19). The words are reminiscent of Socrates' defense before the men of Athens, "I shall obey the god rather than you" (Plato *Apology* 29D). Presupposed is the divine command of the angel (5:20–21), but earlier mandates as well (Luke 24:45–49; Acts 1:8; 4:29). The apostles have seen what their opponents have failed to see—that God has been at work in recent events (3:12, 16).

The defense summary (vv. 30–32) encapsulates major elements of early Christian preaching: God's raising Christ (3:15; 4:10; 10:40; 13:30, 37); Christ's death by "hanging on a tree" (10:39; Gal. 3:13; cf. Deut. 21:22–23); God's exaltation of Christ (Acts 2:33), identified as "Leader and Savior" (cf. 3:15); call for repentance (2:38; 3:19; 11:18; 26:20); and offer of forgiveness of sins (Luke 24:47; Acts 2:38; 3:19; 10:43; 13:38). God's role as primary agent is again stressed (vv. 30–31; cf. 3:12–26). Through divine reversal, God has righted their misdeed. The concluding motif is the double witness of the apostles and the Holy Spirit (v. 32; Luke 24:48; Acts 1:8; cf. John 15:26–27), a gift to the obedient (Acts 2:38; also John 7:39).

5:33–42, Apostles Vindicated: Gamaliel. The council's violent urge to kill the apostles (v. 33) foreshadows its later reaction to Stephen (7:54; cf. 23:10). Vindication of the apostles comes through Gamaliel, who urges caution (v. 35; → Gamaliel). Aligning Gamaliel with the Christian movement typically pits a sympathetic Pharisaic position against adversarial Sadducees (cf. 23:6–10; also 4:1; 5:17; Luke 20:27–40). Citing two examples of misspent leadership—Theudas (v. 36) and Judas the Galilean (v. 37)—he proposes a hands-off policy (v. 38a; → Judas; Theudas; Zealot). He warns his colleagues against becoming "God-fighters"

(vv. 38b–39). Through this sympathetic outsider, Luke expresses his own viewpoint: to oppose the Christian movement is to oppose God. All such efforts are ill-fated (e.g., Herod, 12:22–23).

By accepting the advice of Gamaliel, the council vindicates the apostles. The punishment of beating (v. 40; cf. 16:22–23; 22:19; 2 Cor. 11:24) is more severe than the earlier threat (4:21), but conforms to Jesus' promise (Luke 21:12; esp. Mark 13:9; Matt. 10:17). The prohibition to speak in the name of Jesus is repeated (4:18). The apostolic response was to rejoice in the face of persecution (Luke 6:23; cf. Matt. 5:12; also 1 Pet. 4:13; 2 Thess. 1:4), considering it honorable to suffer for the name (Acts 9:16; 15:26; 21:13). In defiant disobedience, they resume daily teaching and preaching (v. 42; cf. 5:21; Luke 20:1–8).

6:1–8:3
Prophetic Witness Extends Beyond the Apostles: Stephen

The scope of the narrative now widens beyond the apostles and Temple. The next episode serves to introduce the next two major figures in the narrative—Stephen (6:8–8:1; also 11:19; 22:20) and Philip (8:5–40; also 21:8). A third new figure, Saul (9:1–30), is introduced in connection with Stephen (7:58–8:3). Peter reemerges as a major figure in 9:32–12:25.

6:1–7, Choosing Seven Apostolic Assistants. The previously unified community (2:42–47; 4:32) experiences its first friction, the exact nature of which depends on properly identifying the disputing parties as well as their underlying differences (→ Greeks; Hebrews; Hellenists). The neglect of the widows (v. 1; cf. 1 Tim. 5:9–16) possibly resulted from ideological differences between the Aramaic-speaking Hebrew Christians who supervised the daily distribution of food (4:35) and the Greek-speaking Hellenistic Christians.

As a solution, the church (identified here for the first time as "disciples," vv. 1, 2, 7) selects (vv. 3, 5) from their number seven men, who are installed by the apostles (vv. 3, 6), designated only here in Acts as "the twelve" (v. 2; cf. 1:26; 2:14; but cf. Luke 6:13; 8:1; 9:1, 12; 18:31; 22:3, 30, 47; also 1 Cor. 15:5, 7, 9). Their ordination to special service occurs by apostolic "laying on of hands" (v. 6; cf. 13:3; 1 Tim. 4:14; 5:22; 2 Tim. 1:6; Heb. 6:2), a ritual act with OT precedent (Num. 8:10; 27:18, 23; Deut. 34:9), also employed in connection with baptism (Acts 8:17–19; 19:6) and healing (9:17; 28:8; cf. 5:12; 14:3; 19:11; also Luke 4:40; 13:13; Matt. 9:18; 19:13; Mark 6:5; 7:32; 8:23, 25; 16:18). The story, or process, reflects OT influence (Exod. 18:17–23; Num. 11:1–25; 27:15–23; → Hand).

This group, which became known as "the seven" (21:8), is not here designated "deacons" (cf. Phil. 1:1; 1 Tim. 3:8–13). The two whose service is described further—Stephen and Philip—are distinguished by their prophetic deeds and words (cf. 6:8, 10; 8:5–7, 13; 21:8). This is appropriate since their qualifications, apart from being well respected (cf. 16:2; 22:12; 1 Tim. 3:7, 10) and wise, included being Spirit-filled (vv. 3, 5; cf. 11:24; 13:52; also Luke 4:1; cf. Exod. 31:3; 35:31). "Full of faith" (v. 5) may mean wonder-working faith (cf. Matt. 17:20; 21:21; Mark 11:22–23; also 1 Cor. 12:9; 13:2).

Their seven Greek names need not imply that they were native Greeks. Specifying that the Antiochian Nicolaus had become a convert to Judaism (v. 5; cf. 13:43; also 2:10) suggests that the others were native Jews.

The successful resolution of the dispute is indicated by the impressive growth (v. 7), especially the conversion of "a great many of the priests," a first. Luke thereby underscores Christianity's growing challenge to the central Jewish institution—the Temple.

6:8–15, Stephen's Arrest. Resistance to Christianity now extends beyond Sadducees and Temple authorities (4:1; 5:17) to include diaspora Jews resident in Jerusalem (v. 9) and, for the first time, "the [Jewish] people" (v. 12). Whether Stephen's opponents should be envisioned as a single synagogue with different constituencies (Freedmen, Cyrenians, Alexandrians, Cilicians, Asians) or, more likely, as two separate groups: African Jews, who comprised "the synagogue of the Freedmen," and Asian Jews, whose loyalty was to the Jerusalem Temple and Mosaic law. They see Stephen as a threat to both (v. 11). The second group later opposes Paul on the same grounds (21:28; cf. 25:8).

Unable to confute the prophetic deeds and words of the Spirit-filled Stephen (vv. 8, 10; cf. Luke 21:15), they resort to false witnesses and contrived charges that link Stephen's preaching to Jesus (vv. 13–14; → Stephen). Luke's account of Jesus' trial before the Sanhedrin (Luke 22:66–71) omits reference to false witnesses and their charge that he would destroy the Temple and rebuild it in three days (Matt. 26:59–61; Mark 14:55–58; cf. John 2:19–22; also Matt. 27:40; Mark 15:29).

7:1–53, Stephen's Sermon. The sermon surveys Israel's history in broad sweep, highlighting three figures: Abraham (vv. 2–8), Joseph (vv. 9–16), and especially Moses (vv. 17–43). It then treats the tabernacle/Temple (vv. 44–50) and concludes by assailing the hearers for identifying with Israel's heritage of resistance (vv. 51–53).

The historical survey is reminiscent of OT historical summaries that rehearse God's dealings with Israel (Josh. 24:1–15; Neh. 9:6–32; Jth. 5:5–21; Pss. 78; 105; 106; 135; 136). If anything, it reflects more the censorious spirit of Psalms 78 and 106, which stress Israel's persistent, cyclical disobedience throughout its history, than it does the more positive, doxological spirit of Psalm 105, which recalls God's gracious care and deliverance of Israel.

With its explicit OT quotations (Amos 5:25–27 in vv. 42–43; Isa. 66:1–2 in vv. 49–50), frequent OT phrases, references, and allusions, the speech has a thoroughly biblical ring. The hearers are being confronted with their own story told in the words of Scripture, although the treatment of events is highly selective.

In treating Abraham, Stephen omits most of the material in Gen. 12:10–16:16 and 18:1–23:20, most notably his severest test of faith, the offering of Isaac (Gen. 22). He skips Isaac (v. 8; Gen. 21, 24, 26) and briefly mentions Jacob (v. 8; Gen. 25:19–34; 27–36), but treats Jacob more fully in the Joseph section (vv. 9–18). He gives disproportionate attention to Moses' birth and youth (vv. 20–22), his slaying of the Egyptian (vv. 23–29), and his call (vv. 30–34), all of which summarize Exod. 1:1–4:17. He telescopes the rest of Exodus through Deuteronomy in a single section (vv. 35–41), whose major focus is Israel's rejection of Moses and God's consequent rejection of Israel. The giving of the law, which is prominently treated in Exod. 19–20, is mentioned only briefly (v. 38).

At this point, the historical survey ceases rather abruptly, as Stephen introduces a fresh topic: the Temple. This part of the speech is less interested in historical coverage than it is in the tabernacle/Temple theme. He concludes with a trenchant critique of the Temple, citing Isa. 66:1–2 to show that no handmade building is adequate to house God.

In spite of its thoroughly biblical ring and the way it confronts Stephen's "brothers and fathers" (v. 2) with their own story, there are some points of tension with the OT. For example, it places Abraham's call, which Genesis locates in Haran *after* the death of his father, Terah (Gen. 11:31–12:3), much earlier "in Mesopotamia, before he lived in Haran" (vv. 2–3). His report of Abraham's purchasing a tomb in Shechem from the sons of Hamor (v. 16) conflates Abraham's purchase of the cave of Machpelah from the Hittites for a burial place (Gen. 23; 50:13) with Jacob's purchase of a piece of land near the city of Shechem from the sons of Hamor (Gen. 33:19; Josh. 24:32).

The speech may be read as a unified defense that develops three interrelated themes: God's dwelling place; promise fulfillment; and Israel's rejection of God's duly appointed representatives.

Stephen insists that, as early as Abraham, Israel is promised a place to worship God (v. 7b; Exod. 3:12), the land of promise (v. 4). Though removed to Egypt to live as aliens in a "country belonging to others" (vv. 6, 9–15), all the patriarchs were returned for burial in the promised land (v. 16). Still, with the promise unfulfilled (v. 17), the people remained in Egypt until God commissioned Moses to deliver them (v. 34). They spurned Moses' leadership and "in their hearts turned back to Egypt" (v. 39), thus refusing the chance to obtain their promised "place." Consequently, they would be exiled again "beyond Babylon" (v. 43). Eventually, the patriarchs transferred the "tent of testimony" from the wilderness to the promised land (vv. 44–45), whereupon David and Solomon sought to establish a more permanent "dwelling place for the house [or, God] of Jacob" (v. 46). Contrary to the prophetic word (Isa. 66:1–2), they mistakenly thought God's presence could be confined to a handmade house. Consequently, even with the Jerusalem Temple, God's initial promise (v. 7b) remained unfulfilled (vv. 49–50). The "place" where God's Spirit resides, and where the presence of God is dramatically at work, is no longer the Temple, but the newly constituted messianic community, which finally fulfills God's original promise.

Although the rejection theme emerges only in the latter part of the speech, and especially with reference to Moses, it is introduced earlier. The jealous patriarchs are censured for selling Joseph, only to have their misdeed reversed by divine intervention (v. 9). But it was Moses, above all, whose leadership was rejected by "his relatives, the Israelites" (v. 23). First, they refused to accept him, a fellow Israelite sent by God (vv. 25–28), which led to his exile in Midian. Second, they rejected him as the God-sent "ruler and liberator" (v. 35) who would bring them to the land of promise, and this in spite of stunning displays of God's presence through him: wonders and signs in Egypt, deliverance through the Red Sea, receiving the law at Sinai (vv. 35–38). Instead, they "pushed him aside" (v. 39), turned their hearts toward Egypt, and became idolaters (vv. 40–41). Consequently, God rejected them, turning them over to their idolatrous instincts (vv. 42–43). Read against the background of the rest of Luke-Acts, the speech presents the career of Moses, and Israel's reaction to him, in ways that parallel the Christ story (v. 37; cf. 3:22–23; Luke 24:19).

The rejection theme reaches its climax in the concluding indictment (vv. 51–53). With vivid metaphors drawn from their own past, the hearers are characterized as "stiff-necked" (Exod. 33:3, 5) and "uncircumcised in heart and ears" (Lev. 26:41; Deut. 10:16; Ezek. 44:7; Jer. 6:10; 9:26). They are assailed as always having resisted God's Holy Spirit (cf. Isa. 63:10) and standing in the succession of their predecessors who persecuted and killed the prophets (cf. 1 Kings 19:10, 14; 2 Chron. 24:20–22; 36:16; Neh. 9:26; Jer. 26:20–23; also Jer. 2:30). Stephen's indictment here echoes Jesus' earlier accusation (Luke 11:47–51). The hearers are implicated in the betrayal and death of the innocent prophet Jesus, the "Righteous One" (cf. Acts 3:14).

7:54–8:3, Stephen's Death and Its Impact. Resistance to prophetic words (6:10; 7:2–53) and deeds (6:8) now intensifies as the council, which earlier could only threaten, imprison, and wish to kill (5:33), finally does kill. Stephen's final accusation sends them into teeth-gritting rage (v. 54; Pss. 35:16; 37:12; 112:10; Job 16:9; Lam. 2:16). In stark contrast, a Spirit-filled Stephen (v. 55; also 6:3, 5) behaves like a prophet: he gazes into heaven to see God's glory (Isa. 6:1; John 12:41). He now

vividly sees what Jesus had promised this same council would occur—the Son of Man exalted to God's right hand (Luke 22:69), albeit standing (Dan. 7:13) rather than seated (Ps. 110:1). In reporting to the council what he sees (v. 56), he both confesses and proclaims (for the first time) the risen Lord.

These same words attest the innocence of God's "Righteous One" whom they have slain (v. 52) and thereby convict the hearers. By rejecting yet another of God's prophets, the new Moses of whom their own law spoke (v. 37; Deut. 18:15), they stand under God's judgment and the threat of another expulsion from God's presence (7:42–43; cf. 3:23).

This unusual form of proclamation is met with mob violence (v. 57) and a rejection that recalls Jesus' own rejection at Nazareth (Luke 4:29; cf. Job 16:10). The council's actions conform to the biblical prescription for dealing with blasphemers: death by stoning outside the city (Lev. 24:13–16; Num. 15:32–36; cf. Heb. 13:12–13), with witnesses going first (Deut. 17:2–7).

Once again, the crazed mob's frenzy contrasts with the prophet's calm confidence. Stephen's death is sketched in terms that recall Jesus' own Passion. It is the death of another innocent prophet. Like Jesus, Stephen utters a prayer of confidence rephrasing Ps. 31:5 (v. 59; Luke 23:46) and finally "in a loud voice" (Luke 23:46) offers a prayer of forgiveness for his enemies (v. 60; Luke 23:34).

The death of Stephen also introduces Saul (7:58; 8:1, 3), who gradually enters the story (9:1–30; 11:25, 30; 12:25) and emerges as the major figure in chaps. 13–28. His participation in Stephen's death becomes a major reference point for Luke (Acts 9:1, 21; 22:4, 20; 26:9–11; cf. 1 Cor. 15:9; Phil. 3:6; Gal. 1:13, 23).

Stephen's death becomes pivotal in the narrative and marks a major transition. The "severe persecution" (8:1) now widens the circle of resistance beyond Temple authorities and Jerusalem residents (chaps. 3–5; 6:12). Its positive effect is to scatter the church throughout Judea and Samaria, in keeping with Jesus' mandate (1:8). Imagined here is a single, great community of believers, now expelled from Jerusalem. The apostles, however, remain behind to authenticate the gospel as it spreads beyond Jerusalem (8:1; cf. 8:14; 11:1, 22).

8:4–12:25

The Gospel Spreads Outside Jerusalem to Judea, Samaria, Galilee, and the Coastland

8:4–40

Prophetic Witness of Philip

8:4–8, Philip Preaches in Samaria. A new phase opens as the gospel moves beyond Jerusalem and Judea to Samaria (1:8; 8:25). The major figure in this expansion is Philip, earlier introduced as one of "the seven" (6:5), later identified as an "evangelist" living in Caesarea (21:8; → Philip). The "city of Samaria" where he proclaimed Christ may have been either Sebaste or Shechem (→ Samaria, District of). This region, earlier unreceptive to Jesus' mission (Luke 9:52–56; though cf. John 4), "listened eagerly" (cf. Acts 8:10; 16:14; also Heb. 2:1), thereby fulfilling the prophetic hope that "peoples from afar" would hearken to the word of God (Isa. 49:1). Power to exorcise unclean spirits, earlier demonstrated by Jesus (Luke 4:31–37; 8:26–33), now extends beyond the apostles (Acts 5:16) to Philip, as does the power to heal the lame (Luke 5:17–26; Acts 3:1–11; cf. 9:32–35). God's reign, begun with Jesus (Luke 4:18–19; 7:22–23), continues through Philip's prophetic words and deeds (8:6).

8:9–13, Simon the Magician Converted. This first encounter with magic (cf. 13:6–12; 19:18–19) exemplifies both the gospel's triumph over popular religion and the corrupting power of greed (8:18–24). Luke emphasizes Simon's Samaritan connection (v. 9), his presumptuous claim to be "someone great," or perhaps a "great magician" (v. 9b; cf. 5:36; 12:22–23), and his unquestioned success among the Samaritans, who apparently ascribed him divine status (vv. 10–11; → Simon Magus).

Simon's miracle-working prowess, however, is surpassed by Philip's two-pronged ministry of preaching and healing. In preaching the kingdom of God, he continues the theme sounded by the risen Lord (1:3), the first to do so explicitly in Acts (see Introduction). Preaching "the name of Jesus Christ" doubtless signifies the "signs and great miracles" Philip performed (v. 13; also vv. 6–7). Incredibly, and impressively, "even Simon" converts (v. 13).

8:14–25, Apostles Confirm the Samaritan Mission. Even though God's power has been demonstrated through Philip's prophetic words and deeds (vv. 6–7) and has triumphed over Samaria's own hero Simon, apostolic authentication is still required (v. 14). The apostles who remained behind in Jerusalem (8:1) continue to serve as the vital link with the risen Lord (1:15–26). Their role is to validate authentic expressions of the Spirit when it moves out into new areas (cf. 11:1, 22). As before, the apostolic circle is represented by the two emissaries Peter and John (v. 14; cf. 3:1, 11; 4:13, 19), but Peter is clearly the principal figure. Philip disappears from the Simon story, as it becomes a confrontation between Peter and a half-converted magician (cf. 5:1–11). Though Peter's Pentecost promise (2:38) appeared to imply a simultaneous bestowal of forgiveness and receipt of the Holy Spirit, here the two benefits are separated by a considerable lapse of time (cf. 10:44–48; 19:5–6).

Luke especially highlights the behavior of Simon. The genuineness of his full conversion is presupposed (v. 13). Yet, like his Christian predecessors Ananias and Sapphira (5:1–11), he misconstrues the true nature of the Spirit and thereby the gospel. He mistakenly thinks, first, that the power to transmit the Spirit can be given to anyone indiscriminately, especially outside the apostolic circle, and second, that it can be bought (v. 18) and, presumably, sold (v. 19). Peter's rebuke (vv. 20–23) takes the form of a curse, ironically almost magical in form if not in effect. The tone is solemnly biblical (cf. Deut. 12:12; 14:27, 29; Ps. 78:37; Deut. 29:18; Lam. 3:15; Isa. 58:6).

The possibility of repentance is real (though cf. Heb. 6:4–6). Simon's prayer for forgiveness (v. 24) has the imploring tones of Pharaoh's confession and prayer before Moses and Aaron (Exod. 9:28; 10:17) and for this reason may be halfhearted. Once Peter and John confirm Philip's work, they themselves preach among the Samaritans (v. 25).

8:26–40, Ethiopian Official Converted. In this story, the gospel continues its geographical spread beyond Judea and Samaria to the more distant coastland region, including Gaza (v. 26), and finally Azotus (Ashdod) and Caesarea (v. 40). In effect, however, the gospel has spread even farther—to the outer reaches of Ethiopia (v. 27), where the first known black Christian returned rejoicing in his newfound faith (v. 39).

If the previous story featured Philip's prophetic deeds (vv. 6–7, 13), this one features his prophetic words. His preaching of Christ (vv. 5, 12) is now seen to include Scripture interpretation as a prominent element. Like the risen Lord and his predecessors Peter (chaps. 2–5) and Stephen (chap. 7), his task is properly to interpret Scripture as it relates to Christ (Luke 24:27).

The episode further extends Luke's promise-fulfillment program as yet another passage of Scripture is applied to Jesus (vv. 32–33). For the first time in Luke-Acts (and as a rare NT instance), Jesus' death (and possibly his resurrection) is interpreted in light of Isa. 53:7–8. This interpretation continues the Lucan emphasis on Jesus' death as that of an innocent prophet (cf. Acts 3:14).

The story is presented as an extraordinary encounter in which God is the primary actor. From beginning to end, Philip is prompted by divine impulse (vv. 26, 29, 39), as later happens when the Spirit launches new initiatives (cf. 10:19; 11:12; 13:2; 16:6–10). Like his prophetic predecessors Elijah and Ezekiel, he moves at the behest of the angel of the Lord (v. 26; 2 Kings 1:15) or of the Spirit, who even transfers him physically to a new locale for further mission (v. 39; cf. 1 Kings 18:12; 2 Kings 2:16; Ezek. 3:14; 8:3; 11:1, 24). With such thoroughgoing, explicit divine confirmation, further apostolic confirmation would be redundant (cf. 8:14–17).

The eunuch's conversion (unlike Simon's) is fully exemplary and illustrates the gospel's power to reach even the remotest regions and include outsiders (Luke 1:79). Ethiopia's remoteness and invincibility were legendary (cf. Isa. 18:1–2; Zeph. 2:12; cf. Ps. 68:31; Zeph. 3:10).

If the term "eunuch" is understood in its technical sense as a castrated male, his status as an outsider is further indicated (Deut. 23:1). It may, however, be an official title having nothing to do with his physical condition, thus indicating the social respectability of his position as the queen's minister of finance.

His inclusion within the people of God here appears to fulfill the prophetic hope that foreigners and eunuchs would eventually participate fully in the worship of God (Isa. 56:3–8). Yet, significantly, the foreigner who was previously attracted to Israel and its house of worship (1 Kings 8:41–43) is now attracted by their successor—"the good news about Jesus" (v. 35).

9:1–31
The Gospel Spreads to Damascus: Saul of Tarsus

This episode advances the Lucan narrative in two ways. First, it establishes the extraordinary nature of Saul's call, thereby certifying God's duly appointed prophet to the Gentiles, who later emerges as the central figure in the church's mission (chaps. 13–28). Second, it extends the story geographically, documenting the church's spread from the coastlands (8:40) to northernmost Syria—Damascus (9:2, 3, 8, 10, 19, 22, 27), where the gospel had already taken root (v. 19b). The Damascus congregation is probably to be understood as an offshoot of the Dispersion resulting from the Jerusalem persecution (8:1).

9:1–19a, Saul's Call. The story has two parts: Saul's encounter with the risen Lord (vv. 1–9), and Ananias's vision and ordination of Saul (vv. 10–19a). This narrative account is supplemented in certain ways by the two later accounts that occur in Paul's defense speeches (22:3–21; 26:2–23; also cf. Gal. 1:13–17).

Luke's portrait of Saul as the church's archenemy continues (cf. 7:58; 8:1, 3), though his resistance now intensifies. His reach now extends beyond Judea (8:3) to the "synagogues at Damascus" (9:2), which are under Jerusalem's jurisdiction. The narrative implies that the intended victims are Jewish Christians who still attend synagogue.

This scene resembles other ancient accounts where enemies of God's cause are dramatically halted through divine intervention and "converted" into God's proponents (cf. 2 Macc. 3:22–40; 4 Macc. 4:1–14). The encounter is presented as a truly extraordinary reversal of events through direct, divine intervention. The blinding light appearing suddenly from heaven

signifies God's dramatic interruption (v. 3; cf. 22:6; 26:13). Although Saul does not "see" anyone (nor do his companions, v. 7), clearly the risen Lord "appeared" to him, presumably in a vision (v. 17; 22:14; 26:16; cf. 1 Cor. 9:1; 15:8; 2 Cor. 4:6; Gal. 1:16).

More important here than what is seen is what is heard: a prophetic call. A heavenly voice speaks to Saul using a form of double address found in earlier divine commissions (Gen. 46:2; Exod. 3:4; 1 Sam. 3:4; also cf. Luke 8:24; 10:41; 22:31). The voice indicts by interpreting Saul's activity with reference to the new reality of Christ's resurrection: to persecute (reject) Christians is to persecute (reject) Christ (v. 5; Luke 10:16). The voice attests that Jesus, once rejected but now risen and vindicated, continues to be active in history. Earlier he had exerted healing power (3:16); now he exerts power to call new prophets.

The presence of witnesses, who also heard the voice (v. 7; though, cf. 22:9), confirms the reality of the occurrence. They correspond to the company of Israel who can attest the reality of God's revelation to Moses (Deut. 4:12; also cf. Wisd. of Sol. 18:1; Dan. 10:7).

It is Ananias, the Jewish Christian disciple from Damascus (cf. 22:12), who experiences an explicitly defined vision (v. 10), the first of several in Acts (10:3, 17, 19; 11:5; 12:9; 16:9–10; 18:9; 22:17; 23:11; 27:23; cf. Matt. 17:9). The risen Lord also speaks to him, directing his actions from heaven. In the dialogue, the Lord reveals Saul's whereabouts (v. 11), predicts what is to occur (v. 12), but, most important, encapsulates his commission to Saul (vv. 15–16).

These words summarize Luke's theological understanding of Paul as God's "chosen instrument" (cf. 22:15; Rom. 1:5; Gal. 1:15–16) and preview Paul's role later in the narrative. His chief contribution to the church's mission will be to carry the Lord's name "before Gentiles" (13:46–49; 15:3–4, 12; 22:21; 26:16–18; 28:25–28). Yet he will also witness to the name "before kings" (25:13, 23; 26:1; 27:24; cf. Luke 12:11), as well as before "the people of Israel" (e.g., 9:19–22; 13:5, 16–41). Like the prophets (7:52), he will also suffer (9:23, 29; 13:45, 50; 14:19; 16:19–40; 19:23–41; 21:11, 27–36; 22:22; 23:10, 12–15, 27; 24:23; 25:3; 26:21; 28:17). In doing so, he follows his apostolic predecessors (5:41; cf. 15:26). In this latter respect, Luke's narrative portrait is confirmed by Paul's Letters (1 Cor. 4:9–13; 2 Cor. 6:4–10; 11:23–29).

With his deepest fears allayed by the Lord's command, Ananias obediently proceeds to ordain God's designee (vv. 17–19a). By laying his hands on Saul, he bestows God's healing power and restores his sight (vv. 12, 17). The reality of the healing is attested by the scales falling from his eyes (v. 18; cf. Tob. 11:12–13). Possibly, his restored sight is to be understood as the visible sign of the Spirit's presence (v. 17), elsewhere manifested through speaking in tongues (cf. 2:1–4; 10:46; 19:6). His baptism removes the guilt resulting from his previous misdeeds (cf. 22:16).

9:19b–31, Saul in Damascus and Jerusalem. Saul immediately begins to carry out his divinely appointed role of preaching to the "people of Israel" (9:15; cf. vv. 20, 22, 27–29). Typically, prophetic proclamation is met with resistance that entailed suffering (v. 16; cf. vv. 21, 23, 29; cf. Luke 13:33–34; Acts 7:51–52). Thus this brief description of Saul's activity, first in Damascus (vv. 19b–25) and subsequently in Jerusalem (vv. 26–29), itself becomes a fulfillment of the Lord's words to Ananias (vv. 15–16).

The portrait of Paul that emerges here is a miniature of the portrait that unfolds later in the narrative: Paul preaching Jesus as Son of God (v. 20), the Messiah (v. 22), and Lord (v. 29)—central themes of his missionary preaching (cf., e.g., 13:33; 17:3; 18:5)—to the Jews in their synagogues (vv. 20, 28; 13:14), creating controversy and meeting resistance (v. 21; 13:45–46, 50; 14:2, 4–5, 19), even to the point of threats against his life (vv. 23–24, 29; 14:19; 20:3, 19), yet always dramatically delivered or vindicated (v. 25, 27, 30; 14:19–20). Already readers sense the manifest destiny of this divinely commissioned prophet, that all efforts to obstruct his path will be unsuccessful, that he has God's favor and protection, and that he will finally emerge triumphant (28:31). His miraculous escape from Damascus, unforgettably depicted (vv. 23–25; cf. 2 Cor. 11:32–33; cf. Josh. 2:15), recalls earlier vain attempts to restrain the apostles (cf. 5:17–26; also 12:6–11).

Saul's immediate removal to Jerusalem (also 22:17–21; 26:20), his acceptance by the apostles through Barnabas's generous commendation, and his assimilation into the Jerusalem church (vv. 26–29) reflect the Lucan tendency to align Paul closely with Jerusalem (cf. 11:27–30; 15:2–30; 21:17–26). The Pauline Letters, by contrast, reflect Paul's opposite tendency—to stress his independence of Jerusalem (Gal. 1–2); in fact, Paul denies having been known by sight "by the churches of Judea that are in Christ" (Gal. 1:22).

His opponents in Jerusalem are the Hellenists (v. 29), possibly the same group who opposed Stephen (6:9). Later, Asian Jews figure prominently in opposing Paul in Jerusalem (21:27). Once again, efforts to kill him prove futile (vv. 29–30). Saved by the Jerusalem church, he is removed to Tarsus, his hometown (21:39; 22:3), where he remains until Barnabas fetches him (11:25).

Typically, Luke concludes the section with a summary that idealizes, generalizes, and marks a transition (v. 31; cf. 2:47). With the Palestinian church (Judea, Samaria, Galilee) experiencing harmony, strength, religious devotion, and a quantifiable measure of the Spirit, Luke is now ready to describe a new stage in the church's mission. Geographically, the scene shifts to the coastlands, first Lydda and Joppa (vv. 32–43), then to Caesarea (chaps. 10–11). The focus shifts back to Peter, who dominates the next three chapters. Most important, Gentiles officially enter the story through the figure of Cornelius.

9:32–11:30
Prophetic Ministry of Peter in Judea and the Coastland: Apostolic Witness to the Gentiles

9:32–43, Peter's Healing Aeneas and Raising Tabitha. Peter is reintroduced into the story through two "prophetic deeds": healing a paralytic and restoring to life a Christian woman renowned for her generosity. Both acts are reminiscent of Jesus' own activity (Luke 5:17–26; 7:11–17; 8:40–56). They show that Jesus is actually (still) at work through Peter (v. 34; cf. 3:16; 4:10). The effects of Jesus' power are visible: in both instances, people "turned to the Lord" (vv. 35, 42), i.e., the Lord Jesus. This wording, as opposed to "turn to God" (cf. 14:15; 15:19; 26:20), probably implies that they were Jews (though cf. 11:21).

The latter story also echoes Elijah's raising the widow's son (1 Kings 17:17–24) and Elisha's raising the Shunammite woman's son (2 Kings 4:8–37). It thus casts Peter more firmly in an OT prophetic mold (cf. Luke 7:11–30).

Both stories are unusual in that both the afflicted persons are named: Aeneas and Tabitha/Dorcas. As before (when Barnabas exemplifies the church's widespread generosity, 4:32–37), Luke uses specific examples to make his point (cf. 8:7; 9:31).

These two stories also document the further spread of the gospel. Before the pivotal Cornelius story is told, Luke will have described the spread of the gospel from Jerusalem through Judea, Samaria, and Galilee all the way northward to Damascus (9:10, 19) and now westward to Lydda and Joppa, where there are already "saints" (vv. 32, 41) and disciples (vv. 36, 38), but where additional conversions occur (vv. 35, 42). Moreover, Peter's (and therefore the apostles') influence and authority are seen to extend beyond Jerusalem to the coastlands (v. 32). In terms of the story line, Peter is now in place in Joppa (v. 43), awaiting his summons by Cornelius (10:5).

10:1–8, Cornelius's Vision. Luke's portrait of Cornelius is a model of compactness: an introductory cameo portrait (vv. 1–2) that comes to life in the narrative itself (vv. 3–8; → Caesarea). He is undeniably gentile, a point repeatedly emphasized (10:22, 28, 35, 45; also 11:1, 3, 17–18) and on which the story hinges. Yet, he is a Gentile utterly devoted to Judaism (Rom. 2:28–29). He is a "God-fearer" (10:2, 22; cf. 13:16, 26; → Proselyte), and his religious devotion is exemplified by his almsgiving and prayer, activities highly prized by Jews (Tob. 12:8; Matt. 6:2–6; 1 Pet. 4:7–9)—and by Luke (on almsgiving, see Introduction; on prayer, cf. Luke 3:21; 5:16; 6:12, 28; 9:18, 28–29; 11:1–13; 18:1–14). Though a Gentile, he has supported Jewish causes financially (v. 2, "people" means the Jews; cf. 10:22; also Luke 7:5). Not surprisingly, the vision occurs while he—a Gentile—observes a *Jewish* hour of prayer (10:3, 30; see commentary above on 3:1–11). Nor is it a prayer before deaf ears. God has accepted his exemplary service as a fitting sacrifice (v. 4; cf. Lev. 2:2, 9, 16; also Tob. 12:12). Not only does he pray to God, but, completely in character, he also obeys God—fully and promptly (vv. 7–8, 33).

10:9–16, Peter's Vision. The scene shifts from Caesarea to Joppa, and the action centers on Peter (9:43). Once again, prayer provides the setting for a vision (v. 9; cf. 10:3; see commentary above on 3:1–11). All the marks of a divine revelation are present: Peter in a trance, not asleep in a dream; "heaven" (v. 11; cf. 7:56: Luke 3:21; Mark 1:10; Matt. 3:16; also John 1:51; Rev. 19:11; and a heavenly voice (vv. 13, 15).

The image of a "great sheet of sailcloth . . . slung by the four corners" (v. 11) is both unusual and without obvious literary parallels. The list of animals (v. 12) perhaps recalls OT lists (Gen. 1:24; 6:20; also Rom. 1:23). The divine injunction to Peter (v. 13) is puzzling, unless only unclean animals are imagined in the sheet or the command is understood to apply only to unclean animals. Either way, its force is clear to Peter. With horror reminiscent of Ezekiel's (Ezek. 4:13–14), he recoils at the very thought of violating scriptural food laws (v. 14; Lev. 11; Deut. 14; → Animals). The divine corrective (v. 15) is sometimes understood to reflect Jesus' relaxed reinterpretation of Jewish food laws (Matt. 15:1–20; Mark 7:1–23; also Rom. 14:14). It may, however, be an appeal to the primordial period, when all creatures were "good" (Gen. 1:31; Sir. 39:33–35; also 1 Tim. 4:4). The threefold occurrence (v. 16), after which the sheet ascends, attests its undeniability.

10:17–23a, Peter Receives Cornelius's Messengers. The vision so radically challenges Peter's worldview that he is genuinely perplexed (vv. 17, 19; cf. Luke 9:7; 24:4; Acts 2:12; 5:24). Even his movement to receive the delegation must be prompted by the Spirit (v. 19; 11:12)—another instance where the gospel is edged along by divine impulse (8:29; 13:2; 15:28). Like Cornelius, Peter is compliant (v. 21). The messengers summarize the earlier narrative but introduce the note that Peter will preach to Cornelius (v. 22). This paves the way for the sermon (10:34–43). By inviting them in as his guests (v. 23a), Peter is already acknowledging the truth of the vision and providing grounds for the later criticism (11:3).

10:23b–33, Peter and Cornelius Meet. Since they are acting at God's behest, the combined delegation leaves "the next day" (v. 23b) and travels to Caesarea, the scene of the next several events (vv. 24–48). Joining Peter are Jewish Christians from Joppa (v. 23b; cf. 9:41–42), later numbered as six (11:12), who become crucial witnesses to the conversion of the Gentiles (10:45) and confirm Peter's account at Jerusalem. The cluster of friends and family gathered by Cornelius (vv. 24, 27) becomes the nucleus of the Caesarean

church (cf. 12:19; 18:22; 21:8, 16). His deference to Peter (v. 25), by which he acknowledges God's messenger as well as confirms the truth of his earlier vision (vv. 5–6), also further illustrates his piety. It also allows Luke another opportunity to distinguish between divine power and human agent (cf. 3:12; 14:15; also Rev. 19:10; Wisd. of Sol. 7:1–6). Both Peter and Cornelius are responding, in their respective ways, to the same divine impulse.

10:34–43, Peter's Sermon. Whereas earlier sermons feature OT promise fulfillment and Israelite history (chaps. 2, 3, 7), this one is distinguished by its introductory statement about God's impartiality (vv. 34–35; cf. Deut. 10:17; 2 Chron. 19:7; Job 34:19; Sir. 35:14–16; Rom. 2:11; Gal. 2:6; Eph. 6:9; Col. 3:25) and its concentrated summary of the Jesus story (vv. 36–42), an admirable distillation of Luke's Gospel. Prophetic witness to Jesus is mentioned only briefly at the end (v. 43).

Like earlier sermons (see commentary above on 3:12–26), its chief subject is God—God's nature and what God has done through Christ. Its essential message to Gentiles is that Jesus is God's story continued. God sent, even "preached," the good news of Jesus (v. 36); Jesus was anointed by God (at his baptism; v. 38; Luke 3:21–22) and empowered by God's Spirit (cf. Luke 4:1, 14–21); his alliance with God was demonstrated by his "good deeds" of healing (v. 38; cf. 2:22); God righted the wrong of his death by raising him (v. 40; cf. 2:24, 32; 3:15) and revealing him alive (v. 41; Luke 24:13–53; Acts 1:3–11); he is ordained by God as the ultimate judge (v. 42; cf. 17:31); and the story continues to be told through God-appointed witnesses under divine mandate (vv. 41–42; cf. Luke 24:48–49; Acts 1:8). The God to whom Gentiles, like Cornelius, are already attracted has been at work visibly and audibly through Jesus and is now being heard in the apostolic witness. By acknowledging Jesus as God's Anointed, they will be acknowledging truly the God they already "fear" (10:2, 22).

Admittedly, God's story has Jewish roots. Jesus was attested by the prophets (v. 43) and introduced first to Israel (v. 36; cf. 13:26). His sphere of activity was "Judea [lit., the country of the Jews, probably including Galilee] and Jerusalem" (v. 39). Yet, he is no local, national deity, but has universal appeal as "Lord of all" (v. 36b). Eventually he is destined to be universal judge of the "living and dead" (v. 42). Forgiveness is now universally available (v. 43).

One important new element in this sermon is the emphasis on the God who does not "play favorites" (v. 34, NJB, REB). In Jesus is now realized God's intended vision of a humanity "without distinctions" (cf. 11:12). God fully accepts Gentiles and Jews on equal terms, and such labels as "clean"/"unclean" no longer apply (cf. 10:28); indeed, they no longer can exist. Not only can all persons be accepted by God; they can also fully accept each other in ordinary social relationships, such as table fellowship (10:23; 11:3).

10:44–48, Gentiles Accepted. In this sequel, the favorable response of the Gentiles to Peter's preaching is indicated: "hearing the word" (v. 44; 11:1; cf., e.g., 2:41; 4:4; 8:14) and "extolling God" (v. 46). But especially stressed is how God takes the initiative in letting the Holy Spirit "fall" upon the Gentiles, even during Peter's sermon (v. 44), as he "began to speak," as he later reports (11:15). Clearly, God used this as an occasion to bestow the "gift of the Spirit" on the Gentiles in a manner comparable to Pentecost (11:17; cf. 2:4). Accordingly, Peter challenges anyone present to deny them water baptism, the ordinary initiation rite admitting them to Christian fellowship (v. 47). Since there were no dissenters, he commands them to be baptized "in the name of Jesus Christ" (v. 48), thus acknowledging Jesus' universal lordship. His remaining with them "for several days" indicates his full acceptance of them (v. 48b; cf. John 4:40).

11:1–18, Peter Answers Jerusalem Critics. The final scene shifts to Judea, specifically Jerusalem, where the (other) apostles reside (cf. 8:1). As before, the apostles' authority to confirm legitimate expressions of the gospel is implied (8:14; cf. 11:22). Accordingly, Peter's defense of his actions occurs before them at Jerusalem. His critics are "the circumcised believers," (11:2; NEB: lit., "those of Jewish birth"; cf. 15:1, 5; Gal. 2:12), presumably a subgroup of Jewish Christians ("the believers who were in Judea," 11:1) who thought Gentiles should be circumcised. They appear to have criticized, first, his going to Gentiles, i.e., launching a mission to Gentiles, and second, his eating with Gentiles, i.e., engaging in table fellowship with them (v. 3), which, according to Peter's own testimony, was prohibited (10:28).

Peter's response is to rehearse "step by step" (v. 4) what had transpired. His remarks in vv. 5–16 provide a condensed account of what has already been described in 10:9–48. Repeating it underscores the signal importance of this episode, although some new details emerge. Peter's reminiscence of the risen Lord's promise (11:16; cf. 1:5; cf. Luke 3:16) is significant because it shows that the event is a fulfillment of a promise made by Jesus himself. He insists that the Gentiles had experienced precisely what the apostles had experienced at Pentecost (v. 17; 10:47). Accordingly, God not only approved, but initiated, his going to the Gentiles and associating with them. Failure to recognize this, even more, refusal to act accordingly, would be tantamount to opposing God (v. 15), about which readers have already been cautioned (cf. 5:3, 38–39).

The only proper response, as it was to Peter's earlier challenge (10:47), is silence. Accordingly, Peter's critics, and presumably the apostles and Judean Christians, "praised God" (v. 18; cf. 13:47–48). Their final

concession aptly summarizes the whole preceding story: from start to finish, it has been the work of God (v. 18; cf. 26:20). God moved the crucial players—Cornelius and Peter—into action, brought them together "in the presence of God" (10:33), unleashed the Spirit through the preached Word, provided undeniable proof of divine presence and confirmation, and now silences the critics.

11:19–30, Christianity at Antioch. Having reported the gospel's success in Caesarea, Luke now documents the church's further geographical extension: northward up the coast to Phoenicia, notably Tyre (21:3–4) and Sidon (27:3), northwest to Cyprus (13:4–12), finally (and most impressively), some three hundred miles farther north to Syrian Antioch, the third largest city of the Roman Empire (→ Antioch). His real concern is to sketch the beginnings of gentile Christianity at Antioch, which figures prominently later (13:1; 14:26–28; 15:22–35, 41; 18:22; cf. Gal. 2:11). He also uses this occasion to relate Barnabas and Saul to the earliest stages of gentile Christianity, thereby preparing them, especially Paul, for their leading role in missionizing Gentiles (Acts 13–28).

The gospel's thrust into these regions is attributed to those Jewish Christians who fled Jerusalem because of the persecution prompted by Stephen's controversial preaching and death (8:1–4). Although the majority seem to have preached exclusively to Jews, a courageous minority ("some," 11:20) of diaspora Jews from Cyprus and Cyrene took the bold step of preaching to "the Hellenists," i.e., Gentiles. They apparently did so without requiring circumcision (cf. 15:1, 5). They thus put into practice generally what Peter had done specifically with Cornelius—and without divine prompting!

Even though this outreach effort occurs independently of the Jerusalem church and without apostolic initiative, it has numerical success, which is attributed to the "hand of the Lord" (v. 21; cf. Luke 1:66; 1 Chron. 4:10). Since preaching to Gentiles had been accepted in principle by the Jerusalem church (11:18), it commissions not an apostle, but Barnabas, who is nevertheless duly qualified (v. 24; cf. 4:36–37), to confirm the effort as legitimate (v. 22). He sees what was already clear to the Antioch church—evidence of God's grace (v. 23). True to his name ("son of exhortation," 4:36; 9:27), he strengthens the church (cf. 13:43; 14:22). This apparently results in a second wave of conversions (v. 24).

So impressive was the strength of this mission that Barnabas fetches Saul from Tarsus (where the narrative had left him earlier, 9:30; though cf. Gal. 2:1) to assist in establishing gentile Christianity at Antioch (v. 26). Their yearlong joint ministry succeeds in producing results conspicuous enough to require coining the new name "Christians" (v. 26; 26:28; 1 Pet. 4:16). The designation was perhaps given by outsiders as a way of distinguishing them from the Jewish community or even identifying them as a subset of Jews with specific loyalty to "Christ" (→ Christian).

In displaying generosity comparable to that of the Jerusalem church (vv. 27–30; 2:44; 4:32–37), gentile Christianity is seen to be equally legitimate. Typically in Luke, the proper disposition of one's possessions signals authentic faith (see Introduction).

It is difficult to correlate this trip by Paul to Jerusalem with his own chronology sketched in Gal. 1:11–2:14 (→ Paul).

12:1–25
Gospel Resisted and Vindicated in Jerusalem

12:1–5, Herod's Resistance. The gospel now meets its most intense opposition yet reported by Luke. Previously, resistance has come from religious authorities (4:1–3, 5–6; 5:17–18, 21–28, 33–42; 6:12–15; 7:54–8:3; 9:1); now the lead is taken by the chief regional civil authority (→ Agrippa I).

The form of opposition intensifies. Previously, Stephen had died violently at the hands of religious authorities (7:54–60); now, Agrippa takes more widespread action against "some who belonged to the church" (v. 1). By beheading James, he strikes at Jesus' innermost circle of apostles (→ James). The pleasure taken by the Jews at this action (v. 3) also represents an intensification. Until now, no blanket resistance from "the Jews" has occurred (though cf. 6:12). The core of opposition has largely been Jewish leaders, mainly Sadducees. Clearly, what Agrippa did to James he now intends to do to Peter; hence, the unusually "fervent prayer" of the Jerusalem church (v. 5; cf. Jth. 4:8–15).

12:6–11, Vindication: Peter's Release. But just as the resistance intensifies, so does the form of divine vindication. The elaborate, detailed description of the security measures taken against Peter merely underscore the point. Overnight custody (4:3) and a "public prison" (5:18) now give way to a prison guarded by four squads of soldiers (12:4) and Peter chained not to the usual one guard, but to a soldier on each side (v. 6). The greater the attempt to restrain God's messenger, the more dramatic the escape (vv. 7, 11). As if there were any doubt, Peter's words interpret these events for readers: rescue has come at the hands of God (v. 11). Foiled are God's opponents: Herod and the Jewish people (v. 11b). Once again, God's cause has been vindicated (cf. Dan. 3:28; also Exod. 18:4).

12:12–19, Proof of Vindication. God's vindication of Peter (and therefore the gospel) is first confirmed within the Christian community. The comic scene of the terrified girl fleeing in disbelief while Peter calmly keeps knocking (vv. 12–17) not only shows that his release was attested by witnesses—the "many gathered"

(v. 12) and eventually "James [Jesus' brother] and the believers" (v. 17; → James)—but also serves to reiterate the main theme: divine deliverance (v. 17).

Second, Peter's escape is confirmed publicly. The soldiers' inability to find him confirms the miracle, as does Herod's execution of them for negligence (vv. 18–19).

12:20–25, Divine Reversal. The final proof of divine vindication is Agrippa's death (vv. 20–23). More important than identifying the actual occasion mentioned in v. 20 is to note the manner and stated cause of death. Like Josephus (*Antiquities of the Jews* 19.343–52), Luke stresses its suddenness, but his horribly graphic description (v. 23b) serves to place Agrippa among the pitiable company of those who have vainly—and naively—sought to obstruct the ways of God (2 Macc. 9:5–12; Jth. 16:17). Josephus also mentions the popular acclamation of his divinity, but Luke establishes the causal connection. Not content to resist God, Agrippa competed with God. In doing so, he had met the fate Ezekiel promised Tyre (Ezek. 28:1–10). This ultimate presumption was his fatal mistake; hence, his ignominious death. As predicted, arrogant rulers would be brought low (Luke 1:52).

With such a defiant opponent vanquished, Luke needed only to observe briefly the steady, unobstructed growth of the gospel. Another ironic reversal has occurred: the killer king himself died; his innocent victim, the church, "continued to advance and gain adherents" (v. 24). With this last opposition movement foiled, God's messengers, Saul and Barnabas, move about freely and boldly, now in place for an even more dramatic push beyond Palestine to Asia Minor (v. 25).

13:1–28:31

The Gospel Spreads Westward "To the Ends of the Earth": Paul's Mission

13:1–14:28

Beginning of the Pauline Mission: Preaching in Cyprus and Eastern Asia Minor

Even though a major new phase of the church's westward expansion is being depicted here, the story is told in ways reminiscent of earlier chapters. Once again, a duly selected, divinely appointed pair of named individuals bears witness to the gospel (cf. Luke 10:1). Peter and John now have their counterparts in Paul and Barnabas. Just as Peter emerged as the dominant figure in the earlier narrative, now it is Paul who does so.

13:1–3, Antioch: Commissioning Barnabas and Saul. Readers are already prepared to expect the church at Syrian Antioch to be a vital mission center (11:19–26). Its renown is indicated by the list of five named prophets and teachers associated with it (v. 1).

Presumably through one of these prophets, the Spirit commissions Barnabas and Saul for their divinely appointed vocation (v. 2; cf. Rom. 1:1; Gal. 1:15). The very words of the commission, as well as the subsequent reference to the Spirit's explicit role (cf. 13:4), indicate that the mission occurs at God's initiative, not merely because of human deliberation and planning. This is reinforced by noting the sacred setting in which the commission occurs (worshiping, fasting, and prayer).

13:4–12, Cyprus. Even though Barnabas and Saul preach to Jews in the synagogues of Salamis, on the eastern edge of Cyprus, the central event occurs at the opposite end of the island in the capital city of Paphos (→ Cyprus).

The prophetic deed reported is a confrontation between Paul and the Jewish magician Bar-Jesus, whose Aramaic name was Elymas (v. 8). The latter's status as a false prophet (v. 6; cf. Matt. 7:15; 24:11, 24; 2 Pet. 2:1; 1 John 4:1; Rev. 16:13; 20:10) is confirmed by his efforts to obstruct the true word of God (v. 8). Luke's designation of him as "magician" (v. 6; Gk. *magos*) is uncomplimentary, given the generally negative biblical attitude toward magic (cf. Deut. 18:10–12; Isa. 8:19; 44:25; 47:12–15; → Magic and Divination).

Paul's unusually harsh condemnation of Bar-Jesus (v. 10) recalls biblical images (cf. Sir. 1:30; 19:26; Jer. 5:27). The emphasis on perverting God's straight paths also echoes the OT (Prov. 10:9; Hos. 14:9) and may recall the preaching of John the Baptist (Luke 3:5). The words with which Paul inflicts blindness on him also echo biblical imagery (v. 11; cf. Judg. 2:15; 1 Sam. 12:15). Perhaps aware that Paul's actions will appear unjustifiably inhumane, Luke stresses that he was acting under the impulse of the Holy Spirit (v. 9) and thus as God's agent against the devil's surrogate (v. 10). Also, noting the punishment's temporary status (v. 11) softens the effect.

The immediate effect of Paul's action is positive: the proconsul believed (v. 12). This may suggest that Bar-Jesus's efforts to counter Paul's preaching involved magical deeds; hence, Luke would be portraying Paul as a more effective miracle worker. The direct correlation here between miracle and faith is comparable to that found in the Fourth Gospel (cf. John 2:11).

This story recalls that of Simon Magus in Acts 8. It shows the gospel's superior power over popular forms of magic as well as its power to attract an intelligent Roman official. Consequently, Rome is presented as sympathetic to the Christian movement. At the same time, Paul gains status as a miracle worker fully on par with Peter (3:1–11; 5:12–16; 9:32–43).

13:13–52, Pisidian Antioch. Here Paul's prophetic word (vv. 16b–41) is met with a divided response: Jews resist and Gentiles accept (vv. 44–52). The synagogue

at Pisidian Antioch, located in Galatia, the heart of Asia Minor, some one hundred miles northeast of Perga, provides the setting for Paul's extensively reported sermon, or "prophetic word." Going first to the synagogue becomes Paul's typical missionary practice (v. 14; 14:1; 16:13; 17:1–2, 10, 17; 18:4, 19; 19:8). The sermon, identified as a "word of exhortation" (v. 15; cf. 15:32; Heb. 13:22), is given in response to the invitation of the rulers of the synagogue. Paul's mode of delivery (v. 16) suggests a Greco-Roman oratorical style (cf. 21:40; 26:1).

Paul's sermon here is roughly equivalent in length to Peter's Pentecost sermon (2:14–36), and both are half the length of Stephen's speech (7:2–53). Although Peter's Pentecost address consists more of explicit scriptural exposition (Joel 2; Pss. 16; 110) than does Paul's synagogue sermon here, both culminate in preaching about Jesus, with notable emphasis on his death and resurrection. This latter feature is less prominent in Stephen's address. Paul's synagogue sermon resembles Stephen's speech, however, in the way it summarizes Israel's history. Though there is some overlap, it begins about where Stephen's speech leaves off—with Moses. This suggests that Luke is using sermons delivered on different occasions to unfold different parts of the Christian proclamation.

Broadly speaking, the sermon comprises two parts. First, there is a summary of Israel's history from the time of the Exodus until David (vv. 17–22), roughly a third of the speech. Then, the explicitly Christian story begins (vv. 23–41), with Christ introduced as David's successor (v. 23; cf. 2:30; Rom. 1:3; Matt. 1:1; John 7:42). The outline then follows a more conventional pattern, similar to Peter's Cornelius sermon (10:34–43). The preaching of John the Baptist is an essential chapter in the story (vv. 24–25; cf. Luke 3:1–22, esp. 3:16; 16:16; Acts 1:22; 10:37; also John 1:20), which serves as the crucial middle link between David and Christ. A definite structural break occurs at v. 26, with the repeated address introducing the second main part (cf. v. 16).

With no specific attention given to the life and ministry of Jesus (cf. 2:22; 10:36–39), the sermon moves directly to Jesus' Passion (vv. 27–29), with emphasis on the following elements: failure of the Jerusalem inhabitants and the Jewish leaders to recognize Jesus as the fulfillment of the prophets (v. 27; 3:21–25; 10:43; the motif of the Jews' ignorance, cf. 3:17; also 17:30; 1 Cor. 2:8), which resulted in Jesus' trial (v. 27); Jesus' innocence (v. 28; see commentary above on 3:12–26 [v. 14]); Pilate's role (v. 28; Luke 23:1–25; see commentary above on 4:23–31 [v. 27]); Jesus' death on a tree and burial (v. 29); God's raising him (v. 30; see commentary above on 5:27–32 [v. 30]); and his postresurrection appearances "for many days" (cf. 1:3; Luke 24:13–53) in Jerusalem to his Galilean followers, thereby qualifying them as witnesses (cf. Acts 1:8; also 10:39). Special emphasis is given to promise fulfillment (vv. 32–33) by interpreting his resurrection with reference to Psalms 2 and 16 (vv. 33–37). The form of argument is similar to that used by Peter in 2:24–36.

The sermon concludes with an offer of forgiveness of sins (v. 38; cf. 2:38; 3:19; 5:31; 10:43; Luke 24:47) and freedom from the Mosaic law (v. 39). With this latter motif, Luke gives the sermon a distinctive Pauline ring (cf. Rom. 3:28; 8:3; Gal. 3:23–26; 4:21–5:4), thereby preparing for the subsequent controversy created by the Pauline gospel (esp. Acts 15; cf. 15:1, 5; 21:20–26). This dual offer of good news is punctuated by a final prophetic threat (v. 41) drawn from Hab. 1:5, which anticipates the Jews' rejection. Its harshness is reminiscent of Stephen's concluding accusation (7:51–53) and anticipates the note on which the Pauline mission ends (28:26–28).

The initial response to the sermon is positive, among both "Jews and devout converts to Judaism" (v. 43). Opposition a week later comes from Jews, presumably members of the synagogue, whose jealousy is prompted by the unusually large response of the "whole city" (v. 44). By resisting, they fulfill Paul's prophetic anticipation of their inability to see God at work in their very presence (v. 41). Accordingly, it provides Paul and Barnabas an opportunity to state formally their principle of preaching first to the Jews, according to "divine necessity" (v. 46; 3:26; Rom. 1:16). Equally important, their rejection provides explicit justification for the gentile mission, which is also understood as direct fulfillment of the biblical promise (v. 47; Isa. 49:6) as well as the full realization of Simeon's earlier vision (Luke 2:32). Thus, both the Jewish resistance and the gentile mission are presented as instances of biblical promise fulfillment.

Ironically, Paul's sermon in the synagogue becomes the occasion for the Gentiles' hearty reception and the spread of the gospel through the entire region (vv. 48–49). The Jews' expulsion of Paul and Barnabas from the city and the latter's corresponding response recall Jesus' own predictions and instructions concerning appropriate missionary behavior (v. 51; cf. Luke 9:5; 10:11; also Acts 18:6). Divine approval of the Pauline mission to the Gentiles, and thus disapproval of the Jewish resistance, is indicated by the presence of joy and the Holy Spirit among the disciples (v. 52).

14:1–7, Iconium. This brief description of the Pauline mission in Iconium serves as a bridge between events described at Antioch and Lystra. The account is a generalizing summary of a mission that lasted "a long time" (v. 3), accompanied by the usual two-pronged witness of prophetic words and deeds (v. 3). Even though memorable events might have occurred during this time, none is singled out.

Luke uses Iconium to illustrate what must have happened typically in diaspora cities that contained Jewish communities. First, as long as it could be judged on its own merits and without interference, Paul's preaching in the synagogue convinced both Jews

and God-fearing Greeks who attended the synagogue. Second, resistance came from both Jews and Gentiles (unattached to the synagogue) within the city, but the real source of such resistance could be traced to the "unbelieving Jews" (v. 2). Third, in spite of such resistance, the gospel could be proclaimed boldly and attested by signs and wonders, both to great and visible effect (v. 3). Fourth, the gospel always stayed ahead of the resistance. Efforts to suppress the gospel, however hostile or threatening (v. 5), were unsuccessful in arresting the apostolic witness.

14:8–20, Lystra and Derbe. The Pauline mission now goes to a thoroughly gentile setting. Lystra has no Jews (hence no synagogue) except those who come from elsewhere (v. 19; though, cf. 16:1–2). Paul speaks not in a synagogue, but openly, probably in the village street (v. 9). Every detail of the account contributes to this masterfully composed portrait of a rural, pagan village.

As usual, Luke depicts Christian witness by using the twofold structure of prophetic deed and word (cf. 3:1–26): first, a tightly composed miracle story (vv. 8–10; on the literary form, see commentary above on 3:1–11) that causes misunderstanding and provides the occasion for clarification (vv. 11–14); second, a sermon (summary) that corrects the misunderstanding and in doing so offers a new worldview through the gospel (vv. 15–17).

The story shows how Luke understood the Pauline mission to have occurred typically in a popular pagan setting. "Signs and wonders" are given a prominent role, but their significance must be properly understood and interpreted. As before, Luke insists that such power derives not from humans, but from God (cf. 3:12). By employing a local Phrygian legend relating how Zeus and Hermes appeared in the human forms of Philemon and Baucis (Ovid *Metamorphoses* 8.611–725), Luke portrays the innocent misconstrual of divine power. Barnabas and Paul's emphatic disclaimer (v. 14), combined with their insistence on being fully human (v. 15; cf. 10:26; Rev. 19:10; also James 5:17; Wisd. of Sol. 7:1–6; 4 Macc. 12:13; though cf. Acts 28:6), corrects this misimpression. It also shifts the accent to the true object of human worship—the Creator God.

The sermon summary (vv. 15–17) encapsulates essential features of early Christian missionary preaching to Gentiles: turning from "worthless things," i.e., polytheism (v. 15; cf. Gal. 4:8–9) to "the living God" (cf. 1 Thess. 1:9–10; Acts 15:19; 26:20). The main element of proclamation is God as Creator (v. 15), a central feature of the biblical understanding of God (see commentary above on 4:23–32 [v. 24]), yet also acknowledged among Gentiles. A theology of "natural revelation" is expressed in the conviction that in nature God has been revealed visibly to all persons as the Creator and Sustainer of human life (14:17; cf. Lev. 26:4; Jer. 5:24; Ps. 145:15; 147:8). These themes are amplified later in the Athens sermon, which introduces specific claims about Christ not mentioned here (17:22–31).

As usual, both acceptance and rejection occur. Whereas the locals are enthusiastic (v. 18), resistance comes from outsiders—neighboring Jews who attempt to silence the gospel (v. 19). But the gospel is vindicated when Paul recovers from being beaten (v. 19) with astonishing speed, and the mission continues unabated (v. 20).

14:21–28, Return to Syrian Antioch. The return trip is not narrated in detail, but is used to introduce another important element of the Pauline mission—consolidating newly founded mission churches by providing further teaching and some organizational structure. The "strengthening" (v. 22) may be understood as an essential feature of early Christian mission (cf. 11:23; 13:43; 15:32, 41; 16:5; 18:23) and doubtless included general Christian exhortation, much of which is preserved in the Pauline Letters. But here its specific purpose is to brace the churches for continued hostility they would experience in the absence of their founding missionaries. This too seems to have been standard fare (cf. 1 Thess. 3:3; 2 Thess. 1:5–8). Jesus had envisioned as much (Luke 6:22–23; 10:16; 12:4–7, 11–12).

The organizational "strengthening" consisted in appointing leaders in each congregation. Here they are designated as "elders" (v. 23), a leadership structure found in other congregations (cf. 20:17–35; also Titus 1:5; 1 Tim. 4:14; 5:17, 19; perhaps Phil. 1:1), possibly following the Jerusalem organizational model (cf. Acts 11:30; 15:2, 4, 6, 22, 23; 16:4; 21:18). "Elders" are noticeably unmentioned in the undisputed Pauline Letters.

In his carefully worded description of the return to Syrian Antioch, Luke gives special emphasis to God's role in the Pauline mission to the Gentiles. By reporting "what God had done with them" (v. 27; cf. 15:4, 12; 21:19) and the "door of faith" (v. 27; 1 Cor. 16:9; 2 Cor. 2:12; Col. 4:3; Rev. 3:8) opened by God to the Gentiles (v. 27; 2:17; 10:45; 11:1, 18; 13:47–48; 15:7, 12), Paul and Barnabas merely echo what Luke has repeatedly reported throughout chaps. 13–14: the primary actor in the whole mission has been God who, through the Spirit, has initiated, motivated, and sustained this mission. This explains why it has been a series of successes. A considerable length of time (v. 28) is envisioned between the end of this first Pauline mission and the controversy it creates, reported in chap. 15.

15:1–35
The Jerusalem Council Resolves the Status of Gentiles

With the initial success of the gentile mission, it now becomes appropriate for Luke to address the network of questions created by an emerging gentile church. If Gentiles increasingly become Christians, are they to be

regarded as full equals with Jewish Christians before God? Are they not obligated to "keep the law of Moses" (v. 5)? In particular, must males not undergo circumcision, the one ritual act that symbolizes their full admission to the people of God? By extension, are they not obligated then to live by the law? In a word, must not Gentiles become Jews, at least in some minimal sense, to be truly saved?

The seriousness of these questions for Luke is seen by the way he reports the Jerusalem meeting. By treating it here in the narrative, he acknowledges its importance as a watershed event.

15:1–5, Convening the Council. The reasons requiring such a called meeting of the Jerusalem authorities are carefully outlined. The disputing parties are clearly identified, and the heat of the debate noted (v. 2). It is a genuine threat within the life of the church requiring the attention of both the entire Jerusalem (Judean) church (vv. 4, 12, 22) and the highest echelons of its leaders ("apostles and elders" are mentioned five times in the chapter—vv. 2, 4, 6, 22, 23; also 16:4).

The picture is further filled out by the parade of distinguished figures, including Barnabas, Paul, Peter, James the Lord's brother, Judas Barsabbas, and Silas (→ James; Judas; Silas, Silvanus). Peter represents the "old guard," the apostles who figure as the prominent leadership structure in chaps. 1–14 and who disappear after chap. 15 (though cf. 16:4). James, by contrast, represents the "new guard," the elders who figure as the prominent leadership structure in chaps. 16–28 (cf. 21:18). Luke reports two speeches, one by Peter (15:7–11), and the other by James (vv. 13–21), and the contents of the agreement, formally stated in a letter (vv. 23–29). No extensive report by Barnabas and Paul is given (v. 12), since their activity, reported in chaps. 13–14, is still fresh in the readers' minds.

15:6–11, Peter's Speech. Peter's remarks reiterate three points already registered in the Cornelius episode (chaps. 10–11): first, the decision to preach to the Gentiles was God's choice, not his (v. 7; 10:19–20; 11:12); second, visible evidence of God's approval occurred in giving the Gentiles the Holy Spirit "just as he did to us" (v. 8; 10:44–47; 11:15–17); third, since God has "cleansed" the Gentiles, the distinction between "clean" (Jews) and "unclean" (Gentiles) no longer holds (v. 9; 10:9–16, 28–29; 11:4–10, 12; cf. Rom. 10:12). His conclusion: Gentiles had been admitted by divine, not human, initiative. To have refused admission to Gentiles would have been to "hinder God" (11:17).

To these retrospective observations, Peter adds two new considerations, both having a distinctive Pauline ring: first, even our Jewish predecessors found the law burdensome and impossible to keep (v. 10; 13:39; Gal. 5:1; also Matt. 23:4), and second, there is only one way of salvation—"through the grace of the Lord Jesus" (v. 11; cf. Rom. 3:24; 5:1–2; Gal. 2:15–16; Eph. 2:5, 8).

15:12–21, James's Speech. After Peter's remarks calm the assembly, Barnabas and Paul report God's activity through them among the Gentiles (v. 12; cf. Acts 14:27; 21:19). Then follows James's speech, which makes two contributions to the debate, both new. First, he provides scriptural warrant for the gentile mission, thus to what Peter started (chaps. 10–11) and what Paul and Barnabas continued (chaps. 13–14). Arguing from the Greek version of Amos 9:11–12, supplemented by Jer. 12:15 and Isa. 45:21, James insists (vv. 16–18) that the gentile mission was God's ancient intention, not a novel idea (v. 17).

James's second contribution was to propose a concrete solution: Gentiles should adhere to a fourfold set of prohibitions outlined in Scripture (vv. 19–20). These included abstinence from, first, pollutions of idols (Exod. 34:13–16; Lev. 17:8–9; cf. 1 Cor. 10:7, 14), including eating sacrificial meat offered to idols (Acts 15:29; 21:25; 1 Cor. 8:1–13; Rev. 2:14, 20; 4 Macc. 5:2); second, sexual immorality, specifically prohibited types of marriages (Lev. 18:1–30; 1 Cor. 6:18; 10:8); third, strangled animals, i.e., those not ritually slaughtered (Gen. 9:4; Lev. 17:3–4; 19:26; Deut. 12:16, 23–28; 15:23); and fourth, eating animal blood (Gen. 9:4; Lev. 3:17; 17:10–14). The order of the prohibitions is not uniform (cf. vv. 20, 29; 21:25), and some ancient manuscripts omit the third prohibition since presumably it was included in the fourth.

The genius of this proposal is that these are the strictures the OT itself places on "aliens who reside among [the Jews]" (Lev. 17:8, 10–13; 18:26), i.e., Gentiles. The implication is that circumcision was meant only for Jews in the first place, not Gentiles. Accordingly, gentile acceptance of these prohibitions would be fully in keeping with the Mosaic Scriptures that have been read weekly in the synagogue "for generations past" (v. 21). James's proposal thus commends itself because it is scriptural in the strictest sense—it binds on Gentiles what God through Scripture had bound, and that alone, and it succeeds in waiving circumcision as a requirement for Gentiles. It thus allows Gentiles "to keep the law of Moses" (v. 5) in God's intended sense, not in the narrow sense insisted on by the Jewish-Christian Pharisees (v. 5).

15:22–29, Letter of Accord. The letter embodying this agreement repeats (for emphasis) the fourfold prohibitions (v. 29). It also indicates the scope of Jerusalem's influence over Antioch, Syria, and Cilicia (v. 23). The primary addressee was, of course, Syrian Antioch, where the problem especially had surfaced, probably because of its reputation for being the stronghold of the gentile mission (11:20–26) and for sponsoring the Pauline mission to eastern Asia Minor (13:1–3; 14:26–28). The letter also characterizes the "particularists" as a minority who had acted without due authorization from the highest authorities (v. 24; cf. 15:1, 5). In addition, it reaffirms the work of Barnabas and

Paul, indeed heroizes them (v. 26), and acknowledges the importance of Antioch by sending two highly respected men, Judas Barsabbas and Silas (v. 22), to vouch for the authenticity of the agreement.

15:30–35, Joy at Antioch. Luke's report of the sequel closes this controversy. The authorized delegation before a formally assembled Antiochian congregation presents the letter, which is received joyously (v. 31)—the typical Lucan response to genuine instances of the Spirit's work (8:8; 13:52; 15:3; cf. 5:41; 8:39; 16:34). The former acrimony (15:2) is past, and Judas and Silas are returned "in peace" to Jerusalem (v. 33). The letter thus not only brought peace and joy to Antioch, it sealed harmonious relationships between Antioch and Jerusalem. This leaves Paul and Barnabas in Antioch continuing in their ministry of preaching and teaching, in position to begin the next stage of the mission, which ironically begins not with peace but with a sharp contention between these two intimate co-workers.

15:36–21:14
Paul's Mission in the Aegean

The Pauline mission now moves westward to the area of the Aegean, first focusing on mainland Greece (Macedonia and Achaia) and later on western Asia Minor, mainly Ephesus. Considered as a single "panel" of material, this section illustrates Luke's capacity for selective treatment of representative events, as well as his ability to give a comprehensive picture over a broad geographical sweep.

15:36–41, Paul's Split with Barnabas. The next major phase begins not with a long-term vision for a Pauline mission to Europe, but with a modest proposal to visit the churches recently established in eastern Asia Minor (v. 36). Only en route, and through divine intervention (16:6–10), do such plans develop. Luke thereby continues to emphasize that Paul's mission to the Gentiles is God's doing, not Paul's.

From other sources, it is well known that Paul and Barnabas came down on separate sides of a critical question of principle and that this occurred at Antioch (Gal. 2:1–14). This incident goes unmentioned in Acts. Luke rather explains their split as the result of a "sharp disagreement" over the suitability of John Mark as a mission companion. It now becomes clear why Luke earlier mentioned his departure (13:5, 13).

16:1–5, Strengthening Churches in Eastern Asia Minor. Mentioning Timothy here serves to introduce a well-known Pauline co-worker, who perhaps was converted by Paul on his initial visit to Lystra (14:6–20; cf. 1 Cor. 4:17) and who figures prominently in the Aegean mission, usually in the shadow of Silas (17:14–15; 18:5; though cf. 19:22; 20:4; → Timothy).

But more than introducing a new face in the narrative, Luke is here explaining and thereby defending Paul's decision to circumcise Timothy. By showing that this action enhanced Paul's and Timothy's credibility among Jews (perhaps Jewish Christians) in the region, Luke is presenting Paul as sensitive to Jewish concerns (cf. 21:17–26; 22:3; 24:14).

At the same time, however, Paul delivers the Jerusalem "decisions" to his mission churches at Derbe, Lystra, and probably Pisidian Antioch (v. 4). Since they were initially addressed to a more limited circle (15:23), Luke indicates the wider scope of the decisions. He thus places Paul's earlier gentile mission under the authority of Jerusalem's church leaders (not merely the church at Syrian Antioch), thereby emphasizing even more its full legitimacy.

16:6–10, A New Mission Emerges. In the lengthy journey westward to regions well beyond Paul's earlier stated goal (15:36), Luke depicts the emergence of a new, previously unplanned European mission as the triumph of divine over human initiative. Paul's "best laid plans" are twice overruled as first the "Holy Spirit," then "Jesus' Spirit" redraws the itinerary (vv. 6–7). At Troas, a third, even more dramatic intervention occurs in the form of a vision (dream?) beckoning Paul to Macedonia (v. 9). The Spirit's earlier messages might have come through the prophetic voice of Silas, but not this one. So direct and visibly clear was it that Paul could only conclude that Macedonia was God calling (v. 10). Not one to disobey heavenly visions (9:4–9; 26:19), Paul complies promptly, like Peter, whom the Spirit had also directed into uncharted waters (10:19–23; 11:12).

The surprising shift to the first-person plural (v. 10) introduces the first of four "we" passages in Acts (16:10–17; 20:5–15; 21:1–18; 27:1–28:16). These intriguing references may signify that the author of these sections here joins Paul's entourage and thus writes from the perspective of an eyewitness. By extension, this same traveling companion may very well have written the entire book, enhancing his overall credibility by subtle, occasional references to what he saw and experienced personally. Or these sections may be travel diaries from an unnamed traveling companion, employed by the author, though loosely edited. Tradition has seen behind the "we" a reference to "Luke the physician," elsewhere mentioned as Paul's companion during his imprisonments (Col. 4:14; Philem. 24; 2 Tim. 4:11). The change may be purely stylistic, however, yielding no concrete historical information about either Paul's traveling companions, eyewitnesses to these events, or the authorship of these sections and the book as a whole.

16:11–40, Philippi. Paul's company responds promptly to the heavenly vision, wasting no time making the trip from Troas to Philippi in two days (v. 11). Identifying Philippi as "the principal city of that

particular district of Macedonia" (v. 12, NJB, one way of rendering a difficult textual problem) shows it to be the intended fulfillment of the Troas vision (→ Philippi). Luke thus gives it extended treatment. With memorable dramatic style, he skillfully sketches several representative episodes from Paul's several days there. Readers are able to see "a day in the life" of Paul the missionary to the Gentiles.

Since it is the first major stop of the European mission, Luke takes pains to underscore the thoroughly gentile setting. At the outset, he notes the city's status as a "Roman colony" (v. 12), thereby preparing readers for the narrative's preoccupation with things Roman (vv. 21, 37–39). Roman officials play prominent roles, and Luke uses proper technical terms to describe them (vv. 20, 22, 35, 36, 38). The gentile complexion of the city is reinforced by its minimal Jewish presence. Unlike most other cities visited by Paul, it has only a "place of prayer" (v. 13), which was located over a mile outside the city gate.

Other touches of local color capture the mood of a gentile city. The slave girl's "spirit of divination" is literally "spirit of Python" (v. 16), which readers would recognize as the serpent at the oracle of Delphi. The transparent profit motive of the girl's owners is also exposed in a manner typical of pagan social critics.

Five episodes are reported: (1) the conversion of Lydia (vv. 13–15); (2) Paul's confrontation with the possessed slave girl (vv. 16–18); (3) the Romans' hostility (vv. 19–24); (4) the conversion of the jailer (vv. 25–34); and (5) Paul's vindication (vv. 35–40). Each scene has its own purpose in the narrative.

The opening scene demonstrates Paul's consistent practice of going to the Jews first, for both theological and practical reasons (13:46; cf. Rom. 1:16–17). Once again, it is a gentile "worshiper of God" who is the most responsive (10:2, 22; 13:43; 17:4; 18:7). Her high socioeconomic status is suggested by her occupation (→ Purple), but also because both her name and hometown are given—the only person so identified in the narrative. Her conversion is prompted directly by the Lord (v. 14; cf. Luke 24:45). After her baptism, she becomes the model of hospitality—an indication of her true discipleship (cf. Luke 19:1–10). Her home becomes the mission base for the Philippian church, which provides long-term support for the Pauline mission (cf. Acts 16:15, 40; Phil. 4:15–18).

The encounter with the slave girl has its counterpart in earlier instances where the gospel confronted Jewish magic (8:9–24; 13:8–12). Now it is pagan magic, a first. The girl's oracular utterance (v. 17) is accurate and prescient: these men actually are obedient servants of God (v. 10) and will proclaim the way of salvation to the jailer (v. 31). Paul's exorcism of the spirit of Python, performed "in the name of Jesus Christ" (and after the manner of Jesus; cf. Luke 4:35, 41; cf. Mark 1:25, 34; Luke 8:29; cf. Mark 5:8) is instant, indicating that the power of the risen Lord continues to work in Paul as it did through the apostles earlier (cf. 3:6, 12, 16; 4:10).

The repercussions of Paul's actions are significant in that they reveal, for the first time, Roman resistance to the Christian movement. Precisely what illegal "customs" (v. 21) they were thought to be advocating is not clear—probably overt proselytizing of Roman citizens. Their disturbance of the peace was serious enough to cause the Roman magistrates to inflict physical punishment (vv. 22–23; cf. 2 Cor. 11:25; cf. 1 Thess. 2:2).

The midnight prison scene resembles earlier episodes in which Peter and the apostles are imprisoned (4:3; 5:17–21; 12:3–11). Similar divine intervention occurs—an earthquake that opens the prison doors and loosens chains (v. 26). But unlike previous episodes, this is no escape miracle per se. Though illustrating God's power to thwart enemy attempts to suppress the gospel, it mainly serves as the backdrop for a conversion story. Edifying elements decorate the story. Imprisoned messengers of God show faith in adversity by praising God in song and prayer, thereby preaching to the other prisoners (cf. *T. Jos.* 8:4–5; also Dan. 6:10–13). But the central figure is the jailer, whose cry for salvation echoes earlier cries (Luke 3:10, 12; Acts 2:37; cf. 22:10).

The jailer's conversion is compactly but fully depicted. He hears the Christian proclamation of the "word of the Lord" (v. 32; cf. 4:29, 31; 8:25; 11:19; 13:46; 14:25; 16:6; Phil. 1:14; Heb. 13:7), demonstrates his penitence by washing Paul and Silas's stripes (cf. Luke 3:8; Acts 26:20), is immediately baptized along with his family (cf. 11:14; 16:15; 18:8; also John 4:53; 1 Cor. 1:16), demonstrates the genuineness of his discipleship by extending hospitality (as Lydia had done), and gives sure proof of the Spirit's presence by "rejoicing" with his household (cf. Acts 8:39; see commentary above on 15:30–35 [v. 31]). Luke perhaps indicates his Christian status by portraying his newly acquired religious vocabulary—he extends the biblical greeting of peace (v. 36; 1 Sam. 1:17; 20:42; 2 Sam. 15:9; 2 Kings 5:19; Jth. 8:35; Mark 5:34; Luke 7:50; James 2:16).

The final scene (vv. 35–40) illustrates Luke's consistent interest in vindicating the cause of the gospel. Although it is the Romans who take hostile action against God's messengers (vv. 22–24), it is also the Romans who finally quail before a defiant Paul, indeed apologize and humbly ask him to leave their city! A final visit to Lydia's house suggests that Paul leaves behind a small band of committed converts, "the brothers," living under the patronage of this well-to-do Roman merchant (v. 40).

17:1–15, Thessalonica and Beroea. The ninety-five-mile journey from Philippi to Thessalonica, the capital of the province of Macedonia (→ Thessalonica), led

along the Via Egnatia, which ran east-west across Macedonia from Dyrrhachium and Apollonia on the Adriatic coast through Thrace to Byzantium. Paul's practice of going first to the synagogue by now is customary (see commentary above on 13:13–52 [v. 14]). Specially noted is the length of his preaching ("three sabbath days," probably consecutive, v. 2), but also that Paul's argument was "from the scriptures" (v. 2). For the first time, Paul's preaching is said to focus specifically on the necessity of Christ's suffering and resurrection (v. 3; cf. 26:23; see Introduction). This aligns Paul's preaching even more directly with the early apostolic preaching as well as the preaching of Jesus himself.

The meager response by the Jews to Paul's preaching sharply contrasts with that of the "devout Greeks" and leading women (v. 4). But Luke gives even greater emphasis to the negative, "jealous" response by the Jews (v. 5; cf. 5:17; 13:45; also 7:9) and the episode involving Jason, the only event in either Thessalonica or Beroea Luke describes in any detail (vv. 5–9). It shows that in Europe, as in Asia Minor (chaps. 13–14), the real source of opposition to the gentile mission came from the Jewish synagogues, not from Roman officials.

Luke uses the episode to introduce two charges leveled by Jews (and perhaps pagans) against Christians. The first charge, "they have been turning the world upside down" (v. 6, NRSV), refers not to the astonishing rapidity with which the movement has spread, but to its rather consistent tendency to upset the peace (16:20; 24:5, 12). The second charge implies that Christianity was a political threat because of claims about Jesus' kingship (v. 7; cf. Luke 1:32–33; 19:38; 23:2–4, 37–38; on "kingdom of God," see Introduction). Especially sensitive to the potentially serious implications of such charges, Luke reports the Romans' refusal to take action, thus vindicating the church (v. 9; cf. 18:12–17).

Even when the Thessalonian Jews follow the scent to Beroea and there resort to similar tactics (v. 13; cf. 14:19), they are thwarted once again. The ever vigilant "believers" (lit., "brothers") protect Paul and manage his escape, thus enabling the gospel always to stay one step ahead of its opponents (vv. 10, 14–15; cf. 9:25; 20:3; 23:16–35). Resistance to the gospel is seen to be an exercise in futility.

In treating Beroea (vv. 10–14), Luke does more than continue the travel narrative. By juxtaposing Beroea with Thessalonica, he compares two different responses to Paul's gospel and thereby scores an important theological point. He first depicts the impressive response to Paul's preaching in Beroea by both Jews and Greeks (vv. 11–12). Even in the midst of the gentile mission, Jews respond positively to Paul's gospel when they are "fair-minded" (REB, v. 11; preferable to NRSV: "receptive"), perhaps serious-minded, and willing to "examine the scriptures every day." Luke's fundamental point is that Jews' responsiveness to the gospel is in direct proportion to their willingness to give Scriptures a fair hearing and close scrutiny and to have them properly "opened" by Christian interpreters (Luke 24:27, 32, 45; Acts 8:35).

17:16–34, Athens. In Luke's overall literary strategy for depicting the Pauline mission in Europe, Athens provides the occasion for summarizing Paul's missionary preaching to Gentiles. This section supplements the Lystra episode (14:8–20), which shows Paul engaging popular pagan religion and only briefly outlines his preaching.

Luke sets the stage for Paul's sermon with a well-drawn description, lively with movement and dialogue, intended to capture fully the spirit of the intellectual and cultural center of Greece (vv. 16–21; → Athens). Paul's preaching in the synagogue to "Jews and devout persons" is introduced, but dropped immediately (v. 17). Paul engages well-known schools of popular philosophy (vv. 17–18; → Epicureans; Stoics). The caricature "babbler" (v. 18), literally "seed-picker" (Gk. *spermologos*), marks Paul as a social type well known in antiquity—the wandering philosopher/preacher who, like a bird picking up seeds, collects philosophical terms here and there and uses them in his street diatribes with little or no grasp of their meaning (Demosthenes 18.127; Dio Chrysostom *Oration* 32.9). Less scornful was the suggestion that he might be preaching "foreign divinities," a charge similarly leveled against Socrates (Plato *Apology* 24B, 26B), whose memory Luke's description recalls. Noting that Paul preached "Jesus and the resurrection" (v. 18) not only helps account for their charge—they perhaps misunderstood "resurrection" (Gk. *anastasis*) as a goddess alongside Jesus—but also identifies the unnamed "man" later in the sermon (v. 31).

Luke continues to portray the ethos of Athens as Paul is led away to the Areopagus (v. 19). Whether it should be understood as a formal council or a place for uninterrupted conversation is uncertain (→ Areopagus).

Paul's sermon (vv. 22–31) is carefully linked to the Lucan setting and as carefully composed for maximum rhetorical effect, fit for a standing Greek orator (v. 22). It is addressed to the same audience as Socrates' "Athenians" (v. 22; cf., e.g., Plato *Apology* 17A). Paul's mention of their being "extremely religious" (v. 22) appropriately acknowledges their renowned esteem for things divine. Concrete proof was provided by their "objects of worship" (v. 23; cf. Wisd. of Sol. 14:20; 15:17), most notably the inscription "To an unknown god," which suggests there is one they had missed. Even though no inscription with precisely this wording is known from ancient architecture or literature, pagans acknowledged the existence of unknown gods. As an introductory theme linking the setting to the sermon the "unknown god" provides an effective strategy for

introducing Christian preaching without offending gentile sensibilities.

Like the Lystran sermon (14:15–17), this sermon differs markedly from the other missionary sermons in Acts. There is neither reference to Israel's history nor any mention of the life, ministry, teachings, and Passion of Christ. Only at the end does it become explicitly Christian with a brief, unnamed reference to the "man" whom God raised from the dead and appointed universal judge (v. 31).

Nevertheless, the sermon is anchored firmly in the biblical tradition, specifically in its presentation of God as Creator and, therefore, universal Sovereign of heaven and earth (see commentary above on 4:23–31 [v. 24]). In this respect, it resonates with an equally well ingrained tradition of Greek religious-philosophical thought.

Two conclusions are drawn from this basic theological claim: first, humanly constructed shrines are inadequate to house this cosmic Creator (v. 24; cf. 7:48–50), and second, sacrifices served up by human hands, with their attendant altars and images, are inappropriate for a self-sufficient God (v. 25; cf. Ps. 50:12–14).

In addition to "the world," God had created humanity (vv. 26–28). This contention is informed by both biblical and nonbiblical understandings of creation. Tracing the nations to "one ancestor" (lit., "one," v. 26; perhaps "stock," REB) doubtless recalls the biblical story of Adam (Gen. 1:26–28; also Gen. 10). The ordering of "allotted times" (probably historical epochs rather than seasons; though cf. Gen. 1:14; Ps. 74:17; Wisd. of Sol. 7:18) and establishing (geographical) "boundaries" defining where nations live (cf. Deut. 32:8; also Ps. 74:17) also reflects a biblical outlook, yet not exclusively.

The more important point, however, is the corollary that humans are living beings created to "search and find God" (17:27–28; Deut. 4:29; Isa. 55:6; Wisd. of Sol. 13:6–7). Because of God's proximity to "each one of us," both spatially and historically (v. 27; Ps. 145:18; Jer. 23:23–24; Dio Chrysostom *Oration* 12.28), "finding God" is no remote possibility. Yet neither is the discovery of God inevitable, something that happens automatically.

The claim that human beings are inseparably related to God their Creator is explicitly supported by quotations from pagan poets. The first, which is usually attributed to the sixth-century B.C. Greek philosopher-poet Epimenides, reverses the usual pantheistic Stoic assertion of divine immanence, namely, that God "is in" everything, and asserts that those who are given life *by God* necessarily find their life *in God.* Creatures are indissolubly linked with their Creator, utterly dependent on God for life, movement, and breath (v. 28). The second quotation, more certainly attributed to Aratus, the third-century B.C. Cicilian poet, draws the defensible conclusion that God's creatures are also God's "offspring" (v. 28b). The relationship, then, is not simply that of Creator and creature, but Parent and child. So far, biblical and nonbiblical religious traditions have converged in a unified understanding of God as Creator and its implications.

Next, the sermon explicitly addresses the question of how appropriate lifeless images are for the worship of a living Creator (v. 29). Although it is informed here by biblical traditions that eschew idol worship (Deut. 4:28; Isa. 40:18–20), its tone is less polemical (cf. Wisd. of Sol. 13–15; → Idol). Even some pagan critiques of idol worship were harsher. Absent is the satirical description of the woodworker or stonemason who crafts an idol and prays to it, only to be met with stone silence (cf. Isa. 44:9–20; Wisd. of Sol. 13:10–14:7). Rather, a gentler point is made: artistic images, as aesthetically pleasing as they might be, inadequately represent the deity because they are humanly imagined and crafted, not divinely created: how can something we fashion adequately represent the One who fashioned us?

At this point, the sermon takes a sharp turn away from the common ground established between biblical and pagan religion. Even so, image worship is attributed to "ignorance" (v. 30; cf. 3:17; 13:27; Luke 23:34). God is said to "overlook" such previously misguided efforts (Sir. 28:7; cf. Rom. 1:20–23). What is now required is a fundamental change—universal repentance, which would be reflected in a more enlightened form of worship appropriate to a sovereign deity. Previously, Christian preaching has called for repentance especially on the part of Jews (2:38; 3:19; 5:31; esp. 20:21). Now a similar reorientation is being required for Gentiles as well (cf. 26:20; 1 Thess. 1:9–10; though cf. Acts 11:18).

Only now does the sermon become explicitly Christian, as Paul introduces the notion of God's universal judgment, which also reflects a biblical perspective (v. 31; Ps. 9:7–8; 96:11–13; 98:8–9; also Acts 10:42; Rom. 2:16; 14:9–10; 2 Tim. 4:1; 1 Pet. 4:5). The "fixed day" renders the OT notion of the coming "day of the Lord" (Obad. 15; Amos 5:18–20; Joel 1:15; Zeph. 1:14–18; Isa. 24:21; → Judgment, Day of).

But why does the sermon take this turn before a gentile audience? Perhaps it is the theme of "universal righteousness," or "universal justice," which Luke hopes Greeks will find appealing. Retributive justice is assured because the living God has already reversed one injustice by raising Jesus from the dead (cf. 3:14–15). Moreover, such justice is most likely to be mediated to the rest of humanity not through lifeless idols, but through the "man" who, like God, is now alive—Jesus.

The conclusion to Paul's sermon is conspicuously abrupt (vv. 32–34), though not unexpected, given Luke's earlier description of the setting. The light re-

sponse (v. 34) included two named individuals, Dionysius and Damaris, who for some reason do not qualify for the honored status of "first converts of Achaia" (1 Cor. 16:15).

18:1–17, Corinth. Just as Philippi, Thessalonica, Beroea, and Athens have served to illustrate different aspects of Paul's missionary practice and preaching in the European mission, Corinth presents still another situation. Certain features are familiar, e.g., preaching in the synagogue first to Jews (and Greek God-fearers), then turning to Gentiles. But the total configuration is distinctively new.

Here, Luke shows, first, how Paul, assisted by coworkers, establishes the "word of God" (v. 11) in a major Greco-Roman urban center (→ Corinth); second, how he justifies directing his mission in this city away from Jews and primarily toward Gentiles; and third, how Christianity, after settling in to a community and then being formally charged by Jews with being illegal, is officially vindicated before Roman authorities.

Unlike other founding visits, both before and after, a vital role is played by named co-workers (v. 2; → Aquila; Prisca, Priscilla). Though described as *Jews* expelled from Rome by Claudius (ca. A.D. 49), quite possibly these diaspora Jews were already Christians who figured in "disturbances [made] at the instigation of Chrestus" (Suetonius *Claudius* 25) in Rome involving Jews and (Jewish) Christians. Their initial association with Paul at Corinth was professional, perhaps as members of the same leather-workers guild. During this initial period, Paul was only able to preach in the synagogue "every sabbath," presumably because during the week he actively worked at his trade. This previously unmentioned feature of his missionary practice is later stressed by Luke (20:34); it had been emphasized by Paul himself (1 Thess. 2:9; 1 Cor. 4:12; also 2 Thess. 3:7–9).

The arrival of Silas and Timothy from Macedonia marks a new stage (v. 5). They increased the workforce and possibly brought financial contributions from Philippi (Phil. 4:15–16; 2 Cor. 11:7–9), which enabled Paul to be "occupied [full-time] with proclaiming the word" (v. 5). More explicit claims about Christ result in intense Jewish resistance not unlike previous occasions (v. 6; 13:45; 17:5, 13). This results in Paul's formal repudiation of the Jews, both by symbolic gesture (v. 6; cf. Neh. 5:13; also Acts 13:51; Luke 9:5; 10:11) and solemn, biblical pronouncement of their guilt (2 Sam. 1:16; 14:9; Jer. 51:35; Ezek. 33:4–6; cf. Matt. 23:34–35; 27:25; Acts 5:28), his innocence (Acts 20:26; cf. Matt. 27:24; Sus. 46), and the legitimacy of directing his mission toward Gentiles (Acts 13:46–47; 28:28; cf. Rom. 1:16; 11:11).

The move from the synagogue next door to the house of the gentile God-fearer Titius Justus symbolizes the beginning of the gentile mission proper (v. 7). Reporting the conversion of the prominent synagogue official (v. 8) may be intended to show that in direct competition with the synagogue, Paul's mission was still effective, even among Jews. In any event, the number of gentile converts ("Corinthians") swelled (v. 8).

But what happens when the church takes root in a place and becomes more highly visible, when outsiders, especially Roman officials, recognize it as something distinct from the synagogue? Might it lose its legal status and social acceptability? Would such long-term success provoke the authorities to take countermeasures against it, even suppress it? To such fears, Christ's nighttime vision to Paul appears to be addressed (vv. 9–10). As had his prophetic predecessors (Josh. 1:9; Isa. 41:10; 43:5; Jer. 1:8, 19), Paul receives divine assurance. He is urged to be fearless in proclaiming God's message and is assured of God's presence and his own personal safety. Paul's full compliance is indicated by his staying an unusually long time (eighteen months, v. 11). This also confirms the truth of Christ's promise. The length of stay attests that "many people" (v. 10) did respond.

Paul's vindication before Gallio (vv. 12–17) is presented as the climax of Paul's stay in Corinth, occurring after the impressive growth of the gospel from meager beginnings has been carefully documented (→ Gallio). This episode shows that even if Christianity begins, grows, and flourishes in a Roman city like Corinth, and even if Jews bring formal charges against it before a Roman tribunal, it will elicit no attention from Rome. No Roman laws are being violated; only Jewish laws are being debated. By his silence Gallio approves.

18:18–23, Moving Toward Ephesus. The main function of this section is transitional, serving to get Paul from Corinth to Ephesus. With no formal ending to a "missionary journey," as previously (e.g., 14:26–28) or well-advertised beginning for a "third journey" (e.g., 15:36–41), this section should be read as a continuation of Paul's mission to Gentiles in the Aegean.

At the Corinthian suburb of Cenchreae, Paul (possibly Aquila) fulfills a Nazirite vow (though shaving the head normally occurred at the end rather than the beginning of such vows; cf. Num. 6:1–21, esp. v. 5; → Nazirites). Thereby Luke demonstrates Paul's continued fidelity to his Jewish heritage, which becomes important later (cf. Acts 20:16; 21:20–26).

Landing at Caesarea, some three hundred miles south of Antioch, remains puzzling, as does the unusually vague reference to "going up and greeting the church" (v. 22). Probably the Jerusalem church is meant, although conceivably it could be the Caesarean church. Finally, having reached his home base Antioch (cf. 13:1–3; 14:24–28; 15:36–41), his departure is rather straightforward and perfunctory (v. 23). Such inattention to details suggests that Luke did not intend to

signal the end of one phase of Paul's mission and the formal beginning of another.

18:24–19:41, The Pauline Mission in Ephesus. The account of activities in Ephesus consists of six parts: (1) Apollos's conversion (18:24–28); (2) Paul's baptizing twelve disciples (19:1–7); (3) establishing an effective mission in Ephesus for Asia (19:8–10); (4) Paul's prophetic deeds and the gospel's triumph over pagan magic (19:11–20); (5) Paul's plans to go to Rome (19:21–22); and (6) the gospel confronting pagan religion: Christ and Artemis (19:23–41).

Apollos's conversion occurs before Paul's arrival in Ephesus, but it is achieved by Priscilla and Aquila, duly certified members of the Pauline circle. It thus becomes the first episode of the Pauline mission at Ephesus (18:24–28).

There obviously existed a Christian community (18:27) at Ephesus prior to, and therefore independent of, Paul (unless 18:19 intends to portray Paul as the founder of the Ephesian church). From somewhere—probably Alexandria (Egyptian Christianity is otherwise untreated by Luke; though cf. 6:9), less likely from Christians already resident in Ephesus—Apollos had been "instructed in the Way of the Lord" (i.e., Jesus; 18:25; cf. 9:22; 22:4; 24:14, 22; → Apollos).

This episode illustrates how the early church, Pauline Christianity in particular, dealt with cases of imperfect knowledge or how independent streams of Christianity were brought into the mainstream of apostolic Christianity. In this instance, the issue was an inadequate understanding of Christian baptism.

Luke also uses the Apollos episode to show how a Pauline church enters its second phase under the leadership of another teacher. A Christian teacher duly corrected by members of the Pauline circle is thus recommended by letter (18:27; cf. 2 Cor. 3:1–2; also Rom. 16:1; Col. 4:10) to another church, and Paul's successor continues to do precisely what Paul himself did when he was there (18:28).

Coupled with the Apollos confirmation is the episode involving twelve disciples of John (19:1–7), which presents a new situation. When Paul arrives at Ephesus, he finds those who are already "disciples"—probably Christians, assuming Luke uses the term consistently (v. 1; e.g., 19:9, 30; also 11:26). Yet their (Christian?) discipleship is lacking in one vital respect. They are completely ignorant of the Holy Spirit, the sure sign in Luke-Acts of full-fledged forms of Christianity (cf. Luke 3:16; Acts 1:4–5; 11:16; 13:52). They had, however, received John's baptism (19:3), although where, how, and by whom are not stated. Apollos perhaps? This suggests the existence of "Baptist sects" and the continuing influence of John's movement outside Palestine long after the death of Jesus.

The inclusion of this episode shows what Paul did to incorporate quasi-Christian groups into the church's mainstream. Just as their predecessors who were also "firsts," albeit in different ways, had done, they receive, first, baptism "in the name of the Lord Jesus" (v. 5; signifying fully their shift of loyalty from John to Jesus) and, second, apostolic (or equivalent) confirmation by the bestowal of the Holy Spirit (v. 6), visibly evidenced, usually through speaking in tongues and prophesying (2:4, 38–39; 8:14–19; 10:44–48; 11:15).

Establishing an effective Pauline mission in Ephesus (19:8–10) follows a familiar pattern with some new features. For the first time, the content of Paul's synagogue preaching is said to focus on the "kingdom of God" (v. 8), already hinted at earlier (14:22), and repeated later (20:25; 28:23, 31; see Introduction). This links Paul still further with his predecessors (8:12) but, more important, with Christ (1:3; also Luke 4:43). Also striking is the duration of his ministry possibly in a public hall (→ Tyrannus, Hall of)—two years, the longest yet, and when combined with the earlier three months (19:8), can be rounded off to a three-year stay in Ephesus (20:31). Accordingly, Paul's mission radiates beyond a single city to an entire region (cf. 13:49), reaching both Jews and Greeks throughout Asia, i.e., western Asia Minor. Included would be cities of known Pauline connections: Colossae, Laodicea, and Hierapolis (Col. 4:13–17). Luke thereby shows Paul's ever widening influence.

Luke highlights Paul's healing powers as an integral part of his two-year ministry (19:11–12; cf. 2 Cor. 12:12). Although he has earlier performed "prophetic deeds" (13:9–12; 14:3, 8–10; 16:16–18), what now occurs is clearly "extraordinary": healing and exorcising through both direct (laying on hands) and indirect contact (19:11–12). This picture of enhanced healing power casts him even more firmly in the mold of the apostles (5:12–16) and Jesus himself (Luke 4:31–41; esp. Luke 8:43–48; cf. Mark 5:27; Matt. 9:20–22; also Mark 6:53–56; Matt. 14:34–36).

Paul's reputation as an exorcist is further enhanced as he is pitted against seven "itinerant Jewish exorcists" (19:13–17). Oddly, however, Paul does not actually exorcise the man's evil spirit (cf. Luke 4:33–37; Mark 1:23–28). Rather, the Jewish exorcists themselves acknowledge Paul's unquestioned power over the demonic order (19:13). The evil spirit then utters a confession that simultaneously qualifies Paul and disqualifies them as rightful colleagues of Jesus (v. 15). As proof, the one possessed man single-handedly whips the seven, which apparently serves to demonstrate the superiority of Paul's power to that of his seven Jewish competitors (cf. Luke 11:21–23). The episode ends with the point clearly made: the power of "the name of the Lord Jesus" is mediated exclusively through Paul, who brooks no rivals (cf. Luke 9:49–50; Mark 9:38–41).

Paul's own demonstrated power (19:11–12) and his proven superiority over his Jewish rivals (vv. 13–16) have a twofold effect: increased respect among the wider public (v. 17) and strengthening of the Christian community (vv. 18–20). The impressive triumph over

magical practices, clearly banned in the OT (Deut. 18:10–14), Luke depicts as a purge *within the Christian community.* Those who were already "believers" now "confess" (their sins? cf. 8:22–23) and publicly abandon all vestiges of pagan practices. Thereby Luke shows that Christian communities are formed gradually, not instantly. Properly purified, as before in the case of Ananias and Sapphira (5:1–16), the church experiences new growth and strength (19:20).

The mention of Paul's travel plans (vv. 21–22) signals a break in Luke's account of Ephesus. Events just described have firmly established Pauline Christianity at Ephesus. This is indicated by the summary in v. 20 and by Paul's willingness to think now of churches previously established, indeed to dispatch two co-workers to Macedonia (v. 22), but especially to look ahead, for the first time, beyond Jerusalem to Rome (v. 21). In his own words, Paul says now what was hinted earlier (9:15; also 1:8) and becomes evident later. It is a divine necessity for his mission to the Gentiles to culminate in Rome (cf. 23:11; 25:12). Luke now begins to set the stage for chaps. 21–28.

In light of Paul's statements in his Letters about his mission stay at Ephesus (1 Cor. 15:32; 16:8) and Asia (2 Cor. 1:8–10, 15–17), and what is known (or reconstructed) more generally about his activities during this period, this brief Lucan interlude, as indeed the whole account of his stay in Ephesus, contains some puzzling omissions.

The final episode at Ephesus—the riot in the 24,000-seat theater prompted by the complaints of Demetrius the silversmith—serves as Luke's most detailed encounter between the gospel and pagan religion (vv. 23–41).

The scene depicted here is much bolder than the previous episodes in which the gospel has engaged pagan culture and religion. If Paul showed polite deference to pagan religion in Athens (17:16–31), the implications of "the Way" (v. 23) are now more emphatically stated: manufactured gods are not gods (v. 26). Paul no longer deftly introduces "the unknown god," but now directly confronts the world-renowned goddess Artemis (v. 27). Just as Luke has portrayed Paul's growing influence in the city and region (vv. 10, 17), so now the Pauline gospel becomes a major challenge to both the religion and economy of an entire city and region (vv. 26–27). In Corinth, Paul had been challenged before city officials, but the event was not widely publicized (18:12–17). Now Paul becomes a public figure, the friend of prominent regional officials (v. 31), whose mission causes "no little disturbance" (v. 23) throughout the city, indeed threatens the city's peaceful reputation (v. 40). Generally, Luke's description of the episode realistically captures certain features of social, commercial, and religious life in Ephesus (→ Artemis of the Ephesians; Ephesus).

Perhaps the most remarkable feature of Luke's account is the way he achieves his literary purpose through the words uttered by the two most prominent pagan spokespersons: the silversmith Demetrius (vv. 25–27) and the town clerk (vv. 35–40). Through Demetrius, Luke depicts the widespread and penetrating effect of the Pauline mission (v. 26). However meager the results of Paul's preaching might have been in Athens (17:32–34), he has now succeeded in turning "a considerable number of people" away from the worship of gods (v. 26). So successful has Paul's preaching been that now "Asia and the world" (v. 27) can consider Christ as a genuine alternative to Artemis.

Through the words of the town clerk (vv. 35–40), Luke defends the Christian cause. He exonerates Paul (i.e., his co-workers) as being "neither temple robbers nor blasphemers of our goddess" (v. 37). Just as Jews earlier had been able to coexist with Romans by demonstrating a more tolerant attitude toward pagan cults (see Josephus *Against Apion* 2.237; *Antiquities of the Jews* 4.207), so now Luke similarly depicts "the Way." For all the impact Paul's mission has made on the city and region, it cannot be shown that it has been done in a way that dishonors pagan religion! Because the charges against Christians are unfounded and because Demetrius and the townspeople have failed to use proper legal channels, the real threat to peace and stability is the Ephesians themselves, perhaps the Jews, but not the Christians (vv. 40–41).

20:1–38, Concluding the Aegean Mission. As planned (19:21), Paul travels to Macedonia (v. 1) and Achaia (here Hellas, or Greece, v. 2), thereby adhering to his pattern of visiting recently established churches (14:21–23; 15:36), probably Philippi, Thessalonica, Beroea, perhaps Athens. The three-month stay in Greece (v. 3) almost certainly occurred in Corinth, where continued Jewish resistance can easily be imagined (18:6, 12–17) and where he could catch a ship to Syria. This is a plausible time and place for his writing Romans (cf. Rom. 15:22–29; 16:1–23). Once again a Jewish plot is averted (9:23–25; cf. 20:19; 23:12–35; 2 Cor. 11:26), this time by returning overland through Macedonia.

Paul's increasing circle of co-workers (v. 4) now includes persons representing various regions of his gentile mission. Puzzling is the omission of representatives of Achaia (Corinth, Athens). These seven (though perhaps only the two Asians) proceeded to Troas, while Paul and whoever is included in the "us" (v. 5) remained at Philippi, possibly so he could observe the seven-day period of Passover, thereby indicating further his continued fidelity to Jewish traditions (v. 6; cf. 18:18; 21:23–26). The mention of Passover dates Paul's stay in Philippi in the spring.

The seven-day stay at Troas (vv. 7–12) is notable for its description of an early Christian worship service "on the first day of the week" (cf. 1 Cor. 16:2; Rev. 1:10; also Luke 24:1; Mark 16:1–2; Matt. 28:1), which likely ran from Saturday (so REB; though conceivably

Sunday, depending on whether Luke used a Jewish or Roman form of reckoning time) evening through daybreak (v. 11). Worship in this Pauline mission church is portrayed as having three central elements: preaching (vv. 7, 11), healing (vv. 8–10), and breaking bread, probably the Lord's Supper (vv. 7, 11; cf. 2:42, 46; 1 Cor. 11:17–32). Luke shows Paul's mission churches conforming to the earlier apostolic pattern (2:42, 46). Raising Eutychus (vv. 9–12) also documents Paul's prophetic powers (cf. 1 Kings 17:21–22; 2 Kings 4:33–35) and his equal status with both Jesus (Luke 8:49–56; Mark 5:35–43; Matt. 9:18–26) and Peter (Acts 9:36–43). It also shows how his miraculous powers directly benefit the Christian community (cf. 19:11–12).

Paul's continued travels (vv. 13–16) are rehearsed primarily to get him to Miletus (v. 15), the site of his last sermon as a missionary in the Aegean. Apparently, he is still accompanied by the retinue described in v. 4; also the "we" section resumes, having broken off temporarily in v. 7 (cf. 16:10). Luke especially explains that Paul chose to bypass Ephesus not because it still posed a threat (2 Cor. 1:8–11; 1 Cor. 15:30–34), but to save time in reaching Jerusalem. By mentioning Pentecost, Luke again may be stressing Paul's faithfulness to his Jewish heritage (cf. 18:18; 20:6; also 21:23–26).

Together with his synagogue sermon to Jews (13:16–41) and the Areopagus sermon to Gentiles (17:22–31), Paul's sermon to the Ephesian elders at Miletus (20:17–38) completes the cycle of speeches recorded by Luke in chaps. 13–20. The only sermon by Paul addressed specifically to the church (through the elders), this "pastoral homily" rounds out Luke's portrait of Paul as missionary preacher and church minister. Here Luke unfolds Paul's theology of ministry.

The sermon forms a natural conclusion to his Ephesian ministry (18:24–19:41), where Luke especially has stressed pastoral aspects of Paul's ministry: perfecting quasi-Christians through additional teaching (19:1–7; also 18:24–28); preaching (19:8–10); his ministry of healing, competing with other miracle workers, and the complete elimination of pagan, magical practices from the church (19:11–20); developing further mission plans (19:21–22); and fully engaging the social, economic, and political life of the city and region (19:23–41). His pastoral role continued as he strengthened other churches (20:1–6) and attended to matters of worship (20:7–12).

The sermon and occasion also reflect the earlier picture of governance by "elders" (Gk. *presbyteroi*) within Pauline churches (v. 17; 14:21–23), although here they also bear the title "overseers" (Gk. *episkopoi*, v. 28; cf. Phil. 1:1; 1 Tim. 3:1–2; Tit. 1:7; 1 Pet. 5:2).

In form, the speech is a farewell sermon, addressed primarily to the Ephesian elders and church, who do not expect to see Paul again (vv. 25, 38). His departure (v. 29) refers ostensibly to his departing Ephesus (21:1), but clearly means his death (v. 24; 21:13; cf. 2 Tim. 4:6; Phil. 2:17). Thus Luke has Paul here bidding farewell to all his mission churches and the church at large.

Woven into his "testament" are the standard themes of such addresses (cf. John 14–17; 2 Timothy): anticipations of his "departure" and the circumstances surrounding it (vv. 25, 29); review (and defense) of past conduct (vv. 18–21, 26–27, 31, 33–34); preview of the future, immediate (vv. 22–24) and long term, including the predicted threat of heresies (vv. 29–30); and "passing the torch," or preparing for his departure by advising his successors (vv. 28, 31–32). The legacy of exemplary conduct and the call to imitation, important ingredients of testaments, are heard throughout (esp. v. 35; cf. 1 Cor. 4:16; 11:1; 2 Tim. 1:8, 13–14; 3:10–17).

The speech encapsulates various features of Paul's ministry unfolded in the previous narrative. It also echoes sentiments expressed in Paul's own writings, which suggests that Luke has sought to capture the essence and tone of Paul's understanding of his own apostolic ministry.

One new element is the prospect of false teachers who would threaten Paul's legacy (vv. 28–30). They are depicted as wolves, a common epithet for heretics (Matt. 7:15; 10:16; John 10:12; also *Did.* 16:3; Ign. *Phld.* 2:2; *2 Clem.* 5:2–4). Bishops as shepherds recalls OT images (Ezek. 34:1–31; Jer. 23:1–4; Zech. 10:3; 11:15–17) and later becomes standard Christian parlance (1 Pet. 5:1–4; John 21:15–17). He cautions against both external and internal threats (cf. 1 John 2:19). This threat of heresy echoes other NT sentiments, especially in the pastoral Letters (1 Tim. 1:3–7, 19–20; 4:1–3, 7; 2 Tim. 2:14–18, 23–26; 3:1–9; 4:3–4; Titus 1:13–16; 3:9–11), and may envision quasi-Gnostic teachings encountered by the church in Luke's own time during the late first century A.D. (→ Gnosticism).

The speech throughout underscores Paul's orthodoxy and fidelity to the apostolic preaching. The essential features of his preaching and teaching are in line with that of his apostolic predecessors (vv. 21, 25, 32). Especially significant is Paul's concluding reference to the saying of Jesus (v. 35), unrecorded in any of the canonical Gospels, calling for responsible care for the weak (cf. Rom. 15:1; Gal. 2:10). Paul is thus portrayed as faithful to the mission of Jesus (Luke 4:18–21), who himself commissioned Paul (v. 24). Having preached and ministered in ways reminiscent of Jesus, he now bequeaths Jesus' teachings to his churches. He is a faithful and humble servant of the Lord (i.e., Jesus; v. 19; cf. Col. 3:24).

By placing Paul's "farewell address" here, Luke tacitly acknowledges awareness of Paul's death. Consequently, it need not be reported at the conclusion of the narrative (28:31). It also prepares the way for the final stage of the story—Paul's "imprisonment and persecutions" in Jerusalem (20:23; 21:11, 33), whose unfolding becomes a fulfillment of the Spirit's own predictions. Coming at the end of this major period of

Paul's mission in the Aegean, the sermon also becomes Luke's most compactly stated apology for his own hero and his best defense of Paul's conduct as missionary and church minister.

21:1–14, Journey to Jerusalem. Paul's next major destination is Jerusalem (cf. 19:21), where the next series of events occurs (21:15–23:30). His journey there from Ephesus is swift. This third "we" section (21:1–18; cf. 16:10) reads like a travel diary: ports of call, lengths of stay, names of hosts, and details about ships and the traveling party are given.

Luke uses this travel narrative to introduce some other Christian communities at Tyre (v. 4), Ptolemais (v. 7), Caesarea (v. 16). Perceptive readers expect to find followers of Jesus at Tyre (11:19; also Luke 6:17; 10:13–14) and Caesarea (Acts 8:40; 10:1–11:18; 12:19; 18:22). But more than simply describing an itinerary, Luke demonstrates Paul's acceptance by Palestinian churches that he himself had not established.

In the Caesarean scene (vv. 8–14), Luke achieves several things. First, he links Paul even more firmly with Judean Christianity. He is welcomed by "one of the seven" (v. 8), an apostolic appointee with early ties to Jerusalem whose evangelistic work had received full apostolic confirmation (8:4–40).

Second, he prepares readers for what follows immediately—Paul's arrest and imprisonment. Heretofore, Paul's mission has experienced no significant setback. At each turn, Paul narrowly escaped being caught (9:23–25; 14:19–20; 16:35–40; 17:10; 19:30–31; 20:3, 19). This time he will not. Consequently, Luke introduces the Judean prophet Agabus (cf. 11:27–28), who performs a symbolic gesture reminiscent of the OT prophets (v. 11; Isa. 20:2–6; Jer. 13:1–14). Speaking for the Holy Spirit, he also predicts that Paul's real nemesis would be "the Jews in Jerusalem"; that he would be "bound," i.e., imprisoned; and that the Jews would "hand him over to the Gentiles," i.e., the Romans. As the Lucan narrative unfolds, each turns out to be accurate.

Third, Luke is possibly beginning his portrayal of the "passion of Paul." In one sense, Paul's journey to Jerusalem is a miniature of the much longer travel narrative in Luke's Gospel in which Jesus journeys from his Galilean mission field to his ultimate destination in Jerusalem (Luke 9:51–19:44). Certain elements of the Caesarean scene suggest some parallels between Paul and Jesus (see Introduction). Paul resolutely travels to Jerusalem (vv. 12–13; cf. Luke 9:51–53; 13:22; 17:11; 18:31–33; 19:11, 28), willing even to meet the fate expected of God's faithful prophets—death in Jerusalem (v. 13; 20:24; Luke 13:33–34). His destiny is finally interpreted as conforming to "the will of the Lord" (v. 14), even though, unlike at Gethsemane, it is his companions who concede this, not Paul himself (Luke 22:42). Luke leaves little doubt, however, that Paul's going to Jerusalem, and what happens there, are divinely willed (9:15; 19:21; 23:11).

21:15–23:30
Paul in Jerusalem

21:15–26, Paul's Arrival in Jerusalem. Paul is welcomed by the Jerusalem church ("brothers," v. 17), which includes the Cypriot Mnason, an early disciple (v. 16), perhaps an early associate of Barnabas (4:36–37). Since Paul's last official visit to Jerusalem (15:2–4; though cf. 18:22), the leadership structure has changed. The Jerusalem elders, who earlier shared in the leadership with the apostles (15:2, 4, 6, 22, 23; 16:4), now stand alone (v. 18; though cf. 11:30), probably presided over by James, the Lord's brother (v. 18; cf. 12:17; 15:13–21; 1 Cor. 15:7; Gal. 1:19; 2:9, 12; also Mark 6:3; Matt. 13:55).

Paul's return is reminiscent of his earlier return to Antioch (14:24–28) and his report at the Jerusalem conference (15:4, 12), where he depicted the gentile mission as God's doing (v. 19; cf. 9:15). His detailed report is enthusiastically received by the Jerusalem church leaders who "praise God" (v. 20). This is the typical response in Luke-Acts acknowledging that God incontestably has been at work (Luke 2:20; 5:25–26; 7:16; 13:13; 17:15; 18:43; 23:47; Acts 4:21; 11:18). God's full approval of the Pauline mission is thus explicitly acknowledged by the Jerusalem church.

In the speech of the Jerusalem leaders (vv. 20–25), they report the dissatisfaction of "many thousands" of Jewish Christians, probably still in Judea, perhaps especially in Jerusalem (v. 24), who are still "zealous for the law" (v. 20).

Since Luke is here introducing a new element of opposition to Paul and his mission, their precise objection should be noted. They do not object to the policy of admitting Gentiles into the church (as was once the case, 11:2–3) or to the terms for admitting them or having fellowship with them (15:1, 5). This has been settled (15:19–21, 23–29), and the terms of the Jerusalem conference are fully acceptable to them (v. 25).

Instead, they are worried about the implications of Paul's teaching for those Christians who wish to remain faithful to their Jewish way of life. They fear Paul as a threat to the continued vitality of Jewish Christianity, especially in the Diaspora, and therefore in their own region. These "Torah-zealous" Jewish Christians are not trying to make gentile Christianity Jewish; they are trying to keep Jewish Christianity from becoming gentile.

Since Luke has not yet addressed these questions in his narrative, he carefully states the objections of Paul's detractors. Their general complaint (v. 21) is that Paul is teaching "apostasy from Moses" to "Jews living among the Gentiles" (probably Jews living in the Diaspora). Specifically, they fear that Jews who become

Christians, in Paul's view, are no longer obliged, first, to practice circumcision, and second, to "observe the [Jewish] customs." And, given Paul's own stated views about "righteousness apart from the law [of Moses]" (Rom. 3:21–22; 10:4; Gal. 3:23–25) and circumcision (Rom. 2:25–29; 4:9–12; 1 Cor. 7:17–19), it is not difficult to see how their perceptions might have developed.

It now becomes clear why Luke earlier reported Paul's decision to circumcise Timothy (16:3). He wished to show that circumcision is still appropriate, if not obligatory, for Jews, even in the Diaspora. Also by depicting Paul as consistently sensitive to Jewish concerns and faithfully observing Jewish customs, such as the Nazirite vow (18:18), Passover (20:6), and Pentecost (20:16), Luke has shown that even a Jew in the Diaspora "keeps the customs." In the preceding narrative, Luke has already answered these objections in advance!

Yet proof that Paul lives in observance of the law (v. 24) is needed for this group of concerned Jewish Christians *in Jerusalem.* The proposed solution is some public display of Paul's fidelity to Judaism. Paul is asked to assist four Jews (doubtless Jewish Christians) who had taken a Nazirite vow (vv. 23–24; cf. Num. 6:1–21). To complete the vow, expensive sacrifices had to be offered (Num. 6:14–17), and Paul is asked to underwrite their expenses (v. 24). This would demonstrate not only that he thinks it appropriate for his fellow Jewish Christians to "keep the customs," even as he himself had done (18:18), but also display his generosity.

But more than this, he is asked to purify himself along with them (vv. 24, 26). It appears that Paul is being asked to enter into the vow with the four men, but apparently this would have required a minimum thirty-day period (*m. Nazir* 1:3), which Luke's seven-day period of fulfillment would not allow (vv. 26–27). In fact, the biblical instructions for the Nazirite vow do not entail an ordinary seven-day period of purification prior to the completion of the vow, as Luke's account seems to suggest (vv. 26–27).

What may be unstated in Luke's account is that the four men, in some way, had become defiled through association or contact with a corpse and that they are now in the process of fulfilling the requisite seven-day purification period (cf. Num. 6:6–12; 19:11–12).

21:27–40, Paul's Arrest in Jerusalem. Luke now describes a second source of resistance in Jerusalem to Paul—non-Christian Jews. Agabus has already predicted that "the Jews in Jerusalem" would finally "bind" Paul (21:11). Eventually, this turns out to be the case, but the real source of opposition is traced to "the Jews from Asia" (v. 27; cf. 6:9), probably Ephesus, since they recognized "Trophimus the Ephesian" (v. 29; cf. 20:4; 2 Tim. 4:20). Complaints similar to those leveled against Stephen (6:13), and in a sense against Jesus himself (cf. Mark 14:58; Matt. 26:61; Mark 15:29; Matt. 27:40), are now leveled against Paul (v. 28; cf. 18:13; 25:8). As one who is allegedly anti-Jewish, anti-law, anti-Temple, Paul is charged with being a threat to "everyone everywhere"—a universal menace (v. 28).

Luke emphasizes that the Asian Jews *mistakenly* thought Paul had taken the gentile Trophimus into the Temple (v. 29). Their charge is thus unfounded. Nevertheless, they succeed in inciting the entire city against him. They act with a frenzied violence already encountered in Acts (5:33; 7:54, 57–58), and their murderous intentions are underscored (v. 31; cf. 23:27). The mob's cry, "Away with him!" (v. 36), echoes similar shouts against Jesus (Luke 23:18; cf. John 19:15). This is perhaps another stroke in the Lucan portrait of Paul's "passion."

As certainly as "the Jews" try to kill Paul, the Romans (again) come to his rescue (vv. 31–36; cf. 19:31). This is to be a recurrent theme of the final chapters of Acts. Even so, it is a Roman who orders Paul bound "with two chains" (v. 33; cf. 12:6), thereby fulfilling Agabus's prophecy (21:11). From this point on in Acts Paul remains imprisoned.

The interchange between Paul and the tribune (vv. 37–39), which sets the stage for Paul's first defense speech (22:1–21), provides Luke an occasion to distinguish Paul from an Egyptian who, during the procuratorship of Felix (ca. A.D. 52–59), led four thousand terrorists (Lat. *sicarii,* lit., "dagger men"; → Assassins) on a revolutionary mission against the Romans (v. 38). Such a figure is described in some detail (though with some differences) by Josephus (*Jewish War* 2.254–65; also *Antiquities of the Jews* 20.169–172).

22:1–21, Paul's Defense Before the Temple Crowd. The need for such a defense, or "apology" (Gk. *apologia;* also 25:16; cf. 19:33; 24:10; 25:8; 26:1–2; 26:24; also 1 Cor. 9:3; Phil. 1:7, 16; 2 Tim. 4:16; 1 Pet. 3:15) was anticipated by Jesus, who saw such occasions as opportunities not only to answer charges, but also to bear positive witness for the faith (Luke 12:11; 21:14). This speech sets the tone for the remainder of Acts, which becomes Luke's defense of Paul. So important is this apologetic theme for Luke that Paul's defense is repeated, albeit in different versions, twice in the following narrative (24:10–21; 26:2–23).

There is considerable overlap between what Paul reports in this speech (vv. 3–16) and what Luke has already related in his earlier narrative (9:3–19), though some new details emerge.

One major difference is that Ananias plays a more prominent role in chap. 9. His interchanges with the Lord carry the narrative (9:10–16). The Lord's commission of Paul is actually delivered to Ananias, not to Paul himself (9:15–16). In chap. 22, by contrast, Ananias plays a less central role (vv. 12–16). He restores Paul's sight, then directly delivers to Paul God's commission, which has several noteworthy features.

In chap. 22 God is defined in strongly biblical

tones: the God who commissioned Moses at Sinai is now the God who commissions Paul (v. 14; Exod. 3:15–16). His appointment by God is reminiscent of earlier prophetic appointments (Jer. 1:4–5; Gal. 1:15–16; cf. Acts 26:16). The divine appointment entailed the ability to "discern God's will" and also see "the Righteous One" (in the Damascus road vision) and hear his voice. God, therefore, intended for Paul to be confronted by the Innocent Christ (cf. Luke 23:47; Acts 3:14; 7:52) and to receive his commission directly from Jesus. Thereby he becomes a duly qualified "witness" (v. 15; cf., e.g., Luke 24:48; Acts 1:8; 2:32; 3:15), able to testify both to the risen Christ, whom he has seen, and proclaim what he has heard (4:20).

Response to his prophetic call is to be immediate, requiring the removal of his former sins (of persecution) by baptismal washing (v. 16; cf. 1 Cor. 6:11; Eph. 5:26; Titus 3:5; Heb. 10:22; 2 Pet. 1:9; also Ezek. 16:9). His baptismal initiation is like that of earlier predecessors: it was in "the name of Jesus Christ" (2:38). It now entailed "calling on his name" (v. 16), which meant acknowledging loyalty to Christ primarily through formal confession, but likely through prayer as well (cf. 2:21 [= Joel 2:32]; 9:14, 21; Rom. 10:12–13; 1 Cor. 1:2; 2 Tim. 2:22; also Ps. 99:6).

Two new elements are the brief rehearsal of Paul's past (v. 3) and the vision in the Temple at Jerusalem (vv. 17–21). As to the former, these opening words repeat what Paul has told the tribune privately (21:39), but do so with a well-established formula for describing one's life story: born, reared, and educated (v. 3; cf. 7:20–22). The formula suggests that Paul probably spent the first three years of his life in his birthplace Tarsus in Cilicia, but early moved to Jerusalem where he was "brought up" by his family and then "educated" under Gamaliel (cf. 5:34–39). As such, he becomes a Jerusalemite, formally educated to adhere strictly and zealously to the sacred traditions of the fathers (cf. Gal. 1:14; Phil. 3:5–6; also Rom. 10:2). This opening self-portrait responds effectively to two of the charges leveled against Paul (21:28): his past record is one of utmost respect for both the Jewish people and their law.

As to the latter, Paul's speech is consistent in reporting an immediate return to Jerusalem (9:26; cf. Gal. 1:17–18). His receiving a vision in the Temple while "in a trance" (v. 17; cf. 10:10; 11:5) has all the characteristics of a prophetic call (Isa. 6:1–13). But it is a call not from God, but Jesus himself. In sharp contrast to the commission mediated by Ananias, in which God appointed Paul to be a witness "to all the world" (v. 15), it is now Jesus who sends Paul away from Jerusalem (v. 18) exclusively to Gentiles (v. 21). With a reluctance reminiscent of Moses and other hesitant prophets (Exod. 4:10–17), Paul recalls his participation in the death of Stephen and his subsequent terroristic acts (7:54–8:3), but to no avail. He is clearly Jesus' chosen prophet to the Gentiles.

This Temple vision is perhaps Luke's response to the third charge that Paul is "against this place" (21:28). On the contrary, the Temple serves as the place where his prophetic service to God actually begins, as did Isaiah's.

Jesus' prediction of the (Jerusalem) Jews' rejection (v. 18) apparently prompts the interruption, in a manner similar to the Stephen speech (7:51–8:1). Earlier Luke reported resistance among the Hellenists to Paul's preaching in Jerusalem (9:28–29), but not the wholesale Jewish obduracy implied here. Even so, Jesus' parable of the banquet (Luke 14:16–24) has prepared the way for this theme, which becomes something of a commonplace in Acts (cf. 28:24–28). Chaps. 13–20 have consistently demonstrated the resistance, for the most part, by diaspora Jews to Paul; chap. 21 has shown widespread resistance among Jerusalem Jews (so 21:11).

22:22–29, Paul the Roman Citizen. Luke depicts the aftermath of the speech in his typical manner: Paul is rescued from the fury of the Jews by a Roman (cf. 18:12–17). Through brief but lively dialogue, the tables are turned as the Roman centurion finally defers to the Roman Paul. The central issue is Roman citizenship (vv. 25, 29; cf. 16:37, 38; 23:27). Bought citizenship bows before natural-born citizenship (v. 28). Once again, the enemies quake in fear before the freeborn Roman citizen Paul (v. 29: cf. 16:38). Luke also emphasizes the Romans' inability to obtain any clear evidence against Paul: he is innocent (cf. 23:1, 28–29; 24:22; 25:25, 26; see Introduction).

22:30–23:11, Paul Before the Sanhedrin. In appearing before the Sanhedrin, Paul's visibility before "Jews in Jerusalem" increases. Accordingly, Luke portrays Paul as a figure of increasing significance in the life of Jerusalem Jewry.

The curious exchange between Paul and Ananias (23:1–5) contrasts the high priest's disobedience of the law with Paul's complete fidelity to the law. Ananias's unexplained action in striking Paul is seen to be in direct violation of the biblical prescriptions for impartial judgment (Lev. 19:15; Deut. 1:16–17; 19:16–19). By contrast, Paul both quotes the law (Exod. 22:28) and expresses willingness to live by it. Ananias's external, visible actions have exposed the superficial whitewash of his own Jewish loyalty (cf. Ezek. 13:10–16; also Matt. 23:27). Whether Luke knows that Ananias later died a violent death at the hands of a mob (Josephus *Jewish War* 2.441–42) and therefore has Paul uttering a prophetic death threat, is less certain (→ Ananias).

As was the case with Peter earlier, the Sanhedrin hearing serves as a forum in which Christianity is heard—and vindicated (5:27–42). In spite of significantly different proceedings that are reported, in both cases, Pharisees emerge as allies of Christians. The "scribes of the Pharisees' group," who declare Paul innocent of any wrongdoing (23:9), and wonder whether

he might truly be an agent of some divine messenger, are echoing the cautious advice of Gamaliel (5:38–39).

Luke continues his earlier agenda in depicting Christianity and Pharisaism as natural allies; hence the direct continuity between the Pharisaic branch of Judaism and Christianity. The link is expressed directly in Paul's own testimony: he is (now) a Pharisee, with a Pharisaic heritage (v. 6). His Pharisaic loyalty is a present commitment, not a recently jettisoned stage of his religious past (cf. Phil. 3:5–9). His Christian proclamation of a risen Lord, and by implication, of a risen humanity (v. 6), represents a particular, but defensible, form of Pharisaic theology. Belief in the risen Messiah represents the continuation of God's promises to Israel.

As the debate in the Sanhedrin unfolds, Luke distinguishes the Sadducees from "mainline Jews." He portrays the Sadducees as skeptics who deny the existence of spirits or angels (v. 8), both of which are central features of the biblical witness (→ Sadducees; Pharisees).

That Paul emerges from the Sanhedrin vindicated is seen in the night vision of Jesus (v. 11), who reconfirms the validity of his testimony before the council and now also confirms his mission plans formulated earlier in Ephesus (19:21). It is one of many Lucan promises made within the narrative that is later fulfilled (28:23).

23:12–30, Plot Against Paul and His Planned Transfer to Caesarea. This third plot by "the Jews" against Paul (cf. 9:25; 20:3; also 9:29; 20:19) is by far the most meticulously planned and elaborately described; it includes over forty conspirators (v. 13, 21), a full-fast oath (vv. 12, 14, 21), conspiracy with the "chief priests and elders" (v. 14; 25:15; also 4:23; 22:30; 25:2), and repeated references to their determination to kill Paul (vv. 12, 14, 15, 21, 27).

Following the typical Lucan pattern, intensified efforts to resist the gospel are met with even more dramatic forms of deliverance (see commentary above on 5:17–26). In this case, the plot is aborted by the combined efforts of a lad (v. 18), identified as Paul's nephew (v. 16), and a friendly Roman tribune who is finally willing to deploy half the city's garrison to foil the plot (vv. 23–24).

The proper interpretation of these events for readers is provided in the letter from the tribune to the governor (vv. 26–30). Even though the tribune's recounting of the events in the Temple courtyard (21:30–36) is bent in his own favor (v. 27), all the important (Lucan) elements of the story are included: (1) primary responsibility for the hostile actions against Paul lies with "the Jews" (v. 27; 9:23, 29; 21:11, 27, 36); (2) Roman soldiers have shown proper respect for a Roman citizen—Romans as allies of Christians (22:24–29; also 16:38–39; 18:12–17); (3) Romans have followed proper procedures, attempting to determine precisely the nature of the charges against the accused (v. 28; 22:24, 30; 25:26) and ordering his accusers to face him directly (v. 30; Deut. 19:16–19); (4) it is essentially an internal conflict within Judaism concerning "questions of their law" (v. 29; 18:14–15; 25:18–20)—Christians are to be seen as continuous with Judaism and therefore entitled to Roman rights extended to Jews; and (5) Paul is declared innocent, certainly with respect to a capital offense (v. 29; see Introduction).

23:31–26:32
Paul in Caesarea

The remainder of Paul's stay in Palestine occurs in Caesarea, the seat of Roman government in Palestine (→ Caesarea). This section unfolds Paul's various appearances before increasingly important Roman officials: Felix (24:1–27), Festus (25:1–27), and Agrippa (26:1–32).

23:31–35, Paul's Transfer to Caesarea. The tribune's plans as outlined earlier (23:23–24) are carried out. Especially noted is Paul's safe delivery to the care of Felix, who follows carefully defined protocol in ascertaining Paul's provincial home and waiting for his accusers to present their case against Paul (vv. 34–35).

24:1–27, Paul's Defense Before Felix. This episode goes well beyond Paul's appearance before Gallio (18:12–17), where the Jews' charges are repeated (18:13) and Gallio formally responds (18:14–15). Here there is a formal statement of the accusations against Paul by a prosecutor, Tertullus (vv. 2–8), and an equally formal response by Paul (vv. 10–21). Both speeches exhibit rhetorical polish, and legal technical terminology is used throughout the scene. Luke has sought to capture the atmosphere of a formal hearing before a high-ranking Roman official.

Tertullus's speech serves to state, in proper form, the Jews' case against Paul. The opening *ad hominem* characterization of Paul as a "pestilent fellow" (NJB: "perfect pest") depicting him as a danger to the public good (cf. 1 Macc. 15:21) may also suggest that he is churlish or foolish (1 Sam. 25:17, 25). More to the point is the charge that he is seditious, a "fomenter of discord" (REB: lit., "inciting riots"; cf. 19:40), who causes dissensions (23:7, 10) wherever he goes among Jews "throughout the world" (cf. 16:20; 17:6)—a universal threat to Roman peace and stability. "Ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes" probably depicts him as the instigator of a new religion, since "sect" (Gk. *hairesis*) here carries an unfavorable connotation (cf. v. 14; 28:22) absent elsewhere (5:17; 15:5; 26:5). The portrait of him as an outsider, a Jewish renegade, continues in the final charge that he "profaned the temple" (cf. 21:28; 25:8; also 6:13; Luke 21:6). He is thus presented as in-

sensitive to the customs and institutions of a well-established, legally protected religion.

Paul's response (vv. 10–21) is an adroitly crafted "defense" (v. 10). His polite deference to Felix (v. 10), which contrasts sharply with Tertullus's ingratiating introduction (vv. 2–4), scores points with informed readers who know Felix's scandalous reputation (Tacitus *Histories* 5.9; *Annals* 12.54; Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 20.137–44, 162–63; → Felix, Antonius). Moreover, by limiting his remarks to his conduct in Jerusalem, Paul shrewdly redefines the charge.

But the more important element of Paul's defense is his consistent claim to be an utterly loyal Jew. He refuses to concede that he is the spokesman for a new religion. What his enemies mistakenly call a "sect" is better understood as "the Way" (v. 14). Even though "the Way" is being used here in a highly technical sense to describe the Jesus movement (9:2; 18:26; 19:9, 23; 22:4; 24:22), it nevertheless has a certain resonance with an OT expectation for the truly obedient people of God (cf. Exod. 32:8; Deut. 5:33; 9:12, 16; 11:28; 31:29). Consequently, as Paul's preferred term for the movement with which he gladly identifies himself, it more closely aligns him with the biblical tradition.

In spite of his participation in "the Way," he still speaks of "the god of our ancestors," expressed here in a thoroughly gentile form (cf. 4 Macc. 12:17; Sophocles *Antigone* 838), which nevertheless is authentically biblical in tone (Exod. 3:6, 13). Moreover, his loyalty to the entire Scripture remains unshaken (v. 14; also 26:22; 28:23). This has just been demonstrated in his interchange with Ananias (23:1–5) but amply attested in the earlier narrative.

He also adheres to what Scripture teaches (however minimally): the resurrection (vv. 15, 21; Isa. 26:19; Dan. 12:2–3; → Resurrection). His faith in this "hope" is not an unorthodox position, but one "they [the Jews] themselves also accept" (v. 15). By implication, Paul is aligning himself here with the Pharisees (23:8) and against the Sadducees (cf. Luke 20:27–40), thereby suggesting that the former (like himself) represent mainline Judaism.

Yet another line of defense is his self-portrait as a devout pilgrim who came to Jerusalem neither to preach, nor to cause riots, but to worship (v. 11). His almsgiving (v. 17) could only be construed as evidence of his loyalty to Scripture and tradition (Ps. 112:9; Isa. 58:6–8; Prov. 14:21, 31) as well as his commitment to help the weak (Acts 20:35). What is striking here is that these funds are for his "nation" (v. 17), which would suggest donations to Jews generally. Conceivably, this is a reference to the Pauline relief fund for the poor Jewish Christians in Jerusalem (1 Cor. 16:1–4; 2 Cor. 8:3–6; Gal. 2:10; Rom. 15:25–28, 31), but if so, it is an unusual way of putting it. His mention of "offering sacrifices" is intended to recall his participation with the four men who had a vow (21:23–26).

Although Felix does not decide formally in Paul's favor, neither does he sustain Tertullus's charges. That his was not an uninformed decision is indicated by his being "rather well informed about the Way" (v. 22). By not losing, Paul wins. This is also reflected in the relative freedom he enjoys as a prisoner (v. 23).

The final meeting between Paul and Felix (vv. 24–27) portrays a shift in Luke's portrait of Felix. Paul the defender now becomes Paul the preacher. Accompanied by his Jewish wife, Drusilla, the youngest daughter of Agrippa I, Felix takes the initiative in summoning Paul. Luke shows the gospel actually attracting another Roman official (cf. 13:7–12).

Luke presents Felix as a case of failed faith, seen especially in his expressed hope for a bribe (v. 26; cf. v. 17). Like others in Luke-Acts who finally are excluded from service in the kingdom (ruler, Luke 18:18–30; Ananias and Sapphira, Acts 5:1–11; Judas, 1:15–20), Felix's love for money wins out over his love for the virtues.

The final stroke in Luke's portrait of Felix is his currying favor with the Jews, which resulted in his decision to leave Paul in prison. His action closely approximates that of Pilate (Luke 23:18–25). "Two years" (v. 27) probably describes the length of Paul's imprisonment rather than the duration of Felix's reign.

25:1–27, Paul Before Festus. The next stage of the proceedings takes place before Porcius Festus, who succeeded Felix as procurator ca. A.D. 59–60 (→ Festus, Porcius).

These two stages present an interesting contrast in terms of central characters. Earlier Paul spoke on his own behalf to a virtually silent Roman procurator. Now the Roman procurator speaks—and acts—on Paul's behalf, while Paul remains in the background.

The hearing before Festus serves several purposes for Luke. First, it continues the Lucan portrait of the Jerusalem Jews as Paul's archenemies. Luke reinforces the point by repeatedly identifying these enemies of Paul (vv. 2, 5, 7, 15). By the end of this section, the geographical extent of the Jewish resistance has widened to Caesarea as "the whole Jewish community demands his death" (v. 24). If anything, this stage reveals intensified Jewish resistance to Paul. They insist that a newly appointed procurator press the case against Paul (vv. 1–5). Their urge to kill Paul is undiminished as the cries of the Jerusalem mob are still echoing two years later (21:27, 36; 22:22–23). Presumably, their full-fast oath is still in effect (23:12–15)! Oblivious to due process (vv. 15–16), they are still willing to lodge serious charges unsubstantiated by hard evidence (vv. 7, 18, 26).

Second, the Festus stage describes the circumstances that enabled Paul finally to reach Rome. More specifically, it explains why Paul appealed to Caesar. Luke places squarely on the shoulders of Festus the

responsibility for continuing Paul's trial. As procurator, he could have rendered a final verdict after having heard both sides in a specially called hearing. Yet, like his predecessor, Felix (24:27), he yielded to Jewish pressure (v. 9). Indirectly, then, Luke suggests that Paul's hopes for justice are jeopardized by the Jews.

Many historical questions about Paul's appeal to Caesar remain unanswered. Yet from the standpoint of Luke's narrative, the significance of this episode is clear. His brief defense remarks (vv. 8, 10–11) serve Luke's purpose in several ways. Paul's threefold denial (v. 8) effectively summarizes previous charges against him. He is not against the Temple (21:28; 24:6), the law of the Jews (21:21; 23:5; 24:14–16; perhaps 18:13), or Caesar (16:21, 38–39; perhaps 18:13). The last named charge is a freshly formulated reference to sedition (24:5). Once again, Paul responds to charges made earlier in the narrative by the Jerusalem crowds (21:28) and Tertullus (24:5–8).

His second set of remarks (vv. 10–11) reveals a resolute Paul, sure of his rights, unwilling to be intimidated by Roman officials who themselves are willing to bend to political pressure (cf. 16:35–40). Perhaps most important, it allows him to state formally his appeal to the emperor (v. 11). Since this is the legal mechanism through which God's plan for Paul to reach Rome is made possible, it is the most critical element. In confirming Paul's appeal (v. 12), Festus unwittingly makes possible Paul's earlier formulated mission plans (19:21) and officially confirms what God has already told Paul privately (23:11).

Third, the Festus stage reinforces Luke's portrait of Rome as sympathetic to Christianity. Except for his willingness to bend to Jewish pressure and thereby continue Paul's trial (25:9), Festus is presented throughout this section quite favorably. He emerges as a model of efficiency (v. 5), a governor who is both cautious and objective in his judgment (v. 18), scrupulously respecting Roman procedures (vv. 9, 16).

With his character duly certified by Luke, Festus serves as an important pagan witness who testifies in Paul's behalf. In both of his "speeches," he sounds the same theme. His considered judgment is that Paul's accusers have vastly overstated the seriousness of his offense (v. 18). Echoing the earlier verdict of Gallio (18:14–15), Festus sees Paul's case as an internal dispute within Judaism, "their own religion" (v. 19). By placing Paul and the Jews in the same camp, he confirms Paul's own defense before the Sanhedrin (23:6–10) and his subsequent defense before Felix (24:10–21): he is not an outsider trying to be contentious; he is an insider trying to be heard.

Festus also introduces the distinctive feature of Paul's position vis-à-vis other Jews: the Easter faith—"a certain Jesus, who had died, is now alive" (v. 19). This conviction Paul had placed on the public record in his defense before the Jerusalem crowd, although not in this form (cf. esp. 22:6–11). Yet neither before the Sanhedrin (23:1–10) nor before Felix (24:1–27) had Paul or any of his detractors raised this point.

Festus's words (v. 19) characterize exactly the secular observer puzzled by both the heat and fog of religious debate. Yet in his own odd way, Festus sees the central issue: Paul's attempt to convince his fellow Israelites that the risen Lord is the promised fulfillment of their (and Paul's) own Scriptures, history, tradition, and theology. It is another instance where an outsider sees the truth more clearly than Paul's opponents do (cf. 5:38–39).

In his second speech, Festus is even more emphatic. Now he is able to respond to the petition of the "whole Jewish community" (v. 24). Their judgment is that Paul should die (v. 24). His verdict, by contrast, is that Paul has "done nothing deserving death" (v. 25). With this unqualified declaration of Paul's innocence, he reiterates earlier declarations by Paul himself (see Introduction). Festus's repeated stress on the need for having substantiated charges (vv. 26–27) makes essentially the same point: the absence of evidence underscores his innocence.

Fourth, the Festus stage also serves to introduce King Agrippa, the final and most important dignitary before whom Paul formally appears (vv. 13, 23–27; → Agrippa II; Bernice), thus preparing for Paul's grandest defense speech (26:2–23). As the first "king" (repeatedly identified as such by Luke, cf. 25:13, 14, 24, 26; 26:2, 7, 13, 19, 26, 27, 30) encountered by Paul, Agrippa represents the fulfillment of God's purpose for him (9:15). The other "king," of course, before whom Paul was destined to carry Jesus' name, was Caesar himself. Unlike Agrippa, he never makes an appearance in the Acts narrative, but he is already introduced, however subtly (vv. 8, 10, 11, 12, 21, 25, 26).

26:1–23, Paul's Defense Before Agrippa. Paul's final "apology" is suitably crafted for the occasion. The distinguished audience and setting lend an air of expectancy to the occasion (25:23).

Even though it overlaps his earlier defense speeches (22:1–21; 24:10–21) and Luke's narrative account of his "conversion" (9:1–19), this speech has a distinctive flavor and profile. Once again, it touches on Paul's early life, but identifies him exclusively with Jerusalem, no longer with the Diaspora (v. 4; cf. 22:3). By underscoring his Pharisaic heritage (v. 5; 22:3; 23:6), he becomes a credible defender of the resurrection faith, an important opening motif (vv. 7–8) and the climactic note on which the speech is interrupted (v. 23). This too has been a recurrent theme of his earlier defenses (23:6; 24:15, 21).

His life as a persecutor remains a central element (vv. 9–11; 7:58; 8:1–3; 9:1–2; 22:4–5), although both the force and extent of his persecution are now stated more strongly: now he is not simply a consenting bystander to Stephen's death (8:1; 22:20), but cast his vote in the death sentence of *many* Jerusalem Christians

(v. 10); now he pursued Christians not only in the single city of Damascus (9:2–3; 22:5–6), but also in "foreign *cities*" (v. 11).

The Damascus road encounter with the risen Lord still remains the moment of dramatic reversal (vv. 12–18; cf. 9:3–9; 22:6–11), but it too has enhanced features. The "great light" (22:6; cf. 9:3) now becomes a light "brighter than the sun" (v. 13). It no longer encompasses Paul alone (9:3; 22:6), but his companions (v. 13). Consequently, they all fall to the ground (v. 14), not just Paul alone (9:4; 22:7).

The language of the risen Lord is now identified as Aramaic (v. 14), which was already evident by the way he addressed "Saul" (9:4; 22:7). Surprisingly, he challenges Paul's obstinacy by using a common Greek proverb (v. 14; cf. Euripides *Bacchae* 794–95; Julian *Orations* 8.246b).

Paul receives his divine commission as part of the Damascus road encounter. There are no instructions to proceed to Damascus (22:10–11; cf. 9:8–9), nor is God's mediator Ananias even mentioned (9:10–19; 22:12–16). The risen Lord commissions him directly *on the road,* in a manner reminiscent of prophetic calls (v. 16; cf. Ezek. 2:1, 3). He is directly appointed as a servant and witness (v. 16; cf. 22:15) of what he has just seen but also of future divine revelations (16:9–10; 18:9; 22:17–21; 23:11; 27:23). Like the prophets (Jer. 1:7–8, 19), he is promised divine protection from the (Jewish) people (v. 17; cf. 9:23–25, 30; 14:19; 17:10, 14; 18:12–17; 20:3; 21:30–36; 22:22–29; 23:12–35) and from the Gentiles (16:19–40; 19:23–41).

His mission efforts are bifocal: to both Jews and Gentiles (cf. 9:15; 22:15), but apparently with special attention to Gentiles (22:18–21). Again his task is stated as a prophetic commission: to open the Gentiles' eyes (v. 18; Isa. 42:6–7, 16), turning them from darkness to light (cf. Isa. 9:2; Eph. 5:8; Col. 1:12–13; 1 Pet. 2:9), from Satan to God (cf. 2 Cor. 4:4; Eph. 2:2), extending them forgiveness of sins (v. 18; cf. 10:43; also to Jews: Luke 1:77; 3:3; 24:47; Acts 2:38; 5:31; 13:38) and a portion of the inheritance reserved for God's holy ones (v. 18; cf. 20:32; also Col. 1:12).

Unlike previous defense speeches, Paul proceeds to tell Agrippa how he executed these divine orders. The conduct that has brought him before Agrippa is the result of obeying a compelling heavenly vision (v. 19). Since his commission was two-pronged, he proceeded to preach to Jews first: in Damascus (9:19–22), Jerusalem (9:26–30; 22:17–21; cf. Rom. 15:19), then throughout all Judea (v. 20; though previously unrecorded in Acts). Second, he preached to Gentiles, calling them to repent (v. 20; cf. 11:18; 17:30; 20:21) and "turn to [faith in the one] God" (v. 20; cf. 14:15; 15:19; cf. 1 Thess. 1:9). Requiring deeds exemplifying repentance is a new element reminiscent of John's preaching (cf. Luke 3:7–9; Matt. 3:7–10).

The previous narrative has also shown how his mission efforts consistently met Jewish resistance, which was especially typified by the Temple incident (v. 21; cf. 21:30–31). Yet his presence before Agrippa attested the fulfillment of the promise of divine protection (v. 17), enabling him to carry out his commission as a witness (v. 16).

The speech's climax (vv. 22–23) compactly summarizes his earlier sermons (13:16–41; 14:15–17; 17:22–31) and preaching activity that has been reported extensively in the previous narrative. Basic to all his preaching has been his unshaken belief in "what the prophets and Moses said" (v. 22; cf. 24:14) and the "promise made by God to our ancestors" (v. 6; Luke 24:27, 44; Acts 3:18; 28:23). Luke has consistently portrayed Paul as "arguing from the Scriptures" (e.g., 17:2), insisting that the story of Jesus is the continuation of Israel's story.

The specific focus for which Paul has claimed fulfillment of the divine promise is the suffering and death of Christ (v. 23). Since this was promised, it was a "divine must" (see Introduction). But coupled with this was the Easter faith: Christ as the first to rise from the dead (v. 23; 1 Cor. 15:20; Col. 1:18). As the first to experience resurrection life, he was thereby proclaimed as the "Author of life" (3:15). In his exalted status, the risen Lord (through Paul) has proclaimed light to both Jews and Gentiles (v. 23; cf. 2 Tim. 1:10; also Matt. 4:16).

In describing what he himself has done he has presented what Agrippa and his audience should do. The defense has become a sermon.

26:24–32, Paul Vindicated. Typically, Paul's sermon is interrupted at its climactic point (cf. 17:32; 22:22). The effects of the sermon are dramatized by the contrasting responses of Festus and Agrippa. As a pagan, Festus regards belief in resurrection as incredible and Paul as deranged (v. 24; cf. 12:15; John 10:20; Wisd. of Sol. 5:4). By attributing Paul's madness to "much learning," Festus unwittingly vouches for Paul and disqualifies himself (and other Gentiles) from rendering a proper judgment on the matter.

Agrippa, by contrast, more nearly resembles Felix in making overtures, however tentatively, toward the faith (24:22–27). Although Luke never explicitly identifies Agrippa as Jewish, Paul's remarks subtly imply what readers know (vv. 26–27; 23:3). One who assuredly "believes the prophets" (v. 27) is expected to see the clear force of Paul's argument that Christ is the fulfillment of God's biblical promise. Especially crucial is Paul's insistence to Agrippa that these things were not "done in a corner" (v. 26). As Luke's narrative has shown, the story of "the Way" has occurred in the public domain, on the stage of world history.

Whether Agrippa's response (v. 28) is to be understood as playful irony or as a serious declaration of Paul's persuasiveness, it is far short of outright rejection, much less condemnation of Paul. His final verdict is an unqualified vindication of Paul (v. 32; see Introduction). Even though Paul's speech has

confirmed what Festus has already declared (25:25), it is also a subtle reminder that Festus's proposal to continue the trial was ill-advised and unjustified (25:9).

27:1–28:15
Paul's Journey to Rome

This fourth "we" section most likely is based (partially or wholly) on a travel journal to which editorial additions (27:9–11, 21–26, 33–36, 38) have been made (cf. 16:10). One of its distinctive features is a detailed itinerary of ports of call and geographical reference points and the mention of other place-names relating to the voyage (→ Trade and Transportation). Luke unfolds the journey to Rome in well-defined sections, each contributing in its own way to an overall heroic depiction of Paul, God's duly appointed servant and witness (26:16), who makes his triumphal entry into Rome.

27:1–8, Getting Under Way. The decision to sail for Italy from Caesarea begins to carry out concretely Festus's earlier declaration (25:12). The mission's importance is reflected in naming the Roman centurion, Julius, and his Augustan Cohort, possibly the same cohort stationed in Syria during the first century A.D. The Thessalonian Aristarchus (v. 2) is doubtless Paul's earlier traveling co-worker (19:29; 20:4; cf. Philem. 24; Col. 4:10).

Julius's kindness toward Paul (v. 3) characterizes the Romans' favorable treatment generally (cf. 27:43; also 21:31–32; 22:24–30; 24:23) and typifies the hospitality extended to Paul throughout the trip (28:2, 7, 14–16). The Sidon "friends" (v. 3), possibly a technical designation for Christians (cf. Luke 12:4; John 15:14–15; 3 John 15), may have been members of the Phoenician Christian community (cf. 11:19; 21:3–5; also Luke 6:17; 10:13–14).

The journey northwestward from Sidon leads east of Cyprus, then westward along the southern coast of Asia Minor, past Cilicia and Pamphylia, areas well known to Paul (Cilicia: 21:39; 22:3; 23:34; also 9:11; cf. Gal. 1:21; also Acts 15:41; Pamphylia: 13:13; 14:24; 15:38), to Myra, the chief city of the southwestern Asia Minor district of Lycia. Changing to one of the Egyptian grain ships bound from Alexandria to Italy that regularly stopped at Myra, they sail westward to Cnidus on the southwestern tip of Asia Minor, then southward, probably along the southern coast of Crete, past Salmone, on its northeastern tip, finally to Fair Havens, on the south-central coast of Crete. The nearby city of Lasea marked the point where the coast turns sharply north, thus exposing ships to direct winds from the sea.

27:9–12, Paul's First Prophetic Word. The travelogue is now interrupted by deliberations among the principal figures on the voyage (v. 11). The "Fast" that had already occurred (v. 9) is likely a reference to the Jewish Day of Atonement (Lev. 16:29–31; 23:27–32), which fell on the tenth of Tishri (September/October). Ancient nautical wisdom regarded sea voyages after mid-September as dangerous and any between mid-November and mid-March as extremely inadvisable. Given the previous delays and difficulties already experienced, Paul predicts disastrous results if the voyage continues (v. 10). The majority overrule Paul, however, deciding that the more western Cretan harbor of Phoenix is the preferable place to winter.

27:13–20, Getting Off Course in the Storm. As they sail from Fair Havens along the southern coast of Crete toward Phoenix, the northeast wind (→ Euroclydon), blowing from the coast onto the sea, blows the ship off course south of the small island of Cauda, off the southwest coast of Crete. The sailors' emergency measures include securing the small lifeboat and "undergirding" the ship. The exact nature of the latter operation is unclear. Their fear is that the ship would eventually be driven southwest to the northern coast of Africa into the hazardous bays of Greater and Lesser Syrtis (cf. Josephus *Jewish War* 2.381). The continuation of the storm into the next day causes them to begin throwing off miscellaneous equipment (vv. 18–19; cf. Jon. 1:5). Covered by the storm and blocked off from daylight, the ship loses its course completely and drifts in the Mediterranean (v. 20).

The essential function of this section is to confirm the accuracy of Paul's earlier warning (v. 10), at least partially. The narrative has already demonstrated the loss of much cargo, and the threatened loss of ship and lives (v. 20).

27:21–26, Paul's Second Speech. Here Paul the prophet speaks, insisting that his previous caution has now proved true (v. 21 fulfills v. 10). Though revising his earlier prediction slightly, he is nevertheless specific as he predicts, first, no loss of life, only the ship—fulfilled in vv. 41–44; second, his successful arrival in Rome to stand before Caesar—fulfilled in 28:14, 16; third, the safety of the passengers—fulfilled in vv. 33–38, 44; and fourth, their eventual arrival at an island—fulfilled, beginning in vv. 27–32, finally in 28:1.

His vision of "God's angel" (v. 23) is reminiscent of earlier divine interventions during crises (18:9; 23:11; also 16:9–10). Before a pagan audience, his report also becomes an occasion for confessing "the God to whom I belong and whom I worship" (v. 23; cf. Gen. 50:19; also Acts 24:14). Besides allaying Paul's fears, the divine voice confirms Festus's earlier declaration (25:12) and provides incidental Lucan testimony that Paul actually appeared before Caesar's tribunal, which is not otherwise reported later in the narrative.

27:27–32, Approaching Land. Paul's prophecy immediately begins to be fulfilled in this section when, after fourteen days, the ship approaches land. The epi-

sode raises some questions, e.g., whether the sailors' attempt to get into the lifeboat to secure the anchors from the bow represents defensible nautical practice or whether their action is properly interpreted as an escape attempt. The episode serves primarily to confirm the truth of Paul's earlier remarks (v. 22). It thus becomes the occasion for another prophetic pronouncement illustrating the umbrella of divine protection extended by Paul.

27:33–38, Paul's Third Speech. The ship's passengers now become Paul's sole responsibility. Using a familiar biblical proverb (v. 34; 1 Sam. 14:45; 2 Sam. 14:11; 1 Kings 1:52) that echoes the words of Jesus (cf. Luke 12:7; 21:18), he reaffirms his prophetic promise that none of them would be lost. Even though there are slight echoes of Jesus' eucharistic meal (cf. Luke 22:19), this should be seen as an ordinary meal before which a devout Jew offers thanks (cf. Luke 9:16; cf. John 6:11).

The effectiveness of Paul's words and actions is indicated by Luke's noting the total number of passengers as 276 (or 76, according to one textual tradition). It is not an unlikely number considering the passenger loads known from other ancient sources (cf. Josephus *Life* 15).

27:39–44, Getting to Shore. Paul's prediction is more fully realized as they now spot land (v. 39; cf. v. 26). The detailed description of the ship's striking a "reef" (v. 41), thereby being shattered to pieces, confirms another Pauline prediction (v. 22). Some swam, others clung to pieces of the shattered ship (or perhaps to the shoulders of those who could swim), with the result that "all were brought safely to land" (v. 44).

28:1–10, Paul at Malta. Their safe arrival at Malta itself finally fulfills Paul's earlier prediction (27:26). The two incidents at Malta continue Luke's heroic portrait of Paul. On the ship, his prophetic word has proved true; on the island, his divine protection is acknowledged and his prophetic deeds are demonstrated.

Luke supplies the proper interpretation of these events through the naive reaction of the Maltese natives (v. 4), who are convinced that Paul has been protected by Dike, the Greek personification of justice. They rightly recognize that Paul has been "allowed to live." Luke has already made clear, however, that it is not by the gods of pagan religion, but by the God to whom Paul belongs and whom he loyally serves (27:23–24, 35; cf. 24:14–16; 26:6–8). Surprisingly, Luke allows their testimony about Paul's being a god to stand without any disclaimer (v. 6; cf. 14:12–18; also 10:25–26). Paul's surviving a poisonous snakebite places him under the divine protection Jesus promised to his missionaries (Luke 10:19; cf. Mark 16:18).

Paul's prophetic deeds are demonstrated concretely in his healing the father of Publius, the island chief (v. 8; cf. Luke 4:38–39). Through his healing hands continues to run the power of Jesus attested throughout Luke-Acts (Luke 4:40; 13:13; Acts 5:12; 9:17; 14:3; 19:11). Typically, what happens to one happens to all (Luke 4:40–41; Acts 5:12–16; also Luke 8:1–3); consequently, the whole island benefits. Their "many honors" (v. 10) serve to confirm the reality of Paul's prophetic deeds.

28:11–15, Completing the Journey to Rome. In this final stage of the journey Paul proceeds with remarkable freedom. No mention is made of his armed guard or even of other prisoners. The image of Paul the prisoner gives way to that of Paul the missionary being given a hero's welcome by Christian communities in Italy. By reporting the existence of "believers" at Puteoli (vv. 13–14), a major Italian port city, and in Rome itself (v. 15), Luke fully acknowledges that Christianity has preceded Paul in reaching Italy. Thus Luke does not present Paul as the founder of Italian Christianity (cf. Rom. 1:8–15). His primary interest, at this point, is to show that just as Paul had earlier been welcomed openly, and therefore accepted, by churches he himself had not established (21:1–14), so now he is fully recognized by western Christians as God's "servant and witness."

28:16–31
Paul in Rome

The primary focus of Paul's activity in Rome is his dealings with the Roman Jewish community. Two stages are reported: defense (vv. 17–22) and proclamation (vv. 23–28). The subsequent two-year period represents a definite shift to the much broader ministry of Paul, the vindicated apostle (vv. 30–31).

28:16–22, Meeting with Jewish Leaders in Rome. Lodging in an inn under the protection of a single soldier (v. 16), Paul has considerable freedom, which allows him to summon local Jewish leaders (v. 17; cf. Luke 19:47; Acts 25:2). His "speech" to them (vv. 17–20) is a highly abbreviated account of previous charges made against him (21:20–21, 28; 23:26–30; 24:2–9; 25:7, 15–21, 24–27) and his previous defenses at his various trials (22:1–21; 23:6–10; 24:10–21; 25:8, 10–11; 26:2–23). In spite of its brevity, it does provide some new features. His insistence that the Romans actually had wanted to release him (v. 18) represents their intentions more explicitly than previously reported. His appeal to Caesar is now justified as a response to the Jews' objections (v. 19). This renders more explicit the reason for Festus's suggested change of venue (25:9). Certain themes, however, recur: he insists that he is completely innocent (vv. 17–19; see Introduction) and a legitimate spokesperson for "the hope of Israel" (v. 20; cf. 23:6; 24:15, 21; 26:6–7).

In reporting that the Jewish leaders have received neither written reports from Judea nor oral reports

from their fellow Jewish "brothers" (v. 21; note title of address in v. 17), Luke is suggesting that whatever Jewish opposition has occurred against Paul is localized in the eastern Mediterranean, namely, Asia Minor (21:27), but especially Jerusalem (21:11, 27–36; 22:22–23; 23:1–10, 27; 24:9; 25:2, 5, 7, 15) and perhaps Caesarea (25:24). The Roman Jews have only general information about "this sect" (v. 22; cf. 24:5, 14) and are willing to listen to Paul as its representative figure. They stand before Paul as objective, receptive listeners, as eager to listen to new viewpoints as the Athenians were (17:22–23).

28:23–29, Preaching to Roman Jews. Obviously unable to go to one of the several synagogues in Rome at this time, as was his usual practice, Paul summons the Jewish community to his lodging, and they come in "great numbers" (v. 23). The brief outline of his testimony to them represents a digest of Paul's previously reported preaching before Jewish audiences. Once again, it conforms fully to the apostolic preaching of his predecessors, both Jesus and especially Peter: the breaking in of God's new reign (see Introduction) in the person of Jesus (the entire Gospel of Luke; also Acts 2:22–24; 10:36–41; 17:3; 18:5), both of which represent the fulfillment of God's promise in Scripture (Luke 24:27, 44; Acts 2:25–36; 3:18; 10:43; 24:14; 26:22).

Their mixed response is reminiscent of earlier occasions when Paul preached to Jewish audiences (vv. 24–25; 13:43; 14:4; 17:4, 11; 18:4–8; 19:10). Even though "some were convinced" (v. 24), not all were, and this failure to achieve broad acceptance is regarded, oddly enough, as wholesale rejection. By interpreting their response as the very obduracy for which Israel is condemned in Isa. 6:9–10, Luke (through Paul) places them outside the pale of the Christian mission. The most receptive hearing for "God's salvation" is to be found among Gentiles (v. 28). What had happened in Asia Minor (13:46–48) and Greece (18:5–6) is now repeated in Italy, thus becoming a universal pattern.

Even though this explicit use of Isa. 6:9–10 occurs only in the context of Paul's preaching to Roman Jews, its placement at the end of the narrative is significant. It applies retrospectively, strongly indicting Jewish resistance generally. It most likely reflects Luke's own situation and final assessment. In contrast to Romans 9–11, where Paul envisions an eventual conversion of Israel, Luke sees the Christian mission to Jews as finished, probably hopeless; the church's only real hope now lies with its mission to Gentiles.

28:30–31, Paul Vindicated. The rather abrupt ending of Acts leaves tantalizing questions unanswered. Luke has already anticipated some of these questions in his previous narrative. He implies that Paul did appear before Caesar's tribunal (27:24) and finally died a martyr (20:25, 38; 21:13; 25:11). Reporting the full details of either of these events, which he doubtless knew, is less relevant to his purpose than the final picture he sketches of Paul, which has two fundamental elements: first, the fulfillment of the divine purpose in Paul, who as "chosen instrument" carries God's name to "all who came to him," most likely, Gentiles; and second, the full vindication of Paul and "the Way," both of whom have proceeded and flourished throughout the narrative under Roman protection and are left to proceed "with all boldness and without hindrance." In the end, the gospel turns out to be irrepressible.

Bibliography

Barrett, C. K. *The Acts of the Apostles.* International Critical Commentary. 2 vols. Edinburgh: Clark, 1994–98.

Cadbury, H. J. *The Making of Luke-Acts.* London: SPCK, 1958.

Conzelmann, H. *A Commentary on the Acts of the Apostles.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1987.

Fitzmyer, J. *The Acts of the Apostles.* Anchor Bible, 31. New York: Doubleday, 1998.

Foakes-Jackson, F. J., and K. Lake. *The Beginnings of Christianity. Part I: The Acts of the Apostles.* 5 vols. London: Macmillan, 1920–33. Reprint. Grand Rapids, MI: Baker, 1979.

Haenchen, E. *The Acts of the Apostles: A Commentary.* Philadelphia: Westminster, 1971.

Johnson, L. T. *The Acts of the Apostles.* Sacra Pagina, 5. Collegeville, MN: Liturgical Press, 1992.

Juel, D. *Luke-Acts: The Promise of History.* Atlanta, GA: Knox, 1983.

Keck, L. E., and J. L. Martyn, eds. *Studies in Luke-Acts: Studies Presented in Honor of Paul Schubert.* 2d ed. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1980.

Tannehill, R. *The Narrative Unity of Luke-Acts.* Vol. 2. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1990.

Winter, B. W., et al., eds. *The Book of Acts in Its First-Century Setting.* 6 vols. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1993–98.

PART SIX

Books in the Form of Letters

The Pauline Letters and the General Letters to the Churches

Introduction to
Books in the Form of Letters

CHARLES B. COUSAR

The role of letters in the life of the early Christian church is hard to overvalue (→ Church). Twenty-one of the twenty-seven documents in the NT canon are explicitly letters or contain features characteristic of the ancient letter form. Two other canonical books include letters, in one case an official communication (Acts 15:1–35) and in the other case as a critical feature of the literary structure of the writing (Rev. 1:4–3:22). Furthermore, allusions are made to still other letters of which we have no extant copies (1 Cor. 5:9; 7:1; Col. 4:16).

The story of the role and function of letters within the development of early Christianity begins with the apostle Paul (→ Paul). As an itinerant missionary, he kept in touch with the congregations he had started not only through personal emissaries, but also by writing letters. It is clear from the letters that they are intended to serve as surrogates for his actual presence in the congregation. In one case, an apostolic pronouncement of judgment is made through the vehicle of reading the letter in the receiving congregation (1 Cor. 5:3–5). With Paul the letter becomes the primary genre for communication and teaching in the early church.

The Letters of Paul

From Paul's Letters themselves we learn that they were normally dictated to a secretary. Several mention in the closing that Paul appends a message in his own handwriting (Gal. 6:11; 1 Cor. 16:21; Philem. 19; cf. Col. 4:18; 2 Thess. 3:17). In one instance, the secretary identifies himself by adding his own word of greeting (Rom. 16:22). Since there was no official postal service in the first century, couriers, who in the best of circumstances would have been trusted friends of the writer, carried the letters (Rom. 16:1; 1 Cor. 16:10; cf. 1 Pet. 5:12). It is assumed they added information to supplement what was written (cf. Eph. 6:21–22; Col. 4:7–9).

Paul undoubtedly wrote his letters with an eye toward their being read aloud in the receiving congregations (1 Thess. 5:27). Estimates place the literacy rate of first-century society

PREVIOUS PAGE:
St. Paul; a detail of a Byzantine mosaic depicting Paul handing over letters to Timothy and Silas. Duomo, Monreale, Italy.

at 10 to 15 percent, and there is no major reason to expect the rate within Christian congregations to have been substantially higher. The culture was highly oral in the sense that people were accustomed to recitations of various sorts, public declamations, and the reading of official decrees. Literate people as well as the illiterate were used to being read to.

Toward the end of the nineteenth century, on the basis of a number of commercial and private letters discovered in Egypt, scholars distinguished between *letters* and *epistles*. The category of letters was used for nonliterary, generally private communications between individual persons. Epistles, on the other hand, designated formal literary creations composed with artistic skill and directed to a larger audience. Paul's writings, it was argued, were true "letters" and not "epistles." They were addressed to specific situations, not repeated, and were not to be compared with the literary art of an Epicurus or an Aristotle, whose writings were copied by scribes and intended to be studied and read by a vast readership.

More recently, this distinction between letters and epistles has come under considerable criticism, particularly when applied to Paul. His Letters were all written to churches (even Philemon), not to individuals, and were soon copied and shared with other Christian congregations. They can hardly be described as private communications. Furthermore, a study of the language and rhetoric of the Letters reveals a variety of thoughtfully constructed, persuasive strategies to convince his intended readers. The distinction between letters and epistles is simply not a helpful one as far as Paul's writings are concerned.

Two special features about Paul's Letters are worthy of note. First, they reflect a sophisticated and varied use of argumentation. They should not be read as if they were hastily dictated on the run in the midst of a busy and demanding ministry. Even the highly charged Letter to the Galatians reflects a disciplined and carefully crafted passion. Rhetoric was taught in the secondary schools of the Greco-Roman period. Whether Paul had received formal training in rhetoric is anybody's guess. Whether the art and practice of letter writing were even a part of the rhetoric taught in Paul's day is questionable. But it would have been difficult for an educated person to avoid the basic forms of rhetorical argumentation, since they were practiced in nearly every form of communication.

Recent studies have identified in the Letters a variety of patterns or styles of argument that help modern readers to appreciate the persuasiveness of Paul's writing (→ Rhetorical Criticism). For instance, the diatribe (i.e., the use of an imaginary dialogue partner) was derived from ancient pedagogy, as students in Socratic fashion were led, instructed, and corrected by a teacher. In Paul's hands the diatribe becomes an effective method of argumentation. The audience is taken into account in the instruction, so that the style becomes thoroughly dialogical. Sometimes rhetorical questions are posed in such a way as to anticipate objections by readers or possible misunderstandings that have arisen (e.g., Rom. 3:1–9). At other times, direct quotations are put in the mouth of the imaginary conversation partner in order to nip in the bud any potential or real arrogance in the readers (e.g., Rom. 11:19–21). The use of the diatribe resulted in lively communication and vivid teaching.

Second, the Letters indicate a definite scholastic activity within the communities to which they are written. Both the Jewish and Christian communities placed a high value on texts. Frequent and often lengthy readings, followed by exposition, made the writings accessible to the whole community. The Letters themselves display a careful reading of Jewish Scriptures and anticipate a readership that values and knows the stories they contain.

In the Letter to the Galatians Paul attacks the position of missionaries who have come into the congregations of the area and who in citing scriptural texts have begun to advocate the necessity of circumcision for non-Jewish converts. In Galatians 3–4 Paul contests their

interpretation of the texts and in light of the gospel offers alternative readings (Gal. 3:6–18; 4:21–5:1). The assumption is that the members of the Galatian congregation, though predominantly non-Jewish, would have been familiar with the Septuagint (LXX), at least with the texts under discussion, and could grasp the nuances of the argument.

The Structure of the Pauline Letters

The organization of Paul's Letters follows the organization of the regular Greco-Roman letters, except that Paul exercises considerable freedom in adapting his Letters both to the language of the Christian community and to the specific circumstances of the audience to which he is writing. The openings state the name of the sender or senders, identify the recipients, and offer a salutation and, with one exception, a prayer of thanksgiving (or blessing) for the situation of the addressees. Openings in general and prayers of thanksgiving in particular are usually fashioned in such a way as to build a bridge to the readers and to telegraph issues that will arise later in the Letter.

Two contrasting examples illustrate how the beginnings of Paul's Letters signal what is to follow. Although 1 Thessalonians provides a terse statement of the senders ("Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy") and the recipients ("to the church of Thessalonica in God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ") and a very brief greeting ("Grace to you and peace"), it plunges into a lengthy and effusive prayer of thanksgiving (1:2–10). Paul celebrates the readers' "work of faith and labor of love, and perseverance of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ" (1:3). They have joyfully received the gospel amid persecution and have become examples to believers far beyond their immediate locale (1:7–8). Paul's initial reception by the Thessalonians becomes a cause for gratitude to God (1:6, 9–10). With such a beginning, it is not surprising that the remainder of the Letter nurtures the relationship between writer and readers with tender imagery and positive affirmations. Repeatedly the Thessalonians are urged to keep on doing what they are already doing (4:1, 9–10; 5:11).

In sharp contrast to 1 Thessalonians, Galatians begins with a clarification that the apostleship of Paul (the primary sender) derives not from human authorization, but directly from Jesus and God the Father (1:1). Instead of a prayer of thanksgiving commending the readers, what follows is a statement of astonishment that the Galatians have so quickly deserted the call of God and have been fascinated by a group advocating the necessity of circumcision for non-Jews. Paul judges their advocacy such a distortion of the gospel that it cannot really be called "gospel." A double curse is pronounced on anyone, including the apostle himself, who twists the message of grace and makes it something else (1:6–9). In light of such a beginning, readers are not surprised that the remainder of Galatians consists of a reaffirmation of the singularity of the gospel (1:11–2:21) and includes a sharp attack on the purveyors of this non-gospel (5:7–12).

The closings of the Letters include a variety of conventions and tend to be a bit more elaborate than the closings of typical Hellenistic letters. One often finds greetings to or from friends (Rom. 16:3–15, 21–23; 1 Cor. 16:19–20; Phil. 4:21–22; 1 Thess. 5:26; Philem. 23–24), the exhortation to greet another with a "holy kiss" (Rom. 16:16; 1 Cor. 16:20; 2 Cor. 13:12; 1 Thess. 5:26), and a concluding ascription (Rom. 16:25–27) or benediction (1 Cor. 16:23; 2 Cor. 13:13; Gal. 6:18; Phil. 4:23; 1 Thess. 5:28; Philem. 25). Occasionally a prayer for peace is offered (1 Thess. 5:23–24) and final admonitions are given (2 Cor. 13:11). The closing of Galatians represents the most abrupt departure from the usual pattern. The major issue of the Letter is recapitulated, and most of the standard conventions are missing (Gal. 6:11–18).

Within the body of the letter conventional features are not so obvious, since the body conveys the primary information of the letter, something that varies from letter to letter. Two common characteristics have been noted. First, an introductory formula, combined with the direct address "brothers and sisters," usually opens the body of the letter. Five of Paul's Letters—Romans, Galatians, 2 Corinthians, Philippians, and 1 Thessalonians—begin with a statement of disclosure ("I want you to know, brothers and sisters" or "We do not want you to be unaware, brothers and sisters"). The other two—1 Corinthians and Philemon—begin with a request formula ("Now I appeal to you, brothers and sisters").

Second, words of moral exhortation to the readers (called parenetic instruction) come generally, though not always, at the close of the Letters. So prominent is this feature that some interpreters prefer to distinguish it as a fourth major section of the letter—alongside the opening, the body, and the closing. This moral exhortation sometimes comes in the form of a list of vices (as in Gal. 5:19–21) or virtues (as in Phil. 4:8). At other times it occurs in a series of maxims (as in 1 Thess. 5:14–22) or in brief moral homilies (as in 1 Thess. 4:9–12).

The Purposes of the Pauline Letters

As with the modern practice of letter writing, ancient communications served a variety of purposes. Paul keeps in touch with the churches he has established through his letters, but each letter is aimed at a specific audience and is written for a particular reason. Our only access to discovering Paul's reason (or reasons) for writing is the letter itself.

Romans is the only Letter written to a congregation that Paul had not previously visited (though in chap. 16 we discover that he had many close friends in the community). It comes at a critical juncture in his ministry, when his work in the territory around the eastern area of the Mediterranean Sea is completed and his eyes are focused westward toward Spain. He writes to the house-churches in Rome to introduce himself and the gospel he preaches in hope of soliciting their support for the Spanish mission (Rom. 15:14–29). When we read the Letter, however, another context begins to surface. Before coming to Rome, Paul plans to go to Jerusalem to deliver the offering received from the gentile churches for the mother church. He has considerable anxiety about the trip and asks for the prayers (and perhaps the implied endorsement) of the readers in facing a possible rejection and hostility at Jerusalem (15:15–16, 30–33). He writes his theological introduction to the Roman church, and yet keeps one eye focused on Jerusalem and the situation of the Jewish people who have not accepted Jesus as Messiah.

An analysis of the Corinthian correspondence is complicated by the fact that Paul writes as many as four or possibly five letters to the Christians in Corinth, not all of which are included in the canon (→ Corinth). In 1 Cor. 5:9 mention is made of a previous letter Paul has written, which in turn is followed by a letter from the Corinthians to Paul (1 Cor. 7:1) and oral reports by visitors of what is happening in the church there (1 Cor. 1:11). 1 Corinthians then addresses the difficulties in the church about which Paul has read and heard.

In 2 Corinthians mention is made of a letter written "out of much distress and anguish of heart and with many tears" and a "painful visit" Paul paid the Corinthians (2:1–4). There are good reasons for thinking that 2 Corinthians 1–9 is written following the anguished letter and the painful visit. The chapters reflect a generally positive, though fragile, relationship between Paul and the Corinthians. In 2 Corinthians 10–13, however, Paul responds to harsh attacks made on him in Corinth by those whom he labels "false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ" (11:13). The caustic rhetoric as well as the

substance of Paul's defense lead many scholars to surmise that 2 Corinthians 10–13 is a separate letter, written at a time different from that reflected in 2 Corinthians 1–9. Sometime, perhaps toward the end of the first century when Paul's letters were collected, 2 Corinthians 1–9 and 10–13 became a single letter.

This reconstruction of the Corinthian correspondence reminds us that a give-and-take goes on between Paul and his churches, and as modern readers we are a party to only one side of the conversation. The primary evidence for making sense of the conversation between writer and readers are the Letters themselves, which provide us with only Paul's perspective on the issues in the churches.

Galatians is an example of a polemical letter, written as an attack on a group of Jewish-Christian missionaries (→ Galatia). Like Paul they were engaged in a mission to the non-Jews, but on divergent theological grounds. The Letter lays out the differences between their "gospel" (described as a "different gospel, which is not simply another version of the same gospel," 1:6), rooted in the Torah of the Jewish people, and his "gospel," received "through a revelation of Jesus Christ" (1:12). Interestingly, Paul does not address the other missionaries directly, but writes only to the Galatian Christians to remind them anew of the implications of God's invasion of the world in Jesus, of a new creation in which circumcision and uncircumcision are no longer decisive categories (6:15).

In contrast to the Corinthian correspondence and Galatians, Paul's Letters to the Philippians and 1 Thessalonians demonstrate an entirely different use of the genre (→ Philippi). Two features characterize Philippians. First, the Letter employs a number of conventions of friendship to exhort the community to unity and steadfastness in the face of persecution. In the ancient world friendship was seen as the glue that held society together. Aristotle wrote, "The proverb says, 'Friends' goods are common property,' and this is correct, since community [Gk. *koinonia*] is the essence of friendship" (*Nichomachean Ethics* 8.9.1).

Philippians exhibits many features and much of the language of friendship: the presence-absence motif (1:19–26; 2:12); expressions of affection and the desire to be with the recipients (1:7–8; 4:1); the reciprocity between writer and readers (1:7, 30; 2:17–18; 4:14); the pattern of giving and receiving (4:10–20); the importance of mutual participation (*koinonia*, 1:5; 2:1; 3:10; 4:15); the stress on agreement and equality (1:27–2:4; 4:2); the need for a unified mind (2:2, 5; 4:2); and the sharing of common enemies (1:27–30; 3:2, 17–19). Underlying the affirmation of friendship is a mutual sharing in the gospel of Christ that binds writer and readers together and forms the basis for his exhortations to unity. The Letter is obviously written to nurture a relationship that is already strong. Rather than introducing himself anew, addressing problems in the community, or castigating competing voices, Paul employs a variety of friendship conventions to foster the ties to a community that has already demonstrated its affection for him by sending gifts (4:10–20).

A second feature of Philippians is the use of models as forms of exhortation. Ancient rhetorical theory stressed the role of models, and examples abound in the exhortatory letters of Seneca, Pliny, Isocrates, and the Socratics. Both positive and negative models appear in Philippians to persuade the audience to follow specific injunctions and to live a life of steadfastness, such as the life of Epaphroditus (2:25–30) or Paul (3:4–14).

1 Thessalonians is likely the earliest letter written by Paul and in many ways breaks new ground. To our knowledge it had no earlier predecessor for adapting and transforming the existing patterns of the Greco-Roman letter for Christian communication, no established *literary* vocabulary on which to draw. It is the first in the line of letters written by Paul and later Christians to sustain and instruct congregations and individuals.

Much in the same mood as Philippians, 1 Thessalonians reflects a deep affection between

writer and readers. In the prayer of thanksgiving, Paul expresses gratitude to God for their genuine reception of the gospel and for the courageous example set for other believers (1:2–10). In 3:9 he responds to the good report brought to him by Timothy by saying, "How can we thank God enough for you in return for all the joy we feel before our God because of you?"

1 Thessalonians has been called a letter of exhortation, but the many injunctions are set in the context of deep friendship. The exhortations are not intended to correct serious failings among the readers, but to confirm them in their pilgrimage of faith. One example will suffice: "Now concerning love of the brothers and sisters, you do not need to have anyone write to you, for you yourselves have been taught by God to love one another; and indeed you do love all the brothers and sisters throughout Macedonia. But we urge you to do so more and more" (4:9–10).

Philemon represents the most unusual letter written by Paul. It is his shortest and most focused communication. It is a letter of commendation of Onesimus, a slave who is returning to his master, Philemon, with Paul's strong suggestion that he be received back as a brother and no longer as a slave (Philem. 15–16). Paul himself is imprisoned and apparently was the instrument of Onesimus's conversion. He has no legal grounds to require Philemon to welcome and manumit Onesimus, only the power of persuasion.

Paul's plea is delicately offered in careful rhetoric. Each sentence has a strategic role in the effort to persuade Philemon to act rightly: the strong commendation of Philemon for his deeds of faith and love (vv. 4–7); the foregoing of compulsion in favor of persuasion (vv. 8–9, 14); the designation of himself as "prisoner (vv. 1, 9) and as "father" of Onesimus (v. 10); the mention of Philemon's indebtedness to Paul (v. 19); the offer to repay any indebtedness Onesimus may have incurred (v. 18); the familial language used throughout (vv. 1, 7, 10, 16, 20); and even the mention of an upcoming visit by Paul (v. 22). In a deft way the Letter becomes more than a personal appeal from one Christian to another and makes the treatment of Onesimus an ecclesial matter. The address includes the whole church meeting in Philemon's house (v. 1), and the mention of several friends with Paul at the time of writing puts additional social pressure on Philemon to release Onesimus (vv. 1, 23–24). The Letter is remarkable in its discrete, but forceful, strategies of persuasion.

The Disputed Pauline Letters

Thirteen of the twenty-one canonical Letters are written in the name of Paul the apostle. Modern scholarship has tended to identify (though by no means unanimously) seven of those Letters as authored (or dictated) by the apostle (Romans, 1 and 2 Corinthians, Galatians, Philippians, 1 Thessalonians, and Philemon) and six as written pseudonymously (Ephesians, Colossians, 2 Thessalonians, 1 and 2 Timothy, and Titus, often called the deutero-Pauline Letters). A number of features of a letter are considered when one decides the matter of authorship—its language and style, its theological contents, the historical circumstances reflected in the letter, and, if appropriate, the nature of false teaching addressed (whether it comes from Paul's time or later).

Although the modern use of pseudonymity raises all sorts of moral and legal questions, in the ancient world the practice abounded. Some documents were written for financial gain or malice, others out of respect for the person in whose name the document was written, often closely imitating the revered model. Some writers sought to deceive readers about who the actual author was; others clearly wrote in the name of a person long since dead. General-

izations about ancient pseudonymity are risky. Each example has to be considered on its own merits.

Each of the disputed Letters of Paul has distinctive features, and yet all six, written after his death, follow a pattern of making contemporary the voice of the deceased apostle. "What would Paul say if he were living today and facing the current situation in the church?" A disciple who knew Paul's letters well wrote to give the apostle a fresh voice. The actual writer, standing in the Pauline tradition, sought to let the tradition address new and changed circumstances. A careful reader of the Letters is not surprised, then, to discover both strong similarities and marked differences between the deutero-Pauline Letters and the other seven.

2 Thessalonians mimics 1 Thessalonians in a number of ways. It is not surprising that in its organization and structure it would resemble 1 Thessalonians, since for the most part both follow the Greco-Roman letter form. But not only is its major topic the same (apocalyptic expectations), but many expressions of 1 Thessalonians are found in 2 Thessalonians (and in some instances they appear nowhere else in Paul's writings).

The primary feature that distinguishes 2 Thessalonians from 1 Thessalonians and leads one to label it "deutero-Pauline" is the manner in which the apocalyptic scenario works itself out (2 Thess. 2:1–12). A number of new figures appear (the rebel, the lawless one, and the restrainer), complicating the picture Paul has painted in 1 Thessalonians (4:13–5:11). Whereas 1 Thessalonians is written to encourage church members who are grieving over their deceased loved ones and to assure them that the day of the Lord will come, 2 Thessalonians seems aimed at discouraging a premature eschatological celebration (2:1–2; → Eschatology). A number of signs must happen before the coming of the Lord (2:3–10). Thus it appears likely that 2 Thessalonians was written at a later time, when Christians were enduring severe persecution and when apocalyptic speculation was running rampant. A follower of Paul calls on the apostolic authority to put brakes on the speculation (which may have claimed a Pauline warrant) and to say that, although things may get worse before they get better, church members need to keep at their daily tasks (4:11–13) and to persevere in loving one another (1:3).

Ephesians and Colossians as Letters share a number of features in common. Both have a similar view of Christ, and both contain a form of the codes for regulating the household (Eph. 5:21–6:9; Col. 3:18–4:1). Yet in form and purpose the two Letters differ markedly. Ephesians is a very general letter. Missing is any mention of specific problems in the community to which the Letter is written, any list of personal greetings to the readers, any clues that tell us about the circumstances of the readers. The fact that the phrase "in Ephesus" in 1:1 is absent in the oldest manuscripts (see the footnote in the NRSV) leads to the suggestion that Ephesians was originally a circular letter, written to churches in a number of cities, of which Ephesus could have been one. In any case, there are not many clues to unscramble the historical intention of the Letter. It may well have been written to reinforce the identities of a group of Christians and to help them embrace their distinctive role as God's people in the world.

Colossians, on the other hand, has a specific target (even though its precise parameters are difficult to define). It is written to warn readers about a strange "philosophy," whose concern is the cosmic powers, "the elemental spirits of the universe," that exercise control over humans and their destinies (2:8). Apparently one can gain access to and even mastery over these powers by worshiping angels (2:18), by mystical experiences that inflate the ego (2:18), and by adopting a rigorous and ascetic lifestyle, involving ritual obligations (2:16) and world-denying regulations (2:18, 20–22). In response to this "philosophy," Colossians recites an early Christian hymn (1:15–20), which declares the supremacy of Christ over all principalities and powers and then calls believers to union with Christ through baptism (2:8–15).

Although Ephesians and Colossians share some common language, Ephesians is highly doxological. Following a brief opening (Eph. 1:1–12), it begins a long blessing of God that seems to go on and on. It appears to stop at the end of chapter 1, except that it picks up again at 3:14 and only concludes with an ascription in 3:20–21. The entire first three chapters are epideictic rhetoric, in which praise is offered to God for what has been done in and for the readers. The intent is to confirm and bolster in the audience faithfulness to God's actions in Christ. The effusive language and the style of long and flowing sentences in Ephesians are very liturgical and unlike those in any other Letters in the NT.

1 and 2 Timothy and Titus are usually referred to as the pastoral Letters, since they present a picture of Paul as an authoritative church leader who instructs younger leaders. The particular individuals addressed (Timothy and Titus) were his trusted co-workers during his ministry, but the Letters seem to reflect a period of time some decades after Paul's death. Among other things, they give directions on how the recipients should cope with false teaching, what characteristics their leaders (bishops, elders, and deacons) should possess, what should be done to maintain good order among various groups in the congregations (the young and the elderly, the widows, and the slaves), and how the wealthy in the church should share their resources.

Particularly, the depiction of the church leaders (1 Tim. 3:1–10; 5:17–22; Titus 1:5–9) and the suggestions about coping with false teachers place the pastoral Letters much closer to *1 Clement* (A.D. 95) and those of Ignatius (110) than to the undisputed Pauline Letters. The basic strategy for handling false teaching is to forbid it (1 Tim. 1:3; Titus 1:11), to avoid it (1 Tim. 4:7; 6:2; Titus 5:9), to guard the sacred tradition (1 Tim. 6:20), and to abstain from wrangling over it (2 Tim. 2:14, 16, 23). Only at one point is the false teaching engaged directly with a theological response (1 Tim. 4:4–5), as is typical of Paul in Galatians and 1 and 2 Corinthians. Furthermore, the hierarchical pattern of the Greco-Roman family, not entirely absent from Paul, now becomes the pervasive structure for ordering the life of the church. The church is the household of God, and leaders and members take their appropriate places in the family pecking order.

Moreover, it is difficult to understand how the statements about the role of women in the church found in 1 Tim. 2:8:15 could be written by the same person who wrote Gal. 3:28 ("There is no longer male and female; for all of you are one in Christ"). It is more likely that one of the reasons for the writing of 1 Timothy was to counter oral stories and legends about Paul that circulated toward the end of the first century among celibate women in Asia Minor, leading to the disruption of households and the challenge to established authority (see the apocryphal *Acts of Paul and Thecla*).

How the Pauline Letters circulated beyond their initial destinations, were collected, and became a single corpus of writings is not at all clear. The fact that Galatians was written to several congregations in the Galatian region suggests that Paul intended his letters to be read more than once and heard by various groups (Gal. 1:2; see 1 Thess. 5:27). One would expect that the letters to Rome and Corinth were read by multiple house-churches in those cities. Colossians commends the exchange of at least two letters between Colossae and Laodicea (Col. 4:16). It is very possible that, between the time of Paul's death in the early 60s and the end of the century, in response to ecclesial needs, not only were individual letters read by other communities, but the letters were circulated in collections. The writer of 2 Peter (3:15–16) speaks of "all of his letters," presuming some fixed number, and Clement of Rome and Ignatius of Antioch at the turn of the century reflect a knowledge of several of Paul's letters. In the middle of the second century, Marcion produced an edition of ten of Paul's letters.

The General Letters

The term "general epistles" or "catholic epistles" for the remaining eight NT Letters goes back at least to the time of the fourth-century Christian historian Eusebius. Actually in many of the early lists of books only seven were included under this rubric, since Hebrews, though anonymously written, was often listed in the Pauline corpus. The term "general" or "catholic" apparently derived from the fact that the authors and audiences are not so specific and particular as in the Pauline Letters. Some of the documents, as we shall see, stretch the limits of the category "letter."

Compared to the Letters of Paul, Hebrews can hardly be called a letter. It closes with standard conventions of the letter form (13:20–25), but lacks at the beginning the name of the sender, the identification of recipients, an initial greeting, and a prayer of thanksgiving. The writer identifies the document as "a word of exhortation" (13:22), a term used elsewhere in early Christianity for a sermon (Acts 13:15). Throughout the Letter one finds a series of homilies or sermons aimed at encouraging the readers to hold fast to their confession of faith in the face of past and future persecution. Some in the community have ceased coming to church (10:25) and others are weary and confused. They suffer from "drooping hands" and "weak knees" (12:12). The purpose of Hebrews is to encourage such people not to lose heart, not to fall away from their initial confession of faith, to pray with boldness, and to be stirred by the faith of saints of the past.

One distinct homily in Hebrews is the section 3:1–4:13. It begins with an introduction, calling attention to the faithfulness of Christ (3:1–6), which is then followed by a citation of Ps. 95:7–11 (in 3:7–11), a close exposition of the psalm (3:8–4:11), and a conclusion (4:12–13). The pattern is repeated a number of times throughout the Letter, giving the impression that the writer has drawn together several homilies (all textually based) into one larger homily, which then is dispatched as "a word of exhortation" to this second-generation community of believers.

The collection of homilies itself is neatly woven together by an interesting strategy. Major sections are joined together by common words at the beginning and at the end. For instance, the first section begins (1:1–2) and ends (4:12–13) with a reflection on the word of God. The second section begins (4:14–16) and ends (10:21–22) with a statement of the great high priest, who calls readers to approach God's throne with boldness and to hold fast to their confession. The final section begins and ends with the note of remembrance (10:32; 13:7). The symmetry, which links the three major sections, provides a remarkable order to the larger homily.

The epistolary features with which Hebrews closes (13:22–25) were likely added to the homily by the unknown author when the letter was in fact sent to its initial readers. Interesting is the mention of "our brother Timothy," recently released from prison. The inclusion of his name provides a link with the Pauline corpus of Letters, and, if historical, urges a date for Hebrews before the end of the first century.

The Letter of James represents the most enigmatic of the Letters. It begins with the name of the author, the addressees, and a terse greeting (James 1:1). Then the writer immediately launches into a miscellaneous section of exhortations to the audience ranging from encouraging endurance amid trials and temptations (1:2–4, 12–16), to the need for single-mindedness (1:5–8), to warnings about the dangers of wealth (1:9–11), to developing a series of personal traits (1:19–27). The rest of the Letter consists of a series of short essays picking up on some of the themes introduced in the initial section of exhortations. The closing is rather

abrupt; there are no conventional epistolary features such as greetings, commendations, prayers for peace, or benedictions. Except for the opening and the frequent use of the direct address "my brothers and sisters" (1:2, 16, 19; 2:1, 5, 14; 3:1, 10; 4:11; 5:9, 12, 19), one would not think to label James a letter.

The stated writer, called simply "James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ" (1:1), and the designation of the readers do not tell us much. Which "James"? The brother of Jesus or simply a moniker for apostolic authority? Whoever the author was, he wrote excellent Greek, without much of the "second-language" features of the LXX style. Who are "the twelve tribes in the diaspora"? Taken metaphorically, the expression could designate almost any group of Christians scattered throughout the ancient world, perhaps even the church at large. Thus the few epistolary features that James does exhibit are not helpful in pinning down a specific writer and a definite audience.

With 1 Peter one encounters an epistolary form more consistent with the Pauline Letters than either Hebrews or James. The opening (name of sender, recipients, and greeting, 1:1–2) follows a familiar pattern, as does the closing (greetings and a peace wish, 5:13–14). Although there is no prayer of thanksgiving as such, 1 Peter includes a blessing formula (1:3–9) that is parallel in form to 2 Cor. 1:3–7. Like many of the Pauline Letters (and like Hebrews and James), 1 Peter contains a strong element of exhortation.

The designation of "Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ" as author raises a number of questions that lead many scholars to label this Letter pseudonymous. For one thing, in both language and style the Letter is written in very literate Greek. The author is an educated person who knows about the traumas experienced by the Christians in Asia Minor toward the end of the first century. The notion that 5:12 ("through Silvanus I have written this letter") implies a secretary who took the apostle's words and turned them into eloquent Greek seems highly improbable. Silvanus was a Palestinian and would not have been a likely candidate to have produced this Letter. Furthermore, the phrase "through Silvanus" may indicate only that he was the bearer of the Letter and not the amanuensis.

Second, the Letter does not read like a document written by someone who had heard and seen the earthly Jesus. As with the Pauline Letters, 1 Peter focuses on the suffering and death of Jesus and not on the deeds he performed or on the words he said. The reference in 5:1 to the author as "an elder myself and a witness of the sufferings of Christ" means that he proclaims (and thus bears witness to) Jesus' sufferings. It would be highly ironic if this were a statement made by Simon Peter (→ Peter), since according to the Gospels he was not present at the crucifixion as were the women (Mark 15:40) and as was the "beloved disciple" (John 19:25–27). Furthermore, the author of 1 Peter is at home with the LXX, but the thorny issue of the Torah that caused a breech between Paul and Peter at Antioch (Gal. 2:11–14) is missing from the Letter. In fact, in language and theology the Letter reflects a definite Pauline influence, at least when compared with the deutero-Pauline Letters.

2 Peter and Jude are often treated together since they share common material. Either the much shorter Jude is used in the writing of 2 Peter 2 or they both borrow from the same source. Both have the marks of a letter at least in the way they open; both are concerned with false teachers who have entered their respective communities; and both are generally thought to be pseudonymously written (though so little is known of the Jude who is associated with James in Luke 6:16 and Acts 1:13 that it is difficult to make a judgment).

2 Peter, while a letter, also has the marks of a farewell speech. "Peter," the implied author, is anticipating death soon and offers these words "to refresh your memory" in the hope that "you may at any time be able to recall these things" (1:12–14). Using the transfiguration scene

from the Gospel as the basis for authenticating the message (1:16–18), the writer warns against false prophets and false teachers who will malign the truth (2:1–3), who in their licentious living will turn out to be "like irrational animals, mere creatures of instinct, born to be caught and killed" (2:12). In another passage, sounding also like a farewell speech, readers are reminded that scoffers will arise to question whether Jesus will really return as he promised (3:1–7). Jesus delays, the writer determines, because God reckons time differently from the way humans do and because he patiently waits in hopes that all will repent (3:8–10). The expectation of divine judgment and salvation becomes the primary ethical motivation for the community (3:11–18).

Since 2 Peter mentions Paul speaking "in all his letters" and being both hard to understand and easy to misconstrue (3:15–16), the Letter is often assigned a very late date, perhaps the latest of the canonical writings.

The three Johannine Letters are normally treated together, and yet each is distinct and has features that do not characterize the others. 1 John shows little signs of actually being a letter, lacking both the traditional opening and closing, and yet it is clearly a communication to a community. This, together with the fact that the author does not identify himself, is probably due to its being written by a member of the local community and not sent from another location. The author may even be the same person identified in 2 and 3 John as "the elder." The Letter is written to a community split because some of its members have withdrawn (1 John 2:19). The divisive issue has to do with the incarnation, whether Jesus Christ has really come in the flesh or not (4:2). The Letter encourages those remaining to be faithful and to exhibit among themselves the same love God has shown in the sending of Jesus.

2 John opens and closes like a letter and is apparently sent to a neighboring community, urging its members to be alert to the docetic teaching that has divided the "sister" church. The Letter addresses "the elect lady and her children" (2 John 1), and in the conclusion greetings are sent "from the children of your elect sister" (13). Presumably these are symbolic ways of speaking about the Christian communities.

3 John presents an entirely different issue. It, too, is written by the elder, but this time to thank Gaius, his beloved friend, who has welcomed a group of the elder's friends and to urge him to continue the practice of hospitality (3 John 1–8). The kindnesses have been shown despite the efforts of Diotrephes, apparently a leader in the community who has rejected the elder's authority and has sought to block the welcome of his friends (vv. 9–10). One other person, Demetrius, is singled out for high commendation (v. 12). The scenario created by the Letter is an intriguing one. What are the circumstances surrounding these four individuals—the elder, Gaius, Diotrephes, and Demetrius? What has brought about the alienation of one of them? Unfortunately we have no further information that can shed light on the Letter.

What this survey of the NT Letters has shown is the diversity of material that bears the common label "letters." The letter served a variety of purposes in early Christianity. Whereas 1 Corinthians is written to answer particular questions raised by communications from a single congregation, Hebrews is much more of a broadly based document, anonymously written, sermonic in form, and without an opening address or greeting. Philippians is a letter of friendship written to encourage a beloved congregation under pressure, while James is a fairly disjointed collection of moral teachings sent to undetermined readers. Yet all are targeted for specific audiences, whether or not modern readers can discern those audiences clearly.

Bibliography

Cousar, Charles B. *The Letters of Paul.* Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1996.
Gamble, Harry Y. *Books and Readers in the Early Church: A History of Early Christian Texts.* New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1995.
Stowers, Stanley K. *Letter Writing in Greco-Roman Antiquity.* Philadelphia: Westminster, 1986.
White, John L. *Light from Ancient Letters.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1986

Romans

PAUL W. MEYER

INTRODUCTION

General Features

The position of Romans as the first Letter in the NT is due to the simple fact that the earliest collections of Paul's Letters were arranged in order of decreasing length and Romans is the longest. Its resulting place has been oddly appropriate, however, since it is also the most deliberate and reflective of Paul's Letters and its influence on Christian theology the greatest. The sixteenth-century reformer Philipp Melanchthon called it a "compendium of Christian doctrine" and it has in fact functioned as such for most of its long history. Its contents seem at first sight to conform to this assessment. In all other cases, Paul's Letters clearly served as surrogates for his personal presence as an apostle and leader in situations of crisis that developed in churches he himself had founded. In those other Letters Paul writes because he has to, to protect, correct, or strengthen some aspect of the gospel in the life of a particular congregation under risk.

Romans appears to be an exception to this pattern. It is addressed to a church Paul did not establish. It does not seem to arise from an occasion that has been forced on him. There is no defense of himself, as in Galatians or 1 and 2 Corinthians, and no counterattack on those who have assaulted him or tried to seduce his converts. Instead, the argument of the Letter proceeds by a serial treatment of interlocking and perennial themes, often in sections that stand out as independent literary "blocks." Indeed, one of the challenges in the reading of Romans is to see how these sections were intended to fit together as parts of a coherent whole.

These themes, furthermore, do not seem to be peculiar to Romans; there are very few of them that do not echo passages in the other Letters. Some examples are the failure of the world to know God on his own terms (Rom. 1:18–32; 1 Cor. 1:18–25); justification by faith rather than by works of the law (Rom. 3; Gal. 3; 4; Phil. 3); Abraham (Rom. 4; Gal. 3); Adam and Christ (Rom. 5:12–21; 1 Cor. 15:21–22, 45–49); and the church as the body of Christ (Rom. 12; 1 Cor. 12). There are exceptions. Conspicuous by its absence from Romans is any discussion of the nature of Paul's apostleship, any defense of his credentials or cataloging of the trials he has endured to authenticate his ministry. That these are missing appears to be a function of the absence of polemic. Conversely, one major theme that is treated at length and with passion in Romans, but has no parallel in the other Letters, is the discussion of the past and future destiny of Israel and its relation to the gospel (Rom. 9–11).

If Romans is the first of Paul's Letters in the order of the NT books, it is the last of his undoubted Letters to have been written (→ Paul). The themes Romans shares with the other Letters always come up elsewhere in situations of conflict or uncertainty that elicit Paul's discussion of them. But in Romans they are elaborated as part of a longer argument he has himself initiated, in deliberate and self-conscious progression. Many of its turning points are clearly marked by literary conventions (1:8; 12:1–2; 16:1), anticipated objections and queries (3:1; 4:1, 9; 6:1), short summations (6:11; 7:12; 15:5–6), rhetorical climaxes (8:37–39; 11:28–32), and the insertion of liturgical fragments (4:25; 9:5; 11:33–36). It seems that the historical concreteness of those earlier crises and conflicts has receded and been replaced by a more deliberate accounting of what Paul has come to regard as crucial and definitive in his total work as an apostle; he appears to transcend at least to some extent the particular situations he has lived through and make available for a new audience the fruits of his experience. As a result, there has always been a powerful temptation to read Romans as a "compendium of Christian doctrine," or a systematic statement of Paul's theology.

Yet there are three important reasons for not resting with such an appraisal. For one thing, it is clear from the other Letters that Romans simply does not embrace everything that was important, even necessary, in Paul's own understanding of Christian faith and life (one may mention especially the Lord's Supper, 1 Cor. 11:23–26, and the resurrection, 1 Cor. 15:3–8, 12–19). In the second place, no part of the NT was composed simply as a presentation of its author's ideas divorced from specific human occasions and needs. One should hesitate a long time before making Romans an exception to this rule and sundering it from early Christian history. Above all, Romans itself contains the most important evidence to help us understand its place in that history.

Occasion and Purpose

The most direct evidence for the occasion of Romans appears in the personal remarks Paul makes in the opening and closing sections of the Letter. In 1:10–15 it is clear that he is preparing the way for carrying out a long-cherished plan to visit the church at Rome, a visit he hopes will be of mutual benefit. In 15:14–33 he is much more specific. He feels he has no more "space" to carry on his mission to the Gentiles in the eastern Mediterranean and wants to extend it to the west and to Spain; and he wants to be "sped on his way" (15:24) there by the church at Rome, to be supported by them in this enterprise. Since Paul hopes for such help from a church he did not himself establish, one motive for writing is clearly implied: he wants to present this church with an authentic representation of his message to gain its trust and backing. Before he can come to Rome, however, Paul has to make one last trip to Jerusalem to deliver the collection of money he has raised for the Jewish Christians there (→ Contribution for the Saints).

This fixes the date and place for the writing of Romans fairly well, i.e., during his last stay in Greece prior to his final trip to Jerusalem (at the point in the narrative of Acts represented by Acts 20:3) and probably from Corinth (Rom. 16:23 mentions "Gaius, my host," and Gaius is one of the few persons Paul admits to having baptized in Corinth, 1 Cor. 1:14). The time is probably the winter of A.D. 55 or 56. This generally undisputed dating of Romans has a significant bearing on the Letter's content. Its composition comes after the writing of Galatians and all the letters to Corinth (whatever their number), after the resolution of the Corinthian crisis, and probably also after the writing of Philippians.

If this gives us time and place, it does not yet yield a very convincing account of Paul's purpose in writing. Why should a letter aimed at gaining trust and recognition deal with just the themes we have identified? Romans is much more than a neutral exposition of admirable ideas, however coherent. It is an argument with thrust and edge; it seeks to overcome resistance and counter objections. One may easily imagine that agitators and enemies from Paul's earlier conflicts over his mission to Gentiles have had some influence in Rome that he would have been anxious to neutralize before his visit, especially if the church in the capital city was linked to the synagogue community there. (Rom. 3:7–8 shows in passing that Paul is aware of charges that have circulated against him.)

We have very little knowledge of the actual composition of the church in Rome, but the evidence from Paul's Letter itself is perplexing. He seems to address the church clearly at certain points as gentile (1:13; 11:13), at others as Jewish in background (2:17; 3:9). He seems to draw his justification for writing to the Romans and his right to be heard by them from his being an apostle to the Gentiles (1:13–14) and on their being a gentile Christian community. Yet he does not incorporate into this Letter some of the themes and preoccupations most characteristic of gentile urban Christianity as these had emerged in Corinth. Instead, the argument itself is cast in profoundly Jewish terms: its controlling vocabulary, its appeals to authority and tradition, the values invoked, the techniques employed in interpreting Scripture, and the things taken for granted in the minds of its readers.

The puzzle is compounded when one notes that Paul's missionary strategy included a "principle of noninterference," i.e., a resolve not to pursue his missionary activity where others had begun theirs. This resolve is clearly stated in 15:20–21; it appears earlier in 2 Cor. 10:15–16. It is an understandable policy in the light of the division of labor agreed on at the Jerusalem conference (Gal. 2:7–9) and is certainly congruent with the affectionate possessiveness Paul felt toward his own churches (e.g., Gal. 4:19–20; 2 Cor. 3:1–3; 11:1–3). But how is it, then, that we find him writing to Rome at all? Is his departure from this principle adequately explained by his need of support from Rome for his mission to Spain? Answers to these questions have been sought by attempting to reconstruct in more detail the circumstances in which Romans was written.

These attempts have generally moved in one of two directions. The first may be called the "Roman exile hypothesis." On his first arrival in Corinth about A.D. 50, Paul made contact with a Jewish couple, Prisca and Aquila, who had recently come from Rome "because Claudius had ordered all the Jews to leave" that city (Acts 18:2–3; → Aquila; Prisca, Priscilla). Apparently they were already Christian converts by that time. The Roman biographer Suetonius, in his *Life of Claudius* (25), gives the reason for the emperor's edict (A.D. 49) in words generally taken to refer to disturbances in the Roman Jewish community over the messiahship of Jesus. We may conclude that the church had been started in Rome by A.D. 49 and that it was sufficiently Jewish in composition to have come under Claudius's ban, though presumably an indeterminate gentile Christian component would have been allowed to remain in the capital. When the ban was lifted in A.D. 54 after Claudius's death, a good part, perhaps a majority, of the Christian community was allowed to return after its five-year exile. Enormous problems of reconciliation would have resulted. The situation faced earlier by Paul in Antioch (Gal. 2:11–14) would have become an acute local Roman problem, but with a reverse twist: now it would not be the Jewish Christians who had to accept former Gentiles into the community, but the other way around. Gentile Christians would need to be reminded of their debt to their Jewish heritage (Paul seems in fact to do just this in 11:18) and to be urged to be more tolerant of Jewish religious practices (cf. 14:3, 5–6, 14). For many scholars just such

a situation is reflected in Paul's exhortations in the concluding chapters of Romans, thus confirming the exile hypothesis.

Yet this proposal does not answer all questions. The last chapters of Romans do more than simply reverse the arguments of Galatians. The contrast between the "weak" and the "strong" (Rom. 15:1) appears to have developed not out of the Galatian debate, but out of the distinction made in 1 Cor. 8:7–13 between the "weak" and "those who have knowledge." Although this distinction is now subtly but firmly linked to the themes of Israel's history among the Gentiles and God's faithfulness (Rom. 15:7–12), a thread that runs through the body of the Letter, the connection appears contrived. Paul is very careful in Romans not to take sides; he no longer uses himself as a model (cf. Gal. 6:14; 1 Cor. 9:15–23; 10:32–33; 11:1), but points more directly to Christ (Rom. 15:3, 7). In short, Paul's exhortations do not seem to address concrete problems so much as they present paradigms of Christian behavior generated out of his experiences in both Galatia and Corinth. But most important, all the previous bulk of Romans, the profoundly Jewish appeal of the argument, is not adequately accounted for by reconstructing a situation in which it is gentile Christians who are being called upon to welcome back their exiled Jewish-Christian associates.

Thus there has been another major attempt to reconstruct the occasion of Romans, which we may call the "Jerusalem crisis hypothesis." It is not time and place of writing that are in doubt, but Paul's motives, the circumstances that impelled him to write *this* Letter. Proponents of this view point particularly to 15:30–33, where Paul's anxiety over the outcome of his impending visit to Jerusalem is clearly expressed. That anxiety is in proportion to the importance attached by Paul to the money he has collected for the Jerusalem church and is about to deliver. The collection exemplified and actualized the unity of a church composed of both Jews and Gentiles, which had been the issue at the apostolic conference in Jerusalem (Gal. 2:1–10) and constitutes one of the running themes of Romans (cf. Rom. 1:16; 9:24; 15:7–12). With it, in Paul's view, the "truth of the gospel" stood or fell (Gal. 2:5). Whether Paul's whole career had been worthwhile or futile depended in turn on Jerusalem's recognition of that truth (Gal. 2:2). His anxiety therefore is not limited to what might occur in Jerusalem; it is at least in part an anxiety to be rightly understood in Rome not only so that he might have the Roman Christians as allies, but also that his entire mission should not be misunderstood as the irrelevant experiment of a free-lancer.

The situation that occasioned Romans in this view is a crisis that lies before Paul in Jerusalem. The resources for facing it lie in his exposition of the gospel as its apostle. As a matter of fact, the themes of Romans fall rather precisely under two headings: first, the results of the controversies in Galatia, Corinth, and Philippi, now reflected upon in their interconnections and with more distance (Abraham and his promise, the Mosaic law, justification, spiritual gifts, unity and diversity in the church, eating and drinking in a religious context), and second, just those convictions Paul was going to have to defend in Jerusalem (the faithfulness and impartiality of God, the equal accountability of Jew and Gentile before God [chaps. 1–2], the equal right of Gentile and Jew as offspring of the one Abraham "who is the father of us all" [chaps. 3–4], the terms on which true obedience to God is possible [chaps. 5–8], the meaning of Israel for the life of the church [chaps. 9–11], the equal freedom and responsibility of Jewish and gentile Christians in the everyday life of the community in the world [chaps. 12–15]).

Such a reconstruction of the setting for Romans has the advantage of making historically intelligible the composition of this Letter with its undeniable thematic and reflective character. Deeply rooted in the history of Paul's relations with his congregations, it is the rendering of an account of his gospel, its fundamental warrants, the major misunderstandings to which it is susceptible, its consequences, and above all the continuities and differences between it and the Judaism out of which Paul had come.

Significance

Although some find one more compelling than the other, the "Roman exile" and the "Jerusalem crisis" hypotheses are not, strictly speaking, mutually exclusive. What they have most notably in common is the perception that the relation of the infant Christian movement to Judaism, a complex mix of both continuity and innovation as in the case of most significant new departures in religious tradition, is a fundamental motif of the Letter. Being himself a participant in this transition, i.e., being himself profoundly Jewish and Christian, Paul could not deal with the issues confronting him on either hypothesis—or on both—without involving his own religious identity. The "adversary," the debating partner, in Romans is not some enemy or some heresy; it is not gentile Christianity, of which Paul is rather the advocate; nor is it Judaism, as though this were a rejected alternative left behind. It is, instead, in large measure the Hellenistic Jew that Paul himself was: a religious person in his highest aspirations, in his self-esteem but also his devotion to God, in his full knowledge of what God requires of human beings, in his loyalty to the Jewish Torah—yet one who despite all these virtues does not realize how religious life has been poisoned and perverted by the power of sin and needs to be shown how God has provided in his Son Jesus Christ a way of obtaining that integrity, that "righteousness," in one's relationship to God that has always eluded religious people.

The expository argument that results and that forms the substance of Romans has played an immeasurable role in the centuries since, most especially in two ways: first, in helping to shape the Christian community's understanding of its relationship to the Hebrew Scriptures and to Judaism, both its debt and its distinctiveness; and second, in restoring and clarifying a sense of direction and identity in Christian reflection in times of great contention and change, such as the Pelagian controversy in the fifth century, the emergence of Protestantism in the sixteenth, and the breakdown of liberal optimism in the twentieth. These two ways in which Romans has functioned are intimately connected and are, one might say, but two sides of its significance.

The other Letters of Paul have undergone various levels of editing in the process of circulation and canonization in order to make and keep available for subsequent generations what they initially intended and contributed in their original, contingently historical settings. Romans has been comparatively free of such modification. Its authenticity is not debated. Serious questions about its integrity, i.e., whether it left the apostle's hand in the form in which we have it, are confined to chap 16. The situation in which it was composed near the end of Paul's career called forth a type of argument that transcended that situation from the beginning by its comprehensiveness and because of the perennial nature of the issues of religious identity and integrity it addresses. Thus, even though it cannot be fully understood in isolation from the other Letters that follow it in the canon, Romans has not unjustly been perceived as comprising the heart of the apostle's legacy to the Christian church.

COMMENTARY

1:1–17
Introduction

1:1–7, Salutation. Paul begins by using the conventional opening pattern of Hellenistic letters: "*A* (writer) to *B* (addressee): greeting" (cf. James 1:1; Acts 15:23). But this structural skeleton admits, and even invites, augmentation in a variety of ways. First, the greeting at the end (v. 7b) is modified under the influence of the Jewish "peace" greeting (also used in letters, cf. Dan. 4:1; 2 Macc. 1:1) and of Christian liturgical practice. Paul expects his letters to be read in public worship. Second, descriptive modifiers are attached to the designations of both sender and recipients, allowing Paul to present his credentials and at the same time to coordinate to his own calling "as an apostle" (v. 1) that of his readers "as saints" (v. 7). This last term is explained by the addition of "beloved by God" (v. 7) and "belonging to Jesus Christ" (v. 6) and is the closest equivalent in Paul's vocabulary to the later term "Christian." That is a reminder that all Paul's extant Letters are written "within the family" to sustain, encourage, or correct people who are assumed to be baptized. God's calling initiative binds writer and recipients together, though it also distinguishes Paul by assigning him his own role as an "apostle," an envoy commissioned for a particular purpose. That is Paul's principal credential: he "has" authority because he himself stands under it. The purpose of his calling is to serve "God's gospel," a message anticipated in the writings of the Jewish prophets, which formed part of the Scriptures of the early Christian community from the beginning. As the subsequent argument will elaborate, this message has its roots in the continuity of God's past relationship to his people, but has its goal in eliciting trust and obedience among non-Jewish peoples as well.

In the third place, Paul augments his salutation most strikingly in Romans by noting the content of God's gospel; it "concerns his Son . . . Jesus Christ our Lord." Two parallel relative clauses further identifying this Son in vv. 3b–4 show linguistic and formal signs of being a pre-Pauline creedal fragment and are of great interest for the light they shed on the early development of Christology (Christian understanding of Jesus' nature):

> *[his Son]*
> *who was descended from the seed of David according to the flesh,*
> *who was appointed Son of God with power according to the spirit of holiness by [or from] the resurrection of the dead.*

This couplet is best explained as having originated from the combination of two strains of early Christian affirmation about Jesus. First, although it appears nowhere else in Paul, the origin of the Messiah from the royal line of David was one of the constants in Jewish messianic expectation based on 2 Sam. 7:11b–16 and is found in the NT in the infancy narratives of Matthew and Luke (Matt. 1:1; Luke 1:27; 2:4; cf. Mark 10:47 and parallels; Mark 12:35 and parallels; Matt. 9:27; 12:23; 15:22; 21:9, 15; John 7:42; Rev. 5:5; 22:16). Second, another tradition developed from the confession that with the resurrection Jesus was exalted to become the Son of God, or the Messiah. This tradition made use of Pss. 2:7 and 110:1 and appears in its simplest form in Acts 2:36; 5:30–31; 13:33. Such an understanding of "Son of God" as a titular office or role to which Jesus was "appointed" at a given moment in time is also without parallel in Paul. The two traditions, one oriented more around the earthly life of Jesus as a descendant of David, the other centered in the preaching of God's resurrection of the crucified Jesus, seem to have

developed at first as alternative ways of affirming Jesus to be the bearer and fulfiller of Jewish messianic hopes.

In the couplet above quoted by Paul, the two traditions (which appear together again in looser order in 2 Tim. 2:8) have been clamped together by means of the word pair "flesh" and "spirit" (→ Flesh and Spirit). These terms appear in other early creedal or hymnic passages to distinguish the earthly sphere of reality (without morally pejorative connotations) and the transcendent realm of divine power (1 Tim. 3:16; 1 Pet. 3:18; 4:6; cf. John 3:6; 6:63). Combined in this way, the two sets of messianic ideas are no longer parallel, but have become sequential, creating narrative movement in the creedal pattern: the earthly life of the descendant of David is a first stage, followed by the postresurrection reign of the Son of God installed in divine power. An important later development is then clearly observable in Ignatius's letters (Ign. *Eph.* 7:2; 18:2; 20:2; Ign. *Smyrn.* 1:1–2): the two sets of messianic categories are again brought into parallelism, but now, under the influence of the virgin birth tradition and to meet a new polemic situation, the link with the resurrection is broken and both are connected with the birth of Jesus to affirm a double origin of his person, one human and one divine. With that a major step is taken toward the patristic doctrine of the two natures of Christ. This is to go far beyond the meaning of the present passage in 1:3b–4, but it indicates the historical significance of the creedal fragment Paul quotes (→ Messiah; Son of God; Virgin Birth).

In this context the quotation is an important part of Paul's initial move to establish the common ground of a shared faith with his unknown readers. Both the title "Son of God" and the mention of the resurrection, understood as God's vindication and authorization of Jesus "in power," show that what is decisive for Paul about Jesus of Nazareth is God's identification with him. The close operating association that results is central to Paul's Christology, appears in the liturgical blessing with which the salutation ends (v. 7b), and is seen in the way Paul embarks on his next paragraph, in which he prays to God "through Jesus Christ."

1:8–15, Thanksgiving. Another standard practice in Hellenistic letter writing was to begin with a prayer of thanksgiving for the favorable circumstances of recipient or writer or both. Paul often gives thanks for the faith of his readers, not only because he understands it to be symptomatic of God's working, but also because in his world confession is a public act with repercussions for the further spread of the gospel, not simply a private faith. In the present passage, the thanksgiving quickly merges after v. 8 into statements about Paul's desire to visit Rome (see Introduction). At the end (vv. 14–15) he explicitly traces this desire to the higher duty that governs his life and authorizes his mission; he is "one under obligation" to all alike. To register the universal range of that imperative he abandons for a moment (and only here in his Letters) his customary division of humankind into Jew and non-Jew that always has a religious dimension and adopts the cultural and linguistic designations "Hellene" (to which the Romans would have counted themselves) and "barbarian," "learned and simple" (NEB). Paul's thanksgivings often serve to signal certain concerns or themes of the subsequent letter bodies, and this deliberate point that his gospel pertains to all without regard to social standing and privilege confirms that pattern.

1:16–17, Statement of the Theme. In close logical continuity with the preceding, Paul asserts, "For I am not put to shame by the gospel." This somewhat surprising expression has little to do with moral disgrace or with personal pride. In the Septuagint (LXX), "to be put to shame" is to have a hope or expectation disappointed, a confidence proven to be misplaced (cf. Ps. 119:6; Isa. 54:4). Its opposite, as here, is to have the base on which one rests one's life turn out to warrant the trust placed in it. Paul can "have complete confidence in the gospel" (TEV) because it is God's powerfully effective way of working for human salvation. In itself that does not yet state an issue that is subject to debate. But with vv. 16–17, which bring the thanksgiving to its conclusion, Paul takes one additional step. Because the content of the gospel is God's Son (vv. 3–4), God's way of effecting salvation pertains from now on to all who believe, Jew and Greek alike, and it involves a revelation of "the righteousness of God" on these new terms. As a matter of fact, the ensuing argument of the Letter elaborates this last step and in so doing rejects certain alternative understandings of salvation (see 3:21–26). Verses 16–17 thus function as a statement of the theme of the Letter.

It is characteristic that Paul ends this introductory statement by appealing (for confirmation) to an OT text (Hab. 2:4) that brings together the three major terms "righteousness," "faith," and "life" (or salvation). But the sense in which Paul understands it is not immediately apparent. It differs in detail from both the Masoretic Text (MT) and the LXX. More important, the phrase "by faith" can be construed to modify either the subject, "the righteous person," or the verb, "shall live." A widely held view, choosing the first possibility, concludes that chaps. 1–4 of the Letter describe "the person who is righteous by faith," while chaps. 5–8 show how such a person "shall live." That would suggest that Paul simply accepts the premise that righteousness is a condition of salvation and that the issue in Romans concerns only the terms on which that righteousness is to be attained. That is much too simple. In the actual course of the Letter all three of the major terms of this text undergo basic redefinition and turn out to have more than one level of meaning. For example, although Paul is certainly concerned

with human believing, his Greek term for "faith," as in the LXX version of Hab. 2:4, is also used for the faithfulness of God on which human trusting rests. It appears wiser, therefore, not to press this key "title" verse too hard at this point, but to allow Paul's own line of thought to disclose his understanding of it.

1:18–11:36
The Central Argument

Rom. 1:18–11:36 forms a first major whole in the composition of Romans; chaps. 12–16 draw important consequences for the readers, but move at another level and incorporate materials of a quite different nature. One should avoid characterizing the first as "theological" or "dogmatic" and the second as "ethical" or "didactic," for in both parts Paul uses theological arguments of many kinds to inform, instruct, and guide his readers. Yet this first part of the body of the Letter forms the base and must be taken on its own terms.

1:18–3:20
Preparatory Considerations

A clear indication of the deliberate nature of Romans in comparison with his other Letters is that Paul does not move directly to the central content of his gospel. After the opening address, Jesus Christ is not mentioned until 3:21–26. Instead, Paul carefully prepares his readers and provides a context for his exposition in two ways. First, every interpretation of the meaning of Jesus Christ for human beings implies a certain understanding of the world, a diagnosis of the human condition to which that interpretation is addressed. Since 3:24–25 speaks of "redemption in Christ Jesus" and of God's provision of a "means for dealing with sin," this preceding analysis involves mounting a "charge that all human beings, both Jews and Greeks, are under sin" (3:9), demonstrating the world's need for God's saving action. Paul does not leave the diagnosis to be inferred; he develops it at some length. A careful reading of this preparatory argument is thus crucial to a correct perception of his intentions later. Second, and more important, if the exposition is to be persuasive and convincing, this diagnosis of the human predicament must also come to terms with the perceptions religious people have already formed about it. The tendency of religious moralists, in their scrutiny of the world about them, is to exempt themselves from their own negative judgments upon others. But since Paul wants to set forth the gospel as God's way of working for the salvation of all persons without distinction, he must also demonstrate that all stand on the same footing before God. This requires him to question certain typical and recurrent religious assumptions about God and about the terms on which salvation and life are bestowed on human beings. These two strategies of preparation are intimately intertwined in these first three chapters.

1:18–32, The Operation of God's Wrath in the World. Somewhat surprisingly, the point at which Paul begins is not human activity, but God's. The word "sin" does not appear until 3:9. In striking parallelism to his claim that in the gospel God's righteousness is revealed (1:17), he asserts that on the wider stage of the world apart from the gospel what is being disclosed is God's wrath in action upon and against human beings who suppress God's truth. Paul is quite specific about that suppression. Human beings have had every opportunity to know God; indeed they have known God. Nevertheless, "in spite of knowing God, they did not honor him as God or give thanks to him" (v. 21). That is the central failure; everything else is a consequence of that. To be sure, it is a failure of human beings; they are responsible and indeed without excuse. But in presenting those consequences of their behavior, Paul insists three times (vv. 24, 26, 28) that it is God who has been at work.

Several features of this rehearsal call for attention. The first is the very notion of "the wrath of God." Although the wrath of the gods plays a role in many religions, in Israelite thought it had come to be understood as God's response to human provocation that violates the divine holiness and majesty (cf. 1 Sam. 5:6; 6:9; 2 Sam. 6:7). Following the trend of postbiblical Judaism, the NT writers tend to avoid terms for divine anger and rage that occur in Greek literature, to play down the elements of passion and arbitrariness, and to link the term "wrath" with God's impartial and just judgment, his zeal for righting the wrongs that have afflicted his creation (cf. such quite different texts as *1 Enoch* 91:7 and Wisd. of Sol. 5:17–20; → Wrath). The interpretation of "the wrath of God" is subject to two tendencies. One is to construe it as an impersonal process of moral retribution built into the very structure of the world, a cosmic nemesis, to sunder it from belief in a living God. The other is to overpersonalize it and to dismiss it as reducing God to human terms.

But recognition of the background to Paul's use of this phrase in apocalyptic and wisdom traditions as represented by *1 Enoch* and the Wisdom of Solomon makes clear that his intent is not to trivialize the distance between God and humans, but to sharpen the sense for God's transcendent presence in the face of, and in spite of, human suppression of his truth. The revelation of God's wrath is here the reverse side of the manifestation of his righteousness; it is God's divinity asserting itself where it is not recognized by human beings. Paul does not suggest that the revelation of God's wrath is in any way the content of the gospel. Nor does he suggest that God's wrath is revealed to some (the ungodly) while his righteousness is revealed

to others (the godly), as though God had different "faces" for different classes of people. The scope of Paul's canvas has no limits; in speaking of both sorts of revelation, he has all humankind in view. And there is no suggestion that the revelation of God's wrath belongs only to a bygone era, that it has been replaced by a revelation of God's righteousness, as though the two "faces" of God succeed each other. The revelation of God's righteousness in the gospel does not take place against the backdrop of the absence of God from a world that has repudiated him; its other side is God's reacting presence in a world over which he remains in charge even when it defies him.

The second feature of this depiction of God's wrath is the way in which it is executed. The passage has many similarities to the literature of Hellenistic Judaism, especially Wisdom of Solomon 11–15. In keeping with that tradition, there is a kind of ironic appropriateness to the reversals that follow upon human behavior "in order that they might learn that a person is punished by those very things by which one sins" (Wisd. of Sol. 11:16): failure to perceive God's power and deity with the "mind" brings a darkening of the mind (Rom. 1:20–21); those who claim to be wise turn out to be fools (v. 22); disregard for the creator obliterates the distinction between creator and creature and produces confusion about what befits nature and what violates it (vv. 25–26). The climax is reached in a traditional and artfully patterned "vice list" (vv. 29–31), the force of which derives from its cumulative impact in portraying an ordered world that has turned to moral chaos. Three times (vv. 23, 25, 26) human beings are said to have "exchanged" or "substituted" one reality for another, and three times (vv. 24, 26, 28) God is said to have given them up or "delivered them over" to the consequences of their own action. The language Paul uses, especially in depicting the power of human sensuality in vv. 26–27 (v. 27, "they were burned out by lust"), conveys the strong impression of a resulting impairment and perversion. This is not the outburst of an offended Victorian, though Paul does break off in v. 25 to utter a liturgical prayer at the thought of worshiping God's creature in place of the creator. It is the response of a representative Hellenistic Jew to the spectacle of God's grand creation, which includes human sexuality, deformed. There is a moral dimension to this distortion, as the vice list shows, but the depiction itself is surprisingly free from moralizing. Idolatry and the abuse of sexual distinctions are not here the objects or cause of God's wrath, but the symptoms of its operation, examples of the disorders that result from the root failure to honor God or give thanks to him. The worst distortions are those of human religious practice. "One does not thumb one's nose at God" (Gal. 6:7b); suppressions of his truth produce corresponding negative realities to press with a new fatefulness upon the human race and shape its world. That is how a wrath traditionally associated with God's final judgment is already now being disclosed.

A third significant feature of this sober assessment of the world's condition is that the argument presupposes throughout that God is indeed known from his works, his deity manifest in his handiwork. Here too Paul shows his roots in a Hellenistic Judaism flavored with the language of Stoicism (cf. Wisd. of Sol. 13:1–9). But he emphasizes the initiative of God in making himself known (Rom. 1:19b) and universalizes access to this knowledge. The knowledge of God is not the special attainment of an intellectual elite, nor is godlessness the result of ignorance. This knowledge is not only open to all, it is given to all, "with the result that they are [all] without excuse" (v. 20b). Paul does not suggest that God is by nature or in principle unknowable, nor does he propose that what the world worships as an "unknown God" the Christian gospel now makes known (cf. the Lucan representation of Paul on the Areopagus, Acts 17:23). He does not, like the author of the Fourth Gospel, claim that no one has ever seen or known God and that the point of Christ's coming was to make him known (John 1:18). The foundation lines of Paul's argument are laid down differently: God has been known, yet he has not been recognized or honored as God. Such an argument requires one to think of the knowledge of God on two levels: God is known, yet remains unknown; not necessarily unknown but actually unknown—and that paradox is the paradox of human sinfulness itself, which is not necessary but actually universal. That the manifest God should be deprived of the recognition and obedience due him is the fundamental perversion of the relationship between creator and creature that draws every other kind of distortion in its wake.

We may for a moment anticipate Paul's later argument: the knowledge of God at this deeper level of recognition and honor, which otherwise is never actual because of the power of sin, is reached when the defeat of sin's power in Christ opens up a new life of obedience and righteousness. The whole argument of Romans may be summed up as an exposition of God's way of rectifying, setting right, that flawed relationship by his Son, Jesus (to whom Paul refers in his earliest Letter as "the one who delivers us from the impending wrath," 1 Thess. 1:10). In the present section, some consequences of that failure of human beings to honor God are in abuse of their bodies (v. 24), a distorted form of worship (v. 25), and a "reprobate mind," i.e., one no longer capable of discerning good and evil (v. 28). After the conclusion of this whole argument, as Paul opens the other major division of his Letter, he appeals to his readers to make their own that new life Christ has brought: "Present your bodies as a living sacrifice . . . which is your appropriate worship. . . . Be transformed by the renewal of your mind

so that you may discern what the will of God is" (12:1–2).

2:1–16, Moral and Religious Persons Before an Impartial God. So far Paul has not needed to name those he has been describing, for he has been referring to all inhabitants of God's creation. There has been one specification in 1:18: God's wrath is "against all ungodliness and wickedness on the part of those who by their wickedness suppress the truth." Now it is the inevitable reaction of all moral and religious people, all those who would agree with the preceding diagnosis of the world's condition, to suppose that these words exempt them from the wrath of God. The clear and simple purpose of this next section is to close off that imagined escape.

The first six verses make this apparent. It is a mistake to picture Paul as a prosecutor indicting first the Gentile (in chap. 1) and now the Jew (in chap. 2). Rom. 3:9 may state his conclusion, but it does not describe his method. He does not now "prove" that religious moralists (there is no direct focus on the Jew until v. 17) in fact do the same things that they condemn in others. He simply assumes that they do (v. 1c). The moralist knows perfectly well the terms of God's judgment (v. 2, anticipated in 1:32). That is not the point. It is the presumption of those who put themselves on God's side in passing judgment, their illusory notion that they are exempt from judgment (v. 3), and the resulting "contempt" (v. 4) for a divine goodness and patience that ought to lead them to repentance, that is "storing up" God's wrath against them (→ Judgment, Day of). For their denial of their own accountability to God is simply their form of a knowledge of God that fails to "honor God or give thanks to him" (1:21). In its place, in vv. 6–11, Paul rings the changes on God's impartial judgment; all persons without exemption, "the Jew first and also the Greek," stand on the same footing before God and must face the consequences of their actions, whether for good or ill. Just how axiomatic this impartiality of God is for Paul is shown by the form in which Ps. 62:12 is echoed in v. 6, as an adjectival clause, almost an epithet for God. Paul's main point here stands firmly in the prophetic tradition; Amos (9:10), Micah (2:6–7), and Jeremiah (2:35; 14:13–16) all had to counter the tendency of religious people to turn trust in God into a self-immunization from his judgment, a shield behind which to evade accountability.

Just as Amos's oracles begin with the nations around Israel's periphery only to zero in on his own people (Amos 1:2–2:16), so Paul's argument quickly becomes more specific. Since he has referred now "to the Jew first and also the Greek" (resuming 1:16), the last verses of this section (2:12–16) press the point of their equal standing before God with regard to the one thing that most conspicuously divides them. Twice in one verse (v. 14) the Gentiles are defined as those who do not have the (Mosaic) law. The point of the verse is not to say that somehow Gentiles too have that law. What v. 12 states negatively, that the absence or presence of the law makes no difference in the consequences of human sinning, vv. 13–14 put positively: performance counts, and non-Jews who do "the things of the law" on their own, without being enjoined by the Mosaic law (this is the natural sense in Greek of the phrase "by nature"), do not need the Mosaic law when they come before God as their judge. Their conscience and the very existence of their moral disputations demonstrate their accountability for their own deeds (→ Conscience). Paul carefully avoids saying that the law itself is "written on their hearts," which to a Jew could only mean the end-time realization of perfect obedience on the part of God's people (cf. Jer. 31:33).

2:17–29, The Jew Before an Impartial God. If the point that no one is exempt from accountability to God is to be carried through all the way, it must be made with explicit reference to the exemplary religious person. So Paul, in one of the most dramatically rhetorical passages in all his Letters, addresses the Jew directly in the second-person singular—not because the Jew is the enemy or guilty of violation of God's law, but just because this person represents the very best in Paul's religious world, indeed the highest claims of his own religious tradition. Verses 17–21a are a single sentence, in which Paul itemizes a whole series of convictions that both reflected and shaped the Jewish sense of identity and of mission in the world during the intertestamental period. It is easy to translate with a sarcastic tone, but Paul has a sure eye for Jewish self-respect and pride, and the argument turns on that, not on Paul's demeaning his own tradition. The prerogatives of Judaism listed here (cf. 9:4–5 for a less polemic enumeration) revolve around possession of the law as the hallmark of distinction from the non-Jewish world and are climaxed in v. 20b in the strikingly Hellenistic phrase "possessing in the law the very embodiment of knowledge and truth," i.e., the answer to all human inquiry and searching. This possession notwithstanding, the rhetorical denouement at the end puts four ironic questions, two of which directly echo the Decalogue, challenging the Jew to answer to the same divine interrogation that every religious person is inclined to proclaim to the surrounding world. Using in v. 24 a text from Isa. 52:5 that referred to the scorn of the Babylonians for the apparent weakness of the God of the Israelite exiles in their midst, Paul turns to charge that the goal of every serious religious person, to bring honor to God, is in fact subverted into its opposite by those who presume to judge the world but themselves evade accountability to God by taking their prerogatives as surrogates for obedience.

Returning in vv. 25–29 to his more sober argumentative style, Paul singles out circumcision, the most

vivid symbol of individual participation in the covenant in the Hellenistic period, to make the point that all the formal tokens of religious identity depend for their meaning and validity on actual obedience, thus putting Jew and non-Jew once again on exactly the same footing before an impartial God. In the last two verses, far from obliterating the identity of the Jew, Paul proceeds to redefine and reclaim it by contrasting what is public and secret, flesh and heart, letter and spirit. (This last contrast, repeated in 7:6 and 2 Cor. 3:6, has become a major idiom of theological language.) Genuine religious identity (including that of the Jew in the first instance) is at once authentically human and immune to human manipulation, hidden except to God. Its ultimate approbation depends on the God who judges truly, not on human appraisal. This radical appeal from all outward criteria to an inner religious integrity known and determined by God alone is a positive step in Paul's preparatory argument in 1:18–3:20, apart from which his negative indictment (3:9) cannot be rightly understood. It taps the deep lode of the OT prophets' critique of religion and is reminiscent of the sharp juxtaposition in the Sermon on the Mount between the visible marks of piety and what is recognized by "your Father who sees in secret" (Matt. 6:4, 6, 18).

3:1–8, Two Objections Anticipated. A characteristic feature of Paul's didactic style is exemplified in this section. Not only does he directly address an imagined interlocutor in the second person, as in 2:17–24; he anticipates responses and answers them, thus ensuring that his own major conclusions are not misunderstood. Whereas in his other Letters such dialogic interchange remains occasional, it is an index to the deliberate quality of the presentation in Romans that such rhetorical questions and replies mark stages in the argument and provide clues to the structuring of the Letter (cf. 3:9; 6:1, 15; 7:7, 13; 9:14; 11:1, 11).

As is often the case, the first question (3:1) arises with unrelenting logic out of the preceding section: if that religious integrity that really counts before God has no connection with religious distinctions, what is the point of being a Jew? The question is only partially answered. The Jew has an "advantage," but it consists in the initiative and faithfulness of God, which does not depend on human fidelity. The answer is only partial because the question still lurks whether, in treating Jew and non-Jew on equal terms, God has not himself broken faith with the "direct utterances" he has entrusted to the Jews. That momentous issue, the connection between God's faithfulness and Israel's past election and future destiny, is suppressed here for full discussion in chaps. 9–11. Deferring that side of God's faithfulness, Paul focuses for the moment on God's truth and righteousness instead. One who genuinely honors God will desire, in the words of the central penitential psalm of the Hebrew Scriptures (Ps. 51:4), that God be "justified [i.e., shown to be right] whenever he speaks and be vindicated whenever he enters into court proceedings with his people." Justification, on its first appearance in Romans, is not the justification of human beings, but the vindication of God himself in the face of a world that fails to honor him as God and in the face of evasive religious substitutes for obedience.

This reply only hastens the second objection in vv. 5–8; if God is vindicated no matter what the infidelities of human beings, what grounds are there for condemnation or wrath at all? Paul responds by turning the train of thought in the opposite direction: the certainty that God is the judge of the world makes such a protestation ridiculous. But the question only takes new forms. God's prerogative to judge may stand, but what about his integrity and the moral consequences? Wickedness and sin seem no longer to mean anything. Why not conclude "let us do evil that good may come"? For a moment the curtain is lifted on personal charges that have been leveled against Paul. But once again no real answer is provided (until, in this case, 6:1–7:6), for a proper rejoinder cannot come until Paul has begun his positive account of justification. Until then, there is only a rough dismissal: people who talk like that deserve what they get.

3:9–20, The Solidarity of Jew and Gentile Under the Power of Sin and Before the Law. Having for the moment set these objections to one side, Paul returns to his main line of thought to draw up his indictment. There is some subtlety to the way he resumes the question of the Jew's "advantage" in v. 9. At first he seems flatly to take back what he had granted in v. 2. But he has been very careful so far—and remains so throughout Romans—not simply to obliterate the distinction between Jew and Gentile, even though he insists that they stand as equals before God. It is the last point that now comes emphatically to the fore. Whatever the "advantage," it makes no difference in this: all human beings, both Jews and Greeks, are "under sin." This first mention of "sin" in Romans personifies it as an oppressing power, setting a pattern that holds for the rest of the Letter. The "evidence" to verify the charge is not merely empirical; it is certified by Scripture, here cited in a carefully constructed collage of passages from the Psalms and Isaiah that declares first the nonexistence of a single righteous person and then catalogues the symptoms of human debasement in speech and action. At the end, Paul makes sure there is no room left for religious self-exemption. The "law" (which here includes the passages just cited from Psalms and Isaiah and thus stands for the whole of the Hebrew Scriptures, as in 1 Cor. 14:21) makes this declaration "to those who are covered by the law," the Jews as well as Gentiles. It follows that the whole world is not only answerable to God, but indictable. Something of Paul's distinctive view of the Mosaic law emerges when he

goes a step further to declare this silencing of every self-defense to be the very purpose of that law, a statement for which no Jewish parallel is known. The psalmist, calling on God for deliverance, had cried (Ps. 143:1c–2, LXX):

In thy righteousness, hear me!
Enter not into judgment with thy servant;
for no one living shall be found righteous before thee.

By adding to that last line the expression "by works of the law," Paul had already in Gal. 2:16 constructed a motto, which he now repeats (v. 20a). The true religious integrity that enables authentic obedience, but which all humankind lacks, cannot itself be produced by performing any deeds enjoined by the law. That would amount to self-salvation. It is precluded by the power of sin, which renders the law impotent to produce the obedience it calls for (cf. 8:3–4; Gal. 3:21b). Instead, "all that law does is to tell us what is sinful" (JB).

3:21–8:39
The Justification of the Unrighteous

The right knowledge of God, which truly honors God as God and gives thanks to him, the proper relationship of creature to creator, and the genuine integrity that issues in true obedience are all wanting because of the power of sin. That void cannot be filled by human effort to live by the Mosaic law. Only a fresh initiative on God's part can recover for all human life a right relationship to him, the power of a new beginning, a restored integrity, and a hope for a future share in God's own glory. That this fresh initiative for the salvation of all has been effectively taken in Jesus Christ is the heart of Paul's gospel (1:16), and it is to the positive exposition of that claim that he turns at this point and for the remainder of his Letter. Such a comprehensive claim requires an appropriately rich language. In Paul's usage, the controlling terms are "righteousness" and "justification"—first of God and then of human beings. This creates some problems of understanding for modern readers, but the first solution, as in every instance of listening to another person, is to follow his own explanatory line of thought, for these are not the only words or concepts Paul uses. Each subsequent unit of Romans adds another dimension to Paul's presentation of his gospel and so refines his use of these terms.

3:21–26, The Death of Jesus Christ as the Revelation of God's Righteousness. The most important step Paul takes in this introductory passage is to locate God's fresh saving initiative in the death of Jesus on the cross, the first mention of Christ in the argument of the Letter. What is significant about Jesus here is not his teaching, preaching, expectation of the kingdom of God, or moral behavior, but his death. The righteousness of God now manifest apart from law is thus not first of all a divine attribute or a human moral quality bestowed by God and exemplified in Jesus' life, but God's delivering activity in the death of Jesus. Not until later does Paul elaborate his own understanding of the way this death alters the human situation. For the moment he simply accepts and uses in v. 25 what appears to be an early summary Jewish-Christian liturgical statement of the meaning of Jesus' death in terms drawn from the OT institution of sacrifice. It refers to that death as an "expiation," a place or means of removing or covering sin. Since the Greek word behind this expression is used in the LXX (e.g., Exod. 25:17) for the "mercy seat," the slab on top of the Ark of the covenant that was sprinkled with the blood of the sin offering on the Day of Atonement, this liturgical language may have been composed originally to affirm that Jesus' death surpasses and replaces the atonement ritual of the Jewish Temple (cf. Heb. 9). But the reference to the Temple may not be so direct; the same Greek term is used for the vicarious atoning effect of the deaths of the Jewish martyrs in the early Hasmonean revolt (4 Macc. 17:22; → Maccabees). In either case, Jesus' death is understood in terms of the atoning efficacy of the blood of a sacrificed life, i.e., its power to remove not only the consciousness of sin on the part of those involved, but also its objective consequences in the world, to break the guilt-punishment sequence that follows violations of God's will (→ Atonement; Expiation). Even elsewhere Paul does not develop such sacrificial ideas, though he frequently betrays their presence in his Christian traditions (cf. 1 Cor. 15:3; Gal. 1:4). Here he uses this traditional language to make a number of points that further his present argument.

The first is to emphasize God's own initiative in freely providing a solution to the problem described in the preceding chapters. The undeserved quality of this deliverance as a "free gift," prompted by God's own graciousness ("his grace" is not the gift itself but the generosity that produces it), will be developed further in 5:1–11. Here Paul calls it "redemption," using a figure of speech for salvation that still has some of the financial overtones of its everyday sense (cf. 1 Cor. 6:20; 7:23; → Redemption). But the emphasis is on its releasing effect. There is no suggestion whatsoever of compulsion on God to pay a price to anyone other than himself. What God has undertaken, in the formula Paul quotes, is "expiation," a means for dealing with human sin, and not "propitiation," a means for meeting God's wrath by offering something to appease it. In all Paul's references to atonement, Christ was crucified "for us," never for God; always as a gift, never as punishment.

That leads to the second point. Paul does not play God's graciousness off against his righteousness. Instead, God's gift in the death of Jesus is itself a manifestation of God's righteousness apart from the Mosaic law. In clear continuity with the OT, especially the Psalms and Second Isaiah (Isa. 40–55), the righteous-

ness of God is in the first place his saving action in coming to the aid of his people, his "deliverance" (e.g., Isa. 46:13; Pss. 31:1; 143:1). But vv. 25b–26, resuming a note struck in 3:3–4, show that Paul understands righteousness to refer also to a quality of integrity and consistency on God's part. God cannot go back on himself; his faithfulness to his own covenant commitments means that the working of his wrath, which abandons human beings to the consequences of their actions (and which Paul never equates with his righteousness), cannot be the last word. Even patience and forbearance cannot, for by themselves they would mean God's capitulation in the end to the disorder and distortion in his creation. Justification cannot mean simply acceptance and amnesty, though it includes these. God's claim over his own creation must finally be demonstrated by renewing its right relation to him and in this way restoring to it its own integrity and order. What justification, as this bestowal of a new righteousness and obedience, means for human beings will be discussed in 6:1–7:6. But in the meantime what is demonstrated in Christ's death is God's own integrity precisely *in* his acting to restore integrity to every person whose righteousness comes by faith in Jesus.

That faith is the third point. Four times in this paragraph Paul has inserted references to faith or believing (v. 22 [twice]; vv. 25, 26). Just what faith is like will become clear from the example of Abraham in chap. 4. But if a true relationship to God cannot be brought about by human action, faith cannot mean some prerequisite condition to be fulfilled by human beings before God can act. It is not human performance at all (4:4–5). It describes, in deliberate contrast to the law, the terms God has set for his rectifying action. These terms are that Jew and non-Jew alike trust God, i.e., rely completely for the renewal of life on his act in Christ, just as Paul has staked his own life on the gospel (1:16). It is these terms that put all human beings on the same footing before God.

3:27–31, Jew and Gentile Before an Impartially Justifying God. This section presses the previous point about faith in two ways. First, God's generous provision of a way out of the human predicament absolutely precludes the "boasting" that was detailed at some length in chap. 2, that vaunting of the advantage or position of one group over against another that evades accountability to God, violates his impartiality, and denies the dependence of all on him for life. In explaining why this is so, Paul repeats in positive form (v. 28) the motto that was stated negatively in 3:20. The Mosaic law, by requiring certain behavior, appears to encourage "boasting" by suggesting that such behavior does not depend on a right relationship to God, but can create it in the first place. Over against this Paul sets "the law of faith" (v. 27c), an expression without parallel in his Letters, but similar to "the law of the spirit of life" in 8:2 and "the law of Christ" in Gal. 6:2. Contrary to appearance, the Mosaic law presupposes complete trust in God and reliance on his prior salvation, and so does preclude this "boasting." In both Hebrew and Greek, one word for "faith" denotes both God's trustworthiness and reliability and the trust and reliance on him that is the appropriate human counterpart elicited by God's own faithfulness. This kind of trust is not a prerequisite for a healthy relationship to God; it *is* that right relationship. That is why faith is almost always mentioned when Paul writes about justification.

Second, v. 29 makes clear that behind these opposite and incompatible aspects or effects of law, one producing "boasting" and the other excluding it in favor of trust, is the fundamental issue of God himself. Every human claim to special position or advantage before God denies that all stand on an equal footing in relation to him. Making God the patron of this or that constituency carries with it the implicit denial that God is the God of all human beings. But that, Paul points out, contradicts the central watchword of Judaism that God is one (Deut. 6:4; → Shema). This creed requires one to embrace, instead, Paul's central claim that Jew and non-Jew alike are rightly related to God on the same terms. It is striking that in repeating that claim, while denying any difference in standing, Paul still carefully refuses to obliterate the distinction itself between Jew and Gentile. Nor, he adds, does his argument signal a dismissal of the Mosaic law. Instead, "we confirm the law." Only the later stages of Paul's argument can fill out what he means by that.

4:1–25, Abraham: The Paradigm of Justification and of Faith. At one level Paul understands his gospel to "confirm" the law (3:31) by the general congruity with the OT that he now proceeds to demonstrate with the example of Abraham. But this is a very loose sort of confirmation, requiring Paul to return to the specific issue of law later. Actually the appeal he now makes to the OT corroborates his gospel, and therein lies its significance. The credibility of his own position is at stake. Since he had contended that this new demonstration of God's righteousness apart from the law was attested already in "the law and the prophets" (3:21), a whole range of claims made in 3:21–30 has to be supported with scriptural arguments. One of the most important premises shared by the early Christian communities with their Jewish antecedents was that Scripture provides reliable access to God's truth. The appeal to Scripture is thus a form of appeal to God himself to substantiate Paul's message, and this explains why OT quotations form such a conspicuous part of Romans.

The methods by which Paul constructs these arguments are of course those of first-century Judaism; its

study and use of Scripture is, on the one hand, itself a tradition in which he stands and from which he draws. On the other hand, his recourse to Scripture, exactly like every use of tradition throughout human history, is a selective process in which his own priorities and perspectives become evident. By appealing, one might say, over the head of Moses, the lawgiver, to Abraham, the recipient of the promise, Paul signals his new understanding of what is pivotal in his own Jewish tradition and reclaims it to undergird his gospel for his readers. Even this appeal to Abraham is selective. The traditions about the patriarch were extraordinarily varied in Paul's time. Abraham was a heroic figure whose story could be used to support a variety of ends. This can be seen within the NT itself. In James 2:21–24, the same verse Paul cites (Gen. 15:6) is quoted, but because it is read in the light of Abraham's offering of his son Isaac (Gen. 22:2, 9), the conclusion drawn from it is exactly contrary to Paul's. So in one sense Paul's appeal to Scripture is circular in nature, drawing out of it only what his gospel has already determined he will find in it. Such a suspicion attaches to any use of the past. But in Paul's case, it is this ability selectively to find such corroboration in his Scripture that alone enables him to maintain his religious identity as a Jew while proclaiming his gospel, indeed to find in his gospel the ultimate vindication of his Jewish tradition and faith (cf. 2:28–29). That ability has profoundly shaped Christian understanding of the gospel ever since.

In chap. 4, this invoking of Abraham proceeds in several clearly recognizable steps. In the first (vv. 2–8), Abraham, whose status in the collective memory as a paragon of rectitude is beyond question, illustrates what Paul has just written in 3:27–28: boasting is precluded if a right relationship to God consists of faith. Verses 4–5 state the mutually exclusive alternatives that shape the argument: justification is either earned or it is a matter of grace; it rests either on achievement that puts God in one's debt or on trust in a God who justifies the ungodly. The place of "grace" in the contrast of v. 4 is taken by "trust" in that of v. 5. And the text of Gen. 15:6 clearly states that it was Abraham's believing God that God "regarded" as righteousness. Even Abraham was dependent on a God who "justifies the ungodly," who does not merely confirm the virtues of good people, but takes the initiative in restoring a world that cannot save itself. Is that so clear if Abraham was such an exemplary figure? Was Abraham ungodly?

To close that loophole, Paul applies two well-established procedures of early rabbinic exegesis, adducing a second text that repeats some wording of the first, and supporting a text from the law (the Pentateuch) with another from the prophets or the Psalms. Here it is the traditional penitential Ps. 32:1–2a that fills the breach, for it shows that "reckoning righteousness" is the equivalent of "not reckoning sin," i.e., forgiveness. Abraham, the model of religious probity, was as dependent on God's gracious initiative as David, the paradigmatic repentant sinner (assumed to be the author of that psalm). This yoking of Psalm 32 with the Genesis text intercepts such a use of the latter as is made in James 2. So the precedent of Abraham confirms that God's justifying proceeds on the basis of trust in his undeserved graciousness and leaves no room for "boasting."

The second step (vv. 9–12) rests on chronological sequence: God's consideration of Abraham's faith as righteousness precedes his covenant with Abraham and Abraham's circumcision (Gen. 17:1–27). The outward marks of Abraham the prototype Jew are therefore secondary to the faith that makes him a "true Jew" (cf. 2:28–29). Another side of Abraham, his role as ancestor, like the blessing of the psalm just quoted, turns out to embrace all who believe without circumcision. Even in the relation of his physical descendants to him, the controlling factor in his patriarchal function is trust in God, theirs and his. So the precedent of Abraham also confirms that the terms of faith established by God for justification apart from the law mean that Jew and non-Jew stand on the same footing before an impartial God. In saying so, Paul again carefully avoids, this time only by tortured Greek syntax, a simple denial of the distinction between them (cf. 3:30).

In vv. 13–17 a third side of this powerfully symbolic figure Abraham emerges: he was the recipient of God's promise for the future. In Gen. 15:4–5 this promise was for an heir and descendants (v. 18); in Gen. 17:6–7 it was for many nations among these descendants (v. 17); by Paul's own time (Sir. 44:21) the tradition had expanded it into an end-time promise of inheriting the whole world (v. 13), a code word for all the benefits that the descendants of the patriarch might hope for. Paul's point now is that the transmission of this legacy is determined not by law, but by "the righteousness of faith." This expression, used only here in Paul's Letters, directly echoes v. 11 in Greek: it is "the righteousness that was attributed to the faith [Abraham had] in the uncircumcised state" he was in when he believed. One might expect Paul to use a chronological argument again (Abraham preceded Moses), but his own reason in v. 14 is more forceful: "If the heirs are those whom the law defines as heirs, then faith is empty and this promise has been voided." The issue is not what human beings do at all, whether they adhere to the law or whether they believe (as a substitute achievement). What is at stake is the competence to determine who the heirs are. Clearly that capability does not belong to the law, whose effect is rather to evoke wrath by marking human conduct as transgression and so to disqualify people from the inheritance (v. 15; cf. 3:20, 31; 5:13, 20). (These accumulating side remarks about the law

will require special treatment; see commentary below on 7:7–12.) The terms that do define the transmission are "faith" (God's trustworthiness and human reliance upon God) and "promise," for that is the only way in which the legacy can remain a matter of God's undeserved graciousness and so be guaranteed to all the descendants of Abraham impartially in the inclusive patriarchal role that the promise itself assigned to him (v. 17a).

In these three ways Abraham confirms the gospel's description of God's justification of the unrighteous. He not only provides the illustrative example; he furnishes the defining precedent for the way in which God deals with human beings. God has not changed between Abraham and Christ. In Christ he has done what Abraham trusted him to do. So Abraham's precedent helps interpret what God has done in Christ. Verse 17 restores this focus on Abraham's God, who not only justifies the ungodly, but also gives life to the dead and calls into being the things that are not. That places justification as a life-giving act in an all-embracing context. God is the creator of life at the world's beginning, the one who restores order and integrity to life in the world's crises, the one who bestows eternal life at the world's end.

But what about faith? Having so far provided the paradigm for God's action in justification, Abraham now provides also the model for human believing (vv. 18–22). Faith is not some internal condition in contrast to external acts, nor intellectual assent to propositional truths. It is not anything Abraham "does" (vv. 4–5). Instead, it is the unwavering reliance kindled by God's promise to him. It is to live by another, by what God has done and will do. Verses 19–21 play on the words: instead of being "disabled" at the contemplation of his own and Sarah's bankruptcy of life, Abraham was "empowered" by his confidence in God's "power" to carry out what he had promised, and he gave glory to God.

Verses 23–25 supply the bottom line. Abandoning his descriptive third-person language, Paul for the first time since his opening address shifts to a first-person plural style that signals the confessional stance of the Christian community. Abraham's God, who gives life to the dead, is the God who "raised Jesus our Lord from the dead"; Abraham's justification lies in store for those who trust in this God. The text of Gen. 15:6, which has echoed throughout this chapter, was ultimately written for them. Paul ends by quoting another short two-part Christological formula (v. 25; cf. 1:3–4): "[Jesus], who was delivered over [to death] because of our trespasses and raised for our justification." By employing parallel passive verbs, for both of which God is the implied active agent, the formula unites Jesus' death and resurrection as inseparable parts of a single action by God, one addressed to the expiation and forgiveness of sin, the other to the renewal of life. That "justification" is the term for the latter brings this whole first part of Paul's argument to a fitting conclusion and prepares the way for the next chapters.

5:1–11, Justification Interpreted as Reconciliation: The Death of Jesus Christ as the Basis of Confidence and Hope. From this section through chap. 8 an undeniable shift takes place, but it is important to note carefully what is altered and what is not. The change of style observed in 4:23–25 continues through chap. 8 except for a brief return to the more objective third person in the second section (5:12–21). Some dominant vocabulary changes. After the first two verses of chap. 5, "faith" and "to believe/trust" are scarcely used, whereas "death" and "life," "to die" and "to live" frequently appear. The "righteousness of God" is not mentioned again until 10:3. "Jew" and "Greek" disappear, along with mention of God's impartiality and faithfulness, until after chap. 8. Clearly there is a move away from the relationship of Christianity to Judaism and its traditions; only two brief quotations from the OT occur (7:7; 8:36) and exegetical arguments like those of chaps. 3–4 drop out until chap. 9. Instead, there is a greater focus upon the Christian community and its experience, except again for that block in 5:12–21.

New theological terms appear, such as "enmity" and "reconciliation," "slavery" and "freedom," "adoption" and "peace." God's love and the (Holy) Spirit enter the discussion for the first time (and together, 5:5). Yet all this does not mean that the treatment of the justification of the unrighteous has been abandoned. Indeed, in some respects it has become more focused: the forensic language of indictment and acquittal becomes more specific than it has ever been before (5:13–14, 18–19; 7:1–3; 8:1, 3, 31–34); in just these passages Paul provides his own most telling reformulations of justification. Furthermore, if "righteousness" is now no longer "the righteousness of God," its new referent is the quality of rectitude and integrity in human life that belongs with obedience to God; it has a new synonym in "consecration" (or "sanctification"), a term that establishes a link in Greek with the word "saints" Paul had used in his address for "Christians" (1:7; 6:19, 22; cf. 1 Cor. 1:30; → Sanctification).

Law and sin continue to receive detailed attention, especially their relation to each other (5:20–21; 7:1–25). But above all, chaps. 5–8 (5:12–21 is now not an exception) continue the connection made in 3:25 to the death of Jesus and elaborate, first from one side and then another, Paul's understanding of its meaning and consequences for all human beings as well as for baptized Christians. The clue provided in 4:25 turns out to be the right one to follow: the "justification of the unrighteous" means for Paul not only forgiveness and acquittal, but God's gift in Jesus Christ of a reordered life and hope as well. It is the burden of chaps. 5–8 to set

forth this side of Paul's gospel, without any fundamental change of subject.

In 5:1–11 readers encounter a variety of new ideas for the first time in Romans; the task is to ascertain their relationship to each other and to what has preceded. Paul begins by saying that justification results in peace in one's relationship to God. Verses 8 and 10 show that peace here is the removal of enmity toward God by the reconciliation effected in Jesus' death. It is not God who is reconciled but human beings, because the enmity is not God's; it is human opposition and resistance to God (8:7–8; → Reconciliation). The removal of this barrier opens up access to "this grace" (v. 2), which is not a human condition, but the undeserved graciousness on God's part that has been a key element in Paul's earlier argument (3:24; 4:4, 16). It may be "the sphere of God's grace, where we now stand" (NEB), for Paul later declares that his readers are "under grace" (6:14). In the present context, however, it seems to be that graciousness by which men and women are sustained through the trials of life, for to hold firm or fast under stress is the usual meaning of the everyday word "to stand" in Paul's Letters.

But the most significant connection with the earlier chapters is concealed in many English translations. Both at the beginning of this section and at the end, Paul speaks of "rejoicing" (ASV, RSV, TEV), "glorying" (KJV), or "exulting" (NEB). The Greek root is the same one translated up to this point in the Letter as "boasting" (2:17, 23; 3:27; 4:2), for Paul has been describing that self-protective, unrepentant, and presumptuous confidence in God that is a recurring trait of religious people, but that is irreconcilable with trust. Against that illegitimate confidence, Paul now sets a legitimate sort of joyful trust in "boasting in God through our Lord Jesus Christ" (v. 11, NRSV). What makes possible the change from one to the other is God's undeserved justification of the unrighteous in Jesus' death, because it eliminates the need for that instinctive self-defensiveness before God that Paul calls "enmity."

Verses 3–4 contain a rhetorical sequence (cf. 8:29–30; 10:14) that draws attention to this life as one of suffering, testing, and patient perseverance. The point is that this legitimate confidence provides staying power through the afflictions of life, because it enables those who enjoy it to be "looking forward to God's glory" (JB). And this hope does not "put to shame," it does not in the end expose those who entertain it to the embarrassment of having followed a false hope (cf. Paul's own statement in 1:16). Why not? Because God has already demonstrated his love for human beings in Jesus' death (v. 8). In the meantime, Paul declares that God's love has been "poured out" in human hearts (v. 5), a striking statement found nowhere else in the Bible. Once (Sir. 18:11) it is God's mercy that is poured out; frequently it is his wrath; but the conventional language is that God pours out his Spirit (cf. the narrative of Pentecost, Acts 2:17, citing Joel 2:28). Since v. 8 makes clear that "love of God" here means God's love for human beings, not their love for God, Paul is equating the sustaining assurance of God's demonstration of his love in the death of Jesus with the life-giving power of the Spirit, which is God's own presence with human beings in the world in spite of its afflictions and threats.

Just how the death of Jesus provides such supportive assurance for the future is spelled out in two steps in the second half of this section (vv. 6–10). First, Paul contrasts the death of Jesus with the rare but not impossible heroic death of an individual on behalf of another righteous person or in the name of "the good," some commanding cause like that perhaps of the Jewish martyrs in the Hasmonean revolt, an event that shaped the consciousness of many Jews under Roman rule in Paul's time. Jesus' death is totally different. Its force as a sustaining demonstration of God's love stems from its having occurred at just such a time as conventional religion would least expect it of God, on behalf of those who in no way deserve it—in short, from its being an act of Abraham's God who "justifies the ungodly" (4:5). Second, by using a standard rabbinic method of inferring a more comprehensive conclusion than is implied in what has already been stated, Paul argues that this given present reality of justification and reconciliation in the death of God's Son makes further salvation by his life "much more certain." So justification is the granting of life in an uncertain world by extending hope and certainty, the certain hope of sharing in the life of Christ for all those who have shared in his death by receiving its benefits of reconciliation.

By filling out in this way the import of Jesus' death for human life, Paul has anticipated dominant themes of chap. 8: present affliction and future hope, enmity and peace, the sustaining power of God's love and of the presence of the Spirit. These are all treated more fully in that climax to his presentation of the justification of the unrighteous. Thus the beginning of chap. 5 and the end of chap. 8 form a bracket marking these chapters as a major whole, distinct in content as well as style (see above). The interpreter needs to ask how each intervening section advances Paul's thought.

5:12–21, Justification Interpreted as Acquittal and Life: The Universal Reign of Grace in Place of the Universal Reign of Sin. Paul himself provides the best summary of this section in an earlier Letter: "For just as in Adam all die, so also in Christ all shall be made alive" (1 Cor. 15:22). A parallelism is drawn between Adam, the biblical progenitor of the human race (Gen. 1:1–2:46; → Adam; Human Being), and Christ. Each is the first of many. Each is also a single individual who represents all others and whose actions determine and affect all others. (Throughout these verses,

"the many" and "all people" are simply interchangeable expressions, according to a well-established Semitic and biblical usage; cf., e.g., Isa. 53:6, 12c.) Thus each is perceived as a universal and all-inclusive figure, not only a predecessor, but a prototype of all humanity. Yet these two act and affect others in exactly opposite ways, so that they are symbolic of antithetical powers and realities of worldwide scope: disobedience and obedience, condemnation and acquittal, sin and righteousness, death and life. All of history is embraced in the cosmic conflict between these powers, a major sign of Paul's indebtedness to the apocalyptic tradition in Judaism (→ Apocalyptic Literature).

The section falls naturally into three parts. The first is vv. 12–14. A full and balanced statement of the analogy between Adam and Christ is not reached until vv. 18–19, but Paul begins to set out the correlation on its negative side in v. 12. Without speculating on the origin of sin and evil, he simply takes for granted the biblical depiction of the original disobedience of Adam and Eve in Gen. 3 (→ Fall, The), with its correlate that death is the consequence of sin (Gen. 2:17; 3:19), in order to affirm the universal penetration of sin and death through Adam to the whole human race. Because the Vulgate (Vg.) Latin translation of v. 12c could be understood as "one man [Adam] . . . in whom all sinned," the verse has served for centuries as the main Pauline proof-text for the notion of genetically transmitted sin, but a more natural translation is "because all sinned." This results in an apparent contradiction, but the verse summarizes a characteristic understanding in Judaism of sin as at once guilt and fate, both an individual responsibility and a destiny that overpowers each person (as in Paul's discussion of God's wrath in 1:18–32; cf. Wisd. of Sol. 1:13; 2:23; Sir. 25:24; *2 Apoc. Bar.* 54:15; → Sin). It is to this second aspect that Paul turns first. In the period between Adam and Moses, "in the absence of law," sin was "not counted"; i.e., each individual was not held responsible for sin. Nonetheless everyone died, showing clearly the fateful reign of death over all as a result of Adam's action, even over those who had not committed the same kind of explicit transgression of a command as Adam's. In thus determining the fate of others, Adam prefigured Christ. In so distinguishing the period prior to Moses, Paul already has in mind what he refers to later (v. 20) as the "intrusion" of the law.

Verses 15–17 form the second part of the section. Having just touched on the similarity that coordinates the two figures, Paul in these verses underlines the differences between the two sides of the typology. The correlation is decidedly unbalanced, both quantitatively and qualitatively. Death proceeded from a single act, but the gift of life began with a multitude of trespasses. There is a lavish profuseness, an "abounding" surplus on the side of God's gift that explicitly recalls the "much more" of 5:9–10. Paul's vocabulary clearly indicates that he now has in view the situation after Moses, created by the coming of the law. On the one side, trespass, judgment, condemnation, and death emphasize in juridical language the deserved guilt and responsibility of every sinner. On the other side, the language of free gift, grace, extravagant generosity, and life emphasizes the displacement of what is due to all sinners by a totally undeserved gift in God's act of justification (mentioned in v. 16).

Verses 18–21 form the final part of the section. With these verses a difficult train of thought emerges into the clear. Over against the trespass of the one is set "the righteous act" or, better, "the justifyinge" (Tyndale's translation, 1535) of the other (v. 18). Opposite Adam's disobedience, by which all "were constituted sinners," there is Jesus Christ's obedience, by which all "shall be constituted righteous." The restatement of 1 Cor. 15:22 is complete; cast now in the language of justification, it shows that "justify" is for Paul a synonym for "make alive." Jesus' "obedience," mentioned for the first time in v. 19, is a new explanation for the way in which his whole life, but especially his death, saves others, namely by reversing the effect of Adam's disobedience. This is an independent, alternative interpretation of Jesus' death, alongside "expiation" (3:25), "God's love for us while we were still sinners" (5:8), and "reconciliation" (5:10). (This use of obedience to explain Jesus' death, and the life that preceded it, appears elsewhere in Paul's Letters only in Phil. 2:8; cf. Heb. 5:8. The idea, though not the word, is much more common in the Gospels, e.g., Matt. 3:15; Mark 14:36 and parallels; John 4:34; 6:38.)

In sum, apart from the law, sin and death (from Adam) and righteousness and life (from Christ) would be similar impersonal and inexorable destinies inflicted upon all people by virtue of the solidarity of all, first with Adam and then with Christ. But Paul recalls (v. 20) the "intrusion" of the Mosaic law between Adam and Christ (vv. 13–14). The law adds to trespass the "sting" of condemnation (1 Cor. 15:56; Rom. 4:15). Now that sin is "counted" (v. 13), magnified and deepened by the addition of guilt, death is more than a neutral destiny; it is deserved by all. But by the very same token, now that sin is counted against everyone, life has become something more than a neutral destiny; it is the free and undeserved gift of a gracious God. It has become the overflowing abundance of grace (v. 20). Verse 21 sums up what Paul has said about the law in a remarkable sentence: the purpose of God, served by its "intrusion" on the human scene, is that just as death has been the symptom of the reign of sin as a power over human lives, so righteousness (justification) might become the symptom of the new reign of grace. Just as the law turned the reign of death in Adam (v. 14) into the reign of sin, so that same law has turned the reign of life in Christ (v. 17) into the reign of grace.

It is not the purpose of this section to weigh determinism and free will, a problem that is simply not on Paul's horizon. Chap. 6 will show very clearly that he

treats his Christian readers as responsible moral agents. The issue is the universal and pervasive tyranny of sin as a power, and Paul's gospel of an overwhelming liberating power of a grace that has replaced it (cf. 6:14). This section is still about the justification of the unrighteous. It does not just describe justification as the bestowal of life in place of death (5:1–12 does that in its own way). It does not merely portray the cosmic and universal scope of justification over against the universality of death (though it does also do that). It underlines the character of justification as an act of God's undeserved graciousness, elaborating the note struck first in 3:24 and then again in 4:4, 16; 5:2—and does this in such a way as to make the Mosaic law contribute to its grace character.

6:1–7:6, Justification as the Gift of a Reordered Life. Paul has just made the astonishing claim that one of God's purposes with the Mosaic law was to use its "increase" of sin's power over men and women to augment and reinforce grace. If that is so, one must necessarily ask the question of 6:1: "Are we to continue in sin in order that grace might increase?" Paul's imagined interlocutor has already raised this question as part of an objection pertaining to God's own moral integrity in 3:5–8. It now serves as the transition to another facet of justification. But one should pause for a moment to reflect on its significance.

Rom. 3:8 shows its personal importance for Paul, as a charge leveled against him by opponents who presumably thought his teaching undermined the Jewish law and invited irresponsible license in human behavior (cf. Acts 21:21). But the theological importance of the question "Why not sin?" lies in the fact that it is inevitably and regularly raised whenever the claim is made, as here, that human perversity cannot decisively frustrate God's benevolent purpose. Such a claim has always seemed to deny the reality and seriousness of sin, as 3:5–7 exemplifies. Throughout Christian history, the universal scope that Paul has clearly attributed to grace by pitting it against the worldwide grip of sin and death in 5:12–21 has seemed to undermine everything he set forth in the early chapters about human accountability to God for moral behavior. Every radical message of grace stirs the ghost of libertinism to life. For just that reason, in 6:1–7:6 Paul does not simply turn aside from his main argument temporarily to put down a local objection. Rather, his answer forms another carefully constructed stage in his presentation of the justification of the unrighteous. Chap. 5 showed that righteousness, the rectitude and integrity restored to human life in its relation to God through the death of Jesus, is "a matter of *grace*" (4:16, my emphasis). It shows God's love for human beings while they are still sinners (5:8); it is an undeserved gift, manifesting the lavish profuseness of God's generosity (5:17, 20). But in the present section Paul turns the argument in the opposite direction, answering the question of 6:1 by showing that God's grace involves for its recipients a new *righteousness*, a reordering and integrity that preclude an undisturbed continuation of life's previous patterns.

This sudden reversal has seemed to many interpreters to suggest a shift of audience, as though Paul were turning from the Jewish-Christian members of the Roman church to the gentile Christians, correcting first the presumed legalistic tendencies of the former and now the libertarian proclivities of the latter. Such a reading gains a certain plausibility from the clear evidence that Paul had previously encountered both of these perennial religious tendencies in the churches he had founded, the one most conspicuously in Galatia and the other in Corinth. But one should avoid projecting stereotypes from his earlier correspondence onto the reading of Romans. There is little support from Paul's argument up to this point for such a hypothetical division.

On the contrary, the early emphasis on God's impartiality, the tight construction of his case, and its internal continuities suggest that in this Letter, just because of diverse reactions to his preaching, Paul is fashioning a theological position that will effectively counter both tendencies at the same time. His instrument for doing this is a broad and flexible doctrine of justification that includes both God's free and undeserved initiative in the face of all kinds of conditions that legalism tries to set, and the restoration of integrity to human lives in the face of the moral chaos that libertinism breeds. The resulting exposition here in Romans has always resisted the artificial separation of justification and sanctification, of "forensic" and "sacramental" grace, of "imputed" and "infused" righteousness that the confessional debates of Christian history have produced and tended to impose on these chapters. It is just this separation that results in a corresponding literary isolation of chaps. 6–8 from chaps. 1–5, as though they were not written to the same audience. But this division should be resisted. If the formal instrument Paul uses is now the language of justification, the material heart of his theological position is his interpretation of the death and resurrection of Jesus. It was from this single vantage point that he had argued in both Galatia and Corinth. This remains the case here. As each stage in Romans, from 3:25 on, has involved recourse to the death and resurrection of Jesus as the decisive clue to God's nature and action, so this new section contains Paul's reflections on some hitherto unmentioned facets of the meaning of that event.

There are three stages to the argument of 6:1–7:6, so clearly distinguished as to amount to three separate answers to the question "Why not continue in sin?" The connection with 5:12–21 remains close, for the answers Paul now gives employ the polarities of sin and grace, death and life, disobedience and obedience that were set up by contrasting Adam and Christ.

6:1–14, Through Death to Life. The first answer to the question is that justification is a new life of righteousness because it is a death to sin. In 5:12–21, Christ was seen to be not an isolated individual, but a figure who includes and represents others in such a way that he determines their circumstances and their lives; a solidarity or correspondence exists between them and him. Now Paul develops that idea. He takes it for granted that all his readers have been baptized, and that they understand this baptism to have been a baptism "into Christ's death." He does not here say that baptism created that solidarity (though it is possible to read Gal. 3:27 and 1 Cor. 12:13 as saying so), but as a "burial with Christ" (v. 4) it presupposes such solidarity and shows that it is now a solidarity in death. For his readers too a death has taken place that is irrevocable and involves the ending of each person's whole past way of life (v. 6). This is what precludes "continuing in sin."

This argument deserves a brief closer look. Paul's assumption that his readers will recognize the reference to baptism is an important indication that pre-Pauline development in Christian teaching about baptism revolved around the meaning of Jesus' death and included some kind of transfer of the benefits of that death to the baptized convert (→ Baptism). Second, the argument rests on a very basic understanding Paul has of Jesus Christ as a representative figure, a rich idea capable of being nuanced in a variety of ways quite apart from baptism. In the discussion of Adam and Christ, it is apocalyptic and universal in its symbolic scope, embracing primeval beginnings and end time, the "first" and the "last" Adam (cf. 1 Cor. 15:45). But there is also a cultic and sacrificial representation, in which Jesus died "for" others (Rom. 3:24–25; 5:6, 8, and many other passages). And there is the more legal and political kind of representation, in which one person's actions commit and oblige others, as when someone has power of attorney for another. These are all intimately connected in Paul's Christology, as one can see in one of his clearest formulations of the idea of representation, 2 Cor. 5:14–15 (". . . one has died on behalf of all; therefore all have died"). What happens to Christ happens to all those who are "in him." The phrase "in Christ Jesus" that runs through Paul's Letters (occurring in this section at 6:11, 23, the two major dividing points) rests on this base perception, not on "mystical" ideas that have been anachronistically attributed to him.

Paul now refines this conception of Jesus Christ as a representative figure by drawing on the temporal sequence of Jesus' death and resurrection, as recounted in early liturgical summaries (in addition to 4:25, cf. 1 Cor. 15:3–4; 1 Thess. 4:14; Phil. 2:8–9; 2 Cor. 5:15; Rom. 8:34a). The adding of this new ingredient leads to various statements in Paul's theology about dying and rising, or suffering and living, "with Christ" (e.g., 1 Thess. 4:14; Gal. 2:19–20; Phil. 3:10–11, 21; 2 Cor. 4:10–11; 7:3; 13:4). In the present context this establishes a connection between the Christian's past and future: "For if we have been united with him in a death like his, we will certainly be united with him in a resurrection like his" (v. 5, NRSV). The solidarity that already exists between Christ and the individual in death must be followed by a solidarity in life as well. Since the latter still lies in the future, this solidarity has become a shared destiny. Verse 8 repeats this result as a flat indicative assertion about the future resurrection (like 1 Cor. 15:22). But significantly, here in v. 4 this future indicative is deflected into a statement of God's purpose for men and women in the present: "the reason why we were buried with him through this 'baptism into death' is that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the Father's glory, we also might [now] live a new life." What shall be, already ought to be; hope and ethical obligation are simply two sides of the same future given to each individual in Christ. Verse 11 draws the bottom line: "So you also should consider yourselves to be dead to sin and alive to God in Christ Jesus." That is why one should not "continue in sin."

Verses 12–14 press this conclusion home with general exhortations that return to the terms with which chap. 5 had ended: the reign of sin and the reign of grace as two contrary authority structures. One has displaced the other, and the Christian's allegiances are to be shaped accordingly. What is remarkable about these verses is the view of the human self implicit in the injunctions. "Mortal bodies" (v. 12), "members," and "selves" (v. 13) are interchangeable terms. Bodily existence, even though still subject to death, is an aspect of the self that one has at one's disposal, as an "implement" (v. 13) to be put in the service of a transcending allegiance (cf. 1 Cor. 6:15). The self is not an end to itself; its end has been given to it in Christ.

6:15–23, Through Slavery to Freedom. The second answer to the question "Why not sin?" is that justification is a new life of righteousness because it is a being set free from the power of sin, but paradoxically it can have that quality only insofar as it is also a being brought into servitude to righteousness. Whereas the first answer was cast in terms of life and death, the categories now shift to freedom and bondage. But the most striking feature of this second answer is that it exists at all. Once one accepts Paul's premise, the destiny-creating role of Jesus as the Christ, the logic of his first reply would seem to be impregnable. Why, then, does he have to repeat the question once again in v. 15 and mount a second answer in these new terms? Verse 16 provides the clue by clarifying the issue of allegiance Paul raised in vv. 12–14. He does not think of human beings as autonomous creatures, or of freedom as a condition devoid of all commitment or obligation beyond oneself. No person can serve two masters, to be sure; but Paul presupposes that everyone has some "master," some controlling allegiance. The question is not whether life has such a point of

orientation, but which one it is, and what the outcome or goal is to which it ultimately leads. He sees the self either living in the service of sin as a power, the end result being death, or living in service of righteousness, the end result being life. By v. 22 it is clear that the latter is a life lived for God. But at the beginning, in v. 16, he seems to put it rather clumsily when he speaks of obedience "to obedience" as the opposite of obedience "to sin"; this awkwardness only shows that in the back of his mind is the contrast between obedience and the lack of commitment altogether, the total absence of a sense of obligation that lies behind the question "Why not sin?" Verse 16 shows why the language of slavery is appropriate, for here again (cf. 5:12) Paul balances the freedom of human life with its fatefulness. Choices have lasting consequences from which one cannot escape. And in moral decisions, the constraints within which one has to live have their roots in commitments one has already freely made. So slavery to sin was a kind of "freedom with respect to righteousness" (v. 20) and freedom from sin is to be found only in a "slavery" to righteousness and to God.

Paul seems to be fully aware of the scandalous incongruity of calling redemption and justification "slavery" (v. 19), but he retains the language nonetheless. Freedom, by itself, is not the answer to human existence; it is ambivalent, and its profounder dimensions open up only when one asks "Freedom from what, and for what?" and "Slavery to what?" Then the issue turns to what is being served, what allegiance is operative in every "slavery" or "freedom." As for his Christian readers, their conversion and baptism is clearly for Paul a point at which a transfer of allegiance and obligation has taken place, not because they were free to make it, but because it has been made for them by God. They have "been committed" (passive) to a new pattern of living, yet they have concurred in it themselves "from the heart" (v. 17)—the same combination of fatefulness and freedom as before, but now in a liberating direction that restores human integrity ("righteousness"). That is the second reason one should not "continue in sin" (→ Liberty). (It is instructive to compare Paul's understanding of fate and freedom with that of contemporary Stoicism; → Stoics.)

Why was the first answer, which drew upon Christian baptism to characterize the Christian life as an irrevocable death to a past way of life, inadequate? It is hard not to conclude that the explanation lies in Paul's own experience in Corinth, where his invitation to "consider oneself dead to sin and alive to God in Christ Jesus" (6:11) had simply incited a libertinist absolutizing of freedom (*see* 1 Corinthians). A profounder exploration of human freedom and its ambivalences is required if those set free are to remain accountable to the God who set them free and are to "honor God as God and give thanks to him" (1:21). That is what made it necessary for Paul to add 6:12–21.

7:1–6, Through Acquittal to Commitment. This third section in Paul's answer to the question "Why not sin?" consists essentially of a legal detail that provides, when applied to the Christian life, an example and conclusion for both of the first two sections. The chosen example transcends parochial usage and applies as easily to Greek and Roman society as to Jewish (and to the twentieth century as easily as to the first). Considered by itself, the illustration (vv. 1–3) is one of the clearest definitions of justification in all of Paul's Letters, for it exemplifies the way in which a person is put into a completely altered situation by the death of someone else. The extent of the change is apparent from the fact that for a married woman exactly the same action (living with another man) brings in its train the damning epithet of an adulteress before her husband's death, but has no such effect after he dies. In the latter case, the marriage legislation is still in force; it has not been abrogated. Paul is very careful not to suggest that it has, saying rather curiously that "she has been vacated from the law" (v. 2b) rather than that the law has been voided. But the law's power to condemn her has been broken. Her deliverance from this power, simply by virtue of a death having occurred, is the point.

All seems clear: the woman is the Christian set free by the death of Christ from the law's condemnation. But then the application in vv. 4–6 scrambles this neat analogy: the former husband is now the law, and it does not die; Christ, far from dying, has become the new husband to which the Christian is now free to belong; and the effect of the death is not only to end a period of captivity, but to legitimate a new relationship of commitment and productive loyalty. This reconstruction of the analogy is not the product of confusion, but stems directly from the movement of Paul's thought from 6:1 on, which it in turn exposes to clear view. The Christian life is not merely a liberation, but is like ending one marriage and beginning a new one. Like the sequence of cross and resurrection adduced at the beginning (6:5, 6, 8, 10), solidarity with Christ (in his "body," 7:4a) brings a past quality of life and service to an end and opens a new one for the future. Resuming the contrasting terms he had last used in 2:29 to distinguish the outward aspects of religion that are subject to manipulation and abuse from genuine religious integrity, Paul labels the old relationship "letter" and the new, "Spirit."

7:7–25, A Backward Look: The Power of Sin to Use the Law to Effect Death. In the course of Paul's presentation of justification, a great deal has been said about sin. Paul has always used the singular of the noun (except in 4:7, an OT quotation, and 7:5, where the plural functions as a modifier of "passions"). Almost personified, it has turned out to reign and have dominion (6:14). Death is the symptom of its rule (5:21), the daily ration it distributes to its subjects

(6:23). Yet its power is curiously dependent on the Mosaic law, apart from which it lies dormant (7:8b, resuming 4:15b and 5:13b). Only the law confers upon the married woman's act of living with another man the result of condemnation (7:2–3). The law magnifies sin (5:20) and accords sin its power (cf. 1 Cor. 15:56). Indeed, so closely have the roles of sin and the law meshed in Paul's reflections that death to the law (7:4) is required if one is to escape the power of sin. What in chap. 6 was a "dying to sin" (v. 10) has been replaced in the marriage illustration by "dying to the law" (7:4, 6). Correspondingly, what 6:18 referred to as "being set free from sin" has turned in 7:6 to "being exempted, vacated, from the law." It is hardly a surprise that the same logical necessity that produced the question of 6:1 now gives rise to 7:7: "What follows, then? That 'the Law is equivalent to sin'? Never!" (Moffatt's translation). When such questions have appeared earlier (in 3:1, 9, 27; 4:1, 9; and most notably in 6:1, 15), they have introduced clarifications and eliminated misunderstanding, but they have always advanced the discussion to new stages as well. That is the case here, but since the rest of chap. 7 clearly falls into two parts, each should be taken in turn.

Verses 7–12 form the first part. The inferential conjunction at the beginning of v. 12 shows that a first conclusion is being drawn to support the emphatic denial of v. 7. The Mosaic law is not the origin of sin; it is not to be confused with sin; it remains God's good and holy law. Yet law does in fact play a role in relation to sin: it identifies sin and makes it known. (Verse 7b explicitly resumes the point Paul had made in 3:20b, after affirming that the law impartially silences every attempt to evade indictment.) What law supplies, however, is no merely cerebral information about sin, nor does it bestow psychological enticement on evil by the mere act of forbidding it. As the experience of the Decalogue's prohibition of inordinate desire shows (in selecting just this one of the Ten Commandments, Paul may also have the story of the Fall in mind; cf. Gen. 3:6), it produces the very thing it is supposed to prevent. Just therein lies the exoneration of God's law; it has been captured and used by sin. The most striking feature of these verses is that, even though a question concerning law is being addressed here at the outset, the real subject whose activity is recounted through the rest of chap. 7 is sin. This is the power whose sinister rule has provided the foil for the reign of grace and the justification of the unrighteous in one form or another from 5:12 on. Just as in 5:12–21, its operation is chronicled in terms of the opposites, death and life. Continuing in the vivid first-person singular adopted in v. 7, Paul goes on: "in the absence of law" (v. 8b, a striking resumption of 5:13), sin was "dead," i.e., dormant, and he was alive. But when the law "came on the scene" (v. 9, an echo of 5:20), sin "sprang to life" (NEB) and Paul died (v. 10). The climax is reached in vv. 10b–11: "The very commandment that was supposed to lead to life turned out for me to lead to death; for sin, by seizing an opportunity provided by that commandment, tricked me and by using it killed me."

The clear force of these words gives pause. The law held out the promise of life. Paul's phrasing here is carefully ambivalent. He does not say whether the arousing of such a hope was an intended function of the law in God's good purpose, frustrated by sin (as suggested by 2:13; 8:3a; and the quotations of Lev. 18:5 in Rom. 10:5; Gal. 3:12), or whether it was a misunderstanding to expect life from it, a result of sin's deceitful use of the law (as seems required by Gal. 3:21b; Rom. 9:31–32; 10:2). The law, in scope and function, has many facets. In any case, the purpose of the law is not the first issue. It is enough that experience discovers that God's law in fact turns out to serve the strategies and ends of sin. Its result is not life but death, the symptom of sin's rule. There is not one syllable to suggest that this result is limited to those who have transgressed the law. Sin's deceit lies in its taking advantage of just those religious aspirations that make a person look to the law for life. By using the law precisely where it is honored and treasured and even obeyed, it destroys the integrity of a person's relation to God, corrodes trust, and replaces it with a defensive posture no longer gratefully dependent on God or unreservedly accountable to him.

Paul recounts this capture of the law and of the self by sin in the past tense and with the first-person singular "I." It is a mistake to read this as a personal autobiography and so to wring from it details of Paul's early life. Rom. 3:7; 1 Cor. 6:15; 10:29–30; 13:1–3, 11; 14:11, 14, 15; and especially Gal. 2:18–21; 6:14 amply exhibit his penchant for casting his analyses of fundamental religious experience into the exemplary "I" of the born teacher. The past tenses depict the "history" of sin on the same epic scale as in 5:12–14, 18–21. But the settings of Gal. 2:18–21 and Phil. 3:8–14 in the manifestly autobiographical contexts that precede these passages show that it would be equally mistaken to abstract Paul's description of sin from his personal discovery of its power to pervert devout allegiance to the Mosaic law. One can as little do that here as one can sanitize his perception of Jewish religious self-awareness in 2:17–29 from his own profound personal participation in it.

Verses 13–25 form the second part of the remainder of chap. 7. As 6:15 repeated the question of 6:1 in order to advance the train of thought to another level, so 7:13 renews the question of 7:7 and repeats the emphatic assertion that it was sin that was responsible for bringing about death. But there is a difference. "The law" has been replaced by "the good." Although this certainly has to do with God's law, the goodness of which Paul has just upheld, the reference now is to the good that the law holds out "to me" in its promise of life (as in 7:10), thus preparing for the following verses. In addition, two parallel purpose clauses now make clear that

even in sin's use of it, the law remains God's instrument. The end result fits into God's purpose for the law, namely to disclose the true nature of sin and show how "incomparably sinful" it really is. Continuing his intimately illustrative use of "I," but shifting to the present tense to emphasize its perennial quality, Paul turns to analyze more carefully the experience in which the religious self encounters this power of sin.

Paul shifts from the contrasting words "life" and "death" he used in vv. 7–12 to a closely related but quite different pair, "good" and "evil." (The same sort of shift occurs between the two stages of his argument in chap. 6.) This pair, in turn, is joined to contrasting verbs, and these contrasts carry the argument. This is clear in vv. 18–19: "For I know that the good does not dwell in me, that is in my flesh. For to will the good is within my reach, but to produce it, to carry it out, is not. For what I do is not the good that I intend [desire, and prefer]; instead, what I actually accomplish is the very thing I do not intend [do not want, and wish to avoid]." Good and evil in this context are not abstract moral labels. They develop v. 13, where "that which is the good" is closely allied with the life promised "to me" by the law. The attraction of the law is that it seems to lead to the life that the religious person wants and desires above all else, the more so if it is God's holy, just, and good commandment. (In 12:2, Paul will equate "the good" with the will of God.) Paul is here touching on the deepest nerve of the Jew's allegiance to the Mosaic law. This is why the person who lives by the law, and not just under it, "delights" in God's law (v. 22, a clear echo of the psalmist's praise of the law; cf. Ps. 1:2). Of course this is "moral" in a profound sense, for in religion at its best, represented for Paul by Judaism, the desire to attain life and the desire to do the good that God commands are fully joined. This willing and desiring are the more pressing the more one realizes that the good that amounts to life does not dwell within the native resources of the self taken on its own ("my flesh," v. 18).

But now, Paul goes on, this self that wants life and wills the good makes an astonishing discovery. What it does, creates, produces, and brings into being (the changes are rung on three overlapping Greek verbs) by its actions is not the intended good, but exactly what it thought it could avoid by the law (exactly like the Decalogue's prohibition in vv. 7–8). The early chapters of Romans make clear enough what this means: the loss of inner integrity and of trusting reliance on God, the resulting claim to special standing that exempts one from accountability, and the denial that all stand on the same footing before the same God lead *every* religious person to abuse God's goodness and end up blaspheming his name. Verse 15 now gets its full force: "I don't understand the results of my own action!" One is compelled to paraphrase: "I know the law is good; the trouble cannot lie there. Indeed, it can't be I that am acting any longer; another power resides in me to which I am sold as a slave" (vv. 14, 17). To go a step further: "As a person wishing to do the good, I discover that God's own law, used by sin, has become a qualitatively different law, contrary to the one I adhere to in my sincere intentions. It has taken over my members, those aspects of myself by which my service and allegiance are implemented and which should be at the disposal of my own will (cf. 6:12–13), and put them at the disposal of sin. The result is that I am a prisoner of war; when I want to do the good, evil is what comes out" (vv. 21–23). "Thank God that because of Jesus Christ our Lord this demonic power is not ultimate" (v. 25a).

This passage has been a battleground for debate almost since it was written. That is because it seems to lend itself to a wide variety of applications. What is needed is to take it on its own terms as far as possible, in its literary context in Romans, and in its religious and historical context in Paul's world. It is frequently understood as describing the common frustration produced by the discrepancy between ideal intentions and actual human performance, or between reason and desire (formulated, e.g., in Ovid's *Metamorphoses* 7, 18–21). This reading assigns the performance to the "flesh" as a lower self and the good intentions to an inner nature untouched by sin and results in a dualistic conflict between passion and reason in the understanding of the self that is foreign to Paul. Such dualism is suggested by v. 25b, which is Paul's terse summary; but it is refuted by his analysis, in which the "inmost self" and "flesh" are not different selves at different levels, but two aspects of the one person who is "sold under sin," his sincere desire and his helpless vulnerability. What v. 15 describes is not the failure to produce results, but the same bewilderment over the actual results of one's action that Paul spoke of in v. 10. Again, the experience that is detailed in this whole passage 7:7–25 is not the despair felt by a Martin Luther over his inability to live up to a demanding code; Phil. 3:4–7 shows conclusively how different Paul's self-perception is. Nor is it the exposure felt by an Augustine at the discovery that he has oriented his life's striving around an attractive but inferior surrogate for God's highest good. It is the much more shocking encounter with sin's power to use genuine devotion to the true God, channeled through adherence to God's own law, to bring about exactly the opposite of what one has hoped for: a perverted relationship to God in place of an authentic one, evil in place of the good, death in place of life. That yields a far more sinister perception of evil operating at the very center of religious life to debase it and turn it into slavery. It is this slavery from which Paul gratefully acknowledges having been set free by Christ. Rom. 7:7–25 is a backward look at "the old life of the letter" (7:6).

Finally, debate has raged over whether Paul is describing his experience as a Jew or as a Christian. That is the wrong question. There is for Paul one God of all human beings (3:29–30), and one authentic relation-

ship to him for all, the trust exemplified by Abraham (chap. 4). All serious religious devotion is subject to being taken captive by sin and subverted into distrust and defiance of God. Of course one cannot abstract Paul's experience of that distortion from his experience with the Mosaic law. But he makes no suggestion that sin respects any boundary between Judaism and Christianity or any other religion, and his other Letters show that he knew quite well that the best intentions of Christians are subject to the same falsification. Throughout all his Letters, his gospel is that God has taken the initiative in his Son to break that power and set things right—for Jew and non-Jew alike. God's justification in Christ of the undeserving is what vindicates all devotion to God.

8:1–17, A Forward Look: The Power of the Spirit to Effect Life for Righteousness. To move to the other side of the contrast of 7:6, Paul first restates the change effected "in Christ Jesus" (for the meaning of this phrase, see commentary above on 6:1–14). There is "no condemnation"; the power of the law to condemn has been decisively broken (the resumption of 5:16 and 7:3 is unmistakable). "The law of sin and death" (v. 2) is a shorthand summary of 7:7–25; it is the Mosaic law used by sin in such a way as to cause death. The parallel phrase "the law of the Spirit of life" is clearly intended as a rhetorical counterpart and suggests that life is the result when the same law is used by God's Spirit, his life-giving presence and power, instead of by sin. Like the expression "law of faith" in 3:27, it joins what Paul often sets in tension; only the context can supply its meaning. But that context is clear enough. The law itself is not demonic; to link law with Spirit instead of sin is the logical sequel to the argument of chap. 6 that freedom in Christ is aimed at the reshaping of human life, both individual and corporate, according to the good that God wills for it. Verses 3–4 supply the grounding for this new connection by declaring that this was the whole purpose behind God's "sending of his own Son." This reference to Jesus is cast in formal language closely paralleling Gal. 4:4–5. It emphasizes first the complete entry of God's Son into the human condition. Paul is not worried about the "sinlessness" of Jesus (Heb. 4:15), because he conceives of sin as a power, not as defilement or guilt. Without fully entering the domain of that power, "flesh," the Son could not have broken it. The fundamental contrast in the whole passage is between the inability and weakness, on the one hand, of the law to renew and reorder life so long as sin is in control, and the effectual life-giving power of God's own presence in the Spirit, on the other. The outcome is to open the way for the fulfillment of God's holy and just commandment. Only on these terms can Paul come back to the starting point of his Letter, an impartial God whose righteousness is to be vindicated and acknowledged (3:4) if the relationship of creature to creator is to have integrity and God is to be "honored as God and given thanks" (1:21–25).

Verses 5–8 elaborate briefly on the contrast between "flesh" and "Spirit" as these affect human beings. Each is a reality transcending the individual, but each is also a "mind-set" that involves a deliberate choice of values and human effort toward a goal. (How Paul conceives of such a "mind-set" is most clearly illumined by Phil. 2:1–13 and the "Christ hymn," vv. 6–11, cited there as its source and norm.) Above all, each is most basically a relationship to God. The one, flesh, is a regression to the deadly "enmity" and defiance that preceded reconciliation (cf. 5:10). The other, Spirit, is God's life-giving presence and power. It is renewing because it creates a new mind-set that is not inimical to God, that submits to God's law without the distrust that corrupts obedience into self-defensiveness, and that no longer allows God's law to be used as an instrument for holding one in its power.

If these definitions of flesh and Spirit suggest that human choices are the ultimate determinants of human destiny, vv. 9–11 quickly correct that impression by returning to God's primal life-bestowing act in the resurrection of Jesus (cf. 6:1–14). What is most striking about these verses is the free interchangeability of a whole series of phrases: "belonging to Christ" (v. 9b), "being in the Spirit" (v. 9a), "God's Spirit dwelling in you" (vv. 9a, 11b), "Christ's Spirit" (v. 9b), "Christ in you" (v. 10), and "the Spirit of the one who raised Jesus from the dead" (v. 11). Each interprets the others and is interpreted by them. God is the one who gives life to the dead (4:17); he has raised Jesus from the dead. The Spirit is not the possession of some elite group within the church. It is another word for God's life-giving power present through Jesus to all who belong to him, active already in their lives in spite of the mortality that still belongs to the body, working toward righteousness and undergirding the promise that the Son's identification with them will issue ultimately in their sharing in his resurrection (cf. 6:5, 8). The Spirit is neither only a mind-set nor merely the external power by which God raised Jesus from the dead. It is also the power of the risen Jesus to take men and women into his power and reshape life to make it well pleasing to God—thus doing what the law could not do and reversing the power of sin. That is why Paul could call the gospel "the power of God for salvation to all who rely on him, the Jew first and also the Greek" (1:16).

Verses 12–17 bring this unit to a close in two ways. First, Paul draws the consequences for his readers in a direct call for their response that reminds one of the challenge of the Deuteronomic covenant: "See, I have set before you today life and prosperity, death and adversity" (Deut. 30:15, NRSV)—only here death and life are correlated to the conflicting claims of flesh and Spirit upon the self for its "deeds done in the body" (v. 13b; cf. 2 Cor. 5:10; → Body). But second, Paul reminds his readers that, as in Deuteronomy, such a call

only follows a change of allegiance and direction already made for them. Obedience is not finally the work of the self, but the result of the Spirit's leading. The Spirit produces an authentic filial relationship to God in place of anxious slavery and verifies that gift by enabling people to address God with the intimate term "Father" (→ Adoption). The Aramaic word *Abba* suggests a liturgical acclamation of God in the mutually supportive worship of the gathered community and not simply the intimacy of private prayer. (This whole series of new terms occurs also in Gal. 4:6–7 and seems to have formed a single cluster in Paul's preaching.) It is noteworthy that the full-fledged opposite of slavery, "freedom," is reserved by Paul for future salvation (v. 21). In the meantime (v. 17), the legal image of an "heir," one whose entitlement is firmly established even though actual possession remains outstanding, offers a way to affirm the certainty of the new life in the Spirit despite its provisional and unseen aspects and to link it to the still unrealized future consummation of God's deliverance (→ Inheritance). Both certainty and hope are based once again on that central element in Paul's gospel, the inclusion of all in the one destiny of Jesus Christ: "if it is in fact true that we share his suffering in order to share also his glory" (v. 17).

8:18–30, Justification as the Gift of Hope in a Still Unredeemed World. Paul now returns to the afflicted and precarious quality of life mentioned in 5:3–4. The credibility of his many intervening affirmations is threatened by the falsifying power of the actual experience of transiency and suffering, the footprints of death's continuing presence. Careful readers will have noted that Paul has never denied that presence, even in the last section (8:10a). Death is still "the last enemy" (1 Cor. 15:26). This is exactly why the death of Jesus remains so central to Paul's gospel. The indisputable reality of death in human life is also the most public feature of Jesus' life. His destiny-creating role as the Christ rests on his prior identification with the human condition (5:5, 8; 8:3; cf. Gal. 4:4–5). Only the irreversible sequence of Jesus' own crucifixion and resurrection clamps life to this death, discloses God to be "the one who gives life to the dead" (4:17, 24), and enables Paul to speak of life as a final destiny. For human beings, Paul is always careful to say, the culmination of that destiny remains future (cf. 5:10, 17; 6:5, 8; 8:11). "It is in this hope that we have been saved" (8:24, the only place in Paul's undisputed Letters where he uses the verb "to save" in the past tense). This insistence on the futurity of salvation is undoubtedly a residue of Paul's past experiences with the excessive enthusiasm of Christian perfectionism, against which he repeatedly drew the cruciform shape of his own life as an apostle and as a model for authentic life in others (cf. esp. 1 Cor. 4:8–13; 2 Cor. 4:7–12; Phil. 3:12–16, 20–21). But here, as in so many other instances, a strategy in his churches became also an emphasis in his theology; the hard realism of this distinction between present and future reinforces the correspondence between Christ's life and those who are "in him," so that present affliction verifies the truth of the gospel instead of refuting it (e.g., 1 Cor. 1:26–2:5; 2 Cor. 4:7; 6:3–10; 11:23; 13:3–4; Gal. 5:11; 6:17; Phil. 1:14). In both 8:17 and 8:29, Paul returns to this basic pattern of Christ's life; in between, as he moves to a first climax of his Letter, this line of thought is elaborated in three progressive stages.

First, in vv. 19–22 the whole of creation is included in the same sequence. This is the only place in the NT where the natural world is singled out for attention, but the passage draws directly on the firm understanding of the affinity between human beings and God's total creation, of which they are a part, that runs through the OT and apocalyptic literature. (Its opposite, an essential incongruity between human beings and their world, appears in many forms of dualism in the Hellenistic world; → Gnosticism.) Frequently in Jewish writings God's end-time redemption includes the renewal of creation (e.g., Isa. 11:6–9; 65:17, 25; 66:22; *1 Enoch* 91:16; *Jub.* 1:29); an extension of this idea traces the ills and woes of the nonhuman world to the defilement and curse of human sin (e.g., Isa. 24:1–6, 18–23; Jer. 4:19–26; Ezek. 32:6–8; with specific reference to Adam's transgression, 2 Esd. 7:11). The pangs of childbirth (v. 22) are conventional imagery for the cosmic woes accompanying God's judgment (Isa. 13:8; cf. 1 Thess. 5:3), the coming of the new age (*1 Enoch* 62:4) or the *messiah* (1QH 3:7–10); they are a fitting metaphor here for the universally shared pain that looks forward to new life (cf. John 16:21–22). Paul does not romanticize nature or treat it with contempt. The world's futility and "decay" (i.e., its vulnerability to the ravages of time), two of its most characteristic marks to Hellenistic thinking, are not the result of anything it has done; there is no "fall" of creation. Rather, they are part of the created order and fall under God's own "expectation that the creation itself will be set free" to share in the glorious liberty of God's children (vv. 20–21), so bearing their own testimony to God's transcending future (→ Eschatology; Regeneration).

Second, against any pious illusions about being "children of God," vv. 23–25 reassert that it is "not only creation but also the very ones who have the Spirit as a first fruits" (a harvest metaphor for the advance portion that serves as surety for what is to follow) who participate in this urgent longing. The gift of the Spirit is not a partial resurrection or a certificate of exemption from the world's sufferings. As surety, it confirms the gap between present and future, but at the same time sustains the expectation and turns it into a certain hope. (As v. 24 demonstrates, "hope" in Paul's Letters means both the act of expecting and the reality hoped for; → Hope.) Hope is not a poor substitute for possession, but enhances it. As certainty about God's future, it makes meaningful connection between God's salvation and the miserable realities of the pres-

ent world. What can be seen in this life remains changeable and transitory and bears the marks of death (2 Cor. 4:16–18 is Paul's own best commentary). To identify God's end with that would be to defraud faith. Instead, hope is what gives faith patience and enables it to endure in its reliance on God (v. 25).

Third, "in the same way, the Spirit also stands by to assist us in our weakness" (v. 26). The imagery is that of a heavenly court (cf. vv. 33–34), in which the "inexpressible yearnings" of both creation and community are taken up and presented on their behalf to God. Paul is drawing on a tradition that perceives God's Spirit as an advocate or defender for God's people; it appears also in the "Paraclete" sayings of the Gospel of John (→ Paraclete) and in sayings in the synoptic Gospels (Matthew, Mark, and Luke) that promise the Spirit's aid to the beleaguered community in times of persecution and trial (Mark 13:11; Matt. 10:19–20; Luke 21:15). Human beings are not left to their own resources, even to the inadequacies of their praying, to bear the burdens of this time, for the Spirit's intercession is authorized by God himself, "the searcher of human hearts" (Ps. 7:9; Jer. 17:10; cf. Ps. 139:1). Apart from this context, the assertion of v. 28 must sound superficial; in this context, it summarizes what has gone before. The ultimate assurance that "all [these] things" eventually do lead to the good that God wills lies in his unfailing assistance to "those who love him," which Paul at once defines as those whom God has called into this new relationship (cf. 1 Cor. 2:9; 8:3). A final rhetorical sequence of clauses stresses this divine purpose. Into it Paul inserts (v. 29b) another reminder of the Son: the branding mark of his life's pattern, in which glory and salvation come only by way of the cross, is what restores to human life the "image" the Creator had first willed to impress upon it (Gen. 1:27; cf. Phil. 3:21; 2 Cor. 4:4; → Image of God).

8:31–39, Justification as Vindication by the Love of God in Christ. Finally Paul returns to the love of God, which 5:5–8 has identified as the ultimate basis for hope and for that kind of confidence in God that has integrity. But he does not name love until v. 35. What God's sacrifice of his own Son (the language echoes Abraham's "not sparing" Isaac, Gen. 22:16) proves first is that God is "for us" rather than "against us." That does not mean that he is "on our side" (JB) on every human issue, but it is the very heart of Paul's teaching on justification. The love of God does not mean a transmutation of earthly life into heavenly. It leaves history intact, with its choices, for which people and nations must still answer to God (cf. 2 Cor. 5:10). Human beings still have blood on their hands, often in the name of religion. But the ultimate accuser in the heavenly court is now the one who has taken their side in Christ Jesus. Paul is back at his starting point in 3:23–24. The rest of this section unfolds that assurance with the help of two carefully constructed rhetorical lists: one (v. 35) a sevenfold recapitulation of Paul's own personal hardships as a paradigm of the Christian life, the other (vv. 38–39) a tenfold catalogue of transpersonal powers that seem to threaten God's design. In between, v. 36 (unfortunately often passed over in the liturgical use of this passage) makes the first appeal for confirmation to the OT since chap. 4. Ps. 44:22, originally a cry to God lamenting the assaults of Israel's enemies, now universalized as an apocalyptic truism that God's faithful are always exposed to violent death, becomes Scripture's own reminder that tribulation is a sure mark of belonging to God. The love of the Christ (v. 35) is in the last analysis the love of the eternal and omnipotent God himself (v. 39); that is the meaning for this life of calling Jesus of Nazareth, crucified and raised, "Christ Jesus our Lord."

9:1–11:36
The Faithfulness of God

In 3:1–8, Paul had anticipated two serious objections to his argument. His exposition of the justification of the unrighteous in subsequent chapters has answered the second objection: that Paul is denying the realities of sin and human accountability, ignoring the moral consequences of God's graciousness, and casting doubt on God's own integrity. But the first objection remains unfinished business still clamoring for attention. Paul's early insistence on God's impartiality (2:6–29) had provoked the question, "Does the Jew have any 'advantage,' any privilege that others do not also have?" (3:1). In replying affirmatively, Paul pointed to the "direct utterances" entrusted by God to the Jews, referred cryptically to the faithfulness of God that does not depend on human fidelity, and then switched the emphasis to God's truth and righteousness. Even that answer he seemed to take back in 3:9, although from 1:16 on he has always been careful not to obliterate the distinction between Jew and non-Jew (1:16; 2:9–10; 3:1, 30; 4:11–12).

However, far from going away, the question has in the meantime only become more acute. On Paul's own terms, the gospel of God's gracious initiative for the deliverance of all in the death of Jesus has put Jew and non-Jew on the same footing before God (3:22b–23, 30) and even provided the non-Jew with equal access to what Paul located at the very core of Jewish identity, God's promise to Abraham and Abraham's trust in that promise (chap. 4). Favoritism can never be claimed from God, as though God were the patron of one client people alone, for that would violate Judaism's central creed that God is one (3:29–30).

But what then becomes of God's faithfulness, that very reliability on which human trust, beginning with Abraham's, can alone depend? What about those "direct utterances" and God's calling of a people as his own, for which again Abraham is the prototype? Has God broken faith with his word, and with himself?

What is at stake is not only the reality and future of Israel; it is above all a question about the God who has acted in Jesus Christ. That is why the argument of chaps. 1–8 is unfinished. In this connection God's "faithfulness" has several levels of meaning. His trustworthiness is his power to do what he has promised (as in 4:20–21). But it involves also his constancy, the changelessness of his purpose. And another side of his reliability is the consistency with which he deals with different groups of people, i.e., the very impartiality that raised the question in the first place. In the end, these are all aspects of God's righteousness.

These are the questions Paul addresses in the next three chapters. After a brief introduction, he proceeds in three major steps, though each section has some clear subdivisions.

9:1–5, Personal Introduction: The "Advantages" of Israel. In these intimate opening remarks, it is not at first apparent what Paul is talking about. He is affirming under oath his deeply pained concern for the Jewish people, in whom his own natural and historical roots are set. He makes no charges; there is not a syllable of reproach or blame. Yet, in a manner reminiscent of Moses' impossible offer of his own life to atone for the worshipers of the golden calf (Exod. 32:31–32), Paul entertains the fleeting thought of being accursed and cut off from Christ, something just declared impossible (8:35, 39), in their place—as if they are under a ban or spell. But he turns that thought aside (until 9:31–32) and instead enumerates all the "advantages" (3:1) of the "Israelites." This new name replaces "the Jew(s)" in these three chapters (except 9:24 and 10:12, where Paul needs to pair Jew with non-Jew) and is a calculated recall of Judaism's roots in the patriarchal history (Gen. 32:28; → Israel: The Idea of Israel). The list itself rehearses the major tokens of the Jewish people's covenant relationship with God, the earthly branding marks of God's election—not the least of which is being the cradle of the Messiah. The thought moves Paul to a Jewish formula of thanksgiving and praise to "the God who is over all" (v. 5b) and who is the real subject of chaps. 9–11. (Although some translations punctuate so as to make the formula refer to Christ, this fits neither the context nor Paul's Christology; cf. 1 Cor. 15:28.)

9:6–29, Israel's Election as God's Free Initiative to Create a People. In this first major section Paul reviews certain aspects of election in the patriarchal story in order to refute the suggestion that God's word has failed (v. 6). The first reason it has not is that God's past activity has been completely consistent with his justification of the unrighteous. Put another way, several of the points Paul has made in chaps. 1–4 about the standing of human beings before God in his future judgment he now confirms by turning 180 degrees to look at Israel's past history. It is most important to note that throughout this first section it is God's nature and activity that are being described; there is absolutely no attack on the Judaism of Paul's own time or censure of Israel in the past. This review embraces three points.

First, in vv. 6–13, in a remarkable resumption of his earlier redefinition of the authentic Jew (2:28–29) and of the authentic Abraham (cf. commentary above on 4:9–12), Paul now redefines Israel in such a way as to distinguish the children "of God" and "of the promise" (v. 8) from the simply physical posterity of Abraham. One should take some care in interpreting Paul. He is not trying to make room for believing Gentiles among Abraham's children (as he was in 4:9–12), much less suggesting a "spiritualized" definition of the Jewish people as a pretext for substituting the church for Israel (that would reduce vv. 1–3 to posturing). Nor is he dismissing the earthly history of the Jewish people as inauthentic; he is not abstracting an "essential" Israel from its history. Rather, in that history itself, as every Jew would agree, the descendants of Abraham through Ishmael (Gen. 25:12–18; cf. *Jub.* 15:28–30; 20:11–13; → Ishmaelites) and through Esau (Gen. 36:1–8; → Edom) were not included in "Israel." (For debate in Paul's time about the identity of the true Israel, → Israel: Apocalyptic Judaism.) Historical Israel itself is determined by "promise" rather than by "flesh" (these terms are functioning here exactly as "spirit" and "letter" did in 2:29). Of course Isaac and Ishmael, one born to Abraham's wife, Sarah, and the other to his maidservant Hagar, were not equals. So to make the point clear, Paul comes down one generation to the twin sons of Rebecca (OT, Rebekah), "conceived from the same conjugal act with one man, Isaac" (v. 10). Here the determination of authentic Israel takes place "when they were not yet born and when they had not yet done anything good or bad, in order that God's elective intention might remain unchanged [i.e., consistent], dependent not on works but on the one who calls" (vv. 11–12a). The point is clinched, in rabbinic fashion, with one text from the law and one from the prophets (vv. 12b–13). Election, which means the calling into being of a people, exactly like the justification of the unrighteous, is God's free act, a gift, not something due (4:4); it results from the perduring intention of God that operates "by election" (v. 11b). This is Abraham's God "who gives life to the dead and calls into being the things that are not" (4:17).

Second, vv. 14–24 reflect on "But Esau I hated." The last OT text cited in v. 13 from Mal. 1:2–3 creates a new problem. One may soften the language (since Hebrew has no comparative adverbs, there are OT texts in which "to hate" simply means "to love less": Gen. 29:30–31; Deut. 21:15; cf. Luke 14:26), but there is no doubt about God's deliberate disfavor in that context in Malachi and throughout Israel's history. That raises the issue of "injustice," the negative form of favoritism, on God's part. At first Paul seems merely to continue

his preceding line when he adds the two counterpoised figures of Moses and Pharaoh. Verse 16 is a manifest reinforcement of v. 11: "So it all depends not on the person who wills, nor on the person who exerts himself, but on the God who shows mercy." But v. 17 shows that Paul's shift to (Moses and) Pharaoh introduces a new dimension: God is not guided by random or arbitrary whim, but by a clear purpose to assert his power and presence in human affairs. In that connection Paul introduces the image of the potter and his clay.

Many readers, taking the side of the questioners in v. 19 and thinking only of the passive plasticity of the clay in the potter's hands, have taken offense at what they regard as this picture of an impersonal, unfeeling, and despotic God. It is imperative to consult the prophetic sources from which Paul is drawing this reply (Jer. 18:6; Isa. 29:16; but esp. Isa. 45:9–13). The point is not the power of the potter, but his "right" (v. 21, NRSV) to fashion each vessel for a function and to determine the use of each. A machine stamping out identical pots is "impersonal." In Isaiah 45, the context concerns God's "raising up in righteousness" (v. 13) his "anointed," the Persian emperor Cyrus. The even more ludicrous parallel to the clay calling the potter to account is the helpless newborn infant holding its parents answerable for the procreative act that called it into being, as personal a caricature as one could wish. But the potter's example fits Paul's needs better than the infant's because, as vv. 21–23 make quite clear, his point is God's intention to fashion different instruments and use them in different ways—a latitude so far not yet achieved by human procreation. Neither rigid determinism nor arbitrary caprice, but creative and purposive divine freedom lie at the heart of Paul's understanding of election (→ Election; Predestination).

Corroboration for this comes in the difficult vv. 22–23. Paul's syntax is severely elliptical; v. 24 also is not a complete sentence, but it is clearly the goal toward which vv. 22–23 move. God is not simply like a potter. The purpose clauses with which both verses begin are parallel: God wishes to make himself known, first by showing his wrath and "what he can do" (a striking phrase; cf. its opposite in 8:3) by patiently enduring, i.e., by not destroying, "vessels of wrath fashioned for destruction," and then by making known "the wealth of his glory" on "vessels of mercy" prepared for that use. "Vessel" in Greek normally also means an "instrument" or piece of gear in the hands of someone (Paul himself is a "chosen instrument," lit., a "vessel of election," for God in Acts 9:15). The harshness of this language results from combining terms from the imagery of the potter with God's wrath and mercy. Paul does *not* identify the "vessels of wrath designed for destruction" with Jews and the "vessels of mercy" with Gentiles, much less Christians. Such a correlation can be produced only by bringing elements of chap. 11, which is a different argument, up into chap. 9. These phrases refer to figures in Israel's own history, Pharaoh and Moses, respectively. Verses 22–23 thus reproduce in inverted order the juxtaposition of vv. 15–17 in order to reach toward the goal of v. 24, God's intent to create "us" as a people "not only from Jews but also from Gentiles," both of whom are included under "vessels of mercy."

This reappearance of the word pair "Jew and Gentile" and the confessional "us," both totally new elements in chap. 9, brings Paul back to the main track of his exposition of God's righteousness. Thus the juxtaposition in vv. 22–23 is not contradictory but progressive, remarkably like the parallel revelation of God's wrath and his righteousness with which Paul began the whole Letter in 1:17–18. These are two "sides" or "faces" of God, but they are never in equilibrium and do not result in a schizophrenic duality of purpose in God himself. The hardening of Pharaoh served the deliverance of Israel under Moses, just as the revelation of wrath serves the manifestation of God's righteousness, or the "increase" of sin by the law serves the aggrandizement of grace (5:20). There is no inconsistency between God's behavior in Israel's creation and the justification of the undeserving that creates a new people from both Jew and non-Jew.

Third, vv. 25–29 buttress v. 24 with scriptural warrants in reverse order, first for the non-Jews (from Hosea), then for the Jews (from Isaiah), but in such a way that each passage also applies to both groups. The Hosea text (vv. 25–26) is a lucid and forceful equation of calling and election with God's undeserved love; its application to the inclusion of the non-Jews in what was originally Israel's election drives home God's consistency in his covenant love on which all alike depend. The text from "Isaiah," actually from a variety of prophetic passages, returns to God's reliability in the election of authentic Israel. "Remnant" in v. 27, like "seed" in v. 29, refers to that authentic line of descent from Abraham described positively in vv. 6–13 (it is not used reductively; there is no "only" in the Greek of v. 27; see commentary below on 11:1–6). The emphasis falls on the last line, which sums up Paul's answer to the question of v. 6 whether "the word of God has failed": no, "the elect strain that is called in Isaac" (v. 7) "shall be saved; the Lord will carry out his word on the earth conclusively and with dispatch" (vv. 27–28). A final quotation from Isaiah (v. 29) serves as a thanksgiving: apart from that constancy of God that has operated in Israel's election, we would (all) be like Sodom and Gomorrah, the OT prototypes of annihilation.

9:30–10:21, God's Faithfulness in the Apparent Breakdown of Election. As often before (4:1; 6:1, 15; 7:7; 8:31; 9:14), a new stage in Paul's reflection is opened with the rhetorical question, "What then shall we say?" This time, however, the words that follow are Paul's own answer and not an erroneous deduction he aims to refute. Verses 30b–33 leave behind the preceding ac-

count of God's role in the story of Israel's election and focus on the present status of that complex plot. Now for the first time Paul's readers get a clear glimpse of the reason for his pain in 9:2, for present circumstances are a baffling inversion of everything any participant in that story would have expected. In the language of the racecourse, Gentiles who were not even trying to reach God's righteousness have arrived at that goal on the proper terms of trust in God; Israel, on the other hand, pursuing a law that held out the promise of righteousness, has failed to reach even that law. By referring to the Mosaic law here not as a possession distinguishing Jew from Gentile (cf. 2:14, 20) but as Israel's unattained goal, Paul must have in mind something like that "law of faith" that precludes boasting in 3:27 (cf. commentary above on 3:27–31), the Mosaic law as presuming trust in God for its authentic obedience (2:25–29). Of course Paul is contrasting the acceptance of "God's gospel" (1:1) among his gentile converts and the resistance this gospel has encountered among his own people. But beneath those surface responses lies a deeper enigma. Something has gone seriously wrong (9:32), because Israel's pursuit of the goal was not carried out in trust, but on the supposition that righteousness can come from performance of deeds enjoined by the law (i.e., in violation of the basic axiom under which Paul had begun his whole description of justification, 3:20). "The one who trusts in him [God] will not be put to shame." That assurance had been laid down by God as a foundation stone in Zion (Isa. 28:16), but it has become a rock of stumbling, as the Lord of hosts said he would himself become to those who refuse his message (Isa. 8:14), and Israel has stumbled on that rock (Rom. 9:32). This is Paul's own people, and this is the reason for his anguish.

On the basis of Ps. 118:22, Christianity after Paul developed a complex tapestry of OT "stone" passages to apply to Christ (1 Pet. 2:6–8; Matt. 21:42; Mark 12:10; Luke 20:17; Acts 4:11; Eph. 2:20; cf. Luke 2:34), so Paul's later readers have understandably assumed that the "stone" of v. 33 refers to Christ. But there is no use of Psalm 118 here and no preparation for such a direct allusion. Instead, Paul seems to understand the second line of the quotation, to which he returns in 10:11, as the inscription on the stone or the "rock" itself (cf. the punctuation of Isa. 28:16, NRSV). In any case, this v. 33 must count as one of the most remarkable of Paul's OT quotations because of what it attributes to God: placing in the midst of his people a base of security that is at the same time an obstacle over which they will stumble (→ Stumbling Block). Such an obstacle confronts those who encounter it with alternatives; yet their reactions only disclose things about themselves over which they have no control. This figure of speech thus combines the same fatefulness and freedom that have appeared in Paul's earlier analyses (1:21–23; 5:12; 6:17; 8:12–14). God's action is not unlike that law that was supposed to lead to life but in fact led to death, a result not outside God's purpose (7:10, 13b) or God's use of "an instrument of wrath" like Pharaoh on the way to disclosing his mercy in Moses. Such a perception of God recognizes in Israel's history what Paul has come in other ways to see about God from his disclosure of his power and wisdom in the offensive message of a crucified Messiah (cf. Paul's use of the figure of the stumbling block in 1 Cor. 1:18, 21–24).

The rest of this section (chap. 10) explores these two sides of the strange reversal of 9:30–31. Leaving the Gentiles aside, Paul first (10:1–17) concentrates on Israel's own responsibility for the current state of affairs. After a renewed personal testimony, he repeats (vv. 1–4) what has gone wrong, using the language of justification instead of his racecourse imagery; genuine zeal for God has been turned into disobedience and a pursuit of righteousness aborted into a search for "one's own" rather than God's (cf. Phil. 2:9). This diagnosis of Israel parallels precisely what Paul wrote about religious moralists in 2:1–5 and addressed to "the Jew" in 2:17–24. It should not have turned out so, for the real goal of the law as reached in Christ is to lead to righteousness for everyone who trusts in God (10:4; Paul's Greek word "end," like the English, can mean either "cessation," as in Luke 1:33, or "goal," as in 6:21–22; both Paul's usage elsewhere and the racecourse motif here support the latter choice. But this is one of the most debated of Pauline texts).

Verses 5–13 supply the scriptural backing. Here Paul follows an established rabbinic procedure for dealing with apparently contradictory biblical texts, as in Gal. 3:10–12. The law ("Moses," 10:5) does indeed invite one to establish a "righteousness of one's own" that will divide Jew from non-Jew and make life dependent on performance. On that invitation Israel "stumbled." But the same law, when one reads Deut. 30:12–14 prefixed by Deut. 9:4, forbids presuming to do for oneself what God has already done (in Christ). The message about trusting in God, "which we preach," is already located "near at hand" by Scripture, in the mouth by which human beings confess and in the heart by which they rely upon what God has done, and this is illustrated by two elementary Christian creeds (10:9). That is how righteousness is attained and salvation is found, not in one's own deeds. In the words of that foundation stone that God has himself placed in Zion (9:33), to which Paul now returns (10:11), "everyone who trusts in God will be vindicated." Paul adds the word "everyone" to that text of Isa. 28:16. By what right? Because Joel 2:32 does just that (10:13). Just as there was no distinction between Jew and Greek in the matter of sin's power (3:22b), so there is no distinction between them before the riches of one and the same God, who is Lord of all (cf. 9:5b). As in many of Paul's quotations from the OT, "Lord" refers to God himself in 10:12 and should not be restricted to Christ (→ Tetragrammaton). But this fusing of the text from

Deut. 30:12–14 with Paul's own "message about faith which we preach" (v. 8b), so clearly shown by his inserting explanatory comments into that text in vv. 6–8, is the result and confirmation of his perceiving complete continuity and consistency between the God of Israel and the Father of Jesus Christ. To exhibit that consistency, which is God's faithfulness, is Paul's aim in these chapters. If not all have obeyed the good news (v. 16), all the conditions for its reception have been provided by God; the bearers of his message were hailed already in Isaiah's time (vv. 14–15). Trust is created by that message and that message comes (now) through the preaching of what God has done in Christ (v. 17).

Second, in vv. 18–21, the Gentiles come back into view as Paul returns from Israel's role to God's in that enigmatic reversal of 9:30–33. Can it be that Israel did not hear or understand? The next three OT texts (10:18–20) indicate that it did indeed hear, as the earlier vv. 15–16 had confirmed, but that something else was going on. The second passage (v. 19, quoting Deut. 32:21) comes from the context of Israel's defection to idolatry in the wilderness (1 Cor. 10:7, 22 shows that Paul read Deut. 32:21 in the light of Exod. 32:6 and is probably thinking of the golden calf; cf. commentary above on 9:1–5). It was Israel's known provocation of God that elicited his return threat to provoke them with a "nonpeople" and a "foolish nation." Paul understands that as applying now to the unforeseen success of the Gentiles in reaching the goal that Israel has missed (9:30), as is clear from his third citation in 10:20. In deliberately showing himself to people who were not even trying to find him and who had no comprehension of his purposes ("a nation devoid of understanding" is an ironic echo of a Jewish label for Gentiles, cf. 2:20), God was not only pursuing his justification of the undeserving; he was goading his own people and showing his attachment to them (this striking motif will be resumed in 11:11, 14). Was that a breakdown in God's election? On the contrary, as Isaiah said, God has never ceased to reach out to Israel, even in the midst of its defiance (10:21).

11:1–36, The Impartiality of God's Faithfulness. In this final chapter, Paul closes in on his goal, pulling the pieces together now in a series of concluding steps, for which he provides the familiar rhetorical markers.

11:1–10, A Remnant Continues. The last part of chap. 10 still leaves a question. God's word to Israel has not failed. Israel, called into being by the God who shows mercy (9:6–13, 16), is an actual people, not a fantasy constructed out of future promises. If it has missed God's intent for it by a wide margin, and if God himself has had some hand in its doing so (9:31–33; 10:19), does it not follow that God has repudiated his own people? In reply, Paul uses the OT concept of the "remnant" (→ Remnant). Like many other religious terms, this notion can be nuanced in different ways. Sometimes it refers to all the residue of God's people surviving a time of judgment and catastrophe; it then is used to emphasize its continuity and miraculous preservation. Paul understood the term in this inclusive sense when quoting Isa. 10:22 in Rom. 9:27, namely, as a synonym of "seed" in 9:29 (NRSV: "survivors"). But "remnant" may also be used exclusively to identify an "elite" minority within a larger whole, distinguished by special fidelity or piety; the Qumran community understood itself as such a faithful remnant (→ Scrolls, The Dead Sea). That Paul uses it in an exclusive sense here is clear from his differentiating "the elect" and "the rest" (clearly not those included in the "remnant") in v. 7, and from the analogy he draws with the seven thousand in the days of Elijah (1 Kings 19:10, 14, 18). The difference in nuance is important. In chap. 9 Paul was distinguishing all of authentic Israel from that which was, even for Jewish perceptions, not Israel. Now he is drawing a distinction within Israel. In this meaning of "remnant," the promissory assurance that the preservation of a part gives for the future of the whole is the key. The "oracle" (v. 4, NEB) to Elijah was God's own pledge then, as it is to Paul now, that God has not abandoned his people (v. 2). Paul, however, goes out of his way (vv. 5–6) to emphasize that this continuity-providing remnant is "a matter of the election of grace" (cf. 9:11–12), the product of that undeserved creative love of God that produced a Jacob alongside of Esau, and not the result of one group's being any better or deserving than the rest of Israel.

Who is that remnant? There is nothing in the text to suggest that Paul is thinking of Christians. The empirical evidence he adduces is simply his own person, not by virtue of his Christian faith, which he does not mention (that would make it a "work" in the sense of v. 6), but in his unassailable flesh and blood identity as an Israelite (v. 1), a part of Israel's whole (vv. 1–5). Undoubtedly Paul does not feel himself alone; he does not liken himself to Elijah in that respect. But it remains a fact that he does not appeal directly to Christ here for assurance about Israel's future, but to the pledge of Israel's (and his) God. Although he uses the distinction between Jew and non-Jew, he simply does not draw any lines anywhere in chaps. 9–11 between authentic Jews and authentic Christians (cf. 9:24), just as he perceives no split in himself—or in God.

A remnant of Israel, represented by Paul, did then arrive at that goal mentioned in 9:31, but (all) the rest did not. With two more texts (vv. 8–9), the first of them a complex mix of phrases from Deuteronomy and Isaiah, Paul not only documents the majority's lasting misunderstanding and blindness, but explains the painful reality of it as a deliberate work of God. Such use of these passages belongs to a broad early Christian tradition of appeal to OT texts on God's causing blindness and misunderstanding in Israel, in order to explain the painful riddle of Jewish repudiation of the gospel (cf. the use of Isa. 6:9–11 in Matt.

13:14–15; Mark 4:12; Luke 8:10; John 12:40; Acts 28:26–27). Paul's point, however, is a continuation of 9:33 and 10:18–21: to show God's continuing presence and purpose with Israel, and so to refute the suggestion that he has abandoned it. This becomes clear in the next step.

11:11–16, The Part Is Surety for the Whole. These verses should not be divided; they belong together in both thematic content and purpose. Verse 13a ("I am talking to you Gentiles") does not mark a change of audience; that largely gentile Christian audience has been the same from 9:1 on. But Paul deliberately calls its attention to itself to accentuate these verses. If God is responsible for Israel's blindness, the question is still, has God become Israel's enemy and destroyer? "Have they faltered only finally to fall? Absolutely not! On the contrary, through their false step, salvation has been extended to the Gentiles in order to incite Israel to jealousy" (v. 11). Here is a double claim about God: first, that Israel's closure to God's righteousness (10:3) serves God's purpose to bestow his riches impartially upon all (10:12) and thus to extend his salvation to non-Jews; but second, that in that very action, by provoking them to anger over these outsiders (10:19), God's own "jealousy" or zeal for Israel, his undeterrable possessive claim on it, and his faithfulness to it, is operating to awaken and recall it. Paul's own calling as an "apostle to the Gentiles" (cf. 1:5) is in service to this God, so that ultimately it coincides with his own deepest desire for his kinfolk, his "flesh" (v. 14), and one loyalty cannot be played off against the other. So the beneficiaries of God's hostile treatment of Israel are the non-Jews, and the beneficiary of God's reconciliation of the world is Israel.

Verses 12 and 15 are parallel and play on linguistic contrast: if Israel's "diminution" enriches the world, what will its "plenitude" produce (v. 12)? If its "being spurned" causes reconciliation, what will its "being embraced" bring about (v. 15)? The above two claims about God are so fused in Paul's mind that both these verses are ambivalent; one cannot really tell whether in describing God's ultimate benefit, "life from the dead," he means its accrual to Jew or Gentile. The distinction has evaporated in the text. Both are equally indebted to the same life-giving God (cf. 4:12). And the part is surety for the whole: the remnant, for the indivisible whole of Israel; the Jew Paul, for his "flesh"; Israel, for God's whole creation. Significantly, Paul ends (v. 16) with two OT figures for the consecrating effect of the part upon the whole, the dedicatory cereal offering for the whole harvest (Num. 15:17–21; → Heave Offering) and the root and the branch (→ Branch). One might suppose that he has only the remnant and the whole of Israel in mind with these allusions, but the next verses, into which the second figure leads, demonstrate conclusively the universal scope of their application.

11:17–24, The Metaphor of the Olive Tree. Despite all the horticultural objections that have been raised about it, the theological point of Paul's metaphor of the olive tree is lucid and forceful (he concedes in v. 24 that it runs "contrary to nature"; → Olive). Directed to the non-Jews (v. 13), it makes clear, first, that salvation is available for them only in continuity with Israel's history and in dependence on Israel's God. The root is now Israel of the patriarchs (cf. v. 28; 9:6–12; 15:8b) and the branches are the Jews and the rest of humankind. Everything Paul has said in Romans about God's justification of the unrighteous in Jesus Christ is empty unless this means a restored relationship to the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. It makes clear, second, that Jew and Gentile are alike utterly dependent on the creative freedom of this God to cut out and to graft in, to bestow life on his own terms where it is wholly undeserved, both "according to nature" and "contrary to nature" (v. 24). This leaves no room for either pride ("Do not become high-minded, but stand in awe," v. 20) or contempt ("God has the power to graft them back in," v. 33). God's freedom keeps the frontiers open for his mercy rather than closed; Paul is rejecting at every point that rigid determinism of conventional religion that divides humankind into the saved and the damned. And the illustration makes clear, third, that trust in this God is the issue for men and women, for Jew (v. 23) and for non-Jew (v. 20). The precipitous severity of God and his kindness are correlated to unbelief and faith. But it is God, in his goodness and righteousness, who determines these reversals; no one can manipulate him, and any attempt to do so is a dereliction of trust.

The chapter ends with three distinct conclusions.

11:25–27, Prophetic Conclusion. The first conclusion answers the question about Israel's destiny and ends chap. 11. Using the term "mystery" in a meaning shaped by the apocalyptic tradition to refer to God's ultimate purposes for his world, hidden from human perception but disclosed on God's own terms (cf. Dan. 2:27–28; *1 Enoch* 9:6; 63:3; → Mystery: In the OT and Judaism), Paul takes the stand of a prophet. Part of Israel has been "hardened" for the sake of all non-Jewish peoples, but "in this way" (v. 26) all Israel will be saved. The end-time miracle will consist in the justification of God's own people as ungodly (4:4), when God will "remove ungodliness from Jacob." Paul's supporting text in vv. 26–27 is a remarkable combination of Isa. 27:9; 59:20; and Jer. 31:33. In this deliverance, the two sides of God's righteousness (3:26) will again be evident: in not tolerating ungodliness, God is "himself righteous," but by bringing the Deliverer from Zion who will establish Israel's righteousness, God is also "the one who makes righteous those who are righteous by trust." Paul does not here call for Jewish conversion to Christianity or a separate Christian mission to the Jewish people. The mystery of Judaism's refusal of the gospel is an aspect of its misunderstanding of its own tradition and of the "near word" of Deuteronomy that called for faith (chap. 10), even its misunderstanding of

God. But there is no break in the Jews' relationship to God, just as no Gentile is outside God's election love (9:25–26). From the very beginning of the Letter, Paul has set forth the meaning of Christ not as an alternative or rival to God for the affections and trust of human beings, but as God's way of restoring integrity to the relationship of all, both Jew and Greek, to himself. The final salvation of all Israel is God's own "mystery," but the certainty of it, and the terms on which it must take place, like those of all God's world, are disclosed in God's revelation of his righteousness in Jesus Christ (see commentary above on 3:21–26).

11:28–32, Logical Conclusion. To this certainty and these terms Paul returns in a second conclusion, crowning the whole of chaps. 9–11, in which he speaks as a rhetorician and teacher. The tightly structured dialectic summarizes his argument:

(A) "In relation to the gospel, they are [God's] enemies on your account;
(B) In relation to election, they are [his] beloved on account of the patriarchs.
(C) For the gifts and calling of God cannot be rescinded.
(A′) For just as you once disobeyed God, but now have obtained mercy through their disobedience,
(B′) So they too now have disobeyed the mercy extended to you, in order that they might themselves also now be recipients of mercy.
(C′) For God has consigned all human beings to disobedience in order to bestow mercy on all."

Line *C* (v. 29) reaffirms God's election and his faithfulness to his promises, the point of chap. 9. Line *C′* (v. 32) reaffirms God's impartiality, the point made by Paul in chaps. 2–4 that raised the issue of Israel and required the writing of chaps. 9–11. The two are not in conflict. God's justification of the undeserving embraces all human beings on equal terms, but this "universalism" is one that confronts them all with both judgment and mercy (cf. 5:12–21).

11:33–36, Liturgical Conclusion. In this third conclusion, Paul takes the stance of the worshiper and uses an early Christian hymn. Its triadic structure is clear. Verse 33 is made up of three exclamatory lines: the first praises God's wealth, wisdom, and knowledge, three very Hellenistic religious categories; the other two repeat the exclamation in terms of the Hebraic notions of God's judgments and ways. Verse 34 consists of three rhetorical questions, all drawn from OT poetic and wisdom passages, that resume in inverse order the three concepts of the first line. The implied answer to each "Who?" is "No one but God himself!" Verse 36 concludes with a couplet: the first line is a profoundly Hellenistic formula for God's omnipotence and transcendence (cf. 1 Cor. 8:6; Col. 1:16; Heb. 2:10); the last is a conventional biblical doxology. Such praise of the God who transcends human understanding can easily slip into resignation and despair (cf. 2 *Apoc. Bar.* 14:8–11). God remains beyond human manipulation. Still, authentic faith and obedience, and the undergirding hope of salvation, do not rest on God's withholding himself, but on his making himself known, on his own terms, as a God who can be trusted. This is the God Paul praises at the conclusion of his argument.

12:1–15:13
The Community Exhortation

With 12:1 the nature and tone of the Letter shift unmistakably to ethical and practical exhortation. Romans shares with other NT Letters, not only those written by Paul, the tendency to gather such material at the end (cf. 1 Thess. 4–5; Phil. 4; Gal. 5–6; Col. 3–4; Eph. 4–6; even such documents as Hebrews and 1 Peter, which incorporate hortatory passages throughout, follow this pattern in their conclusions: Heb. 13; 1 Pet. 5). This tendency of the Letters reflects both the influence of Jewish and Hellenistic sermonic traditions on their composition and the personal experiences of their writers as leaders in their communities and participants in their worship assemblies, where such exhortation took place (and where Paul expects his Letters to be read). Thus it is not surprising to find Paul incorporating into these final chapters of Romans material that bears many marks of traditional catechetical instruction and shows clear parallels with other Letters, his own and others'. Yet Paul is never a slave to the conventions he follows, and it is important to reflect briefly on the inner connection between his use of this material and the argument of the first part of the Letter.

Romans is peculiarly instructive because the concluding exhortations of this Letter do not emerge from Paul's own personal familiarity with the church as its founder, nor are they a response to its appeals to him for guidance. The central argument itself has shown that no sharp separation is possible between Paul's "theology" and his "ethics." His exposition of the gospel as a revelation of God's righteousness, God's gracious initiative to restore integrity to the relationships of human beings to himself and to each other, has involved release from the patterns and condemnation of the past, the renewal of commitment, and the reordering of life in this world (cf. esp. commentary above on 6:1–7:6). That exposition can certainly gain now in both intelligibility and persuasiveness by the addition of concrete advice and counsel, but it is not the case that the truth of the argument depends on the exhortation or that the revelation of God's righteousness remains somehow defective or inconclusive until Paul's gospel is "applied" by its hearers to the practice of living. His position has clearly been that the human situation and the behavior it calls for have been defined by the death and resurrection of Christ, not the

other way around. The "indicative" of his gospel entails and creates an "imperative" that the exhortations can now in one sense only elaborate and clarify.

But it also does not follow, on the other hand, that these concluding chapters remain essentially dispensable embellishments to his argument and, because they utilize tradition, contain no proper concerns and reflections of Paul's own. A closer look at these chapters will refute such a conclusion, but the earlier argument itself prepares the way, for in it, and especially in the diagnosis of human religious failure that accompanies Paul's exposition of God's righteousness all along, Paul nowhere represents his readers as morally disengaged or indifferent. The fundamental malaise is a distortion that the religious zeal of morally serious people has introduced into their relationship to God; the symptom of sin's power is not sloth, but the breeding of just those results that an active religious commitment is seeking to prevent (cf. 2:1–24; 7:7–25; 10:1–4; 11:17–24). The human problem is not lack of religion but religion that lacks trust (faith) and for that reason does not honor God as God or give thanks to him (1:21; 3:27–30; 9:32), that misunderstands and resists God (8:5–8; 10:3). This means that the point of chaps. 12–15 is quite different from what modern readers, looking for religious encouragement in a "secular" world, may be inclined to hear. The function of these chapters is not to incite or inspire "religious" behavior or supply a moral dimension to life, as though these were missing; the world of Paul and his readers is full of both. Rather, what his readers now need are guidelines to help discern and promote integrity in a religious life that has been distorted, corrections to religious motivations that will bring these into line with the righteousness of faith, criteria for conduct suitable to the imperatives enunciated earlier (e.g., in 6:11, 12–14; 8:12). The revelation of God's righteousness does not remain defective, but the shaping of human lives to its patterns remains incomplete, an unfinished goal of the apostle's calling (1:5), and as indispensable a part of his gospel as the still unlived future conferred by the sharing of Christ's destiny (cf. commentary above on 6:1–14).

12:1–13:14
Basic Exhortations

The exhortations appear to fall into two groups: chaps. 12–13 contain elemental appeals not related to a community problem under debate; chaps. 14–15, specific overtures occasioned by the major issue that called forth the writing of Romans, the coexistence of Jews and non-Jews in one religious fellowship (Paul does not use the word "church" at all in Romans until chap. 16).

12:1–2, Transitional Introduction. Paul's opening words set the tone. "I appeal to you" (NRSV) means much more than a request; a summons and an encouragement are now being extended, in a deliberate reprise of Paul's diagnosis of human disorder at the beginning of the Letter (see the commentary above on 1:18–32, concluding remark). Embracing all human life under the metaphor of an archetypal cultic act, Paul urges his readers, on the basis of God's "compassion," to offer their "bodies," i.e., their selves as these are at their discretion for allegiance and action (cf. 6:12–13, 19), to God as a "sacrifice" that will be at once animated by the life God has bestowed, dedicated to his purposes, and acceptable to him. Approbation by God is the ultimate sanction for every cultic action, but Paul adds another. Using a Stoic term for what is peculiarly human both in distinction from the animal or material world and in affiliation with the divine (and translated variously as "reasonable," KJV, or "spiritual," NRSV), Paul declares such dedication of themselves to be the authentic worship appropriate to a reordered human life. Such reordering is to consist now of their distancing themselves from the patterns and priorities of "this [present] age" (the expression appears here for the first time in Romans; cf. Gal. 1:4; 1 Cor. 2:6–8; 3:18; 2 Cor. 4:4) for the sake of the renovation that the gospel provides (cf. 6:4; 7:6; the transformation language used by Paul for this change recalls 8:29; cf. 1 Cor. 15:49; 2 Cor. 3:18; Phil. 3:21). Its signal manifestation will be a renewed "mind" possessing once more the lost capacity to "discern what the will of God is" (v. 2; cf. 1:21) and so to distinguish good and evil. The absence of casuistry or legalism from these verses only enhances the urgency of this call to individual accountability to God.

12:3–8, The Use of Diverse Gifts in One Community. A close comparison of this passage with 1 Cor. 12:4–31, especially vv. 4–11, is instructive. Paul's Corinthian crisis had demonstrated the destructive effects wrought on the cohesion and harmony of a congregation when the religious standings of competitive individuals are linked to the inevitable variations in human talents and gifts. So Paul's first call is for a tempering of conceit in one's "mind-set" (cf. 8:5–8) in favor of a more sober self-assessment "according to the measuring standard of faith God has provided to each" (v. 3). It is faith, to which all have equal access, that puts all on the same footing before God (cf. 3:22, 27, 30). All members are, like the apostle himself, beneficiaries of the one graciousness of God ("the grace given," vv. 3, 6, appears to be a distinctively Pauline formula; cf. 15:15; 1 Cor. 3:10; Gal. 2:9). But this one grace produces "different gifts" (v. 6) that so enable the exercise of diverse functions within the group that the gifts are identified only by listing the functions (vv. 6–8; unlike 1 Cor. 12:28, this list contains no ordered ranking, for Paul is no longer disputing the Corinthians' priorities). The one grace is God's; the various gifts are human faculties (despite the formulaic expression, it is

not until after Paul's time, in Eph. 3:2, 7, 8, that these two are so identified that the grace becomes itself the possessed human gift). Unlike in 1 Corinthians, nothing in Paul's language here connects these gifts with the Spirit or traces the creation of this diversity to the Spirit (cf. 1 Cor. 12:11); what is retained from the Corinthian experience is the solution to the threat posed by pluralism and diversity, but not the originating occasion for it in the Corinthians' glorification of ecstatic spiritual phenomena such as glossolalia (speaking in tongues).

Corresponding to this relationship of the many gifts to the one grace from which they derive is the parallel relation of the many members to the "one body in Christ" (v. 5), in the service of which the many gifts are to be employed. As in 1 Corinthians this social metaphor, widely used in the ancient world, of the body as a complex organism of many members, is used to reconcile diversity and unity in the community, though Paul does not here use the expression "the body of Christ" (in 7:4 it denoted the solidarity of individuals with Christ in his destiny-creating role). Thus diversities are acknowledged, but stripped of their divisive power by being subordinated to the interpretive norm of "faith." Each person is to exercise his or her own gift in recognition of its source and in a manner appropriate to its function for the whole; the gift itself has created the responsibility and supplies the norm for its right use.

12:9–21, Relations to Fellow Human Beings. Since in 1 Cor. 12:31 Paul turns from the variety of gifts to focus on love, v. 9a, "Let love be without dissimulation," has seemed to form a topic sentence for the next section. One may recognize a certain controlling position for this first admonition, but the section itself scarcely offers a coherent exposition of love comparable to 1 Corinthians 13. The unit provides instead, in both syntax and content, a clear example of traditional catechetical admonition: short injunctions arranged in no obvious pattern, at best in small groupings linked by key terms or catchwords (cf. 1 Thess. 5:12–22; Heb. 13:1–17). Verses 9–13 appear to focus on relationships within the community and vv. 14–21 on external ones, but even this distinction is tenuous. More illuminating is the sudden increase of echoes and reminiscences of identifiable traditions: of the Jesus tradition in v. 14 (Matt. 5:44) or vv. 17, 21 (Matt. 5:39); of Deut. 32:35 in v. 19b; of Jewish wisdom traditions in v. 15 (Sir. 7:34), v. 16 (Prov. 3:7), v. 17 (Prov. 3:4, LXX), and v. 20 (Prov. 25:21–22). This helps interpret the difficult v. 20b: in a certain Egyptian ritual, a basin of burning charcoal carried on the head was a token of penitence (cf. 2 Esd. 16:53). Thus in vv. 17–21 a clear thematic unity emerges to be summed up in the last verse (which also resumes v. 9b): the tempering of violence and revenge in hostile human relationships is less an act of human love (v. 9a) than it is the fruit of a trust that has learned to rely on God's impartial love for all (cf. Matt. 5:43–48). Human relations are nourished by security, not anxiety; the issue for Paul throughout Romans has been to identify authentic security and confidence in place of its illusory perversions (cf. 5:1–11 and see commentary above on that passage).

13:1–7, Relations to Those in Authority. Because of the many and controversial uses to which this section has been put since it was written, it is especially important to try to read it in its context in Romans and in Paul's world. A series of observations may be useful.

First, in this context the passage does not offer a comprehensive theoretical treatment of "the state," but simply guidance in relation to the concrete individual bearers of imperial authority, including the never popular collectors of taxes (v. 6); the last verse embraces a variety of civil obligations. That Christians would one day themselves exercise such authority is simply not envisaged. There is nothing specifically Christian about the appeal, and no distinction is drawn between Christian and non-Christian members of the social order; that simply underscores one intent of the passage: to urge on Paul's readers the fulfillment of their civil obligations, not just the pleasant ones, and to forestall any reading of his earlier plea "not to be conformed to this present age" (12:2) as an exemption from them. Paul's language accords with this; the words "servant" (v. 4, twice) and "officers" (v. 6, JB) are standard secular terms for public functionaries and any religious connotation comes only from the attached possessive, "God's."

Second, the Greek verb used in the opening imperative belongs to the basic vocabulary of NT hortatory tradition; its root stem denotes "order" ("be sub*ordi*nate to"), and it is used in this tradition to invite and summon participation in an order presumed to be hierarchical in nature, whether political (1 Pet. 2:13; Titus 3:1) or familial (of wives, Col. 3:18; Eph. 5:22, 24; 1 Pet. 3:1, 5; Titus 2:5; of household slaves, 1 Pet. 2:18; Titus 2:9). The verb is not a simple synonym for "obey"; it is never used in these NT codes of household obligations for the obedience of children to parents. Here in Rom. 13:1–2, Paul's own use of three additional Greek cognates derived from the same stem (translated "instituted," "rebels," and "institution" by the NEB) shows he is deliberately appropriating this denotation of "order," which earlier in Romans embraces the natural creation (8:20; cf. 1 Cor. 15:27–28). At the same time, Paul's use of this verb in 8:7 and 10:3 demonstrates that this subordination involves for him the recognition or acknowledgment that inspires voluntary submission. (Vivid corroboration is provided by 1 Cor. 16:15b–16, where his appeal to "be subject" is grounded in recognition of the role played by leaders, probably including women, who have dedicated or "submitted" them-

selves to ministry; this "order" within the religious community, 1 Cor. 14:32, 40, is closely related to its health and "peace," for God himself is not a God of anarchy, 1 Cor. 14:33.)

Third, this (necessarily) hierarchical conception of order has two implications that connect the passage with well-established traditions and so shed further light on its meaning. One is that all authority is derivative and ultimately dependent on God's authorization and sufferance, a deep-seated Jewish conviction documented in the OT prophets (Isa. 41:1–4; 45:1–3; Dan. 2:21), wisdom literature (Prov. 8:15; Sir. 10:4; 17:17; Wisd. of Sol. 6:1–3) and apocalyptic (*1 Enoch* 46:5; *2 Apoc. Bar.* 82:9; cf. also *Let. Arist.* 196, 219, 224). This firm certainty, given its most vivid NT formulation in John 19:11, underlies both Rom. 13:1–7 and Revelation 13 (a passage that does not share Paul's present benign perspective on Roman imperial power and so is often too simply played off against Rom. 13). Contrary to the use often made of Rom. 13:1b to absolutize political authority, this perception subordinates all earthly power to God's ultimate sovereignty and thus limits and relativizes it, just as the OT claim that the earth is the Lord's desacralizes the earth's seasons and fertility and prohibits their religious veneration (cf. 1 Cor. 10:26; Ps. 50:7–15; Hos. 2:8). Closely allied with this view of authority as derivative is the Hellenistic Jewish premise, plainly underlying vv. 3–4, that the purpose of civil authority is to reward and encourage good conduct as well as to punish and inhibit evil (cf. 1 Pet. 2:14; *Let. Arist.* 280, 291–92); the passage is thus informed less by a naive indulgence toward political power than by a traditional view of its noble ends that is neither contemptuous of authority as such nor extravagant in its esteem for it. This explains v. 5b, which introduces the sanction of conscience; these civil obligations are to be honored on the basis of one's prior cognizance of good and evil and one's own responsibility to the good. Beyond this, questions of illegitimate authority or the abuse of power are simply not raised; the passage shares with Mark 12:17; Matt. 22:21; Luke 20:25 a basic assent to the legitimacy of Roman power.

Fourth, this passage is distinguished from its parallels in 1 Pet. 2:13–14; 1 Tim. 2:1–2; Titus 3:1, first, by Paul's warning against resistance or "defiance of order" (v. 2) and, second, by a striking emphasis on "fear" of authority (vv. 3a, 3b, 4). What is meant is a proper and deserved fear, since the authority itself is assumed to be legitimate, and the aim is to counsel a way to avoid such "fear," not to aggravate it. Just these distinctive features of the passage have invited later political use of it to force submission to the holders of power, but they actually show that Paul is interested in stabilizing the attitudes of religious subjects toward existing bearers of authority. In Paul's world the tendency of religious movements was to clothe imperial power with the absolutes of either the divine (→ Augustus; Rome: Augustus) or the demonic (cf. Rev. 13), to heighten fear, and especially in some Jewish circles to spill over into active political resistance (→ Zealot). Although Paul may have thought to quiet some particular political tendency in Rome such as the "tumults" that led Claudius to expel the Jews from Rome shortly before (see Introduction), his overriding aim is to encourage the fulfillment of social obligations in a context of trust in God and recognition of his prevailing sovereignty and order. This is consistent with both Paul's preceding counsel against resorting to revenge (12:19–21) and his subsequent pointer to God's approaching salvation as reason for sobriety in daily conduct (13:12–13).

13:8–10, Love as the Fulfillment of the Mosaic Law. Verse 8a links this new paragraph both with the preceding, by repeating v. 7a in negative form, and with 12:9–13, by resuming its leading injunction to love. But the major contribution of this unit in the context of Romans as a whole lies in its interpretation of the law. The one continuing obligation of the Christian life that is never paid off is "the debt of mutual love" (v. 8a, JB). The reason for this is not that the law remains unfulfilled or only partially fulfilled (in all of Paul's argument in Romans with respect to justification and the law, the issue has never revolved upon the degree to which the law is fulfilled or not). Instead, the reason is simply the law's abiding claim: one who loves "the other person" (v. 8b), the "next person" in one's daily contact (v. 10, almost universally translated "neighbor"), "has fulfilled the law" (v. 8b)—a gnomic statement of principle that defines what it is that the Mosaic law truly requires in human relations and what brings it to its "fulfillment" (v. 10b). Human relations are in view; the four commandments Paul cites (in the order of the LXX in Deut. 5:17–18, as in Luke 18:20; James 2:11) are limited to the "second table" of the Decalogue, those negative commands that shield human life from violation, but he makes clear that "any other [such] commandment" (v. 9) is included in the representation of these four. All are "summed up" in the command to love one's neighbor as oneself (Lev. 19:18; cf. Gal. 5:14). While similar attempts to summarize the law are found in contemporary Judaism (→ Commandment; Golden Rule), Paul's straightforward use of Lev. 19:18 as the summary seems to derive from the Jesus tradition (Matt. 22:34–40; Mark 12:28–34; Luke 10:25–28; cf. Matt. 7:12). On the other hand, there is no hint here of the "double commandment" of Jesus, which pairs love of neighbor to love of God. In Paul's Letters "love of God" is always God's own love; human love for God is mentioned only in Rom. 8:28; 1 Cor. 2:9; and 8:3, in all three instances only to be overshadowed by human debt to God's generosity and initiative. For Paul the more appropriate human response to God's love and compassion (12:1) is honor and thanksgiving

(1:21) and trust (4:20–21) in God, on the one hand, and, on the other, this love toward neighbor that is nothing else than the reordering of human life in accordance with God's will (12:2). For this is the substance of the law, the never ending claim of God on human life embodied in God's "holy, just, and good commandment" (7:12) that Paul's gospel never undermines but only confirms (3:31b; cf. 8:4).

13:11–14, Living for God's Coming Day. A final section concludes these basic exhortations and forms a closing bracket to 12:1–2. Where Paul had begun by urging his readers to abandon the patterns of "this [present] age" (12:2), he now asks for conduct appropriate to God's certain and approaching salvation. This orientation to the future and a host of new images characteristic of NT catechetical and hortatory traditions give the section a unity and flavor of its own. The "day" of God's wrath and judgment (2:5, 16), often spoken of as "darkness" (beginning with the prophetic tradition; cf. Amos 5:18), is now the day of God's coming salvation and stands as the polar opposite to the darkness of this world. (It is usually referred to by Paul as "the day of the Lord" or "of Jesus Christ"; cf. 1 Cor. 1:8; 5:5; 2 Cor. 1:14; Phil. 1:6, 10; 2:16; 1 Thess. 5:2; 2 Cor. 6:2.) Such religious use of the opposites "light" and "darkness" is so widespread in the ancient world that it cannot be identified with any one tradition; Paul's clear dualistic use here is reminiscent of 1 Thess. 5:4–8 (see also Eph. 5:7–14; John 3:19–21; 12:35–36). When this antithesis is linked to the verbal imagery of "throwing off" and "putting on" attire (sometimes martial) and to the moral contrasts between indecency and propriety and the ethical metaphors of drunkenness and sobriety, the result is a telling hortatory fusion of images deeply rooted in the Greek religious and moral world with a Jewish apocalyptic sense of temporal urgency (cf. Col. 3:8, 10, 12; Eph. 4:22, 24; 6:11, 13–17). The final imperative to "put on the Lord Jesus Christ" (v. 14a) locates this homiletic-didactic language in the setting of early Christian baptism (cf. Gal. 3:27): if baptism attests to the individual's identification with the life pattern of Jesus (Rom. 6:1–11), and this "image" is the destiny set for each by the Creator (8:29), the companion ethical catechism will consist at its heart in the appeal to "assume" and embrace that image and live by it, for that is where each person's future lies, not with "the flesh" and the "desires" it serves (v. 14b).

14:1–15:13
Specific Exhortations

This second set of appeals forms the final block of material in the letter body of Romans. At this point and until he resumes some of the conventions of the letter conclusion in 15:14–16:27, Paul no longer makes use of the Christian catechetical or even quasi-liturgical traditions so apparent in 12:1–13:14. The lively dialogical style of his earlier chapters is recaptured. His characteristic mode of citing OT Scripture, with an introductory formula to ground an argument instead of relying on mere allusion, reappears (14:11; 15:3; cf. also 12:19); the catena of quotations in 15:9–12 exactly imitates the sequences of 9:25–29; 10:18–21. Earlier in the Letter, as the argument moved away from the relationship of Jew and Gentile and the deliberate appropriation of such Jewish traditions as those surrounding Abraham, the scriptural quotations themselves almost disappeared (the exceptions in 7:7; 8:36 are all the more noteworthy); these citations return in thick abundance with the subject of Israel and the Gentiles in chaps. 9–11. It is scarcely accidental that the earlier pattern of biblical documentation should reassert itself just as Paul's exhortations now converge on the specific issue of solidarity of Jew and Gentile within the Christian community. Finally, whereas the basic exhortations of 12:1–13:14 contain only two references to Christ (12:5; 13:14), this new division is replete with them. The second of those previous two, the concluding baptismal reminder of 13:14, supplies a leitmotif for these specific exhortations, and Paul's climactic appeal in 15:7 finds its leading warrant in a solemn Christological dictum on the significance of Christ for both Jew and Gentile. In all these respects, the Paul of the main argument of Romans reemerges from his more comprehensive appeals to press his controlling preoccupation with the unity of Jew and Gentile, i.e., all human beings, before the saving power of God. This section, once again, falls naturally into three parts.

14:1–12, Jewish and Non-Jewish Observance Before an Impartial Lord. Paul's terminology bears careful observation. The person who is "weak in faith" (14:1) is one who does not "have the confidence to eat everything" (v. 2), but Paul does not put a premium on the degree of such confidence each one is able to demonstrate (he does not call anyone "strong" until 15:1; see commentary below on 15:1). Instead, it is apparent that differences of religious observance in matters of diet and holy days are under discussion because they occasion reciprocal disdain and contempt within the community (v. 3). The recurring tensions created between Jewish and gentile converts to the Christian movement by such differences in daily religious routines constitute a running theme through the NT (e.g., Mark 2:13–17, 18–20, 23–28 and parallels; Acts 10:9–16; 11:11–18; 15:6–11; Gal. 2:11–14), testimony to the long struggle to find effective bonds to transcend pluralistic practice. At first the issue in Romans 14 does not look like one created by this difference between Jew and non-Jew. Abstaining from meat and alcohol (vv. 2, 21) are not themselves characteristic Jewish observances. They could become so because Jews (and Jewish Christians) would prefer abstinence to partaking of either in the urban settings of the empire in which both

were regularly dedicated to pagan gods before being sold in the market (→ Food Offered to Idols). So one is tempted to read Romans 14 in the same terms as Paul's advice to the Corinthians (1 Cor. 8:1–13; 10:12–33). But closer reading demonstrates that Paul is modulating his Corinthian experience to fit the argument of Romans (cf. commentary above on 12:3–8). At every point here the issue is the redefinition of values (cf. 12:2), and never, as in 1 Corinthians, the use or abuse of Christian freedom (the words "freedom," "conscience," and "knowledge," so central to 1 Cor. 8; 10, never occur in Rom. 14:1–15:13; cf. 15:14).

Paul's fundamental appeal is to "accept" (JB, NEB), to take to oneself and into one's own community, the person of contrasting, even opposite, religious practice (14:1; 15:7); his desire is to break the cycle of mutual condemnation that regularly results from religious zeal when it is lacking in trust or faith (14:3–4). A person's "standing" (v. 4), that intangible worth so fatefully linked to public religious identity and usage, is determined by the Lord to whom each belongs—a direct practical application of what Paul wrote in 2:28–29. The confidence that counts is not the confidence to eat everything, but the certainty that comes from integrity in each person's life-embracing relation to the Lord, whatever the practice that accompanies it, and it was to establish that integrity that Christ's death and resurrection took place (v. 9). Jew and Gentile stand on an equal footing before God, alike dependent upon his vindication of all human religious practice (v. 4b; cf. commentary above on 7:7–25, concluding remark), alike beholden to his gift of life to all through their inclusion in Christ's own pattern of death and life (v. 9; cf. 4:25; 5:18; 6:10–11; 8:11; 2 Cor. 5:15), and alike accountable to the God they must all eventually recognize (vv. 10b–12; cf. 2:6; 3:4, 19).

14:13–23, A Definition of "Right" and "Wrong." In this paragraph Paul clarifies the issues raised by eating and drinking in a religious context. Verse 13 plays on different nuances of the verb "to judge": one sense is to assess the worth of a fellow human being; another is to arrive at the settling of one's own values, the criteria by which those assessments of others are made. What is at stake is what one holds to be "the good" (v. 16; cf. 12:2b) or "right" and "wrong" (vv. 20b, 21a, RSV). These, along with their equivalents in the ritual law of the OT, "clean" and "unclean," are measured first by what violates the personal integrity and religious conviction of the fellow human being "for whom Christ died" (vv. 13–16). In v. 15 sparing such "injury" (NRSV) to the other is the specific form of "accepting" (14:1) the religiously different person; it is a concrete instance of "loving one's neighbor as oneself" (13:9).

Verses 17–19 generalize this process of definition by appealing to more conventional qualities associated with the kingdom of God, to what is "well-pleasing" to God or passes the test of human experience, and to what contributes to the common good. But vv. 20–23 return to the narrower subject at hand. Freedom is not the issue. Conceding to the one side that food does not defile (v. 20b; cf. v. 14; Mark 7:19), Paul nevertheless restates his earlier test, whether an action violates or reverses "the work of God" (v. 20a; cf. 15b). It is wrong for one to eat when one really believes one should not (vv. 20c, 23a), and right to abstain when not to do so would strike at the sensibilities of others (v. 21). The foundation of right action in every case is a right relationship to God, of trust (vv. 22a, 23). In the only use Paul makes in his Letters of the common ancient beatitude form (Rom. 4:7–8 is an OT quotation; → Beatitudes), he pronounces that person blessed whose standing before God is not itself at stake in decisions about right and wrong (v. 22b), for whom that anxiety-producing link between diet and salvation has been replaced by secure trust in God—a kind of ultimate practical application of the Letter's argument concerning justification.

15:1–13, Christ the Paradigm for Jew and Gentile. Those who are "strong" and secure in the sense just referred to, Paul goes on, have an obligation not simply to put up with the failings of the less strong, but to support them (cf. Gal. 6:2). This is the only time Paul ever distinguishes some Christians from others as "strong" (a word not used in 1 Cor. 8–10; cf. 2 Cor. 13:9), and he includes himself among its referents. But he does so only to elucidate such "strength" with the model of Christ; Christ is the suffering righteous one of Ps. 69:9, who remained obedient while enduring the ultimate derision that could be carried out in the name of religion. (For the role of Ps. 69 in the passion narrative, cf. Mark 15:23, 36 and parallels; John 2:17; 15:25.) This is the Christ Paul's readers are to "put on" (13:14). Such commitment to "please" the other rather than oneself requires the endurance and encouraging support that come from God (v. 5a; cf. 5:3–5), that give life a dimension of hope, and that the Scriptures just quoted are intended to provide (v. 4).

In vv. 7–13, a passage strikingly resumptive of chaps. 9–11, the precipitating dietary occasion for friction between Jew and non-Jew vanishes completely before the vision of God's end-time purpose that they be joined in his praise. Once again, the vision is grounded in God's defining act in Christ (vv. 8–9), whose whole life was an act of "service": first to the Jews as a surety of God's truth and faithfulness (cf. 3:4), by confirming God's promises to the patriarchs; and then to the non-Jews, as a demonstration of God's mercy, by including them in the praise of Israel's God. That this "power of God that leads to salvation for everyone who relies on him, the Jew first and also the Greek" (1:16) should continue to fill and enrich the lives of his readers is the real substance of the petition with which Paul brings the body of his Letter to its close (v. 13).

15:14–16:27
Conclusion

15:14–33, Paul's Ministry and His Plans. Resuming now the personal conversation with his readers that was broken off in 1:15, Paul speaks again of his desire to extend his work to Spain with the support and understanding of the Roman Christians. Since he was not the founder of the Roman community, both tact and the compulsions of his own self-understanding lead him to speak in vv. 14–21 of his own ministry to the Gentiles in order to explain his imposing himself on the Romans. Of special interest is the priestly metaphor in which he casts his role (v. 16); by his bringing them into the range of "God's agenda," the Gentiles are themselves Paul's "offering" to God, and so provide the grounds for his "self-esteem" (v. 17; cf. 11:13). Yet he will claim nothing apart from Christ's own action through him to bring about obedience among the Gentiles (vv. 18–19; cf. 1:5). Thus his work merges into Christ's own inclusion of the non-Jew in God's salvation (cf. 1:16). This explains why Paul lays such store by not interfering in the labors of other (Jewish-Christian?) missionaries, a policy that seems to go back to his agreement with Peter and the other apostles in Jerusalem (Gal. 2:7–8) and which he justifies by applying to himself words from the servant songs of Second Isaiah (v. 21; cf. 2 Cor. 10:15–16; Isa. 52:15b; Rom. 10:20; → Isaiah, The Book of: The Songs of the Servant of the Lord). Paradoxically, just this practice explains his turning to a congregation someone else has founded for help in extending his own mission into untraveled territory beyond (vv. 22–24). In the meantime, however, Paul has to make a last trip to Jerusalem to deliver the monetary offering to which he committed himself at that Jerusalem conference and which symbolized for him the realization of one community from both Jews and Gentiles, a central theme of his Letter (cf. 9:24; 15:8–12). Paul's plea to the Romans for their prayers in his support (vv. 30–33) betrays both the significance he attached to this trip and the anxiety he felt over its outcome.

16:1–27, Personal Greetings and Benediction. The concluding chapter comprises several items more or less typical of conventional letter closings. Some of them raise questions about the original termination of Romans. Verses 1–2 contain a recommendation of Phoebe, possibly as the bearer of Paul's letter to Rome. (For such recommendations, cf. Acts 18:27; 1 Cor. 16:15–17.) She is an office holder, a minister or "deacon" (NRSV) of the church in Cenchreae, the port city for Corinth, the place from which Paul is writing (→ Phoebe).

Verses 3–16 add personal greetings to a large number of acquaintances, of which twenty-six are identified by name. Since so many greetings in a letter to a church Paul has not founded or visited are surprising, and since there is evidence that Romans did at some time circulate without chap. 16 (see below), it has been suspected that this chapter was originally sent as a separate recommendation of Phoebe to a church much better known to Paul, such as Ephesus. However, chap. 16 in its present form could not have comprised an independent letter. The first two persons named, Prisca and Aquila, are known to have been in Rome earlier (Acts 18:2–3); they and others known to Paul may have returned to Rome after the lifting of Claudius's ban (see Introduction). It would have served Paul's interests directly to name as many individual contacts in the Roman community as he possibly could, implicitly commending them to the rest as advocates for his cause.

Important for our knowledge of early Christianity is the number of women identified in these verses, nine in Rome in addition to Phoebe, all recognized for their leadership or service to the community. In v. 7, Andronicus and Junia are apparently a married couple like Prisca and Aquila. They are identified as fellow Jewish Christians ("kinfolk" is not "relatives" [NRSV] in a narrow sense) and as "outstanding apostles" (JB, NAB), converts before Paul, and thus part of the early circle of leadership beyond the Twelve (cf. Gal. 1:17; 2 Cor. 15:5, 7). Since the Middle Ages, but only since, Junia's name has often been accented as masculine, even though no other occurrence of the name as a man's has ever been found; most recent commentators agree that Paul is referring to a woman leader (→ Junia).

Verses 17–20a warn against false teachers. Their tone contrasts sharply with 15:14–32. The language is Pauline, but the content is reminiscent of Paul's earlier references to opponents (2 Cor. 11:12–15; Phil. 3:18–19; Gal. 5:11; 6:17; Rom. 3:8). Paul may be hoping to inoculate his readers in advance against possible similar opposition in the future. Ironically, these verses can be taken to refer to some more real and present danger in Rome that Paul knew about only if chap. 15 was composed largely with the impending situation in Jerusalem in mind rather than some crisis in Rome, i.e., if Romans as a whole is best explained by the "Jerusalem crisis hypothesis" (see Introduction).

Verses 21–23 convey greetings from Paul's associates. Paul often adds general greetings from the place of writing (1 Cor. 16:19–20; 2 Cor. 13:13; Phil. 4:21), sometimes from named persons (1 Cor. 16:19; Philem. 23–24; cf. Col. 4:10–14). The names given in v. 21 are especially intriguing. Timothy is Paul's oft-mentioned associate; Lucius (the Latin form of the Greek abbreviated name Luke) may be the Lucius of Cyrene of Acts 13:1; Jason may be the Thessalonian host of Acts 17:5–9; and Sosipater is very likely the Sopater of Beroea of Acts 20:4. Thus v. 21 may be a list of the delegates who are with Paul at the time of writing Romans, preparing for the trip to Jerusalem with the collection.

Verses 25–27 constitute a formal and liturgical doxology. Both content and style are more characteristic of Letters written later by Paul's followers than of Paul in his undisputed Letters (Eph. 3:20–21; 1 Tim. 1:17; cf. Jude 24–25). Since v. 26 does contain echoes of Rom. 1:2, 5, this doxology may have been composed just for this Letter, as a more stately conclusion for public reading. This is more likely to have occurred if Romans circulated in truncated versions without Paul's own conclusion. The evidence for this, in turn, is provided by the appearance of vv. 25–27 at different points in Greek manuscripts, even though chaps. 15–16 or 16 still always follows in extant copies: after 14:23 (the majority of late manuscripts); after 15:33 (one important papyrus manuscript of about A.D. 200 or 250); here at the end of chap. 16 (the strongest early attestation); and sometimes in more than one, or none, of these places.

Verse 20b, which also appears in many manuscripts at different places, sometimes more than once, is Paul's own benediction, originally located as v. 24 after v. 23.

Bibliography

Achtemeier, P. J. *Romans.* Interpretation: A Bible Commentary for Preaching and Teaching. Atlanta, GA: Knox, 1985.

Barrett, C. K. *A Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans.* New York: Harper, 1957.

Barth, K. *The Epistle to the Romans.* London: Oxford, 1933.

Cranfield, C. E. B. *Romans: A Shorter Commentary.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1985.

Dahl, N. A. *Studies in Paul.* Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1977.

Donfried, K. P., ed. *The Romans Debate.* Rev. and exp. ed. Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1991.

Dunn, J. D. G. *Romans 1–8* and *Romans 9–16.* Dallas, TX: Word, 1988.

Fitzmyer, J. A., S.J. *Romans.* New York: Doubleday, 1993.

Käsemann, E. *Commentary on Romans.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1980.

———. *Perspectives on Paul.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1971.

1 Corinthians

ELISABETH SCHÜSSLER FIORENZA

INTRODUCTION

Historical-Literary Setting

1 Corinthians is a rich resource of information about a missionary community in an urban center of the Greco-Roman world. It allows us a glimpse of a local assembly (Gk. *ekklesia*) struggling to put into practice its baptismal self-understanding. Acts 18:1–18 provides some information about the origin of this community. Coming from Athens, Paul met in Corinth the missionaries Prisca and Aquila, who had been expelled from Rome under Claudius (A.D. 49). Paul joined them not only in their workshop as a leatherworker, but also in their missionary endeavors. The house-church of Prisca and Aquila seems to have been the originating center of the Corinthian community. According to Acts, Paul remained in Corinth for a year and a half. He was accused of violating Jewish law and was brought before the proconsul Gallio, probably in the fall of 51 or spring of 52. Apollos, an Alexandrian Jew who was converted by Prisca and Aquila in Ephesus (Acts 18:24–28), continued the mission in Corinth after Paul's departure. (→ Apollos; Chronology, New Testament; Gallio; Paul).

According to 1 Cor. 5:9, Paul is not writing to Corinth for the first time. He sends what is known as 1 Corinthians from Ephesus in part because his previous letter has been misunderstood and in part because new problems have arisen, about which the community had written to him. Although both letters preceding our canonical 1 Corinthians are lost, the passing reference to them allows us to understand this Letter as a part of an ongoing discussion between Paul and the community in Corinth. We know from 2 Corinthians, however, that the community was not always a compliant partner in this rhetorical exchange (*see* 2 Corinthians).

1 Corinthians conforms to the general structure of the Pauline Letter. It begins with greetings followed by a thanksgiving (1:1–9) and ends with greetings (16:20–24) influenced by early Christian liturgical language. The main body of the Letter consists of Paul's arguments, probably in response to written questions and oral information. Some scholars have sought to explain breaks, inconsistencies, and shifts in the Letter by supposing that a later editor compiled it from several sources. However, the majority of scholars consider 1 Corinthians to be, on the whole, originally written as we have it now, although some suggest that, e.g., 11:2–16; chap. 13; and 14:34–35 are later additions. The authenticity of the Letter is undisputed. Most scholars put its date around A.D. 54. Yet the rendering of its meaning depends on one's reconstruction of its audience and socioreligious context, which, in turn, is conditioned by one's hermeneutic perspective (→ Hermeneutics) and models of reconstruction.

Reconstructive Approaches

The majority of exegetes no longer read the Letter as a theological tractate, but as a practical-theological response to particular questions. The *ekklesia* in Corinth appears to have been involved in much discussion and debate. Since the Letter is part of an ongoing exchange, the interpretation of Paul's rhetoric as well as the reconstruction of its function depends as much on the historical-religious imagination of interpreters as on their exegetical, historical, and literary skills. Four major strategies of reading can be distinguished, although they are not mutually exclusive.

The first strategy assumes that most of the difficulties in Corinth were due to a certain type of spirituality that may have appealed to the founding authority of Prisca and Aquila, Apollos, or even Paul himself. Exegetes qualify this spirituality of the "opponents" or of the "strong"—expressions not found in the text—alternately as enlightened libertinism, spiritualistic asceticism, or unrestrained enthusiasm. The Corinthians, who, like Paul, claim to be empowered by the Spirit, are seen as advocating incipient Gnosticism (→ Gnosticism).

More recently scholars have stressed Jewish-Hellenistic wisdom theology as the theological context of the Corinthians' praxis. The Corinthians are said to have claimed that they possessed divine *sophia* (Gk., "wisdom") and therefore to have called themselves pneumatics, "spiritual persons." Since in Hellenistic

thought spirit is considered to be a heavenly substance that endows persons with a new nature, the Corinthians may have claimed to have been transformed into new beings who no longer belonged to the sphere of the "flesh," but to the heavenly realm.

This notion that the higher soul or mind belongs to the heavenly sphere of the Spirit allegedly led to the conviction that the body's domain is "flesh," the corruptible, material, and mortal reality from which the true self must be liberated. The ability to speak in tongues might have been understood as the basis of a spiritual elitism that saw other Christians who could not speak the "tongues of angels" as inferior (→ Tongues, Speaking with).

In turn, Paul argued against this alleged individualistic and enthusiastic spirituality by underscoring a communal and eschatological perspective. Against the Corinthians' understanding of transformation and perfection in the Spirit, Paul points out that they have not yet achieved final salvation and resurrection. Against their claims to have become "new beings" by already partaking in the divine heavenly sphere of the Spirit, Paul insists that they are still under the power of sin and death and that the resurrection life is not yet achieved in baptism. Christians must live out the "already and not yet" under the symbol of the crucified Messiah (→ Eschatology).

This first approach, however, has been criticized for concentrating too narrowly on ideological issues and for conceptualizing the Corinthian situation primarily as a confessional strife between opposing groups. It thereby reinscribes the antagonistic dualism that Paul's rhetoric constructs.

The second reading approach stresses the multireligious environment of Corinth. The problems addressed by Paul should be understood as arising from the interaction of the Corinthians with their former religion, in which they are still deeply rooted, although they have consciously distanced themselves from it. Most of the difficulties can be understood as resulting from this interface between missionary community and pagan religious sensibilities.

Corinth was called the city of Aphrodite. Its temple of Apollo was most impressive in its monumental size, and the temple of Asclepius attracted many who sought healing. In the center of the city one could find temples of Hera, Octavia, Venus, Fortuna, Hermes, Heracles, and Poseidon. Cults from the East like that of Isis attracted many. In the second century the Latin novelist Apuleius describes an initiation rite of the Isis cult in Cenchreae, the seaport of Corinth. Just north of the Gulf of Corinth the Pythia and her prophets mediated divine revelation. Prophecy, speaking in tongues, and ecstasy were highly valued experiences. Public feasts and private meals of associations and clubs were celebrated in the name of the gods. It was virtually impossible to avoid eating meat that had been sacrificed to the gods either at public festivals or at private business or funeral banquets in temple dining rooms and homes (→ Corinth). Religious syncretism was pervasive, as was the imperial cult.

Paul's concern with the body expresses his concern with the religious boundaries between the Christian community and its pagan society. By abandoning formal rituals and purity regulations, some segments of the missionary movement had also relinquished an effective means of maintaining their special identity as a religious group in a syncretistic religious environment. Paul's emphasis on the holiness of the Christian community as body of Christ and temple is an attempt to strengthen group identity and sexual morality (*see* Galatians). It is not necessary or even helpful for the reconstruction of the historical-rhetorical situation of 1 Corinthians, this approach argues, to postulate an antagonistic front of spiritual enthusiasts or Gnostics as a unified theological opposition.

A third hermeneutic emphasis seeks to elaborate not only the religious, but also the sociohistorical context of 1 Corinthians. Located on a narrow peninsula, Corinth was destroyed in 144 B.C. and rebuilt as a Roman colony in 44 B.C. As a center of Roman imperialism, the city was a natural trading center between East and West. Its commercial growth gave birth to a flourishing industry that was essentially based on slavery. As a cosmopolitan city, it is a good example of the urban character of Hellenistic society and of Roman colonialism. The citizens of Corinth were mostly former slaves and new immigrants. They were not only Romans and Greeks, but also Jews and Easterners from Syria, Egypt, and Asia Minor. Each of these groups imported its own customs and status system.

House-churches were central for the early missionary movements, which depended on social mobility and patronage. Romans 16 mentions Phoebe, the leader of the church in Cenchreae, as a patrona of many and of Paul himself. Like Judaism and other oriental religions, the Christian gospel was spread by traveling business- and tradespeople like Prisca or Paul. Such traveling missionaries brought a variety of theological understandings to the churches in the Greco-Roman cities and fostered communication among them.

The house-church was the beginning of the local church in a certain city and district and became a crystallizing center for converts who still belonged to pagan households. The existence of house-churches presupposes the Greco-Roman patronage system, which enabled women's leadership. It suggests that citizens who were able to provide space and economic support for the *ekklesia* in their houses had joined the Christian movement. Converts often came from the ranks of "God-fearers" already sympathetic to Judaism. The large number of women among these leading converts was probably due to the status incon-

sistency they experienced: as females they were subordinate and as wealthy citizens they belonged to the elite (→ Church; Proselyte; Women).

As Christianity spread in a city, several house-churches were founded and their interaction with one another could lead to tension and debates, especially on occasions when the whole *ekklesia* of a city assembled. The tensions in Corinth testify to this. They were caused not by the breaking down of ritual or religious boundaries between Jews and Gentiles, but rather by the breaking down of established social boundaries between freeborn and slave women and men or between different national and ethnic groups. Although some private associations and cultic groups also admitted poor people, slaves, persons with different ethnic backgrounds, or freeborn wives as members, they generally were more socially homogeneous than the Christian house-churches, which admitted persons to full membership irrespective of their status in patriarchal household and society.

The experience of such socially mixed communities is articulated in the theological self-understanding of the Christian missionary movement, expressed, e.g., in the baptismal formula quoted in Gal. 3:28. It proclaims that all social and religious status prerogatives and discriminations are abolished in the new kinship relation of God's children, the sisters and brothers in Christ. The house-church seems not to have adopted the patriarchal status differences and dominance-submission relationships typical of the Greco-Roman patriarchal household (Lat. *familia*). Hence, the early Christian missionary movement was not a well-integrated part of its patriarchal society, but stood in tension with it. Since customary behavior rules no longer applied, the members of the "*ekklesia*-in-house" had to find new ways and modes of living together. Many of the Corinthian problems reflect an attempt to practice such a new social-ecclesial self-understanding.

The significance of the Letter as a major source of knowledge about the community of Corinth and the early Christian missionary movement is jeopardized when commentators value Paul's response over and above the theological self-understanding and practice of the community. In doing so, they risk dissolving the distinction between the rhetorical situation as construed by Paul and the actual historical situation in Corinth. Whereas exegetes today presuppose the canonical status of Paul and therefore give priority to his theological authority and rhetorical response, such claims to authority for Paul cannot be maintained for the historical situation. Rather than seeing Paul as the authoritative pastor, the following commentary seeks to understand the debates in Corinth as legitimate discussions within the *ekklesia*. Paul is understood as only one partner, although in retrospect a very significant one, in the theological discourse of the early Christian missionary movement.

COMMENTARY

1:1–9
Opening: God's Calling

1:1–3, Greeting. In each Pauline Letter—with the exception of Galatians—address or greeting is followed by a thanksgiving or blessing. The conventional epistolary pattern was "*A* to *B*, greeting," but in all the Pauline Letters, the formula undergoes expansion. Paul mentions as co-sender of the Letter Sosthenes (cf. Acts 18:17; → Sosthenes). The title "brother" probably characterizes Sosthenes as a missionary co-worker. However, Paul underscores his own authority as sender by stressing that he was called by the will of God to be an apostle of Jesus Christ.

The recipients of the Letter are characterized as the church (*ekklesia*, the "assembly" of decision-making citizens) of God in Corinth, as those in Jesus Christ, and as those sanctified and separated from the world. Just as Paul is apostle by divine call, so they are made holy together with all those who call on the name of Jesus Christ who is the *Kyrios* (Gk., "Lord"). Confession of Jesus as *Kyrios* and the call to holiness are shared by all those baptized, wherever they live.

Although a Greek correspondent would have concluded the address with a "greeting," and a Jewish writer would have wished peace, Paul combines both, but replaces the simple "greeting" (Gk. *chairein*) with the theological term "grace" (Gk. *charis*). Both grace and peace describe God's eschatological salvation available through Jesus Christ.

1:4–9, Thanksgiving. Paul's thanksgiving reflects the status and situation of his readers and anticipates some of the major topics of the Letter. It also functions as transition to the first major section, 1:10–4:21. God's grace is manifest in the giftedness of the community, which is rich in every respect, especially in speech and knowledge. The proclamation of Christ was confirmed among them so that they do not lack in any spiritual gift while waiting for the Parousia (Second Coming) of Christ (→ Parousia).

The thanksgiving concludes both with the promise that God will sustain them until the Day of Judgment and with the assurance that the God who has called them into partnership or association with Jesus Christ is faithful and reliable.

1:10–4:21
Baptized into Christ: The Power and Wisdom of God

In a rhetorical discourse the problem or issue at stake is stated in the beginning. Paul raises two issues: the

question of the authority of different apostolic leaders and that of their baptismal preaching.

1:10–17
The Problem

Paul has heard from the associates or followers of Chloe—who might also have carried the official letter of the community—that disagreements exist in the community. Different groups are claiming different apostles—Peter, Apollos, Paul—as their leader. Paul (v. 12) interprets these debates as divisions. Exegetes are divided on whether also a "Christ group" existed in Corinth or whether Paul adds this fourth group as an ironic characterization of their claims.

If such a Christ group existed, it might have insisted on the sole authority of Christ and thereby have relativized the authority of all the apostles. It could have stressed the political messiahship of Jesus and understood him as one in a long line of messengers and apostles. Just as the Cephas group might have argued for following the teachings of Simon Peter, the Apollos group might have emphasized the wisdom theology of Apollos, and the Paul group the gospel preached by Paul, so those in the Christ group could have claimed that they were baptized into the messianic community of Christ and not into that of Cephas, Apollos, or Paul.

By insisting that Christ is not divided and by sharply rejecting all prerogatives that his own followers might have claimed on the grounds that he baptized them, Paul seems at first glance to confirm the position of the Christ group. However, he does so in order to stress the importance of his preaching rather than his baptizing. He was sent by Christ to proclaim the gospel, but not with rhetorical skill lest the cross of Christ should be nullified. Whereas those in the Christ group might have insisted that they were equal to the apostles because they were baptized into the name of Christ, Paul reminds them that they are also dependent on him because he proclaimed to them the gospel.

1:18–2:16
Discourse on Divine Wisdom

The discourse on divine wisdom addresses the heart of the matter. It can be divided again into two corresponding sections, 1:18–2:5 and 2:6–16, which are related to each other as antitheses.

1:18–2:5, The Wisdom of God and the Wisdom of the World. Here Paul develops the message of Christ crucified in terms of wisdom theology. God has turned the wisdom of this world—which is pursued by the wise, the scribe, and the interpreter of this age—into folly, because it did not enable them to know God and to understand the significance of the cross. For Greeks who seek philosophy and mysteries and for Jews who ask for messianic signs and miracles, the proclamation of Christ crucified is a scandal and folly. But for those who are called, be they Jews or Gentiles, the wisdom of this age is set aside and superseded by Christ, the Messiah, who is God's power and God's wisdom. At first glance this whole discourse on *sophia* (Gk., "wisdom") seems to interrupt Paul's defense of his authority, but the following two subsections indicate that its arguments are central to the dispute.

In 1:26–31 Paul elaborates the significance of the identification of Christ crucified with divine wisdom as it relates to the Christian community. Whereas vv. 26–29 express the self-understanding of the community as the new creation, vv. 30–31 argue that God has called those who are nothing, so that no one can boast before God. If people want to boast, they should boast in Christ, who has become for them wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption.

1 Cor 2:1–5 goes on to explain that Paul deliberately did not use eloquent words of human wisdom and rhetorical persuasion in Corinth. Here Paul sets up a strong contrast between one sort of authentication and another. He employs a technical rhetorical term ("demonstration," Gk. *apodeixis*) to show that his preaching in weakness is legitimated by God's power—a proof vastly superior to the proof of external manifestations such as eloquence. Although Paul ostensibly discredits oratory and rhetoric, he himself utilizes rhetorical convention to make his point.

2:6–16, Wisdom for the Perfect or Mature. In vv. 6–16, Paul appears to shift gears suddenly when he speaks of a hidden wisdom that is revealed to the perfect or the Spirit-filled. Since Paul shifts here from the pronoun "I," used in the preceding and following sections, to "we," exegetes have suggested that this section may be an insertion of a non-Christian tradition. Such an assumption is not justified, however, because the rhetoric of the whole section revolves around "I" (Paul), "you" (Corinthians), and "we" (those who are spiritual). Although the "we statements" may have been assertions of the Corinthians, it is Paul and not they who introduces the distinction between two classes of Christians.

Verses 6–9 introduce the mystery of the hidden *sophia* of God. Paul's use of the expression "wisdom" shifts here from eloquence and the content of teaching to that of personified *Sophia,* or Wisdom. In Jewish-Hellenistic wisdom literature, the wise and perfect, in contrast to the foolish and babes, enjoyed the intimate relationship with divine *Sophia,* who is the agent of creation and salvation. It is Paul who identifies the divine figure of *Sophia* with Christ crucified. If the rulers of this world had recognized the *Sophia*-Christ, they would not have crucified this Lord of Glory. These rulers can be understood either as the human religious or political powers responsible for Jesus' crucifixion, as

supernatural demonic powers dominating the present world order, or as a combination of both. To underline this great mystery of *Sophia*, Paul concludes with a quotation from Scripture (v. 9), though it is not found in our present canon. God has prepared such treasures of *Sophia* as the human mind has never conceived of for those who love God.

The true meaning of *Sophia* was, however, revealed through the Spirit of God (2:10–16). Paul elaborates this meaning with reference to common human experience. Just as only our self-consciousness is aware of our innermost truth, so only the divine Spirit knows the innermost reality of God, which appears to be identical with the mystery of *Sophia*. Therefore one cannot speak of such truth in words taught by human wisdom, but only in words taught by the Spirit that comes from God. Only those who are pneumatics ("spirituals") can receive the gifts of the Spirit; unspiritual, immature persons cannot discern spiritual truth. Those who are pneumatics judge everything, but they cannot be investigated and evaluated by anyone. Verses 12–16 may refer to claims of the Corinthians that they have been taught by *Sophia*-Spirit. Hence, they teach and interpret spiritual truth. They have received the gifts of Spirit-*Sophia* and therefore are able to adjudicate everything. The whole argument concludes with the assertion that such Spirit-led people have the mind of Christ.

3:1–23
Rhetorical Proofs

This section functions as rhetorical proof in the overall argument of 1:10–4:21. After a transitional introduction (vv. 1–4) follow the proofs that are structured in three parts: vv. 5–9 discuss Paul's relationship to Apollos and their work in Corinth; vv. 10–15 shift from the image of the community as a missionary field to that of the community as a building; and vv. 16–17 appeal to the community to realize its holiness, which shifts the image from building to temple.

Verses 1–4 connect the preceding discourse on hidden wisdom, divine Spirit, and pneumatics with the rhetorical problem that has occasioned Paul's response. Paul claims that, because he knows of a wisdom unknown to the Corinthians, he could not speak to them as to pneumatics. Because of their divisions, jealousy, and strife—which they must have regarded as debates, arguments, and differences—he characterizes them as "immature babes" who can only digest infant food. If they assert their differences by claiming to belong to different apostles and leaders (1:12), then they behave in mere human (fleshly), not spiritual, ways.

The rhetorical questions that open the first subsection (3:5–9) reprimand the Corinthians for stressing their differences by using the names of different apostles and teachers. Paul stresses that the mission of apostle and teachers is directed toward the same goal, even if they have different tasks. It was Paul who planted and Apollos who watered. Paul and Apollos are as God's servants and co-workers. The Corinthians are the objects of their work. The *ekklesia* is identified as God's field or building.

The shift from the image of field to that of building in v. 9b, moreover, implies a shift in emphasis. Although the previous section rejects any comparison between Paul and Apollos, this subsection insists that there must be consistency between Paul's original preaching, which laid the foundation, and any subsequent preaching, which must build upon Paul's proclamation of Jesus Christ. Paul drives home this point by threatening the Corinthian community with the fire of divine judgment, which will reveal whether such subsequent "construction" coheres with the foundation laid by Paul. Thus, in a subtle way, Paul makes the work of Apollos and other missionaries theologically dependent on his own.

The rhetorical introduction to vv. 16–17, "Do you not know?" recalls previous instructions. The metaphor of the temple is here applied to the community as a whole and thus emphasizes the unity of the community. To continue quarrels and dissension would mean to destroy the temple of God.

The argument climaxes in the peroration or summation in 3:18–23. In vv. 18–20a the argument returns to the thematic statement on *sophia*/wisdom in 1:18–20, whereas vv. 21b–23 recapitulate the theme of boasting and party divisions. This subsection makes clear that both topics are intimately intertwined. Paul concludes with a well-known philosophic (Stoic) maxim: "All things belong to the wise," but he reformulates it as "All things are yours." By reversing the "party slogans," he insists that Paul, Apollos, Cephas, world, life, death, present, and future belong to the Corinthians, but that they in turn "are Christ's and Christ is God's." A similar argument for subordination to Christ and to God is also found in 11:3; 15:28.

4:1–21
Paul's Authority

The relationship of chap. 4 to 1:10–3:23 is often seen as difficult and understood as an application or as an appendix to the introductory section. However, if this section is understood as an argument for unity under Paul's spiritual authority, then chap. 4 can be seen as the climax of the whole argument.

Verses 1–13 suggest that by claiming their differences the Corinthians had evaluated Paul and some decided in favor of other missionaries. Verses 1–2 sum up the preceding argument and articulate the standards of how Paul and his co-missionaries should be regarded. They are characterized as assistants or secretaries of Christ, administrative titles used for offices in religious associations and in civic service. They are managers or stewards of God's mysteries, a title be-

longing to the patriarchal household. What is required of such administrators is that they be reliable and trustworthy.

Paul does not argue, however, that the same criterion should also be used for evaluating him and his work. He eschews any evaluation and control and warns the Corinthians not to judge him prematurely. The only board competent to evaluate him is the eschatological tribunal. Since judgment is the prerogative of God, it cannot be presumed by the Corinthian community. Yet, it was precisely the task of the *ekklesia,* the assembly of full citizens, to debate and adjudicate matters. Whereas the Corinthians believe that, just as in the ancient city-state, the *ekklesia* is called together as the assembly of full citizens who debate, judge, and decide their own affairs, Paul insists that the *ekklesia* is the object of his work.

Verse 6 is difficult to understand, but seems to make most sense if seen as a conclusion of vv. 1–5 as well as an introduction to the following subsection. Paul has deliberately applied the preceding argument to himself and Apollos, so that through their example the Corinthians might learn their lesson not to pass judgment. Although it is almost impossible to know the meaning of the expression "Nothing beyond what is written," the overall intention is clear: the Corinthians should not become inflated with self-importance by favoring one apostle over the other.

The three rhetorical questions of v. 7 are followed by three ironic exclamations in v. 8a, which are corrected in v. 8b. The image of the life of the apostle as a spectacle (v. 9) is elaborated in the ironic antitheses of vv. 10–13, which utilize the form of catalogs of adverse circumstances. Rather than develop theological arguments for his own position, Paul seeks to undermine that of the Corinthians through sarcastic paradoxes, ironic exaggeration, and rhetorical insinuation. The Corinthians are pictured as being in full possession of riches, satisfaction, and ruling power, as being wise, strong, and honored. In contrast to them, the apostles are likened to criminals sentenced to death, to fools for Christ's sake; they are weak and despised, hungry and thirsty, ill-clad, homeless, working with their own hands, reviled, persecuted, slandered, the refuse and scum of the world. To take these exaggerated and ironic antitheses as historical information on the actual situation in Corinth would be to seriously misconstrue the rhetoric of Paul (→ Apostle).

In 4:14–21 Paul changes tone and argument. He insists, after he has done so, that his purpose is not to shame the Corinthians, but to admonish them. This change in tone marks a shift in argument. In the preceding section Paul had insisted that all apostles and missionaries were equally servants of Christ and God and that therefore the Corinthians should not choose one over the other. Now he argues that, although they may have a myriad of tutors or "schoolmasters" in Christ, they have only one spiritual father—Paul, who begot them, i.e., whose missionary work converted them.

Hence, the Corinthians should imitate Paul's example and his teaching and not that of others. Timothy has been sent to them because he exhibits what it means to be a "faithful child" of Paul and is fit to remind them of his teachings. However, they should not mistake this to mean that Paul himself would not come or even suspect that he will not appear in person because he feels inferior to other teachers. To the contrary, Paul threatens he might come sooner than they think. He will then find out whether those who claim to be spiritual are not merely eloquent, but have power as well. He grounds his judgment in the nature of the reign (Gk. *basileia*) of God, which consists not in eloquence but in power. Paul's final rhetorical question is a threat that underscores his claim to unique authority and power for rewarding and punishing his offspring. It is up to the Corinthians whether he will come with a rod or in love and gentleness.

5:1–7:40
How to Live the Baptismal Calling

It is debated whether chaps. 5–6 are the conclusion of the first part of the Letter responding to oral information or whether they are a transition to the second part, in which Paul answers written inquiries. Chap. 7 is then understood as the opening of the second part of the Letter. However, the three chapters form a thematic unity circling around sexual morality. In addition, although chaps. 5–6 explicitly correct a misunderstanding regarding a previous letter of Paul (5:9), 7:1–11:1 addresses questions that could have been occasioned by it. Scholars have suggested that 2 Cor. 6:14–7:1 might be a surviving fragment of the previous letter since it prohibits association with immoral persons (cf. 1 Cor. 5), likens the individual member of the community to the temple of God (1 Cor. 6), probably refers to intermarriage with unbelievers (1 Cor. 7), and raises the question of idols (1 Cor. 8–10). At issue seem to be the practical consequences drawn from the baptismal formula Gal. 3:28, which is inscribed in chap. 7.

5:1–6:20
Freedom from Cultural Prohibitions

5:1–13, Association with Immoral Members. 1 Cor. 5:1–13 refers to a man who exercises his baptismal freedom by living with his stepmother, a relationship forbidden not only by Jewish, but also by Roman, law. Since women married very young, both persons could have been the same age. Paul considers their living together to be a case of gross immorality. Therefore, he argues, the Corinthians should expel the man from the community as Paul has already done, even though he is absent from the community. Paul's frustration

indicates that he could not intervene directly and expel the man (the woman is not mentioned) on his own authority, because only the assembled community had the right to make that decision.

Determining the meaning of v. 5 is difficult. Paul's concern is primarily for the purity of the community and not so much for the fate of the offender. Expelled from the church, the offender will be subjected to the vicissitudes of life, to suffering and death, and to the domain of Satan, which he has to suffer by himself without communal support so that he may be saved on the last day. Paul's words in this passage had a disastrous effect in later centuries when the church had the power to sentence sinners, heretics, and witches to torture and death to save their souls.

It must be asked, however, why the Corinthians had not acted on their own, if the case was so clear-cut? Why were they proud of such immoral behavior that was offensive even to pagans? The attitude of the Corinthians becomes understandable when we recall that according to rabbinic teachings the proselyte is like a newborn child. This notion is reflected in 4:15, where Paul insists that he has begotten the Corinthians through the gospel. In 2 Cor. 5:17 Paul speaks of those "who are in Christ" as "a new creation."

Connected with this understanding of conversion was the Jewish belief that the convert's previous social relations no longer exist. Therefore, in principle, the rules of incest and marriage no longer apply. However, to avoid public scandal the rabbis modified this principle to be applied only in accordance with pagan laws. If this is the rhetorical-theological context, then it is understandable why the Corinthians not only tolerated this relationship, but saw it as a realization of their new life in Christ to which the restrictions of Greco-Roman law no longer applied. Verses 6–8 allude to this belief, but reinterpret it. Rather than being a sign of the new life and freedom, Paul insists, this scandalous practice is a remnant of the old age. This is illustrated in v. 6 by a proverb about leaven that is similar to the English saying, "A rotten apple spoils the whole barrel."

Verses 7–8 rhetorically connect this proverbial saying with the Jewish Passover ritual. In Judaism leaven is the symbol of all that is unclean and evil and therefore must scrupulously be removed from the house before the Passover feast. Similarly the Corinthians must remove the leaven of sin so that they will be like the batch of unleavened dough that they actually are. Their feast has already begun because their paschal lamb, Christ, has already been slain. In sum, vv. 6–8 are a further theological justification for Paul's demand to expel the man living with his stepmother.

Verses 9–13 indicate that this case of immorality was based on a misunderstanding of an earlier letter that Paul had written to the community in Corinth. Just as 2 Cor. 6:14 insists, "Do not be mismatched with unbelievers. For what partnership have righteousness and iniquity?" so Paul had instructed the Corinthians, "Do not associate with immoral persons" (v. 9). The Corinthians had understood this to mean not to associate with non-Christians. The boundaries establishing Christian identity were drawn between those who were members of the community and those outside of it.

In vv. 10–11 Paul clarifies his position by explaining that he did not have in mind the immoral persons of this world, for then Christians would have to move out of the world. What he actually meant was not to associate with immoral Christians. Paul derives his characterization of the immoral person in vv. 10–11 from the traditional catalog of vices that was commonplace in popular philosophy and had already been appropriated by Hellenistic Judaism. The recognition of the formal character of such lists of vices and virtues prohibits our reading them as referring to actual problems in Corinth. Such lists are used rhetorically to typify universal moral values. Here the catalog of vices is used to illustrate Paul's point that the Corinthians should not associate or have any social interaction (not even eat) with Christians who are publicly known for their moral failure.

Verses 12–13 refer back to vv. 1–5 and close the argument for expelling the immoral man from the community. Paul insists that neither he himself nor the community is competent to judge outsiders. It is God who will judge those who are outside, but it is the task of the community to pass judgment on those who are inside. Although in chap. 4 he criticized their power of judgment, here he calls for it. Paul thus maintains the dualistic distinction between outsider and insider, but he extends it to members within the community. Yet Paul is not able to appeal to any community leaders for making such a judgment. It is the whole community that is exhorted to exercise its authority of judgment and to exclude the wicked person from its midst (Deut. 17:7, LXX).

6:1–11, Lawsuits Before Outsiders. Again this section can be divided into two subsections. Verses 1–8 deal with lawsuits among Christians, while vv. 9–11 contain an expanded list of vices.

Verses 1–8 are linked to the preceding section through their focus on judging and judgment. The content of the section is clear. Christians who have legal disputes and grievances against each other are going before pagan courts rather than letting God's people settle the matter. Paul argues that the community should settle its own legal cases because, as they well know, the saints (i.e., Christians) will not only judge the world, but also judge angels. On the whole it would be better not to have lawsuits at all. Rather than do wrong and rob one another, they should prefer to suffer wrong and let themselves be defrauded.

Although Paul's argument is clear, the matter under discussion is far from being evident. The topic

of this section seems to interrupt Paul's elaborations on matters of sexuality and immorality that are taken up again in 6:12–20. If 6:1–11 is read in close connection with chap. 5, then Paul would be criticizing once more the hesitancy of the community to pass judgment on other Christians. If the passage is seen in light of 6:20–7:40, then it can be surmised that the Corinthian lawsuits were caused by legal problems connected with institutional marriage. Such legal disputes could pertain, for example, to questions of dowry, divorce settlements, or inheritance. The Corinthians might not have considered them as "religious" problems to be adjudicated by the community, since according to Roman law marriage was constituted by legal contract rather than religious rite.

Verses 9–11 contain primarily traditional materials. The catalog of vices is introduced and concluded with the traditional Christian eschatological formula "to inherit the reign of God" (cf. Gal. 5:21). The list of vices is broadly the same as the one in 5:11, but underlines the sins of sexual immorality by adding "adulterers" and by specifying both the effeminate male prostitute and his partner who hires him to satisfy sexual needs. The two terms used here for homosexuality, which are absent from the list in Galatians, specify a special form of pederasty that was generally disapproved of in Greco-Roman and Jewish literature.

Paul, however, is not concerned with the specific items on the list, but rather clearly shows an interest in increasing them to have a cumulative effect. Whereas 5:10 has four items (the immoral, greedy, robbers, idolaters), 5:11 adds two (revilers and drunkards) and 6:9 expands the list with four (adulterers, effeminates, homosexuals, thieves) for a total of ten vices. Although it goes without saying that Paul disapproves of all these activities, in the context of the Letter he is clearly concerned here with heterosexual behavior and marriage difficulties.

Verse 11 concludes the section with a reference to the early Christian baptismal tradition. The traditional pattern "once . . . but now" describes baptism as the moment of change from a former life to a new existence. Before their baptism in the name of Jesus Christ some of the Corinthians practiced one or another of these vices. But now by the Spirit of God they are cleansed from sin, dedicated to God, and put in right relation with God.

6:12–20, Glorify God in Your Bodies. This is a transitional section that concludes the argument of 5:1–6:11 and at the same time introduces the theme of 7:1–40. Both 6:12–20 and 7:1–40 articulate problems of holiness/purity and sexuality from the perspective of the male members of the community.

It is debated whether in this section Paul cites a general principle that he himself recognizes but modifies, or whether he quotes slogans or statements of the Corinthians against which he argues. If the former is the case, then Paul agrees with the general principle "I am allowed to do anything" or "I am free to do anything," but qualifies it in terms of his own theology. He applies this basic principle to two areas: food and sexuality. The body differs from the belly because it is destined for resurrection. If the latter is the case, then Paul quotes at least three theological maxims: "I am free to do anything" (v. 12), "Foods are for the belly and the belly for foods but God will destroy both" (v. 13), and "Every sin which someone may commit is outside the body" (v. 18b). Paul then qualifies the *first* in a twofold way: yes, all things are lawful, but not everything is good or of benefit to me; yes, but I shall not be ruled by anything or anyone. He also agrees with the *second* slogan, but insists that the body is not to be used for sexual immorality but for serving the *Kyrios,* who provides for the body. It is God who has raised Christ and who also will raise his followers.

Paul continues the argument with two rhetorical questions that are also a statement: you know that your bodies are members of Christ and therefore should never be made members of a prostitute. Similarly, you know that someone who joins himself to a prostitute becomes one flesh with her, whereas those who join themselves to the Resurrected One become one spirit with Christ.

Paul does not argue here that the believer's union with the body of Christ prohibits intercourse. He assumes rather, in order to make his point, that intercourse with a prostitute is wrong, but that sex is permitted in marriage. Being incorporated into Christ in baptism makes one a member of the body of Christ, the church, and at the same time one spirit with the Resurrected One.

Although it is debated whether Paul refers here to an actual problem in the Corinthian community, it is safe to assume that he gives an extreme example in order to illustrate his point: "Have nothing to do with immorality." Over and against the *third* motto he maintains that sins of sexual immorality are sins against one's own body. He again underlines this point with a rhetorical question in diatribe style that is really an assertion: surely, you know that your bodies are a temple of the Holy Spirit.

Paul understands the community as a temple, more specifically as the sanctuary, of the Holy Spirit (3:16), and the individual is seen as the constituent part of it. This theological assertion expresses common ground between him and the Corinthians. The whole argument climaxes in the statement that the Corinthians do not belong to themselves, but to God. They have been bought for God as slaves are bought by a slave owner. Therefore, their freedom is limited. Those who have been redeemed through the death of Christ must bring honor to God in and with their bodies.

In chaps. 5–6 Paul draws the boundaries between those who are the temple of the Spirit and those who are not. Whereas the Corinthians understood his pre-

vious letter as drawing sharp boundaries between the community and society, Paul explains that he does so because of impurity, which he practically identifies with sexual immorality. Just as the Jewish moral tradition of the Diaspora stressed that sexual immorality is the result of idolatry in order to underline the distinction between Israel and the nations, so too Paul insists that holiness and purity with regard to sexual morality are the distinctive marks of the Christian community.

7:1–40
Problems Arising from the Baptismal Confession of Galatians 3:28

After having addressed issues arising from the misunderstanding of his previous teachings, Paul now responds to questions about which the Corinthians had written (v. 1a). The formula "Now concerning . . ." also occurs in 7:25; 8:1, 4; 12:1; 16:1, 12. It does not structure the Letter, but indicates whenever Paul explicitly refers to matters about which the Corinthian community had inquired.

Although all problems in chap. 7 seem to refer to marriage and the relationship between the sexes, Paul's reference to circumcision/uncircumcision and to slave/free in 7:17–24 indicates that the early Christian baptismal formula quoted in Gal. 3:28 provides the underpinning for the whole section. If the third pair of Gal. 3:28—no longer male *and* female—was understood as declaring, with reference to Gen. 1:27, that patriarchal marriage and the procreative relationship between the sexes are no longer constitutive for the new community in Christ, then Paul's extensive discussion of issues related to marriage becomes understandable.

Should married Christians continue or abstain from sexual intercourse? Should unmarried people get married? What is to be done if one's marriage partner is an unbeliever, either Jew or pagan? What should women do who are virgins or widows? What should slave women do who were subject to the sexual abuse of their masters? Should one remain in a marriage relationship that is oppressive and contrary to one's Christian calling? Such questions can be seen as practical problems arising from the attempt to live the social relationships professed at one's baptism, although Gal. 3:28c is never explicitly mentioned in chap. 7.

7:1–9, Sexual Abstinence. This section expresses the problem from the male perspective: "Is it advantageous or beneficial not to touch a woman?" It is debated whether this statement in 7:1b is a response of Paul to a Corinthian question, whether it is a Corinthian maxim that Paul quotes with approval, or whether it is a Corinthian motto against which Paul argues. However, the argument in vv. 2–9 seems to indicate that Paul addresses here a Corinthian question he seeks to qualify. It is clear from the climax of the argument in vv. 7–9 that Paul himself lived a life of freedom from marriage and that he valued this "charisma" highly. However, he insists, marriage is a necessity if one cannot live the asexual life demanded by freedom from the marriage bond. Those who are tempted should not abstain from intercourse. Both partners have the mutual obligation to marital intercourse, except for some limited celibate periods set aside by mutual agreement for worship. As was the practice in other cults from the East, so also Paul recognizes temporary ritual chastity.

Exegetes have pointed out how Paul carefully repeats every injunction in 7:1–5 to make sure that husband and wife have equal conjugal obligations and rights. However, Paul stresses such interdependence only for sexual and not for all marriage relationships. Moreover, he sees marital intercourse only as a remedy for uncontrolled sexual passion. In short, the argument does not take into account the unequal status of men and women in a patriarchal society.

7:10–16, Marriage and Divorce. In 7:10–16 Paul commands the married not to separate, while advising those who are not bound by marriage to remain free. Yet, despite an instruction of the Lord, wives—who are mentioned first and with more emphasis in 7:10–11—still have the possibility of freeing themselves from the marriage bond. If they do so, however, they must remain in this marriage-free state. They may return to their husbands, but may not marry someone else.

A somewhat different problem is raised with respect to marriages between Christians and "unbelievers." In 6:12–20, Paul had asked, "Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ?" and insisted that therefore they should not be made members of a prostitute. Likewise, Christians in mixed marriages could have asked: "Can I as a 'member of Christ' continue to have sexual intercourse with someone who does not belong to the body of Christ? Do I thereby become conformed to my partner's pagan existence and lose my standing in Christ?" In addition, as we have seen in chap. 5, Jewish and Christian missionary theology held that converts have become a new creation. They were considered to be like newborn children. Therefore the Corinthians might have believed that baptism into Christ dissolved all previous marriage bonds.

In response to this problem Paul insists that because of the missionary situation (God has called us to peace), the decision to continue or not to continue the marriage relationship should be left to the unbelieving partner and not to the Christian. If the unbeliever wants to stay married the Christian partner can consider the marriage bond as reconstituted "by intercourse" and the children of such a marriage are holy and legitimate. Paul's insistence that because of missionary reasons the unbelieving partner had the final decision resulted in many more difficulties for women than for men, however, since men were entitled by law

to control the religious practices of the members of their households. Insofar as Paul sacrifices the right of the Christian partner to determine her or his marital status, he made it impossible for Christian women to divorce their non-Christian husbands, a legal option that often resulted in greater religious and social freedom, especially for economically self-sufficient women.

7:17–24, Baptismal Calling and Its Social Consequences. Exegetes misread Paul's maxim in v. 17 when they translate it as an injunction to remain in the social state in which one was called. To the contrary, Paul clearly does not advise former Jews or Gentiles to remain in the religious and social situation of the time before they became Christians. Rather, he insists that the religious and physical sign of initiation into Judaism (circumcision) is no longer of any social or theological significance for Christians.

Similarly the advice to slaves cannot mean that they should remain in the social situation in which they were called. Although many exegetes understand 7:21 to mean that they should remain slaves if they have the possibility of becoming free, the injunction of v. 23, "You were bought with a price, do not become slaves of people," prohibits such an interpretation. Paul's advice in v. 21 seems best understood as: if you still must live in the bondage of slavery, with no possibility of being freed, even though you were called to freedom, do not worry about it. However, if you have the opportunity to be set free, by all means, use this possibility and live according to your calling to freedom. Those of you who were slaves when called are now freedwomen and freedmen of the *Kyrios*, just as those of you who were freeborn have now a master in Jesus Christ.

Both freeborn and slave women and men are equals in the Christian community because they have one *Kyrios*. Regardless of one's social status, one must continue in the calling to freedom that one has heard and entered into in baptism. Although Paul refers here only in passing to the first two pairs of the baptismal formula Gal. 3:28, these references indicate that the questions of the Corinthian community were related to their baptismal calling.

7:25–40, Freedom from Marriage. Paul's theological advice with respect to marriage is similar to the advice given to slaves. It is quite possible to live a Christian life as a married person, if that was the state in which one lived when one became a Christian, although Paul himself prefers the marriage-free Christian life over the married state. This preference comes to the fore throughout the whole chapter, but especially in his advice to the "marriage free," i.e., to those who are unmarried or divorced as well as those who are engaged to be married.

Engagement is probably the best explanation for the thorny problem of vv. 32–35. If sexual desire compels the nonmarried, they should get married. However, it is better not to marry and to remain in the marriage-free state. If the unmarried and the widows cannot exercise self-control, they should marry in the church, but in Paul's opinion they would be happier if they were to remain free from the constraints of patriarchal marriage.

Although exegetes have much debated the meaning of "virgins" in vv. 36–38, they have seldom pointed out that Paul's advice to remain free from the marriage bond was against Augustan Roman marriage legislation. These laws levied sanctions and taxes on bachelors and required the widowed and divorced to remarry within a year if they were not over fifty years of age, and therefore entailed conflicts for the Christian community in its interaction with Greco-Roman society. Moreover, Paul's theological argument, that those who marry are "divided" and not equally dedicated to Christian affairs, disqualified married people theologically as less engaged Christians and missionaries. It posited a rift between, on the one hand, the married woman concerned with worldly affairs and how to please her husband and, on the other hand, the marriage-free woman who was concerned with the affairs of the *Kyrios* and how to be holy in body and spirit. One can only wonder how Paul could have espoused such a theology, when he had Prisca as his friend and knew missionary couples who were counterexamples to such theological reasoning.

8:1–11:1

Rights and Responsibilities of the *Ekklesia*

1 Cor. 8:1 introduces the main topic of the section 8:1–11:1. It refers to the argument of the Corinthians asserting their freedom to eat food sacrificed to idols. The same topic is taken up again in chap. 10. However, while 8:1–13 and 10:23–11:1 speak of things sacrificed to idols, 10:1–22 seems to address idolatry and the sacramentality of the meat itself. It has therefore been conjectured that these sections belong to different letters of Paul or that Paul himself changed his position on the question of eating sacrificial meat. It seems more likely, however, that in chap. 8 Paul takes up the arguments of the Corinthians and seeks to modify them, while in chap. 10 he explicates his own position. Some exegetes have also regarded chap. 9 as virtually unrelated to the discussion on meat sacrificed to idols. Yet if chap. 9 is understood as a rhetorical digression one can see that it supports Paul's overall argument in 8:1–11:1.

8:1–13

Concerning Food Sacrificed to Idols

Verses 1–13 address the central question of chap. 8: are Christians permitted to eat food sacrificed to idols?

This question is clearly stated in v. 1 and repeated in v. 4. For a newly converted Christian in Greco-Roman cities this was not simply a religious, but also a social, problem. Such meat, which was offered for sale and served at family celebrations, at gatherings of private associations and clubs, or at public festivals, had passed in one form or another through religious rites.

Because Jews believed that it was idolatrous to eat such meat, they obtained the privilege to slaughter their animals and sell their own meat to other Jews. However, it was almost impossible for newly converted Christians who were not Jewish to avoid the social occasions at which such food was offered. More important, for many poor citizens the meat served at public feasts was generally the only meat available to them, since meat was very expensive.

Members of the Corinthian community who came from a low-status background seem to have argued that they could consume such sacrificial food, because they all had the religious insight and knowledge that an idol has no real existence since there is no God but one (v. 4). This conviction is expressed in vv. 5–6: whatever divine heavenly or demonic beings may exist, Christians recognize only one God as the Creator whom they serve. Moreover, Christians acknowledge only one *Kyrios*, Jesus Christ, who, as wisdom of God, is the agent of creation and redemption. In other words, the Corinthians' authority to eat sacrificial food was not due to their contempt for the body or Gnostic enthusiasm. Rather, it was rooted in their understanding of religious equality (we all have knowledge) and their monotheistic wisdom theology.

Paul's response in chap. 8 seeks to qualify their assertions in two ways. In vv. 1b–3 he contrasts their emancipatory theological knowledge, which according to him leads to an inflated self-understanding, with his own theological key concept of *agape* (Gk., "love"), which builds up the community. What is important is not that one has achieved religious insight and knowledge, but that one loves God and therefore is known by God.

More significant is Paul's second modification. In v. 7 he not only denies that all Christians have received such emancipatory knowledge of God, but also constructs a potential case against it. Some recently converted members of the community who have eaten such food all their lives believing in the gods to whom it was sacrificed might not have ceased to believe in the divine reality behind the sacrificial meat. There might be some who are "weak" in awareness and faith.

Paul agrees with the theological conviction of the Corinthians that the eating of such food is social and not religious. No religious advantage or disadvantage is engendered by eating or by abstaining from such food. Yet the religious freedom to eat or not to eat sacrificial food must not become a stumbling block to a potentially "weak" member of the community who still believes in the numinous and sacral quality of such food. Such persons might be encouraged by the pneumatics' example to dine with friends in pagan temples and thereby act against their conscience. Those with religious insight and theological knowledge might unwittingly lead "weaker" Christians to sin by wounding their conscience and thereby sin against Christ.

However, Paul does not refer to an actual group of "weak" Christians, but only seeks to draw out the possible implications and consequences of the Corinthians' theological praxis. To do so he must undermine their conviction that all have received spiritual knowledge and declare some members of the community as spiritually "weak" or deficient. According to Paul, not all Christians have arrived at the emancipatory theological knowledge that monotheism denies the existence of all other gods.

In conclusion, Paul asserts that rather than offending other Christians, he prefers not to eat meat at all. This last argument indicates that not the wealthier but the impoverished Christians who normally could not afford meat might have insisted on theological grounds that they could eat such meat at pagan festivities. Since he must concede their argument theologically, he denies that all members of the community have arrived at such theological insight, and he presents a hypothetical case to illustrate his point. Although the Corinthians insist that they all have theological knowledge, freedom, and power, Paul argues that some have a deficient theological awareness and are lacking such knowledge, freedom, and authority. Therefore the Corinthians should follow his example and not eat meat at all rather than incur possible offense. Yet whereas Paul and other well-to-do Christians might have had the means to obtain kosher meat, Paul's argument makes it impossible for poor Christians to participate in pagan festivals, the rare occasions when they could eat meat at all.

9:1–27
Apostolic Self-Limitation

The rhetorical digression 9:1–27 on the rights and freedom of an apostle is not so much a defense of Paul's conduct as it is an argument, using Paul as an example, for a renunciation of rights and power in free service.

Verses 1–14 consist of a series of rhetorical questions that center around the example of Paul. Since they require an affirmative answer, the section does not represent a defense of Paul's apostleship, although many commentaries read it in that way. Rather, it is an elucidation of Paul's apostolic freedom and power for the purpose of stressing his freely chosen self-limitation.

The argument actually began with 8:13, and the rhetorical questions in 9:1–2 continue the theme of

Paul's personal example. They indicate his apostolic freedom and experience and cite the Corinthians as proof of his apostleship. Verse 3 is transitional and draws the parallel between "how Paul defends himself against his own critics" and the situation of the so-called strong in Corinth.

Verses 4–14 then elaborate positively Paul's apostolic rights and claims. This section consists of twelve rhetorical questions that state the obvious. These questions present ten arguments for his rights to food and drink, to be accompanied by a woman missionary, not to have to work for his living, and to be supported by the community. Whereas in v. 7 Paul refers to the everyday examples of the soldier, the farmer, and the shepherd to argue for his right to financial aid, in vv. 9–10 he uses proof-texts from Scripture (Deut. 25:4; Sir. 6:19).

Verse 12a positively sets forth the purpose of the argument in vv. 4–14. After having established his rightful apostolic claims, Paul asserts that he has not made use of his rights, but has put up with everything to avoid placing obstacles in the way of the gospel. A major theme in chaps. 8 and 10 is that Christians should not put a stumbling block before other Christians (8:9) or scandalize them (8:13), but that they should do everything not to be offensive (10:32). The rhetorical question "Do you not know?" in v. 13 assumes that the Corinthians will agree with Paul's claim that apostolic workers have a right to financial support.

Verses 15–18 return to v. 12b and discontinue the form of rhetorical questions in order to restate Paul's own practice. Paul insists that he does not write about his renunciation of apostolic rights to claim them now. Paul has never accepted financial support from the Corinthian community, and he is not going to become dependent on their patronage now. Rather, his primary concern and boast remain the gospel of Christ and its unhindered path through the whole world. Both Paul's "necessity," or "compulsion," and his freely chosen action concern the overarching needs of his work for the gospel.

Verses 9–23 are rhetorically well crafted. The seven independent clauses are followed by dependent clauses, five of which contain the phrase "in order to win over," i.e., convert to the Christian message. These verses illustrate the principle underlying Paul's apostolic practice. He does everything "for the gospel's sake" (v. 23). Although Paul has freedom and authority, he has become a slave to the needs of all persons and has accommodated himself to various groups for the sake of his missionary work. He does not defend his practice, but he presents it as a personal example that the Corinthians should follow. Yet to imitate Paul as a slave would have quite different implications for slave women and men than for himself.

Verses 24–27 shift back to the use of analogy, which was prevalent in vv. 4–14. Just as athletes do, so also Christians must submit to strict training and discipline if they want to be victorious. In v. 26 Paul switches from the image of runners to that of boxers who harden their bodies and bring them under control by enduring hard blows and bruises in order not to be disqualified from the contest. Whereas the Corinthians understood their new life in the Spirit as one of empowerment and freedom, Paul uses images of slavery and athletic endeavor to illustrate the great effort that is required, even from apostles, in order not to be "disqualified" or to place a stumbling block in the way of the gospel. This section functions as a transition to the argument in 10:1–13.

10:1–11:1
Warning Against a Relapse into Idolatry

Chap. 10 continues to support Paul's argument in the form of examples. It begins with an epistolary adaptation of a homily on Israel in the wilderness (10:1–13), then draws out the implications for the issue at hand with reference to the Eucharist (10:14–22), and ends with a series of injunctions and rules that are introduced by Paul's modification of a Corinthian maxim (10:23–11:1).

10:1–13, The Example of Israel. This section forms a literary unit that is divided in half by the contrast between "all of the Israelites," who have experienced God's gift of salvation (10:1–5), and "some of them" who rebelled against God (10:6–11). The five positive and five negative examples are concluded with warnings against temptations (10:12–13). Some of the tensions of this section in its present context are best understood if we recognize that this homily was composed prior to its utilization by Paul. This traditional Exodus pattern—a list of God's salvific acts followed by a list of sins culminating in warnings to the contemporary audience—is found not only in various texts of the Hebrew Bible (esp. the Song of Moses in Deut. 32) and Jewish literature, but also in NT writings such as Hebrews and Jude 5.

Verses 1–5 are a midrashic elaboration (→ Midrash) of God's gracious acts for Israel connected with the Exodus and the sojourn in the desert. Similar elaborations of the Exodus miracles (the cloud pillar, the Red Sea crossing, the manna, and the water from the rock) are found in wisdom and apocalyptic literature (Pss. 78; 106; Neh. 9:9–21; Wisd. of Sol. 11–19). The clause "and the rock was Christ" is a Pauline addition, and the baptism into Moses is probably a Christian construction analogous to the baptism into Christ.

These five positive examples are followed in vv. 6–10 by five negative examples of the Exodus generation —craving evil things, idolatry, immorality, testing the Lord, and grumbling or malcontent—of which four

are allusions to texts in Numbers. However, one of them, idolatry, is introduced as a direct quotation from Exod. 32:6. Since the question of idolatry is at the center of Paul's discussion in chap. 10, it is likely that Paul himself has added this scriptural reference.

10:14–22, The Implications. The general warnings and prohibitions in vv. 12–13, which are the climax of the traditional homily, are specified by Paul in terms of idolatry or participation in pagan cultic events (v. 14). The exclusive religious maxim "avoid any worship of idols," which was characteristic of Judaism and hard for pagans in the Greco-Roman world to understand, remained in force for Pauline Christianity. It is followed by an appeal to the Corinthians to evaluate for themselves Paul's arguments undergirding the prohibition of any participation in pagan cultic events (v. 15).

Paul supports his injunction in 10:16–21 with three examples of cultic meal associations (Gk. *koinonia*): Christian sharing of the eucharistic meal (vv. 16–17), Jewish consumption of what is sacrificed in the Temple (v. 18), and participation in pagan cultic meals (vv. 19–21). Verse 22 draws the conclusion for the whole section. The organizing key concept of the argument in 10:14–21 is that of *koinonia*, which in Hellenistic and Jewish writings of the time has the basic meaning of a relationship in which two or more individuals have a joint interest in someone or something. It describes the relationship that individuals find in their worship of a god or gods whom they have in common. The common point of comparison in all three examples is the eating of a cultic meal that results in *koinonia*.

Utilizing a pre-Pauline early Christian eucharistic formula in v. 16, Paul argues in vv. 17–22 that just as sacrifice and cultic meals, whether Jewish or pagan, constitute a community of allegiance, so does the participation in the cup of the *Kyrios* and in the one bread found a special religious worshiping community, the one body of Christ. The death of Christ established a new covenant relationship between God and Christians as well as among those in Christ. This is a relationship with mutual loyalties and obligations. Although the participation in pagan cultic meals does not establish a special relationship with the god of a cult, since idols do not have a real existence, it does establish such an alliance community with demons.

The conclusion drawn in v. 21 is unambiguous: the character of the Christian community is exclusive not because of some magical conflict, but because Christian and pagan meals establish different communities of allegiance. Such an insistence on religious exclusivism was uncommon in Greco-Roman paganism. The two rhetorical questions in v. 22 assume a negative answer. They draw on Deut. 32:21, the Song of Moses, where God says, "They have moved me to jealousy with 'no-gods' and provoked me to anger with their vanities."

Christians in Corinth seem to have felt that they could join in pagan cultic meals not only because these were highly social in character, but also because they knew that idols were unreal (cf. 8:4–6). However, Paul's religious exclusivism demands that they not be involved in cultic meals associated with other religious communities. Christians must not participate in dinner parties given by their neighbors in a pagan shrine. His position allows for no compromise in the instance of quasi-religious meals in pagan cultic places.

10:23–11:1, Injunctions. After having insisted that eating at pagan sacrificial feasts is strictly forbidden, Paul returns in 10:23 to a Corinthian maxim, "All things are permitted" (cf. 6:12), in order to qualify it. Then in v. 24 Paul introduces a maxim of his own: Christians should never look out only for their own interests, but they must always consider the good of others. Verses 25–27 discuss two special cases of permissible eating: Christians are allowed to eat meat sold in the markets (v. 25) as well as meat served by a host (v. 27). However, in vv. 28–30 Paul qualifies his permission by insisting that even in these cases the possible harm to others must be taken into account. In 10:31–11:1 Paul develops interrelated principles for eating in particular and guidelines for Christian behavior in general. Persons who seek to "glorify God" will not cause others to stumble, but act for the benefit of others, rather than solely in their own self-interest. Paul's own attempts to "please everyone" and "not to seek his own advantage," aims practically impossible to fulfill, come from a social position of power he had relinquished. They are given as an example that Christians should follow and as a motive for action: "Imitate me just as I imitate Christ." Coming from a position of social "nothings" the Corinthians probably did not advocate self-denial and self-limitation, but rather self-assertiveness and acting with authority and freedom. They did not experience their new authority and freedom as an obstacle to the gospel, but rather as a means to attract others to the freedom and authority of the gospel.

11:2–14:40
Baptismal Giftedness

Interpreters debate whether chap. 11 begins a new section, whether it concludes the preceding section, or whether it is an independent textual unit. This debate indicates that chap. 11 forms an important link between the preceding and the following parts of the Letter. Whereas 11:2–16 *(A)* points forward to the discussion of spiritual gifts and their exercise in chaps. 12 and 14 *(A')*, 11:17–34 *(B)* connects back to the discussion of the Lord's Supper in 10:14–22. The whole sec-

tion 11:2–14:40 thus follows the *A B A'* pattern and is composed as a thematic inclusion that begins and ends with the discussion of women's behavior in the worship assembly of the community. It shows that women as well as men have received the gifts of the Spirit and pray, prophesy, and ask questions in the public assembly of the community. The contrast between 11:2 and 11:17 indicates that in 11:2–16 Paul is not referring to any particular abuse.

11:2–16
Women Prophets

We no longer are able to decide with certainty what custom or style Paul wants to introduce here. Generally exegetes have conjectured that Paul is insisting that the pneumatic women leaders wear the veil according to Eastern custom. However, such an understanding cannot explain why it was dishonorable for men to wear a head covering, since Jewish priests were required to do so (Ezek. 44:18) and since it was a common Roman practice. Therefore, exegetes have more recently suggested that vv. 4 and 14 prohibit men from wearing long hair (Ezek. 44:20), because this caused suspicion of effeminacy and homosexuality. If, however, the text does not prohibit a "head covering" for men but refers to hairstyle, then the same must be assumed for women. Women prophets and pneumatics are admonished to wear their hair bound up like a crown rather than unbound, since this was a sign of frenzy in Greco-Roman understanding and a sign of adultery according to Jewish sensibilities (Num. 5:18). Disheveled hair was as disgraceful for a woman as for her head to be shaven. Whatever custom or hairstyle Paul seeks to advocate, it must not be overlooked, however, that he does not prohibit women from publicly praying and prophesying.

More problematic are the theological arguments that Paul adduces for his injunction. Verses 3–9 consist of a midrash on Gen. 2:18–23 followed by a concluding statement in v. 10 that refers to the presence of angels in the worship assembly. Verse 3 introduces a new theological understanding ("but I want you to know") that establishes a patriarchal (head) or ontological (source) chain of authority—God, Christ, man, woman—a descending hierarchy in which each preceding member stands above the following. Similarly, Paul can declare in v. 15 that man is created to be the image and glory of God, while woman is the glory of man and hair is the glory of woman. However, the midrashic argument in vv. 7–9 does not deny woman the "image of God" status but rather focuses on "glory."

In vv. 11–12, Paul concedes that women and men are interdependent and that "in the *Kyrios*" women are not different from men. Therefore to make his point Paul resorts in vv. 13–15 to the philosophical argument "from nature" that was widely used for insisting on the subordination of freeborn women because of their "natural" differences. Finally, Paul concludes this mixture of biblical and philosophical arguments with an authoritarian assertion in v. 16, probably because he senses that his theological arguments are not very convincing.

11:17–34
Divisions at the Eucharist

Although Paul praises the community in Corinth for having kept the traditions with respect to the public praying and prophesying of women and men, he severely reprimands the Corinthians' behavior at the eucharistic meal. He mentions first the divisions and groupings among them (vv. 17–19) and he goes on to criticize them for not eating "the supper of the *Kyrios*" when coming together. Instead of waiting for each other they eat their "own meal," so that one remains hungry and the other gets drunk (v. 21). This accusation is followed by two rhetorical questions in v. 22 and a quotation of early Christian eucharistic tradition in vv. 23–26.

The rhetorical question "Do you not have houses . . . ?" which determines vv. 17–23, is best understood as Paul's insistence that the actual eating and drinking of a meal should take place in private homes and not in the ritual meal celebration of the community. His advice assumes social-status distinctions, but does not mention gender. On the one hand, those who despise the "*ekklesia* of God" are sufficiently wealthy to own houses (vv. 22, 34) where they can satisfy their hunger. On the other hand, this advice involves greater changes for freeborn and slave women. As food preparers they probably had come first and against all custom eaten first and started the celebration of the communal meal. If Paul's advice were adapted, they would be the ones who had to cook and clean up at home, serving in their proper patriarchal roles and eating the leftovers.

In his critique of the Corinthian community Paul underlines the contrast between one's own selfish, individualistic meal and the "Lord's Supper," between one's own satisfaction and the hunger and thirst of the poor in the community. However, Paul's advice to "eat at home" does not overcome this opposition, but transposes it into the division between ordinary, noncultic eating and drinking and ritual or sacramental eating and drinking, between an ordinary meal and the eucharistic meal (v. 34).

In quoting the tradition about the Last Supper of Jesus, Paul indicates that according to this tradition the actual meal, the eating and drinking together, was an integral part of the eucharistic celebration. The breaking of the bread and the sharing of the cup mark the beginning and end of a meal that is celebrated in remembrance of Jesus. Since the traditional material probably ended with v. 25, it was most likely Paul who

added an additional sentence underlining the connection between the proclamation of Christ's death and his eschatological return (v. 26).

That eschatological judgment is already upon some of the Corinthians is demonstrated by illness and death in the community. The community gathered around the table of the *Kyrios* must overcome its divisions. Otherwise it makes itself guilty and answerable for profaning the life and death of its Lord (vv. 27–32). To achieve such unity Paul is prepared to sacrifice the actual sharing of a meal. He does so to preserve the ritual exchange of bread and wine as a cultic symbol of unity (vv. 33–34). In conclusion, Paul writes that the "other things" brought to his attention are of minor importance, so that they can wait until after his arrival in Corinth (v. 34c).

12:1–31
The Gifts of the Spirit

After the introduction in 12:1–3 follows first a section on the variety of spiritual gifts (12:4–11) and then a section on the one body of Christ (12:12–27). The concluding remarks in 12:28–31 return to the topic of the variety of gifts.

12:1–3, Introduction. In v. 1 Paul returns to the questions raised in the letter from the Corinthians. From vv. 2–3 it can be inferred that the Corinthians had asked how they should test pneumatics for the gifts of the Spirit. This was a very pressing question in early Christianity and various criteria are found in early Christian writings. Paul refers first to the Corinthians' religious experiences and spiritual impulses when they were still pagan (v. 2). Then in v. 3 he articulates a Christological criterion: no utterance inspired by the Spirit can curse Jesus. It is not very likely that either in synagogue worship or in Christian assemblies those inspired would have shouted curses against Jesus. Rather, it is more probable that Paul construes an extreme case in order to underline his positive criterion: every inspired word is identical with the Christian confession "Jesus is *Kyrios*."

12:4–11, 28–31, The Variety of Spiritual Gifts. Although there is only one positive criterion for testing those who claim the gifts of the Holy Spirit, Paul insists that there are many spiritual gifts. The section 12:4–11 is a thought unit that begins (v. 4) and ends (v. 11) with the assertion that the variety of gifts is inspired by one and the same Spirit. Paul does not seem primarily to be concerned with the unity of the community, but intends to stress the diversity and multiplicity of spiritual expressions and actions. Such a variety of spiritual endowment is given to everyone for the "common good" (v. 7).

This diversity of spiritual gifts is elaborated with the enumeration of the workings of the Spirit in vv. 8–10. Each of the three lists of spiritual gifts in 12:8–10; 12:28; and 12:29–30 varies, but in all three lists speaking in tongues and its interpretation come last. Since in the second list "apostles" comes first, Paul seems to put first what is most important to him and mentions the least important last. Paul does not disqualify and repudiate speaking in tongues, but he ranks it as the lowest of spiritual endowments. His concluding admonition to seek the "higher gifts" indicates that he is interested in establishing a hierarchy of gifts (v. 31).

12:12–27, The Body of Christ. Paul resorts to the fable of the body that was widespread in antiquity in order to underline that members of the community have different gifts and functions. Yet he applies the image of the one body with its many different members at first to Christ and not to the church. Since Paul understands the church to be "the body of Christ" (v. 27), he can speak of Christ as a corporate figure with many diverse members. Through baptism in the one Spirit Christians have become one body or corporation. In this baptismal community religious and social-status stratifications no longer exist. Jews and Greeks as well as slaves and free, both women and men, have all received the one Spirit. It is often observed that in v. 13 Paul does not quote the third pair of the pre-Pauline baptismal formula in Gal. 3:28, "neither male and female," and it is suggested that he omits it because of the problems women had caused in Corinth (cf. 11:2–16; 14:33b–36). Such an interpretation overlooks, however, the fact that here Paul does not use the negative form of the baptismal confession, but states it positively. "Whether Jew and Greek . . ." affirms not only that they are a spiritually gifted, diversified group, but also that they are a differently advantaged social group. Social status and religious privileges are abolished in Christ.

After having stressed the oneness of the Spirit and of the body of Christ, in vv. 14–20 Paul elaborates that the individual members of the community have their own proper function and that these functions are not the same or interchangeable. If it is true that not all members of the human body can be eyes or ears, then it is also true of the Christian community that it needs many diverse gifts, but still remains one and the same body.

In vv. 21–27 Paul sets a somewhat different accent. Just as the different members of the body are interdependent and need each other, so also do Christians. Those who have the gift of tongues, for instance, cannot say to those with the gift of prophecy that they have no need for them. Moreover, those members of the body who are considered to be weaker or to have a more dishonorable function were given special attention and honor by God. Therefore, the diverse members of the body of Christ should not be divided, but should care for each other. Because of their organic interdependence, all members of the body suffer if one is

injured, just as all rejoice if one receives glory. It is clear from vv. 26–27 that Paul uses the image and analogy of the physical body and its members to drive home that Christians are interdependent and constitute a synergetic community, the one body of Christ. They have received diverse gifts from the one Spirit and therefore have different functions. The whole argument ends effectively in vv. 29–30 with seven rhetorical questions, each one demanding a negative answer. Not only are there different gifts, but also different functions and ministries that must be used for "the common good."

13:1–14:1a
In Praise of *Agape* Love

This chapter, Paul's praise of *agape* (Gk., "love") as a female personification, is of high literary quality and may seek to replace the female figure of Wisdom as the center of Corinthian spirituality. The section has a rhythmic prose structure consisting of three sections: vv. 1–3 contrast *Agape* with other spiritual gifts, vv. 4–7 spell out what *Agape* does, and vv. 8–13 elaborate her permanence. Since this "hymn to *Agape*" is very well composed, it might have been written separately and inserted at this point to function as a rhetorical digression.

1 Cor. 13:1–3 repeats three times the refrain, "If I have . . . but not love, I am . . ." This section contrasts love with the spiritual gifts of speaking in tongues, prophecy, knowledge of mysteries, miracle-working faith, almsgiving, and self-sacrifice to assert the superiority of love. Verses 4–7 describe the deeds of *Agape* in three steps. First, we have two positive descriptions of *Agape* as patient and kind. Paul then elaborates in eight negatives what *Agape* is not. She is not jealous, boastful, arrogant, rude, irritable, or resentful, nor does she insist on her own way or rejoice at wrong. Finally, v. 7 states five positive ways in which *Agape* acts. *Agape* rejoices in truth, supports, believes, hopes, and endures all things. These characterizations of the deeds of *Agape* exalt traditional feminine virtues.

1 Cor. 13:8–14:1a returns to the theme of the superiority of *Agape*, but explicates the contrast between *Agape* and spiritual gifts as the contrast between permanence and transience. Whereas the spiritual gifts that are partial or incomplete will pass away when the complete wholeness comes, *Agape* will not. The contrast is between partial and complete, not between perfect and imperfect. Since the Greek word for "whole, perfect" also can mean "mature," the following reference to childhood/adulthood is a reference back to chaps. 1–4. The spiritual gifts, valuable in themselves, will be left behind when the eschatological wholeness that is *Agape* arrives (v. 11). Such an eschatological tension is suggested by the contrast between now and then in v. 12. Mirrors, or looking glasses, were produced in Corinth. They were made of polished bronze or silver and therefore gave a dim, distorted reflection. Paul compares such an "imperfect reflection" with the face-to-face vision of divine reality that will do away with our present imperfect, human way of knowing. In the interim time, however, when speaking in tongues and other prophetic gifts are incomplete, three gifts remain: faith, hope, and love, but *Agape* stands supreme as the most excellent gift. Therefore, the whole praise of *Agape* climaxes in the exhortation to "make *Agape* your aim" (14:1a), which is at the same time a transition to the next section.

14:1b–40
Spiritual Gifts: Prophecy and Speaking in Tongues

With 14:1b Paul returns to the topic of the gifts of the Spirit (cf. 12:31). He does not want to be misunderstood as implying that Christians ought not to strive for the gifts of the Spirit. After having lauded the primacy of love, he now gives first place to prophecy. This emphasis on "seek to prophesy" functions as an inclusion (vv. 1b and 39) that holds the whole chapter together. The chapter can be divided into five subsections (14:1b–5, 6–12, 13–19, 20–25, 26–36). It concludes with a summary statement in 14:37–40.

The first section, 14:1b–5, formulates communicability as a criterion for the evaluation of the spiritual gifts of speaking in tongues and prophecy. Although Paul wishes that all could speak in tongues, he values prophecy higher because it contributes more to the building up of the community. Those who speak in tongues have received this gift for their own spiritual uplift, whereas those who prophesy edify, comfort, and teach the whole assembly. Because of its communal, communicative character, Paul accords prophetic speaking first place.

After Paul has made his basic point in the preceding section, he now illustrates it in 14:6–12 with three examples why speech must be intelligible. As a first example Paul points to himself, arguing that the Corinthians would not benefit if he were to speak in tongues only. Then he refers to musical instruments. Nobody will be able to recognize the tune that is played on the harp and the flute or to follow the call of the bugle if individual notes are not played distinctly. Finally, he uses foreign languages as an illustration. If people do not know each other's language they remain strangers. The whole section concludes with the exhortation to strive for those spiritual gifts that contribute to the building up of community.

Verses 13–19 explicate some consequences for those who speak in tongues. If someone speaks in tongues, that person should also pray for the gift of interpretation. Three conclusions are drawn for Christian praying and worship. First, prayer not only should be ecstatic, but also should be fruitful for the mind or reason. Further, the community is forced into the role of "the outsider" by such ecstatic prayer, because it does

not know when to respond and ratify such prayer. Finally, Paul refers again to his own example. Although he speaks more in tongues than any of the Corinthians, he prefers to say five understandable words of instruction rather than thousands of words in tongues that no one can understand.

The section 14:20–25 draws out the implications for the missionary situation. After an exhortation to be mature in intelligence but mere infants in wickedness, Paul quotes Scripture (Isa. 28:11–12) in support of his argument that tongues are ineffective as a means of missionary communication. Trance and ecstatic speech serve as a sign of spiritual endowment for unbelievers but not for those who have faith, whereas prophecy is proof of spiritual status for believers but not for unbelievers. Moreover, if all in the Christian assembly were to speak in tongues and an unbelieving outsider happened to come to their meeting, such a person would judge them to be frenzied soothsayers. Prophecy, to the contrary, is able to convict and judge such unbelieving outsiders as well as to lay their innermost thoughts open so that they will worship, recognizing God among the assembled community.

The general statement in v. 26 introduces a new section (14:26–36) in which Paul applies the insights articulated in the previous discussion to the Corinthian situation. It sums up in a general maxim Paul's instruction: everything in the ecclesial assembly should happen for edification. The whole section is clearly structured. It articulates rules for people who speak in tongues (vv. 27–28), prophets (vv. 29–33), and women or wives (vv. 34–36) that are similar in form. General sentences of regulation (vv. 27, 29, 34) are complemented by sentences that concretize them (vv. 28, 30, 35).

The last two regulations are structurally different insofar as they are expanded with supporting reasons for the regulation (vv. 31–32, 34a, 35b). Moreover, it is debated whether the general sentence in v. 29 is the heading for both or whether it applies only to the second regulation. The third regulation ends with a double rhetorical question that at the same time concludes all three examples. Such a close reading indicates that vv. 34–36 are not a secondary interpolation but structurally well integrated in the present context.

The first regulation (vv. 27–28) insists that speaking in tongues should be done in good order and be accompanied by interpretation. If no one is around to interpret, then speakers in tongues "should be silent in the assembly" and use their gift privately for their own edification.

The second regulation (vv. 29–33) demands that not more than two or three prophets should speak at the same time and they should let the others weigh their prophetic message. If another prophet receives a revelation, then the first prophetic speaker "should be silent." Two reasons are given. First, prophetic speaking needs to be done in good order so that all can benefit from it. Second, prophetic inspirations are to be controlled by the prophets because God is a God of peace and not of confusion.

The third regulation is the most debated because it is not quite clear what special case is in mind. Is silence demanded from all women in the assembly, does it apply to the special case of women glossolalists and prophets, or are women prevented from evaluating the prophets' message? Since the Greek term for woman can be translated as "woman" or as "wife" it is also not clear whether the regulation applies only to a special class of women. What is clear, however, is that silence is demanded in a special case. Just as people who speak in tongues, women and men, and prophets, women and men, are told to be silent in certain circumstances, so wives are told to be silent. As v. 35 suggests, the regulation applies not to all women members of the community or even to all women endowed with spiritual gifts, but to wives.

Moreover, the text does not refer to speaking in tongues, to prophetic speaking, or to critical evaluation, but to speaking in the *ekklesia*, the public assembly. Verse 34b is then best understood to express the Greco-Roman sentiment and legal regulations for the subordination of wives and against public speeches and demonstrations by matrons. Finally, the prohibition does not apply in general to any speaking of wives, but only to their raising of questions and entering into discussions in the public assembly of the community. Yet such a prohibition deprives wives of their full citizenship in the *ekklesia*, the assembly of full citizens, whose crucial task is to question, debate, and decide the affairs of the community. The concluding rhetorical questions in v. 36 indicate that Paul does not expect that this injunction will be accepted without protest by the Corinthian community, which knows of wives as leading Christian missionaries. This is also evident from Paul's appeal to the authority of the *Kyrios* in v. 37 and his threat in v. 38. Verses 39–40 reiterate Paul's main point in chap. 14: the Corinthians should strive for the spiritual gift of prophecy and not prevent speaking in tongues. Paul's major concern is decency and order.

15:1–57
Life in Christ, the Resurrected One

An analysis of 1 Cor. 15 indicates that it is a unit of thought held together in the form of an inclusion (vv. 1–2 and v. 58: "brothers [and sisters] . . . in vain"). Verses 1–11 form the basis of the argumentation. Verses 12–34 address the argument of "some" in the community that there is no resurrection of the dead, but a resurrection of living people only, whereas vv. 35–57 discuss the question in which form the dead are to be resurrected—a problem raised by "someone" whom Paul calls a fool.

15:1–11, Foundation of Paul's Argument. In this section Paul seeks to establish that he is a member of the apostolic circle and shares in its authority. This argumentative unit, which forms an inclusion (vv. 1–2 and v. 11: "preached . . . believed"), can be divided into three sections.

First, in vv. 1–2 Paul draws attention to the gospel that he preached in Corinth, that they have received, by which they live, and through which they are saved if they hold firmly to it. However, Paul is uncertain whether their faith is genuine (v. 3).

Second, in vv. 3–8 Paul reiterates the gospel that he has preached to them by quoting (cf. 11:23) a traditional creedal formula in vv. 3b–5 that he expands in vv. 6–8. This traditional gospel stresses that Christ died, was buried, was raised, and was made visible or appeared. The statement that "he appeared" occurs actually or by implication six times. Whereas Paul rhetorically states that he is the last one of those who have experienced a resurrection appearance, the structure of the text marks Christ's appearance to Paul as the climax of the whole series. This point is developed in the third unit (vv. 10–11). Paul rhetorically asserts that he is the least of the apostles. At the same time he makes it clear that he is the most dedicated and hardest working of all the apostles. Yet he plays this down by pointing to the grace of God. Paul thus seeks to show that he is a member of the apostolic "we group" to whom the kerygma ("the proclaimed message") is entrusted (→ Kerygma). In the process he does not mention the historical women witnesses to the resurrection.

15:12–34, The Argument of "Some." This segment proceeds in three steps. First, vv. 12–19 address the argument of some who "say there is no resurrection of the dead." They are contrasted with the apostles, who proclaim Christ as raised from the dead. It is debated whether the "some" denied the resurrection of the dead as such or only the resurrection of those who have died before the glorious return of Christ. However, if there is no resurrection of the dead (v. 12), four conclusions must be drawn: (1) Christ has not been raised (vv. 13, 16); (2) Paul's preaching is misleading and nullified (vv. 14, 15); (3) the faith of the Corinthians is in vain and they are still in their sins and deserve pity (vv. 14, 17, 19); and (4) those who have died in Christ have perished (v. 18). Whereas in Corinth both the kerygma "Christ was raised" and the statement "There is no [general] resurrection from the dead" could be held alongside each other, Paul relates them as statements exclusive of each other by adding "from the dead" to the traditional kerygma.

Second, after having pointed out the fatal consequences of this opinion for the dead and the living, Paul positively develops what the resurrection of Christ means (vv. 20–28). Christ is the "first fruit of those who have fallen asleep." Christ's resurrection as the first in a whole series is constitutive for all those following (vv. 20–22). Verse 23 establishes the temporal order of the eschatological events that are elaborated in vv. 24–28: first, Christ's resurrection and enthronement, then the resurrection of the dead at his Parousia, and finally, after having overcome all domination and evil powers, Christ will give up reign and power to God who will be "all in all." The resurrection of Christ and that of the dead are not independent theological data, but are integrated as an indissoluble causal and temporal whole in the salvific plan of God for the world.

Third, vv. 29–34 are a chain of argumentation that takes up a position similar to vv. 12–19. In four rhetorical questions Paul appeals to the affective side of his readers by pointing to the futility of their and his actions if there were no resurrection of the dead. The first two rhetorical questions refer to the practice of the Corinthians to undergo baptism vicariously for their dead in the hope of saving them (v. 29). More than thirty interpretations have been proposed to explain this practice, but none is satisfactory. Paul does not question the merits of it, but refers to it to elucidate his point.

The last two rhetorical questions refer to the futility of Paul's missionary sufferings and underline once more the absurdity of Christian lifestyle and practice if the dead are not raised (vv. 30–32). The whole series of *ad hominem* arguments concludes with two very sharp admonitions: "Do not be deceived" and "Become sober and do not sin!"

15:35–57, The Argument of "Someone." Paul here adopts the style of the diatribe discussion and posits a fictitious objector. The whole argument proceeds in two steps.

First, vv. 35–49 are subdivided by "so" into a comparison or simile (vv. 36–41) and an application (vv. 42–49) that seeks to reply to the objection of "someone" who might argue that if the dead are raised then they must have bodies. How and with what kind of body will the dead be raised (v. 35)? Paul's response first reminds the readers of the differences and commonalities between the seed and plant. Many different plants come from seeds that look very much alike. There are many different kinds of "flesh" (v. 39), of "body" (v. 40a), and of "glory" (vv. 40b–41). Just as the "bare kernel" of wheat and other grain is contrasted with the "future body" (vv. 37–38), so the "earthly bodies or flesh" of humans, animals, birds, and fish are contrasted with the qualitatively different "heavenly bodies or glory" of sun, moon, and stars (vv. 39–41). We sow "the bare kernel," which dies, but it is made alive again by God in its "new body," the fruit.

Verses 42–44 apply this insight in four antithetical parallelisms to the "resurrection of the dead." The two verbs "sown" and "raised," which are repeated four times, speak of two successive events. The present body, which is characterized as perishable, dishon-

orable, weak, and physical, will be changed into the resurrected body, characterized as imperishable, glorious, powerful, and spiritual. This argument is bolstered by a reference to Scripture. According to the first-century Jewish writer Philo, the "first Adam" was made in the image of God (Gen. 1:27), while the second was made of dust and endowed with a "living soul" (Gen. 2:7). Paul corrects this sequence—by stating that the "spiritual" Adam, Christ, did not come first, but the one of dust—to adapt the text to his argument for successive, qualitatively different stages. Just as we participate in the nature and image of the first Adam made of dust, so will we share in the nature and image of the final Adam, the life-giving Spirit.

Second, vv. 50–58 emphasize the need for transformation. Whereas the preceding section consisted of antithetical statements, this concluding section begins with a direct address. Having shown that it is possible to conceive of a resurrection body, Paul now declares that a body different from our present one is necessary for the resurrection status. Such a qualitatively different body is no longer subject to the power of death. Whereas in baptism believers have been freed from the power of sin and of the law, in the Parousia they will be freed from the power of death. Therefore, Paul breaks out into a thanksgiving to God who gives final victory over death through Jesus Christ. Paul ends this chapter with an admonition to the Corinthian Christians to be steadfast in the gospel (v. 58), undertaking the work of Christ in the knowledge that their labors are not futile.

16:1–24
Concluding Arguments

This last portion of the Letter contains a mixture of information and exhortations as well as personal plans and greetings that alludes to previous arguments. Paul's instructions in 16:1–4 seek to organize the collection for the church in Jerusalem. Paul seems to be very cautious, possibly to avoid the accusation that he might misuse some of the funds.

Paul refers twice to issues raised by the community (vv. 1, 12) and underlines the importance of the members of Stephanas's household as missionary coworkers. The household of Stephanas was the first converted in Achaia, and they devoted themselves to communal ministry. Paul underscores their authority when he admonishes the Corinthians to "subordinate" themselves to them and every missionary co-worker. Verse 12 is the last explicit reference to an inquiry from Corinth and alludes to the issue at hand. Paul concedes that he was not able to persuade Apollos to visit them now. He indirectly acknowledges the independence of Apollos when he says that Apollos will come when an opportunity arises.

After having sent greetings from all the churches of Asia, from the missionary pair Aquila and Prisca (usually mentioned first!) and their house-church, and from all Christians (v. 20), Paul writes greetings with his own hand (v. 21), probably having dictated the rest of the Letter. He admonishes the Corinthians to greet each other with a holy kiss (v. 20b) and concludes with a blessing (vv. 23–24). Before this final blessing he introduces two formulas derived from the earliest Christian liturgy, the *anathema* (Gk., "accursed") and the Aramaic invocation *maranatha* ("Our Lord, come" or "Our Lord has come"). Unusual in this Letter ending is the addition of "*Agape*" to the wish of grace.

Bibliography

Beardslee, W. A. *First Corinthians*. St. Louis, MO: Chalice Press, 1994.

Conzelmann, H. *1 Corinthians*. Translated by J. W. Leitch. Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1975.

Hays, R. B. *First Corinthians*. Interpretation: A Bible Commentary for Preaching and Teaching. Louisville, KY: John Knox, 1997.

Horsley, R. A. *1 Corinthians*. Abingdon New Testament Commentaries. Nashville, TN: Abingdon Press, 1998.

Theissen, G. *The Social Setting of Pauline Christianity: Essays on Corinth*. Edited, translated, and with an introduction by J. H. Schütz. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1982.

Wire, A. "1 Corinthians." In E. Schüssler-Fiorenza, ed., *Searching the Scriptures. A Feminist Commentary*. New York: Crossroad, 1994. Pp. 153–95.

2 Corinthians

VICTOR PAUL FURNISH

INTRODUCTION

Literary Form and Structure

2 Corinthians is generally similar in form and structure to the other Pauline Letters. After the epistolary prescript (1:1–2) and blessing (1:3–11), an extended central section takes up various matters of concern to the writer and his readers (1:12–13:10), following which there is the usual epistolary closing (13:11–13).

Certain peculiarities and difficulties become apparent, however, when one attempts a more detailed structural analysis of the body of the Letter. First, it is not immediately clear how the discussion of apostleship in 2:14–7:4 is related to the references to Paul's visit in Macedonia that precede and follow it in 2:12–13 and 7:5–7. Second, the form, style, and content of the admonitions in 6:14–7:1 are not easy to reconcile with the rest of the Letter or with other Pauline exhortations. Third, there is a certain redundancy in the discussion of the collection for the church in Jerusalem (chaps. 8–9). Finally, the expressions of frustration and sometimes scathing rhetoric of 10:1–13:10 are quite unexpected after the expressions of confidence and the tactful, carefully reasoned remarks in chaps. 1–9.

These and related difficulties have led many interpreters to conclude that our canonical 2 Corinthians is actually a combination of materials drawn from two or more originally independent Pauline letters, put together by an early editor, who perhaps also added some non-Pauline material. Thus, some read chaps. 1–9 and chaps. 10–13 as two separate letters (e.g., Barrett, Furnish, Martin), while others find as many as five or six letters represented here (e.g., Betz, who identifies five: 1:1–2:13 + 7:5–16 + 13:11–14; 2:14–6:13 + 7:2–4; chap. 8; chap. 9; and 10:1–13:10). Although a few have argued that 6:14–7:1 is a fragment of yet another Pauline letter, the majority of scholars either leave it in place or else regard it as non-Pauline material inserted by a later editor. Some commentators, however (e.g., Barnett), believe that all of these "partition theories" are unwarranted and unnecessary; and indeed there is no specific evidence that 2 Corinthians was known in the early church in any other form than the one we have. Nevertheless, as will become apparent below in the comments on various specific passages, many of the obscurities and difficulties of this Letter would be cleared up if in fact a very early editor of the apostle's letters was responsible for the form in which it was received into the church's canon.

That various literary genres and rhetorical styles have been identified within 2 Corinthians is not in itself an argument for its composite nature, but in certain instances it may lend support to one or another of the partition hypotheses. Thus, although 2 Corinthians as a whole certainly belongs to the epistolary genre (→ Letter), chaps. 8 and 9 have been identified more particularly as "administrative letters" (see Betz, esp. pp. 129–40) and 2:24–6:13 + 7:2–4 and chaps. 10–13 as "apologetic" letters (see Betz, p. 143). Various styles are also evident in 2 Corinthians. For example, the style in 2:14–7:16 as a whole tends to be that of a teacher, while that of chaps. 10–13 is emphatically disputatious (exhibiting such literary devices as irony, parody, and self-display, often used by Greco-Roman writers against their opponents); and at certain points the style is specifically expository, as in 3:7–18, where, in the course of his discussion, the apostle offers an interpretation of Exodus 34.

As dependent as Paul is on various rhetorical conventions of his day, his own sense of apostolic vocation, specifically his sense of apostolic responsibility for the Christians of Corinth, has also influenced the form and style of 2 Corinthians (however many letters it represents). To understand Paul's apostolic concerns here, one must obtain as clear a picture as the evidence will allow of the circumstances that prompted him to write as he does and of the full extent of his Corinthian correspondence.

Paul's Letters to Corinth

It is clear that our "1 Corinthians" is at least Paul's second letter to the Corinthian church, because in 1 Cor. 5:9–11 he himself refers to an earlier one as having been misunderstood. That earlier letter, probably his first to the Corinthians, seems not to have survived, although a few interpreters identify 2 Cor. 6:14–7:1 as a fragment of it. There is no way of determining where it was sent from, but it must have been written sometime between the conclusion of the apostle's first visit (A.D. 51 or 52) and the writing of 1 Corinthians (*see* 1 Corinthians, Introduction; → Corinthians, The First Letter of Paul to the).

We must also reckon with Paul's remark in 2 Corinthians about a letter he wrote "out of an exceedingly troubled, anguished heart . . . through many tears" (2:4; cf. vv. 3, 9). Although some interpreters believe that the reference is to 1 Corinthians, most believe that the difficulties with this traditional view are virtually insurmountable. Accordingly, many have argued that most of the tearful letter is preserved in chaps. 10–13 of 2 Corinthians, while others think it more likely that it has not survived at all, even in part.

How many letters Paul wrote to Corinth beyond these three depends on whether 2 Corinthians is a single letter or a composite of two or more and, if it is a composite, how many separate letters it represents. The analysis preferred in this commentary identifies parts of only two letters in 2 Corinthians, the earlier represented by chaps. 1–9 (or, perhaps, chaps. 1–8 with chap. 9 as a separate note) and the later by chaps. 10–13. One can better understand the occasion and purpose of each of these when they are set within the broader context of Paul's Corinthian ministry as a whole.

Paul's Corinthian Ministry

Various reconstructions of the course of Paul's Corinthian ministry are possible. The following outline of his dealings with the congregation prior to the writing of 2 Corinthians should be compared with different, but equally plausible, reconstructions offered by other interpreters.

The apostle's initial visit to Corinth (1 Cor. 2:1–5), during at least part of which his associates Silvanus and Timothy were also present (2 Cor. 1:19), probably took place early in the year A.D. 50 or 51. By the time he departed—according to Acts 18:11, some eighteen months later—he had succeeded in establishing a congregation in this important city (→ Corinth). The letter mentioned in 1 Cor. 5:9–11, written sometime after 51 or 52, counseled the congregation to tolerate no immorality in its midst; but at least some of the Corinthians misunderstood this to mean that they should separate themselves even from non-Christians. This may be designated *Letter A*.

In response to a letter from the Corinthians and to reports of troubles within their congregation, Paul sent Timothy, probably by way of Macedonia, to remind them of the gospel by and to which they had been converted (1 Cor. 4:17; 16:10–11). Our 1 Corinthians was apparently sent simultaneously (perhaps in 54 or 55), although the apostle expected that it would be received in advance of Timothy's arrival. In this letter, which would be *Letter B*, the apostle answers a number of questions posed by the Corinthians, offers additional instruction, and requests a warm welcome for Timothy.

Subsequent to Timothy's mission, Paul himself evidently paid a brief emergency visit to the congregation, although the evidence for this is only circumstantial. First, the references in 2 Cor. 12:14; 13:1 to an impending third visit presume that Paul has been in Corinth on some occasion since the eighteen-month visit during which the church was founded. And second, the statement in 2 Cor. 2:1 that he had decided against paying the congregation "another sorrowful visit" presumes that one visit had in fact been "sorrowful." Since nothing in 1 Corinthians suggests that Paul would have described his first visit this way, it is probable that a second visit is in view. From what he says in 2 Cor. 2:2–11 and then later in 7:12 it appears that this second visit was unpleasant, because the apostle had been grievously offended by some fellow Christian.

One may plausibly suppose that the tearful letter (2 Cor. 2:4) was written in the wake of the traumatic experience of Paul's second visit. To judge from the remarks in 2 Cor. 2:2–11 and 7:5–12, in this letter Paul chastised the congregation for not supporting him and for not disciplining the person who had offended him. This would be *Letter C*.

The tearful letter may have been carried to Corinth by Titus, one of Paul's associates. In any event, Titus arrived in time to observe the effectiveness of that letter in moving the congregation to repent and to renew its allegiance to Paul and his gospel (2 Cor. 7:7).

Titus's subsequent report to Paul, delivered at a meeting somewhere in Macedonia, was a great relief to the apostle (2 Cor. 7:5–7, 13–16). It would appear from 2 Cor. 8:6, 16–24 that Titus was then sent to Corinth a second time, perhaps almost immediately, to further the cause of the Pauline collection for Jerusalem. In this instance he was accompanied by two others (whose names are not given).

Chapters 1–9

If one identifies chaps. 10–13 with the tearful letter mentioned in 2 Cor. 2:4, then chaps. 1–9 (or some portion of them) may be described as "a letter of reconciliation" written after the problems addressed in chaps. 10–13 had been successfully resolved. A number of interpreters hold to this view. Others, however, argue that chaps. 1–9 must have been written before chaps. 10–13. If this is the case, then chaps. 10–13 cannot be identified with the tearful letter, and the situation in Corinth must have deteriorated markedly after chaps. 1–9 were written.

The second of these two views is the one adopted in this commentary. Thus, chaps. 1–9 would constitute the apostle's fourth letter to Corinth, *Letter D*. It was occasioned by Titus's report that Paul's tearful letter of reprimand has been effective: the congregation now regrets that it had failed to support Paul in his con-

frontation with an offending brother and has taken strong disciplinary action against him. Cheered by this good news, the apostle writes to assure the Corinthians of his confidence in them and takes the opportunity to renew his earlier appeal (see 1 Cor. 16:1–4) that they make a contribution to the fund he has promised to collect for the Christians of Jerusalem (→ Contribution for the Saints).

It would appear, however, that Titus had also brought word about certain persons who, having intruded themselves into the Corinthian congregation, were seeking to undermine Paul's authority. Thus, Letter D is also, in part, Paul's response to insinuations that his apostleship is not completely legitimate and that he has not been entirely straightforward in his dealings with the Corinthians.

This letter was written from Macedonia (2 Cor. 7:5) and was probably delivered to the congregation by Titus on the occasion of his second visit (2 Cor. 8:16–17). It can be dated approximately to 55 or 56, some five years after the founding of the congregation.

Chapters 10–13

It is probable that chaps. 10–13 *(Letter E)* were also written in Macedonia, but some months after Letter D. During these months the anti-Pauline movement in the city must have made substantial headway, because in this letter the apostle does not hesitate to express his outrage at those who, in his view, would deceive and exploit his congregation. The Corinthians are urged to reject the false charges with which they have vilified Paul and the false claims with which they have tried to establish their own authority in place of his.

In this letter, anticipating his impending third visit to Corinth (2 Cor. 12:14; 13:1), Paul warns that he is prepared to deal harshly with any who have not heeded his appeals. The most striking feature of the letter is his assuming the persona of "a fool" in order to mock the pretentious boasting of his opponents. Unlike them, he does not boast of superior religious status and attainments, but only of his weakness and suffering (2 Cor. 11:1–12:13).

Paul's Letter to the Romans, probably written from Corinth, provides indirect evidence that Letter E had the desired results and that the apostle was generally well received when he visited Corinth for the third (and last) time. He informs the Romans that he is presently en route to Jerusalem with the collection, to which the Christians of Macedonia and Achaia have contributed (Rom. 15:25–26). Since Corinth was the capital city of Achaia, it would appear that the Corinthians were among the contributors to the fund. If so, then one must suppose that they had once again acknowledged the legitimacy of Paul's apostleship and their own status as a congregation under his direction.

Significance of the Letters

The two letters that constitute canonical 2 Corinthians are important both historically and theologically. Historically, they are major sources of our knowledge about one of Paul's most prominent congregations and about the challenges and issues he faced as a missionary and pastoral leader. They allow glimpses of how he was perceived by his harshest critics and, more directly, of how he wished to be perceived. They add greatly to our understanding of the importance he assigned to his collection for Jerusalem and to the administration of that, of the opposition with which he was frequently confronted, of how he dealt with controversy, and of the way he employed the services of his co-workers Timothy and Titus.

Although "doctrinal" matters are not taken up for their own sake, these two letters are no less rich in theological insight than in historical information. Common to them both is Paul's insistence that his readers must understand apostleship and evaluate anyone who professes to be an apostle only with reference to the gospel. In reflecting on the meaning of that gospel, he is led to remark on such fundamental matters as the relationship of the new covenant to the old, the significance of Christ's death, the new creation, the Spirit, how God's power is manifest in weakness, and how the believer's life is both graced by God's love and claimed for obedience to God.

COMMENTARY

1:1–2
Epistolary Prescript

According to the ancient conventions of letter writing, a prescript includes a superscription, which names the sender (rarely more than one), an adscription, which specifies the addressee(s), and a salutation, which conveys a word of greeting. It is unlikely that Timothy, apparently with the apostle in Macedonia, participated in the actual writing of the Letter. By naming him, Paul lets the Corinthians know that Timothy, too, is concerned for them and endorses what the Letter contains. Paul intends the Letter to circulate beyond Corinth proper, to Christians who live elsewhere in the province (→ Achaia).

1:3–11
Blessing

In his other Letters, Paul mentions his "thanksgiving" to God for the congregation he is addressing (e.g.,

1 Cor. 1:4–9). Although that element is not lacking here (v. 11), the emphasis is on God's having comforted both the apostle and the Corinthians in the midst of afflictions (vv. 3–6). His reference to a life-threatening situation in Asia (vv. 8–11) may be to some experience in Ephesus (note 1 Cor. 15:32; 16:8–9; *see* Philippians, Introduction; → Ephesus).

1:12–13:10
Assurances, Instructions, Warnings

If, as seems probable, 2 Corinthians is a composite of at least two originally independent letters, the body of the letter introduced by 1:1–11 would be much less extensive. According to one hypothesis (see Betz), it would include only 1:12–2:13 and 7:5–16; according to another (see Furnish), it would extend at least through chap. 8 and perhaps through chap. 9.

1:12–2:13
Assurances of Concern

There are at least some in Corinth who suspect that Paul has not dealt with their congregation in an entirely straightforward manner. The opening paragraphs are designed to allay these suspicions.

1:12–14, Introductory Plea. The apostle urges his readers to be open to his explanations of actions that may have seemed thoughtless, or worse. His own conscience is clear, for he is confident that he has been guided by God's grace, "not by any ordinary wisdom" (v. 12).

1:15–17, About the Visits. Paul had planned to spend the winter in Ephesus and then, after Pentecost, to go to Macedonia. From there he intended to proceed to Corinth and then, should it be necessary, to accompany a delegation that was to deliver the offering he had collected for the Christians in Jerusalem (1 Cor. 16:1–9). Apparently, however, he has twice changed his plans since then, to the consternation of some in Corinth. The first change was to allow him two visits to Corinth, one before and another following his time in Macedonia (vv. 15–16). But that plan, too, was somehow changed, so that now he must respond to suggestions that he is acting irresponsibly, and perhaps even opportunistically (v. 17).

1:18–22, God's Faithfulness. Paul first defends the changes in his plans by reminding his readers of the faithfulness of the God whom he serves and that all of God's promises will ultimately be fulfilled in Jesus Christ. The Corinthians themselves affirm this whenever they join in the "Amen" of Christian worship (v. 20), and through the Spirit given at their baptism they have already experienced the reality of it (v. 22).

1:23–2:11, The "Sorrowful Visit." The Corinthians are to understand that Paul canceled a projected visit because he wanted to spare them another like the one he now describes as "sorrowful" (2:1). What little can be known about that visit must be pieced together from the present passage and comments in 7:8–12. The apostle seems to have had some unpleasant encounter with a member of the congregation, which was the more painful for him because the congregation neither rallied to his support nor reprimanded the offending brother. Subsequently, rather than return to Corinth as planned, he sent a letter that had been written "through many tears" (2:3–4) and that moved the Corinthians to take disciplinary action. Now, having learned that his adversary has been banished from the congregation, Paul advises that he be forgiven and restored to fellowship (2:5–11); the apostle's interest is not in retaliation, but in reconciliation.

2:12–13, Coming to Macedonia. Paul was so anxious for news from Corinth that when Titus failed to arrive in Troas with a report from there, the apostle hurried on to meet him in Macedonia. Now their meeting has taken place, and it is from Titus that Paul has learned about the good effect of the tearful letter (2:3–4; 7:6–7). Many interpreters believe that 2:13 was followed originally by 7:5, since the meeting with Titus is also in view in 7:5–16 and the discussion in 2:14–7:4 seems to have a different focus.

2:14–5:19
Comments on Apostleship

Because questions are being raised about his apostolic standing and credentials, Paul wants his congregation to understand what distinguishes the true apostle. (Since the theme of reconciliation is present in the appeal of 5:20 as well as in the affirmations of 5:18–19, most commentaries do not separate these verses, even for the purpose of analysis.)

2:14–3:6, Spreading the Gospel. A striking image for apostolic service is implicit in the exclamation of 2:14a, "Thanks be to God, who in Christ always puts us on display . . ." In the Greek term translated by the last four words, Paul's readers would have recognized an allusion to the Roman "triumphs," elaborate processions sponsored by the emperor to celebrate particularly important military victories. Since the ones "on display" were the prisoners of war, paraded in chains through the streets, it must be with them and not with their triumphant captors that one is to identify the apostles. The indignities and adversities that apostles experience serve to advance the gospel (vv. 14b–16), because through them the saving death of Jesus is given a presence in the world (see 4:7–12). Sharply contrasting views are held by those referred to in 2:17a and 3:1, would-be apostles who are compared to hucksters

peddling their wares in the marketplace. Paul does not require the kind of testimonial letters they carry; there is no better evidence of the authenticity of his gospel and the legitimacy of his apostleship than the existence of a church in Corinth, established through his ministry (3:2–3).

3:7–18, The Ministry of the New Covenant. The contrast between "the letter" that "kills" and "the Spirit" that "gives life" (3:6; cf. v. 3) is now developed (for the imagery, see esp. Exod. 31:18; Ezek. 11:19–20; 36:26–27). The story of Moses' descent from Mount Sinai (Exod. 34:29–35) figures prominently here, and some interpreters hold that Paul is setting his reading of the passage over against that offered by people in Corinth who have challenged his apostolic credentials. His chief intention, however, is to explain why his is the ministry of a *new* covenant (3:6). He identifies the old covenant (v. 14) with the law chiseled on the stone tablets that Moses received on Sinai (v. 7), and he characterizes it as leading to condemnation (v. 9). Those who serve the law are therefore engaged in a "ministry of death" (v. 7). This old covenant is replaced by the gospel of Christ (v. 14), which leads to life. Those who, like Paul, serve this gospel are engaged in "the ministry of the Spirit" (v. 7) and "of righteousness" (vv. 8–9). In vv. 12–13 the covering that Moses placed over his face (see Exod. 34:33–35) is interpreted as evidence that the old covenant "is being set aside" (NRSV). In vv. 14–15 it becomes a metaphor for the spiritual blindness of those who remain bound to the law. When one "turns to the Lord" in faith, however, one is freed from the law, for "where the Spirit of the Lord is, is freedom" (vv. 16–17; cf. Rom. 7:6; 8:2–8, 14–16; Gal. 4:21–5:14). The "image" in whom the Lord's glory is brilliantly mirrored (v. 18a) is Christ (see 4:4), and it is into the new life bestowed in him that those who see with the eyes of faith are even now being transformed (v. 18b).

4:1–6, "Jesus Christ as Lord." Paul's emphasis here on the candor with which he conducts his ministry (vv. 1–4) may be prompted by his concern about rival apostles in Corinth who charged him with acting in underhanded ways, even misrepresenting the gospel. Moreover, unlike them he does not center his message on himself; rather, he preaches nothing but "Jesus Christ as Lord" (v. 5, echoing the early creedal affirmation, "Jesus is Lord," Rom. 10:9; 1 Cor. 12:3; Phil. 2:10–11). Indeed, the Corinthians are to understand that Paul considers himself their "slave" (cf. 1:24; 12:15), quite unlike his competitors, whom he will later accuse of exploiting the congregation (11:20). The readers themselves can confirm this, for it is by Paul's preaching that the light of the gospel has dawned in their lives (v. 6, with an allusion to Gen. 1:3; cf. 2 Cor. 4:4).

4:7, A Treasure in Clay Pots. Like clay pots, those who bear the gospel treasure are fragile and vulnerable, that through them God's transcendent power might be evident. The truth of this must have been recently reinforced for Paul when, overcome with a sense of helplessness in the face of some mortal danger in Asia, he was led to a profound experience of God's power (see 1:8–11). This same paradox is involved in his understanding of the gospel itself, which he identifies with God's power for salvation (Rom. 1:16) as well as with Jesus' death on the cross (1 Cor. 1:17–2:5). Although the world regards the cross as a sign of weakness, Paul can identify it with God's saving power, because he associates that power with God's love and interprets Jesus' death as the definitive instance of that love (Rom. 5:6–11; cf. 2 Cor. 5:14). These ideas underlie everything Paul has to say about apostleship in 2 Corinthians.

4:8–15, Apostolic Tribulations. In support of the point in v. 7, Paul offers a list of typical apostolic tribulations (vv. 8–9; cf. 6:4c–5; 11:23b–29; 12:10; Rom. 8:35; 1 Cor. 4:9–13) he then interprets as manifestations of Jesus' death and resurrection life (vv. 10–15). Through the sufferings visited upon the apostles as they spend themselves for others (vv. 12, 15; cf. 12:15), the saving power of selfless, serving love is made concretely present in the world. In vv. 13–14, quoting Scripture (Ps. 115:1 in the Septuagint [LXX] Greek version; cf. 116:10 in the English), Paul emphasizes the apostles' resolve to bring faith to expression whatever the personal costs, for theirs is a confidence founded in the power of God. This view of weakness and sufferings as integral to an authentic apostolic witness sets Paul far apart from his rivals, who regard these as signs of religious inferiority, brazenly (note 10:12; 11:21b) claiming apostolic authority for themselves by reason of ethnic origin (11:22), religious superiority (e.g., 10:10; 11:23a), and rhetorical skills (11:5–6).

4:16–5:1, Boldness Despite Mortality. Resuming the affirmation of 4:1 (see also 3:4, 12; 4:13), Paul declares that despite adversities (4:8–9) and the certainty of death (5:1), true apostles boldly continue their service of the gospel. The "outer person" is one's mortal existence, which inevitably passes away; the "inner person" is one's identity as a child of God, which is constantly being reaffirmed (v. 16). One need not suppose, as many interpreters have, that the apostle's recent brush with death in Asia (see 1:8) has caused him to abandon his earlier expectation that he would live until Christ's return (see 1 Thess. 4:15, 17). It is likely that his remarks here are prompted less by threats to his life than by threats to his apostolic standing in Corinth. In 4:16–5:10 he seems to be responding to charges that if he were a legitimate apostle, he would not have to endure so many sufferings and hardships. Yet as he proceeds, he broadens his comments to apply to all believers: the whole community of faith may take heart in the confidence that the reality of God

transcends what can be seen and experienced in this life (4:17–18), and that beyond the common human experience of death, there is life with God (5:1).

5:2–5, The Sighing of the Spirit. As in Rom. 8:18–27, with which these verses may be compared, the human longing for release from the burden of mortality is associated with the presence of the Spirit, God's "down payment" on the eternal life for which one is destined (v. 5). There is an awkward mixing of metaphors here as the image of a heavenly dwelling (5:1–2) is replaced by the image of clothing (5:2–4), but both images point to the life with God that transcends mortal existence.

5:6–10, "At Home" with the Lord. As long as believers are bearing the burdens of mortal existence (5:2–4), they are in one sense away from their home with the Lord (v. 6). But when their conduct is guided by their faith in God's reality rather than by what has only the appearance of reality, they live in the confidence that even in this mortal life they belong to the Lord (vv. 7–9). Thus, believers are ultimately accountable to Christ for how they conduct themselves here and now (v. 10).

5:11–15, Living for Christ. The rivals to whom Paul has indirectly referred (2:17; 3:1) are once again in view in vv. 11–13. They have commended themselves by boasting of "what is outward" (public displays of ecstasy); Paul, however, wants the Corinthians to keep focused only on what the gospel itself has accomplished (cf. 3:2–3). True apostles are authenticated not by their "religious experiences," however impressive, but by their devotion to those to whom they have been sent with the gospel (v. 13). To support this point, Paul invokes a familiar creedal affirmation about Christ's death (vv. 14–15; cf. esp. 1 Cor. 15:3). The love bestowed in Christ's death "urges us on" (NRSV) in that it lays claim to the life of every human being (v. 14). Those who respond in faith, accepting life as a gift, have been delivered from the tyranny of an endless quest for status and honor, and freed for the service of others.

5:16–19, The Ministry of Reconciliation. In charging that Paul does not have the appearance, skills, or social status and that he cannot claim the achievements or religious experiences of a true apostle, his critics have shown that they judge others "from a human point of view" (v. 16a, NRSV), with reference to worldly standards. Paul rejects these standards, reminding his readers that he and they, as believers, no longer regard Christ as the world does (v. 16b). Indeed, those who are "in Christ" participate in a whole "new creation" (v. 17), a radically transformed order where Christ's love, instituted through the cross, is to govern all perception and every action (v. 14; cf. Gal. 6:14–15). The apostle closely associates this new creation with the reconciliation of the world and of all people to God (vv. 18–19). Here he calls once more (cf. vv. 14–15) upon a traditional formulation (v. 19ab; cf. Eph. 2:13–16; Col. 1:19–20), his own interpretation of which is evident in vv. 18–19c. "The ministry of reconciliation" (v. 18) is to be understood as that for which Christ's love claims the whole believing community, and "the word of reconciliation" (v. 19c) is the gospel itself, God's saving power made present through the cross.

5:20–7:3
Appeals About Reconciliation

The comments about reconciliation in 5:18–19 lead directly to the appeal of 5:20, and many commentators treat 5:18–21 (or, more inclusively, 5:16–6:2) as a closely knit unit. However, the shift from exposition in 2:14–5:19 to appeals in 5:20–9:15 is important.

5:20–6:2, Be Reconciled to God. Because they can affirm the reality of God's reconciling love in Christ, believers are both obliged and enabled to "*be* reconciled to God" (5:20). Here as elsewhere in the Pauline Letters, the appeal is based upon a preceding affirmation. These two together, the indicative and the imperative, constitute the "word of reconciliation" (5:19c), which the apostles and all believers, like ambassadors, have been commissioned to bear. There is nothing conditional about God's love; it is present (6:1–2, quoting Isa. 49:8) whether one acknowledges and responds to it or not. But since love is not coercive (cf. 1 Cor. 13:5), apart from one's response its transforming power cannot have concrete effect. The statement that Christ was "made to be sin" so that others "might become the righteousness of God" (5:21) echoes traditional Christian teaching (cf., e.g., Rom. 8:3; Gal. 3:13; 1 Pet. 2:24) and assigns to Christ a role not unlike that accorded to the suffering servant of God in Isaiah 53 (see esp. Isa. 53:4–9).

6:3–10, An Apostolic Resumé. The self-recommendation in these verses (see v. 4) is intended to support the appeals of 5:20–6:2, but it is very different from the kind of self-recommendation for which Paul has criticized certain rival apostles (see esp. the commentary above on 2:14–3:6; 5:11–15). Although he reminds the Corinthians that his ministry has been conducted with integrity and knowledge and in the power of God (6:6–7), he claims for himself no heroic achievements or awesome religious experiences. Instead, he writes primarily of the sufferings and indignities that he has to bear in the course of his apostolic labors (vv. 4c–5, 8–10; cf. 4:8–9).

6:11–7:3, Be Reconciled to Your Apostle. The appeals in 6:11–13 and 7:2–3 are related closely to those of 5:20–6:2, even though different words are used. If the

Corinthians are truly open to the reconciling love of God, then they will surely want to be as accepting of the apostle from whom they have received "the word of reconciliation" as he is of them. The admonitions of 6:14–7:1, which charge Christians to separate themselves from "unbelievers" (v. 14), are supported by a series of citations from Scripture: Lev. 26:12 (v. 16c); Isa. 52:11 (v. 17ab); Ezek. 20:34 (v. 17c); and 2 Sam. 7:14 (v. 18). A number of interpreters, noting parallels with the teachings of the Jewish sectarian community at Qumran (→ Scrolls, The Dead Sea), regard this exclusivism as un-Pauline (cf., e.g., 1 Cor. 5:9–10) and argue, further, that the summary exhortation in 7:1 is incompatible with the apostle's view of righteousness as a gift. Thus many conclude either that 6:14–7:1 was added by a later editor, or that Paul himself has taken over some preformulated material. Others find less that is un-Pauline about these verses and argue that they either are generally appropriate for this context or constitute a meaningful digression within it.

7:4–9:15
Appeals About the Collection for Jerusalem

The apostle's extended expressions of confidence in his Corinthian congregation (7:4–16) help to support the preceding appeals about reconciliation (5:20–6:13; 7:2–3) and, even more important, prepare for subsequent appeals on behalf of his collection for the church in Jerusalem (chaps. 8 and 9).

7:4–16, Paul's Confidence in His Congregation. Many interpreters regard 7:5 as the apostle's resumption of his comments about a meeting with Titus in Macedonia started but not finished in 2:12–13. If this is correct, then 7:4 should be read more closely with 7:2–3 than with 7:5. The alternative is to read 7:4 as the topic sentence for the expressions of confidence that dominate the remainder of chap. 7, since several of the key words in v. 4 recur in vv. 5–16, and taken together vv. 4 and 16 neatly frame the whole section. In vv. 5–7 Paul emphasizes that Titus's report from Corinth had brought him great comfort, and in vv. 8–13a he indicates that it is, specifically, the Corinthians' response to the tearful letter (2:3–4) that brings him joy (see the commentary above on 1:23–2:11). That letter has made them realize that the injury done to Paul by a member of their congregation affected them all, and it prompted them, finally, to discipline the wayward brother. Although the letter may have seemed overly harsh to some, they should know that it was written not out of personal pique, but for the sake of the congregation—to allow it to rediscover the reality of its commitment to Paul and his gospel (vv. 12–13a). The comments about Titus's confidence in the Corinthians (vv. 13b–15) not only allow Paul to reiterate his own (v. 16), but also anticipate Titus's imminent return to the congregation on behalf of the Jerusalem fund (see 8:6, 16–21).

8:1–6, Titus's Return. Paul's campaign for the Jerusalem fund had been initiated in Corinth sometime prior to the writing of 1 Corinthians (see 1 Cor. 16:1–4), but the Corinthians have still not fulfilled their commitment to it (see 2 Cor. 8:10)—evidently because of questions about Paul's authority and, in particular, because of suspicions about his motives (see esp. 12:14–18). In the wake of the apostle's tearful letter, however (see commentary above on 7:4–16), Titus was able to reinstitute the collection project in Corinth, and he is now being sent back to complete it (v. 6). Clearly, Paul hopes that the Corinthians will be encouraged to cooperate when they realize that the churches of Macedonia (→ Macedonia) have insisted on making generous contributions, despite their meager resources (vv. 1–5).

8:7–15, A Matter of Equality. Alluding to the Macedonian contribution to his fund for Jerusalem, Paul urges the Corinthians to make good on the contribution that they themselves have long before pledged but never fulfilled (vv. 7–8). To support this appeal he reminds them of Christ, who "became poor though he was rich, so that you, by means of his poverty, might become rich" (v. 9). Here the apostle has rephrased a traditional affirmation present in another form in Phil. 2:6–11 (cf. 1 Tim. 3:16): the preexistent Christ laid aside what he could rightfully claim as his own and for the sake of others became incarnate and obedient unto death. It is not Christ's *example* that Paul would have the Corinthians ponder, as if they are to be guided by some ascetic principle (e.g., "Give up everything for others, as Christ has given up everything for you"); they are asked only to contribute *insofar as they are able,* out of their "surplus" (v. 14; cf. Mark 12:43–44). Rather, the principle of "equality" is held before them (vv. 13–15, with a citation [v. 15] of the Greek version of Exod. 16:18). They are to reflect on what it means to have been graced and claimed by Christ's love (see 5:14–15) and to have been drawn thereby into a partnership of caring and sharing with all others for whom Christ died (see 1 Cor. 8:11; Rom. 14:15)—be they Jew or Gentile (→ Contribution for the Saints).

8:16–24, Commendation of Titus and the Brothers. The Corinthians are assured that Titus is returning to their congregation not just because Paul has urged him to (8:6), but because Titus himself is eager to see them again (vv. 16–17; see 7:13b–16). Accompanying him are two men whose names Paul does not provide and whose identities are probably beyond recovery (vv. 18–22, 23). The one described as "our brother" was probably a regular and devoted member of Paul's apostolic entourage (v. 22). The first man Paul mentions, however, is clearly regarded as filling a

more important role on this particular mission. Although he is widely known among the churches because of his "work for the gospel" (v. 18), he is evidently not one of Paul's associates; note "*that* brother" in v. 18 (NRSV: "the brother") in contrast to "*our* brother" in v. 22. Moreover, he has been appointed by the churches, not by Paul himself, to oversee the administration of the collection for Jerusalem (v. 19). The Corinthians are to think of this brother as a kind of independent auditor, a person who will be able to certify that the funds contributed for the saints in Jerusalem have not been misappropriated (vv. 20–21; see also commentary below on 12:14–18). It is not significant that the roles of the two brothers are no longer distinguished in v. 23, because the concern in vv. 23–24 is to urge that all three men be warmly received in Corinth and that the congregation be responsive to their appeal for money.

9:1–5, A Further Appeal on Behalf of the Collection. Some interpreters believe that these verses introduce the subject of the collection for a second time (cf. 8:1–6), and that chaps. 8 and 9 must therefore represent two originally independent letters, chap. 8 directed to Christians in Corinth proper and chap. 9 intended for Christians elsewhere in the province of Achaia (see esp. Betz). However, it is also possible to read 9:1–5 as extending and supporting the commendations in 8:16–24 (note esp. vv. 3, 5); and the very general remarks in 9:6–15 can be viewed as a suitable conclusion for the whole of 8:1–9:5. In 9:1–4 Paul mentions the Macedonian churches for the second time in these two chapters (see 8:1–5), but now he refers to what they have been told about the Corinthians' commitment to the collection, not to their own generosity in contributing to it. One may presume that "the brothers" referred to in 9:3, 5 are the three men previously mentioned—Titus and his two unnamed companions (see 8:16–24). Paul trusts that by the time he himself gets to Corinth, this delegation will have in hand a contribution for Jerusalem and that the Corinthians will view it as a genuine gift (cf. 8:3), not as something that has been extorted from them (9:5).

9:6–10, On Giving Generously. In concluding his appeal on behalf of the collection for Jerusalem, the apostle emphasizes, first, that one can give generously because it is God who supplies the means. The conviction that one will reap what one sows (v. 6; cf. Gal. 6:7–9) pervades the wisdom tradition (e.g., Job 4:8; Prov. 11:18, 24; 22:8; Sir. 7:3), and the idea that "God loves a cheerful giver" (v. 7) derives from an addition to Prov. 22:8 that stands only in the Greek version ("God blesses a cheerful and giving man"). Although Paul assures the Corinthians that God will provide abundantly for their needs (v. 8), his point is not that God will enable them to attain the ancient (and modern) ideal of economic self-sufficiency. Rather, God will supply their needs so that they may in turn supply the needs of others. In v. 9 the Greek version of Ps. 112:9 is cited in support of this. If the apostle understands "his righteousness" as God's (rather than the righteousness of one who helps the needy), then he may be suggesting that every charitable act is an expression of that divine righteousness to which those who give aid are themselves eternally indebted. There are allusions to two additional passages from the Greek Bible in v. 10 (Isa. 55:10; Hos. 10:12).

9:11–15, A Ministry of Praise. In v. 11 the underlying theme of vv. 6–10 is recapitulated and extended. Those who give generously are enriched by God so that they may give still more (v. 11a) with the consequence that their increasing generosity redounds to God's glory (v. 11b). It is clear that Paul's conception of charitable giving has not been shaped by his commitment to some general philanthropic ideal, but by his conviction that every human being is ultimately dependent upon and accountable to God and that God is praised as the neighbor is affirmed and served in love (see, e.g., Rom. 15:2–6). Thus, the Corinthians should realize that contributing to the fund for Jerusalem is an important sign of their obedience to the gospel of Christ and that the thanksgivings of the beneficiaries are not really for their human benefactors, but for the greater glory of God (vv. 12–13). The gift for which Paul gives thanks in a final acclamation of praise (v. 15) is God's grace, which will be in evidence when his congregation fulfills its pledge to the collection (v. 14).

10:1–18
An Appeal for Obedience

The apostle plans to arrive in Corinth soon (e.g., 12:14), and everything in chaps. 10–13 is written in anticipation of that visit (13:10), including the comprehensive appeal of 10:1–6. This appeal is supported, first, by the apostle's insistence that he will deal with those who oppose him (vv. 2–6), and then, more extensively, by some remarks about his apostolic authority (vv. 7–11) and jurisdiction (vv. 12–18).

10:1–6, No Worldly War. Paul's appeal is issued on the basis of "the gentleness and kindness of Christ" (v. 1a). This is probably not a reference to Jesus' earthly character and conduct, but to the whole saving event of Christ's incarnation and obedience unto death, his becoming "poor" for the sake of others (cf. 8:9; Phil. 2:6–11). It is significant that the Corinthians are not summoned to be obedient to Paul or to some particular teaching. The appeal is for their "obedience to Christ" (v. 5), doubtless to be understood in the most fundamental sense as "faith's obedience" (Rom. 1:5) to the gospel (Rom. 10:16; cf. 15:18). Since Paul is aware of

the accusation that he is more impressive in his letters than he is in person (v. 1b, alluding to the criticism that will be quoted in v. 10), he insists that he is not going to be intimidated by any who oppose him or who reject his appeal (vv. 2, 4b, 6). Their charge that he conducts his ministry "according to worldly standards" (v. 2) may be based on his continuing work as a craftsman in order to support himself (see 11:7–11), as well as on his reluctance to boast of special charismatic powers or religious experiences (see 5:11–13; 12:1–10). In responding to the charge, Paul makes use of several military images (vv. 3–6); this may suggest just how embattled he is feeling. Although his campaign for the gospel necessarily takes place "in the world," he maintains that he does not wage it "according to worldly standards" (v. 3). And because it is empowered by God, he can be confident of victory (vv. 4–5). The conviction that lies behind the affirmation of v. 3 is characteristically Pauline: believers can and must live out their faith "in the world" without surrendering to the world's values and claims (cf. Rom. 12:1–2; 1 Cor. 7:29–31; Phil. 3:19–20).

10:7–11, The Question of Authority. Because Paul's critics have challenged his apostolic status, he proceeds with some comments about his authority, taking care to emphasize that it is a gift from the Lord and is to be used constructively, not as a means of intimidation (vv. 8–9). Two of the charges made against him by the rival apostles are simply denied. First, their vaunted relationship to Christ—perhaps they had known Jesus personally or claim to have had some extraordinary vision of the resurrected Lord—is in no way superior to his own (v. 7b). Second, it is completely untrue that his "demanding and impressive" letters are only bluff, for he will be quite able to translate his words into action when he is with them in person (vv. 10–11). He is probably perceived as "weak" because he seems to lack the charismatic powers about which his rivals boast (see 5:11–13) and perhaps also because he has not asked the Corinthians to underwrite his personal expenses, something to which legitimate apostles are entitled (see 11:7–11; 1 Cor. 9:3–18). His public speaking is regarded as "contemptible" and uninspired because it is not embellished with the rhetorical flourishes and adornments so much in vogue (cf. 11:6).

10:12–18, The Question of Jurisdiction. Paul's defense of his apostolic authority continues here, but now he is more aggressive in bringing charges against his rivals. When he declares that he does not have the audacity to claim the same status as they (v. 12a), the irony is clear, for he regards them as "false apostles" who serve Satan rather than Christ (11:13–15)! Moreover, their pretentious flaunting of commendations (see 3:1b) shows their ignorance of the fact that only God's recommendation really matters (vv. 12b, 17–18; the scriptural quotation in v. 17 freely adapts the Greek version of Jer. 9:24.) Problems of translation cloud the exact meaning of vv. 13–16, but Paul's general concern is clear: people who boast of a status and authority superior to his are trying to take over the congregation he founded in Corinth. Paul's protest in vv. 13–14 reflects the principle that he applies to his own ministry (Rom. 15:20–21): apostles are commissioned to carry the gospel where it has not yet been preached, not where someone else has already laid a foundation. It also reflects his conviction that, as the "father" of the Corinthian congregation, he stands in a unique and continuing relationship to it (1 Cor. 4:14–16).

11:1–12:13
"Fool's Speech"

The necessity to defend his apostolic status and authority has forced Paul into an awkward position, because he might be perceived to be doing the same kind of boasting for which he criticizes his rivals (e.g., 5:12; 11:12). That he is quite aware of this danger is evident from his remarks in 10:7–18 and especially from the self-consciousness with which he composes this part of his Letter. The description of this as a "fool's speech" derives from the apostle's introduction of it as "a little bit of foolishness" (11:1) and from his comment at the end, "I have been a fool!" (12:11). He characterizes it this way partly because he knows that one should boast only of the Lord (10:17–18), but also because he boasts about things of which others would be ashamed. One may read 11:1–21a as an extended introduction to the speech, 11:21b–12:10 as the speech proper, and 12:11–13 as an epilogue.

11:1–4, The Endangered Bride. Paul begs his readers to put up with some foolish boasting (v. 1), which he justifies by emphasizing how concerned he is about them (vv. 2–4). Indicating that his care for them is akin to God's concern for Israel, he depicts himself as a father (cf. 1 Cor. 4:14–15) and the Corinthians as his daughter who is being given in marriage (v. 2). Just as a Jewish father's responsibility was to guard his daughter's virginity between the time of her betrothal and the consummation of her marriage, so the apostle's task is to keep his congregation from harm until the close of history when Christ returns to claim his own. (The church is also depicted as Christ's bride in Eph. 5:23–32; Rev. 19:7–9; 21:2; but the idea that lies behind this passage is best seen in Phil. 1:9–11.) Specifically, the Corinthians are in danger of being seduced by persons who would lure them away from Paul's gospel and thus from their original commitment to Christ (vv. 3–4). There is perhaps an allusion in v. 3 to a Jewish legend that identified the serpent of Genesis 3 with Satan and implied a sexual seduction of Eve. From v. 4 one

learns that Paul's rivals have "come" to Corinth from elsewhere and that they are winning a following for a gospel that is different from his.

11:5–15, The False Apostles. Some interpreters (e.g., Barrett) argue that the ironic title "superapostles" (v. 5; see also 12:11) is used of the leaders of the church in Jerusalem, by whom Paul's competitors claim to have been authorized for a ministry in Corinth. Others (e.g., Furnish) regard it as a reference to the rival apostles themselves, who pretentiously claim a status superior to Paul's. It is certain that these rivals are the "false apostles" mentioned later, whom Paul further describes as Satan's ministers disguised as ministers of Christ (vv. 13–15). The remark in v. 6 suggests that Paul's style as a public speaker is being compared unfavorably with theirs, probably because it lacks the rhetorical ornamentation cultivated by popular orators; and this unadorned style is perhaps being used as evidence that he also lacks the special knowledge one should expect an apostle to have. Paul's refusal to let the Corinthians help with his personal expenses (see 1 Cor. 9:12b, 15–18) has been offered as further evidence of his inferior status, and the apostle responds to this in vv. 7–11. His critics must have argued that if Paul's apostleship were valid, he would not demean himself by continuing to work as a common craftsman, since he knows that apostles are entitled to support by their churches (v. 7; see 1 Cor. 9:4–12a, 13–14). In response, Paul urges the Corinthians to regard his conduct as demonstrating a genuine concern not to burden them with his own needs (vv. 8–11).

11:16–21a, Tolerating Fools. The apostle continues to beg his readers' indulgence for the boasting he is about to do (v. 16 repeats the plea of v. 1), concedes that it is foolish (v. 17), and explains that the circumstances have forced him to it (v. 18). But since the Corinthians, "being wise," have already "put up with fools" (v. 19), even allowing themselves to be exploited by them (v. 20), they will surely grant Paul this favor. The targets of Paul's sarcasm are his rivals and, even more directly, the congregation to which they have gained access. The additional sarcastic gibe in v. 21a anticipates the strange theme of the apostle's boasting, his "weakness."

11:21b–33, Paul's Ministerial Credentials. As he begins his foolish boasting, the apostle insists that his ethnic and religious heritage is no less Jewish than that of his rivals (v. 22; cf. esp. Phil. 3:5), and that his credentials as a minister of Christ are in fact superior to theirs (v. 23a). To document the latter he provides a long list of the hardships and deprivations that he has suffered as an apostle (vv. 23b–29; cf. the similar catalogs in 4:8–9; 6:4c–5; 12:10; Rom. 8:35; 1 Cor. 4:9–13). He offers these as signs of his weakness (vv. 29a, 30), not to boast of the courage and strength with which he has endured them. The same understanding of the apostolic office that he had enunciated in 4:7–15 is present here: in the apostle's sufferings the death and resurrection life of Jesus are made visible and thus the transcendent power of God is proclaimed. The "labors" mentioned in vv. 23b, 27 refer to Paul's arduous work as a craftsman, as do the deprivations listed in v. 27. Some of the other tribulations he catalogs may correlate with events narrated in Acts, e.g., "imprisonments" (v. 23b; cf. Acts 16:23–40), "beatings" (vv. 23b, 24–25a; cf. Acts 16:22; cf. 1 Thess. 2:2), a stoning (v. 25b; cf. Acts 14:19), and "danger from Gentiles" (v. 26; cf. Acts 19:23–41). The account of Paul's narrow escape from Damascus (vv. 32–33) is also recounted in Acts 9:23–25, but in a significantly different context. In Acts, the story is offered as one of several illustrations of Paul's courage and ability to overcome adversity. Here, the apostle himself includes it as one more example of his weakness and vulnerability.

12:1–4, A Journey to Paradise. Turning to the subject of "visions and revelations granted by the Lord," the apostle reluctantly continues his foolish boasting (v. 1). That he refers to himself in the third person (vv. 2–4) suggests how uncomfortable he is talking about his own religious experiences. The specific subject of his boast is an ecstatic episode in which he had been transported to Paradise, which he locates in the third heaven. (This is not an account of Paul's apostolic call, or "conversion," for which see esp. Gal. 1:15–16.) Numerous ancient reports of such experiences survive, but this one differs in that it provides little information about what happened and is not employed for any special edifying purpose. Whether the apostle's journey took place "in the body" or apart from it he does not know and seems not to care; there is no hint of anything that he may have seen; and what he heard he is not allowed to disclose. Paul's intention is evidently to caricature the private religious experiences of which his rivals boast, thus emphasizing that they are of no value for an apostle's proper work—which is to advance the gospel and to serve those who receive it (see 5:12–13).

12:5–10, An Oracle from the Lord. Here the apostle abandons the fool's role that he has been playing in 11:21b–12:4. He could boast, as his rivals do, of impressive religious connections, experiences, and achievements, but he chooses instead to speak only of his weaknesses (vv. 5–7a). Indeed, he regards the "thorn" that he bears in his flesh as a proper reminder that he should not be too elated by the ecstatic experiences that have been his (v. 7b). Paul nowhere specifies the nature of this satanic impediment, but it was probably some kind of physical ailment, not seriously disabling, but certainly bothersome enough to prompt him to pray for divine healing. When the Lord finally responded to his petitions for relief, however, it is not

with a cure but with an oracle: "My grace is enough for you; for power is made fully present in weakness" (vv. 8–9a). The oracle does not promise a cure, but that God's power will sustain the apostle in the midst of his weakness and misery. In this oracle the gospel itself is conveyed, the word of the cross (see commentary above on 4:7, 8–15). Clearly then, "the power of Christ" to which Paul refers in his own comment on the oracle (v. 9b) is the power of God's saving and sustaining love that is present in Christ's death. The hardship list of v. 10b recapitulates the much longer catalog in 11:23b–29, and the declaration "Whenever I am weak, then I am strong" (v. 10b, NRSV) reiterates the message of the oracle in v. 9a; the power of the crucified Christ is disclosed in Paul's weaknesses and in the adversities he bears as an apostle.

12:11–13, Epilogue. Paul emphasizes once more that his foolish boasting has been forced upon him by the "superapostles" (see commentary above on 11:5–15), and that he is in no respect inferior to them (v. 11). He too has performed the healings and other signs that the Corinthians have been led to expect of a true apostle (v. 12), although he does not belabor this point. From the way he refers to these in other Letters (notably Rom. 15:18–19; Gal. 3:1–5), it is clear that he regards his preaching of the gospel, not his performance of wondrous deeds, as the truly definitive evidence of apostleship. The question in v. 13 responds to the Corinthians' suspicion that Paul has not asked them for support because he does not qualify for it (see commentary above on 11:5–15), and the irony of the question and of the apostle's plea for pardon is explained by his conviction that others have in fact exploited the congregation (11:20).

12:14–13:10
Disavowals and Warnings

The appeal for obedience introduced in 10:1–18 and supported by the fool's speech of 11:1–12:13 is now resumed and further supported. Paul makes a few additional remarks in his own defense and urges the Corinthians to help make his impending visit a constructive one.

12:14–18, The Allegation of Fraud. With his apostleship under a cloud in Corinth and a third visit at hand, Paul wants the Corinthians to know that he will continue to care for his own needs while he is with them (see 11:7–11). Rather than claiming anything of theirs, he will give himself to them in love (vv. 14–15). The charge of deceit to which he refers (v. 16b) probably grows out of suspicions that he intends to keep for himself at least some of the money he is soliciting for Jerusalem (see chaps. 8–9). In rebuttal, Paul refers to the exemplary way his two representatives, Titus and the unnamed "brother" of 8:22, had conducted themselves when in Corinth on behalf of the collection (vv. 17–18; the "famous" brother of 8:18–19 was not Paul's representative).

12:19–21, About Improper Behavior. The apostle assures his readers that the present letter is written out of a genuine concern for them, not just to refute the charges of his critics (v. 19). Specifically, he is worried that he may find such immorality among them when he arrives that he will be reduced to mourning for their errant ways (vv. 20–21). He must also surely realize that if the present disorder continues, his apostolic authority and credibility will be further diminished.

13:1–4, Warning. On his second, unhappy, visit to Corinth (see 2:1), Paul had apparently issued a warning to those who had brought him to grief; now, in a second warning, he assures the Corinthians that he will show no leniency toward anyone whom he may find still unrepentant when he visits for the third time (vv. 1–2). Paul is therefore confident that he has satisfied the scriptural rule about multiple "witnesses" (v. 1; see Deut. 19:15; Matt. 18:16), which Jews of his day understood to require the fair warning of wrongdoers. Since his readers, probably at the behest of the rival apostles, have asked for "proof" that Paul is really a spokesman for Christ, they will surely have it if he is forced to take disciplinary action when he comes (v. 3). The affirmation about Christ's death and resurrection in v. 4a, which is in accord with early creedal formulations (e.g., Rom. 1:4; 6:4; 1 Cor. 6:14; cf. Phil. 3:10), gives weight to the warning of vv. 2–3 and prompts the statement of v. 4b. Because one encounters in the apostle's weaknesses the death of Jesus, one also encounters there the resurrection power of God (cf. 12:9; see commentary above on 4:7, 8–15).

13:5–9, Admonition. Those Corinthians who have been persuaded that they ought to demand proof of Paul's apostleship (v. 3; cf. 10:7) should really be examining the authenticity of their own Christian existence (v. 5). If their faith passes the test, then Paul's apostleship will pass the test too (vv. 6–7), because it is through his ministry that they have been brought to the gospel ("the truth," v. 8) and nurtured in it. Thus, the apostle is able to rejoice in his weaknesses, insofar as the power of the cross disclosed in them finds expression in the faith and obedience of his congregation (v. 9).

13:10, The Purpose of the Letter. Paul has planned for the Corinthians' contribution to the Jerusalem fund to be ready for him when he arrives for his third visit (see 9:3–5). However, with that visit now at hand (12:14; 13:1), his relationship to the congregation has become so problematic that he must wonder whether the Corinthians will make any contribution at all. By writing this letter he hopes to improve the situation so

that his forthcoming visit can be constructive and productive. (This purpose accords with the contents of chaps. 10–13, but not with those of chaps. 1–9; see Introduction.) There is indirect evidence that this letter achieved its purpose. In Romans, probably written during his third visit to Corinth (*see* Romans, Introduction) Paul reports that the Christians of Macedonia and Achaia (which includes Corinth) "have chosen to make a generous contribution to the poor among God's holy people at Jerusalem" (15:25–26, NJB).

13:11–13
Epistolary Closing

If parts of two or more originally independent letters have been incorporated into 2 Corinthians, then one cannot be certain which of them was concluded by these verses.

13:11–12, Final Admonitions and Greetings. The succinct appeals of v. 11 are comparable to those in Rom. 12:9–13; 1 Cor. 16:13–15; 1 Thess. 5:12–22. Whether the kind of "holy kiss" mentioned in v. 12 was already part of the church's liturgy in Paul's day is uncertain, but it is in any case a symbolic expression of the sense of Christian community that the apostle hopes his readers have not lost. The "saints" whose greetings he conveys are probably the members of the congregation in the particular Macedonian city from which he is writing (perhaps Thessalonica or Beroea).

13:13, Benediction. Because the benedictions that close the other Pauline Letters are shorter, some interpreters attribute this one to a later editor. Its contents, however, are thoroughly Pauline.

Bibliography

Barnett, P. *The Second Epistle to the Corinthians.* New International Commentary on the New Testament. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1997.

Barrett, C. K. *A Commentary on the Second Epistle to the Corinthians.* Harper's New Testament Commentaries. New York: Harper & Row, 1973.

Betz, H. D. *2 Corinthians 8 and 9: A Commentary on Two Administrative Letters of the Apostle Paul.* Edited by G. W. MacRae. Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1985.

Bultmann, R. *The Second Letter to the Corinthians.* Original German edition edited by E. Dinkler. Translated by R. A. Harrisville. Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1985.

Danker, F. W. *II Corinthians.* Augsburg Commentary on the New Testament. Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1989.

Furnish, V. P. *II Corinthians.* Anchor Bible, 32A. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1984.

Martin, R. P. *2 Corinthians.* Word Biblical Commentary, 40. Waco, TX: Word Books, 1986.

Murphy-O'Connor, J. *The Theology of the Second Letter to the Corinthians.* New Testament Theology. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1991.

Galatians

WILLIAM BAIRD

INTRODUCTION

Among the writings of Paul, none is more important or more difficult than the Letter to the Galatians. This Letter presents important features of Paul's life and announces significant doctrines. Yet questions about the historical setting of the Letter cannot be answered with certainty. About two issues, however, interpreters can be confident: first, Paul is the author (1:1; 6:11); and second, the Letter is a unity, written in its present form as a single document.

Although the Letter is addressed to "the churches of Galatia," the exact location of these churches is disputed. The original kingdom of the Galatians was in the north-central area of Asia Minor, but in 25 B.C. the Romans reorganized this region to include in the province of Galatia areas to the south (→ Galatia). According to the south Galatian, or "province," theory, the churches addressed in Galatians are churches of this southern region—churches established during the so-called first missionary journey of Paul (Acts 13:4–14:28). Paul normally refers to regions according to their provincial designation (1 Cor. 16:19; 2 Cor. 8:1).

According to the north Galatian, or "territorial," theory, the churches addressed in the Letter are churches in the original territory of Galatia. The Acts of the Apostles includes no account of a mission to this region, but Acts 16:6 seems to imply a trip to the northern territory. After describing a visit to Derbe and Lystra, the author notes that Paul and his companions traveled through "the Phrygian and Galatian regions." Thus, a visit to the territory of Galatia appears to be distinguished from and later than the visit to the cities of the south. In Gal. 3:1, Paul addresses his readers as "foolish Galatians." Although this designation would be appropriate for the ethnic Galatians of the north, it scarcely fits the residents of the south (see Acts 14:11). Paul does not always refer to regions by their provincial name (Gal. 1:17). According to a majority of scholars, the north Galatian theory is to be preferred.

As to the religious and social makeup of the Galatian churches, most, if not all, of the members were Gentiles. Paul's mission is primarily directed toward non-Jews (1:16; 2:2, 7–9), and the issue of circumcision, crucial to the Letter, would hardly be a question for Jewish converts. When Paul implies that his readers had not known God (4:9), he probably refers to their previous life in paganism. As in other Pauline churches, members of the congregations were probably urbanites, drawn from a variety of social and economic classes (see 3:28).

The date and place of writing are debated. Some suppose that Galatians was written early in Paul's career. Actually a very early date is excluded, since the Letter was not written until at least fourteen years after Paul's conversion (see 2:1). Those who favor an early date usually adopt the south Galatian theory and identify the Jerusalem visit of 2:1–10 with that of Acts 11:30. According to this view, the Jerusalem visit of Acts 15:4–29 took place after Galatians had been written. More likely, Acts 15 and Galatians 2 refer to the same event—the Jerusalem conference. Assuming the north Galatian theory and interpreting 4:13 to imply two visits to Galatia prior to the Letter, the second visit would have been the one mentioned in Acts 18:23 (the first, in Acts 16:6), where Paul is on the way to his Ephesian ministry. Paul's charge that the Galatians have "so quickly turned away" (1:6) suggests that not much time has elapsed since his last visit. Thus, Galatians was probably written from Ephesus around A.D. 55. Galatians appears to have been written after 1 Corinthians and prior to Romans.

In the Letter, Paul attacks a group that is troubling the Galatian churches (1:7; 5:12). He charges them with perverting the gospel (1:7–9) by insisting that the Galatians be circumcised (5:2; 6:12–13) and keep the law (3:2–5; 5:4–6). These troublemakers, as Paul's argument suggests, are Jewish Christians who have invaded the churches of Galatia. They question Paul's authority and claim the support of the Jerusalem leaders. Apparently, they share the views of the "false brothers" (2:4) who had slipped into the Jerusalem conference; they emulate the tactics of the delegation from James (2:12) who had disrupted the church at Antioch. On the basis of Scripture, they charge that Paul has promoted a gospel that is soft on paganism. They believe the people of God need an identity that is marked by Jewish rites and practices.

The purpose of Galatians is to counter the claims of these troublemakers. In regard to his authority, Paul insists that he had been called to mission by God—a mission recognized by the Jerusalem apostles. In response to the divine call, he has remained faithful to "the truth of the gospel" (2:5, 14)—the good news that God had acted in Christ to redeem all people (4:4).

This action conveys the Spirit that is received by faith and not by works of the law (3:2). Concerning the law, Paul is more negative in Galatians than in other Letters (see Rom. 3:31; 7:12–14). The identity of the people of God is found in a new creation (6:15) that shatters the old distinctions—a new identity in Jesus Christ (3:28).

In general, Galatians conforms to the pattern of ancient letters (→ Epistle). It opens with a salutation (1:1–5) and ends with a conclusion written in the author's own hand (6:11–18). The conventional paragraph of thanksgiving ("I give thanks," 1 Cor. 1:4) is replaced by an expression of dismay and anathema ("I am astonished," 1:6). Recent research has attempted to analyze the body of Galatians according to patterns of classical rhetoric. However, Paul appears to use a variety of rhetorical expressions to develop the main lines of his message: an autobiographical narrative (1:11–2:21); his central argument (3:1–4:31); and a final admonition and instruction (5:1–6:10).

COMMENTARY

1:1–10
Introduction to the Letter

1:1–5, Salutation. Paul opens his Letters according to the ancient pattern: the author introduces himself or herself; the recipients of the Letter are named; and a greeting is expressed. In the Galatian situation, Paul emphasizes his authority as an "apostle" (see Rom. 1:1–6; → Apostle)—a term that describes a person, like an ambassador, who has been sent with a commission. Paul affirms his office by a double denial: he is not an apostle "from human beings nor through a human person." Instead, his apostleship is "through Jesus Christ and God"; God is the source and Christ is the agent of his call (Gal. 1:15–16; 1 Cor. 1:1). About Christ, Paul adds a phrase from an early Christian confession: God "raised him from the dead." Paul also includes in his address the co-workers "who are with me."

The Letter is being sent "to the churches of Galatia"—the only Pauline Letter addressed to a group of congregations in a region larger than a single city. To them he sends his typical greeting, "grace and peace," which combines Greek and Hebrew expressions. This greeting is expanded to include another confessional statement about Christ: he is the one "who gave himself for our sins" (see Rom. 5:8; 1 Cor. 15:3) and "set us free from the present evil age." Paul believed the world was under the control of evil forces (4:3, 9; 2 Cor. 4:4; Rom. 8:38), but with the coming of Christ the new age had already dawned (→ Eschatology).

1:6–10, The Situation in Galatia. At this point, Paul would normally present a paragraph of thanksgiving (Rom. 1:8–15). Instead, he offers a statement of dismay: "I am astonished." Paul is astonished that the Galatians are so quickly deserting the one who called them, i.e., God (see Gal. 5:8; Rom. 8:30; 1 Cor. 1:9). The Galatians are turning to another gospel (see 2 Cor. 11:4), although there is no other. The troublemakers are perverting the gospel by insisting that it include the demand to keep Mosaic law and be circumcised. However, to conceive of the gospel as a collection of rules and rites is not simply to distort it; it is to destroy it.

The problem is the gospel, not the preacher. Even if Paul himself (a divinely appointed apostle) or an angel (a messenger from heaven, Rev. 14:6) should preach another gospel, let that one be "accursed" (v. 8)—a word that describes something dedicated to God for destruction (see Josh. 6:17; 1 Cor. 16:22). The true gospel is the one that Paul had preached and the Galatians received—the good news disclosed in Christ (Gal. 3:1). Although the gospel can be preached in a variety of ways (see 1 Cor. 1:23; 2 Cor. 4:5; Phil. 1:15–18), there is only one gospel.

Paul's concern is to please God, not people (1 Thess. 2:4–6). The troublemakers may suppose that his law-free gospel is trimmed to fit his hearers (see 1 Cor. 9:20–21). But as Paul says, "I do everything for the sake of the gospel" (1 Cor. 9:23). His loyalty to God is seen in his obedience; he is a slave of Christ (Rom. 1:1; Phil. 1:1).

1:11–2:21
An Autobiographical Narrative: Paul's Loyalty to the Gospel

1:11–17, The Gospel Received by Revelation. Paul presents evidence from his career to convince the Galatians that his ministry is neither derived from nor inferior to the Jerusalem apostolate. Most important, his gospel is not a human gospel. He neither received it from a human being, nor was he taught it. Instead, he received the gospel through a revelation of Christ—a revelation whose content is Christ. Proof that God has acted is seen in the transformation of Paul. His former life was devoted to Judaism (see Phil. 3:4–6). He had been a persecutor of the church (1 Cor. 15:9). Paul's zeal led him to oppose the followers of Jesus as apostates who preached a crucified Messiah (1 Cor. 1:23). Moreover, Paul had advanced in Judaism beyond many of his own age among his people, since he was so zealous for the law and the traditions. The source of Paul's gospel is God—"the one who had set me apart from my mother's womb." Before Paul could act, God had acted—an action by grace. This way of describing the revelation is reminiscent of the call of the prophets (Jer. 1:5) and indicates that Paul is primarily depicting a commission rather than a conversion. However, his reference to "my former lifestyle in Judaism" (Gal. 1:13) indicates that a conversion was involved. Paul's sparse description stands in contrast to the detailed accounts

of the Acts of the Apostles (9:3–9; 22:6–11; 26:12–18). Paul simply declares that God's Son had been revealed to him (1 Cor. 9:1; 15:8). The purpose of this revelation was that Paul should preach Christ to the Gentiles.

Immediately after the event, Paul did not confer with "flesh and blood," that is, with any human being. In particular, he did not go to Jerusalem to consult with those who had previously been appointed apostles. Paul went away instead to Arabia or Nabatea, the area to the south and east of Damascus. Although it is sometimes supposed that Paul went there to meditate, it is more likely that he began to preach (see 2 Cor. 11:32–33)—prior to any contact with the Jerusalem authorities.

1:18–24, A Brief Visit to Jerusalem. After three years, Paul did go to Jerusalem. He went on his own initiative for the purpose of making the acquaintance of Cephas. Cephas, the Aramaic for Peter (i.e., "rock"), a member of Jesus' inner circle, was leader of the Jerusalem church. Paul stayed in Jerusalem only fifteen days and, while there, saw none of the other apostles except James. This is the same visit described in Acts 9:26–30. James is the brother of Jesus (Mark 6:3) who was later to become the leader of the church (Gal. 2:9, 12; see Acts 15:13; 21:18). Paul confirms the truth of his narrative by swearing an oath (see 1 Thess. 2:5; 2 Cor. 1:23; 11:31; Matt. 5:34). For the Galatians, his point is that he did not visit Jerusalem early, often, or long.

Next, Paul travels to the regions of Syria and Cilicia. In Cilicia is Paul's hometown, Tarsus (see Acts 9:30; 21:39; 22:3), and in Syria is Antioch, where he carried on a ministry (Acts 11:26; 13:1–2; Gal. 2:11–14). In this period, Paul claims that he was still not known by sight to the churches in Judea. Nevertheless, they knew that the former persecutor was now preaching "the faith" (see 3:23). The words of the Judean believers imply that his radical transformation could only have been accomplished by the action of God.

2:1–10, The Jerusalem Conference. After fourteen years, Paul again visits Jerusalem. The sequential use of "then" (1:18, 21; 2:1) suggests that the interval is the time since Paul's departure from Jerusalem into Syria and Cilicia (1:21), although it may represent fourteen years since his conversion. Paul presents the conference (also depicted in Acts 15:4–21) in order to inform the Galatians that his mission had been approved by the Jerusalem leaders. Paul says he made this trip "according to revelation," i.e., according to the will of God (see Acts 15:2–3). In a private meeting with the leaders of the church, he presented the gospel that he had been preaching. When he says "lest I . . . had been running in vain" (2:2) he does not intend to suggest that the Jerusalem leaders were to pass judgment on his gospel—the message that he had received by revelation (1:15–16). The gospel is not negotiable. The issue is the practice of the mission—the way the mission is functioning in the Pauline churches (see 1 Thess. 3:5). About this, the leaders of the church—as Paul shows in Gal. 2:11–21—could exercise a disruptive force.

Along with Barnabas, Paul brought Titus, an uncircumcised Greek Christian. Titus was proof that a Gentile could be a member of the people of God without being circumcised. Into the conference slipped some "false believers" (v. 4; see 2 Cor. 11:26) who wanted to enslave Paul by demanding the circumcision of Titus. Paul resolutely refused, so that the "truth of the gospel" might be maintained for the Galatians (and other gentile converts).

Next Paul summarizes the deliberations of the leaders. In v. 6 he describes them as "those who are reputed to be somebody" (see v. 2), and in v. 9 he calls them "pillars" of the church (see Rev. 3:12). Although these terms are not derogatory in themselves, they are given a disparaging meaning when Paul observes that the leaders' reputation means nothing to him or to God (v. 6). These leaders demanded no additional requirements for Paul's mission; they recognized that he had been entrusted with the gospel to the Gentiles just as Peter (or Cephas) had to the Jews. The reference to "the gospel for the uncircumcised" and the gospel "for the circumcised" does not imply two different gospels; the one gospel is preached to two ethnic groups.

As sign of this agreement, the Jerusalem leaders extended to Paul and Barnabas the "right hand of fellowship" (v. 9)—a practice signifying friendship and accord. The leaders are named, with James first, probably because he had become the leader of the church in the city (see Acts 15:13–19) just as Cephas (Peter) had been the leader of the mission outside of Jerusalem (see Acts 9:32–43). Although they made no demands, the leaders did make a request: that Paul collect an offering for the economically deprived of the Jerusalem congregation—something he was eager to do (see 1 Cor. 16:1–4; 2 Cor. 8:1–9:15; Rom. 15:25–28).

2:11–21, Confrontation in Antioch. After the conference, events transpired in Antioch that paralleled recent happenings in Galatia. In the church at Antioch, Gentiles had been fully integrated into the Christian community (Acts 11:19–26; → Antioch). When Cephas (Peter; → Peter) came for a visit, he participated in the meals of the congregation—meals where Jewish and gentile converts ate together without regard to Jewish food laws. Later, when some emissaries of James arrived, Cephas withdrew, because he feared the partisans of circumcision. The latter are probably to be identified with the "false believers" of Gal. 2:4, while the unnamed people from James were probably more moderate. They recognized the Jerusalem agreement, but believed the people of God needed an identity that would set them apart from the pagans. Following the lead of Cephas, the rest of the Jews of the Antioch church joined in his deception. Barnabas, Paul's asso-

ciate in gentile mission (Acts 13:1–14:18; 15:35–16:4), was "carried away," too.

Paul opposed Cephas "to his face" (v. 11) in front of the church. According to Paul, Cephas and the others were not conforming to "the truth of the gospel." Paul quotes his indictment of Cephas. When Paul said that Cephas lived like a Gentile, he referred to Cephas's original conduct in Antioch. When Paul charged Cephas with compelling the Gentiles to live like Jews, he implied that Cephas's withdrawal was tantamount to requiring the Gentiles to keep Jewish rules in order to participate in the community.

In vv. 15–17, Paul continues to address Jewish Christians, as his use of "we" indicates. We, he says, are Jews by nature (born and reared as Jews) and not gentile sinners, i.e., those who do not have the law (see Rom. 2:14; 1 Cor. 9:21). Yet we Jewish Christians know that a person is not brought into right relationship with God by "works of the law," but by the faith of Christ—an ambiguous phrase that can mean either "the faithfulness of Christ" or "faith in Christ." Perhaps both ideas are expressed in v. 16: we are justified by God's action in the faithful Christ (see 2:21), in whom we have faith. In any case, "no one will be justified by the works of the law" (see Ps. 143:2). When Paul says, "if, seeking to be justified in Christ, we ourselves have been maligned as sinners"—e.g., for eating with Gentiles or preaching a law-free gospel—that would imply that Christ is a servant of sin—a sheer impossibility!

In vv. 18–21, Paul changes from "we" to "I." To rebuild what he once destroyed would be to return to the works of the law. But Paul cannot do this, since he has died to the law (Rom. 7:1–4). This death has been accomplished by unity with Christ—a unity signified by baptism (Gal. 3:27; Rom. 6:3–10). Through faith, Paul has shared in the crucifixion and resurrection, so that the living Christ is present in him (see Phil. 1:21). In his old body ("in the flesh"), Paul has a new identity. He lives by the faith of the Son of God who loved him (see Rom. 5:6–8; 2 Cor. 5:14) and gave himself as a redemptive sacrifice (see Rom. 3:24–25). This assertion of Paul confirms the grace of God—that redemption is a gift. But to claim that righteousness comes through the law would mean that Christ died for no purpose.

3:1–4:31
Paul's Argument: The Gospel Has Superseded the Law

3:1–5, An Appeal to the Experience of the Galatians. Paul begins his argument by reminding the Galatians of their original Christian experience. "Foolish Galatians," he calls them (see Luke 24:25), for they have been bewitched by the troublemakers (Gal. 1:6–9). Before their eyes, the crucified Christ had been openly portrayed. Preaching the gospel is "representation" of Christ (1:16; 1 Cor. 2:2).

About this experience Paul asks whether the Galatians received the Spirit by observing the law ("works of the law") or by accepting the gospel ("the hearing of faith"; see Rom. 10:17). Paul assumes that the Spirit is the gift commonly received by believers (1 Cor. 2:12; → Holy Spirit, The). For Paul, the Spirit signifies the presence of the living Christ (Rom. 8:9–11). Thus, the Galatians began their experience with the Spirit, but they are ending in the flesh—seen in their interest in circumcision (see Rom. 2:28). To engage in this retrogression is to admit that all they have experienced adds up to nothing. Instead, their experience, evident in spiritual gifts (see 1 Cor. 12:8–11), should have proved that God had been at work—before the troublemakers arrived.

3:6–18, Arguments from Scripture. Paul begins by quoting Gen. 15:6. God promised Abraham (→ Abraham) that he would be the father of many descendants. In response, Abraham "had faith in God and it was counted to him for righteousness." Abraham was declared to be right with God solely on the basis of faith. Interpreting the text, Paul concludes that it is through faith that people become descendants of Abraham. The argument is supported by a reference to Gen. 12:3 together with Gen. 18:18, which says that in Abraham all the nations (Gentiles) will be blessed. By faith people share the blessing of Abraham. In announcing this, Scripture preached the gospel beforehand in Abraham.

Gen. 12:3, however, notes that some people will be cursed. This suggests another text, Deut. 27:26, that pronounces a curse on all who do not keep all the commands. According to Paul's argument in Gal. 2:16, one cannot be justified by works, and the law shows that those who fail to keep all the commandments are transgressors, under the curse that the law decrees. However, Scripture affirms a better way: "The person who is righteous by faith shall live" (Hab. 2:4; see Rom. 1:17), so that the notion that one can get right with God by works of the law is denied. Anticipating arguments of the troublemakers, Paul cites Lev. 18:5, which asserts that those who do the works of the law shall live—a text implying that the law can be construed as contrary to the principle of faith.

Throughout this section Paul follows rabbinic methods of interpretation and in v. 13 makes use of a device whereby the appearance of the same word relates two texts. Thus the term "curse" in Deut. 27:26 recalls Deut. 21:23: "Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree." For Paul, this text can be applied to Christ, who in his crucifixion is identified with sinful humanity (2 Cor. 5:21), becoming a curse for us. Christ, by this action, redeemed us from the curse that the law pronounced. Redemption is a deed whereby freedom (e.g., for a slave) is purchased at cost (Rom. 3:24; 1 Cor. 6:19–20; → Redemption). Through Christ's identification with us, we are identified with Abraham (see v. 16)

so that we are not cursed, but share the blessing: the promise of the Spirit (v. 2).

Next (vv. 15–18) Paul argues from a human analogy. He notes that once a will has been ratified, it cannot be changed. In the same way, the law that did not come until 430 years (Exod. 12:40) after the promise cannot nullify the promissory covenant previously ratified by God. Focusing on a fine point, Paul observes that the promise was extended to Abraham's "offspring" (singular) not "offsprings" (plural). This suggests that the one true descendant of Abraham is Christ. Thus the inheritance cannot be through the law, but through the promise.

3:19–29, The Giving of the Law and the Coming of Faith. Since the law cannot supersede the promise, for what purpose was it given? It was added "because of transgressions," i.e., to increase trespasses (Rom. 5:20)—to show that sin is against the will of God (see Rom. 7:13). Moreover, the law was temporary (in force until the true offspring should come) and inferior—given by angels through an intermediary. The notion that the giving of the law took place in the presence of angels is suggested by the Greek version of Deut. 33:2 (see Acts 7:53; Heb. 2:2). The intermediary is Moses, and the presence of angels and an intermediary shows that the revelation was not direct.

Is this inferior law against the promises? In spite of evidence to the contrary, Paul declares a resounding "no." The law serves a different purpose in the economy of God. It cannot do what the promise does: give life (see Rom. 7:10). Instead, the law imprisons people under the power of sin (Rom. 3:9) until the time when the promise will be fulfilled in Christ and received through faith.

Before Christ came (4:4), the law functioned as the household slave who supervised the discipline of the child. But now that faith has come, we are no longer under this slave, but have become children of God through faith in Christ (4:5–7; Rom. 8:14)—full members in the household of God. Paul reminds the Galatians that they had been united with Christ (Gal. 2:20)—a unity signified by baptism (Rom. 6:3–7; 1 Cor. 12:13). Just as believers put on clothing after baptism, so they are clothed with Christ. This dramatic sign is open to all (unlike circumcision, which was for males only); it proves that the old distinctions have ceased to count. Paul cites a baptismal confession: In Christ there is neither Jew nor Greek (religious discrimination; Rom. 3:22–23; 10:12), slave nor free (social discrimination; 1 Cor. 7:22; Philem. 16), male nor female (sex discrimination; see, however, 1 Cor. 11:2–16; 14:34–35). All are one in their new identity in Christ. Thus the believers belong to Christ (the one offspring) and inherit the promise spoken to Abraham.

4:1–11, Slavery and Adoption. To advance his argument, Paul takes up another analogy. A child, before becoming of age, is no better off than a slave in the household. Until the time appointed by the father, the child is under guardians and trustees. Similarly, as long as we were children (before faith came; 3:23), we were enslaved to evil cosmic forces (see 1:4; 4:9; Rom. 8:38). To be under their power meant to be slaves of sin (Gal. 3:22).

At the time appointed by God (see Rom. 5:6; 1 Cor. 10:11), God sent forth the Son of God. For Paul, the title "Son" stresses the close relationship between Christ and God (see Rom. 5:10; 8:32). Two things are said about the Son: first, he was born of woman, i.e., identified with humanity (see Job 14:1; Matt. 11:11; Luke 7:28); second, he was born under the law, i.e., identified with those under sin (Gal. 3:22). The sending of the Son has a dual purpose: to redeem or secure freedom for those under the law (3:13) and to make possible adoption into the household of faith (6:10; see Rom. 8:14–17). Proof that these purposes have been accomplished is seen in the reception of the Spirit (Gal. 3:2), whereby the Galatians can cry *Abba*—an Aramaic term used to address God in the prayers of Jesus and the earliest Christians (Mark 14:36; Rom. 8:15). Addressing God in this way shows that the Galatians are not slaves, but heirs.

In v. 8, Paul refers again to the situation before faith—to the time when the Galatians did not know God (see 1 Thess. 1:9) and were enslaved to the false gods of polytheism (1 Cor. 8:5; 10:20). Rather than knowing God (as an object; see Rom. 11:33–36), they "are known by God"; God had first known and chosen them (see Rom. 8:29–30; 1 Cor. 8:3; 13:12). In view of the resulting relationship with God, why, Paul asks, would the Galatians want to return to the previous situation—to slavery under the disarmed and worthless cosmic forces (v. 3)?

Thus Paul presents a startling argument: to submit to the law is to return to the situation of paganism. Apart from the gospel, Jews and Gentiles alike are under the power of sin (3:22). Evidence of this slavery can be seen in the Galatian concern to observe the rituals of the Jewish calendar—matters that are of no importance for the believer (see Rom. 14:5–6). Paul despairs, wondering if his ministry to the Galatians has been in vain.

4:12–20, Paul's Personal Appeal. Paul says, "Become as I am, as I became as you." He wants them to identify with his faithfulness to the gospel (see 1 Cor. 4:16; 11:1), just as he identified with them during his ministry (see 1 Thess. 2:8; 1 Cor. 9:21). Then the Galatians did Paul no wrong; rather, they graciously received him. Apparently Paul stopped in Galatia to recover from a physical malady. This illness is usually interpreted as the "thorn in the flesh" of 2 Cor. 12:7–10, and details from Galatians are used to identify the ailment. Whatever it was, the Galatians did not respond with scorn or loathing; they received Paul as a heavenly messenger,

as Christ himself (see 3:1). At that time, they deserved a blessing, for they were ready to give Paul one of their most precious possessions: their eyes.

Now the situation has changed. Anticipating their response to this letter, Paul asks, "Have I become your enemy by telling you the truth?" (see 2 Cor. 12:15). The troublemakers, on the other hand, try to exploit their relationship with the Galatians. They eagerly court the Galatians, but actually want to shut them out—out of the relation of friendship to Paul, out of participation in the community of promise. In his final appeal, Paul speaks as a loving mother (see 1 Thess. 2:7) who is suffering the pains of labor, awaiting their birth as mature Christians. Paul wishes he could be present in person so that he could change his tone rather than use the harsh words of this letter.

4:21–31, The Allegory of the Two Sons. Next, Paul presents a concluding argument from Scripture. He addresses the Galatians as "those who desire to be subject to the law" (see 3:23; 4:5), i.e., to yield to the teaching of the troublemakers. Then he asks, "Will you not listen to the law?" To answer the question, he refers to narratives from Genesis (chaps. 16, 17, 21) about the two sons of Abraham. One of these was Ishmael (whom Paul never names), the son of the slave woman Hagar (→ Hagar). The other was Isaac, the son of the free woman Sarah (v. 28). These sons are contrasted in the manner of their birth. The son of the slave was born "according to the flesh" (i.e., in the ordinary way), the son of the free woman, "through the promise" (see Gal. 3:16, 29).

Interpreting the story as an allegory, Paul says the women symbolize two covenants (→ Covenant). The slave woman, Hagar (the name has a sound similar to the Hebrew word for "mountain"), represents the covenant at Sinai—the covenant of the law that is observed in "the present Jerusalem" (v. 25). The children of this covenant are born into slavery under the law (3:23; 5:1). The second covenant (see 1 Cor. 11:25; 2 Cor. 3:6) is represented by the heavenly Jerusalem (see Heb. 12:22; Rev. 3:12; 21:2) that embodies the freedom Christians already enjoy (see Phil. 3:20). According to Paul, this city is "our mother"—it stands for the new covenant whereby people become children of Abraham through faith (Gal. 3:7).

Paul expands the allegory (v. 27) by quoting from Isa. 54:1. In its original setting this text contrasted the barren woman (the city of Jerusalem during the Exile) with the woman who has a husband (the city before the Exile) to show that after the return from exile Jerusalem would be more fruitful and joyful than ever. Paul identifies the barren woman as Sarah, the heavenly Jerusalem, the mother of Isaac. Thus, "you" (the gentile Christians of Galatia) are like Isaac, children of promise (see Gal. 3:29)—children not of the slave, but of the free woman (4:31).

When Paul says the child of the flesh persecuted the child of the Spirit he may have in mind an interpretation of Gen. 21:9 whereby the child of Hagar taunts the child of Sarah. When he notes that "so it is now," Paul is thinking of the persecution of Christians he has known as both perpetrator (Gal. 1:13; 1 Cor. 15:9) and victim (2 Cor. 11:24). The quotation from Gen. 21:10 indicates that the troublemakers should be thrown out of the Galatian churches (see Gal. 1:8–9).

5:1–6:10
Final Admonition and Instruction

5:1–12, Freedom and the Slavery of Circumcision. On the basis of the previous argument, Paul makes a final plea and presents additional instructions. He declares that Christ has set the Galatians free for the purpose of freedom. They should stand fast in their loyalty to the gospel and resist the efforts of the troublemakers. They should not be enslaved again to the law, nor submit to the demand for circumcision. Although Paul has not mentioned it in his earlier argument, circumcision, which was noted in his narrative (2:3, 12), is a major issue in the Galatian controversy.

If the Galatians have themselves circumcised, serious consequences will follow. For one, Christ will be of no benefit; if salvation requires this work of the law, Christ, who is the true ground of salvation, "died for no purpose" (2:21). Also, those who receive circumcision are obligated to keep the whole law (see Rom. 2:25); i.e., they put themselves under a requirement that cannot be fulfilled (Gal. 3:10; 6:13). Those who are seeking justification in this way are separated from Christ; they have fallen from grace (2:21; → Grace).

The true way to righteousness is through the Spirit, which the Galatians have received by faith (3:2). The Spirit is the down payment on life in the future (2 Cor. 1:22) and the basis for the hope of acquittal in the final judgment (see Rom. 2:5). From the perspective of faith in Christ, circumcision is a matter of indifference (Gal. 6:15; 1 Cor. 7:19). What matters is faith coming to expression in love—not a required ritual, but a way of life (see Gal. 5:14, 22).

The Galatians had once been on the right track (3:3)—they were running well (a metaphor from athletics, see 1 Cor. 9:24)—but someone got in their way. The persuasion to swerve from the truth of the gospel (Gal. 2:5, 14) did not come from God, who called them (1:6), but from the troublemakers. Their influence has started to permeate the congregations, for, as a proverb says, "A little yeast leavens the whole batch" (1 Cor. 5:6); evil is contagious.

In spite of some defectors, Paul is confident that most of the Galatians will follow his admonition. As to the one troubling them, Paul may be referring to the leader of the troublemakers, "whoever it is"—perhaps a person of inflated reputation (see 2:2, 6). Apparently, some have charged that Paul, as in his earlier zeal for the traditions (1:14), is still preaching circumcision

(see 1 Cor. 9:20; Acts 16:3). Yet, if Paul is still advocating this Jewish ritual, why is he being persecuted by the Jews (see 6:12; 2 Cor. 11:24)? To preach circumcision would be to revert to legal religion—to remove the scandal of the crucified Messiah (1 Cor. 1:23). Paul utters a harsh outburst against the agitators, "I wish those who unsettle you would castrate themselves."

5:13–26, Freedom and the Discipline of the Spirit. After reminding the Galatians that they were called to freedom, Paul warns them not to let their liberty become a "base of operations" (a military term) for the flesh. Probably the troublemakers have charged that Paul's message of freedom fosters immorality. As vv. 15, 26 indicate, however, the trouble that they have instigated has resulted in behavioral problems within the Galatian congregations. To correct these, Paul urges his readers to serve one another through love. The whole law is perfected in one word: "Love your neighbor" (Lev. 19:18; Rom. 13:9). Proof that the Galatians need the command is presented in 5:15: they are behaving like wild animals.

Paul urges them to walk by the Spirit so that they will not fulfill the desire of the flesh. The term "walk" is used to describe a style of life. The desire of the flesh represents the effort to order life according to material things. Spirit and flesh are opposing powers, and the conflict between the two results in moral paralysis: they are not able to do what they want (v. 17; see Rom. 7:15–23). In contrast to the external demands of law, the discipline of the Spirit is inward—the discipline of freedom (see 2 Cor. 3:17).

In vv. 19–23, Paul presents conventional ethical formulas: vice and virtue lists. Teachers of ethics in Paul's day liked to enumerate features of bad and good conduct (see Rom. 1:29–31; 1 Cor. 6:9–10). Paul's vice list ("the works of the flesh") is not restricted to sexual immorality (the so-called sins of the flesh), but includes such "spiritual" evils as enmity, jealousy, anger, and selfishness. Paul had warned the Galatians about these evils before. People who do such things will not inherit the "kingdom" (see 1 Cor. 6:10)—a term that refers to participation in the future reign of God (see 1 Cor. 15:24, 50).

The fruit of the Spirit is spontaneous. Though Paul includes such typical Greek virtues as humility and self-control, items in his list have theological significance: "peace," e.g., depicts the new relationship the believer has with God (Rom. 5:1). Love is the fundamental force of the entire ethic. Its deeds have nothing to do with law (Gal. 5:23); love cannot be commanded or judged by law. Those who belong to Christ can produce the fruit of the Spirit and avoid the works of the flesh because they have been crucified with Christ (2:20)—the old self has been put to death (see Rom. 6:5–6). Paul concludes with a statement of the indicative and the imperative. "If we live by the Spirit" (indicative), "let us also be guided by the Spirit" (imperative); Christians should live in response to the new being that they have received.

6:1–10, Practical Instruction to the Churches. After the heated theological argument of the preceding chapters, this advice seems ordinary. Yet Paul wants to indicate that the gospel has meaning for the mundane life of the church. Making use of familiar proverbs, he gives practical instruction on how Christians can live by the Spirit (5:25). If one of the members is caught in a trespass (perhaps one of the works of the flesh), those who live by the Spirit ought to restore that person to the community in an attitude of gentleness (one fruit of the Spirit; 5:23). Remember, Paul warns, every one of you (he uses the singular) is subject to temptation. Since all believers endure difficulties, they ought to "bear one another's burdens" (6:2). This sort of concern fulfills the law of Christ—the law of love (5:14).

Although believers are under obligation to others, they are also responsible for themselves. They must avoid arrogance (5:26), supposing that they are something when they are nothing (see 2:6, 9; 2 Cor. 12:11). Each one should examine one's own work to see if there is any ground for boasting (see Rom. 15:17). Everyone should carry one's own "load" (a word that can mean "cargo" or "weight"). At the same time, those who are taught should share provisions with those who teach the gospel (see 1 Cor. 9:4, 14).

In 6:7, Paul quotes a familiar proverb: "You reap whatever you sow." This saying is found in Greek and Jewish writings, but Paul gives it meaning in the context of his larger argument. To sow to the flesh means to do the works of the flesh (5:19–21); to reap corruption means to effect destruction and death (see Rom. 6:23; 8:13). To sow to the Spirit means to produce the fruit of the Spirit (5:22–23); to reap eternal life means to ensure participation in the coming kingdom of God (5:21). This cause-and-effect relationship should encourage people not to grow weary in doing good, for at the proper time the outcome will be realized. In the time that remains, Christians should do good to all people (see Rom. 12:18), but especially to "the family of faith"—the members of the church.

6:11–18
Conclusion of the Letter

Paul normally dictated his Letters and added the final greeting in his own hand (1 Cor. 16:21). The "large letters" may signify his agitation. Before concluding, Paul launches a final attack on the troublemakers. They want to make a good showing by forcing the Galatians to be circumcised. In the flesh of these Gentiles, the agitators think they can exhibit a basis for boasting in their own accomplishments. Also, by promoting circumcision, the troublemakers would appear to support the law and avoid persecution for their faith in the crucified Messiah (see 5:11). For all their devotion to

the law, the troublemakers do not themselves keep the commandments (see 5:3).

In contrast, Paul intends never to boast in his own accomplishments, but solely in the cross of Christ. This is a strange sort of boasting, since the crucifixion is a scandal (5:11; 1 Cor. 1:23). Through crucifixion with Christ (Gal. 2:20), the world has been crucified to Paul; the world, which is a power over against God (1 Cor. 2:12; 3:19), has no hold on the apostle. At the same time, Paul has been crucified to the world; his old self, trapped in the flesh, has been put to death (Gal. 5:24).

In 6:15, Paul repeats the principle stated in 5:6: circumcision is a matter of indifference. Although neither circumcision nor uncircumcision counts for anything, what counts is the new creation (2 Cor. 5:17). This new being that the believers have received in Christ becomes a rule or standard for life—like the Spirit, a new indicative (see Gal. 5:25). Those who obey the indicative—who walk according to the rule—shall receive peace (Rom. 5:1) and mercy (Rom. 11:31–32). They are those who by faith have come to be a part of God's people—"the Israel of God" (Gal. 6:16; see 6:10).

In a final assertion of freedom, Paul exclaims, "Henceforth let no one trouble me!" Instead of the mark of circumcision, he bears the brand marks of slavery to Jesus—the visible scars of persecution (2 Cor. 11:23–25). Paul's benediction is similar to those with which he concludes other Letters (see Phil. 4:23; Philem. 25). He hopes the Galatians will say "Amen" in response to the reading of the Letter in the Galatian congregations (see 1:5).

Bibliography

Betz, H. D. *Galatians: A Commentary on Paul's Letter to the Churches in Galatia.* Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1979.

Dunn, J. D. G. *The Epistle to the Galatians.* Black's New Testament Commentary. Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1993.

Ebeling, G. *The Truth of the Gospel: An Exposition of Galatians.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1985.

Martyn, J. L. *Galatians: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary.* Anchor Bible, 33A. New York: Doubleday, 1997.

Ephesians

NILS ALSTRUP DAHL *with* DONALD H. JUEL

INTRODUCTION

Transmission

The title "To the Ephesians" is first attested by the early church theologian Irenaeus, ca. A.D. 180. A generation earlier, however, Marcion had edited a collection of Paul's letters that used the title "To the Laodiceans" for Ephesians. Probably the famous heretic took the title from a still earlier edition he used. It is likely, therefore, that the Letter to the Ephesians circulated separately as a "general letter" from Paul before it became part of a collection and was supplied with a title and later with a local address in the prescript (1:1).

Literary Genre

The Letter to the Ephesians contains remarkably few references to specific persons, places, events, or controversial issues (→ Ephesus). It might be destined for any group of gentile Christians who did not know Paul personally. The Letter praises God for his blessing in Christ, extols God's great power and rich mercy, and reminds former Gentiles of the privileges that God has granted to them as well as to the Jews, with whom they have been united. On this basis the addressees are admonished to live up to their calling and avoid gentile vices, but Ephesians does not contain deliberations about more or less advisable courses of action. The author does not engage in dialogue with the addressees or debate with opponents, but unfolds themes with which the audience ought to be familiar. The style is both elevated and peculiar (see esp. 1:3–14).

Several scholars have suggested that in spite of the epistolary form Ephesians is best understood as a summary of Paul's teachings (perhaps a "testament"; → Testament), as a theological treatise or a meditation upon the theme "Christ and the Church," as a baptismal homily, or as an introduction to Paul's collected Letters. Not all of these suggestions are mutually exclusive. A letter might substitute for a public speech as well as for personal conversation, and in antiquity the art of letter writing could be considered part of the art of persuasion (rhetoric). The rhetoric of Ephesians is a variant of the demonstrative (or "epideictic") genre, which was used, for example, to praise the excellence of a god, an outstanding person, a virtue, or a city and its laws. Ephesians demonstrates the magnitude of God's benefactions. However, it also serves the purpose of a letter—to overcome distance and establish and cultivate contact between sender and addressees. As in 1 Thessalonians—where everything is much more specific—information and reminders are placed within a framework of thanksgiving and intercession, and a background section is followed by appeals. The addressees are asked to reciprocate the apostle's concern for them (Eph. 3:13; 6:19–20).

Setting

Taken at face value, Ephesians is a letter from Paul destined for one or several churches within the field of his mission to the Gentiles, but not founded by the apostle himself. Being under arrest, he was not able to visit them, so he sent Tychicus, who was to supplement the Letter with oral information (see 1:15–16; 3:1–2; 6:20–22). Apparently on the same mission, Tychicus was also to visit Colossae, accompanied by the runaway slave Onesimus (Col. 4:7–9). Most defenders of Pauline authenticity conclude that Ephesians is a circular letter, destined for Laodicea and Hierapolis, perhaps also for other churches that Tychicus was to visit. The complex relationship among Ephesians, Colossians, and the Letter to Philemon may then be explained by the assumption that the imprisoned apostle commissioned one of his assistants to write to Colossae and another to write a circular letter.

An increasing number of exegetes, Roman Catholics as well as Protestants, find it more likely that Ephesians is a pseudonymous letter, written sometime after the death of Paul. The Letter presupposes a setting in which Christians who ought to have been mature were exposed to a variety of false doctrines (4:13–16). The admission of Gentiles on equal terms with Jews is no longer a controversial issue, but is presented as a revealed mystery of which Paul was the mediator (2:11–3:13). Scholars who agree on a post-Pauline origin still evaluate Ephesians in divergent ways, e.g., as a faithful reproduction of Paul's theology, as a partial distortion of his "theology of the cross," or as an inspired reinterpretation that legitimates the later development of the church and its orders. The following exposition presumes that the anonymous

author was a personal disciple of Paul, possibly a Jew, who wrote a letter in Paul's name to make Paul present to Christians who were separated from the apostle in time rather than space. At a time when Christianity in Asia Minor was threatened by fragmentation and the Pauline heritage was in danger of being lost, Ephesians calls Christians back to the basis of their own existence, Paul's gospel and mission to the Gentiles and their own baptism.

COMMENTARY

1:1–2
Salutation

Ephesians, like Romans, mentions only Paul as the sender. Otherwise the salutation has a normal Pauline form except for the address. The early manuscripts do not mention any location; the insertion of "in Ephesus" before "and are faithful" is secondary and clumsy (see NRSV note). A local address must either have been absent from the beginning or omitted before Ephesians was incorporated in any collection of the Pauline Letters. There is some evidence that Romans was converted into a general letter by omission of "in Rome" in Rom. 1:7, 15 and deletion of chaps. 15–16. In the case of Ephesians it is more likely that the desire to have a letter from Paul to all Christians may have provided a reason for the composition of the entire Letter. A letter that concludes with a wish of peace to "all who have an undying love for our Lord Jesus Christ" may well have begun with a salutation of "the saints who are also faithful."

1:3–14
Introductory Praise of God

Ephesians, 2 Corinthians, and 1 Peter all begin with a "benediction" that praises "the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ." In contemporary Judaism, regular prayers usually took the form of "benedictions" that opened and/or concluded with the formula "Blessed [be] He" or "Blessed [be] Thou." Brief benedictions were also to be uttered on special occasions, e.g., at the reception of news or at happy encounters (thus already Gen. 24:27). This practice forms the background for the occasional use of a benediction at the opening of a letter (cf. 1 Kings 5:7; 2 Chron. 2:11–12). A blessing of this type may praise God for what he has done for the speaking person (2 Cor. 1:3–11; cf., e.g., 1 Sam. 25:32–34, 39). If God is praised for what he has done for the other person(s), the benediction serves as a solemn, originally courtly, form of congratulation (e.g., Gen. 14:20; 1 Kings 10:9; Ruth 4:14). In praising God, 1 Peter praises Christians who are happy in spite of their sufferings (1:3–12; cf. 3:14; 4:14). Ephesians praises God for what he has done "in Christ" for all Christians (Eph. 1:3–12), congratulating the gentile addressees who have become partakers of all God's blessings.

The theme of the benediction in Ephesians is that God is to be blessed because he has "blessed us in Christ with every spiritual blessing" (1:3). The theme is unfolded in a long series of clauses and phrases attached to one another, sometimes loosely, in consecutive subordination, without any full stop in the Greek text. The text is a unified whole. God is the acting subject, Christ the mediator of God's action and of the benefits Christians have received and possess in Christ. The emphasis gradually shifts from the acts of God to the experience of believers, but there is no linear argument that moves straight forward. The progress is circular, moving backward and forward from God's benefactions in Christ to the eternal decision of God's will and to God's ultimate purpose. Transitions from one circuit to the next are marked by repetition of the formula "in Christ" or variants at the end or at the beginning of the subsections (1:3, 4–6, 7–10, 11–12, 13–14).

Colossians and other Pauline Letters as well as Jewish hymns and prayers provide parallels to the phraseology and some of the themes, but only to a minor degree to the style of the benediction. It has been suggested that the opening benedictions of Ephesians and 1 Peter were modeled on benedictions used in connection with baptism. This may possibly apply to some parts of the text, but the author of Ephesians has composed the benediction and not quoted an already existing hymn.

1:3, Heavenly Blessings. The blessings for which God is praised are not earthly (as in Deut. 28:2–13), but "spiritual blessing in the heavenly places." We may picture them as stored in heaven until they were bestowed in Christ. As the text proceeds it mentions various aspects of these blessings: adoption as God's children (1:5; cf. Gal. 4:5; 2 Cor. 6:18), glorious grace, redemption and forgiveness through the death of Christ (1:6–8; cf. Col. 1:14; Rom. 3:24–25), and also wisdom and insight, as God has revealed his secret plan for the entire universe (1:8–10; cf. Dan. 2:20–23). In Christ the chosen ones have become God's own lot (1:11–12; cf. JB, TEV). The combination of more or less familiar words and themes has a cumulative effect that evokes emotive as well as doctrinal associations.

1:4–6, Election in Christ. The correspondence between God's intention and action was a common theme (cf., e.g., Num. 23:19; Rom. 8:28–30). In Ephesians the idea of predestination is given a special form: already before the origins of the world God has in Christ chosen those whom he would bless in Christ (1:3–4, cf. 1:9; 3:12). This presupposes not only that

Christ was in the beginning "with God" (John 1:1), but also that he was designated from the beginning to be the mediator of the blessings God had prepared for the chosen ones (cf. 1 Pet. 1:18–19; 2 Tim. 1:9–10). The correspondence between what God has decided and what he performs is restated in 1:5, 9–10, and in v. 11, where God is referred to as the one who performs all that his will has decided. The audience is to be assured that God, who in Christ has already done what he intended, will bring his action to completion.

1:7–12, Purpose and Consequences. The most comprehensive statement of God's purpose pertains to God's plan for "all things," the universe of heavenly powers and human beings (1:9–10). The main verb in v. 10 normally means to sum up or recapitulate a complex discourse in a brief summary (cf. Rom. 13:10). The verb may, however, have been taken to mean "to bring to a head" and associated with the metaphoric use of "head" (of a body; see 2 Esd. 12:17–18, NEB). The general idea in vv. 9–10 is therefore likely to be that God's secret plan for "the fullness of time" was to bring the entire history of the universe to its completion in Christ, who is himself the supreme head (cf. 1:20–23; 4:15–16). By the unification of Gentiles and Israelites in the church, God has realized an essential part of this plan (cf. 2:11–22; 3:5–12).

In a similar way, God's final goal for his chosen ones is in line with what he has already done for them. God has chosen them "to be holy and blameless before him" (1:4; cf. 5:27; Col. 1:22). In vv. 11–12 the Greek syntax is less than clear and translations vary. The unit may best be understood as a somewhat overloaded summary statement: "In Christ we have been singled out, as we were predestined (already before the completion of God's design for the universe) . . . , that—to the praise of God's glory—we should be the ones who have hope in Christ" (vv. 11–12). The entire benediction concludes with two statements of goal and consequence. The first has been interpreted in several ways (see, e.g., KJV, RSV). As Ephesians often connects nearly synonymous words, the intended meaning may be that God's goal was "to redeem and secure us for himself." The ultimate goal is the praise of God's glory. Like God's grace and benefactions (v. 6) and the existence of a community that already has hope in Christ (v. 12), even the inclusion of Gentiles (v. 14) aims at the glorification of God.

1:13–14, The Seal of the Spirit. After the summary statement in vv. 11–12 the gentile addressees are reminded of what happened when they first heard the gospel and responded with faith: they were "sealed" with the Holy Spirit. At the time Ephesians was written, the gift of the Spirit appears to have become more of an integral part of baptismal theology and ritual than an actual experience, as it was at the beginning of the Christian mission to the Gentiles (Acts 10:44–48; 15:7–9; Gal. 3:2, 5). Even in Ephesians, however, the "seal of the Spirit" is considered a stamp God has put on those who belong to him and are under his protection and a first installment of their inheritance (cf. 2 Cor. 1:21–22; Eph. 4:30). The gentile addressees are to be assured that God's promise pertains to them and that they have a full share in all of God's blessings in Christ.

The entire benediction performs what it says and praises God by rehearsing his benefactions. Striking a note of congratulation, it reminds the addressees of the many things for which they ought to praise God. Indirectly it also admonishes them to conduct their lives in such a way that God may be glorified by their existence. The benediction is an exordium, or prologue, to the Letter; a more precise statement of the theme is part of the intercession that follows (1:18–19).

1:15–2:22
Intercession, Theme, and Exposition

As in most Letters of Paul, an assertion of thanksgiving and prayer expresses the sender's appreciation of and concern for the addressees. The prayer report is elaborated in a way that prepares for the theme(s) and the main content of the Letter (cf. Rom. 1:9–17; Col. 1:9–12). In the characteristic style of Ephesians a beginning exposition is attached to the thematic formulations of 1:18–19.

1:15–16, Thanksgiving. As a consequence of the preceding praise of God, the thanksgiving is brief and has an unusual form. Nearly all editors and translators accept the text of 1:15 in the majority of Greek manuscripts, according to which Paul gives thanks because he has heard about "your faith . . . and your love" of the addressees, as in Col. 1:4. The words "the love," however, are not present in the earliest and generally best manuscripts, the text of which may be translated: "because I have heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus toward all the saints." This would make sense in a letter that is destined for a general audience.

1:17–19, Intercession. The prayer for inspired wisdom and revealed knowledge combines several current phrases (see, e.g., Wisd. of Sol. 7:7). Three indirect questions specify the content of knowledge for which Paul is reported to pray and that the Letter seeks to convey (vv. 18–19). The call of God, which has given hope to Gentiles without hope, is the main theme (see 4:1, 4). The clauses in vv. 18b and 19 state subthemes that are treated in reverse order, the manifestation of God's sovereign might in Christ (1:20–23), his power at work among the believers (2:1–10), and "his glorious inheritance"—which Gentiles now share with "the saints" (2:11–22; 3:6). The prayer is not for esoteric revelations, but for a deeper understanding of the common Christian faith.

1:20–23, The Enthronement of Christ. The resurrection and heavenly enthronement of Christ provide the evidence of God's might. The imagery is drawn from a common Christological use of Ps. 110:1 (i.e., use of the text to express and support the Christian understanding of Jesus, e.g., Rom. 8:34; Acts 2:32–35), combined with Ps. 8:6 (as in 1 Pet. 3:22). The language is hymnic and does not distinguish between the enthronement of Christ and the future subjection of his "enemies" and of "all things" (unlike 1 Cor. 15:22–28; Heb. 2:5–9; 10:12–13). Ephesians does, however, make another distinction. Christ is enthroned in the high heavens, above all known and unknown powers in the universe. They are subjected to him, and he is exalted as "the head over all things" (like God, 1 Chron. 29:11), but God has given him to the church, and it is the church, not the universe, that is the body and "fullness" of Christ, "who himself receives the entire fullness of God" (NEB) or "fills all in all," as God does (Jer. 23:24, see also Eph. 4:9).

2:1–10, Made Alive with Christ. The text turns to the work of God's power among those who believe (cf. 1:19). In the Greek text the sentence that begins with "And you" (v. 1) is never completed. With "us" as the object, the intended sentence is resumed and expanded in vv. 4–7, where the core is formulated in loose analogy with and dependence upon what is said about God's work in Christ (1:20): "But God . . . has made us (who were dead) alive . . . and made us sit with him on thrones in the high heavens." The cause of the irregular syntax in vv. 1–3 is that the portrayal of former Gentiles as "dead in transgressions and sins" has been expanded into a generalized description of the human predicament apart from Christ. Together with later insertions and comments this contributes to a multifaceted set of contrasts: God's rich mercy and power to make the dead alive over against death in sins; heavenly seats of honor together with Christ instead of existence in the atmosphere below the moon, where the devil holds sway; evidence of God's superabundant grace in ages to come in contrast to conformity to the age of this world. Not only former Gentiles, but all who have a share in the salvation in Christ deserved wrath because of what they did, like those who are still outsiders—but God has loved them with great love.

The assertion that Christians have already been saved, raised, and enthroned with Christ goes beyond what Paul says (e.g. Rom. 5:9–10; 6:1–11); not even Colossians (2:11–14; 3:2–4) offers full parallels. Ephesians may draw upon the language of hymns that praised God as if his mighty work of salvation had already been completed. Appended comments, however, interpret the realized salvation in Pauline terms: "by grace, through faith . . . not the result of works, so that no one may boast" (2:5b, 8–9). A contrast between two ways of life, in sins or in good works prepared by God, encloses the subsection and brings the prayer report to a delayed conclusion (2:2–3, 10; cf. Phil. 1:9–11; Col. 1:9–10).

2:11–22, Reminder: Alienation and Reconciliation. As in 2:1–10 the former Gentiles are reminded of what they once were and what they now have become (cf. 5:8; e.g., Col. 1:21–22; Titus 3:3–7). The core sentence is v. 13: "But now, in Christ Jesus, you who once were far off have been brought near by the [atoning] blood of Christ." The terms "far off" and "near" allude to Isa. 57:19 but are, as in Jewish usage, applied to those who lack and those who have full legal and religious rights as the people of God, respectively. The opening and concluding sentences deal with the former and the present status of uncircumcised Gentiles (vv. 11–12, 19–22). They were once foreigners with no share in the privileges of Israel (cf. Rom. 9:5), but now they are "citizens with the saints," not merely aliens with limited rights. A cluster of loaded metaphors, God's city, household, building, and temple, center around the identification of Christ as the *cornerstone* and the apostles and prophets as the foundation laid in Zion (Isa. 28:16; cf. 1 Pet. 2:4–10). The upbuilding of the entire structure depends upon Christ in the same way as the growth of the body (Eph. 2:19; cf. 4:16; Col. 2:19).

A middle segment, vv. 14–18, explains how Christ through his atoning death brought about the transfer from "far off" to "near by." The text has a poetic flavor and alludes to the messenger of peace in Isa. 52:7 as well as to the peace for the far and the near in Isa. 57:19. Christ is himself identified with the peace he has brought and announced. This peace means unification of the Jewish and non-Jewish parts of humanity, creation of "one new humanity," reconciliation of both parts with one another and with God "in one body," and free access to the Father "in one Spirit."

Ephesians maintains that to overcome duality Christ abrogated "the law with its commandments and ordinances" and broke down the "dividing wall" of hostility. The metaphor may allude to a cosmic wall around God's heavenly abode (e.g., *1 Enoch* 14) but also to the wall that barred the access of foreigners to the Temple (see Acts 21:27–30; cf. Ezek. 44:20; 44:5–9). Ephesians, moreover, gives a negative twist to the notion that the commandments provided "walls" that protected the purity of Israel (*Let. Arist.* 139–42) and regards the law as a set of rules for communal life and worship that alienated Gentiles and caused hostility but were unable to reconcile sinners with God. (For a somewhat similar view see Heb. 7:18–19; 9:1–10.)

The reminder in 2:11–22 is, like the entire Letter, addressed to Christian Gentiles who have been united with the original heirs of God's promise without becoming Jews (see 3:6). The text does, however, presuppose that both parts of humanity are in need of peace and reconciliation through the cross of Christ. The distinction between "the uncircumcision" (NRSV, lit.,

"foreskin") and circumcision "in the flesh, made by human hands" (v. 11) has become obsolete as Christ has inaugurated a new age in which both parts have access to the Father in one Spirit and are built up to be the temple where God dwells in the Spirit. As Gentiles within the church in this context are regarded as representatives of the entire non-Jewish world, the Jews in the church may represent all Israel, as in Romans 11. Ephesians, however, never mentions the fact that some Jews rejected Christ, nor does it say anything about how the addressees relate, or ought to relate, to Jews in their own midst or in Jerusalem. The author's concern is, apparently, the roots and origin of the church in Israel more than the actual relationship between Christians and Jews.

3:1–21
Paul's Ministry and Intercession

3:1–13, Information About the Sender. In Ephesians information about the sender is inserted between the beginning and the continuation of a renewed assertion of intercession (3:1, 14–21). The report tells no news; it is a retrospective summary that portrays Paul as mediator of the formerly hidden but now revealed *mystery* of Christ (cf. Col. 1:25–29; 2 Tim. 1:8–11; Rom. 16:25–27; and already 1 Cor. 2:6–16; 4:1). The first of two circular moves, from Paul to the mystery and back, draws attention to the special revelation granted to Paul and to his insight into the mystery that was revealed to "his holy apostles and prophets" (vv. 2–7). The second move emphasizes that Paul, by the grace of God, became an active agent of revelation. His ministry to the Gentiles made the Creator's secret plan, to include the Gentiles as "fellow heirs" and members of the body of Christ, public knowledge, available to heavenly powers as well as to human beings (vv. 8–13; see also 2:11–22; 3:6). Several features of this stylized portrait are already present in the undisputed Letters of Paul (see 1 Cor. 1; 5:1–11; Gal. 1:11–16; 2:7–9). In a special way, however, it emphasizes that all gentile Christians owe their existence as members of the church to Paul's work as the agent of the revealed mystery of Christ.

3:14–19, The Intercession Resumed and Concluded. The prayer is that God through his Spirit will strengthen "your inner being," that Christ may be present through faith, and love be a firm foundation, so that the believers have the disposition necessary if they are to obtain true knowledge and reach the ultimate goal. In Jewish tradition, the immeasurable vastness of the world often illustrated the limitations of human understanding (e.g., Job 11:7–10). God, however, might reveal all mysteries of the world to a man of God like Moses (e.g., 2 *Apoc. Bar.* 59:4–11). Ephesians uses comprehension of the dimensions of the universe as a rhetorical preamble to prepare for the climax of the prayer: "That you may have power . . . to know the love of Christ that surpasses knowledge" (vv. 18–19, NRSV).

3:20–21, Doxology. A formula celebrating God's glory brings the intercession and the whole first part of the Letter to an appropriate conclusion. The form "To him who by the power at work within us is able to . . . be glory" occurs also in Rom. 16:25–27 and Jude 24–25. In Ephesians God's immense power is a recurrent theme (see 1:11, 19).

4:1–16
Basic Appeal and Incentives

4:1–6, Worthy of the Calling. A polite but urgent appeal marks the transition to the second main part of the Letter (cf. Rom. 12:1; Philem. 8). The basic request, that those who are called by God should live up to their calling, corresponds to the thematic formulation in 1:18 and covers all the exhortations in 4:1–6:20. The first specification is that those who have received one common hope must conduct their lives and relate to one another in such a way that the given unity is preserved: "one body and one Spirit" (4:1–4). The very carefully arranged correlation of "one" and "all" in vv. 5–6 has antecedents in a common Greek tradition that could be adapted to Jewish monotheism and to Christian faith (see 1 Cor. 8:6; Heb. 2:10–11; Rom. 11:36). In the context of Ephesians the formula expounds the basis of the unity that has to be preserved. The appended description in 4:7–16 as well as echoes from the preceding (see esp. 2:14, 16, 18) confirms that the purpose of the exhortations is not merely to tell Christians what they ought to do, but also, or even more, to motivate them to live up to their calling.

4:7–16, Unity in Diversity. The explanation supporting the appeal treats the theme of one body with many parts in a way that is both similar to and different from Rom. 12:3–8; 1 Cor. 12:6–30. The ascended Christ is identified as the giver of diverse measures of grace. The quotation of and comments on Ps. 68:18 in Eph. 4:8–11 presuppose an alteration of the text from "he took . . ." to "he gave gifts." The free rendering goes back to a Jewish tradition that applied the passage to Moses, who ascended to heaven (according to this tradition) to receive the Torah and give gifts. Ephesians combines a Christological interpretation of the passage with the representation of the ascended Christ as the supreme head. The "gifts" of Christ are not identified with spiritual gifts in general (in spite of v. 8), but with *persons* who were assigned to preach the gospel and/or to take care of the congregations. As a result, modern commentators have debated the extent to which Ephesians presupposes and legitimates an institutionalized ministry. In the context, however, the interest centers on the workers' common task, to build

up the church and ward off all kinds of false teaching, so that the entire body of Christ and all its members may grow up in harmony and reach full maturity.

As Christ is the "head above all," his body, the church, is like a world, a renewed universe whose organic cohesion and growth depend upon its relation to the heavenly head (1:22–23; see also Col. 1:17–18; 2:10, 19).

4:17–24
Two Ways of Life

A stern warning (vv. 17–19) and a positive reminder (vv. 20–24) introduce the series of negative and positive prescriptions in 4:25–30.

4:17–19, No Longer Like the Gentiles. The stereotyped, dark picture of Gentiles is reminiscent of Rom. 1:21–32, but it is used in a traditional way as a warning not to act as idolatrous people do (see, e.g., Lev. 19:1–4; 1 Pet. 1:14). Their ignorance of the true God has resulted in the loss of moral sensitivity and decency. In practice this led to a combination of what were considered typical pagan vices: impurity in contrast to holiness and unfair gain at the expense of others (not merely greed; see also 5:3–5).

4:20–24, The Old and the New Human Being. The addressees should not relapse into their former way of life because they did "learn Christ" when they received the gospel and were instructed to "put away . . . your old self . . . to clothe yourselves with the new self." The teaching is probably a summary of baptismal instruction (see Col. 3:9–11; Gal. 3:27–28; cf. Col. 2:11–12; Rom. 6:3–6). Familiarity with current interpretations of Genesis 1–3 and with Pauline teaching would enrich readers' understanding of the symbolism (see, e.g., Rom. 5:12–21; 8:29; 13:12, 14; 1 Cor. 15:44–49, 53–54). Ephesians, however, uses the reminder about the meaning of baptism in a hortatory context and insists that the initiation has to be followed up by an ongoing inner renewal (4:23; cf. 3:16–17).

4:25–5:20
Negative and Positive Admonitions

Diverse rules of conduct are loosely interconnected, as often in moral exhortations. Some formulations go back to the OT (e.g., Zech. 8:16; Ps. 4:4); many are taken over from catechetical instruction and/or from Colossians (e.g., Gal. 5:19–21; 1 Thess. 4:11; Col. 3:5–17; 4:5). Ephesians, however, tends to formulate the traditional topics after a pattern, the main characteristics of which are use of second-person plural forms, coordination of negative and positive imperatives, and appended or inserted reasons for the warnings and recommendations (see 4:25–32; 5:3–12, 15–18). The sequence also shows careful composition. The first series of admonitions (4:25–32) is linked to the preceding reminder (vv. 20–24) and spells out what Christians should already know. They should be imitators of God, in whose image "the new self" was created (5:1–2). The strict warnings in 5:3–14 elaborate the theme "no longer as the Gentiles" (4:17), and a final series (5:15–20) provides a gradual transition to the directives for wives and husbands.

Familiar precepts are reformulated to stimulate and motivate former Gentiles to behave as new and continuously renewed persons. Their words, actions, and reactions should not harm, but benefit those who are fellow members of the one body. Christ's saving grace, love, and sacrifice provide the model for mutual forgiveness and love. Anger and pernicious speech may bedevil the fellowship; pagan immorality and self-interest contaminate the "children of light." The stern warnings against association with immoral outsiders may seem to recommend the kind of isolation that the Essenes practice (→ Essenes), but they are not meant to be strict rules of sectarian discipline (cf. 1 Cor. 5:9–10). Both the injunction to bring to light the shameful "works of darkness" and, in the present context, the quotation from an unknown source in 5:14 presuppose social contacts that may result in the conversion of outsiders. Among insiders and outsiders alike, Christians should not behave like ignorant pagans, but be wise, able to discern what is the will of God (5:15–17; see also 5:10; Rom. 12:2; Col. 4:5–6). Sober but filled with the Spirit, they are to give thanks in their common worship and also, in continuation of Jewish custom, in daily life (see also 5:4; Col. 3:16–17; 1 Thess. 5:18).

5:21–6:9
Domestic Duties

As in the shorter and earlier code in Col. 3:18–4:1, the rules are arranged in three pairs: wives and husbands, children and fathers, slaves and masters—an order that can be traced back to Aristotle and that has left traces in many later treatments of what a good household should be like. The earliest Christian examples address each group separately (see also 1 Pet. 2:18–3:7).

5:21, Introductory Statement. In Ephesians the introductory formulation "subject to one another" (5:21) further modifies the common tendency to make the master of the house responsible for the good order of the entire household.

5:22–33, Wives and Husbands. The extended treatment moves repeatedly back and forth from wives and husbands to the relationship between Christ and the church, which is seen as the model for human marriage in two ways: first, the husband is the head of his

wife (cf. 1 Cor. 11:3) as Christ is the head of the church (v. 23; see 1:22–23); second, Christ loved and gave himself up for the church, his bride (vv. 25–27; cf. Ezek. 16:8–14; 2 Cor. 11:2; Rev. 21:9). The two sets of metaphors are fused in vv. 28–33 by means of a subtle combination of Gen. 2:24, "the two shall be one body," and the commandment of love in Lev. 19:18, which is paraphrased by "love their own bodies," "his own flesh," and "as himself." Christ's unification with the church, his bride and his body, is the "great mystery" contained in Gen. 2:24 (see also 2:23). The emphatic formula "I for my part" (v. 32, NEB) implies a contrast with another interpretation, most likely one arguing that union with Christ excluded human marriage—not only relations with a prostitute, as Paul argued in 1 Cor. 6:15–17. For early Christianity, celibacy or abstinence was the main alternative to the inherited household ethos that the disclosure of the "great mystery" in Ephesians both upholds and modifies.

6:1–4, Children and Parents. The Alexandrian Jewish author Philo had already connected the commandment to honor one's parents with general rules of household duties. The rule for fathers in 6:4 is the part of the code that most easily can be used to support authoritarian paternalism, but it may refer to "education" rather than strict "discipline."

6:5–9, Slaves and Masters. The presence of slaves in Christian households is not felt as a problem by the author, but Ephesians stresses that slaves and masters have reciprocal duties and the same impartial Lord in heaven. In comparison with Pauline texts like 1 Cor. 7:20–24, 29–31; Gal. 3:28; and Philemon, however, the household rules in Ephesians are evidence of an increasing closeness to generally accepted standards.

6:10–20
Final Exhortations

Exhortations to be strong, stand firm, and be awake, and to pray and make intercession, especially for the sender, conclude the main part of the Letter (cf. 1 Cor. 16:13; Col. 4:2–3). The elaborated admonition to "put on the whole armor of God" resumes the theme of 4:24 in a new form. Most of the weapon metaphors go back to the OT (see Isa. 11:5; 59:16–17; Wisd. of Sol. 5:16; cf. Isa. 52:7), but they may have been used in catechetical traditions (see Rom. 13:12; 1 Thess. 5:8). The "weapons" are not simply human virtues, but rather effects of God's own might, which provides protection in the fight against the invisible powers that cause tribulations and temptations.

The explicit association of the cosmic powers with the devil is unusual, but corresponds with a more general evaluation of "this world" as "darkness" (2:1–3; 4:17–19; 5:8–12). The tendency to depict the whole universe as divided radically between good and evil powers, however, is counterbalanced by a strong emphasis upon the sovereignty of God, the Creator and Father of all (3:9, 14–15; 4:6). Ephesians makes no attempt to explain the origins of evil, but insists that God has proved his sovereign might by enthroning the risen Christ above the universe and all powers within it (1:19–22; 4:10).

In the world the cosmic powers still act as hostile forces, allied with the devil. Christians must do battle with them. In union with Christ, however, they have already risen above the world in which they still face trials and tribulations. The cosmological imagery has in Ephesians become a vehicle to communicate Paul's conviction that no power whatever "will be able to separate us from the love of God in Christ Jesus our Lord" (Rom. 8:31–32).

In the historical context, the exhortations are similar to those in Colossians (Col. 2:4–3:4): efforts to escape the world and ascend to heaven by means of ascetic practices and visionary experiences are both futile and unnecessary. By the grace of God members of the church have already been freed from bondage and enthroned in heaven as associates of Christ. What matters is that they do not relapse into the vices that are still in full swing in the outside world, but do those works for which they have been created, and that they relate to one another in such a way that the body of Christ and all its members will grow up toward Christ, in truth and in love.

Equipped with the "gospel of peace" and the "sword of the Spirit," Christians are also to engage actively in the cosmic battle.

6:21–24
Epistolary Conclusion

The commendation of Tychicus, who is to carry the letter and supplement it with oral reports, is formulated by analogy with Col. 4:7–9, but omits the reference to Onesimus. Wishes of peace and grace are Pauline variants of the customary greetings at the end of a letter. The formulation is unusual, however. Verse 23 seems to make "the grace" contingent upon the attitude of the addressees (cf. Gal. 6:16), perhaps an indication that the author feared that not all Christians would heed the reminders and admonitions of his "letter from Paul."

Bibliography

Bruce, F. F. *The Epistles to the Colossians, to Philemon, and to the Ephesians.* New International Commentary on the New Testament. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1984.

Lincoln, A. T. *Ephesians.* Word Biblical Commentary, 42. Dallas, TX: Word, 1990.

Mitton, C. L. *Ephesians.* New Century Bible. Greenwood, SC: Attic Press, 1976.

Patzia, A. G. *Colossians, Philemon, Ephesians.* Good News Commentary. San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1984.

Sampley, J. P. *"And the two shall become one flesh": A Study of Traditions in Eph. 5:21–33.* Society for New Testament Studies Monograph Series, 16. London and New York: Cambridge University Press, 1971.

Sampley, J. P., et al. *Ephesians, Colossians, 2 Thessalonians, The Pastoral Epistles.* Proclamation Commentaries. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1978.

Taylor, W. F., and J. H. P. Reumann. *Ephesians, Colossians.* Augsburg Commentary on the New Testament. Minneapolis, MN: Augsburg, 1985.

Philippians

RONALD F. HOCK

INTRODUCTION

The city of Philippi in northeastern Macedonia was named for Philip II, king of Macedonia (359–336 B.C.) and father of Alexander the Great. By the second and first centuries B.C., however, Roman influence had become dominant; the city was connected to Italy by the road known as the Via Egnatia, settled on several occasions with Roman veterans, and reorganized as a Roman colony (Colonia Julia Augusta Philippensis) complete with Roman gods and Roman law (→ Philippi).

About A.D. 50 the apostle Paul, accompanied by Silas and Timothy, left Asia Minor for Europe (→ Paul). After disembarking at Neapolis, they picked up the Via Egnatia and traveled on to Philippi (Acts 16:11–12). Acts has a vivid, if episodic, account of Paul's founding visit to Philippi, his first church in Europe. After he had spoken to some women at a Jewish prayer meeting at a riverbank outside the city, one of the women, Lydia by name and a merchant of luxurious purple-dyed cloth by trade, converted to Christianity, along with her household, and then offered her house to Paul and the church (vv. 13–15; → Lydia). Shortly afterward, Paul and Silas encountered a slave prophetess whom Paul exorcised, but this exorcism angered her masters and led to the beating and imprisonment of Paul and Silas (vv. 16–24). While they were in prison an earthquake struck and opened the doors; the jailer, fearing that all had escaped, was about to kill himself when Paul assured him that all were still there, prompting the relieved jailer and his household to convert to Christianity (vv. 25–34). Once the authorities learned about Paul's Roman citizenship, they apologized for the beating (vv. 35–39) and allowed Paul to leave Philippi with some semblance of dignity (v. 40).

Paul's Letters confirm little of what is said in the Acts account. Only the beating and imprisonment are even alluded to (1 Thess. 2:2; Phil. 1:30), although the continuing role of women in the Philippian church is suggested by Paul's appeal to Euodia and Syntyche (see 4:2). Paul's overall silence, however, does not invalidate the Acts account. In fact, many details—the designation "colony" (Acts 16:12), the Roman terms for local authorities (vv. 20, 35), the prohibition of unapproved religions within the city (vv. 13, 21), and the special rights of Roman citizens (v. 37)—lend plausibility to the account.

In any case, once Paul had left Philippi, contact with the church there did not end, but developed into one of the closest relationships he had, prompting some scholars to suggest a virtual legal partnership between Paul and the Philippians that was formed to spread the gospel. Paul does speak of the Philippians as his partners (4:15; cf. 1:5, 7), and their aid began soon after he left the city. They sent gifts at least twice to Paul when he was at Thessalonica (4:16) and again when he was at Corinth (2 Cor. 11:9). And a more recent gift, while Paul was in prison (Phil. 4:18), is one of the things that prompted Paul to write the Letter to the Philippians (→ Letter).

The interpretation of Paul's Letter to the Philippians is hampered by various historical problems, chief among them being its place and date of composition and its literary unity. Paul is explicit about writing this Letter from prison (1:7, 13, 17), and references to the praetorian guard (1:13) and the household of Caesar (4:22) no doubt led to its traditional placement during Paul's Roman imprisonment and a corresponding date in the early 60s (cf. Acts 28:14–31). Scholars, however, have noted that the references to the praetorian guard and Caesar's household do not point exclusively to Rome and that a Roman imprisonment is problematic on other grounds, especially the great distance between Rome and Philippi, which had to be traversed several times before Paul could write the Letter. Consequently, scholars have proposed other locations, such as Paul's imprisonment in the late 50s in Caesarea (cf. Acts 23:33–26:32). Or, knowing that Paul endured imprisonment in several other, if unnamed, locations (2 Cor. 11:23), they have proposed an Ephesian imprisonment in the mid-50s, largely on the basis of Paul's reference to "fighting with beasts at Ephesus" (1 Cor. 15:32). Although Ephesus is much closer to Philippi, it is not without its own problems. The reference to fighting with beasts does not necessarily mean imprisonment, and Paul's own list of hardships at Ephesus does not include prison (1 Cor. 4:11–13). Accordingly, the place and date for the composition of Philippians must remain open.

The second issue, the unity of Philippians, arises from a sharp change in tone at 3:1b, a puzzling delay in thanking the Philippians for their gift only at the end

of the Letter (4:10–20), and a reference by Polycarp, an early second-century bishop of Smyrna, to Paul's letters (plural) to the Philippians (Pol. *Phil.* 3:2). Consequently, some scholars have proposed that our present Letter to the Philippians has been made up of two or three letters. This proposal, however, has been increasingly challenged, for other scholars not only note sharp changes in tone elsewhere (e.g., 1 Thess. 2:14–16) and see an implicit reference to the gift as early as 1:3, but also see a verbal, thematic, and rhetorical unity to the Letter as it now stands. Therefore, the following comments will presuppose the literary unity of Philippians.

The Letter to the Philippians is one of Paul's shorter Letters, ranking fifth among the seven undisputed Letters in length, but it is nonetheless a valuable document. It contains personal data about Paul's pre-Christian life (3:5–6) as well as his later reflections on the transforming power of Christ's death and resurrection in his life (esp. 3:7–14, 20–21), and it preserves a pre-Pauline hymn to Christ (2:6–11).

COMMENTARY

1:1–11
The Opening of the Letter

1:1–2, Salutation. Paul follows letter-writing conventions of his day when he opens this Letter with the names of senders and recipients (v. 1) as well as with his greetings (v. 2). The conventional formula, however, was brief: *A* to *B*, greetings. Paul expanded this formula, and though his expansion here is not as great as in Rom. 1:1–7 and Gal. 1:1–5, it is still distinctive. For example, Timothy appears as co-sender, not in itself peculiar, as he is listed in the salutations of 2 Corinthians, Philemon, and 1 Thessalonians, but in the first two he has a subordinate role as "brother" to Paul (2 Cor. 1:1; Philem. 1) and in the third he comes after Silvanus (1 Thess. 1:1). In the salutation of Philippians, however, Timothy alone is co-sender and is Paul's equal, since both are "slaves of Christ Jesus" (1:1). Timothy's unique status here accords with his close relationship to Paul as his "son" (2:22) and with his genuine concern for the Philippians (2:19–20). This concern had arisen from Timothy's presence at the founding of the Philippian church (cf. Acts 16:1, 11–40) as well as from subsequent visits (cf. Acts 19:22; 20:1–4).

Paul's use of the designation "slave" is also unusual (cf. Rom. 1:1; → Slavery in the New Testament). His usual self-designation is "apostle" (so Rom. 1:1; Cor. 1:1; 2 Cor. 1:1; Gal. 1:1), and its absence here is probably because Paul's relations with the Philippians were such that he hardly had to assert his authority; by contrast, there were challenges to his apostleship at Corinth and in Galatia. In any case, the term "slave" is significant in that Paul elsewhere uses slave imagery of himself and Timothy (Phil. 2:22) and of the Philippians (2:12) and often speaks metaphorically of Jesus as "lord" (2:11; cf. 1:2; 3:8, 20; 4:5, 23).

The description of the recipients is distinctive in that only here are certain "bishops" (Gk. *episkopoi*) and "deacons" *(diakonoi)* referred to (1:1). Their precise role is difficult to determine, but they were no doubt leaders and perhaps had some role in the gift (see 4:10–20).

Finally, instead of the conventional "greetings" (cf. Acts 15:23), Paul expands: "Grace to you and peace from God, our father, and the Lord, Jesus Christ" (Phil. 1:2), a fixed formula in Paul (Rom. 1:7; 1 Cor. 1:3; 2 Cor. 1:2; Philem. 3).

1:3–11, Thanksgiving. This section opens with "I give thanks to my God . . . ," a formulaic expression typical of Paul's Letters (Rom. 1:8; 1 Cor. 1:4; 1 Thess. 1:2; Philem. 4) and paralleled to some extent in ancient letters generally. This thanksgiving is noteworthy in several respects. For example, one phrase in v. 3 is ambiguous, capable of being rendered "every time I remember you" or "because of your every remembrance of me." The latter is more likely correct, so that we have an appropriately early, if veiled, note of thanks for the Philippians' gift. One objection to the Letter's integrity would thus be removed.

The remainder of the thanksgiving is clear enough, elaborating on Paul's gratitude from several angles. Thus he adds that his thanksgiving is made "with joy" (v. 4), an emotion that characterizes most of the Letter (1:18, 25; 2:2, 17–18, 29; 3:1; 4:1, 4). Accordingly, Paul's pause to express his intense feelings for the Philippians—they are "in his heart" and he "longs" to see them (vv. 7–8)—is understandable, particularly so in his own difficult circumstances of being "imprisoned" and having to defend himself (v. 7). Finally, Paul gives the content of his prayers: that the Philippians' love for one another abound more and more, and especially in that knowledge that helps them to distinguish what is right and so makes them pure and blameless on the day of Christ that will redound to the glory and praise of God (vv. 9–11).

1:12–4:20
The Body of the Letter

1:12–26, The Progress of the Gospel. The words "I want you to know . . ." (v. 12) are a conventional epistolary formula for signaling the body of a letter and so point to the letter's purpose. Paul's purpose is, initially, to inform the Philippians of his circumstances in prison, but this purpose is soon transformed into his joy at the progress that the gospel has made despite his

imprisonment—indeed, because of it, for his imprisonment has made Christ known throughout the imperial guard and has emboldened others to preach Christ (vv. 12–14). Paul admits that not all these Christians are preaching out of the best motives (v. 15). In fact, some are doing so out of rivalry, supposing that they are thereby causing Paul's chains to pinch even more (vv. 16–17). Nevertheless, Christ is being preached, making Paul joyful (v. 18).

Paul's own prospects are less sure. He is confident of his own eventual salvation, but in the short run life and death seem equally possible as the outcome of his trial (v. 19). This uncertainty prompts Paul to reflect on the desirability of living or dying, and, as Paul himself admits, he is hard pressed to choose between the two (vv. 20–23). For Paul personally death is preferable because then he will be with Christ (v. 24), but for the Philippians his living seems to him to be more essential—even fated (v. 25). Hence Paul looks forward to living, even visiting the Philippians, and so to helping them in their advancement and joy in the faith (v. 25). The repetition of the word "progress" in v. 25 (cf. v. 12) gives closure to this section, and the reference to joy (cf. v. 18) underscores the tone of the Letter, which was set in 1:4.

1:27–2:18, The Philippian Situation. This section flows easily from the previous one, for already in 1:24 Paul began to turn his thoughts away from his own situation to that of the Philippians. And his advice to them is stated succinctly in v. 27: "live your lives as citizens in a manner worthy of the gospel of Christ." The Greek word *politeuesthe*, translated as "live your lives as citizens," has a political dimension missed in most translations that simply render: "live your life" (e.g., NRSV). This political dimension places the Philippians' conduct in the context of behavior expected of households and other associations that made up an ancient city, and central to this behavior was an emphasis on maintaining concord. The Philippians are expected to live their lives as Christian citizens and hence in concord with one another—precisely what Paul goes on to say, here and later: "stand firm in *one* spirit and compete side by side with *one* mind for the faith of the gospel" (v. 27; see also 2:2, 14; 3:15; esp. 4:2). Paul also introduces athletic imagery here, evident in the words "standing firm," "striving side by side," and not being "intimidated" by opponents (vv. 27–28). Indeed, Paul speaks of the "struggle" the Philippians are engaged in, requiring that they not merely believe in Christ, but also suffer for Christ (vv. 29–30). The identity of the opponents (v. 28) is uncertain. They may be traveling Christian missionaries with a different understanding of the faith or, more likely, people at Philippi who are causing problems for the church.

In 2:1–4 Paul continues his call for unity: the Philippians are "to be of one mind" (v. 2). In addition, he counsels against glory seeking and instead encourages humility or deference toward others (vv. 3–4), a quality especially evident in Christ, which prompts Paul to digress long enough to cite a hymnic tribute to Christ (vv. 5–11).

No passage of Philippians has attracted as much scholarly attention as the hymn in vv. 6–11. This attention is explained in part by the various lexical, grammatical, and exegetical problems in these verses, but especially by the very importance of the hymn as one of the earliest witnesses to Christological reflection. The hymn was first recognized as such over seventy years ago, and scholars continue to debate such matters as the hymn's background, setting, and meaning.

The conceptual background of the hymn is variously explained by looking to the OT (esp. the Suffering Servant of Isaiah), to intertestamental Jewish writings and their concern with wisdom and the righteous sufferer, or to redeemer figures of Gnostic speculations. This background debate is the most hotly contested and is far from decided. On the matter of setting, however, scholars tend to agree that the hymn was regularly used in Christian liturgy. Indeed, we can picture the singers of the hymn bowing on cue at the phrase "at the name 'Jesus'" (v. 10) as they confessed "Jesus Christ is Lord" (v. 11)—perhaps during baptism or at the Eucharist.

With all this uncertainty surrounding the hymn it is not surprising that its meaning is debated too, although at a general level it is clear that the author has taken the principal facts of the gospel, Christ's death and resurrection (cf. 1 Cor. 15:3–5), and interpreted them in terms of humiliation (vv. 6–8) and exaltation (vv. 9–11), of being enslaved (v. 7) and made master (v. 11). In its present context in Philippians the hymn serves several purposes. It serves Paul's exhortation to humility (v. 3) by grounding it in Christ's having humbled himself (v. 8), and it gives emphasis to the slave-master theme announced at 1:1–2.

In 2:12–18 Paul resumes his exhortation with an eye to the Philippians' salvation (v. 12), their divine assistance in this (v. 13), and their harmonious and blameless conduct that sets them off from the world (v. 15); therefore, Paul will have reason to boast at the day of Christ (v. 16), which prompts again the theme of joy (vv. 17–18).

2:19–3:1a, Visits to the Philippians. Paul turns his thoughts from the day of Christ to the more immediate future and specifically to his plans to send Timothy (vv. 19–23), Epaphroditus (vv. 25–30), and perhaps himself (v. 24). Announcements of visits by Paul or his associates are typical of his Letters (e.g., Rom. 15:22–29; 1 Cor. 4:17–21; Philem. 22).

Paul speaks of Timothy's visit first, but it is Epaphroditus who will leave first, as is clear from Paul's "hopes" of sending Timothy (2:19, 23), but the "necessity" of sending Epaphroditus back to Philippi (v. 25). Consequently, it was Epaphroditus who would have

carried the Letter to Philippi. What we know of him derives only from this Letter: he was a Philippian Christian who had been commissioned to deliver the gift to Paul (4:18). What made his return necessary was his distress that news had reached Philippi of his near fatal illness (vv. 26–27). Hence when he recovered, Paul hastily sent him back, though not without warm praise for having risked his life in completing his commission (vv. 28–30). His return will be another occasion for joy (vv. 28–29).

Timothy's visit will follow. Paul wants to know more about the situation at Philippi, and Timothy will report back, but Paul does not want to send him until he can say something specific about his own predicament as a prisoner (v. 23). In the meantime Paul prepares for that visit by lavishing on Timothy warm praise, especially for his genuine concern for the Philippians (vv. 20–22). Finally, Paul hints again at his own possible visit (v. 24; cf. 1:26, 27; 2:12).

3:1b–4:1, Paul's Warning and Theological Defense. At this point the tone and style shift abruptly from joy and exhortation to warning and theological argument. The shift has prompted some to suspect the Letter's integrity, but such abruptness is not uncommon (e.g., 1 Thess. 2:14–16).

The warning is brief: watch out for the dogs; watch out for evil workers; watch out for the program of mutilation (v. 2). The identity of these "dogs" is not clear, but their vaunting of Jewish credentials (cf. vv. 3–4) and the term "evil workers," which recalls a similar epithet in 2 Cor. 11:13, point to the same (or similar) groups of missionaries Paul had opposed at Corinth and in Galatia. The people are probably not identical to the "opponents" referred to earlier (cf. 1:28). In any case, this threat allows Paul to set out his own theology by means of assertion, differentiation, and qualification.

In 3:3–11 Paul first asserts that he and his followers represent the true circumcision (in contrast to physical circumcision, which he calls "mutilation" in v. 2), in that he advocates a spiritual worship and a boasting in Christ, not in the flesh (v. 3). Then he explains his views by differentiating them from those of the rival missionaries (vv. 4–11). Paul claims that he has not made a virtue out of necessity, as it were, since he also could boast "in the flesh," as the following biographical statements make clear: circumcised on the eighth day (cf. Gen. 17:12; Lev. 12:3), belonging to the people of Israel and the tribe of Benjamin (cf. Rom. 11:1), a Hebrew born of Hebrews (a difficult phrase, referring either to his pure ethnic stock or to his Jewish culture), a Pharisee according to law (cf. Gal. 1:14), a persecutor of the church out of zeal (cf. 1 Cor. 15:9; Gal. 1:13–14), and blameless in the eyes of the law (Phil. 3:4–6).

Precisely these sorts of boasts, Paul says, now count as nothing because of Christ. The imagery here is economic: what Paul once counted as "profit" or "gain" he now regards as "loss" (vv. 7–8). Indeed, *only* his master, Christ, now counts as "gain," so Paul's hope is only in the righteousness that comes from God through faith in Christ's death and resurrection and involves sharing that death and attaining resurrection from the dead (vv. 9–11).

In vv. 12–16 Paul qualifies what he has just said about attaining the resurrection: "Not that I have already attained this or have already reached the goal" (v. 12). Instead, using athletic imagery again, he emphasizes that he is still running toward the prize of the higher calling of God (v. 14) and urges the same course for the Philippians (vv. 15–16).

This higher calling is then contrasted with the earthly things that occupy the thoughts of those whose god is the belly and who glory in their shame (v. 19). Just who these "enemies of the cross of Christ" (v. 18) are is again not clear. But since they apparently indulge the flesh rather than boast in it, they are probably not the missionaries of vv. 2–3; thus they represent a third group endangering the Philippians (1:28). In any case, Paul urges the Philippians to imitate him (v. 17), since their true citizenship is not on earth, but in heaven (v. 20). Christological and eschatological formulas follow (v. 21), and the section concludes on the now familiar note of joy (4:1).

4:2–9, Specific Exhortations. The hortatory tone that Paul used in the closing verses of the last, largely theological, section (cf. 3:15–17; 4:1) is again dominant, although now the exhortation is intended for specific individuals. Two women, named Euodia and Syntyche, are exhorted "to be of the same mind" (v. 2), an exhortation recalling the emphasis on concord Paul had stated earlier (see esp. 1:27). That these women had struggled with Paul on behalf of the gospel (v. 3) suggests that they were in Philippi at the time of Paul's founding of the church and perhaps were among the women at the riverside meetings where Paul had met and converted Lydia (cf. Acts 16:13–14). In any case, the precise nature of their dispute is lost to us, although Paul at least seems to be asking them to subordinate their personal disagreement or rivalry to the broader task of advancing the gospel (cf. 1:5). Paul then asks another individual, known only as "yokefellow," to intercede for him in this matter (4:3). The attempt to identify this person has led to many conjectures: Epaphroditus, Timothy, Silvanus, Luke, even Lydia. But we simply do not know.

In 4:4, however, the exhortations become general. There is the now familiar call to be joyful (v. 4). But especially noteworthy here is the rhetorically effective use of repetition and variation that make the concluding exhortation memorable: "Whatever is true, whatever is honorable, whatever is just, whatever is pure, whatever is pleasing, whatever is commendable, if there is any excellence, if there is anything worthy of praise—think about these things" (v. 8). These quali-

ties are probably those Paul had in mind but did not specify earlier when he prayed for the Philippians to determine what is best (1:10).

4:10–20, Paul's Thanks for the Philippians' Gift. Earlier in the Letter Paul had occasion to allude to the gift of the Philippians (esp. 2:30; cf. 1:3). Now, however, he takes up the matter directly. And what strikes readers beyond Paul's genuine gratitude is the delicacy of his wording. He alternates between assertion and qualification so as not to be misunderstood.

The section begins on a note of joy, the joy that the Philippians had at length revived their thoughts about him, as evidenced by the gift (v. 10). But to avoid the appearance of criticizing them for not thinking about him more often, Paul adds the qualification "but you had no opportunity" to do so (v. 10). Then Paul hastens to avoid the counterimpression that he is dependent on them. He is, he claims, "content," or self-sufficient, a term borrowed from popular philosophy (v. 11), for he is equally able to handle abundance and want (v. 12). But then to avoid slighting the gift Paul adds: "In any case, it was kind of you to share my distress" (v. 14).

At this point Paul expands on the gift and the Philippians' relationship with him. He recalls the partnership he has with them alone in giving and receiving and refers specifically to earlier gifts at Thessalonica (vv. 15–16). But then comes another qualification: "Not that I seek the gift . . ." (v. 17). Only now does Paul make explicit his receipt of the Philippians' gift: "I have received from Epaphroditus the gifts you sent" (v. 18). Paul does not specify the nature of the assistance, although food, clothing, and perhaps writing materials can be imagined. A prayer for the Philippians' needs to be met (v. 19) and a doxology (v. 20) round out the section, and the body of the Letter.

4:21–23
The Closing of the Letter

4:21–22, Greetings. Typical of ancient letters generally and of Paul's Letters in particular are final greetings. The greetings in Romans are very extensive (Rom. 16:3–16), but they are clearly exceptional. Usually the exchange of greetings is brief, as here (see also 1 Cor. 16:19–21; 2 Cor. 13:12; 1 Thess. 5:26–27; Philem. 23–24). Of special note are the greetings from the "emperor's household" (v. 22), a phrase that refers not to the imperial family itself but to the slaves, freedmen, and other members of the emperor's staff, and not only in Rome but everywhere imperial administration was conducted. Specifically, those sending greetings may have had some connection with a Roman colony like Philippi or may have been the soldiers guarding Paul (cf. 1:13).

4:23, Final Prayer. This Letter closes on a liturgical note, as do all Paul's Letters. Indeed, the benediction here is identical to that in Philemon 25 (cf. Gal. 6:18; 1 Thess. 5:28).

Bibliography

Brown, R. E. *An Introduction to the New Testament.* New York: Doubleday, 1997. Pp. 483–501.

O'Brien, P. T. *Commentary on Philippians.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1991.

Peterman, G. W. *Paul's Gift from Philippi: Conventions of Gift-Exchange and Christian Giving.* New York: Cambridge University Press, 1997.

Sampley, J. P. *Pauline Partnership in Christ: Christian Community and Commitment in Light of Roman Law.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1980.

Colossians

E. ELIZABETH JOHNSON

INTRODUCTION

The Letter to the Colossians addresses a congregation in Asia Minor that faces competing Christian authorities (→ Colossae). Although its founder, Epaphras (1:7; 4:12), is a member of the Pauline mission (cf. Philem. 24), there are apparently others whose religious and theological heritage comes from a different segment of early Christianity. These other authorities, according to the author, seek to capture the congregation (2:8), condemn some cultic behaviors, and insist on other behaviors on the basis of certain kinds of religious experience (2:16, 18, 21). Colossians seeks to refute the authority and thinking of these people by appealing to the authority and thinking of the apostle Paul and thus endorsing the authority of Epaphras.

Is Paul himself the letter writer (→ Paul)? The evidence is divided. Elsewhere Paul insists that he does not intervene in churches he has not founded (Rom. 1:11–13; 15:20; 1 Cor. 3:10; 2 Cor. 10:15–16), and the Colossian Christians have not seen him "face to face" (2:1). Of the eleven persons named in 4:7–17, eight are known from the undisputed Letters and seven of those from Philemon. These greetings at the end of Colossians might suggest authenticity, but the similarity with Philemon points rather to a pseudonymous writer who has appropriated the names to add just such a convincing touch to the Letter. The assumption that the Colossians will recognize the persons named may mean that they are from or have some connection to Colossae, but that is by no means certain. The "greeting with my own hand" in 4:18 may be an emphatic personal postscript to a letter dictated to an amanuensis, as is Gal. 6:11, but it may instead be a pseudonymous writer's attempt to create plausibility, as 2 Thess. 3:17 most certainly is.

At several points the Letter's argumentation recalls the undisputed Letters of Paul. Paul says Christ's resurrection makes him the "firstborn" among the redeemed in Rom. 8:29, as Colossians calls him the "firstborn" from the dead (1:18). Christ is the agent of reconciliation between sinners and God in Rom. 5:10–11; 2 Cor. 5:18–19, as in Col. 1:19–22. Just as Paul says death alters one's relationship to the law (Rom. 7:6), so Col. 2:14 argues that God sets aside the law when Christians die with Christ. Finally, the author's interpretation of a Christian hymn in Col. 1:15–20 strikes similar notes to Paul's own interpretation of a Christological hymn in Phil. 2:6–11.

On the other hand, substantive differences between Colossians and the undisputed Letters argue in favor of a pseudonymous author. The use of baptismal traditions to respond to false teaching in the community moves beyond Paul. Colossians speaks of Christians as those who have died and been raised with Christ in baptism (2:20–3:11). In Romans 6 and 1 Corinthians 15, however, Paul goes to great lengths to say that in baptism Christians die with Christ, but their resurrection awaits the eschatological future. Colossians speaks of sins and trespasses as human misbehaviors, whereas Paul speaks of sin as an enslaving power allied with death (cf. Rom. 6:12–14). Also, Colossians speaks of forgiveness of sins in ways and with a frequency Paul does not (1:14; 2:13; 3:13). Paul calls the church the body of Christ (Rom. 12:4–5; 1 Cor. 12:12–26), as does Col. 1:18; 2:19, but Colossians further specifies that Christ is the head of that body. The strong temporal emphasis in Paul's Letters becomes almost spatial in Colossians. Believers live not between what is "already" part of Christian experience and what is "not yet" available until Christ's Parousia (cf. 1 Cor. 15:12–34), but between life "here" on earth and life "there" in heaven (Col. 3:1–4). Finally, although we find men and women functioning as equal partners in the Pauline mission (e.g., Rom. 16:1–16; Gal. 3:28) and Paul exhorts husbands and wives to mutuality in marriage (1 Cor. 7:1–16), the author of Colossians imposes conventional pagan moral standards on Christian households and subordinates women to men (Col. 3:18–4:6). It is therefore likely that the author of Colossians is a second- or third-generation Pauline Christian who understands a good bit of Paul's thought and shares much of his theological method, even as he moves beyond Paul in important theological and ethical matters. He writes in Paul's name to reinforce the authority of the local leadership in Colossae against competitors.

COMMENTARY

1:1–2
Salutation

Colossians begins as Paul's Letters do, with an identification of the senders and recipients and a blessing from God. The author calls Paul "an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God," recalling similar formulations in 1 Cor. 1:1; 2 Cor. 1:1 (cf. also Eph. 1:1) and echoing Paul's characterization of apostleship as of divine origin in Rom. 1:1; Gal. 1:1. Paul names Timothy as cosender in 2 Cor. 1:1; Phil. 1:1; 1 Thess. 1:1; Philem. 1 (cf. 2 Thess. 1:1), so the inclusion of Timothy in Col. 1:1 adds an air of authenticity to the greeting. The Colossians are called "saints and faithful brothers and sisters in Christ" (1:2). The undisputed Letters of Paul frequently address the "saints" (Rom. 1:7; 1 Cor. 1:2; 2 Cor. 1:1; Phil. 1:1), but only in Colossians are they also called "faithful" (1:2, 7). This may suggest that a division has already occurred within the congregation and it is those still faithful to Pauline tradition who are expected to read or hear the Letter.

1:3–12
Prayer for the Colossians

As in Paul's Letters, the opening sets the agenda for what will follow in the body of the Letter. The cause of the author's thanksgiving is the Colossians' faith in Christ and love for other believers (v. 4). That faith and love are founded on the hope stored up for them in heaven (v. 5). The mention of faith, hope, and love recalls Paul's similar language in 1 Cor. 13:13; 1 Thess. 1:1; 5:8, but unlike Paul's understanding of hope as both the Christian's act of hope and its object—God's triumphant glory—Colossians construes Christian hope solely in terms of its content, the fact that believers' lives are "hidden with Christ in God" (3:3). The Colossians have heard of this hope in the gospel that Epaphras has faithfully preached to them (1:7–8; cf. 1:23).

The prayer shifts at v. 9 to intercession on behalf of the congregation. The author prays that the church will be filled with knowledge, wisdom, and understanding and that, as the gospel has been "bearing fruit and growing" in the world (1:6), so the Colossians will also "bear fruit . . . and grow" (1:10). He asks that the community be empowered by divine might to withstand the current pressures on it and take possession of the inheritance it shares with all other Christians (1:12). To a significant degree, however, believers already share that inheritance, since God has rescued them from the hostile forces of the world ("the power of darkness"; cf. Rom. 13:12–13; 2 Cor. 6:14; 1 Thess. 5:5; Eph. 5:8) and transferred them into Christ's kingdom.

1:13–23
The Trustworthiness of Christ

The sentence that begins at 1:9 does not really conclude until the end of the hymn in v. 20, so it is somewhat artificial to break the structure of the Letter at this point. There is nevertheless a distinct shift in the subject matter from the Christian character and well-being of the addressees to the character and trustworthiness of Christ, who is the source of their well-being.

Believers offer thanks to the God who has delivered them from darkness into light, the kingdom of God's son who provides forgiveness of sins (1:13–14). At this point, the author quotes a hymn apparently known in the congregation to illustrate the effectiveness of redemption. This description of Christ as the image of God, the agent of creation, and the redeemer and reconciler of the world shares characteristics with early Jewish, Christian, and pagan hymns. Its language recalls the poem in Prov. 8:22–31 describing personified wisdom as the first of God's creations and other Jewish literature that speaks of wisdom as participating with God in creation (cf. Sir. 24:1–22; Wisd. of Sol. 7:22, 24–25; 8:1, 4–5; 9:1–2, 9–11). The wisdom the author prays will fill the congregation (1:9) thus has its source in Christ, who is God's wisdom (→ Wisdom).

Other early Christians similarly affirm that Christ is divine wisdom personified (e.g., John 1:1–18), but Paul generally reserves wisdom language to describe Christian preaching rather than the person of Christ (1 Cor. 1:18–3:23; cf. Rom. 10:6–8, which interprets Bar. 3:29–30). In 1 Cor. 10:1–5, however, Paul identifies Christ as the rock in the wilderness from which Moses drew water (Exod. 17:1–7; Deut. 8:15), and he seems to allude to a tradition Philo knows that interprets the rock as God's wisdom (*Legum allegoriarum* 2.86). Tradition says wisdom followed the people in the wilderness (Wisd. of Sol. 10:17) and compares wisdom to water for drinking (Sir. 15:3; 24:21). The combination serves to suggest that the rock that miraculously provided water in the wilderness was God's wisdom. When Paul says "the spiritual rock that followed them . . . was Christ" (1 Cor. 10:4), then, he also may hint at the conviction made explicit in the hymn in Colossians 1 that God's wisdom is made human in Christ.

The hymn has elicited much scholarly debate about its original form and content (→ Hymn). Its two parts (vv. 15–18a, 18b–20) represent either two parallel strophes or a single strophe followed by a line-by-line interpretation of it composed by the author of Colossians. Although the parallels are more striking in Greek than in English translations, the following comparison using the NRSV shows the similarities between the two halves of the hymn. The original hymn is on the left and its interpretation—or perhaps its second strophe—on the right.

	18a He is the head of the body, the church;
15a *He is* the image of the invisible God	18b *he is* the beginning,
15b the *firstborn* of all creation;	18c the *firstborn* from the dead,
16a *for in him all* things were created	19 *For in him all* the fullness was pleased to dwell,
16b *in heaven* or *on earth*	20b whether *on earth* or *in heaven*
16c things visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or powers—	
16d *all things* have been created *through him* and *for him.*	20a and *through him* to reconcile *to himself all things,*
17a He himself is *before all things,*	18d so that he might come to have *first place in everything.*
17b and in him all things *hold together*	20c by *making peace* through the blood of his cross

The hymn (or its first strophe) uses wisdom language to describe Christ as the image of God (cf. Gen. 1:26), the agent of creation for whose benefit the entire universe exists. As the Wisdom of Solomon says that wisdom "holds all things together" (1:6–7), so the hymn affirms that in Christ "all things hold together" (Col. 1:17b).

There follow parallel claims in vv. 18–20 about Christ's role in redemption, beginning with his being "the head of the body, the church." Everything predicated of Christ's role in creation in the first half of the hymn is said of his redemptive work in the second half. Not only is Christ the beginning, the first of God's creation; he is also the "firstborn from the dead," whose death and resurrection reconcile everything to God; but the tidy parallel is disrupted slightly. Whereas all things are created through and for Christ in v. 16, v. 20 says that through *Christ* the fullness of God reconciles all things to *God*, which is the reason modern translations make the second pronoun a reflexive "himself."

Christ's preeminence in creation and redemption has permanent consequences for Christians. When they were under the power of darkness they were at war with God (1:13), but now that Christ has made peace they stand in God's presence "holy and blameless and irreproachable" (1:22). The trustworthiness of this good news is ensured by Christ's decisive superiority over all forces in the universe and, as 1:7 recalled Epaphras's faithful preaching of the gospel, now the last sentence of the thanksgiving proper underscores Paul's service to this same gospel.

1:24–2:5
The Trustworthiness of the Apostle

Paul argues at length in 2 Corinthians 10–13 that apostolic suffering confirms the truth of apostolic preaching. Colossians takes such a claim a step further to give Paul himself a role in redemption. He "completes what remains of Christ's afflictions" (1:24) rather than merely sharing them (2 Cor. 1:5) or being marked by them (2 Cor. 12:1–10). Perhaps that is why the author "rejoices" rather than "boasts" in suffering as Paul does in Rom. 5:1–3.

The endorsement of the apostolic message, which is commissioned, revealed, and inspired by God (vv. 25, 26, 29), underscores its trustworthiness, and the apostle's suffering for it (1:24; 2:1) highlights both its value and its ability to withstand opposition. In language quite similar to 1 Cor. 5:3 ("though absent in body, I am present in spirit"), the author reinforces Paul's authority in the community. The church's near neighbors in Laodicea are also Paul's responsibility (Col. 2:1–2), and this functions similarly to remind the Colossians that the other teachers among them are not so authorized and are not to be trusted. The Colossians can rely on their fellow believers to help them withstand the incursion of dangerous teaching. The sentiment is reinforced at 4:13–18 when the relationship between the two communities is again recalled and the author urges readers to "remember my chains."

2:6–3:17
Response to Other Teachers

2:6–19, The Errors of the Opponents. Although everything that has come before has prepared for this point, it is only at 2:8 that the author addresses the alternative teaching directly, after a reminder to stand firm in the teaching that established the congregation (2:6–7). It is notoriously difficult to reconstruct the false teaching with any certainty, but some form of syncretistic Jewish mysticism very likely influenced it. The author calls it a "philosophy" at 2:8, but it sounds more like religious propaganda than rational inquiry. Rather than being revealed by God, as is Paul's gospel (1:26), the alternative is merely a "human tradition" (2:8). It requires observance of special feasts, dietary laws, ascetic practices, worship with angels or according to angelic forms, and submission to "elemental spirits of the universe." These spirits are powers, angels, or forces that most people in Greco-Roman antiquity assumed inhabit the cosmos. They stand between human beings and God and must be placated

or appeased before people can gain access to the divine. How Jewish Christians such as the opponents might construe these powers is not clear, but they likely experience visions of God's heavenly court (2:18). They consider right worship of God to be established by the divine courtiers (angels) and require that believers emulate that cultic behavior. The author of Colossians reassures readers that all this is human tradition and has nothing to do with authentic Christian faith. Christ has already defeated these powers on the cross, and by dying and rising with him in baptism believers share his victory. In Christ, not in those powers, lies the fullness of God and human fulfillment. The forgiveness of sins wrought by Christ represents not only pardon for previous transgressions, but also a permanent change of status before God. There is therefore no need to observe regulations concerning food or calendar, since such cultic behaviors are merely a shadow of the reality of Christ (cf. Heb. 8:5).

2:20–3:17, The Consequences of Baptism. A pair of conditional sentences in 2:20–3:4 contrasts believers' lives before and after baptism (→ Baptism). Because they have died with Christ (2:20–23), Christians are no longer bound to the "human" regulations incumbent on those who are still alive. Because they have been raised with Christ (3:1–4) they have new identities in heaven and thus interests and obligations different from those who are still earthbound. The author enumerates the consequences of this new identity in a series of exhortations in 3:5–17 that is also shaped by traditions about baptism. The language about taking off and putting on clothing in vv. 9–10, 12, 14 reflects the custom in early Christianity of disrobing before baptism and being dressed in new, frequently white, garments following the rite. The general exhortations reflect both ethical (vv. 3, 5–10) and cultic (vv. 13–17) characteristics of the Christian life in distinction from the ethical and cultic requirements imposed by the false teachers (2:8–19). Christians are to teach one another, pray, and sing together (3:16) rather than seek the assistance of cosmic powers; they are to "do everything in the name of the Lord Jesus" (3:17) rather than worship with angels or seek mystical visions of God's court.

The description of baptism as replacing the clothing of the "old self" with a "new self" wardrobe in 3:9–11 is very like language Paul uses in Gal. 3:23–29. In particular, the tripartite formula "no longer Jew or Greek, slave or free, male and female for you are all one in Christ" (Gal. 3:28) seems to have influenced "no longer Greek and Jew, circumcised and uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave and free, but Christ is all and in all" (Col. 3:11). Curiously, the obliteration of distinctions between women and men is omitted from the formula in Colossians, perhaps because of the parenesis (warnings and admonitions) that follows.

3:18–4:6
Ethical Exhortations

3:18–4:1, Relations with Family Members. Both Greco-Roman and Jewish ethicists in the first century speak frequently, and in fairly predictable ways, about proper household management. Following Aristotle's lead (*Politics* 1.1253b), they outline the rights and responsibilities of husbands and wives, fathers and children, masters and slaves. They assume that the household is a microcosm of society that ought to be structured and governed in a hierarchical manner reflecting the gods' management of the universe. Several Jewish writers of the period also share this assumption in their discussions of the commandment to honor parents (Exod. 20:12). The conventional household codes detail the duties of each pair of relationships, addressing the subordinate member of each pair first. The good husband/father/master manages wisely and benevolently, but must be the unquestioned ruler of the household if it is to function for its own and the nation's good. Significantly, he oversees the religious observance of the household, determines its cultic loyalties, and maintains the divinely ordered subservience of women, children, and slaves to free men.

The first generation of Pauline Christianity rejects many of these traditional family values. They welcome into their groups women and slaves without their husbands and masters (1 Cor. 7:12–16, 21–23; Philem. 16), grant equal status to all in baptism (Gal. 3:28), allow women to share leadership with men (e.g., Rom. 16:1–15; Phil. 4:2–3), and—perhaps most radically—value celibacy over marriage (1 Cor. 7:7–9). Pagans regularly criticize Christians for such socially irresponsible and dangerously anti-family behavior. Later Pauline Christians like the author of Colossians back away from the more culturally offensive of these practices and reassert the conventional pagan values first articulated by Aristotle (cf. 1 Pet. 2:13–3:7; Eph. 5:21–6:9; 1 Tim. 2:8–15; Titus 2:1–10).

The household code in Colossians addresses husbands and wives and fathers and children only briefly, with the motivation that proper behavior is fitting "in the Lord" (vv. 18, 20). Slaves receive a disproportionate share of attention, presumably because there are more Christian slaves of non-Christian masters than Christian wives or children of non-Christian men in the congregation. The advice is itself conventional (whole-hearted service and honesty), but again the motivation is Christian. Slaves should consider Christ their true master and anticipate reward from him. Masters must be just and fair, since they too share a heavenly master with their slaves (3:22–4:1). All this is grounded in a Jewish theologoumenon (traditional saying about God), "there is no partiality" (3:25; cf. Deut. 10:17; Ps. 82:1–4; Job 34:19). God's impartiality

figures prominently also in the argument of Romans (1:16; 2:11; 3:9, 22; 10:12), but whereas for Paul divine impartiality issues in concrete social equality, the same seems to function only symbolically for Colossians, since slaves (as women and children) remain subservient to free men.

4:2–6, Relations with Outsiders. The author urges prayer for the apostolic mission (4:2–4) and behavior toward outsiders that furthers opportunities for evangelism (4:5–6). Just as Paul must reveal the mystery of the gospel clearly, so Christians should conduct themselves "wisely" among unbelievers and take advantage of every opportunity to evangelize (4:5). Wisdom literature frequently counsels gracious speech as wise and persuasive (e.g., Prov. 16:21; 22:11; Sir. 5:10), and the phrase "seasoned with salt" recalls the injunction in Lev. 2:13 to "offer salt with all your offerings" (cf. Exod. 30:35). This suggests that the sacrifice of Christian freedom required by life in a pagan culture is both given to and honored by God. The exhortations in 4:2–6 are thus closely related to those in 3:18–4:1. The author reimposes conventional domestic values on a Pauline community for the sake of its evangelism, since to flaunt those revolutionary ethics could impede the spread of the church's message.

4:7–18
Personal Greetings and Instructions

The relationship alluded to in 2:1 between the Colossian Christians and believers in Laodicea is mentioned again in 4:16, where the author encourages an exchange of letters between the two churches. The two cities were but ten miles apart and there is good reason to assume a measure of communication between Christian communities in them, although no information exists about the letter to the Laodiceans beyond this reference.

Bibliography

Balch, D. L. "Household Codes." In *Greco-Roman Literature and the New Testament: Selected Forms and Genres.* Edited by D. E. Aune. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1988. Pp. 25–50.

Francis, F. O., and W. A. Meeks, eds. *Conflict at Colossae: A Problem in the Interpretation of Early Christianity, Illustrated by Selected Modern Studies.* Missoula, MT: Scholars Press, 1975.

Lohse, E. *Colossians and Philemon.* Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1971.

Pokorný, P. *Colossians: A Commentary.* Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1991.

1 and 2 Thessalonians

PHEME PERKINS

INTRODUCTION

The Thessalonian correspondence clearly reveals some of the major problems found by early Christian communities. 1 Thessalonians is probably the earliest of Paul's Letters (A.D. 50 or 51). Thessalonica was one of the two most important trading centers in Roman Greece. It had a harbor on the Thermic Gulf, lay near the midpoint of the Via Egnatia, and was the terminus of the road leading up to the Danube. Although it was the Roman capital of Macedonia, Thessalonica remained a free Greek city with its own council and coinage (→ Thessalonica).

Paul had founded the church there after preaching in Philippi (2:2). Acts 17:1–10 pictures a relatively brief mission in Thessalonica, which was centered in the Jewish community. Conflict led to rioting and accusations before the city officials, called politarchs (Acts 17:6; a term peculiar to Thessalonica), that Paul was causing trouble by preaching a king other than Caesar. 1 Thessalonians suggests Paul stayed in the city for a longer period of time, since he was able to practice his trade (2:9) and had received financial help from Philippi ninety-five miles away (Phil. 4:16). Paul writes to a church composed of gentile converts (1 Thess. 1:9–10; perhaps 2:14), a fact that coincides with Paul's assertion that his mission was to the Gentiles (Gal. 2:9). If Acts is correct at least in reporting that Paul was suddenly forced out of the city, the concern evident in 1 Thess. 2:17–18 may be due to Paul's unexpected departure. Unable to return (perhaps due to ill health; cf. 2 Cor. 12:7), Paul sent Timothy north from Athens (1 Thess. 3:1–3). Timothy has rejoined Paul (perhaps at Corinth; cf. Acts 18:5) with a good report about the church. 1 Thessalonians is written in response. Paul does not refer to churches founded after Thessalonica, so it would appear that the Letter was written within some months of Paul's departure from Thessalonica.

1 Thessalonians follows the conventional pattern of Paul's Letters: greetings, from the apostle and associates (1:1); thanksgiving (1:2–10); Letter body, with eschatological conclusion (2:1–3:13); exhortations (4:1–5:24); and final blessing and greetings (5:25–28). The Letter's peculiar elements may be related to its setting. Paul does not identify himself with a formulaic phrase indicating his apostolic role and carries elements of thanksgiving through the body of the Letter (2:13; 3:7–10).

The most difficult textual question in 1 Thessalonians derives from the suggestions of modern scholars that 2:13–16 are a later interpolation into the Letter. The passage evokes thanksgiving for the Thessalonians' reception of Paul's preaching and then launches into a harsh condemnation of the "Jews" as Jesus killers, as enemies of God and God's prophets and apostles, and as experiencing God's wrath. Although Paul can speak of his own sufferings at the hands of both Jews and Gentiles (e.g., 2 Cor. 11:26; Rom. 15:31) and has just suffered at Philippi (1 Thess. 2:2), the vindictive tone of this passage is not characteristic of the apostle. Paul's earlier reference to the exemplary imitation of the apostle by the Thessalonians when they received the gospel message in affliction (1:6) has already treated the general subject of this passage. The harsh treatment of the "Jews" in this passage, some scholars argue, would be less surprising in a Christian writing after the destruction of Jerusalem in A.D. 70 (e.g., Matt. 21:33–46). Some scholars have argued for a non-Pauline interpolation here on the basis of computer analyses of the language of this section. They indicate that the section reflects an amalgamation of different Pauline expressions. Scholars who continue to treat this passage as part of the original Letter insist that it reflects Paul's response to a particular group of persecutors familiar to himself and the audience.

2 Thessalonians is written to deal with two problems that have arisen in the church: first, misinterpretations of teachings that claim to be Pauline and yet insist that "the day of the Lord is already here" (2:2), and, second, the conduct of persons who reject Paul's teaching about working and living quietly (3:6–12). Both of these themes were addressed in the parenesis (exhortation) of 1 Thessalonians (on the "day of the Lord," 4:13–5:11; on working and not living "idly," 4:11; 5:14). In addition, the church continues to suffer tribulations (1:5–10; cf. 1 Thess. 1:6; 2:14–16), which may contribute to the confusion about Paul's teaching.

Although 2 Thessalonians elaborates on themes from 1 Thessalonians and concludes with a sharp assertion of Pauline authenticity (3:17), a number of scholars doubt that Paul himself composed the Letter. When Paul refers to his own writing elsewhere, he does so in a disciplinary context (Gal. 6:11; 1 Cor. 16:21) or a contractual one (Philem. 19), not as a sign of authenticity. The opening greeting, 2 Thess. 1:1–2, is almost identical with 1 Thess. 1:1, something not found elsewhere in Paul's Letters. The insertion of teaching on

tribulation and divine vengeance in the thanksgiving is peculiar (cf. its location in 1 Thess. 2:13–16). 2 Thessalonians treats faith and love in the thanksgiving, but omits hope. The expression "steadfastness of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ" from 1 Thess. 1:3 appears to be rendered "steadfastness of Christ" in 2 Thess. 3:5.

Comparing the two Letters, one also finds a dominant theme of the first, personal affection between the apostle and the church, missing from the second. The themes of imitation and holiness appear only briefly (2 Thess. 2:13; 3:7). Yet they were repeated in the earlier exhortation. We have further evidence for a link between confusion over the coming of the Lord and misinterpretation of Pauline Letters in 2 Pet. 3:15–17. There interpretation of Paul's Letters is associated with interpretation of "other scriptures." 2 Thessalonians seems to reflect a somewhat earlier situation. People are making false claims about letters and other "words" said to come from the apostle, but Paul's letters do not yet form an independent group of authoritative writings. 2 Thessalonians is presented as an authoritative teaching of Paul in its own right.

There are three major textual variants in 2 Thessalonians. In many manuscripts 2 Thess. 2:3 reads "man of sin" instead of "man of lawlessness." That reading may have arisen out of an attempt to clarify the apocalyptic idea of rebellion against God implied in the expression "lawlessness." 2 Thess. 2:13 has variant readings attached to the expression "God chose you." Some manuscripts have "as first fruits"; others, "from the beginning." Modern editors and translators remain divided over which reading is preferred. Either could be Pauline. Often "as first fruits" (meaning "first converts") is rejected because it does not make sense in the context. 2 Thess. 3:16 reads "in every way" in some manuscripts and "in every place" in others. Creating the parallel "time/place" by dropping a consonant would appear to account for the second reading.

COMMENTARY

1 Thessalonians

1:1–10
Greetings and Thanksgiving

1:1, Greetings. Paul includes his co-workers, Timothy and Silvanus, as senders of the Letter. Timothy has just returned from Thessalonica. Acts 17:4 mentions Silas (= Silvanus) as Paul's assistant in the Thessalonian mission. The greeting combines the conventional Greek expression "grace" with the Jewish "peace."

1:2–10, Thanksgiving. The expanded thanksgiving for the recipients is a Pauline innovation in the letter form, which commonly began with a more abbreviated and formal wish for the well-being of the recipient and sometimes mentioned that of the sender. Paul's thanksgivings often single out themes to be developed in the letter. Here we find Paul emphasizing the faith, love, and hope of the Thessalonians (v. 3). That God has chosen them is evident not only in the success of Paul's preaching, but also in their willingness to provide an example for other churches by rejoicing when their conversion entails suffering. In that way they can claim to imitate both the apostle and the Lord (vv. 5–7). It may be that the Philippians who sent Paul aid at Philippi were responsible for spreading the story of the Thessalonians' conversion in the rest of Greece. Paul appears to have taught his converts that suffering was to be expected as a normal part of Christian life (e.g., Rom. 5:3; 12:12; Phil. 4:14). Since Christians know that they are "imitating" the apostle in suffering, suffering does not count against their conviction that they are beloved and chosen by God.

Verses 1:9b–10 conclude the thanksgiving with an early creedal formula that expresses the meaning of conversion for gentile converts. They turn away from idols to the true God (cf. Gal. 4:9; 2 Cor. 3:16, in an OT citation; Acts 3:19; 9:35; 11:21), and they await Jesus' coming from heaven at the judgment. Because they have turned to serving the true God, the Thessalonians will not face the wrath of God, which would come against all those non-Jews who "do not know God" (cf. Rom. 1:18–32). Since this sentence is not Pauline in its phrasing, it was probably a formula that was commonly used in the early Christian mission to the Gentiles.

2:1–3:13
Paul's Ministry in Thessalonica

2:1–12, Paul's Example in Thessalonica. Paul reminds his readers of the example he had set in preaching among them. He uses the imagery of a philosophic preacher, whose concern is to nurture the souls of human beings and turn them away from slavery to false opinions, values, and passions to the truth. Paul also wants to remind the Thessalonians that his mission was different from that of other popular preachers, who might flatter and manipulate their audiences to make money from such preaching. Paul preaches the gospel he has been given by God in the face of great opposition and hardship (vv. 1–5).

Paul uses the images of a nursing mother (v. 7) and a father (vv. 11–12) to describe his work among the Thessalonians. These images were frequently used by philosophers of Paul's day to show how the true philosopher would vary his style of speech from harsh scolding to gentle encouragement and consolation as

the needs of the audience changed. Paul has intensified these images in two ways. He describes himself as a gentle nurse taking care of her own children, not merely someone else's. Before he introduces the image of "father," Paul makes it clear that his love for the Thessalonians goes so far that he is willing to share not just the gospel, but "our own selves." Paul shares himself by laboring at his trade rather than requiring the congregation to support him (vv. 8–9). Paul concludes with the kinds of speech he had used in encouraging the Thessalonians to live lives worthy of God (vv. 11–12). In addition to such preaching, Paul's own life and conduct, which is "holy, righteous, and blameless" (v. 10), is meant to be an example followed by his converts (e.g., 1:6).

2:13–16, Excursus on Persecution. Some scholars think that this sharp condemnation of "the Jews" as Jesus killers and opponents of God was added to the Letter by a later disciple of Paul (see Introduction). However, Paul does refer to his own efforts, before his conversion, to wipe out the followers of Jesus (Gal. 1:13; 1 Cor. 15:9). He distinguishes the "remnant," both Jewish and gentile believers, from the "vessels of wrath" upon whom the Lord's sentence will be like that against Sodom and Gomorrah (Rom. 9:22–29). He refers to the "remnant" that was not guilty of "killing the prophets" in Elijah's time (Rom. 11:3, citing 1 Kings 19:10). Paul also refers to Jewish unbelief, making Jews "enemies of God" for the sake of the Gentiles who have come to believe (Rom. 11:28). Elsewhere Paul speaks of Judaizing Christians as "enemies of the cross of Christ" and predicts the destruction that awaits them (Phil. 3:18–19). In that context he contrasts such false believers with those to whom he writes. They are exhorted to imitate the apostle, who shares Christ's sufferings, so that they will share the same glorious transformation into Christ (Phil. 3:10–11, 17, 20–21). It is possible to see this section as an interruption in the train of thought of the Letter, perhaps provoked by a particular incident the Thessalonians had endured (1 Thess. 2:14).

The expression in 2:16b is very close to one used in the conclusion to an account of the many sins of the Shechemites in *T. Levi* 6:11 (→ Pseudepigrapha). It may have been an established expression for divine retribution against notorious sinners that did not require a reference to a specific event. Other scholars, who consider the rest of the section Pauline, think that this phrase was added by a later scribe, alluding to the destruction of Jerusalem.

2:17–20, Paul's Desire to See the Thessalonians. Paul returns to his account of the affectionate relationship between himself and the church. The Greek word *aporphanizo*, "made orphans," introduces yet another instance of familial imagery (see 2:7, 11–12). Since Paul speaks of Satan as the cause of his chronic illness (2 Cor. 12:7), that may have been the reason he was unable to journey back to Thessalonica. Paul's concern for the well-being of the community is not merely grounded in affection; he also considers his churches to be the "evidence" that he has carried out the mission God gave him, which will be presented at the judgment (vv. 19–20).

3:1–5, Timothy Is Sent to Thessalonica. Paul sends his trusted associate Timothy (cf. 1 Cor. 4:17; 16:10–11; Phil. 2:19–23) to strengthen and encourage the church. He is concerned that trials may have "disturbed" the community (v. 3). Rather than upset the church, the coming of such trials should confirm Paul's preaching, since he predicted that they would be the destiny of Christians. Nevertheless, they could have served as Satan's way of undermining their faith and destroying Paul's mission.

3:6–10, Timothy's Report on the Church. According to Acts 18:5, Timothy met Paul in Corinth. There he delivered a glowing report about the faith and love of the Thessalonians. They return Paul's feelings of affection. As a result Paul is comforted in his own afflictions (cf. Rom. 1:12; 2 Cor. 7:4, 13; Philem. 7).

3:11–13, Paul's Prayer for the Thessalonians. Paul expresses his thanksgiving and joy in prayer for his converts and expresses his hope of being reunited with them. Whereas the previous section has emphasized their faith, these verses shift to love and holiness. The love that they have seen in the apostle is to extend not only to fellow Christians, but to all people (v. 12). Love is the basis of the holiness that will make the Christians acceptable to God in the judgment (cf. love as fulfillment of the law in Gal. 5:14; Rom. 13:10). This emphasis on love and holiness (cf. 1 Thess. 2:10; 4:3, 7; 5:23) forms the transition to the hortatory part of the Letter.

4:1–12
Live a Life of Holiness

1 Thess. 4:1–12 expands on themes taken from a tradition of interpreting the laws in Leviticus 17–26 in Hellenistic Judaism. Parallels to this material are found in 1 Pet. 1:1–2:3, 11–12.

4:1–8, Holiness and Sexuality. "Holiness" is an attribute that distinguishes the elect community from the world around it. Paul has already taught that Christian life requires abandoning the sexual immorality and lust that Jewish moralists associated with the pagan world (e.g., Wisd. of Sol. 14–15). Paul uses the peculiar word *skeuos* (Gk., "vessel") in v. 4 to refer to the wife (cf. 1 Pet. 3:7). It is not clear whether the advice to "take a vessel in holiness and honor" simply

means that Christians should marry (e.g., 1 Cor. 7:2) or whether it also refers to teaching about sexual conduct within marriage (e.g., 1 Cor. 7:3–5). Pagan moralists often insisted that even within marriage sexuality should remain subject to reason. Marriage was not to be an occasion for "lust." 1 Thess. 4:6 enjoins that no one wrong his brother "in this thing/business." If the context of the passage is still sexuality, then the offense would appear to be adultery. Some exegetes rely on the fact that the Greek word *pragma* can also mean "business" and that the verb for "defraud," *pleonektein*, also appears in commercial contexts. They argue that Paul has shifted to speak about relationships of the small traders at Thessalonica. (1 Cor. 6 combines issues of lawsuits between Christians and the sexual immorality of visiting prostitutes.)

4:9–12, Mutual Love. When Paul returns to the theme of mutual love, he encourages the Thessalonians to live a life of "quietness," "minding one's own affairs," following the apostle's example by working with their hands so as to command respect and depend on no one. Many of these themes can be traced in pagan moralists. Some of the social ideals of a group of mutual friends who live quietly and are not dependent on others were particularly evident in the Epicurean groups (→ Epicureans). Along with the love that is to be directed to those outside the group (3:12), these verses show us the early church seeking to map out its place in the social world of the Greco-Roman cities. But Christian love is not motivated by the utilitarian desire for a pleasant life expressed in Epicureanism. Instead, Paul coins the expression "*theodidaktos*" (Gk., "taught of God") to emphasize its divine origin.

4:13–5:11
The Coming of the Lord

4:13–18, Hope for the Dead. Paul now turns to the third virtue he mentioned in 1:3, hope. He adopts the philosophic idea of a "letter of consolation" to Christian use. Such writings often parallel the language of epitaphs. Death is described as sleep; the deceased has been snatched from the world of the living; grief should be moderated by the recognition that nothing from this world can touch the dead. At the same time, the living are reminded that they will soon join those who have died. A few scholars think that the persecutions mentioned in 1 Thessalonians led to the death of members of the community. The Thessalonians may have thought that the dead had lost the possibility of salvation when the Lord returns (v. 15).

Paul's Christian "consolation" expands the basic belief that the Lord has been raised (v. 14; cf. 1:10) with an apocalyptic tradition derived from Jesus (vv. 16–17ab; cf. Dan. 7:13; Mark 13:26–27; Matt. 24:31; 1 Cor. 15:52). Paul's formulation of this tradition reverses the pessimistic language of pagan epitaphs. They spoke of the dead being "snatched" from life. Paul speaks of the living being "snatched" to join the Lord and the deceased members of the community who have gone before them (v. 17). What Paul intends by this image is not clear: do the risen Christians then descend to earth with the Lord or are they taken into heaven? Elsewhere Paul speaks of those alive at the Parousia—the glorious return of Jesus—being instantaneously transformed (1 Cor. 15:51–53). Here, he may be thinking of the image of the crowd going out to welcome a royal dignitary at his "appearance" (Gk. *parousia*).

5:1–11, When Will the Day of the Lord Come? Paul continues to remind the Thessalonians about the coming of the Lord with a collection of images that were common in early Christian apocalyptic literature. Although he believes that the Lord will return soon, the tradition of the Lord's coming like a "thief in the night" (cf. Luke 12:39–40; Matt. 24:43; Rev. 3:3; 16:15; 2 Pet. 3:10) makes it impossible to calculate "when" the Lord is to return. The Day is as inevitable as labor pains (cf. Jer. 6:24; 22:23; Mic. 4:9; *1 Enoch* 62:4; Mark 13:8), even though the people are thinking that all is peaceful and secure (cf. Jer. 6:14; 8:11; Ezek. 13:10; Mic. 3:9–11). The true Christian response is to always be "ready" (cf. Mark 13:32–35; Matt. 24:42–43). The contrast between "sons of light" and "sons of darkness" is used to distinguish those who live according to God's will from those who do not.

The image of putting on military armor comes from Isa. 59:17. There God puts on the breastplate of righteousness and the helmet of salvation as he is about to come in judgment (cf. Wisd. of Sol. 5:17–20). Paul has adapted this image to the three virtues: faith, love, and hope. The reminder that our destiny is to be "with the Lord" and the call to encourage one another (vv. 9–11) pick up the conclusion to the previous section (4:17c–18).

5:12–28
Community Life

5:12–22, Relationships with Others. Paul now returns to the more general theme of the relationships that should characterize the "holiness" of a Christian community. Many of these themes will be repeated in other Pauline exhortations such as Rom. 12:3–18: respect leaders (vv. 12–13a; Rom. 12:3–8); be at peace (v. 13b; Rom. 12:18); help the weak (v. 14b; Rom. 14:1); do not repay evil for evil, but do good to all (v. 15; Rom. 12:17a); rejoice (v. 16; Rom. 12:12a); pray unceasingly, give thanks (vv. 17–18; Rom. 12:12c; cf. Eph. 5:20); do not quench the Spirit (v. 19; Rom. 12:11b); do not despise prophecy, but test it (vv. 20–21a; prophecy as a gift in the church, Rom. 12:6); and hold to the good

and avoid evil (vv. 21b–22; Rom. 12:9b). The only unusual element in this exhortation is admonishing the *ataktos* (v. 14a). The Greek word appears in papyri with the sense of loafing around when one ought to be working. This verse would seem to repeat Paul's admonition of 4:11 that Christians ought to work for their living and not be dependent upon others (e.g., wealthy patrons).

5:23–28, Final Prayer and Greetings. The Letter concludes with Paul's final prayer that God will keep the community in holiness until the coming of the Lord (vv. 23–24). The Thessalonians are to reciprocate by praying for the apostle (v. 25). This Letter is to be read at the meetings of the community (vv. 26–27).

COMMENTARY

2 Thessalonians

1:1–12
Greetings and Thanksgiving

1:1–2, Greetings. 2 Thessalonians copies the greeting of 1 Thess. 1:1 with the substitution of "our" for "the" in the phrase "in God our Father" and a repetition of the modifying phrase from the first clause to bring the grace and peace clause into balance.

1:3–12, Thanksgiving. The thanksgiving consists in a single sentence, which can be divided into three sections: vv. 3–4, 5–10, and 11–12. Verses 3–4 give thanks for the growth of faith and love in persecution. The references to faith, love, and steadfastness recall 1 Thess. 1:3. The afflictions that made the community an example for all the churches in Macedonia and Achaia (1 Thess. 1:8–9) have become the content of the apostle's boast "in the churches" (v. 4).

Verses 5–10 describe God's judgment against persecutors. The author turns to an apocalyptic theology of divine vengeance to show that persecutions are a "sign" (NRSV: "evidence") that those who suffer are actually God's elect. According to this view, afflictions suffered by the righteous blot out their transgressions. The righteous will not have to suffer at the judgment. Therefore Israel's afflictions are seen as a sign of God's election (e.g., *Pss. Sol.* 13:9–10; 2 Macc. 6:12–16; *2 Apoc. Bar.* 13:3–10; 78:5). The present sufferings of the elect are immaterial compared to the judgment that awaits those who do not know God and those who are disobedient to the gospel when the Lord (i.e., Jesus) comes to exercise divine judgment (vv. 7–10). Presumably the second group, those disobedient to the gospel, refers to persons who persecute the Christians instead of being converted by their preaching (cf. Rom. 10:16). The first group is described using typical Jewish phrasing for Gentiles in contrast to Jews (e.g., Ps. 79:6; Jer. 10:25, Septuagint [LXX]) or Christians (1 Thess. 4:5). These verses echo OT judgment language (e.g., Isa. 2:10–11, 17, 20).

Verses 11–12 contain a prayer for the Thessalonians. After the digression on divine punishment and reward, the author returns to a prayer that the congregation will be among the elect (cf. v. 5). The Lord is glorified by the present faithfulness of the community (cf. Isa. 66:5).

2:1–12
The Day of the Lord

2:1–2, False Teaching About the Parousia. 2 Thessalonians indicates that the source of confusion about the Parousia—the glorious return of Jesus—lies in prophetic oracles, words, or letters from Paul that are being used to support the claim that the Day of the Lord has come. If the letter being falsely interpreted was 1 Thessalonians, the false view would have to account for the fact that Christians had not been snatched up to be with the Lord (1 Thess. 4:17).

2:3–9, The Coming of the Lawless One. 2 Thessalonians appeals to an apocalyptic tradition about the last days to show that the claim the Day of the Lord has come is false. Apostasy is frequently listed as one of the evils of the end time (e.g., *Jub.* 23:14–21; 2 Esd. 5:1–12; 1QpHab 2:1–3). Rebellion against God is epitomized in a mysterious figure, "the man of lawlessness, son of destruction" (v. 3), who may be a heavenly figure or a human being who is a satanic figure (cf. Zech. 3:1, Satan is opposed to God; "son of Gehenna" appears in Matt. 23:15; and the Essenes designate those dominated by the angel of darkness as "sons of the pit," 1QS 9:16, 22; CD 6:15; 13:14). Satanic overtones of self-exaltation are attached to human rulers in Jer. 46:2–26; Ezek. 28:1–10; Dan. 11:21–45 (see also Rev. 13:1–18).

Verses 5–7 break into the exposition of end-time events with the claim that Paul had taught the Thessalonians about the *katechon* (Gk.), the person or thing restraining the "man of lawlessness." The apocalyptic scenario of divine retribution introduced in 1:5–9 makes it likely that God's divine plan is the ultimate source of "restraint." However, since the "restrainer" operates while "lawlessness" is still at work in the present (perhaps in the persecution of the righteous, v. 7), it is possible that the author has some present manifestation of evil in mind as well. The conditions attached to removal of the restraint in v. 7 are unclear.

Verses 8–9 return to describing the end time. Jesus' Parousia is a final battle in which the lawless one is

destroyed (cf. 1 Cor. 15:24–28). But he is not destroyed until he has exercised the function of the false prophet of the end time and led many astray (cf. Mark 13:22; Matt. 24:24; Rev. 13:13–14).

2:10–12, Condemnation of the Unrighteous. The apocalyptic revelation concludes with a final condemnation of unbelievers (vv. 10, 12, where "the truth" means the truth of the gospel; cf. 1:8, 10). Ultimately, even the delusion of the unbeliever is rooted in God's act, an appropriate punishment for those who have turned away from God (Rom. 1:24–28; 9:14–29).

2:13–17
Salvation for the Elect

2:13–14, Thanksgiving for God's Call. The return to a second thanksgiving echoes 1 Thessalonians. Instead of "beloved by God" (1 Thess. 1:4), the author uses "beloved by the Lord" (v. 13). If the text originally read "from the beginning," the author is speaking of God's election as an act that takes place from the beginning of time (e.g., Gal. 1:15, on Paul's calling before he was born), not simply the beginning of Paul's ministry. God's election is not complete until the elect have received salvation.

2:15–17, Stand Fast in the Tradition. The exhortation to hold fast to true Pauline tradition is followed by a prayer similar to 1 Thess. 3:2b, 8, 11–13, but stripped of the personal references in 1 Thessalonians.

3:1–5
Prayer for Steadfastness

3:1–2, Prayer for the Apostle. The request for prayer on behalf of the apostle picks up 1 Thess. 5:25. But the picture of apostolic life as constant danger from evil persons has been drawn in general terms (cf. Isa. 25:4; Jer. 15:21) and lacks the concreteness of such references elsewhere in Paul (e.g., Phil. 1:24).

3:3–5, Prayer for the Thessalonians. Once again the author prays that the audience will remain steadfast in what they have been taught (cf. 2:17) and that the Lord will protect them from the attempts of Satan to destroy their faith (cf. 2:9; 1 Thess. 2:18; 3:5).

3:6–18
Instructions to the Community

3:6–12, Against Idle Persons. The author turns to the requirement that Christians imitate Paul (1 Thess. 1:6) to address the problem created by those who refuse to follow Paul's instructions to work, live in a quiet, peaceful way, and avoid "idleness" (1 Thess. 1:6; 2:7–9; 3:4; 4:10–12; 5:14). It appears that these people are burdening other Christians for their support (vv. 8, 10; cf. Prov. 10:4).

3:13–15, Against Associating with the Idle. The author reaffirms Christian concern for "doing good" to others. But charity is not to include fellow Christians who will not live according to the rule established by the apostle. Some exegetes think that though these people are not excluded from the Christian community (cf. Matt. 18:15–17; 1 Cor. 5:3–5), they may have been barred from the community meals (see the temporary exclusion of a member of the Corinthian community in 2 Cor. 2:5–11).

3:16–18, Final Blessing. The final prayer and wish for peace (cf. 1 Thess. 5:23, 28) frames a reminder of the apostolic authority of the teaching contained in the Letter. Once again the personal element, greetings to the congregation (1 Thess. 5:26), is missing from 2 Thessalonians. Paul's presence to his churches is carried by the genuine apostolic teaching in his Letters.

Bibliography

Best, E. *The First and Second Epistles to the Thessalonians.* New York: Harper & Row, 1972.

Bruce, F. F. *1 and 2 Thessalonians.* Word Biblical Commentary, 45. Waco, TX: Word, 1982.

Collins, R. F. *The Birth of the New Testament.* New York: Crossroad, 1993.

Gaventa, B. R. *First and Second Thessalonians.* Interpretation. Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox, 1998.

Malherbe, A. J. *Paul and the Thessalonians: The Philosophic Tradition of Pastoral Care.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1987.

Marshall, I. H. *1 and 2 Thessalonians.* New Century Bible Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1983.

Reese, J. M. *1 and 2 Thessalonians.* New Testament Message, 16. Wilmington, DE: Glazier, 1979.

1, 2 Timothy and Titus

JOUETTE M. BASSLER

INTRODUCTION

1 Timothy, 2 Timothy, and Titus form a distinct group within the Letters attributed to Paul. United in intricate ways by addressees, vocabulary and style, subject matter, and theology, they are sharply differentiated from the other Pauline Letters by these same traits. Most scholars now conclude that these Letters were not written by Paul, but by someone writing after Paul's death who, following a custom of his time, borrowed Paul's name and adapted Paul's theology to bring an authoritative word to bear on a crisis emerging in the second-century church.

1 Timothy and Titus are most alike, consisting primarily of instructions concerning the community. These two documents closely resemble administrative letters from a supervisor to a subordinate. 2 Timothy, on the other hand, comprises personal exhortations set against a backdrop of warnings about opponents and reminders of Paul's impending death. This Letter strongly resembles the testamentary literature of Hellenistic Judaism (→ Testament), and its emphasis is on fidelity to Paul's teachings after his death. It is probable that the three Letters were intended to circulate as a collection complementing, and perhaps correcting, the larger collection of Paul's Letters to the seven churches. Because of their shared concern for church leadership and oversight, the group has been designated the "pastoral Letters" since the eighteenth century.

Though somewhat different in form, all three Letters are hortatory documents, intended to address the behavior of individual members of the church and of various groups within it. They are thus filled with instructions, commands, lists of vices and virtues, and personal examples of good and bad behavior. Paul serves as the primary model of good behavior; a group of false teachers serves as the model of bad behavior.

The pseudonymity of these Letters conceals not only the real author but also the real addressees and the real circumstances of their composition (→ Pseudonym). They were clearly intended for churches within the Pauline mission field that had been disturbed by the behavior and doctrine of certain teachers (1 Tim. 1:3–7; 2 Tim. 4:3–4; Titus 1:10–11). It is difficult to know much about these people, because the author does not engage in a substantive rebuttal of their teachings. Most of his comments about them amount to little more than name-calling and stereotyping. We know only that the teachers claimed that the resurrection is a present, spiritual reality for believers, not simply a future hope (2 Tim. 2:18) and that they demanded an ascetic lifestyle from their adherents (1 Tim. 4:3; → Eternal Life). The author also links their views to special knowledge (Gk. *gnosis*, 1 Tim. 6:20), and their views on the resurrection and asceticism are consistent with those of a gnosticizing movement (→ Gnosticism).

It is impossible to know the size of this group, but whatever their numbers, they had destabilized the Christian community both doctrinally and socially. Thus allusions to their presence permeate the author's exhortations, lending urgency and relevance to his admonitions to adhere to "sound" doctrine, to maintain the traditional patterns of social and ecclesial authority, and to conform in behavior to the norms of moderation, modesty, and godliness so prized in the Greco-Roman world.

The pastoral Letters were written by someone who wished to bring Paul's word to bear on a situation that developed after the apostle's death. It is likely that the disruptive teachers were also appealing to Pauline traditions for support. The question the author addresses was thus not simply what Paul would have said in this situation, but who had the right to say what Paul would have said in this situation. The pseudonymity of these Letters was used—at least in part—to confirm the interpretation of Paul presented in them as sanctioned by Paul himself. Nevertheless, the Letters show real creativity in adapting Paul's theology.

The pastoral Letters do not appear in the earliest collection of Pauline Letters; however, from the late second century on they are included, though sometimes (with Philemon) as an appendix to the collection of Letters written to churches. Once they became part of the canon, their authorship was not challenged until the nineteenth century. Thus their theology and their pronouncements on social and ecclesial hierarchy were accepted as Pauline until fairly recently.

COMMENTARY

1 Timothy

1:1–2
Salutation

1 Timothy opens with the expanded formula of salutation typical of Paul's Letters. The titles found here signal important issues developed in all three Letters: Paul's apostolic authority (1 Tim. 1:12; 2 Tim. 1:11; Titus 1:1–3), God's will to save (1 Tim. 2:4; 4:10; Titus 2:11), and Timothy's "loyal" or "legitimate" relationship to Paul, which stands in sharp contrast with the teachers' illegitimate status (1 Tim. 1:18–20; 6:20–21; cf. Titus 1:10–2:1).

1:3–20
Preface

The Letter opens with a charge to Timothy and a warning about people who teach a "different doctrine." The topic wanders to a comment on the law and a belated statement of gratitude for Paul's conversion before returning to the charge and warning. By presenting the danger of heterodoxy and establishing the credentials of Paul and Timothy, the whole section serves as a preface for the instructions that fill the body of the Letter.

1:3–7, The Opposing Teachers. The reference to Paul's travels establishes the literary pretext for the Letter, but the passage also provides clues to the actual situation: the appearance in some Pauline churches of persons with "different" teachings. These teaching were endangering the church by distracting its members from their proper focus on the divine plan that is revealed to faith and by encouraging speculations and controversy instead (6:3–5). The reference to myths and genealogies (4:7; 2 Tim. 4:4; Titus 1:14; 3:9) may point to Gnostic influence, but the author's purpose in mentioning them is to disparage the new teachers by highlighting the contrast between their meaningless talk and the sincere faith and solid instructions rooted in Paul's teachings. Likewise, the reference to the law (presumably the Jewish law; see Titus 1:10, 14) is not given theological significance, but is cited to illustrate the teachers' ignorance.

1:8–11, The Role of the Law. The digression on the proper role of the law is rooted in Paul's observation that "the law is good" (Rom. 7:16), but this author takes the discussion in a one-sided direction. The law's only purpose, he says, is to restrain the lawless (cf. Paul's comments in Rom. 7:7–13; 9:30–10:4; Gal. 3:19–29). This emphasis allows him to make the important point that sound teaching (as opposed to "other" teaching) and sound behavior go hand in hand (see 6:3–5; Titus 2:1–2).

1:12–17, A Statement of Gratitude. The statement of gratitude superficially resembles the statements of thanksgiving with which Paul usually opens his Letters (→ Paul: Letters), but the focus here is on what has been done for Paul, not for the church. In developing this biographical section, the author draws heavily on material found in Paul's Letters (1 Cor. 15:9–10; Gal. 1:13–15; Phil. 4:13), but he exaggerates the horror of Paul's former life in order to magnify the scope of Christ's mercy (cf., e.g., Phil. 3:6). On the other hand, he also excuses Paul's earlier actions as stemming from ignorance, which tempers somewhat the notion of grace—something Paul himself never did. Nevertheless, Paul becomes the preeminent example of the gospel he was entrusted to preach. This gospel is summarized here with a "sure" or "faithful" saying. There are four other sayings identified in these Letters as faithful, most of them concerned with salvation (see 3:1; 4:9; 2 Tim. 2:11; Titus 3:8). The passage ends with a doxology, probably a fragment of early Christian liturgy modeled on synagogue worship.

1:18–20, The Charge to Timothy. The author concludes his introductory remarks by returning to the themes with which he opened them: his charge to Timothy and his warning about opponents. The instructions mentioned here include not only those found in 1:3–5, but also those that fill chaps. 2–6, thus providing both a recapitulation of the preface and a transition to the body of the Letter. Timothy's role as Paul's worthy heir is confirmed by Christian prophecies, understood to have been spoken at the time of his election or ordination (see 4:14; 2 Tim. 1:6; cf. Acts 13:1–3). The author defines Timothy's charge as a fight (see also 6:12; 2 Tim. 4:7), a metaphor common in philosophical moral discourse, but also an apt characterization of the situation within his church.

The two men mentioned by name are unknown apart from these Letters (see also 2 Tim. 2:17; 4:14). The action taken against them (turning them over to Satan) refers to expulsion from the church and has a precedent in 1 Cor. 5:1–5. It is somewhat harsher than the actions Timothy is charged to take (1:3), but it links Paul and Timothy in the same fight—one also shared by the author.

2:1–6:19
Body of the Letter

The body of the Letter contains the instructions mentioned in 1:18, enlivened by warnings about false teachers. A slight shift occurs at 3:14–16. Prior to that passage

the instructions are general and concern the whole worshiping congregation and its leaders; after it they are addressed directly to Timothy.

2:1–3:16
Instructions for the Congregation

2:1–7, Prayers for Everyone. The first instruction, that prayers be offered for everyone, introduces issues of importance throughout these Letters: God's saving concern for all (2:1–2, 4, 6; 4:10; Titus 2:11); the importance of the "quiet" virtues, especially godliness (4:7; 6:3; 2 Tim. 3:5; Titus 1:1; 2:11–12); and Paul's role, especially as apostle and teacher. Godliness, an important virtue in the Greco-Roman world, defines Christian life in these Letters: it embraces both piety and conduct, with particular concern for respect for the divinely ordained orders of life. This opening statement is buttressed by a liturgical fragment, the first of several in these Letters (3:16; 2 Tim. 2:11–13). The fragment's monotheistic assertion (see Rom. 3:30; 1 Cor. 8:4–6; Eph. 4:6) and its insistence that Christ's death (here a "ransom"; see Mark 10:45) was "for all" reinforce the central theological claim of God's universal saving will. Paul, in his dual roles as apostle and "teacher of the Gentiles," makes his own contribution to God's plan of salvation. The issue of Christ's mediation is not developed further.

2:8–15: Gender-Defined Roles. The admonitions on prayer continue with instructions on how men should pray, but when the topic turns to women, the issue is not prayer, but dress and decorum. Concern that women dress and behave modestly was pervasive in the culture; however, the social and religious imbalance created by the admonitions concerning men and those concerning women, who seem to be excluded from public prayer, is striking.

In v. 11 the tone changes from persuasion to command. The requirement that women be silent and submissive derives from Hellenistic household management traditions (Seneca *Epistles* 94.1; Plutarch *Advice to Bride and Groom* 32–33; see also Eph. 5:22–33; Col. 3:18–19; 1 Pet. 3:1–7), but is here applied to the "household of God." The prohibition against teaching derives from the author's particular concern for approved teachers and correct teaching (e.g., 1:3; 3:2; 4:1, 11–16; 6:2b–3). Adam's status as first-created (Gen. 2) and Eve's deception by the serpent (Gen. 3) are mentioned to confirm the superiority of men and the unsuitability of women for leadership roles. Indeed, deception—of women and by opponents—emerges as a significant issue in the community (4:1; 2 Tim. 3:5–7, 13; Titus 1:10). The passage closes with a remarkable statement linking salvation and childbirth, an un-Pauline reaction against the ascetic demands of the opponents (see commentary below on 4:1–5) that is tempered somewhat by references to faith, love, holiness, and modesty.

3:1–13, Qualifications for Church Leaders. The chapter opens with another assertion that "the saying is sure," but since these comments are usually attached to statements about salvation (see 1:15), the reference is probably to 2:15, not to the comments on bishops and deacons in chap. 3. The duties of these church leaders are not given, nor is the relationship between the various offices (including that of elder, see 5:17–22; Titus 1:5–9), though the bishop (Gk. *episkope*, lit., "overseer") certainly had oversight of the church, while the deacons (Gk. *diakonos*, lit., "helper" or "server") probably had service roles. The author writes not to create these offices, but to emphasize, in a setting where leadership roles are being challenged, the appropriate qualifications for them.

The qualifications listed for both offices are very similar and reflect the virtues admired in the Greco-Roman world. The bishop's role as teacher is highlighted by the context (2:12; 4:1, 11). Good skills in household management provide a practical base for leadership of the household of God (3:15) and reinforce issues of authority, order, and submission (2:11–12; 6:1–2; Titus 2:3–10). The requirement concerning marriage (lit., "husband of one wife")—repeated for bishops, deacons, widows (5:9, "wife of one husband"), and elders (Titus 1:6)—is probably intended to counter the opponents' absolute rejection of marriage (4:3). The women mentioned in 3:11 present a puzzle. The context and qualifications suggest that they, too, were church leaders (women deacons), but 2:11–12 would severely limit their authority.

3:14–16, The Household of God. Somewhat belatedly the author states the ostensible purpose of this Letter, returning attention to Timothy (cf. 1:18–20) in anticipation of the personal instructions that follow. The concept of the church as the household of God is introduced here. For this author, the controlling image of a household would be the extended patriarchal household of the Greco-Roman world, which, with its rigid hierarchy, reinforces the content of these Letters in a number of ways. The mystery of the faith preserved in this household is defined by a hymnic fragment that, in carefully constructed couplets, describes the incarnation and the ascension as parallel epiphanies (revelations) that unite heaven and earth.

4:1–6:19
Instructions for Timothy

4:1–5, Warning About Ascetic Doctrine. The second half of the exhortations opens and closes (6:20–21) with a warning against the teachers. The opening warning is presented as a word of the Spirit (a deliberate contrast with the demon-inspired utterances of the

opponents) about "later times." These times are later only from the perspective of Paul; they directly concern the author's present circumstances. Amid the stock charges characteristic of the author's rhetoric stands a piece of concrete information about the opponents' ascetic teachings, which the author rebuts by insisting on the goodness of God's creation. Elsewhere the rebuttal takes the form of insistence on marriage (e.g., 3:2, 12; 5:14).

4:6–16, Instructions to Timothy. The exhortations in this section are addressed directly to Timothy and concern primarily his role as church leader. An image of strong church leadership emerges from the instructions. This serves as a counterexample to the portrait of the opponents in vv. 1–5, and sound teaching is therefore emphasized (vv. 6, 11, 13, 16). Godliness is also emphasized both by repetition (vv. 7–8) and by a "sure saying" (v. 9, which seems to refer to the statement in v. 8). Two theological assertions pick up ideas from earlier in the Letter and serve to ground the argument: God is the "living God" (cf. 3:15) and "the Savior of all people, especially of those who believe" (cf. 1:1; 2:3). The latter phrase, which suggests salvation even of those who do not believe, is difficult to reconcile with the view elsewhere in these Letters that although God's will to save extends to all, there are many who by their actions fail to embrace it.

The passage also describes an act of laying on of hands by the elders of the congregation, presumably a rite of ordination through which the gift of ministry was imparted (see 2 Tim. 1:6; Acts 6:6; 13:1–3). This rite established continuity in church leadership, which in turn guaranteed the reliability of church teaching—both issues of considerable importance to this author.

5:1–2, Groups by Age. Although 5:1–2 seems disconnected from what follows, the admonitions concerning age groups provide fundamental guidelines for subsequent instructions concerning elders and old and young widows.

5:3–16, Widows. The primary problem posed by the widows seems to have been financial: the number of widows exceeded the church's ability to support ("honor"; cf. v. 17) them. Thus the instructions are aimed at encouraging families to provide for widowed relatives (vv. 4, 8, 16) and establishing criteria for those widows who are to be "enrolled" (i.e., placed on the official list of church-supported widows). The instructions also address a second problem: patterns of behavior, especially among younger widows, that the author views as inappropriate and dangerous.

The "widows" the author discusses were not simply bereaved women. Like the group Ignatius of Antioch addressed early in the second century as "virgins who are called widows" (Ign. *Smyrn.* 13.1), these women have taken a pledge of celibacy that younger "widows," in their desire to marry, threaten to break. They may have constituted an office within the church, as they did in the third century, but this passage does not indicate what their duties were, unless they were to devote themselves to constant prayer (v. 5).

Insofar as celibacy was a defining feature of this group, the widows followed the lifestyle required by the opponents. This provided a second reason to limit membership, and the qualifications for membership have distinctively anticelibate features: the older, enrolled widows are to have been married (though only once) and to have raised children. Younger widows are denied membership and required to marry and bear children (v. 14).

5:17–25, Elders. It is difficult to determine what problem is associated with the elders, beyond the fact that some are sinning (v. 20). Nor is it clear how the bishops are related to the elders. Titus 1:5–9 suggests some link, but even that passage is ambiguous. Finally, it is not clear that all the verses of this passage directly concern the elders; the instructions in vv. 20–25 could be of more general application. The passage opens, as does 5:3–16, with instructions regarding financial support, the "double honor" (i.e., double recompense) given to elders who rule well. This instruction is supported by two texts (Deut. 25:4; Luke 10:7) identified as "scripture," the only place in the Pastorals where a Jewish writing is identified as Scripture and one of only two places in the entire NT where a Christian writing is cited as Scripture (see 2 Pet. 3:15–16). The reference to laying on of hands probably refers to ordination (see 4:14; 2 Tim. 1:6). The instructions regarding wine seem oddly out of place, but they have a distinctly antiascetic tone and may suggest that the sins of some elders involved a connection with the opponents.

6:1–2, Slaves. Instructions concerning slaves appear frequently in Christian writings (Titus 2:9–10; Eph. 6:5–9; Col. 3:22–4:1; 1 Pet. 2:18–25) and affirm the institution of slavery. The Christian message, however, contained promises of social equality, which were reinforced by the Christian practice of calling one another "brother" or "sister," regardless of social status. Christian slaves and masters were thus forced to move between two worlds—one promoting equality, the other dependent upon the master-slave relationship. The tensions this created are evident here, as is the concern to promote the Christian message by conforming to established social norms.

6:3–16, The Opposing Teachers. As the Letter draws to a close, the author reopens his attack on the opposing teachers and uses instructions to Timothy, here addressed as "man of God" (see also 2 Tim. 3:16–17, cf. Deut. 33:1; 1 Sam. 2:27; 9:6), to provide a counterexample of good leadership. The section repeats motifs found earlier in the Letter, including the de-

nunciation of greed (3:3, 8; see also 2 Tim. 3:2; Titus 1:7, 11), but the sustained discussion of this issue is unparalleled elsewhere in these Letters and may point to a concrete problem. The author's recommendation of "contentment" reflects a virtue extolled by Stoic and Cynic philosophers. The charge to Timothy is presented in formal language that derives from early Christian liturgy, probably from an ordination rite with roots in baptismal practice. The closing doxology echoes the opening one (1:17), thus framing the Letter with orthodox theology.

6:17–19, Proper Use of Wealth. These verses pick up the earlier discussion of riches, but take it in a different direction. The topic here is proper use of money, and the advice, though commonplace (Prov. 11:28; Luke 12:16–21), contains an anti-ascetic message of enjoyment that effectively counters the more severe advice of 6:7–8, which was surprisingly congenial to the opponents' position (see 4:3).

6:20–21
Conclusion

The conclusion of the Letter summarizes its contents: preserve the Pauline message (as this author understood it) in the face of other, distorted, teachings (2 Tim. 1:13–14), which seem to be associated with some form of Gnosticism (see Introduction).

COMMENTARY

2 Timothy

1:1–2
Salutation

The salutation, which closely resembles those of the undisputed Pauline Letters, emphasizes two things: the close connection between Paul's apostleship and "the promise of life" (see also 1:10–11; 2:10–11; 4:7–8) and Paul's close relationship to Timothy, his "beloved child."

1:3–4:8
Body of the Letter

Throughout the body of this Letter, the author addresses two related themes: suffering for the gospel and preservation of the tradition. Frequent references to opponents underscore the urgency of these themes.

1:3–2:13
Exhortations to Timothy

The first section of the Letter consists of a series of exhortations buttressed by reminders of the past, warnings about opponents, and examples from Paul's life.

1:3–5, Thanksgiving. 2 Timothy opens, as do most of Paul's Letters, with an expression of gratitude or thanksgiving, here for Timothy's faith. The author underscores the close emotional bond between Paul and Timothy—a common motif in Hellenistic letters of friendship and exhortation. The continuity of Paul's faith—and Timothy's—with that of his ancestors is mentioned, oddly overlooking the change produced by his conversion but suggesting instead the antiquity of their religion, a trait particularly important in the Greco-Roman world.

1:6–18, Do Not Be Ashamed! A series of exhortations defines the appropriate behavior of the Christian church leader. The refrain of these exhortations is, "Do not be ashamed." Shame was a powerful deterrent in the Greco-Roman world, so the author here dissociates shame from suffering while encouraging conformity with Paul's suffering and confidence in God's power. The reference to God's power introduces a liturgical fragment (vv. 9–10) linking that power with grace. Grace here refers to God's preexistent will to save, and the Christ event is celebrated as a revelation, or epiphany, of that grace (see also Titus 2:11; 3:4–7). No specific connection is made between salvation and the cross (cf. Rom. 6:1–11; 1 Cor. 1:18), and the author returns instead to the model of Paul's suffering, which the apostle endured without shame and with full confidence in God. Exhortations—twice repeated—to hold to the sound teaching (the "good treasure") received from Paul (cf. 1 Tim. 6:20) balance the strong statements of election and grace. The passage then closes with contrasting examples of behavior that serve as warning and model: the many who abandoned Paul and his teachings and the one (Onesiphorus; see 4:19) who was not ashamed.

2:1–13, Share in Suffering! The author repeats exhortations made in the previous section—be strong (cf. 1:6–7), carefully pass on the Pauline teachings (cf. 1:13–14), and share in suffering (cf. 1:8)—with an emphasis on the last. Three maxims use common models (1 Cor. 9:7–27; Phil. 2:25)—the soldier, the athlete, and the farmer—to illustrate the theme of suffering (in the form of exertion and hard work) and reward. An example from Paul's own life caps the series and focuses its message on the circumstances of the Christian mission. A "sure saying " (vv. 11–13), quoted from an early Christian hymn, provides the final warranty.

The hymn is identifiable as such by the balanced length and parallel structure of its lines. The content

reflects the Pauline concept of dying and rising with Christ (Rom. 6:8), and it may have originally been a baptismal hymn. However, the actual wording of the lines ("if we have died together, we will also live together; if we endure, we will also reign together") and the context, which speaks of Paul's suffering and endurance, encourage a secondary layer of interpretation with regard to suffering with Paul and allegiance to him. The fourth and final line of the hymn seems to reverse the message of retribution in the third line, though the verses that follow show that God's response to apostasy includes mercy toward those who stray (2:19, 24–25) as well as reward for those who stand firm (2:15, 19).

2:14–3:9
Warnings About Opponents

The exhortations continue in this portion of the Letter, but they are reinforced—and ultimately overshadowed—by warnings about the opponents and their activities (cf. 1:15). The basic instruction throughout the passage is: avoid these people and their noisy disputes (2:14, 16, 23; 3:5).

2:14–26, False Teaching and Senseless Controversies. This passage provides the only clear information about the opponents' theology: they teach that the resurrection has already taken place. This teaching was probably rooted in an understanding of baptism as participation in Christ's death and resurrection, a view apparently held earlier by some members of the Corinthian church (see 1 Cor. 4:8) and promoted in Paul's name by the authors of Ephesians and Colossians (Eph. 2:4–7; Col. 2:11–13), though Paul himself held out the resurrection as a future hope for believers, not a present reality (Rom. 6:3–11; 1 Cor. 15:20–24, 35–57). The opponents' views implied a spiritual resurrection (for it occurred while the body was still earthbound) and a body-spirit dualism, which also manifested itself in their demands for a celibate lifestyle.

The two named individuals (v. 17; see also 1 Tim. 1:20) are unknown apart from these Letters, but the image of spreading gangrene underscores the danger of their teaching. (By contrast, the Pauline teaching promoted in these Letters is described as "sound" or "healthy"; see 1:13; 4:3; 1 Tim. 1:10; 6:3; Titus 1:9, 13; 2:1.) Exhortations to Timothy (v. 15) present a counterimage of the reliable church leader, who is strengthened in the struggle with the opponents by the reminder of "God's firm foundation." The allusion is to the foundation stone of Isa. 28:16, which is here probably understood to be the church (see also 1 Tim. 3:15). The first inscription loosely cites Num. 16:5; the second is not a quotation, though it recalls the wording of a number of OT texts (cf. Job 36:10; Isa. 26:13; Sir. 17:26). "Turn away from wickedness," the message of the second inscription, is reinforced by an extended illustration involving utensils of various worth and use (recalling Pauline images; see Rom. 9:19–24; 1 Cor. 3:11–15; 12:12–26) and by various exhortations to Timothy. The final admonitions about the treatment of opponents are surprisingly gentle and optimistic (cf. 1 Tim. 1:20; Titus 1:16; 3:10–11).

3:1–9, The Last Days. Here the message seems to shift from warnings about present adversaries to predictions of the last days, but as in 1 Tim. 4:1 the prediction also serves as a reference to and warning about present circumstances. The author draws on the language of apocalyptic literature (→ Apocalyptic Literature), but his emphasis is not on the actual close of the age—he shows little evidence elsewhere of an apocalyptic outlook—but on apocalyptic decay as an explanation of the opponents' success. This decay is described with an extensive but stereotypical vice list (cf. Rom. 1:29–31), which describes not so much the activities of the opponents as the context in which they will emerge. In fact, the opponents themselves, with their celibate, ascetic lifestyle, have "the outward form of godliness." Only their teachings betray their inner decay.

Verse 6 provides some concrete information about the proselytizing activities of the opposing teachers. The author draws on cultural stereotypes of women (whose attempts to learn philosophy were ridiculed by writers like Horace, Epictetus, and Juvenal) to depict the teachers' followers, thus denigrating the teachers by denigrating their audience. The passage confirms, however, the evidence elsewhere in these Letters that women were, for various reasons, responding positively to the message of the opposing teachers (see, e.g., 1 Tim. 2:14; 5:15). By comparing these teachers with Jannes and Jambres, the names given in nonbiblical writings to the Egyptian magicians who opposed Moses at the time of the Exodus (Exod. 7:11, 22), the author provides reassurance about the outcome of the struggle, for the Egyptians were soundly defeated by Moses.

3:10–4:8
The Final Charge

References to Paul's life and faith (3:10–13; 4:6–8) frame the final charge to Timothy (3:14–4:5), which picks up themes from earlier portions of the Letter.

3:10–13, The Example of Paul's Life. The first aspect of Paul's life held up as a model is his teaching, for the content and manner of the opponents' teaching is the focus of the author's concern (2:18; 3:6–7; see also 1 Tim. 1:3–7; 4:1–3; 6:3–5; Titus 1:10–11). The list continues with the basic Christian virtues (faith, love) alternating with references to patience (cf. 2:24; 4:2) and endurance (2:10, 12). Paul's endurance of suffering and his rescue from it are mentioned throughout this Let-

ter (1:8–12; 2:3–13; 4:16–18), but here there are echoes of traditions from the book of Acts about his ministry in Asia Minor (chaps. 13–14). A reference to the opponents continues the pattern of contrasting examples. They are charged with being "deceived deceivers," a stock charge in philosophical debates and in these Letters (see 1 Tim. 4:1; Titus 1:10).

3:14–4:5, The Formal Charge. The center of this passage, and the climax of the Letter, is the set of final exhortations (4:1–2, 5), which repeat earlier instructions but are elevated here by an elaborate oath formula (4:1) to the status of a formal charge. This charge is preceded by the exhortation to remain faithful to the Pauline traditions (3:14) and interrupted by another warning, this time about the fickleness of church members who prefer novelty to sound doctrine. The plea to remain faithful to sound doctrine is buttressed by a reminder of its reliable source (i.e., Paul, see 1:13; 2:2; but cf. 1:5). The author also points to Timothy's grounding in Scripture (here the Jewish Scriptures), which confirms the truth of the sound doctrine. A brief digression asserts the inspiration of Scripture and, even more important, affirms its usefulness in equipping the church leader (lit. "man of God"; see also 1 Tim. 6:11) for his work.

4:6–8, Completion of Paul's Ministry. Drawing on the language and imagery of Phil. 2:17, the author emphasizes once again Paul's faithful endurance of suffering. The clear allusions to Paul's imminent death lend pathos to the picture and urgency to the charge, giving the Letter the quality of a final testament. Paul is described as having successfully done what Timothy—and other church leaders—are charged to do, and Paul's eschatological reward is held out as a promise for others (see 2:11–13).

4:9–22
Conclusion

The Letter closes with extensive personal instructions, information about co-workers, greetings, and a final benediction.

4:9–15, Travel Arrangements. The theme of reunion with which the Letter opened (1:3–4) returns at the end. It is reinforced here with complaints of abandonment and opposition that echo earlier passages (cf. 1:15; 2:17–18; 3:6–8; 4:3–4). Most of the names mentioned here are known from Acts or other Letters (see, e.g., Col. 4:14; Philem. 24; Acts 19:33; 20:4).

4:16–18, The First Defense. The theme of desertion continues in the references to the "first defense" (an allusion either to an earlier trial or to an earlier phase of the present trial), but the emphasis here is on the presence of divine support and rescue (see 1:7–12; 2:1). The passage rings with the confidence of Ps. 22:21–24; Phil. 1:12–14, but the rescue expected here anticipates heavenly reward, not continued earthly existence.

4:19–22, Final Greetings. Senders and recipients of greetings are typically mentioned at the conclusion of a Pauline Letter. Here the greetings soften to some extent the portrait of the lonely apostle by pointing to the network of associates who continue his work.

COMMENTARY

Titus

1:1–4
Salutation

The salutation of Titus echoes that of 1 Timothy, though it is significantly longer. Paul is presented here not only as apostle, but also as "slave" of God, a title applied in the OT to Abraham, Moses, David, and the prophets. Titus, like Timothy, is described as a "loyal" child, in deliberate contrast to the rebellious people disrupting the church (1:10). Both God and Christ are designated Savior, anticipating the theological discussions of 2:11–14; 3:3–7.

1:5–3:11
Body of the Letter

The body of the Letter includes warnings (1:10–16), instructions about various groups within the church (1:5–9; 2:1–10), and lengthy theological passages supporting the instructions (2:11–3:8). There is no opening thanksgiving (cf. 1 Tim. 1:12; 2 Tim. 1:3).

1:5–16
Leaders and Rebels

The Letter opens with instructions concerning church leaders and warnings about rebellious church members.

1:5–9 , Appointment of Elders. As in 1 Tim. 3:1–13, the instructions concerning church leaders—here elders and bishop (lit., "overseer")—focus on qualifications for the offices, not duties or responsibilities. The relationship between the two groups is not described, though they appear to be overlapping offices, with the bishop chosen from among the elders, or interchangeable terms for the same office or role (see Acts 20:17, 28; 1 Pet. 5:1–2, where elders are charged to "exercise

oversight"). The qualifications promote ideals of the Greco-Roman world and stand in contrast to the behavior of the rebellious people. Because these people are characterized by their disruptive teaching, special attention is given to the bishop's grasp of sound doctrine.

1:10–16, The Rebellious Faction. Though the description of the rebellious people contains many stereotypical features, it also provides some concrete information that confirms the general portrait of the opponents emerging from these Letters: they were numerous (see also 2 Tim. 3:1–2; 4:3–4); they had some link with Judaism (also 1 Tim. 1:7); they viewed the material world as corrupt and withdrew from it through ascetic practices (also 1 Tim. 4:3–5). The emphasis here, however, is on their insubordination (v. 10), which is manifested most egregiously in their challenge to the bishop by "teaching what it is not right to teach" (v. 11). This teaching apparently threatened the social order of both the church and the households within it. The slur against all Cretans—surprising for a Letter ostensibly to a church leader on Crete—is identified by later writers as a quotation from Epimenides of Crete (ca. 500 B.C.).

2:1–3:8a
Proper Behavior

The vices of the rebellious people form a backdrop for the instructions concerning proper, orderly behavior that constitute the heart of this Letter. The author also provides substantive theological warrants for his instructions.

2:1–10, Exhortations for Various Groups. Moral instructions address older men, older women, younger women, younger men, and slaves. Here, as elsewhere in the pastoral Letters, the author blends familiar Christian virtues and Hellenistic ethical ideals. Among the commonplaces associated with these groups, the words to young women and slaves include instructions on proper domestic hierarchy and may be intended to counter the domestic disruption caused by the rebels. Three clauses give the evangelistic purpose of the instructions: to avoid discrediting the gospel in the eyes of the outside world by behavior contrary to existing social norms (vv. 5b, 8b, 10b).

2:11–15, Grace and Piety. This passage provides the theological basis for the instructions of 2:1–10, thereby emphasizing the link between good behavior and sound doctrine (2:1). The author draws on liturgical language to make three important points. First, because the behavior encouraged in these verses enhances the church's proclamation in the eyes of outsiders, it serves God's purpose of bringing salvation to all (v. 11). Second, grace is a transforming power that works in conjunction with the Letter's exhortations to train Christians in proper behavior (v. 12). Third, this moral transformation is a possibility only because of Jesus' redemptive death (v. 14). These ideas are genuinely Pauline, but this author clothes them in the epiphany ("appearance") language of Hellenistic deities and rulers and links them to the cardinal virtues of Stoic philosophy (self-control, uprightness, godliness). They are also infused with OT allusions (v. 14; see, e.g., Ps. 130:8 [129:8, LXX]; Ezek. 37:23; Deut. 7:6). The distinction between God and Christ—already weakened by the description of Jesus' first coming as an appearance of God's grace (2:11; see also 3:4)—dissolves completely in 2:13, where, under the influence of Hellenistic conventions, the passage describes Christ as "our great God and Savior."

3:1–2, Exhortations for the Church. The instructions for wives and slaves to be subordinate to husbands and masters is now complemented by the admonition that all be subordinate to the "rulers and authorities" of the Roman Empire. This reflects not only the author's concern to foster orderly, respectful behavior but also the view, common among Greco-Roman philosophers, that household order and political order were intrinsically related. The remaining instructions echo themes familiar from other portions of these Letters (see 1 Tim. 3:3; Titus 1:7–8).

3:3–8a, Divine Goodness and Human Effort. As in 2:1–14, the author here provides the theological warrant for the preceding exhortations. The unusual language, formal tone, and compressed theological assertions suggest that the passage draws from the liturgy of the church, probably the liturgy of baptism ("the washing of rebirth"). The connection between exhortation and warrant is straightforward—Christians are to be gentle and courteous to everyone because God has shown goodness and loving-kindness to them. The passage follows a familiar Pauline pattern: the profound degeneracy of the pre-Christian life is documented to highlight the extraordinary quality and effect of God's mercy and grace (Rom. 3:9–26; 5:20–21; 1 Cor. 6:9–11; see also 1 Tim. 1:13–14). The Pauline message that salvation is not based on human works (v. 5; see also Rom. 3:24, 28; Eph. 2:8–9) serves as an important reminder that the good works insisted upon in this Letter (2:7, 14; 3:1, 8, 14) flow from, and do not call forth, God's grace and mercy.

3:8b–11
Final Exhortations

A final set of instructions returns to the question of how to deal with the rebellious people. Following a familiar description of their activities (see 1 Tim. 1:3–7; 6:3–5; 2 Tim. 2:14), the author establishes limits to the effort one should expend in restoring them in the faith

(1:13). If a rebuke is not immediately effective, they are to be avoided (see also 1 Tim. 6:20; 2 Tim. 2:14, 16; 3:5).

3:12–15
Conclusion

The Letter closes with personal instructions and greetings, leaving a final impression of a close-knit, supportive band of followers.

Bibliography

Bassler, J. M. *1 Timothy, 2 Timothy, Titus.* Abingdon New Testament Commentaries. Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1996.

Knight, G. W., III. *The Pastoral Epistles: A Commentary on the Greek Text.* New International Greek Testament Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1992.

MacDonald, D. R. *The Legend and the Apostle: The Battle for Paul in Story and Canon.* Nashville, TN: Abingdon, 1983.

Meade, D. G. *Pseudonymity and Canon: An Investigation into the Relationship of Authorship and Authority in Jewish and Earliest Christian Tradition.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1986.

Thurston, B. B. *The Widows: A Women's Ministry in the Early Church.* Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1989.

Young, F. *The Theology of the Pastoral Letters.* New Testament Theology. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1994.

Philemon

NORMAN R. PETERSEN

INTRODUCTION

We do not know exactly when or where the Letter of Paul to Philemon was written or where Philemon lived (perhaps Colossae; see Col. 4:9, 12, 17; → Colossae), but the Letter itself presupposes a story that is basic for our understanding of it. This story consists of the events Paul refers to in the Letter: Philemon incurs a debt to Paul (perhaps his conversion, v. 19b); Paul is imprisoned (v. 9; cf. vv. 1, 10, 13, 23); the slave Onesimus runs away from his master, Philemon, and incurs a debt to him (v. 15; cf. vv. 11–13, 18–19a); Onesimus is converted by an imprisoned Paul (v. 10; cf. v. 13); Paul hears a report of Philemon's love and faith (vv. 4–7); Paul sends Onesimus back to Philemon (v. 12) with a letter of appeal to Philemon guaranteeing repayment of Onesimus's debt but also calling in Philemon's debt to him (vv. 17–19); Onesimus and the letter arrive at Philemon's house (implied); Philemon responds to Paul's appeal (vv. 20–21); and Philemon and the church that meets at his house anticipate a visit by Paul (v. 22).

At issue both in Paul's writing of the Letter and in the decision with which it confronts Philemon is the social and symbolic integrity of the new family of brothers and sisters, the church. Philemon is a master in the world and a brother in the church, and now his slave has become his brother. In Col. 3:22–4:1 and Eph. 6:5–9, Letters that Paul may not have written, the question such relations pose is viewed in terms of how masters and slaves in the church are to relate to one another; the answer is that masters must be just and slaves obedient. In his Letter to Philemon Paul does not offer this answer. Indeed, he seems to envision a different question: whether or not a brother can be a master to a brother not only in the church, but also in the world. Paul urges Philemon to receive Onesimus as he would receive Paul himself, his partner (v. 17), fellow worker (v. 1), and brother (vv. 7, 20); i.e., Philemon is to treat Onesimus as his equal, not his inferior. Verses 16, 21 suggest further that Paul envisions a change in their worldly statuses as well. Paul expects that Philemon will not only "obey" his appeal to receive Onesimus as a brother, but also do even more than Paul has explicitly asked, possibly even terminate their master-slave relationship by freeing Onesimus (→ Slavery in the New Testament).

Because Paul has no legal right to demand this, and because he sees this relationship as a problem in the church, his desires and motives are couched in the most careful rhetoric. He begins (vv. 4–7) with praise for Philemon's demonstrations of faith and love and for refreshing the hearts of the saints, the members of his church. Paul too acts out of love when he declares that for love's sake he is appealing to Philemon rather than commanding him, as he has the authority in Christ to do (vv. 8–10). The situation requires (v. 8) an act by Philemon that Paul could command, but Paul chooses rather to appeal for Philemon's act of goodness as a matter of consent rather than of compulsion (v. 14). However, once Paul has indicated his authority in the matter, Philemon cannot forget it, and neither does Paul. In v. 21 he throws his previous caution to the winds and expresses his confidence not in Philemon's free consent, as though to an appeal, but in his obedience, as though to the command that Paul did not give.

That the matter at stake is significant enough for Paul both to choose his words carefully and then to shift his tone so dramatically is further reflected in his placing of the seemingly personal matter in a public light. The Letter is addressed to the whole congregation that meets in Philemon's house (vv. 1b–2 and the plural "you" in vv. 22b, 25), and Paul suggests that a half dozen other fellow workers with him are aware of what is going on (vv. 1a, 23–24). In this way, Paul exerts considerable social pressure on Philemon in addition to his own apostolic influence.

The magnitude of the problem derives from the possibility that Philemon's failure to receive his brother as a brother would threaten the very essence of what it means to be a brother (or sister), which every believer is by virtue of having become a child or son of God at baptism ("son of God" is for Paul an asexual notion—there is no male or female; cf. Gal. 3:26–4:7; 1 Cor. 7). Philemon's failure to respond affirmatively to Paul's appeal would result not only in a breach in the social and symbolic fabric of the brother-and-sisterhood, but also in Philemon's demonstration that he is neither a brother nor a son of God. It is in this light that we must view Paul's announced visit, for he will have to treat Philemon's response in terms of its implications for the brotherhood.

COMMENTARY

1–3, Opening. The address (vv. 1–2) and greetings (v. 3) are typical of Paul's Letters, except that here he identifies himself as a prisoner of or for Jesus Christ (cf. vv. 9, 13). It is not known where he was imprisoned, but because Archippus, Epaphras, and Onesimus are elsewhere identified as residents of Colossae (Col. 4:9, 12, 17), this may be the place to which the Letter was sent. Philemon is the host of a house-church that, according to contemporary architectural patterns, would have been limited to fifteen to thirty members. The Letter is addressed to the whole church, although Paul speaks almost exclusively to Philemon ("you" in vv. 22b, 25 is in the plural). "Fellow workers" and "fellow soldiers" represent a relationship of responsibility to and with Paul, either as associates in his travels, like Timothy, or as residential functionaries like Philemon and Stephanas (cf. 1 Cor. 16:15–18).

"Brother" and "sister" (vv. 1, 2, 7, 16, 20), on the other hand, are sibling identities all believers enjoy by virtue of their being "children" or "sons of God" the Father (v. 3), which they become initially at baptism (Rom. 8:12–17; Gal. 3:26–4:7) and fully at the imminent return of Christ, when they will enter into the kingdom of God. Similarly, "Lord" means "master," and therefore believers are also equals as slaves of God or Christ, whom God has appointed master of all believers (Rom. 6:15–23; 1 Cor. 1:2; 8:5–6; Phil. 2:1–22). These identifications are significant because they are the basis for Paul's dealings with the worldly master and slave, Philemon and Onesimus. In opposition to this worldly relationship Paul concentrates on the ultimate identity of all believers as children of God and, therefore, as brothers and sisters to one another. For Paul the very nature of human existence is that of enslavement (to sin working through the mortal, perishable, and sexually inclined flesh), but for believers this nature is in the process of being transformed into the imperishable and asexual form of the sons of God, of whom Christ is the firstborn (Rom. 8:12–30; 1 Cor. 15; 2 Cor. 3:17–5:10; Phil. 3:20–21). The death of Christ brings about the transfer of believers from enslavement to sin to the service of Christ as their Lord or master (1 Cor. 6:19–20; 7:21–23; cf. Rom. 3:24; Gal. 3:13, where "redemption" is a purchase from enslavement). Consequently, if one is not a brother to a brother, one's status as a child of God is in jeopardy, both in the church and therefore also in the kingdom of God.

4–7, Thanksgiving. The brief thanksgiving is also typical of Paul's Letters (e.g., see Rom. 1:8–15; 1 Cor. 1:4–9; Phil. 1:3–11). In them, he establishes a basis for his subsequent appeals or exhortations by referring to his past relationship with the addressees and including a statement of his knowledge about their faith and love. The translation of v. 6 is difficult, but the knowledge Paul hopes Philemon's faith will promote consists of what it means to be a son of God and a slave of Christ (see commentary above on vv. 1–3). The thanksgiving therefore expresses approval of Philemon's past behavior in Christ, but it also provides a strategic lever for Paul to secure a continuation of that behavior.

8–22, Appeal. Following his thanksgivings Paul usually makes appeals for specific future behavior on the part of his addressees. These sections can be long or short, depending largely on the number of topics addressed (cf. 1 Thess. 4–6; 1 Cor. 1–16). This Letter is distinctive because in vv. 8–10 Paul discloses that his language of appeal is a loving mask for his authority to command. His disclosure here is related both to his focus on acts of love in his thanksgiving and to his desire also to have Philemon act out of love rather than from his own position of authority over Onesimus. Paul's mode of relating to Philemon thus becomes a model for Philemon in his relationship with Onesimus. "Love" is that familial quality of relations that builds up those who are party to the relationship (cf. 1 Cor. 8:1b; 10:23–24; 13:4–7). Thus, in the only topic of this Letter, Paul says that "for love's sake" he appeals to Philemon concerning his (Paul's) child, Onesimus (vv. 9–10). However, it is only after considerable rhetorical delay that Paul finally gets to the point of his appeal: "receive him as you would receive me" (v. 17). Both the delay before the point and what follows it in vv. 18–22 must be appreciated if we are to understand just what this appeal entails. Two compositional aspects of the appeal section are in this respect significant.

The first is what appears to be a chiasm. In v. 8, Paul refers to his authority to command *(A)* Philemon in the matter at issue, but in vv. 9–10 he indicates his preference rather to make an appeal *(B)*. Then, in v. 14, Philemon's response is described as one of consent *(B′)* out of his own free will, as to an appeal, not one of compulsion or of necessity, as to a command. However, at the end of the appeal section in v. 21, Paul refers to Philemon's response as an act of obedience *(A′)*, as though to a command. Related to this chiastic unit is a sequence of terms that climaxes with the reference to obedience. Verse 8 indicates that there is but one fitting response (what is "required") to the problem. The problem is like a puzzle missing one piece, and only one will fit. If what is required is that Philemon be a brother to Onesimus (vv. 15–17), the absence of this "piece" is a threat to the brotherhood, the "puzzle." In v. 14, this missing piece is referred to as yet another act of goodness by Philemon. But in v. 21 it appears that Paul does not completely trust Philemon's choice of pieces, for here he speaks of his act as one of obedience. Despite the early rhetoric of appeal and consent, obedience is the last word. This strange shift is

further reflected in the second compositional aspect of vv. 8–22.

Although no translation can fail to convey the turn in Paul's appeal when he takes stylus in hand (v. 19), none has fully captured the series of contrasts or alternative expressions represented in the Greek text of vv. 8–16. These serve to delay the appeal proper until v. 17. The series is as follows:

8-9a	bold enough to command	I prefer for love's sake to appeal
9b	old man/ ambassador	a prisoner for Christ Jesus
10	my son	whom I fathered
11	formerly useless	now useful
12–13	whom I sent to you	whom I wanted to keep with me
14	not by necessity	but by free will
15	he was parted from you for a while	that you might have him forever
16a	not as a slave	but as a beloved brother
16b	especially to me	but how much more to you
16c	both in the flesh	and in the Lord

This series, and even more so the Greek grammatical constructions, show just how carefully Paul composed this part of his appeal. The list enables us to decide between "old man" and "ambassador" for the ambiguous word in v. 9b. "Old man" is not a proper contrast with "a prisoner for Christ Jesus," especially when "ambassador" is so closely related to Paul's authority to command and to his metaphorical fatherhood (see also 2 Cor. 5:20; Eph. 6:20; and the more common pairing of "apostle and slave of Christ Jesus" in Rom. 1:1; Gal. 1:1, 10). "Ambassador" is a metaphor for Paul's apostolic role, in which capacity he has the authority to command. More significant for the Letter and its appeal, however, is the rhetorical and compositional difference between vv. 8–16 and vv. 18–22.

After Paul expresses his appeal in v. 17, he adds the promissory note in v. 18, endorses the note, and then shifts his tone entirely, as though at that moment he decided that appealing was inadequate. Thus, having guaranteed payment of Onesimus's debt with his note, he proceeds to call in Philemon's debt to him (v. 19b). Presumably, Paul converted (fathered) Philemon; hence Philemon owes him his self or life, i.e., his position as a son of God. Paul then emphatically declares that he wants some joy from Philemon in the Lord and, echoing the reference in v. 7 to Philemon's refreshing of the hearts of the saints, he summons Philemon to refresh his heart too (v. 20). But v. 21 also harkens back to the command in v. 8, for now Paul expresses his confidence in Philemon's obedience—and more. Then, in a gesture that is now as much a stick as a carrot, Paul tells Philemon to prepare a room for him, because he hopes that through the church's prayers he will soon be able to visit them all (v. 22). This visit is ominous because it will bring a response to Philemon's handling of his debt to Paul. The price he will have to pay and the veiled point of Paul's appeal are identical.

In part, both the price and the point entail Philemon's receiving of his slave as a brother. But this begs the question of how Philemon can remain master over his newborn brother. That this question pervades the Letter is suggested by its cautious yet reckless rhetoric. And it is further suggested both by Paul's reference to Philemon doing "even more" than is "requested" of him and by Paul's assertion that Onesimus is a brother "both in the flesh and in the Lord." Is the giving up of the worldly role of his brother's master a part of the price—and the appeal? Does Paul want him to free his slave? If not, Paul would have shaped his appeal differently, like the authors of Col. 3:22–4:1 and Eph. 6:5–9. Alternatively, if Philemon does not pay the price Paul expects, will he not pay another price in the loss of his status as a brother—and son of God? Philemon's choice is between being a master and being a son of God.

23–25, Closing. The concluding greetings and blessings are again typical of Paul's Letters, although here the list of fellow workers sending their greetings also contributes to the pressure on Philemon, for they are, as it were, witnesses.

Bibliography

Barclay, J. M. G. *Colossians and Philemon.* New Testament Guides. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1997.

Bruce, F. F. *The Epistles to the Colossians, to Philemon, and to the Ephesians.* New International Commentary on the New Testament. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1984.

Lohse, E. *Colossians and Philemon.* Translated by W. R. Poehlmann and R. J. Karris. Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1971.

Moule, C. F. D. *The Epistles to the Colossians and to Philemon.* Cambridge Greek Testament Commentary. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1977.

Petersen, N. R. *Rediscovering Paul: Philemon and the Sociology of Paul's Narrative World.* Philadelphia: Fortress, 1985.

Hebrews

HAROLD W. ATTRIDGE

INTRODUCTION

The work known as the Letter to the Hebrews was not originally a letter; nor were its addressees likely to have been "Hebrews." Though often thought to be Paul, the author is unknown. The opinion that it was a Pauline composition was held in Alexandria from the second century on, although prominent figures such as Origen recognized difficulties with that attribution. His remark that "only God knows" who really wrote the piece is often cited. In the Latin West there were, at first, doubts about Pauline authorship. Tertullian, for instance, considered Barnabas the author (→ Barnabas). By the fourth century the Eastern opinion came to be accepted in the West, and Pauline authorship remained unquestioned until the Renaissance and Reformation, when stylistic considerations again caused doubts. Luther, and many scholars since, suggested Apollos as the author. Numerous other candidates have been advanced, including Prisca and Aquila, Silas, and Jude (→ Apollos; Aquila; Jude; Prisca, Priscilla; Silas). None is satisfactory, and Origen's judgment is fully warranted.

The general range within which Hebrews was written runs from ca. A.D. 60 to ca. 95. The earlier date is suggested by the author's reference to himself and his community as second-generation Christians (2:3–4). The advanced state of the traditions used in the text, especially its Christology (the way it identifies Jesus), also presupposes some time for development. Few critics date Hebrews any earlier than 60. The upper end of the date range is often anchored in the use of Hebrews by *1 Clement*. Although that use is at times doubted, it is obvious, especially in *1 Clement* 36. That letter from the leadership of the Roman church to Corinth is normally dated to A.D. 95–96, although that date is hardly secure, and the work could have been written anytime between A.D. 75 and 120. This provides an upper end for the date of Hebrews of about A.D. 110.

The range might be compressed further by internal considerations. Many critics argue that Hebrews was written prior to A.D. 70 because it refers to the Jewish Temple worship as a present reality and does not mention the destruction of the Temple (→ Temple, The), but neither argument is probative. Both Jewish and Christian authors writing after 70 refer to the Temple in present terms. More important, Hebrews is not interested in the actual cult of the Herodian Temple, but in the depiction of the cult of the desert tabernacle. The author uses that scriptural picture as part of his constructive Christology, not as apology or polemic, and the basis of his argument is exegesis, not history.

The reference to Timothy in 13:23, if to Paul's collaborator, could push the upper end of the date range down to the mid-90s, since it is unlikely that Timothy would have been alive, well, and ready to travel much later.

The genre of the work is problematic because it ends with standard epistolary formulas, but lacks an initial address and greetings. Components of the text exhibit significant formal patterns useful for determining the overall genre. A section such as 3:1–4:13 is a virtually self-contained homily, with an introduction (3:1–6), citation of Scripture (3:7–11), exposition leading up to an exhortation (3:12–4:11), and conclusion with a rhetorical flourish (4:12–13). The same pattern prevails in 8:1–10:18. An introduction sets certain themes (8:1–6). A scriptural quotation introduces certain complementary notions (8:7–13). A complex comment on these themes follows (9:1–10:10). A reprise of the lesson, referring back to the scriptural text, concludes the section (10:11–18). Elements of this sermonic pattern are found in other parts of Hebrews as well, but they are most obvious in these chapters. The document as a whole is as much a scripturally based homily as are its component parts, and its self-description as a "word of exhortation" (13:22) is apt. The conclusion suggests that the exhortation was sent to a congregation at some distance from its author.

The designation of the addressees as "Hebrews" seems to be a later scribal inference based on the contents of the text. Many commentators, both patristic and modern, have followed the title's lead, assuming that, because of its concern with Jewish institutions and traditions, the work was addressed to Jews or to Jewish Christians. Identification of the addressees is correlated with hypotheses about the aims of the text. If written to Jews, Hebrews might be designed as an invitation to accept the Christian confession. If to Jewish Christians, it might aim to prevent a relapse to the an-

cestral religion. Both construals of the addressees and the aim of the work have been defended, but neither is persuasive. The obvious familiarity with Jewish institutions and exegetical traditions is indicative of the author's background, but says little about his audience. Other Jewish Christians, such as Paul, address predominantly gentile communities, e.g., Galatia and Corinth, with sophisticated exegetical arguments and appeals to Jewish traditions. The intended audience of this text may also have been gentile.

Although the ethnic origin of the intended readers is unclear, Hebrews does give some data about them. They had been Christians for some time (5:12) and, because of that commitment, had experienced persecution (10:32–34), which is expected to continue (12:3–13; 13:3). Part of Hebrews' function is to inspire the faithful endurance necessary to meet such threats. Of equal importance, the community seems to be undergoing a crisis of confidence. Some have been neglecting the community assembly (10:25). Such behavior may be a reaction to outside threats or even to the attractions of traditional Judaism, but it could equally well derive from a waning enthusiasm with complex causes. It is also not clear how well informed the author was about these causes. He senses, however, the possibility of apostasy and wants to prevent it by rekindling faith.

The attempt to rekindle the faith of a community faced with pressure from its environment and with internal fatigue is conducted in two ways. The author appeals directly to the addressees in a series of warnings (6:4–12; 10:26–31; 12:15–16) and exhortations. The thrust of these exhortations is summarized in 4:14–15. The addressees are urged to hold what they have, especially their "confession" of Christ. They are also called to movement of various kinds. At times the movement, based on cultic imagery, is one of approach to God (4:16; 10:19–22). At other times it is movement onward (6:1) or outward (11:15; 13:13) to the world in loving service. Such hortatory imagery is concretized in the appeals to specific virtues, especially to fidelity (chap. 11) and endurance (12:1–13).

The hortatory, or parenetic, program of Hebrews is grounded in Christological exposition. The author begins with traditional affirmations in chaps. 1–2, introduces in 5:6–10 an exegetical base for further reflection by his fresh interpretation of a text, then proceeds in the central expository section (7:1–10:18) to develop a new presentation of Christ's person and work. That presentation affirms both the heavenly character and full humanity of the Son. At the same time, it shows how his sacrificial death is existentially relevant for the addressees because it inaugurated a new covenantal relationship with God. It is the virtues of that covenant relationship that the addressees are called upon to display. They are assured that they can be faithful and hopeful, for Christ is their example and his exaltation is a surety for their own.

COMMENTARY

1:1–4
Exordium

The first four verses of Hebrews constitute a single complex or periodic sentence, a structure favored in artistic Greek prose. The sentence is embellished with many figures of speech, such as alliteration, assonance, and chiasm, which are characteristic of Hebrews' rhetorical artistry.

The function of an exordium is to encapsulate the major themes of a work, and these verses succeed admirably. Verses 1–2 highlight the theme of God's speech, and Hebrews will constantly revert to God's word in Scripture as the foundation and source of its theological reflection. At the same time, that scriptural word must be understood in the light of God's speech "in these last days," "by a Son," and belief in Christ regularly provides the framework for interpretation of scriptural texts. The contrast in these verses between the prophets and the Son typifies the style of argumentation that recurs throughout Hebrews. The homily will regularly compare old and new divine dispensations and argue that the new is markedly superior to the old.

Although vv. 1–2 suggest the form of what is to come, v. 3 gives an important indication of its content. With its balanced clauses, participial style, and semitizing Greek, the verse has plausibly been identified as a fragment of a hymn celebrating Christ's preexistence, incarnation, and exaltation much like Phil. 2:6–11 or Col. 1:15–18. As in those hymns, the Christological pattern derives from the Jewish wisdom tradition, a derivation confirmed by the quotation of images ("reflection of God's glory and exact imprint of God's being") drawn from Wisd. of Sol. 7:25. The hymn closes with an allusion ("he sat down at the right hand") to Ps. 110:1, a key text for early Christian descriptions of the exaltation of Christ and an important text for the whole of Hebrews, which will appear again in 8:1; 10:12; 12:2.

The imagery of the transitional v. 4, portraying Christ as superior to the angels and having a special name, is a standard part of exaltation scenes (Phil. 2:10–11; Eph. 1:20–22; 1 Pet. 3:22). Mention of the angels also serves as a sort of rubric superficially uniting the next two chapters.

1:5–2:18
Christ Exalted and Humiliated

The first major movement of the text reemphasizes traditional affirmations about Christ. It does so in two

neatly balanced and formally distinct halves, separated by a brief exhortation.

1:5–14
A Scriptural Catena

Catenas ("chains") or florilegia ("bouquets") of scriptural texts testifying to a certain belief are known from the Dead Sea Scrolls (→ Dead Sea Scrolls, The). Apparently Christians also made such collections to support their belief that Jesus was the Messiah. Hebrews incorporates one such collection, perhaps with some modifications. Some of the texts cited here, such as Ps. 2:7 in v. 5 and Ps. 110:1 in v. 13, appear elsewhere as testimonies to Christ's exaltation. Others, such as Ps. 45:6–7 in vv. 8–9 and Ps. 102:25–27 in vv. 10–12, are unique to this collection. Many of these texts are originally royal psalms, celebrating the coronation (Pss. 2; 110) or the royal virtues (Ps. 45) of an Israelite king. Taken from context, they are understood to be oracles addressed to Christ. In the original catena, all of the texts were probably taken to refer to the exaltation. The author apparently construed them within the framework of the Christology of the preexistent Christ, as the reference to the introduction of the "firstborn into the world" in v. 6 suggests. However the catena's Christological story was construed, it functions as a whole to highlight the heavenly character of Christ, to the point that a scriptural address to God is understood of Christ (vv. 8–9). Because of his status as Son, Christ is superior to the angels.

2:1–4
A Parenetic Interlude

The first hortatory passage draws an *a fortiori* inference from Christ's superiority over the angels. If the message they helped to deliver needed to be taken seriously, how much more so ought the addressees heed the message delivered by the Son. Elaborate theories about the aims of Hebrews have been unnecessarily developed on the basis of the comparison with angels. The comparison, based on the traditional exaltation schema, serves the immediate function of grounding this appeal to heed the salvific message, while, in the Christological development, it dramatically affirms the heavenly dimension of Christ. Apart from the allusion to angels in 2:16, which serves to structure the work, the angels largely disappear from the text.

2:5–18
Humiliation Before Exaltation

The second half of the first movement in the text strongly affirms the reality of the Son's incarnation. The argument proceeds in two segments, an exegesis of a psalm, then a more imagistic presentation of Christ's salvific action.

2:5–9, Exposition of Psalm 8:4–6. The psalm is superficially linked to the previous discussion of Christ and angels with the note (v. 5) that eschatological (end-time) sovereignty is granted to someone other than angels. The text is introduced with an indefinite allusion to its speaker, common in first-century exegetical works. The psalm originally celebrated the glorious status of human beings, made "little lower than the angels" and for that reason "crowned with honor and glory." The author takes the "man" and "son of man" not as references to humanity generally, but as a cipher for Christ. Whether he did so on the basis of some "Son of Man" or "New Adam" Christology is irrelevant. Then, in his exegetical comment (vv. 8b–9), he drives a wedge between what had originally been clauses in synonymous parallelism and takes the subjection below angels as a reference to Christ's incarnation and death, which preceded his "coronation" or exaltation.

2:10–18, Reflection on the Incarnation. Another bit of probably traditional Christological speculation emphasizes both the reality of Christ's humanity and the salvific purpose of his Passion. The imagery throughout is striking. God, in drawing many of his children to heavenly glory, "perfects" the one who leads them on their way to salvation (v. 10). That perfection is achieved through suffering (v. 10) and through doing battle with the diabolical forces that hold sway over death (v. 14). Salvation involves, first of all, liberation from the fear of death (v. 15) by one who "comes to help" human beings (v. 16). Such imagery stems from Greco-Roman heroic myths describing the descent into Hades of figures such as Heracles, who released death's captives and led them back to life. These ancient myths were reinterpreted in philosophical and literary sources as paradigms of liberation from the fear of death. The early affirmation of Christ's exaltation has obviously been reinterpreted in an environment where such myths and their interpretations were current.

In this pericope, the author modifies the traditional mythologically tinged portrait of Christ's salvific action by suggesting that the incarnation has a specifically ecclesial focus and that salvation is the result of divine election, not simply the natural affinity of savior and saved hinted at in v. 11. In vv. 12–13, he cites Ps. 22:22 and Isa. 8:17–18 as sayings of the incarnate Christ, who thus professes his intent to announce God's name in the "midst of the congregation [or church]" and who displays his faith or trust in God along with "the children whom God has given" him.

The pericope, and the first major movement of Hebrews, concludes (vv. 17–18) with a summary about

Jesus, using for the first time in the text the title of high priest. Within the NT this title is used of Christ only in Hebrews, but it was probably not this author's invention. Like virtually everything else in the first two chapters, it is probably part of the Christological tradition of the community addressed. The attributes of Christ as high priest, faithful and merciful (v. 17), as well as the portrait of his activity, aiding those who are undergoing the trials he himself had to face (v. 18), are also probably parts of a traditional portrait. A large part of the author's Christological creativity will consist in emphasizing a different dimension of Christ's priesthood.

3:1–5:10
Faith and the Merciful High Priest

The next major movement of Hebrews falls into two halves, each of which develops a motif drawn from the epithets of Christ in 2:17. The first segment (3:1–4:13) consists of a self-contained, exegetical homily warning against faithlessness. Whereas chaps. 1–2 laid the groundwork for the doctrinal development of Hebrews, this homily prepares for the fuller parenetic treatment of faith in chap. 11. The second half of this movement (4:14–5:10) returns to the Christological theme, reinforcing the perspective of chap. 2 but introducing a new element, Ps. 110:4, which will form the basis of the subsequent Christological exposition.

3:1–11
Introduction and Scriptural Citation

The author introduces his homily with a comparison between Christ and Moses. As in the comparison between Christ and the angels, there is no hint of polemic. The comparison again shows the superlative status of Christ, even more faithful than the greatest hero of ancient Israel. At the same time, it prepares for the content of the exegetical homily, which will focus on the generation of Israelites led by Moses. The superiority of Christ to Moses is demonstrated from Scripture. The fact that Moses was "faithful" is derived from Num. 12:7, alluded to in Heb. 2:2. That text had spoken of Moses being faithful in God's "house" or "household." That term introduces an illustrative analogy (vv. 3–4) to the effect that a builder is greater than the house he constructs, and God is the builder of all. The last phrase evokes the Christology of the exordium without explicitly identifying Christ and God. The argument proceeds (v. 5) exegetically. According to Num. 12:7, Moses is a faithful "servant," clearly an honorific epithet. Hebrews, however, using a technique similar to that of 2:5–9, reverses the significance of the epithet and uses it to contrast Moses with Christ, who, as Son, is "over," not "in," God's house and is, therefore, superior to Moses, the servant.

Hebrews moves to parenesis by playing (v. 6) on the term "house(hold)." The addressees are members of the house over which Christ presides, but that membership is conditional, dependent on maintaining "the confidence and the pride that belong to hope." Both motifs will recur in later exhortations. The homily will focus on Ps. 95:7–11, introduced, as are several other scriptural citations, with reference to the Holy Spirit (v. 7). The text (vv. 7–11) follows fairly closely the Septuagint (LXX) version of the psalm.

3:12–4:11
Exposition of Psalm 95

The exposition falls into three distinct segments, each of which cites a verse of the psalm and appeals to other scriptural texts or data for interpretive help. The first segment (3:12–19) warns against faithless disobedience. The second (4:1–5) redefines a key term in the psalm. The last (4:6–11) makes a parenetic application.

3:12–19, A Warning Example. The appeal to the Israelites of the desert generation as a warning example is common in Jewish homiletics and is paralleled in Paul's admonition in 1 Corinthians 10. The beginning (v. 12) and ending (v. 19) of this section indicate that the object of the warning is "unbelief." The author urges his audience to actualize the psalm's call by encouraging one another (v. 13) in their own "today." The content of their encouragement follows after a parenthetical remark (v. 14) and consists in the call not to have hard hearts (v. 15).

The exposition initially hinges on several wordplays. Unbelief (Gk. *apistia*) is linked first (v. 12) with apostasy *(apostenai)*. Then both are contrasted with what the addressed are parenthetically (v. 14) urged to maintain, their "first confidence" or "initial reality" *(hypostasis)*. That term, which appears here, in 1:3, and in 11:1, is often mistranslated. The philosophical connotations, obvious in 1:3, are probably operative here as well, although somewhat paradoxically; for how can reality have a beginning? That seeming paradox is at the heart of the subtle conceptual play that the author will make in the central exposition (7:1–10:18). The exposition proceeds (vv. 16–18) with a portrait of the failure of the Israelites drawn largely from Numbers 14, stressing the connection of sin (v. 17), disobedience (v. 18), and faithlessness (v. 19). The warning, however, remains on a general level. At the same time, the author notes the fact, implied by the psalm, that the desert generation, because of its failure, could not enter God's "rest" or "resting place."

4:1–5, The Nature of the Rest. On the presumption that the psalm is addressed to the "today" of the audience, its implicit promise of a "rest" must remain open (v. 1) and available for those who, unlike the ancient Israelites (v. 2), have faithfully heard God's word (v. 3).

The next exegetical move is to explain how such a rest is possible. The move is necessary because the term "rest" in the psalm referred to the "resting place" of Canaan, the goal of the wandering Israelites. Hebrews interprets by use of an argument known in rabbinic exegesis as a *gezera shawa* (Heb.), wherein a word in one text is explained by its obvious meaning in another. The argument in vv. 3–5, which works only on the basis of the LXX, stipulates that the meaning of "rest" in Psalm 95 is given by the use of a similar word, "[God] rested," in Gen. 2:2. There "rest" refers to the place or state that God entered after completing the works of creation. The same heavenly "rest" awaits faithful Christians.

4:6–11, The Contemporary Call. The promise to obtain a share in God's "rest" was not fulfilled in the conquest of Canaan under Joshua. Otherwise, Hebrews argues, David, the presumed author of the psalm, would not have spoken in his day of a possibility of entering God's "rest." That possibility is now defined with the evocative term Sabbath "rest" or "festivity" (v. 9), because it is a share in the condition of the primordial Sabbath. The exposition concludes with a summons to strive to participate in this heavenly salvation by avoiding the failure of the Exodus generation (v. 11).

4:12–13
A Rhapsody on God's Word

The homily had demonstrated the contemporary relevance of one segment of God's ancient speech. A rhetorical flourish highlights the point with vivid imagery. God's speech is compared to a sword that can pierce the innermost depths of the human person (v. 12). That piercing has a discerning or judgmental function and the note of judgment is reemphasized as the imagery shifts (v. 13). Before God's word nothing is hidden, but all is "naked and laid bare." This rare term probably evokes the image of a sacrificial victim whose neck is bared to the priest's knife. "The word of God" here means God himself, by metonymy—as when we say "the White House" meaning the president or "the Throne" meaning the queen. The flourish concludes on an ambiguous note, in a phrase meaning either "our discourse is about him" or "to him we have to render an account." Such ambiguity is typical of the author and the ominous note of the second sense prepares for some of his stern warnings.

4:14–16
Transitional Parenesis

The author draws implications from the preceding exposition, many themes of which find echoes here. At the same time he prepares for what follows. Particularly worthy of note are the two elements of the parenesis. The addressees are urged to "hold fast" to their confession, an element of which was, no doubt, the affirmation of "Jesus, the Son of God" (v. 14). They are also urged to "approach," a term probably drawn from the cultic sphere, to the "throne," where they can find mercy and help from a sympathetic high priest (vv. 15–16).

5:1–10
The Sympathetic High Priest

5:1–4, High-Priestly Qualifications. The development of the high-priestly Christology proceeds with a brief reflection on the qualifications for ordinary human high priests. They serve as mediators between God and humanity by offering sacrifices for sins (v. 1). They moderate their emotions toward those who sin in ignorance, since they themselves are beset with weakness (v. 2) and must offer sacrifices for themselves as well as the people (v. 3). Finally, they are "called by God," as was the first high priest, Aaron. These idealized qualifications are shaped by what the author knows of his true high priest and are designed to intimate both similarities and differences, many of which will become apparent only as the exposition develops.

5:5–10, Christ as High Priest. The author first (vv. 5–6) applies to Christ the notion of the divine vocation, noting that the one who called him Son, in the words of Ps. 2:7, also addressed to him Ps. 110:4, "You are a priest forever, according to the order of Melchizedek." Ps. 2:7, cited in v. 5, is a common early Christian exaltation text, as is the first verse of Psalm 110, cited in Heb. 1:13. Ps. 110:4, however, is not cited elsewhere in early Christian sources independent of Hebrews. Its use by this author is no doubt part of his creative reinterpretation of Christological traditions and is the foundation of the exposition in chap. 7.

The final verses of the pericope reemphasize the full humanity of the true high priest by virtue of which he can be a sympathetic heavenly intercessor. Verse 7 portrays Christ in anguished prayer, being heard by God because of his "reverent submission," or "godly fear." The portrait is vaguely reminiscent of Gethsemane, but cannot be a simple allusion to the Gospel accounts since there Christ's request that the "cup pass from him" is not granted. The portrait rather relies on qualities of pious prayer, as developed in the Psalms and in contemporary Jewish sources. Coupled with that portrait is a proverbial expression (v. 8), long familiar to the Greek tradition, that one learns from suffering. What Christ learns is obedience, not because he was disobedient, but because learning had a saving function. That function is vaguely intimated in the language of v. 9. Through his educative suffering, Christ was "perfected" as a cause of "eternal salvation." The central chapters will give these lapidary formulas more definite content. The pericope closes with the

novel language of the "priesthood according to the order of Melchizedek."

5:11–6:20
Preliminary Exhortation

The author dramatically delays the development of his novel Christological insights and turns to exhortation. He first challenges his addressees to follow his difficult discourse (5:11–6:3); then offers balanced words of warning and encouragement (6:4–12); and finally undergirds the encouragement with a reflection on the certainty of God's promises (6:13–19).

5:11–6:3
A Challenge to the Addressees

With provocative irony the author tells his addressees that they are not ready for his advanced teaching, but are sluggish in their hearing (5:11). To push his point he deploys commonplace Hellenistic educational images (vv. 12–14), used with their normal metaphorical referents as a new metaphor for Christian doctrine. The addressees are like babes who can only take the milk of rudimentary education, here symbolizing basic exegesis (5:12) and elementary catechesis (6:1–2). They are not yet adults who can digest the solid food of ethical doctrine (5:13); they have not yet engaged in the rigorous athletic exercise of ethical discernment (5:14). That stage of advanced learning symbolizes the author's own difficult discourse (5:11).

The ironic quality of the challenge is apparent in the summons (6:1) not to rehearse basic Christian teaching, elements of which are enumerated in vv. 1–2, but to move on to "perfection" or "maturity." The author promises such movement with God's assistance (v. 3).

6:4–12
Warning and Encouragement

6:4–6, The Warning. The first of Hebrews' three major monitory passages is its most stern. A series of common images for religious experience recalls the conversion to a new life (vv. 4–5). These images contrast with the action of apostasy, depicted as crucifying and mocking the Son of God (v. 6). The author declares the impossibility to "restore again to repentance" those who have had the experience of the spirit and then fallen away. Many unconvincing attempts have been made to ameliorate the severity of the warning. Like many other early Christians, the author is a rigorist who does not maintain the possibility of repentance for apostasy. He does not, however, accuse his addressees of the sin, but intimates that, if they do not progress toward maturity, they could be heading toward danger.

6:7–8, An Illustration. Between warning and encouragement comes a brief agricultural image contrasting a fruitful field blessed by God (v. 7) with a field of thorns and thistles destined to be burned (v. 8). The images relate, in inverse or chiastic order, to the hypothetical situation of apostates and the addressees. The fire to which the second field is destined is, at the level of the image, a farmer's clearing technique, but it conjures up ominous scenes of eschatological punishment.

6:9–12, Encouragement. The hypothetical character of the warning now becomes clear. The author believes that the positive parts of his illustration, which "belong to salvation," apply to his addressees (v. 9). He recalls, in a general way, their service and love (v. 10) and exhorts them to maintain their hope (v. 11). In chap. 10 he will give more details of their previous behavior. Now he simply notes that he encourages them so that they will not be what he had ironically called them in 5:11, "sluggish." Instead, they will display the faith and endurance of those who inherited the promises of old (v. 12).

6:13–20
God's Promise and Oath

The importance of hope and the certainty that grounds it has been a subordinate theme running through Hebrews. It achieves somewhat clearer profile in this brief scriptural meditation that supports the preceding word of encouragement. The argument relies on common Jewish traditions about the immutability of God's promises and the significance of his scriptural oaths. The whole pericope prepares for discussion in 7:20–25 of the oath that supports God's designation of a priest "according to the order of Melchizedek."

The reflection begins (vv. 13–14) with a reference to God's oath to Abraham in Gen. 22:16–17, then uses a human analogy to indicate the function of the oath, to provide extra certainty to human recipients of a promise (vv. 16–17). Encouraged by "two unchangeable things," presumably God's unspecified promise and his confirming oath, the addressees can hold on to hope (v. 18).

The whole parenetic pericope concludes, as it had begun in 5:11–14, with an oddly mixed metaphor. Hope is likened, as commonly in Greek literature, to an anchor (v. 19), but the anchor is not only an image of stability. It also "enters the inner shrine behind the curtain." The metaphor for hope is thus affected by the ultimate source on which hope is based, Jesus, the "forerunner." The abruptly introduced image of the curtain, which separates the inner and outer sanctuaries of the tabernacle, prepares for the imagery that will dominate chaps. 8–10. The author picks up

the thread of the Christological development with another allusion to Ps. 110:4.

7:1–10:25
The Exposition on Christ as High Priest

The central movement of Hebrews falls into two balanced segments. The first (7:1–28) explores the significance of Ps. 110:4 and ultimately reaffirms in a striking way the emphasis of Hebrews 1 on the heavenly quality of Christ. The second (8:1–10:19) both reaffirms the reality of the incarnation, as in chap. 2, and indicates how Christ's high-priestly act is, and must be, at once heavenly and earthly.

7:1–28
Christ and Melchizedek

Formally, the chapter constitutes an exegetical discussion of Ps. 110:4 based upon the only other OT text that mentions Melchizedek, Gen. 14:17–20. This exegesis, emphasizing the heavenly character of Christ's priesthood, may have been inspired by the abundant contemporary speculation on Melchizedek as a heavenly figure, examples of which are found in the Alexandrian Jewish writer Philo, at Qumran, and in Gnostic sources. Whatever the inspiration, Hebrews is quite restrained in its comments on Melchizedek, utilizing only what is necessary to make the Christological point.

7:1–3, Introduction. The exposition begins (vv. 1–2a) with a selective citation of Gen. 14:17–20, followed by well-known, but erroneous, etymological interpretations of the name Melchizedek (→ Melchizedek) and of the city over which he ruled (v. 2). From the pregnant silence of Scripture is deduced Melchizedek's status as "without father, without mother, without genealogy" (v. 3). The most important deduction in this rhetorically elaborate series is the eternal character of Melchizedek's priesthood. The basic point of the whole chapter is that in designating Christ as "high priest according to the order of Melchizedek," Scripture affirms that he is the high priest of an eternal, spiritual order.

7:4–10, Melchizedek and the Levites. Before making the main Christological point, the author adduces an admittedly (v. 9) playful exegetical argument to demonstrate the superiority of Melchizedek and, by implication, Christ to the levitical priests (→ Levites) of the OT. His argument is based on the fact that the law (Num. 18:21) stipulates that priests who are descendants of Levi are to take tithes from the rest of the people (v. 5). Genesis 14 indicates that Melchizedek, who has no levitical genealogy, took a tithe from their ancestor. Moreover, Melchizedek blessed Abraham (v. 6), indicating, by virtue of a general principle formulated for the occasion (v. 7), that Melchizedek is superior to Abraham. By implication, Melchizedek received a tithe from the tithers through their ancestor (vv. 9–10) and is superior to them.

7:11–19, The Implications of a New Priest. The argument becomes more serious as the author explores the implications of Ps. 110:4, taken as a promise of a new, nonlevitical priesthood. Some apologetic considerations may underlie the argument at this point. According to accepted Christian traditions, Jesus was a Judahite and therefore could not have been a priest because of the scriptural requirements of levitical descent (vv. 13–14). Ps. 110:4, with its reference to a nonlevitical priest, might have been used to justify Christ's priestly title, but Hebrews does not make that simple point. Rather, the introduction of a nonlevitical priest must mean that the whole law is altered (vv. 11–12). The "resemblance to Melchizedek" indicates what this alteration involves (v. 15). As the argument from silence in v. 3 had suggested, Christ's priesthood does not have to do with the realm of flesh, but with the "indestructible life" of the spirit (v. 16). The failure of the law, which necessitated its change, is indicated in the note that it did not bring "perfection" (vv. 11, 19). Chaps. 8–10 will indicate what this perfection is and how it relates to the perfection attributed to Christ.

7:20–25, The Confirming Oath. The significance of the discussion in 6:13–17 now becomes apparent. Ps. 110:4 contains, besides its reference to an eternal priesthood, a case of God swearing, which further distinguishes the priesthood of Christ from that of the Levites (vv. 20–21). The point is made only as a preparation for the characteristically abrupt introduction of a new theme, the "covenant" of which Jesus is the surety or guarantor (v. 22). Like the allusion to "perfection" in the previous pericope, this new theme will be developed in the following exposition. For the moment the author notes the difference between human priests who, by the law of fleshly succession, are continually replaced (v. 23) and the Son who lives forever as intercessor (vv. 24–25). The picture reaffirms a dimension of Christ's heavenly priesthood that had appeared previously (2:17–18) and that was probably part of the Christological tradition.

7:26–28, Conclusion. A rhapsodic finale, formally similar to the remarks on God's word (4:12–13), concludes this exposition. Verse 26 stresses the heavenly character of Christ. The remaining verses summarize the contrast that has developed through the chapter. The note that Christ does not need to sacrifice for himself as do ordinary high priests (v. 27) recalls the qualifications of high priests in 5:3. The contrast between the mortal priests whom the law appoints and

the Son "made perfect forever" appointed by the divine oath (v. 28) summarizes the major contrast of the previous pericope. These summary verses frame a reference, the first since the exordium, to Christ's principal priestly act, his once-for-all self-sacrifice for sin, the subject of the following exposition.

8:1–10:18
Christ's Sacrifice and the New Covenant

As noted in the Introduction, this section of Hebrews, much like 3:1–4:11, is in a homiletic form. At a superficial level, the exposition presents two biblical models for understanding Christ's death. One is the action of the high priest on the Day of Atonement. Christ's death is thus seen as the truly atoning sacrifice (→ Atonement). At the same time, it is seen to be a covenant-inaugurating sacrifice. At a more formal level, the exposition develops not through detailed exegesis, but by reflecting on certain key antitheses: earth/heaven, old/new, external/interior. The pericope will ultimately show how Christ's sacrificial death is the meeting point wherein these oppositions are mediated and overcome.

8:1–6, Introduction: The Heavenly Tabernacle. The main point of what has been said (v. 1) alludes once again to Ps. 110:1. Christ, seated at God's right hand, has been shown in the previous chapter to be a heavenly liturgist. He must, therefore, function in the "true" or heavenly temple (v. 2), and, like any high priest, he must have something to offer (v. 3). The distinction between earthly and heavenly sanctuaries is then highlighted. On earth, where Christ could not have been a priest (v. 4), the sacred ministers serve at what is only a "sketch and shadow" of the true temple (v. 5a). The dichotomy between a heavenly realm of truth and a "shadowy" earthly copy employs Platonic language, but the notion of a heavenly temple is a traditional Jewish one. It is based on ancient Near Eastern ideas that lie behind the scriptural verse Exod. 25:40, cited in Heb. 8:5b. In Jewish apocalypses, such as *1 Enoch* or *2 Esdras,* there are frequent depictions of a heavenly or eschatological temple. Among more hellenized Jews such as Philo, the heavenly temple becomes a more "spiritual" reality. Indications of a similar understanding will emerge as the exposition proceeds. The introduction concludes with a reference to the theme of the covenant, hinted at in 7:22. The superiority of Christ's liturgy is correlated with the superiority of the promises of the covenant of which he is mediator.

8:7–13, The Promised New Covenant. A lengthy quotation of Jer. 31:31–34, following the LXX fairly closely, performs two functions, much as the catena in chap. 1 both introduced a parenetic remark and served to develop the Christology. As the introductory and concluding verses (vv. 7, 13) suggest, the passage demonstrates that the old covenant was defective and in need of replacement. More important, it indicates what are the "better promises" (v. 6) on which the new covenant is based. The author shows what he takes these promises to be by the repeated citation of part of the passage at the conclusion of the exposition (10:16–17). The new covenant is an interior one of the heart and mind, and under it sins are effectively forgiven.

9:1–10, The Old, Earthly Cult. The exposition develops in five balanced segments. The first describes the "regulations for worship and an earthly sanctuary" of the old covenant (v. 1). These topics are treated in inverse order. A brief inventory of the outer (v. 2) and inner (vv. 3–5) portions of the tabernacle is based principally on the accounts in Exodus 25–26. Some details have been modified, such as placement of an incense altar in the inner portion of the tabernacle (v. 4), a notion probably based on extrabiblical traditions. Less easily explained is the reversal of the conventional names for the outer and inner portions of the tabernacle found in some manuscripts and probably the original reading. Whatever the reason for it, the author regularly calls the inner portion not the "Holy of Holies," but simply the "Holies" (in NRSV regularly translated "Holy Place").

The latter half of the pericope (vv. 6–10) focuses on the main "regulation for worship" on which the Christological portrait turns. As Leviticus 16 stipulates, entry into the sanctuary is reserved for the high priest alone, only once a year, on the Day of Atonement, when he sprinkles the "mercy seat" with the blood of sacrificial animals (vv. 6–7). This arrangement is immediately (v. 8) taken to be indicative of the imperfection of the old cult in which access to the sanctuary where God dwells is blocked. Hebrews will later (10:19–20) note that with the new covenant direct access to God is made possible. For the moment the author notes that the old cult is simply a "parable" or symbol for the present (v. 9a). In its imperfection it is, however, a negative image of the present. In itself, the old cult consists of actions that cannot cleanse conscience (v. 9b), cannot, that is, touch the realm of the spirit because they only affect external things and are thus regulations dealing with the flesh (v. 10). The same implicit spirit-flesh dichotomy deployed in the critique of the law in 7:16 resurfaces and unites, while it interprets, the antitheses of heaven/earth, internal/external. The worldly cult and its regulations remain until the time "to set things right" (v. 10), which is not some future event, but the inauguration of a new covenant by Christ.

9:11–14, The New, Heavenly Cult. The second segment of the exposition describes the heavenly liturgy. Verse 11 sets the scene in the "more perfect" tabernacle

"not of this creation." Fanciful allegorical interpretations of this verse, applying it to Christ's body—physical, glorified, sacramental, or ecclesiastical—are unwarranted. The author simply exploits the mythic picture of a heavenly temple to suggest that Christ's exaltation, his "passage through the heavens" (4:14), was the point at which his sacrifice was consummated, just as the sacrifice of the Day of Atonement is consummated when the high priest sprinkles the blood on the mercy seat. Christ's sacrifice, however, involved not animals' blood, but his own (v. 12). How such blood is sprinkled in heaven remains for the moment a mystery, but the author does indicate that he views all of this highly realistic imagery as a metaphor when he indicates that the sacrifice of Christ was effected "through the eternal spirit" (v. 14). Unlike the sacrifices of the old, earthly cult, which only cleanse the flesh (v. 13), the sacrifice of the new, heavenly cult operates on the spiritual level, affecting "conscience" or the consciousness of sin (v. 14).

9:15–22, The New Covenant. The third and central segment of the exposition apparently interrupts the picture of the "heavenly liturgy," but the interruption is a crucial move in the development of the exposition. The theme of a "promised eternal inheritance" that has run through the text (1:14; 4:1; 6:12; 8:6) is now united with the notion of the covenant (v. 15; → Covenant). The connection is made through a wordplay on the Greek term *diatheke,* which can mean both "will or testament" and "contract or covenant." The first sense clearly operates in vv. 16–17, which argue that the death of a testator is necessary for a *diatheke* to come into force. The facetious character of the argument becomes apparent as the author turns (v. 18) to the first *diatheke,* or covenant, which cannot be assimilated to the model of a will. The point of comparison is that the first covenant also involved a sacrifice and purificatory sprinkling of blood, as is demonstrated with allusions (vv. 19, 21) to Exodus 24 and citation (v. 20) of Exod. 24:8. The pericope thus demonstrates that real bloodshed is a requirement for the inauguration of a covenant and that the covenant is the vehicle for the attainment of the divine promises.

9:23–28, The New, Heavenly Cult. The fourth segment of the exposition, thematically corresponding to the second, reverts to the realm where Christ's sacrifice is seen to have been consummated, "heaven itself" (v. 24), a connection influenced by Platonic designations of the ideal world. What is supposed to transpire in this realm is thus the ideal counterpart of the purification of cultic paraphernalia just described (9:13, 19–22). This heavenly cleansing, like the "tabernacle not of this creation," has occasioned much scholarly speculation, but the author has already indicated the referent of the imagery. The spiritual realities cleansed by Christ's sacrifice are the consciences of believers.

At this point no interpretation of the imagery of heavenly cleansing is offered. Instead, Hebrews insists on the uniqueness of Christ's sacrifice, as opposed to the multiplicity of the old cultic sacrifices (vv. 25–26). The same antithesis of one and many that first appeared in the exordium reemerges and serves as another device to interpret the fundamental antitheses of the exposition.

The preference for unity over multiplicity is another Platonic theme, but the unity involved here is not a metaphysical one. Rather, it is the uniqueness of an action that takes place "at the end of the age" (v. 26) and that is but the first stage in an eschatological drama, the last act of which is yet to be played (v. 28). The glance at the eschaton (end) signals a shift in the basic antitheses to be effected in the next pericope. At the same time, it heralds an eschatological motif that will develop in the final chapters.

10:1–10, The New, Earthly-Heavenly Sacrifice. The fifth segment of the exposition formally balances the first, turning from heaven back to earth. Here the play on the antitheses in the exposition reaches its dramatic climax. The introductory verse gives a first indication of the decisive play. The law is said to be but a "shadow of the good things to come," i.e., with the inauguration of the new covenant. It is not the "true form" or "very image" of those realities. The reference to "shadow" recalls the description of the earthly sanctuary in 8:5, but it is here used within a temporal, not spatial, dichotomy. The term "image" is used not in its most obvious sense of a copy, but in a technical philosophical usage attested among contemporary Platonists, in the sense of the ideal form. The author of Hebrews, however, uses this Platonic term not of a metaphysical reality, but of a historical event. The next remarks (vv. 2–4) repeat the familiar criticism of the "shadow," or old cult, which could not cleanse conscience. The multiplicity of its activity attests to its impotence and signals the fact that it could only recall sins (v. 3). Here a commonplace of Jewish homiletics is turned into a critique. The grounds for the inefficacy of the cult are again located in the unworthy means by which it attempts atonement (v. 4).

The latter half of the pericope returns to the sacrifice of the new order. The argument hinges on a scriptural citation, Ps. 40:6–8, which, like the texts cited in Heb. 2:12–13, is taken to be a word of Christ. The introduction to the citation (v. 5) significantly situates the utterance at the point where Christ enters the cosmos. Hebrews has previously focused on the movement of Christ into the heavenly sanctuary and the realm of the spirit. Moreover, the cosmos, as the realm of the flesh, has previously been depicted as inimical to the realm of the spirit (9:1–10), where the true sacrifice takes place (9:11–14). The original psalm had read "ears you have hollowed out for me." Hebrews, following the LXX, reads (v. 5), instead, "a body you have prepared for

me." This is one of the two elements of the text on which the following interpretive comment focuses and the basis on which the "cosmos" is revalued. The second significant element appears at the end of the citation (v. 7) where the speaker says that he came, as the "scroll of the book" testifies, "to do your will, O God."

An interpretive comment sets up an opposition between the two modes of sacrifice mentioned in the psalm, the external "sacrifices and offerings and sin offerings and burnt offerings," i.e., the whole old cultic system, on the one hand (v. 8), and "doing God's will" (v. 9), on the other. The note that the speaker abrogates the former and establishes the latter indicates how the author understands Christ's sacrifice and the imagery that he has been using to describe it. That sacrifice is an act of conformity to the will of God, hence, internal and spiritual. At the same time it is bodily, hence, earthly. Because it is both at once, it is the sort of act that can fittingly inaugurate the new covenant promised in Jeremiah. All of this is summarized in a solemnly triumphant finale (v. 10). "We have been sanctified" and thereby receive the promise of the new covenant "by that will" of God to which Jesus Christ conformed himself in the "offering of his body," which is the reality that casts its shadow backward on the law and which is absolutely, "once for all," unique.

10:11–18, Concluding Flourish. As the earlier embedded homily concluded with a festive reflection on God's word (4:12–13), the central exposition concludes with a summary of the effects of Christ's sacrifice. The language of vv. 11–12 is familiar from the exposition and includes an allusion (vv. 12b–13) to Ps. 110:1, the first since 8:1. The reference to subjection of the enemies recalls the first citation of the text (1:13) and points again to the eschatological consummation of Christ's mission. But the most important inference to be drawn from the sacrifice relates to what has already been accomplished, the "perfection" of those who are being sanctified (v. 14). As the critique of the old cult in 10:1–2 indicated, "perfection," as applied to believers, refers to the cleansing of their conscience, the qualification that makes them fit to worship God in truth (9:14). The category thus functions rather like Paul's language of "justification." A second citation (vv. 16–17) of a portion of Jeremiah (Jer. 31:33–34) highlights the major themes of the exposition, an interior or spiritual covenant and effective forgiveness of sin. The concluding tag (v. 18) points once again to the abrogation of the old cultic order.

10:19–25
Transitional Parenesis

With language similar to the transitional parenesis of 4:14–16, the author begins to draw implications from his Christological exposition. His initial comment (vv. 19–21) restates the objective situation on which exhortation is based, that Christians have a "new and living way" through the curtain. That "curtain," an image from the tabernacle's design first met at 6:19, is here surprisingly equated with Christ's flesh. That paradoxical equation follows naturally from the revaluation of the cosmic and bodily spheres effected in 10:1–10. If flesh had been something barring access to God, Christ's flesh, offered on the cross, is the point at which access to God is made available. The following series of exhortations highlights the cardinal virtues of faith, hope, and love while making more specific recommendations to take baptism seriously (v. 22), to hold on to the confession (v. 23), and to persevere in fellowship (vv. 24–25), all in the eschatological perspective of the coming "Day."

10:26–12:13
Exhortation to Faith and Endurance

The next major movement of Hebrews is parenetic. Like the central expository section, it is introduced with a word of warning and encouragement (10:26–39). Then a lengthy encomium on faith (chap. 11) encourages the addressees to maintain that virtue. The list of exemplars of faith culminates in a portrait of Christ that also introduces an explicit call to endurance (12:1–13).

10:26–39
Preliminary Exhortation

10:26–31, A Renewed Warning. As in chap. 6, the author issues a stern warning against apostasy, grounded in the principle, enunciated in 10:18, that there remains no sacrifice for sin after the death of Christ. To make the point the author uses an *a fortiori* argument like that of 2:1–4. The capital punishment for abrogating the law of Moses, as stipulated in Deut. 17:6, provides the point of comparison with the situation of the addressees. How much more serious will be the situation of those who reject the new covenant (v. 29)? The warning concludes with scriptural verses and the author's own ominous epigrammatic remark (v. 31), all of which emphasize divine judgment.

10:32–39, New Encouragement. In Hebrews' parenetic program encouragement regularly follows and complements warning. Here encouragement consists of a recollection of past persecution successfully endured. The author mentions the direct personal indignities and deprivations that his addressees experienced, but calls special attention to the ways in which they offered mutual support in time of need (vv. 33–34). An important aim of the concluding parenetic chapters is to reinforce such a sense of community.

The recollection leads to an explicit call for "confi-

dence" (v. 35) based on "endurance" (v. 36) and "faith" (v. 39), the two virtues highlighted in what follows. Between the two is set a composite scriptural quotation. A phrase from Isa. 26:20 in the LXX, "in a very little while," suggests again the eschatological perspective within which the parenesis develops. The remark of Hab. 2:3–4, well known from Paul's discussion of faith (Rom. 1:17; Gal. 3:11), that the righteous will live by faith, directly introduces the discussion of that virtue.

11:1–40
An Encomium on Faith

This famous chapter, although incorporating features of other genres, is best described as an encomium on faith, much like the encomium on wisdom in Wisdom of Solomon 10. Like that text, it relies on examples drawn from the history of Israel. These examples also serve as models of faith and help to define it. Faith emerges as a both cognitive and affective quality, belief in certain fundamental truths about and fidelity to God. Faith, moreover, is seen to be involved in the two sorts of behavior recommended in the parenesis, steadfastness in the face of persecution and movement onward and outward to a heavenly goal.

11:1–7, Faith from Creation to Noah. The initial definition of faith (v. 1), formally paralleled in many philosophical texts, is condensed and evocative. Faith is the "assurance of things hoped for" in the sense that through it hopes are attained. The term for "assurance" or "reality" is the same one used in 1:3 and 3:14 and has the same objective connotations. Faith is also the "proof of things unseen," i.e., the quality by which humans are put in touch with the unseen realities of God and by which they attain things unseen in the present.

A series of examples of faith commences in v. 3, all displaying the rhetorical figure called anaphora, in which successive clauses begin with the same element, "by faith." The initial example (v. 3) highlights the creation story in Genesis, but focuses on the belief of the faithful in a divine creator inspired by that text. The next examples include the protomartyr Abel, the patriarch Enoch, the content of whose belief in divine providence is specified (v. 6), and Noah, by whose faithful obedience to God the human race was saved.

11:8–12, The Faith of Abraham and Sarah. Attention now focuses on the patriarchs, who, in anticipation of a divinely prepared "city," accepted the status of aliens even within the land promised to them (vv. 7–10). Their status mirrors the situation of the addressees, alienated from their society (10:32–33) and anticipating a new heavenly home (12:18; 13:14). Alongside Abraham stands Sarah, who believed God would be faithful to his promises and thus received the power to conceive. Abraham, who was "as good as dead," and his wife thus, through faith, achieved what seemed impossible (vv. 11–12).

11:13–16, A Reflection on the Patriarchs' Faith. The author interrupts the catalog to expand on the image of the patriarchs as "wandering people of God." What motivated their quest was the desire for a better, i.e., heavenly, homeland or divine "city," not simply a new earthly dwelling place. This reflection recalls the interpretation of the term "rest" from Psalm 95 in Hebrews 4 and anticipates the image of the heavenly Jerusalem in 12:18–24.

11:17–22, Faith from Abraham to Joseph. The historical catalog resumes with an allusion to the *aqedah* (Heb.), the "binding of Isaac" in Genesis 22, taken to be an example of belief in the resurrection (vv. 17–18), and then the blessings bestowed by Isaac and Jacob on their descendants. These acts, like Joseph's request to have his bones buried in Israel, all attest the hopeful expectation that is part of faith.

11:23–31, Faith from Moses to the Conquest. Both Moses' parents and Moses himself display fidelity to God in the face of royal opposition. Moses' faith leads him to accept persecution and, in a mysterious anticipation of chap. 12, the reproach of Christ (v. 26). Faith, founded in a vision of the unseen God (v. 27), also enabled Moses to depart from Egypt, as Abraham had departed from Haran. Similar salvific faith inspired his followers (vv. 29–31).

11:32–40, Later Examples of Faith. At this point Hebrews abandons the device of anaphora and conveys a sense of the abundance of examples of faith primarily by asyndeton, or the avoidance of conjunctions. The names of some judges as well as David and Samuel introduce a list of their typical accomplishments (vv. 32–35a). There follows a list of persecutions endured (vv. 35b–38). The encomium concludes with a note that these examples of faith did not attain the promise now available to the addressees.

12:1–13
Christ, Faith, and Endurance

Another little homily, combining the virtues mentioned at 10:36–39, completes this parenetic movement.

12:1–3, The Perfect Paradigm, Christ. The homily is introduced with a portrait of Christ the "athlete." The imagery is commonplace in Hellenistic and early Christian parenesis. Here the race that Christ and the addressees run in a stadium filled with the heroes of the past is a race of faith. Victory in the race is assured because Christ, the "pioneer [or inaugurator] and perfecter" of faith, has already run the course and won the

prize through his endurance of the cross. The author calls his addressees to follow the example and imitate through endurance the faith of Christ. The situation of the addressees is clearly in mind as the author portrays Christ enduring the "shame" of the cross in anticipation of future "joy." His addressees, surrounded by a culture that despised them, needed an eschatological vision to resist the ignominy they faced as aliens to the conventional system of honor and shame.

12:4–13, Suffering and Education. The call to endure is supported by a reflection on the proverbial theme of educative suffering mentioned earlier (5:8) in connection with Christ. The theme is now (vv. 5–6) developed through citation of Prov. 3:11–12 and an exposition of its theme of beneficial paternal discipline. This theme was an old response of the wisdom tradition to the problem of theodicy (defending the justice of God in the face of evil); here it is used for parenetic ends. The homily concludes (vv. 12–13), as it began, with athletic imagery and a call to brace for the race.

12:14–13:21
Life in View of the End

The final parenetic movement reinforces the eschatological perspectives of the text while emphasizing the implications to be drawn from Christ's sacrificial act.

12:14–29
Warning and Hope

12:14–17, A Final Warning. A shift from the athletic imagery of the homily appears in the call to pursue peace and sanctification (v. 14). This is followed by the last severe warning of the dangers of apostasy, consisting of a citation of Deut. 29:18 and an interpretation of that text's image of the "root of bitterness" in terms of the biblical character Esau, who lost his inheritance. The addressees should avoid making a similar mistake with their promised heavenly inheritance.

12:18–24, Earthly Sinai and Heavenly Zion. As earlier warnings had been followed by encouragement, the threat is balanced by a characterization of the addressees' situation in a set of contrasting images. A description (vv. 18–21) of the awesome theophany at Sinai inspired by Exodus 19 and appealing to Deut. 9:19 is juxtaposed with a picture of the "heavenly Jerusalem" (vv. 22–24). The basic image, foreshadowed in the references to the city in chap. 11, is derived from Jewish apocalyptic traditions, but it is given particularly joyous connotations. The reference to the divine judge (v. 23) is balanced by the mention of the mediator of a new covenant, whose atoning blood cries out in a better fashion than that of Abel (v. 24).

12:25–29, The End in View. Words of warning and hope are again intermingled. On the one hand, it is impossible to escape the heavenly judge who will shake the foundations of created reality (vv. 25–26a). The addressees, on the other hand, can take consolation in that they already have possession of something unshakable, a "kingdom" through which they can offer fitting service to God, who is, as Deut. 4:24 intimates, "a consuming fire."

13:1–21
Final Recommendations and Rhetorical Conclusion

The stylistic shift to specific recommendations has occasionally led to unnecessary theories that the chapter is a secondary addition. It appropriately concludes the text.

13:1–6, Loving Service. The author rapidly advocates rather common virtues of brotherly love, hospitality, charity to prisoners (recalling 10:34), chastity, simplicity, and reliance upon God, described in Ps. 118:6 (LXX) as the psalmist's "helper."

13:7–17, True Worship. Within the framework of appeals involving the community's leaders (vv. 7, 17) comes a description of what true Christian worship involves. It is founded on the eternal Christ (v. 8) and modeled on his sacrifice, which differs radically from the old cult (vv. 9–11). Christ died a shameful death "outside the city gate" to sanctify his people. The example of Christ's death "outside the city gate" (v. 12) highlights his shameful alienation, providing again a model for his followers to help them endure their marginalized and dishonorable status (10:32–33; 11:13–16). In that position they are summoned to engage in the appropriate activity, sacrifices of praise and good works (vv. 15–16). The rejection of formal cult in favor of prayerful service is a corollary of the unique character of Christ's sacrificial death (7:27; 9:28; 10:10) and the revaluation of the "world" or "cosmos" as the place where God's will is done (10:5–10).

13:18–21, Finale. Personal requests, a benediction, praying for the addressees to be strengthened, and a doxology bring the text proper to its end.

13:22–25
Epistolary Conclusion

The final verses with their personal greetings and gracious farewell were probably appended to the work when it was actually sent to its addressees. There is no reason to suspect that anyone but the unknown author penned them.

Bibliography

Attridge, H. W. *The Epistle to the Hebrews.* Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1989.

deSilva, D. A. *Despising Shame: Honor Discourse and Community Maintenance in the Epistle to the Hebrews.* Society of Biblical Literature Dissertation Series, 152. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press, 1995.

Ellingworth, P. *The Epistle to the Hebrews: A Commentary on the Greek Text.* Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans; Carlisle: Paternoster, 1993.

Guthrie, G. H. *The Structure of Hebrews: A Text-Linguistic Analysis.* Novum Testamentum Supplement, 73. Leiden: Brill, 1994.

Isaacs, M. E. *Sacred Space: An Approach to the Theology of the Epistle to Hebrews.* Journal for the Study of the New Testament Monographs, 73; Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1992.

Lane, W. L. *Hebrews.* 2 vols. Word Biblical Commentary, 47A, B. Dallas, TX: Word Books, 1991.

Lindars, B. *The Theology of the Letter to the Hebrews.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1991.

James

LUKE T. JOHNSON

INTRODUCTION

The Letter of James is moral exhortation in the form of a general letter, from whose contents we learn little about its intended readers. The greeting, "to the twelve tribes in the Diaspora" (1:1), could indicate a Jewish-Christian audience, but need not. Likewise, the practices condemned and the attitudes enjoined do not allow the depiction of a specific community or its problems. Neither are we certain whether the author is James the brother of the Lord or a pseudepigrapher, or whether the writing is among the earliest or latest in the NT collection.

The teaching of James is general rather than particular, traditional more than novel, moral rather than theological. The goal of the writing is not so much right thinking as right acting. The fundamental contrast is between verbal profession and action; when James contrasts "faith" and "works" (2:14), he sets empty belief in opposition to lived practice.

James's perspective is theocentric rather than Christocentric. Jesus' name occurs only twice (1:1; 2:1), and the messianic convictions concerning Jesus' death and resurrection are lacking. On the other hand, James knows and makes use of Jesus' sayings (cf. 1:6; 2:8; 5:12).

James's theocentric perspective supports his moral exhortations. His theological outlook is most clearly expressed in 3:13–4:10. He sees two measures for human behavior: the measure of God, who creates all things, and the measure of "the world," which resists God's claim on creation. James calls adherence to these measures "friendship." One can either be a "friend of the world" or a "friend of God" and act accordingly. James's specific interest is the "double-minded person" (1:8; 4:8), who wants to live by both measures at once, confessing commitment to God, but contradicting it in action. James exhorts his readers to action consonant with conviction.

James is remarkable for its positive appropriation of Torah, whose separate aspects it mediates to the messianic community (→ Torah). The short exhortations concerned with practical behavior resemble and incorporate elements of the wisdom tradition, reaching from Hellenistic moral philosophy to the biblical books of Proverbs and Ecclesiastes (→ Wisdom). James also contemporizes the voice of the prophets. His attack on oppression echoes the accents of Isaiah and Amos (5:1–6). James also affirms the law, calling it the "law of liberty" (2:12), which is summarized by the Decalogue and the "law of love" (Lev. 19:18; cf. 2:8–11). James elaborates this commandment in light of Lev. 19:11–19 and Jesus' words.

The literary structure of James is not obvious. The only epistolary element is the greeting. Chap. 1 consists entirely of short commands and aphorisms with little obvious structure. These are followed by a series of short essays employing the lively oral style of Hellenistic teaching called diatribe. The essays are in turn interspersed with other short commandments (cf. 4:11; 5:9, 12). Elaborate structural analyses are unconvincing, but neither is James simply a careless pastiche. The themes broached by way of aphorism in chap. 1 are elaborated in the essays, so that the opening exhortations serve as a prologue and table of contents.

James claims neither novelty nor depth. But no reader can mistake its lively voice or moral passion. Traditional teaching is given vibrancy in this exhortation to practical faith and active love.

COMMENTARY

1:2–27, Opening Exhortations. Without any real transition from the greeting, James launches a series of admonitions. Each takes the form of an imperative. Some of the commands are accompanied by explanatory statements ("for"), which provide the exhortation's warrant (e.g., 1:6, 11, 13, 20, 24). This part of James strongly resembles such collections as Proverbs, especially since the instructions represent reminders of already well-understood norms (1:3, 20).

As in other collections of traditional wisdom, the discrete sayings lack obvious thematic connections. Attempts at contextual analysis are therefore hazardous. Thus, although "testing" appears both in 1:2 and in 1:12–14, it is not clear that the term means the same thing in both places. In 1:2, it refers to external testing, as in persecution; in 1:14, it means internal "temptation." The real thematic links are to be found not between these aphorisms themselves, but between each of them and the later essays. The place to find a context for the "endurance of testing" in 1:2, e.g., is in 5:7–11.

Despite the disjointedness of the opening section, three of James's characteristic concerns emerge clearly. Each of them involves a contrast. The first contrast is between two measures, God and the world opposed to God. The outlook of the world is duplicitous and envious. In contrast, God gives with simplicity and without rebuke (1:5). God can be defined, in fact, as the giver of every good and perfect gift (1:17). Worldly desire conceives sin, and sin when it reaches term gives birth to death (1:15). In contrast, God gives genuine birth to humans by God's word of truth and makes them the first fruits of God's creatures (1:18). This "implanted word" is able, in turn, to save their souls, if they receive it in meekness (1:21).

The second contrast is between the attitudes and behavior consistent with each measure. To live by God's word of truth means putting aside anger in favor of meekness, since "anger does not accomplish God's righteousness" (1:20). It means regarding poverty and wealth in ways shocking to a world that uses them as the means of testing worth; before God, "the poor brother boasts in his exaltation, and the rich man in his humiliation" (1:9–10). It means being driven not by evil desires (1:14), but by the wisdom that comes from God in response to the prayer of faith (1:5–6). Most paradoxically, it means counting trials "all joy" (1:2)—an attitude available only to those whose Messiah had sanctified suffering and thereby transformed the norms for human worth.

The third and most characteristic contrast is between the sham religiosity of word or appearance and a devotion "pure and stainless before God," which is honest speech and care for the dispossessed (1:26). These are the attitudes and actions that keep one "unstained from the world" (1:27). For James, it is not the learning but the doing of wisdom that counts. His readers are to be "doers of the word and not hearers only" (1:22). Genuine blessedness comes from the "doing of a deed," which is the aim of all moral instruction (1:22–25). The double-minded person (1:8) who would profess without practicing is told emphatically to avoid self-deception (1:16). Unless religion involves effective action in the world, it is "useless" (1:26).

2:1–13, The Law of God's Kingdom. The first of James's essays extends to 2:26, but can be conveniently divided at 2:13. The literary conventions of the diatribe are used vigorously throughout the next three chapters. Note in this section the direct address to readers (2:1, 5), the vivid imaginary dialogue (2:3), and rhetorical questions (2:4, 5, 6, 7). James sketches a situation in which readers fail to live by their convictions (2:1–7). He then develops more fully the measure by which they ought to live (2:8–13).

Since James writes for a general audience, it is unlikely that he criticizes the practice of a particular community when he describes an assembly in which rich and poor are treated so differently. In fact, the precise nature of the assembly itself is unclear. The word "gathering" (Gk. *synagoge*, "synagogue") in 2:2 could refer to the Christian worship service. But James's subsequent argument suggests that this assembly is the occasion for community judicial decisions. Whatever the social setting, James condemns the blatant discrimination practiced within it: members of the assembly give precedence to the rich and slight the poor (2:3).

James's objection has two bases. First, a bias toward the rich contradicts the original experience of the members of the Christian community. In their lives it was the rich who oppressed them by dragging them into court and who scorned their religion (2:6–7). By so doing, the rich acted consistently by their measure of reality. But James's readers had been given another measure. God had chosen the poor in the world's estimation to be "rich with respect to faith, and heirs of the kingdom" (2:5). How could an assembly gathered under God's rule act in accord with the world's measure?

Their "respect for appearances," furthermore, has led them to betray their faith in Jesus Christ (2:1). James accuses them of being, as a result, judges with evil designs (2:4). His language deliberately evokes the ancient practice of community judgment in Israel (cf. Ruth 4:1–8); its constant principle was that decisions must be made "without partiality" (Deut. 1:17; Lev. 19:15; 1 Tim. 5:21). Judges were not to be swayed by appearances, but by the merits of a case. But if the rich are given special places in the assembly simply because of their lordly appearance, the community is corrupting its judgment. But how is it also betraying its faith in Jesus?

It betrays *faith* first of all, because the very basis for the community's existence is God's choice of the poor, so that they are "rich in faith." The community should have the same preference for the poor that God has shown. Their behavior betrays their loyalty to *Jesus* as well, since he had identified the love of neighbor as central to Torah: "You shall love your neighbor as yourself" (cf. Mark 12:30–31). James calls this the "law of the kingdom" into which God has called them (2:8).

James finds that Torah itself provides specific guidelines for the fulfillment of the law of love, first in the Decalogue (2:11; cf. Rom. 13:8–10), but also in the prescriptions of Leviticus. Thus, James sees in Lev. 19:15, immediately before the commandment to love the neighbor, a prohibition of partiality in judgment. This is the first of several times that James uses Lev. 19:11–19 to articulate the meaning of love for the neighbor (4:11; 5:4, 9, 12, 19). When he says, therefore, that one does well to fulfill "the whole law" (2:10) and to do so "according to scripture" (2:8), he is serious on both counts.

In 2:12–13, James gives a concise summary of his points and a transition to the next section: the law of love is one of "freedom" since it inhibits only harmful

activity and enables authentic human existence; life according to its measure does not oppress but liberates others—thus there can be no discrimination on the basis of power or possessions. Finally, this way of life is according to God's measure, which is one of mercy, not condemnation.

2:14–26, Living Faith and Love. James's characteristic emphasis on behavior consistent with conviction (cf. 1:22, 26) is now made explicit. For James, the contrast is between a faith that is merely verbal and one that shows its "life" in action.

The diatribal style is again heavily used in this section, as James employs a fictional dialogue with an imagined interlocutor (2:18–23). The dialogue is propelled by rhetorical questions (2:14, 19, 20, 21), an apostrophe (2:20), and even a pun: faith without works (Gk. *erga*) is empty (Gk. *arge*).

James's argument begins with an example drawn from life (2:14–17). His point is simple: words without actions are futile. A needy brother or sister (2:15) cannot be helped either by a blessing or a benevolent attitude (2:16), but only by the concrete actions that incarnate them. Deeds rather than speech carry conviction. The example is framed in 2:14 and 2:17 by its specific application: faith without deeds is "dead."

The last phrase of 2:17, "faith simply by itself," provides an important clue to James's understanding. In the ensuing dialogue, he pillories one who equates faith with "right belief" as though it were simply confession or an assent of the intellect, rather than essentially a response to God made up of loyalty, trust, endurance, and obedience. Thus his response to a person who "has faith" of the confessional sort is ironic: "you *do* well" (2:19). In fact, such belief is meaningless, since it is compatible with a life hostile to God. Even demons confess truly that "God is One"—and shudder (2:19). For James, authentic faith is simply faith enacted.

Now James draws from Torah the first of his four exemplars, each of whom models some aspect of active faith in God (cf. 5:11, 17). In Abraham's offering of his son Isaac (Gen. 22:9, 12), faith came to perfection in action (2:21). James does not say that deeds add something to a "saving" faith, but that Abraham's action was the intrinsic expression of faith itself, as essential to its life as the soul is to the body's (2:26). In a compressed formula, he asserts that "faith co-works the works," and it is faith itself that comes to maturity (2:22; cf. 1:4).

Like Paul in Gal. 3:6, James cites Gen. 15:6 to show that Abraham was declared righteous for his faith (2:23), but he adds his distinctive identification of those who live by God's measure: Abraham was called "friend of God" (cf. 4:4). And as James explicitly mentions the "sister" in need (2:15), so he adds the female example of Rahab, whose hospitality to Israel's spies enacted her implicit response of faith in Israel's God (2:25; cf. Josh. 2:9–13).

Some readers find James to be at odds with the Paul of Galatians. But Paul would surely agree that what matters is "faith being worked out by love" (Gal. 5:6). Their focuses, to be sure, are quite different. James is not debating the theological grounds for salvation. He advocates a "true religion," which he understands as effective action for others in the world.

A deeper resonance to the choice of Abraham and Rahab as examples is given by Jewish lore, where they stand as models for hospitality. James began this discussion with a call to just such "acts of mercy" (2:13) as feeding, clothing, and sheltering the needy (2:16). These fit his definition of religion as "visiting orphans and widows in their affliction" (1:27). Only this kind of faith keeps on "unstained from the world."

3:1–12, The Control of Speech. In the previous essay James dealt with "visiting orphans and widows"; now he can address "controlling the tongue" (cf. 1:26). The essay picks up from the aphorism of 1:19: "Let everyone be quick to hear but slow to speak," and provides, in turn, a transition to James's discussion of true wisdom (3:13), for the connection between wisdom and taciturnity was, in the ancient world, truly proverbial (cf. Prov. 17:28; Sir. 5:13).

If in the previous sections James appeared as a close reader of Torah and his exhortations as midrashic (→ Midrash), here he shows his Hellenistic side. The miniature essay on the tongue (3:3–8) touches on many of the standard elements in the discussion of human speech by Greek moralists.

Thus, it is commonplace to assert the difficulty of controlling ("bridling") the tongue with the analogy of bridling a horse (3:3). The analogy also suggests the power of the tongue, since to control it is to guide a great beast. Another standard comparison: the tongue is to the body as a rudder is to a ship. So also the tongue can "boast of great things, though small." The boast is not challenged; James recognizes the power of speech. A third comparison follows, this time to a small fire that enflames a whole forest (3:5). James develops the image by declaring, "the tongue is a fire" (3:6), and spiraling hyperbolically to its being a "world of evil" and "lit from hell and igniting the whole cycle of becoming" (3:6). Finally, he repeats the impossibility of truly controlling speech. In contrast to the domestication of all creation, human speech itself remains "an evil upheaval, a cup of deadly poison" (3:7–8).

James gives a special edge to the topic of speech by the way he frames it. In 3:1–2, he directs these remarks to those who would be *teachers* in the messianic community, cautioning them about that role, for "we shall receive a greater judgment" (3:1). If proper speech is difficult for anyone, it is a particular peril for those who make a profession of it. But if one does not fail in

speech, then one is truly perfect (3:2; cf. 1:4). At the least, James gives eloquent witness to speech as the primary symbol of human existence.

Even more strikingly, he concludes the essay with his usual contrast between God's measure and that of the world, stressing the impossibility of living by both at once. He condemns the contradiction inherent in blessing God (in prayer) and also cursing humans (3:9). Such behavior is contradictory because humans are made "according to the image of God" (3:9). To combine such forms of speech is like trying to get both sweet and brackish water from the same source or figs from an olive tree; it's not done (3:10–11). As he did in 2:1–26, James links fidelity to God with loyalty to humans. Just as people should be "single-minded" in their adherence to God's word, so should their speech be "single-minded" toward each other.

3:13–4:10, Friendship with God. The heart of James's writing and the key to its understanding are found in 3:13–4:10. This self-contained literary unit brings together a number of themes adumbrated in chap. 1. It also provides the explicit conceptual framework that shapes James's teaching as a whole.

We meet here again the double-minded person (1:8, 4:8) contrasted to the simple and generous God (1:5, 17; 4:6); the reversal worked by God so that the proud are lowered and the humble are raised (1:9–10; 4:6–10); and a wisdom from God opposed to a wisdom against God (1:5; 3:15). James puts before his readers the choice between two measures and demands of them a choice: will it be God or the world?

In form, 3:13–4:10 is a call to conversion. James sets up an indictment in 3:13–4:6, to which a plea for repentance responds in 4:7–10.

The charge to repent is stylistically simple, consisting of ten imperatives, three of them accompanied by emphatic reassurances (4:7, 8, 10). These verses deliberately echo the language of repentance found in the prophets (e.g., LXX Hos. 5:5; Ezek. 26:25; Amos 9:5). The indictment is literarily more complex, alternating rhetorical questions (3:13; 4:1, 2, 4, 5) and antithetical propositions (3:14–17; 4:2–3, 4, 6). Its climax is the apostrophe and rhetorical questions of 4:4–5.

Within this literary structure, James establishes thematic unity by using the conventional Hellenistic discussion of the vice of envy. Not only do terms for envy recur in 3:14, 16; 4:2; and climactically in 4:5, but many other expressions otherwise strangely combined make sense here because of their traditional association with that vice. Thus, envy is usually considered a misanthropic vice particularly given to bitterness and rivalry (3:14). It leads to social upheaval (3:16), wars (4:1), and above all murder (4:2). Why does envy have such associations? Because it is based on a perception of reality that equates having with being. Humans are therefore in competition for existence and worth. If one has more, then another must have less and be less. The logic of such competition leads to murder, the physical elimination of rivals.

James places this analysis of envy within an explicitly religious framework. The perception generating envy is a wisdom "from below" (lit., "earthly," 3:15), which is essentially opposed to the "wisdom from above" (3:15). Wisdom from below fittingly comes from the devil (3:15; 4:7), for in the biblical tradition the devil represents envy (cf. Wisd. of Sol. 2:24). He operates in the realm of the human mind (Gk. *psyche*, 3:15). The wisdom from above comes from God, and operates in the spirit *(pneuma)* God made to dwell in humans (4:5). In contrast to the envious devil, God gives without rebuke (1:5), indeed overflows in generosity: "He gives more gift" (4:6).

Each measure has its appropriate behavioral expression. The wisdom from below leads to "lying against the truth" (3:14) and "every foul deed" (3:16). It can lead, in fact, to the distortion of religion itself, in a self-deception (cf. 1:26) that tries to manipulate even God in prayer (4:3).

In contrast, the wisdom from God leads to "noble behavior" (3:13), to peaceful and merciful attitudes, and to "good fruits" (3:17). As envy leads to wars and murder (4:1–2), so the "fruit of righteousness is sown in peace by those who do peace" (3:18).

James concludes his indictment by asserting the absolute incompatibility of these ways of life. One cannot be at the same time a "friend of the world" and "a friend of God" (4:4). A "friend of the world" is one who sees things by the measure of earthly wisdom. These James calls "adulterers," using the Torah's term for those breaking covenant with God (cf. Hos. 3:1; Ezek. 16:38). They have established themselves as enemies of God (4:4).

James's specific target here, as throughout the Letter, is the double-minded person who wants to be "friends with everyone," to live by both measures at once. James's indictment demands of this person action consonant with knowledge: "Do you not *know*?" (4:4). He demands a "cleansing of the hands and purifying of the heart," which means becoming single-minded rather than double-minded, living by God's standard rather than the world's.

4:11–17, Against Arrogance. The final part of James again appears as relatively disjointed. A freestanding commandment with its warrant (4:11–12) is followed by two condemnatory paragraphs (4:13–17; 5:1–6), each beginning with "Come now" (4:13; 5:1). These attacks lead to positive instructions concerning external affliction (5:7–11) and internal edification (5:12–20).

Although it is not immediately evident how warnings against slander, heedlessness, and oppression should connect to James's call to conversion in 3:13–4:10, all three can be understood as manifesta-

tions of *arrogance*, the self-aggrandizing and hostile attitude that for James epitomizes the measure of the world opposed to God: "God resists the arrogant, but gives gifts to the humble" (4:6; cf. Prov. 3:34).

The prohibition of 4:11 once more addresses the use of the tongue, a persistent preoccupation of the Letter (cf. 1:19, 26; 2:12, 16–17; 3:2, 9–10). Here James condemns slander. The Greek expression can mean any loud or boisterous speech, but in Scripture the term is associated with secret and hostile speech against another (cf. Pss. 50:20; 101:5; Wisd. of Sol. 1:11) and appears as such in NT vice lists (cf. Rom. 1:30; 2 Cor. 12:20).

By repeating the word "brother" three times in a single verse (4:11), James emphasizes the disruption caused the community by such malevolent speech. But in 4:12, his language shifts slightly: "Who are you to judge your neighbor?" The change of terms leads us to James's distinctive understanding of this vice. First, slander is an offense against the law of the kingdom (2:8), which is love for the neighbor. As we have observed, James reads Lev. 19:18 in its original context, and in Lev. 19:16 appears the clear prohibition of slander against the neighbor. James also uncovers the spiritual implications of slander. To speak against another maliciously and in secret always involves a negative judgment of the other, indeed a condemnation, that arrogantly assumes a superiority over the other.

The slanderer also asserts a superiority to the law, which explicitly forbids slander, and in effect assumes the role of judge over the law. In so doing, the slanderer asserts superiority to the Lawgiver and thus has become "not a doer of the law but its judge" (4:11). James decisively crushes this pretension by reasserting faith's most fundamental conviction: there is only One Lawgiver and One Judge, and they are the same. James states the infinite distance between this Lord and human arrogance: only one of them is "able to give life and to destroy it."

That reminder provides the transition to the condemnation in 4:13–17. Arrogance is now expressed by the blithe and heedless confidence that human calculation can actually secure the future and that life consists in the "buying and getting" of business (4:13). James mocks such self-delusion. Humans cannot secure even their tomorrow, much less their "next year" (4:14). The lives of humans are literally not in their own control. If they lived by God's measure, they would recognize the utter contingency of their existence and projects (cf. 1:9–11), for only by the will of God can they live or do anything at all (4:15). Their presumption that God is irrelevant to their life and has no claim on their world is evil boasting, a pride based only in empty arrogance.

The final line of this section (4:17) seems oddly placed. What does the sin of omission have to do with slander and pretension? Not much that is obvious, but James uses it as a transition to the next form of arrogance, which sins by the omission of elementary social justice: the oppression practiced by the rich (5:1–6).

5:1–11, Persecution and Patience. This section falls neatly into two corresponding parts. In 5:1–6, James prophetically condemns the rich who oppress and murder innocent people. In 5:7–11, he exhorts "the brethren" to attitudes appropriate for the context of persecution. The paragraphs are linked thematically by the judgment of God (5:1, 3, 7–8), which appears as a threat to the oppressors and a comfort to the oppressed.

James does not condemn wealth as such, but the greed and injustice involved in creating it. The "measure of the world," which equates being and having, here finds perfect expression. The oppressors seek to become "more" by robbing workers of their fair wages (5:4). Such defrauding of the laborer is also explicitly condemned by Lev. 19:13, which James understands as an elaboration of the law of love. In 4:1–2 we saw that envy led to murder. The withholding of wages gradually kills, and James makes the accusation directly: "You have murdered the just man" (5:6).

Against the wisdom of the world, which legitimates the survival of the savage, James places the coming judgment of God. In his call to conversion, he had told the double-minded to "be miserable and cry out" as a sign of repentance (4:8–9). Here the same terms are used as signs of the punishment coming on the oppressors (5:1). The rich consider that they have "piled up treasure for the last days," by which James means a wealth of punishment. Their possessions will rot and rust as they will themselves (5:3). In a vivid twist of sacrificial imagery, James calls them calves fattened for the day of slaughter (5:5). Because they have abused laws to do injustice, God will judge them, for he keeps covenant even when humans do not: "the cries of the laborers have reached the ears of the Lord of hosts" (5:4).

James exhorts those who undergo oppression to patience. Instead of the usual term denoting "endurance," however (as in 1:3–4), he twice uses an expression typically used in the Bible of *judges:* they are to be "long-suffering." James means by this that they are not to anticipate the judgment of God, either by violently resisting their oppressors (5:6) or (in a response natural among the oppressed) turning on each other with bitterness and reproach (5:9; cf. Lev. 19:18a).

Instead, they are to "fix their hearts" on God, remaining faithful to the one who called them (5:8). They can in fact do this because the judgment of God is both certain and soon: "The judge is standing at the gates" (5:9). James's language here suggests that he means specifically the return of Jesus as judge (cf. 1 Thess. 3:13; 1 Cor. 15:23; Matt. 24:3).

As James proposed Abraham and Rahab as examples of faith active in deeds, so he presents Job as the paradigm of faith enduring affliction. Job repre-

sents "the prophets" who both suffered and showed long-suffering. James clearly implies that the "merciful and compassionate" God rewards such endurance: "You have seen the purpose of the Lord" (5:11).

5:12–20, Life in the Community. The Letter concludes with a number of separate exhortations whose organizing principle is life together in the church, with a specific focus on the sort of speech that should obtain in the messianic community. James thereby provides the positive ideal of speech, which he regards as essential to authentic religion (1:26).

He insists in the first place on plain speech without the taking of oaths (5:12). Here is one of the clearest instances of a commandment deriving from the sayings of Jesus (cf. Matt. 5:33–37) as well as the Torah (cf. Lev. 19:12). The phrase "lest you fall under judgment" indicates as well that such speaking is in fulfillment of the law of liberty (cf. also 2:12–13; 4:11; 5:9) and also connects this command to the discussion of the Lord's judgment in 5:7–11.

A paean to prayer in every circumstance, joyful or sorrowful, is found in 5:13–18. James's readers are thereby reminded that their lives are bound by more than mutual affection, above all by their shared relationship with God. The community is therefore to respond to threats of sickness or sin by gathering in prayer.

When someone is physically ill, the elders of the church come together in prayer for the sick person. When James adds, "The prayer of faith will save the sick person and the Lord will raise him up" (5:15), his language almost certainly recalls the healing stories of the synoptic tradition (cf., e.g., Mark 2:9; 3:3; 5:41). The community is threatened even more powerfully by the sins of its members. The confessing of sins, therefore, accompanied by prayers for each other, not only restores the deviant individual to spiritual health, but also heals the community as such (5:16). To show the power of such prayer, James cites the last of his exemplars from the Torah. The prophet Elijah, "though only a human being like us," accomplished wonders by the "prayer of faith" (5:17–18; see 1 Kings 17:1; 18:42–45).

James's final exhortation (5:20) is not accidentally chosen. The community that lives by the word of truth (1:18) and has received with meekness the implanted word of God (1:21) must work together against individual and communal self-deception and deviation (5:19; cf. 1:13, 16, 23, 26; 2:20). Mutual correction and exhortation are therefore expressions of love for the neighbor (cf. Lev. 19:17). At the end, James exhorts all his readers to do for each other what he has been trying to do for them.

Bibliography

Dibelius, M. *James: A Commentary on the Epistle of James.* Revised by H. Greeven. Edited by H. Koester. Translated by M. Williams. Hermeneia. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1976.

Johnson, L. T. *The Letter of James.* Anchor Bible, 37a. New York: Doubleday, 1995.

Laws, S. *A Commentary on the Epistle of James.* Harper's New Testament Commentaries. San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1980.

Wall, R. W. *Community of the Wise: The Letter of James.* New Testament in Context. Valley Forge, PA: Trinity, 1997.

1 Peter

PAUL J. ACHTEMEIER

INTRODUCTION

1 Peter is addressed to Christians living in the northern half of the peninsula of Asia Minor (modern Turkey). Its language reveals that its author was an educated person, acquainted with the theological terminology reflected in Paul's Letters, who knew the situation in Asia Minor in the last years of the first century A.D., some years after the traditional date for Peter's martyrdom in A.D. 64. For that reason, many scholars question its authorship by the disciple Peter. In addition, the names Silvanus (5:12; → Silvanus) and Mark (5:13; → Mark) are more closely associated in the NT with Paul (Mark: Philem. 24; 2 Tim. 4:11; Col. 4:10; Acts 12:25; 15:37–39; Silvanus: 2 Cor. 1:19; 1 Thess. 1:1; 2 Thess. 1:1) than with Peter, as is the area to which the Letter is addressed. In the only first-person reference by the author to himself, the term used is "elder" (5:1), a term not associated with Peter, and the additional reference to himself as "a witness of the sufferings of Christ" cannot refer to a historical situation, since Peter was not present at the crucifixion of Jesus, according to the unanimous tradition in the Gospels. Nor can the reference to Silvanus in 5:12 as one through whom the Letter was written indicate a letter dictated to Silvanus by Peter, since the Greek phrase "by someone" refers to the person who delivered the letter, as in Acts 15:23, not the one who wrote it; reference to such a scribe takes a different form, as in Rom. 16:22. The reference to Mark as "my son" in 5:13 does not refer to physical relationship any more than does the reference to Silvanus as "faithful brother" (5:12). "The elect one in Babylon" (5:13; NRSV: "Your sister church in Babylon, chosen together with you") refers not to Peter's wife, but to the church from which the letter is being sent (the word for "church" in Greek is feminine in gender). None of these details therefore refers to the historical Peter's actual family situation.

The reference to Babylon is probably a cryptic name for Rome (see Rev. 18; → Rome), continuing the metaphor of Christians as the chosen people now living as exiles in the world, as did the Jews when they were exiled to Babylon (see 1 Pet. 1:1; 2:11). Historic Babylon at this time was only a small, insignificant village; there is no indication that the historical Peter (→ Peter) ever visited it.

References to a situation of suffering (e.g., 1:6; 2:20; 3:14; 4:1, 12–13; 5:9) need not assume an official, empire-wide Roman persecution of Christians (→ Persecution). The fact that Christians no longer participated in the many religious festivals celebrated in the Hellenistic world (see 4:4) is enough to account for the sporadic outbreaks of persecution suffered by followers of Christ that are reflected in this Letter. The fact that the readers' identification as Christians was enough to provoke suffering (4:16) indicates a time late in the first century A.D., by which time Roman authorities had discovered that Christians were not, as they had earlier assumed, a sect within Judaism.

The purpose of the Letter is to comfort Christians who, because of their new situation, are no longer acceptable to their cultural world. A number of metaphors are used to portray that situation: they are like exiles or aliens (1:1; 2:11), like slaves (2:18–25) or wives (3:1–6), who in that culture had few legal rights. Again, they are like newborn infants (2:2) who through baptism (1:2) have a new hope and a new inheritance (1:4); they are like priests in a new sanctuary (2:4–8), like stones in a new building (2:5), like a new people chosen by God (2:10). They are like workers setting about a task (1:13), like soldiers armed for conflict (4:1). In a variety of ways, therefore, the author seeks to encourage readers who, because of their new situation as believers, can no longer participate in their culture as they once did (4:3) and who must now suffer the same rejection Christ did (2:21) and for many of the same reasons (3:17–18; 4:1). Yet that new situation is of such surpassing value that the future recompense is worth the present, temporary, discomfort (1:6; 4:7–8, 13–14; 5:10).

The dominant motif of 1 Peter is therefore the contrast between what the readers had once been and what they have now become because of their obedience to Christ. It is the author's message that the new situation is worth any suffering it may require.

In summary, 1 Peter is a general letter, probably written from Rome around the end of the first century, by follower(s) of the apostle Peter, who wished to convey to besieged gentile Christians in Asia Minor the encouragement and comfort contained in the gospel Peter preached during his years as a missionary to the Jews (Gal. 2:7–8). Couched in traditional theological terms familiar to its readers, the Letter sought to add

the authority of the apostle Peter to the faith of those who lived in a traditionally Pauline missionary area.

COMMENTARY

1:1–2:10
A New Person in Christ and How to React

1:1–2
Salutation

This is the nuts and bolts of the Letter: from whom, to whom, and why. The form is common to the Hellenistic world: *A* to *B*, greetings, followed by a wish or a prayer for prosperity or good health. Typically for NT Letters—especially Paul's—this format is adapted to Christian use (→ Salutations). In a pun on the normal word for "greetings" (Gk. *chairein*), the author substitutes the word for "grace" (Gk. *charis*), and to it is added the word "peace" (Heb. *shalom*), rich in its connotations of order and wholeness. Those to whom the Letter is written are also addressed in analogy to OT terms: "exiles of the Dispersion" recalls the events that scattered Jews over the face of the inhabited Western world, forcing them to live in cultures alien to their religion (→ Diaspora; Exile). This use is clearly analogical, since those addressed are Gentiles, as the rest of the Letter makes clear. Yet their fate is not due to historical accident. They are what they are by the direct purpose of God: set aside by his Spirit to follow his Son and to be baptized into him. The similarity to Matt. 28:19—make disciples (here: "obey"); baptize (here: "sprinkled with his blood") in the name of the Trinity (here: "Father," "Spirit," "Jesus Christ")—shows the extent to which this author relies on familiar Christian tradition.

Those addressed lived in the northern half of Asia Minor; two of the "provinces" were also visited by Paul (Galatia, Asia). The names do not conform entirely to Roman provincial boundaries; by this time Pontus and Bithynia had become one province. The area intended is clear, however, as is the purpose: to address people of the northern half of Asia Minor who, by God's will, had become obedient to Jesus Christ. Given their situation, they would surely need God's grace and peace!

1:3–12
The Christian's New Situation

The author begins the body of the Letter with a summary of the points to be made in the remainder of the discussion. Hence this passage serves as an introduction to the entire Letter.

1:3–9, Newness in Christ. Newness in Christ describes the readers' situation, and the author now turns to address that point. The metaphors pile one upon another—their situation is so new only analogy can describe it. Their future is one so new for human beings that only a second birth can be compared to it, with its new life and its new inheritance (vv. 3–4). Their future is so precious only gold can be compared to it, though like gold they will be tested by fire (vv. 6–7). Their reaction to Christ is so solid and joyful that only the importance of the outcome of history itself can begin to do it justice (vv. 5, 8–9). Trusting in someone they have not seen; rejoicing in a future that contains fiery testing; loving someone who has placed them before an unknown future, helpless as babes—is that not irrational, even foolish? No, because such actions are based on Christ's victory over death (v. 3b) and the promise that God will guard and uphold them in that new life (v. 5) until they reach the promised salvation (v. 9). Here is the paradox of Christian existence: joy in the face of suffering; assurance of deliverance in the midst of persecution; complete reliance not on what is visible, but on the unseen God. The rest of the Letter simply expounds those basic insights.

1:10–12, Long Ago Foretold. That the readers are not subject to the whims of fate or the accidental forces of history is clear from the fact that what is now happening was foretold long ago, thus demonstrating that God remains in control of events. But more, the time in which the readers live is the climax of history. OT prophets inquired about it, and even angels longed to catch a glimpse of it. That prophets could foresee the future was due to the presence with them of the Christ who has now been revealed (v. 11). Small wonder that those early Christians had little trouble finding a witness to Christ in the Hebrew Scriptures. The very spirit of Christ had been at work in those who wrote them!

1:13–2:3
How to React

The gifts of God are never without corresponding responsibility; that is now the theme to which the author turns.

1:13–16, To New Life. Roll up the sleeves of your mind! No time now to sit. The task is clear: conform your life, once lived totally apart from God (v. 14), to the new situation in which you find yourself (v. 15). One must now be set aside—the meaning of "holy"—for God's purposes. One is to pattern one's behavior according to God's priorities (v. 16).

1:17–21, To Old Life. If one is to respond appropriately to the new life, one can do it only by abandoning the

old one. Again, the metaphors tumble over one another. Like exiles whose own values are constantly threatened by the culture in which they are forced to live, Christians must hold fast to God's priorities (v. 17; see 1:1; 2:11; 4:3–4). Like captives freed because their ransom has been paid, Christians are free from the shackles that bound them to their old and futile ways (1:18; see 4:2, 6). Like people for whom a sacrifice has been made to God, and a most precious sacrifice—his own son—Christians who now know the goal of history (1:20) look to their own future with a confidence inspired by God's son risen from the dead (vv. 19, 21; see 1:3).

1:22–2:3, To the Christian Community. New times demand new companions who share in the new situation. So with Christians. New creatures born of God's own creative word (see Gen. 1:1; John 1:1), Christians are to cling to one another as to members of their own family (v. 22). That is what the church is meant to be. That fellowship alone abides, though all else fails (vv. 24–25).

The author returns to the first metaphor: newborn babes (2:2; see 1:3). Abandoning the evil and futile practices of their former lives (2:1), Christians are now to seek, indeed yearn for, that living and abiding word of God that conveys his love and his kindness in the same way that babies yearn for mother's milk. That nourishment, that word, is what sustains the Christians in their new life; it alone sustains them, and it is all they need.

2:4–10
A New People, Strange to Others

Typically for the author, themes announced in the opening verses now receive further exposition. Both the newness (see 1:3; 2:2) and the resulting strangeness of Christ's new people (see 1:1, 17) are taken up again in these verses, and additional insights are given as the first major portion of the Letter draws to a close.

What was discussed in 2:1–3 under the metaphor of new birth is now considered under the metaphors of a new building (vv. 4–8) and a new people (vv. 9–10).

The whole of the author's discourse on a new people is woven from threads taken from the OT; Christ's spirit was already present with the writers of the OT, informing them about the future (see 1:10–11).

The theme of the verses is given in 2:4: Christ, though precious to God, is also rejected by some human beings. Christ is the living stone because he is risen from the dead; he is the cornerstone (see v. 6) for those who build their lives on trust in him and in that way also share his risen life (v. 5a). The community is not passive, however, as a building is; its members are to be active in their Christian life, serving God as did the priests of old (v. 5b).

The enigma of the rejection of God's own cornerstone is considered in vv. 7–9. The author is no ethereal optimist, giving sugarcoated palliatives and refusing to look facts in the face. People do reject Christ—his crucifixion alone demonstrates that fact—but that rejection does not diminish Christ; it diminishes those who reject him. Even the OT knew that would happen, as the next two quotations demonstrate. The stumbling, the rejection occurs because people do not accept God's creative word incarnate in Christ (cf. 1:2, where accepting Christ is identified as obedience). Yet just as obedience occurred in accordance with God's will, so does the disobedience (2:8b). One should not make too much of that statement, as though every individual's fate were sealed from the beginning. Rather, the statement grows out of the question whether those who oppose God can also thwart his gracious plan for the redemption of sinful humanity. Such is not the case, and the import of this phrase is that nothing occurs that is beyond the power and purview of God. God remains in control of the world, and even rejection of God's Son cannot stay his primary purpose of salvation. The same problem is raised in Rom. 9:19–26 and is answered there and in 11:25–26: God's final goal is salvation for human beings. The presence in Rom. 9:33, and here in v. 6, of a quotation from Isa. 28:16 shows both authors are pursuing the same line of thought. The question apparently was a common one for early Christians. The emphasis in this passage is not on those who disobey, however. Rather, it is on those who obey, as vv. 9–10 makes clear. Here again, the author takes over a whole collection of phrases used to describe Israel as God's chosen people and applies them to Christians whose fellowship now comprises both Jews and Gentiles. The emphasis is again on the contrast between then and now and, hence, on the newness of the Christians' present situation.

2:11–4:11
Appropriate Conduct for a New People in Christ

2:11–3:7
How to React to the World

So new is the Christians' situation that they must learn a whole new set of reactions to the world with which they had once been so familiar. Those reactions are introduced (vv. 11–12) and discussed by means of three examples: the conduct of citizens, of slaves, and of wives and husbands. The discussion is then broadened to include reacting within the whole Christian fellowship, a reaction based on the fate of Christ, a fate that creates a comparably new fate for Christians.

2:11–12, Introduction. Once more, the metaphor of exiles and aliens occurs (see 1:1, 17), describing the relationship of Christians to their own culture: they are now strangers in the midst of what once was familiar. Viewed as evildoers, Christians must by their good conduct give the lie to such accusations.

2:13–17, As Good Citizens. To be a good citizen in the Roman Empire meant to obey its laws and the edicts of its rulers (see Rom. 13:1–7). Being good Christians means to live as decent citizens do. The need for Christians to abstain from unacceptable cultural practices (see 4:3) will excite enough criticism; no need to make it worse with acts unbecoming decent folk. Christians must live in such a way that accusations against them are shown to be foolish chatter based on ignorance.

2:18–25, As Good Slaves. The same point is made using slaves as the example. Slaves, like Christians, undergo punishment; if it is undeserved and quietly borne, it has God's approval, but only then. Evil slaves, like evil Christians, only get what they deserve when they are punished. The pattern from which that kind of insight is derived is Jesus himself. His conduct during his Passion shows how Christians are to react in a similar situation of hostility. Once astray, they are now under the Shepherd's care and must act accordingly (v. 25).

3:1–7, As Good Wives and Husbands. The point is made again, now using wives as an example. Though legally subject to others (first father, then husband), good wives nevertheless even in such a situation lead exemplary lives. The good wife pays attention not to outward show but to inward virtue; similarly, Christians are to pay attention not to outward show but to their inward faith, so that as true children of Sarah they do what is right and do not let others terrify them into doing what is wrong (v. 6). The good husband shows tender concern for his wife; similarly, Christians are to show concern for one another so that God will listen to their petitions to him (v. 7). In this way, three classes of people (slaves, wives, husbands) among the many to be found within the Christian community (also masters, children, rich, and poor, to name a few) serve not only as the objects of ethical advice in their own right, but also as examples of the way all Christians are to act within the potentially hostile culture that surrounds them.

3:8–12
How to React in the Christian Fellowship

Typically for our author, the conclusion of the previous passage (v. 7) introduces the next. In sentiments reminiscent of Paul (see Rom. 12:9–21), Christians are advised how they are to treat one another. Here the example is the Christian fellowship itself. All of the points implied in the three examples (citizen, slave, wife and husband) are here made explicit in relation to the conduct of Christians toward one another. The vocation of the Christian is precisely to act in the ways outlined in earlier passages; that is the way to find favor with God (v. 9). It will occasion no surprise that the author finds confirmation from the OT, this time from Ps. 34:12–16: the spirit of Christ present to those authors (see 1:10–12) led them to write things that are as valid now regarding Christ as they were then regarding Israel.

3:13–22
Christ's Fate Has Ultimate Importance

The universality of Christ's importance is now illustrated by the fact that that importance reaches even to the supernatural realm, where demonic forces standing behind human rebellion are also overcome by Christ's crucifixion, resurrection, and exaltation.

3:13–17, Christ's Earthly Fate. Like a musician creating a symphony, the author resumes themes enunciated earlier (see 1:6; 2:12, 15, 19–20; 3:9) and continues to develop them. What happened to Christ is here presumed, rather than made explicit, and the implications of Christ's life for the Christian's life are then enunciated.

The bold affirmation that none will harm those zealous for what is right (v. 13) must immediately be modified in the light of reality. In fact, many—including Christ!—who are zealous for what is right do suffer (v. 14), yet in spite of that one is not to fear. Christ's lordship is all-important, and not even suffering is to deter the Christian from confessing it (v. 15a). One must always be ready to let others know why one does what one does in light of Christ's lordship (v. 15b), but it must never be done arrogantly or with condescension. Most important of all, Christians must never give others a justifiable reason to accuse them of evil. If Christians are innocent of the evil with which they are charged, that fact will come to light, and then those who think following Christ leads to evil will, to their shame, discover their error (v. 16). If suffering is inevitable, however, let it be wrongly afflicted despite one's good behavior, rather than rightly inflicted because of one's wrong behavior (v. 17).

Beneath the surface of this discussion lies the realization that human culture is so irreversibly opposed to God that it can only make a false judgment about the acts of those who seek to obey God by following Christ. That point will become explicit in 4:1–4, but it already plays its role in this discussion of the suffering inflicted on faithful Christians.

3:18–22, Christ's Supernatural Task. The reason for preferring unjust to just suffering lies in the fate of Christ; v. 18 makes that explicit. Yet Christ's death had significance reaching beyond the human realm; it had significance as well for those supernatural spirits opposed to God. Drawing on traditions connected to the OT figure Enoch (→ Enoch), the author tells how Christ, like Enoch, announced doom to the demonic powers that had opposed God. That victory, outlined in the demonic expulsions performed by the earthly Jesus, is now announced in all its finality by the risen Christ. Part of the Enochic tradition held that those of Noah's generation were the most evil people who ever lived; after all, they caused God to flood the earth. That flood delivered Noah and his companions in the ark from a sin-corrupted world into a renewed and cleansed creation by means of the waters of the Flood (v. 20). Similarly, Christians are delivered by the water of baptism from a sin-corrupted existence to a renewed and cleansed life in Christ (v. 21). That has been the author's point from the beginning (see 1:3–4). Baptismal water therefore symbolizes not a washing of bodily dirt, but a spiritual cleansing through the power of Christ's victory over death (see Rom. 6:1–11 for a similar view of the meaning of baptism). It is to that victorious Christ that baptism links us, to that Christ who now rules over all creation by the authority of God himself. No wonder the author thinks temporary suffering is a small price to pay for so great a privilege.

4:1–11
A New Life Now and a New Time Coming

This passage, with its continuing discussion of the significance of Christ's sacrificial death, resumes the thought of 3:18. We find here the clearest statement in the Letter about the current situation of the readers in relation to their cultural environment. The verses also offer hope for a time when that painful relationship will end.

4:1–6, A New Life Now. What the new life Christians enjoy by reason of baptism into Christ means for their life among their former friends and within their culture is made clear in these verses. Where once Christians participated in the general activities of their surrounding culture (v. 3), they now no longer do so. They are, as Christians, like strangers in a strange land, in which they must live as cultural nonconformists in a time highly suspicious of any nonconformity. That is the situation that the metaphors of "exiles" and "aliens" are intended to illumine, just as are the metaphors of "slaves" and "wives." We are not to understand that the Christians were actually exiles or aliens in Asia Minor, any more than they were all actually slaves or women. The point is simply that because the Christians' new values did not permit them to participate in the social and religious customs of their culture as they once had, they would now have no more legal status or protection than that enjoyed by resident aliens or people exiled from their native lands (a common enough fate in the Roman world). For that reason they would also be hated, and that hatred would occasionally express itself in sporadic persecution (1:6 reflects the potential for persecutions to break out at any time; 4:12 reflects the actuality of persecutions that have broken out). But such persecutions were occasional and local and were based on cultural hostility rather than on some official, empire-wide persecution of all Christians everywhere. Because such a Christian attitude of nonconformity was made necessary by the fate of Christ himself, such suffering meant deliverance from a life of enmity to God (sin) and hence was worth any price (vv. 1–2).

Suffering was, therefore, not a regrettable accident, but a virtual necessity; until society itself was transformed, Christians could expect the same hostility to be directed against them that was directed against Christ. Yet the society that caused such suffering would also have to give account of itself before God for its rejection of the good news about Christ (v. 5), as will all, both living and dead, who have heard that good news (v. 6).

4:7–11, A New Time Coming. That time of accounting, and of the transforming of society, was not far off; of that the author of 1 Peter was convinced (v. 7). Yet incredibly—and here is the key to why suffering was worth the cost—that new time coming could already be enjoyed now, in the Christian fellowship. The way Christians now acted and were to act toward one another was simply a foreshadowing of that time when all of society would be transformed by the visible rule of God. Mutual love (v. 8), ungrudging hospitality (v. 9), activity carried on for the benefit of others, as befits God's grace (vv. 10–11a)—that and more would be the order of the day in that new, transformed society. It was just that grace that Christ had revealed, and hence, in the end, all that was done would glorify that Christ and the God who sent him (v. 11b).

4:12–5:14
Appropriate Behavior in the Hostile World and in the Christian Community

Despite the fact that demonic forces have heard their doom and that Christ now reigns supreme (3:18–22), giving Christians a taste already of their future glory (4:1–11), the final battle against evil has not yet been won. As a result, Christians must continue to live in a world dominated by forces opposed to God. Yet the suffering thus made inevitable will end, and in that confidence Christians can continue to live as God wants, both outside of and within the Christian fel-

lowship, because God remains in control of the world. Ultimately, therefore, Christians have reason for joy rather than despair.

4:12–19
How to React in the World

The very different lives Christians live, not conformed to the world but transformed by Christ (see Rom. 12:2), inevitably provoke hostility and sporadic outbreaks of persecution against them. Yet that reaction of the world should not occasion surprise (v. 12), but rather rejoicing (v. 13)! Such suffering is part of the redemptive suffering of Christ; to be reproached for following him is to share in the grace his suffering occasioned (vv. 14, 16). But again the familiar warning: don't think just because you are a Christian, any suffering you must endure automatically displays such grace. If you suffer for evil acts, such suffering has nothing to do with Christ (v. 15; see 2:16, 20; 3:17).

There is another reason why suffering can be a source of rejoicing, however, and that is, the author is convinced, that such suffering is the beginning of the final judgment, a judgment that will begin, just as did salvation, with the household of God (v. 17). Thus, the apparent victory of non-Christians over the Christian fellowship should not cause those "victors" to rejoice, but to reflect: if those who followed God's will are subject to such suffering, what will be the fate of those who did not follow his will (vv. 17–18)?

The result: those who suffer as Christians are not to succumb to the temptation to strike back or engage in compensatory evil. Rather, as did Christ, they are to entrust their fate to their creator (see 2:23), who will be faithful to his promise of redemption given in Christ (v. 19).

5:1–6
How Church Leaders and Followers Are to React

The author here identifies himself as a fellow "elder" (v. 1), but it is not clear whether that has a literal meaning (old man) or is symbolic (leader), since there is a reference to "younger people" in v. 5. Although "elder" is a known early Christian title for leaders, "younger people" is not normally used as a synonym for "followers," i.e., those who are not leaders. Whatever one may decide on that issue, however, it is clear that elders do play a leadership role here (vv. 2–3), whether by virtue of age or bestowal of that office by the congregation.

The author further characterizes himself as a witness to the sufferings of Christ (v. 1), yet that may mean not so much the suffering Christ underwent as it means the suffering those undergo who belong to Christ. Since suffering here is coupled with the glory that is yet to come, a coupling we saw in 4:13 where it specifically referred to the suffering undergone by those who follow Christ, that is probably what is meant here. Thus the author means to say that he, like his readers, has both seen suffering and, as a member of the Christian community, shared in the glory that will finally be made visible when the present age ends.

Although separate advice is given to both "older" and "younger" Christians in this passage, the point is the same: they are not to be overbearing toward one another. They must wear humility like a garment, which is present wherever its wearer is (v. 5). Although it is not explicit, it is likely that the example of Christ remains in the author's mind. Elders are to exercise their leadership with the same selflessness that characterized Christ's own life and death. Verse 6 serves as the climax of the advice to both old and young: live now in the humility being imposed on you by a hostile culture because you do God's will, because in due time God will transform his world, and then the whole of human society will reflect the way Christians now act toward one another and even toward those who persecute them.

5:7–11
How Members Are to React

The author ends his Letter to his beleaguered readers with some final words on how members of the household of faith are to live their lives in their hostile world. They are to be under no illusions: their opposition is satanic and would, if it could, destroy them (v. 8). But because their confidence is in God, they need have no anxiety on that score. If God is for them, no opposition can be of ultimate significance (v. 7; cf. Rom. 8:31). Temptations to give in to the demands of their culture are therefore to be resisted, even when that means suffering, because such suffering is the universal badge of the true followers of Christ (v. 9). Yet more, such suffering is temporary, because God's plan for his world includes a final restoration in which Christ's followers will have a glorious part. With such a future in store, God will surely not abandon them in their present difficulties (v. 10). For that reason, the only proper response of those who follow Christ, whether or not they must undergo suffering, is one of praise to the God whose gracious and redemptive dominion over all his creation will finally be revealed (v. 11).

5:12–14
Closing Greetings

It was often the custom of people who wrote letters like this to conclude with a passage in their own handwriting (see Gal. 6:11–18; 1 Cor. 16:21–23; Col. 4:18; 2 Thess. 3:17–18; perhaps also Philem. 19). Whether that is the case here or not we are not told, but the author does conclude his Letter in the fashion typical for that time. Silvanus is the one who delivered rather than wrote the Letter (see Introduction).

The author characterizes what is contained in the Letter as "God's true grace," something he has both declared and about which he has exhorted. Grace is thus both a gift and a responsibility, something reflected in this Letter that has regularly alternated declarations of God's grace with advice on the proper ways to respond to the new situation in which that grace has placed the follower of Christ. It is that grace, which includes both gift and responsibility, in which the readers are urged to stand fast. (On the likely symbolic rather than literal meaning of Babylon, see Introduction.) Later tradition associated the Mark who wrote the Gospel bearing that name with Peter in Rome; v. 13b probably is an early form of that tradition. The Christian kiss was a regular form of showing familial intimacy among members of the household of faith (e.g., 1 Cor. 16:20; 2 Cor. 13:12; 1 Thess. 5:26). What could be a more appropriate ending to this Letter to the beleaguered followers of Christ than the wish for peace, both now in the midst of their suffering and in God's promised new world, when all suffering will be a thing of the past.

Bibliography

Achtemeier, Paul J. *1 Peter*. Hermeneia. Minneapolis, MN: Fortress, 1996.

Beare, F. W. *The First Epistle of Peter*. 3d ed. Oxford: Blackwell, 1970.

Best, E. *1 Peter*. New Century Bible Commentary. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1982.

Elliott, J. H. *A Home for the Homeless: A Sociological Exegesis of 1 Peter, Its Situation and Strategy*. Philadelphia: Fortress, 1981.

Selwyn, E. G. *The First Epistle of St. Peter*. New York: Macmillan, 1955.

2 Peter

RICHARD J. BAUCKHAM

INTRODUCTION

The structure of 2 Peter can be analyzed as follows:

1:1–2, Address and greeting
T^1 1:3–11, Theme: A summary of Peter's message
T^2 1:12–15, Occasion: Peter's testament
A^1 1:16–19, First apologetic section
A^2 1:20–21, Second apologetic section
T^3 2:1–3a, Peter's prediction of false teachers
A^3 2:3b–10a, Third apologetic section
E^1 2:10b–22, Denunciation of the opponents
T^4 3:1–4, Peter's prediction of scoffers
A^4 3:5–10, Fourth apologetic section
E^2 3:11–16, Exhortation
3:17–18, Conclusion

2 Peter belongs not only to the literary genre of the letter, but also to that of "testament" (→ Testament). Four passages in particular (T^1–T^4 above) are in testament style and identify 2 Peter as Peter's testament, in which, foreseeing his death, he makes provision for his teaching (1:3–11) to be remembered (1:12–15) and predicts the coming of false teachers after his death (2:1–3a; 3:1–4). Around these testamentary passages are arranged a series of apologetic passages (A^1–A^4) in which Peter's teaching is defended against the objections of the false teachers. Two exhortations (E^1, E^2) contrast the libertine behavior of the opponents (2:10b–22) with the holy conduct expected of the readers (3:11–16).

In Jewish usage the testament was a *fictional* genre, used to attribute material to OT figures. It is therefore likely that 2 Peter is also a pseudonymous work, attributed to Peter after his death. This presumption is confirmed by the fact that, whereas the testamentary passages predict the coming of the false teachers (2:1–3a; 3:1–4), the apologetic passages refer to them in the present tense (2:10b–22; 3:5, 9, 16). Clearly they are the author's contemporaries with whom he is conducting a current debate. His juxtaposition of future- and present-tense references to them conveys the message: these apostolic prophecies are now being fulfilled. But, in that case, his fiction is meant to be a transparent one.

These literary considerations and the probable date of 2 Peter (see commentary below on 3:1–4) make authorship by Peter himself very improbable. The real author's reason for writing a testament of Peter lies in his wish to defend the apostolic message in the postapostolic period against opponents who held that, in important respects, it was now discredited. He wished to claim no authority of his own, but to vindicate the continuing normative authority of the apostles' teaching.

The two features of the opponents' teaching that dominate the author's debate with them are eschatological skepticism (i.e., skepticism about things expected to occur at "the end") and moral libertinism. Probably their aim was to free Christianity of elements derived from its Jewish background that were proving an embarrassment in a pagan cultural environment: its apocalyptic eschatology (→ Eschatology), which was alien to Hellenistic thinking and particularly problematic when the Parousia—the glorious return of Jesus—failed to occur (3:4), and its ethical rigorism, which made life difficult for Christians in the context of pagan society's greater permissiveness. Against them the author holds that the future hope for divine judgment and salvation and the ethical motivation it provides are essential features of normative apostolic teaching that must be maintained.

2 Peter faces the twin problems of Christianity's transition from a Jewish to a Hellenistic environment and from the apostolic to the postapostolic age. In response it asserts the normativeness of apostolic teaching, not woodenly repeated, but interpreted for a new situation. Thus the Christian message undergoes in 2 Peter a significant degree of translation into Hellenistic cultural terms (see commentary below on 1:3–11), but at the same time the author resists an extreme hellenization, such as the opponents advocated, in which essential elements of the apostolic message were lost. To preserve the ethical demand and the future hope of the gospel, he reasserts the Jewish apocalyptic perspective of primitive Christianity. In its striking combination of Hellenistic religious language and apocalyptic eschatology, 2 Peter provides a model for the church's perennial task of retaining the gospel's essential content while giving it meaningful expression in new cultural contexts.

COMMENTARY

1:1–2, Address and Greeting. The address compares the faith of the apostles ("ours") and that of the (postapostolic) readers to point out that the latter are at no disadvantage.

1:3–11, A Summary of Peter's Message. This passage summarizes Peter's definitive teaching as it is to be remembered after his death. It follows a standard sermon pattern in three parts: first, a reference to God's saving activity in the past (vv. 3–4); second, ethical exhortation (vv. 5–10); and, third, the promise of eschatological salvation (v. 11). The main point is that Christians must confirm their calling through moral effort if they are to inherit the promises of eschatological salvation. This is therefore a positive statement of the two aspects of apostolic teaching—the future hope and the ethical motivation it provides—which the rest of 2 Peter is to defend against the opponents.

Despite the insistence in vv. 5–10 that faith must have moral results and that Christ's promises have ethical conditions, the author is clear that salvation is not a human achievement. It is the grace of God that makes moral progress possible (vv. 3, 8), while final salvation will not be a *quid pro quo,* but the lavish provision of the divine generosity (v. 11).

This passage is also notable for its translation of the apostolic message into the language of Hellenistic religion. The author is concerned with making contact with the moral ideals and religious aspirations of his cultural context, but at the same time avoiding the loss of real Christian substance in which the extreme hellenization of the gospel by his opponents resulted. Hence, the Christian hope is stated in strongly Hellenistic terms in v. 4b, as escape from mortality through sharing the immortality of the gods, but this description is balanced by the cosmic eschatology of chap. 3. The author does not allow a merely individual and spiritual immortality to replace the apocalyptic hope for the triumph of God's righteousness in world history (cf. 3:13).

In the list of virtues (1:5–7), the Hellenistic terminology acknowledges that some pagan ethical ideals are also Christian, but the first and last items place them in a Christian context. Christian faith is the root from which all virtues grow, and Christian love is the crowning virtue to which all the others must contribute.

1:12–15, Peter's Testament. This passage presents 2 Peter as a testament written to provide a permanent reminder of Peter's teaching.

1:16–19, First Apologetic Section. The first of the opponents' objections to Peter's teaching (implied by the author's denial of it in v. 16) was that, when the apostles preached the future coming of Jesus as judge and king (→ Parousia), their message was a "myth" in the sense of mere human invention. The author has two replies to this charge. First, he recalls the transfiguration (vv. 16b–18), which Peter and the apostles had witnessed. He understands it as God's appointment of Jesus to exercise the office of messianic king at his future coming in glory and so a sound basis for the hope of the Parousia. Second, the apostles' preaching of the Parousia was also reliably based on OT prophecy (v. 19).

1:20–21, Second Apologetic Section. A second objection, which would undermine the author's appeal to OT prophecy, must now be met. The opponents denied the divine origin of the prophetic writings, claiming that although the prophets may have received signs from God, their prophecies were their own human interpretations of these, not God-given interpretations. (This is probably the view that is contradicted in the difficult v. 20b.) The author's reply insists on the divine inspiration of the prophets' words.

2:1–3a, Peter's Prediction of False Teachers. The author now introduces the opponents explicitly by means of Peter's prophecy of them. His principal accusation against them is that they disown their Master, Jesus, by flouting his moral authority. Evidently their teaching encouraged immoral behavior by denying eschatological judgment.

2:3b–10a, Third Apologetic Section. The opponents scoffed at the idea of future judgment at the Parousia. Divine judgment never happens, they said. It must be taking time off or taking a nap (v. 3b). In reply, the author cites well-known OT examples of divine judgment: the judgment of the fallen angels, the Flood, and the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah. These instances establish the general rule that God punishes the wicked (v. 9b), but they are also typological prophecies of the judgment to come.

When God judges the wicked, he also rescues the righteous (2:9a). So Noah and Lot, committed to righteousness in situations ripe for judgment, are models for faithful Christians whose hope for deliverance at the Parousia enables them to persist in righteousness.

2:10b–22, Denunciation of the Opponents. The opponents are not well-meaning Christians who fall into sin through ignorance and weakness; they are brazen, deliberate sinners who think themselves above moral constraints. They treat the powers of evil with contempt (v. 10b), heedless of the danger of falling into their grip. They indulge in all manner of sensuality and turn even the church's fellowship meals into occasions for self-indulgence, so that the author punningly calls these "love feasts" (Gk. *agapai*) "deceits" (*apatai*: v. 13b; cf. Jude 12). But by means of two comparisons he

shows the attitudes of the opponents to be sheer stupidity that will lead to their condemnation at the judgment they deny. He compares them with irrational animals, whose natural destiny is to be slaughtered (v. 12), and with the OT prophet Balaam, whose greed for financial reward blinded his judgment, so that he was foolish enough to think he could oppose God's will with impunity (vv. 15–16; cf. Num. 22).

The opponents were teachers who compounded their guilt by leading others astray, especially recent converts (v. 18), attracted by the potent promise of "freedom" (v. 19)—i.e., freedom from fear of divine judgment and hence from moral constraint. But the opponents cannot give the freedom they promise because they themselves are slaves to sin and its destructive power (v. 19b). Whereas real liberation comes through subjection to God's will, the freedom from divine authority of which the false teachers boast turns out to be mere subjection to evil. So, as teachers, they are like dry wells and quickly disappearing haze, which seem to offer refreshment but soon disappoint (v. 17a).

Verses 20–22 stress the seriousness of moral apostasy. Like the man in Jesus' story (Matt. 12:43–45) to which v. 20b alludes, Christians who return to the immorality of their pagan past are in a worse state than before their conversion, because then they sinned in ignorance, whereas now they sin against the light and with contempt for grace.

3:1–4, Peter's Prediction of Scoffers. By mentioning 1 Peter and echoing 2 Pet. 1:12–15, 3:1–2 returns to testament style and introduces a second prediction by Peter, which portrays the opponents as skeptics who mock divine revelation. They claim that the prophecy of the Parousia, which had been expected within the lifetime of the first generation of Christians ("the fathers"), has proved illusory now that that generation has passed away (v. 4). This objection provides the best indication we have of the date of 2 Peter, since it probably reflects a problem that would have arisen ca. A.D. 80–90 and is never mentioned in the literature of the second century. The eschatological skepticism of the opponents did not result solely from the nonfulfillment of the Parousia prophecy; the last phrase of v. 4 suggests that this only confirmed their rationalistic assumption that divine interventions in history do not happen.

3:5–10, Fourth Apologetic Section. The author makes two replies to the scoffers' objection in v. 4. The first (vv. 5–7) counters the rationalistic assumption in v. 4b by arguing that the continuance of the world as a stable habitation for humanity is not to be taken for granted, but depends on the will of the Creator. The picture in vv. 5–6 is of the universe brought into existence out of the waters of chaos (Gen. 1:2, 6–7, 9) and then at the time of the Flood submerged again (cf. Gen. 7:11). Since there has been one universal judgment, by water, the prophecy of another, by fire, is credible (v. 7). The author envisages world history in three periods, divided by the two great cosmic cataclysms of the Flood (cf. 2:5) and the eschatological conflagration. But his interest in these is more moral than cosmological. It is the fire of divine judgment that will burn up the sky and expose the evil world to God's judgment (v. 10) so that the new world of righteousness may be established (v. 13).

The second reply (vv. 8–9) meets the problem of the delay of the Parousia (v. 4a) with traditional Jewish arguments. God's eternal perspective on history is contrasted with the short-term expectations of human beings. To say that God is "late" in fulfilling his promises (v. 9) is to judge by impatient human standards. Moreover, the delay is no cause for complaint, but a sign of God's grace by which he bears with sinners in hope of their repentance. But so that sinners should not be able to presume on God's forbearance, delaying repentance, the author then stresses that the Parousia will come unexpectedly (v. 10; cf. Matt. 24:43–44; 1 Thess. 5:2).

3:11–16, Exhortation. Just as the opponents' eschatological skepticism was the corollary of their libertinism, so the readers' hope of the Parousia should have as its corollary a life of righteousness. The key lies in v. 13: in the new world, unlike the present one, Righteousness (personified) will be at home. So those who hope to live there must become righteous (vv. 11, 14).

Since Paul's Letters to the churches to which 2 Peter was written were already being treated as Scripture (v. 16b), the author wishes to point out that his teaching is in harmony with Paul's. The opponents' misinterpretation of Paul (v. 16) could mean that they claimed Paul's support for their antinomian view of Christian freedom or that they held Paul's expectation of the Parousia to be disproved.

3:17–18, Conclusion. The testamentary convention—that Peter is forewarning of false teachers to come—reappears in this closing summary.

Bibliography

Bauckham, R. J. *Jude, 2 Peter.* Word Biblical Commentary, 50. Waco, TX: Word, 1983.

Charles, J. D. *Virtue Amidst Vice: The Catalog of Virtues in 2 Peter 1.* Journal for the Study of the New Testament Supplement Series, 150. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1997.

Fornberg, T. *An Early Church in a Pluralistic Society.* Lund: Gleerup, 1977.

Neyrey, J. H. *2 Peter, Jude.* Anchor Bible, 37C. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1993.

1, 2, 3 John

R. ALAN CULPEPPER

INTRODUCTION

The Letters of John open a window on one period in the life of the Johannine community, Christian groups that earlier had produced the Gospel of John. Indeed, interpretation of these writings depends in large measure on reconstructing their historical context from the sparse clues they supply. A major question concerns the relationship between the Johannine Letters and the Gospel of John. Although some interpreters argue that one or all of the Letters precede the composition of the Gospel of John, most Johannine scholars now date the Letters after the Gospel or late in the extended period of its composition. A date, about A.D. 100 is therefore preferred for the Letters. The three Letters are also usually attributed to one author, who may or may not have been the final editor of the Gospel.

The principal factor in the setting of the Letters appears in 1 John 2:19—the Johannine community was split; some of its members had left it. 1 John was written to the remaining members of the community to encourage them to remain faithful and to warn them against the errors of the opponents who had left the community.

1 John neither begins nor ends like a letter, presumably because it was not sent to another town but intended to be read locally. It is also anonymous, though there is no convincing evidence for assigning it to any figure other than the "elder" (Gk. *presbyteros*) of 2 John 1 and 3 John 1 (→ Presbyter, Presbytery).

Apparently the elder and his opponents held to a common tradition. 1 John offers an interpretation of this tradition and calls the community to hold to the teaching it had received, but it does not quote the Gospel of John or refer to the Beloved Disciple (→ Beloved Disciple).

The issues in the debate between the elder and the opponents are suggested by emphases in the Letters themselves. Whereas the Gospel was written "in order that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God" (John 20:31), 1 John insists that one must confess that Jesus Christ has come *in flesh* (4:2). 2 John 7 identifies the deceivers as those who do not confess that "Jesus Christ has come [having come or coming] *in the flesh*." From this emphasis on the incarnation, we may assume that the opponents held to the divinity of the Christ, but either denied or diminished the significance of his humanity. Their view may be an early step toward Docetism, the heresy that emerged in the second century claiming that Jesus only *seemed* to be human.

In response, the elder reaffirmed the importance of the confession that the Christ came in flesh. The allusion to "water and blood" (1 John 5:6) may also be a reassertion of the importance of the death of Jesus. The opponents evidently placed so much emphasis on the coming of Jesus as the heavenly revealer (a key motif in the Fourth Gospel) that his death was no longer important for salvation. The elder consequently reasserted the importance of the humanity of Jesus and the saving significance of his death.

Similar inferences yield other points of difference between the two factions. The elder appealed to the community's hope for the future. Although both factions held that believers have crossed over from death into life (1 John 3:14), the elder contended that the future coming requires that believers purify themselves and be righteous (3:2, 7).

The ethical teachings of the Gospel of John do not include anything like the richness of the Sermon on the Mount. Consequently, the elder repeatedly called for observance of the new commandment, love for one another, and for living "just as" Jesus lived (1 John 2:6, 18, 27; 3:2, 3, 7, 12; 4:17; 2 John 4, 6; 3 John 2, 3). In the view of the elder, the opponents had violated this community ethic by leaving the community. Those who remained, he exhorted, should continue to be faithful both to the tradition they had received "from the beginning" and to the community ethic of love for one another.

2 John and 3 John were probably written at about the same time as 1 John, but they are letters to sister churches. 2 John is addressed to "the elect lady and her children," while 3 John is addressed to Gaius, a member of a congregation that had received travelers sent by the elder. From these Letters we gain further information regarding steps the elder was taking to prevent the dissension from spreading to other congregations in the constellation of Johannine churches.

The Johannine Letters continue to have both historical and theological value. Because they cast light on a chapter in the history of the Johannine commu-

nity, the Letters allow us to read the Gospel of John with greater insight. They expose both the strengths and weaknesses of Johannine theology and reveal the problems to which that theology was vulnerable. The Letters also provide a tragic reflection on the hostility and distortions that are created by schisms and divisions within the church. Their greatest value, therefore, may be realized as a by-product of their original purpose: they may help the church to recognize the destructive effects of divisions within the Christian community.

COMMENTARY

1 John

1:1–4
The Prologue: The Word of Life

The opening words of 1 John announce that "the word of life" has been manifest. The message of life is grounded in the life of Jesus, God's son, who revealed the nature of eternal life, that life of another aeon that God's children now share. The prologue, therefore, introduces many of the Letter's major concerns: the reality of the incarnation, the nature of the life revealed by Jesus, and the importance of participation in the community if one is to share in that life.

Numerous outlines with varying numbers of divisions have been suggested for 1 John. The structure followed here is based on the repetition of the statement "God is . . ." three times in the Letter: "God is light" (1:5), "He is righteous" (2:29), and "God is love" (4:8). 1 John then demands that these qualities must dominate the lives of believers, i.e., God's children, just as they were manifested by Jesus. An alternative structure highlights the repetition of "This is the message" in 1:5 and 3:11. The structure of the Letter is difficult to define in outline form, however, because of its use of transitional verses and paragraphs that may be placed with either the preceding or the following verses (e.g., 2:28; 4:1–6).

1:5–2:27
Light Among God's Children

If God is light, then God's children must walk (or live) in light. The issue is not the nature of God, but the opponents' claim that they had a unique relationship with God. In response, the elder charges that their claims are false because they do not live in purity (i.e., light) or practice love for other believers. Their departure from the community proves that they were not really a part of it. Since they do not belong to the people of God, they are of the world; they belong to darkness, evil, and falsehood.

1:5–2:2, The Incompatibility of Light and Sin. Because there is no darkness in God, there can be no sin in God's people. This axiom does not mean that believers cannot sin, however.

1 John 1:6–2:2 is composed of six "if, then" statements. Three expose the errors of the opponents by quoting their slogans, characterizing their way of life, and asserting the consequences of their inconsistency. Since the author three times repeats the formula, "if we say . . ." (vv. 6, 8, 10), the opponents and perhaps some who remained within the community were apparently making assertions like "we have fellowship with him" (v. 6); "we have no sin" (v. 8); and "we have not sinned" (v. 10). Those who live in sin cannot claim fellowship with God, however, because he is light. Worse, if we say we have no sin, we deceive ourselves and make God a liar. On the other hand, the other three conditional sentences (1:7, 9; 2:1–2) offer assurances for those who recognize the presence of sin in their lives and confess it to God. Jesus Christ is now an advocate before the Father for those who confess their sin (→ Paraclete). The importance of the death of Jesus as an expiation for sin is also reasserted, not only for the community but for the whole world (→ Expiation).

2:3–11, Love as a Test of Knowledge. Just as the previous section quotes the sayings of the opponents using the formula "if we say . . . ," three further claims are introduced in this section by means of the phrase "whoever says, 'I have come to know him'" (2:4); "whoever says, 'I abide in him'" (2:6); "whoever says, 'I am in the light'" (2:9).

John 17:3 defines eternal life as knowing God. The notion that knowledge of God could bring a person salvation or deliverance from this world was prevalent in ancient religions. Undoubtedly both the elder and those who had left the community claimed that they knew God. The elder demands, however, that knowledge of God must be confirmed by how one lives and suggests two tests: keeping God's commandments (1 John 2:3) and living "just as" Jesus lived (2:6). These tests recall the new commandment, "that you love one another *just as* I loved you" (John 13:34). What love for a brother or sister requires is defined later (1 John 3:17–18). Here, love is associated with light. Hate—the only alternative to love in Johannine thought—is a sign that one is walking in darkness. And in God there is no darkness at all (1:5).

2:12–17, Conflict with the World. The presence of light in the Christian community that is surrounded by a world characterized by darkness points metaphorically to the conflict between the two. The elder,

therefore, assured the community that it was already victorious and forbade any compromise with the world. Here, "the world" is used not in a neutral sense to designate the created order, but as a reference to all that lies under the power of evil (5:19; → World, The).

Verses 12–14 express assurance of victory over evil in two poetic stanzas (vv. 12–13, 14). Three groups are addressed in each stanza: children, fathers, and young men. The change to the past tense in v. 14 is only a stylistic variation and does not refer to some previous communication. The assurances to each of the groups are equally true for all believers, however. The Johannine writings call all believers "children of God," and the terms "fathers" and "young people" probably derive from references such as Jer. 31:34 and Joel 2:28.

Since the world is irreconcilably opposed to the community of believers, the elder admonishes the faithful that they cannot love the world and love God also. One love comes from evil ("the world") and is passing away; the other comes from God and abides forever.

2:18–27, Conflict Within the Community. The conflict with the world had invaded the community, however. Some had left the community, and these the elder calls "antichrists" (→ Antichrist, The). The appearance of such foes signaled the arrival of the "last hour"—a term found only in 1 John 2:18 in the NT. The elder did not need to explain the circumstances of the schism because members of the community already knew about it. We may infer, however, that the dispute was primarily about how Jesus was to be understood, as outlined in the Introduction.

Three emphatic addresses, "[And] you" (2:20, 24, 27), provide the structure for this section. Since some of those who remained may have considered joining the other faction, the elder assures them, "you have an anointing," by which he probably meant the Holy Spirit. They know the truth already, but the Antichrist is the Liar, the one who denies the Christ. The opponents, however, had been a part of the community, so the issue must be a specific confession of Christ, as suggested by 1 John 4:2. Yet the elder warns that those who do not confess the Son do not have the Father either. He appeals, therefore, for the community to abide in the tradition they had received from the beginning and not to follow those who had left the community. They already had the promise of eternal life. They did not need a new teaching; they needed only to abide in the teaching they had already received from the Holy Spirit through the tradition of the community.

2:28–4:6
Righteousness Among God's Children

Three related sections follow: the first deals with the hope of the righteous (2:28–3:10), the second with the love command (3:11–24), and the third with tests of the two spirits (4:1–6). The conflict that had engulfed the community was no less than a conflict between the children of God and the children of the devil. The elder shared the common assumption that the child would be like the parent. The children of God will see God, but they must be righteous, even as God is righteous.

Maintaining the command to love others within the community was a crucial test of one's faith. Like Cain, the children of the devil had no love for their brothers or sisters and did not share with those in need.

A different spirit was working within each faction of the divided community. The elder, therefore, charges the faithful to test the spirits both by what they said and by who followed them.

2:28–3:10, The Hope of the Righteous. The anointing received by the faithful brings both assurance and the requirement of righteousness. Because God is righteous, all who are "born of him"—a favorite Johannine description for the gift of eternal life that reorients the lives of the faithful—must be righteous also. The elder reasserts the hope of the coming of God at the end of time (→ Parousia). Human life will reach its ultimate fulfillment when the faithful see God and find that they are like him. This hope, however, also requires that the faithful purify themselves so that they will be ready to see God (see Matt. 5:8).

In Johannine thought sin and righteousness are opposites, like light and darkness or truth and falsehood. Each characterizes a way of life. Sin, above all, is characterized not as immorality but as unbelief (see John 16:8–9). The believers, therefore, cannot sin. One of the enigmas of 1 John is the relationship between 3:6, 9 and 1:8, 10. The former verses indicate that the believer cannot sin, while the latter claim that one who denies sin is deceived and makes God a liar. The alternative in chap. 3, however, is between "doing sin" (3:4, 8, 9) and "doing righteousness" (3:7, 10). The elder recognizes that believers sin also (1 John 1:8, 10), but demands that the faithful lead lives characterized by righteousness. The child must—and inevitably will—be like the parent, according to the elder. Believers will be righteous, like God; and those who do not belong to the community of the faithful will be like their father, the devil (see John 8:44).

3:11–24, The Love of the Righteous. The clearest sign of sin is the lack of love. The opponents have shown that they do not love the community, the elder charges, because they departed from it. The Johannine love command is significantly more restricted than that of the Sermon on the Mount, which commands love for one's enemies (Matt. 5:44). The new commandment requires love for "one another," which is interpreted to mean love for others within the Christian community. Those who do not love their Chris-

tian brothers and sisters, the elder charges, are like Cain, who killed his brother. Those who live by this command, however, have already crossed over from death into life. Such love is therefore an essential quality of the life that God gives. That love is most clearly manifest in Jesus' act of laying down his life for his own. Believers, therefore, ought to live "just as" Jesus did. Specifically, the love command requires that one who sees a brother or sister in need will share with the one in need. Love is not just a feeling, therefore; it is the way the faithful live.

1 John 3:19–21 is open to multiple interpretations. The elder's concern seems to be the confidence that believers may have. Some interpreters take these verses as a warning that God's judgment will be even greater than our judgment on ourselves. The tone of the verses, however, is one of assurance rather than warning.

God's commands are twofold: believe (John 14:1), and love one another (John 13:34; 15:12; 1 John 2:7–11; 3:11, 16–18; 4:7–21). Both the keeping of these commands and the presence of the Spirit confirm one's place within the new covenant.

4:1–6, The Two Spirits. The reference to the Spirit in 3:24 introduces the need to distinguish between the work of two spirits: the spirit of truth and the spirit of deception. 1 John extends the dualism of John's worldview by reference to the two spirits, but parallels can be found in the Qumran scrolls and elsewhere. By saying that false prophets have "gone out" into the world (4:1), the elder is probably alluding to those who had gone out from the community (2:19).

One test to distinguish truth from deception is that of content (see Deut. 13:1–5). The elder adds to the required confession the affirmation that Jesus Christ came "in the flesh" (cf. John 20:31). The opponents who had gone out from the community apparently either denied that the divine Word could become human or else they diminished the significance of his humanity in their effort to exalt his divinity. This error led to the heresy known as Docetism, the view that Jesus only *seemed* to be human. In contrast, 1 John demands full recognition of Jesus' humanity.

The second test of the spirits is that of response. The children of God respond to the divine Spirit, while the world responds to the spirit of deception.

4:7–5:12
Love Among God's Children

The twin commands to believe and to love one another are linked in 3:23. Now each is considered again in major sections that bring the themes of the Letter to their fullest expression. Earlier sections admonish the community that just as God is light (1:5) and righteous (2:29), so the people of God must be free from sin. This section develops the essential link between God's love and the love of Christians for one another. 1 John 4:7–21 ranks along with 1 Corinthians 13 as one of the finest statements in the NT on the experience and nature of divine love within the human community. As in other parts of the Letter, transitional units (e.g., 5:1–4; 5:13) form links with both the preceding and the following verses. 1 John 5:1–4 affirms that those who keep the love commandment have been born of God. They have both God's testimony and the life that God gives (5:5–12).

4:7–21, The True Nature of Love. The love command was treated earlier in 2:7–11; 3:11, 16–18. Now the elder delivers his climactic statement on the subject. The short, simple clauses of vv. 7–10 are almost poetic. Because love emanates from God's essential nature and because God's children live in response to their intimate relationship with God, love must characterize the Christian community.

Those who live by this community ethic demonstrate that they already share in that life of unending fellowship with God. Verse 9 echoes John 3:16, and 4:11–16a comments on each part of the verse. Love comes not from the best of the human spirit, but from the character of God, and especially in God's sending his Son as an expiation for sin (2:2; 4:10). No one has seen God, but God's love is brought to its fulfillment and completion in the community of believers.

The abiding presence of the Spirit confirms the community's knowledge of God. By living in response to God's self-revelation in Jesus, the community of believers experiences the fullness of God's love and the ultimate purpose of life. The fulfillment of God's love for us in our relationships with others results in a communion with God that not only brings God's love to completion, but also casts out fear of the future.

The beginning of v. 18 is marked variously in different manuscripts, but most translations place the beginning at "there is no fear in love" (NRSV). One who knows God's love does not fear God's judgment. The elder may be responding to the charges of the opponents, who apparently dismissed the future judgment because they had already "passed from death into life" (3:14). While reasserting the importance of the command to love, the elder maintains the reality of the future judgment also—but protects himself from the charge that he fears the judgment because he does not know God's love.

Returning to the command to love, the elder concludes this section by pointing again to the contradiction involved in saying that one loves God when one does not show love for brothers and sisters in the Christian community.

5:1–12, The True Nature of Faith. The verb "believe" reappears in 5:1 (see 3:23), introducing a section that describes how love leads to the victory of faith. The structure of this section is indicated by the three references to the one who believes (5:1, 5, 10) and the three

pronouncements: "this is the victory" (5:4), "this is the testimony" (5:9, 11), and "this life is in his Son" (5:11). By linking the twin commands, to believe and to love, to the content of true belief and the experience of that life that is God's gift, the elder brings his themes to a climax.

Each previous use of the verb "to be born" referred to the believer; the same seems to be true in 5:1 also. The one who loves the parent loves the child. Although the child may be understood as a reference to either Jesus or the believer, the latter is more likely. 1 John 5:1 restates the principle behind 4:20: one cannot love God if one has no love for God's children.

Love of God requires keeping both of the Johannine commandments (believe, love). The community's faith is also its victory over the world, because the world under the power of evil seeks to destroy both the community's faith and its ethic of love.

The victor, therefore, is the one who maintains the faith. True faith is faith in Jesus, the son of God, who came through water and blood. The latter phrase is probably an affirmation of the true humanity of Jesus in both his incarnation and his death. Both were significant for the elder's understanding of salvation. The opponents, on the other hand, apparently diminished the significance of Jesus' death because of their emphasis on his role as the heavenly revealer. To the water and the blood, which were soon associated with baptism and the Lord's Supper, the elder added a third witness that confirms the first two: the Spirit.

An insertion at the end of v. 7, originating in Latin manuscripts from the fourth century, the so-called Johannine Comma, adds: "in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one; and there are three who testify on earth." This gloss, apparently motivated by early trinitarian debates, is not found in any Greek manuscript before the fifteenth century.

Through the water, the blood, and the Spirit, God has borne witness to his Son; and God's testimony is greater than any human testimony. Just as the body of the Letter begins with an affirmation of the message the community had received (1:5), so it ends with a declaration of the testimony it has experienced (5:11). God's testimony, however, is received only by faith. Those who respond to the revelation in Jesus with authentic faith are given life in God's Son.

5:13–21
The Epilogue

In the conclusion the elder restates his purpose for writing (5:13) and instructs the community regarding the confidence they can have in prayer (vv. 14–15), whom to pray for (vv. 16–17), and the confidence they can have because of their faith (vv. 18–20). The Letter concludes with a warning about idolatry (v. 21).

Verse 13 is reminiscent of both 1:4 and the purpose statement in the Gospel (John 20:31). Since the Letter is addressed to believers, the emphasis is on *knowing* the life they already have. If the faithful recognize that they already have eternal life, they will not be swayed by the appeals made by the opponents.

The elder's faithful adherents can also have confidence in prayer. When believers are so responsive to the guidance of the spirit of truth that their prayers accord with God's will, God hears their prayers and grants their requests.

This general assurance regarding confidence in prayer leads to the troublesome question of prayer for one who is sinning. Again, the syntax is not altogether clear. Who gives life, the one who prays or God? Ultimately, of course, only God can give life. The distinction is not so much between types of sin as between persons for whom one should pray. Since sin was understood by the Johannine Christians fundamentally as unbelief (John 16:9), in the context of 1 John the deadly sin must be refusal to confess Jesus. Specifically, those who commit the deadly sin are those who refuse to confess Jesus having come in flesh (4:2), as the elder required. All sin threatens the life of God's children and must be confessed (see 1:6–2:2), so one should pray for fellow Christians. Drawing a hard line, however, the elder forbids prayer for the opponents who withdrew from the community. The Letter closes with a reminder of the certainties to which the faithful may cling. We *know:* the believer does not sin (see 3:6, 9) and Jesus Christ protects believers; we are God's, while the world is under the power of evil; and the son of God has come to reveal God to us and to give us eternal life. The closing warning against idolatry, although seemingly out of place, may be a final warning against the false teachings of the community's opponents.

COMMENTARY

2 John

This short Letter was probably written by the author of 1 John and about the same time as the longer Letter. Echoes of words and phrases from 1 John can be found in 2 John, but the sequence of the writing of the two Letters is debated. 1 John, which does not begin like a letter, was evidently written to the remnant of the central Johannine community. 2 and 3 John, which follow a more typical letter form, were written to churches or individuals in churches that were closely associated with the elder's congregation.

The elder does not identify the recipient by name, nor apparently is there any need to identify himself by

name. The emphases on truth and love in the opening verses implicitly speak of faithfulness to the tradition received and defended by the elder.

The greeting, with the distinctive term "mercy," is similar to the greeting in 1 Tim. 1:2; 2 Tim. 1:2. The elder rejoices at the faithfulness of fellow believers from the sister church and appeals for continued fraternal relations. The need for fraternal relations was all the more necessary since the deceivers (i.e., the elder's opponents) had gone out from the community. The error of their teaching was that they did not confess that Jesus Christ had come in flesh. The participle is in the present tense (lit., "coming"), but most interpreters hear v. 7 as an echo of 1 John 4:2.

The elder's real concern is that the false teaching and dissension that plagues his congregation not spread to the sister church. To prevent this from happening, he lays down the principle that one who abides in the teaching of Christ (received through the Johannine school) has fellowship with God. One who departs from this teaching, or goes beyond it, should not be received by the church. By refusing to extend hospitality to those who spread false teaching, the church could protect itself from the opponents who had gone out from the elder's congregation.

The Letter closes with an expression of desire to visit the sister church and fraternal greetings from the "children" of their "elect sister."

COMMENTARY

3 John

The primary difficulty in interpreting this short Letter from the elder to Gaius, the beloved, is deciphering the relationships among the individuals who are named (Gaius, Diotrephes, Demetrius) and the elder. The elder did not have to explain these relationships to Gaius, so they remain unclear to later readers.

A plausible reconstruction of the situation yields the following picture. Diotrephes emerged as the leader of a church within the orbit of Johannine Christianity. His role may not yet have been formalized as that of a bishop, however, and nothing is said of his relationship to other churches. In an effort either to protect his authority or to protect the church from false teachings, Diotrephes had been rejecting the emissaries sent by the elder, speaking against them, and threatening to exclude from the church anyone who would receive them. Ironically, Diotrephes seems to have taken the same measures that the elder urged in 2 John as means for stopping the spread of the false teachings of the opponents. Perhaps because he could not tell one itinerant teacher or evangelist from another, Diotrephes forbade extending hospitality to any itinerant.

Gaius, however, had been cooperating with the elder and extending hospitality to those he sent. The elder wrote 3 John, therefore, to appeal for Gaius to continue to provide hospitality to the Johannine "friends" and to warn him about Diotrephes. Whether Gaius was a member of the church over which Diotrephes had extended his authority is unclear.

The elder also commended Demetrius as one whose testimony was true. Indeed, it is likely that Demetrius was the bearer of this Letter.

Like 2 John, the Letter closes with the hope that the elder will soon be able to visit the recipient. Greetings are sent from "the friends," which was evidently used along with "brothers" and "beloved" as a term of address for fellow Johannine Christians (see John 3:29; 11:11; 15:13–15).

Bibliography

Brown, R. E. *The Epistles of John.* Anchor Bible, 30. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1982.

Lieu, J. *The Second and Third Epistles of John: History and Background.* Edinburgh: Clark, 1986.

Rensberger, D. *1 John, 2 John, 3 John.* Abingdon New Testament Commentaries. Nashville, TN: Abingdon Press, 1997.

Smalley, S. S. *1, 2, 3 John.* Word Biblical Commentary, 51. Waco, TX: Word, 1984.

Smith, D. Moody. *First, Second, and Third John.* Interpretation. Louisville, KY: John Knox Press, 1991.

Jude

RICHARD J. BAUCKHAM

INTRODUCTION

Form and Structure

The structure of the Letter of Jude can be analyzed as follows:

1–2, Address and greeting
3–4, Occasion and theme
A 3, The appeal to contend for the faith
B 4, The background to the appeal: The false teachers, their character and judgment
5–23, Body of the Letter
B′ 5–19, The background: A commentary on four prophecies of the doom of the ungodly
5–7, 8–10, 9, Three OT types and interpretation including Michael and the devil
11, 12–13, Three more OT types and interpretation
14–15, 16, The prophecy of Enoch and interpretation
17–18, 19, The prophecy of the apostles and interpretation
A′ 20–23, The appeal
24–25, Concluding doxology

It is important to notice that the initial statement of the theme of the Letter (vv. 3–4) contains two parts (*A* and *B*) that correspond, in reverse order, to the two parts of the body of the Letter (*B′* and *A′*). The main purpose of the Letter is the appeal "to contend for the faith" announced in v. 3 and spelled out in vv. 20–23. But v. 4 explains that this appeal is necessary because the readers are in danger of being misled by false teachers. The claim in v. 4 that these teachers are people whose ungodly behavior has already been condemned by God is then substantiated by the exegetical section (*B′*), which argues that these are the people to whom the scriptural types and judgments refer.

Section *B′* is a carefully composed piece of scriptural commentary that resembles the commentaries on Scripture found among the Dead Sea Scrolls in two ways: its underlying assumption, that OT Scripture is prophetic of the last times in which the author and his readers live, and its exegetical method, which treats figures mentioned in Scripture as "types" that will be fulfilled when their counterparts appear at the end of days. It consists of a series of four main "texts" (vv. 5–7, 11, 14–15, 17–18) and comments on each (vv. 8–10, 12–13, 16, 19). The first two "texts" are in fact summary references to OT figures; the third and fourth are quotations not from the OT, but from the apocryphal apocalypse known to us as *1 Enoch* and from a prophecy of the apostles. But all are treated as texts on which commentary is given. In each case the transition from "text" to commentary is marked by a reference to "these people," indicating that Jude's opponents are the people to whom the "text" refers, and by a transition from the past or future tense to the present tense, indicating that the type or prophecy is now being fulfilled. In one case a secondary text is introduced to help the commentary on the main "text" (v. 9).

The Opponents

Jude's opponents were a group of itinerant charismatics. The one thing that is clear about their teaching is that they were antinomians, who understood the grace of God in Christ (v. 4) as a deliverance from all moral constraint. Evidently they claimed to have received this teaching in visions ("dreamings," v. 8) and saw themselves and their followers as the truly spiritual people (v. 19), free from external moral authority. Against them Jude insists on the seriousness of God's moral requirements, which will take effect in the judgment of willful transgressors at the future coming of Christ in glory.

Provenance and Authorship

Several features of the Letter indicate its origin in Palestinian Jewish Christianity. Jude, unlike most NT authors, habitually uses the OT in Hebrew rather than the Septuagint Greek. His exegetical methods, his apocalyptic outlook, and the high value he attaches to apocryphal works of Jewish apocalyptic origin are all characteristic of Jewish-Christian circles in Palestine, which understood Jesus and the gospel in terms of Jewish apocalyptic expectations (→ Eschatology).

The character of the Letter is therefore entirely consistent with its attribution to Judas the brother of Jesus. There is no clear evidence of date, but an earlier rather than a later date is probable, and it may in fact be one of the earliest books in the NT. Its special value

is that it offers a glimpse into those original Palestinian Christian circles in which Jesus' own blood relations were leaders.

COMMENTARY

1–2, Address and Greeting. James the brother of the Lord was the only man in the early church who could be called simply "James" without ambiguity. So by calling himself "brother of James," the author identifies himself as Judas the brother of Jesus (Mark 6:3).

3–4, Occasion and Theme. Jude's Letter is not the extended discussion of Christian salvation he had intended to write, but a more ad hoc response to the news that these churches have been "infiltrated" by a group of prophets who take Christian freedom to mean freedom from moral restraint. Jude says that by rejecting Christ's moral demands they are disowning him as Master. But such people are one of the prophesied dangers of the last times. Their immoral behavior and coming judgment have been prophesied, as Jude will show in vv. 5–19. In the face of such danger, Jude's readers need to fight for the gospel ("the faith") as it was taught them ("the saints") by the apostles who founded their churches: what this "fight" involves will be explained in vv. 20–23.

5–10, Three Old Testament Types. Three classic examples of those who incur divine judgment are given: the whole generation of Israel exterminated in the wilderness after the Exodus (Num. 14), the angels who left their heavenly position in order to mate with women (Gen. 6:1–4, as interpreted in the apocryphal account in *1 Enoch* 6–19), and the Sodomites, whose sin is here condemned not as homosexual rape but as an attempt at sexual relations with angels (Gen. 19:4–11). The point in the last two cases is the outrageous transgression of the moral order of creation. The particular point in the first case is that the Lord's own people, who have experienced salvation, are not immune from judgment if they repudiate his lordship.

Jude's opponents are like these types (v. 8) in that they indulge in sexual immorality, repudiating the Lord's commandments, and like the Sodomites insult angels ("the glorious ones"). Probably they disparaged the angels in their role as guardians of the moral order. Jude expands on this charge of slandering angels by contrasting their behavior with that of the archangel Michael in an apocryphal account of the burial of Moses (v. 9). In this story the devil accused Moses of murder. Michael, acting as advocate for Moses and in this role "disputing with the devil," knew that the charge was a slander, but "did not presume to condemn the devil for slander." Instead he referred the matter to the divine Judge who alone has authority to rule on an accusation brought under the law. By contrast the false teachers presume to reject, on their own authority, the charges that the angels, as spokesmen for the law, bring against them. They do so because they claim to be above such accusations, subject to no moral authority. Given Jude's readers' knowledge of the story, v. 9 exposes the spiritual conceit of the opponents, whose attitude to the angels reveals a resistance to all moral authority, even God's.

11–13, Three More Old Testament Types. Jude's opponents are typified not just as people who practice immorality (as in vv. 5–10), but also as teachers and corrupters of others. The OT figures are recalled as portrayed in Jewish tradition: Cain, the first heretic; Balaam, the prophet who, in his greed for financial gain, gave the advice that led Israel into apostasy (Num. 25:1–4; 31:16); and Korah, the archetypal schismatic, who led others in contesting Moses' authority and the divine origin of certain laws.

Verse 12a should be translated, "These are the people who feast with you at your fellowship meals, without reverence, like dangerous reefs." It is in the context of the fellowship meals (Gk. *agape*) that the false teachers deliver their prophetic oracles enticing people into immorality. Their proximity is therefore as dangerous as that of a reef to a ship. They claim to be shepherds of the flock, but the only people they actually look after are themselves, by requiring the church to support them.

The four metaphors from nature (vv. 12b–13) are examples of nature failing to follow the laws ordained for it. Apocalyptic writers expected such lawlessness in nature in the last days (cf. *1 Enoch* 80:2–6): to Jude it suggests the lawlessness of the false teachers of the last days. The point of the first two metaphors is that, although the false teachers claim great value for their teaching, in fact they are of no benefit to anyone. Worse, they are positively harmful (like the filth cast up by the sea). Finally, like stars that go astray from their courses, misleading those who look to them for guidance, they will be extinguished in the underworld.

14–16, The Prophecy of Enoch. With its emphatic repetition of "ungodly," this text hammers home the message of the whole exegetical section (vv. 5–19): those who indulge in ungodly conduct, as the false teachers do, are those on whom judgment will fall at the coming of Christ to judge the world. (By inserting "the Lord" into the quotation Jude refers it to the Lord Jesus.)

This quotation from the apocalypse of Enoch (*1 Enoch* 1:9), along with allusions elsewhere in his Letter, shows that Jude held it in high regard, as many Jews did. But since he pairs this quotation with another nonscriptural prophecy (v. 18), he need not have regarded it as part of the canon. The text and its applica-

tion (v. 16) stress the arrogant *words* in which the false teachers reject God's will in order to follow their own.

17–19, The Prophecy of the Apostles. Jude complements Enoch's ancient prophecy with a modern one, which was part of the teaching his readers received from the apostles who founded their churches. Verse 19 indicates that the false teachers gathered an elitist faction who claimed the same kind of charismatic status as themselves. But their behavior is clearly inspired not by the Spirit, but by their own natural instincts.

20–23, The Appeal. Here Jude reaches the main point of his Letter: given the danger posed by the false teachers, his readers are to "carry on the fight for the faith" (v. 3). Four injunctions summarize Christian living (vv. 20–21): first, the church's life must be built on the foundation of the gospel, with its moral imperative. Second, prayer in the Spirit exemplifies the true charismatic nature of the church. Third, readers must keep their place in God's love by obeying him. Fourth, they must live in hope of the Lord's coming to bring final salvation to those who remain faithful. In these ways they can resist the influence of antinomian teaching and stay on the path of positive Christian obedience.

Verses 22–23 explain how they are to behave toward the false teachers and those influenced by them. The text is very uncertain, but the general advice is clear: to exercise Christian love, but only in conjunction with great care to avoid the contaminating effect of the opponents' influence. But in his awareness of the danger they pose, Jude by no means gives up hope for their reclamation.

24–25, Closing Doxology. The first part of this magnificent doxology is in effect a confident prayer that God will preserve the readers from the spiritual disaster with which the false teaching threatens them and bring them to the destiny he intends for them, when they will be presented as perfect sacrifices in his heavenly temple. Jude's concern to combat the false teaching is finally aimed at this goal: that the church should be fit to be offered to God's glory.

Bibliography

Bauckham, R. J. *Jude, 2 Peter.* Word Biblical Commentary, 50. Waco, TX: Word, 1983.

———. *Jude and the Relatives of Jesus in the Early Church.* Edinburgh: Clark, 1990.

Charles, J. D. *Literary Strategy in the Epistle of Jude.* Scranton, PA: University of Scranton Press; London and Toronto: Associated University Presses, 1993.

Neyrey, J. H. *2 Peter, Jude.* Anchor Bible, 37C. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1993.

Revelation

DAVID E. AUNE

INTRODUCTION

Author and Date

The author of Revelation says that his name is "John" (1:4, 9; 22:8) and that he is a "servant" of God (1:1; an OT title of honor) and a "brother" of those he addresses (1:9). He was probably well known to them, making further identification unnecessary. When he describes Revelation as a "prophetic book" (1:3; 22:7, 10, 18, 19), he indirectly claims prophetic status. He may have belonged to a circle of prophets (cf. 22:9, 16; → Prophet). He was acquainted with the condition of each of the seven churches (cf. 2:1–3:20), possibly the result of an earlier itinerant prophetic ministry. The author's familiarity with the OT and the presence of numerous Semitisms indicate that he was a Jewish Christian who may have been an apocalyptist before his conversion (→ Eschatology). He may have been a refugee from Palestine in the aftermath of the first Jewish revolt (A.D. 66–73). In the second century it was widely believed that the apostle John, the son of Zebedee, wrote Revelation (Justin *Dialogue* 81.4; Irenaeus *Against Heresies* 4.20.11). Yet the author never calls himself an apostle and even refers to the twelve apostles as past founders (21:14). No internal evidence suggests any connection between the author and an apostle of the same name.

Since the late second century A.D., the prevailing opinion has been that Revelation was written toward the end of the reign of the Roman emperor Domitian (A.D. 81–96), i.e., ca. 95 (Irenaeus *Against Heresies* 5.30.3). Later Christian writers regarded Domitian as the sponsor of a major persecution of the church (Eusebius *Ecclesiastical History* 3.17). However, there is no evidence that the Roman government officially persecuted Christians between A.D. 64 (the persecution under Nero) and 250 (the persecution under Decius). Nevertheless, other factors indicate that Revelation was written toward the end of the first century: first, the use of the code name "Babylon" (17:5) as a reference to Rome would only be probable after A.D. 70; second, the twelve apostles are referred to as revered founders of the past (21:14); and, third, Revelation refers to the rumors of Nero's return that circulated from A.D. 68 to the end of the century (13:3; 17:10–11).

Occasion and Purpose

John wrote to a group of seven Anatolian churches that were apparently experiencing pressure from Roman authorities. One Christian had already been publicly executed (2:13), possibly more (6:9–11; 20:4), and John expected that others probably would be (2:10; 6:11; 7:9–17). Was the situation so grim or did John paint an overly pessimistic picture? Though there was no official Roman campaign against Christians between A.D. 64 and 250, sporadic persecutions certainly occurred. Following the Neronian persecution, being a Christian was tantamount to being part of a criminal conspiracy, and Christians (unlike other religious groups) were punished simply for being Christians (Tacitus *Annals* 15.44.5; Pliny *Letters* 10.96.2–3). Their crime was an unwillingness to worship any God but their own, an exclusiveness the Greeks labeled "atheism." Whether Christians were persecuted or not depended on the zeal of the provincial governor and (perhaps more important) public opinion. The legal basis for charges against Christians in Roman law was simply a voluntary prosecutor (Lat. *delator*, "informer"), the charge of being a Christian, and a provincial governor willing to punish people on that charge.

One major purpose of Revelation, therefore, was to offer comfort and encouragement to persecuted Christians. John accomplished this in two ways: by revealing the blessed future state of Christians who are faithful to the testimony of Jesus even at the cost of their own lives and by assuring the readers of the inevitability and imminence of the divine punishment of their persecutors. John's revelatory message also condemned all types of cultural accommodation by Christians to their pagan environment.

Literary Form

Revelation is an "apocalypse," a type of revelatory literature consisting of an extended vision report mediated by a supernatural revealer and disclosing heavenly secrets or information about the end of the world. Many apocalypses originated within Judaism from ca. 200 B.C. to ca. A.D. 100 (→ Apocalyptic Literature). Some of the literary features of apocalypses include pseudonymity, historical reviews presented as predic-

tions of the future, reports of dreams or visions, bizarre imagery, dialogues between the revealer and the author, and an emphasis on the imminence of the end. Revelation, however, is not pseudonymous, nor does it contain historical reviews.

Interpreting Revelation

Revelation is the book in the NT that modern Western readers find the most foreign, often because of its bizarre apocalyptic symbolism. In Revelation, for example, the Lamb looks as though it has been killed and has seven horns and seven eyes (5:6); the beast from the sea has seven heads and ten horns (13:1). The contrast between such grotesque images and reality suggests that such visions have symbolic or mythopoetic significance. Yet apocalyptic language is not a code that can be broken down into a table of equivalents. The special genius of apocalyptic is its ability to universalize the harsh realities of particular historical situations by transposing them into a new key using archaic symbols of conflict and victory, suffering and vindication. Thus the beast from the sea represents Rome—yet more than Rome. More accurately, it represents an antagonistic role in the cosmic drama currently played by Rome, but previously played by others. Revelation is a literary classic, therefore, because it not only encapsulates human experience, but it gives that experience a transcultural yet Christian significance.

Literary Analysis

The literary analysis of Revelation is problematic because of the juxtaposition of tightly organized sections of material with more loosely constructed "digressions." The author favored the number seven (symbolizing divine pattern), which he used fifty-four times. He also used groupings of seven (heptads) as a structural device. Four extensive sections of Revelation are arranged in heptads: seven proclamations (2:1–3:20), seven seals (6:1–8:5), seven trumpets (8:8–11:18), and seven bowls (15:1–16:21). John also inserted three extensive sections of visions consisting of six digressions. The first two sections are 7:1–17 (the sealing of the 144,000), inserted between the opening of the sixth and seventh seals, and 10:1–11:14 (two digressions: John's renewed commission; the two prophetic witnesses), inserted between the sixth and seventh trumpets. These two insertions both expand the effects of the sixth set of plagues and delay the onset of the seventh. The third insertion, 12:1–14:20, consists of three digressions that introduce the major actors in the eschatological (end-time) drama and concludes with the final judgment at the Parousia (Gk., "coming"; → Parousia).

Revelation consists of two major sections framed by a prologue and an epilogue. The prologue is limited to 1:1–8, and 22:6–21 constitutes the epilogue. The two main sections of Revelation are strikingly unequal in size. The first section deals with Christ's proclamations to the seven churches (2:1–3:20), introduced by John's visionary commission (1:9–20). In turn, 1:9–3:21 introduces the main part of the work in 4:1–22:5. The structure of this main part of Revelation is the most problematic. One major problem is deciding whether various sections recapitulate, or repeat, the eschatological events narrated in later sections. For example, are the similarities between the plagues unleashed by the seven trumpets and seven bowls alternate ways of describing the same events? It is more likely that the author intends to create a unique chronological synthesis of eschatological events. Most of Revelation consists of a single extensive vision report (1:9–22:9). The author has imposed an artificial literary unity on many separate textual units by linking them together in an apparent chronological order using phrases such as "after these things" and (more frequently) "then I saw." This technique fosters the impression that the visions are narrated in the order in which the author received them. Further, the author has used an "encompassing" technique, for the seventh seal encompasses the effects of the seven trumpets and seven bowls, while the seventh trumpet encompasses the effects of the seven bowls. That suggests that the author intended to present the complex events of the end in chronological order (the exceptions are the three digressions inserted between 11:18 and 15:1). However, this appearance of chronological order does not exclude the likelihood that the sources the author used (e.g., the trumpet and bowl visions) might in fact have described similar events using varied apocalyptic imagery.

COMMENTARY

1:1–8

Prologue

The prologue consists of six literary units clearly separate from the continuous narrative beginning in v. 9. The numerous thematic and verbal parallels between vv. 1–8 and the epilogue (22:6–21) indicate that these two sections frame the entire book. The first sentence in Revelation functions, like the initial sentences in many ancient books, as the author's own descriptive title (vv. 1–2). The term "revelation" in 1:1 refers not to the literary form of Revelation, but rather to the revelatory experience of the author. The title provides divine authority for the entire book by giving the stages by which the revelation was mediated to John: God

gave it to Jesus Christ, who transmitted it through his angel to his servant John for the benefit of the servants of God, i.e., the seven churches. The mention of a single angel as the revelatory agent between Jesus Christ and John (cf. 22:6, 8) suggests that John had but one angelic tour guide responsible for mediating supernatural visions to him. Yet this fact is only mentioned in the prologue and epilogue and is contradicted by the main part of the book, in which a variety of otherworldly beings guide John and speak to him.

The first of seven beatitudes is placed here (v. 3; cf. 14:13; 16:15; 19:9; 20:6; 22:7, 14). John's preference for the number seven as both a symbolic number and an organizational principle suggests that the inclusion of precisely seven beatitudes, though unnumbered, is intentional. This pronouncement of blessing upon readers and upon those who both hear and obey (repeated in 22:7) is probably based on the practice of beginning or concluding readings or presentations of the words of God with various "read and keep" or "hear and obey" formulas (Matt. 7:24, 26; John 12:47; *Herm. Vis.* 5.5; 2 *Clem.* 19:1–3). John intended his composition to be read aloud before Christian congregations (v. 3) and perhaps used an epistolary framework for that reason.

Revelation is the only Jewish or Christian apocalypse that is framed as a letter, with an epistolary prescript in 1:4–5a and a concluding postscript in 22:21. Hellenistic epistolary prescriptions typically consisted of three elements: the superscription (sender), the adscription (addressee), and the salutation. "Grace to you and peace" is a Christian salutation first appearing in Paul's Letters (→ Letter; Salutations). The elaborate salutation in 1:4–5a is a Johannine expansion of the traditional salutation. The phrase "from him who is and who was and who is to come" (v. 4; cf. 1:8; 11:17; 16:5) alludes to the Septuagint (LXX) version of Exod. 3:14, in which the divine name "Yahweh" is interpreted to mean "the one who is." This name was familiar in Hellenistic Judaism in both Egypt and Anatolia, though in early Christian texts it is found only in Revelation. Just as Moses is told by God to tell the people that "the one who is" had sent him, so John legitimates his prophetic status and book by claiming that it was inspired by "the one who is."

The doxology of vv. 5b–6 immediately follows the epistolary prescript of vv. 4–5a, an unusual epistolary pattern paralleled only in Gal. 1:3–4. Doxologies normally consist of three elements: "to whom / be the glory [Gk. *doxa*] / forever. Amen" (4:9; 5:13b–14; 7:12). Each element can be variously expanded. Here "him" (God) is modified by several verbal forms describing the redemptive action of God through Christ: he has *loved* us, *freed* us from our sins, and *made* us a kingdom, priests.

Verses 7–8 are an example of an "amplified oracle," i.e., a prophetic saying appended to another one to expand or interpret it (for other examples, cf. 13:9; 14:13; 16:15). Christian prophetic pronouncements could receive a responsory "amen" (1 Cor. 14:16) and were subject to evaluation and interpretation (1 Cor. 14:29). John's inclusion of these oracles underlines his prophetic ministry. The first oracle predicts the Parousia of Christ as a cosmic event witnessed by everyone and anticipates the distress and fear of unbelievers about to experience judgment (cf. 19:11–16). The second oracle begins with the affirmative response "Even so. Amen" (v. 7b), it is attributed to the "Lord God," and it contains three "I am" predications. First, the divine name "Alpha and Omega" (cf. "First and Last," 1:17) was drawn from Hellenistic revelatory magic, where it abbreviated the seven Greek vowels, which were widely believed to constitute a name of the highest God. Second, "the one who is and who was and who is to come" combines Jewish and Hellenistic divine names. Third, "the Almighty" is borrowed from Judaism. In the highly stratified society of John's day, deities and rulers were accorded strings of extravagant titles. One of John's strategies for underlining the majesty and power of God and Christ in contrast to Satan and the earthly rulers in league with him is the use of titles of dignity drawn from various sources (cf. 1:17–18; 19:11–16).

1:9–20
John's Commissioning Vision

John's divine commission, narrated in 1:9–20, introduces not only the proclamations to the seven churches dictated by the exalted Christ (2:1–3:22), but the main part of Revelation as well (4:1–22:19). This is a commission for a particular task (i.e., to write what he will see and hear), not an inaugural vision calling him to the prophetic vocation (cf. Exod. 3:1–12; Isa. 6:1–13; Ezek. 1:1–3:11; similar commands to write down the substance of revelatory visions are found in 2 Esd. 14; *Herm. Vis.* 2.4.3; 5.5–7; *Herm. Sim.* 9.33.1). The purpose of this visionary commission to write is to provide divine legitimation for a controversial message.

The circumstances surrounding John's visionary experience are briefly recounted in vv. 9–10. He received the vision on Patmos, a tiny island (five miles wide by eight miles long) in the Aegean Sea about sixty miles southwest of Ephesus. He was there "on account of the word of God and the testimony of Jesus," i.e., probably exiled because he was a Christian (a view first mentioned ca. A.D. 190 by Clement of Alexandria, *The Rich Man's Salvation* 42), though there is no evidence that Patmos was a Roman penal colony. Exile (which had several voluntary and involuntary forms) was a relatively lenient form of punishment in Roman jurisprudence, usually reserved for people of wealth and position. The vision occurred on the "Lord's day" (probably Sunday, the Christian day of worship commemorating the Lord's resurrection) when John was

suddenly "in the Spirit," i.e., in a trance (cf. Acts 11:5; 22:17). Prophesying was an activity often exercised in worship services (1 Cor. 14:26–33; *Did.* 10:7; *Herm. Mand.* 11).

The vision itself (vv. 11–20) consists of an epiphany of the heavenly Christ appearing to John on earth, introduced (v. 11) and concluded (v. 19) by commands that John write what he sees (and hears) in a book for the seven churches. Supernatural commands to write the substance of a divine revelation, occasionally found in Judaism (cf. Isa. 30:8; 2 Esd. 14) are common in Greco-Roman literature (e.g., Aelius Aristides *Orations* 48.2; Callimachus *Aetia* 1.1.21–22; Plato *Phaedo* 4.60E–61B). After hearing a loud voice behind him commanding him to write (v. 11) John turns around. He sees "one like a son of man" holding seven stars in his right hand, a sharp sword issuing from his mouth, and his face shining as the sun. John responds in a manner typical for recipients of such vision reports: he falls down paralyzed with fear (Dan. 8:17; 10:9–11; *1 Enoch* 14:14; *2 Enoch* 1:7). The awesome figure urges John not to be afraid and identifies himself with a series of descriptive phrases indicating that he is none other than the exalted Christ. In vv. 17b–18, he describes himself with several divine titles, refers to his death and resurrection, and claims to possess the keys to death and Hades. According to the ancient mythical view, both heaven and the underworld were linked to this world by doors or gates (cf. 4:1). In Hellenistic Anatolia, the ancient goddess Hekate was accorded universal sovereignty as mistress of the cosmos and was thought to possess the keys to Hades. John, therefore, portrays Christ as usurping the authority of Hekate as well as every other natural or supernatural authority.

The entire vision is a pastiche of language from Jewish epiphany stories ("appearances" of divine beings on earth). John's main source of imagery for this epiphany is Dan. 10:5–14 (describing the angel Gabriel), supplemented by features from the description of God in Dan. 7:9 (hair white like wool) and from the mysterious figure in Dan. 7:13 ("one like a son of man"). In Jewish literature, similar epiphanic language is found in *Jos. Asen.* 14:8–11; *Apoc. Zeph.* 6:11–14. Similar descriptions of divine beings seen in epiphanies are found in Greek sources (Homer *Iliad* 8.41–44; 13. 22–25; Callimachus *Hymn to Apollo* 2.3). The author uses various visual and verbal attributes from the vision in the descriptions of Christ in the introductions to each of the seven letters, thereby linking 2:1–3:22 to the introductory commission vision. The metaphorical character of what John sees is made obvious in v. 20, where the seven stars are interpreted as the seven angels of the churches and the seven lampstands as the seven churches themselves. The seven lampstands suggest the seven-branch golden menorah of the tabernacle and Temple (Exod. 25:31–40) seen in Zechariah's vision (Zech. 4:1–2)

2:1–3:22

Christ Addresses the Seven Churches

The seven proclamations, written by John for their present context, have a strong emphasis on the individual and corporate behavior expected of the addressees. Often inaccurately characterized as letters, the seven proclamations are actually prophetic messages in the form of ancient royal or imperial edicts (public proclamations of laws or policies enacted by a ruler possessing the requisite authority), an appropriate form of expression for the exalted Christ, who is depicted as both king and priest in John's vision (1:9–20). Each of the proclamations exhibits a similar structure: first, an introduction (containing the addressee, the phrase "thus says" [NRSV: "the words of"], and phrases identifying the sender); second, a central section introduced by "I know" that includes recognition and praise for past behavior, censure, and admonitions for change; and, third, a double conclusion with a call for vigilance and an exhortation to conquer.

No one knows why John wrote just to these seven churches, particularly when there were many other important Christian congregations in Asia Minor (e.g., Magnesia, Tralles, and Hierapolis). By the late second century the seven churches addressed by John were understood as symbolizing the universal church. All seven were within one hundred miles of Ephesus in the Roman proconsular province of Asia and possibly formed a circuit for itinerant Christian prophets and teachers. After the fall of Jerusalem following the first Jewish revolt of A.D. 66–73, Anatolia had become one of the most important geographical centers of Christianity, with a population of perhaps eighty thousand Christians by the end of the century.

Each of the seven proclamations is addressed to the "angel" of that community. Since John elsewhere consistently uses the Greek term *aggelos* ("angel," "messenger") of supernatural beings subordinate to God, it is likely that the term has that meaning here. Or, translated "messenger," it may refer to representatives John sent to the churches with copies of his circular apocalypse. Yet the idea that each church is represented in the heavenly world by an angelic figure who somehow personifies that church, though unparalleled, is apparently John's meaning.

2:1–7, To Ephesus. Ephesus was the most illustrious city of Asia Minor, a center of travel, trade, and commerce and the seat of the Roman provincial governor. It had a population of ca. 225,000 and was a center of the imperial cult boasting four imperial temples. During the reign of Domitian, Ephesus became the "warden" (Gk. *neokoros*) of the imperial temple in Asia. Since the mid-first century, Ephesus had also been an important Christian center (Acts 18–20; 1 Cor. 15:32; 16:8).

The Ephesian church receives a generally positive

evaluation (vv. 2–3). It has worked hard and patiently endured persecution and ostracism. It is a pure church uncorrupted by false apostles whom it has tested and unmasked (v. 2). During this period the testing of itinerant apostles and prophets became a widespread necessity (*Did.* 11–13). The term "apostle" (meaning "emissary") was applied to itinerant missionaries in early Christianity. Christian communities were scattered throughout the ancient world and linked by traveling Christians (including apostles, prophets, and teachers) dependent on local hospitality (3 John 5–8). Like other religious movements, Christianity had its share of charlatans (*Herm. Man.* 11.12; *Did.* 11.6). The Ephesians are particularly commended for opposing the Nicolaitans (see below on 2:12–17), possibly identical with the "evil men" and false apostles of 2:2. The Nicolaitans are mentioned by several early Christian writers (Irenaeus *Against Heresies* 1.26.3; 3.11.1; Hippolytus *Refutation of All Heresies* 7.36.3) and improbably traced to Nicolas of Antioch (Acts 6:5).

The Ephesians are faulted for abandoning the love they had at first (v. 5). They are exhorted to remember their previous condition and with that in mind to repent and behave as they once did. If they fail to do so, Christ threatens to "come" to them (not in the Parousia, but in an act of temporal judgment; cf. 2:16) and blot their community out of existence. These remarks suggest that second-generation Christians had developed a comfortable accommodation with the pagan world that John, an intolerant separatist, opposed.

One part of the two-part conclusion of each of the proclamations is the formula "He who has ears, let him hear / what the Spirit says to the churches" (v. 7a). In OT prophetic oracles, the recipients are frequently enjoined to "Hear the word of Yahweh!" (1 Kings 22:19; Amos 7:16; Jer. 42:15). The first part of this saying is found in various formulations seven times in the sayings of Jesus in the synoptic Gospels (e.g., Mark 4:9, 23). The formula was closely associated with the sayings of Jesus and thus an appropriate concluding refrain for prophetic messages from the heavenly Christ.

The reward for conquering (a military metaphor) mentioned in the second part of the conclusion (v. 7b) is the privilege of eating the fruit of the tree of life in the paradise of God (22:1, 19), a metaphor for eternal life (Gen. 3:22–24). The tree or plant of life, first mentioned in the OT in Gen. 2:9 (paired with the fatal tree of the knowledge of good and evil), was a familiar theme throughout the ancient Near East, particularly in early Judaism (*T. Levi* 18:10–11; 2 Esd. 8:52; *4 Bar.* 9:16; → Tree of Life, The).

2:8–11, To Smyrna. Smyrna became a center for the imperial cult when, in competition with eleven other cities, it was granted the right to have a temple to Tiberius, Livia, and the senate in A.D. 29 (Tacitus *Annals* 4.55–56). A temple to *dea Roma* (Lat., "the goddess Rome") was dedicated before the mid-second century B.C. This community, which apparently had few if any wealthy members (v. 9), had experienced severe persecution as the apparent result of Jewish "slander." They are not real Jews, claims John, but a synagogue of Satan. This implies that Christians are the true Israel (a widespread Christian view; cf. Gal. 6:16; Phil. 3:3). The term "slander" here in all likelihood refers to the denunciation of Christians to Roman authorities. Since Jews had a special status exempting them from certain pagan cultic obligations, Jewish Christians could take advantage of those benefits by claiming to be Jews.

The possibility that some Christians will soon be imprisoned (v. 10) indicates the seriousness of the situation. Roman prisons were used for just three reasons: to compel obedience to a magistrate's order, to confine the accused until trial, or for detainment until execution. Antipas has already been publicly executed (2:13), and he was probably not alone (6:9–11; 11:7; 20:4). The reward for faithfulness is the "crown [or more accurately, 'wreath'] of life," a metaphor for eternal life (2:10b). In the Greek world, wreaths were used as prizes in athletic contests and were buried with the dead, symbolizing their victories in life. In v. 11 the victorious Christian is promised exemption from the second death (see commentary below on 20:7–15).

2:12–17, To Pergamum. Pergamum, "the most renowned of Asia" (Pliny *Natural History* 5.126), was located sixty-eight miles north of Smyrna and had an estimated population of 120,000. Pergamum was the site of an enormous altar of Zeus now displayed in reconstructed form in the Pergamon Museum in Berlin. As the site of the first and most important temple to the deified Augustus, Pergamum was an important center for the imperial cult. "Satan's throne" (v. 13) may refer to this center of imperial worship or, less likely, to the great altar of Zeus or possibly to the seat of judgment used by Roman magistrates.

The Pergamene Christians are commended for their steadfastness in the face of persecution. Antipas, who was executed for unspecified reasons, is called "my faithful witness" (NIV); the Greek term for "witness" is *martys,* a term that soon came to include the idea of dying for the faith. Nevertheless the church is censured for tolerating some who hold the teaching of Balaam involving eating food sacrificed to idols and practicing immorality. Balaam was a non-Israelite diviner whose contact with Israel is described in Numbers 22–24 and who was regarded as instrumental in leading Israel into idolatrous and immoral practices (Num. 25:1–5; 31:16). In later Jewish tradition, Balaam became a paradigmatic false prophet (Philo *Life of Moses* 1.263–304; Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 4.126–30). The practice of eating food sacrificed to idols was problematic for both Jews and Christians. Ancients rarely ate meat, and when they did it was usually part of public or private religious celebrations in which edible portions of sacrificial animals were

eaten. Such meat was taboo for Jews (4 Macc. 5:2–3; *m. Avod. Zar.* 2.3), a prohibition also maintained by Jewish Christians (Acts 15:29), though Paul was equivocal on the subject (1 Cor. 8:4–13; 10:14–11:1).

The Nicolaitans (v. 15), often thought to be Gnostics, are accused of teaching sexual immorality and eating meat offered to idols, both libertine practices. However, Gnostic texts encourage neither libertine sexual promiscuity nor the eating of sacrificial meat. The Pergamene Christians are urged to repent; otherwise Christ threatens to come to them in judgment (cf. 2:5). Those who conquer are promised hidden manna and a white stone with a new name inscribed on it. "Manna" (a Heb. term meaning "what is it?") was the name for miraculous "bread" supplied to the Israelites in the wilderness by God (Exod. 16:1–36; → Manna). Jews expected God to repeat that miracle in the last days (John 6:31–34; *2 Apoc. Bar.* 29:8). Manna is therefore another metaphor for eternal life (as in John 6:49–51).

2:18–29, To Thyatira. Thyatira was located forty-five miles southeast of Pergamum. The church is commended for its faith, service, and patient endurance like the Ephesian church (2:2–3). Unlike the latter, the Thyatirans' present spiritual condition is judged healthier than formerly (v. 19). Like the Pergamenes, they are denounced for tolerating heretics (vv. 20–23). An unnamed woman prophet nicknamed "Jezebel" teaches Christians to indulge in sexual promiscuity and eat sacrificial meat (see commentary above on 2:12–17). The similarity between "Jezebel's" program and that of the Nicolaitans (cf. 2:14–15) suggests that she is one of their local leaders. The statement "I gave her time to repent" (v. 21) probably refers to an earlier prophetic judgment speech delivered by John or a member of his prophetic circle. The threat that "Jezebel" and her circle will become sick and suffer tribulation and even death (vv. 22–23) means that physical illness among Christians could be construed as divine punishment for sin (1 Cor. 11:29–30). Jezebel is the name of the infamous foreign wife of king Ahab of Israel, whose checkered career is recounted in 1 Kings 16:28–19:3; 2 Kings 9:22, 30–37. With a corps of 850 prophets of Baal (1 Kings 18:19), she opposed true prophets of Yahweh (1 Kings 18:4) and introduced "harlotries and sorceries" to Israel. The Thyatiran "Jezebel" possibly used her prophetic gift for legitimating the deviant practices of which she is accused in v. 20. Philo warned his readers against would-be prophets who might lead people to adopt pagan practices (*Special Laws* 1.315–16). Verses 24–25 specifically address those in the church who are not followers of "Jezebel" and who have not learned "the deep things of Satan," a possible reference to the "profound" teachings of "Jezebel."

3:1–6, To Sardis. Sardis, forty miles southeast of Thyatira and forty-five miles east of Smyrna, was one of the more illustrious cities of ancient Anatolia and a major rival of Ephesus and Smyrna, boasting a temple to Augustus. The earthquake of A.D. 17 destroyed much of the Hellenistic city (Tacitus *Annals* 2.47), which was rebuilt with aid from the emperors Tiberius and Claudius. During the imperial period, its population ranged between 60,000 and 100,000 inhabitants. Recent archaeological exploration has uncovered one of the largest ancient synagogues yet known, accommodating about 1,000 people, reflecting the presence of a large, wealthy, and influential Jewish community.

Christ is described as he "who has the seven spirits of God and the seven stars" (3:1, alluding to 1:16–20). The spirits represent angels and the stars represent churches. This church receives primarily censure; only a minority of Christians "have not soiled their garments" (v. 4). Christ knows their true spiritual condition. Though they appear hale and hearty to others, they are actually on the point of spiritual death (v. 1b). They are encouraged to wake up and change their ways before it is too late (v. 2). In the NT, watchfulness is an indispensable characteristic of the people of God in view of the imminence of the end (Mark 13:33–37; Matt. 25:13). Should they fail to awake and repent, Christ threatens to come unexpectedly, like a thief (v. 3), an allusion to a saying of Jesus also preserved in Matt. 24:42–44; Luke 12:39–40 (cf. Rev. 16:15). The saying has three distinctive motifs: the exhortation to watch, the metaphor of the thief (first occurring in 1 Thess. 5:2 and later in 2 Pet. 3:10), and the unexpected time of arrival. In the NT, only in Rev. 3:5 and 16:15 is the thief identified with Christ.

Those who conquer will be rewarded with white garments (3:4b–5a), symbolizing moral and spiritual purity. White garments were worn on religious festivals and when performing cultic acts such as sacrifice and by victorious Roman generals when celebrating triumphs in Rome. Further, their names will not be blotted out of the book of life, another metaphor for eternal life. Athens and other Greek cities had the custom of erasing from the rolls the names of citizens executed by the state (Dio Chrystom *Discourse* 31.84–85; Xenophon *Hellenica* 2.3.51). Having one's name written in the book of life thus suggests heavenly citizenship (Heb. 12:23; cf. Phil. 3:20; 1 Pet. 1:17). The idea of a "book of life" (see Rev. 13:8; 17:8; 20:15; 21:27) from which one's name could be erased is common in Judaism (Exod. 32:32–33; *Jub.* 30:20–22; *Jos. Asen.* 15:4[3]). Christ's promise to confess the victorious Christian's name before the Father and his angels alludes to a saying of Jesus found in the Q tradition (Matt. 10:32; Luke 12:8) and in Mark 8:38 (Luke 9:26), though John was probably dependent on oral rather than written tradition.

3:7–13, To Philadelphia. Philadelphia, located thirty miles southeast of Sardis, suffered extensive damage in the earthquake of A.D. 17 (Tacitus *Annals* 2.47.3–4),

though lesser quakes occurred frequently (Strabo 12.8.18). Heavily dependent on viticulture because of a rich volcanic soil (Strabo 13.4.11), the city would have been radically affected by Domitian's edict of A.D. 92 ordering half the provincial vineyards cut down and replanted, had the edict been enforced.

Alluding to Isa. 22:22, Christ is designated as he "who has the key of David, who opens and no one shall shut, who shuts and no one opens" (v. 7), probably referring to his power to admit or bar people from the heavenly kingdom (cf. Matt. 16:19). The exalted Christ has set an "open door" before the Philadelphian Christians (v. 8), a metaphor referring to their "reserved seats" in the eschatological kingdom. There was apparently a Jewish synagogue there (v. 9), and Philadelphian Christians had probably suffered from accusations by Jews before Roman authorities as in Smyrna (v. 9). Because they have kept the testimony of Jesus by patiently enduring persecution, they will be kept from "the hour of trial which is coming on the whole world" (v. 10). This refers to the coming eschatological period of tribulation (9:3–21), from which they will be protected. "Those who dwell upon the earth" (v. 10) are unbelievers (cf. 6:10; 8:13; 11:10; 13:8, 14; 17:8) who repeatedly refuse to repent in spite of the eschatological plagues unleashed by God (e.g., 9:20–21; 16:9, 11). Christ's promise to come soon (3:11) should be understood not as a coming in judgment (as in 2:5, 16; 3:3), but as the Parousia, in which he comes to deliver his people (14:14–16; 22:7, 20). Those who conquer will be made pillars in the temple of God (3:12), a feature suggesting that the new Jerusalem is a metaphor for the Christian community. Conquering Christians will have inscribed on them the names of God, the city of God, and the new Jerusalem (v. 12), varied metaphors indicating eschatological salvation.

3:14–22, To Laodicea. Laodicea, forty miles southeast of Philadelphia, was destroyed in an earthquake in A.D. 60 (*Sib. Or.* 5.290–91) and was subsequently rebuilt (*Sib. Or.* 4.107–8). An imperial temple was constructed after the quake. It was the most important city in the Lycus valley, where two other cities also contained Christian communities, Hierapolis and Colossae (Col. 4:13). The region had a large Jewish population (Cicero *Pro Flacco* 28.68; Josephus *Antiquities of the Jews* 12.147–53).

The community is condemned for being neither cold nor hot, but lukewarm (vv. 15–16), a metaphor linked to the region's water supply. The "hot" springs of Hierapolis were famous for their medicinal properties, and the "cold" waters of Colossae were prized for their purity. The tepid waters of Laodicea, however, were both abundant and bad. Though the church thinks itself rich and lacking nothing, it is actually "wretched, pitiable, poor, blind and naked" (v. 17). To remedy this deplorable spiritual state, they require "gold" refined by the fires of testing and patient endurance, "white garments" of purity, and "eye salve" to restore their sight (v. 18). Laodicea was in fact the site of a medical school and a local pharmaceutical industry with a secret recipe for an effective eye salve. The famous metaphor of Christ standing at the door and knocking (v. 20) has been explained as an allusion to Song of Sg. 5:2 or a modified saying of Jesus (Luke 12:35–38; cf. Mark 13:33–37). The victorious Christians will be able to sit with Christ upon his throne, just as he sat upon the throne of his Father (v. 21), another reference to sharing Christ's reign (cf. 2:26–27).

4:1–22:9
From Tribulation to Glory

A new stage of John's revelatory vision begins in 4:1, where the scene shifts from earth to heaven. Most of the following (4:1–19:10) focuses on the terrible eschatological plagues that will occur before the Parousia.

4:1–7:17
The Six Seals

Even though the first major section of the main part of Revelation includes primarily 4:1–8:1, it cannot be strictly limited to this passage, since the scroll with seven seals contains the entire course of eschatological events through 22:9.

4:1–5:14, The Heavenly Throne Room. A heavenly throne room scene introduces each of the three heptads of seals, trumpets, and bowls (4:1–5:14; 8:1–5; 15:1–8), anchoring each series of events in the sovereignty of God, who controls history. This first throne room scene is the longest and most detailed. The author orients readers to the inhabitants and activities that will be repeated or amplified in later scenes. John sees an open door in heaven, and the voice he heard behind him earlier (1:10), i.e., the exalted Christ, invites him to "come up hither," where future events will be revealed to him. Just as ancient cosmology conceptualized a door or gates connecting earth with the underworld (cf. 1:18), the notion of a door separating earth from heaven was also common. The related motifs of the heavenly door, the invitation to enter, and a vision of the throne room of God constitute a commonplace in ancient revelatory literature (cf. *1 Enoch* 14:8–25; *T. Levi.* 2:6; 5:1). At once, John is "in the Spirit" (2:2; cf. 1:9), a trancelike state necessary for a visionary ascent to heaven. Immediately he finds himself present as an observer in the heavenly throne room.

Throughout the ancient world, high gods (the Greek Zeus, the Roman Jupiter, the Babylonian Marduk, and the Israelite Yahweh) were conceptualized as great kings dwelling in magnificent heavenly palaces with innumerable supernatural courtiers. Occasionally OT prophets are depicted as making visionary as-

cents to the heavenly court, where, by eavesdropping on the proceedings, they learn what will later transpire on earth (1 Kings 22:17–23; Isa. 6:1–7; Zech. 3:1–5; cf. Jer. 23:18). John's description, dependent on Ezek. 1:4–28, generally tallies with traditional Jewish conceptions of heaven.

John first sees the magnificent throne of the God, but avoids attempting to describe God himself (4:3; cf. 22:4). The cosmic symbolism of the circle is reflected in the encircling rainbow "round" the throne (4:3), the four living creatures encircling the throne (4:6), the circle of twenty-four elders (4:4), all encircled by an innumerable multitude of angels (5:11). God, at the center of all, is the ultimate cosmic reality. The thunder and lightning emanating from the throne (5:5) suggest the Sinai theophany (Exod. 19:16–18; 20:18–20; cf. Isa. 29:6). The four living creatures described in 4:6–8 (cf. Ezek. 1:5–25; Isa. 6:2) symbolize the omniscience of God. After Irenaeus (ca. A.D. 180) the four creatures came to symbolize the four Gospels (Mark is the lion, Luke the ox, Matthew the man, and John the eagle). The ensemble worn by twenty-four elders, white garments and gold wreaths, was customary for embassies and suppliants to Hellenistic kings and Roman emperors. The number twenty-four, found only here in Revelation, symbolizes the complete people of God (twelve Israelite tribes plus twelve apostles). The seven torches of fire (4:5) are based on the menorah of the tabernacle and Temple (cf. Zech. 4:1–10), and the "sea of glass" (4:6) may represent the transcendence of God, his separation from the created order.

Following the description of the serene magnificence of the throne room of God and the worship perpetually offered to God by heavenly beings (4:1–11), John's attention is drawn to a scroll with seven seals in the right hand of God (5:1), who is remarkably passive throughout the scene. A brief drama then unfolds in which someone is sought who is worthy to break the seals and open the scroll (5:2–4). One function of the heavenly council motif is the commissioning of an emissary (cf. Isa. 6:8: "Who can we send?"; 1 Kings 22:20: "Who will entice Ahab?"; cf. Rev. 5:2: "Who is worthy to open the scroll?"). John weeps when no one is found, dramatizing Israel's past unfulfilled messianic expectation. One of the elders tells John that the Lion of the tribe of Judah (Gen. 49:9), the Root of David (Isa. 11:1, 10), i.e., the Messiah, has conquered and is therefore qualified (5:5). Yet John sees not a lion, but a lamb looking as though it had been slain (v. 6). The striking contrast between the two images suggests the contrast between the type of warrior messiah expected by first-century Judaism and Jesus' role as a suffering servant (cf. Matt. 11:2–6; Luke 7:18–23). The term "lamb" alludes to the sacrificial death of Jesus under the image of the Passover lamb (cf. 1 Cor. 5:7; 1 Pet. 1:19; John 1:29).

What is the significance of the scroll and why is the Lamb alone able to open it? The scroll represents the final stage in God's predetermined redemptive purpose for the world, to be realized between the exaltation of Christ, following his death and resurrection, and the final inauguration of the eternal reign of God; i.e., it symbolizes the entire eschatological program narrated in Revelation. The antiphonal hymns of 5:9–14 celebrate the worthiness of the Lamb whose death has provided salvation for people of every nation. Though the Lamb has already been exalted to the throne of God and shares his rule, God's plan remains incomplete unless he (the only qualified emissary of God) receives full power and authority (symbolized by the scroll) to achieve the final eschatological victory.

6:1–17, The First Six Seals. The breaking of each of the first six seals by the Lamb unleashes a series of tribulations that preview the trumpet and bowl judgments. The opening of the first four seals sends out four horsemen (adapted from Zech. 1:8–11; 6:1–8), each inflicting a particular kind of judgment on humanity: irresistible conquest, war and bloodshed, famine, and disease and death. With the opening of the fifth seal, John sees the souls of martyrs beneath the altar crying out for justice; they are told to wait until their number is completed (vv. 9–11; cf. 7:1–8). The opening of the sixth seal is followed by a series of cosmic disturbances: a great earthquake (a relatively common phenomenon in the province of Asia), a solar eclipse, the moon turns red, stars fall to earth (cf. Mark 13:24–25; Matt. 24:29), the sky vanishes, and every mountain and island is moved. These terrible catastrophes move unbelievers of every social station to fear the judgment of God and the Lamb. Although the last judgment appears to be inaugurated by the opening of the sixth seal, the eschatological program of Revelation still requires the trumpet and bowl plagues.

7:1–17, First Digression: The Sealing of the 144,000. The question of 6:17 provides an introduction to 7:1–17, a digression dealing with how the "servants of God" (v. 3) will fare during the coming catastrophes. A twofold answer is provided in 7:1–17. First (vv. 1–8), the effects of the plagues on Christians are delayed while 144,000 servants of God are sealed on their foreheads, 12,000 from each of the twelve tribes of Israel. This army of 144,000 represents the particular group of Christians (including all ages and both genders) who have been specially protected by God from both divine plagues and human persecution just before the final eschatological tribulation begins and who consequently survive that tribulation and the great eschatological battle that is the culmination of that tribulation. John receives a visionary preview of an innumerable host (Gen. 15:5) representing all of the people of God (v. 9). Unlike the 144,000, other Christians will perish in the "great tribulation" (v. 14) but will enjoy an eternal state of blessedness with the dawn of the everlasting kingdom (cf. 21:1–5).

8:1–11:14
The Seventh Seal and the Six Trumpets

8:1, The Seventh Seal. The opening of the seventh seal, unlike the first six, results in an anticlimactic period of silence in heaven, perhaps representing the primeval silence of the seventh day of creation. The sealed scroll has now been completely opened, and the remainder of Revelation follows the script it contains, beginning with the trumpet judgments.

8:2–5, The Altar of Incense. As in the other heptads, the opening scene is in the heavenly court. An angel stands at the heavenly altar before the throne of God, where the prayers of Christians (no doubt for deliverance and justice) are like smoke mingled with incense rising up before God. The censer filled with fire from the altar that the angel casts down to the earth symbolizes the plagues that will follow the blowing of each of the trumpets.

8:6–9:21, The First Six Trumpets. The narrative of the seven trumpet judgments, like that of the seven bowls of God's wrath (15:1–16:21), is an eschatological application of the ten plagues of Egypt (Exod. 7–12). Though the Egyptian plagues were a recurring theme in early Jewish literature, they are rarely interpreted eschatologically (an exception is *Apoc. Abr.* 30). The preliminary character of the judgments unleashed by the seven trumpets is obvious since only one-third of the targeted persons or things are affected. Two-thirds of the natural and human world thus survive for the final round of bowl tribulations. This pattern is unique in Jewish apocalypses and is the author's way of accommodating a trebling of the final punishments. The tribulations unleashed by the seven trumpets are as follows: (1) hail, fire, and blood fall; a third of the earth is burned (8:7; cf. the seventh plague of Exod. 9:22–25 and the fourth and seventh bowls in Rev. 16:8–9, 19–21); (2) a great mountain pollutes the sea with blood, destroying a third of sea creatures and ships (8:8–9; cf. first plague of Exod. 7:20–21 and the second bowl in Rev. 16:3); (3) a star named Wormwood (named for its poisonous effect, since no actual star had that name) falls on a third of the rivers and springs, poisoning them (8:10–11; no model in Exod. 7–12 or counterpart in Rev. 15–16); (4) one-third of the sun, moon, and stars become darkened (8:12; similar to the ninth plague of Exod. 10:21 and the fifth bowl plague in Rev. 16:10); the final three trumpets form a group of three woes announced in 8:13 (cf. 9:12; 11:14); (5) the fifth trumpet causes a star to fall from heaven to earth (Satan, cf. 12:9), which releases a plague of locusts from the bottomless pit who harm only those lacking God's seal (9:1–12; cf. the eighth plague of locusts in Exod. 10:4–20; no counterpart in Rev. 15–16); (6) the four angels bound at the Euphrates River, symbolizing four nations, kill one-third of humankind (9:13–19; similar to punishment of the sixth bowl in 16:12). John concludes by observing that the plagues did not cause unbelievers to repent of their idolatry and immorality (9:20–21). Does this mean that these punishments were intended to serve as a deterrent? Repentance was not the purpose of the original Exodus plagues even though Pharaoh's failure to repent is mentioned (Exod. 7:3–4a; 10:1). The failure to repent is therefore a formal motif derived from Exod. 7–12.

10:1–11, Second Digression: The Angel and the Little Scroll. Following the sixth trumpet (9:13–21), John inserts two digressions (10:1–11; 11:1–14) that expand on the effects of the sixth trumpet (11:14 mentions that the second woe, i.e., the sixth trumpet, has passed) and dramatically delay the blowing of the seventh in 11:15–18 (just as 7:1–17 delays opening the seventh seal in 8:1). John sees a majestic angel whom he describes with imagery like that used to describe visions of God. The angel holds a small scroll, reminiscent of the sealed scroll in chap. 5. The angel swears a powerful oath by the creator of heaven, earth, and the sea (and what is in them), which he validates by touching all three elements (10:5–6). The substance of this oath is the prophecy that there will be no further delay, but that when the seventh trumpet sounds the mystery of God predicted by the prophets will be fulfilled (v. 7). The term "mystery" is a technical apocalyptic term meaning divinely concealed information about the end of the age now disclosed to the inspired insight of a prophet or apocalyptist (*1 Enoch* 103:2; 1QpHab 7:5; 1 Cor. 15:51; Rom. 11:25–26). When John takes the scroll from the angel (10:8), he is told to eat it (v. 9). This prophetic symbolic action is modeled after Ezek. 2:8–3:3, where the episode dramatizes Ezekiel's prophetic call (Ezek. 1:1–3:27). As soon as John has eaten the scroll he is told (v. 11), "You must *again* prophesy about many peoples and nations and tongues and kings." This renewed commission reveals John's prophetic consciousness, a commission primarily applicable to the impending judgments of the seven bowls that John will describe.

11:1–14, Third Digression: The Two Prophetic Witnesses. This section narrates the mission of two mysterious eschatological prophetic witnesses. Their ministry, logically following John's renewed prophetic commission in 10:8–11, dramatizes testimony borne by John and his prophetic colleagues. John has probably fused two earlier Jewish oracles (11:1–2 and 3–13), connected only by the mention of the holy city (vv. 2, 8). In vv. 1–2, John is given a measuring stick and told to measure the temple of God, the altar, and the worshipers (a symbol of protection). Is John referring to a literal or a symbolic temple? Since the Herodian Temple was destroyed when Jerusalem fell in A.D. 70, vv. 1–2 may preserve an oracle uttered by a Jewish prophet in besieged Jerusalem late in the war, hoping

that the Temple would be preserved (Josephus *Jewish War* 6.286). The temple and altar in this new context represent the people of God, while the outer court is the unbelieving world. This entire section is not a vision that John sees, but a meditation on the theme of the two witnesses. The pagan domination over the holy city will be for forty-two months (v. 2); the prophetic witness will be active for 1,260 days (v. 3). Both figures are derived from the "time, two times, and half a time" (i.e., three and one-half years) of Dan. 7:25, symbolizing a limited period of time.

The second oracle (vv. 3–13) focuses on the ministry of the two prophetic witnesses abruptly concluded by the appearance of an eschatological adversary. The passage begins with an allusion to the two olive trees and the two (instead of seven) lamps of Zech. 4:1–14; the olive trees represent Zerubbabel, the claimant to the Davidic throne, and Joshua, the high priest. The description of the witnesses draws from traditional Jewish conceptions of Enoch, Elijah, and Moses, all taken up alive into heaven like the two witnesses (v. 12). They have the power to perform punitive miracles; they can destroy their opponents with fire and cause drought (like Elijah; cf. 2 Kings 1:9–16; 1 Kings 17:1) and smite the earth with plagues (like Moses; cf. Exod. 7–10). Strangely, the content of their message is not mentioned. They are often interpreted as Elijah and Moses (whose eschatological return was expected; cf. Mal. 4:5–6; Deut. 18:15–18, though not in tandem) or Enoch and Elijah (*Apoc. Elij.* 4:7–19). Yet they do not embody two specific eschatological figures (since they are identical in every respect), but represent the prophetic witness of the Christian church. When the brief period of their immunity is over, they will be killed by the beast from the bottomless pit (v. 7; i.e., the beast of 13:1; 17:8). The scene of their prophetic activity and the place where their unburied bodies lie is in "the great city," certainly Jerusalem, prophetically called "Sodom" and "Egypt," where Christ was crucified, yet also representing the world that has rejected the gospel and slain its messengers. Suffering and martyrdom were closely associated with the prophetic role in early Judaism (Neh. 9:26; 1 Thess. 2:15; Matt. 23:34–36; Luke 11:49–51; Acts 7:52).

11:15–16:16
The Seventh Trumpet and the Six Bowls

Intercalated between the blowing of the seventh trumpet (11:15–18) and the narrative of the six bowls (15:1–16:16) are three separate visionary "digressions" that together form a continuous eschatological narrative (12:1–14:20).

11:15–18, The Seventh Trumpet. The seventh trumpet appears to inaugurate the eschaton ("the End"), for an unidentified heavenly voice announces: "the kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ" (v. 15). Yet, as in the case of the sixth seal (6:12–17), this is another preliminary anticipation.

11:19–12:17, Fourth Digression: Satan and the Messiah. In 11:19, the heavenly temple is opened to the accompaniment of atmospheric and seismic phenomena associated with an epiphany (cf. 8:5, which introduces the series of seven trumpets). John has used both Hellenistic and Jewish traditions in composing this chapter. The myth of the eschatological battle between Michael and the dragon (12:7–9) is inserted into the myth of the woman who bears a child and is attacked by a great red dragon (12:1–6, 13–17). The myth of the woman, the child, and the dragon (12:1–6, 13–17) can be read in several ways. In a Christian context, it is natural to understand the woman of vv. 1–6 as Mary and the child as Jesus. Yet in vv. 13–17, where "the rest of her offspring" (v. 17) are mentioned, she seems to personify Zion or the church, while her persecuted offspring represent Christians. The child is clearly the Messiah, described as "one who is to rule all the nations with a rod of iron" (v. 5, alluding to Ps. 2:9). The fact that the child was "caught up" to God and to his throne (v. 5) suggests the ascension of the resurrected Jesus. John has rewritten a Hellenistic version of the combat myth found throughout the ancient world.

The particular myth John used is the Greek Leto-Apollo-Python myth. The goddess Leto, pregnant with Apollo, was pursued by the dragon Python. Leto fled to a distant island and eventually gave birth to Apollo, who, when just four days old, killed Python. To his adaptation of the myth of Leto-Apollo-Python, John has prefixed a description of the two images that served as a catalyst for his juxtaposition of two mythic traditions. A woman appears in heaven (v. 1) followed by the appearance of a great red dragon, her antagonist (v. 3). The woman is presented in astral imagery (clothed with the sun, the moon under her feet, and wearing the crown of the Zodiac) as the queen of the cosmos (v. 1). Artemis, Hekate, and Isis were similarly described. The dragon (alias the devil, the ancient serpent, and Satan, v. 12), the primary antagonist of God, first appears at this point in John's eschatological drama (v. 3). The ascension of the child in v. 5 is described using the rapture motif commonly found in Greek myths involving deification through ascension to heaven.

The myth of the heavenly battle in which Michael defeats and expels Satan and his angels (vv. 7–9) is always a primordial rather than an eschatological event in Jewish thought (*2 Enoch* 29:4–5; *Adam and Eve* 12–16; cf. Isa. 14:12–15). Yet Satan's eschatological fall to earth is closely paralleled in Jesus' vision of Satan's fall from heaven (Luke 10:18, NRSV). The fact that Michael is the one who defeats Satan, not the Messiah as in Christian tradition, underscores the Jewish character of 12:7–9.

13:1–18, Fifth Digression: The Two Beasts. Here John introduces the dragon's two earthly allies, the beast from the sea and the beast from the land, who, with the dragon, constitute an unholy eschatological trinity. Many versions of a primal myth of combat between the great gods and a sea dragon or similar monsters circulated in the ancient world. The Greeks told stories about the conflict between Zeus and Typhon, Apollo and Python, the Babylonians about Marduk and Tiamat, and the Israelites about Yahweh and Rahab (Isa. 51:9–10; Ps. 89:10) or Leviathan (Ps. 74:13–14). According to Jewish primeval mythology, God created two sea monsters on the fifth day of creation, Leviathan and Behemoth (Gen. 1:21; cf. 2 Esd. 6:49–52). The female monster, Leviathan, was confined to the sea (*Apoc. Abr.* 21:4), while her male counterpart, Behemoth, was confined to the desert (*1 Enoch* 60:7–9).

John sees the first beast (the female Leviathan) rise from the "sea" (representing the abyss or bottomless pit [cf. 11:7] and symbolizing evil and chaos). Blasphemous names are written on its seven heads, and diadems adorn each of its ten horns (v. 1). The appearance of the beast (v. 2) combines several features of the four separate beasts from the sea described in Dan. 7:2–7. The great harlot sits on this beast (v. 3), whose seven heads stand both for Rome's seven hills and for its seven kings (17:9–10). Horns symbolize power, and the ten diadems suggest universal sovereignty that parodies the rule of Christ (19:12). This beast personifies human opposition to God as represented by the Roman Empire. Since this beast has the throne and power of the dragon (v. 2b), it functions as Satan's earthly representative and as a parody of Christ. The worship given to this beast (v. 4) was that connected with the imperial cult. The "blasphemous names" referred to in v. 1 may refer to the honorific titles (such as "lord" and "god") applied to living emperors. One of the beast's seven heads, though fatally wounded, is miraculously healed (v. 3), parodying the death and resurrection of Christ and possibly referring to the legend of Nero's return (*Sib. Or.* 3.63–74; 4.119–24; 5.33–34). Nero committed suicide on June 9, 68, but few saw his corpse or witnessed his burial. Though hated in Italy, he was popular in the eastern provinces. From A.D. 68 to 88, at least three Nero impersonators appeared.

The second beast from the earth (the male Behemoth) had two horns like a lamb, and it spoke like a dragon, obviously a wolf in sheep's clothing (13:11). Later referred to as the "false prophet" (16:13; 19:20; 20:10), it acts as the agent and promoter of the first beast, orchestrating and enforcing its universal worship (13:12). The second beast performs deceptive miracles, persuading people to fashion a cult statue of the beast that has the power of speech (vv. 13–15). Christian eschatology anticipated "false Christs" and "false prophets" who would perform miracles (cf. Mark 13:22; Matt. 24:24; 2 Thess. 2:9). Religious fraud was common in the ancient world, though unknown in connection with the imperial cult. The second beast represents a local authority concerned with the worship of the first beast, probably the priesthood of the imperial cult, the most important cult in the province of Asia. The foundation of the provincial cult of Domitian at Ephesus late in the first century (involving the obligatory participation of the entire province of Asia) provided a climate in which enormous pressures were placed on Christians to be loyal citizens and participate in the imperial cult. Sacrifices and prayers were not ordinarily directed to the emperor, but to the gods on his behalf, yet Christians generally refused to make any kind of sacrifices. Emperors were not officially regarded as gods in Rome until they were posthumously pronounced *divus* (Lat., "divine") by the Roman senate, though Gaius (A.D. 37–41) and Domitian (81–96) are exceptions. In the eastern provinces, however, they were often accorded cults while living. The second beast compels everyone to be marked on the right hand and forehead with the name of the first beast; unbelievers and lapsed Christians thus form an identifiable group in contrast to faithful Christians marked with God's seal (7:2–8). The coded name of the first beast is 666, a number that is the total of the numerical value of the letters spelling "Nero Caesar" in Aramaic, John's native language.

14:1–20, Sixth Digression: Three Visions of Victory. John now reports a more comforting series of victory visions. First (vv. 1–5), he sees on Mount Zion the Lamb with the throng of the 144,000 who have the names of Christ and God written on their foreheads (cf. 7:4–8). This group of celibate males (v. 4) is the "first fruits" of the people of God who will share Christ's millennial reign (19:4–6). Their sexual purity represents separation from all forms of sin and idolatry; they are males because they are depicted as victorious soldiers. OT prerequisites for participation in holy wars included the preservation of ritual purity through sexual abstinence (Deut. 23:9–10). This holy-war theology was understood eschatologically by the Essenes, who kept themselves in a state of continual ritual purity in readiness for the imminent eschatological conflict.

The second vision (vv. 6–12) consists of three angelic announcements, the proclamation of the gospel to all humanity intended to elicit repentance (vv. 6–7), the announcement of "Babylon's" fall (v. 8, anticipating chap. 18), and a warning of the terrible consequences for those who worship the beast and its image and who bear the name of the beast (vv. 9–11).

The third vision (vv. 13–20) begins with two complementary prophetic sayings articulating the theme of vv. 14–20: Christians who die in the Lord are blessed (v. 13). John envisions the final judgment (vv. 14–20; later described in 19:11–16), based on Joel 3:13, as a

twofold harvest, one of grain (vv. 14–16), the other of grapes (vv. 17–20). Harvest was a frequent Jewish metaphor for the last judgment (Isa. 27:12; Joel 3:13; 2 Esd. 4:26–32). Christ, described as the "son of man" of Dan. 7:13–14 (cf. Rev. 1:13), reaps the earth with his sickle. Both the grain harvest and the vintage harvest (vv. 17–20) refer to the judgment of the ungodly (Isa. 63:1–6; cf. Rev. 19:15b).

15:1–16:16, The First Six Bowls. John introduces this third heptad by reporting another sign in heaven (cf. 12:1, 3): seven angels with the seven last plagues. The introductory throne-room scene depicts those who had conquered the beast standing beside a sea of glass with harps and singing the song of Moses and the Lamb (vv. 2–3). The Pentateuch records two songs of Moses, a victory song following the Exodus (Exod. 15:1–18) and his swan song (Deut. 32:1–43). Though 15:3b–4 alludes to both, the theme of a new and final Exodus predominates. Seven angels emerge from the heavenly tabernacle (the heavenly model for the portable sanctuary used by Israel before the building of Solomon's Temple; cf. Exod. 25–27; Heb. 8:2–5) and receive seven bowls or cups filled with the wrath of God (15:7), an OT judgment metaphor (Isa. 51:17–23). The plagues enumerated in Revelation 16 include (1) the plague of sores or boils (v. 2; the sixth plague in Exod. 9:9); (2) the sea turns to blood, killing all sea animals (v. 3); (3) the rivers and wells become blood (v. 4; both resemble the first plague in Exod. 7:20–21); (4) the sun scorches people (vv. 8–9; partially resembling the heavenly fire of the seventh plague in Exod. 9:22–24); (5) the throne and kingdom of the beast are blanketed with darkness (v. 10; the ninth plague of Exod. 10:21); (6) the Euphrates dries up (v. 12; no counterpart in Exodus); (7) great earthquakes, the great cities collapse, the islands and mountains disappear, huge hailstones fall (vv. 18–21; similar to the hail of the seventh plague in Exod. 9:22).

16:17–19:10
The Seventh Bowl and the Punishment of Babylon

Babylon was the capital of the Neo-Babylonian Empire (605–539 B.C.), which captured Jerusalem and destroyed Solomon's Temple (586 B.C.). In the OT it became a symbol for the current superpower. In Revelation and other Jewish and Christian literature written after A.D. 70, "Babylon" became a cryptic name for Rome (*Sib. Or.* 5.143, 159; 1 Pet. 5:13). Like Babylon before, Rome had captured Jerusalem and destroyed the Herodian Temple in A.D. 70.

16:17–21, The Seventh Bowl. The pouring out of the seventh bowl represents the climax of the seals, trumpets, and bowls, the final plagues sent by God to afflict humanity (15:1).

17:1–18, The Great Harlot. This visionary episode is unique in Revelation for, unlike the other vision sequences, it describes a static scene, or tableau. This vision of "Babylon" belongs to a Hellenistic literary genre called *ekphrasis*, i.e., a "detailed description" of a work of art. Though the works of art on which the description is based have perished (probably marble basreliefs), copies have survived on ancient coins. These coins, some minted during the reign of Vespasian, depict *dea Roma* (Lat., "the goddess Rome") seated on Rome's seven hills with the river god Tiber reclining at the right and the she-wolf with Romulus and Remus at the lower left. The goddess Dea Roma was particularly popular in Anatolia from the mid-second century B.C. on. John used this popular depiction of the glory of Rome as a means for vilifying Rome and contrasting her with the new Jerusalem.

John ties the new vision to the previous section (15:1–16:21) by having a bowl angel show him the judgment of the great harlot seated by many waters (17:1–2). Carried away in a trance by the Spirit, John sees a woman sitting on a scarlet beast full of blasphemous names with seven heads and ten horns (v. 3), the beast from the sea (13:1). This woman, decked out like a successful prostitute (Athens is said to dress ostentatiously like a prostitute in Plutarch *Pericles* 12.2), holds a golden cup filled with impurities (v. 4). On her forehead is written "a name of mystery" (RSV), "Babylon the Great, Mother of Harlots and of Earth's Abominations" (v. 5). What does this "mysterious" name mean? The tutelary deity of Rome had a secret name (Plutarch *Roman Questions* 61). Servius suggested that Rome's name was concealed to prevent the deity from being invoked to leave the city. The secret name of Rome was popularly thought to be "Amor" ("love"), the Latin name for Rome, "Roma," spelled backwards. Perhaps aware of this tradition, John depicts Rome as a prostitute, i.e., the antithesis of love. The angel explains that the beast "was, and is not, and is to come" (v. 8), suggesting both the Nero legend (13:3) and parodying the God who "is, was, and is to come" (1:4, 8; 4:8). The woman herself represents "the great city" dominating the world, i.e., Rome (v. 18).

Yet in v. 9, the angel interprets the seven heads as the seven mountains on which the woman sits, i.e., the traditional seven hills on which Rome was situated. The seven hills, however, are really seven kings; five have fallen, one is, and the other has not yet come (v. 10). There has been endless speculation about the identity of these kings. If the seventh king is Nero (who when he returns will be the eighth, v. 11), who are the previous six? Nero was the sixth emperor (counting Julius Caesar), and Domitian the twelfth; no matter how the names of the emperors are juggled around, they do not neatly fit John's scheme of seven. That suggests that the number seven is rather a schematic representation for the complete number of Roman emperors. Actually, according to tradition, Rome did

have seven kings during the Roman monarchy (753–509 B.C.). The symbolic significance of the number seven led to the widespread belief among both Romans and Etruscans that the period of kings had been destined to conclude with the seventh king of the seventh *saeculum* (Lat., "generation," "reign").

The ten horns (v. 12) are ten client kings of Rome who are of "one mind" (RSV) or "one accord" (v. 13), an ancient technical term for the kind of concord within a city and unanimity among nations brought about by the benevolence of the gods (in this case ordained by God, v. 17). Their united forces will unsuccessfully war against the Lamb, who will conquer them (v. 14; cf. 19:19–20). The angel then interprets the waters (the Tiber) under the harlot as representative of all humanity over which Rome has temporary control (v. 15). In vv. 16–17 a coalition of ten kings allied with the beast will attack and destroy the harlot. The Nero legends anticipated the return of Nero from the east with a great army to destroy his enemies in Rome (*Sib. Or.* 4.138–39; 5.93–110, 361–85).

18:1–19:8, Reactions to Babylon's Fall. Chap. 18 is a pastiche of five different types of poetic compositions, all focusing on the fall of Babylon. The first section, vv. 1–3, though often referred to as a dirge or lament, is actually a prophetic taunt song. Taunt songs were used by OT prophets to deride the enemies of Israel and announce their downfall (Isa. 23–24; 47; Jer. 50–51; Ezek. 26–27). This taunt consists first of an angelic announcement anticipating the fall of Babylon (vv. 1–3). The opening words, "Fallen, fallen is Babylon the Great" (cf. 14:8) are derived from Isa. 21:9. There, as here, the statement is a prophetic anticipation of a future event that will surely come to pass.

Verses 4–8, attributed to a "heavenly voice," refer to the future fall of Babylon. It conforms to a particular prophetic form, the summons to flight, consisting of an initial summons to flee followed by a threat of judgment. The form is often found in the writing prophets, particularly Jeremiah and often in connection with fleeing from Babylon (e.g., Jer. 50:8–10; 51:6–10; Isa. 48:20–22; 52:11–12). The form is also found in Christian prophecies (Mark 13:14–20). The command "Come out of her!" (v. 4) is followed by an encouragement to repay Rome double for her deeds (v. 6). The reason for leaving is the imminent arrival of plagues associated with the seventh bowl (v. 8).

In vv. 9–20, John has incorporated three dirges attributed to those sympathetic to Babylon (those enriched by their dealings with the city), kings (vv. 9–10), merchants (vv. 11–17a; cf. Ezek. 27:12–24), and the merchant marine (vv. 17b–19). Each brief threnody, or dirge, is introduced with "Alas! alas!" (vv. 10, 16, 19) and concludes with the slightly varied refrain that Babylon's destruction has been accomplished in "one hour" (vv. 10b, 17a, 19b). Modeled after Ezek. 26–28, these dirges conclude with a cry of joy in v. 20. Rome is presented in vv. 11–14 using the common image of the central world market first found in Isocrates (*Panegyricus* 42; cf. Strabo 17.1.13). The extensive Roman trade in luxury commodities was proverbial.

An angel then throws a millstone into the sea symbolizing the downfall of "Babylon" (vv. 21–24). This action contains features typical of the "reports of prophetic symbolic actions" found in OT prophets (e.g., 1 Kings 22:11; 2 Kings 13:14–19). Here in the setting of apocalyptic prophecy an angel rather than a prophet performs the action, which John has modeled after a similar action reported in Jer. 51:63–64, where Jeremiah tells a messenger to throw a stone into the Euphrates, symbolizing Babylon, which will sink to rise no more.

The throne-room scene in 19:1–8 is the fifth and last poetic section in this passage. The first antiphonal hymn celebrates the judgment of "Babylon" as an accomplished fact, the subject of the angelic disclosure according to 17:1. This section contains four hymns arranged in two antiphonal strophes: first, 19:1b–2 / 19:3; second, 19:5b / 19:6b–8. In turn, vv. 5b–8 constitute an antiphonal response to vv. 1b–4. The term "hallelujah" (a Hebrew liturgical formula meaning "praise Yahweh," found only here in the NT) is used three times to introduce three of the hymns (vv. 1, 3, 6) and as an antiphonal response in v. 4b. The song of great heavenly multitude (v. 1), probably angelic beings (cf. 5:11), like the angelic taunt of 18:1–3, focuses on the judgment of "Babylon" (and the vindication of the martyrs) as an accomplished fact (vv. 1b–4). The entire scene closely resembles the heavenly liturgy of 5:11–14 (cf. 14:1–3; 15:2–4). An unidentified voice from the throne provides the cue for all of God's servants to praise him (v. 5), introducing a second set of hymns celebrating the fact that God "reigns" (NRSV), better translated "has established his reign." The hymn also celebrates the imminent union of Christ with his people using the metaphor of marriage, with the Lamb as the bridegroom and the church as his bride (cf. Eph. 5:21–32; 2 Cor. 11:2).

19:9–10, Conclusion. This brief section, which forms a conclusion to 17:1–19:8, bears several verbal and thematic similarities with 22:6–9. In both, an angel commissions John to write, a beatitude is pronounced, and John is discouraged from worshiping the angelic revealer. The angelic claim that "these are the true words of God" (v. 9b) refers to the entire section 17:1–19:8.

19:11–21:8
The Judgment of God's Adversaries

John has emphasized the structural and thematic importance of 19:11–21:8 by framing it between a pair of angelic revelations (17:1–19:10; 21:9–22:9) that begin and end with numerous verbal and thematic similarities. Both use female imagery; Babylon the harlot is the

central concern of 17:1–19:10, while the Bride, the new Jerusalem, is the focus of 21:9–22:9.

19:11–20:3, The Victorious Parousia. From the vantage point of earth, John sees the heavens opened (a theme associated with divine revelation and equivalent to the open door in heaven in 4:1; cf. Ezek. 1:1; Mark 1:10; Acts 7:56). Christ rides forth as a divine warrior leading the heavenly armies against the beast, the false prophet, and the dragon, who are defeated and punished in the reverse order of their appearance in Revelation 12–13. Though this scene depicts the Parousia (fulfilling Rev. 1:7), traditional Christian Parousia imagery is missing (cf. 1 Thess. 4:15–17; Mark 13:27; Matt. 24:31). The reason is twofold: first, the emphasis here is on the judicial function of the Parousia (as in 2 Thess. 1:5–10; 2 Pet. 3:8–13), and, second, in Revelation the eternal messianic kingdom is placed on a renovated earth so that Christ comes to his people on earth rather than transferring them to heaven. In describing Christ as a victorious warrior, John piles up descriptive epithets and attributes in a manner similar to the Patmos vision in 1:9–20. Christ's many diadems (19:12) symbolize his sovereignty as "King of kings and Lord of lords" (v. 16). He alone knows his secret name, corresponding to Rome's secret name (17:5). The single allusion to his redeeming death is his robe, which has been dipped in blood (cf. 1:5; 5:9; 7:14; 12:11). His public name is "The Word of God" (19:13; cf. John 1:1–3; 1 John 1:1). An angel announces the imminent destruction of the earthly opponents of God (vv. 17–18) followed by a brief narrative of the decisive defeat of the beast and the slaughter of his client kings and their armies by the armies of Christ. After the beast and the false prophet are captured, they are consigned to eternal torment in the lake of fire (vv. 19–21). Since the beast and his allies have already destroyed "Babylon" in accordance with God's will (17:16–17), this victory must represent the conquest and destruction of the remaining opponents of God and the Lamb (but cf. 20:7–9). The next-to-last stage in the conquest of evil is the confinement of Satan (identified by his several aliases as in 12:9) by an angel to the bottomless pit (the abyss, whence he came) for a thousand years (20:1–3).

20:4–6, The Millennial Kingdom. During the temporary restraint of Satan (20:1–3), the martyrs alone are raised in the first resurrection (20:5) and reign with Christ on earth for a thousand years (cf. 2:26–27; 7:15–17; 14:1–5). Satan is later released for a limited period (20:3; Jewish eschatology knows no such temporary release of Satan). The notion of a temporary messianic kingdom became a subject for speculation within Judaism after A.D. 70. 2 Esd. 7:26–29 anticipates an intermediate messianic kingdom lasting four hundred years (after which the Messiah dies), while an indefinite period is mentioned in *2 Apoc. Bar.* 40:3 (cf. 2 Esd. 12:34; 1 Cor. 15:24–28). Various rabbinic sages reportedly proposed that the messianic kingdom would last from forty to seven thousand years.

What is the function of such a temporary messianic kingdom? It reconciles the expectation of a messianic kingdom with the notion of the final realization of the eternal reign of God. A messianic interregnum, therefore, functions as an anticipation of the perfect and eternal theocratic state that will exist when primordial conditions are reinstated forever. To accommodate such a messianic interregnum, John has duplicated the final eschatological events and inserted the temporary millennial kingdom in the middle. He narrates two final wars (19:11–21; 20:7–10); two victories over Satan (20:1–3, 10); two resurrections (20:4–6, 12–13); two judgment scenes (20:4, 12–13); and two states of blessedness (20:4, 20 12).

20:7–15, The Release and Defeat of Satan. After Satan's release, he gathers armies from the nations of the earth for a last attempt to destroy the millennial kingdom on Mount Zion (20:7–9; cf. 14:1–5). Gog and Magog, derived from Ezekiel 38–39, are generic names for nations hostile to Israel who unsuccessfully attempt to annihilate the people of God. Yet they will be decisively defeated by judgments from heaven (Ezek. 38:22). After Satan's defeat he, like the beast and false prophet before him, is perpetually confined to the lake of fire (20:10).

The final judgment is depicted in vv. 11–15 in traditional eschatological imagery (*1 Enoch* 90:20–27). The second resurrection, implied but unmentioned, enables the rest of the dead (martyrs alone experience the first resurrection), both righteous and wicked, to stand before the throne of God awaiting his verdict. Into this traditional scene of the opening of two sets of books, John has inserted a reference to the book of life (v. 12; cf. 13:8; 17:8; 21:27). The metaphor of two sets of heavenly tablets or books on which righteous and wicked deeds are recorded for reference on the Day of Judgment was common in early Judaism.

21:1–8, The New Heavens and the New Earth. John then sees a new heaven and a new earth, which have replaced their earlier counterparts that have "passed away" (21:1; cf. 20:11). It is strange that such a cosmic cataclysm is passed over with just two oblique references. The eventual destruction of heaven and earth is part of Christian tradition (Matt. 5:18; Luke 16:17; 2 Pet. 3:10–13). The descent of the new Jerusalem is accompanied by the commentary that God now dwells with humankind and all death and suffering are now eliminated from human experience (vv. 3–4) with the reinstatement of primordial conditions. In some strands of Jewish eschatology the heavenly Jerusalem replaces the earthly Jerusalem (2 Esd. 7:26; 10:41–44).

The climactic statement of God found in vv. 5–8 summarizes the central message of Revelation. The re-

liability of the message is guaranteed by the speaker, God himself, the Alpha and the Omega (cf. 1:8) and the Beginning and the End (a widespread Hellenistic divine title emphasizing cosmic sovereignty and lordship). God's message is that those who conquer, i.e., hold fast to the word of God and the testimony of Jesus, will be children of God and enjoy eternal blessedness; those who do not renounce their sinful ways will be punished with eternal torment. God's role in Revelation is similar to popular conceptions of the emperor's primary function: to dispense justice by punishing the disobedient and rewarding the obedient.

21:9–22:9
The New Jerusalem

Here, as in 17:1, a bowl angel invites John to see a special sight, the Bride, the wife of the Lamb, i.e., the new Jerusalem (the people of God under the metaphor of a city), the antithesis of the great harlot of Babylon. The new Jerusalem that John sees descending from heaven is then described in detail, indicating that it symbolizes the people of God (21:9–22:5). The twelve gates bear the names of the twelve Israelite tribes (cf. Ezek. 48:30–34). In 21:15–21, John's angelic guide measures the city, whose length, width, and height are twelve thousand stadia (at 187 meters per stadion, the city would be an enormous cube 1,367 miles on each side). Poetic descriptions of the future Jerusalem describe it as constructed of precious stones (Isa. 54:11–12; Tob. 13:16–17). The precious stones adorning the new Jerusalem contrast with the jewels worn by the great harlot (17:4). Each of the twelve foundations of the city bears the name of one of the twelve apostles (21:14) and consists of a single enormous precious stone (vv. 19–20). The names of these stones correspond to those mounted on the breastplate of the Israelite high priest (Exod. 28:17–20; 39:10–13). The identity of the new Jerusalem with the church suggests that the twelve stones symbolize the priestly status of the people of God (1:6; 5:10; 20:6).

In 22:1–6, John sees aspects of the city based on traditional Jewish conceptions of the three central features of Eden: the throne of God, the river, and the fruitful tree of life (*1 Enoch* 25:1–7; *2 Enoch* 8:1–8). The term "paradise" (meaning "garden" or "park") was used both for the earthly Eden and for heaven (*Jub.* 4:23; *2 Enoch* 8:3, 5, 6 [long]; 8:1, 3, 8 [short]; Luke 23:43). In Jewish legends, Adam lived in paradise (the third heaven, 2 Cor. 12:3–4; *2 Enoch* 8:1) and was expelled to earth for his disobedience. The eschatological restoration of primal Edenic conditions found in the OT prophets (Isa. 11:6–9; 65:17–25) became an important theme in apocalyptic thought. According to Rev. 2:7, the tree of life grows in paradise. The traditional river flowing out of Eden (Gen. 2:10) has become the river of life, and the trees of life grow on both banks of the river (inspired by Ezek. 47:1–12). The final goal of salvation is now realized (22:3–5). The servants of God are finally able to see him (ordinarily impossible; cf. Exod. 33:17–20; John 1:18), which means that they share his holiness and righteousness. His name is on their foreheads because they belong to him forever. In fulfillment of the promise made in 3:21, they will reign with him forever (22:5). Only the 144,000 martyrs shared the earlier millennial reign with Christ (20:4).

22:6–21
Epilogue

Rev. 22:6–9 is a transitional passage that functions both as a conclusion to the larger angelic revelation in 21:9–22:5 (which is parallel to the earlier angelic revelation in 17:1–19:9) and as a conclusion to the entire work. The numerous parallels to 1:1–8 indicate that 22:6–21 does indeed function as an epilogue. John follows the literary conventions concluding Jewish apocalypses by emphasizing the truth and importance of his revelatory message and by referring to how this prophetic book should be used. When he claims that "I John am he who heard and saw these things" (v. 8), he is using a common ancient witness formula emphasizing the reliability of the eyes and ears in gathering direct personal knowledge. Most Jewish apocalypses feign antiquity and so mention the problem of preserving their message for the last days (Dan. 8:26; 12:4, 9; *1 Enoch* 1:2). John writes for his own time, so the work must not be sealed until the end but immediately published since the end is near (22:10). The staccato quality of 22:12–17 corresponds to 1:1–8. Two complementary prophetic oracles with Jesus as the speaker are quoted in 22:12–13. The reference to his imminent coming (v. 12) is complemented by his claim to be the Alpha and Omega (v. 13; cf. 1:7–8). The seventh and last beatitude of 22:14 pronounces a salvific blessing on those who have washed their robes (cf. 7:14; 16:15), i.e., have been redeemed by the blood of the Lamb and so have access to the new Jerusalem, from which sinners are excluded (cf. 21:8, 27). Another saying of Jesus is cited in 22:16: "I Jesus have sent my angel to you [plural, i.e., the hearers]"; it functions to guarantee the authenticity and authority of the revelation granted to John for the churches. In v. 16b, Jesus identifies himself as the root and offspring of David (emphasizing his messianic status; cf. Isa. 11:1, 10) and as the bright morning star (symbolizing universal sovereignty). The invitation of the Spirit and Bride (i.e., the people of God) to "come" is not addressed to Jesus, but invites readers to share in the redemption and the salvation that only the faithful will experience.

The final paragraph in vv. 18–20 contains the author's attempt to safeguard his revelation by pronouncing conditional curses on those daring to add or subtract anything from it (cf. *1 Enoch* 104:10–13). The

integrity formula, "do not add, do not delete," was used widely throughout the ancient world in histories to guarantee the accurate use of sources, in treaties to protect their integrity, and in revelatory literature to claim completeness. The penalty for tampering with the text of Revelation is either to experience the plagues described in the book or to be barred from the holy city. Jesus, who testified to the truth of John's revelation, promises, "Surely I am coming soon," to which John responds, "Amen. Come Lord Jesus!" (v. 20). This concluding prayer probably translates the ancient Aramaic eucharistic formula *marana tha* ("Our Lord, come!") found in 1 Cor. 16:22; *Did.* 10:6. The promise of the imminent Parousia is reiterated several times throughout Revelation (cf. 3:11; 16:15; 22:7).

Bibliography

Aune, D. E. *Revelation.* Word Biblical Commentary. 3 vols. Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson, 1997–98.

Bauckham, R. *The Climax of Prophecy: Studies on the Book of Revelation.* Edinburgh: Clark, 1993.

———. *The Theology of the Book of Revelation.* Cambridge: Cambridge University, 1993.

Garrow, A. J. P. *Revelation.* London: Routledge, 1997.

Hemer, C. J. *The Letters to the Seven Churches of Asia in Their Local Setting.* Journal for the Study of New Testament Supplement Series, 11. Sheffield: JSOT Press, 1986.

Thompson, L. L. *The Book of Revelation: Apocalypse and Empire.* New York and Oxford: Oxford University, 1900.

PHOTOGRAPH CREDITS

INTRODUCTION: Rembrandt van Rijn (1606–1669), *Christ Teaching ("La Petite Tombe"*; detail), etching. Städtliche Kunstsämmlung, Düsseldorf, Germany. Photo: Foto Marburg/Art Resource, N.Y.

PART ONE: Marc Chagall (1887–1985), *Moses Receives the Tablets of the Law* (detail), 1950–1952, painting. Nice, France. Photo: www.corbis.com/Todd Gipstein.

PART TWO: *The Personification of Wisdom* (Sophia; detail of illustration for Ecclesiasticus [Sirach] in the Limoges Bible), late-eleventh-century painting. Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris, France.

PART THREE: *God Speaks to Jeremiah* (detail of illustration for Jeremiah). Photo: www.corbis.com/Historical Picture Archive.

PART FOUR: *Maccabees: Scene of a Battle*, manuscript illumination, Renaissance period. Bibliothèque Municipale, Valenciennes, France. Photo: www.corbis.com/Archivo Iconografico, S. A.

PART FIVE: Frederick J. Brown, *The Ascension* (detail), 1983, painting on linen. Metropolitan Museum of Art, New York. Photo: Metropolitan Museum of Art/Edith C. Blum Fund.

PART SIX: *St. Paul* (detail from Paul handing over letters to Timothy and Silas/Silvanus), Byzantine mosaic. Duomo, Monreale, Italy. Photo: Scala/Art Resource, N.Y.